

**LIBRARY OF CONGRESS**



00005838459















THE

1963  
4155

DRAMATIC WORKS

OF

SHAKSPEARE,

FROM

THE TEXT OF JOHNSON AND STEEVENS.

—◆—  
COMPLETE IN ONE VOLUME.  
—◆—

Philadelphia:  
J. B. LIPPINCOTT AND CO.  
1847.

PR 2752

J7

1847

Edw. & Estera Cheruto  
May 19, 1933

BB-15093



# CONTENTS

---

	Page
SOME ACCOUNT OF THE LIFE, &c. OF SHAKSPEARE . . . . .	v
THE TEMPEST . . . . .	1
TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA . . . . .	23
MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR . . . . .	45
TWELFTH NIGHT, OR WHAT YOU WILL . . . . .	73
MEASURE FOR MEASURE . . . . .	98
MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING . . . . .	125
MIDSUMMER NIGHTS' DREAM . . . . .	151
LOVE'S LABOUR LOST . . . . .	172
MERCHANT OF VENICE . . . . .	199
AS YOU LIKE IT . . . . .	224
ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL . . . . .	250
TAMING OF THE SHREW . . . . .	279
WINTER'S TALE . . . . .	305
COMEDY OF ERRORS . . . . .	336
MACBETH . . . . .	354
KING JOHN . . . . .	377
KING RICHARD THE SECOND . . . . .	402
KING HENRY THE FOURTH.—FIRST PART . . . . .	429
KING HENRY THE FOURTH.—SECOND PART . . . . .	459
KING HENRY THE FIFTH . . . . .	491
KING HENRY THE SIXTH.—FIRST PART . . . . .	523
KING HENRY THE SIXTH.—SECOND PART . . . . .	551
KING HENRY THE SIXTH.—THIRD PART . . . . .	584
KING RICHARD THE THIRD . . . . .	610
KING HENRY THE EIGHTH . . . . .	653
TROILUS AND CRESSIDA . . . . .	684
TIMON OF ATHENS . . . . .	718
CORIOLANUS . . . . .	743
JULIUS CÆSAR . . . . .	779
ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA . . . . .	894
CYMBELINE . . . . .	838
TITUS ANDRONICUS . . . . .	873
PERICLES, PRINCE OF TYRE . . . . .	898
KING LEAR . . . . .	923
ROMEO and JULIET . . . . .	958
HAMLET, PRINCE OF DENMARK . . . . .	980
OTHELLO, MOOR OF VENICE . . . . .	1028



SOME  
ACCOUNT OF THE LIFE, &c.,  
OF  
WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE:

---

WRITTEN BY MR. ROWE.

---

IT seems to be a kind of respect due to the memory of excellent men, especially of those whom their wit and learning have made famous, to deliver some account of themselves, as well as their works, to posterity. For this reason, how fond do we see some people of discovering any little personal story of the great men of antiquity! their families, the common accidents of their lives, and even their shape, make, and features, have been the subject of critical inquiries. How trifling soever this curiosity may seem to be, it is certainly very natural; and we are hardly satisfied with an account of any remarkable person, till we have heard him described even to the very clothes he wears. As for what relates to men of letters, the knowledge of an author may sometimes conduce to the better understanding his book; and though the works of Mr. Shakspeare may seem to many not to want a comment, yet I fancy some little account of the man himself may not be thought improper to go along with them.

He was the son of Mr. John Shakspeare, and was born at Stratford-upon-Avon in Warwickshire, in April 1564. His family, as appears by the register and public writings relating to that town, were of good figure and fashion there, and are mentioned as gentlemen. His father, who was a considerable dealer in wool, had so large a family, ten children in all, that though he was his eldest son, he could give him no better education than his own employment. He had bred him, it is true, for some time at a free-school, where, it is probable, he acquired what Latin he was master of: but the narrowness of his circumstances, and the want of his assistance at home, forced his father to withdraw him from thence, and unhappily prevented his further proficiency in that language. It is without controversy, that in his works we scarce find any traces of any thing that looks like an imitation of the ancients. The delicacy of his taste, and the natural bent of his own great genius, (equal, if not superior, to some of the best of theirs,) would certainly have led him to read and study them with so much pleasure, that some of their fine images would naturally have insinuated themselves into, and been mixed with, his own writings: so that his not copying at least something from them, may be an argument of his never having read them. Whether his ignorance of the ancients were a disadvantage to him or no, may admit of a dispute: for though the knowledge of them might have made him more correct, yet it is not improbable but that the regularity and deference for them, which would have attended that correctness, might have restrained some of that fire, impetuosity, and even beautiful extravagance, which we admire in Shakspeare: and I believe we are better pleased with those thoughts, altogether new and uncommon, which his own imagination supplied him so abundantly with, than if he had given us the most beautiful passages out of the Greek and Latin poets, and that in the most agreeable manner that it was possible for a master of the English language to deliver them.

Upon his leaving school, he seems to have given entirely into that way of living which his father proposed to him; and in order to settle in the world after a family manner, he thought fit to marry while he was yet very young. His wife was the daughter of one Hathaway, said to have been a substantial yeoman in the neighbourhood of Stratford. In this kind of settlement he continued for some time, till an extravagance that he was guilty of forced him both out of his country, and that way of living which he had taken up; and though it seemed at first to be a blemish upon his good manners, and a misfortune to him, yet it afterwards happily proved the occasion of exerting one of the greatest *geniuses* that ever was known in dramatic poetry. He had by a misfortune, common enough to young fellows, fallen into ill company; and amongst them, some that made a fra-



quent practice of deer stealing, engaged him more than once in robbing a park that belonged to Sir Thomas Lucy, of Charlecote, near Stratford. For this he was prosecuted by that gentleman, as he thought, somewhat too severely; and in order to revenge that ill usage, he made a ballad upon him. And though this, probably the first essay of his poetry, be lost, yet it is said to have been so very bitter, that it redoubled the prosecution against him, to that degree that he was obliged to leave his business and family in Warwickshire for some time, and shelter himself in London.

It is at this time, and upon this accident, that he is said to have made his first acquaintance in the playhouse. He was received into the company then in being, at first, in a very mean rank; but his admirable wit, and the natural turn of it to the stage, soon distinguished him, if not as an extraordinary actor, yet as an excellent writer. His name was printed as the custom was in those times, amongst those of the other players, before some old plays, but without any particular account of what sort of parts he used to play; and though I have inquired, I never could meet with any further account of him this way, than that the top of his performance was the Ghost in his own *Hamlet*. I should have been much more pleased, to have learned from certain authority, which was the first play he wrote; it would be without doubt a pleasure to any man, curious in things of this kind, to see and know what was the first essay of a fancy like Shakspeare's. Perhaps we are not to look for his beginnings, like those of other authors, among their least perfect writings; art had so little, and nature so large a share in what he did, that for aught I know, the performances of his youth, as they were the most vigorous, and had the most fire and strength of imagination in them, were the best. I would not be thought by this to mean, that his fancy was so loose and extravagant, as to be independent on the rule and government of judgment; but that what he thought, was commonly so great, so justly and rightly conceived in itself, that it wanted little or no correction, and was immediately approved by an impartial judgment at the first sight. But though the order of time in which the several pieces were written be generally uncertain, yet there are passages in some few of them which seem to fix their dates. So the *Chorus* at the end of the fourth act of *Henry the Fifth*, by a compliment very handsomely turned to the earl of Essex, shows the play to have been written when that lord was general for the queen in Ireland and his eulogy upon queen Elizabeth, and her successor king James, in the latter end of his *Henry the Eighth*, is a proof of that play's being written after the accession of the latter of those two princes to the crown of England. Whatever the particular times of his writing were, the people of his age, who began to grow wonderfully fond of diversions of this kind, could not but be highly pleased to see a genius arise amongst them of so pleasurable, so rich a vein, and so plentifully capable of furnishing their favourite entertainments. Besides the advantages of his wit, he was in himself a good-natured man, of great sweetness in his manners, and a most agreeable companion; so that it is no wonder, if, with so many good qualities, he made himself acquainted with the best conversations of those times. Queen Elizabeth had several of his plays acted before her, and without doubt gave him many gracious marks of her favour: it is that maiden princess plainly, whom he intends by

— a fair vestal, throned by the west,

A MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM.

and that whole passage is a compliment very properly brought in, and very handsomely applied to her. She was so well pleased with that admirable character of Falstaff, in the two parts of *Henry the Fourth*, that she commanded him to continue it for one play more, and to show him in love. This is said to be the occasion of his writing *The Merry Wives of Windsor*. How well she was obeyed, the play itself is an admirable proof. Upon this occasion it may not be improper to observe, that this part of Falstaff is said to have been written originally under the name of *Oldcastle*: some of that family being then remaining, the queen was pleased to command him to alter it; upon which he made use of Falstaff. The present offence was indeed avoided; but I do not know whether the author may not have been somewhat to blame in his second choice, since it is certain that Sir John Oldcastle, who was a knight of the garter, and a lieutenant-general, was a name of distinguished merit in the wars in France in Henry the Fifth's and Henry the Sixth's times. What grace soever the queen conferred upon him, it was not to her only he owed the fortune which the reputation of his wit made. He had the honour to meet with many great and uncommon marks of favour and friendship from the earl of Southampton, famous in the histories of that time, for his friendship to the unfortunate earl of Essex. It was to that noble lord that he dedicated his poem of *Venus and Adonis*. There is one instance so

singular in the magnificence of this patron of Shakspeare's, that if I had not been assured that the story was handed down by Sir William D'Avenant, who was probably very well acquainted with his affairs, I should not have ventured to have inserted, that my lord Southampton at one time gave him a thousand pounds, to enable him to go through with a purchase which he heard he had a mind to. A bounty very great, and very rare at any time, and almost equal to that profuse generosity the present age has shown to French dancers and Italian singers.

What particular habitude or friendships he contracted with private men, I have not been able to learn, more than that every one, who had a true taste of merit, and could distinguish men, had generally a just value and esteem for him. His exceeding candour and good nature must certainly have inclined all the gentler part of the world to love him, as the power of his wit obliged the men of the most delicate knowledge and polite learning to admire him.

His acquaintance with Ben Jonson began with a remarkable piece of humanity and good nature : Mr. Jonson, who was at that time altogether unknown to the world, had offered one of his plays to the players, in order to have it acted ; and the persons into whose hands it was put, after having turned it carelessly and superciliously over, were just upon returning it to him with an ill-natured answer, that it would be of no service to their company ; when Shakspeare luckily cast his eye upon it, and found something so well in it, as to engage him first to read it through, and afterwards to recommend Mr. Jonson and his writings to the public. Jonson was certainly a very good scholar, and in that had the advantage of Shakspeare ; though at the same time I believe it must be allowed, that what nature gave the latter was more than a balance for what books had given the former ; and the judgment of a great man upon this occasion was, I think, very just and proper. In a conversation between Sir John Suckling, Sir William D'Avenant, Endymion Porter, Mr. Hales of Eton, and Ben Jonson, Sir John Suckling, who was a professed admirer of Shakspeare, had undertaken his defence against Ben Jonson with some warmth ; Mr. Hales, who had sat still for some time told them, *That if Mr. Shakspeare had not read the ancients, he had likewise not stolen any thing from them ; and that if he would produce any one topic finely treated by any one of them, he would undertake to shew something upon the same subject at least as well written by Shakspeare.*

The latter part of his life was spent, as all men of good sense will wish theirs may be, in ease, retirement, and the conversation of his friends. He had the good fortune to gather an estate equal to his occasion, and, in that, to his wish ; and is said to have spent some years before his death at his native Stratford. His pleasurable wit and good-nature engaged him in the acquaintance, and entitled him to the friendship, of the gentlemen of the neighbourhood. Amongst them, it is a story almost still remembered in that country that he had a particular intimacy with Mr. Combe, an old gentleman noted thereabouts for his wealth and usury ; it happened that in a pleasant conversation amongst their common friends, Mr. Combe told Shakspeare in a laughing manner, that he fancied he intended to write his epitaph, if he happened to out-live him ; and since he could not know what might be said of him when he was dead, he desired it might be done immediately ; upon which Shakspeare gave him these four verses :

"TEN IN THE HUNDRED lies here engraved ;  
'Tis a hundred to ten his soul is not saved ;  
If any man ask, Who lies in this tomb ?  
Oh ! oh ! quoth the devil, 'tis my John-a-Combe."

But the sharpness of the satire is said to have stung the man so severely, that he never forgave it.

He died in the 53d year of his age, and was buried on the north side of the chancel, in the great church at Stratford, where a monument is placed in the wall. On his grave-stone underneath is,

"Good friend, for Jesus' sake forbear  
To dig the dust enclosed here.  
Blest be the man that spares these stones,  
And curst be he that moves my bones."

He had three daughters, of which two lived to be married ; Judith, the elder, to one Mr. Thomas Quiney, by whom she had three sons, who all died without children ; and Susanna, who was his favourite, to Dr. John Hall, a physician of good reputation in that country. She left one child only, a daughter, who was married first to Thomas Nashe, Esq., and afterwards to Sir John Barnard, of Abington, but died likewise without issue.

This is what I could learn of any note, either relating to himself or family : the

character of the man is best seen in his writings. But since Ben Jonson has made a sort of an essay toward it in his *Discoveries*, I will give it in his words:

"I remember the players have often mentioned it as an honour to Shakspeare, that in writing (whosoever he penned) he never blotted out a line. My answer hath been, *Would he had blotted a thousand!* which they thought a malevolent speech. I had not told posterity this, but for their ignorance, who close that circumstance to commend their friend by, wherein he most faulted: and to justify mine own candour, for I loved the man, and do honour his memory, on this side idolatry, as much as any. He was, indeed, honest, and of an open and free nature, had an excellent fancy, brave notions, and gentle expressions: wherein he flowed with that facility, that sometimes it was necessary he should be stopped: *Sufaminandus erat*, as Augustus said of Haterius. His wit was in his own power: would the rule of it had been so too! Many times he fell into those things which could not escape laughter; as when he said in the person of Cæsar, one speaking to him,

"Cæsar, thou dost me wrong.

"He replied:

"Cæsar did never wrong, but with just cause.

"and such like, which were ridiculous. But he redeemed his vices with his virtues: there was ever more in him to be praised than to be pardoned."

As for the passage which he mentions out of Shakspeare, there is somewhat like it in *Julius Cæsar*, but without the absurdity; nor did I ever meet with it in any edition that I have seen, as quoted by Mr. Jonson.

Besides his plays in this edition, there are two or three ascribed to him by Mr. Langbaine, which I have never seen, and know nothing of. He writ likewise *Venus and Adonis*, and *Tarquin and Lucrece*, in stanzas, which have been printed in a late collection of poems. As to the character given of him by Ben Jonson, there is a good deal true in it: but I believe it may be as well expressed by what Horace says of the first Romans, who wrote tragedy upon the Greek models; (or indeed translated them,) in his epistle to Augustus:

"— natura sublimis et acer:

Nam spirat tragicum satis, et feliciter audet,

Sed turpem putat in chartis metuitque lituram."

As I have not proposed to myself to enter into a large and complete criticism upon Shakspeare's works, so I will only take the liberty, with all due submission to the judgment of others, to observe some of those things I have been pleased with in looking him over.

His plays are properly to be distinguished only into comedies and tragedies. Those which are called histories, and even some of his comedies, are really tragedies, with a run or mixture of comedy amongst them. That way of tragic-comedy was the common mistake of that age; and is, indeed, become so agreeable to the English taste, that though the severer critics among us cannot bear it, yet the generality of our audiences seem to be better pleased with it than with an exact tragedy. *The Merry Wives of Windsor*, *The Comedy of Errors*, and *The Taming of a Shrew*, are all pure comedy; the rest, however they are called, have something of both kinds. It is not very easy to determine which way of writing he was most excellent in. There is certainly a great deal of entertainment in his comical humours; and, though they did not then strike at all ranks of people, as the satire of the present age has taken the liberty to do, yet there is a pleasing and a well-distinguished variety in those characters which he thought fit to meddle with. Falstaff is allowed by every body to be a master-piece; the character is always well sustained, though drawn out into the length of three plays; and even the account of his death, given by his old landlady, Mrs. Quickly, in the first act of *Henry the Fifth*, though it be extremely natural, is yet as diverting as any part of his life. If there be any fault in the draught he has made of this lewd old fellow, it is that, though he has made him a thief, lying, cowardly, vain-glorious, and, in short, every way vicious, yet he has given him so much wit as to make him almost too agreeable; and I do not know whether some people have not, in remembrance of the diversion he had formerly afforded them, been sorry to see his friend Hal use him so scurvily; when he comes to the crown in the end of *The Second Part of Henry the Fourth*. Amongst other extravagancies, in *The Merry Wives of Windsor* he has made him a deer-stealer, that he might at the same time remember him Warwickshire prosecutor, under the name of Justice Shallow; he has given him very near the same court of arms which Dugdale, in his *Antiquities* of that



county, describes for a family there, and makes the Welsh parson descend very pleasantly upon them. That whole play is admirable; the humours are various and well opposed; the main design, which is to cure Ford of his unreasonable jealousy, is extremely well conducted. In *Twelfth Night* there is something singularly ridiculous and pleasant in the fantastical steward Malvolio. The parasite and the vain-glorious in *Parolles*, in *All's Well that Ends Well*, is as good as any thing of that kind in *Plautus* or *Terence*. Petruchio, in *The Taming of the Shrew*, is an uncommon piece of humour. The conversation of Benedick and Beatrice, in *Much Ado About Nothing*, and of Rosalind, in *As You Like It*, have much wit and sprightliness all along. His clowns, without which character there was hardly any play writ in that time, are all very entertaining; and, I believe, Thersites, in *Troilus and Cressida*, and Apemantus, in *Timon*, will be allowed to be masterpieces of ill-nature and satirical snarling. To these I might add that incomparable character of Shylock, the Jew, in *The Merchant of Venice*: but though we have seen that play received and acted as a comedy, and the part of the Jew performed by an excellent comedian, yet I cannot but think it was designed tragically by the author. There appears in it such a deadly spirit of revenge, such a savage fierceness and fellness, and such a bloody designation of cruelty and mischief, as cannot agree either with the style or characters of comedy. The play itself, take it altogether, seems to me to be one of the most finished of any of Shakspeare's. The tale, indeed, in that part relating to the caskets, and the extravagant and unusual kind of bond given by Antonio, is too much removed from the rules of probability; but, taking the fact for granted, we must allow it to be very beautifully written. There is something in the friendship of Antonio to Bassanio, very great, generous, and tender. The whole fourth act (supposing, as I said, the fact to be probable) is extremely fine. But there are two passages that deserve a particular notice: the first is what Portia says in praise of mercy; and the other on the power of music. The melancholy of Jaques, in *As You Like It*, is as singular and odd as it is diverting. And if, what Horace says,

“Difficile est proprie communia dicere,

it will be a hard task for any one to go beyond him in the description of the several degrees and ages of man's life, though the thought be old and common enough.

“— All the world's a stage,  
And all the men and women merely players;  
They have their exits and their entrances,  
And one man in his time plays many parts,  
His acts being seven ages. At first, the infant,  
Mewling and puking in the nurse's arms;  
And then, the whining school-boy with his satchel,  
And shining morning face, creeping like snail  
Unwillingly to school. And then, the lover,  
Sighing like furnace, with a woful ballad  
Made to his mistress' eye-brow. Then, a soldier;  
Full of strange oaths, and bearded like the pard,  
Jealous in honour, sudden and quick in quarrel,  
Seeking the bubble reputation  
Even in the cannon's mouth. And then, the justice;  
In fair round belly, with good capon lined,  
With eyes severe, and beard of formal cut,  
Full of wise saws and modern instances;  
And so he plays his part. The sixth age shifts  
Into the lean and slipper'd pantaloon;  
With spectacles on nose, and pouch on side;  
His youthful hose, well saved, a world too wide  
For his shrunk shank: and his big manly voice,  
Turning again towards childish treble, pipes  
And whistles in his sound: Last scene of all,  
That ends this strange eventful history,  
Is second childishness, and mere oblivion  
Sans teeth, sans eyes, sans taste, sans every thing.”

His images are, indeed, every where so lively, that the thing he would represent stands full before you, and you possess every part of it. I will venture to

point out one more, which is, I think, as strong and as uncommon as any thing I ever saw: it is an image of Patience. Speaking of a maid in love, he says,

“ — She never told her love,  
But let concealment, like a worm i' th' bud,  
Feed on her damask cheek: she pined in thought,  
And sat like PATIENCE on a monument,  
Smiling at GRIEF.”

What an image is here given! and what a task would it have been for the greatest masters of Greece and Rome to have expressed the passions designed by the sketch of statuary! The style of his comedy is, in general, natural to the characters, and easy in itself; and the wit most commonly sprightly and pleasing, except in those places where he runs into doggerel rhymes, as in *The Comedy of Errors* and some other plays. As for his jingling sometimes, and playing upon words, it was the common vice of the age he lived in: and if we find it in the pulpit, made use of as an ornament to the sermons of some of the gravest divines of those times, perhaps it may not be thought too light for the stage.

But certainly the greatness of this author's genius does no where so much appear as where he gives his imagination an entire loose, and raises his fancy to a flight above mankind, and the limits of the visible world. Such are his attempts in *The Tempest*, *A Midsummer Night's Dream*, *Macbeth*, and *Hamlet*. Of these *The Tempest*, however it comes to be placed the first by the publishers of his works, can never have been the first written by him: it seems to me as perfect in its kind as almost any thing we have of his. One may observe that the unities are kept here, with an exactness uncommon to the liberties of his writing; though that was what, I suppose, he valued himself least upon, since his excellencies were all of another kind. I am very sensible that he does, in this play, depart too much from that likeness to truth which ought to be observed in these sort of writings; yet he does it so very finely, that one is easily drawn in to have more faith for his sake, than reason does well allow of. His magic has something in it very solemn and very poetical; and that extravagant character of Caliban is mightily well sustained, shows a wonderful invention in the author, who could strike out such a particular wild image, and is certainly one of the finest and most uncommon grotesques that ever was seen. The observation, which I have been informed three very great men concurred in making upon this part, was extremely just;—That *Shakspeare had not only found out a new character in his Caliban, but had also devised and adapted a new manner of language for that character*.

It is the same magic that raises the Fairies in *A Midsummer-Night's Dream*, the Witches in *Macbeth*, and the Ghost in *Hamlet*, with thoughts and language so proper to the parts they sustain, and so peculiar to the talent of this writer. But of the two last of these plays I shall have occasion to take notice among the tragedies of Mr. Shakspeare. If one undertook to examine the greatest part of these by those rules which are established by Aristotle, and taken from the model of the Grecian stage, it would be no very hard task to find a great many faults; but as Shakspeare lived under a kind of mere light of nature, and had never been made acquainted with the regularity of those written precepts, so it would be hard to judge him by a law he knew nothing of. We are to consider him as a man that lived in a state of almost universal license and ignorance; there was no established judge, but every one took the liberty to write according to the dictates of his own fancy. When one considers, that there is not one play before him of a reputation good enough to entitle it to an appearance on the present stage, it cannot but be a matter of great wonder that he should advance dramatic poetry so far as he did. The fable is what is generally placed the first, among those that are reckoned the constituent parts of a tragic or heroic poem; not, perhaps, as it is the most difficult or beautiful, but as it is the first properly to be thought of in the contrivance and course of the whole; and, with the fable, ought to be considered the first disposition, order, and conduct of its several parts. As it is not in this province of the drama that the strength and mastery of Shakspeare lay, so I shall not undertake the tedious and ill-natured trouble to point out the several faults he was guilty of in it. His tales were seldom invented, but rather taken either from the true history, or novels and romances: and he commonly made use of them in that order, with those incidents, and that extent of time in which he found them in the authors from whence he borrowed them. So *The Winter's Tale*, which is taken from an old book, called *The Delectable History of Dorastus and Hænnia*, contains the space of sixteen or seventeen years, and the scene is sometimes laid in Bohe

nia, and sometimes in Sicily, according to the original order of the story. Almost all his historical plays comprehend a great length of time, and very different and distinct places: and in his *Antony and Cleopatra*, the scene travels over the greatest part of the Roman empire. But in recompense for his carelessness in this point, when he comes to another part of the drama, *the manners of his characters, in acting or speaking what is proper for them, and fit to be shewn by the poet*, he may be generally justified, and in very many places greatly commended. For those plays which he has taken from the English or Roman history, let any man compare them, and he will find the character as exact in the poet as the historian. He seems indeed so far from proposing to himself any one action for a subject, that the title very often tells you, it is *The Life of King John, King Richard, &c.* What can be more agreeable to the idea our historians give of *Henry the Sixth*, than the picture Shakspeare has drawn of him! His manners are every where exactly the same with the story; one finds him still described with simplicity, passive sanctity, want of courage, weakness of mind, and easy submission to the governance of an imperious wife, or prevailing faction: though at the same time the poet does justice to his good qualities, and moves the pity of his audience for him, by shewing him pious, disinterested, a contemner of the things of this world, and wholly resigned to the severest dispensations of God's providence. There is a short scene in *The Second Part of Henry the Sixth*, which I cannot but think admirable in its kind. Cardinal Beaufort, who had murdered the Duke of Gloucester, is shewn, in the last agonies on his death-bed, with the good king praying over him. There is so much terror in one, so much tenderness and moving piety in the other, as must touch any one who is capable either of fear or pity. In his *Henry the Eighth*, that prince is drawn with that greatness of mind, and all those good qualities which are attributed to him in any account of his reign. If his faults are not shewn in an equal degree, and the shades in this picture do not bear a just proportion to the lights, it is not that the artist wanted either colours or skill in the disposition of them; but the truth, I believe, might be, that he forbore doing it out of regard to Queen Elizabeth, since it could have been no very great respect to the memory of his mistress, to have exposed some certain parts of her father's life upon the stage. He has dealt much more freely with the minister of that great king; and certainly nothing was ever more justly written than the character of Cardinal Wolsey. He has shewn him insolent in his prosperity; and yet, by a wonderful address, he makes his fall and ruin the subject of general compassion. The whole man, with his vices and virtues, is finely and exactly described in the second scene of the fourth act. The distresses, likewise, of Queen Catherine, in this play, are very movingly touched; and though the art of the poet has screened King Henry from any gross imputation of injustice, yet one is inclined to wish, the queen had met with a fortune more worthy of her birth and virtue. Nor are the manners, proper to the persons represented, less justly observed in those characters taken from the Roman history; and of this, the fierceness and impatience of Coriolanus, his courage and disdain of the common people, the virtue and philosophical temper of Brutus, and the irregular greatness of mind in M. Antony, are beautiful proofs. For the two last especially, you find them exactly as they are described by Plutarch, from whom certainly Shakspeare copied them. He has indeed followed his original pretty close, and taken in several little incidents that might have been spared in a play. But, as I hinted before, his design seems most commonly rather to describe those great men in the several fortunes and accidents of their lives, than to take any single great action, and form his work simply upon that. However, there are some of his pieces, where the fable is founded upon one action only. Such are more especially *Romeo and Juliet*, *Hamlet*, and *Othello*. The design in *Romeo and Juliet* is plainly the punishment of their two families, for the unreasonable feuds and animosities that had been so long kept up between them, and occasioned the effusion of so much blood. In the management of this story, he has shewn something wonderfully tender and passionate in the love-part, and very pitiful in the distress. *Hamlet* is founded on much the same tale with the *Electra of Sophocles*. In each of them a young prince is engaged to revenge the death of his father, their mothers are equally guilty, are both concerned in the murder of their husbands, and are afterwards married to the murderers. There is, in the first part of the Greek tragedy, something very moving in the grief of Electra; but, as Mr. Dacier has observed, there is something very unnatural and shocking in the manners he has given that princess and Orestes in the latter part. Orestes imbrues his hands in the blood of his own mother; and that barbarous action is performed, though not immediately upon the stage, yet so near, that the audience hear Clytemnestra crying out to Agysthus for help, and to her son for mercy: while Electra, her daughter and a princess, (both of them characters that ought to have appeared with more decency,) stands upon



the stage, and encourages her brother in the parricide. What horror does this not raise! Clytemnestra was a wicked woman, and had deserved to die; nay, in the truth of the story, she was killed by her own son; but to represent an action of this kind on the stage is certainly an offence against those rules of manners, proper to the persons, that ought to be observed there. On the contrary, let us only look a little on the conduct of Shakspeare. Hamlet is represented with the same piety towards his father, and resolution to revenge his death, as Orestes; he has the same abhorrence for his mother's guilt, which, to provoke him the more, is heightened by incest: but it is with wonderful art and justness of judgment, that the poet restrains him from doing violence to his mother. To prevent any thing of that kind he makes his father's Ghost forbid that part of his vengeance:

"But howsoever thou pursu'st this act,  
 "Taint not thy mind, nor let thy soul contrive  
 "Against thy mother aught; leave her to heaven,  
 "And to those thorns that in her bosom lodge,  
 "To prick and sting her."

This is to distinguish rightly between *horror* and *terror*. The latter is a proper passion of tragedy, but the former ought always to be carefully avoided. And certainly no dramatic writer ever succeeded better in raising *terror* in the minds of an audience than Shakspeare has done. The whole tragedy of *Macbeth*, but more especially the scene where the king is murdered, in the second act, as well as this play, is a noble proof of that manly spirit with which he writ; and both shew how powerful he was, in giving the strongest motions to our souls that they are capable of. I cannot leave *Hamlet*, without taking notice of the advantage with which we have seen this master-piece of Shakspeare distinguish itself upon the stage, by Mr. Betterton's fine performance of that part. A man, who, though he had no other good qualities, as he has a great many, must have made his way into the esteem of all men of letters by this only excellency. No man is better acquainted with Shakspeare's manner of expression, and indeed he has studied him so well, and is so much a master of him, that whatever part of his he performs, he does it as if it had been written on purpose for him, and that the author had exactly conceived it as he plays it. I must own a particular obligation to him for the most considerable part of the passages relating to this life, which I have here transmitted the public; his veneration for the memory of Shakspeare having engaged him to make a journey into Warwickshire, on purpose to gather up what remains he could of a name for which he had so great a veneration.



# TEMPEST.

## Persons represented.

ALONSO, king of Naples.  
 SEBASTIAN, his brother.  
 PROSPERO, the rightful duke of Milan.  
 ANTONIO, his brother, the usurping duke of Milan.  
 FERDINAND, son to the king of Naples.  
 GONZALO, an honest old counsellor of Naples.  
 ADRIAN, } lords.  
 FRANCISCO, }  
 CALIBAN, a savage and deformed slave.

TRINCULO, a jester.  
 STEPHANO, a drunken butler.  
 Master of a ship, Boatswain, and Mariners,  
 MIRANDA, daughter to Prospero.  
 ARIEL, an airy spirit.  
 IRIS,  
 CERES, } spirits.  
 JUNO, }  
 NYMPHS,  
 REAPERS, }

Other spirits attending on PROSPERO.

Scene,—The sea, with a ship; afterwards an uninhabited island.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. On a ship at sea.

A storm, with thunder and lightning.

Enter a Ship-master and a Boatswain.

Master. Boatswain,—

Boats. Here, master: What cheer?

Master. Good: Speak to the mariners: fall  
 do't yarely\*, or we run ourselves aground;  
 bestir, bestir. [Exit.

Enter Mariners.

Boats. Heigh, my hearts; cheerly, cheerly,  
 my hearts; yare, yare: Take in the top-sail;  
 tend to the master's whistle. Blow, till thou  
 burst thy wind, if room enough!

Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO,  
 FERDINAND, GONZALO, and others.

Alon. Good boatswain, have care. Where's  
 the master? Play the men.

Boats. I pray now, keep below.

Ant. Where is the master, boatswain?

Boats. Do you not hear him? You mar our  
 labour! keep your cabins: you do assist the  
 Gon. Nay, good, be patient. [storm.

Boats. When the sea is. Hence! What care  
 these roarers for the name of king? To cabin:  
 silence: trouble us not.

Gon. Good; yet remember whom thou hast  
 aboard.

Boats. None that I more love than myself.  
 You are a counsellor; if you can command  
 these elements to silence, and work the peace  
 of the present t, we will not hand a rope more;  
 use your authority. If you cannot, give thanks  
 you have lived so long, and make yourself  
 ready in your cabin for the mischance of the  
 hour, if it so hap.—Cheerly, good hearts.—Out  
 of our way, I say. [Exit.

Gon. I have great comfort from this fellow:  
 methinks, he hath no drowning mark upon  
 him: his complexion is perfect gallows. Stand

fast, good fate, to his hanging! make the rope  
 of his destiny our cable, for our own doth  
 little advantage! If he be not born to be  
 hanged, our case is miserable. [Exeunt.

Re-enter Boatswain.

Boats. Down with the top-mast; yare; low-  
 er, lower; bring her to try with main-course.  
 [A cry within.] A plague upon this howling!  
 they are louder than the weather, or our office.

Re-enter SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, & GONZALO.

Yet again? what do you here? Shall we give  
 o'er and drown? Have you a mind to sink?

Seb. A pox o' your throat! you bawling,  
 blasphemous, uncharitable dog!

Boats. Work you, then.

Ant. Hang, cur, hang! you whoreson, in-  
 solvent noise-maker, we are less afraid to be  
 drowned than thou art.

Gon. I'll warrant him from drowning;  
 though the ship were no stronger than a nut-  
 shell, and as leaky as an unstanch'd wench.

Boats. Lay her a-hold, a-hold; set her two  
 courses; off to sea again, lay her off.

Enter Mariners wet.

Mar. All lost! to prayers, to prayers! all  
 lost! [Exeunt.

Boats. What, must our mouths be cold?

Gon. The king and prince at prayers! let us  
 for our case is as theirs. [assist them,

Seb. I am out of patience.

Ant. We are merely & cheated of our lives by  
 drunkards.— [lie drowning,

This wide-chapped rascal—Would thou might'st  
 The washing of ten tides!

Gon. Wash! He'll be hanged yet;  
 Though every drop of water swear against it,  
 And gape at wid'st to glut him.

[A confused noise within.] Merely on us:—  
 We split, we split!—Farewell, my wife and

\* Readily.

† Present instant.

‡ Incontinent.

§ Absolutely.

children!—Farewell, brother!—We split, we split, we split.—

*Ant.* Let's all sink with the king. *[Exit.*

*Seb.* Let's take leave of him. *[Exit.*

*Gon.* Now would I give a thousand furlongs of sea for an acre of barren ground; long heath, brown furze, any thing: The wills above be done! but I would fain die a dry death. *[Exit.*

SCENE II. *The island: before the cell of Prospero.*

*Enter PROSPERO and MIRANDA.*

*Mira.* If by your art, my dearest father, you have

Put the wild waters in this roar, allay them: The sky, it seems, would pour down stinking pitch,

But that the sea, mounting to the welkin's Dishes the fire out. O, I have suffer'd

With those that I saw suffer! a brave vessel, Who had no doubt some noble creatures in her, Dash'd all to pieces. O, the cry did knock Against my very heart! Poor souls! they perish'd.

Had I been any god of power. I would Have sunk the sea within the earth, or e'er • It should the good ship so have swallow'd, and The freighting souls within her.

*Pro.* Be collected; No more amazement: tell your piteous heart, There's no harm done.

*Mira.* O, woe the day!

*Pro.* No harm.

I have done nothing but in care of thee, (Of thee, my dear one! thee, my daughter!) who Art ignorant of what thou art, nought knowing Of whence I am; nor that I am more better Than Prospero, master of a full poor cell, And thy no greater father.

*Mira.* More to know Did never meddle with my thoughts.

*Pro.* 'Tis time I should inform thee further. Lend thy hand, And pluck my magic garment from me.—So;

*[Lays down his mantle.*

Lie there, my art.—Wipe thou thine eyes; have comfort.

The direful spectacle of the wreck, which The very virtue of compassion in thee,

I have with such provision in mine art So safely order'd, that there is no soul—

No, not so much perdition as an hair, Betid to any creature in the vessel

Which thou hear'd'st cry, which thou saw'st sink. Sit down;

For thou must now know further.

*Mira.* You have often Begun to tell me what I am; but stopp'd

And left me to a bootless inquisition; Concluding, *Stay, not yet.*—

*Pro.* The hour's now come; The very minute bids thee ope thine ear;

Obey, and be attentive. Can'st thou remember A time before we came unto this cell?

I do not think thou can'st; for then thou wast not But three years old.

*Mira.* Certainly, sir, I can.

*Pro.* By what? by any other house, or person Of any thing the image tell me, that Hath kept with thy remembrance.

*Mira.* 'Tis far off And rather like a dream than an assurance That my remembrance warrants: Had I not Four or five women once, that tended me?

*Pro.* Thou had'st, and more, Miranda: But how is it,

That this lives in thy mind? What seest thou else In the dark backward and abysm? of time? If thou remember'st aught, ere thou can'st here, How thou cam'st here, thou may'st.

*Mira.* But that I do not.

*Pro.* Twelve years since, Miranda, twelve years since, thy father was The duke of Milan, and a prince of power.

*Mira.* Sir, are not you my father?

*Pro.* Thy mother was a piece of virtue, and She said—thou wast my daughter; and thy father

Was duke of Milan; and his only heir A princess;—no worse issued.

*Mira.* O, the heavens! What foul play had we, that we came from Or blessed was't we did?

*Pro.* Both, both, my girl: By foul play, as thou say'st, were we heav'd; But blessedly help hither.

*Mira.* O, my heart bleeds To think o' the teen's that I have turn'd you to,

Which is from my remembrance! Please you, further.

*[Antonio,—*

*Pro.* My brother, and thy uncle, call'd I pray thee, mark me,—that a brother should Be so perfidious!—he whom, next thyself,

Of all the world I lov'd, and to him put The manage of my state; as, at that time,

Through all the signiorities it was the first, And Prospero the prime duke; being so reputed

In dignity, and, for the liberal arts, Without a parallel; those being all my study,

The government I cast upon my brother, And to my state grew stranger, being transported

And rapt in secret studies. Thy false uncle— Dost thou attend me?

*Mira.* Sir, most heedfully.

*Pro.* Being once perfected how to grant suits, How to deny them; whom to advance, and whom

To trask; for over-topping; new created The creatures that were mine; I say, or chang'd

them, Or else new form'd them: having both the key Of officer and office, set all hearts

To what tune pleas'd his ear; that now he was The ivy which had hid his princely trunk,

And suck'd my verdure out on't.—Thou attend'st not:

I pray thee, mark me.

*Mira.* O, good sir, I do.

*Pro.* I thus neglecting worldly ends, all dedicate To closeness, and the bettering of my mind

With that, which, but by being so retired,  
O'er-prized all popular rate, in my false brother  
Awak'd an evil nature: and my trust,  
Like a good parent, did beget of him  
A falsehood, in its contrary as great  
As my trust was; which had, indeed, no limit,  
A confidence sans\* bound. He being thus

lorded,  
Not only with what my revenue yielded,  
But what my power might else exact,—like one  
Who having, unto truth, by telling of it,  
Made such a sinner of his memor.,  
To credit his own lie,—he did believe  
He was the duke; out of the substitution,  
And executing the outward face of royalty,  
With all prerogative:—Hence his ambition  
Growing—Dost hear?

*Mira.* Your tale, sir, would cure deafness.

*Pro.* To have no screen between this part  
he play'd

And him he play'd it for, he needs will be  
Absolute Milan: Me, poor man!—my library  
Was dukedom large enough; of temporal royalties

He thinks me now incapable: confederates  
(So dry† he was for sway) with the king of  
Naples,

To give him annual tribute, do him homage;  
Subject his coronet to his crown, and bend  
The dukedom, yet unbow'd, (alas, poor Milan!)  
To most ignoble stooping.

*Mira.* O the heavens!

*Pro.* Mark his condition, and the event;  
then tell me,

If this might be a brother.

*Mira.* I should sin  
To think but nobly of my grandmother:  
Good wombs have borne bad sons.

*Pro.* Now the condition.  
This king of Naples, being an enemy  
To me inveterate, hearkens my brother's suit;  
Which was, that he in lieu‡ of the premises,—  
Of homage, and I know not how much tribute,—  
Should presently extirpate me and mine  
Out of the dukedom; and confer fair Milan,  
With all the honours, on my brother: Whereon,  
A treacherous army levied, one midnight  
Fated to the purpose, did Antonio open  
The gates of Milan; and, in the dead of darkness,  
The ministers for the purpose hurried thence  
Me, and thy crying self.

*Mira.* Alack, for pity!  
I, not rememb'ring how I cried out then,  
Will cry it o'er again! it is a hint§,  
That wrings mine eyes.

*Pro.* Hear a little further,  
And then I'll bring thee to the present business  
Which now's upon us; without the which,  
Were most impertinent. [this story

*Mira.* Wherefore did they not  
That hour destroy us?

*Pro.* Well demanded, wench;  
My tale provokes that question. Dear, they  
durst not;

(So dear the love my people bore me) nor set  
A mark so bloody on the business; but

With colours fairer painted their foul ends.  
In few, they hurried us aboard a bark;  
Bore us some leagues to sea; where they pre-  
A rotten carcass of a boat, not rigg'd, (pared  
Nor tackle, sail, nor mast; the very rats  
Instinctively had quit it: there they hoist us,  
To cry to the sea that roar'd to us; to sigh  
To the winds, whose pity, sighing back again,  
Did us but loving wrong.

*Mira.* Alack! what trouble  
Was I then to you!

*Pro.* O! a cherubim  
Thou wast, that did preserve me! Thou didst  
Infuse with a fortitude from heaven, [smile,  
When I have deck'd|| the sea with drops full  
salt;

Under my burden groan'd; which rais'd in me  
An undergoing stomach¶, to bear up  
Against what should ensue.

*Mira.* How came we ashore

*Pro.* By Providence divine.  
Some food we had, and some fresh water, that  
A noble Neapolitan, Gonzalo,  
Out of his charity, (who being then appointed  
Master of this design,) did give us; with  
Rich garments, linens, stuffs, and necessities,  
Which since have steaded much; so, of his  
gentleness,

Knowing I loved my books, he furnish'd me,  
From my own library, with volumes that  
I prize above my dukedom.

*Mira.* Would I might  
But ever see that man!

*Pro.* Now I arise:—  
Sit still, and hear the last of our sea-sorrow.  
Here in this island we arriv'd; and here  
Have I, thy schoolmaster, made thee more  
profit

Than other princes can, that have more time  
For vainer hours, and tutors not so careful.

*Mira.* Heavens thank you for't! And now,  
I pray you, sir,  
(For still'tis beating in my mind,) your reason  
For raising this sea-storm?

*Pro.* Know thus far forth.—  
By accident most strange, bountiful fortune,  
Now my dear lady, hath mine enemies  
Brought to this shore: and by my prescience  
I find my zenith doth depend upon  
A most auspicious star; whose influence  
If now I court not, but omit, my fortunes  
Will ever after droop.—Here cease more  
questions;

Thou art inclin'd to sleep; 'tis a good dulness,  
And give it way;—I know thou can'st not  
choose.— [MIRANDA sleeps.

Come away, servant, come: I am ready now,  
Approach, my Ariel; come.

*Enter ARIEL.*

*Ari.* All hail, great master! grave sir, hail!  
I come

To answer thy best pleasure; be't to fly,  
To swim, to dive into the fire, to ride  
On the curl'd clouds; to thy strong bidding  
Ariel, and all his quality. [task

\* Without. † Thirsty. ‡ Consideration. § Suggestion. || Sprinkled. ¶ Stubborn resolution.



*Pro.* Hast thou, spirit,  
Perform'd to point \* the tempest that I bade

*Ari.* To every article. [thee?]

I boarded the king's ship; now on the beak,  
Now in the waist, the deck, in every cabin,  
Ham'd amazement: Sometimes, I'd divide,  
And burn in many places; on the top-mast,  
The yards, and bowsprit, would I flame distinctly,

[precursors]  
Then meet, and join: Jove's lightnings, the  
O'the dreadfulthunder-claps, more momentary  
And sight-outrunning were not: The fire, and  
cracks

Of sulphurous roaring, the most mighty Neptune  
Seem'd to besiege, and make his bold waves  
Yea, his dread trident shake. [tremble,

*Pro.* My brave spirit!  
Who was so firm, so constant, that this coil  
Would not infect his reason?

*Ari.* Not a soul  
But felt a fever of the mad, and play'd  
Some tricks of desperation: All, but mariners,  
Plung'd in the foaming brine, and quit the  
vessel, [dinand,

Then all a-fire with me: the king's son, Fer-  
With hair up-staring (then like reeds, not hair,)  
Was the first man that leap'd; cried, *Hell is  
empty,*

And all the devils are here.

*Pro.* Why, that's my spirit!  
But was not this nigh shore?

*Ari.* Close by, my master.

*Pro.* But are they, Ariel, safe?

*Ari.* Not a hair perish'd;  
On their sustaining garments not a blemish,  
But fresher than before; and, as thou bad'st me,  
In troops I have dispers'd them 'bout the isle:  
The king's son have I landed by himself;  
Whom I left cooling of the air with sighs,  
In an odd angle of the isle, and sitting,  
His arms in this sad knot.

*Pro.* Of the king's ship,  
The mariners, say, how thou hast dispos'd,  
And all the rest o' the fleet?

*Ari.* Safely in harbour  
Is the king's ship; in the deep nook, where once  
Thou call'dst me up at midnight to fetch dew  
From the still-vex'd Bermoothes†, there she's  
The mariners all under hatches stow'd; [hid:  
Whom, with a charm join'd to their suffer'd  
labour,

I have left asleep: and for the rest o' the fleet,  
Which I dispers'd, they all have met again;  
And are upon the Mediterranean flote‡,  
Bound sadly home for Naples;  
Supposing that they saw the king's ship wreck'd,  
And his great person perish.

*Pro.* Ariel, thy charge  
Exactly is perform'd; but there's more work:  
What is the time o' the day?

*Ari.* Past the mid season.

*Pro.* At least two glasses: The time 'twixt  
six and now,

Must by us both be spent most precious.

*Ari.* Is there more toil? Since thou dost  
give me pains,

Let me remember thee what thou hast pro-  
Which is not yet perform'd me. [mis'd,

*Pro.* How now? moody?

What is't thou can'st demand?

*Ari.* My liberty:

*Pro.* Before the time be out? no more.

*Ari.* I pray thee

Remember, I have done thee worthy service;

Told thee no lies, made no mistakings, served

Without or grudge or grumbings: thou did'st

To bate me a full year. [promise]

*Pro.* Dost thou forget

From what a torment I did free thee?

*Ari.* No

*Pro.* Thou dost; and think'st

It much, to tread the ooze of the salt deep;

To run upon the sharp wind of the north;

To do me business in the veins o' the earth,

When it is bak'd with frost.

*Ari.* I do not, sir.

*Pro.* Thou liest, malignant thing! Hast thou

forgot [envy]

The foul witch Sycorax, who, with age and

Was grown into a hoop? Hast thou forgot her?

*Ari.* No, sir. [speak; tell me]

*Pro.* Thou hast: where was she born?

*Ari.* Sir, in Argier||.

*Pro.* O, was she so? I must.

Once in a month, recount what thou hast been,

Which thou forget'st. This damn'd witch,

Sycorax,

For mischiefs manifold, and sorceries terrible

To enter human hearing, from Argier,

Thou know'st, was banish'd; for one thing she

did,

They would not take her life: Is not this true?

*Ari.* Ay, sir.

*Pro.* This blue-eyed hag was hither brought

with child, [slave,

And here was left by the sailors: Thou, my

As thou report'st thyself, wast then her servant:

And, for thou wast a spirit too delicate

To act her earthy and abhor'd commands,

Refusing her grand hests¶, she did confine thee,

By help of her more potent ministers,

And in her most unmitigable rage,

Into a cloven pine; within which rift

Imprison'd, thou did'st painfully remain

A dozen years; within which space she died,

And left thee there; where thou did'st vent

thy groans, [island,

As fast as mill-wheels strike: Then was this

(Save for the son that she did litter here,

A freckled whelp, hag-born,) not honour'd with

A human shape.

*Ari.* Yes; Caliban her son.

*Pro.* Dull thing, I say so; he, that Caliban,

Whom now I keep in service, Thou best know'st

What torment I did find thee in: thy groans

Did make wolves howl, and penetrate the

breasts

Of ever-angry bears: it was a torment

To lay upon the damn'd, which Sycorax

Could not again undo; it was mine art.

When I arriv'd, and heard thee, that made gape

The pine, and let thee out.

\* The minutest article. † Bustle, tumult. ‡ Bermudas. § Wave. || Algiers. ¶ Commands.

*Ari.* I thank thee, master.

*Pro.* If thou more murmur'st, I will rend  
an oak,

And peg thee in his knotty entrails, till  
Thou hast howl'd away twelve winters.

*Ari.* Pardon, master:  
I will be correspondent to command,  
And do my spiriting gently.

*Pro.* Do so; and after two days  
I will discharge thee.

*Ari.* That's my noble master!  
What shall I do? say what? what shall I do?

*Pro.* Go make thyself like to a nymph o'  
the sea;

Be subject to no sight but mine; invisible  
To every eye-ball else. Go, take this shape,  
And hither come in't: hence, with diligence.

[*Erit ARIEL.*]

Awake, dear heart, awake! thou hast slept  
Awake!

*Mrs.* The strangeness of your story put  
Heaviness in me.

*Pro.* Shake it off: Come on;  
We'll visit Caliban, my slave, who never  
Yields us kind answer.

*Mrs.* 'Tis a villain, sir,  
I do not love to look on.

*Pro.* But, as 'tis,  
We cannot miss\* him: he does make our fire,  
Fetch in our wood; and serves in offices  
That profit us. What, ho! slave! Caliban!  
Thou earth, thou! speak.

*Cal.* [*within.*] There's wood enough within.

*Pro.* Come forth, I say; there's other busi-  
ness for thee:

Come forth, thou tortoise! when?

*Re-enter ARIEL, like a water-nymph.*

Fine apparition! My quaint Ariel,  
Hark in thine ear.

*Ari.* My lord, it shall be done. [*Erit.*]

*Pro.* Thou poisonous slave, got by the devil  
Upon thy wicked dam, come forth! [*himself*]

*Enter CALIBAN.*

*Cal.* As wicked dew as e'er my mother  
brush'd

With raven's feather from unwholesome fen,  
Drop on you both! a south-west blow on ye,  
And blister you all o'er!

*Pro.* For this, be sure, to-night thou shalt  
have cramps,

Side-stitches that shall pen thy breath up;  
Shall, for that vast of night that they may work,  
All exercise on thee: thou shalt be pinch'd

As thick as honey-combs, each pinch more  
stinging

Than bees that made them.

*Cal.* I must eat my dinner.

This island's mine, by Sycorax my mother,  
Which thou tak'st from me. When thou  
can'st first,

[would'st give me  
Thou strok'dst me, and mad'st much of me;

Water with berries in't; and teach me how  
To name the bigger light, and how the less,

That burn by day and night: and then I lov'd  
thee,

And show'd thee all the qualities o' the isle,  
The fresh springs, brine pits, barren place, and  
fertile;

Curs'd be I that did so!—All the charms  
Of Sycorax, toads, beetles, bats, light on you!  
For I am all the subjects that you have,  
Which first was mine own king: and here you  
sty me

In this hard rock, whiles you do keep from me  
The rest o' the island.

*Pro.* Thou most lying slave,  
Whom stripes may move, not kindness: I have  
us'd thee,

[thee  
Filt as thou art, with human care; and lodg'd  
In mine own cell, till thou didst seek to violate  
The honour of my child.

*Cal.* O ho, O ho!—would it had been done!  
Thou didst prevent me; I had peopled else  
This isle with Calibans.

*Pro.* Abhorred slave;  
Which any print of goodness will not take,  
Being capable of all ill! I pitied thee,  
Took pains to make thee speak, taught thee  
each hour

One thing or other: when thou didst not, savage,  
Know thine own meaning, but would'st gabble  
like

A thing most brutish, I endow'd thy purposes  
With words that made them known: But thy  
vile race,

[good natures  
Though thou didst learn, had that in't which  
Could not abide to be with; therefore wast thou  
Deserv'dly confin'd into this rock,

Who hadst deserv'd more than a prison.

*Cal.* You taught me language; and my pro-  
fit on't

[you,  
Is, I know how to curse: the red plague rid'  
For learning me your language!

*Pro.* Hag-seed, hence!  
Fetch us in fuel; and be quick, thou wert best,  
To answer other business. Shrug'st thou,  
malice?

If thou neglect'st, or dost unwillingly  
What I command, I'll rack thee with old  
cramps;

Fill all thy bones with aches; make thee roar,  
That beasts shall tremble at thy din.

*Cal.* No, pray thee!—  
I must obey: his art is of such power, [*Aside*  
It would control my dam's god, Setebos,  
And make a vassal of him.

*Pro.* So, slave, hence! [*Erit CAL.*]

*Re-enter ARIEL invisible, playing & singing:*

FERDINAND following him.

### ARIEL'S Song.

Come unto these yellow sands,  
And then take hands:

Court'sied when you have, and kiss'd,  
[The wild waves whist &]

Foot it feebly here and there;  
And, sweet sprites, the burden bear.

Hark, hark!  
Bur. Bowgh, wowgh. [*dispersedly*  
The water-dogs bark:

Do thou.

† Fairies.

† Destroy.

§ Still, silent.



*Bur.* Bowgh, wowgh. [*dispersedly.*  
*Hark, hark! I hear*  
*The strain of strutting chanticlere*  
*C, Cock-a-doodle-doo.*

*Fer.* Where should this music be? i' the air,  
 or the earth?

It sounds no more:—and sure, it waits upon  
 Some god o' the island. Sitting on a bank,  
 Weeping again the king my father's wreck,  
 This music crept by me upon the waters;  
 Allaying both their fury and my passion,  
 With its sweet air: thence I have follow'd it,  
 Or it hath drawn me rather:—But 'tis gone.  
 No, it begins again.

ARIEL sings.

*Full fathom five thy father lies,*  
*Of his bones are coral made;*  
*Those are pearls that were his eyes:*  
*Nothing of him that doth fade,*  
*But doth suffer a sea-change*  
*Into something rich and strange.*  
*Sea-nymphs hourly ring his knell.*  
*Hark! now I hear them,—ding-dong bell.*  
 [*Burden, ding-dong*]

*Fer.* The ditty does remember my drown'd  
 father.—

This is no mortal business, nor no sound [*me.*  
 That the earth owes:—I hear it now above

*Pro.* The fringed curtains of thine eye ad-  
 And say, what thou seest yond'. [*vance,*

*Mira.* What is't? a spirit?  
 Lord, how it looks about! Believe me, sir,  
 It carries a brave form:—But 'tis a spirit.

*Pro.* No, wench; it eats and sleeps, and  
 hath such senses

As we have, such: This gallant which thou seest,  
 Was in the wreck; and, but he's something  
 stain'd [*call him*

With grief, that's beauty's canker, thou might'st  
 A goodly person: he hath lost his fellows,  
 And strays about to find them.

*Mira.* I might call him  
 A thing divine; for nothing natural  
 I ever saw so noble.

*Pro.* It goes on, [*Aside.*  
 As my soul prompts it:—Spirit, fine spirit! I'll  
 free thee

Within two days for this.

*Fer.* Most sure, the goddess  
 On whom these airs attend!—Vouchsafe, my  
 prayer

May know if you remain upon this island;  
 And that you will some good instruction give,  
 How I may bear me here: My prime request,  
 Which I do last pronounce, is, O you wonder!  
 If you be maid, or no?

*Mira.* No wonder, sir;  
 But, certainly a maid.

*Fer.* My language! heavens!—  
 I am the best of them that speak this speech,  
 Were I but where 'tis spoken.

*Pro.* How! the best?  
 What wert thou, if the king of Naples heard thee?

*Fer.* A single thing, as I am now, that wonders  
 To hear thee speak of Naples: he does hear me;

And, that he does, I weep: myself am Naples;  
 Who with mine eyes, ne'er since at ebb, beheld  
 The king my father wreck'd!

*Mira.* Alack, for mercy!

*Fer.* Yes, faith, and all his lords; the duke  
 And his brave son, being twain. [*of Milan,*

*Pro.* The duke of Milan,  
 And his more braver daughter, could control  
 thee,

If now 'twere fit to do't:—At the first sight  
 [*Aside,*

They have chang'd eyes:—Delicate Ariel,  
 I'll set thee free for this!—A word, good sir;  
 I fear, you have done yourself some wrong:  
 a word. [*This*

*Mira.* Why speaks my father so ungently?  
 Is the third man that e'er I saw; the first  
 That e'er I sigh'd for: pity move my father  
 To be inclin'd my way!

*Fer.* O, if a virgin,  
 And your affection not gone forth, I'll make you  
 The queen of Naples.

*Pro.* Soft, sir; one word more.—  
 They are both in either's powers: but this  
 swift business [*Aside.*

I must uneasy make, lest too light winning  
 Make the prize light.—One word more! I  
 charge thee,

That thou attend me: thou dost here usurp  
 The name thou ow'st not; and hast put thyself  
 Upon this island, as a spy, to win it  
 From me, the lord on't.

*Fer.* No, as I am a man.

*Mira.* There's nothing ill can dwell in such  
 a temple:

If the ill spirit have so fair a house,  
 Good things will strive to dwell with't.

*Pro.* Follow me.—[*To FERD.*  
 Speak not you for him; he's a traitor.—Come.  
 I'll manacle thy neck and feet together:

Sea-water shalt thou drink, thy food shall be  
 The fresh-brook muscles, wither'd roots, and  
 Wherein the acorn cradled: Follow. [*husks,*

*Fer.* No;

I will resist such entertainment, till  
 Mine enemy has more power. [*He draws.*

*Mira.* O dear father,  
 Make not too rash a trial of him, for  
 He's gentle, and not fearful.]

*Pro.* What, I say,  
 My foot my tutor!—Put thy sword up, traitor;  
 Who mak'st a show, but dar'st not strike, thy  
 conscience [*ward;*

Is so possess'd with guilt: come from thy  
 For I can here disarm thee with this stick,  
 And make thy weapon drop.

*Mira.* Beseech you, father

*Pro.* Hence; hang not on my garments.

*Mira.* Sir, have pity;  
 I'll be his surety.

*Pro.* Silence: one word more  
 Shall make me chide thee, if not hate thee.  
 An advocate for an impostor? hush! [*What!*  
 Thou think'st there are no more such shapes  
 as lie, [*vouch!*

Having seen but him and Caliban: Foolish

To the most of men this is a Caliban,  
And they to him are angels.

*Mira.* My affections  
Are then most humble; I have no ambition  
To see a goodlier man.

*Pro.* Come on; obey: [*To FERD.*]  
Thy nerves are in their infancy again,  
And have no vigour in them.

*Fer.* So they are:  
My spirits, as in a dream, are all bound up.  
My father's loss, the weakness which I feel,  
The wreck of all my friends, or this man's  
threats,

To whom I am subdued, are but light to me,  
Might I but through my prison once a-day  
Behold this maid: all corners else o' the earth

Let liberty make use of; space enough  
Have I in such a prison.

*Pro.* It works:—Come on.  
Thou hast done well, fine Ariel!—Follow me.—  
[*To FERD. and MIRA.*]

Hark, what thou else shalt do me. [*To ARIEL.*]  
*Mira.* Be of comfort;

My father's of a better nature, sir,  
Than he appears by speech; this is unwonted,  
Which now came from him.

*Pro.* Thou shalt be as free  
As mountain winds: but then exactly do  
All points of my command.

*Ari.* To the syllable.  
*Pro.* Come, follow: speak not for him.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. Another part of the island.

*Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, GONZALO, ADRIAN, FRANCISCO, and others.*

*Gon.* Beseech you, sir, be merry: you have  
(So have we all) of joy; for our escape [cause  
Is much beyond our loss: Our hint of woe  
Is common; every day, some sailor's wife,  
The masters of some merchant, and the mer-  
chant,

Have just our theme of woe: but for the miracle,  
I mean our preservation, few in millions  
Can speak like us: then wisely, good sir, weigh  
Our sorrow with our comfort.

*Alon.* Pr'ythee, peace.

*Seb.* He receives comfort like cold porridge.

*Ant.* The visitor will not give him o'er so.

*Seb.* Look, he's winding up the watch of  
his wit; by and by it will strike.

*Gon.* Sir,—

*Seb.* One:—Tell.

*Gon.* When every grief is entertain'd, that's  
Comes to the entertainer— [offer'd,

*Seb.* A dollar.

*Gon.* Dolor comes to him, indeed; you  
have spoken truer than you purpos'd.

*Seb.* You have taken it wiselier than I  
meant you should.

*Gon.* Therefore, my lord,—

*Ant.* Fie, what a spendthrift is he of his  
tongue!

*Alon.* I pr'ythee, spare.

*Gon.* Well, I have done: But yet—

*Seb.* He will be talking.

*Ant.* Which of them, he, or Adrian, for a  
ood wager, first begins to crow?

*Seb.* The old cock.

*Ant.* The cockrel.

*Seb.* Done: The wager?

*Ant.* A laughter.

*Seb.* A match.

*Adr.* Though this island seem to be desert,—

*Seb.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Ant.* So, you've pay'd.

[*sible,—*

*Adr.* Uninhabitable, and almost inacces-

*Seb.* Yet.

*Adr.* Yet—

*Ant.* He could not miss it.

*Adr.* It must needs be of subtle, tender, and  
delicate temperance\*.

*Ant.* Temperance was a delicate wench.

*Seb.* Ay, and a subtle; as he most learnedly  
delivered.

*Adr.* The air breathes upon us here most  
sweetly.

*Seb.* As if it had lungs, and rotten ones.

*Ant.* Or, as 'twere perfumed by a fen.

*Gon.* Here is every thing advantageous to life.

*Ant.* True; save means to live.

*Seb.* Of that there's none, or little.

*Gon.* How lush† and lusty the grass looks! how green!

*Ant.* The ground, indeed, is tawny.

*Seb.* With an eye† of green in't.

*Ant.* He misses not much.

*Seb.* No; he doth but mistake the truth tota-ly.

*Gon.* But the rarity of it is (which is indeed  
almost beyond credit)—

*Seb.* As many vouch'd rarities are.

*Gon.* That our garments, being, as they  
were, drenched in the sea, hold, notwithstanding,  
their freshness and glosses; being  
rather new dy'd than stain'd with salt water.

*Ant.* If but one of his pockets could speak,  
would it not say, he lies?

*Seb.* Ay, or very falsely pocket up his report.

*Gon.* Methinks, our garments are now as  
fresh as when we put them on first in Afric,  
at the marriage of the king's fair daughter  
Claribel to the king of Tunis.

*Seb.* 'Twas a sweet marriage, and we prosper  
well in our return.

*Adr.* Tunis was never graced before with  
such a paragon to their queen.

*Gon.* Not since widow Dido's time.

*Ant.* Widow? a pox o' that! How came  
that widow in? Widow Dido!

*Seb.* What if he had said, widower Æneas  
too? good lord, how you take it!

*Adr.* Widow Dido, said you? you make me  
study of that: she was of Carthage, not of  
Tunis.

\* Temperature.

† Rank.

Shade of colour.

*Gon.* This Tunis, sir, was Carthage.

*Adr.* Carthage!

*Gon.* I assure you, Carthage.

*Ant.* His word is more than the miraculous harp.

*Seb.* He hath rais'd the wall and houses too.

*Ant.* What impossible matter will he make easy next?

*Seb.* I think he will carry this island home in his pocket, and give it his son for an apple.

*Ant.* And sowing the kernels of it in the sea, bring forth more islands.

*Gon.* Ay?

*Ant.* Why, in good time.

*Gon.* Sir, we were talking that our garments seem now as fresh, as when we were at Tunis at the marriage of your daughter, who is now queen.

*Ant.* And the rarest that e'er came there.

*Seb.* 'Bate, I beseech you, widow Dido.

*Ant.* O, widow Dido; ay, widow Dido.

*Gon.* Is not, sir, my doublet as fresh as the first day I wore it? I mean, in a sort\*.

*Ant.* That sort was well fish'd for.

*Gon.* When I wore it at your daughter's marriage? [against]

*Alon.* You cram these words into mine ears, The stomach of my sense: 'Would I had never Married my daughter there! for, coming thence, My son is lost; and, in my rate, she too, Who is so far from Italy remov'd, I ne'er again shall see her. O thou mine heir! Of Naples and of Milan, what strange fish Hath made his meal on thee!

*Fran.* Sir, he may live; I saw him beat the surges under him, And ride upon their backs; he trod the water, Whose enmity he flung aside, and breasted The surge most swollen that met him: his bold head

'Bove the contentious waves he kept, and oar'd Himself with his good arms in lusty stroke To the shore, that o'er his wave-worn basis bow'd,

As stooping to relieve him: I not doubt, He came alive to land.

*Alon.* No, no, he's gone.

*Seb.* Sir, you may thank yourself for this great loss; [daughter, That would not bless our Europe with your But rather lose her to an African; Where she, at least, is banish'd from your eye, Who hath cause to wet the grief on't.

*Alon.* Pr'ythee, peace.

*Seb.* You were kneel'd to, and importun'd otherwise

By all of us; and the fair soul herself Weigh'd, between lothness and obedience, at Which end of the beam she'd bow. We have lost your son,

I fear, for ever: Milan and Naples have More widows in them of this business' making, Than we bring men to comfort them: the fault's your own.

*Alon.* So is the dearest of the loss.

*Gon.* My lord Sebastian,

The truth you speak doth lack some gentleness, And time to speak it in: you rub the sore, When you should bring the plaster.

*Seb.* Very well.

*Ant.* And most chirurgeonly.

*Gon.* It is foul weather in us all, good sir, When you are cloudy.

*Seb.* Foul weather?

*Ant.* Very foul.

*Gon.* Had I a plantation of this isle my lord—

*Ant.* He'd sow it with nettle-seed.

*Seb.* Or docks or mallows.

*Gon.* And were the king of it, What would I do?

*Seb.* 'Scape being drunk, for want of wine.

*Gon.* I the commonwealth I would by contraries

Execute all things: for no kind of traffic Would I admit; no name of magistrate; Letters should not be known; no use of service, Of riches or of poverty; no contracts, Successions; bound of land, tillth, vineyard, none: No use of metal, corn, or wine, or oil; No occupation; all men idle, all; And women too; but innocent and pure: No sovereignty:—

*Seb.* And yet he would be king on't.

*Ant.* The latter end of his commonwealth forgets the beginning. [produce]

*Gon.* All things in common nature should Without sweat or endeavour: treason, felony, Sword, pike, knife, gun, or need of any engine†, Would I not have; but nature should bring forth, Of it's own kind, all foison‡, all abundance, To feed my innocent people.

*Seb.* No marrying 'mong his subjects?

*Ant.* None man; all idle; whores and knaves.

*Gon.* I would with such perfection govern, To excel the golden age. [sir,

*Seb.* Save his majesty!

*Ant.* Long live Gonzalo!

*Gon.* And, do you mark me, sir?—

*Alon.* Pr'ythee, no more: thou dost talk nothing to me.

*Gon.* I do well believe your highness; and did it to minister occasion to these gentlemen, who are of such sensible and nimble lungs, that they always use to laugh at nothing.

*Ant.* 'Twas you we laugh'd at.

*Gon.* Who, in this kind of merry fooling, am nothing to you; so you may continue, and laugh at nothing still.

*Ant.* What a blow was there given?

*Seb.* An it had not fallen flat-long.

*Gon.* You are gentlemen of brave mettle; you would lift the moon out of her sphere, if she would continue in it five weeks without changing.

*Enter ARIEL invisible, playing solemn music.*

*Seb.* We would do, and then go a bat-fowling.

*Ant.* Nay, good my lord, be not angry.

*Gon.* No, I warrant you; I will not adventure my discretion so weakly. Will you laugh me asleep, for I am very heavy?

\* Degree or quality.

† The rack.

‡ Plenty.



*Ant.* Go sleep, and hear us.  
*[All sleep but ALON. SEB. and ANT.]*  
*Alon.* What, ali so soon asleep! I wish mine eyes *[I find]*  
 Would, with themselves, shut up my thoughts: They are inclin'd to do so.  
*Seb.* Please you, sir, Do not omit the heavy offer of it: It seldom visits sorrow; when it doth, It is a comforter.  
*Ant.* We two, my lord, Will guard your person, while you take your And watch your safety. *[rest,*  
*Alon.* Thank you: Wond'rous heavy. *[ALONSO sleeps. Exit ARIEL.]*  
*Seb.* What a strange drowsiness possesses them!  
*Ant.* It is the quality o' the climate.  
*Seb.* Why Doth it not then our eye-lids sink? I find not Myself dispos'd to sleep.  
*Ant.* Nor I; my spirits are nimble. They fell together all, as by consent; They dropp'd, as by a thunder-stroke. What might, *[more:—]*  
 Worthy Sebastian?—O, what might?—No And yet, methinks, I see it in thy face, What thou should'st be: the occasion speaks thee; and My strong imagination sees a crown Dropping upon thy head.  
*Seb.* What, art thou waking?  
*Ant.* Do you not hear me speak?  
*Seb.* I do; and, surely, It is a sleepy language; and thou speak'st Out of thy sleep: What is it thou didst say? This is a strange repose, to be asleep With eyes wide open; standing, speaking, And yet so fast asleep. *[moving,*  
*Ant.* Noble Sebastian, Then let'st thy fortune sleep—die rather; Whiles thou art waking. *[wink'st]*  
*Seb.* Thou dost snore distinctly; There's meaning in thy snores.  
*Ant.* I am more serious than my custom: you Must be so too, if heed me; which to do, Trebles thee o'er.  
*Seb.* Well; I am standing water.  
*Ant.* I'll teach you how to flow.  
*Seb.* Do so: to ebb, Hereditary sloth instructs me.  
*Ant.* O, If you but knew how you the purpose cherish, Whiles thus you mock it! how, in stripping it, You more invest it! Ebbing men, indeed, Most often do so near the bottom run, By their own fear, or sloth.  
*Seb.* Pr'ythee, say on: The setting of thine eye and cheek proclaim A matter from thee; and a birth, indeed, Which throes thee much to yield.  
*Ant.* Thus, sir: Although this lord of weak remembrance, this *[Who shall be of as little memory, When he is earth'd,]* hath here almost persuaded

*[For he's a spirit of persuasion only,]*  
 The king, his son's alive; 'tis as impossible That he's undrown'd, as he that sleeps here,  
*Seb.* I have no hope *[swims.]*  
 That he's undrown'd.  
*Ant.* O, out of that no hope, What great hope have you! no hope, that way, is Another way so high an hope, that even Ambition cannot pierce a wink beyond, But doubts discovery there. Will you grant, That Ferdinand is drown'd? *[with me,*  
*Seb.* He's gone.  
*Ant.* Then tell me, Who's the next heir of Naples?  
*Seb.* Claribel.  
*Ant.* She that is queen of Tunis; she that dwells *[Naples]*  
 Ten leagues beyond man's life; she that from Can have no note, unless the sun were post, *(The man i' the moon's too slow,)* till new-born clins  
 Be rough and razorable: she, from whom We were all sea-swallow'd, though some cast again;  
 And, by that, destin'd to perform an act, Whereof what's past is prologue; what to come, In yours and my discharge.  
*Seb.* What stuff is this? how say you? 'Tis true, my brother's daughter's queen of Tunis;  
 So is she heir of Naples; 'twixt which regions There is some space.  
*Ant.* A space whose every cubit Seems to cry out, *How shall that Claribel Measure us back to Naples?*—Keep in Tunis, And let Sebastian wake!—Say, this were death That now hath seized them; why they were no worse *[Naples]*  
 Than now they are: There be, that can rule As well as he that sleeps; lords, that can prate As amply, and unnecessarily, As this Gonzalo: I myself could make A chough\* of as deep chat. O, that you bore The mind that I do! what a sleep were this; For your advancement! Do you understand me,  
*Seb.* Methinks I do.  
*Ant.* And how does your content Tender your own good fortune?  
*Seb.* I remember, You did supplant your brother Prospero.  
*Ant.* True: And, look, how well my garments sit upon me? Much feater than before: My brother's servants Were then my fellows, now they are my men.  
*Seb.* But, for your conscience— *[kibe,*  
*Ant.* Ay, sir, where lies that? if it were a 'Twould put me to my slipper; but I feel not This deity in my bosom: twenty consciences, That stand 'twixt me and Milan, candied be they, And melt, ere they molest! Here lies your brother,  
 No better than the earth he lies upon, If he were that which now he's like; whom I, With this obedient steel, three inches of it, Can lay to bed for ever: whiles you, doing thus

To the perpetual wink for aye\* might put  
This ancient morsel, this sir Prudence, who  
Should not upbraid our course. For all the rest,  
They'll take suggestion†, as a cat laps milk;  
They'll tell the clock to any business that  
We say befits the hour.

*Seb.* Thy case, dear friend,  
Shall be my precedent; as thou got'st Milan,  
I'll come by Naples. Draw thy sword: one  
stroke [pay'st;  
Shall free thee from the tribute which thou  
And I the king shall love thee.

*Ant.* Draw together:  
And when I rear my hand, do you the like,  
To fall it on Gonzalo.

*Seb.* O, but one word.  
[*They converse apart.*]

*Music. Re-enter ARIEL, invisible.*

*Ari.* My master through his art foresees the  
danger [forth,  
That these, his friends, are in; and sends me  
(For else his project dies,) to keep them living.

[*Sings in GONZALO'S ear.*]

*While you here do snoring lie,  
Open-eyed conspiracy  
His time doth take:  
If of life you keep a care,  
Shake off slumber, and beware.  
Awake! awake!*

*Ant.* Then let us both be sudden.

*Gon.* Now, good angels, preserve the king!  
[*They wake.*]

*Alon.* Why, how now, ho! awake! Why  
are you drawn?

Wherefore this ghastly looking?

*Gon.* What's the matter?

*Seb.* Whiles we stood here securing your  
repose, [lowing,  
Even now, we heard a hollow burst of bel-  
like bulls, or rather lions; did it not wake you?  
It struck mine ear most terribly.

*Alon.* I heard nothing.

*Ant.* O, 'twas a din to fright a monster's ear;  
To make an earthquake! sure it was the roar  
Of a whole herd of lions.

*Alon.* Heard you this, Gonzalo?

*Gon.* Upon mine honour, sir, I heard a hum-  
ming, [me:

And that a strange one too, which did awake  
Ishak'd you, sir, and cry'd; as mine eyes open'd,  
I saw their weapons drawn:—there was a noise,  
That's verity: 'Best stand upon our guard;  
Or that we quit this place: let's draw our  
weapons. [further search

*Alon.* Lead off this ground; and let's make  
For my poor son.

*Gon.* Heavens keep him from these beasts!  
For he is, sure, i' the island.

*Alon.* Lead away.

*Ari.* Prospero, my lord, shall know what I  
have done. [Aside.

So king, go safely on to seek thy son. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. Another part of the island.

*Enter CALIBAN, with a burden of wood.*

*A noise of thunder heard.*

*Cal.* All the infections that the sun sucks up  
From bogs, fens, flats, on Prosper fall, and  
make him  
By inch-meal a disease! His spirits hear me.  
And yet I needs must curse. But they'll nor  
pinch, [mire,  
Fright me with urchin shows, pitch me i' the  
Nor lead me, like a fire-brand, in the dark  
Out of my way, unless he bid them; but  
For every trifle are they set upon me: [me,  
Sometime like apes, that mow† and chatter at  
And after bite me; then like hedge-hogs, which  
Lie tumbling in my bare-foot way, and mount  
Their prick's at my foot-fall; sometime am I  
All wound with adders, who, with cloven  
tongues,  
Do hiss me into madness:—Lo! now! lo!

*Enter TRINCULO.*

Here comes a spirit of his; and to torment me,  
For bringing wood in slowly: I'll fall flat;  
Perchance he will not mind me.

*Trin.* Here's neither bush nor shrub, to bear  
off any weather at all, and another storm brew-  
ing; I hear it sing i' the wind: yond' same  
black cloud, yond' huge one, looks like a foul  
bumbard; that would shed his liquor. If it  
should thunder, as it did before, I know not  
where to hide my head: yond' same cloud  
cannot choose but fall by pailfuls.—What have  
we here? a man or a fish? Dead or alive? A  
fish: he smells like a fish; a very ancient and  
fish-like smell; a kind of, not of the newest,  
Poor-John. A strange fish! Were I in England  
now, (as once I was,) and had but this fish  
painted, not a holiday-fool there but would  
give a piece of silver: there would this monster  
make a man; any strange beast there makes a  
man: when they will not give a doit to relieve  
a lame beggar, they will lay out ten to see a  
dead Indian. Legg'd like a man! and his fins  
like arms! Warm, o' my troth! I do now let  
loose my opinion, hold it no longer; this is no  
fish, but an islander, that hath lately suffered  
by a thunderbolt. [*Thunder.*] Alas! the storm  
is come again: my best way is to creep under  
his gaberdine; there is no other shelter here-  
about: Misery acquaints a man with strange  
bed-fellows. I will here shroud, till the dregs  
of the storm be past.

*Enter STEPHANO, singing; a bottle in his  
hand.*

*Ste.* I shall no more to sea, to sea,  
Here shall I die a-shore;—

This is a very scurvy tune to sing at a man's  
funeral: Well, here's my comfort. [*Drinks.*]

\* Ever.

† Any hint.

‡ Make mouths.

§ A black jack of leather, to hold beer.

¶ The frock of a peasant.



*The master, the swabber, the boatswain, and I,  
The gunner, and his mate,  
Lord Mull, Meg, and Marian, and Margery,  
But none of us cared for Kate:  
For she had a tongue with a tang,  
Would cry to a sailor, Go, hang:  
She lov'd not the savour of tar nor of pitch,  
Yet a tailor might scratch her where-e'er  
she did itch:*

*Then to sea, boys, and let her go hang.*

This is a scurvy tone too: But here's my comfort. [Drinks.]

*Cal.* Do not torment me: O!

*Ste.* What's the matter? Have we devils here? Do you put tricks upon us with savages, and men of Inde\*! Ha! I have not 'scaped drowning, to be afraid now of your four legs; for it hath been said, As proper a man as ever went on four legs, cannot make him give ground: and it shall be said so again, whilst Stephano breathes at nostrils.

*Cal.* The spirit torments me: O!

*Ste.* This is some monster of the isle, with four legs; who hath got, as I take it, an ague: Where the devil should he learn our language? I will give him some relief, if it be but for that: If I can recover him, and keep him tame, and get to Naples with him, he's a present for any emperor that ever trode on neat's leather.

*Cal.* Do not torment me, prythee; I'll bring my wood home faster.

*Ste.* He's in his fit now; and does not talk after the wisest. He shall taste of my bottle: if he have never drunk wine afore, it will go near to remove his fit: if I can recover him, and keep him tame, I will not take too much for him: he shall pay for him that hath him, and that soundly.

*Cal.* Thou dost me yet but little hurt; thou wilt anon, I know it by thy trembling: Now prosper works upon thee.

*Ste.* Come on your ways; open your mouth; here is that which will give language to you, cat; open your mouth: this will shake your shaking, I can tell you, and that soundly: you cannot tell who's your friend: open your chaps again.

*Trin.* I should know that voice: It should be—But he is drowned; and these are devils: O! defend me!

*Ste.* Four legs, and two voices; a most delicate monster! His forward voice now is to speak well of his friend; his backward voice is to utter foul speeches, and to detract. If all the wine in my bottle will recover him, I will help his ague: Come,—Amen! I will pour some in thy other mouth.

*Trin.* Stephano,—

*Ste.* Both thy other mouth call me? Mercy! mercy! This is a devil, and no monster: I will leave him; I have no long spoon.

*Trin.* Stephano!—if thou beest Stephano, touch me, and speak to me; for I am Trinculo;—be not afraid,—thy good friend Trinculo.

*Ste.* If thou beest Trinculo, come forth; I'll put thee by the lesser legs: if any be Trinculo's legs, these are they. Thou art very Trin-

culo, indeed: How cam'st thou to be the siege of this moon-calf? Can he vent Trinculos?

*Trin.* I took him to be killed with a thunder-stroke:—But art thou not drowned, Stephano? I hope now, thou art not drowned. Is the storm overblown? I hid me under the dead moon-calf's gaberline, for fear of the storm: And art thou living, Stephano? O Stephano, two Neapolitans 'scaped!

*Ste.* Prythee, do not turn me about; my stomach is not constant. [spritizes.]

*Cal.* These be fine things, an if they be not: That's a brave god, and bears celestial liquor: I will kneel to him.

*Ste.* How did'st thou 'scape? How cam'st thou hither? swear by this bottle, how thou cam'st hither. I escaped upon a butt of sack, which the sailors heaved over-board, by this bottle! which I made of the bark of a tree, with mine own hands, since I was cast ashore.

*Cal.* I'll swear, upon that bottle, to be thy True subject; for the liquor is not earthly.

*Ste.* Here; swear then how thou escap'dst.

*Trin.* Swam ashore, man, like a duck; I can swim like a duck, I'll be sworn.

*Ste.* Here, kiss the book: Though thou canst swim like a duck, thou art made like a goose.

*Trin.* O Stephano, hast any more of this?

*Ste.* The whole butt, man; my cellar is in a rock by the sea-side, where my wine is hid. How now, moon-calf? how does thine ague?

*Cal.* Hast thou not dropped from heaven?

*Ste.* Out o' the moon, I do assure thee: I was the man in the moon, when time was.

*Cal.* I have seen thee in her, and I do adore thee;

My mistress shewed me thee, thy dog, and bush.

*Ste.* Come, swear to that; kiss the book: I will furnish it anon with new contents: swear.

*Trin.* By this good light, this is a very shallow monster:—I afraid of him?—a very weak monster:—The man i' the moon?—a most poor credulous monster:—Well drawn, monster, in good sooth.

*Cal.* I'll shew thee every fertile inch o' the island;

And kiss thy foot: I prythee, be my god.

*Trin.* By this light, a most pertidious and drunken monster; when his god's asleep, he'll rob his bottle. [subject.]

*Cal.* I'll kiss thy foot: I'll swear myself thy Ste. Come on then; down, and swear.

*Trin.* I shall laugh myself to death at this puppy-headed monster: A most scurvy monster! I could find in my heart to beat him,—

*Ste.* Come, kiss.

*Trin.*—but that the poor monster's in drink! An abominable monster!

*Cal.* I'll shew thee the best springs; I'll pluck thee berries;

I'll fish for thee, and get thee wood enough. A plague upon the tyrant that I serve!

I'll bear him no more sticks, but follow thee; thou wond'rous man.

*Trin.* A most ridiculous monster; to make a wonder of a poor drunkard.

*Cal.* I prythee, let me bring thee where crabs grow;

And I with my long nails will dig thee pig-nuts; Shew thee a jay's nest, and instruct thee how To snare the nimble marmozet; I'll bring thee To clattering filberds, and sometimes I'll get thee

Young sea-melts\* from the rock: Wilt thou go with me?

*Ste.* I prythee now, lead the way, without any more talking.—Trinculo, the king and all our company else being drowned, we will inherit here.—Here; bear my bottle. Fellow Trinculo, we'll fill him by and by again.

*Cal.* Farewell, master; farewell, farewell. [*Sings drunkenly.*]

*Trin.* A howling monster; a drunken monster.

*Cal.* No more dams I'll make for fish;

Nor fetch in firing

At requiring,

Nor scrape trenchering, nor wash dish;

'Ban' Ban, Ca—Caliban,

Has a new master—get a new man.

Freedom, hey-day! hey-day, freedom! freedom, hey-day, freedom!

*Ste.* O brave monster! lead the way.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. Before Prospero's Cell.

*Enter FERDINAND, bearing a log.*

*Fer.* There be some sports are painful; but their labour

Delight in them sets off: some kinds of baseness Are nobly undergone; and most poor matters Point to rich ends. This my mean task would be As heavy to me, as 'tis odious; but

The mistress, which I serve, quickens what's dead,

And makes my labours pleasures: O, she is Ten times more gentle than her father's crabbed; And he's composed of harshness. I must remove Some thousands of these logs, and pile them up, Upon a sore injunction: My sweet mistress Weeps when she sees me work; and says, such baseness

Had ne'er like executor. I forget: But these sweet thoughts do even refresh my Most busy-less, when I do it. [*labours;*]

*Enter MIRANDA; and PROSPERO at a distance.*

*Mira.* Alas, now! pray you, Work not so hard: I would the lightning had Burnt up those logs, that you are enjoind to pile! Pray, set it down, and rest you: when this burns, I'll weep for having wearied you: My father is hard at study; pray now, rest yourself; He's safe for these three hours.

*Fer.* O most dear mistress, The sun will set, before I shall discharge What I must strive to do.

*Mira.* If you'll sit down, I'll bear your logs the while: Pray, give me that; I'll carry it to the pile.

*Fer.* No, precious creature: I had rather crack my sinews, break my back, Than you should such dishonour undergo, While I sit lazy by.

*Mira.* It would become me As well as it does you: and I should do it With much more ease; for my good will is to it, And yours against.

*Pro.* Poor worm! thou art infected; This visitation shews it.

*Mira.* You look wearily.

*Fer.* No, noble mistress; 'tis fresh morning with me,

When you are by at night. I do beseech you, (Chiefly, that I might set it in my prayers,) What is your name?

*Mira.*

Miranda:—O my father,

I have broke your heart to say so!

*Fer.* Admired Miranda!

Indeed, the top of admiration; worth

What's dearest to the world! Full many a lady

I have ey'd with best regard; and many a time

The harmony of their tongues hath into bondage

Brought my too diligent ear. For several virtues

Have I lik'd several women; never any

With so full soul, but some defect in her

Did quarrel with the noblest grace she owed†, And put it to the foil: But you, O you,

So perfect, and so peerless, are created

Of every creature's best.

*Mira.*

I do not know

One of my sex; no woman's face remember,

Save, from my glass, mine own; nor have I seen

More than I may call men, than you, good friend,

And my dear father: how features are abroad,

I am skill-less of; but, by my modesty,

(The jewel in my dower,) I would not wish

Any companion in the world but you;

Nor can imagination form a shape,

Besides yourself, to like of: but I prattle

Something too wildly, and my father's precepts

Therein forget.

*Fer.*

I am, in my condition,

A prince, Miranda; I do think, a king;

(I would not so!) and would no more endure

This wooden slavery, than I would suffer

The flesh-fly blow my mouth.—Hear my soul!

The very instant that I saw you did [*speak;*—

My heart fly to your service; there resides,

To make me slave to it; and, for your sake,

Am I this patient log-man.

*Mira.*

Do you love me?

*Fer.* O heaven, O earth, bear witness to this sound,

And crown what I profess with kind event,

If I speak true; if hollowly, invert

What best is boded me, to mischief! I,

Beyond all limit of what else § I the world,

Do love, prize, honour you.

\* Sea-gulls.

† Command.

Own'd.

§ Whatsoever.

*Mira.* I am a fool,  
To weep at what I am glad of.  
*Pro.* Fair encounter  
Of two most rare affections: Heavens rain  
On that which breeds between them! [grace]

*Fer.* Wherefore weep you?

*Mira.* At mine unworthiness, that dare not  
offer

What I desire to give; and much less take,  
What I shall die to want: But this is trifling;  
And all the more it seeks to hide itself,  
The bigger bulk it shews. Hence, bashful  
cunning!

And prompt me, plain and holy innocence!  
I am your wife, if you will marry me;  
If not, I'll die your maid: to be your fellow  
You may deny me; but I'll be your servant,  
Whether you will or no.

*Fer.* My mistress, dearest,  
And I thus humble ever.

*Mira.* My husband then?

*Fer.* Ay, with a heart as willing  
As bondage e'er of freedom: here's my hand.

*Mira.* And mine, with my heart in't. And  
Till half an hour hence. [now farewell,

*Fer.* A thousand! thousand!  
[*Exeunt FER. and MIRA.*]

*Pro.* So glad of this as they, I cannot be,  
Who are surpris'd with all; but my rejoicing  
At nothing can be more. I'll to my book;  
For yet, ere supper time, must I perform  
Much business appertaining. [Exit.]

## SCENE II.

*Another part of the island.*

*Enter STEPHANO and TRINCULO; CALIBAN  
following with a bottle.*

*Ste.* Tell not me;—when the lutt' it out,  
we will drink water; not a drop before:  
therefore bear up, and board 'em: Servant-  
monster, drink to me.

*Trin.* Servant-monster? the folly of this  
island! They say, there's but five upon this  
isle: we are three of them; if the other two  
be brained like us, the state totters.

*Ste.* Drink, servant-monster, when I bid  
thee; thy eyes are almost set in thy head.

*Trin.* Where should they be set else? he  
were a brave monster indeed, if they were set  
in his tail.

*Ste.* My man-monster hath drowned his  
tongue in sack: for my part, the sea cannot  
drown me: I swam, ere I could recover the  
shore, five-and-thirty leagues, off and on,  
by this light.—Thou shalt be my lieutenant,  
monster, or my standard.

*Trin.* Your lieutenant, if you list; he's no  
standard.

*Ste.* We'll not run, monsieur monster.

*Trin.* Nor go neither: but you'll lie, like  
dogs; and yet say nothing neither.

*Ste.* Moon-calf, speak once in thy life, if  
thou beest a good moon-calf.

*Cal.* How does thy honour? Let me lick thy  
I'll not serve him, he is not valiant. [shoe:]

*Trin.* Thou liest, most ignorant monster;

I am in case to juggle a constable: Why, thou  
deboshed\* fish thou, was there ever man as  
coward, that hath drunk so much sack as  
to-day? Wilt thou tell a monstrous lie, being  
but half a fish, and half a monster?

*Cal.* Lo, how he mocks me! wilt thou let  
him, my lord?

*Trin.* Lord, quoth he!—that a monster  
should be such a natural!

*Cal.* Lo, lo, again! bite him to death,  
pr'ythee.

*Ste.* Trinculo keep a good tongue in your  
head; if you prove a mutineer, the next tree.  
—The poor monster's my subject, and he shall  
not suffer indignity. [pleas'd]

*Cal.* I thank my noble lord. Wilt thou be  
To hearken once again the suit I made thee?

*Ste.* Marry will I: kneel, and repeat it; I  
will stand, and so shall Trinculo.

*Enter ARIEL, invisible.*

*Cal.* As I told thee  
Before, I am subject to a tyrant;  
A sorcerer, that by his cunning hath  
Cheated me of this island.

*Ari.* Thou liest. Thou liest.

*Cal.* Thou liest, thou jesting monkey, thou;  
I would, my valiant master would destroy thee:  
I do not lie.

*Ste.* Trinculo, if you trouble him any more  
in his tale, by this hand, I will supplant some  
of your teeth.

*Trin.* Why, I said nothing.  
*Ste.* Mum then, and no more.—[To *Caliban*,]—Proceed.

*Cal.* I say, by sorcery he got this isle;  
From me he got it. If thy greatness will  
Revenge it on him—for, I know, thou dar'st;  
But this thing dare not.

*Ste.* That's most certain. [thee.]

*Cal.* Thou shalt be lord of it, and I'll serve  
*Ste.* How now shall this be compassed?  
Canst thou bring me to the party? [asleep,

*Cal.* Yea, yea, my lord; I'll yield him thee  
Where thou may'st knock a nail into his head.

*Ari.* Thou liest, thou canst not [patch!—

*Cal.* What a pied ninny's this? Thou scurvy  
I do beseech thy greatness, give him blows,  
And take his bottle from him: when that's gone,  
He shall drink nought but brine; for I'll not  
Where the quick freshes† are. [shew him]

*Ste.* Trinculo, run into no further danger:  
interrupt the monster one word further, and,  
by this hand, I'll turn my mercy out of doors,  
and make a stock-fish of thee.

*Trin.* Why, what did I? I did nothing;  
I'll go further off.

*Ste.* Didst thou not say, he lied?

*Ari.* Thou liest.

*Ste.* Do I so? take thou that [strikes him.  
As you like this, give me the lie another time.

*Trin.* I did not give the lie:—Out o' your  
wits, and hearing too?—A pox o' your  
bottle! this can sack, and drinking do—A  
murrain on your monster, and the devil take  
your fingers!

\* Debauch'd. † Alluding to Trinculo's party-coloured dress. ‡ Springs.



*Cal.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Ste.* Now, forward with your tale. Pr'ythee stand farther off.

*Cal.* Beat him enough: after a little time, I'll beat him too.

*Ste.* Stand further.—Come, proceed

*Cal.* Why, as I told thee, 'tis a custom with him 't' the afternoon to sleep: there thou may'st beat him,

Having first seiz'd his books; or with a log batter his skull, or paunch him with a stake, Or cut his wezand \* with thy knife: Remember, First to possess his books; for without them He's but a sot, as I am, nor hath not One spirit to command: They all do hate him, As rootedly as I: Burn but his books; He has brave utensils, (for so he calls them,) Which, when he has a house, he'll deck withal. And that most deeply to consider, is The beauty of his daughter; he himself Calls her a non-pareil: I ne'er saw woman, But only Sycorax my dam, and she; But she as far surpasseth Sycorax, As greatest does least.

*Ste.* Is it so brave a lass?

*Cal.* Ay, lord; she will become thy bed, I And bring thee forth brave brood. [warrant,

*Ste.* Monster, I will kill this man: his daughter and I will be king and queen; (save our graces!) and Trinculo and myself shall be viceroys:—Dost thou like the plot, Trinculo?

*Trin.* Excellent.

*Ste.* Give me thy hand; I am sorry I beat thee: but, while thou livest, keep a good tongue in thy head.

*Cal.* Within this half hour will he be asleep; Will thou destroy him then?

*Ste.* Ay, on mine honour.

*Ari.* This will I tell my master. [pleasure;

*Cal.* Thou mak'st me merry: I am full of Let us be jocund: Will you troll the catch you taught me but while-ere?

*Ste.* At thy request, monster, I will do reason, any reason: Come on, Trinculo, let us sing. [Sings.

*Flout 'em, and skout 'em; and skout 'em, and flout 'em;*

*Thought is free.*

*Cal.* That's not the tune.

[*ARIEL* plays the tune on a tabor and pipe.

*Ste.* What is this same?

*Trin.* This is the tune of our catch, played by the picture of No-body.

*Ste.* If thou beest a man, shew thyself in thy likeness: if thou beest a devil, teach't as thou list.

*Trin.* O, forgive me my sin!

*Ste.* He that dies, pays all debts: I defy thee:—Mercy upon us!

*Cal.* Art thou afraid?

*Ste.* No, monster, not I.

*Cal.* Be not afeard; the isle is full of noises, Sounds, and sweet airs, that give delight, and hurt not.

Sometimes a thousand twangling instruments

Will hum about mine ears, and sometimes voices,

That, if I then had wak'd after long sleep, Will make me sleep again: and then in dreaming,

The clouds, methought, would open, and shew Ready to drop upon me; that, when I wak'd, I cry'd to dream again.

*Ste.* This will prove a brave kingdom to me, where I shall have my music for nothing.

*Cal.* When Prospero is destroyed.

*Ste.* That shall be by and by: I remember the story.

*Trin.* The sound is going away: let's follow it, and after, do our work.

*Ste.* Lead, monster; we'll follow.—would, I could see this taborer: he lays it on.

*Trin.* Wilt come? I'll follow, Stephano.

[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III.

#### Another part of the island.

*Enter ALONSO, SEBASTIAN, ANTONIO, GONZALO, ADRIAN, FRANCISCO, and others.*

*Gon.* By'r lakin t, I can go no further, sir; My old bones ache: here's a maze trod, indeed, Through forth-rights, and meanders! by your I needs must rest me. [patience,

*Alon.* Old lord, I cannot blame thee, Who am myself attach'd with weariness, To the dulling of my spirits: sit down, and rest. Even here I will put off my hope, and keep it No longer for my flatterer: he is drown'd, Whom thus we stray to find; and the sea mocks Our frustrate search on land: Well, let him go.

*Ant.* I am right glad that he's so out of hope.

[*Aside to SEBASTIAN.*

Do not, for one repulse, forego the purpose That you resolv'd to effect.

*Seb.* The next advantage Will we take thoroughly.

*Ant.* Let it be to-night; For, now they are oppress'd with travel, they Will not, nor cannot, use such vigilance, As when they are fresh.

*Seb.* I say to-night: no more.

*Solemn and strange music; and PROSPERO above, invisible. Enter several strange Shapes, bringing in a banquet; they dance about it with gentle actions of salutation; and, inviting the king, &c., to eat, they depart.*

*Alon.* What harmony is this? my good friends, hark!

*Gon.* Marvellous sweet music!

*Alon.* Give us kind keepers, heavens!

What were these?

*Seb.* A living drollery! Now I will believe That there are unicorns; that in Arabia There is one tree, the phoenix' throne; one At this hour reigning there. [phoenix

*Ant.* I'll believe both;

And what does else want credit, come to me, And I'll be sworn 'tis true: Travellers ne'er Though fools at home condemn them. [did lie,

\* Throat.

† Our lady

‡ Show.



*Gon.* If in Naples I should report this new, would they believe If I should say I saw such islanders, [me?] (For, certes \*, these are people of the island,) Who, though they are of monstrous shape, yet, note,

Their manners are more gentle-kind, than of Our human generation you shall find Many, nay, almost any.

*Pro.* Honest lord, Thou hast said well; for some of you there present,

Are worse than devils. [Aside.

*Alon.* I cannot too much muse†, Such shapes, such gesture, and such sound, expressing

(Although they want the use of tongue), a kind Of excellent dumb discourse.

*Pro.* Praise in departing. [Aside.

*Fran.* They vanish'd strangely.

*Seb.* No matter, since They have left their viands behind; for we have stomachs.—

Will't please you taste of what is here?

*Alon.* Not I.

*Gon.* Faith, sir, you need not fear: When we were boys,

Who would believe that there were mountaineers,

Dew-lapp'd like bulls, whose throats had hanging at them

Wallets of flesh? or that there were such men, Whose heads stood in their breasts? which now we find,

Each putter-out on five for one, will bring us Good warrant of.

*Alon.* I will stand to, and feed, Although my last:—No matter, since I feel The best is past:—Brother, my lord the duke, Stand too, and do as we.

*Thunder and lightning. Enter ARIEL like a harpy; claps his wings upon the table, and, with a quaint device, the banquet vanishes.*

*Ari.* You are three men of sin, whom destiny (That hath to instrument this lower world, And what is in't,) the never-surfeited sea Hath caused to belch up; and on this island Where man doth not inhabit; you 'mongst men [mad;

Being most unfit to live, I have made you [Seeing ALON. SEB. &c., draw their swords. And even with such like valour, men hang and drown,

Their proper selves. You fools! I, and my fellows Are ministers of fate; the elements [lows Of whom your swords are temper'd, may as well

Wound the loud winds, or with bemock'd-at Kill the still-closing waters, as diminish [stabs

One dowle‡ that's in my plume; my fellow ministers

Are like invulnerable: if you could hurt, Your swords are now too massy for your strengths,

And will not be uplifted: But, remember, (For that's my business to you,) that you three From Milan did supplant good Prospero; Expos'd unto the sea, which bath requit it, Him, and his innocent child: for which foul deed The powers, delaying, not forgetting, have Incens'd the seas and shores, yea all the creatures, Against your peace: Thee, of thy son, Alonso, They have bereft; and do pronounce by me, Lingering perdition (worse than any death Can be at once,) shall step by step attend You and your ways; whose wraths to guard you from [falls

(Which here, in this most desolate isle, else Upon your heads,) is nothing, but heart's sor- And a clear§ life ensuing. [row,

*He vanishes in thunder: then, to soft music, enter the Shapes again, and dance with mops and moves and carry out the table.*

*Pro.* [Aside.] Bravely the figure of this harpy hast thou Perform'd, my Ariel; a grace it had, devouring: Of my instruction hast thou nothing 'bated, In what thou hadst to say: so, with good life, And observation strange, my meaner ministers Their several kinds have done: my high charms work,

And these mine enemies, are all knit up In their distractions: they now are in my power; And in these fits I leave them, whilst I visit Young Ferdinand, (whom they suppose is And his and my loved darling. [drown'd,)

[Exit PROSPERO from above.

*Gon.* I' the name of something holy, sir, why stand you In this strange state?

*Alon.* O, it is monstrous! monstrous! Methought, the billows spoke, and told me of it; The winds did sing it to me; and the thunder, That deep and dreadful organ-pipe, pronounc'd The name of Prosper; it did bass my trespass. Therefore my son i' the ooze is bedded, and I'll seek him deeper than e'er plummettounded, And with him there lie mudded. [Exit.

*Seb.* But one fiend at a time, I'll fight their legions o'er.

*Ant.* I'll be thy second. [Exit SEB. and ANT.

*Gon.* All three of them are desperate; their great guilt, Like poison given to work a great time after, Now 'gins to bite the spirits:—I do beseech you That are of suppler joints, follow them swiftly, And hinder them from what this ecstasy|| May now provoke them to.

*Adr.* Follow, I pray you. [Exit.

\* Certainly. † Wonder. ‡ Down. § Pure, blameless. || Alienation of mind.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *Before Prospero's cell.*

*Enter PROSPERO, FERDINAND, and MIRANDA.*

*Pro.* If I have too austere punish'd you,  
Your compensation makes amends; for I  
Have given you here a thread of mine own life,  
As that for which I live; whom once again  
I tender to thy hand: all thy vexations  
Were but my trials of thy love, and thou  
Hast strangely stood the test: here afore  
Heaven,

I ratify this my rich gift. O Ferdinand,  
Do not smile at me, that I boast her off,  
For thou shalt find she will outstrip all praise,  
And make it halt behind her.

*Fer.* I do believe it  
Against an oracle. [*quision*]

*Pro.* Then, as my gift, and thine own ac-  
Worthily purchased, take my daughter: But  
Thou dost break her virgin knot before  
All sanctimonious ceremonies may  
With full and holy rite be minister'd,  
No sweet aspersion \* shall the heavens let fall  
To make this contract grow; but barren hate,  
Sour-ey'd disdain, and discord, shall bestrew  
The union of your bed with weeds so loathly,  
That you shall hate it both: therefore, take  
As Hymen's lamps shall light you. [*heed,*

*Fer.* As I hope  
For quiet days, fair issue, and long life,  
With such love as 'tis now; the murkiest den,  
The most opportune place, the strong'st sug-  
gestion

Or worse Genius can, shall never melt  
My honour into lust; to take away  
The edge of that day's celebration,  
When I shall think, or Phœbus' steeds are  
To night kept chain'd below. [*founder'd,*

*Pro.* Fairly spoke:  
So then, and talk with her, she is thine own.—  
What, Ariel; my industrious servant Ariel!

*Enter ARIEL.*

*Ari.* What would my potent master? here I am.

*Pro.* Thou and thy meaner fellows your  
last service

And worthily perform; and I must use you  
To such another trick: go, bring the rabble,  
Over whom I give thee power, here, to this place:  
To teem them to quick motion; for I must  
Bestow upon the eyes of this young couple  
The vanity of mine art; it is my promise,  
And they expect it from me.

*Ari.* Presently?

*Pro.* Ay, with a twink.

*Ari.* Before you can say, *Come, and go,*

And be the twice; and cry, *so, so;*

Each one, tripping on his toe,  
Will be here with mop and mow.

Do you love me, master? no.

*Pro.* Deirly, my delicate Ariel: Do not ap-  
proach, thou dost hear me call.

*Ari.* Well I conceive. [*Exit*

*Pro.* Look, thou be true; do not give dalliance  
Too much the rein; the strongest oaths are straw  
To the fire if the blood: be more abstemious,  
Or else, good night, your vow!

*Fer.* I warrant you, sir;  
The white cold virgin snow upon my heart  
Abates the ardour of my liver

*Pro.* Well.—  
Now come, my Ariel; bring a corollary †,  
Rather than want a spirit; appear, and perty.—  
No tongue; all eyes; be silent. [*Soft music.*

*A Masque. Enter IRIS.*

*Iris.* Ceres, most bounteous lady, thy rich leas  
Of wheat, rye, barley, vetches, oats, and pease;  
Thy turfy mountains, where live nibbling sheep,  
And flat meads thatch'd with stover, them to  
Thy banks with peonied and lillied brims, [keep;  
Which spongy April at thy hest ‡ betrim,  
To make cold nymphs chaste crowns; and thy  
broom groves,

Whose shadow the dismissed bachelor loves,  
Being lass-lorn; thy pole-clipt vineyard;  
And thy sea-marge, sterile, and rocky-hard,  
Where thou thyself dost air: The queen o'the  
sky,

Whose watery arch, and messenger, am I,  
Bids thee leave these; and with her sovereign  
grace,

Here on this grass-plot, in this very place,  
To come and sport: her peacocks fly again;  
Approach, rich Ceres, her to entertain.

*Enter CERES.*

*Cer.* Hail, many-colour'd messenger, that  
Dost disobey the wife of Jupiter; [*ne'er*  
Who, with thy saffron wings, upon my flowers  
Diffusest honey-drops, refreshing showers:  
And with each end of thy blue bow dost crown  
My bosky acres, and my unshrubb'd down,  
Rich scarf to my proud earth; Why hath thy  
queen

Summon'd me hither, to this short-grass'd green?

*Iris.* A contract of true love to celebrate;  
And some donation freely to estate  
On the bless'd lovers.

*Cer.* Tell me, heavenly bow,  
If Venus, or her son, as thou dost know,  
Do now attend the queen? since they did plot  
The means, that dusky Dis ‖ my daughter got,  
Her and her blind boy's scandal'd company  
I have forsworn.

*Iris.* Of her society  
Be not afraid: I met her deity  
Cutting the clouds towards Paphos; and her  
son,

Dove-drawn, with her: here thought they to  
have done

Some wanton charm upon this man and maid,  
Whose vows are, that no bed-rite shall be paid  
Till Hymen's torch be lighted: but in vain;  
Mars's hot minion is return'd again;

\* Sprinkling.

† Surplus.

‡ Command.

Woody.

‖ Pinto.

Her waspish-headed son has broke his arrows,  
Swears he will shoot no more, but play with sparrows,

And be a boy right out.

*Cer.* Highest queen of state,  
Great Juno comes; I know her by her gait.

*Enter Juno.*

*Juno.* How does my bounteous sister? Go with me, [be,

To bless this twain, that they may prosperous  
And honour'd in their issue.

SONG.

*Juno.* Honour, riches, marriage-blessing,  
Long continuance, and increasing,  
Hourly joys be still upon you!  
*Juno sings her blessings on you.*

*Cer.* Earth's increase, and joison\* plenty;  
Barns and garners never empty;  
Vines, with clust'ring bunches grow-  
ing;

Plants, with goodly burden bowing;  
Spring come to you, at the farthest,  
In the very end of harvest!

Scarcity and want shall shun you;  
*Ceres' blessing so is on you.*

*Fer.* This is a most majestic vision, and  
Harmonious charmingly: May I be bold  
To think these spirits?

*Pro.* Spirits, which by mine art  
I have from their confines call'd to enact  
My present fancies.

*Fer.* Let me live here ever;  
So rare a wonder'd † futher, and a wife,  
Make this place Paradise.

[*JUNO and CERES whisper, and send  
IRIS on employment.*

*Pr.* Sweet now, silence:  
Juno and Ceres whisper seriously;  
There's something else to do: hush, and be  
Or else our spell is marr'd. [mute,

*Iris.* You nymphs, call'd Naiads, of the  
wand'ring brooks, [looks,  
With your sedge'd crowns, and ever-harmless  
Leave your crisp channels, and on this green  
land

Answer your summons; Juno does command:  
Come, temperate nymphs, and help to celebrate  
A contract of true love; be not too late.

*Enter certain Nymphs.*

You sun-burn'd sicklemen, of August weary,  
Come hither from the furrow, and be merry;  
Make holiday: your rye-straw hats put off,  
And these fresh nymphs encounter every one  
In country footing.

*Enter certain Reapers, properly habited:*  
*they join with the Nymphs in a graceful*  
*dance; towards the end whereof PROS*  
*PERO stunts suddenly, and speaks; after*  
*which, to a strange, hollow, and confused*  
*noise, they heavily vanish.*

*Pro.* [aside.] I had forgot that foul conspi-  
racy

Of the beast Caliban, and his confederates,  
Against my life; the minute of their plot  
Is almost come.—[*To the spirits.*—Well  
done;—avoid;—no more.

*Fer.* This is most strange: your father's in  
some passion

That works him strongly.

*Mira.* Never, till this day,  
Saw I him touch'd with anger so distemper'd.

*Pro.* You do look, my son, in a mov'd sort,  
As if you were dismay'd: be cheerful, sir:  
Our revels now are ended: these our actors,  
As I foretold you, were all spirits, and  
Are melted into air, into thin air:

And, like the baseless fabric of this vision,  
The cloud-capp'd towers, the gorgeous palaces,  
The solemn temples, the great globe itself,  
Yea, all which it inherit, shall dissolve;  
And, like this insubstantial pageant faded ‡,  
Leave not a rack § behind: We are such stuff  
As dreams are made of, and our little life  
Is rounded with a sleep.—Sir, I am vex'd;  
Bear with my weakness; my old brain is  
troubled.

Be not disturb'd with my infirmity:  
If you be pleas'd, retire into my cell,  
And there repose; a turn or two I'll walk,  
To still my beating mind.

*Fer.* *Mira.* We wish your peace.  
[*Exit.*

*Pro.* Come with a thought:—I thank you:—  
Ariel, come.

*Enter ARIEL.*

*Ari.* Thy thoughts I cleave to; What's thy  
pleasure?

*Pro.* Spirit,  
We must prepare to meet with Caliban.

*Ari.* Ay, my commander: when I presented  
Ceres,

I thought to have told thee of it; but I fear'd,  
Lest I might anger thee.

*Pro.* Say again, where didst thou leave these  
varlets? [drinking;

*Ari.* I told you, sir, they were red-hot with  
So full of valour, that they snote the air

For breathing in their faces; beat the ground  
For kissing of their feet: yet always bending  
Towards their project: Then I beat my tabor,

At which, like unback'd colts, they prick'd  
their ears,

Advanced their eye-lids, lifted up their noses,  
As they smelt music; so I charm'd their ears,  
That, calf-like, they my lowing follow'd, through  
Tooth'd briars, sharp furzes, pricking goss, and  
thorns, [them

Which enter'd their frail shins: at last I left  
I' the filthy mantled pool beyond your cell,  
There dancing up to the chins, that the foul  
O'erstunk their feet. [lake

*Pro.* This was well done, my bird:  
Thy shape invisible retain thou still.

The trunpery in my house, go, bring it hither,  
For state || to catch these thieves.

*Ari.* I go, I go. [*Exit.*

\* Abundance.

† Able to produce such wonders.

‡ Vanished.

§ A body of clouds in motion; but it is most probable that the author wrote *track*

Bait.

|| 3



*Pro.* A devil, a born devil, on whose nature Nurture\* can never stick; on whom my pains, Humanely taken, all, all lost, quite lost; And as, with age, his body uglier grows, So his mind cankers: I will plague them all,

*Re-enter ARIEL loaden with glistening apparel, &c.*

Even to roaring:—Come, hang them on this line.

PROSPERO and ARIEL remain invisible.

*Enter CALIBAN, STEPHANO, and TRINCULO; all wet.*

*Cal.* Pray you, tread softly, that the blind mole may not

Hear a foot fall: we now are near his cell.

*Ste.* Monster, your fairy, which, you say, is a harmless fairy, has done little better than played the Jack† with us.

*Trin.* Monster, I do smell all horse-piss; at which my nose is in great indignation.

*Ste.* So is mine. Do you hear, monster? If I should take a displeasure against you; look you,—

*Trin.* Thou wert but a lost monster.

*Cal.* Good my lord, give me thy favour still:

Be patient, for the prize I'll bring thee to Shall hoodwink this mischance: therefore, speak softly,

All's hush'd as midnight yet.

*Trin.* Ay, but to lose our bottles in the pool,—

*Ste.* There is not only disgrace and dishonour in that, monster, but an infinite loss.

*Trin.* That's more to me than my wetting: yet this is your harmless fairy, monster.

*Ste.* I will fetch off my bottle, though I be o'er ears for my labour.

*Cal.* Pr'ythee, my king, be quiet: Seest thou here, [enter:

This is the mouth of the cell: no noise, and Do that good mischief, which may make this island

Thine own for ever, and I, thy Caliban, For aye; thy foot-licker.

*Ste.* Give me thy hand: I do begin to have bloody thoughts.

*Trin.* O king Stephanol! O peer! O worthy Stephanol! look, what a wardrobe here is for thee!

*Cal.* Let it alone, thou fool; it is but trash.

*Trin.* O, ho, monster; we know what belongs to a frippery‡:—O king Stephanol

*Ste.* Put off that gown, Trinculo; by this hand, I'll have that gown.

*Trin.* Thy grace shall have it.

*Cal.* The drowsy drown this fool! what do you mean,

To doat thus on such luggage? Let's along, And do the murder first: if he awake, From toe to crown he'll fill our skins with Make us strange stuff. [pinches;

*Ste.* Be you quiet, monster.—Mistress line, is not this my jerkin? Now is the jerkin under the line: now, jerkin, you are like to lose your hair, and prove a bald jerkin.

*Trin.* Do, do: We steal by line and level, andn't like your grace.

*Ste.* I thank thee for that jest: here's a garment for't: wit shall not go unrewarded, while I am king of this country: *Steal by line and level*, is an excellent pass of pate; there's an other garment for't.

*Trin.* Monster, come, put some lime|| upon your fingers, and away with the rest.

*Cal.* I will have none on't: we shall lose our time,

And all be turn'd to barnacles, or to apes With foreheads villainous low.

*Ste.* Monster, lay to your fingers; help to bear this away, where my hogshead of wine is, or I'll turn you out of my kingdom: go to carry this.

*Trin.* And this.

*Ste.* Ay, and this.

*A noise of hunters heard. Enter divers Spirits, in shape of hounds, and hunt them about; PROSPERO and ARIEL setting them on.*

*Pro.* Hey, Mountain, hey!

*Ari.* Silver! there it goes, Silver!

*Pro.* Fury, Fury! there, Tyrant, there hark, hark!

[CAL. STE. and TRIN. are driven out. Go, charge my goblins that they grind their joints With dry convulsions; shorten up their sinews With aged cramps; and more pinch-spotted Than pard¶, or cat o' mountain. [make them, *Ari.* Hark, they roar.

*Pro.* Let them be hunted soundly: At this Lie at my mercy all mine enemies: [hour Shortly shall all my labours end, and thou Shalt have the air at freedom: for a little, Follow, and do me service. [Exeunt.

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *Before the cell of PROSPERO.*

*Enter PROSPERO in his magic robes, and ARIEL.*

*Pro.* Now does my project gather to a head: My charms crack not; my spirits obey; and time

Goes upright with his carriage. How's the day?

*Ariel.* On the sixth hour; at which time, You said our work should cease. [my lord, *Pro.* I did say so.

When first I rais'd the tempest. Say, my spirit, How fares the king and his?

*Ari.* Confin'd together In the same fashion as you gave in charge; Just as you left them, sir; all prisoners

\* Education.

† Jack with a lantern.

‡ Ever.

A shop for sale of old clothes.

¶ Bird-time.

¶ Leopard.



In the lime-grove which weather-fends\* your cell;

They cannot budge, till you release. The king, His brother and yours, abide all three distracted;

And the remainder mourning over them, Brim-full of sorrow and dismay; but chiefly Him you term'd, sir, *The good old lord, Gonzalo*; [drops

His tears run down his beard, like winter's From eaves† of reeds: your charm so strongly works them,

That if you now beheld them, your affections Would become tender.

*Pro.* Dost thou think so, spirit?

*Ari.* Mine would, sir, were I human.

*Pro.* And mine shall.

Hast thou, which art but air, a touch, a feeling Of their afflictions? and shall not myself, One of their kind, that relish all as sharply, Passion as they, be kindlier mov'd than thou art? [the quick,

Though with their high wrongs I am struck to Yet, with my nobler reason, 'gainst my fury Do I take part: the rarer action is [tent, In virtue than in vengeance: they being penit- The sole drift of my purpose doth extend Not a frown further: Go, release them, Ariel; My charms I'll break, their senses I'll restore, And they shall be themselves.

*Ari.* I'll fetch them, sir. [*Exit.*

*Pro.* Ye elves of hills, brooks, standing lakes, and groves;

And ye, that on the sands with printless foot Do chase the ebbing Neptune, and do fly him, When he comes back; you demi-puppets, that By moon-shine do the green-sour ringlets make, Whereof the ewe not bites; and you, whose pastime

Is to make midnight-mushrooms; that rejoice To hear the solemn curfew; by whose aid (Weak masters though you be,) I have be- dimm'd [winds,

The noon-tide sun, call'd forth the mutinous And 'twixt the green sea and the azur'd vault Set roaring war: to the dread rattling thunder Have I given fire, and rifted Jove's stout oak With his own bolt: the strong-bas'd promontory Have I madeshake; and by the spurs pluck'd up The pine and cedar: graves, at my command, Have wak'd their sleepers; oped, and let them forth

By my so potent art: But this rough magic I here abjure: and, when I have requir'd Some heavenly music, (which even now I do,) To work mine end upon their senses, that This airy charm is for, I'll break my staff, And, deeper than did ever plummet sound, I'll drown my book. [*Solemn music.*

*Re-enter ARIEL: after him, ALONSO, with a frantic gesture, attended by GONZALO; SEBASTIAN and ANTONIO in like manner, attended by ADRIAN and FRANCISCO: They all enter the circle which PROSPERO*

*had made, and there stand charmed which PROSPERO observing, speaks.*

A solemn air, and the best comforter To an unsettled fancy, cure thy brains, Now useless, boil'd within thy skull! There For you are spell-stopp'd.— [stand

Holy Gonzalo, honourable man, Mine eyes, even sociable to the shew of thine Fall fellowly drops.—The charm dissolves apace; And as the morning steals upon the night, Melting the darkness, so their rising senses Begin to chase the ignorant fumes that mantle Their clearer reason.—O, my good Gonzalo, My true preserver, and a loyal sir To him thou follow'st; I will pay thy graces Home, both in word and deed.—Most cruelly Didst thou, Alonso, use me and my daughter Thy brother was a furtherer in the act;— Thou'rt pinch'd for't now, Sebastian.—Flesh and blood,

You brother mine, that entertain'd ambition, Expell'd remorse† and nature; who, with Sebastian, [strong,]

(Whose inward pinches therefore are most: Would here have kill'd your king; I do forgive thee, [ing

Unnatural though thou art!—Their understand- Begins to swell; and the approach† tide Will shortly fill the reasonable shores, That now lie foul and muddy. Not one of them, That yet looks on me, or would know me:— Ariel,

Fetch me the hat and rapier in my cell. [*Exit A. L.L.*

I will discase me, and myself present, As I was sometime Milan:—quickly, spirit; Thou shalt ere long be free.

*ARIEL re-enters, singing, and helps to attire PROSPERO.*

*Ari.* Where the bee sucks, there suck I; In a cowslip's bell I lie: There I couch when owls do cry. On the bat's back I do fly, After summer, merrily:

*Merrily, merrily, shall I live now, Under the blossom that hangs on the bough.*

*Pro.* Why, that's my dainty Ariel: I shall miss thee;

But yet thou shalt have freedom: so, so, so.— To the king's ship, invisible as the art: There shalt thou find the mariners asleep Under the hatches; the master and the boat- swain,

Being awake, enforce them to this place; And presently, I pry'three.

*Ari.* I drink the air before me, and return Or e'er your pulse twice beat. [*Exit ARIEL.* Gon. All torment, trouble, wonder, and amazement

Inhabits here: Some heavenly power guide us Out of this fearful country!

*Pro.* Behold, sir king

The wronged duke of Milan, Prospero: For more assurance that a living prince

\* Defends from bad weather.

† Thatch.

‡ Pity, or tenderness of heart.

Does now speak to thee, I embrace thy body ;  
And to thee, and thy company, I bid  
A hearty welcome.

*Alon.* Whe'r • thou beest he, or no,  
Or some enchanted trifle to abuse me,  
As late I have been, I not know: thy pulse  
Beats, as of flesh and blood; and, since I saw  
thee, -

The affliction of my mind amends, with which,  
I fear, a madness held me: this must crave  
(As if this be at all,) a most strange story.  
Thy dukedom I resign; and do entreat  
Thou pardon me my wrongs:—But how should  
Prospero

Be living, and be here?

*Pro.* First, noble friend,  
Let me embrace thine age; whose honour  
Be measur'd or confin'd. [*cannot*

*Gon.* Whether this be,  
Or be not, I'll not swear.

*Pro.* You do yet taste  
Some subtleties o' the isle, that will not let you  
Believe things certain:—Welcome, my friends  
all:—

But you, my brace of lords, were I so minded,  
[*Aside to SEB. and ANT.*  
I here could pluck his highness' frown upon  
And justify you traitors; at this time [you,  
I'll tell no tales.

*Seb.* The devil speaks in him. [*Aside.*  
*Pro.* No:—

For you, most wicked sir, whom to call brother  
Would even infect my mouth, I do forgive  
Thy rankest fault; all of them; and require  
My dukedom of thee, which, perforce, I know,  
Thou must restore.

*Alon.* If thou beest Prospero,  
Give us particulars of thy preservation:  
How thou hast met us here, who three hours  
since [*lost,*  
Were wreck'd upon this shore; where I have  
How sharp the point of this remembrance is!  
My dear son Ferdinand.

*Pro.* I am woe't for't, sir.

*Alon.* Irreparable is the loss; and Patience  
Says, it is past her cure.

*Pro.* I rather think,  
You have not sought her help; of whose soft  
grace,

For the like loss, I have her sovereign aid,  
And rest myself content.

*Alon.* You the like loss?  
*Pro.* As great to me, as late; and, portable;  
To make the dear loss, have I means much  
weaker

Than you may call to comfort you; for I  
Have lost my daughter.

*Alon.* A daughter?  
O heavens! that they were living both in  
Naples, [*wish*

The king and queen there! that they were, I  
Myself were mudded in that oozy bed  
Where my son lies. When did you lose your  
daughter? [*lords*

*Pro.* In this last tempest. I perceive, these  
At this encounter do so much admire,

That they devour their reason; and scarce think  
Their eyes do offices of truth, their words  
Are natural breath: but, howso'er you have  
Been justled from your senses, know for certain,  
That I am Prospero, and that very duke  
Which was thrust forth of Milan; who most  
strangely [*landed,*

Upon this shore, where you were wreck'd, was  
To be the lord on't. No more yet of this;  
For 'tis a chronicle of day by day,  
Not a relation for a breakfast, nor  
Befitting th's first meeting. Welcome, sir;  
This cell's my court: here have I few attendants  
And subjects none abroad: pray you, look in.  
My dukedom since you have given me again,  
I will requite you with as good a thing;  
At least, bring forth a wonder, to content ye,  
As much as me my dukedom.

*The entrance of the cell opens, and discovers FERDINAND and MIRANDA playing at chess.*

*Mira.* Sweet lord, you play me false.  
*Fer.* No, my dearest love,

I would not for the world.

*Mira.* Yes, for a score of kingdoms you  
should wrangle,

And I would call it fair play.

*Alon.* If this prove  
A vision of the island, one dear son  
Shall I twice lose.

*Seb.* A most high miracle!

*Fer.* Tho'the seas threaten, they are merciful:  
I have curs'd them without cause.

[*FERD. kneels to ALON.*

*Alon.* Now all the blessings  
Of a glad father compass thee about!  
Arise, and say how thou cam'st here.

*Mira.* O! wonder!  
How many goodly creatures are there here!  
How beauteous mankind is! O brave new  
That has such people in't! [*world,*

*Pro.* 'Tis new to thee.

*Alon.* What is this maid, with whom thou  
wast at play?

Your eld'st acquaintance cannot be three hours:  
Is she the goddess that hath sever'd us,  
And brought us thus together?

*Fer.* Sir, she's mortal;  
But, by immortal Providence, she's mine;  
I chose her, when I could not ask my father  
For his advice; nor thought I had one: she  
Is daughter to this famous duke of Milan,  
Of whom so often I have heard renown,  
But never saw before; of whom I have  
Received a second life, and second father  
This lady makes him to me

*Alon.* I am her's;  
But O, how oddly will it sound, that I  
Must ask my child forgiveness!

*Pro.* There, sir, stop:  
Let us not burden our remembrances  
With a heaviness that's gone.

*Gon.* I have inly wept,  
Or should have spoken ere this. Look down  
you gods,

And on this couple drop a blessed crown;  
For it is you that have chalk'd forth the way  
Which brought us hither!

*Alon.* I say, Amen, Gonzalo!

*Gon.* Was Milan thrust from Milan, that his  
issue

Should become kings of Naples? O, rejoice  
Beyond a common joy; and set it down  
With gold on lasting pillars: In one voyage  
Did Claribel her husband find at Tunis;  
And Ferdinand, her brother, found a wife,  
Where he himself was lost; Prospero his  
dukedom,

In a poor isle; and all of us, ourselves,  
When no man was his own\*.

*Alon.* Give me your hands:  
[To FER. and MIR.]

Let grief and sorrow still embrace his heart,  
That doth not wish you joy!

*Gon.* Be't so! Amen!

*Re-enter ARIEL, with the Master and  
Boatswain amazedly following.*

O look, sir, look, sir; here are more of us!  
I prophesied, if a gallows were on land,  
This fellow could not drown:—Now, blas-  
phemy, [shore?

That swear'st grace o'erboard, not an oath on  
Hast thou no mouth by land? What is the  
news? [found

*Boats.* The best news is, that we have safely  
Our king and company: the next, our ship,—  
Which, but three glasses since, we gave out  
split,—

Is tight and yare't, and bravely rigg'd, as when  
We first put out to sea.

*Ari.* Sir, all this service }  
Have I done since I went. } [Aside

*Pro.* My tricksy † spirit! }  
*Alon.* These are not natural even s; they  
strengthen, [hither?

From strange to stranger:—Say, how came you  
*Boats.* If I did think, sir, I were well awake,  
I'd strive to tell you. We were dead of sleep,  
And (how, we know not,) all clapp'd under  
hatches, [noises

Where, but even now, with strange and several  
Of baring, shrieking, howling, gingling chains,  
And more diversity of sounds, all horrible,  
We were awak'd; straightway, at liberty:  
Where we, in all her trim, freshly beheld  
Our royal, good, and gallant ship; our master  
Cap'ring to eye her: On a trice, so please you,  
Even in a dream, were we divided from them,  
And were brought moping hither.

*Ari.* Was't well done? }  
*Pro.* Bravely, my diligence. Thou } [Aside.  
shalt be free.

*Alon.* This is as strange a maze as e'er men  
trud:  
And there is in this business more than nature  
Was ever conduct' of: some oracle  
Must rectify our knowledge.

*Pro.* Sir, my liege,  
Do not infest your mind with beating on

The strangeness of this business; at pick'd  
leisure,

Which shall be shortly, single I'll resolve you  
(Which to you shall seem probable,) of every  
These happen'd accidents: till when, be cheer-  
ful,

And think of each thing well.—Come hither,  
spirit; [Aside.

Set Caliban and his companions free:

Untie the spell. [Exit ARIEL.] How fares  
my gracious sir?

There are yet missing of your company  
Some few odd lads, that you remember not.

*Re-enter ARIEL, driving in CALIBAN, STE-  
PHANO, and TRINCULO, in their stolen  
apparel.*

*Ste.* Every man shift for all the rest, and  
let no man take care for himself; for all is but  
fortune:—Coragio, bully-monster, Coragio!

*Trin.* If these be true spies which I wear in  
my head, here's a goodly sight.

*Cal.* O Setebos, these be brave spirits indeed!  
How fine my master is! I am afraid  
He will chastise me.

*Seb.* Ha, ha;  
What things are these, my lord Antonio?  
Will money buy them?

*Ant.* Very like; one of them  
Is a plain fish, and, no doubt, marketable.

*Pro.* Mark but the badges of these men, my  
lords, [knave,

Then say, if they be true:—This mis-shapen  
His mother was a witch; and one so strong  
That could controul the moon, make flows and  
ebbs,

And deal in her command, without her power:  
These three have robb'd me; and this demi-  
devil

(For he's a bastard one,) had plotted with them  
To take my life: two of these fellows you  
Must know, and own; this thing of darkness I  
Acknowledge mine.

*Cal.* I shall be pinch'd to death.  
*Alon.* Is not this Stephano, my drunken  
butler?

*Seb.* He is drunk now: Where had he wine?  
*Alon.* And Trinculo is reeling ripe: Where  
should they

Find this grand liquor that hath gilded them?—  
How cam'st thou in this pickle?

*Trin.* I have been in such a pickle, since I  
saw you last, that, I fear me, will never out of  
my bones: I shall not fear fly-blowing.

*Seb.* Why, how now, Stephano?  
*Ste.* O, touch me not; I am not Stephano,  
but a cramp.

*Pro.* You'd be king of the isle, sirrah?  
*Ste.* I should have been a sore one then.

*Alon.* This is as strange a thing as e'er I  
look'd on. [Pointing to CALIBAN.

*Pro.* He is as disproportion'd in his manners  
As in his shape:—Go, sirrah, to my cell;

Take with you your companions; as you look  
To have my pardon, trim it handsomely.



*Cal.* Ay, that I will; and I'll be wise here-  
after,  
And seek for grace: What a thrice-double ass  
Was I, to take this drunkard for a god,  
And worship this dull fool?

*Pro.* Go to; away!

*Alon.* Hence, and bestow your luggage where  
you found it.

*Seb.* Or stole it, rather.

*Pro.* *[Exeunt CAL. SEB. and TRIN.]*

*Pro.* Sir, I invite your highness, and your  
train,  
To my poor cell: where you shall take your  
rest

For this one night; which (part of it,) I'll waste  
With such discourse as, I not doubt, shall make  
Go quick away: the story of my life, [it

And the particular accidents, gone by,  
Since I came to this isle: And in the morn,  
I'll bring you to your ship, and so to Naples,  
Where I have hope to see the nuptial  
Of these our dear-beloved solemniz'd;  
And thence retire me to my Milan, where  
Every third thought shall be my grave.

*Alon.* I long  
To hear the story of your life, which must  
Take the ear strangely.

*Pro.* I'll deliver all;  
And promise you calm seas, auspicious gales,  
And sail so expeditions, that shall catch  
Your royal fleet far off.—My Ariel;—chick,—  
That is thy charge; then to the elements  
Be free, and fare thou well!—*[aside.]* Please  
you, draw near. *[Exeunt.]*

## EPILOGUE.

SPOKEN BY PROSPERO.

*Now my charms are all o'erthrown,  
And what strength I have's mine own;  
Which is most faint: now, 'tis true,  
I must be here confin'd by you,  
Or sent to Naples: Let me not,  
Since I have my dukedom got,  
And pardon'd the deceiver, dwell  
In this bare island, by your spell;  
But release me from my bands,  
With the help of your good hands \**

*Gentle breath of yours my sails  
Must fill, or else my project fails,  
Which was to please: Now I want  
Spirits to enforce, art to enchant;  
And my ending is despair,  
Unless I be reliev'd by prayer;  
Which pierces so, that it assaults  
Mercy itself, and frees all faults.  
As you from crimes would pardon'd be,  
Let your indulgence set me free.*

\* Applause: noise was supposed to dissolve a spell.

It is observed of *THE TEMPEST*, that its plan is regular: this the author of *THE REVISAL* thinks, what I think too, an accidental effect of the story, not intended or regarded by our author. But, whatever might be Shakspeare's intention in forming or adopting the plot, he has made it instrumental to the production of many characters, diversified with boundless invention, and preserved with profound skill in nature, extensive knowledge of opinions, and accurate observation of life. In a single drama are here exhibited princes, courtiers, and sailors, all speaking in their real characters. There is the agency of airy spirits, and of an earthly goblin. The operations of magic, the tumults of a storm, the adventures of a desert island, the native effusion of untaught affection, the punishment of guilt, and the final happiness of the pair for whom our passions and reason are equally interested. JOHNSON.

# TWO GENTLEMEN OF VERONA.

## Persons represented.

DUKE OF MILAN, father to Silvia.  
 VALENTINE, } Gentlemen of Verona.  
 PROTEUS, }  
 ANTONIO, father to Proteus.  
 THURIO, a foolish rival to Valentine.  
 EGLAMOUR, agent for Silvia in her escape.  
 SPEED, a clownish servant to Valentine.  
 LAUNCE, servant to Proteus.

PANTHINO, servant to Antonio.  
 Host, where Julia lodges in Milan.  
 Out-laws.

JULIA, a lady of Verona, beloved by Proteus.  
 SILVIA, the duke's daughter, beloved by Valentine.  
 LUCETTA, waiting woman to Julia.

Servants, Musicians.

Scene,—sometimes in Verona; sometimes in Milan; and on the frontiers of Mantua.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. An open place in Verona.

Enter VALENTINE and PROTEUS.

Val. Cease to persuade, my loving Proteus;  
 Home-keeping youth have ever homely wits;  
 Wer't not, affection chains thy tender days  
 To the sweet glances of thy honour'd love,  
 I rather would entreat thy company,  
 To see the wonders of the world abroad,  
 Than living dully sluggardiz'd at home,  
 Wear out thy youth with shapeless idleness.  
 But, since thou lov'st, love still, and thrive  
 therein,  
 Even as I would, when I to love begin.

Pro. Wilt thou be gone? Sweet Valentine,  
 adieu!

Think on thy Proteus, when thou, haply, seest  
 Some rare note-worthy object in thy travel:  
 Wish me partaker in thy happiness,  
 When thou dost meet good hap; and, in thy  
 If ever danger do environ thee, [danger,  
 Commend thy grievance to my holy prayers,  
 For I will be thy head's-man, Valentine.

Val. And on a love-book pray for my success.

Pro. Upon some book I love, I'll pray for  
 thee. [love,

Val. That's on some shallow story of deep  
 How young Leander cross'd the Hellespont.

Pro. That's a deep story of a deeper love;  
 For he was more than over shoes in love.

Val. 'Tis true; for you are over boots in love,  
 And yet you never swam the Hellespont.

Pro. Over the boots I nay, give me not the  
 boots\*.

Val. No, I'll not, for it boots thee not.

Pro. What?

Val. To be  
 In love, where scorn is bought with groans;  
 coy looks, [mirth,

With heart-sore sighs; one fading moment's  
 With twenty watchful, weary, tedious nights:  
 If haply won, perhaps, a hapless gain;

If lost, why then a grievous labour won;  
 However, but a folly bought with wit,  
 Or else a wit by folly vanquished.

Pro. So, by your circumstance, you call me  
 fool.

Val. So, by your circumstance, I fear, you'll  
 prove.

Pro. 'Tis love you cavil at; I am not Love.

Val. Love is your master, for he masters  
 And he that is so yoked by a fool, [you:  
 Methinks should not be chronicled for wise.

Pro. Yet writers say, As in the sweetest bud  
 The eating canker dwells, so eating love  
 Inhabits in the finest wits of all.

Val. And writers say, As the most forward  
 Is eaten by the canker ere it blow, [bud

Even so by love the young and tender wit  
 Is turn'd to folly; blasting in the bud,  
 Losing his verdure even in the prime,  
 And all the fair effects of future hopes.

But wherefore waste I time to counsel thee,  
 That art a votary to fond desire?

Once more adieu: my father at the road  
 Expects my coming, there to see me shipp'd.

Pro. And thither will I bring thee, Valentine.

Val. Sweet Proteus, no; now let us take  
 our leave.

At Milan let me hear from thee by letters,  
 Of thy success in love, and what news else  
 Betideth here in absence of thy friend;  
 And I likewise will visit thee with mine.

Pro. All happiness bechance to thee in Milan!

Val. As much to you at home! and so fare-  
 well! [Exit VALENTINE.

Pro. He after honour hunts, I after love;  
 He leaves his friends, to dignify them more;  
 I leave myself, my friends, and all for love.

Thou, Julia, thou hast metamorphos'd me;  
 Made me neglect my studies, lose my time,  
 War with good counsel, set the world at nought,  
 Made wit with musing weak, heart sick with  
 thought.

\* A humorous punishment at harvest-home feasts, &c.

*Enter SPEED.*

*Speed.* Sir Proteus, save you: Saw you my master? [for Milan.

*Pro.* But now he parted hence, to embark  
*Sp.* Twenty to one then, he is shipp'd already;

And I have play'd the sheep in losing him.

*Pro.* Indeed a sheep doth very often stray,  
An if the shepherd be awhile away.

*Speed.* You conclude that my master is a shepherd then, and I a sheep?

*Pro.* I do.

*Speed.* Why then my horns are his horns, whether I wake or sleep.

*Pro.* A silly answer, and fitting well a sheep.

*Speed.* This proves me still a sheep.

*Pro.* True, and thy master a shepherd.

*Sp.* Nay, that I can deny by a circumstance.

*Pro.* It shall go hard, but I'll prove it by another.

*Speed.* The shepherd seeks the sheep, and not the sheep the shepherd; but I seek my master, and my master seeks not me: therefore, I am no sheep.

*Pro.* The sheep for fodder follow the shepherd, the shepherd for food follows not the sheep; thou for wages followest thy master, thy master for wages follows not thee: therefore, thou art a sheep.

*Sp.* Such another proof will make me cry baa.

*Pro.* But dost thou hear? gav'st thou my letter to Julia?

*Speed.* Ay, sir: I, a lost mutton, gave your letter to her, a laced mutton\*; and she, a laced mutton, gave me, a lost mutton, nothing for my labour.

*Pro.* Here's too small a pasture for such a store of muttons.

*Speed.* If the ground be overcharged, you were best stick her.

*Pro.* Nay, in that you are astray; 'twere best pound you.

*Speed.* Nay, sir, less than a pound shall serve me for carrying your letter.

*Pro.* You mistake; I mean the pound, a pinfold.

*Speed.* From a pound to a pin? fold it over and over, [your lover.

'Tis threefold too little for carrying a letter to  
*Pro.* But what said she? did she nod?

*'SPEED nods.*

*Speed.* I.

*Pro.* Nod, I? why, that's noddý†.

*Speed.* You mistook, sir; I say, she did nod: and you ask me, if she did nod; and I say, I.

*Pro.* And that set together, is—noddý.

*Speed.* Now you have taken the pains to set it together, take it for your pains.

*Pro.* No, no, you shall have it for bearing the letter.

*Speed.* Well, I perceive, I must be fain to bear with you.

*Pro.* Why, sir, how do you bear with me?

*Speed.* Marry, sir, the letter very orderly; having nothing but the word, noddý, for my pains.

*Pr.* Beshrew† me, but you have a quick wit.  
*Speed.* And yet it cannot overtake your slow purse.

*Pro.* Come, come, open the matter in brief: What said she?

*Speed.* Open your purse, that the money, and the matter, may be both at once delivered.

*Pro.* Well, sir, here is for your pains: What said she?

*Sp.* Truly, sir, I think you'll hardly win her.

*Pro.* Why? Could'st thou perceive so much from her?

*Speed.* Sir, I could perceive nothing at all from her; no, not so much as a ducat for delivering your letter: And being so hard to me that brought your mind, I fear, she'll prove as hard to you in telling her mind. Give her no token but stones; for she's as hard as steel.

*Pro.* What, said she nothing?

*Speed.* No, not so much as—take this for thy pains. To testify your bounty, I thank you, you have tetter'd‡ me; in requital whereof, henceforth carry your letters yourself: and so, sir, I'll commend you to my master.

*Pro.* Go, go, be gone, to save your ship from wreck;

Which cannot perish, having thee aboard, Being destined to a drier death on shore:— I must go send some better messenger; I fear, my Julia would not deign my lines, Receiving them from such a worthless post.

*[Exit]*

## SCENE II.

*The same. Garden of Julia's house.*

*Enter JULIA and LUCETTA.*

*Jul.* But say, Lucetta, now we are alone, Would'st thou then counsel me to fall in love?

*Luc.* Ay, madam; so you stumble not unheedfully,

*Jul.* Of all the fair resort of gentlemen, That every day with parle‡ encounter me, In thy opinion, which is worstliest love?

*Luc.* Please you, repeat their names, I'll shew my mind

According to my shallow simple skill.

*Jul.* What think'st thou of the fair Sir Eglamour? [line;

*Luc.* As of a knight well-spoken, neat and But, were I yon, he never should be mine.

*Jul.* What think'st thou of the rich Mercutio?

*Luc.* Well of his wealth; but of himself, so, so.

*Jul.* What think'st thou of the gentle Proteus?

*Luc.* Lord, lord! to see what folly reigns in us!

*Jul.* How now! what means this passion at his name?

*Luc.* Pardon, dear madam; 'tis a passing That I, unworthy body as I am, [shame, Should censure‡ thus on lovely gentlemen.

*Jul.* Why not on Proteus, as of all the rest?

*Luc.* Then thus,—of many good I think

*Jul.* Your reason? [him best.

*Luc.* I have no other but a woman's reason; I think him so, because I think him so.

• A term for a courtesan.

‡ Give me a six pence.

† A game at cards.

‡ Talk.

‡ Ill betide.

‡ Pass sentence.



*Jul.* And would'st thou have me cast my love on him? [away.]

*Luc.* Ay, if you thought your love not cast

*Jul.* Why he of all the rest hath never mov'd me. [loves ye.]

*Luc.* Yet he of all the rest, I think, best

*Jul.* His little speaking shews his love but small. [of all.]

*Luc.* Fire, that is closest kept burns most

*Jul.* They do not love, that do not shew their love.

*Luc.* O, they love least, that let men know

*Jul.* I would, I knew his mind. [their love.]

*Luc.* Peruse this paper, madam.

*Jul.* To *Julia*,—Say, from whom?

*Luc.* That the contents will shew.

*Jul.* Say, say; who gave it thee?

*Luc.* Sir Valentine's page; and sent, I think, from Proteus:

He would have given it you, but I being in the way, [I pray.]

Did in your name receive it; pardon the fault,

*Jul.* Now, by my modesty, a goodly broker!\*

Dare you presume to harbour wanton lines?

To whisper and conspire against my youth?

Now, trust me, 'tis an office of great worth,

And you an officer fit for the place.

There, take the paper, see it be return'd;

Or else return no more into my sight.

*Luc.* To plead for love deserves more fee

*Jul.* Will you be gone? [than hate.]

*Luc.* That you may ruminate. [Exit.]

*Jul.* And yet, I would I had o'erlook'd the letter.

It were a shame to call her back again,

And pray her to a fault for which I chid her.

What fool is she, that knows I am a maid,

And would not force the letter to my view?

Since maids, in modesty, say *No*, to that

Which they would have the profferer construe,

Fie, fie! how wayward is this foolish love, [Ay.]

That, like a testy babe, will scratch the nurse,

And presently, all humbled, kiss the rod!

How churlishly I chid *Lucetta* hence,

When willingly I would have had her here!

How angrily I taught my brow to frown,

When inward joy enforc'd my heart to smile!

My penance is, to call *Lucetta* back,

And ask remission for my folly past:—

What ho! *Lucetta*!

*Re-enter LUCETTA.*

*Luc.* What would your ladyship?

*Jul.* Is it near dinner-time?

*Luc.* I would it were;

That you might kill your stomach† on your And not upon your maid. [meat,

*Jul.* What is't you took up So gingerly?

*Luc.* Nothing.

*Jul.* Why did'st thou stoop then?

*Luc.* To take a paper up that I let fall.

*Jul.* And is that paper nothing?

*Luc.* Nothing concerning me.

*Jul.* Then let it lie for those that it concerns.

*Luc.* Madam, it will not lie where it cerns. Unless it have a false interpreter.

*Jul.* Some love of your's hath writ to you in rhyme.

*Luc.* That I might sing it, madam, to a tune: Give me a note: your ladyship can set.

*Jul.* As little by such toys as may be possible Best sing it to the tune of *Light o' love*.

*Luc.* It is too heavy for so light a tune.

*Jul.* Heavy? belike, it hath some burden then

*Luc.* Ay, and melodious were it, would you

*Jul.* And why not you? [sing it]

*Luc.* I cannot reach so high

*Jul.* Let's see your song:—How now, minion

*Luc.* Keep tune there still, so you will sing it out:

And yet, methinks, I do not like this tune.

*Jul.* You do not?

*Luc.* No, madam; it is too sharp.

*Jul.* You, minion, are too saucy.

*Luc.* Nay, now you are too flat,

And mar the concord with too harsh a descant†

There wanteth but a mean§ to fill your song.

*Jul.* The mean is drown'd with your unruly base.

*Luc.* Indeed, I bid the base|| for Proteus.

*Jul.* This babble shall not henceforth trouble Here is a coil¶ with protestation!— [me

[Tears the letter.]

Go, get you gone; and let the papers lie:

You would be fingering them, to anger me.

*Luc.* She makes it strange; but she would be best pleas'd

To be so anger'd with another letter. [Exit.]

*Jul.* Nay, would I were so anger'd with the same!

O hateful hands, to tear such loving words!

Injurious wasps! to feed on such sweet honey,

And kill the bees, that yield it, with your stings!

I'll kiss each several paper for amends.

And here is writ—*kind Julia*;—unkind *Julia*!

As in revenge of thy ingratitude,

I throw thy name against the bruising stones,

Trampling contemptuously on thy disdain.

Look, here is writ—*love-wounded Proteus*:—

Poor wounded name! my bosom, as a bed,

Shall lodge thee, till thy wound be thoroughly heal'd;

And thus I search it with a sovereign kiss.

But twice or thrice, was Proteus written down

Be calm, good wind, blow not a word away,

Till I have found each letter in the letter,

Except mine own name; that some whirlwind

Unto a ragged, fearful, hanging rock, [beat

And throw it thence into the raging sea!

Lo, here in one line is his name twice writ,—

*Poor forlorn Proteus, passionate Proteus*

*To the sweet Julia*;—that I'll tear away;

And yet I will not, sith\*\* so prettily

He couples it to his complaining names;

Thus will I fold them one upon another;

Now kiss, embrace, contend, do what you will.

*Re-enter LUCETTA.*

*Luc.* Madam, dinner's ready, and your father stays.

\* A matchmaker.

† Passion or obstinacy.

‡ A term in music.

§ The tenor in music.

|| A challenge.

¶ Bustle, stir.

\*\* Since.

*Jul.* Well, let us go.

*Luc.* What, shall these papers lie like tell-tales here? [up.]

*Jul.* If you respect them, best to take them

*Luc.* Nay, I was taken up for laying them down:

Yet here they shall not lie, for catching cold.

*Jul.* I see, you have a month's mind to them.

*Luc.* Ay, madam, you may say what sights you see;

I see things too, although you judge I wink.

*Jul.* Come, come, will't please you go?

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.

*The same. A Room in Antonio's House.*

*Enter ANTONIO and PANTHINO.*

*Ant.* Tell me, Panthino, what sad \* talk was that

Wherewith my brother held you in the cloister?

*Pan.* 'T was of his nephew Proteus, yourson.

*Ant.* Why, what of him?

*Pan.* He wonder'd, that your lordship would suffer him to spend his youth at home; While other men, of slender reputation †, Put forth their sons to seek preferment out: Some, to the wars, to try their fortune there; Some, to discover islands far away; Some, to the studious universities.

For any, or for all these exercises, He said, that Proteus, your son, was meet; And did request me, to importune you, To let him spend his time no more at home, Which would be great impeachment ‡ to his age, In having known no travel in his youth.

*Ant.* Nor need'st thou much importune me to that

Whereon this month I have been hammering. I have consider'd well his loss of time; And how he cannot be a perfect man, Not being try'd and tutor'd in the world: Experience is by industry achiev'd, And perfected by the swift course of time: Then, tell me, whither were I best to send him!

*Pan.* I think, your lordship is not ignorant How his companion, youthful Valentine, Attends the emperor in his royal court.

*Ant.* I know it well.

*Pan.* 'Twere good, I think, your lordship sent him thither:

There shall he practise tilts and tournaments, Hear sweet discourse, converse with noblemen; And be in eye of every exercise, Worthy his youth and nobleness of birth.

*Ant.* I like thy counsel; well hast thou advis'd: And, that thou may'st perceive how well I like The execution of it shall make known; [it, Even with the speediest execution

I will despatch him to the emperor's court.

*Pan.* To-morrow, may it please you, Don Alphonso, With other gentlemen of good esteem,

Are journeying to salute the emperor, And to commend their service to his will.

*Ant.* Good company; with them shall Proteus go: [him †.]

And, in good time,—now will we break with

*Enter PROTEUS.*

*Pro.* Sweet love! sweet lines! sweet life! Here is her hand, the agent of her heart; Here is her oath for love, her honour's pawn: O, that our fathers would applaud our loves, To seal our happiness with their consents! O heavenly Julia!

*Ant.* How now? what letter are you reading there? [or two]

*Pro.* May't please your lordship, 'tis a word Of commendation sent from Valentine, Delivered by a friend that came from him.

*Ant.* Lend me the letter; let me see what news. [writes]

*Pro.* There is no news, my lord; but that he How happily he lives, how well belov'd, And daily graced by the emperor;

Wishing me with him, partner of his for une.

*Ant.* And how stand you affected to his wish?

*Pro.* As one relying on your lordship's will,

And not depending on his friendly wish.

*Ant.* My will is something sorted with his wish:

Muse! not that I thus suddenly proceed; For what I will, I will, and there an end. I am resolv'd, that thou shalt spend some time With Valentine in the emperor's court; What maintenance he from his friends receives, Like exhibition ¶ thou shalt have from me. To-morrow be in readiness to go:

Excuse it not, for I am peremptory.

*Pro.* My lord, I cannot be so soon provided;

Please you, deliberate a day or two.

*Ant.* Look, what thou want'st, shall be sent after thee: No more of stay; to-morrow thou must go.—Come on, Panthino; you shall be employ'd To hasten on his expedition.

[*Exeunt ANT. and PAN.*]

*Pro.* Thus have I shunn'd the fire, for fear of burning;

And drench'd me in the sea, where I am drown'd:

I fear'd to shew my father Julia's letter, Lest he should take exceptions to my love; And with the vantage of mine own excuse Hath he excepted most against my love.

O, how this spring of love resembleth The uncertain glory of an April day;

Which now shews all the beauty of the sun, And by and by a cloud takes all away!

*Re-enter PANTHINO.*

*Pan.* Sir Proteus, your father calls for you; He is in haste, therefore, I pray you, go.

*Pro.* Why, this it is! my heart accords thereto; And yet a thousand times it answers, no.

[*Exeunt.*]

\* Serious.

† Little consequence.

‡ Reproach.

§ Break the matter to him.

¶ Wonder.

¶ Allowance.

## ACT II.

## SCENE I. Milan.

An Apartment in the Duke's Palace.

Enter VALENTINE and SPEED.

*Speed.* Sir, your glove.

*Val.* Not mine; my gloves are on.

*Speed.* Why then this may be your's, for this is but one. [mine:—

*Val.* Hal let me see: ay, give it me, it's Sweet ornament that decks a thing divinest  
Ah Silvia! Silvia!

*Speed.* Madam Silvia! madam Silvia!

*Val.* How now, sirrah?

*Speed.* She is not within hearing, sir.

*Val.* Why, sir, who bade you call her?

*Sp.* Your worship, sir; or else I mistook.

*Val.* Well, you'll still be too forward.

*Speed.* And yet I was last chidden for being too slow.

*Val.* Go to, sir; tell me, do you know madam Silvia?

*Speed.* She that your worship loves?

*Val.* Why, how know you that I am in love?

*Speed.* Marry, by these special marks: First, you have learned, like sir Proteus, to wreath your arms like a male-content; to relish a love-song, like a robin-red-breast; to walk alone, like one that had the pestilence; to sigh, like a school-boy that had lost his A. B. C.; to weep, like a young wench that had buried her grandam; to fast, like one that takes diet\*; to watch, like one that fears robbing; to speak pulling, like a beggar at Hallowmas†. You were wont, when you laugh'd, to crow like a cock; when you walked, to walk like one of the lions; when you fasted, it was presently after dinner; when you looked sadly, it was for want of money: and now you are metamorphosed with a mistress, that, when I look on you, I can hardly think you my master.

*Val.* Are all these things perceived in me?

*Speed.* They are all perceived without you.

*Val.* Without me? They cannot.

*Speed.* Without you? Nay, that's certain, for, without you were so simple, none else would: but you are so without these follies, that these follies are within you, and shine through you like the water in an urinal; that not an eye, that sees you, but is a physician to comment on your malady.

*Val.* But, tell me, dost thou know my lady Silvia?

*Speed.* She, that you gaze on so, as she sits at supper?

*Val.* Hast thou observed that? even she I mean.

*Speed.* Why, sir, I know her not.

*Val.* Dost thou know her by my gazing on her, and yet know'st her not.

*Speed.* Is she not hard favoured, sir?

*Val.* Not so fair, boy, as well favoured.

*Speed.* Sir, I know that well enough.

*Val.* What dost thou know?

*Speed.* That she is not so fair, as (of you) well favoured.

*Val.* I mean, that her beauty is exquisite, but her favour infinite.

*Speed.* That's because the one is painted, and the other out of all count.

*Val.* How painted? and how out of count?

*Speed.* Marry, sir, so painted, to make her fair, that no man counts of her beauty.

*Val.* How esteemest thou me? I account her beauty.

*Speed.* You never saw her since she was deformed.

*Val.* How long hath she been deformed?

*Speed.* Ever since you loved her.

*Val.* I have loved her ever since I saw her; and still I see her beautiful.

*Speed.* If you love her, you cannot see her.

*Val.* Why?

*Speed.* Because love is blind. O, that you had mine eyes; or your own had the lights they were wont to have, when you chid at sir Proteus for going ungartered!

*Val.* What should I see then?

*Speed.* Your own present folly, and her passing deformity: for he, being in love, could not see to garter his hose; and you, being in love, cannot see to put on your hose.

*Val.* Belike, boy, then you are in love; for last morning you could not see to wipe my shoes.

*Speed.* True, sir; I was in love with my bed: I thank you, you swung† me for my love, which makes me the bolder to chide you for yours.

*Val.* In conclusion, I stand affected to her.

*Speed.* I would you were set; so, your affection would cease.

*Val.* Last night she enjoined me to write some lines to one she loves.

*Speed.* And have you?

*Val.* I have.

*Speed.* Are they not lamely writ?

*Val.* No, boy, but as well as I can do them:—Peace, here she comes.

Enter SILVIA.

*Speed.* O excellent motion§! O exceeding puppet! now will he interpret to her.

*Val.* Madam and mistress, a thousand good-morrows.

*Speed.* O, 'give you good even! here's a million of manners. [Aside.

*Sil.* Sir Valentine and servant, to you two thousand.

*Speed.* He should give her interest: and she gives it him. [letter,

*Val.* As you enjoin'd me, I have writ your Unto the secret nameless friend of yours;

Which I was much unwilling to proceed in, But for my duty to your ladyship.

*Sil.* I thank you, gentle servant: 'tis very clerkly|| done.

\* Under a regimen. † Allhallowmas. ‡ Whipped. § A puppet-show. || Like a scholar.



*Val.* Now trust me, madam, it came hardly  
For, being ignorant to whom it goes, [off;  
I writ at random, very doubtfully.

*Sil.* Perchance you think too much of so  
much pains? [write,

*Val.* No, madam; so it stead you, I will  
Please you command, a thousand times as  
And yet,— [much:]

*Sil.* A pretty period! Well, I guess the sequel;  
And yet I will not name it:—and yet I care  
not;—

And yet take this again;—and yet I thank you;  
Meaning henceforth to trouble you no more.

*Speed.* And yet you will; and yet another  
yet. [Aside.

*Val.* What means your ladyship? do you  
not like it?

*Sil.* Yes, yes; the lines are very quaintly writ:  
But since unwillingly, take them again:  
Nay, take them.

*Val.* Madam, they are for you.

*Sil.* Ay, ay; you writ them, sir, at my request:  
But I will none of them; they are for you:  
I would have had them writ more movingly.

*Val.* Please you, I'll write your ladyship  
another. [it over:]

*Sil.* And, when it's writ, for my sake read  
And, if it please you, so; if not, why, so.

*Val.* If it please me, madam! what then?

*Sil.* Why, if it please you, take it for your  
labour;

And so good-morrow, servant. [Exit SILVIA.

*Speed.* O jest unseen, inscrutable, invisible,  
As a nose on a man's face, or a weathercock  
on a steeple!

My master sues to her; and she hath taught  
her suitor,

He being her pupil, to become her tutor.

O excellent device! was there ever heard a  
better? [write the letter?

That my master, being scribe, to himself should  
*Val.* How now, sir? what are you reason-  
ing with yourself?

*Speed.* Nay I was rhyming; 'tis you that  
have the reason.

*Val.* To do what?

*Sp.* To be a spokesman from madam Silvia.

*Val.* To whom?

*Speed.* To yourself: why, she woos you by  
a figure.

*Val.* What figure?

*Speed.* By a letter, I should say.

*Val.* Why, she hath not writ to me?

*Speed.* What need she, when she hath made  
you write to yourself? Why, do you not per-  
ceive the jest?

*Val.* No, believe me.

*Speed.* No believing you indeed, sir: But  
did you perceive her earnest?

*Val.* He gave me none, except an angry word.

*Speed.* Why, she hath given you a letter.

*Val.* That's the letter I writ to her friend.

*Speed.* And that letter hath she deliver'd,  
and there an end.\*

*Val.* I would, it were no worse.

*Speed.* I'll warrant you, 'tis as well;

*For often you have writ to her; and she, in  
modesty, [again reply,  
Or else for want of idle time, could not  
Or fearing else some messenger, that might  
her mind discover, [unto her lover.—  
Herself hath taught her love himself to write  
All this I speak in print; for in print I found  
Why muse you, sir? 'tis dinner-time. [it.—  
Val. I have dined.*

*Speed.* Ay, but hearken, sir: though the ca-  
meleon Love can feed on the air, I am one that  
am nourished by my victuals, and would fain  
have meat: O, be not like your mistress; be  
moved, be moved. [Exeunt

## SCENE II.

Verona. A room in Julia's House.

Enter PROTEUS and JULIA.

*Pro.* Have patience, gentle Julia.

*Jul.* I must, where is no remedy.

*Pro.* When possibly I can, I will return.

*Jul.* If you turn not, you will return the  
sooner:

Keep this remembrance for thy Julia's sake.  
[Giving a ring.

*Pro.* Why then we'll make exchange; here,  
take you this.

*Jul.* And seal the bargain with a holy kiss.

*Pro.* Here is my hand for my true constancy;  
And when that hour o'er slips me in the day,  
Wherein I sigh not, Julia, for thy sake,  
The next ensuing hour some foul mischance  
Torment me for my love's forgetfulness!  
My father stays my coming; answer not;  
The tide is now: nay, not the tide of tears;  
That tide will stay me longer than I should;  
[Exit JULIA.

Julia, farewell.—What! gone without a word?  
Ay, so true love should do: it cannot speak;  
For truth hath better deeds, than words, to  
grace it.

Enter PANTHINO.

*Pan.* Sir Proteus, you are staid for.

*Pro.* Go; I come, I come:—

Alas! this parting strikes poor lovers dumb.

[Exeunt.

## SCENE III. The same. A Street.

Enter LAUNCE, leading a dog.

*Laun.* Nay, 'twill be this hour ere I have  
done weeping; all the kind† of the Lances  
have this very fault: I have received my pro-  
portion, like the prodigious son, and am going  
with sir Proteus to the Imperial's court. I  
think Crab my dog be the sourest-natured dog  
that lives: my mother weeping, my father  
wailing, my sister crying, our maid howling,  
our cat wringing her hands, and all our house  
in a great perplexity, yet did not this cruel-  
hearted cur shed one tear: he is a stone, a very  
pebble-stone, and has no more pity in him  
than a dog: a Jew would have wept to have  
seen our parting; why, my grandam having  
no eyes, look you, wept herself blind at my  
parting. Nay, I'll show you the manner of it:

\* There's the conclusion.

† Kindred.

This shoe is my father;—no, this left shoe is my father;—no, no, this left shoe is my mother;—nay, that cannot be so neither;—yes, it is so, it is so; it hath the worser sole; This shoe, with the hole in it, is my mother, and this my father; A vengeance on't! there 'tis: now, sir, this staff is my sister; for, look you, she is as white as a lily, and as small as a wand: this hat is Nan, our maid; I am the dog:—no, the dog is himself, and I am the dog.—O, the dog is me, and I am myself; ay, so, so. Now come I to my father; *Father, your blessing*; now should not the shoe speak a word for weeping; now should I kiss my father; well, he weeps on:—now come I to my mother, (O, that she could speak now!) like a wood\* woman;—well, I kiss her;—why there 'tis; here's my mother's breath up and down: now come I to my sister; mark the moan she makes: now the dog all this while sheds not a tear, nor speaks a word; but see how I lay the dust with my tears.

*Enter PANTHINO.*

*Pan.* Lance, away, away, aboard; thy master is shipped, and thou art to post after with oars. What's the matter? why weepst thou, man? Away, ass; you will lose the tide, if you tarry any longer.

*La.* It is no matter if the y'd were lost; for it is the unkindest thy'd that ever any man ty'd.

*Pan.* What's the unkindest tide?

*La.* Why, he that's ty'd here; Crab, my dog.

*Pan.* Tut, man, I mean thou'lt lose the flood; and, in losing the flood, lose thy voyage; and, in losing thy voyage, lose thy master; and in losing thy master, lose thy service; and, in losing thy service,—Why dost thou stop my mouth?

*La.* For fear thou should'st lose thy tongue.

*Pan.* Where should I lose my tongue?

*Laun.* In thy tale.

*Pan.* In thy tail?

*Laun.* Lose the tide, and the voyage, and the master, and the service? The tide!—Why, man, if the river were dry, I am able to fill it with my tears; if the wind were down, I could drive the boat with my sighs.

*Pan.* Come, come away, man; I was sent to call thee.

*Laun.* Sir, call me what thou darest.

*Pan.* Wilt thou go?

*Laun.* Well, I will go. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV.

Milan. *An Apartment in the Duke's Palace.*

*Enter VALENTINE, SILVIA, THURIO, and SPEED.*

*Sil.* Servant—

*Val.* Mistress?

*Speed.* Master, sir Thurio frowns on you.

*Val.* Ay, boy, it's for love.

*Speed.* Not of you.

*Val.* Of my mistress then.

*Speed.* 'Twere good, you know'd him.

*Sil.* Servant, you are sad.

*Val.* Indeed, madam, I seem so.

*Thu.* Seem you that you are not?

*Val.* Haply, I do.

*Thu.* So do counterfeits.

*Val.* So do you.

*Thu.* What seem I, that I am not?

*Val.* Wise.

*Thu.* What instance of the contrary?

*Val.* Your folly.

*Thu.* And how quote'st you my folly?

*Val.* I quote it in your jerkin.

*Thu.* My jerkin is a doublet.

*Val.* Well, then, I'll double your folly.

*Thu.* How?

*Sil.* What, angry, sir Thurio? do you change colour?

*Val.* Give him leave, madam; he is a kind ofameleon.

*Thu.* That hath more mind to feed on your blood, than live in your air.

*Val.* You have said, sir.

*Thu.* Ay, sir, and done too, for this time.

*Val.* I know it well, sir; you always end ere you begin.

*Sil.* A fine volley of words, gentlemen, and quickly shot off.

*Val.* 'Tis indeed, madam; we thank the giver.

*Sil.* Who is that, servant?

*Val.* Yourself, sweet lady; for you gave the fire: sir Thurio borrows his wit from your ladyship's looks, and spends what he borrows, kindly in your company.

*Thu.* Sir, if you spend word for word with me, I shall make your wit bankrupt.

*Val.* I know it well, sir: you have an exchequer of words, and, I think, no other treasure to give your followers; for it appears by their bare liveries, that they live by your bare words.

*Sil.* No more, gentlemen, no more; here comes my father.

*Enter DUKE.*

*Duke.* Now, daughter Silvia, you are hard beset.

Sir Valentine, your father's in good health: What say you to a letter from your friends Of much good news?

*Val.* My lord, I will be thankful To any happy messenger from thence.

*Duke.* Know you Don Antonio, your countryman?

*Val.* Ay, my good lord, I know the gentleman To be of worth, and worthy estimation, And not without desert so well reputed.

*Duke.* Hath he not a son?

*Val.* Ay, my good lord; a son, that well deserves The honour and regard of such a father. [*Servant enters.*]

*Duke.* You know him well? [*Infancy*]

*Val.* I knew him as myself; for from our We have convers'd, and spent our hours together: And though myself have been an idle truant, Omitting the sweet benefit of time, To clothe mine age with angel-like perfection: Yet hath sir Proteus, for that's his name, Made use and fair advantage of his days; His years but young, but his experience old;

\* Crazy, distracted

† Serious.

‡ Perhaps.

§ Observe.

His head unmellow'd, but his judgment ripe;  
 And, in a word, (for far behind his worth  
 Come all the praises that I now bestow,<sup>1</sup>  
 He is complete in feature, and in mind,  
 With all good grace to grace a gentleman.

*Duke.* Beshrew \* me, sir, but, if he make  
 He is as worthy for an empress' love, [this good,  
 As meet to be an emperor's counsellor.  
 Well, sir; this gentleman is come to me,  
 With commendation from great potentates;  
 And here he means to spend his time a-while:  
 I think, 'tis no unwelcome news to you.

*Val.* Should I have wish'd a thing, it had  
 been he. [worth;

*Duke.* Welcome him then according to his  
 Silvia, I speak to you; and you, sir Thurio:—  
 For Valentine, I need not 'cite† him to it:  
 I'll send him hither to you presently.

[Exit Duke.]

*Val.* This is the gentleman, I told your  
 ladyship [tress

Had come along with me, but that his mis-  
 Did hold his eyes lock'd in her crystal looks.

*Sil.* Belike, that now she hath enfranchis'd  
 Upon some other pawn for fealty. [them

*Val.* Nay, sure, I think, she holds them  
 prisoners still. [being blind,

*Sil.* Nay, then he should be blind; and,  
 How could he see his way to seek out you?

*Val.* Why, lady, love hath twenty pair of  
 eyes. [all.

*Thur.* They say, that love hath not an eye at

*Val.* To see such lovers, Thurio, as yourself;  
 Upon a homely object love can wink.

*Enter PROTEUS.*

*Sil.* Have done, have done; here comes the  
 gentleman. [beseech you,

*Val.* Welcome, dear Proteus!—Mistress, I  
 confirm his welcome with some special favour.

*Sil.* His worth is warrant for his welcome  
 hither,

If this be he you oft have wish'd to hear from.

*Val.* Mistress, it is: sweet lady, entertain him  
 To be my fellow-servant to your ladyship.

*Sil.* Too low a mistress for so high a servant.

*Pro.* Not so, sweet lady; but too mean a  
 servant

To have a look of such a worthy mistress.

*Val.* Leave off discourse of disability:—  
 Sweet lady, entertain him for your servant.

*Pro.* My duty will I boast of, nothing else.

*Sil.* And duty never yet did want his meed;  
 Servant, you are welcome to a worthless mis-  
 tress.

*Pro.* I'll die on him that says so, but yourself.

*Sil.* That you are welcome?

*Pro.* No; that you are worthless.

*Enter Servant.*

*Ser.* Madam, my lord your father would  
 speak with you.

*Sil.* I'll wait upon his pleasure. [Exit Serv.]

Come, sir Thurio,  
 Go with me:—Once more, new servant, wel-  
 come:

I'll leave you to confer of home-affairs;

When you have done, we look to hear from you.

*Pro.* We'll both attend upon your ladyship.

[Exit SILVIA, THURIO, and SPEED.]

*Val.* Now, tell me, how do all from whence  
 you came? [much commended.

*Pro.* Your friends are well, and have them

*Val.* And how do yours?

*Pro.* I left them all in health.

*Val.* How does your lady? and how thrives  
 your love?

*Pro.* My tales of love were wont to weary  
 you;

I know, you joy not in a love-discourse.

*Val.* Ay, Proteus, but that life is alter'd now:

I have done penance for contemning love;

Whose high imperious thoughts have punish'd

With bitter fasts, with penitential groans, [me

With nightly tears, and daily heart-sore sighs;

For, in revenge of my contempt of love,

Love hath chac'd sleep from my entrall'd  
 eyes, [sorrow.

And made them watchers of mine own heart's

O, gentle Proteus, love's a mighty lord;

And bath so humbled me, as I confess,

There is no woe to his correction,

Nor, to his service, no such joy on earth!

Now, no discourse, except it be of love;

Now can I break my fast, dine, sup, and sleep,

Upon the very naked name of love. [eye:

*Pro.* Enough; I read your fortune in your

Was this the idol that you worship so?

*Val.* Even she; and is she not a heavenly  
 saint?

*Pro.* No; but she is an earthly paragon.

*Val.* Call her divine.

*Pro.* I will not flatter her.

*Val.* O, flatter me; for love delights in  
 praises. [pills;

*Pro.* When I was sick, you gave me bitter  
 And I must minister the like to you.

*Val.* Then speak the truth by her; if not

Yet let her be a principality, [divine,  
 Sovereign to all the creatures on the earth.

*Pro.* Except my mistress.

*Val.* Sweet, except not any;  
 Except thou wilt except against my love.

*Pro.* Have I not reason to prefer mine own?

*Val.* And I will help thee to prefer her too:  
 She shall be dignified with this high honour,—

To bear my lady's train; lest the base earth  
 Should from her vesture chance to steal a kiss,

And, of so great a favour growing proud,  
 Disdain to root the summer-swelling flower,

And make rough winter everlastingly.

*Pro.* Why, Valentine, what braggardism is  
 this? [nothing

*Val.* Pardon me, Proteus: all I can, is  
 To her, whose worth makes other worthies

She is alone. [nothing;

*Pro.* Then let her alone. [nine own;

*Val.* Not for the world: why, man, she is

And I as rich in having such a jewel,

As twenty seas, if all their sand were pearl,

The water nectar, and the rooks pure gold.

Forgive me, that I do not dream on thee,



Because thou seest me dote upon my love.  
My foolish rival, that her father likes,  
Only for his possessions are so huge,  
Is gone with her along; and I must after,  
For love, thou know'st, is full of jealousy.

*Pro.* But she loves you?

*Val.* Ay, and we are betroth'd;  
Nay, more, our marriage hour,  
With all the cunning manner of our flight,  
Determin'd of: how I must climb her window;  
The ladder made of cords; and all the means  
Plotted; and 'greed on, for my happiness.  
Good Proteus, go with me to my chamber,  
In these affairs to aid me with thy counsel.

*Pro.* Go on before; I shall inquire you  
I must unto the road, to disembark [forth:  
Some necessities that I needs must use;  
And then I'll presently attend you.

*Val.* Will you make haste?

*Pro.* I will.— [Exit VAL.  
Even as one heat another heat expels,  
Or as one nail by strength drives out another,  
So the remembrance of my former love  
Is by a newer object quite forgotten.  
Is it mine eye, or Valentinus' praise,  
Her true perfection, or my false transgression,  
That makes me, reasonless, to reason thus?  
She's fair; and so is Julia, that I love;—  
That I did love, for now my love is thaw'd;  
Which, like a waxen image 'gainst a fire,  
Bears no impression of the thing it was.  
Methinks my zeal to Valentine is cold;  
And that I love him not, as I was wont:  
O! but I love his lady too, too much;  
And that's the reason I love him so little.  
How shall I dote on her with more advice\*,  
That thus without advice begin to love her?  
'Tis but her picture I have yet beheld,  
And that hath dazzled my reason's light;  
But when I look on her perfections,  
There is no reason but I shall be blind.  
If I can check my erring love, I will;  
If not, to compass her I'll use my skill. [Exit.

#### SCENE V. The same. A street.

*Enter SPEED and LAUNCE.*

*Speed.* Launce! by mine honesty, welcome to Milan.

*Laun.* Forswear not thyself, sweet youth; for I am not welcome. I reckon this always— that a man is never undone, till he be hanged; nor never welcome to a place, till some certain shot be paid, and the hostess say, welcome.

*Speed.* Come on, you mad-cap, I'll to the alehouse with you presently; where, for one shot of five pence, thou shalt have five thousand welcomes. But, sirrah, how did thy master part with madam Julia?

*Laun.* Marry, after they closed in earnest, they parted very fairly in jest.

*Speed.* But shall she marry him?

*Laun.* No.

*Speed.* How then? Shall he marry her?

*Laun.* No, neither.

*Speed.* What, are they broken?

*Laun.* No, they are both as whole as a fish.

*Speed.* Why, then, how stands the matter with them?

*Laun.* Marry, thus; when it stands well with him, it stands well with her.

*Speed.* What an ass art thou! I understand thee not.

*Laun.* What a block art thou, that thou canst not! My staff understands me.

*Speed.* What thou sayst?

*Laun.* Ay, and what I do too: look thee, I'll but lean, and my staff understands me.

*Speed.* It stands under thee, indeed.

*Laun.* Why, stand under and understand is all one.

*Speed.* But tell me true, will't be a match?

*Laun.* Ask my dog: if he say, ay, it will; if he say, no, it will; if he shake his tail, and say nothing, it will.

*Speed.* The conclusion is, then, that it will.

*Laun.* Thou shalt never get such a secret from me, but by a parable.

*Speed.* 'Tis well that I get it so. But, Launce, how say'st thou, that thy master is become a notable lover?

*Laun.* I never knew him o'herwise.

*Speed.* Than how?

*Laun.* A notable lubber, as thou reportest him to be.

*Speed.* Why, thou whoreson ass, thou mistakest me.

*Laun.* Why, fool, I meant not thee; I meant thy master.

*Speed.* I tell thee, my master is become a hot lover.

*Laun.* Why, I tell thee, I care not though he burn himself in love. If thou wilt go with me to the ale-house, so; if not, thou art an Hebrew, a Jew, and not worth the name of a Christian.

*Speed.* Why?

*Laun.* Because thou hast not so much clarity in thee, as to go to the ale with a Christian: Wilt thou go?

*Speed.* At thy service.

[Exit.

#### SCENE VI. The same. An Apartment in the Palace.

*Enter PROTEUS.*

*Pro.* To leave my Julia, shall I be forsworn;

To love fair Silvia, shall I be forsworn;

To wrong my friend, I shall be much forsworn;

And even that power which gave me first my

Provokes me to this threefold perjury. [oath,

Love bade me swear, and love bids me forswear:

O sweet-suggesting love, if thou hast sinn'd,

Teach me, thy tempted subject, to excuse it.

At first I did adore a twinkling star,

But now I worship a celestial sun.

Unheedful vows may heedfully be broken;

And he wants wit, that wants resolved will

To learn his wit to exchange the bad for better.—

Fie, fie, unreverend tongue! to call her bad,

Whose sovereignty so oft thou hast prefer'd

With twenty thousand soul-confirming oaths.

I cannot leave to love, and yet I do;

But there I leave to love, where I should love

\* On further knowledge.

† Tempting.

Julia I lose, and Valentine I lose:  
 If I keep them, I needs must lose myself;  
 If I lose them, thus find I by their loss,  
 For Valentine, myself; for Julia, Silvia.  
 I to myself am dearer than a friend;  
 For love is still more precious in itself:  
 And Silvia, witness heaven, that made her fair!  
 Shews Julia but a swarthy Ethiope.  
 I will forget that Julia is alive,  
 Rememb'ring that my love to her is dead;  
 And Valentine I'll hold an enemy,  
 Aiming at Silvia as a sweeter friend.  
 I cannot now prove constant to myself,  
 Without some treachery used to Valentine:—  
 This night, he meaneth with a corded ladder  
 To climb celestial Silvia's chamber-window;  
 Myself in counsel his competitor:  
 Now presently I'll give her father notice  
 Of their disguising, and pretended flight;  
 Who, all enrag'd, will banish Valentine;  
 For Thurio, he intends, shall wed his daughter:  
 But, Valentine being gone, I'll quickly cross,  
 By some sly trick, blunt Thurio's dull proceeding. [swift  
 Love, lend me wings to make my purpose  
 As thou hast lent me wit to plot this drift!  
 [Exit.

SCENE VII. Verona. A Room in Julia's House.

Enter JULIA and LUCETTA.

Jul. Counsel, Lucetta; gentle girl, assist me!  
 And, even in kind love, I do conjure thee,—  
 Who art the table wherein all my thoughts  
 Are visibly charact'rd and engrav'd,—  
 To lesson me; and tell me some good mean,  
 How, with my honour, I may undertake  
 Journey to my loving Proteus.

Luc. Alas! the way is wearisome and long.

Jul. A true-devoted pilgrim is not weary  
 To measure kingdoms with his feeble steps;  
 Muchless shall she, that hath love's wings to fly;  
 And when the flight is made to one so dear,  
 Of such divine perfection, as sir Proteus.

Luc. Better forbear, till Proteus make return.

Jul. O, know'st thou not, his looks are my  
 soul's food?

Pity the dearth that I have pined in,  
 By longing for that food so long a time.  
 Didst thou but know the inly touch of love,  
 Thou would'st as soon go kindle fire with snow,  
 As seek to quench the fire of love with words.

Luc. I do not seek to quench your love's hot  
 But qualify the fire's extreme rage, [fire;  
 Lest it should burn above the bounds of reason.

Jul. The more thou dam'st† it up, the more  
 it burns;

current, that with gentle murmur glides,  
 and know'st, being stopp'd, impatiently doth  
 rage;

But, when his fair course is not hindered,  
 He makes sweet music with the enamel'd stones,  
 Giving a gentle kiss to every sedge  
 He overtaketh in his pilgrimage;  
 And so by many winding nooks he strays,

With willing sport, to the wild ocean.  
 Then let me go, and hinder not my course:  
 I'll be as patient as a gentle stream,  
 And make a pastime of each weary step,  
 Till the last step have brought me to my love;  
 And there I'll rest, as, after much turmoil, y,  
 A blessed soul doth in Elysium.

Luc. But in what habit will you go along?

Jul. Not like a woman; for I would prevent  
 The loose encounters of lascivious men:  
 Gentle Lucetta, fit me with such weeds  
 As may besem some well-reputed page.

Luc. Why then your ladyship must cut  
 your hair.

Jul. No, girl; I'll knit it up in silken strings,  
 With twenty odd-conceited true-love knots:  
 To be fantastic may become a youth  
 Of greater time than I shall show to be.

Luc. What fashion, madam, shall I make  
 your breeches? [my lord,

Jul. That fits as well, as—"tell me, good  
 "What compass will you wear your far-  
 thingale?" [Lucetta.

Why, even that fashion that thou best lik'st,

Luc. You must needs have them with a cod-  
 piece, madam.

Jul. Out, out, Lucetta! that will be ill-  
 favour'd. [a pin,

Luc. A round hose, madam, now's not worth  
 Unless you have a cod-piece to stick pins on.

Jul. Lucetta, as thou lov'st me, let me have  
 What thou think'st meet, and is most mannerly:  
 But tell me, wench, how will the world repute  
 For undertaking so unstead a journey? [me,  
 I fear me, it will make me scandaliz'd.

Luc. If you think so, then stay at home, and  
 Jul. Nay, that I will not. [go not.

Luc. Then never dream on infamy, but go.  
 If Proteus like your journey, when you come,  
 No matter who's displeas'd, when you are gone:  
 I fear me, he will scarce be pleas'd withal.

Jul. That is the least, Lucetta, of my fear:  
 A thousand oaths, an ocean of his tears,  
 And instances as infinite of love,  
 Warrant me welcome to my Proteus.

Luc. All these are servants to deceitful men.

Jul. Base men, that use them to so base  
 effect!

But truer stars did govern Proteus' birth:  
 His words are bonds, his oaths are oracles;  
 His love sincere, his thoughts immaculate;  
 His tears, pure messengers sent from his heart;  
 His heart as far from fraud, as heaven from  
 earth. [come to him!

Luc. Pray heaven he prove so, when you

Jul. Now, as thou lov'st me, do him not that  
 To bear a hard opinion of his truth: [wrong,  
 Only deserve my love, by loving him;  
 And presently go with me to my chamber,  
 To take a note of what I stand in need of,  
 To furnish me upon my longing journey.  
 All that is mine I leave at thy dispose,  
 My goods, my lands, my reputation;  
 Only, in lieu thereof, despatch me hence:  
 Come, answer not, but to it presently;  
 I am impatient of my tarriance. [Exeunt.

\* Confederate.

† Intended.

‡ Closest.

§ Trouble.

|| Longed for.

## ACT III.

SCENE I. Milan. *An Ante room in the Duke's palace.*

*Enter DUKE, THURIO, and PROTEUS.*

*Duke.* Sir Thurio, give us leave, I pray, awhile;

We have some secrets to confer about.—

[*Exit THURIO.*]

Now, tell me, Proteus, what's your will with me?

[*discover,*]

*Pro.* My gracious lord, that which I would The law of friendship bids me to conceal:

But, when I call to mind your gracious favours Done to me, undeserving as I am,

My duty pricks me on to utter that [me.] Which else no worldly good should draw from

Know, worthy prince, sir Valentine, my friend, This night intends to steal away your daughter;

Myself am one made privy to the plot. I know, you have determin'd to bestow her

On Thurio, whom your gentle daughter hates; And should she thus be stolen away from you,

It would be much vexation to your age. Thus, for my duty's sake, I rather chose

To cross my friend in his intended drift, Than, by concealing it, heap on your head

A pack of sorrows, which would press you down,

Being unprevented, to your timeless grave.

*Duke.* Proteus, I thank thee for thine honest care;

Which to requite, command me while I live. This love of theirs myself have often seen,

Haply, when they have judged me fast asleep; And oftentimes have purpos'd to forbid

Sir Valentine her company, and my court: But, fearing lest my jealous aim\* might err,

And so, unworthily, disgrace the man, (A rashness that I ever yet have shunn'd,)

I gave him gentle looks; thereby to find That which thyself hast now disclos'd to me.

And, that thou may'st perceive my fear of this, Knowing that tender youth is soon suggested,

I nightly lodge her in an upper tower, The key whereof myself have ever kept;

And thence she cannot be convey'd away.

*Pro.* Know, noble lord, they have devis'd a mean

How he her chamber-window will ascend, And with a corded ladder fetch her down;

For which the youthful lover now is gone, And this way comes he with it presently;

Where, if it please you, you may intercept him. But, good my lord, do it so cunningly,

That my discovery be not aimed† at; For love of you, not hate unto my friend,

Hath made me publisher of this pretence‡.

*Duke.* Upon mine honour, he shall never know

That I had any light from thee of this.

*Pro.* Adieu, my lord; sir Valentine is coming. [*Exit.*]

*Enter VALENTINE.*

*Duke.* Sir Valentine, whither away so fast? *Val.* Please it your grace there is a messenger

That stays to bear my letters to my friends, And I am going to deliver them.

*Duke.* Be they of much import?

*Val.* The tenor of them doth but signify My health, and happy being at your court.

*Duke.* Nay, then, no matter; stay with me a while;

I am to break with thee of some affairs. That touch me near, wherein thou must be

secret. 'Tis not unknown to thee, that I have sought

To match my friend, sir Thurio, to my daughter.

*Val.* I know it well, my lord; and, sure, the match [tleman

Were rich and honourable; besides, the gentls full of virtue, bounty, worth, and qualities

Beseeming such a wife as your fair daughter: Cannot your grace win her to fancy him?

*Duke.* No, trust me; she is peevish, sullen, froward,

Proud, disobedient, stubborn, lacking duty; Neither regarding that she is my child,

Nor fearing me as if I were her father: And, may I say to thee, this pride of her's,

Upon advice, hath drawn my love from her; And, where I thought the remnant of mine age

Should have been cherish'd by her child-like duty,

I now am full resolved to take a wife, And turn her out to who will take her in:

Then let her beauty be her wedding-dower; For me and my possessions she esteems not.

*Val.* What would your grace have me to do in this?

*Duke.* There is a lady, sir, in Milan here, Whom I affect; but she is nice and coy,

And nought esteems my aged eloquence: Now, therefore, would I have thee to my tutor,

(For long agoe I have forgot to court: Besides, the fashion of the time is chang'd;)

How, and which way, I may bestow myself, To be regarded in her sun-bright eye.

*Val.* Win her with gifts, if she respect not words;

Dumb jewels often, in their silent kind, More than quick words, do move a woman's

mind. [her.]

*Duke.* But she did scorn a present that I sent

*Val.* A woman sometimes scorns what best contents her:

Send her another; never give her o'er; For scorn at first makes after-love the more.

If she do frown, 'tis not in hate of you, But rather to beget more love in you:

If she do chide, 'tis not to have you gone; For why, the fools are mad, if left alone.

Take no repulse, whatever she doth say; For, get you gone, she doth not mean, away

\* Guess.

† Tempted.

‡ Guess

§ Design



Flatter and praise, commend, extol their graces,  
Though ne'er so black, say, they have angels'  
faces.

That man that hath a tongue, I say, is no man  
If with his tongue he cannot win a woman.

*Duke.* But she I mean, is promis'd by her  
Unto a youthful gentleman of worth; [friends  
And kept severely from resort of men,  
That no man hath access by day to her.

*Val.* Why, then, I would resort to her by  
night. [kept safe,

*Duke.* Ay, but the doors be lock'd, and keys  
That no man hath recourse to her by night.

*Val.* What lets \*, but one may enter at her  
window? [ground;

*Duke.* Her chamber is aloft, far from the  
And built so shelving, that one cannot climb it  
Without apparent hazard of his life. [cords,

*Val.* Why then, a ladder, quaintly made of  
To cast up with a pair of anchoring hooks,  
Would serve to scale another hero's tower,  
So bold Leander would adventure it.

*Duke.* Now, as thou art a gentleman of blood,  
Advise me where I may have such a ladder.

*Val.* When would you use it? pray, sir, tell  
me that.

*Duke.* This very night! for love is like a child,  
That longs for every thing that he can come by.

*Val.* By seven o'clock I'll get you such a  
ladder.

*Duke.* But, hark thee; I will go to her alone;  
How shall I best convey the ladder thither?

*Val.* It will be light, my lord, that you may  
Under a cloak, that is of any length. [bear it

*Duke.* A cloak as long as thine will serve

*Val.* Ay, my good lord. [the turn?

*Duke.* Then let me see thy cloak;  
I'll get me one of such another length.

*Val.* Why, any cloak will serve the turn,  
my lord. [cloak?—

*Duke.* How shall I fashion me to wear a  
I pray thee, let me feel thy cloak upon me.—  
What letter is this same? What's here?—To  
Silvia?

And here an engine fit for my proceeding!  
I'll be so bold to break the seal for once. [reads.

*My thoughts do harbour with my Silvia  
nightly;*

*And slaves they are to me, that send them  
flying:*

*O, could their master come and go as lightly,  
Himself would lodge, where senseless they  
are lying. [them;*

*My herald thoughts in thy pure bosom rest  
While I, their king, that thither them  
importune,*

*Do curse the grace that with such grace  
hath bless'd them,*

*Because myself do want my servants'  
fortune:*

*I curse myself, for they are sent by me,  
That they should harbour where their lord  
should be.*

What's here?

*Silvia, this night I will enfranchise thee:*

'Tis so; and here's the ladder for the purpose.—  
Why, Phaëton, (for thou art Merops' son)  
Wilt thou aspire to guide the heavenly car,  
And with thy daring folly burn the world?  
Wilt thou reach stars, because they shine on  
thee?

Go, base intruder! overweening slave!  
Bestow thy fawning smiles on equal inmates;  
And think, my patience, more than thy desert,  
Is privilege for thy departure hence:  
Thank me for this, more than for all the favours,  
Which, all too much, I have bestow'd on thee.

But if thou linger in my territories,  
Longer than swiftest expedition

Will give thee time to leave our royal court,  
By heaven, my wrath shall far exceed the love  
I ever bore my daughter, or thyself.

Be gone, I will not hear thy vain excuse,  
But, as thou lov'st thy life, make speed from  
hence. [Exit DUKE.

*Val.* And why not death, rather than living  
torment?

To die, is to be banish'd from myself;  
And Silvia is myself: banish'd from her,  
Is self from self; a deadly banishment!

What light is light, if Silvia be not seen?  
What joy is joy, if Silvia be not by?

Unless it be to think that she is by,  
And feed upon the shadow of perfection.

Except I be by Silvia in the night,  
There is no music in the nightingale;

Unless I look on Silvia in the day,  
There is no day for me to look upon:

She is my essence; and I leave to be,  
If I be not by her fair influence

Foster'd, illumin'd, cherish'd, kept alive.  
I fly not death, to fly his deadly doom:

Tarry I here, I but attend on death;  
But fly I hence, I fly away from life.

*Enter PROTEUS and LAUNCE.*

*Pro.* Run, boy, run, run, and seek him out.

*Laun.* So-ho! so-ho!

*Pro.* What seest thou?

*Laun.* Him we go to find: there's not a  
hair on's head, but 'tis a Valentine.

*Pro.* Valentine?

*Val.* No.

*Pro.* Who then? his spirit?

*Val.* Neither.

*Pro.* What then?

*Val.* Nothing. [strike?

*Laun.* Can nothing speak? master, shall I

*Pro.* Whom would'st thou strike?

*Laun.* Nothing.

*Pro.* Villain, forbear. [you,—

*Laun.* Why, sir, I'll strike nothing: I'll say

*Pro.* Sirrah, I say, forbear: Friend men-  
tine, a word.

*Val.* My ears are stopp'd, and cannot hear  
good news,

So much of bad already hath possess'd them.

*Pro.* Then in dumb silence will I bury mine,  
For they are harsh, untunable, and bad.

*Val.* Is Silvia dead?

*Pro.* No, Valentine.

*Val.* No Valentine, indeed, for sacred Silvia!  
—Hath she forsworn me?

*Pro.* No, Valentine. [me!—

*Val.* No Valentine, if Silvia have forsworn  
What is your news?

*Laun.* Sir, there's a proclamation that you  
are vanish'd. [news;]

*Pro.* That thou art banished, O that's the  
From hence, from Silvia, and from me, thy  
friend.

*Val.* O, I have fed upon this woe already,  
And now excess of it will make me surfeit.  
Doth Silvia know that I am banished?

*Pro.* Ay, ay; and she hath offer'd to the  
doom,

(Which, unrevers'd, stands in effectual force,)  
A sea of melting pearl, which some call tears:  
Those at her father's churlish feet she tender'd;  
With them, upon her knees, her humble self;  
Wringing her hands, whose whiteness so be-  
came them,

As if but now they waxed pale for woe:  
But neither bended knees, pure hands held up,  
Sad sighs, deep groans, nor silver-shedding  
tears,

Could penetrate her uncompassionate sire;  
But Valentine, if he be ta'en, must die.  
Besides, her intercession chaf'd him so,  
When she for thy repeal was suppliant,  
That to close prison he commanded her,  
With many bitter threats of 'biding there.

*Val.* No more; unless the next word that  
thou speak'st

Have some malignant power upon my life:  
If so, I pray thee, breathe it in mine ear,  
As ending anthem of my endless doleour.\*

*Pro.* Cease to lament for that thou canst not  
help,

And study help for that which thou lament'st.  
Time is the nurse and breeder of all good.

Here if thou stay, thou canst not see thy love;  
Besides, thy staying will abridge thy life.

Hope is a lover's staff; walk hence with that,  
And manage it against despairing thoughts.

Thy letters may be here, though thou art hence;  
Which, being writ to me, shall be deliver'd,

Even in the milk-white bosom of thy love.  
The time now serves not to expostulate:

Come, I'll convey thee through the city gate;  
And, ere I part with thee, confer at large

Of all that may concern thy love-affairs:  
As thou lov'st Silvia, though not for thyself,

Regard thy danger, and along with me.

*Val.* I pray thee, Launce, an' if thou seest  
my boy, [north-gate]

Bid him make haste, and meet me at the  
*Pro.* Go, sirrah, find him out. Come, Va-

lentine.

*Val.* O my dear Silvia! hapless Valentine!  
[Exeunt VALENTINE and PROTEUS.]

*Laun.* I am but a fool, look you; and yet I  
have the wit to think, my master is a kind of  
a knave: but that's all one, if he be but one  
knave. He lives not now, that knows me to  
be in love: yet I am in love; but a team of

horse shall not pluck that from me; nor who  
'tis I love, and yet 'tis a woman: but that  
woman I will not tell myself; and yet 'tis a  
milk-maid: yet 'tis not a maid, for she hath  
had gossips: yet 'tis a maid, for she is her  
master's maid, and serves for wages. She hath  
more qualities than a water-spaniel,—which is  
much in a bare christian. Here is the cat-log  
[pulling out a paper] of her conditions. Im-  
primis, *She can fetch and carry.* Why, a  
horse can do no more; nay, a horse cannot  
fetch, but only carry; therefore, is she better  
than a jade. Item, *She can milk;* look you  
a sweet virtue in a maid with clean hands.

Enter SPEED.

*Speed.* How now, signor Launce? what  
news with your mastership?

*Laun.* With my master's ship? why, it is  
at sea.

*Speed.* Well, your old vice still; mistake  
the word: What news then in your paper?

*Laun.* The blackest news that ever thou  
heard'st.

*Speed.* Why, man, how black?

*Laun.* Why, as black as ink.

*Speed.* Let me read them.

*Laun.* Fie on thee, jolt-head; thou can'st not  
read.

*Speed.* Thou liest, I can.

*Laun.* I will try thee: Tell me this: Who  
begot thee?

*Speed.* Marry, the son of my grandfather.

*Laun.* O illiterate loiterer! it was the son  
of thy grandnother: this proves, that thou  
canst not read,

*Speed.* Come, fool, come: try me in thy  
paper.

*Laun.* There; and saint Nicholas† be thy  
speed!

*Speed.* Imprimis, *She can milk.*

*Laun.* Ay, that she can.

*Speed.* Item, *She brews good ale.*

*Laun.* And therefore comes the proverb,—  
Blessing of your heart, you brew good ale.

*Speed.* Item, *She can sew.*

*Laun.* That's as much as to say, Can she so?

*Speed.* Item, *She can knit.*

*Laun.* What need a man care for a stock  
with a wench, when she can knit him a stock?

*Speed.* Item, *She can wash and scour.*

*Laun.* A special virtue; for then she need  
not be washed and scoured.

*Speed.* Item, *She can spin.*

*Laun.* Then may I set the world on wheels,  
when she can spin for her living.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath many nameless  
virtues.*

*Laun.* That's as much as to say, bastard  
virtues; that, indeed, know not their fathers,  
and therefore have no names.

*Speed.* Here follow her vices.

*Laun.* Close at the heels of her virtues.

*Speed.* Item, *She is not to be kissed fast-  
ing, in respect of her breath.*

\* Grief.

St. Nicholas presided over young scholars

*Laun.* Well, that fault may be mended with a breakfast: Read on.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath a sweet mouth.*

*Laun.* That makes amends for her sour breach.

*Speed.* Item, *She doth talk in her sleep.*

*Laun.* It's no matter for that, so she sleep not in her talk

*Speed.* Item, *She is slow in words.*

*Laun.* O villain, that set this down among her vices! To be slow in words, is a woman's only virtue: I pray thee out with't; and place it for her chief virtue.

*Speed.* Item, *She is proud.*

*Laun.* Out with that too; it was Eve's legacy, and cannot be ta'en from her.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath no teeth.*

*Laun.* I care not for that neither, because I love crusts.

*Speed.* Item, *She is curst.*

*Laun.* Well; the best is, she hath no teeth to bite.

*Speed.* Item, *She will often praise her liquor.*

*Laun.* If her liquor be good, she shall: if she will not, I will; for good things should be praised.

*Speed.* Item, *She is too liberal.\**

*Laun.* Of her tongue she cannot; for that's writ down she is slow of; of her purse she shall not; for that I'll keep shut: now, of another thing she may; and that I cannot help. Well, proceed.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath more hair than wit, and more faults than hairs, and more wealth than faults.*

*Laun.* Stop there; I'll have her: she was mine, and not mine, twice or thrice in that last article: Rehearse that once more.

*Speed.* Item, *She hath more hair than wit,—*

*Laun.* More hair than wit,—it may be; I'll prove it: The cover of the salt hides the salt, and therefore it is more than the salt; the hair that covers the wit, is more than the wit; for the greater hides the less. What's next?

*Speed.* And more faults than hairs,—

*Laun.* That's monstrous: O that that were out!

*Speed.* And more wealth than faults.

*Laun.* Why, that word makes the faults gracious: Well, I'll have her: and if it be a match, as nothing is impossible,—

*Speed.* What then?

*Laun.* Why, then I will tell thee,—that thy master stays for thee at the north gate.

*Speed.* For me?

*Laun.* For thee? ay; who art thou? he hath staid for a better man than thee.

*Speed.* And must I go to him?

*Laun.* Thou must run to him, for thou hast staid so long, that going will scarce serve the turn.

*Speed.* Why didst not tell me sooner? 'pox of your love letters! [Exit.]

*Laun.* Now will he be swung for reading

my letter: An unmannerly slave, that will thrust himself into secrets!—I'll after, to rejoice in the boy's correction. [Exit.]

## SCENE II.

*The same.* A Room in the Duke's Palace.

*Enter DUKE and THURIO; PROTEUS behind.*

*Duke.* Sir Thurio, fear not but that she will love you,

Now Valentine is banish'd from her sight.

*Thu.* Since his exile she hath despis'd me most,

Forsworn my company, and rail'd at me, That I am desperate of obtaining her.

*Duke.* This weak impress of love is as a figure

Trench'd in ice; which with an hour's heat Dissolves to water, and doth lose his form.

A little time will melt her frozen thoughts, And worthless Valentine shall be forgot.—

How now, sir Proteus? Is your countryman, According to our proclamation, gone?

*Pro.* Gone, my good lord. [ly.]

*Duke.* My daughter takes his going grievous—

*Pro.* A little time, my lord, will kill that grief. [so.—]

*Duke.* So I believe; but Thurio thinks not Proteus, the good conceit I hold of thee,

(For thou hast shown some sign of good desert,) Makes me the better to confer with thee.

*Pro.* Longer than I prove loyal to your grace, Let me not live to look upon your grace.

*Duke.* Thou know'st how willingly I would effect

The match between sir Thurio and my daughter.

*Pro.* I do, my lord.

*Duke.* And also, I think, thou art not ignorant How she opposes her against my will.

*Pro.* She did, my lord, when Valentine was here.

*Duke.* Ay, and perversely she persévers so. What might we do, to make the girl forget

The love of Valentine, and love sir Thurio?

*Pro.* The best way is to slander Valentine With falsehood, cowardice, and poor descent;

Three things that women highly hold in hate.

*Duke.* Ay, but she'll think that it is spoke

*Pro.* Ay, if his enemy deliver it: [in hate. Therefore it must, with circumstance, be spoken By one whom she esteemeth as his friend.

*Duke.* Then you must undertake to slander him. [do:]

*Pro.* And that, my lord, I shall be loth to 'Tis an ill office for a gentleman;

Especially against his very friend.

*Duke.* Where your good word cannot advantage him,

Your slander never can endamage him; Therefore the office is indifferent,

Being entreated to it by your friend.

*Pro.* You have prevail'd, my lord: if I can do it,

By aught that I can speak in his dispraise,

\* Licentious in language.

† Graceful.

‡ Cut.



She shall not long continue love to him,  
But say, this weed her love from Valentine,  
It follow not that she will love sir Thurio.

*Thu.* Therefore as you unwind her love  
from him,

Lest it should ravel, and be good to none,  
You must provide to bottom it on me:  
Which must be done, by praising me as much  
As you in worth dispraise sir Valentine.

*Duke.* And, Proteus, we dare trust you in  
this kind;

Because we know, on Valentine's report,  
You are already love's firm votary,  
And cannot soon revolt and change your mind.  
Upon this warrant shall you have access,  
Where you with Silvia may confer at large;  
For she is lumpish, heavy, melancholy,  
And, for your friend's sake, will be glad of you;  
Where you may temper her, by your persuasion,  
To hate young Valentine, and love my friend.

*Pro.* As much as I can do, I will effect:—  
But you, sir Thurio, are not sharp enough;  
You must lay line\*, to tangle her desires,  
By waitful sonnets, whose composed rhymes  
Should be full fraught with serviceable vows.

*Duke.* Ay, much the force of heaven-bred  
poesy.

*Pro.* Say, that upon the altar of her beauty  
You sacrifice your tears, your sighs, your heart:

Write till your ink be dry; and with your tears  
Moist it again; and frame some feeling line,  
That may discover such integrity:—  
For Orpheus' lute was strung with poets' sinews,  
Whose golden touch could soften steel and  
stones,

Make tigers tame, and huge leviathans  
Forsake unsounded deeps to dance on sands.  
After your dire-lamenting elegies,  
Visit by night your lady's chamber-window  
With some sweet concert: to their instruments  
Tune a deploring dump†; the night's dead  
silence [grievance]

Will well become such sweet complaining  
This, or else nothing, will inherit her.

*Duke.* This discipline shows thou hast been  
in love.

*Thu.* And thy advice this night I'll put in  
practice:

Therefore, sweet Proteus, my direction-giver,  
Let us into the city presently,  
To sort‡ some gentlemen well skill'd in music:  
I have a sonnet, that will serve the turn,  
To give the onset to thy good advice.

*Duke.* About it, gentlemen. [supper:]

*Pro.* We'll wait upon your grace till after  
And afterward determine our proceedings.

*Duke.* Even now about it; I will pardon  
you. [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. A Forest, near Mantua.

*Enter certain OUTLAWS.*

*1 Out.* Fellows, stand fast; I see a passenger.

*2 Out.* If there be ten, shrink not, but down  
with 'em.

*Enter VALENTINE and SPEED.*

*3 Out.* Stand, sir, and throw us that you  
have about you;

If not, we'll make you sit, and rifle you.

*Speed.* Sir, we are undone! these are the  
villains

That all the travellers do fear so much.

*Val.* My friends,— [mies.]

*1 Out.* That's not so, sir; we are your ene—

*2 Out.* Peace; we'll hear him.

*3 Out.* Ay, by my beard, will we;  
For he's a proper‡ man. [to lose:]

*Val.* Then know, that I have little wealth  
A man I am, cross'd with adversity:

My riches are these poor habitments,  
Of which if you should here disfurnish me,  
You take the sum and substance that I have.

*2 Out.* Whither travel you?

*Val.* To Verona.

*1 Out.* Whence came you?

*Val.* From Milan.

*3 Out.* Have you long sojourn'd there?

*Val.* Some sixteen months; and longer  
might have staid,

If crooked fortune had not thwarted me.

*1 Out.* What, were you banish'd thence

*Val.* I was.

*2 Out.* For what offence? [rehearse:]

*Val.* For that which now torments me to

I kill'd a man, whose death I much repent;

But yet I slew him manfully in fight,

Without false vantage, or base treachery.

*1 Out.* Why ne'er repent it, if it were done so:

But were you banish'd for so small a fault?

*Val.* I was, and held me glad of such a doom.

*1 Out.* Have you the tongues||?

*Val.* My youthful travel therein made me  
Or else I often had been miserable. [happy:]

*3 Out.* By the bare scalp of Robin Hood's  
fat friar,

This fellow were a king for our wild faction.

*1 Out.* We'll have him: sirs, a word.

*Speed.* Master, be one of them;

It is an honourable kind of thievery.

*Val.* Peace, villain! [take to:]

*2 Out.* Tell us this: Have you any thing to

*Val.* Nothing, but my fortune. [tlemen,

*3 Out.* Know, then, that some of us are gen-

Such as the fury of ungovern'd youth

Thrust from the company of awful men:

Myself was from Verona banished,

For practising to steal away a lady,

An heir, and near allied unto the duke.

*2 Out.* And I from Mantua, for a gentleman,  
Whom, in my mood\*\*, I stabb'd unto the heart.

\* Birdlime.

† Mournful elegy.

‡ Choose out.

§ Well-looking.

|| Languages.

¶ Lawful.

\*\* Anger, resentment.

1 *Out.* And I, for such like petty crimes as these.

But to the purpose,—(for we cite our faults,  
That they may hold excus'd our lawless lives,)  
And, partly, seeing you are beautified  
With goodly shape; and by your own report  
A linguist; and a man of such perfection,  
As we do in our quality much want;—

2 *Out.* Indeed, because you are a banish'd man,

Therefore, above the rest, we parley to you:  
Are you content to be our general?

To make a virtue of necessity,  
And live, as we do, in this wilderness?

3 *Out.* What say'st thou? wilt thou be of our consort?

Say, ay, and be the captain of us all:  
We'll do thee homage, and be rul'd by thee,  
Love thee as our commander, and our king.

1 *Out.* But if thou scorn our courtesy, thou diest.

2 *Out.* Thou shalt not live to brag what we have offer'd.

*Val.* I take your offer, and will live with you;  
Provided that you do no outrages  
On silly women, or poor passengers.

3 *Out.* No, we detest such vile base practices.  
Come, go with us, we'll bring thee to our crews,  
And show thee all the treasure we have got;  
Which, with ourselves, all rest at thy dispose.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. Milan. Court of the Palace.

*Enter PROTEUS.*

*Pro.* Already have I been false to Valentine,  
And now I must be as unjust to Thurio.  
Under the colour of commending him,  
I have access my own love to prefer;  
But Silvia is too fair, too true, too holy,  
To be corrupted with my worthless gifts.  
When I protest true loyalty to her,  
She twits me with my falsehood to my friend;  
When to her beauty I commend my vows,  
She bids me think, how I have been forsworn  
In breaking faith with Julia whom I lov'd:  
And, notwithstanding all her sudden quips\*,  
The least whereof would quell a lover's hope,  
Yet, spaniel-like, the more she spurns my love,  
The more it grows and fawneth on her still.  
But here comes Thurio: now must we to her window,  
And give some evening music to her ear.

*Enter THURIO, and Musicians.*

*Thu.* How now, sir Proteus? are you crept before us? [*love*]

*Pro.* Ay, gentle Thurio; for, you know, that Will creep in service where it cannot go.

*Thu.* Ay, but, I hope, sir, that you love not here.

*Pro.* Sir, but I do; or else I would be hence.

*Thu.* Whom? Silvia?

*Pro.* Ay, Silvia,—for your sake.

*Thu.* I thank you for your own. Now, gentlemen,  
Let's tune, and to it lustily a while.

*Enter Host, at a distance; and JULIA in boy's clothes.*

*Host.* Now, my young guest! methinks you're allycholly; I pray you, why is it?  
*Jul.* Marry, mine host, because I cannot be merry.

*Host.* Come, we'll have you merry: I'll bring you where you shall hear music, and see the gentleman that you ask'd for.

*Jul.* But shall I hear him speak?

*Host.* Ay, that you shall.

*Jul.* That will be music. [*Music plays*]

*Host.* Hark! hark!

*Jul.* Is he among these?

*Host.* Ay: but peace, let's hear 'em.

## SONG.

*Who is Silvia? What is she,  
That all our swains commend her?  
Holy, fair, and wise is she;  
The heavens such grace did lend her,  
That she might admired be.*

*Is she kind, as she is fair?  
For beauty lives with kindness:  
Love doth to her eyes repair,  
To help him of his blindness;  
And, being help'd, inhabits there.*

*Then to Silvia let us sing,  
That Silvia is excelling;  
She excels each mortal thing,  
Upon the dull earth dwelling:  
To her let us garlands bring.*

*Host.* How now? are you sadder than you were before?

How do you, man? the music likes you not.

*Jul.* You mistake: the musician likes me not.

*Host.* Why, my pretty youth?

*Jul.* He plays false, father.

*Host.* How? out of tune on the strings?

*Jul.* Not so; but yet so false that he grieves my very heart-strings.

*Host.* You have a quick ear.

*Jul.* Ay, I would I were deaf! it makes me have a slow heart.

*Host.* I perceive, you delight not in music.

*Jul.* Not a whit, when it jars so.

*Host.* Hark, what fine change is in the music!

*Jul.* Ay; that change is the spite.

*Host.* You would have them always play but one thing?

*Jul.* I would always have one play but one thing. But, host, doth this sir Proteus, that we talk on, often resort unto this gentlewoman?

*Host.* I tell you what Launce, his man, told me, he loved her out of all nick†.

*Jul.* Where is Launce?

*Host.* Gone to seek his dog; which, to-morrow, by his master's command, he must carry for a present to his lady.

*Jul.* Peace! stand aside! the company parts.

*Pro.* Sir Thurio, fear not you! I will so plead, That you shall say, my cunning drift excels.

*Thu.* Where meet we?

*Pro.* At Saint Gregory's well.

\* Passionate reproaches,

Beyond all reckoning.

*Thu.* Farewell.

[*Exeunt THURIO and Musicians.*]

*SILVIA* appears above, at her window.

*Pro.* Madam, good even to your ladyship.

*Sil.* I thank you for your music, gentlemen:  
Who is that, that spake? [truth,

*Pro.* One, lady, if you knew his pure heart's  
You'd quickly learn to know him by his voice.  
*Sil.* Sir Proteus, as I take it.

*Pro.* Sir Proteus, gentle lady, and your ser-  
*Sil.* What is your will? [want.

*Pro.* That I may compass yours.

*Sil.* You have your wish; my will is even  
this,—

That presently you bid me home to bed.  
Thou subtle, perjur'd, false, disloyal man!  
Think'st thou, I am so shallow, so conceitless,  
To be seduced by thy flattery,  
That hast deceiv'd so many with thy vows?  
Return, return, and make thy love amends,  
For me,—by this pale queen of night I swear,  
I am so far from granting thy request,  
That I despise thee for thy wrongful suit;  
And by and by intend to chide myself,  
Even for this time I spend in talking to thee.

*Pro.* I grant, sweet love, that I did love a  
But she is dead. [lady;

*Jul.* 'Twere false, if I should speak it;  
For, I am sure, she is not buried. [Aside.

*Sil.* Say that she be; yet Valentine, thy  
Survives; to whom, thyself art witness, [friend,  
I am betroth'd: And art thou not ashamed  
To wrong him with thy importunity?

*Pro.* I likewise hear, that Valentine is dead.

*Sil.* And so, suppose, am I; for in his grave  
Assure myself, my love is buried.

*Pro.* Sweet lady, let me rake it from the  
earth. [thence;

*Sil.* Go to thy lady's grave, and call her's  
Or, at the least, in her's sepulchre thine.

*Jul.* He heard not that. [Aside.

*Pro.* Madam, if your heart be so obdurate,  
Vouchsafe me yet your picture for my love,  
The picture that is hanging in your chamber;  
To that I'll speak, to that I'll sigh and weep:  
For, since the substance of your perfect self  
Is else devoted, I am but a shadow:  
And to your shadow I will make true love.

*Jul.* If 'twere a substance, you would, sure,  
deceive it,

And make it but a shadow, as I am. [Aside.

*Sil.* I am very loth to be your idol, sir;  
But since your falsehood shall become you well  
To worship shadows, and adore false shapes,  
Send to me in the morning, and I'll send it:  
And so good rest.

*Pro.* As wretches have o'ernight,  
That wait for execution in the morn.

[*Exeunt PROTEUS; and SILVIA from above.*]

*Jul.* Host, will you go?

*Host.* By my hallidom\*, I was fast asleep.

*Jul.* Pray you, where lies sir Proteus?

*Host.* Marry, at my house: Trust me, I  
think, 'tis almost day.

*Jul.* Not so; but it hath been the longest night  
That e'er I watch'd, and the most heaviest.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. The same.

*Enter EGLAMOUR.*

*Egl.* This is the hour that madam Silvia  
Entreated me to call, and know her mind;  
There's some great matter she'd employ me  
Madam, madam! [in.—

*SILVIA* appears above, at her window.

*Sil.* Who calls?

*Egl.* Your servant, and your friend;  
One that attends your ladyship's command.

*Sil.* Sir Eglamour, a thousand times good  
morrow.

*Egl.* As many, worthy lady, to yourself.  
According to your ladyship's impose†,  
I am thus early come, to know what service  
It is your pleasure to command me in.

*Sil.* O Eglamour, thou art a gentleman,  
(Think not, I flatter, for, I swear, I do not,)  
Valiant, wise, remorseful‡, well accomplish'd.  
Thou art not ignorant, what dear good will  
I bear unto the banish'd Valentine;

Nor how my father would enforce me marry  
Vain Thurio, who my very soul abhor'd.  
Thyself hast lov'd; and I have heard thee say  
No grief did ever come so near thy heart,

As when thy lady and thy true love died,  
Upon whose grave thou vow'dst pure chastity

Sir Eglamour, I would to Valentine,  
To Mantua, where, I hear, he makes abode;

And, for the ways are dangerous to pass,  
I do desire thy worthy company,

Upon whose faith and honour I repose.  
Urged not my father's anger, Eglamour,

But think upon my grief, a lady's grief;  
And on the justice of my flying hence,

To keep me from a most unholy match,  
Which heaven and fortune still reward with  
plagues.

I do desire thee, even from a heart  
As full of sorrows as the sea of sands,  
To bear me company, and go with me:  
If not, to hide what I have said to thee,  
That I may venture to depart alone.

*Egl.* Madam, I pity much your grievances  
Which since I know they virtuously are plac'd

I give consent to go along with you;  
Reckings§ as little what betideth me,

As much I wish all good befotune you.  
When will you go?

*Sil.* This evening coming.

*Egl.* Where shall I meet you?

*Sil.* At friar Patrick's cell,

Where I intend holy confession.

*Egl.* I will not fail your ladyship:

Good morrow, gentle lady.

*Sil.* Good-morrow, kind sir Eglamour.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV. The same.

*Enter LAUNCE, with his dog.*

*Laun.* When a man's servant shall play the

\* Holy dame, blessed lady.

† Injunction, command.

‡ Pitiful.

§ Caring.



cur with him, look you, it goes hard : one that I brought up of a puppy ; one that I saved from drowning, when three or four of his blind brothers and sisters went to it ! I have taught him—even as one would say precisely, Thus I would teach a dog. I was sent to deliver him, as a present to mistress Silvia, from my master ; and I came no sooner into the dining-chamber, but he steps me by my trencher, and steals her capon's leg. O, 'tis a foul thing, when a cur cannot keep\* himself in all companies ! I would have, as one should say, one that takes upon him to be a dog indeed, to be, as it were, a dog, at all things. If I had not had more wit than he, to take a fault upon me that he did, I thloke verily he had been hanged for't ; sure as I live, he had suffered for't : you shall judge. He thrusts me himself into the company of three or four gentlemen-like dogs, under the duke's table : he had not been there (bless the mark) a pissing while ; but all the chamber smelt him. *Out with the dog*, says one ; *What cur is that ?* says another ; *Whip him out*, says the third ; *Hang him up*, says the duke. I, having been acquainted with the smell before, knew it was Crab ; and goes me to the fellow that whips the dogs : *Friend*, quoth I, *you mean to whip the dog ?* Ay, *marry*, do I, quoth he. *You do him the more wrong*, quoth I ; *'twas I did the thing you wot of*. He makes me no more ado, but whips me out of the chamber. How many masters would do this for their servant ? Nay, I'll be sworn, I have sat in the stocks for paddings he hath stolen, otherwise he had been executed : I have stood on the pillory for geese he hath killed, otherwise he had suffered for't : thou think'st not of this now !—Nay, I remember the trick you served me, when I took my leave of madam Silvia ; did not I bid thee still mark me, and do as I do ? When didst thou see me heave up my leg, and make water against a gentlewoman's farthingale ? didst thou ever see me do such a trick ?

*Enter PROTEUS and JULIA.*

*Pro.* Sebastian is thy name ? I like thee well, And will employ thee in some service presently.

*Jul.* In what you please ;—I will do what I can.

*Pro.* I hope, thou wilt.—How now, you whoreson peasant ? *[To LAUNCE.]*

Where have you been these two days loitering ?  
*Laun.* Marry, sir, I carried mistress Silvia the dog you bade me.

*Pro.* And what says she, to my little jewel ?

*Laun.* Marry, she says, your dog was a cur ; and tells you, currish thanks is good enough for such a present.

*Pro.* But she received my dog ?

*Laun.* No, indeed, she did not : here have I brought him back again.

*Pro.* What, didst thou offer her this from me ?

*Laun.* Ay, sir ; the other squirrel was stolen from me by the hangman's boys in the market-place : and then I offered her mine own ; who is a dog as big as ten of yours, and therefore the gift the greater.

*Pro.* Go, get thee hence, and find my dog Or ne'er return again into my sight. *[Again, Away, I say : Stay'st thou to vex me here ? Aslave, that, still an end't, turns me to shame]*

*[Exit LAUNCE.]*

Sebastian, I have entertained thee, Partly, that I have need of such a youth, That can with some discretion do my business, For 'tis no trusting to yon foolish lowt ; But, chiefly, for thy face, and thy behaviour ; Which (if my augury deceive me not) Witness good bringing up, fortune, and truth. Therefore know thou, for this I entertain thee Go presently, and take this ring with thee, Deliver it to madam Silvia : She loved me well, deliver'd it to me.

*Jul.* It seems, you loved her not, to leave She's dead, belike. *[her token :]*

*Pro.* Not so ; I think, she lives.

*Jul.* Alas !

*Pro.* Why dost thou cry, alas ?

*Jul.* I cannot choose but pity her.

*Pro.* Wherefore should'st thou pity her ?

*Jul.* Because, methinks, that she loved you As you do love your lady Silvia : *[as well]* She dreams on him, that has forgot her love ; You dote on her, that cares not for your love. 'Tis pity, love should be so contrary ; And thinking on it makes me cry, alas !

*Pro.* Well, give her that ring, and there withal This letter ;—that's her chamber.—Tell my lady, I claim the promise for her heavenly picture. Your message done, hie home unto my chamber, Where thou shalt find me sad and solitary.

*[Exit PROTEUS]*

*Jul.* How many women would do such a message ?

Alas, poor Proteus ! thou hast entertain'd

A fox, to be the shepherd of thy lambs :

Alas, poor fool ! why do I pity him

That with his very heart despiseth me ?

Because he loves her, he despiseth me ;

Because I love him, I must pity him.

This ring I gave him, when he parted from me,

To bind him to remember my good will ;

And now am I (unhappy messenger)

To plead for that, which I would not obtain ;

To carry that which I would have refus'd ;

To praise his faith, which I would have disprais'd.

I am my master's true confirmed love ;

But cannot be true servant to my master,

Unless I prove false traitor to myself.

Yet I will woo for him ; but yet so coldly, *[speed.]*

As, heaven, it knows, I would not have him

*Enter SILVIA, attended.*

Gentlewoman, good day ! I pray you, be my mean

To bring mewhere to speak with madam Silvia.

*Sil.* What would you with her, if that I be she ?

*Jul.* If you be she, I do entreat your patience

To hear me speak the message I am sent on.

*Sil.* From whom ?

*Jul.* From my master, sir Proteus, madam.

*Sil.* O !—he sends you for a picture ?

*Jul.* Ay, madam.

*Sil.* Ursula, bring my picture there.

*[Picture brought.]*

Go, give your master this: tell him from me,  
One Julia, that his changing thoughts forget,  
Would better fit his chamber than this shadow.

*Jul.* Madam, please you peruse this letter.—

Pardon me, madam; I have unadvis'd

Delivered you a paper that I should not;

This is the letter to your ladyship.

*Sil.* I pray thee, let me look on that again.

*Jul.* It may not be; good madam, pardon me.

*Sil.* There, hold.

I will not look upon your master's lines:

I know, they are stuff'd with protestations,

And full of new-found oaths; which he will

As easily as I do tear his paper. [break

*Jul.* Madam, besends your ladyship this ring.

*Sil.* The more shame for him that he sends it

For, I have heard him say a thousand times, [me;

His Julia gave it him at his departure:

Though his false finger hath profan'd the ring,

Mine shall not do his Julia so much wrong.

*Jul.* She thanks you.

*Sil.* What say'st thou?

*Jul.* I thank you, madam, that you tender her:

Poor gentlewoman! my master wrongs her

*Sil.* Dost thou know her? [much.

*Jul.* Almost as well as I do know myself:

To think upon her woes, I do protest,

That I have wept an hundred several times.

*Sil.* Belike, she thinks that Proteus hath for-  
sook her. [sorrow.

*Jul.* I think sife doth, and that's her cause of

*Sil.* Is she not passing fair?

*Jul.* She hath been fairer, madam, than she is:

When she did think my master lov'd her well,

She, in my judgment, was as fair as you;

But since she did neglect her looking-glass,

And threw her sun-expelling mask away,

The air hath starv'd the roses in her cheeks,

And pinch'd the lily-tincture of her face,

That now she is become as black as I.

*Sil.* How tall was she?

*Jul.* About my stature: for, at Pentecost\*,

When all our pageants of delight were play'd,

Our youth got me to play the woman's part,

And I was trimm'd in madam Julia's gown,

Which served me as fit, by all men's judgment,

As if the garment had been made for me;  
Therefore, I know she is about my height.  
And, at that time, I made her weep a-good †,  
For I did play a lamentable part:

Madam, 'twas Ariadne, passioning

For Theseus' perjury, and unjust flight;

Which I so lively acted with my tears,

That my poor mistress, moved therewithal,

Wept bitterly; and, would I might be dead,

If I in thought felt not her very sorrow!

*Sil.* She is beholden to thee, gentle youth!—

Alas, poor lady! desolate and left!—

I weep myself, to think upon thy words.

Here, youth, there is my purse; I give thee this

For thy sweet mistress' sake, because thou lov'st  
her.

Farewell.

[Exit SILVIA.

*Jul.* And she shall thank you for't, if e'er  
you know her.—

A virtuous gentlewoman, mild, and beautiful.

I hope my master's suit will be but cold,

Since she respects my mistress' love so much.

Alas, how love can trifle with itself!

Here is her picture: Let me see; I think,

If I had such a tire‡, this face of mine

Were full as lovely as is this of hers:

And yet the painter flatter'd her a little,

Unless I flatter with myself too much.

Her hair is auburn, mine is perfect yellow:

If that be all the difference in his love,

I'll get me such a colour'd periwig.

Her eyes are grey as glass; and so are mine:

Ay, but her forehead's low, and mine's as high.

What should it be, that he respects in her,

But I can make respective§ in myself,

If this fond love were not a blinded god?

Come, shadow, come, and take this shadow up,

For 'tis thy rival. O thou senseless form,

Thou shalt be worshipp'd, kiss'd, lov'd, and

And, were there sense in his idolatry, [ador'd;]

My substance should be statue in thy stead.

I'll use thee kindly for thy mistress' sake,

That us'd me so; or else, by Jove I vow,

I should have scratch'd out your unseeing eyes

To make my master out of love with thee.

[Exit.

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. The same. An Abbey.

Enter EGLAMOUR.

*Egl.* The sun begins to gild the western sky;

And now, it is about the very hour

That Silvia, at Patrick's cell, should meet me.

She will not fail; for lovers break not hours,

Unless it be to come before their time;

So much they spur their expedition.

Enter SILVIA.

See, where she comes: Lady, a happy evening!

*Sil.* Amen, amen! go on, good Eglamour!

Out at the postern by the abbey wall;

I fear, I am attended by some spies.

*Egl.* Fear not: the forest is not three leagues  
If we recover that, we are surc|| enough. [off;]

[Exeunt.

### SCENE II. The same.

An Apartment in the Duke's Palace.

Enter THURIO, PROTEUS, and JULIA.

*Thu.* Sir Proteus, what says Silvia to my suit?

*Pro.* O, sir, I find her milder than she was:

And yet she takes exceptions at your person

*Thu.* What, that my leg is too long?

*Pro.* No; that it is too little.

*Thu.* I'll wear a boot, to make it somewhat  
rounder.

\* Whitsuntide.

† In good earnest.

‡ Head dress

§ Respectable.

|| Safe.

*Pro.* But love will not be spurr'd to what it  
*Thu.* What says she to my face? [loaths.  
*Pro.* She says, it is a fair one. [black.  
*Thu.* Nay, then the wanton lies, my face is  
*Pro.* But pearls are fair; and the old saying is,  
 Black men are pearls in beauteous ladies' eyes.  
*Jul.* 'Tis true; such pearls as put out ladies'  
 eyes;

For I had rather wink than look on them. [*Aside.*

*Thu.* How likes she my discourse?

*Pro.* Ill, when you talk of war. [peace?

*Thu.* But well, when I discourse of love, and

*Jul.* But better, indeed, when you hold your  
 peace. [*Aside.*

*Thu.* What says she to my valour?

*Pro.* O, sir, she makes no doubt of that.

*Jul.* She needs not, when she knows it  
 cowardice. [*Aside.*

*Thu.* What says she to my birth?

*Pro.* That you are well deriv'd.

*Jul.* True; from a gentleman to a fool. [*Aside.*

*Thu.* Considers she my possessions?

*Pro.* O, ay; and pities them.

*Thu.* Wherefore?

*Jul.* That such an ass should owe\* them.  
 [*Aside.*

*Pro.* That they are out by lease.

*Jul.* Here comes the duke.

*Enter DUKE.*

*Duke.* How now, sir Proteus? how now,  
 Thurio?

Which of you saw sir Eglamour of late?

*Thu.* Not I.

*Pro.* Nor I.

*Duke.* Saw you my daughter?

*Pro.* Neither.

*Duke.* Why, then she's fled unto that peasant  
 And Eglamour is in her company. [*Valentine;*

'Tis true; for friar Laurence met them both,  
 As he in penance wander'd through the forest:  
 Him he knew well, and guess'd that it was she;  
 But, being mask'd, he was not sure of it:

Besides, she did intend confession [not:

At Patrick's cell this even; and there she was  
 These likelihoods confirm her flight from hence.

Therefore, I pray you, stand not to discourse,  
 But mount you presently; and meet with me

Upon the rising of the mountain foot [fled:  
 That leads towards Mantua, whither they are

Despatch, sweet gentlemen, and follow me.  
 [*Exit.*

*Thu.* Why, this it is to be a peevish† girl,  
 That flies her fortune when it follows her:

I'll after; more to be reveng'd on Eglamour,  
 Than for the love of reckless‡ Silvia. [*Exit.*

*Pro.* And I will follow, more for Silvia's love.  
 Than hate of Eglamour that goes with her. [*Exit.*

*Jul.* And I will follow more to cross that love,  
 Than hate for Silvia, that is gone for love. [*Exit.*

### SCENE III.

*Frontiers of Mantua. The Forest.*

*Enter SILVIA and Out-laws.*

*Out.* Come, come;

Be patient, we must bring you to our captain.

*Sil.* A thousand more mischances than this one  
 Have learn'd me how to brook this patiently.

*2 Out.* Come, bring her away. [her?

*1 Out.* Where is the gentleman that was with

*3 Out.* Being nimble footed, he hath out-run  
 But Moyses, and Valerius, follow him. [us,

Go thou with her to the west end of the wood,  
 There is our captain: we'll follow him that's

The thickest is beset, he cannot 'scape. [fled;

*1 Out.* Come, I must bring you to our captain's  
 Fear not; he bears an honourable mind, [cave:

And will not use a woman lawlessly.  
*Sil.* O Valentine, this I endure for thee!

[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE IV.

*Another part of the Forest.*

*Enter VALENTINE.*

*Val.* How use doth breed a habit in a man!

This shadowy desert, unfrequented woods,  
 I better brook than flourishing peopled towns:

Here can I sit alone, unseen of any,  
 And, to the nightingale's complaining notes,

Tune my distresses, and record my woes.  
 O thou that dost inhabit in my breast,

Leave not the mansion so long tenantless;  
 Lest, growing ruinous, the building fall,

And leave no memory of what it was!  
 Repair me with thy presence, Silvia;

Thou gentle nymph, cherish thy forlorn swain!—  
 What halloing, and what stir, is this to-day?

These are my mates, that make their wills their  
 Have some unhappy passenger in chace: [law,

They love me well; yet I have much to do,  
 To keep them from uncivil outrages.

Withdraw thee, Valentine; who's this comes  
 here? [*steps aside.*

*Enter PROTEUS, SILVIA, and JULIA.*

*Pro.* Madam, this service I have done for you,  
 (Though you respect not aught your servant

To hazard life, and rescue you from him [doth,)  
 That would have forc'd your honour and your

love. [look;  
 Vouchsafe me, for my meed, but one fair

A smaller boon than this I cannot beg,  
 And less than this, I am sure, you cannot give.

*Val.* How like a dream is this I see and hear!  
 Love, lend me patience to forbear a while.

[*Aside.*

*Sil.* O miserable, unhappy that I am!

*Pro.* Unhappy, were you, madam, ere I came;  
 But, by my coming, I have made you happy.

*Sil.* By thy approach thou mak'st me most  
 unhappy.

*Jul.* And me, when he approacheth to your  
 presence. [*Aside.*

*Sil.* Had I been seized by a hungry lion,  
 I would have been a breakfast to the beast,

Rather than have false Proteus rescue me.  
 O, heaven be Judge, how I love Valentine,

Whose life's as tender to me as my soul;  
 And full as much (for more there cannot be,) I do detest false perjur'd Proteus:

Therefore be gone, solicit me no more. [death,  
*Pro.* What dangerous action, stood it next to

Would I not undergo for one calm look?

\* Own.

† Foolish.

‡ Careless.

§ Sing.

|| Reward.



O, 'tis the curse in love, and still approv'd\*,  
When women cannot love where they're be-  
lov'd. [below'd.]

*Sil.* When Proteus cannot love where he's  
Read over Julia's heart, thy first best love,  
For whose dear sake thou didst then rend thy  
faith

Into a thousand oaths; and all those oaths  
Descended into perjury, to love me. [two,  
Thou hast no faith left now, unless thou hadst  
And that's far worse than none; better have  
none

Than plural faith, which is too much by one:  
Thou counterfeit to thy true friend!

*Pro.* In love,  
Who respects friend?

*Sil.* All men but Proteus.

*Pro.* Nay, if the gentle spirit of moving words  
Can no way change you to a milder form,  
I'll woo you like a soldier, at arms' end;  
And love you 'gainst the nature of love, force

*Sil.* O heaven! [you.]

*Pro.* I'll force thee yield to my desire.

*Val.* Ruffian, let go that rude uncivil touch;  
Thou friend of an ill fashion!

*Pro.* Valentine!

*Val.* Thou common friend, that's without  
faith or love.

(For such is a friend now,) treacherous man!  
Thou hast beguil'd my hopes; nought but  
mine eye

Could have persuaded me: Now I dare not say  
I have one friend alive; thou would'st dis-  
prove me.

Who should be trusted now, when one's right  
Is perjur'd to the bosom? Proteus, [hand  
I am sorry, I must never trust thee more,  
But count the world a stranger for thy sake.  
The private wound is deepest: O time, most  
curst! [worst!]

'Mongst all foes, that a friend should be the

*Pro.* My shame and guilt confounds me.—  
Forgive me, Valentine: if hearty sorrow  
Be a sufficient ransom for offence,  
I tender it here; I do as truly suffer,  
As e'er I did commit.

*Val.* Then I am paid;  
And once again I do receive thee honest:—  
Who by repentance is not satisfied, [pleas'd;  
Is nor of heaven, nor earth; for these are  
By penitence the Eternal's wrath's appeas'd:—  
And, that my love may appear plain and free,  
All that was mine in Silvia, I give thee.

*Jul.* O me, unhappy! [Faints.]

*Pro.* Look to the boy.

*Val.* Why, boy! why, wag! how now? what  
is the matter?

Look up; speak.

*Jul.* O good sir, my master charg'd me  
To deliver a ring to madam Silvia;  
Which, out of my neglect was never done.

*Pro.* Where is that ring, boy?

*Jul.* Here 'tis: this is it. [Gives a ring.]

*Pro.* How! let me see:

(By this is the ring I gave to Julia.

*Jul.* O, cry you mercy, sir, I have mistook  
This is the ring you sent to Silvia.

[She shows another ring.]  
*Pro.* But, how cam'st thou by this ring?

I gave this unto Julia. [my depar]

*Jul.* And Julia herself did give it me;  
And Julia herself hath brought it hither.

*Pro.* How! Julia!

*Jul.* Behold her that gave aim to all thy oaths  
And entertain'd them deeply in her heart:  
How oft hast thou with perjury cleft the root!  
O Proteus, let this habit make thee blush!  
Be thou asham'd, that I have took upon me  
Such an immodest raiment; if shame live  
In a disguise of love:

It is the lesser blot, modesty finds,  
Women to change their shapes, than men  
their minds. [heaven! were man]

*Pro.* Than men their minds? 'tis true: O  
But constant, he were perfect: that one error  
Fills him with faults; makes him run through  
Inconstancy falls off, ere it begins: [all sins:  
What is in Silvia's face, but I may spy  
More fresh in Julia's with a constant eye?

*Val.* Come, come, a hand from either:  
Let me be blest to make this happy close?  
'Twere pity two such friends should be long  
foes.

*Pro.* Bear witness, heaven, I have my wish  
*Jul.* And I have mine. [for ever.]

Enter Out-laws, with DUKE and THURIO.

*Out.* A prize, a prize, a prize!  
*Val.* Forbear, I say; it is my lord the duke.  
Your grace is welcome to a man disgrac'd,  
Banished Valentine.

*Duke.* Sir Valentine!  
*Thu.* Yonder is Silvia; and Silvia's mine.

*Val.* Thurio give back, or else embrace thy  
death;

Come not within the measure of my wrath:  
Do not name Silvia thine; if once again,  
Milan shall not behold thee. Here she stands,  
Take but possession of her with a touch;—  
I dare thee but to breathe upon my love.—

*Thu.* Sir Valentine, I care not for her, I;  
I hold him but a fool, that will endanger  
His body for a girl that loves him not:  
I claim her not, and therefore she is thine.

*Duke.* The more degenerate and base art thou,  
To make such means for her as thou hast done,  
And leave her on such slight conditions.—

Now, by the honour of my ancestry,  
I do applaud thy spirit, Valentine,  
And think thee worthy of an empress' love.

Know then, I here forget all former griefs,  
Cancel all grudge, repeal thee home again.—  
Plead a new state in thy unrivall'd merit,  
To which I thus subscribe,—sir Valentine,  
Thou art a gentleman, and well deriv'd; [her.  
Take thou thy Silvia, for thou hast deserv'd

*Val.* I thank your grace; the gift hath made  
me happy.

I now beseech you, for your daughter's sake,  
To grant one boon that I shall ask of you.

\* Felt, experienced. † Direction.  
‡ Length of my sword.

‡ An allusion to cleaving the pin in archery.  
‖ Interest.

*Duke.* I grant 't for thine own, whate'er it be.

*Val.* These banish'd men, that I have kept  
withal,

Are men endued with worthy qualities;  
Forgive them what they have committed  
here,

And let them be recall'd from their exile:

They are reformed, civil, full of good,

And fit for great employment, worthy lord.

*Duke.* Thou hast prevail'd: I pardon them,  
and thee;

Dispose of them, as thou know'st their de-  
serts.

Come, let us go; we will include • all jars  
With triumph†, mirth, and rare solemnity.

• Conclude.

*Val.* And, as we walk along, I dare be bold  
With our discourse to make your grace to smile:  
What think you of this page, my lord?

*Duke.* I think the boy hath grace in him;  
he blushes.

*Val.* I warrant you, my lord; more grac-  
than boy.

*Duke.* What mean you by that saying?

*Val.* Please you, I'll tell you as we pass along  
That you will wonder what hath fortun'd.—

Come, Proteus; 'tis your penance, but to hear  
The story of your loves discovered:

That done, our day of marriage shall be yours;  
One feast, one house, one mutual happiness.

[*Exeunt.*]

† Masks, revels.

IN this play there is a strange mixture of knowledge and ignorance, of care and negligence. The versification is often excellent, the allusions are learned and just; but the author conveys his heroes by sea from one inland town to another in the same country; he places the emperor at Milan, and sends his young men to attend him, but never mentions him more; he makes Proteus, after an interview with Silvia, say he has only seen her picture; and, if we may credit the old copies, he has, by mistaking places, left his scenery inextricable. The reason of all this confusion seems to be, that he took his story from a novel, which he sometimes followed, and sometimes forsook; sometimes remembered, and sometimes forgot.

That this play is rightly attributed to Shakspeare, I have little doubt. If it be taken from him, to whom shall it be given? This question may be asked of all the disputed plays, except *TITUS ANDRONICUS*; and it will be found more credible, that Shakspeare might sometimes sink below his highest flights, than that any other should rise up to his lowest.

JOHNSON.

# MERRY WIVES OF WINDSOR.

## Persons represented.

SIR JOHN FALSTAFF

FENTON.

SHALLOW, *a country justice.*

SLENDER, *cousin to Shallow.*

MR. FORD, } *two gentlemen dwelling at*  
MR. PAGE, } *Windsor.*

WILLIAM PAGE, *a boy, son to Mr. Page.*

SIR HUGH EVANS, *a Welsh parson.*

DR. CAIUS, *a French physician.*

*Host of the Garter inn.*

BARDOLPH, }  
PISTOL, } *followers of Falstaff.*  
NYM,

ROBIN, *page to Falstaff.*

SIMPLE, *servant to Slender.*

RUGBY, *servant to Dr. Caius.*

MRS. FORD.

MRS. PAGE.

MRS. ANNE PAGE, *her daughter, in love*  
*with Fenton.*

MRS. QUICKLY, *servant to Dr. Caius.*

*Servants to PAGE, FORD, &c.*

*Scene,—Windsor, and the parts adjacent.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. Windsor. *Before Page's House.*

*Enter Justice SHALLOW, SLENDER, and*  
*Sir • HUGH EVANS.*

*Shal.* Sir Hugh, persuaded me not; I will make a Star-chamber matter of it: if he were twenty sir John Falstoffs, he shall not abuse Robert Shallow, esquire.

*Slen.* In the county of Gloster, justice of peace, and *coram.*

*Shal.* Ay, cousin Slender, and *Cust-alorum.*†

*Slen.* Ay, and *ratolorum* too; and a gentleman born, master parson; who writes himself *armigero*; in any bill, warrant, quittance, or obligation, *armigero*.

*Shal.* Ay, that we do; and have done any time these three hundred years.

*Slen.* All his successors, gone before him, have done't; and all his ancestors, that come after him, may: they may give the dozen white lutes in their coat.

*Shal.* It is an old coat.

*Eva.* The dozen white louses do become an old coat well; it agrees well, passant: it is a familiar beast to man, and signifies—love.

*Shal.* The lute is the fresh fish; the salt fish is an old coat.

*Slen.* I may quarter, coz?

*Shal.* You may, by marrying.

*Eva.* It is marring indeed, if he quarter it.

*Shal.* Not a whit.

*Eva.* Yes, py'r† lady; if he has a quarter of your coat, there is but three skirts for yourself, in my simple conjectures: but that is all one: If sir John Falstaff have committed disparagements unto you, I am of the church, and

will be glad to do my benevolence, to make atonements and compromises between you.

*Shal.* The Council § shall hear it; it is a riot.

*Eva.* It is not meet the Council hear a riot; there is no fear of Got in a riot: the Council, look you, shall desire to hear the fear of Got, and not to hear a riot; take your vizaments || in that.

*Shal.* Ha! o' my life, if I were young again, the sword should end it.

*Eva.* It is petter that friends is the sword, and end it: and there is also another device in my prain, which, peradventure, prings goot dcretions with it: There is Anne Page, which is daughter to master George Page, which is pretty virginity.

*Slen.* Mistress Anne Page? She has brown hair, and speaks small ¶ like a woman.

*Eva.* It is that fery verson for all the world, as just as you will desire; and seven hundred pounds of monies, and gold and silver, is her grandsire, upon his death's-bed, (Got deliver to a joyful resurrections!) give, when she is able to overtake seventeen years old: it were a goot motion, if we leave our pribbles and prabbles, and desire a marriage between master Abraham and mistress Anne Page.

*Shal.* Did her grandsire leave her seven hundred pound?

*Eva.* Ay, and her father is make her a petter penny.

*Shal.* I know the young gentlewoman; she has good gifts.

*Eva.* Seven hundred pounds, and possibilities, is good gifts.

*Shal.* Well, let us see honest master Page: Is Falstaff there?

\* A title formerly appropriated to chaplains.

† By our. § Court of Star-chamber.

† *Custos Rctulorum.*

|| Adviseiment.

¶ Soft.



*Eva.* Shall I tell you a lie? I do despise a liar, as I do despise one that is false; or, as I despise one that is not true. The knight, sir John, is there; and, I beseech you, be ruled by your well-willers. I will peat the door [knocks] for master Page. What, ho! Got pless your house here!

*Enter PAGE.*

*Page.* Who's there?

*Eva.* Here is Got's plessing, and your friend, and justice Shallow; and here young master Slender; that, peradventures, shall tell you another tale, if matters grow to your likings.

*Page.* I am glad to see your worships well: I thank you for my venison, master Shallow.

*Shal.* Master Page, I am glad to see you; Much good do it your good heart! I wished your venison better; it was ill kill'd:—How doth good mistress Page?—and I love you always with my heart, la; with my heart.

*Page.* Sir, I thank you.

*Shal.* Sir, I thank you; by yea and no, I do.

*Page.* I am glad to see you, good master Slender.

*Slen.* How does your fallow greyhound, sir? I heard say, he was outrun on Cotsale\*.

*Page.* It could not be judg'd, sir.

*Slen.* You'll not confess, you'll not confess.

*Shal.* That he will not;—'tis your fault, 'tis your fault:—'Tis a good dog.

*Page.* A cur, sir.

*Shal.* Sir, he's a good dog, and a fair dog; Can there be more said? he is good and fair.—Is sir John Falstaff here?

*Page.* Sir, he is within; and I would I could do a good office between you.

*Eva.* It is spoke as a christians ought to speak.

*Shal.* He hath wrong'd me, master Page.

*Page.* Sir, he doth in some sort confess it.

*Shal.* If it be confess'd, it is not redress'd; as not that so, master Page? He hath wrong'd me; indeed, he hath;—at a word, he hath;—believe me;—Robert Shallow, esquire, saith, he is wrong'd.

*Page.* Here comes sir John.

*Enter Sir JOHN FALSTAFF, BARDOLPH, Nym, and Pistol.*

*Fal.* Now, master Shallow; you'll complain of me to the king?

*Shal.* Knight, you have beaten my men, killed my deer, and broke open my lodge.

*Fal.* But not kiss'd your keeper's daughter?

*Shal.* Tut, a pin! this shall be answer'd.

*Fal.* I will answer it straight;—I have done all this:—That is now answer'd.

*Shal.* The Council shall know this.

*Fal.* 'Twere better for you if it were known in counsel: you'll be laugh'd at.

*Eva.* *Pauca verba*, sir John, good worts.

*Fal.* Good worts! good cabbage.—Slender, I broke your head; What matter have you against me?

*Slen.* Marry, sir, I have matter in my head against you; and against your coney-catching† rascals, Bardolph, Nym, and Pistol. They carried me to the tavern, and made me drunk, and afterwards picked my pocket.

*Bar.* You Banbury-cheese‡!

*Slen.* Ay, it is no matter.

*Pist.* How now, Mephostophilus||?

*Slen.* Ay, it is no matter.

*Nym.* Slice, I say! *pauca, pauca*¶; slice! that's my humour.

*Slen.* Where's Simple, my man?—can you tell, cousin?

*Eva.* Peace, I pray you! Now let us understand: There is three umpires in this matter as I understand: that is—master Page, *fidelicet*, master Page; and there is myself, *fidelicet*, myself; and the three party is, lastly and finally, mine host of the Garter.

*Page.* We three, to hear it, and end it between them.

*Eva.* Fery goot: I will make a prief of it in my note-book; and we will afterwards work upon the cause, with as great discreetly as we can.

*Fal.* Pistol!—

*Pist.* He hears with ears.

*Eva.* The tevil and his tam! what phrase is this, *He hears with ear*? Why, it is affectations.

*Fal.* Pistol, did you pick master Slender's purse?

*Slen.* Ay, by these gloves, did he, (or I would I might never come in mine own great chamber again else,) of seven groats in mill-sixpences, and two Edward shovel-boards\*\*, that cost me two shilling and two pence a-piece of Yeard Miller, by these gloves.

*Fal.* Is this true, Pistol?

*Eva.* No; it is false, if it is a pick-purse.

*Pist.* Ha, thou mountain-foreigner!—Sir John, and master mine,

I combat challenge of this latten bilbott; Word of denial in thy labras†† here; Word of denial; froth and scum, thou liest.

*Slen.* By these gloves, then, 'twas he.

*Nym.* Be advised, sir, and pass good humours: I will say, *marry trap*, with you, if you run the nuthook's§§ humour on me; that is the very note of it.

*Slen.* By this hat, then, he in the red face had it: for though I cannot remember what I did when you made me drunk, yet I am not altogether an ass.

*Fal.* What say you, Searlet and John?

*Bard.* Why, sir, for my part, I say, the gentleman had drunk himself out of his five senses.

*Eva.* It is his five senses: fie, what the ignorance is!

*Bard.* And being fap|||, sir, was, as they say, cashier'd; and so conclusions pass'd the careires¶¶.

\* Cotswold in Gloucestershire. † Worts was the ancient name of all the cabbage kind.

† Sharpers. § Nothing but paring! || The name of an ugly spirit. ¶ Few words.

\*\* King Edward's shillings used in the game of shuffle-board. †† Blade as thin as a lath.

‡ Lips. §§ If you say I am a thief. ||| Drunk. ¶¶ The bounds of good behaviour.

*Slen.* Ay, you spake in Latin then too; but 'tis no matter: I'll ne'er be drunk whilst I live again, but in honest, civil, godly company, for this trick: if I be drunk, I'll be drunk with those that have the fear of God, and not with drunken knaves.

*Eva.* So Got 'udge me, that is a virtuous mind.

*Fal.* You hear all these matters denied, gentlemen; you hear it.

*Enter Mistress ANNE PAGE, with wine; Mistress FORD and Mistress PAGE following.*

*Page.* Nay, daughter, carry the wine in; we'll drink within. [*Exit ANNE PAGE.*]

*Slen.* O heaven! this is mistress Anne Page.

*Page.* How now, mistress Ford?

*Fal.* Mistress Ford, by my troth, you are very well met: by your leave, good mistress.

[*kissing her.*]

*Page.* Wife, bid these gentlemen welcome:—Come, we have a hot venison pasty to dinner; come, gentlemen, I hope we shall drink down all unkindness.

[*Exeunt all but SHAL. SLEN. and EVANS.*]

*Slen.* I had rather than forty shillings I had my book of songs and sonnets here:—

*Enter SIMPLE.*

How now, Simple! where have you been? I must wait on myself, must I? You have not *The Book of Riddles* about you, have you?

*Sim.* *Book of Riddles!* why, did you not lend it to Alice Shortcake upon Allhallowmas last, a fortnight afore Michaelmas?\*

*Shal.* Come, coz; come, coz; we stay for you. A word with you, coz: marry, this, coz; 'There is, as 'twere, a tender, a kind of tender, made afar off by sir Hugh here;—Do you understand me?

*Slen.* Ay, sir, you shall find me reasonable; if it be so, I shall do that that is reason.

*Shal.* Nay, but understand me.

*Slen.* So I do, sir.

*Eva.* Give ear to his motions, master Slender: I will description the matter to you, if you be capacity of it.

*Slen.* Nay, I will do as my cousin Shallow says: I pray you, pardon me; he's a justice of peace in his country, simple though I stand here.

*Eva.* But this is not the question; the question is concerning your marriage.

*Shal.* Ay, there's the point, sir.

*Eva.* Marry, is it; the very point of it; to mistress Anne Page.

*Slen.* Why, if it be so, I will marry her, upon any reasonable demands.

*Eva.* But can you affection the 'oman? Let us command to know that of your mouth, or of your lips; for divers philosophers hold, that the lips is parcel of the mouth;—Therefore, precisely, can you carry your good will to the maid?

*Shal.* Cousin Abraham Slender, can you love her?

*Slen.* I hope, sir,—I will do, as it shall become one that would do reason.

*Eva.* Nay, Got's lords and his ladies, you must speak possitable, if you can carry her your desires towards her.

*Shal.* That you must: Will you, upon good dowry, marry her?

*Slen.* I will do a greater thing than that, upon your request, cousin, in any reason.

*Shal.* Nay, conceive me, conceive me, sweet coz; what I do, is to pleasure you, coz: Can you love the maid?

*Slen.* I will marry her, sir, at your request; but if there be no great love in the beginning, yet heaven may decrease it upon better acquaintance, when we are married, and have more occasion to know one another: I hope, upon familiarity will grow more contempt; but if you say, *marry her*, I will marry her, that I am freely dissolved, and dissolutely.

*Eva.* It is a fery discretion answer; save, the faul' is in the 'ort dissolutely: the 'ort is, according to our meaning, resolutely;—his meaning is good.

*Shal.* Ay, I think my cousin meant well.

*Slen.* Ay, or else I would I might be hanged, la.

*Re-enter ANNE PAGE.*

*Shal.* Here comes fair mistress Anne:—Would I were young, for your sake, mistress Anne!

*Anne.* The dinner is on the table; my father desires your worships' company.

*Shal.* I will wait on him, fair mistress Anne.

*Eva.* Od's plessed will! I will not be absence at the grace.

[*Exeunt SHALLOW and Sir H. EVANS.*]  
*Anne.* Will't please your worship to come in, sir?

*Slen.* No, I thank you, forsooth, heartily; I am very well.

*Anne.* The dinner attends you, sir.

*Slen.* I am not a-hungry, I thank you, forsooth: Go, sirrah, for all you are my man, go, wait upon my cousin Shallow: [*Exit SIMPLE.*]  
A justice of peace sometime may be beholden to his friend for a man:—I keep but three men and a boy yet, till my mother be dead: But what though? yet I live like a poor gentleman born.

*Anne.* I may not go in without your worship: they will not sit, till you come.

*Slen.* Pfaiith, I'll eat nothing; I thank you as much as though I did.

*Anne.* I pray you, sir, walk in.

*Slen.* I had rather walk here, I thank you: I bruised my shin the other day with playing at sword and dagger with a master of fence, three veneys† for a dish of stewed prunes; and, by my troth, I cannot abide the smell of hot meat since. Why do your dogs bark so? be there bears i' the town?

*Anne.* I think there are, sir; I heard them talked of.

*Slen.* I love the sport well; but I shall as soon quarrel at it as any man in England:—

\* An intended blunder.

† Three sel-to's, boots, or hits.

You are afraid if you see the bear loose, are you not?

*Anne.* Ay, indeed, sir.

*Slén.* That's meat and drink to me, now: I have seen Sackerson \* loose, twenty times; and have taken him by the chain: but, I warrant you, the women have so cried and shriek'd at it, that it pass'd:—but women, indeed, cannot abide 'em; they are very ill-favoured rough things.

*Re-enter PAGE.*

*Page.* Come, gentle master Slender, come; we stay for you.

*Slén.* I'll eat nothing; I thank you, sir.

*Page.* By cock and pye, you shall not choose, sir: come, come.

*Slén.* Nay, pray you, lead the way.

*Page.* Come on, sir.

*Slén.* Mistress Anne, yourself shall go first.

*Anne.* Not I, sir; pray you, keep on.

*Slén.* Truly, I will not go first; truly, la: I will not do you that wrong.

*Anne.* I pray you, sir.

*Slén.* I'll rather be unmannerly than troublesome: you do yourself wrong, indeed, la.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. *The same.*

*Enter Sir HUGH EVANS and SIMPLE.*

*Eva.* Go your ways, and ask of Doctor Caius' house, which is the way: and there dwells one mistress Quickly, which is in the manner of his nurse, or his dry nurse, or his cook, or his laundry, his washer, and his wringer.

*Simp.* Well, sir.

*Eva.* Nay, it is petter yet:—give her this letter; for it is a 'oman that altogether's acquaintance with mistress Anne Page; and the letter is, to desire and require her to solicit your master's desires to mistress Anne Page: I pray you, be gone; I will make an end of my dinner; there's pippins and cheese to come.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III. *A Room in the Garter Inn.*

*Enter FALSTAFF, HOST, BARDOLPH, NYM, PISTOL, and ROBIN.*

*Fal.* Mine host of the Garter,—

*Host.* What says my bully-rook? Speak scholarly and wisely.

*Fal.* Truly, mine host, I must turn away some of my followers.

*Host.* Discard, bully Hercules; cashier: let them wag; trot, trot.

*Fal.* I sit at ten pounds a-week.

*Host.* Thou'rt an emperor, Cæsar, Keiser, and Phœazar. I will entertain Bardolph; he shall draw, he shall tap: said I well, bully Hector?

*Fal.* Do so, good mine host.

*Host.* I have spoke; let him follow: Let me see thee, froth and lime: I am at a word; allow.

[*Exit Host.*]

*Fal.* Bardolph, follow him; a tapster is a good trade: An old cloak makes a new jerkin; a withered serving-man, a fresh tapster: Go; adieu.

*Bard.* It is a life that I have desired; I will thrive. [*Exit BARD.*]

*Pist.* O base Gongarian† wight! wilt thou the spigot wield?

*Nym.* He was gotten in drink: Is not the humour conceited? His mind is not heroic, and there's the humour of it.

*Fal.* I am glad I am so acquit of this tinder-box; his thefts were too open: his filching was like an unskilful singer, he kept not time.

*Nym.* The good humour is, to steal at a minute's rest.

*Pist.* Convey, the wise it call: Steal! foh; a fico§ for the phrase!

*Fal.* Well, sirs, I am almost out at heels.

*Pist.* Why then let kibes ensue.

*Fal.* There is no remedy; I must coney-catch; I must shift.

*Pist.* Young ravens must have food.

*Fal.* Which of you know Ford of this town?

*Pist.* I ken the wight; he is of substance good.

*Fal.* My honest lads, I will tell you what I am about.

*Pist.* Two yards, and more.

*Fal.* No quips now, Pistol; indeed I am in the waist two yards about: but I am now about no waste; I am about thrift. Briefly, I do mean to make love to Ford's wife; I spy entertainment in her; she discourses, she carves, she gives the leer of invitation: I can construe the action of her familiar style; and the hardest voice of her behaviour, to be English'd rightly, is, *I am sir John Falstaff's*.

*Pist.* He hath studied her well, and translated her well; out of honesty into English.

*Nym.* The anchor is deep: will that humour pass?

*Fal.* Now, the report goes, she has all the rule of her husband's purse; she hath legions of angels ||.

*Pist.* As many devils entertain; and, *To her, boy, say I.*

*Nym.* The humour rises; it is good: humour me the angels.

*Fal.* I have writ me here a letter to her: and here another to Page's wife; who even now gave me good eyes too, examin'd my parts with most judicious eyliads: sometimes the beam of her view gilded my foot, sometimes my portly belly.

*Pist.* Then did the sun on dunghill shine.

*Nym.* I thank thee for that humour.

*Fal.* O, she did so course o'er my exterior with such a greedy intention, that the appetite of her eye did seem to scorch me up like a burning glass! Here's another letter to her: she bears the purse too; she is a region in Guiana, all gold and bounty. I will be cheater ¶ to them both, and they shall be exchequers to me; they shall be my East and West Indies,

\* The name of a bear exhibited at Paris-Garden in Southwark. † Surpassed all expression.  
§ For Hungarian. ¶ Fig. || Gold coin. ¶ Excheatour, an officer in the Exchequer



and I will trade to them both. Go, bear thou this letter to mistress Page; and thou this to mistress Ford: we will thrive, lads, we will thrive.

*Pist.* Shall I sir Pandarus of Troy become, And by my side wear steel? then, Lucifer take all!

*Nym.* I will run no base humour; here, take the humour letter; I will keep the 'haviour of reputation.

*Fal.* Hold, sirrah, [to ROB.] bear you these letters tightly\*;

Sail like my plinnace to these golden shores.— Rogues, hence avaunt! vanish like hail-stones, go; [pack!]

Trudge, plod away, o' the hoof; seek shelter, Falstaff will learn the humour of this age, French thrift, you rogues; myself, and skirted page. [Exit FALSTAFF and ROBIN.]

*Pist.* Let vultures gripe thy guts! for gourd and fulham † holds,

And nigh and low beguile the rich and poor: Tester! I'll have in pouch, when thou shalt lack, Base Phrygian Turk!

*Nym.* I have operations in my head, which be humours of revenge.

*Pist.* Wilt thou revenge?

*Nym.* By welkin, and her star!

*Pist.* With wit or steel?

*Nym.* With both the humours, I: I will discuss the humour of this love to Page.

*Pist.* And I to Ford shall eke unfold, How Falstaff, varlet vile, His dove will prove, his gold will hold, And his soft couch desire.

*Nym.* My humour shall not cool: I will incense § Page to deal with poison; I will possess him with yellowness ¶, for the revolt of mien is dangerous: that is my true humour.

*Pist.* Thou art the Mars of malcontents: I second thee; troop on. [Exit.

#### SCENE IV. A Room in Dr. Caius's House.

Enter Mrs. QUICKLY, SIMPLE, and RUGBY.

*Quick.* What, John Rugby!—I pray thee, go to the casement, and see if you can see my master, master Doctor Caius, coming: if he do, i'faith, and find any body in the house, here will be an old abusing of God's patience, and the king's English.

*Rug.* I'll go watch. [Exit RUGBY.]

*Quick.* Go; and we'll have a posset for't soon at night, in faith, at the latter end of a sea-coal fire. An honest, willing, kind fellow, as ever servant shall come in house withal; and, I warrant you, no tell-tale, nor no breed-bate ¶: his worst fault is, that he is given to prayer; he is something peevish\*\* that way: but nobody but has his fault;—but let that pass. Peter Simple, you say your name is?

*Sim.* Ay, for fault of a better.

*Quick.* And master Slender's your master?

*Sim.* Ay, forsooth.

*Quick.* Does he not wear a great round beard, like a Glover's paring-knife?

*Sim.* No, forsooth: he hath but a little wee face, with a little yellow beard; a Cain-coloured beard.

*Quick.* A softly-sprighted man, is he not?

*Sim.* Ay, forsooth: but he is as tall †† a man of his hands, as any is between this and his head; he hath fought with a warrener ¶.

*Quick.* How say you?—O, I should remember him; Does he not hold up his head, as it were? and strut in his gait?

*Sim.* Yes, indeed, does he.

*Quick.* Well, heaven send Anne Page no worse fortune? Tell master parson Evans, I will do what I can for your master: Anne is a good girl, and I wish—

#### Re-enter RUGBY.

*Rug.* Out, alas! here comes my master.

*Quick.* We shall all be shent §§: Run in here, good young man; go into this closet. [Shuts Simple in the closet.] He will not stay long—What, John Rugby! John, what, John, I say!—Go, John, go inquire for my master; I doubt he be not well, that he comes not home:—and down, down, down-a, &c. [Sings.]

#### Enter Doctor CAIUS.

*Caius.* Vat is you sing? I do not like dese toys; Pray you, go and vetch me in my closet un boittier verd; a box, a green-a box: Do intend vat I speak? a green-a box.

*Quick.* Ay, forsooth, I'll fetch it you. I am glad he went not in himself; if he had found the young man, he would have been horn-mad. [Aside.]

*Caius.* Fe, fe, fe, fe! ma foi, il fait fort chaud. Je m'en vais à la Cour,—la grand affaire.

*Quick.* Is it this, sir?

*Caius.* Ouy; mette le au mon pocket; De-peche, quickly:—Vere is dat knave Rugby?

*Quick.* What, John Rugby! John!

*Rug.* Here, sir.

*Caius.* You are John Rugby, and you are Jack Rugby: Come, take-a your rapier, and come after my heel to de court.

*Rug.* 'Tis ready, sir, here in the porch.

*Caius.* By my trot, I tarry too long:—Od's me! Qu'ay j'oublié? dere is some simples in my closet, dat I will not for the world I shall leave behind.

*Quick.* Ah me! he'll find the young man there, and be mad.

*Caius.* O diable, diable! vat is in my closet?—Villany? larron! [Pulling Simple out.] Rugby, my rapier.

*Quick.* Good master, be content.

*Caius.* Verefore shall I be content-a?

*Quick.* The young man is an honest man.

*Caius.* Vat shall de honest man do in my closet? dere is no honest man dat shall come in my closet.

• Cleverly. † False dice. ‡ Sixpence I'll have in pocket.

¶ Jealousy.

¶ Strife

•• Foolish.

§ Instigate.

†† The keeper of a warren.

§§ Scolded, reprimanded.

*Quick.* I beseech you, be not so stegmatic; hear the truth of it: He came of an errand to me from parson Hugh.

*Caius.* Vell.

*Sim.* Ay, forsooth, to desire her to—

*Quick.* Peace, I pray you.

*Caius.* Peace—a your tongue:—Speak—a your tale.

*Sim.* To desire this honest gentlewoman, your maid, to speak a good word to mistress Anne Page for my master, in the way of marriage.

*Quick.* This is all, indeed, la; but I'll ne'er put my finger in the fire, and need not.

*Caius.* Sir Hugh send-a you?—Rugby, baillez me some paper:—Tarry you a little-a while. *[writes.]*

*Quick.* I am glad he is so quiet: if he had been thoroughly moved, you should have heard him so loud and so melancholy:—But notwithstanding, man, I'll do your master what good I can: and the very yea and the no is, the French doctor, my master,—I may call him my master, look you, for I keep his house; and I wash, wring, brew, bake, scour, dress meat and drink, make the beds, and do all myself:—

*Sim.* 'Tis a great charge, to come under one body's hand.

*Quick.* Are you avis'd o' that? you shall find it a great charge: and to be up early and down late;—but notwithstanding, (to tell you in your ear; I would have no words of it;) my master himself is in love with mistress Anne Page: but notwithstanding that,—I know Anne's mind,—that's neither here nor there.

*Caius.* You jack'nape; give-a dis letter to Sir Hugh; by gar, it is a shallenge: I vill cut his troat in de park; and I vill teach a scurvy jack-a-nape priest to meddle or make:—you may be gone; it is not good you tarry here:—by gar, I vill cut all his two stones; by gar, he shall not have a stone to throw at his dog.

*[Exit SIMPLE.]*

*Quick.* Alas, he speaks but for his friend.

*Caius.* It is no matter-a for dat:—do not you tell-a me dat I shall have Anne Page for myself?—by gar, I vill kill de Jack priest; and I have appointed mine host de *de Jarterre* to measure our weapon:—by gar, I vill myself have Anne Page.

*Quick.* Sir, the maid loves you, and all shall

be well: we must give folks leave to prate: What, the good-ger? \*

*Caius.* Rugby, come to the court vit me;—By gar, if I have not Anne Page, I shall turn your head out of my door:—Follow my heels, Rugby. *[Exeunt CAIUS and RUGBY.]*

*Quick.* You shall have An fools-head of your own. No, I know Anne's mind for that: never a woman in Windsor knows more of Anne's mind than I do; nor can do more than I do with her, I thank heaven.

*Fent.* *[within.]* Who's within there, ho?

*Quick.* Who's there, I trow? Come near the house, I pray you.

*Enter FENTON.*

*Fen.* How now, good woman; how dost thou?

*Quick.* The better, that it pleases your good worship to ask.

*Fent.* What news? how does pretty mistress Anne?

*Quick.* In truth, sir, and she is pretty, and honest, and gentle; and one that is your friend, I can tell you that by the way; I praise heaven for it.

*Fent.* Shall I do any good, thinkest thou? Shall I not lose my suit?

*Quick.* Troth, sir, all is in His hands above: but, notwithstanding, master Fenton, I'll be sworn on a book, she loves you:—Have not your worship a wart above your eye?

*Fent.* Yes, marry, have I; what of that?

*Quick.* Well, thereby hangs a tale;—good faith, it is such another Nan:—but, I detest†, an honest maid as ever broke bread:—We had an hour's talk of that wart;—I shall never laugh but in that maid's company?—But, indeed, she is given too much to allcholy‡ and musing: But for you—Well, go to.

*Fent.* Well, I shall see her to-day: Hold, there's money for thee; let me have thy voice in my behalf: if thou seest her before me, commend me—

*Quick.* Will I? Faith, that we will: and I will tell your worship more of the wart, the next time we have confidence; and of other wooers.

*Fent.* Well, farewell; I am in great haste now. *[Exit.]*

*Quick.* Farewell to your worship.—Truly, an honest gentleman; but Anne loves him not; for I know Anne's mind as well as another does:—Out upon't! what have I forgot? *[Exit.]*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. Befor Page's House.

*Enter Mistress PAGE, with a letter.*

*Mrs. Page.* What! have I 'scaped love-letters in the holiday time o' my beauty, and am I now a subject for them? Let me see: *[reads.]*

*Ask me no reason why I love you; for though love use reason in his precisians, he*

*admits him not for his counsellor: You are not young, no more am I; go to then, there's sympathy: you are merry, so am I; Ha! ha! then there's more sympathy: you love sack, and so do I; Would you desire better sympathy? Let it suffice thee, mistress Page, (at the least, if the love of a soldier can suffice,) that I love thee. I will not say,*

\* The gougere, wha he pox!

† Melancholy.

† She means, I protest.

‡ Most probably Shakspeare wrote physicia.

*pity me, 'tis not a soldier-like phrase; but I say, love me. By me,*

*Thine own true knight*

*By day or night,*

*Or any kind of light,*

*With all his might,*

*For thee to fight,* John Falstaff.

What a Herod of Jewry is this!—O wicked, wicked world!—one that is well nigh worn to pieces with age, to show himself a young gallant! What an unweighed behaviour hath this Flemish drunkard picked (with the devil's name) out of my conversation, that he dares in this manner assay me? Why, he hath not been thrice in my company!—What should I say to him?—I was then frugal of my mirth:—heaven forgive me!—Why, I'll exhibit a bill in the parliament for the putting down of men. How shall I be revenged on him? for revenged I will be, as sure as his guts are made of puddings.

*Enter Mistress FORD.*

*Mrs. Ford.* Mistress Page! trust me, I was going to your house.

*Mrs. Page.* And, trust me, I was coming to you. You look very ill.

*Mrs. Ford.* Nay, I'll ne'er believe that; I have to show to the contrary.

*Mrs. Page.* Faith, but you do, in my mind.

*Mrs. Ford.* Well, I do then; yet, I say, I could show you to the contrary: O, mistress Page, give me some counsel!

*Mrs. Page.* What's the matter, woman?

*Mrs. Ford.* O woman, if it were not for one trifling respect, I could come to such honour!

*Mrs. Page.* Hang the trifle, woman; take the honour: What is it!—dispense with trifles;—what is it?

*Mrs. Ford.* If I would but go to hell for an eternal moment or so, I could be knighted.

*Mrs. Page.* What?—thou liest!—Sir Alice Ford!—These knights will hack; and so thou shouldst not alter the article of thy gentry.

*Mrs. Ford.* We burn day-light:—here, read, read;—perceive how I might be knighted.—I shall think the worse of fat men, as long as I have an eye to make difference of men's liking.—And yet he would not swear; praised women's modesty: and gave such orderly and well-behaved reproof to all uncomeliness, that I would have sworn his disposition would have gone to the truth of his words: but they do no more adhere and keep place together, than the hundredth psalm to the tune of *Green sleeves*. What tempest, I trow, threw this whale, with so many tunns of oil in his belly, ashore at Windsor? How shall I be revenged on him? I think, the best way were to enter-tail him with hope, till the wicked fire of lust have melted him in his own grease.—Did you ever hear the like?

*Mrs. Page.* Letter for letter; but that the name of Page and Ford differs!—To thy great comfort in this mystery of ill opinions, here's the twin-brother of thy letter: but let thine

inherit first; for, I protest, mine never shall. I warrant, he hath a thousand of these letters, writ with blank space for different names, (sure more,) and these are of the second edition: He will print them out of doubt: for he cares not what he puts into the press, when he would put us two. I had rather be a giantess, and lie under mount Pelion. Well, I will find you twenty lascivious turtles, ere one chaste man.

*Mrs. Ford.* Why, this is the very same; the very hand, the very words: What doth he think of us?

*Mrs. Page.* Nay, I know not: It makes me almost ready to wrangle with mine own honesty. I'll entertain myself like one that I am not acquainted withal; for, sure, unless he know some strain in me that I know not myself, he would never have boarded me in this fury.

*Mrs. Ford.* Boarding, call you it? I'll be sure to keep him above deck.

*Mrs. Page.* So will I; if he come under my hatches, I'll never to sea again. Let's be revenged on him: let's appoint him a meeting; give him a show of comfort in his suit; and lead him on with a fine-baited delay, till he hath pawn'd his horses to mine Host of the Garter.

*Mrs. Ford.* Nay, I will consent to act any villainy against him, that may not sully the chariness\* of our honesty. O that my husband saw this letter! It would give eternal food to his jealousy.

*Mrs. Page.* Why, look, where he comes; and my good man too: he's as far from jealousy, as I am from giving him cause; and that, I hope, is an unmeasurable distance.

*Mrs. Ford.* You are the happier woman.

*Mrs. Page.* Let's consult together against this greasy knight: Come hither. [*They retire.*]

*Enter FORD, PISTOL, PAGE, and NYM.*

*Ford.* Well, I hope it be not so.

*Pist.* Hope is a curtail'd dog in some affairs: Sir John affects thy wife.

*Ford.* Why, sir, my wife is not young.

*Pist.* He woos both high and low, both rich and poor,

Both young and old, one with another, Ford; He loves thy gally-mawfry†; Ford, perpend.

*Ford.* Love my wife? [thou,

*Pist.* With liver burning hot: Prevent, or go Like sir Actæon he, with Ring-wood at thy O, odious is the name! [heels:

*Ford.* What name, sir?

*Pist.* The horn, I say: Farewell.

Take heed; have open eye; for thieves do foot by night: [do sing.—

Take heed, ere summer comes, or cuckoo-birds Away, sir corporal Nym.—

Believe it, Page; he speaks sense.

[*Exit PISTOL.*]

*Ford.* I will be patient; I will find out this.

*Nym.* And this is true. [*To PAGE.*] I like not the humour of lying. He hath wronged me in some humours; I should have borne the humoured letter to her; but I have a sword, and it shall bite upon my necessity. He loves

\* Cætion

† dog that misses his game.

‡ A medley.

§ Consider.



your wife; there's the short and the long. My name is corporal Nym; I speak, and I avouch. 'Tis true;—my name is Nym, and Falstaff loves your wife.—Adieu! I love not the humour of bread and cheese; and there's the humour of it. Adieu.

[Exit NYM.]

Page. The humour of it, quoth 'a! here's a fellow frights humour out of his wits.

Ford. I will seek out Falstaff.

Page. I never heard such a drawling, affecting rogue.

Ford. If I do find it, well.

Page. I will not believe such a Cataian \*, ho! the priest o' the town commended him for a true man.

Ford. 'Twas a good sensible fellow: Well.

Page. How now, Meg?

Mrs. Page. Whither go you, George?—Hark you.

Mrs. Ford. How now, sweet Frank? why art thou melancholy?

Ford. I melancholy! I am not melancholy.—Get you home, go.

Mrs. Ford. 'Faith, thou hast some crotchets in thy head now.—Will you go, mistress Page?

Mrs. Page. Have with you.—You'll come to dinner, George?—Look, who comes yonder: she shall be our messenger to this paltry knight.

[Aside to Mrs. Ford.]

Enter Mistress QUICKLY.

Mrs. Ford. Trust me, I thought on her: she'll fit it.

Mrs. Page. You are come to see my daughter Anne?

Quick. Ay, forsooth; And, I pray, how does good mistress Anne?

Mrs. Page. Go in with us, and see; we have an hour's talk with you.

[Exeunt Mrs. PAGE, Mrs. FORD, and Mrs. QUICKLY.]

Page. How now, master Ford?

Ford. You heard what this knave told me; did you not?

Page. Yes; and you heard what the other told me?

Ford. Do you think there is truth in them?

Page. Hang 'em, slaves! I do not think the knight would offer it: but these that accuse him in his intent towards our wives, are a yoke of his discarded men; very rogues, now they be out of service.

Ford. Were they his men?

Page. Marry, were they.

Ford. I like it never the better for that.—Does he lie at the Garter?

Page. Ay, marry, does he. If he should intend this voyage towards my wife, I would turn her loose to him; and what he gets more of her than sharp words, let it lie on my head.

Ford. I do not misdoubt my wife; but I would be loth to turn them together: A man may be too confident: I would have nothing lie on my head: I cannot be thus satisfied.

Page. Look, where my ranting host of the

Garter comes: there is either liquor in his pate, or money in his purse, when he looks so merrily.—How now, mine host?

Enter HOST and SHALLOW.

Host. How now, bully-rook? thou'rt a gentleman: cavalero-justice, I say.

Shal. I follow, mine host, I follow.—Good even, and twenty, good master Page! Master Page, will you go with us? we have sport in hand.

Host. Tell him, cavalero-justice; tell him, bully-rook.

Shal. Sir, there is a fray to be fought, between sir Hugh the Welsh priest, and Cains the French doctor.

Ford. Good mine host o' the Garter, a word with you.

Host. What say'st thou, bully-rook?

[They go aside.]

Shal. Will you [to PAGE] go with us to behold it? my merry host hath had the measuring of their weapons; and, I think, he hath appointed them contrary places: for, believe me, I hear, the parson is no jester. Hark, I will tell you what our sport shall be.

Host. Hast thou no suit against my knight, my guest cavalier?

Ford. None, I protest: but I'll give you a pottle of burnt sack to give me recourse to him, and tell him my name is Brook; only for a jest.

Host. My hand, bully: thou shalt have agress and regress; said I well? and thy name shall be Brook: it is a merry knight.—Will you go on, hearts?

Shal. Have with you, mine host.

Page. I have heard, the Frenchman hath good skill in his rapier.

Shal. Tut, sir, I could have told you more: In these times you stand on distance, your passes, stoccadoes, and I know not what: 'tis the heart, master Page; 'tis here, 'tis here. I have seen the time, with my long sword, I would have made you four tall fellows skip like rats.

Host. Here, boys, here, here! shall we wag?

Page. Have with you:—I had rather hear them scold than fight.

[Exeunt HOST, SHALLOW, and PAGE.]

Ford. Though Page be a secure fool, and stands so firmly on his wife's frailty, yet I cannot put off my opinion so easily: She was in his company at Page's house; and, what they made there, I know not. Well, I will look further into't: and I have a disguise to sound Falstaff: if I find her honest, I lose not my labour; if she be otherwise, 'tis labour well bestowed.

[Exit.]

SCENE II. A Room in the Garter Inn.

Enter FALSTAFF and PARTOL.

Fal. I will not lend thee a penny.

Part. Why, then, the world's mine oyster, Which I with sword will open.—I will retort the sum in equipage.

\* A lying sharper.

\* Stout, bold.

† Did.

§ Pay you again in stolen goods.

*Fal.* Not a penny. I have been content, sir, you should lay my countenance to pawn: I have grated upon my good friends for three reprieves for you and your coach-fellow\* Nym; or else you had looked through the grate like a geminy of baboons. I am damned in hell, for swearing to gentlemen my friends, you were good soldiers, and tall fellows: and when mistress Bridget lost the handle of her fan, I took't, upon mine honour: thou hadst it not.

*Pist.* Didst thou not snare? hadst thou not fifteen pence?

*Fal.* Reason, you rogue, reason: Think'st thou, I'll endanger my soul gratis? At a word, hang no more about me, I am no gibbet for you:—go.—A short knife and a throg;—to your manor of Picket-hatch†, go.—You'll not bear a letter for me, you rogue!—you stand upon your honour!—Why, thou unconscionable baseness, it is as much as I can do, to keep the terms of my honour precise. I, I, I myself sometimes, leaving the fear of heaven on the left hand, and hiding mine honour in my necessity, am fain to shuffle, to hedge, and to lurch; and yet you, rogue, will ensconce§ your rags, your cat-a-mountain looks, your red-lattice || phrases, and your bold-beating oaths, under the shelter of your honour! You will not do it, you?

*Pist.* I do relent; What would'st thou more of man?

*Enter ROBIN.*

*Rob.* Sir, here's a woman would speak with you.

*Fal.* Let her approach.

*Enter Mistress QUICKLY.*

*Quick.* Give your worship good-morrow.

*Fal.* Good morrow, good wife.

*Quick.* Not so, an't please your worship.

*Fal.* Good maid, then.

*Quick.* I'll be sworn; as my mother was, the first hour I was born.

*Fal.* I do believe the swearer: What with me?

*Quick.* Shall I vouchsafe your worship a word or two?

*Fal.* Two thousand, fair woman; and I'll vouchsafe thee the hearing.

*Quick.* There is one mistress Ford, sir;—I pray, come a little nearer this way:—I myself dwell with master doctor Calus.

*Fal.* Well, on: Mistress Ford, you say.—

*Quick.* Your worship says very true: I pray your worship, come a little nearer this way.

*Fal.* I warrant thee, nobody hears;—mine own people, mine own people.

*Quick.* Are they so? Heaven bless them, and make them his servants!

*Fal.* Well: mistress Ford:—what of her?

*Quick.* Why, sir, she's a good creature. Lord, lord! your worship's a wanton: Well, heaven forgive you, and all of us, I pray!

*Fal.* Mistress Ford;—come, mistress Ford,—  
*Quick.* Marry, this is the short and the long of it; you have brought her into such a canaries¶, as 'tis wonderful. The best courtier of them all, when the court lay at Windsor, could never have brought her to such a canary. Yet there has been knights, and lords, and gentlemen, with their coaches; I warrant you, coach after coach, letter after letter, gift after gift; smelling so sweetly, (all musk,) and so rushing, I warrant you, in silk and gold; and in such alligant terms; and in such wine and sugar of the best, and the fairest, that would have won any woman's heart; and, I warrant you, they could never get an eye-wink of her. —I had myself twenty angels given me this morning: but I defy all angels, (in any such sort, as they say,) but in the way of honesty:—and, I warrant you, they could never get her so much as sip on a cup with the proudest of them all: and yet there has been earls, nay, which is more, pensioners; but, I warrant you, all is one with her.

*Fal.* But what says she to me? be brief, my good she Mercury.

*Quick.* Marry, she hath received your letter; for the which she thanks you a thousand times: and she gives you to notify, that her husband will be absence from his house between ten and eleven.

*Fal.* Ten and eleven?

*Quick.* Ay, forsooth; and then you may come and see the picture, she says, that you wot\*\* of;—master Ford, her husband, will be from home. Alas! the sweet woman leads an ill life with him; he's a very jealousy man; she leads a very frampold†† life with him, good heart.

*Fal.* Ten and eleven: Woman, commend me to her; I will not fail her.

*Quick.* Why, you say well: But I have another messenger to your worship: Mistress Page hath her hearty commendations to you too;—and let me tell you in your ear, she's as fartuous a civil modest wife, and one (I tell you) that will not miss your morning nor evening prayer, as any is in Windsor, who'er be the other: and she bade me tell your worship, that her husband is seldom from home; but, she hopes, there will come a time. I never knew a woman so dote upon a man; surely, I think you have charms, la; yes, in truth.

*Fal.* Not I, I assure thee; setting the attraction of my good parts aside, I have no other charms.

*Quick.* Blessing on your heart for't!

*Fal.* But, I pray thee, tell me this: has Ford's wife, and Page's wife, acquainted each other how they love me?

*Quick.* That were a jest, indeed?—they have not so little grace, I hope:—that were a trick, indeed! But mistress Page would desire you to send her your little page of all loves††;

\* Draws along with you. † To cut purses in a crowd. ‡ Picket-hatch was in Clerkenwell.

§ Protect. || Ale-house. ¶ A mistake of Mrs. Quickly's for *quandaries*.

\*\* Know.

†† Fretful, peevish.

‡‡ By all means.

her husband has a marvellous infection to the little page: and, truly, master Page is an honest man. Never a wife in Windsor leads a better life than she does; do what she will, say what she will, take all, pay all, go to bed when she list, rise when she list, all is as she will; and, truly, she deserves it: for if there be a kind woman in Windsor, she is one. You must send her your page; no remedy.

*Fal.* Why, I will.

*Quick.* Nay, but do so then: and, look you, he may come and go between you both; and, in any case, have a nay-word\*, that you may know one another's mind, and the boy never need to understand any thing; for 'tis not good that children should know any wickedness: old folks, you know, have discretion, as they say, and know the world.

*Fal.* Fare thee well: commend me to them both: there's my purse; I am yet thy debtor.—Boy, go along with this woman.—This news distracts me! [*Exeunt QUICKLY AND ROBIN.*]

*Pist.* This punk is one of cupid's carriers:—Clap on more sails; pursue, up with your fights; Give fire; she is my prize, or ocean overwhelm them all! [*Exit PISTOL.*]

*Fal.* Say'st thou so, old Jack? go thy ways; I'll make more of thy old body than I have done. Will they yet look after thee? Wilt thou, after the expense of so much money, be now a gainer? Good body, I thank thee: Let them say, 'tis grossly done; so it be fairly done, no matter.

*Enter BARDOLPH.*

*Bard.* Sir John, there's one master Brook below would fain speak with you, and be acquainted with you; and hath sent your worship a morning's draught of sack.

*Fal.* Brook, is his name

*Bard.* Ay, sir.

*Fal.* Call him in; [*Exit BARDOLPH.*] Such Brooks are welcome to me, that o'erflow such liquor. Ah! ha! mistress Ford and mistress Page, have I encompassed you? go to; *via*†!

*Re-enter BARDOLPH, with FORD disguised.*

*Ford.* Bless you, sir.

*Fal.* And you, sir: Would you speak with me?

*Ford.* I make bold, to press with so little preparation upon you.

*Fal.* You're welcome; What's your will? Give us leave, drawer. [*Exit BARDOLPH.*]

*Ford.* Sir, I am a gentleman that have spent much; my name is Brook.

*Fal.* Good master Brook, I desire more acquaintance of you.

*Ford.* Good sir John, I sue for yours: not to charge you; for I must let you understand, I think myself in better plight for a lender than you are: the which hath something embolden'd me to this unseasoned intrusion; for they say, if money go before, all ways do lie open.

*Fal.* Money is a good soldier, sir, and will on.

*Ford.* Troth, and I have a bag of money

here troubles me: if you will help me to bear it, sir John, take all, or half, for easing me of the carriage.

*Fal.* Sir, I know not how I may deserve to be your porter.

*Ford.* I will tell you, sir, if you will give me the hearing.

*Fal.* Speak, good master Brook; I shall be glad to be your servant.

*Ford.* Sir, I hear you are a scholar,—I will be brief with you;—and you have been a man long known to me, though I had never to good means, as desire, to make myself acquainted with you. I shall discover a thing to you, wherein I must very much lay open mine own imperfection: but, good sir John, as you have one eye upon my follies, as you hear them unfolded, turn another into the register of your own; that I may pass with a reproof the easier, sith you yourself know, how easy it is to be such an offender.

*Fal.* Very well, sir; proceed.

*Ford.* There is a gentlewoman in this town, her husband's name is Ford.

*Fal.* Well, sir.

*Ford.* I have long loved her, and, I protest to you, bestowed much on her; followed her with a doting observance; engrossed opportunities to meet her; feed every slight occasion, that could but niggardly give me sight of her; not only bought many presents to give her, but have given largely to many, to know what she would have given: briefly, I have pursued her, as love hath pursued me; which hath been, on the wing of all occasions. But whatsoever I have merited, either in my mind, or in my means, meed‡, I am sure, I have received none; unless experience be a jewel: that I have purchased at an infinite rate; and that hath taught me to say this:

*Love like a shadow flies, when substance love pursues;*

*Pursuing that that flies, and flying what pursues.*

*Fal.* Have you received no promise of satisfaction at her hands?

*Ford.* Never.

*Fal.* Have you importuned her to such a purpose?

*Ford.* Never.

*Fal.* Of what quality was your love, then?

*Ford.* Like a fair house, built upon another man's ground; so that I have lost my edifice, by mistaking the place where I erected it.

*Fal.* To what purpose have you unfolded this to me?

*Ford.* When I have told you that, I have told you all. Some say, that, though she appear honest to me, yet, in other places, she enlargeth her mirth so far, that there is shrewd construction made of her. Now, sir John, here is the heart of my purpose: You are a gentleman of excellent breeding, admirable discourse, of great admittance‖, authentic in your

\* A watch-word.

† A cant phrase of exultation.

‡ Since.

§ Reward.

‖ In the greatest companies.



place and person, generally allowed\* for your many warlike, court-like, and learned preparations.

*Fal.* O, sir!

*Ford.* Believe it, for you know it:—There is money; spend it, spend it; spend more; spend all I have; only give me so much of your time in exchange of it, as to lay an amiable siege to the honesty of this Ford's wife: use your art of wooing, win her to consent to you; if any man may, you may as soon as any.

*Fal.* Would it apply well to the vehemency of your affection, that I should win what you would enjoy? Methinks, you prescribe to yourself very preposterously.

*Ford.* O, understand my drift! she dwells so securely on the excellency of her honour, that the folly of my soul dares not present itself; she is too bright to be looked against. Now, could I come to her with any detection in my hand, my desires had instance and argument to commend themselves; I could drive her then from the ward† or her purity, her reputation, her marriage-vow, and a thousand other her defences, which now are too strongly embattled against me: What say you to't, sir John?

*Fal.* Master Brook, I will first make bold with your money; next, give me your hand; and last, as I am a gentleman, you shall, if you will, enjoy Ford's wife.

*Ford.* O good sir!

*Fal.* Master Brook, I say you shall.

*Ford.* Want no money, sir John, you shall want none.

*Fal.* Want no mistress Ford, master Brook, you shall want none. I shall be with her (I may tell you,) by her own appointment; even as you came in to me, her assistant, or go-between, parted from me: I say, I shall be with her between ten and eleven; for at that time the jealous rascally knave, her husband, will be forth. Come you to me at night; you shall know how I speed.

*Ford.* I am blest in your acquaintance. Do you know Ford, sir?

*Fal.* Hang him, poor cuckoldly knave! I know him not:—yet I wrong him, to call him poor; they say, the jealous wittolly knave bath masses of money; for the which his wife seems to me well-favoured. I will use her as the key of the cuckoldly rogue's coffer; and there's my harvest-home.

*Ford.* I would you knew Ford, sir; that you might avoid him, if you saw him.

*Fal.* Hang him, mechanical salt-butter rogue! I will stare him out of his wits; I will awe him with my cudgel: it shall hang like a meteor o'er the cuckold's horns: master Brook, thou shalt know, I will predominate o'er the peasant, and thou shalt lie with his wife.—Come to me soon at night:—Ford's a knave, and I will aggravate his stile;† thou, master Brook, shalt know him for a knave and cuckold:—come to me soon at night. [Exit.

*Ford.* What a damned Epicurean rascal is this!—My heart is ready to crack with impatience—Who says, this is improvident jealousy? My wife hath sent to him, the hour is fixed, the match is made. Would any man have thought this?—See the hell of having a false woman! my bed shall be abused, my coffers ransacked, my reputation gnawn at; and I shall not only receive this villainous wrong, but stand under the adoption of abominable terms, and by him that does me this wrong. Terms! names!—Amaloun sounds well; Lucifer, well; Barbasou, well; yet they are devils' additions, the names of fiends: but cuckold! wittol's-cuckold! the devil himself hath not such a name. Page is an ass, a secure ass; he will trust his wife, he will not be jealous: I will rather trust a Fleming with my butter, parson Hugh the Welshman with my cheese, an Irishman with my aqua-vitæ|| bottle, or a thief to walk my ambling gelding, than my wife with herself: then she plots, then she ruminates, then she devises: and what they think in their hearts they may effect, they will break their hearts but they will effect. Heaven be praised for my jealousy!—Eleven o'clock the hour;—I will prevent this, detect my wife, be revenged on Falstaff, and laugh at Page. I will about it; better three hours too soon, than a minute too late. Fie, fie, fie! cuckold! cuckold! cuckold! [Exit.

### SCENE III. Windsor Park.

*Enter Caius and Rugby.*

*Caius.* Jack Rugby!

*Rug.* Sir.

*Caius.* Vat is de clock, Jack?

*Rug.* 'Tis past the hour, sir, that sir Hugh promised to meet.

*Caius.* By gar, he has save his soul, dat he is no come; he has pray his Pible vell, dat he is no come; by gar, Jack Rugby, he is dead already, if he be come.

*Rug.* He is wise, sir; he knew, your worship would kill him, if he came.

*Caius.* By gar, de herring is no dead, so as I vill kill him. Take your rapier, Jack; I vill tell you how I vill kill him.

*Rug.* Alas, sir, I cannot fence.

*Caius.* Villainy, take your rapier.

*Rug.* Forbear; here's company.

*Enter Host, Shallow, Slender, and Page.*

*Host.* 'Bless thee, bully doctor.

*Shal.* 'Save you, master doctor Caius.

*Page.* Now, good master doctor!

*Slen.* Give you good-morrow, sir.

*Caius.* Vat be all you, one, two, tree, four, come for?

*Host.* To see thee fight, to see thee foin\*, to see thee traverse, to see thee vere, to see thee there; to see thee pass thy punto, thy stock, thy reverse, thy distance, thy montant\*\* Is he dead, my Ethiopian? is he dead, my

\* Approved.

† Guard.

‡ Add to his titles.

§ Contented cuckold.

|| Usquebaugh.

¶ Fence.

\*\* Terms in fencing.

Francisco! ha, bully! What says my Æsculapius? my Galen? my heart of elder? ha! is he dead, bully Stale? is he dead?

*Caius.* By gar, he is de coward Jack priest of the world; he is not show his face.

*Host.* Thou art a Castilian \* Ling, Urinal! Hector of Greece, my boy!

*Caius.* I pray you, bear vittness that me have stay six or seven, two, tree hours for him, and he is no come.

*Shal.* He is the wiser man, master doctor: he is a curer of souls, and you a curer of bodies; if you should fight, you go against the hair of your professions: is it not true, master Page?

*Page.* Master Shallow, you have yourself been a great fighter, though now a man of peace.

*Shal.* Bodykins, master Page, though I now be old, and of the peace, if I see a sword out, my finger itches to make one: though we are justices, and doctors, and churchmen, master Page, we have some salt of our youth in us; we are the sons of women, master Page.

*Page.* 'Tis true, master Shallow.

*Shal.* It will be found so, master Page. Master doctor Caius, I am come to fetch you home. I am sworn of the peace; you have shewed yourself a wise physician, and sir Hugh hath shewn himself a wise and patient churchman: you must go with me, master doctor.

*Host.* Pardon, guest justice:—A word, monsieur Muck-watert.

*Caius.* Muck-watert! vat is dat?

*Host.* Muck-water, in our English tongue, is valour, bully.

*Caius.* By gar, then I have as much muck-water as de Englishman:—Scurvy jack-dog-priest! by gar, me vil cut his ears.

*Host.* He will clapper-claw thee tightly, bully.

*Caius.* Clapper-de-claw! vat is dat?

*Host.* That is, he will make thee amends.

*Caius.* By gar, me do look, he shall clapper-de-claw nle; for, by gar, me vill have it.

*Host.* And I will provoke him to't, or let him wag.

*Caius.* Me tank you for dat.

*Host.* And moreover, bully,—But first, master guest, and master Page, and eke cavalero Slender, go you through the town to Frogmore.

[*Aside to them.*]

*Page.* Sir Hugh is there, is he?

*Host.* He is there: see what humour he is in; and I will bring the doctor about by the fields: will it do well?

*Shal.* We will do it.

*Page, Shal. and Slen.* Adieu, good master doctor.

[*Exeunt PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.*]

*Caius.* By gar, me vill kill de priest; for he speak for a jack-an-ape to Anne Page.

*Host.* Let him die: but, first, sheath thy impatience; throw cold water on thy choler: go about the fields with me through Frogmore; I will bring thee where Mrs. Anne Page is, at a farin-house a feasting; and thou shall woo her: Cry'd game, said I well?

*Caius.* By gar, me tank you for dat: by gar, I love you; and I shall procure a you de good guest, de earl, de knight, de lords, de gentlemen, my patients.

*Host.* For the whiel, I will be thy adversary towards Anne Page; said I well?

*Caius.* By gar, 'tis good; vell said.

*Host.* Let us wag then.

*Caius.* Come at my heels, Jack Rugby.

[*Exeunt*]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. A Field near Frogmore.

*Enter Sir HUGH EVANS and SIMPLE.*

*Eva.* I pray you now, good master Slender's serving-man, and friend Simple by your name, which way have you looked for master Caius, that calls himself Doctor of Physick?

*Sim.* Marry, sir, the city-ward, the park-ward, every way; old Windsor way, and every way but the town way.

*Eva.* I most fehemently desire you, you will also look that way.

*Sim.* I will, sir.

*Eva.* 'Pless my soul! how fall of cholers I am, and trempeling of mind!—I shall be glad, if he have deceived me:—how melancholies I am!—I will knog his urinals about his knave's costard†, when I have good opportunities for the work:—'pless my soul! [*Sings.*]

*To shallow rivers, to whose falls  
Melodious birds sing madrigals;*

*There will we make our peds of roses,  
And a thousand fragrant posies.*

*To shallow—*

'Mercy on me! I have a great dispositions to cry

*Melodious birds sing madrigals;—*

*When as I sat in Pabylon§,——*

*And a thousand vagram posies.*

*To shallow—*

*Sim.* Yonder he is coming, this way, sir Hugh.

*Eva.* He's welcome:——

*To shallow rivers, to whose falls——*

Heaven prosper the right!—What weapons is he?

*Sim.* No weapons, sir: There comes my master, master Shallow, and another gentleman from Frogmore, over the stile, this way.

*Eva.* Pray you, give me my gown; or else keep it in your arms.

*Enter PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.*

*Shal.* How now, master parson? Good

\* Cant term for Spaniard.

† Drain of a dunghill.

‡ Head.

§ *Babylon*, the first line of the 139th Psalm.

morrow, good sir Hugh. Keep a gamester from the dice, and a good student from his book, and it is wonderful.

*Sten.* Ah, sweet Anne Page!

*Page.* Save you, good sir Hugh!

*Eva.* 'Pless you from his mercy sake, all of you!

*Shal.* What! the sword and the word! do you study them both, master parson?

*Page.* And youthful still, in your doublet and hose, this raw rheumatic day?

*Eva.* There is reasons and causes for it.

*Page.* We are come to you, to do a good office, master parson.

*Eva.* Fery well: What is it?

*Page.* Yonder is a most reverend gentleman, who belike, having received wrong by some person, is at most odds with his own gravity and patience, that ever you saw.

*Shal.* I have lived fourscore years and upward; I never heard a man of his place, gravity, and learning, so wide of his own respect.

*Eva.* What is he?

*Page.* I think you know him; master doctor Caius, the renowned French physician.

*Eva.* Got's will, and his passion of my heart! I had as lief you would tell me of a mess of porridge.

*Page.* Why?

*Eva.* He has no more knowledge in Hibocrates and Galen,—and he is a knave besides; a cowardly knave, as you would desires to be acquainted withal.

*Page.* I warrant you, he's the man should fight with him.

*Sten.* O, sweet Anne Page!

*Shal.* It appears so, by his weapons:—Keep them asunder;—here comes doctor Caius.

*Enter Host, CAIUS, and RUGBY.*

*Page.* Nay, good master parson, keep in your weapon.

*Shal.* So do you, good master doctor.

*Host.* Disarm them, and let them question; let them keep their limbs whole, and hack our English.

*Caius.* I pray you, let-a me speak a word vit your ear: Verefore vill you not meet a-me?

*Eva.* Pray you, use your patience: In good time.

*Caius.* By gar, you are de coward, de Jack dog, John ape.

*Eva.* Pray you, let us not be laughing-stogs to other men's humours; I desire you in friendship, and I will one way or other make you amends:—I will knog your urinals about your knave's cogscorb, for missing your meetings and appointments.

*Caius.* Diable!—Jack Rugby,—mine *Host de Jarterre*, have I not stay for him, to kill him? have I not, at de place I did appoint?

*Eva.* As I am a christians soul, now, look you, this is the place appointed; I'll be judgment by mine host of the Garter.

*Host.* Peace, I say, Guallia and Gaul, French and Welsh; soul-curer and body-curer.

*Caius.* Ay, dat is very good! excellent!

*Host.* Peace, I say; hear mine host of the Garter. Am I politic? am I subtle? am I a Machiavel? Shall I lose my doctor? no; he gives me the potions, and the motions. Shall I lose my parson? my priest? my sir Hugh? no; he gives me the proverbs and the no-verbs. —Give me thy hand, terrestrial; so:—Give me thy hand, celestial; so:—Boys of art, I have deceived you both; I have directed you to wrong places: your hearts are mighty, your skins are whole, and let burnt sack be the issue.

—Come, lay their swords to pawn:—Follow me, lad of peace; follow, follow, follow.

*Shal.* Trust me, a mad host:—Follow, gentlemen, follow.

*Sten.* O, sweet Anne Page!

[*Exeunt SHAL, STEN, PAGE, and Host.*]

*Caius.* Ha! do I perceive dat? have you make-a de sot\* of us? ha, ha!

*Eva.* This is well; he has made us his vlouting-stogt.—I desire you, that we may be friends; and let us knog our prains together, to be revenge on this same scall, scurvy, cogging companion, the host of the Garter.

*Caius.* By gar, vit all my heart; he promise to bring me vere is Anne Page: by gar, he deceive me too.

*Eva.* Well, I will smite his noddles:—Pray you, follow. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. The Street in Windsor.

*Enter Mrs. PAGE and ROBIN.*

*Mrs. Page.* Nay, keep your way, little gallant; you were wont to be a follower, but now you are a leader: Whether had you rather, lead mine eyes, or eye your master's heels?

*Rob.* I had rather, forsooth, go before you like a man, than follow him like a dwarf.

*Mrs. Page.* O you are a flattering boy; now, I see, you'll be a courtier.

*Enter FORD.*

*Ford.* Well met, mistress Page: Whither go you?

*Mrs. Page.* Truly, sir, to see your wife: Is she at home?

*Ford.* Ay, and as idle as she may hang together, for want of company: I think, if your husbands were dead, you two would marry.

*Mrs. Page.* Be sure of that,—two other husbands.

*Ford.* Where had you this pretty weathercock?

*Mrs. Page.* I cannot tell what the dickens his name is my husband had him of: What do you call your knight's name, sirrah?

*Rob.* Sir John Falstaff.

*Ford.* Sir John Falstaff!

*Mrs. Page.* He, he; I can never hit on's name. There is such a league between my good man and he!—Is your wife at home, indeed?

*Ford.* Indeed, she is.

*Mrs. Page.* By your leave, sir; I am sick till I see her. [*Exeunt Mrs. PAGE and ROBIN.*]

*Ford.* Has Page any brains? bat hlee auy

\* Fool.

† Flouting stock.



eyes? hath he any thinking? Sure, they sleep; he hath no use of them. Why, this boy will carry a letter twenty miles, as easy as a cannon will shoot point-blank twelve score. He pieces out his wife's inclination; he gives her folly motion and advantage: and now she's going to my wife, and Falstaff's boy with her. A man may hear this shower sing in the wind!—and Falstaff's boy with her!—Good plots! they are laid; and our revolved wives share damnation together. Well; I will take him, then torture my wife, pluck the borrowed veil of modesty from the so seeming\* mistress Page, divulge Page himself for a secure and wilful Actæon; and to these violent proceedings all my neighbours shall cry aim't. [*Clock strikes.*] The clock gives me my cue, and my assurance bids me search; there I shall find Falstaff: I shall be rather praised for this, than mocked; for it is as positive as the earth is firm, that Falstaff is there: I will go.

*Enter PAGE, SHALLOW, SLENDER, Host, Sir HUGH EVANS, CAIUS, and RUGBY.*

*Shal. Page, &c.* Well met, master Ford.

*Ford.* Trust me, a good knot: I have good cheer at home; and, I pray you, all go with me.

*Shal.* I must excuse myself, master Ford.

*Slen.* And so must I, sir; we have appointed to dine with mistress Anne, and I would not break with her for more money than I'll speak of.

*Shal.* We have lingered about a match between Anne Page and my cousin Slender, and this day we shall have our answer.

*Slen.* I hope, I have your good-will, father Page.

*Page.* You have, master Slender; I stand wholly for you:—but my wife, master doctor, is for you altogether.

*Caius.* Ay, by gar; and de maid is love-a me; my nursh-a Quickly tell me so much.

*Host.* What say you to young master Fenton? he capers, he dances, he has eyes of youth, he writes verses, he speaks holyday †, he smells April and May: he will carry't, he will carry't; 'tis in his buttons; he will carry't.

*Page.* Not by my consent, I promise you. The gentleman is of no having‡: he kept company with the wild Prince and Poins; he is of too high a region, he knows too much. No, he shall not knit a knot in his fortunes with the finger of my substance: if he take her, let him take her simply; the wealth I have waits on my consent, and my consent goes not that way.

*Ford.* I beseech you, heartily, some of you go home with me to dinner: besides your cheer, you shall have sport; I will shew you a monster.—Master doctor, you shall go;—so shall you, master Page;—and you, sir Hugh.

*Shal.* Well, fare you well:—we shall have the freer wooing at master Page's.

[*Exeunt SHALLOW and SLENDER.*]

*Caius.* Go home, John Rugby; I come anon.

[*Exit RUGBY.*]

*Host.* Farewell, my hearts: I will to my honest knight Falstaff, and drink canary with him.

[*Exit Host.*]

*Ford.* [*Aside.*] I think, I shall drink in pipe-wine first with him; I'll make him dance. Will you go, gentles?

*All.* Have with you, to see this monster.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.

*A Room in Ford's House.*

*Enter Mrs. FORD and Mrs. PAGE.*

*Mrs. Ford.* What, John! what, Robert!

*Mrs. Page.* Quickly, quickly: Is the buck-basket—

*Mrs. Ford.* I warrant:—What, Robin, I say.

*Enter Servants with a basket.*

*Mrs. Page.* Come, come, come.

*Mrs. Ford.* Here, set it down.

*Mrs. Page.* Give your men the charge; we must be brief.

*Mrs. Ford.* Marry, as I told you before, John, and Robert, be ready here hard by in the brewhouse; and when I suddenly call you, come forth, and (without any pause, or staggering,) take this basket on your shoulders: that done, trudge with it in all haste, and carry it among the whistlers in Datchet mead, and there empty it in the muddy ditch, close by the Thames' side.

*Mrs. Page.* You will do it?

*Mrs. Ford.* I have told them over and over; they lack no direction: Be gone, and come when you are called. [*Exeunt Servants.*]

*Mrs. Page.* Here comes little Robin.

*Enter ROBIN.*

*Mrs. Ford.* How now, my eyas-musket? What news with you?

*Rob.* My master sir John has come in at your back-doo, mistress Ford; and requests your company.

*Mrs. Page.* You little Jack-a-Lent\*\*, have you been true to us?

*Rob.* Ay, I'll be sworn: My master knows not of your being here; and hath threatened to put me into everlasting liberty, if I tell you of it; for, he swears, he'll turn me away.

*Mrs. Page.* Thou'rt a good boy; this secrecy of thine shall be a tailor to thee, and shall make thee a new doublet and hose.—I'll go hide me.

*Mrs. Ford.* Do so:—Go tell thy master, I am alone. Mistress Page, remember you your cue.

[*Exit ROBIN.*]

*Mrs. Page.* I warrant thee; if I do not act it, hiss me.

[*Exit Mrs. PAGE.*]

*Mrs. Ford.* Go to then; we'll use this unwholesome humidity, this gross watry pumpion;—we'll teach him to know turtles from jays.

*Enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* Have I caught thee, my heavenly jewel? Why, now let me die, for I have lived

\* Specious. † Shall encourage. ‡ Out of the common style. § Not rich. || Bleachers of linen.

¶ A young small hawk.

\*\* A puppet thrown at in Lent, like shrove-cocks.

long enough; this is the period of my ambition: O this blessed hour!

*Mrs. Ford.* O sweet sir John!

*Fal.* Mistress Ford, I cannot cog, I cannot prate, mistress Ford. Now shall I sin in my wish: I would thy husband were dead: I'll speak it before the best lord, I would make thee my lady.

*Mrs. Ford.* I your lady, sir John! alas, I should be a pitiful lady.

*Fal.* Let the court of France shew me such another; I see how thine eye would emulate the diamond: Thou hast the right arched bent of the brow, that becomes the ship-tire, the tire-valiant, or any tire of Venetian admittance\*.

*Mrs. Ford.* A plain kerchief, sir John: my brows become nothing else; nor that well neither.

*Fal.* Thou art a traitor to say so: thou would'st make an absolute courtier; and the firm fixture of thy foot would give an excellent motion to thy gait, in a semi-circled farthingale. I see what thou wert, if fortune thy foe were not; nature is thy friend: Come, thou canst not hide it.

*Mrs. Ford.* Believe me, there's no such thing in me.

*Fal.* What made me love thee? let that persuade thee, there's something extraordinary in thee. Come, I cannot cog, and say, thou art this and that, like a many of these lipping haw-thorn buds, that come like women in men's apparel, and smell like Bucklers-bury† in simple-time; I cannot: but I love thee; none but thee; and thou deservest it.

*Mrs. Ford.* Do not betray me, sir; I fear, you love mistress Page.

*Fal.* Thou might'st as well say, I love to walk by the Counter‡ gate; which is as hateful to me as the reek of a lime-kiln.

*Mrs. Ford.* Well, heaven knows, how I love you; and you shall one day find it.

*Fal.* Keep in that mind; I'll deserve it.

*Mrs. Ford.* Nay, I must tell you, so you do; or else I could not be in that mind.

*Rob.* [within.] Mistress Ford, mistress Ford! here's mistress Page at the door, sweating, and blowing, and looking wildly, and would needs speak with you presently.

*Fal.* She shall not see me; I will ensconce§ me behind the arras||.

*Mrs. Ford.* Pray you, do so; she's a very tattling woman.— [FALSTAFF hides himself.]

*Enter Mrs. PAGE and ROBIN.*

What's the matter? how now?

*Mrs. Page.* O mistress Ford, what have you done? You're shamed, you are overthrown, you are undone for ever.

*Mrs. Ford.* What's the matter, good mistress Page?

*Mrs. Page.* O well-a-day, mistress Ford! having an honest man to your husband, to give him such cause of suspicion!

*Mrs. Ford.* What cause of suspicion?

*Mrs. Page.* What cause of suspicion!—Out upon you! how am I mistook in you?

*Mrs. Ford.* Why, alas! what's the matter?

*Mrs. Page.* Your husband's coming hither, woman, with all the officers in Windsor, to search for a gentleman, that, he says, is here now in the house, by your consent, to take an ill advantage of his absence: You are undone.

*Mrs. Ford.* Speak louder.—[Aside.]—'Tis not so, I hope.

*Mrs. Page.* Pray heaven it be not so, that you have such a man here; but 'tis most certain your husband's coming with half Windsor at his heels, to search for such a one. I come before to tell you. If you know yourself clear, why I am glad of it: but if you have a friend here, convey, convey him out. Be not amazed; call all your senses to you; defend your reputation, or bid farewell to your good life for ever.

*Mrs. Ford.* What shall I do?—There is a gentleman, my dear friend; and I fear not mine own shame so much as his peril: I had rather than a thousand pound, he were out of the house.

*Mrs. Page.* For shame, never stand *you had rather*, and *you had rather*; your husband's here at hand, bethink you of some conveyance: in the house you cannot hide him. O, how have you deceived me!—Look, here is a basket; if he be of any reasonable stature, he may creep in here; and throw foul linen upon him, as if it were going to bucking: Or, it is whiting-time¶, send him by your two men to Datchet mead.

*Mrs. Ford.* He's too big to go in there: What shall I do?

*Re-enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* Let me see't, let me see't! O let me see't! I'll in, I'll in;—follow your friend's counsel;—I'll in.

*Mrs. Page.* What! sir John Falstaff! Are these your letters, knight?

*Fal.* I love thee, and none but thee; help me away: let me creep in here; I'll never— [He goes into the basket; they cover him with foul linen.]

*Mrs. Page.* Help to cover your master, boy: Call your men, mistress Ford:—You dissembling knight!

*Mrs. Ford.* What, John, Robert, John! [Exit Robin; Re-enter Servants.] Go take up these clothes here, quickly; Where's the cowl-staff\*\*? look, how you dumblett: carry them to the laundress in Datchet mead; quickly, come.

*Enter FORD, PAGE, CAIUS, and Sir HUGH EVANS.*

*Ford.* Pray you, come near: if I suspect without cause, why then make sport at me, then let me be your jest; I deserve it.—How now? whither bear you this?

*Serv.* To the laundress, forsooth.

\* Venetian fashions. † Formerly chiefly inhabited by druggists. ‡ Prison. § Hide. || Tapestry. ¶ Bleaching time. \*\* A staff for carrying a large tub or basket. †† Drone.

*Mrs. Ford.* Why, what have you to do whither they bear it? You were best meddle with buck-washing.

*Ford.* Buck? I would I could wash myself of the buck! Buck, buck, buck? Ay, buck; I warrant you, buck; and of the season too, it shall appear. [*Exeunt Servants with the basket.*] Gentlemen, I have dreamed to-night; I'll tell you my dream. Here, here, here be my keys: ascend my chambers, search, seek, find out: I'll warrant, we'll unkennel the fox:—Let me stop this way first:—So, now uncape\*.

*Page.* Good master Ford, be contented: you wrong yourself too much.

*Ford.* True, master Page.—Up, gentlemen; you shall see sport anon: follow me, gentlemen. [*Exit.*]

*Eva.* This is fery fantastical humours, and ealousies.

*Caius.* By gar, 'tis no de fashion of France: it is not jealous in France.

*Page.* Nay, follow him, gentlemen; see the issue of his search.

[*Exeunt EVANS, PAGE, and CAIUS.*]

*Mrs. Page.* Is there not a double excellency in this?

*Mrs. Ford.* I know not which pleases me better, that my husband is deceived, or sir John.

*Mrs. Page.* What a taking was he in, when your husband asked who† was in the basket!

*Mrs. Ford.* I am half afraid he will have need of washing; so throwing him into the water will do him a benefit.

*Mrs. Page.* Hang him, dishonest rascal! I would, all of the same strain were in the same distress.

*Mrs. Ford.* I think, my husband hath some special suspicion of Falstaff's being here; for I never saw him so gross in his jealousy till now.

*Mrs. Page.* I will lay a plot to try that: And we will yet have more tricks with Falstaff: his dissolute disease will scarce obey this medicine.

*Mrs. Ford.* Shall we send that foolish carter, mistress Quickly, to him, and excuse his throwing into the water; and give him another hope, to betray him to another punishment?

*Mrs. Page.* We'll do it; let him be sent for to-morrow eight o'clock, to have amends.

*Re-enter FORD, PAGE, CAIUS, and Sir HUGH EVANS.*

*Ford.* I cannot find him: may be the knave bragged of that he could not compass.

*Mrs. Page.* Heard you that?

*Mrs. Ford.* Ay, ay, peace:—You use me well, master Ford, do you?

*Ford.* Ay, I do so.

*Mrs. Ford.* Heaven make you better than your thoughts!

*Ford.* Amen.

*Mrs. Page.* You do yourself mighty wrong, master Ford.

*Ford.* Ay, ay; I must bear it.

*Eva.* If there be any pody in the house, and in the chambers, and in the coffers, and in the presses, heaven forgive my sins at the day of judgment!

*Caius.* By gar, nor I too; dere is no bodies.

*Page.* Fie, fie, master Ford! are you not ashamed? What spirit, what devil suggests this imagination? I would not have your distemper in this kind, for the wealth of Windsor Castle.

*Ford.* 'Tis my fault, master Page: I suffer for it.

*Eva.* You suffer for a pad conscience; your wife is as honest a 'omans, as I will desires among five thousand, and five hundred too.

*Caius.* By gar, I see 'tis an honest woman.

*Ford.* Well;—I promised you a dinner:—Come, come, walk in the park: I pray you, pardon me; I will hereafter make known to you, why I have done this.—Come, wife;—come, mistress Page; I pray you, pardon me; pray heartily, pardon me.

*Page.* Let's go in, gentlemen; but, trust me, we'll mock him. I do invite you to-morrow morning to my house to breakfast; after, we'll a birding together; I have a fine hawk for the bush: Shall it be so?

*Ford.* Any thing.

*Eva.* If there is one, I shall make two in the company.

*Caius.* If there be one or two, I shall make a de turd.

*Eva.* In your teeth: for shame.

*Ford.* Pray you go, master Page.

*Eva.* I pray you now, remembrance to morrow on the lousy knave, mine host.

*Caius.* Dat is good; by gar, vit all my heart.

*Eva.* A lousy knave; to have his gibes and his mockeries. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV.

*A Room in Page's House.*

*Enter FENTON, and Mistress ANNE PAGE.*

*Fent.* I see, I cannot get thy father's love; Therefore, no more turn me to him, sweet Nan.

*Anne.* Alas! how then?

*Fent.* Why, thou must be thyself. He doth object, I am too great of birth; And that, my state being galled with my ex—I seek to heal it only by his wealth: [pence, Besides these, other bars he lays before me,—My riots past, my wild societies; And tells me, 'tis a thing impossible I should love thee, but as a property.

*Anne.* May be, he tells you true.

*Fent.* No, heaven so speed me in my time to come!

Albeit, I will confess, thy father's wealth Was the first motive that I woo'd thee, Anne. Yet, wooing thee, I found thee of more value Than stamps in gold, or sums in sealed bags; And 'tis the very riches of thyself That now I aim at.

\* Unbag the fox.

† What.



*Anne.* Gentle master Fenton,  
Yet seek my father's love: still seek it, sir:  
If opportunity and humblest suit  
Cannot attain it, why then.—Hark you hither.  
[*They converse apart.*]

*Enter SHALLOW, SLENDER, and Mrs.*  
*QUICKLY.*

*Shal.* Break their talk, mistress Quickly;  
my kinsman shall speak for himself.

*Slen.* I'll make a shaft or a bolt on't\*:  
slid, 'tis but venturing.

*Shal.* Be not dismay'd.

*Slen.* No, she shall not dismay me: I care  
not for that,—but that I am afraid.

*Quick.* Hark ye; master Slender would  
speak a word with you.

*Anne.* I come to him.—This is my father's  
choice.

O, what a world of vile ill-favour'd faults  
Looks handsome in three hundred pounds a-  
year! [*Aside.*]

*Quick.* And how does good master Fenton?  
Pray you, a word with you.

*Shal.* She's coming; to her, coz. O boy,  
thou hadst a father?

*Slen.* I had a father, mistress Anne;—my  
uncle can tell you good jests of him:—Pray  
you, uncle, tell mistress Anne the jest, how  
my father stole two geese out of a pen, good  
uncle.

*Shal.* Mistress Anne, my cousin loves you.

*Anne.* Ay, that I do; as well as I love any  
woman in Gloucestershire.

*Shal.* He will maintain you like a gentle-  
woman.

*Slen.* Ay, that I will, come cut and long-  
tailt, under the degree of a squire.

*Shal.* He will make you a hundred and  
fifty pounds jointure.

*Anne.* Good master Shallow, let him woo  
for himself.

*Shal.* Marry, I thank you for it; I thank  
you for that good comfort. She calls you,  
coz: I'll leave you.

*Anne.* Now, master Slender.

*Slen.* Now, good mistress Anne.

*Anne.* What is your will?

*Slen.* My will? Od's heartlings, that's a  
pretty jest, indeed! I ne'er made my will  
yet, I thank heaven; I am not such a sickly  
creature, I give heaven praise.

*Anne.* I mean, master Slender, what would  
you with me?

*Slen.* Truly, for mine own part, I would  
little or nothing with you: Your father, and  
my uncle, have made motion: if it be my  
luck, so; if not, happy man be his dole!†  
They can tell you how things go, better than  
I can: You may ask your father; here he  
comes.

*Enter PAGE, and Mistress PAGE.*

*Page.* Now, master Slender:—I love him,  
daughter Anne.—

Why, how now! what does master Fenton  
here? [*house:*]

You wrong me, s'r, thus still to haunt my  
I told you, sir, my daughter is dispos'd of.

*Fent.* Nay, master Page, be not impatient.

*Mrs. Page.* Good master Fenton, come not  
to my child

*Page.* She is no match for you.

*Fent.* Sir, will you hear me?

*Page.* No, good master Fenton.

Come, master Shallow: come, son Slender;  
in:— [*Fenton.*]

Knowing my mind, you wrong me, master

[*Exeunt PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.*]

*Quick.* Speak to mistress Page.

*Fent.* Good mistress Page, for that I love  
your daughter

In such a righteous fashion as I do,  
Perforce, against all checks, rebukes, and  
manners,

I must advance the colours of my love,  
And not retire: Let me have your good will.

*Anne.* Good mother, do not marry me to  
yond' fool.

*Mrs. Page.* I mean it not; I seek you a  
better husband.

*Quick.* That's my master, master doctor.

*Anne.* Alas, I had rather be set quick in the  
earth,

And bow'd to death with turnips.

*Mrs. Page.* Come trouble not yourself:

Good master Fenton,

I will not be your friend, nor enemy:  
My daughter will I question how she loves you,  
And as I find her, so am I affected;  
Till then, farewell, sir:—She must needs go in;  
Her father will be angry.

[*Exeunt Mrs. PAGE and ANNE.*]

*Fent.* Farewell, gentle mistress; farewell,  
Nan.

*Quick.* This is my doing now;—Nay, said  
I, will you cast away your child on a fool,  
and a physician? Look on, master Fenton:—  
this is my doing.

*Fent.* I thank thee; and I pray thee, once  
to-night

Give my sweet Nan this ring: There's for thy  
pains. [*Exit.*]

*Quick.* Now heaven send thee good fortune!  
A kind heart be bath: a woman would run  
through fire and water for such a kind heart.  
But yet, I would my master had mistress  
Anne; or I would master Slender had her; or,  
in sooth, I would master Fenton had her: I  
will do what I can for them all three; for so  
I have promised, and I'll be as good as my  
word; but specially for master Fenton.  
Well, I must of another errand to sir John  
Falstaff from my two mistresses: What a beast  
am I to slack it! [*Exit.*]

#### SCENE V.

*A Room in the Garter Inn.*

*Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.*

*Fal.* Bardolph, I say,—

\* A proverb—a shaft was a long arrow, and a bolt, a thick short one.

† Come, poor or rich.

‡ Lot.

§ Specially.

|| Negl. ct.

*Bar.* Here, sir.

*Fal.* Go fetch me a quart of sack; put a toast in't. [*Exit BARD.*] Have I lived to be carried in a basket, like a barrow of butcher's offal; and to be thrown into the Thames? Well; if I be served such another trick, I'll have my brains ta'en out, and buttered, and give them to a dog for a new-year's gift. The rogues slighted me into the river with as little remorse\* as they would have drowned a bitch's blind puppies, fifteen i' the litter: and you may know by my size, that I have a kind of alacrity in sinking; if the bottom were as deep as hell, I should down. I had been drowned, but that the shore was shelvy and shallow; a death that I abhor; for the water swells a man; and what a thing should I have been, when I had been swelled! I should have been a mountain of mummy.

*Re-enter BARDOLPH, with the wine.*

*Bard.* Here's mistress Quickly, sir, to speak with you.

*Fal.* Come, let me pour in some sack to the Thames water; for my belly's as cold, as if I had swallowed snow-balls for pills to cool the reins. Call her in.

*Bard.* Come in, woman.

*Enter Mrs. QUICKLY.*

*Quick.* By your leave; I cry you mercy: Give your worship good-morrow.

*Fal.* Take away these chalices†: Go brew me a pottle of sack finely.

*Bar.* With eggs, sir?

*Fal.* Simple of itself; I'll no pullet-sperm in my brewage.—[*Exit BARDOLPH.*]—How now?

*Quick.* Marry, sir, I come to your worship from mistress Ford.

*Fal.* Mistress Ford! I have had ford enough: I was thrown into the ford: I have my belly-full of ford.

*Quick.* Alas the day! good heart, that was not her fault; she does so take on with her men; they mistook their erection.

*Fal.* So did I mine, to build upon a foolish woman's promise.

*Quick.* Well, she laments, sir, for it, that it would yearn your heart to see it. Her husband goes this morning a-birding; she desires you once more to come to her between eight and nine: I must carry her word quickly: she'll make you amends, I warrant you.

*Fal.* Well, I will visit her: Tell her so; and bid her think, what a man is: let her consider his frailty, and then judge of my merit.

*Quick.* I will tell her.

*Fal.* Do so. Between nine and ten, say'st thou?

*Quick.* Eight and nine, sir.

*Fal.* Well, be gone: I will not miss her.

*Quick.* Peace be with you, sir! [*Exit.*]

*Fal.* I marvel, I hear not of master Brook; he sent me word to stay within: I like his money well. O, here he comes.

*Enter FORD.*

*Ford.* Bless you, sir!

*Fal.* Now, master Brook, you come to know what hath passed between me and Ford's wife?

*Ford.* That, indeed, sir John, is my business.

*Fal.* Master Brook, I will not lie to you; I was at her house the hour she appointed me.

*Ford.* And how sped you, sir?

*Fal.* Very ill-favourably, master Brook.

*Ford.* How so, sir? Did she change her determination?

*Fal.* No, master Brook; but the peaking cornuto, her husband, master Brook, dwelling in a continual 'larum of jealousy, comes me in the instant of our encounter, after we had embraced, kissed, protested, and, as it were, spoke the prologue of our comedy; and at his heels a rabble of his companions, thither provoked and instigated by his distemper, and, forsooth, to search his house for his wife's love.

*Ford.* What, while you were there?

*Fal.* While I was there.

*Ford.* And did he search for you, and could not find you?

*Fal.* You shall hear. As good luck would have it, comes in one mistress Page; gives intelligence of Ford's approach; and, by her invention, and Ford's wife's distraction, they conveyed me into a buck-basket.

*Ford.* A buck-basket!

*Fal.* By the Lord, a buck-basket: rammed me in with foul shirts and smocks, socks, foul stockings, and greasy napkins; that, master Brook, there was the rankest compound of villanous smell, that ever offended nostril.

*Ford.* And how long lay you there?

*Fal.* Nay, you shall hear, master Brook, what I have suffered to bring this woman to evil for your good. Being thus crammed in the basket, a couple of Ford's knaves, his hinds, were called forth by their mistress, to carry me in the name of foul clothes to Datchet-lane: they took me on their shoulders; met the jealous knave their master in the door; who asked them once or twice what they had in their basket: I quaked for fear, lest the lunatic knave would have searched it; but Fate, ordaining he should be a cuckold, held his hand. Well, on went he for a search, and away went I for foul clothes. But mark the sequel, master Brook: I suffered the pangs of three several deaths: first, an intolerable fright, to be detected with a jealous rotten bell-wether, next, to be compassed like a good bilbo ‡, in the circumference of a peck, hilt to point, heel to head; and then, to be stopped in, like a strong distillation, with stinking clothes that fretted in their own grease: think of that,—a man of my kidney,—think of that; that am as subject to heat as butter; a man of continual dissolution and thaw; it was a miracle to 'scape suffocation. And in the height of this bath, when I was more than half stewed in grease, like a Dutch dish, to be thrown into the Thames

\* Pity.

† Cu; a

‡ Bilboa, where the best blades are made.

and cooled, glowing hot, in that surge, like a horse-shoe; think of that;—hissing hot,—think of that, master Brook.

*Ford.* In good sadness\*, sir, I am sorry that for my sake you have suffered all this. My suit then is desperate; you'll undertake her no more.

*Fal.* Master Brook, I will be thrown into *Ætna*, as I have been into *Thames*, ere I will leave her thus. Her husband is this morning gone a-birding; I have received from her another embassy of meeting; 'twixt eight and nine is the hour, master Brook.

*Ford.* 'Tis past eight already, sir.

*Fal.* Is it! I will then address† me to my appointment. Come to me at your convenient leisure, and you shall know how I speed; and the conclusion shall be crowned with your enjoying her: Adieu. You shall have

her, master Brook; master Brook, you shall cuckold Ford. [Exit.]

*Ford.* Hum! ha! is this a vision? is this a dream? do I sleep? Master Ford, awake; awake, master Ford; there's a hole made in your best coat, master Ford. This 'tis to be married! this 'tis to have linen and buck-baskets!—Well, I will proclaim myself what I am: I will now take the lecher; he is at my house; he cannot 'scape me; 'tis impossible he should; he cannot creep into a half-penny purse, nor into a pepper-box: but, lest the devil that guides him should aid him, I will search impossible places. Though what I am I cannot avoid, yet to be what I would not, shall not make me tame: if I have horns to make one mad, let the proverb go with me, I'll be horn mad. [Exit.]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. *The Street.*

Enter *Mrs. PAGE*, *Mrs. QUICKLY*, and *WILLIAM*.

*Mrs. Page.* Is he at master Ford's already, think'st thou?

*Quick.* Sure, he is by this, or will be presently; but truly, he is very courageous† mad, about his throwing into the water. Mistress Ford desires you to come suddenly.

*Mrs. Page.* I'll be with her by and by; I'll but bring my young man here to school: Look, where his master comes; 'tis a playing-day, I see.

Enter *Sir HUGH EVANS*.

How now, sir Hugh? no school to-day?

*Eva.* No; master Slender is let the boys leave to play.

*Quick.* Blessing of his heart!

*Mrs. Page.* Sir Hugh, my husband says, my son profits nothing in the world at his book; I pray you, ask him some questions in his accidence.

*Eva.* Come hither, William; hold up your head; come.

*Mrs. Page.* Come on, sirrah; hold up your head; answer your master, be not afraid.

*Eva.* William, how many numbers is in nouns?

*Will.* Two.

*Quick.* Truly, I thought there had been one number more; because they say, od's nouns.

*Eva.* Peace your tattlings. What is *fair*, William?

*Will.* *Pulcher*.

*Quick.* Poulcats! there are fairer things than poulcats, sure.

*Eva.* You are a very simplicity 'oman; I pray you, peace. What is *tapis*, William?

*Will.* A stone.

*Eva.* And what is a stone, William?

*Will.* A pebble.

*Eva.* No, it is *tapis*; I pray you remember in your prain.

*Will.* *Lapis*.

*Eva.* That is good, William. What is he, William, that does lend articles?

*Will.* Articles are borrowed of the pronoun; and be thus declined, *Singulariter, nominativo, hic, hæc, hoc*.

*Eva.* *Nominativo, hig, hag, hog*; pray you, mark; *genitivo, hujus*: Well, what is your *accusative case*?

*Will.* *Accusativo, hinc*.

*Eva.* I pray you, have your remembrance, child; *Accusativo, hing, hang, hog*.

*Quick.* Hang hog is Latin for hacon, I warrant you.

*Eva.* Leave your prabbles, 'oman. What is the *focative case*, William?

*Will.* O—*Vocativo, O*.

*Eva.* Remember, William; *focative is, caret*.

*Quick.* And that's a good root.

*Eva.* 'Oman, forbear.

*Mrs. Page.* Peace.

*Eva.* What is your *genitive case plural*, William?

*Will.* *Genitive case?*

*Eva.* Ay.

*Will.* *Genitive,—horum, harum, horum*.

*Quick.* 'Vengeance of *Jenny's* case! lie on her!—never name her, child, if she be a whore.

*Eva.* For shame, 'oman.

*Quick.* You do ill to teach the child such words: he teaches him to hick and to hack, which they'll do fast enough of themselves; and to call *horum*:—lie upon you!

*Eva.* 'Oman, art thou lunatics? hast thou no understandings for thy cases, and the num-

\* Seriousness.

† Make myself ready.

‡ Outrageous.



bers of the genders? Thou art as foolish christian creatures as I would desires.

*Mrs. Page.* Pr'ythee hold thy peace.

*Eva.* Shew me now, William, some declensions of your pronouns.

*Will.* Forsooth, I have forgot.

*Eva.* It is *ki*, *kæ*, *coa*: if you forget your *kæs*, your *kæs*, and your *cods*, you must be preeches\*. Go your ways, and play, go.

*Mrs. Page.* He is a better scholar than I thought he was.

*Eva.* He is a good sprag† memory. Farewell, mistress Page.

*Mrs. Page.* Adieu, good sir Hugh. [Exit Sir HUGH.] Get you home, boy.—Come, we stay too long. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II.

A Room in Ford's House.

Enter FALSTAFF and Mrs. FORD.

*Fal.* Mistress Ford, your sorrow hath eaten up my sufferance: I see, you are obsequious‡ in your love, and I profess requital to a hair's breadth; not only, Mistress Ford, in the simple office of love, but in all the accoutrement, complement, and ceremony of it. But are you sure of your husband now?

*Mrs. Ford.* He's a birding, sweet sir John.

*Mrs. Page.* [Within.] What ho, gossip Ford! what ho!

*Mrs. Ford.* Step into the chamber, sir John.

[Exit FALSTAFF.]

Enter Mrs. PAGE.

*Mrs. Page.* Flow now, sweetheart? who's at home beside yourself?

*Mrs. Ford.* Why, none but mine own people.

*Mrs. Page.* Indeed!

*Mrs. Ford.* No, certainly;—speak louder. [Aside.]

*Mrs. Page.* Truly, I am so glad you have nobody here.

*Mrs. Ford.* Why?

*Mrs. Page.* Why, woman, your husband is in his old lues§ again: he so takes on yonder with my husband; so rails against all married mankind; so curses all Eve's daughters, of what complexion soever; and so buffets himself on the forehead, crying, *Peer out, peer out*|| that any madness I ever yet beheld, seemed but tameness, civility, and patience, to this his distemper he is in now: I am glad the fat knight is not here.

*Mrs. Ford.* Why, does he talk of him?

*Mrs. Page.* Of none but him; and swears he was carried out, the last time he searched for him, in a basket: protests to my husband he is now here; and hath drawn him and the rest of their company from their sport, to make another experiment of his suspicion: but I am glad the knight is not here; now he shall see his own foolery.

*Mrs. Ford.* How near is he, mistress Page?

*Mrs. Page.* Hard by; at a street end; he will be here anon.

*Mrs. Ford.* I am undone!—the knight is here.

*Mrs. Page.* Why, then you are utterly shamed, and he's but a dead man. What a woman are you!—Away with him, away with him; better shame than murder.

*Mrs. Ford.* Which way should he go? how should I bestow him? Shall I put him into the basket again?

Re-enter FALSTAFF.

*Fal.* No, I'll come no more i' the basket: May I not go out, ere he come?

*Mrs. Page.* Alas, three of master Ford's brothers watch the door with pistols, that none shall issue out; otherwise you might slip away ere he came. But what make you here?

*Fal.* What shall I do?—I'll creep up into the chimney.

*Mrs. Ford.* There they always use to discharge their birding-pieces: Creep into the kiln-hole.

*Fal.* Where is it?

*Mrs. Ford.* He will seek there, on my word. Neither press, coffer, chest, trunk, well, vault, but he hath an abstract¶ for the remembrance of such places, and goes to them by his note: There is no hiding you in the house.

*Fal.* I'll go out then.

*Mrs. Page.* If you go out in your own semblance, you die, sir John. Unless you go out disguised,—

*Mrs. Ford.* How might we disguise him?

*Mrs. Page.* Alas the day, I know not. There is no woman's gown big enough for him; otherwise, he might put on a hat, a muffer, and a kerchief, and so escape.

*Fal.* Good hearts, devise something: any extremity rather than a mischief.

*Mrs. Ford.* My maid's aunt, the fat woman of Brentford, has a gown above.

*Mrs. Page.* On my word, it will serve him; she's as big as he is: and there's her thum'd hat, and her muffer too: Run up, sir John.

*Mrs. Ford.* Go, go, sweet sir John: mistress Page and I will look some linen for your head.

*Mrs. Page.* Quick, quick; we'll come dress you straight: put on the gown the while.

[Exit FALSTAFF.]

*Mrs. Ford.* I would my husband would meet him in this shape: he cannot abide the old woman of Brentford; he swears she's a witch; forbade her my house, and hath threatened to beat her.

*Mrs. Page.* Heaven guide him to thy husband's cudgel; and the devil guide his cudgel afterwards!

*Mrs. Ford.* But is my husband coming?

*Mrs. Page.* Ay, in good sadness\*\*, is he; and talks of the basket too, howsoever he hath had intelligence.

*Mrs. Ford.* We'll try that; for I'll appoint

\* Breeched, i. e., flogged.

† Apt to learn.

‡ Sorrowful.

§ Mad fits.

|| As children call on a snail to push forth his horns.

Sho't note of.

\*\* Seriousness.

my men to carry the basket again, to meet him at the door with it, as they did last time.

*Mrs. Page.* Nay, but he'll be here presently: let's go dress him like the witch of Brentford.

*Mrs. Ford.* I'll first direct my men, what they shall do with the basket. Go up, I'll bring linen for him straight. *[Exit.]*

*Mrs. Page.* Hang him, dishonest varlet! we cannot misuse him enough.

We'll leave a proof, by that which we will do,

Wives may be merry, and yet honest too: We do not act, that often jest and laugh;

'Tis old but true, *Still swine eat all the draff.* *[Exit.]*

*Re-enter Mrs. Ford, with two Servants.*

*Mrs. Ford.* Go, sirs, take the basket again on your shoulders; your master is hard at door; if he bid you set it down, obey him: quickly, despatch. *[Exit.]*

1 *Serv.* Come, come, take it up.

2 *Serv.* Pray heaven, it be not full of the knight again.

1 *Serv.* I hope not; I had as lief bear so much lead.

*Enter Ford, Page, Shallow, Caius, and Sir Hugh Evans.*

*Ford.* Ay, but if it prove true, master Page, have you any way then to unfool me again?—Set down the basket, villain!—Somebody call my wife:—You, youth in a basket, come out here!—O, you panderly rascals! there's a knot, a ging\*, a pack, a conspiracy against me: Now shall the devil be shamed. What! wife, I say! come, come forth; behold what honest clothes you send forth to bleaching.

*Page.* Why, this passes! Master Ford, you are not to go loose any longer; you must be pinioned.

*Eva.* Why, this is lunatics! this is mad as a mad dog!

*Shal.* Indeed, master Ford, this is not well; indeed.

*Enter Mrs. Ford.*

*Ford.* So say I too, sir.—Come hither, mistress Ford; mistress Ford, the honest woman, the modest wife, the virtuous creature, that hath the jealous fool to her husband!—I suspect without cause, mistress, do I?

*Mrs. Ford.* Heaven be my witness, you do, if you suspect me in any dishonesty.

*Ford.* Well said, brazen face; hold it out.—Come forth, sirrah.

*[Pulls the clothes out of the basket.]*

*Page.* This passes!

*Mrs. Ford.* Are you not ashamed? let the clothes alone.

*Ford.* I shall find you anon.

*Eva.* 'Tis unreasonable! Will you take up your wife's clothes? Come away.

*Ford.* Empty the basket, I say.

*Mrs. Ford.* Why man, why,—

*Ford.* Master Page, as I am a man, there

was one conveyed out of my house yesterday in this basket: Why may not he be there again? In my house I am sure he is: my intelligence is true; my jealousy is reasonable. Pluck me out all the linen.

*Mrs. Ford.* If you find a man there, he shall die a flea's death.

*Page.* Here's no man.

*Shal.* By my fidelity, this is not well, master Ford; this wrongs you.

*Eva.* Master Ford, you must pray, and not follow the imaginations of your own heart: this is jealousies.

*Ford.* Well, he's not here I seek for.

*Page.* No, nor no where else, but in your brain.

*Ford.* Help to search my house this one time: if I find not what I seek, show no colour for my extremity, let me for ever be your table-sport; let them say of me, As jealous as Ford, that searched a hollow walnut for his wife's leman†. Satisfy me once more; once more search with me.

*Mrs. Ford.* What ho, mistress Page!—come you and the old woman down; my husband will come into the chamber.

*Ford.* Old woman! What old woman's that?

*Mrs. Ford.* Why, it is my maid's aunt of Brentford.

*Ford.* A witch, a quean, an old cozening quean! Have I not forbid her my house? She comes of errands, does she? We are simple men; we do not know what's brought to pass under the profession of fortune-telling. She works by charms, by spells, by the figure, and such daubery as this is; beyond our element: we know nothing.—Come down, you witch, you hag you; come down, I say.

*Mrs. Ford.* Nay, good, sweet husband;—good gentlemen, let him not strike the old woman.

*Enter Falstaff in women's clothes, led by Mrs. Page.*

*Mrs. Page.* Come, mother Pratt, come, give me your hand.

*Ford.* I'll prat her:—Out of my door, you witch! *[beats him.]* You rag, you baggage, you polecat, you ronyon\$! out! out! I'll conjure you, I'll fortune-tell you.

*[Exit Falstaff.]*

*Mrs. Page.* Are you not ashamed? I think you have killed the poor woman.

*Mrs. Ford.* Nay, he will do it:—'Tis a goodly credit for you.

*Ford.* Hang her, witch!

*Eva.* By yea and no, I think, the 'oman is a witch indeed: I like not when a 'oman has a great peard; I spy a great peard under her muffler.

*Ford.* Will you follow, gentlemen? I beseech you, follow; see but the issue of my jealousy: if I cry out thus upon no trail||, never trust me when I open¶ again.

\* Gang. † Surpasses, to go beyond bounds.

‡ Lover. § Scab. || Sent. ¶ Cry out.

*Page.* Let's obey his humour a little further: Come, gentlemen.

[*Exeunt PAGE, FORD, SHAL. and EVANS.*]

*Mrs. Page.* Trust me, he beat him most pit fully.

*Mrs. Ford.* Nay, by the mass, that he did not; he beat him most unpitifully, methought.

*Mrs. Page.* I'll have the cudgel hallowed, and hang o'er the altar; it hath done meritorious service.

*Mrs. Ford.* What think you? May we, with the warrant of womanhood, and the witness of a good conscience, pursue him with any further revenge?

*Mrs. Page.* The spirit of wantonness is, sure, scared out of him; if the devil have him not in fee simple with fine and recovery, he will never, I think, in the way of waste, attempt us again.

*Mrs. Ford.* Shall we tell our husbands how we have served him?

*Mrs. Page.* Yes, by all means; if it be but to scrape the figures out of your husband's brains. If they can find in their hearts, the poor unvirtuous fat knight shall be any further afflicted, we two will still be the ministers.

*Mrs. Ford.* I'll warrant, they'll have him publicly shamed: and, methinks, there would be no period to the jest, should he not be publicly shamed.

*Mrs. Page.* Come, to the forge with it then, shape it: I would not have things cool.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. A Room in the Garter Inn.

*Enter Host and BARDOLPH.*

*Bard.* Sir, the Germans desire to have three of your horses: the duke himself will be to-morrow at court, and they are going to meet him.

*Host.* What duke should that be, comes so secretly? I hear not of him in the court. Let me speak with the gentlemen; they speak English?

*Bard.* Ay, sir; I'll call them to you.

*Host.* They shall have my horses; but I'll make them pay, I'll saunce them: they have had my houses a week at command; I have turned away my other guests: they must come off; I'll saunce them: Come. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV. A Room in Ford's House.

*Enter PAGE, FORD, Mrs. PAGE, Mrs. FORD, and Sir HUGH EVANS.*

*Eva.* 'Tis one of the pest discretions of a woman as ever I did look upon.

*Page.* And did he send you both these letters at an instant?

*Mrs. Page.* Within a quarter of an hour.

*Ford.* Pardon me, wife: Henceforth do what thou wilt;

I rather will suspect the sun with cold,

Than thee with wantonness: now doth thy honour stand,

In him that was of late an heretic, As firm as faith.

*Page.* 'Tis well, 'tis well; no more. Be not as extrem: in submission, As in offence;

But let our plot go forward: let our wives Yet once again, to make us public sport, Appoint a meeting with this old fat fellow, Where we may take him, and disgrace him for it.

*Ford.* There is no better way than that they spoke of.

*Page.* How! to send him word they'll meet him in the park at midnight! fie, fie; he'll never come.

*Eva.* You say, he has been thrown in the rivers; and has been grievously peaten, as an old woman: methinks, there should be terrors in him, that he should not come; methinks, his flesh is punished, he shall have no desires.

*Page.* So think I too.

*Mrs. Ford.* Devise but how you'll use him when he comes, And let us two devise to bring him thither.

*Mr. Page.* There is an old tale goes, that Herne the hunter,

Sometime a keeper here in Windsor forest, Doth all the winter time, at still midnight,

Walk round about an oak, with great ragged horns; [*cattle;*]

And there he blasts the tree, and takes the And makes milch-kine yield blood, and shakes a chain

In a most hideous and dreadful manner: You have heard of such a spirit; and well you 'The superstitious idle-headed eld know, Received, and did deliver to our age, This tale of Herne the hunter for a truth.

*Page.* Why, yet there want not many, that do fear

In deep of night to walk by this Herne's oak: But what of this?

*Mrs. Ford.* Marry, this is our device; That Falstaff at that oak shall meet with us, Disguised like Herne, with huge horns on his head. [*come,*]

*Page.* Well, let it not be doubted but he'll And in this shape: When you have brought him thither, [*plot?*]

What shall be done with him? what is your *Mrs. Page.* That likewise have we thought upon, and thus:

Nan Page my daughter, and my little son, And three or four more of their growth, we'll dress [*white,*]

Like urchins, onphes†, and fairies, green and With rounds of waxen tapers on their heads,

And rattle in their hands; upon a sudden, As Falstaff, she, and I, are newly met,

Let them from forth a saw-pit rush at once With some diffused § song; upon their sight,

We two in great amazedness will fly;

\* Strikes.

† Old age

‡ Elf, hobgoblin.

§ Wild, discordant.



Then let them all encircle him about,  
And, fairy like, to pinch the unclean knight;  
And ask him, why, that hour of fairy revel,  
In their so sacred paths he dares to tread,  
In shape profane.

*Mrs. Ford.* And till he tell the truth,  
Let the supposed fairies pinch him sound\*,  
And burn him with their tapers.

*Mrs. Page.* The truth being known,  
We'll all present ourselves; dis-horn the spirit,  
And knock him home to Windsor.

*Ford.* The children must  
Be practised well to this, or they'll ne'er do't.

*Eva.* I will teach the children their behaviours;  
and I will be like a jack-an-apes also,  
to burn the knight with my taber.

*Ford.* That will be excellent. I'll go buy  
them vizards. [all the fairies,

*Mrs. Page.* My Nan shall be the queen of  
finely attired in a robe of white. [time

*Page.* That silk will I go buy;—and in that  
shall master Slender steal my Nan away,  
[*Aside.*

And marry her at Eton.—Go, send to Falstaff straight. [Brook:

*Ford.* Nay, I'll to him again in name of  
He'll tell me all his purpose: Sure, he'll come.

*Mrs. Page.* Fear not you that: Go, get us  
And tricking for our fairies. [properties†,

*Eva.* Let us about it: It is admirable pleasures,  
and fery honest knaveries.

[*Exeunt PAGE, FORD, and EVANS.*

*Mrs. Page.* Go, mistress Ford,  
Send quickly to sir John, to know his mind.

[*Exit Mrs. Ford.*  
I'll to the doctor; he hath my good will,

And none but he, to marry with Nan Page.  
That Slender, though well landed, is an idiot;

And he my husband best of all affects:  
The doctor is well money'd, and his friends

Potent at court; he, none but he, shall have her,  
Though twenty thousand worthier come to

crave her. [*Exit.*

## SCENE V.

A Room in the Garter Inn.

*Enter Host and SIMPLE.*

*Host.* What would'st thou have, boor?  
what, thick-skin? speak, breathe, discuss;  
brief, short, quick, snap.

*Sim.* Marry, sir, I come to speak with sir  
John Falstaff from master Slender.

*Host.* There's his chamber, his house, his  
castle, his standing-bed, and trundle-bed; 'tis  
painted about with the story of the prodigal,  
fresh and new: Go, knock and call; he'll  
speak like an *Anthropophaginian*† unto thee: Knock, I say.

*Sim.* There's an old woman, a fat woman,  
gone up into his chamber; I'll be so bold as  
stay, sir, till she come down: I come to speak  
with her, indeed.

*Host.* Hal a fat woman! the knight may  
be robbed: I'll call.—Bully knight! Bully sir

John! speak from thy lungs military: Art thou  
there? it is thine host, thine Ephesian, calls.

*Fal.* [above.] How now, mine host?

*Host.* Here's a Bohemian-Tartar carries the  
coming down of thy fat woman: Let her descend,  
bully, let her descend; my chambers  
are honourable: Fye! privacy? fyel

*Enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* There was, mine host, an old fat woman  
even now with me; but she's gone.

*Sim.* Pray you, sir, wasn't not the wise  
woman of Brentford?

*Fal.* Ay, marry, was it, muscle-shell; What  
would you with her?

*Sim.* My master, sir, my master Slender,  
sent to her, seeing her go thorough the streets,  
to know, sir, whether one Nym, sir, that beguiled  
him of a chain, had the chain, or no.

*Fal.* I spake with the old woman about it.

*Sim.* And what says she, I pray, sir?

*Fal.* Marry, she says, that the very same  
man, that beguiled master Slender of his chain,  
cozened him of it.

*Sim.* I would, I could have spoken with  
the woman herself; I had other things to have  
spoken with her too, from him.

*Fal.* What are they? let us know.

*Host.* Ay, come; quick.

*Sim.* I may not conceal them, sir.

*Fal.* Conceal them, or thou diest.

*Sim.* Why, sir, they were nothing but about  
mistress Anne Page; to know, if it were my  
master's fortune to have her, or no.

*Fal.* 'Tis, 'tis his fortune.

*Sim.* What, sir?

*Fal.* To have her,—or no: Go; say, the  
woman told me so.

*Sim.* May I be so bold to say so, sir?

*Fal.* Ay, sir Tike; who more bold?

*Sim.* I thank your worship: I shall make my  
master glad with these tidings. [*Exit SIMPLE.*

*Host.* Thou art clerkly ¶, thou art clerkly,  
sir John: Was there a wise woman with thee?

*Fal.* Ay, that there was, mine host; one, that  
hath taught me more wit than ever I learned  
before in my life: and I paid nothing for it  
neither, but was paid for my learning.

*Enter BARDOLPH.*

*Bard.* Out, alas, sir! cozenage! meer cozenage!

*Host.* Where be my horses? speak well of  
them varletto.

*Bard.* Run away with the cozeners: for  
so soon as I came beyond Eton, they threw  
me off, from behind one of them, in a slough  
of mire; and set spurs, and away, like three  
German devils, three Doctor Faustuses.

*Host.* They are gone but to meet the duke,  
villain: do not say, they be fled; German  
are honest men.

*Enter Sir HUGH EVANS.*

*Eva.* Where is mine host?

*Host.* What is the matter, sir?

Soundly. † Necessaries. ‡ A cannibal. § Canning woman, a fortune teller  
¶ Scholar-like.

*Eva.* Have a care of your entertainments: there is a friend of mine come to town, tells me, there is three couzin germans, that has cozened all the hosts of Readings, of Maidenhead, of Colebrook, of horses and money. I tell you for good-will, look you: you are wise, and full of gibes and vblouting-stogs; and 'tis not convenient you should be cozened: Fare you well. [Exit.]

*Enter Doctor CAIUS.*

*Caius.* Vere is mine *Host de Jarterre*.

*Host.* Here, master doctor, in perplexity, and doubtful dilemma.

*Caius.* I cannot tell vat is dat: but it is tell-a me, dat you make grand preparation for a duke *de Jarmany*: by my trot, dere is no duke, dat the court is know to come; I tell you for good vill: adieu. [Exit.]

*Host.* Hue and cry, villain, go:—assist me, knight; I am undone:—fly, run, hue and cry, villain! I am undone!

[Exit Host and BARDOLPH.]

*Fal.* I would, all the world might be cozened; for I have been cozen'd and beaten too. If it should come to the ear of the court, how I have been transformed and how my transformation hath been washed and cudged, they would melt me out of my fat, drop by drop, and liquor fishermen's boots with me; I warrant, they would whip me with their fine wits, till I were as crest fallen as a dried pear. I never prospered since I forswore myself at *Primero*\*. Well, if my mind were but long enough to say my prayers, I would repent.—

*Enter Mrs. QUICKLY.*

Now! whence come you?

*Quick.* From the two parties, forsooth.

*Fal.* The devil take one party, and his dam the other, and so they shall be both bestowed! I have suffered more for their sakes, more, than the villainous inconstancy of man's disposition is able to bear.

*Quick.* And have not they suffered? Yes, I warrant; speciously one of them; mistress Ford, good heart, is beaten black and blue, that you cannot see a white spot about her.

*Fal.* What tell'st thou me of black and blue? I was beaten myself into all the colours of the rainbow, and I was like to be apprehended for the witch of Brentford; but that my admirable dexterity of wit, my counterfeiting the action of an old woman, deliver'd me, the knave constable had set me i' the stocks, i' the common stocks, for a witch.

*Quick.* Sir, let me speak with you in your chamber: you shall hear how things go; and, I warrant, to your content. Here is a letter will say somewhat. Good hearts, what ado here is to bring you together! Sure, one of you does not serve heaven well, that you are so crossed.

*Fal.* Come up into my chamber. [Exit.]

## SCENE VI.

*Another Room in the Garter Inn.*

*Enter FENTON and Host.*

*Host.* Master Fenton, talk not to me; my mind is heavy, I will give over all. [purpose,

*Fent.* Yet hear me speak: Assist me in my And, as I am a gentleman, I'll give thee [loss. A hundred pound in gold, more than your

*Host.* I will hear you, master Fenton; and I will, at the least, keep your counsel. [you

*Fent.* From time to time I have acquainted With the dear love I bear to fair Anne Page;

Who, mutually, hath answer'd my affection (So far forth as herself might be her chooser,)

Even to my wish: I have a letter from her Of such contents as you will wonder at;

The mirth whereof so larded with my matter, That neither, singly, can be manifested,

Without the show of both;—wherein *Falstaf*

Hath a great scene: the image of the jest

[Showing the Letter

I'll show you here at large. Hark, good mine host: [and one,

To-night at Herne's oak, just 'twixt twelve Must my sweet Nan present the fairy queen;

The purpose why, is here;† in which disguise, While other jests are something rank on foot,

Her father hath commanded her to slip Away with Slender, and with him at Eton

Immediately to marry: she hath consented: Now, sir,

Her mother, even strong against that match, And firm for doctor Caius, hath appointed

That he shall likewise shuffle her away, While other sports are tasking of their minds,

And at the deanery, where a priest attends, Straight marry her: to this her mother's plot

She, seemingly obedient, likewise hath [restr: Made promise to the doctor;—Now, thus it

Her father means she shall be all in white; And in that habit, when Slender sees his time

To take her by the hand, and bid her go, She shall go with him:—her mother hath

intended, The better to denote her to the doctor,

(For they must all be mask'd and vizarded,) That, quaint; in green, she shall be loose

enrob'd, With ribands pendant, flaring 'bout her head;

And when the doctor spies his vantage ripe, To pinch her by the hand, and on that token,

The maid hath given consent to go with him. *Host.* Which means she to deceive? father

or mother? [with me: *Fent.* Both, my good host, to go along

And here it rests,—that you'll procure the vicar To stay for me at church, 'twixt twelve and

And, in the lawful name of marrying, [one, To give our hearts united ceremony.

*Host.* Well, husband your device; I'll to the vicar: [priest. Bring you the maid, you shall not lack a

*Fent.* So shall I evermore be bound to thee; Besides, I'll make a present recompense.

[Exit]

\* A game at cards.

† In the letter.

‡ Fantastically.

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *A Room in the Garter Inn.**Enter FALSTAFF and Mrs. QUICKLY.*

*Fal.* Pr'ythee, no more prattling;—go.—  
I'll hold\*: This is the third time; I hope,  
good luck lies in odd numbers. Away, go;  
they say, there is divinity in odd numbers,  
either in nativity, chance, or death.—Away.

*Quick.* I'll provide you a chain; and I'll  
do what I can to get you a pair of horns.

*Fal.* Away, I say; time wears: hold up  
your head, and mince. [*Exit Mrs. QUICKLY.*]

*Enter FORD.*

How now, master Brook? Master Brook,  
the matter will be known to-night, or never.  
Be you in the Park about midnight, at  
Herne's oak, and you shall see wonders.

*Ford.* Went you not to her yesterday, sir,  
as you told me you had appointed?

*Fal.* I went to her, master Brook, as you  
see, like a poor old man: but I came from  
her, master Brook, like a poor old woman.  
That same knave, Ford her husband, hath  
the finest mad devil of jealousy in him, master  
Brook, that ever governed frenzy. I will  
tell you.—He beat me grievously, in the  
shape of a woman; for in the shape of man,  
master Brook, I fear not Goliath with a  
weaver's beam; because I know also, life is  
a shuttle. I am in haste; go along with me;  
I'll tell you all, master Brook. Since I  
plucked geese, played truant, and whipped  
top, I knew not what it was to be beaten, till  
lately. Follow me: I'll tell you strange  
things of this knave Ford: on whom to-night  
I will be revenged, and I will deliver his wife  
into your hand.—Follow: Strange things  
in hand, master Brook! follow. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *Windsor Park.**Enter PAGE, SHALLOW, and SLENDER.*

*Page.* Come, come; we'll clench i' the  
castle-ditch, till we see the light of our fairies.  
—Remember, son Slender, my daughter.

*Shen. Ay,* forsooth; I have spoke with  
her, and we have a nay-word t', how to know  
one another. I come to her in white, and  
cry, *mum*; she cries, *budget*; and by that  
we know one another.

*Shal.* That's good too: But what needs  
either your *mum*, or her *budget*? the white  
will decipher her well enough.—It hath  
struck ten o'clock.

*Page.* The night is dark; light and spirits  
will become it well. Heaven prosper our  
sport! No man means evil but the devil,  
and we shall know him by his horns. Let's  
away; follow me. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The Street in Windsor.**Enter Mrs. PAGE, Mrs. FORD, and Dr. CAIUS.*

*Mrs. Page.* Master doctor, my daughter

\* Keep to the time.

is in green: when you see your time, take  
her by the hand, away with her to the  
deanery, and despatch it quickly: Go before  
into the park; we two must go together.

*Caius.* I know vat I have to do; Adieu.

*Mrs. Page.* Fare you well, sir. [*Exit  
CAIUS.*] My husband will not rejoice so  
much at the abuse of Falstaff, as he will  
chafe at the doctor's marrying my daughter:  
but 'tis no matter; better a little chiding,  
than a great deal of heart-break.

*Mrs. Ford.* Where is Nan now, and her  
troop of fairies? and the Welsh devil, Hugh?

*Mrs. Page.* They are all couched in a pit  
hard by Herne's oak, with obscured lights;  
which, at the very instant of Falstaff's and our  
meeting, they will at once display to the night.

*Mrs. Ford.* That cannot choose but amaze  
him.

*Mrs. Page.* If he be not amazed, he will  
be mocked; if he be amazed, he will every  
way be mocked.

*Mrs. Ford.* We'll betray him finely.

*Mrs. Page.* Against such lewdsters, and  
their lechery,

Those that betray them do no treachery.

*Mrs. Ford.* The hour draws on; To the  
oak, to the oak! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *Windsor Park.**Enter Sir HUGH EVANS, and Fairies.*

*Eva.* Trib, trib, fairies; come; and re-  
member your parts: be bold, I pray you;  
follow me into the pit; and when I give the  
watch-ords, do as I bid you; Come, come;  
trib, trib. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *Another part of the Park.**Enter FALSTAFF disguised, with a buck's head on.*

*Fal.* The Windsor bell hath struck twelve;  
the minute draws on: Now, the hot-blooded  
gods assist me:—Remember, Jove, thou wast  
a bull for thy Europa; love set on thy horns.  
—O powerful love! that, in some respects,  
makes a beast a man; in some other, a man  
a beast.—Yon were also, Jupiter, a swan, for  
the love of Leda;—O, omnipotent love! how  
near the god drew to the complexion of a  
goose?—A fault done first in the form of a  
beast;—O Jove, a beastly fault! and then  
another fault in the semblance of a fowl;  
think on't, Jove; a foul fault.—When gods  
have hot backs, what shall poor men do?  
For me, I am here a Windsor stag; and the  
fattest, I think, i' the forest: send me a cool  
rut-time, Jove, or who can blame me to piss  
my tallow? Who comes here? my doe?

*Enter Mrs. FORD and Mrs. PAGE.*

*Mrs. Ford.* Sir John? art thou there, my  
deer? my male deer?

*Fal.* My doe with the black scut?—Let

\* Watch-word



the sky rain potatoes; let it thunder to the tune of *Green Sleeves*; hail kissing-comfits, and snow eringoos; let there come a tempest of provocation, I will shelter me here.

[*Embracing her.*]

*Mrs. Ford.* Mistress Page is come with me, sweetheart.

*Fal.* Divide me like a bribe-buck, each a haunch: I will keep my sides to myself, my shoulders for the fellow\* of this walk, and my horns I bequeath your husbands. Am I a woodman? hal! Speak I like Herne the hunter?—Why, now is Cupid a child of conscience; he makes restitution. As I am a true spirit, welcome!

[*Noise within.*]

*Mrs. Page.* Alas! what noise?

*Mrs. Ford.* Heaven forgive our sins!

*Fal.* What should this be?

*Mrs. Ford.* } Away, away. [*They run off.*]

*Mrs. Page.* }

*Fal.* I think, the devil will not have me damned, lest the oil that is in me should set hell on fire; he would never else cross me thus.

*Enter Sir HUGH EVANS, like a satyr;*

*Mrs. QUICKLY, and PISTOL; ANNE PAGE, as the Fairy Queen, attended by her brother and others, dressed like fairies, with waxen tapers on their heads.*

*Quick.* Fairies, black, grey, green and white, You moon-shine revellers, and shades of night, You orphan-heirs of fixed destiny,

Attend your office, and your quality!—

Crier Hobgoblin, make the fairy o-yes.

*Pist.* Elves, list your names; silence, you airy toys. leap:

*Cricket.* to Windsor chimneys shalt thou Where fires thou find'st unrak'd, and hearths unswept,

There pinch the maids as blue as bilberry†: Our radiant queen hates sluts, and sluttery.

*Fal.* They are fairies; he, that speaks to them, shall die:

I'll wink and cough: No man their works must eye. [*Lies down upon his face.*]

*Eva.* Where's *Pede*?—Go you, and where you find a maid,

That, ere she sleep, has thrice her prayers said, Raise up the organs of her fantasy,

Sleep she as sound as careless infancy: But those as sleep, and think not on their sins,

Pinch them, arms, legs, backs, shoulders, sides, *Quick.* About, about; [and shins.]

Search Windsor castle, elves, within and out: Strew good luck, o'uphes, on every sacred room;

That it may stand till the perpetual doom, In state as wholesome, as in state 'tis fit;

Worthy the owner, and the owner it. The several chairs of order look you scour

With juice of balm, and every precious flower: Each fair instalment, coat, and several crest,

With loyal blazon, evermore be blest! And nightly, meadow-fairies, look, you sing,

Like to the Garter's compass, in a ring: The expressure that it bears, green let it be,

More fertile-fresh than all the field to see;

And, *Hony soit qui mal y pense*, write, In emerald tufts, flowers purple, blue, and white; Like sapphire, pearl, and rich embroidery, Buckled below fair knight-hood's bending } knee:

Fairies use flowers for their charactery §.

Away; disperse: But, till 'tis one o'clock,

Our dance of custom, round about the oak

Of Herne the hunter, let us not forget.

*Eva.* Pray you, lock hand in hand, yourselves in order set:

And twenty glow-worms shall our lanterns be, To guide our measure round about the tree.

But, stay; I smell a man of middle earth.

*Fal.* Heavens defend me from that Welsh fairy! lest he transform me to a piece of cheese!

*Pist.* Vile worm, thou wast o'er-look'd even in thy birth. [end:]

*Quick.* With trial fire touch me his finger. If he be chaste, the flame will back descend,

And turn him to no pain; but if he start,

It is the flesh of a corrupted heart.

*Pist.* A trial, come.

*Eva.* Come, will this wood take fire?

[*They burn him with their tapers.*]

*Fal.* Oh, oh, oh! [desire!]

*Quick.* Corrupt, corrupt, and tainted in About him fairies; sing a scornful rhyme:

And, as you trip, still pinch him to your time.

*Eva.* It is right; indeed he is full of lecheries and iniquity.

### SONG.

*Eye on sinful fancy!*

*Eye on lust and lechery!*

*Lust is but a bloody fire,*

*Kindled with unchaste desire,*

*Fed in heart; whose flames aspire,*

*As thoughts do blow them, higher and higher.*

*Pinch him, fairies, mutually;*

*Pinch him for his villainy; [about,*

*Pinch him, and burn him, and turn him*

*Till candles, and star-light, and moonshine*

*be out.*

*During this song, the fairies pinch Falstaff.*

*Doctor Caius comes one way, and steals*

*away a fairy in green; Slender another*

*way, and takes off a fairy in white; and*

*Fenton comes, and steals away Mrs.*

*Anne Page. A noise of hunting is made*

*within. All the fairies run away. Fal-*

*staff pulls off his buck's head, and rises.*

*Enter PAGE, FORD, Mrs. PAGE, and Mrs.*

*FORD. They lay hold on him.*

*Page.* Nay, do not fly: I think, we have

watch'd you now; [turn?]

Will none but Herne the hunter serve your

*Mrs. Page.* I pray you, come; hold up

the jest no higher:— [wives!]

Now, good sir John, how like you Windsor

See you these, husband? do not these fair

yokes||

Become the forest better than the town?

\* Keeper of the forest.

† Fellowship.

‡ Whortleberry.

§ The letters

|| Horns which Falstaff had.

*Ford.* Now, sir, who's a cuckold now?—Master Brook, Falstaff's a knave, a cuckoldly knave; here are his horns, master Brook: And, master Brook, he hath enjoyed nothing of Ford's but his buck-basket, his cudgel, and twenty pounds of money; which must be paid to master Brook; his horses are arrested for it, master Brook.

*Mrs. Ford.* Sir John, we have had ill luck; we could never meet. I will never take you for my love again, but I will always count you my dear.

*Fal.* I do begin to perceive that I am made an ass.

*Ford.* Ay, and an ox too; both the proofs are extant.

*Fal.* And these are not fairies? I was three or four times in the thought, they were not fairies; and yet the guiltiness of my mind, the sudden surprise of my powers, drove the grossness of the foppery into a received belief, in despite of the teeth of all rhyme and reason, that they were fairies. See now, how wit may be made a Jack-alent, when 'tis upon ill employment!

*Eva.* Sir John Falstaff, serve God, and leave your desires, and fairies will not pinse you.

*Ford.* Well said, fairy Hugh.

*Eva.* And leave you your jealousies too, I pray you.

*Ford.* I will never mistrust my wife again, till thou art able to woo her in good English.

*Fal.* Have I laid my brain in the sun, and dried it, that it wants matter to prevent so gross o'er-reaching as this? Am I ridden with a Welsh goat too? Shall I have a coxcomb of frize\*? 'tis time I were choked with a piece of toasted cheese.

*Eva.* Seese is not good to give putter; your pelly is all putter.

*Fal.* Seese and putter! Have I lived to stand at the taunt of one that makes fritters of English? This is enough to be the decay of lust and late-walking, through the realm.

*Mrs. Page.* Why, sir John, do you think, though we would have thrust virtue out of our hearts by the head and shoulders, and have given ourselves without scruple to hell, that ever the devil could have made you our delight?

*Ford.* What, a hodge-pudding? a bag of flax?

*Mrs. Page.* A puffed man?

*Page.* Old, cold, withered, and of intoluble entrails?

*Ford.* And one that is as slanderous as Satan?

*Page.* And as poor as Job?

*Ford.* And as wicked as his wife?

*Eva.* And given to fornications, and to taverns, and sack, and wine, and metheglins, and to drinkings, and swearings, and starings, pripples and prables?

*Fal.* Well, I am your theme: you have the start of me; I am dejected; I am not able to answer the Welsh flannel; ignorance itself is a plummet o'er me: use me as you will.

*Ford.* Marry, Sir, we'll bring you to

Windsor, to one master Brook, that you have cozened of money, to whom you should have been a pander: over and above that you have suffered, I think, to repay that money will be a biting affliction. [make amends?]

*Mrs. Ford.* Nay, husband, let that go to Forgive that sum, and so we'll all be friends.

*Ford.* Well, here's my hand; all's forgiven at last.

*Page.* Yet be cheerful, knight: thou shalt eat a posset to-night at my house; where I will desire thee to laugh at my wife, that now laughs at thee: Tell her, master Slender hath married her daughter.

*Mrs. Page.* Doctors doubt that: If Anna Page be my daughter, she is, by this, doctor Caius' wife. [Aside]

*Enter SLENDER.*

*Slender.* Who, ho! ho! father Page!

*Page.* Son! how now? how now, son! have you despatched?

*Slender.* Despatched—I'll make the best in Gloucestershire know on't; would I were hanged, la, else.

*Page.* Of what, son?

*Slender.* I came yonder at Eton to marry mistress Anne Page, and she's a great lubberly boy: If it had not been in the church, I would have swung him, or he should have swung me. If I did not think it had been Anne Page, would I might never stir, and 'tis a post-master's boy.

*Page.* Upon my life then you took the wrong.

*Slender.* What need you tell me that? I think so, when I took a boy for a girl: If I had been married to him, for all he was in woman's apparel, I would not have had him.

*Page.* Why, this is your own folly. Did not I tell you, how you should know my daughter by her garments?

*Slender.* I went to her in white, and cry'd *mum*, and she cry'd *budget*, as Anne and I had appointed; and yet it was not Anne, but a post-master's boy.

*Eva.* Jesu! Master Slender, cannot you see but marry boys?

*Page.* O, I am vexed at heart: What shall I do?

*Mrs. Page.* Good George, be not angry: I knew of your purpose; turned my daughter into green; and, indeed, she is now with the doctor at the deanery, and there married.

*Enter CAIUS.*

*Caius.* Vere is mistress Page? By gar, I am cozened; I ha' married *un garçon*, a boy; *un puaian*, by gar, a boy; it is not Anne Page: by gar, I am cozened.

*Mrs. Page.* Why, did you take her in green?

*Caius.* Ay, begar, and 'tis a boy: be gar, I'll raise all Windsor. [Exit CAIUS.]

*Ford.* This is strange: Who hath got the right Anne?

*Page.* My heart misgives me: Here comes master Fenton.

Enter FENTON and ANNE PAGE.

How now, master Fenton?

Anne. Pardon, good father! good my mother, pardon!

Page. Now, mistress? how chance you went not with master Slender?

Mrs. Page. Why went you not with master doctor, maid?

Fent. You do amaze\* her: Hear the truth of it.

You would have married her most shamefully, Where there was no proportion held in love. The truth is, She and I, long since contracted, Are now so sure, that nothing can dissolve us.

The offence is holy, that she hath committed: And this deceit loses the name of craft,

Of disobedience, or unduteous title; Since therein she doth evitate† and shun

A thousand irreligious cursed hours, [upon her. Which forced marriage would have brought

Ford. Stand not amaz'd: here is no remedy:—

In love, the heavens themselves do guide the state;

Money buys lands, and wives are sold by fate.

Fal. I am glad, though you have ta'en a special stand to strike at me, that your arrow hath glanced. [give thee joy!

Page. Well, what remedy? Fenton, heaven What cannot be eschew'd must be embrac'd.

Fal. When night-dogs run, all sorts of deer are chas'd.

Eva. I will dance and eat plums at your wedding.

Mrs. Page. Well, I will muse no further:— Master Fenton,

Heaven give you many, many merry days!

Good husband, let us every one go home,

And laugh this sport o'er by a country fire;

Sir John and all.

Ford. Let it be so:—Sir John,

To master Brook you yet shall hold your word;

For he, to night, shall lie with Mrs. Ford.

[Exeunt.

\* Confound her by your questions.

† Avoid.

Of this play there is a tradition preserved by Mr. Rowe, that it was written at the command of queen Elizabeth, who was so delighted with the character of Falstaff, that she wished it to be diffused through more plays; but suspecting that it might pall by continued uniformity, directed the poet to diversify his manner, by shewing him in love. No task is harder than that of writing to the ideas of another. Shakspeare knew what the queen, if the story be true, seems not to have known, that by any real passion of tenderness, the selfish craft, the careless jollity, and the lazy luxury of Falstaff must have suffered so much abatement, that little of his former cast would have remained. Falstaff could not love, but by ceasing to be Falstaff. He could only counterfeit love, and his professions could be prompted, not by the hope of pleasure, but of money. Thus the poet approached as near as he could to the work enjoined him; yet having perhaps in the former plays completed his own idea, seems not to have been able to give Falstaff all his former power of entertainment.

This comedy is remarkable for the variety and number of the personages, who exhibit more characters appropriated and discriminated, than perhaps can be found in any other play.

Whether Shakspeare was the first that produced upon the English stage the effect of language distorted and depraved by provincial or foreign pronunciation, I cannot certainly decide. This mode of forming ridiculous characters can confer praise only on him who originally discovered it, for it requires not much of either wit or judgment; its success must be derived almost wholly from the player, but its power in a skilful mouth, even he that despises it, is unable to resist.

The conduct of this drama is deficient; the action begins and ends often, before the conclusion, and the different parts might change places without inconvenience; but its general power, that power by which all works of genius shall finally be tried, is such, that perhaps it never yet had reader or spectator who did not think it too soon at the end.—

JOHNSON.



# TWELFTH-NIGHT.

OR, WHAT YOU WILL.

## Persons represented.

ORSINO, *duke of Illyria.*  
SEBASTIAN, *a young gentleman, brother to Viola.*  
ANTONIO, *a sea-captain, friend to Sebastian.*  
*A sea-captain, friend to Viola.*  
VALENTINE, } *Gentlemen attending on the*  
CURIO, } *Duke.*

Sir TOBY BELCH, *uncle of Olivia.*  
Sir ANDREW AGUE-CHEEK.  
MALVOLIO, *steward to Olivia.*  
FABIAN, } *Servants to Olivia.*  
CLOWN, }  
OLIVIA, *a rich Countess.*  
VIOLA, *in love with the Duke.*  
MARIA, *Olivia's woman.*

*Lords, Priests, Sailors, Officers, Musicians, and other Attendants.*

*Scene,—a city in Illyria; and the sea-coast near it.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *An Apartment in the Duke's Palace.*

*Enter DUKE, CURIO, Lords; Musicians attending.*

*Duke.* If musick be the food of love, play on,  
Give me excess of it; that, surfeiting,  
The appetite may sicken, and so die.—  
That strain again;—it had a dying fall:  
O, it came o'er my ear like the sweet south,  
That breathes upon a bank of violets, [more;  
Stealing, and giving odour.—Enough; no  
'Tis not so sweet now, as it was before.  
O spirit of love, how quick and fresh art thou!  
That notwithstanding thy capacity  
Receiveth as the sea, nought enters there,  
Of what validity \* and pitch soever,  
But falls into abatement and low price,  
Even in a minute! so full of shapes is fancy,  
That it alone is high-fantastical †.

*Cur.* Will you go hunt, my lord?

*Duke.* What, Curio?

*Cur.* The hart.

*Duke.* Why, so I do, the noblest that I have:  
O, when mine eyes did see Olivia first,  
Methought, she purg'd the air of pestilence;  
That instant was I turn'd into a hart;  
And my desires, like fell and cruel hounds,  
E'er since pursue me.—How now? what news  
from her?

*Enter VALENTINE.*

*Val.* So please my lord, I might not be  
admitted,

But from her handmaid do return this answer:  
The element itself, till seven years heat ‡,  
Shall not behold her face at ample view;  
But, like a cloistress, she will veiled walk,  
And water once a day her chamber round  
With eye-offending brine: all this, to season  
A brother's dead love, which she would keep  
And lasting, in her sad remembrance. [fresh,

*Duke.* O, she, that hath a heart of that fine  
To pay this debt of love but to a brother, [frame,

How will she love, when the rich golden shaft,  
Hath kill'd the flock of all affections else  
That live in her! when liver, brain, and heart,  
These sovereign thrones, are all supplied, and  
fill'd,  
(Her sweet perfections,) with one self king!—  
Away before me to sweet beds of flowers;  
Love-thoughts lie rich, when canopied with  
bowers. [Exeunt.

SCENE II. *The Sea-coast.*

*Enter VIOLA, Captain, and Sailors.*

*Vio.* What country, friends, is this?

*Cap.* Illyria, lady.

*Vio.* And what should I do in Illyria?

My brother he is in Elysium. [you, sailors?  
Perchance, he is not drown'd:—What think

*Cap.* It is perchance, that you yourself were  
saved. [may he be.

*Vio.* O my poor brother! and so, perchance,

*Cap.* True, madam: and, to comfort you with  
chance,

Assure yourself, after our ship did split, [you,  
When you, and that poor number saved with  
Hung on our driving boat, I saw your brother,  
Most provident in peril, bind himself [practi e)  
(Courage and hope both teaching him the  
To a strong mast, that lived upon the sea;  
Where, like Arion on the dolphin's back,  
I saw him hold acquaintance with the waves.  
So long as I could see.

*Vio.* For saying so, there's gold:

Mine own escape unfoldeth to my hope,  
Whereto thy speech serves for authority,  
The like of him. Know'st thou this country?

*Cap.* Ay, madam, well; for I was bred and  
born,

Not three hours' travel from this very place.

*Vio.* Who governs here?

*Cap.* A noble duke, in nature,  
As in his name.

*Vio.* What is his name?

\* Value.

† Fantastical to the height.

‡ Heated.

*Cap.* Orsino. I have heard my father name  
He was a bachelor then.

*Cap.* And so is now,  
Or was so very late : for but a month  
Ago I went from hence; and then 'twas fresh  
In murmur, (as, you know, what great ones do,  
The less will prattle off,) that he did seek  
The love of fair Olivia.

*Vio.* What's she ?  
*Cap.* A virtuous maid, the daughter of a  
count [leaving her  
That died some twelvemonth since; then  
In the protection of his son, her brother,  
Who shortly also died : for whose dear love,  
They say, she hath abjur'd the company  
And sight of men.

*Vio.* O, that I served that lady :  
And might not be delivered to the world,  
Till I had made mine own occasion mellow,  
What my estate is.

*Cap.* That were hard to compass;  
Because she will admit no kind of suit,  
No, not the duke's.

*Vio.* There is a fair behaviour in thee, captain;  
And though that nature with a beauteous wall  
Doth oft close in pollution, yet of thee  
I will believe, thou hast a mind that suits  
With this thy fair and outward character.  
I pray thee, and I'll pay thee bounteously,  
Conceal me what I am; and be my aid  
For such disguise as, haply, shall become  
The form of my intent. I'll serve this duke;  
Thou shalt present me as an eunuch to him,  
It may be worth thy pains; for I can sing,  
And speak to him in many sorts of musick,  
That will allow \* me very worth his service.  
What else may hap, to time I will commit;  
Only shape thou thy silence to my wit.

*Cap.* Be you his eunuch, and your mute  
I'll be: [not see]

When my tongue blabs, then let mine eyes  
*Vio.* I thank thee: Lead me on. [Exeunt

### SCENE III. A Room in Olivia's House.

*Enter Sir TOBY BELCH and MARIA.*

*Sir To.* What a plague means my niece, to  
take the death of her brother thus? I am  
sure, care's an enemy to life.

*Mar.* By my troth, sir Toby, you must come  
in earlier o' nights; your cousin, my lady, takes  
great exceptions to your ill hours.

*Sir To.* Why, let her except before excepted.

*Mar.* Ay, but you must confine yourself  
within the modest limits of order.

*Sir To.* Confine? I'll confine myself no  
finer than I am: these clothes are good enough  
to drink in, and so be these boots too; as they  
be not, let them hang themselves in their own  
straps.

*Mar.* That quaffing and drinking will undo  
you: I heard my lady talk of it yesterday;  
and of a foolish knight, that you brought in  
one night here, to be her wooer.

*Sir To.* Who? Sir Andrew Ague-cheek!

*Mar.* Ay, he  
*Sir To.* He's as tall† a man as any's in  
Illyria.

*Mar.* What's that to the purpose?

*Sir To.* Why, he has three thousand ducats  
a year.

*Mar.* Ay, but he'll have but a year in all  
these ducats; he's a very fool, and a prodigal.

*Sir To.* Fie, that you'll say so! he plays o'  
the viol-de-gambo, and speaks three or four  
languages word for word without book, and  
hath all the good gifts of nature.

*Mar.* He hath, indeed,—almost natural: for,  
besides that he's a fool, he's a great quarreller;  
and, but that he hath the gift of a coward to  
allay the gust he hath in quarrelling, 'tis thought  
among the prudent, he would quickly have  
the gift of a grave.

*Sir To.* By this hand, they are scoundrels  
and substractors that say so of him. Who are  
they?

*Mar.* They that add moreover, he's drunk  
nightly in your company.

*Sir To.* With drinking healths to my niece;  
I'll drink to her, as long as there is a passage  
in my throat, and drink in Illyria: He's a  
coward, and a coystil‡, that will not drink to  
my niece, till his brains turn o' the toe like a  
parish-top. What, wench? Castiliano vulgo;  
for here comes Sir Andrew Ague-face.

*Enter Sir ANDREW AGUE-CHEEK.*

*Sir And.* Sir Toby Belch! how now, Sir  
Toby Belch?

*Sir To.* Sweet Sir Andrew!

*Sir And.* Bless you, fair shrew.

*Mar.* And you too, sir.

*Sir To.* Accost, Sir Andrew, accost.

*Sir And.* What's that?

*Sir To.* My niece's chamber-maid.

*Sir And.* Good mistress Accost, I desire  
better acquaintance.

*Mar.* My name is Mary, sir.

*Sir And.* Good Mis's Mary Accost,—

*Sir To.* You mistake, knight: accost is,  
front her, board her, woo her, assail her.

*Sir And.* By my troth, I would not under-  
take her in this company. Is that the mean-  
ing of accost?

*Mar.* Fare you well, gentlemen.

*Sir To.* An thou let part so, Sir Andrew,  
'would thou might'st never draw sword again.

*Sir And.* An you part so, mistress, I would  
I might never draw sword again. Fair lady,  
do you think you have fools in hand?

*Mar.* Sir, I have not you by the hand.

*Sir And.* Marry, but you shall have; and  
here's my hand.

*Mar.* Now, sir, thought is free: I pray you  
bring your hand to the buttery-bar, and let it  
drink.

*Sir And.* Wherefore, sweet-heart? what's  
your metaphor?

*Mar.* It's dry, sir.

*Sir And.* Why, I think so; I am not such

\* Approve.

† Stout.

‡ Keystril, a bastard hawk.

an ass, but I can keep my hand dry. But what's your jest?

*Mar.* A dry jest, sir.

*Sir And.* Are you full of them?

*Mar.* Ay, sir; I have them at my fingers' ends; marry, now I let go your hand, I am barren. [Exit MARIA.]

*Sir To.* O knight, thou lack'st a cup of canary: When did I see thee so put down?

*Sir And.* Never in your life, I think; unless you see canary put me down: Methinks, sometimes I have no more wit than a Christian, or an ordinary man has: but I am a great eater of beef, and, I believe, that does harm to my wit.

*Sir To.* No question.

*Sir And.* An I thought that, I'd forswear it. I'll ride home to-morrow, sir Toby.

*Sir To.* *Pourquoy*, my dear knight?

*Sir And.* What is *pourquoy*? do or not do? I would I had bestowed that time in the tongues, that I have in fencing, dancing, and bear-baiting: O, had I but followed the arts!

*Sir To.* Then hadst thou had an excellent head of hair.

*Sir And.* Why, would that have mended my hair?

*Sir To.* Past question; for thou seest, it will not curl by nature.

*Sir And.* But it becomes me well enough, does't not?

*Sir To.* Excellent; it hangs like flax on a distaff; and I hope to see a housewife take thee between her legs, and spin it off.

*Sir And.* 'Faith, I'll home to-morrow, sir Toby: your niece will not be seen; or, if she be, it's four to one she'll none of me: the count himself, here hard by, wooes her.

*Sir To.* She'll none o' the count; she'll not match above her degree, neither in estate, years, nor wit; I have heard her swear it. Tut, there's life in't, man.

*Sir And.* I'll stay a month longer. I am a fellow o' the strangest mind i' the world; I delight in masques and revels sometimes altogether.

*Sir To.* Art thou good at these kick-shaws, knight?

*Sir And.* As any man in Illyria, whatsoever he be, under the degree of my betters; and yet I will not compare with an old man.

*Sir To.* What is thy excellence in a galliard, knight?

*Sir And.* 'Faith, I can cut a caper.

*Sir To.* And I can cut the mutton to't.

*Sir And.* And, I think, I have the back-rick, simply as strong as any man in Illyria.

*Sir To.* Wherefore are these things hid? wherefore have these gifts a curtain before them? are they like to take dust, like mistress Mall's picture? why dost thou not go to church in a galliard, and come home in a coranto? My very walk should be a jig; I would not so much as make water, but in a sink-a-pace\*. What dost thou mean? is it a world to hide virtues in? I did think, by the excellent con-

stitution of thy leg, it was formed under the star of a galliard.

*Sir And.* Ay, 'tis strong, and it does indifferent well in a flame-coloured stock. Shall we set about some revels?

*Sir To.* What shall we do else? were we not born under Taurus?

*Sir And.* Taurus? that's sides and heart.

*Sir To.* No, sir; it is legs and thighs. Let me see thee caper: ha! higher: ha, ha!—excellent! [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE IV.

##### A Room in the Duke's Palace.

Enter VALENTINE, and VIOLA in man's attire.

*Val.* If the duke continue these favours towards you, Cesario, you are like to be much advanced; he hath known you but three days, and already you are no stranger.

*Vi.* You either fear his humour or my negligence, that you call in question the continuance of his love: Is he inconstant, sir, in his favours?

*Val.* No, believe me.

Enter DUKE, CURIO, and Attendants.

*Vi.* I thank you. Here comes the count.

*Duke.* Who saw Cesario, ho?

*Vi.* On your attendance, my lord; here.

*Duke.* Stand you awhile aloof.—Cesario, Thou know'st no less but all; I have unclasp'd To thee the book even of my secret soul: Therefore, good youth, address thy gait† unto her;

Be not deny'd access, stand at her doors, And tell them, there thy fixed foot shall grow, Till thou have audience.

*Vi.* Sure, my noble lord, If she be so abandon'd to her sorrow As it is spoke, she never will admit me.

*Duke.* Be clamorous, and leap all civil bounds,

Rather than make unprofit return.

*Vi.* Say, I do speak with her, my lord; What then?

*Duke.* O, then unfold the passion of my love, Surprise her with discourse of my dear faith: It shall become thee well to act my woes; She will attend it better in thy youth, Than in a nuncio of more grave aspect.

*Vi.* I think not so, my lord.

*Duke.* Dear lad, believe it;

For they shall yet belie thy happy years That say, thou art a man: Diana's lip Is not more smooth and rubious; thy small pipe Is as the maiden's organ, shrill and sound, And all is semblative a woman's part. I know, thy constellation is right apt For this affair:—Some four or five attend him; All, if you will; for I myself am best, When least in company:—Prosper well in this And thou shalt live as freely as thy lord, To call his fortunes thine.

*Vi.* I'll do my best,

\* *Cinque-pace*, the name of a dance

† Stocking.

‡ Go thy way.



To woo your lady: yet, [*Aside.*] a barful \* strife!

Whoe'er I woo, myself would be his wife.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. A Room in Olivia's House.

*Enter MARIA and Clown.*

*Mar.* Nay, either tell me where thou hast been, or I will not open my lips so wide as a bristle may enter, in way of thy excuse: my lady will hang thee for thy absence.

*Clo.* Let her hang me; he that is well hanged in this world, needs to fear no colours.

*Mar.* Make that good.

*Clo.* He shall see none to fear.

*Mar.* A good lentent answer: I can tell thee where that saying was born, of, I fear no colours.

*Clo.* Where, good mistress Mary?

*Mar.* In the wars; and that may you be bold to say in your foolery.

*Clo.* Well, God give them wisdom that have it; and those that are fools, let them use their talents.

*Mar.* Yet you will be hanged, for being so long absent: or, to be turned away; is not that as good as a hanging to you?

*Clo.* Many a good hanging prevents a bad marriage; and, for turning away, let summer bear it out.

*Mar.* You are resolute then?

*Clo.* Not so neither; but I am resolved on two points.

*Mar.* That, if one break †, the other will hold; or, if both break, your gaskins fall.

*Clo.* Apt, in good faith; very apt! Well, go thy way; if sir Toby would leave drinking, thou wert as witty a piece of Eve's flesh as any in Illyria.

*Mar.* Peace, you rogue, no more o' that; here comes my lady: make your excuse wisely, you were best.  
[*Exit.*]

*Enter OLIVIA and MALVOLIO.*

*Clo.* Wit, and't be thy will, put me into good fooling! Those wits that think they have thee, do very oft prove fools; and I, that am sure I lack thee, may pass for a wise man: For what says Quinapalus? Better a witty fool than a foolish wit.—God bless thee, lady!

*Oli.* Take the fool away.

*Clo.* Do you not hear, fellows? Take away the lady.

*Oli.* Go to, you're a dry fool; I'll no more of you: besides, you grow dishonest.

*Clo.* Two faults, madonna ‡, that drink and good counsel will amend: for give the dry fool drink, then is the fool not dry; bid the dishonest man mend himself; if he mend, he is no longer dishonest; if he cannot, let the botcher mend him: Any thing that's mended is but patched: virtue that transgresses is but patched with sin; and sin that amends is but

patched with virtue: If that this simple syllogism will serve, so; if it will not, what remedy? As there is no true cuckold but calamity, so beauty's a flower:—the lady bade take away the fool; therefore, I say again, take her away.

*Oli.* Sir, I bade them take away you.

*Clo.* Misprision in the highest degree!—Lady, *Cucullus non facit monachum*; that's as much as to say, I wear not motley in my brain. Good madonna, give me leave to prove you a fool.

*Oli.* Can you do it?

*Clo.* Dexteriously, good madonna.

*Oli.* Make your proof.

*Clo.* I must catechize you for it, madonna: Good my mouse of virtue, answer me.

*Oli.* Well, sir, for want of other idleness, I'll bide your proof.

*Clo.* Good madonna, why mourn'st thou?

*Oli.* Good fool, for my brother's death.

*Clo.* I think his soul is in hell, madonna.

*Oli.* I know his soul is in heaven, fool.

*Clo.* The more fool you, madonna, to mourn for your brother's soul being in heaven.—Take away the fool, gentlemen.

*Oli.* What think you of this fool, Malvolio? doth he not mend?

*Mal.* Yes; and shall do, till the pangs of death shake him: Infirmary, that decays the wise, doth ever make the better fool.

*Clo.* God send you, sir, a speedy infirmity, for the better increasing your folly! Sir Toby will be sworn, that I am no fox; but he will not pass his word for two-pence, that you are no fool.

*Oli.* How say you to that, Malvolio?

*Mal.* I marvel your ladyship takes delight in such a barren rascal; I saw him put down the other day with an ordinary fool, that has no more brain than a stone. Look you now, he's out of his guard already; unless you laugh and minister occasion to him, he is gagged. I protest, I take these wise men, that crowd so at these set kind of fools, no better than the fools' zanies ††.

*Oli.* O, you are sick of self-love, Malvolio, and taste with a distempered appetite. To be generous, guiltless, and of free disposition, is to take those things for bird-bolts ¶, that you deem cannon-bullets: There is no slander in an allowed fool, though he do nothing but rail; nor no railing in a known discreet man, though he do nothing but reprove.

*Clo.* Now Mercury endure thee with leas-ing \*\*, for thou speakest well of fools!

*Re-enter MARIA.*

*Mar.* Madam, there is at the gate a young gentleman much desires to speak with you.

*Oli.* From the count Orsino, is it?

*Mar.* I know not, madam; 'tis a fair young man, and well attended.

*Oli.* Who of my people hold him in delay I

\* Full of impediments.

† Points were hooks which fastened the hose or breeches. ‡ Italian, mistress, dame.

¶ Fools' baubles.

¶ Short arrows.

\*\* Lying.

† Short and spare.

*Mar.* Sir Toby, madam, your kinsman.

*Oli.* Fetch him off, I pray you; he speaks nothing but madman; fie on him! [*Exit MARIA.*] Go you, Malvolio; if it be a suit from the count, I am sick, or not at home; what you will, to dismiss it. [*Exit MALVOLIO.*] Now you see, sir, how your fooling grows old, and people dislike it.

*Clo.* Thou hast spoke for us, madonna, as if thy eldest son should be a fool: whose skull Jove cram with brains, for here he comes, one of thy kin, has a most weak *pia mater*.\*

*Enter Sir TOBY BELCH.*

*Oli.* By mine honour, half drunk.—What is he at the gate, cousin?

*Sir To.* A gentleman.

*Oli.* A gentleman! What gentleman?

*Sir To.* 'Tis a gentleman here—A plague o' these pickle-herrings!—How now, sot?

*Clo.* Good sir Toby,——

*Oli.* Cousin, cousin, how have you come so early by this lethargy?

*Sir To.* Lechery! I defy lechery: There's one at the gate.

*Oli.* Ay, marry; what is he?

*Sir To.* Let him be the devil an he will, I care not: give me faith, say I. Well, it's all one. [*Exit.*]

*Oli.* What's a drunken man like, fool?

*Clo.* Like a drown'd man, a fool, and a madman: one draught above heat makes him a fool; the second mads him; and a third drowns him.

*Oli.* Go thou and seek the coroner, and let him sit o' my coz; for he's in the third degree of drink, he's drown'd: go, look after him.

*Clo.* He is but mad yet, madonna; and the fool shall look to the madman. [*Exit Clown.*]

*Re-enter MALVOLIO.*

*Mal.* Madam, yond' young fellow swears he will speak with you. I told him you were sick; he takes on him to understand so much, and therefore comes to speak with you: I told him you were asleep; he seems to have a fore-knowledge of that too, and therefore comes to speak with you. What is to be said to him, lady? he's fortified against any denial.

*Oli.* Tell him, he shall not speak with me.

*Mal.* He has been told so; and he says, he'll stand at your door like a sheriff's post, and be the supporter of a bench, but he'll speak with you.

*Oli.* What kind of man is he?

*Mal.* Why, of man kind.

*Oli.* What manner of man?

*Mal.* Of very ill manner; he'll speak with you, will you, or no.

*Oli.* Of what personage and years is he?

*Mal.* Not yet old enough for a man, nor young enough for a boy; as a squash is before 'tis a peascod, or a codling when 'tis almost an apple: 'tis with him e'en standing water, between boy and man. He is very well-fa-

voured, and he speaks very shrewishly; one would think his mother's milk were scarce out of him.

*Oli.* Let him approach: Call in my gentlewoman.

*Mal.* Gentlewoman, my lady calls. [*Exit.*]

*Re-enter MARIA.*

*Oli.* Give me my veil: come, throw it o'er my face;

We'll once more hear Orsino's embassy.

*Enter VIOLA.*

*Vio.* The honourable lady of the house, which is she?

*Oli.* Speak to me, I shall answer for her. Your will?

*Vio.* Most radiant, exquisite, and unmatchable beauty,—I pray you, tell me if this be the lady of the house, for I never saw her: I would be loath to cast away my speech; for, besides that it is excellently well penn'd, I have taken great pains to con it. Good beauties, let me sustain no scorn; I am very compitable, even to the least sinister usage.

*Oli.* Whence came you, sir?

*Vio.* I can say little more than I have studied, and that question's out of my part. Good gentle one, give me modest assurance, if you be the lady of the house, that I may proceed in my speech.

*Oli.* Are you a comedian?

*Vio.* No, my profound heart; and yet, by the very fangs of malice, I swear I am not that I play. Are you the lady of the house?

*Oli.* If I do not usurp myself, I am.

*Vio.* Most certain, if you are she, you do usurp yourself; for what is yours to bestow, is not yours to reserve. But this is from my commission: I will on with my speech in your praise, and then shew you the heart of my message.

*Oli.* Come to what is important in't: I forgive you the praise.

*Vio.* Alas, I took great pains to study it, and 'tis poetical.

*Oli.* It is the more like to be feigned; I pray you, keep it in. I heard you were saucy at my gates; and allowed your approach, rather to wonder at you than to hear you. If you be not mad, be gone; if you have reason, be brief: 'tis not that time of moon with me, to make one in so skipping a dialogue.

*Mar.* Will you hoist sail, sir? here lies your way.

*Vio.* No, good swabber; I am to hull here a little longer.—Some mollification for your giant, sweet lady.

*Oli.* Tell me your mind.

*Vio.* I am a messenger.

*Oli.* Sure, you have some hideous matter to deliver, when the courtesy of it is so fearful. Speak your office.

*Vio.* It alone concerns your ear. I bring no overture of war, no taxation of homage;

\* The cover of the brain.

† Accountable.

It appears from several parts of this play, that the original actress of Maria was very short.

I hold the olive in my hand: my words are as full of peace as matter.

*Oli.* Yet you began rudely. What are you? what would you?

*Vio.* The rudeness that hath appear'd in me, have I learn'd from my entertainment. What I am, and what I would, are as secret as maidenhead: to your ears, divinity; to any other's, profanation.

*Oli.* Give us the place alone, we will hear this divinity. [*Exit MARIA.*] Now, sir, what is your text?

*Vio.* Most sweet lady,—

*Oli.* A comfortable doctrine, and much may be said of it. Where lies your text?

*Vio.* In Orsino's bosom.

*Oli.* In his bosom! In what chapter of his bosom?

*Vio.* To answer by the method, in the first of his heart.

*Oli.* O, I have read it; it is heresy. Have you no more to say?

*Vio.* Good madam, let me see your face.

*Oli.* Have you any commission from your lord to negotiate with my face? you are now out of your text: but we will draw the curtain, and shew you the picture. Look you, sir, such a one as I was this present\*: Is't not well done? [*Unveiling.*]

*Vio.* Excellently done, if God did all.

*Oli.* 'Tis in grain, sir; 'twill endure wind and weather.

*Vio.* 'Tis beauty truly blent†, whose red and white

Nature's own sweet and cunning hand laid on: lady, you are the cruel'st she alive, If you will lead these graces to the grave, And leave the world no copy.

*Oli.* O, sir, I will not be so hard-hearted; I will give out divers schedules of my beauty: It shall be inventoried; and every particle and utensil, labelled to my will; as, item, two lips indifferent red; item, two grey eyes, with lids to them; item, one neck, one chin, and so forth. Were you sent hither to 'praise me!

*Vio.* I see you what you are: you are too proud;

But, if you were the devil, you are fair. My lord and master loves you; O, such love could be but recompens'd, though you were The nonpareil of beauty! [*Crown'd*]

*Oli.* How does he love me?

*Vio.* With adorations, with fertile tears, With groans that thunder love, with sighs of fire. [*cannot love him:*]

*Oli.* Your lord does know my mind, I Yet I suppose him virtuous, know him noble, Of great estate, of fresh and stainless youth; In voices well divulg'd‡, free, learn'd, and valiant,

And, in dimension, and the shape of nature, A gracious person: but yet I cannot love him; He might have took his answer long ago.

*Vio.* If I did love you in my master's flame, With such a suffering, such a deadly life, In your denial I would find no sense, I would not understand it.

*Oli.* Why, what would you?

*Vio.* Make me a willow cabin at your gate, And call upon my soul within the house; Write loyal cantons§ of contemned love, And sing them loud even in the dead of night; Holla your name to the reverberate|| hills, And make the babbling gossip of the air Cry out, Olivia! O, you should not rest Between the elements of air and earth, But you should pity me. [*parentage?*]

*Oli.* You might do much: What is your

*Vio.* Above my fortunes, yet my state is I am a gentleman. [*well:*]

*Oli.* Get you to your lord;

I cannot love him: let him send no more; Unless, perchance, you come to me again, To tell me how he takes it. Fare you well: I thank you for your pains: spend this for me.

*Vio.* I am no fee'd post¶, lady; keep your purse;

My master, not myself, lacks recompense. Love make his heart of foin, that you shall love, And let your fervour, like my master's, be Plac'd in contempt! Farewell, fair cruelty. [*Exit.*]

*Oli.* What is your parentage?

*Above my fortunes, yet my state is well: I am a gentleman.*—I'll be sworn thou art; Thy tongue, thy face, thy limbs, actions, and spirit, [*fast:—soft! soft!*]

Do give thee five-fold blazon\*\*:—Not too Unless the master were the man.—How now? Even so quickly may one catch the plague! Methinks, I feel this youth's perfections, With an invisible and subtle stealth, To creep in at mine eyes. Well, let it be.—What, ho, Malvolio!—

*Re-enter MALVOLIO.*

*Mal.* Here, madam, at your service.

*Oli.* Run after that same peevish messenger, The county's†† man: he left this ring behind him, Would I, or not; tell him, I'll none of it. Desire him not to flatter with his lord, Nor hold him up with hopes; I am not for him: If that the youth will come this way to-morrow, I'll give him reasons for't. Hie thee, Malvolio.

*Mal.* Madam, I will. [*Exit.*]

*Oli.* I do I know not what: and fear to find Mine eye too great a flatterer for my mind. Fate, shew thy force: Ourselves we do not owe||:

What is decreed, must be; and be this so" [*Ed*]

\* Presents.

† Blended, mixed together.

‡ Well spoken of by the world.

§ Cantos, verses.

|| Echoing.

¶ Messenger.

\*\* Proclamation of gentility.

†† Count.

|| Own, possess.



## ACT II.

SCENE I. *The Sea-coast.**Enter ANTONIO and SEBASTIAN.*

*Ant.* Will you stay no longer? nor will you not, that I go with you?

*Seb.* By your patience, no: my stars shine darkly over me; the malignancy of my fate might, perhaps, distemper yours; therefore I shall crave of you your leave, that I may bear my evils alone: It were a bad recompense for your love, to lay any of them on you.

*Ant.* Let me yet know of you, whither you are bound.

*Seb.* No, 'sooth, sir; my determinate voyage is mere extravagancy. But I perceive in you so excellent a touch of modesty, that you will not extort from me what I am willing to keep in; therefore it charges me in manners the rather to express myself. You must know of me then, Antonio, my name is Sebastian, which I called Rodorigo; my father was that Sebastian of Messaline, whom I know, you have heard of: he left behind him, myself, and a sister, both born in an hour. If the heavens had been pleased, 'would we had so ended! but you, sir, altered that; for, some hour before you took me from the breach of the sea, was my sister drowned.

*Ant.* Alas, the day!

*Seb.* A lady, sir, though it was said she much resembled me, was yet of many accounted beautiful: but, though I could not, with such estimable wonder, overfar believe that, yet thus far I will boldly publish her, she bore a mind that envy could not but call fair: she is drowned already, sir, with salt water, though seem to drown her remembrance again with more.

*Ant.* Pardon me, sir, your bad entertainment.

*Seb.* O, good Antonio, forgive me your trouble.

*Ant.* If you will not murder me for my love, let me be your servant.

*Seb.* If you will not undo what you have done, that is, kill him whom you have recovered, desire it not. Fare ye well at once: my bosom is full of kindness; and I am yet so near the manners of my mother, that upon the least occasion more, mine eyes will tell tales of me. I am bound to the count Orsino's court: farewell. [*Exit.*]

*Ant.* The gentleness of all the gods go with I have many enemies in Orsino's court, [thee! Else would I very shortly see thee there: But, come what may, I do adore thee so, That danger shall seem sport, and I will go.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II. *A Street.**Enter VIOLA; MALVOLIO following.*

*Mal.* Were not you even now with the countess Olivia?

*Vio.* Even now, sir; on a moderate pace I have since arrived but hither.

*Mal.* She returns this ring to you, sir; you might have saved me my pains, to have taken it away yourself. She adds, moreover, that you should put your lord into a desperate assurance she will none of him: And one thing more; that you be never so hardy to come again in his affairs, unless it be to report your lord's taking of this. Receive it so.

*Vio.* She took the ring of me; I'll none of it.

*Mal.* Come, sir, you peevishly threw it to her; and her will is, it should be so returned: if it be worth stooping for, there it lies in your eye; if not, be it his that finds it. [*Exit.*]

*Vio.* I left no ring with her: What means this lady?

Fortune forbid, my outside have not charm'd! She made good view of me; indeed, so much, That, sure, methought, her eyes had lost her tongue,

For she did speak in starts distractedly. She loves me, sure; the cunning of her passion Invites me in this churlish messenger.

None of my lord's ring! why, he sent her none. I am the man;—If it be so, (as 'tis),

Poor lady, she were better love a dream.

Disguise, I see, thou art a wickedness, Wherein the pregnant enemy does much.

How easy is it, for the proper-false!

In women's waxen hearts to set their forms!

Alas, our frailty is the cause, not we;

For, such as we are made of, such we be.

How will this fadge? My master loves her dearly;

And I, poor monster, fond as much on him

And she, mistaken, seems to dote on me:

What will become of this! As I am man,

My state is desperate for my master's love;

As I am woman, now alas the day!

What thriftless sighs shall poor Olivia breathe!

O time, thou must untangle this, not I;

It is too hard a knot for me to untie. [*Exit.*]

SCENE III. *A Room in Olivia's House.**Enter Sir TOBY BELCH, and Sir ANDREW AGUE-CHEEK.*

*Sir To.* Approach, sir Andrew: not to be a-bed after midnight, is to be up betimes; and *diluculo surgere*, thou know'st,—

*Sir And.* Nay, by my troth, I know not; but I know, to be up late, is to be up late.

*Sir To.* A false conclusion; I hate it as an unfilled can: To be up after midnight, and to go to bed then, is early; so that, to go to bed after midnight, is to go to bed betimes. Do not our lives consist of the four elements?

*Sir And.* Faith, so they say; but, I think it rather consists of eating and drinking.

*Sir To.* Thou art a scholar; let us therefore eat and drink.—Marian, I say!—a stoop of wine!

• Reveal.

† Dextrous, ready fiend.

‡ Fair deceiver.

§ Suit.

*Enter Clown.*

*Sir And.* Here comes the fool, i'faith.

*Clo.* How now, my hearts? Did you never see the picture of we three\*?

*Sir To.* Welcome, ass. Now let's have a catch.

*Sir And.* By my troth, the fool has an excellent breast†. I had rather than forty shillings I had such a leg; and so sweet a breath to sing, as the fool has. In sooth, thou wast in very gracious fooling last night, when thou spokest of Picrogromitus, of the Vapians passing the equinoctial of Queubus; 'twas very good, i'faith. I sent thee sixpence for thy leman‡: Hadst it?

*Clo.* I did impetico thy gratillity§; for Malvolio's nose is no whips'ock: My lady has a white hand, and the Myrmidons are no bottle-ale houses.

*Sir And.* Excellent! Why, this is the best fooling, when all is done. Now, a song.

*Sir To.* Come on; there is sixpence for you: let's have a song.

*Sir And.* There's a testril of me too: if one knight give a——

*Clo.* Would you have a love-song, or a song of good life?

*Sir To.* A love-song, a love-song.

*Sir And.* Ay, ay; I care not for good life.

### SONG.

*Clo.* O mistress mine, where are you roaming? [coming,

O, stay and hear; your true love's

That can sing both high and low:

Trip no further, pretty sweeting;

Journeys end in lovers' meeting,

Every wise man's son doth know.

*Sir And.* Excellent good, i'faith!

*Sir To.* Good, good.

*Clo.* What is love? 'tis not hereafter;

Present mirth hath present laughter;

What's to come, is still unsure:

In delay there lies no plenty;

Then come kiss me sweet-and-twenty,

Youth's a stuff will not endure.

*Sir And.* A mellifluous voice, as I am true knight.

*Sir To.* A contagious breath.

*Sir And.* Very sweet and contagious, i'faith.

*Sir To.* To hear by the nose, it is dulcet in contagion. But shall we make the welkin dance|| indeed? Shall we rouse the night-owl in a catch, that will draw three souls out of one weaver? shall we do that?

*Sir And.* An you love me, let's do't: I am dog at a catch.

*Clo.* By'r lady, sir, and some dogs will catch well.

*Sir And.* Most certain: let our catch be, *Thou knave.*

*Clo.* *Hold thy peace, thou knave, knight?* I shall be constrain'd in't to call thee knave, knight.

*Sir And.* 'Tis not the first time I have constrain'd one to call me knave. Begin, fool; it begins, *Hold thy peace.*

*Clo.* I shall never begin, if I hold my peace.

*Sir And.* Good, i'faith! Come, begin.

[They sing a catch.]

*Enter MARIA.*

*Mar.* What a catterwauling do you keep here! If my lady have not called up her steward, Malvolio, and bid him turn you out of doors, never trust me.

*Sir To.* My lady's a Cataian¶, we are politicians; Malvolio's a Peg-a-Ramsey \*\*, and *Three merry men we be*. Am not I consanguineous? am I not of her blood? Tilly-valley††, lady! *There dwelt a man in Babylon, lady, lady!* [Singing.]

*Clo.* Beshrew me, the knight's in admirable fooling.

*Sir And.* Ay, he does well enough, if he be disposed, and so do I too; he does it with a better grace, but I do it more natural.

*Sir To.* O, the twelfth day of December.—[Singing.]

*Mar.* For the love o' God, peate.

*Enter MALVOLIO.*

*Mal.* My masters, are you mad? or what are you? Have you no wit, manners, nor honesty, but to gabble like tinkers at this time of night? Do ye make an alehouse of my lady's house, that ye squeak out your coziers'‡ catches without any mitigation or remorse of voice? Is there no respect of place, persons, nor time in you?

*Sir To.* We did keep time, sir, in our catches. Sneek up §§!

*Mal.* Sir Toby, I must be round with you. My lady bade me tell you, that, though she harbours you as her kinsman, she's nothing allied to your disorders. If you can separate yourself and your misdemeanors, you are welcome to the house; if not, as it would please you to take leave of her, she is very willing to bid you farewell.

*Sir To.* Farewell, dear heart, since I must needs be gone.

*Mar.* Nay, good sir Toby.

*Clo.* *His eyes do shew his days are almost done.*

*Mal.* Is't even so?

*Sir To.* But I will never die.

*Clo.* Sir Toby, there you lie.

*Mal.* This is much credit to you.

*Sir To.* Shall I bid him go? [Singing.]

*Clo.* What an if you do?

*Sir To.* Shall I bid him go, and spare not?

*Clo.* O no, no, no, no, you dare not.

*Sir To.* Out o'time? sir, ye lie.—Art any more than a steward? Dost thou think, because thou art virtuous, there shall be no more cakes and ale?

*C o.* Yes, by Saint Anne; and ginger shall be hot i'the mouth too.

*Sir To.* Thou'rt i'the right.—Go, sir, rub

\* Loggerheads be. † Voice. ‡ Mistress. § I did impetticoat thy gratuity.

|| Drink till the sky turns round. ¶ Romancer. \*\* Name of an old song.

†† Equivalent to *filly, falty, shilly, shally*. ‡‡ Cobblers. §§ Hang yourself.

your chain \* with crums:—A stoop of wine, Maria!

*Mal.* Mistress Mary, if you prized my lady's favour at any thing more than contempt, you would not give means for this uncivil rule†; she shall know of it, by this hand. [Exit.

*Mar.* Go shake your ears.

*Sir And.* 'Twere as good a deed as to drink when a man's a hungry, to challenge him to the field; and then to break promise with him, and make a fool of him.

*Sir To.* Do't, knight; I'll write thee a challenge; or I'll deliver thy indignation to him by word of mouth.

*Mar.* Sweet sir Toby, be patient for to-night; since the youth of the count's was to-day with my lady, she is much out of quiet. For monsieur Malvolio, let me alone with him: if I do not gull him into a nay-word‡, and make him a common recreation, do not think I have wit enough to lie straight in my bed: I know, I can do it.

*Sir To.* Possess us §, possess us; tell us something of him.

*Mar.* Marry, sir, sometimes he is a kind of Puritan.

*Sir And.* O, if I thought that, I'd beat him like a dog.

*Sir To.* What, for being a Puritan? thy exquisite reason, dear knight?

*Sir And.* I have no exquisite reason for't, but I have reason good enough.

*Mar.* The devil a Puritan that he is, or any thing constantly but a time pleaser; an affectioned || ass, that cons state without book, and utters it by great swarths ¶: the best persuaded of himself, so crammed, as he thinks, with excellencies, that it is his ground of faith, that all that look on him love him; and on that vice in him will my revenge find notable cause to work.

*Sir To.* What wilt thou do?

*Mar.* I will drop in his way some obscure epistles of love; wherein, by the colour of his beard, the shape of his leg, the manner of his gait, the expressure of his eye, forehead, and complexion, he shall find himself most feelingly personated: I can write very like my lady, your niece; on a forgotten matter we can hardly make distinction of our hands.

*Sir To.* Excellent! I smell a device.

*Sir And.* I have't in my nose too.

*Sir To.* He shall think, by the letters that thou wilt drop, that they come from my niece, and that she is in love with him.

*Mar.* My purpose is, indeed, a horse of that colour.

*Sir And.* And your horse now would make him an ass.

*Mar.* Ass, I doubt not.

*Sir And.* O, 'twill be admirable.

*Mar.* Sport royal, I warrant you: I know, my physick will work with him. I will plant you two, and let the fool make a third,

where he shall find the letter; observe his construction of it. For this night, to bed, and dream on the event. Farewell. [Exit.

*Sir To.* Good night, Penthesilea \*\*.

*Sir And.* Before me, she's a good wench.

*Sir To.* She's a beagle, true-bred, and one that adores me; What o'that?

*Sir And.* I was adored once too.

*Sir To.* Let's to bed, knight.—Thou hadst need send for more money.

*Sir And.* If I cannot recover your niece, I am a foul way out.

*Sir To.* Send for money, knight; if thou hast her not i'the end, call me Cunt††.

*Sir And.* If I do not, never trust me, take it how you will.

*Sir To.* Come, come; I'll go burn some sack, 'tis too late to go to bed now: come, knight; come, knight. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE IV. A Room in the Duke's Palace.

Enter DUKE, VIOLA, CURIO, and others.

*Duke.* Give me some musick:—Now, good morrow, friends:—

Now, good Cesario, but that piece of song, That old and antique song we heard last night; Methought, it did relieve my passion much; More than light airs and recollected terms, Of these most brisk and giddy-paced times:—Come, but one verse.

*Cur.* He is not here, so please your lordship, that should sing it.

*Duke.* Who was it?

*Cur.* Feste, the jester, my lord: a fool, that the lady Olivia's father took much delight in: he is about the house.

*Duke.* Seek him out, and play the tune the while. [Exit CURIO.—Musick.

Come hither, boy; If ever thou shalt love, In the sweet pangs of it, remember me: For, such as I am, all true lovers are; Unstaid and skittish in all motions else, Save, in the constant image of the creature That is belov'd.—How dost thou like this tune?

*Vio.* It gives a very echo to the seat Where Love is thron'd.

*Duke.* Thou dost speak masterly: [eye My life upon't, young though thou art, thine Hath stay'd upon some favour ‡ that it loves; Hath it not, boy?

*Vio.* A little, by your favour.

*Duke.* What kind of woman is't?

*Vio.* Of your complexion.

*Duke.* She is not worth thee then. What years,

*Vio.* About your years my lord. [If faith?

*Duke.* Too old, by heaven; Let still the woman take

An elder than herself; so wears she to him, So sways she level in her husband's heart. For, boy, however we do praise ourselves, Our fancies are more giddy and unfirm, More longing, wavering, sooner lost and worn, Than women's are.

\* Stewards anciently wore a chain. † Method of life. ‡ Bye-word. § Inform us.  
|| Affected. ¶ The row of grass left by a mower. \*\* Amazon. †† Horse.  
‡‡ Countenance.



*Vio.* I think it well, my lord.

*Duke.* Then let thy love be younger than  
Or thy affection cannot hold the bent: [thyself,  
For women are as roses; whose fair flower,  
Being once display'd, doth fall that very hour.

*Vio.* And so they are: alas, that they are so;  
To die, even when they to perfection grow!

*Re-enter CURIO, and Clown.*

*Duke.* O fellow, come, the song we had last  
Mark it, Cesario; it is old, and plain. [night:—  
The spinsters and the knitters in the sun,  
And the free maids, that weave their thread  
with bones\*,

Do use to chaunt it; it is silly sooth†,  
And dallies with the innocence of love,  
Like the old age‡.

*Clo.* Are you ready, sir?

*Duke.* Ay; pr'ythee, sing. [Musick.

SONG.

*Clo.* Come away, come away, death,  
And in sad cypress let me be laid;

Fly away, fly away, breath;  
I am slain by a fair cruel maid.

My shroud of white, stuck all with yew,  
O, prepare it;

My part of death no one so true  
Did share it.

Not a flower, not a flower sweet,  
On my black coffin let there be strown;

Not a friend, not a friend greet  
My poor corpse, where my bones shall be  
A thousand thousand sighs to save, [thrown:

Lay me, O, where  
Sad true lover ne'er find my grave  
To weep there.

*Duke.* There's for thy pains. [singing, sir.

*Clo.* No pains, sir; I take pleasure in  
*Duke.* I'll pay thy pleasure then.

*Clo.* Truly, sir, and pleasure will be paid,  
one time or another.

*Duke.* Give me now leave to leave thee.

*Clo.* Now, the melancholy god protect  
thee; and the tailor make thy doublet  
of changeable taffata, for thy mind is a very opal§  
—I would have men of such constancy put  
to sea, that their business might be every  
thing, and their intent every where; for that's  
it, that always makes a good voyage of  
nothing.—Farewell. [Exit Clown.

*Duke.* Let all the rest give place—

[*Exeunt CURIO and Attendants.*

Once more, Cesario,

Get thee to yon' same sovereign cruelty:  
Tell her, my love, more noble than the world,  
Prizes not quantity of dirty lands;

The parts that fortune hath bestow'd upon her,  
Tell her, I hold as giddily as fortune;

But 'tis that miracle, and queen of gems,  
That nature pranks|| her in, attracts my soul.

*Vio.* But, if she cannot love you, sir?

*Duke.* I cannot be so answer'd.

*Vio.* 'Sooth, but you must.

Say, that some lady, as, perhaps, there is,  
Hath for your love as great a pang of heart  
As you have for Olivia: you cannot love her;

You tell her so; Must she not then be answer'd?

*Duke.* There is no woman's sides,  
Can bide the beating of so strong a passion  
As love doth give my heart: no woman's heart  
So big, to hold so much; they lack retention.  
Alas, their love may be call'd appetite,—  
No motion of the liver, but the palate,—  
That suffer surfeit, cloyment, and revolt;  
But mine is all as hungry as the sea,  
And can digest as much: make no compare  
Between that love a woman can bear me,  
And that I owe Olivia.

*Vio.* Ay, but I know,—

*Duke.* What dost thou know? [may owe:

*Vio.* Too well what love women to men  
In faith, they are as true of heart as we.  
My father had a daughter lov'd a man,  
As it might be, perhaps, were I a woman,  
I should your lordship.

*Duke.* And what's her history?

*Vio.* A blank, my lord: She never told her  
love,

But let concealment, like a worm i' the bud,  
Feed on her damask cheek: she pin'd in  
thought;

And, with a green and yellow melancholy,  
She sat like patience on a monument,  
Smiling at grief. Was not this love, indeed?  
We men may say more, swear more: but,  
indeed? [prove

Our shows are more than will; for still we  
Much in our vows, but little in our love.

*Duke.* But died thy sister of her love, my boy?

*Vio.* I am all the daughters of my father's  
house, [not:—

And all the brothers too;—and yet I know  
Sir, shall I to this lady?

*Duke.* Ay, that's the theme.

To her in haste; give her this jewel; say,  
My love can give no place, bide no denial¶.

[*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE V. Olivia's Garçon.

*Enter Sir TOBY BELCH, Sir ANDREW  
AGUE-CHEEK, and FABIAN.*

*Sir To.* Come thy ways, signior Fabian.

*Fab.* Nay, I'll come; if I lose a scruple of  
this sport, let me be boiled to death with  
melancholy.

*Sir To.* Would'st thou not be glad to have  
the niggardly rascally sheep-biter come by  
some notable shame?

*Fab.* I would exult, man: you know, he  
brought me out of favour with my lady, about  
a bear-baiting here.

*Sir To.* To anger him, we'll have the bear  
again; and we will fool him black and blue:—  
Shall we not, sir Andrew?

*Sir And.* An we do not, it is pity of our lives.

*Enter MARIA.*

*Sir To.* Here comes the little villain:—  
How now, my nettle of India?

*Mar.* Get ye all three into the box-tree:  
Malvolio's coming down this walk; he has  
been yonder i' the sun, practising behaviour

\* Lace makers. † Simple truth. ‡ Times of simplicity. § A precious stone of  
all colours. || Decks. ¶ Denial.

to his own shadow, this half hour: observe him, for the love of mockery; for, I know, this letter will make a contemplative idiot of him. Close, in the name of jesting! [*The men hide themselves.*] Lie thou there; [*throws down a letter.*] for here comes the trout that must be caught with tickling.

[*Exit MARIA.*]

*Enter MALVOLIO.*

*Mal.* 'Tis but fortune; all is fortune. Maria once told me, she did affect me: and I have heard herself come thus near, that, should she fancy\*, it should be one of my complexion. Besides, she uses me with a more exalted respect, than any one else that follows her. What should I think on't?

*Sir To.* Here's an over-weening rogue!

*Fab.* O, peace! Contemplation makes a rare turkey-cock of him; how he jets† under his advanced plumes!

*Sir And.* 'Slight, I could so beat the rogue:—

*Sir To.* Peace, I say.

*Mal.* To be count Malvolio;—

*Sir To.* Ah, rogue!

*Sir And.* Pistol him, pistol him.

*Sir To.* Peace, peace!

*Mal.* There is example for't; the lady of the strachy married the yeoman of the wardrobe.

*Sir And.* Fie on him, Jezebel!

*Fab.* O, peace! now he's deeply in; look, how imagination blows‡ him.

*Mal.* Having been three months married to her, sitting in my state§,—

*Sir To.* O, for a stone-bow, to hit him in the eye!

*Mal.* Calling my officers about me, in my branched velvet gown; having come from a day bed||, where I left Olivia sleeping:

*Sir To.* Fire and brimstone!

*Fab.* O, peace, peace!

*Mal.* And then to have the humour of state: and after a demure travel of regard,—telling them, I know my place, as I would they should do theirs,—to ask for my kinsman Toby:

*Sir To.* Bolts and shackles!

*Fab.* O, peace, peace, peace! now, now.

*Mal.* Seven of my people, with an obedient start, make out for him: I frown the while; and, perchance, wind up my watch, or play with some rich jewel. Toby approaches; court'sies there to me:

*Sir To.* Shall this fellow live?

*Fab.* Though our silence be drawn from us with cars, yet peace.

*Mal.* I extend my hand to him thus, quenching my familiar smile with an austere regard of control:

*Sir To.* And does not Toby take you a blow o'the lips then?

*Mal.* Saying, *Cousin Toby, my fortunes having cast me on your niece, give me this prerogative of speech:—*

*Sir To.* What, what?

*Mal.* You must amend your drunkenness.

*Sir To.* Out, scab!

*Fab.* Nay, patience, or we break the sinews of our plot.

*Mal.* Besides, you waste the treasure your time with a foolish knight;

*Sir And.* That's me, I warrant you.

*Mal.* One Sir Andrew:

*Sir And.* I knew, 'twas I; for many call me fool.

*Mal.* What employment have we here?

[*Taking up the letter.*]

*Fab.* Now is the woodcock near the gin.

*Sir To.* O, peace! and the spirit of humours intimate reading aloud to him!

*Mal.* By my life, this is my lady's hand: these be her very C's, her U's, and her T's; and thus makes she her great P's. It is, in contempt of question, her hand.

*Sir And.* Her C's, her U's, and her T's: Why that?

*Mal.* [*reads.*] *To the unknown beloved, this, and my good wishes: her very phrases!—By your leave, wax.—Soft!—and the impudence her Lucrece, with which she uses to seal: 'tis my lady: To whom should this be?*

*Fab.* This wins him, liver and all.

*Mal.* [*reads.*] *Jove knows, I love:*

*But who?*

*Lips do not move,*

*No man must know.*

*No man must know.*—What follows? the numbers altered!—*No man must know:—If this should be thee, Malvolio?*

*Sir To.* Marry, hang thee, brock¶!

*Mal.* I may command, where I adore:

*But silence, like a Lucrece knife, With bloodless stroke my heart doth gore;*

*M, O, A, I, doth sway my life.*

*Fab.* A fustian riddle!

*Sir To.* Excellent wench, say I.

*Mal.* M, O, A, I, doth sway my life.—Nay, but first, let me see,—let me see,—let me see.

*Fab.* What a dish of poison has she dressed him!

*Sir To.* And with what wing the stannyl\*\* checks†† at it!

*Mal.* I may command where I adore.

Why, she may command me; I serve her, she is my lady. Why, this is evident to any formal capacity. There is no obstruction in this:—And the end,—What should that alphabetical position portend? if I could make that resemble something in me,—Softly!—*M, O, A, I,—*

*Sir To.* O, ay! make up that:—he is now at a cold scent.

*Fab.* Sowter‡ will cry upon't, for all this, though it be as rank as a fox.

*Mal.* M,—Malvolio;—*M*,—why, that begins my name.

*Fab.* Did not I say, he would work it out? the cur is excellent at faults.

*Mal.* M,—But then there is no consonancy in the sequel; that suffers under probation: A should follow, but O does.

*Fab.* And O shall end, I hope.

\* Love. † Struts. ‡ Puffs him up.  
\*\* Hawk. †† Flies at it.

§ State-chair. || Couch. ¶ Badges.  
‡ Name of a hound.

*Sir To.* Ay, or I'll cudgel him, and make him cry, O.

*Mal.* And then *I* comes behind;

*Fab.* Ay, an you had any eye behind you, you might see more detraction at your heels, than fortunes before you.

*Mal.* M, O, A, I;—This simulation is not as the former:—and yet, to crush this a little, it would bow to me, for every one of these letters are in my name. Soft; here follows prose.—*If this fall into thy hand, revolve. In my stars I am above thee; but be not afraid of greatness: Some are born great, some achieve greatness, and some have greatness thrust upon them. Thy fates open their hands; let thy blood and spirit embrace them. And, to inure thyself to what thou art like to be, cast thy humble slough\*, and appear fresh. Be opposite with a kinsman, surly with servants: let thy tongue tang arguments of state; put thyself into the trick of singularity: She thus advises thee, that sighs for thee. Remember who commended thy yellow stockings; and wished to see thee ever cross-gartered: I say, remember. Go to; thou art made, if thou desirest to be so; if not, let me see thee a steward still, the fellow of servants, and not worthy to touch fortune's fingers. Farewell. She that would utter services with thee,*

*The fortunate-unhappy.*

Day-light and champion † discovers not more: this is open. I will be proud, I will read politic authors, I will baffle Sir Toby, I will wash off gross acquaintance, I will be point-de-vice‡, the very man. I do not now fool myself, to let imagination jade me; for every reason excites to this, that my lady loves me. She did commend my yellow stockings of late, she did praise my leg being cross-gartered; and in this she manifests herself to my love, and, with a kind of injunction, drives me to these habits of her liking. I thank my

stars, I am happy. I will be strange, stout, in yellow stockings, and cross gartered, even with the swiftness of putting on. Jove, and my stars be praised!—Here is yet a postscript. *Thou canst not choose but know who I am. If thou entertainest my love, let it appear in thy smiling; thy smiles become thee well: therefore in my presence still smile, dear my sweet, I pryther.* Jove, I thank thee.—I will smile; I will do every thing that thou wilt have me. [Exit.

*Fab.* I will not give my part of this sport for a pension of thousands to be paid from the Sophy.

*Sir To.* I could marry this wench for this device:

*Sir And.* So could I too.

*Sir To.* And ask no other dowry with her but such another jest.

*Enter MARIA.*

*Sir And.* Nor I neither.

*Fab.* Here comes my noble gull-catcher.

*Sir To.* Wilt thou set thy foot o' my neck?

*Sir And.* Or o' mine either?

*Sir To.* Shall I play my freedom at tray trip§, and become thy bond-slave?

*Sir And.* Pfaiih, or I either.

*Sir To.* Why, thou hast put him in such a dream, that, when the image of it leaves him, he must run mad.

*Mar.* Nay, but say true; does it work upon him?

*Sir To.* Like aqua-vitæ with a midwife.  
*Mar.* If you will then see the fruits of the sport, mark his first approach before my lady: he will come to her in yellow stockings, and 'tis a colour she abhors; and cross-gartered, a fashion she detests; and he will smile upon her, which will now be so unsuitable to her disposition, being addicted to a melancholy as she is, that it cannot but turn him into a notable contempt: if you will see it, follow me.

*Sir To.* To the gates of Tartar, thou most excellent devil of wit!

*Sir And.* I'll make one too.

*Exeunt*

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. Olivia's Garden.

*Enter VIOLA, and Clown with a Tabor.*

*Vio.* Save thee, friend, and thy musick: Dost thou live by thy tabor?

*Cl.* No, sir, I live by the church.

*Vio.* Art thou a churchman?

*Cl.* No such matter, sir; I do live by the church: for I do live at my house, and my house doth stand by the church.

*Vio.* So thou may'st say, the king lies|| by a beggar, if a beggar dwell near him: or, the church stands by thy tabor, if thy tabor stand by the church.

*Cl.* You have said, sir.—To see this age!—A sentence is but a cheveril ¶ glove to a good

wit; How quickly the wrong side may be turned outward!

*Vio.* Nay, that's certain; they, that dally nicely with words, may quickly make them wanton.

*Cl.* I would therefore, my sister had had no name, sir.

*Vio.* Why, man?

*Cl.* Why, sir, her name's a word; and to dally with that word, might make my sister wanton: But, indeed, words are very rascals, since bonds disgraced them.

*Vio.* Thy reason, man?

*Cl.* Troth, sir, I can yield you none without words; and words are grown so false, I am loath to prove reason with them.

\* Skin of a snake.

† Open country.  
three and trip.

‡ Utmost exactness.  
§ Dwells.

¶ A boy's diversion

¶ Kid.



*Vio.* I warrant, thou art a merry fellow, and carest for nothing.

*Clo.* Not so, sir, I do care for something; but in my conscience, sir, I do not care for you; if that be to care for nothing, sir, I would it would make you invisible.

*Vio.* Art not thou the lady Olivia's fool?

*Clo.* No, indeed, sir; the lady Olivia has no folly: she will keep no fool, sir, till she be married; and fools are as like husbands, as pilchards are to herrings, the husband's the bigger; I am, indeed, not her fool, but her corrupter of words.

*Vio.* I saw thee late at the count Orsino's.

*Clo.* Foolery, sir, does walk about the orb, like the sun; it shines every where. I would be sorry, sir, but the fool should be as oft with your master, as with my mistress: I think, I saw your wisdom there.

*Vio.* Nay, an thou pass upon me, I'll no more with thee. Hold, there's expences for thee.

*Clo.* Now Jove, in his next commodity of hair, send thee a beard!

*Vio.* By my troth, I'll tell thee; I am almost sick for one; though I would not have it grow on my chin. Is thy lady within?

*Clo.* Would not a pair of these have bred, sir?

*Vio.* Yes, being kept together, and put to use.

*Clo.* I would play lord Pandarus\* of Phrygia, sir, to bring a Cressida to this Troilus.

*Vio.* I understand you, sir; 'tis well begg'd.

*Clo.* The matter, I hope, is not great, sir, begging but a beggar; Cressida was a beggar. My lady is within, sir. I will construe to them whence you come; who you are, and what you would, are out of my welkin: I might say, element; but the word is over-worn. [Exit.]

*Vio.* This fellow's wise enough to play the And, to do that well, craves a kind of wit: [fool; He must observe their mood on whom he jests, The quality of persons, and the time; And, like the haggard†, check at every feather That comes before his eye. This is a practice, As full of labour as a wise man's art: For folly, that he wisely shows, is fit; But wise men, folly-fallen, quite taint their wit. Enter Sir TOBY BELCH and Sir ANDREW

AGUE-CHEEK.

*Sir To.* Save you, gentleman.

*Vio.* And you, sir.

*Sir And.* Dieu vous garde, monsieur.

*Vio.* Et vous aussi; votre serviteur.

*Sir And.* I hope, sir, you are; and I am yours.

*Sir To.* Will you encounter the house? my niece is desirous you should enter, if your trade be to her.

*Vio.* I am bound to your niece, sir: I mean, she is the list‡ of my voyage.

*Sir To.* Taste your legs, sir, put them to motion.

*Vio.* My legs do better understand me, sir, than I understand what you mean by bidding me taste my legs.

*Sir To.* I mean, to go, sir, to enter.

*Vio.* I will answer you with gait and entrance: But we are prevented.

Enter OLIVIA and MARIA.

Most excellent accomplished lady, the heavens rain odours on you!

*Sir And.* That youth's a rare courtier Rain odours! well.

*Vio.* My matter hath no voice, lady, but to your own most pregnant‡ and vouchsafed ear.

*Sir And.* Odours, pregnant, and vouchsafed.—I'll get 'em all three ready.

*Oli.* Let the garden door be shut, and leave me to my hearing.

[Exit Sir TOBY, Sir ANDREW, & MARIA. Give me your hand, sir.

*Vio.* My duty, madam, and most humble

*Oli.* What is your name? [service.]

*Vio.* Cesario is your servant's name, fair princess. [world.]

*Oli.* My servant, sir! 'Twas never merry Since lowly feigning was call'd compliment: You are servant to the count Orsino, youth.

*Vio.* And he is yours, and his must needs be yours;

Your servant's servant is your servant, madam.

*Oli.* For him, I think not on him: for his thoughts, [with me!]

'Would they were blanks, rather than fill'd

*Vio.* Madam, I come to whet your gentle On his behalf:— [thought.]

*Oli.* O, by your leave, I pray you;

I bade you never speak again of him:

But, would you undertake another suit,

I had rather hear you to solicit that,

Than musick from the spheres.

*Vio.* Dear lady,—

*Oli.* Give me leave, I beseech you: I did

After the last enchantment you did here, [send]

A ring in chase of you; so did I abuse

Myself, my servant, and, I fear me, you:

Under your hard construction must I sit,

To force that on you, in a shameful cunning,

Which you knew none of yours: What might

you think?

Have you not set mine honour at the stake,

And baited it with all the unmuzzled thoughts

That tyrannous heart can think? To one of

your receiving!

Enough is shown; a cyprus, not a bosom,

Hides my poor heart: So let me hear you

*Vio.* I pity you. [speak.]

*Oli.* That's a degree to love.

*Vio.* No, not a grise¶; for 'tis a vulgar proof,

That very oft we pity enemies. [again:]

*Oli.* Why, then, methinks, 'tis time to smile

O world, how apt the poor are to be proud!

If one should be a prey, how much the better

To fall before the lion, than the wolf?

[Clock strikes.]

The clock upbraids me with the waste of time.—

Be not afraid, good youth, I will not have you:

And yet, when wit and youth is come to harvest,

Your wife is like to reap a proper man:

There lies your way, due west.

\* See the play of *Troilus and Cressida*. † A hawk not well trained. ‡ Bound, limit.

§ Ready.

|| Ready apprehension.

¶ Step.

*Vio.* Then westward-hoe :  
Grace, and good disposition 'tend your lady-  
You'll nothing, madam, to my lord by me ! [ship!  
*Oli.* Stay :

*I pr'ythee*, tell me, what thou think'st of me.

*Vio.* That you do think, you are not what you

*Oli.* If I think so, I think the same of you. [are.

*Vio.* Then think you right ; I am not what  
I am. [you be !

*Oli.* I would, you were as I would have

*Vio.* Would it be better, madam, than I am.  
I wish it might ; for now I am your fool.

*Oli.* O, what a deal of scorn looks beautiful  
In the contempt and anger of his lip !

A murd'rous guilt shows not itself more soon  
Than love that would seem hid : love's night  
Cesario, by the roses of the spring, [is noon.  
By maidhood, honour, truth, and every thing,  
I love thee so, that, maugre \* all thy pride,  
Nor wit, nor reason, can my passion hide.  
Do not extort thy reasons from this clause,  
For, that I woo, thou therefore hast no cause :  
But, rather, reason thus with reason fetter : [ter.  
Love sought is good, but given unsought, is bet-

*Vio.* By innocence I swear, and by my youth,  
I have one heart, one bosom, and one truth,  
And that no woman has ; nor never none  
Shall mistress be of it, save I alone.

And so adieu, good madam ; never more  
Will I my master's tears to you deplore.

*Oli.* Yet come again : for thou, perhaps,  
may'st move

That heart, which now abhors, to like his love.  
[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II. A Room in Olivia's House.

*Enter Sir TOBY BELCH, Sir ANDREW  
AGUE-CHEEK, and FABIAN.*

*Sir And.* No, faith, I'll not stay a jot longer.

*Sir To.* Thy reason, dear venom, give thy  
reason.

*Fab.* You must needs yield your reason, sir  
Andrew.

*Sir And.* Marry, I saw your niece do more  
favours to the count's serving man, than ever  
she bestowed upon me ; I saw't i'the orchard.

*Sir To.* Did she see thee the while, old  
boy ? tell me that.

*Sir And.* As plain as I see you now.

*Fab.* This was a great argument of love in  
her toward you.

*Sir And.* 'Slight ! will you make an ass o' me ?

*Fab.* I will prove it legitimate, sir, upon  
the oaths of judgment and reason.

*Sir To.* And they have been grand jury-  
men, since before Noah was a sailor.

*Fab.* She did show favour to the youth in  
your sight, only to exasperate you, to awake  
your dormouse valour, to put fire in your heart,  
and brimstone in your liver : You should then  
have accosted her ; and with some excellent  
jests, fire-new from the mint, you should have  
banged the youth into dumbness. This was  
looked for at your hand, and this was balked :  
the double gilt of this opportunity you let

time wash off, and you are now sailed into the  
north of my lady's opinion ; where you will  
hang like an icicle on a Dutchman's beard,  
unless you do redeem it by some laudable at-  
tempt, either of valour, or policy.

*Sir And.* And't be any way, it must be with  
valour ; for policy I hate : I had as lief be a  
Brownist †, as a politician.

*Sir To.* Why then, build me thy fortunes  
upon the basis of valour. Challenge me the  
count's youth to fight with him ; hurt him in  
eleven places ; my niece shall take note of it :  
and assure thyself, there is no love-broker in  
the world can more prevail in man's com-  
mendation with woman, than report of valour.

*Fab.* There is no way but this, sir Andrew.

*Sir And.* Will either of you bear me a  
challenge to him ?

*Sir To.* Go, write it in a martial hand ; be  
curst ‡ and brief ; it is no matter how witty,  
so it be eloquent, and full of invention : taunt  
him with the licence of ink : if thou thou'st  
him some thrice, it shall not be amiss ; and as  
many lies as will lie in thy sheet of paper, al-  
though the sheet were big enough for the bed  
of Ware § in England, set 'em down ; go, about  
it. Let there be gall enough in thy ink ; though  
thou write with a goose-pen, no matter : About it.

*Sir And.* Where shall I find you ?

*Sir To.* We'll call thee at the *cubiculo* ¶ :  
Go. [Exit Sir ANDREW.

*Fab.* This is a dear manakin to you, sir Toby.

*Sir To.* I have been dear to him, lad ; some  
two thousand strong, or so.

*Fab.* We shall have a rare letter from him ;  
but you'll not deliver it.

*Sir To.* Never trust me then ; and by all  
means stir on the youth to an answer. I think,  
oxen and wainropes ¶ cannot hale them toge-  
ther. For Andrew, if he were opened, and you  
find so much blood in his liver as will clog the  
foot of a flea, I'll eat the rest of the anatomy.

*Fab.* And his opposite, the youth, bears in  
his visage no great presage of cruelty.

*Enter MARIA.*

*Sir To.* Look, where the youngest wren of  
nine comes.

*Mar.* If you desire the spleen, and will laugh  
yourselves into stitches, follow me : you' gull  
Malvolio is turned heathen, a very renegade ;  
for there is no Christian, that means to be saved  
by believing rightly, can ever believe such  
impossible passages of grossness. He's in yel-  
low stockings.

*Sir To.* And cross-gartered ?

*Mar.* Most villainously ; like a pedant that  
keeps a school i'the church.—I have dogged  
him, like his murderer : He does obey every  
point of the letter that I dropped to betray him.  
He does smile his face into more lines, than  
are in the new map, with the augmentation of  
the Indies : you have not seen such a thing as  
'tis ; I can hardly forbear hurling things at him.  
I know, my lady will strike him ; if she do,  
he'll smile, and take't for a great favour.

\* In spite of. † Separatists in Queen Elizabeth's reign. ‡ Crabbed. § In Hertford-  
shire, which held forty persons. ¶ Chamber. ¶ Wagon ropes.

*Sir To.* Come, bring us, bring us where he is. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—A Street.

*Enter ANTONIO and SEBASTIAN.*

*Seb.* I would not, by my will, have troubled you; [*pains,*]  
But, since you make your pleasure of your I will no further chide you.

*Ant.* I could not stay behind you; my desire, More sharp than filed steel, did spur me forth; And not all love to see you, (though so much, As might have drawn one to a longer voyage,) But jealousy what might befall your travel, Being skillless in these parts; which to a stranger,

Unguided, and unfriended, often prove Rough and inhospitable: My willing love, The rather by these arguments of fear, Set forth in your pursuit.

*Seb.* My kind Antonio, I can no other answer make, but, thanks, And thanks, and ever thanks: Often good turns Are shuffled off with such uncurent pay: But, were my worth\*, as is my conscience, firm, You should find better dealing. What's to do? Shall we go see the reliques of this town?

*Ant.* To morrow, sir; best, first, go see your lodging.

*Seb.* I am not weary, and 'tis long to night; I pray you, let us satisfy our eyes With the memorials, and the things of fame, That do renown this city.

*Ant.* Would, you'd pardon me; I do not without danger walk these streets: Once in a sea-fight, 'gainst the Count his galleys, I did some service; of such note indeed, That, were I ta'en here, it would scarce be answer'd. [*people.*]

*Seb.* Belike, you slew great number of his  
*Ant.* The offence is not of such a bloody nature;

Albeit the quality of the time, and quarrel, Might well have given us bloody argument. It might have since been answer'd in repaying What we took from them; which, for traffick's sake,

Most of our city did: only myself stood out: For which, if I be lapsed† in this place, I shall pay dear.

*Seb.* Do not then walk too open.

*Ant.* It doth not fit me. Hold, sir, here's my In the south suburbs, at the Elephant, [purse; Is best to lodge: I will bespeak our diet, Whiles you beguile the time, and feed your knowledge, [*have me.*]

With viewing of the town; there shall you  
*Seb.* Why I your purse? [*toy*]

*Ant.* Haply, your eye shall light upon some You have desire to purchase; and your store, I think, is not for idle markets, sir. [*you for*]

*Seb.* I'll be your purse-bearer, and leave An hour.

*Ant.* To the Elephant.—

*Seb.* I do remember. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. Olivia's Garden.

*Enter OLIVIA and MARIA.*

*Oli.* I have sent after him: He says, he'll come;

How shall I feast him? what bestow on him? For youth is bought more oft, than begg'd, I speak too loud. — [*or borrow'd.*]

Where is Malvolio?—he is sad, and civil, And suits well for a servant with my for— Where is Malvolio? [*tunes;—*]

*Mar.* He's coming, madam; But in strange manner. He is sure possess'd.

*Oli.* Why, what's the matter? does he rave?  
*Mar.* No, madam,

He does nothing but smile: your ladyship Were best have guard about you, if he come; For, sure, the man is tainted in his wits.

*Oli.* Go call him hither. — I'm as mad as he, If sad and merry madness equal be. —

*Enter MALVOLIO.*

How now, Malvolio?

*Mal.* Sweet lady, ho, ho. [*Smiles fantas- tically.*]

*Oli.* Smil'st thou?

I sent for thee upon a sad occasion.  
*Mal.* Sad, lady? I could be sad: This does make some obstruction in the blood, this cross-gartering; But what of that, if it please the eye of one, it is with me as the very true sonnet is: *Please one, and please all.*

*Oli.* Why, how dost thou, man? what is the matter with thee?

*Mal.* Not black in my mind, though yellow in my legs: it did come to his hands, and commands shall be executed. I think, we do know the sweet Roman hand.

*Oli.* Wilt thou go to bed, Malvolio?

*Mal.* To bed? ay, sweet-heart; and I'll come to thee.

*Oli.* God comfort thee! Why dost thou smile so, and kiss thy hand so oft?

*Mar.* How do you, Malvolio?

*Mal.* At your request? Yes; Nightingales answer daws.

*Mar.* Why appear you with this ridiculous boldness before my lady?

*Mal.* Be not afraid of greatness:—'Twas well writ.

*Oli.* What meanest thou by that, Malvolio?

*Mal.* Some are born great,—

*Oli.* Ha?

*Mal.* Some achieve greatness,—

*Oli.* What say'st thou?

*Mal.* And some have greatness thrust upon them.

*Oli.* Heaven restore thee!

*Mal.* Remember, who commended thy yellow stockings; —

*Oli.* Thy yellow stockings?

*Mal.* And wished to see thee cross-gartered.

*Oli.* Cross-gartered?

*Mal.* Go to: thou art made, if thou desirest to be so; —

*Oli.* Am I made?

*Mal.* If not, let me see thee a servant still.

*Oli.* Why, this is very midsummer madness.

\* Wealth. † Caught. ‡ Grave and demure. § Grave. || Hot weather madness.



*Enter Servant.*

*Ser.* Madam, the young gentleman of the count Orsino's is returned; I could hardly entreat him back: he attends your ladyship's pleasnie.

*Oli.* I'll come to him. [*Exit Servant.*] Good Maria, let this fellow be looked to. Where's my cousin Toby? Let some of my people have a special care of him; I would not have him miscarry for the half of my dowry.

[*Reunt OLIVIA and MARIA.*]

*Mal.* Oh, ho! do you come near me now? no worse man than sir Toby to look to me? This concurs directly with the letter: she sends him on purpose, that I may appear stubborn to him; for she incites me to that in the letter. *Cast thy humble slough,* says she; *be opposite with a kinsman, surly with servants,—let thy tongue tung with arguments of state,—put thyself into the trick of singularity;*—and, consequently, sets down the manner how; as, a sad face, a reverend carriage, a slow tongue, in the habit of some sir of note, and so forth. I have limed her\*; but it is Jove's doing, and Jove make me thankful! And, when she went away now, *Let this fellow be looked to:* Fellow†! not Malvolio, nor after my degree, but fellow. Why, every thing adheres together; that no drain of a scruple, no scruple of a scruple, no obstacle, no incredulous or unsafe circumstance,—What can be said? Nothing, that can be, can come between me and the full prospect of my hopes. Well, Jove, not I, is the doer of this, and he is to be thanked.

*Re-enter MARIA, with Sir TOBY BELCH, and FABIAN.*

*Sir To.* Which way is he, in the name of sanctity? If all the devils in hell be drawn in little, and Legion himself possessed him, yet I'll speak to him.

*Fab.* Here he is, here he is:—How is't with you, sir? how is't with you, man?  
*Mal.* Go off; I discard you; let me enjoy my private; go off.

*Mar.* Lo, how hollow the fiend speaks within him! did not I tell you?—Sir Toby, my lady prays you to have a care of him.

*Mal.* Ah, ha! does she so?

*Sir To.* Go to, go to; peace, peace, we must deal gently with him; let me alone. How do you, Malvolio? how is't with you? What, man! defy the devil: consider, he's an enemy to mankind.

*Mal.* Do you know what you say?

*Mar.* La you, an you speak ill of the devil, how he takes it at heart! Pray God, he be not bewitched!

*Fab.* Carry his water to the wise woman.

*Mar.* Marry, and it shall be done to-morrow morning, if I live. My lady would not lose him for more than I'll say.

*Mal.* How now, mistress?

*Mar.* O lord!

*Sir To.* P'r'ythee, hold thy peace: this is

not the way: Do you not see, you move him? let me alone with him.

*Fab.* No way but gentleness; gently, gently: the fiend is rough, and will not be roughly used.

*Sir To.* Why, how now, my bawcock? how dost thou, chuck?

*Mal.* Sir?

*Sir To.* Ay, Biddy, come with me. What, man! 'tis not for gravity to play at cherry-pit§ with Satan: Hang him, foul collier||!

*Mar.* Get him to say his prayers; good sir Toby, get him to pray.

*Mal.* My prayers, minx?

*Mar.* No, I warrant you, he will not hear of godliness.

*Mal.* Go, hang yourselves all! you are idle shallow things: I am not of your element; you shall know more hereafter. [*Exit.*]

*Sir To.* Is't possible?

*Fab.* If this were played upon a stage now, I could condemn it as an improbable fiction.

*Sir To.* His very genius hath taken the infection of the device, man.

*Mar.* Nay, pursue him now; lest the device take air, and taint.

*Fab.* Why, we shall make him mad, indeed.

*Mar.* The house will be the quieter.

*Sir To.* Come, we'll have him in a dark room, and bound. My niece is already in the belief that he is mad; we may carry it thus, for our pleasure, and his penance, till our very p'stime, tired out of breath, prompt us to have mercy on him: at which time, we will bring the device to the bar, and crown thee for a finder of madmen. But see, but see.

*Enter Sir ANDREW AGUE-CHEEK.*

*Fab.* More matter for a May morning.

*Sir And.* Here's the challenge, read it; I warrant, there's vinegar and pepper in't.

*Fab.* Is't so saucy?

*Sir And.* Ay, is it, I warrant him: do but read.

*Sir To.* Give me. [*reads.*] *Youth, what o'er thou art, thou art but a scurvy fellow.*

*Fab.* Good, and valiant.

*Sir To.* *Wonder not, nor admire not in thy mind, why I do call thee so, for I will show thee no reason for't.*

*Fab.* A good note: that keeps you from the blow of the law.

*Sir To.* *Thou comest to the lady Olivia, and in my sight she uses thee kindly: but thou liest in thy throat, that is not the matter I challenge thee for.*

*Fab.* Very brief, and exceeding good senseless.

*Sir To.* *I will way-lay thee going home; where if it be thy chance to kill me,—*

*Fab.* Good.

*Sir To.* *Thou killest me like a rogue and a villain.*

*Fab.* Still you keep o'the windy side of the law; good.

*Sir To.* *Fare thee well; And God have mercy upon one of our souls! He may have mercy upon mine; but my hope is better*

\* Caught her as a bird with birdlime.

† Companion.

‡ Jolly cock, bean and coq.

§ A play among boys.

|| Colliers were accounted great cheats.

and so look to thyself. Thy friend, as thou seest him, and thy sworn enemy. **ANDREW AGUE-CHEEK.**

**Sir To.** If this letter move him not, his legs cannot: I'll give't him.

**Mar.** You may have very fit occasion for't; he is now in some commerce with my lady, and will by and by depart.

**Sir To.** Go, sir Andrew; scout me for him at the corner of the orchard, like a bum-bailiff; so soon as ever thou seest him, draw; and, as thou drawest, swear horrible; for it comes to pass oft, that a terrible oath, with a swaggering accent sharply twanged off, gives manhood more approbation than ever proof itself would have earned him. Away.

**Sir And.** Nay, let me alone for swearing.

[Exit.]

**Sir To.** Now will not I deliver his letter: for the behaviour of the young gentleman gives him out to be of good capacity and breeding; his employment between his lord and my niece confirms no less; therefore this letter, being so excellently ignorant, will breed no terror in the youth, he will find it comes from a clodpole. But, sir, I will deliver his challenge by word of mouth; set upon Ague-cheek a notable report of valour; and drive the gentleman, (as, I know, his youth will aptly receive it,) into a most hideous opinion of his rage, skill, fury, and impetuosity. This will so fright them both, that they will kill one another by the look, like cockatrices.

Enter OLIVIA and VIOLA.

**Fab.** Here he comes with your niece: give them way, till he take leave, and presently after him.

**Sir To.** I will meditate the while upon some horrid message for a challenge.

[Re-enter Sir TOBY, FABIAN, and MARIA.]

**Oli.** I have said too much unto a heart of And laid mine honour too unchary \*out: [stone, There's something in me, that reproves my But such a headstrong potent fault it is, [fault; That it but mocks reproof. [beats,

**Vio.** With the same 'haviour that your passion Go on my master's griefs. [picture;

**Oli.** Here, wear this jewel for me, 'tis my Refuse it not, it hath no tongue to vex you: And, I beseech you, come again to-morrow. What shall you ask of me, that I'll deny; That honour, sav'd, may upon asking give?

**Vio.** Nothing but this, your true love for my master. [that

**Oli.** How with mine honour may I give him Which I have given to you?

**Vio.** I will acquit you.

**Oli.** Well, come again to-morrow: Fare thee well;

A fiend, like thee, might bear my soul to hell.

[Exit.]

Re-enter Sir TOBY BELCH, and FABIAN.

**Sir To.** Gentleman, God save thee.

**Vio.** And you, sir.

**Sir To.** That defence thou hast, betake thee to't: of what nature the wrongs are thou hast

done him, I know not; but thy interceptor, full of despite, bloody as the hunter, attends thee at the orchard end: dismount thy tuck, be yare† in thy preparation, for thy assailant is quick, skilful, and deadly.

**Vio.** You mistake, sir; I am sure, no man hath any quarrel to me: my remembrance is very free and clear from any image of offence done to any man.

**Sir To.** You will find it otherwise, I assure you: therefore, if you hold your life at any price, betake you to your guard; for your opposite hath in him what youth, strength, skill, and wrath, can furnish man withal.

**Vio.** I pray you, sir, what is he?

**Sir To.** He is knight, dubbed with unhacked rapier, and on carpet consideration; but he is a devil in private brawl: souls and bodies hath he divorced three; and his incensement at this moment is so implacable, that satisfaction can be none but by pangs of death and sepulchre: hob, nob, is his word; give't, or take't.

**Vio.** I will return again into the house, and desire some conduct of the lady. I am no fighter. I have heard of some kind of men, that put quarrels purposely on others, to taste their valour: belike, this is a man of that quirk§.

**Sir To.** Sir, no; his indignation derives itself out of a very competent injury; therefore, get you on, and give him his desire. Back you shall not to the house, unless you undertake that with me, which with as much safety you might answer him: therefore, on, or strip your sword stark naked; for meddle you must, that's certain, or forswear to wear iron about you.

**Vio.** This is as uncivil as strange. I beseech you, do me this courteous office, as to know of the knight what my offence to him is; it is something of my negligence, nothing of my purpose.

**Sir To.** I will do so. Signior Fabian, stay you by this gentleman till my return.

[Exit Sir TOBY.]

**Vio.** Pray you, sir, do you know of this matter?

**Fab.** I know, the knight is incensed against you, even to a mortal arbitrement||; but nothing of the circumstance more.

**Vio.** I beseech you, what manner of man is he?

**Fab.** Nothing of that wonderful promise, to read him by his form, as you are like to find him in the proof of his valour. He is, indeed, sir, the most skilful, bloody, and fatal opposite¶ that you could possibly have found in any part of Illyria: Will you walk towards him? I will make your peace with him, if I can.

**Vio.** I shall be much bound to you for't: I am one that would rather go with sir priest than sir knight: I care not who knows so much of my mettle. [Re-enter Sir TOBY, with Sir ANDREW.]

**Sir To.** Why, man, he's a very devil; I

\* Uncautiously. † Rapier. ‡ Ready.

§ Sort. || Decision. ¶ Adversary.

have not seen such a virago. I had a pass with him, rapier, scabbard, and all, and he gives me the stuck-in\*, with such a mortal motion, that it is inevitable; and on the answer, he pays you† as surely as your feet hit the ground they step on: They say, he has been fencer to the Sophy.

*Sir And.* Pox on't, I'll not meddle with him.

*Sir To.* Ay, but he will not now be pacified: Fabian can scarce hold him yonder.

*Sir And.* Plague on't; an I thought he had been valiant, and so cunning in fence, I'd have seen him dunned ere I'd have challenged him. Let him let the matter slip, and I'll give him my horse, grey Capilet.

*Sir To.* I'll make the motion: Stand here, make a good show on't; this shall end without the perdition of souls: Marry, I'll ride your horse as well as I ride you. [Aside.]

*Re-enter FABIAN and VIOLA.*

I have his horse [to FAB.] to take up the quarrel; I have persuaded him, the youth's a devil.

*Fab.* He is as horribly conceited‡ of him; and pants, and looks pale, as if a bear were at his heels.

*Sir To.* There's no remedy, sir; he will fight with you for his oath sake: marry, he hath better bethought him of his quarrel, and he finds that now scarce to be worth talking of: therefore draw, for the supportance of his vow; he protests he will not hurt you.

*Vio.* Pray God defend me! A little thing would make me tell them how much I lack of a man. [Aside.]

*Fab.* Give ground, if you see him furious.

*Sir To.* Come, sir Andrew, there's no remedy; the gentleman will, for his honour's sake, have one bout with you: he cannot by the duello§ avoid it: but he has promised me, as he is a gentleman and a soldier, he will not hurt you. Come on; to't.

*Sir And.* Pray God he keep his oath!

[Draws.]

*Enter ANTONIO.*

*Vio.* I do assure you, 'tis against my will.

[Draws.]

*Ant.* Put up your sword;—If this young gentleman

Have done offence, I take the fault on me;

If you offend him, I for him defy you.

[Drawing.]

*Sir To.* You, sir? why, what are you?

*Ant.* One, sir, that for his love dares yet do more

Than you have heard him brag to you he will.

*Sir To.* Nay, if you be an undertaker, I am for you. [Draws.]

*Enter two Officers.*

*Fab.* O good sir Toby, hold; here come the officers.

*Sir To.* I'll be with you anon. [To ANTONIO.]

*Vio.* Pray, sir, put up your sword, if you please. [To Sir ANDREW.]

*Sir And.* Marry, will I, sir;—and, for that I promised you, I'll be as good as my word: He will bear you easily, and reins well.

1 *Off.* This is the man; do thy office.

2 *Off.* Antonio, I arrest thee at the suit Of count Orsino.

*Ant.* You do mistake me, sir.

1 *Off.* No, sir, no jot; I know your favour well, [head.—

Though now you have no sea-cap on your Take him away; he knows I know him well.

*Ant.* I must obey.—This comes with seeking you;

But there's no remedy; I shall answer it. What will you do? Now my necessity [me Makes me to ask you for my purse: It grieves Much more, for what I cannot do for you, Than what befalls myself. You stand amaz'd; But be of comfort.

2 *Off.* Come, sir, away.

*Ant.* I must entreat of you some of that money.

*Vio.* What money, sir?

For the fairkindness you have show'd me here, And, part being prompted by your present Out of my lean and low ability [trouble, I'll lend you something: my having is not much; I'll make division of my present with you: Hold, there is half my coffer.

*Ant.* Will you deny me now?

Is't possible, that my deserts to you Can lack persuasion? Do not tempt my misery, Lest that it make me so unsound a man, As to upbraid you with those kindnesses That I have done for you.

*Vio.* I know of none;

Nor know I you by voice, or any feature: I hate ingratitude more in a man, Than lying, vainness, babbling, drunkenness, Or any taint of vice, whose strong corruption Inhabits our frail blood.

*Ant.* O heavens themselves

2 *Off.* Come, sir, I pray you, go.

*Ant.* Let me speak a little. This youth that you see here,

I snatch'd one half out of the jaws of death; Reliev'd him with such sanctity of love,— And to his image, which, methought, did prove Most venerable worth, did I devotion. [mise

1 *Off.* What's that to us? The time goes by; away.

*Ant.* But, O, how vile an idol proves this god!— [shame.—

Thou hast, Sebastian, done good feature In nature there's no blemish, but the mind; None can be call'd deform'd, but the unkind: Virtue is beauty; but the beauteous-evil

Are empty trunks, o'erflourish'd by the devil.

1 *Off.* The man grows mad; away with him. Come, come, sir.

*Ant.* Lead me on.

[Exeunt Officers, with ANTONIO.]

*Vio.* Methinks, his words do from such passion fly,

That he believes himself; so do not I.

\* Stoccata, an Italian term in fencing.

§ Laws of duel.

† Does for you.

‡ Horrid conception.

|| Ornamented.



Prove true, imagination! O, prove true!

That I, dear brother, be now ta'en for you!

*Sir To.* Come hither, knight; come hither, Fabian; we'll whisper o'er a couplet or two of most sage saws.

*Vio.* He nam'd Sebastian; I my brother know Yet living in my glass\*; even such, and so, In favour was my brother; and he went Still in this fashion, colour, ornament, For him I imitate: O, if it prove, Tempests are kind, and salt waves fresh in love! [Exit.]

*Sir To.* A very dishonest paltry boy, and more a coward than a hare: his dishonesty

appears, in leaving his friend here in necessity, and denying him; and for his cowardship, ask Fabian.

*Fab.* A coward, a most devout coward, religious in it.

*Sir And.* Slid, I'll after him again, and beat him.

*Sir To.* Do, cuff him soundly, but never draw thy sword.

*Sir And.* An I do not,— [Exit.]

*Fab.* Come, let's see the event.

*Sir To.* I dare lay any money, 'twill be nothing yet. [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.

*The Street before Olivia's House.*

*Enter SEBASTIAN and Clown.*

*Clo.* Will you make me believe, that I am not sent for you?

*Seb.* Go to, go to, thou art a foolish fellow; Let me be clear of thee.

*Clo.* Well held out, I'faith! No, I do not know you; nor I am not sent to you by my lady, to bid you come speak with her; nor your name is not master Cesario; nor this is not my nose neither.—Nothing that is so, is so.

*Seb.* I pr'y thee, vent† thy folly somewhere else; Thou know'st not me.

*Clo.* Vent my folly! He has heard that word of some great man, and now applies it to a fool. Vent my folly! I am afraid this great lubber, the world, will prove a cockney.—I pr'y thee now, ungird thy strangeness, and tell me what I shall vent to my lady; Shall I vent to her, that thou art coming?

*Seb.* I pr'y thee, foolish Greek, depart from me;

There's money for thee; if you tarry longer, I shall give worse payment.

*Clo.* By my troth, thou hast an open hand:—These wise men, that give fools money, get themselves a good report after fourteen years' purchase.

*Enter Sir ANDREW, Sir TOBY, and FABIAN.*

*Sir And.* Now, sir, have I met you again? there's for you. [Striking SEBASTIAN.]

*Seb.* Why, there's for thee, and there, and there: Are all the people mad?

[Beating Sir ANDREW.]

*Sir To.* Hold, sir, or I'll throw your dagger o'er the house.

*Clo.* This will I tell my lady straight: I would not be in some of your coats for twopence. [Exit Clown.]

*Sir To.* Come on, sir; hold.

[Holding SEBASTIAN.]

*Sir And.* Nay, let him alone, I'll go another

way to work with him; I'll have an action of battery against him, if there be any law in Illyria: though I struck him first, yet it's no matter for that.

*Seb.* Let go thy hand.

*Sir To.* Come, sir, I will not let you go. Come, my young soldier, put up your iron: you are well fleshed; come on.

*Seb.* I will be free from thee. What wouldst thou now?

If thou dar'st tempt me further, draw thy sword. [Draws.]

*Sir To.* What, what? Nay, then I must have an ounce or two of this malapert blood from you. [Draws.]

*Enter OLIVIA.*

*Oli.* Hold, Toby; on thy life, I charge thee, hold.

*Sir To.* Madam?

*Oli.* Will it be ever thus? Ungracious wretch, Fit for the mountains, and the barbarous caves, Where manners ne'er were preach'd! out of my sight!

Be not offended, dear Cesario:—

Rudesby†, be gone!—I pr'y thee, gentle friend, [Exeunt Sir TOBY, Sir AND, and FABIAN.]

Let thy fair wisdom, not thy passion, sway In this uncivil and unjust extent§

Against thy peace. Go with me to my house, And hear thou there how many fruitless pranks

This ruffian hath botch'd up||, that thou thereby May'st smile at this: thou shalt not choose but

Do not deny: Beshrew¶ his soul for me, [go, He started one poor heart of mine in thee.

*Seb.* What relish is in this? how runs the stream?

Or I am mad, or else this is a dream:— Let fancy still my sense in Lethe steep;

If it be thus to dream, still let me sleep!

*Oli.* Nay, come, I pr'y thee: 'Would thou'dst be rul'd by me!

*Seb.* Madam, I will.

*Oli.* O, say so, and so be! [Exeunt.]

\* In the reflection of my own figure.

† Made up.

† Let out.

† Rude fellow.

¶ Ill betide.

§ Violence.

SCENE II. *A Room in Olivia's House.**Enter MARIA and Clown.*

*Mar.* Nay, I pr'ythee, put on this gown, and this beard; make him believe, thou art sir Topas the curate; do it quickly: I'll call sir Toby the whilst. [*Exit MARIA.*]

*Clo.* Well, I'll put it on, and I will dissemble\* myself in't; and I would I were the first that ever dissembled in such a gown. I am not fat enough to become the function well; nor lean enough to be thought a good student: but to be said, an honest man, and a good housekeeper, goes as fairly, as to say, a careful man, and a great scholar. The competitors† enter.

*Enter Sir TOBY BELCH and MARIA.*

*Sir To.* Jove bless thee, master parson.

*Clo.* *Bonos dies*, sir Toby: for, as the old hermit of Prague, that never saw pen and ink, very wittily said to a niece of king Gorboduc, *That, that is, is*: so I, being master parson, am master parson; For what is that, but that? and is, but is?

*Sir To.* To him, sir Topas.

*Clo.* What, ho, I say,—Peace in this prison!

*Sir To.* The knave counterfeits well; a good knave.

*Mal.* [*in an inner chamber.*] Who calls there?

*Clo.* Sir Topas, the curate, who comes to visit Malvolio the lunatic.

*Mal.* Sir Topas, sir Topas, good sir Topas, go to my lady.

*Clo.* Out, hyperbolical fiend! how vexest thou this man? talkest thou nothing but of ladies?

*Sir To.* Well said, master parson.

*Mal.* Sir Topas, never was man thus wronged: good sir Topas, do not think I am mad; they have laid me here in hideous darkness.

*Clo.* Fie, thou dishonest Sathan! I call thee by the most modest terms; for I am one of those gentle ones, that will use the devil himself with courtesy: Say'st thou, that house is dark?

*Mal.* As hell, sir Topas.

*Clo.* Why, it hath bay-windows‡ transparent as barricadoes, and the clear stones towards the south-north are as lustrous as ebony; and yet complainest thou of obstruction?

*Mal.* I am not mad, sir Topas; I say to you, this house is dark.

*Clo.* Madman, thou errest: I say, there is no darkness, but ignorance; in which thou art more puzzled, than the Egyptians in their fog.

*Mal.* I say, this house is as dark as ignorance, though ignorance were as dark as hell; and I say, there was never man thus abused: I am no more mad than you are; make the trial of it in any constant question§.

*Clo.* What is the opinion of Pythagoras concerning wild-fowl?

*Mal.* That the soul of our grandam might haply inhabit a bird.

*Clo.* What thinkest thou of his opinion?

*Mal.* I think nobly of the soul, and no way approve his opinion.

*Clo.* Fare thee well: Remain thou still in darkness: thou shalt hold the opinion of Pythagoras, ere I will allow of thy wits; and fear to kill a woodcock, lest thou dispossess the soul of thy grandam. Fare thee well.

*Mal.* Sir Topas, sir Topas,—

*Sir To.* My most exquisite sir Topas!

*Clo.* Nay, I am for all waters||.

*Mar.* Thou might'st have done this without thy beard and gown; he sees thee not.

*Sir To.* To him in thine own voice, and bring me word how thou findest him: I would we were well rid of this knavery. If he may be conveniently delivered, I would he were; for I am now so far in offence with my niece, that I cannot pursue with any safety this sport to the upshot. Come by and by to my chamber. [*Exeunt Sir TOBY and MARIA.*]

*Clo.* *Hey Robin, jolly Robin,*

*Tell me how thy lady does.* [*Singing.*]

*Mal.* Fool,—

*Clo.* *My lady is unkind, perdy.*

*Mal.* Fool,—

*Clo.* *Alas, why is she so?*

*Mal.* Fool, I say;—

*Clo.* *She loves another*—Who calls, ha?

*Mal.* Good fool, as ever thou wilt deserve well at my hand, help me to a candle, and pen, ink, and paper; as I am a gentleman, I will live to be thankful to thee for't.

*Clo.* Master Malvolio!

*Mal.* Ay, good fool.

*Clo.* Alas, sir, how fell you besides your five wits¶?

*Mal.* Fool, there was never man so notoriously abused: I am as well in my wits, fool, as thou art.

*Clo.* But as well? then you are mad indeed, if you be no better in your wits than a fool.

*Mal.* They have here propertied me\*\*; keep me in darkness, send ministers to me, asses, and do all they can to face me out of my wits.

*Clo.* Advise you what you say; the minister is here.—Malvolio, Malvolio, thy wits the heavens restore! endeavour thyself to sleep, and leave thy vain bibble babble.

*Mal.* Sir Topas,—

*Clo.* Maintain no words with him, good fellow.—Who, I, sir? not I, sir. God b'w'you, good sir Topas.—Marry, amen.—I will, sir, I will.

*Mal.* Fool, fool, fool, I say.—

*Clo.* Alas, sir, be patient. What say you, sir? I am shent† for speaking to you.

*Mal.* Good fool, help me to some light, and some paper; I tell thee, I am as well in my wits as any man in Illyria.

*Clo.* Well-a-day,—that you were, sir!

\* Disguise.

† Confederates.

‡ Bow-windows.

§ Regular conversation.

|| Any other gem, as a *Topaz*.

¶ Senses.

\*\* Taken possession of.

†† Scolded, reprimanded.

*Mal.* By this hand, I am : Good fool, some ink, paper, and light, and convey what I will set down to my lady ; it shall advantage thee more than ever the bearing of letter did.

*Clo.* I will help you to't. But tell me true, are you not mad indeed? or do you but counterfeit?

*Mal.* Believe me, I am not ; I tell thee true.

*Clo.* Nay, I'll ne'er believe a madman, till I see his brains. I will fetch you light, and paper, and ink.

*Mal.* Fool, I'll requite it in the highest degree : I pr'y thee, be gone.

*Clo.* I am gone, sir,

And anon, sir,

I'll be with you again,

In a trice ;

Like to the old vice \*,

Your need to sustain ;

Who with dagger of lath,

In his rage and his wrath,

Cries, ah, ha! to the devil :

Like a mad lad,

Pare thy nails, dad.

Adieu, Goodman drivell.

[Exit.

### SCENE III. Olivia's Garden.

*Enter SEBASTIAN.*

*Seb.* This is the air ; that is the glorious sun ; This pearl she gave me, I do feel't and see't : And though 'tis wonder that enwraps me thus, Yet 'tis not madness. Where's Antonio then? I could not find him at the Elephant : Yet there he was ; and there I found this credit, That he did range the town to seek me out.

His counsel now might do me golden service For though my soul disputes well with my sense,

That this may be some error, but no madness, Yet doth this accident and flood of fortune So far exceed all instance, all discourse †, That I am ready to distrust mine eyes, [me And wrangle with my reason, that persuades To any other tru s, but that I am mad, Or else the lady's mad ; yet, if 'twere so, She could not sway her house, command her followers ||,

Take, and give back, affairs, and their despatch, With such a smooth, discreet, and stable bearing,

As, I perceive, she does : there's something in't, That is deceivable. But here comes the lady.

*Enter OLIVIA and a Priest.*

*Oli.* Blame not this haste of mine : If you mean well,

Now go with me, and with this holy man, Into the chantry ¶ by : there, before him, And underneath that consecrated roof, Plight me the full assurance of your faith ; That my most jealous and too doubtful soul May live at peace : He shall conceal it, Whiles \*\* you are willing it shall come to note ; What time we will our celebration keep According to my birth.—What do you say?

*Seb.* I'll follow this good man, and go with you ;

And, having sworn truth, ever will be true.

*Oli.* Then lead the way, good father ;— And heavens so shine,

That they may fairly note this act of mine!

[Exeunt.

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.

*The Street before Olivia's House.*

*Enter Clown and FABIAN.*

*Fab.* Now, as thou lovest me, let me see his letter.

*Clo.* Good master Fabian, grant me another request.

*Fab.* Any thing.

*Clo.* Do not desire to see this letter.

*Fab.* That is, to give a dog, and, in recompense, desire my dog again.

*Enter DUKE, VIOLA, and Attendants.*

*Duke.* Belong you to the lady Olivia, friends?

*Clo.* Ay, sir ; we are some of her trappings.

*Duke.* I know thee well ; How dost thou, my good fellow?

*Clo.* Truly, sir, the better for my foes, and the worse for my friends.

*Duke.* Just the contrary ; the better for thy friends.

*Clo.* No, sir, the worse.

*Duke.* How can that be?

*Clo.* Marry, sir, they praise me, and make an ass of me ; now my foes tell me plainly I am an ass : so that by my foes, sir, I profit in the knowledge of myself ; and by my friends I am abused : so that, conclusions to be as kisses, if your four negatives make your two affirmatives, why, then the worse for my friends, and the better for my foes.

*Duke.* Why, this is excellent.

*Clo.* By my troth, sir, no ; though it please you to be one of my friends.

*Duke.* Thou shalt not be the worse for me ; there's gold.

*Clo.* But that it would be double-dealing, sir, I would you could make it another.

*Duke.* O, you give me ill counsel.

*Clo.* Put your grace in your pocket, sir, for this once, and let your flesh and blood obey it.

*Duke.* Well, I will be so much a sinner to be a double dealer ; there's another.

\* A buffoon character in the old plays, and father of the modern harlequin.

† Account. ‡ Reason. § Belief. ¶ Servants. || Little chapel. \*\* Until.



*Clo. Primo, secundo, tertio*, is a good play; and the old saying is, the third pays for all: the *triplex*, sir, is a good tripping measure; or the bells of St. Bennet, sir, may put you in mind; One, two, three.

*Duke.* You can fool no more money out of me at this throw: if you will let your lady know, I am here to speak with her, and bring her along with you, it may awake my bounty further.

*Clo.* Marry, sir, lullaby to your bounty, till I come again. I go, sir; but I would not have you to think, that my desire of having is the sin of covetousness: but, as you say, sir, let your bounty take a nap, I will awake it anon. [Exit Clown.]

*Enter ANTONIO and Officers.*

*Vio.* Here comes the man, sir, that did rescue me.

*Duke.* That face of his I do remember well; Yet, when I saw it last, it was besmear'd As black as Vulcan, in the smoke of war: A bawbling vessel was he captain of, For shallow draught, and bulk, unprizable; With which such scathful \* grapple did he make With the most noble bottom of our fleet, That very envy, and the tongue of loss, Cry'd fame and honour on him—What's the

*Off.* Orsino, this is that Antonio, [matter? That took the Phoenix, and her freighter, from And this is he, that did the Tiger board, [Candy; When your young nephew Titus lost his leg: Here in the streets, desperate of shame, and In private rabbledid we apprehend him.]state,

*Vio.* He did me kindness, sir; drew on my side; [me,

But, in conclusion, put strange speech upon I know not what 'twas, but distraction.

*Duke.* Notable pirate! thou salt-water thief! What foolish boldness brought thee to their mercies,

Whom thou, in terms so bloody, and so dear, Hast made thine enemies?

*Ant.* Orsino, noble sir, Be pleas'd that I shake off these names you Antonio never yet was thief, or pirate, [give me; Though, I confess, on base and ground enough, Orsino's enemy. A witchcraft drew me hither: That most ingrateful boy there, by your side, From the rude sea's enrag'd and foamy mouth did I redeem; a wreck past hope he was: His life I gave him, and did thereto add My love, without retention, or restraint, All his in dedication: for his sake, Did I expose myself, pure for his love, Into the danger of this adverse town; Drew to defend him, when he was beset; Where being apprehended, his false cunning, (Not meaning to partake with me in danger,) Taught him to face me out of his acquaintance, And grew a twenty-years-removed thing, While one would wink; denied me mine own Which I had recommended to his use [purse, Not half an hour before.

*Vio.* How can this be?

*Duke.* When came he to this town?

*Ant.* To-day, my lord; and for three months (No interim, not a minute's vacancy), [before, Both day and night did we keep company.

*Enter OLIVIA and Attendants.*

*Duke.* Here comes the countess; now heaven walks on earth. — [madness: But for thee, fellow, fellow, thy words are Three months this youth hath tended upon me; But more of that anon. — Take him aside.

*Oli.* What would my lord, but that he may not Wherein Olivia may seem serviceable?—[have, Cesario, you do not keep promise with me.

*Vio.* Madam?

*Duke.* Gracious Olivia, — [my lord, —

*Oli.* What do you say, Cesario? — Good

*Vio.* My lord would speak, my duty hushes me.

*Oli.* If it be aught to the old tune, my lord, It is as fat \* and fulsome to mine ear, As howling after musick.

*Duke.* Still so cruel?

*Oli.* Still so constant, lord. [lady,

*Duke.* What! to perverseness? you uncivil To whose ingrate and unauspicious altars [out, My soul the faithfull'st offerings hath breath'd That e'er devotion tender'd! What shall I do?

*Oli.* Even what it please my lord, that shall become him. [do it

*Duke.* Why should I not, had I the heart to Like to the Egyptian thief, at point of death, Kill what I love; a savage jealousy, [this: That sometime savours nobly? — But hear me Since you to non-regardance cast my faith, And that I partly know the instrument [favour, That screws me from my true place in your Live you, the marble-breasted tyrant, still; But this your minion, whom, I know, you love, And whom, by heaven, I swear, I tender dearly, Him will I tear out of that cruel eye, Where he sits crown'd in his master's spite. — Come, boy, with me; my thoughts are ripe in I'll sacrifice the lamb that I do love, [mischief: To spite a raven's heart within a dove. [Going.

*Vio.* And I, most jocund, apt, and willingly, To do you rest, a thousand deaths would die.

[Following.

*Oli.* Where goes Cesario?

*Vio.* After him I love, More than I love these eyes, more than my life, More, by all mores, than e'er I shall love wife: If I do feign, you witnesses above, Punish my life, for tainting of my love!

*Oli.* Ah me, detested! how am I beguil'd!

*Vio.* Who does beguile you? who does do you wrong?

*Oli.* Hast thou forgot thyself! Is it so long! — Call forth the holy father. [Exit an Attendant.

*Duke.* Come away. [To VIOLETA.

*Oli.* Whither, my lord? — Cesario, husband,

*Duke.* Husband? [stay.

*Oli.* Ay, husband; Can he that deny?

*Duke.* Her husband, sirrah?

*Vio.* No, my lord, not I.

*Oli.* Alas, it is the baseness of thy fear, That makes thee strangle thy propriety: Fear not, Cesario, take thy fortunes up; Be that thou know'st thou art, and then thou art

\* Mischievous.

† Freight.

‡ Dull, gross.

§ Disown thy property.

As great as that thou fear'st.—O, welcome, father!

*Re-enter Attendant and Priest.*

Father, I charge thee, by thy reverence,  
Here to unfold (though lately we intended  
To keep in darkness, what occasion now  
Reveals before 'tis ripe,) what thou dost know,  
Hath newly past between this youth and me.

*Priest.* A contract of eternal bond of love,  
Confirm'd by mutual joinder of your hands,  
Attested by the holy close of lips, [rings;  
Strengthen'd by interchangement of your  
And all the ceremony of this compact  
Seal'd in my function, by my testimony:  
Since when, my watch hath told me, toward  
I have travell'd but two hours. [my grave,

*Duke.* O, thou dissembling cub! what wilt thou be,

When time hath sow'd a grizzle on thy case\*?  
Or will not else thy craft so quickly grow,  
That thine own trip shall be thine overthrow?  
Farewell, and take her; but direct thy feet,  
Where thou and I henceforth may never meet.

*Vio.* My lord, I do protest,—

*Oli.* O, do not swear;  
Hold little faith, though thou hast too much fear.

*Enter Sir ANDREW AGUE-CHEEK, with his head broke.*

*Sir And.* For the love of God, a surgeon;  
send one presently to sir Toby.

*Oli.* What's the matter?

*Sir And.* He has broke my head across,  
and has given sir Toby a bloody coxcomb  
too: for the love of God, your help: I had  
rather than forty pound, I were at home.

*Oli.* Who has done this, sir Andrew?

*Sir And.* The count's gentleman, one Cesario: we took him for a coward, but he's the very devil incardinate.

*Duke.* My gentleman, Cesario!

*Sir And.* Od's lifelings, here he is:—You broke my head for nothing; and that that I did, I was set on to do't by sir Toby. [you:

*Vio.* Why do you speak to me? I never hurt you drew your sword upon me, without cause; But I bespake you fair, and hurt you not.

*Sir And.* If a bloody coxcomb be a hurt, you have hurt me; I think, you set nothing by a bloody coxcomb.

*Enter Sir TOBY BELCH, drunk, led by the Clown.*

Here comes sir Toby halting, you shall hear more: but if he had not been in drink, he would have tickled you othergates† than he did.

*Duke.* How now, gentleman? how is't with you?

*Sir To.* That's all one; he has hurt me, and there's the end on't.—Sot, did'st see Dick surgeon, sot?

*Oli.* O he's drunk, sir Toby, an hour ago; his eyes were set at eight i'the morning.

*Sir To.* Then he's a rogue. After a passy-measure, or a pavin‡, I hate a drunken rogue.

*Oli.* Away with him: Who hath made this havock with them?

*Sir And.* I'll help you, sir Toby, because we'll be dressed together.

*Sir To.* Will you help an ass-head, and a coxcomb, and a knave? a thin-faced knave, a gull?

*Oli.* Get him to bed, and let his hurt be look'd to.

[*Exeunt Clown, Sir TOBY, and Sir ANDREW.*

*Enter SEBASTIAN.*

*Seb.* I am sorry, madam, I have hurt your kinsman;

But, had it been the brother of my blood, I must have done no less, with wit, and safety. You throw a strange regard upon me, and By that I do perceive it hath offended you; Pardon me, sweet one, even for the vows We made each other but so late ago. [persons;

*Duke.* One face, one voice, one habit, and two A natural perspective, that is, and is not.

*Seb.* Antonio, O my dear Antonio!

How have the hours rack'd and tortur'd me, Since I have lost thee.

*Ant.* Sebastian are you?

*Seb.* Fear'st thou that, Antonio?

*Ant.* How have you made division of your An apple, cleft in two, is not more twin [self?— Than these two creatures. Which is Sebastian?

*Oli.* Most wonderful! [brother:

*Seb.* Do I stand there? I never had a Nor can there be that deity in my nature, Of here and every where. I had a sister, Whom the blind waves and surges have devour'd:—

Of charity §, what kin are you to me? [To *VIOLA*. What countryman? what name? what parentage?

*Vio.* Of Messaline: Sebastian was my father; Such a Sebastian was my brother too, So went he suited to his watery tomb: If spirits c n assume both form and suit You come to fright us.

*Seb.* A spirit I am, indeed; But am in that dimension grossly clad, Which from the womb I did participate. Were you a woman, as the rest goes even, I should my tears let fall upon your cheek, And say—Thrice welcome, drowned Viola!

*Vio.* My father had a mole upon his brow.

*Seb.* And so had mine. [birth

*Vio.* And died that day when Viola from her Had number'd thirteen years.

*Seb.* O, that record is lively in my soul! He finished, indeed, his mortal act, That day that made my sister thirteen years.

*Vio.* If nothing lets|| to make us happy both, But this my masculine usurp'd attire, Do not embrace me, till each circumstance Of place, time, fortune, do cohere, and jump, That I am Viola: which to confirm, I'll bring you to a captain in this town, [help Where lie my maiden weeds; by whose gentle I was preserv'd, to serve this noble count: All the occurrence of my fortune since Hath been between this lady, and this lord.

*Seb.* So comes it, lady, you have been mistook: [To *OLIVIA*.

But nature to her bias drew in that.

\* Skin. † Otherways. ‡ Serious dances. § Out of charity tell me. || Hinders.

You would have been contracted to a maid ;  
Nor are you therein, by my life, deceiv'd,  
You are betroth'd both to a maid and man.

*Duke.* Be not amaz'd ; right noble is his  
If this be so, as yet the glass seems true, [blood.—  
I shall have share in this most happy wreck :  
Boy, thou hast said to me a thousand times,

[To *VIOLA*.

Thou never should'st love woman like to me.

*Vio.* And all those sayings will I over-swear ;  
And all those swearings keep as true in soul,  
As doth that orb'd continent the fire  
That severs day from night.

*Duke.* Give me thy hand ;  
And let me see thee in thy woman's weeds.

*Vio.* The captain, that did bring me first on  
shore, [action,

Hath my maid's garments : he, upon some  
Is now in durance ; at Malvolio's suit,  
A gentleman, and follower of my lady's.

*Oli.* He shall enlarge him :—Fetch Malvolio  
; and yet, alas, now I remember me, [hither :—  
They say, poor gentleman, he's much distract.

*Re-enter Clown, with a letter.*

A most extracting frenzy of mine own  
From my remembrance clearly banish'd his.—  
How does he, sirrah ?

*Clow.* Truly, madam, he holds Belzebub at  
the stave's end, as well as a man in his case  
may do : he has here writ a letter to you, I  
should have given it you to-day morning ;  
but as a madman's epistles are no gospels, so it  
skills not much, when they are delivered.

*Oli.* Open it, and read it.

*Clow.* Look then to be well edified, when the  
fool delivers the madman :—*By the lord,*  
*madam,—*

*Oli.* How now ! art thou mad ?

*Clow.* No, madam, I do but read madness :  
an your ladyship will have it as it ought to  
be, you must allow *vox*\*.

*Oli.* Pr'ythee, read i'thy right wits.

*Clow.* So I do, madonna ; but to read his  
right wits, is to read thus : therefore perpend †,  
my princess, and give ear.

*Oli.* Read it you, sirrah. [To *FABIAN*.

*Fab.* [reads.] *By the Lord, madam, you  
wrong me, and the world shall know it :  
though you have put me into darkness,  
and given your drunken cousin rule over  
me, yet have I the benefit of my senses as  
well as your ladyship. I have your own  
letter that induced me to the semblance  
I put on ; with the which I doubt not but  
to do myself much right, or you much shame.  
Think of me as you please. I leave my  
cousin a little unthought of, and speak out  
of my injury.* The madly-used Malvolio.

*Oli.* Did he write this ?

*Clow.* Ay, madam.

*Duke.* This savours not much of distraction.

*Oli.* See him deliver'd, Fabian ; bring him  
hither. [Exit *FABIAN*.

My lord, so please you, these things further  
To think me as well a sister as a wife, [thought on,

One day shall crown the alliance on't, so  
please you,

Here at my house, and at my proper cost.

*Duke.* Madam, I am most apt to embrace  
your offer.— [your service done him,

Your master quits you ; [To *VIOLA*.] and, for  
So much against the mettle ‡ of your sex,  
So far beneath your soft and tender breeding,  
And since you call'd me master for so long,  
Here is my hand ; you shall from this time be  
Your master's mistress.

*Oli.* A sister ?—you are she.

*Re-enter FABIAN, with MALVOLIO.*

*Duke.* Is this the madman ?

*Oli.* Ay, my lord, this same :

How now, Malvolio ?

*Mal.* Madam, you have done me wrong,  
Notorious wrong.

*Oli.* Have I, Malvolio ? no.

*Mal.* Lady, you have. Pray you, peruse that  
You must not now deny it is your hand, [letter :  
Write from it, if you can, in hand, or phrase ;  
Or say, 'tis not your seal, nor your invention :  
You can say none of this : Well, grant it then,  
And tell me, in the modesty of honour, [favour ;  
Why you have given me such clear lights of  
Bade me come smiling, and cross-garter'd to  
To put on yellow stockings, and to frown [you,  
Upon sir Toby, and the lighter § people ;  
And, acting this in an obedient hope,  
Why have you suffer'd me to be imprison'd,  
Kept in a dark house, visited by the priest,  
And made the most notorious geck ¶, and gull,  
That e'er invention play'd on ? tell me why.

*Oli.* Alas, Malvolio, this is not my writing,  
Though, I confess, much like the character :  
But, out of question, 'tis Maria's hand.

And now I do bethink me, it was she [smiling,  
First told me, thou wast mad ; then canst in  
And in such forms which here were pre-  
suppos'd

Upon thee in the letter. Pr'ythee, be content :  
This practice hath most shrewdly pass'd upon  
thee ; [of it,

But, when we know the grounds and authors  
Thou shalt be both the plaintiff and the judge  
Of thy own cause.

*Fab.* Good madam, hear me speak ;  
And let no quarrel, nor no brawl to come,  
Taint the condition of this present hour, [not,  
Which I have wonder'd at. In hope it shall  
Most freely I confess, myself, and Toby,  
Set this device against Malvolio here,  
Upon some stubborn and uncourteous parts  
We had conceiv'd against him : Maria writ  
The letter, at sir Toby's great importunance ¶ ;  
In recompense whereof, he hath married her.  
How with a sportful malice it was follow'd,  
May rather pluck on laughter than revenge ;  
If that the injuries be justly weigh'd,  
That have on both sides past. [thee !

*Oli.* Alas, poor fool ! how have they baffled ¶

*Clow.* Why, Some are born great, some  
achieve greatness, and some have greatness  
thrown upon them. I was one, sir, in this

\* Voice. † Attend. ‡ Frame and constitution. § Inferior. ¶ Fool.  
¶ Importunacy. • Cheated.



interlude; one sir Topas, sir; but that's all one:—*By the Lord, fool, I am not mad;—* But do you remember? *Madam, why laugh you at such a barren rascal? an you smile not, he's gagg'd:* And thus the whirligig of time brings in his revenges.

*Mal.* I'll be revenged on the whole pack of you. [Exit.

*Oli.* He hath been most notoriously abus'd.

*Duke.* Pursue him, and entreat him to a peace:—

He hath not told us of the captain yet;

When that is known and golden time comes,

A solemn combination shall be made

Of our dear souls—Mean time, sweet sister,

We will not part from hence.—*Cesario, come,*

For so you shall be, while you are a man;

But, when in other habits you are seen,

Orsino's mistress, and his fancy's queen.

[Exit.

# SONG.

*Clo.* *When that I was and a little tiny boy,  
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,  
A foolish thing was but a toy,  
For the rain it raineth every day.  
But when I came to man's estate,  
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,  
'Gainst knave and thief men shut their  
gate,  
For the rain it raineth every day.  
But when I came, alas! to wive,  
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,  
By swaggering could I never thrive,  
For the rain it raineth every day.  
But when I came unto my bed,  
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,  
With toss-pots still had drunken head,  
For the rain it raineth every day.  
A great while ago the world begun,  
With hey, ho, the wind and the rain,  
But that's all one, our play is done,  
And we'll strive to please you every  
day.* [Exit.

• Shall serve.

This play is in the graver part elegant and easy, and in some of the lighter scenes exquisitely humorous. Ague-cheek is drawn with great propriety, but his character is, in a great measure, that of natural fatuity, and is therefore not the proper prey of a satirist. The soliloquy of Malvolio is truly comic; he is betrayed to ridicule merely by his pride. The marriage of Olivia, and the succeeding perplexity, though well enough contrived to divert on the stage, wants credibility, and fails to produce the proper instruction required in the drama, as it exhibits no just picture of life.—JOHNSON

# MEASURE FOR MEASURE.

## Persons represented.

VINCENTIO, *duke of Vienna.*  
 ANGELO, *lord deputy in the duke's absence.*  
 ESCALUS, *an ancient lord, joined with Angelo in the deputation.*  
 CLAUDIO, *a young gentleman.*  
 LUCIO, *a fantastic.*  
 Two other like gentlemen.  
 VARRIUS, *a gentleman, servant to the duke.*  
 PROVOST.  
 THOMAS, } *two friars.*  
 PETER, }

A JUSTICE.  
 ELBOW, *a simple constable.*  
 FROTH, *a foolish gentleman.*  
 CLOWN, *servant to Mrs. Over-done.*  
 ABHORSON, *an executioner.*  
 BARNARDINE, *a dissolute prisoner.*  
 ISABELLA, *sister to Claudio.*  
 MARIANA, *betrothed to Angelo.*  
 JULIET, *beloved by Claudio.*  
 FRANCISCA, *a nun.*  
 MISTRESS OVER-DONE, *a bawd.*

*Lords, Gentlemen, Guards, Officers, and other Attendants.*  
*Scene,—Vienna.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *An Apartment in the Duke's Palace.*

*Enter DUKE, ESCALUS, Lords, and Attendants.*

*Duke. Escalus,—*

*Escal. My lord.*

*Duke. Of government the properties to unfold,* [course ;  
 Would seem in me to affect speech and dis-  
 Since I am put to know, that your own science,  
 Exceeds, in that, the lists\* of all advice  
 My strength can give you : Then no more  
 remains] [able,

But that to your sufficiency, as your worth is  
 And let them work. The nature of our people  
 Our city's institutions, and the terms  
 For common justice, you are as pregnant† in,  
 As art and practice hath enriched any  
 That we remember : There is our commission,  
 From which we would not have you warp.—  
 I say, bid come before us Angelo.—[Call hither,

[*Exit an Attendant.*

What figure of us think you he will bear ?  
 For you must know, we have with special soul  
 Elected him our absence to supply ;  
 Lent him our terror, drest him with our love ;  
 And given his deputation all the organs  
 Of our own power : What think you of it ?  
*Escal. If any in Vienna be of worth*  
 To undergo such ample grace and honour,  
 It is lord Angelo.

*Enter ANGELO.*

*Duke. Look, where he comes.*

*Ang. Always obedient to your grace's will,  
 I come to know your pleasure.*

*Duke.*

*Angelo,*

There is a kind of character in thy life,  
 That, to the observer, doth thy history  
 Fully unfold : Thyself and thy belongings†  
 Are not thine own so proper‡, as to waste  
 Thyself upon thy virtues, them on thee.  
 Heaven doth with us, as we with torches do,  
 Not light them for themselves : for if our  
 Did not go forth of us, 'twere all alike [virtues  
 As if we had them not. Spirits are not finely  
 touch'd,

But to fine issues|| : nor nature never lends  
 The smallest scruple of her excellence,  
 But, like a thrifty goddess, she determines  
 Herself the glory of a creditor, [speech  
 Both thanks and use¶. But I do bend my  
 To one that can my part in him advertise ;  
 Hold therefore, Angelo ;  
 In our remove, be thou at full yourself ;  
 Mortality and mercy in Vienna  
 Live in thy tongue and heart : Old Escalus,  
 Though first in question, is thy secondary :  
 Take thy commission.

*Ang.*

*Now, good my lord,*

Let there be some more test made of my metal,  
 Before so noble and so great a figure  
 Be stamp'd upon it.

*Duke.*

*No more evasion :*

We have with a leaven'd and prepared choice  
 Proceeded to you ; therefore take your honours.  
 Our haste from hence is of so quick condition,  
 That it prefers itself, and leaves unquestion'd  
 Matters of needful value. We shall write to you,  
 As time and our concerns shall importune,  
 How it goes with us ; and do look to know  
 What doth befall you here. So, fare you well :  
 To the hopeful execution do I leave you  
 Of your commissions.

\* Bounds.

† Full of.

‡ Endowments.

§ So much thy own property.

¶ For high purposes.

¶ Interest.

*Ang.* Yet, give leave, my lord,  
That we may bring you something on the way.

*Duke.* My haste may not admit it;  
Nor need you, on mine honour, have to do  
With any scruple: your scope \* is as mine  
So to enforce, or qualify the laws, [own;  
As to your soul seems good. Give me your  
I'll privily away: I love the people, [hand;  
But do not like to stage me to their eyes:  
Though it do well, I do not relish well  
Their loud applause, and *aves*† vehement;  
Nor do I think the man of safe discretion,  
That does affect it. Once more, fare you well.

*Ang.* The heavens give safety to your  
purposes! [happiness.

*Escal.* Lead forth, and bring you back in

*Duke.* I thank you: Fare you well. [*Erit.*

*Escal.* I shall desire you, sir, to give me  
leave [me

To have free speech with you; and it concerns  
To look into the bottom of my place: [nature  
A power I have; but of what strength and  
I am not yet instructed. [together,

*Ang.* 'Tis so with me:—Let us withdraw  
And we may soon our satisfaction have  
Touching that point.

*Escal.* I'll wait upon your honour.  
[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II. A Street.

*Enter LUCIO and two Gentlemen.*

*Lucio.* If the duke, with the other dukes,  
come not to composition with the king of  
Hungary, why, then all the dukes fall upon  
the king.

*1 Gent.* Heaven grant us its peace, but not  
the king of Hungary's!

*2 Gent.* Amen.

*Lucio.* Thou concludest like the sanctimonious  
pirate, that went to sea with the ten  
commandments, but scraped one out of the  
table.

*2 Gent.* Thou shalt not steal?

*Lucio.* Ay, that he razed.

*1 Gent.* Why, 'twas a commandment to  
command the captain and all the rest from  
their functions; they put forth to steal:  
There's not a soldier of us all, that, in the  
thanksgiving before meat, doth relish the  
petition well that prays for peace.

*2 Gent.* I never heard any soldier dislike it.

*Lucio.* I believe thee; for, I think, thou  
never wast where grace was said.

*2 Gent.* No? a dozen times at least.

*1 Gent.* What? in metre?

*Lucio.* In any proportion ‡, or in any  
language.

*1 Gent.* I think, or in any religion.

*Lucio.* Ay! why not? Grace is grace, de-  
spite of all controversy: As for example;  
Thou thyself art a wicked villain, despite of  
all grace.

*1 Gent.* Well, there went but a pair of  
sheers between us§.

*Lucio.* I grant; as there may between the  
lists and the velvet: Thou art the list.

*1 Gent.* And thou the velvet: thou art  
good velvet; thou art a three-pil'd piece, I  
warrant thee: I had as lief be a list of an  
English kersey, as be pil'd, as thou art pil'd,  
for a French velvet||. Do I speak feelingly  
now?

*Lucio.* I think thou dost; and, indeed, with  
most painful feeling of thy speech: I will,  
out of thine own confession, learn to begin  
thy health; but, whilst I live, forget to drink  
after thee.

*1 Gent.* I think, I have done myself wrong;  
have I not?

*2 Gent.* Yes, that thou hast; whether thou  
art tainted, or free.

*Lucio.* Behold, behold, where madam Mi-  
tigation comes! I have purchased as many  
diseases under her roof, as come to—

*2 Gent.* To what, I pray?

*1 Gent.* Judge.

*2 Gent.* To three thousand dollars a-year.

*1 Gent.* Ay, and more.

*Lucio.* A French crown ¶ more.

*1 Gent.* Thou art always figuring diseases  
in me; but thou art full of error; I am sound.

*Lucio.* Nay, not as one would say, healthy;  
but so sound, as things that are hollow: thy  
bones are hollow; impiety has made a feast  
of thee.

*Enter Bawd.*

*1 Gent.* How now? Which of your hips  
has the most profound scatica?

*Bawd.* Well, well; there's one yonder ar-  
rested, and carried to prison, was worth five  
thousand of you all.

*1 Gent.* Who's that, I pray thee?

*Bawd.* Marry, sir, that's Claudio, signior  
Claudio.

*1 Gent.* Claudio to prison! 'tis not so.

*Bawd.* Nay, but I know, 'tis so: I saw  
him arrested; saw him carried away; and,  
which is more, within these three days his  
head's to be chopped off.

*Lucio.* But, after all this fooling, I would  
not have it so: Art thou sure of this?

*Bawd.* I am too sure of it: and it is for  
getting madam Julietta with child.

*Lucio.* Believe me, this may be: he pro-  
mised to meet me two hours since; and he  
was ever precise in promise-keeping.

*2 Gent.* Besides, you know, it draws some-  
thing near to the speech we had to such a  
purpose.

*1 Gent.* But most of all, agreeing with the  
proclamation.

*Lucio.* Away; let's go learn the truth of it.  
[*Exeunt LUCIO and Gentlemen.*

*Bawd.* Thus, what with the war, what with  
the sweat \*\*, what with the gallows, and what  
with poverty, I am custom-shrunk. How  
now? what's the news with you?

*Enter Clown.*

*Clo.* Yonder man is carried to prison.

*Bawd.* Well; what has he done?

*Clo.* A woman.

\* Extent of power.

† Hailings.

‡ Measure.

§ A cut of the same cloth.

|| A jest on the loss of hair by the French disease.

¶ *Corona Veneris.*

\*\* The sweating sickness.



*Bawd.* But what's his offence?

*Clo.* Groping for trouts in a peculiar river.

*Bawd.* What, is there a maid with child by him?

*Clo.* No; but there's a woman with maid by him: You have not heard of the proclamation, have you?

*Bawd.* What proclamation, man.

*Clo.* All houses in the suburbs of Vienna must be pluck'd down.

*Bawd.* And what shall become of those in the city?

*Clo.* They shall stand for seed: they had gone down too, but that a wise burgher put in for them.

*Bawd.* But shall all our houses of resort in the suburbs be pull'd down?

*Clo.* To the ground, mistress.

*Bawd.* Why, here's a change, indeed, in the commonwealth! What shall become of me?

*Clo.* Come; fear not you; good counsellors lack no clients: though you change your place, you need not change your trade; I'll be your tapster still. Courage; there will be pity taken on you: you that have worn your eyes almost out in the service, you will be considered.

*Bawd.* What's to do here, Thomas Tapster? Let's withdraw.

*Clo.* Here comes signior Claudio, led by the provost to prison: and there's madam Juliet. [Exit.

### SCENE III. *The same.*

Enter Provost\*, CLAUDIO, JULIET, and Officers; LUCIO, and two Gentlemen.

*Claud.* Fellow, why dost thou show me thus to the world?

Bear me to prison, where I am committed.

*Prov.* I do it not in evil disposition, But from lord Angelo by special charge.

*Claud.* Thus can the demi-god, Authority, Make us pay down for our offence by weight.—The words of heaven;—on whom it will, it will; On whom it will not, so; yet still 'tis just.

*Lucio.* Why, how now, Claudio? whence comes this restraint?

*Claud.* From too much liberty, my Lucio, As surfeit is the father of much fast, [liberty: So every scope by the immoderate use Turns to restraint: Our natures do pursue, (Like rats that ravin<sup>†</sup> down their proper bane,) A thirsty evil; and when we drink, we die.

*Lucio.* If I could speak so wisely under an arrest, I would send for certain of my creditors: And yet, to say the truth, I had as lief have the foppery of freedom, as the morality of imprisonment.—What's thy offence, Claudio?

*Claud.* What, but to speak of would offend

*Lucio.* What is it? murder? [again.

*Claud.* No.

*Lucio.* Lechery?

*Claud.* Call it so.

*Prov.* Away, sir; you must go.

*Claud.* One word, good friend:—Lucio, word with you. [Takes him aside.

*Lucio.* A hundred, if they'll do you any Is lechery so look'd after? [good.—

*Claud.* Thus stands it with me:—Upon a true contract,

I got possession of Julietta's bed;

You know the lady; she is fast my wife, Save that we do the denunciation lack Of outward order: this we came not to, Only for propagation of a dower Remaining in the coffer of her friends; [love, From whom we thought it meet to hide our Till time had made them for us. But it chanceth, The stealth of our most mutual entertainment With character too gross, is writ on Juliet.

*Lucio.* With child, perhaps?

*Claud.* Unhappily, even so.

And the new deputy now for the duke,— Whether it be the fault and glimpse of new- Or whether that the body public be [ness; A horse whereon the governor doth ride, Who, newly in the seat, that it may know He can command, lets it straight feel the spur: Whether the tyranny be in his place, Or in his eminence that fills it up, I stagger in:—But this new governor Awakes me all the enrolled penalties, Which have, like unscour'd armour hung, by the wall [round,

So long, that nineteen zodiacs<sup>‡</sup> have gone And none of them been worn; and, for a name, Now puts the drowsy and neglected act Freshly on me:—'tis surely for a name.

*Lucio.* I warrant, it is: and thy head stands so tickle<sup>§</sup> on thy shoulders, that a milk maid, if she be in love, may sigh it off. Send after the duke, and appeal to him. [found.

*Claud.* I have done so, but he's not to be I prythee, Lucio, do me this kind service: This day my sister should the cloister enter, And there receive her approbation<sup>||</sup>: Acquaint her with the danger of my state; Implore her, in my voice, that she make friends To the strict deputy; bid herself assay him; I have great hope in that: for in her youth There is a prone<sup>¶</sup> and speechless dialect, Such as moves men; beside, she hath prosperous art

When she will play with reason and discourse, And well she can persuade.

*Lucio.* I pray, she may: as well for the encouragement of the like, which else would stand under grievous imposition; as for the enjoying of thy life, who I would be sorry should be thus foolishly lost at a game of tick-tack, I'll to her.

*Claud.* I thank you, good friend Lucio.

*Lucio.* Within two hours.—

*Claud.* Come, officer, away. [Exit.

### SCENE IV. *A Monastery.*

Enter DUKE and Friar THOMAS.

*Duke.* No; holy father; throw away that thought;

\* Gaoler. † Voraciously devour. ‡ Yearly circles. § Ticklish. || Enter on her probation ¶ Prompt.

Believe not that the dribbling dart of love  
Can pierce a complete bosom \*: why I desire  
thee

To give me secret harbour, hath a purpose  
More grave and wrinkled than the aims and  
Of burning youth. [ends

*Fri.* May your grace speak of it?

*Duke.* My holy sir, none better knows than  
How I have ever lov'd the life remov'd +; [you  
And held in idle price to haunt assemblies,  
Where youth, and cost, and witless bravery  
I have delivered to lord Angelo [keeps †.

[A man of stricture §, and firm abstinence,]  
My absolute power and place here in Vienna,  
And he supposes me travell'd to Poland;  
For so I have strew'd it in the common ear,  
And so it is receiv'd: Now, pious sir,  
You will demand of me, why I do this?

*Fri.* Gladly, my lord. [biting laws,

*Duke.* We have strict statutes, and most  
[The needful bits and curbs for head-strong  
steeds,] [sleep;

Which for these fourteen years we have let  
Even like an o'er-grown lion in a cave,  
That goes not out to prey: Now, as fond fathers  
Having bound up the threaten'g twigs of birch,  
Only to stick it in their children's sight,  
For terror, not to use; in time the rod [crees,  
Becomes more mock'd, than fear'd: so our de-  
ad to infliction, to themselves are dead;  
And liberty plucks justice by the nose;  
The baby beats the nurse, and quite athwart  
Goes all decorum.

*Fri.* It rested in your grace  
To unloose this tied-up justice, when you  
pleas'd:

And it in you more dreadful would have seem'd,  
Than in lord Angelo.

*Duke.* I do fear, too dreadful:  
Sith I 'twas my fault to give the people scope,  
'Twould be my tyranny to strike, and gall them  
For what I bid them do: For we bid this be  
done,

When evil deeds have their permissive pass,  
And not the punishment. Therefore, indeed,  
my father,

I have on Angelo impos'd the office;  
Who may, in the ambush of my name, strike  
home,

And yet my nature never in the sight,  
To do it slander: And to behold his sway,  
I will, as 'twere a brother of your order, [thee,  
Visit both prince and people: therefore, I pr'y-  
Supply me with the habit, and instruct me  
How I may formally in person bear me  
Like a true friar. More reasons for this action,  
At our more leisure shall I render you;  
Only, this one:—Lord Angelo is precise;  
Stands at a guard ¶ with envy; scarce confesses  
that his blood flows, or that his appetite [see,  
As more to breed than stone: Hence shall we  
of power change purpose, what our seemers  
be. [Exeunt.

## SCENE V. A Nunnery.

Enter ISABELLA and FRANCISCA.

*Isab.* And have you nuns no further privi-  
leges?

*Fran.* Are not these large enough? [more;

*Isab.* Yes, truly: I speak not as desiring  
But rather wishing a more strict restraint  
Upon the sisterhood, the votarists of saint  
Clare.

*Lucio.* Ho! Peace be in this place? [Within.]

*Isab.* Who's that which calls?

*Fran.* It is a man's voice: Gentle Isabella,  
Turn you the key, and know his business of him;  
You may, I may not; you are yet unsworn:  
When you have vow'd, you must not speak with  
But in the presence of the prioress: [men,  
Then, if you speak, you must not show your face;  
Or, if you show your face, you must not speak.  
He calls again; I pray you, answer him.

[Exit FRANCISCA.

*Isab.* Peace and prosperity! Who is't that  
calls?

Enter LUCIO.

*Lucio.* Hail, virgin, if you be; as those  
cheek-roses

Proclaim you are no less! Can you so stead me,  
As bring me to the sight of Isabella,  
A novice of this place, and the fair sister  
To her unhappy brother Claudio?

*Isab.* Why her unhappy brother? let me ask  
The rather, for I now must make you know  
I am that Isabella, and his sister.

*Lucio.* Gentle and fair, your brother kindly  
greetes you:

Not to be weary with you, he's in prison.

*Isab.* Woe me! For what? [his judge,

*Lucio.* For that, which, if myself might be  
He should receive his punishment in thanks:  
He hath got his friend with child.

*Isab.* Sir, make me not your story \*\*.

*Lucio.* It is true.

I would not—though 'tis my familiar sin  
With maids to seem the lapwing, and to jest,  
Tongue far from heart,—play with all virgins  
I hold you as a thing ensky'd, and sainted; [so:  
By your renouncement, an immortal spirit;  
And to be talk'd with in sincerity,  
As with a saint.

*Isab.* You do blaspheme the good, in mock-  
ing me. [tis thus:

*Lucio.* Do not believe it Fewness and truthth,  
Your brother and his lover have embrac'd;  
As those that feed grow full; as blossoming time,  
That from the seedness the bare fallow brings  
To teeming foison ††; even so her plenteous  
womb

Expresseth his full tilth §§ and husbandry.

*Isab.* Some one with child by him?—My

*Lucio.* Is she your cousin? [cousin Juliet?

*Isab.* Adoptedly; as school-maids change  
By vain though apt affection. [their names

*Lucio.* She it is.

\* Completely armed.

† Retired.

‡ Showy dress resides.

§ Strictness.

¶ Since.

¶ On his defence.

\*\* Do not make a jest of me.

†† In few and true words.

‡‡ Breeding plenty.

§§ Tilling.

*Isa.* O, let him marry her!

*Lucio.* This is the point.  
The duke is very strangely gone from hence;  
Bore many gentlemen, myself being one,  
In hand, and hope of action: but we do learn  
By those that know the very nerves of state,  
His givings out were of an infinite distance  
From his true-meant design. Upon his place,  
and with full line\* of his authority,  
Governs lord Angelo; a man, whose blood  
Is very snow broth; one who never teets  
The wanton stings and motions of the sense;  
But doth rebate and blunt his natural edge  
With profits of the mind, study and fast.  
He (to give fear to use and liberty,  
Which have, for long, run by the hideous law,  
As incite by lions,) hath pick'd out an act,  
Under whose heavy sense your brother's life  
Falls into forfeit: he arrests him on it;  
And follows close the rigour of the statute,  
To make him an example: all hope is gone,  
Unless you have the grace† by your fair prayer  
To soften Angelo: And that's my pith  
Of business 'twixt you and your poor brother.

*Isab.* Doth he so seek his life?

*Lucio.* Has censur'd† him  
Already; and, as I hear, the provost hath  
A warrant for his execution.  
*Isab.* Alas! what poor ability's in me  
To do him good?

*Lucio.* Assay the power you have.

*Isab.* My power! Alas! I doubt,—

*Lucio.* Our doubts are traitors,  
And make us lose the good we oft might win,  
By fearing to attempt: Go to lord Angelo,  
And let him learn to know, when maidens sue,  
Men give like gods; but when they weep and  
All their petitions are as freely theirs [kneel,  
As they themselves would owe§ them.

*Isab.* I'll see what I can do.

*Lucio.* But speedily.

*Isab.* I will about it straight;  
No longer staying but to give the mother||  
Notice of my affair. I humbly thank you:  
Commend me to my brother: soon at night  
I'll send him certain word of my success.

*Lucio.* I take my leave of you.

*Isab.* Good sir, adieu.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. A Hall in Angelo's House.

*Enter* ANGELO, ESCALUS, a Justice, Provost,  
Officers, and other Attendants.

*Ang.* We must not make a scare-crow of the  
Setting it up to fear¶ the birds of prey, [law,  
And let it keep one shape, till custom make it  
Their perch, and not their terror.

*Escal.* Ay, but yet  
Let us be keen, and rather cut a little, [tleman,  
Than fall, and bruise to death: Alas! this gen-  
Whom I would save, had a most noble father.  
Let but your honour know \*\*,  
(Whom I believe to be most strait in virtue,)  
That, in the working of your own affections,  
Had time coher'd†† with place, or place with  
wishing,

Or that the resolute acting of your blood [pose,  
Could have attain'd the effect of your own pur-  
Whether you had not sometime in your life  
Err'd in this point which now you censure him,  
And pull'd the law upon you.

*Ang.* 'Tis one thing to be tempted, Escalus,  
Another thing to fall. I not deny,  
The jury, passing on the prisoner's life,  
May, in the sworn twelve, have a thief or two  
Guiltier than him they try: What's open made  
to justice,

That justice seizes. What know the laws,  
That thieves do pass‡‡ on thieves? 'Tis very  
pregnant§§,

The jewel that we find, we stoop and take it,  
Because we see it; but what we do not see,  
We tread upon, and never think of it.

You may not so extenuate his offence,  
For|| I have had such faults; but rather tell me,  
When I, that censure¶¶ him, do so offend,  
Let mine own judgment pattern out my death,  
And nothing come in partial. Sir, he must die.

*Escal.* Be it as your wisdom will.

*Ang.* Where is the provost?

*Prov.* Here, if it like your honour.

*Ang.* See that Claudio  
Be executed by nine to-morrow morning:  
Bring him his confessor, let him be prepared;  
For that's the utmost of his pilgrimage.

[*Exit* Provost.]

*Escal.* Well, heaven forgive him; and for-  
give us all!

Some rise by sin, and some by virtue fall:  
Some run from brakes\*\*\* of vice, and answer  
none;

And some condemned for a fault alone.

*Enter* ELBOW, FROTH, Clown, Officers, &c.

*Elb.* Come, bring them away: if these be  
good people in a common-weal†††, that do no-  
thing but use their abuses in common houses,  
I know no law; bring them away.

*Ang.* How now, sir! What's your name?

*Elb.* If it please your honour, I am the poor  
duke's constable, and my name is Elbow; I  
do lean upon justice, sir, and do bring in here  
before your good honour two notorious benefactors.

*Ang.* Benefactors? Well; what benefactors  
are they? are they not malefactors?

*Elb.* If it please your honour, I know not

\* Extent. † Power of gaining favour. ‡ Sentenced. § Have. || Abbess.  
¶ Scare. \*\* Examine. †† Suited. †‡ Pass judgment. §§ Plain. ||| Because.  
¶¶ Sentence. \*\*\* Thickets, thorny paths of vice. ††† Wealth.



well what they are: but precise villains they are, that I am sure of; and void of all profanation in the world, that good christians ought to have.

*Escal.* This comes off well\*; here's a wise officer.

*Ang.* Go to: What quality are they of? Elbow is your name? Why dost thou not speak, Elbow?

*Clo.* He cannot, sir; he's out at elbow.

*Ang.* What are you, sir?

*Elb.* He, sir? a tapster, sir; parcelt-bawd; one that serves a bad woman; whose house, sir, was, as they say, pluck'd down in the suburbs; and now she professes † a hot-house, which, I think, is a very ill house too.

*Escal.* How know you that?

*Elb.* My wife, sir, whom I detest § before heaven and your honour,—

*Escal.* How! thy wife?

*Elb.* Ay, sir; whom, I thank heaven, is an honest woman,—

*Escal.* Dost thou detest her therefore?

*Elb.* I say, sir, I will detest myself also, as well as she, that this house, if it be not a bawd's house, it is pity of her life, for it is a naughty house.

*Escal.* How dost thou know that, constable!

*Elb.* Marry, sir, by my wife; who, if she had been a woman cardinally given, might have been accused in fornication, adultery, and all uncleanness there.

*Escal.* By the woman's means?

*Elb.* Ay, sir, by mistress Overdone's means: but as she spit in his face, so she defied him.

*Clo.* Sir, if it please your honour, this is not so.

*Elb.* Prove it before these varlets here, thou honourable man, prove it.

*Escal.* Do you hear how he misplaces?

[*Clo* ANGELO.]

*Clo.* Sir, she came in great with child; and longing (saving your honour's reverence,) for stew'd prunes; sir, we had but two in the house, which at that very distant time stood, as it were, in a fruit-dish, a dish of some three pence; your honours have seen such dishes; they are not China dishes, but very good dishes.

*Escal.* Go to, go to: no matter for the dish, sir.

*Clo.* No, indeed, sir, not of a pin; you are therein in the right: but, to the point: As I say, this mistress Elbow, being, as I say, with child, and being great belly'd, and longing, as I said, for prunes; and having but two in the dish, as I said, master Froth here, this very man, having eaten the rest, as I said, and, as I say, paying for them very honestly;—for, as you know, master Froth, I could not give you three pence again.

*Froth.* No, indeed.

*Clo.* Very well: you being then, if you be remember'd, cracking the stones of the fore-said prunes.

*Froth.* Ay, so I did, indeed.

*Clo.* Why, very well: I telling you then, if you be remember'd, that such a one, and such a one, were past cure of the thing you wot of, unless they kept very good diet, as I told you.

*Froth.* All this is true.

*Clo.* Why, very well then.

*Escal.* Come, you are a tedious fool: to the purpose.—What was done to Elbow's wife, that he hath cause to complain of? Come me to what was done to her.

*Clo.* Sir, your honour cannot come to that yet.

*Escal.* No, sir, nor I mean it not.

*Clo.* Sir, but you shall come to it, by your honour's leave: And, I beseech you, look into master Froth here, sir; a man of fourscore pound a-year; whose father died at Hallowmas:—Was't not at Hallowmas, master Froth?

*Froth.* All-holland ‖ eve.

*Clo.* Why, very well; I hope here be truths: He, sir, sitting, as I say, in a lower ¶ chair, sir;—'twas in the *Bunch of Grapes*, where, indeed, you have a delight to sit: Have you not?

*Froth.* I have so; because it is an open room, and good for winter.

*Clo.* Why, very well then;—I hope here be truths.

*Ang.* This will last out a night in Russia, When nights are longest there: I'll take my leave,

And leave you to the hearing of the cause; Hoping, you'll find good cause to whip them all.

*Escal.* I think no less: Good morrow to your lordship. [*Exit ANGELO.*]

Now, sir, come on: What was done to Elbow's wife, once more?

*Clo.* Once, sir? there was nothing done to her once.

*Elb.* I beseech you, sir, ask him what this man did to my wife.

*Clo.* I beseech your honour, ask me.

*Escal.* Well, sir: What did this gentleman to her?

*Clo.* I beseech you, sir, look in this gentleman's face:—Good master Froth, look upon his honour; 'tis for a good purpose: Doth your honour mark his face?

*Escal.* Ay, sir, very well.

*Clo.* Nay, I beseech you, mark it well.

*Escal.* Well, I do so.

*Clo.* Doth your honour see any harm in his face?

*Escal.* Why, no.

*Clo.* I'll be supposed\*\* upon a hook, his face is the worst thing about him: Good then; if his face be the worst thing about him, how could master Froth do the constable's wife any harm? I would know that of your honour.

*Escal.* He's in the right: Constable, what say you to it?

*Elb.* First, an it like you, the house is a respected house; next, this is a respected fellow; and his mistress is a respected woman.

\* Well told.

† Partly.

‡ Keeps a bagnio.

§ For protest.

‖ Eve of All Saints day.

¶ Easy.

\*\* Deposed, sworn

*Clo.* By this hand, sir, his wife is a more respected person than any of us all.

*Elb.* Varlet, thou liest; thou liest, wicked varlet: the time is yet to come, that she was ever respected with man, woman, or child.

*Clo.* Sir, she was respected with him before he married with her.

*Escal.* Which is the wiser here? Justice, or Iniquity? Is this true?

*Elb.* O thou caitiff! O thou varlet! O thou wicked Hannibal! I respected with her, before I was married to her? If ever I was respected with her, or she with me, let not your worship think me the poor duke's officer:—Prove this, thou wicked Hannibal, or I'll have mine action of battery on thee.

*Escal.* If he took you a box o' ear, you might have your action of slander too.

*Elb.* Marry, I thank your good worship for it: What is't your worship's pleasure I should do with this wicked caitiff?

*Escal.* Truly, officer, because he hath some offences in him, that thou wouldst discover if thou couldst, let him continue in his courses, till thou know'st what they are.

*Elb.* Marry, I thank your worship for it:—Thou seest, thou wicked varlet now, what's come upon thee; thou art to continue now, thou varlet; thou art to continue.

*Escal.* Where were you born, friend?

[To FROTH.]

*Froth.* Here in Vienna, sir.

*Escal.* Are you of fourscore pounds a-year?

*Froth.* Yes, and't please you, sir.

*Escal.* So.—What trade are you of, sir?

[To the Clown.]

*Clo.* A tapster; a poor widow's tapster.

*Escal.* Your mistress's name?

*Clo.* Mistress Over-done.

*Escal.* Hath she had any more than one husband?

*Clo.* Nine, sir; Over-done by the last.

*Escal.* Nine!—Come hither to me, master Froth. Master Froth, I would not have you acquainted with tapsters; they will draw you, master Froth, and you will hang them: Get you gone, and let me hear no more of you.

*Froth.* I thank your worship: For mine own part, I never come into any room in a taphouse, but I am drawn in.

*Escal.* Well; no more of it, master Froth: farewell. [Exit FROTH.]—Come you hither to me, master tapster; what's your name, master tapster?

*Clo.* Pompey.

*Escal.* What else?

*Clo.* Bum, sir.

*Escal.* Troth, and your bum is the greatest thing about you: so that, in the beastliest sense, you are Pompey the great. Pompey, you are partly a bawd, Pompey, howsoever you colour it in being a tapster. Are you not? come, tell me true; it shall be the better for you.

*Clo.* Truly, sir, I am a poor fellow, that would live.

*Escal.* How would you live, Pompey? by

being a bawd? What do you think of the trade, Pompey? is it a lawful trade?

*Clo.* If the law would allow it, sir.

*Escal.* But the law will not allow it, Pompey; nor it shall not be allowed in Vienna.

*Clo.* Does your worship mean to geld and spay all the youth in the city?

*Escal.* No, Pompey.

*Clo.* Truly, sir, in my poor opinion, they will to't then: If your worship will take order for the drabs and the knaves, you need not to fear the bawds.

*Escal.* There are pretty orders beginning, I can tell you: It is but heading and hanging.

*Clo.* If you head and hang all that offend that way but for ten year together, you'll be glad to give out a commission for more heads. If this law hold in Vienna ten year, I'll rent the fairest house in it, after three pence a bay: If you live to see this come to pass, say, Pompey told you so.

*Escal.* Thank you, good Pompey: and, in requital of your prophecy, hark you,—I advise you, let me not find you before me again upon any complaint whatsoever, no, nor tor dwelling where you do; if I do, Pompey, I shall beat you to your tent, and prove a shrewd Cæsar to you; in plain dealing, Pompey, I shall have you whipt: so for this time, Pompey, fare you well.

*Clo.* I thank your worship for your good counsel; but I shall follow it, as the flesh and fortune shall better determine.

Whip me? No, no; let carman whip his jade; The valiant heart's not whipt out of his trade.

[Exit.]

*Escal.* Come hither to me, master Elbow; come hither, master Constable. How long have you been in this place of constable?

*Elb.* Seven year and a half, sir.

*Escal.* I thought, by your readiness in the office, you had continued in it some time: You say, seven years together?

*Elb.* And a half, sir.

*Escal.* Alas! it hath been great pains to you! They do you wrong to put you so oft upon't: Are there not men in your ward sufficient to serve it?

*Elb.* Faith, sir, few of any wit in such matters: as they are chosen, they are glad to choose me for them; I do it for some piece of money, and go through with all.

*Escal.* Look you, bring me in the names of some six or seven, the most sufficient of your parish.

*Elb.* To your worship's house, sir?

*Escal.* To my house: Fare you well. [Exit. ELBOW.] What's o'clock, think you?

*Just.* Eleven, sir.

*Escal.* I pray you home to dinner with me.

*Just.* I humbly thank you.

*Escal.* It grieves me for the death of Claudio; But there's no remedy.

*Just.* Lord Angelo is severe.

*Escal.*

It is but needful: Mercy is not itself, that oft looks so;

Pardon is still the nurse of second woe;  
But yet,—Poor Claudio!—There's no remedy.  
Come, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Provost and a Servant.*

*Serv.* He's hearing of a cause; he will come straight.

I'll tell him of you. [*know*]

*Prov.* Pray you, do. [*Exit Servant.*] I'll His pleasure; may be, he will relent: Alas, He hath but as offended in a dream! All sects, all ages smack of this vice; and he To die for it!—

*Enter ANGELO.*

*Ang.* Now, what's the matter, provost?

*Prov.* Is it your will Claudio shall die to-morrow?

*Ang.* Did I not tell thee, yea? hadst thou Why dost thou ask again! [*not order!*]

*Prov.* Lest I might be too rash: Under your good correction, I have seen, When, after execution, judgment hath Repented o'er his doom.

*Ang.* Go to; let that be mine: Do you your office, or give up your place, And you shall well be spar'd.

*Prov.* I crave your honour's pardon.—What shall be done, sir, with the groaning She's very near her hour. [*Juliet!*]

*Ang.* Dispose of her To some more fitter place; and that with speed.

*Re-enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Here is the sister of the man con-desires access to you. [*demn'd,*]

*Ang.* Hath he a sister?  
*Prov.* Ay, my good lord; a very virtuous And to be shortly of a sisterhood, [*maid,*]  
If not already.

*Ang.* Well, let her be admitted. [*Exit Servant.*]

See you, the fornicatress be removed;  
Let her have needful, but not lavish, means;  
There shall be order for it.

*Enter LUCIO and ISABELLA.*

*Prov.* Save your honour! [*Offering to retire.*]

*Ang.* Stay a little while!—[*To ISABELLA.*] You are welcome: What's your will!

*Isab.* I am a woeful suitor to your honour, Please but your honour hear me.

*Ang.* Well; what's your suit!

*Isab.* There is a vice, that most I do abhor, And most desire should meet the blow of justice; For which I would not plead, but that I must; For which I must not plead, but that I am At war, 'twixt will and will not.

*Ang.* Well; the matter!

*Isab.* I have a brother is condemn'd to die: I do beseech you, let it be his fault, And not my brother.

*Prov.* Heaven give thee moving graces!

*Ang.* Condemn the fault, and not the actor of it!

Why, every fault's condemn'd, ere it be done: Mine were the very cipher of a function,

To find the faults, whose fine stands in record, And let go by the actor.

*Isab.* O just, but severe law! I had a brother then.—Heaven keep your honour! [*Retiring.*]

*Lucio.* [*To ISABELLA.*] Give not o'er so: to him again, entreat him;

Kneel down before him, hang upon his gown; You are too cold: if you should need a pin, You could not with more tame a tongue desire To him, I say. [*it:*]

*Isab.* Must he needs die!

*Ang.* Maiden, no remedy.

*Isab.* Yes; I do think that you might pardon him, [*mercy.*]

And neither heaven, nor man, grieve at the *Ang.* I will not do't.

*Isab.* But can you, if you would!

*Ang.* Look, what I will not, that I cannot do.

*Isab.* But might you do't, and do the world no wrong, [*morse \**]

If so your heart were touch'd with that re-As mine is to him!

*Ang.* He's sentenc'd: 'tis too late.

*Lucio.* You are too cold. [*To ISABELLA.*]

*Isab.* Too late? why, no; I, that do speak word,

May call it back again: Well believe't this, No ceremony that to great ones' longs, Not the king's crown, nor the deputed sword, The marshal's truncheon, nor the judge's robe, Become them with one half so good a grace, As mercy does. If he had been as you And you as he, you would have slept like him; But he, like you, would not have been so stern.

*Ang.* Pray you, begone.

*Isab.* I would to heaven I had your potency, And you were Isabel! should it then be thus? No; I would tell what 'twere to be a judge, And what a prisoner.

*Lucio.* Ay, touch him: there's the vein. [*Aside.*]

*Ang.* Your brother is a forfeit of the law, And you but waste your words.

*Isab.* Alas! alas!

Why, all the souls that were, were forfeit once; And He that might the vantage best have took, Found out the remedy: How would you be, If he, which is the top of judgment, should But judge you as you are? O, think on that; And mercy then will breathe within your lips, Like man new made.

*Ang.* Be you content, fair maid; It is the law, not I, condemns your brother; Were he my kinsman, brother, or my son, It should be thus with him;—he must die to-morrow. [*him, spare him:*]

*Isab.* To-morrow! O, that's sudden! Spare He's not prepar'd for death! Even for our kitchens, [*heaven*]

We kill the fowl of season†; shall we serve With less respect than we do minister

To our gross selves? Good, good my lord, be- think you:

Who is it that hath died for this offence? There's many have committed it.

\* Pity.

† Be assured.

‡ When in season.



*Lucio.*

Ay, well said.

*Ang.* The law hath not been dead, though it hath slept:

Those many had not dar'd to do that evil,  
If the first man that did the edict infringe,  
Had answer'd for his deed: now, 'tis awake;  
Takes note of what is done; and, like a prophet,  
Looks in a glass, that shows what future evils,  
(Either now, or by remissness new-conceiv'd,  
And so in progress to be hatch'd and born,)  
Are now to have no successive degrees,  
But, where they live, to end.

*Isab.*

Yet show some pity.

*Ang.* I show it most of all, when I show just—  
For then I pity those I do not know, [tice;  
Which a dismiss'd offence would after gall;  
And do him right, that, answering one foul  
Lives not to act another. Be satisfied; [wrong;  
Your brother dies to-morrow; be content.

*Isab.* So you must be the first, that gives this sentence:

And he, that suffers: O, it is excellent  
To have a giant's strength; but it is tyrannous  
To use it like a giant.

*Lucio.*

That's well said.

*Isab.* Could great men thunder

As Jove himself does, Jove would ne'er be quiet,  
For every pelting\*, petty officer,  
Would use his heaven for thunder; nothing  
but thunder.—

Merciful heaven!

Thou rather, with thy sharp and sulphurous bolt,  
Split'st the unwedgeable and gnarled† oak,  
Than the soft myrtle;—O, but man, proud man!  
Drest in a little brief authority;  
Most ignorant of what he's most assur'd;  
His glassy essence,—like an angry ape,  
Plays such fantastic tricks before high heaven,  
As make the angels weep; who, with our  
Would all themselves laugh mortal. [spleens,

*Lucio.* O, to him, to him, wench: he will  
He's coming, I perceive't. [relent;

*Prov.*

Pray heaven, she win him!

*Isab.* We cannot weigh our brother with  
ourself: [them;

Great men may jest with saints: 'tis wit in  
But, in the less, foul profanation.

*Lucio.* Thou'rt in the right, girl; more o'  
that. [word,

*Isab.* That in the captain's but a choleric  
Which in the soldier is flat blasphemy.

*Lucio.* Art advis'd o' that? more on't.*Ang.* Why do you put these sayings upon me?

*Isab.* Because authority, though it err like  
Hath yet a kind of medicine in itself. [others,  
That skins the vice o' the top: Go to your  
bosom; [know

Knock there; and ask your heart, what it doth  
That's like my brother's fault: if it confess  
A natural guiltiness, such as is his,  
Let it not sound a thought upon your tongue  
Against my brother's life.

*Ang.*

She speaks, and 'tis

Such sense, that my sense breeds with it.—  
Fare you well.

*Isab.* Gentle my lord, turn back.

*Ang.* I will bethink me:—Come again to  
morrow. [lord, turn back

*Isab.* Hark, how I'll bribe you: Good in,  
*Ang.* How! bribe me!

*Isab.* Ay, with such gifts, that heaven shal  
share with you.

*Lucio.* You had inarr'd all else. [gold

*Isab.* Not with fond shekels of the tested‡  
Or stones, whose rates are either rich or poor,  
As fancy values them: but with true prayers,  
That shall be up at heaven, and enter there,  
Ere sun rise; prayers from preserved§ souls,  
From fasting maids, whose minds are dedicate  
To nothing temporal.

*Ang.*

Well; come to me

To-morrow.

*Lucio.* Go to; it is well; away.

[Aside to ISABELL.

*Isab.* Heaven keep your honour safe!*Ang.*

Amen: for I

Am that way going to temptation, [Aside.  
Where prayers cross.

*Isab.*

At what hour to-morrow

Shall I attend your lordship!

*Ang.*

At any time 'fore noon.

*Isab.* Save your honour!

[Exit LUCIO, ISABELLA, and Provost.

*Ang.* From thee; even from thy virtue.—  
What's this! what's this! Is this her fault, or  
mine! [Ha!

The tempter, or the tempted, who sins most!  
Not she; nor doth she tempt: but it is I,  
That lying by the violet, in the sun,  
Do, as the carrion does, not as the flower,  
Corrupt with virtuous season. Can it be,  
That modesty may more betray our sense  
Than woman's lightness? Having waste ground  
Shall we desire to raze the sanctuary, [enough,  
And pitch our evils there! O fie, fie, fie!  
What dost thou! or what art thou, Angelo!  
Dost thou desire her foully, for those things  
That make her good! O, let her brother live:  
Thieves for their robbery have authority;  
When judges steal themselves. What! do I  
love her,

That I desire to hear her speak again,  
And feast upon her eyes? What is't I dream on?  
O cunning enemy, that, to catch a saint,  
With saints dost bait thy hook! Most dangerous  
Is that temptation, that doth goad us on  
To sin in loving virtue; never could the strumpet,  
With all her double vigour, art, and nature,  
Once stir my temper: but this virtuous maid  
Subdues me quite;—Ever, till now, [how.  
When men were fond, I smil'd, and wonder'd  
[Exit.

## SCENE III. A Room in a Prison.

Enter DUKE, habited like a Friar, and  
Provost.

*Duke.* Hail to you, provost! so, I think  
you are. [good friar!

*Prov.* I am the provost: What's your will,

*Duke.* Bound by my charity, and my bless'd  
order,

\* Paltry. † Knotted. ‡ Attested, stamped. § Preserved from the corruption of the world. || See 2 Kings, x. 27.

I come to visit the afflicted spirits  
Here in the prison do me the common right  
To let me see them, and to make me know  
The nature of their crimes, that I may minister  
To them accordingly. [were needful.]

*Prov.* I would do more than that, if more

*Enter JULIET.*

Look, here comes one; a gentlewoman of mine,  
Who falling in the flames of her own youth,  
Hath blister'd her report: She is with child;  
And he that got it, sentenc'd: a young man  
More fit to do another such offence,  
Than die for this.

*Duke.* When must he die?

*Prov.* As I do think, to-morrow.—  
I have provided for you; stay a while.

[*To JULIET.*]

And you shall be conducted. [carry?]

*Duke.* Repent you, fair one, of the sin you  
*Juliet.* I do; and bear the shame most  
patiently. [your conscience,

*Duke.* I'll teach you how you shall arraign  
And try your penitence, if it be sound,  
Or hollowly put on.

*Juliet.* I'll gladly learn.

*Duke.* Love you the man that wrong'd you?

*Juliet.* Yes, as I love the woman that  
wrong'd him. [ful act

*Duke.* So then, it seems, your most offence—  
Was mutually committed?

*Juliet.* Mutually.

*Duke.* Then was your sin of heavier kind  
than his.

*Juliet.* I do confess it and repent it, father.

*Duke.* 'Tis meet so, daughter: But lest you  
do repent,

As that the sin hath brought you to this shame,—  
Which sorrow is always toward ourselves, not  
heaven; [love it,

Showing, we'd not spare \* heaven, as we  
But as we stand in fear,—

*Juliet.* I do repent me, as it is an evil;  
And take the shame with joy.

*Duke.* There rest.

Your partner, as I hear, must die to-morrow,  
And I am going with instruction to him.—

Grace go with you! *Benedicite!* [*Exit.*]

*Juliet.* Must die to-morrow! O, injurious  
That respites me a life, whose very comfort [love,  
Is still a dying horror!

*Prov.* 'Tis pity of him. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. A Room in Angelo's House.

*Enter ANGELO.*

*Ang.* When I would pray and think, I  
think and pray [words;

To several subjects: heaven hath my empty  
Whilst my invention, hearing not my tongue,

Anchors on Isabel: Heaven in my mouth,  
As if I did but only chew his name;

And in my heart, the strong and swelling evil  
Of my conception: The state, whereon I

Is like a good thing, being often read, [studied,  
Grown tear'd and tedious; yea, my gravity,

Wherein (let no man hear me) I take pride,  
Could I, with boot, change for an idle game,

Which the air beats for vain. O place! O form!  
How often dost thou with thy case, thy habit,  
Wrench awe from fools, and tie the wiser souls  
To thy false seeming? Blood thou still art blood  
Let's write good angel on the devil's horn,  
'Tis not the devil's crest.

*Enter Servant.*

How now, who's there?

*Serv.* One Isabel, a sister,  
Desires access to you.

*Ang.* Teach her the way. [*Exit Serv.*]  
O heavens!

Why does my blood thus muster to my heart;  
Making both it unable for itself,

And dispossessing all the other parts  
Of necessary fitness? [swoons;

So play the foolish throngs with one that  
Come all to help him, and so stop the air

By which he should revive: and even so  
The general, subject to a well-wish'd king,

Quit their own part, and in obsequious fond-  
ness [love

Crowd to his presence, where their untaught  
Must needs appear offence.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

How now, fair maid?

*Isab.* I am come to know your pleasure.

*Ang.* That you might know it, would much  
better please me,

Than to demand what 'tis. Your brother cannot  
live.

*Isab.* Even so?—Heaven keep your honour!  
[*Retiring.*

*Ang.* Yet may he live a while; and, it may  
As long as you, or I: Yet he must die. [be,

*Isab.* Under your sentence?

*Ang.* Yea. [reprieve,

*Isab.* When, I beseech you? that in his  
Longer, or shorter, he may be so fitted,

That his soul sicken not. [as good

*Ang.* Ha! Fye, these filthy vices! It were  
To pardon him, that hath from nature stolen

A man already made, as to remit [image,  
Their saucy sweetness, that do coin heaven's

In stamps that are forbid: 'tis all as easy  
Falsely to take away a life true made,

As to put mettle in restrained means,  
To make a false one. [in earth.

*Isab.* 'Tis set down so in heaven, but not  
*Ang.* Say you so? then I shall pose you  
quickly.

Which had you rather, That the most just law  
Now took your brother's life; or, to redeem  
him,

Give up your body to such sweet uncleanness,  
As she that he hath stain'd?

*Isab.* Sir, believe this,  
I had rather give my body than my soul.

*Ang.* I talk not of your soul: Our compell'd  
Stand more for number than account. [sins

*Isab.* How say you?

*Ang.* Nay, I'll not warrant that; for I can  
speak

Against the thing I say. Answer to this;—  
I, now the voice of the recorded law,  
Pronounce a sentence on your brother's life:

\* Spare to offend heaven.

† Profit.

‡ Outside.

§ People.

Might there not be a charity in sin,  
To save this brother's life?

*Isab.* Please you to do't,  
I'll take it as a peril to my soul,  
It is no sin at all, but charity. [soul]

*Ang.* Pleas'd you to do't, at peril of your  
were equal poise of sin and charity.

*Isab.* That I do beg his life, if it be sin,  
Heaven, let me hear it! you granting of my suit,  
If that be sin, I'll make it my morn prayer  
To have it added to the faults of mine,  
And nothing of your, answer.

*Ang.* Nay, but hear me :  
Your sense pursues not mine : either you are  
ignorant,

Or seem so, craftily ; and that's not good.

*Isab.* Let me be ignorant, and in nothing  
But graciously to know I am no better. [good]

*Ang.* Thus wisdom wishes to appear most  
bright,

When it doth tax itself : as these black masks  
Proclaim an enshild \* beauty ten times louder  
Than beauty could displayed.—But mark me ;  
To be received plain, I'll speak more gross :  
Your brother is to die.

*Isab.* So.

*Ang.* And his offence is so, as it appears  
Accountant to the law upon that pain†.

*Isab.* True.

*Ang.* Admit no other way to save his life,  
As I subscribe‡ not that, nor any other,  
But in the loss of question§, that you, his sister,  
Finding yourself desir'd of such a person,  
Whose credit with the judge, or own great place,  
Could fetch your brother from the manacles  
Of the all-binding law ; and that there were  
No earthly mean to save him, but that either  
You must lay down the treasures of your body  
To this supposed, or else let him suffer ;  
What would you do? [myself]

*Isab.* As much for my poor brother, as  
That is, Were I under the terms of death,  
The impression of keen whips I'd wear as  
And strip myself to death, as to a bed [rubies],  
That longing I have been sick for, ere I'd yield  
My body up to shame.

*Ang.* Then must your brother die.

*Isab.* And 'twere the cheaper way :  
Better it were, a brother died at once,  
Than that a sister, by redeeming him,  
Should die for ever.

*Ang.* Were not you then as cruel as the  
That you have slander'd so? [sentence]

*Isab.* Ignomy|| in ransom, and free pardon,  
Are of two houses: law'st mercy is  
Nothing akin to foul redemption. [a tyrant]

*Ang.* You seem'd of late to make the law  
And rather prov'd the sliding of your brother  
A merriment than a vice.

*Isab.* O, pardon me, my lord ; it oft falls  
out, [we mean]

To have what we'd have, we speak not what  
I something do excuse the thing I hate,  
For his advantage that I dearly love.

*Ang.* We are all frail.

*Isab.* Else let my brother die,  
If not a feodary¶, but only he,  
Owe \*\*, and succeed by weakness.

*Ang.* Nay, women are frail oo.  
*Isab.* Ay, as the glasses where they view  
themselves ;

Which are as easy broke as they make forms.  
Women!—Help heaven! men their creation  
mar [frail] ;

In profiting by them. Nay, call us ten times  
For we are soft as our complexions are,  
And credulous to false prints††.

*Ang.* I think it well  
And from this testimony of your own sex,  
(Since, I suppose, we are mad to be no stronger  
Than faults may shake our frames,) let me be  
bold ;—

I do arrest your words ; Be that you are,  
That is, a woman ; if you be more, you're none ;  
If you be one, (as you are well express'd  
By all external warrants,) show it now,  
By putting on the destin'd livery. [lord]

*Isab.* I have no tongue but one : gentle my  
Let me entreat you speak the former language.

*Ang.* Plainly conceive, I love you.

*Isab.* My brother did love Juliet : and you  
That he shall die for it. [tell me]

*Ang.* He shall not, Isabel, if you give me  
love. [in't]

*Isab.* I know, your virtue hath a licence  
Which seems a little fouler than it is,  
To pluck on others.

*Ang.* Believe me, on mine honour,  
My words express my purpose.

*Isab.* Ha! little honour to be much believ'd,  
And most pernicious purpose!—Seeming,  
seeming!—

I will proclaim thee, Angelo ; look for't :  
Sign me a present pardon for my brother,  
Or, with an outstretch'd throat, I'll tell the  
Aloud, what man thou art. [world]

*Ang.* Who will believe thee, Isabel?

My unsoil'd name, the austereness of my life,  
My vouch§§ against you, and my place i'the  
Will so your accusation overweigh, [state],  
That you shall stifle in your own report,  
And smell of calumny. I have begun ;

And now I give my sensual race the rein :  
Fit thy consent to my sharp appetite ;  
Lay by all nicety, and prolixious|| blushes,  
That banish what they sue for ; redeem thy  
By yielding up thy body to my will ; [brother]

Or else he must not only die the death,  
But thy unkindness shall his death draw out,  
To lingering sufferance : answer me to-morrow,  
Or, by the affection that now guides me most,  
I'll prove a tyrant to him : As for you,  
Say what you can, my false o'erweighs your  
true. [Exit.]

*Isab.* To whom shall I complain? Did I  
tell this,

Who would believe me? O perilous mouths,  
That bear in them one and the self-same tongue,  
Either of condemnation or approval!  
Bidding the law make court'sy to their will ;

\* Enshilded, covered. † Penalty. ‡ Agree to. § Conversation. || Ignominy.  
¶ Associate. \*\* Own. †† Impressions. ‡‡ Hypocrisy. §§ Attestation. ||| Remitant.



Hooking both right and wrong to the appetite,  
 To follow as it draws! I'll to my brother:  
 Though he hath fallen by prompture of the  
 blood,  
 Yet hath he in him such a mind of honour,  
 That had he twenty heads to tender down  
 On twenty bloody blocks, he'd yield them up,

Before his sister should her body steep  
 To such abhorr'd pollution.  
 Then Isabel, live chaste, and, brother, die:  
 More than our brother is our chastity.  
 I'll tell him yet of Angelo's request,  
 And fit his mind to death, for his soul's rest.  
 [Exit.]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I. A Room in the Prison.

Enter DUKE, CLAUDIO, and Provost.

Duke. So, then you hope of pardon from  
 lord Angelo? [cine,

Claud. The miserable have no other medi-  
 But only hope:

I have hope to live, and am prepar'd to die.

Duke. Be absolute \* for death; \* either death,  
 or life, [with life,—

Shall thereby be the sweeter. Reason thus  
 If I do lose thee, I do lose a thing [art,

That none but fools would keep: a breath thou  
 (Serve to all the skiey influences,)

That dost this habitation, where thou keep'st,  
 Hourly afflict: merely, thou art death's fool;

For him thou labour'st by thy flight to shun,  
 And yet run'st toward him still: Thou art not  
 noble;

For all the accommodations that thou bear'st,  
 Are nurs'd by baseness: Thou art by no  
 means valiant;

For thou dost fear the soft and tender fork  
 Of a poor worm: Thy best of rest is sleep,  
 And that thou oft provok'st; yet grossly fear'st  
 Thy death, which is no more. Thou art not  
 thyself;

For thou exist'st on many a thousand grains  
 That issue out of dust: Happy thou art not:

For what thou hast not, still thou striv'st to get;  
 And what thou hast, forget'st: Thou art not  
 certain;

For thy complexion shifts to strange effects †,  
 After the moon: If thou art rich, thou art poor;

For, like an ass, whose back with ingots bows,  
 Thou bear'st thy heavy riches but a journey,  
 And death unloads thee: Friend hast thou none;

For thine own bowels, which do call thee sire,  
 The mere effusion of thy proper loins,  
 Do curse the gout, serpigo ‡, and the rheum,  
 For ending thee no sooner: Thou hast nor  
 youth, nor age;

But, as it were, an after dinner's sleep,  
 Dreaming on both: for all thy blessed youth  
 Becomes as aged, and doth beg the alms  
 Of palsied eld; and when thou art old, and rich,  
 Thou hast neither heat, affection, limb, nor  
 beauty, [this,

To make thy riches pleasant. What's yet in  
 That bears the name of life? Yet in this life  
 Lie hid more thousand deaths: yet death we  
 That makes these odds all even. [fear,

Claud. I humbly thank you.

To sue to live, I find, I seek to die:

And, seeking death, find life: Let it come on.

Enter ISABELLA.

Isab. What, ho! Peace here; grace and  
 good company! [serves a welcome.

Prov. Who's there? come in: the wish de-

Duke. Dear sir, ere long I'll visit you again.

Claud. Most holy sir, I thank you.

Isab. My business is a word or two with  
 Claudio.

Prov. And very welcome. Look, signior,  
 here's your sister.

Duke. Provost, a word with you.

Prov. As many as you please.

Duke. Bring them to speak, where I may  
 be conceal'd,

Yet hear them. [Exit DUKE and Provost.

Claud. Now, sister, what's the comfort?

Isab. Why, as all comforts are; most good  
 Lord Angelo, having affairs to heaven, [in deed:

Intends you for his swift ambassador,  
 Where you shall be an everlasting leiger ‖:

Therefore your best appointment ¶ make with  
 To-morrow you set on. [speed;

Claud. Is there no remedy?

Isab. None, but such remedy, as to save a  
 To cleave a heart in twain. [head,

Claud. But is there any?

Isab. Yes, brother, you may live;  
 There is a devilish mercy in the judge,  
 If you'll implore it, that will free your life,  
 But fetter you till death.

Claud. Perpetual durance?

Isab. Ay, just, perpetual durance; a re-  
 straint,

Though all the world's vastidity \*\* you had,  
 To a determin'd scope.

Claud. But in what nature?

Isab. In such a one as (you consenting to †)  
 Would bark your honour from that trunk you  
 And leave you naked. [bear,

Claud. Let me know the point.

Isab. O, I do fear thee, Claudio; and I quake,  
 Lest thou a feverous life should'st entertain,  
 And six or seven winters more respect  
 Than a perpetual honour. Dar'st thou die?

The sense of death is most in apprehension;  
 And the poor beetle, that we tread upon,  
 In corporal sufferance finds a pang as great  
 As when a giant dies.

Claud. Why give you me this shame?

Think you I can a resolution fetch  
 From flowery tenderness? If I must die,  
 I will encounter darkness as a bride,

\* Determined. † Affects, affections. ‡ Leprous eruptions. § Old age. ¶ Resident.  
 ¶ Preparation. \*\* Vastness of extent.

And hug it in mine arms. [father's grave  
*Isab.* There spake my brother; there my  
 Did utter forth a voice! Yes, thou must die:  
 Thou art too noble to conserve a life [puty,—  
 In base appliances. This outward-sainted de-  
 Whose settled visage and deliberate word  
 Nips youth i'th' head, and follies doth enmew\*,  
 As falcon doth the fowl,—is yet a devil;  
 His filth within being cast, he would appear  
 A pond as deep as hell.

*Claud.* The princely Angelo?

*Isab.* O, 'tis the cunning livery of hell,  
 The damned'st body to invest and cover  
 In princely guards! Dost thou think, Claudio,  
 If I would yield him my virginity,  
 Thou might'st be freed?

*Claud.* O, heavens! it cannot be.

*Isab.* Yes, he would give it thee, from this  
 rank offence,  
 So to offend him still: This night's the time  
 That I should do what I abhor to name,  
 Or else thou diest to-morrow.

*Claud.* Thou shalt not do't.

*Isab.* O, were it but my life,  
 I'd throw it down for your deliverance  
 As frankly † as a pin.

*Claud.* Thanks, dear Isabel.

*Isab.* Be ready, Claudio, for your death to-  
 morrow.

*Claud.* Yes.—Has he affections in him,  
 That thus can make him bite the law by the  
 nose,

When he would force it? Sure it is no sin;  
 Or of the deadly seven it is the least.

*Isab.* Which is the least? [wise,

*Claud.* If it were damnable, he, being so  
 Why, would he for the momentary trick  
 Be perdurably fin'd?—O Isabel!

*Isab.* What says my brother?

*Claud.* Death is a fearful thing.

*Isab.* And shamed life a hateful. [where;

*Claud.* Ay, but to die, and go we know not  
 To lie in cold obstruction, and to rot;  
 This sensible warm motion to become  
 A kneaded clod; and the delighted spirit  
 To bathe in fiery floods, or to reside

In thrilling regions of thick-ribbed ice;  
 To be imprison'd in the viewless winds,  
 And blown with restless violence round about  
 The pendent world; or to be worse than worst  
 Of these, that lawless and uncertain thoughts  
 Imagine howling!—'tis too horrible!

The weariest and most loathed worldly life,  
 That age, ach, penury, and imprisonment  
 Can lay on nature, is a paradise  
 To what we fear of death.

*Isab.* Alas! alas!

*Claud.* Sweet sister, let me live:  
 What sin you do to save a brother's life,  
 Nature dispenses with the deed so far,  
 That it becomes a virtue.

*Isab.* O, you beast!  
 O, faithless coward! O, dishonest wretch!  
 Wilt thou be made a man out of my vice?  
 Is't not a kind of incest, to take life

From thine own sister's shame? What should  
 I think?

Heaven shield, my mother play'd my father  
 For such a warped slip of wilderness! [fair!  
 Ne'er issu'd from his blood. Take my de-  
 fiance\*\*:

Die; perish! might but my bending down  
 Reprieve thee from thy fate, it should proceed  
 I'll pray a thousand prayers for thy death,  
 No word to save thee.

*Claud.* Nay, hear me, Isabel.

*Isab.* O, fye, fye, fye

Thy sin's not accidental, but a trade††:  
 Mercy to thee would prove itself a bawd:  
 'Tis best that thou diest quickly. [Going.

*Claud.* O hear me, Isabella

*Re-enter DUKE.*

*Duke.* Vouchsafe a word, young sister, but  
 one word.

*Isab.* What is your will?

*Duke.* Might you dispense with your leisure,  
 I would by and by have some speech with  
 you: the satisfaction I would require, is like-  
 wise your own benefit.

*Isab.* I have no superfluous leisure; my  
 stay must be stolen out of other affairs; but I  
 will attend you a while.

*Duke.* [To CLAUDIO, aside.] Son, I have  
 overheard what hath past between you and  
 your sister. Angelo had never the purpose to  
 corrupt her; only he hath made an essay of  
 her virtue, to practise his judgment with the  
 disposition of natures: she, having the truth  
 of honour in her, hath made him that gracious  
 denial which he is most glad to receive: I am  
 confessor to Angelo, and I know this to be  
 true; therefore prepare yourself to death:  
 Do not satisfy your resolution with hopes that  
 are fallible: to-morrow you must die; go to  
 your knees, and make ready.

*Claud.* Let me ask my sister pardon. I  
 am so out of love with life, that I will sue to  
 be rid of it.

*Duke.* Hold; you there: Farewell.

[Exit CLAUDIO.]

*Re-enter Provost.*

Provost, a word with you.

*Prov.* What's your will, father?

*Duke.* That now you are come, you will  
 be gone: Leave me a while with the maid;  
 my mind promises with my habit, no less  
 shall touch her by my company.

*Prov.* In good time. [Exit Provost.]

*Duke.* The hand that hath made you fair,  
 hath made you good: the goodness, that is  
 cheap in beauty, makes beauty brief in good-  
 ness: but grace, being the soul of your com-  
 plexion, should keep the body of it ever fair.  
 The assault, that Angelo hath made to you,  
 fortune hath convey'd to my understanding;  
 and, but that frailty hath examples for his  
 falling, I should wonder at Angelo. How  
 would you do to content this substitute, and  
 to save your brother.

*Isa.* I am now going to resolve him: I had

\* Shut up. † Laced robes. ‡ Freely. § Lastingly. ¶ Invisibly. \*\* Willfulness.

\*\* Refusal. †† An established habit. ‡‡ Continue in that resolution.

rather my brother die by the law, than my son should be unlawfully born. But O, how much is the good duke deceived in Angelo! If ever he return, and I can speak to him, I will open my lips in vain, or discover his government.

*Duke.* That shall not be much amiss: Yet, as the matter now stands, he will avoid your accusation; he made trial of you only.—Therefore, fasten your ear on my advisings; to the love I have in doing good, a remedy presents itself. I do make myself believe, that you may most uprightly do a poor wronged lady a merited benefit; redeem your brother from the angry law; do no stain to your own gracious person; and much please the absent duke, if, peradventure, he shall ever return to have hearing of this business.

*Isab.* Let me hear you speak further; I have spirit to do any thing that appears not foul in the truth of my spirit.

*Duke.* Virtue is bold, and goodness never fearful. Have you not heard speak of Mariana the sister of Frederick, the great soldier, who miscarried at sea?

*Isab.* I have heard of the lady, and good words went with her name.

*Duke.* Her should this Angelo have married; was affianced to her by oath, and the nuptial appointed: between which time of the contract, and limit of the solemnity, her brother Frederick was wrecked at sea, having in that perish'd vessel the dowry of his sister. But mark, how heavily this befall to the poor gentlewoman: there she lost a noble and renowned brother, in his love toward her ever most kind and natural; with him the portion and sinew of her fortune, her marriage-dowry; with both, her combinate husband, this well-seeming Angelo.

*Isab.* Can this be so? Did Angelo so leave her?

*Duke.* Left her in her tears, and dry'd not one of them with his comfort; swallowed his vows whole, pretending, in her, discoveries of dishonour: in few, bestow'd† her on her own lamentation, which she yet wears for his sake; and he, a marble to her tears, is washed with them, but relents not.

*Isab.* What a merit were it in death, to take this poor maid from the world! What corruption in this life, that it will let this man live!—But how out of this can she avail?

*Duke.* It is a rupture that you may easily heal; and the cure of it not only saves your brother, but keeps you from dishonour in doing it.

*Isab.* Show me how, good father.

*Duke.* This fore-named maid hath yet in her the continuance of her first affection; his unjust unkindness, that in all reason should have quenched her love, hath, like an impediment in the current, made it more violent and unruly. Go you to Angelo; answer his requiring with a plausible obedience; agree with his demands to the point: only refer†

yourself to this advantage,—first, that your stay with him may not be long; that the time may have all shadow and silence in it; and the place answer to convenience: this being granted in course, now follows all. We shall advise this wronged maid to stand up your appointment, go in your place; if the encounter acknowledge itself hereafter, it may compel him to her recompense: and here, by this, is your brother saved, your honour untainted, the poor Mariana advantaged, and the corrupt deputy scaled. The maid will I frame, and make fit for his attempt. If you think well to carry this as you may, the doubleness of the benefit defends the deceit from reproof. What think you of it?

*Isab.* The image of it gives me content already; and, I trust, it will grow to a most prosperous perfection.

*Duke.* It lies much in your holding up: Haste you speedily to Angelo; if for this night he entreat you to his bed, give him promise of satisfaction. I will presently to St. Luke's; there, at the moated grange, resides this dejected Mariana: At that place call upon me; and despatch with Angelo, that it may be quickly.

*Isab.* I thank you for this comfort: Fare you well, good father. [*Exeunt severally.*]

## SCENE II. The Street before the Prison.

*Enter DUKE, as a Friar; to him ELBOW, Clown, and Officers.*

*Elb.* Nay, if there be no remedy for it, but that you will needs buy and sell men and women like beasts, we shall have all the world drink brown and white bastard.†

*Duke.* O, heavens! what stuff is here?

*Clo.* 'Twas never merry world, since, of two usuries, the merriest was put down, and the worsor allow'd by order of law a furr'd gown to keep him warm; and furr'd with fox and lamb skins too, to signify, that craft, being richer than innocency, stands for the facing.

*Elb.* Come your way, sir:—Bless you, good father friar.

*Duke.* And you, good brother father: What offence hath this man made you, sir?

*Elb.* Marry, sir, he hath offended the law; and, sir, we take him to be a thief too, sir; for we have found upon him, sir, a strange pick lock\*, which we have sent to the deputy.

*Duke.* Fye, sirrah; a bawd, a wicked bawd! the evil that thou causest to be done, That is thy means to live: Do thou but think What 'tis to cram a maw, or clothe a back, From such a filthy vice: say to thyself,—From their abominable and beastly touches I drink, I eat, array myself, and live. Canst thou believe thy living is a life, So stinkingly depending? Go, mend, go, mend.

*Clo.* Indeed, it does stink in some sort, sir; but yet, sir, I would prove— [proofs for sin,

*Duke.* Nay, if the devil have given thee Thou wilt prove his. Take him to prison, officer;

\* Betrothed. † Gave her up to her sorrows. ‡ Have recourse to. § Over-reached.

¶ A solitary farm-house. ¶ A sweet wine.

\*\* For a Spanish padlock.



Correction and instruction must both work,  
Ere this rule beast will profit.

*Elb.* He must before the deputy, sir; he has given him warning: the deputy cannot abide a whoremaster: if he be a whoremonger, and comes before him, he were as good go a mile on his errand. [seem to be,

*Duke.* That we were all, as some would Free from our faults, as faults from seeming, free!

*Enter Lucio.*

*Elb.* His neck will come to your waist, a cord\*, sir.

*Clo.* I spy comfort; I cry, bail: Here's a gentleman, and a friend of mine.

*Lucio.* How now, noble Pompey? What, at the heels of Cæsar? Art thou led in triumph? What, is there none of Pygmalion's images, newly made woman, to be had now, for putting the hand in the pocket and extracting it clutch'd? What reply? Ha? What say'st thou to this tune, matter, and method? Is't not drown'd i' the last rain? Ha? What say'st thou, trot? Is the world as it was, man? Which is the way? Is it sad, and few words? Or how? The trick of it?

*Duke.* Still thus, and thus! still worse!

*Lucio.* How doth my dear morsel, thy mistress? Procures she still? Ha?

*Clo.* Troth, sir, she hath eaten up all her beef, and she is herself in the tub†.

*Lucio.* Why, 'tis good; it is the right of it; it must be so: Ever your fresh whore, and your powder'd bawd: An unshunn'd consequence; it must be so: Art going to prison, Pompey!

*Clo.* Yes, faith, sir.

*Lucio.* Why 'tis not amiss, Pompey: Farewell: Go; say, I sent thee thither. For debt, Pompey? Or how?

*Elb.* For being a bawd, for being a bawd.

*Lucio.* Well, then imprison him: If imprisonment be the due of a bawd, why, 'tis his right: Bawd is he, doubtless, and of antiquity, too; bawd-born. Farewell, good Pompey: Commend me to the prison, Pompey: You will turn good husband now, Pompey; you will keep the house‡.

*Clo.* I hope, sir, your good worship will be my bail.

*Lucio.* No, indeed, will I not, Pompey; it is not the wear§. I will pray, Pompey, to increase your bondage: if you take it not patiently, why, your mettle is the more: Adieu, trusty Pompey.—Bless you, friar.

*Duke.* And you.

*Lucio.* Does Bridget paint still, Pompey? Ha?

*Elb.* Come your ways, sir; come.

*Clo.* You will not bail me then, sir?

*Lucio.* Then, Pompey? nor now.—What news abroad, friar? What news?

*Elb.* Come your ways, sir; come.

*Lucio.* Go,—to kennel, Pompey, go:

[*Exeunt Elbow, Clown, and Officers.* What news, friar, of the duke?

*Duke.* I know none: Can you tell me of any?

*Lucio.* Some say, he is with the emperor of Russia; other some, he is in Rome: But where is he, think you?

*Duke.* I know not where: But wheresoever, I wish him well.

*Lucio.* It was a mad fantastical trick of him, to steal from the state, and usurp the beggary he was never born to. Lord Angelo dukes it well in his absence; he puts transgression to't.

*Duke.* He does well in't.

*Lucio.* A little more lenity to lechery would do no harm in him: something too crabbed that way, friar.

*Duke.* It is too general a vice, and severity must cure it.

*Lucio.* Yes, in good sooth, the vice is of a great kindred; it is well ally'd: but it is impossible to extirp it quite, friar, till eating and drinking be put down. They say, this Angelo was not made by man and woman, after the downright way of creation: Is it true, think you?

*Duke.* How should he be made then?

*Lucio.* Some report, a sea-maid spawn'd him:—Some, that he was begot between two stock-fishes:—But it is certain, that when he makes water, his urine is congeal'd ice; that I know to be true: and he is a motion | ungenerative, that's infallible.

*Duke.* You are pleasant, sir; and speak apace.

*Lucio.* Why, what a ruthless thing is this in him, for the rebellion of a cod-piece, to take away the life of a man? Would the duke, that is absent, have done this? Ere he would have hang'd a man for the getting a hundred bastards, he would have paid for the nursing a thousand: He had some feeling of the sport; he knew the service, and that instructed him to mercy.

*Duke.* I never heard the absent duke much detected ¶ for women; he was not inclined that way.

*Lucio.* O, sir, you are deceived.

*Duke.* 'Tis not possible.

*Lucio.* Who? not the duke? yes, your beggar of fifty;—and his use was, to put a ducat in her clack-dish: the duke had crotchets in him: He would be drunk too; that let me inform you.

*Duke.* You do him wrong, surely.

*Lucio.* Sir, I was an inward of his: A shy fellow was the duke: and, I believe, I know the cause of his withdrawing.

*Duke.* What, I prythee, might be the cause?

*Lucio.* No,—pardon;—'tis a secret must be lock'd within the teeth and the lips: but this I can let you understand,—The greater file \*\* of the subject held the duke to be wise.

*Duke.* Wise? why, no question but he was.

*Lucio.* A very superficial, ignorant, unweighing†† fellow.

*Duke.* Either this is envy in you, folly, or mistaking; the very stream of his life, and

\* Tied like your waist with a rope. † Powdering tub. ‡ Stay at home. § Fashion.  
¶ Puppet. \*\* Suspected. \*\*\* The majority of his subjects. †† Inconsiderate.

the business he hath helm'd\*, must, upon a warranted need, give him a better proclamation. Let him be but testimonied in his own bringings forth, and he shall appear to the envious, a scholar, a statesman, and a soldier: 'therefore, you speak unskilfully; or, if your knowledge be more, it is much darken'd in your malice.

*Lucio.* Sir, I know him, and I love him.

*Duke.* Love talks with better knowledge, and knowledge with dearer love.

*Lucio.* Come, sir, I know what I know.

*Duke.* I can hardly believe that, since you know not what you speak. But, if ever the duke return, (as our prayers are he may,) let me desire you to make your answer before him: If it be honest you have spoke, you have courage to maintain it: I am bound to call upon you; and, I pray you, your name?

*Lucio.* Sir, my name is Lucio; well known to the duke.

*Duke.* He shall know you better, sir, if I may live to report you.

*Lucio.* I fear you not.

*Duke.* O, you hope the duke will return no more; or you imagine me too unhurtful an oppositè. But, indeed, I can do you little harm: you'll forswear this again.

*Lucio.* I'll be hang'd first: thou art deceiv'd in me, friar. But no more of this: Canst thou tell, if Claudio die to-morrow, or no?

*Duke.* Why should he die, sir?

*Lucio.* Why? for filling a bottle with a tun-dish. I would, the duke, we talk of, were return'd again: this urgentur'd agent will un-people the province with continency; sparrows must not build in his house-eaves, because they are lecherous. The duke yet would have dark deeds darkly answer'd; he would never bring them to light: would he were return'd! Marry, this Claudio is condemn'd for untrussing. Farewell, good friar; I pr'ythee, pray for me. The duke, I say to thee again, would eat mutton on Fridays. He's now past it: yet, and I say to thee, he would mowth with a beggar, though she smelt brown bread and garlick: say, that I said so. Farewell. [Exit.]

*Duke.* No might nor greatness in mortality Can censure'scape; back-wounding calumny The whitest virtue strikes: What king so strong, Can tie the gall up in the slanderous tongue? But who comes here?

Enter ESCALUS, Provost, Bawd, and Officers.

*Escal.* Go, away with her to prison.

*Bawd.* Good my lord, be good to me; your honour is accounted a merciful man: good my lord.

*Escal.* Double and treble admonition, and still forfeit's in the same kind? This would make mercy swear, and play the tyrant.

*Prov.* A bawd of eleven years continuance, may it please your honour.

*Bawd.* My lord, this is one Lucio's information against me: mistress Kate Keep-down

was with child by him in the duke's time, he promised her marriage; his child is a year and a quarter old, come Philip and Jacob: I have kept it myself; and see how he goes about to abuse me.

*Escal.* That fellow is a fellow of much licence:—let him be called before us.—Away with her to prison: Go to; no more words. [Exeunt Bawd and Officers.] Provost, my brother Angelo will not be alter'd, Claudio must die to-morrow: let him be furnished with divines, and have all charitable preparation: if my brother wrought by my pity, it should not be so with him.

*Prov.* So please you, this friar hath been with him, and advised him for the entertainment of death.

*Escal.* Good even, good father.

*Duke.* Bliss and goodness on you!

*Escal.* Of whence are you? [is now

*Duke.* Not of this country, though my chance To use it for my time: I am a brother Of gracious order, late come from the see, In special business from his holiness.

*Escal.* What news abroad? the world?

*Duke.* None, but that there is so great a fever on goodness, that the dissolution of it must cure it: novelty is only in request; and it is as dangerous to be aged in any kind of course, as it is virtuous to be constant in any undertaking. There is scarce truth enough alive, to make societies secure; but security enough, to make fellowships accurs'd: much upon this riddle runs the wisdom of the world. This news is old enough, yet it is every day's news. I pray you, sir, of what disposition was the duke?

*Escal.* One, that, above all other strifes, contended especially to know himself.

*Duke.* What pleasure was he given to?

*Escal.* Rather rejoicing to see another merry, than merry at any thing which profess'd to make him rejoice: a gentleman of all temperance. But leave we him to his events, with a prayer they may prove prosperous; and let me desire to know how you find Claudio prepared. I am made to understand, that you have lent him visitation.

*Duke.* He professes to have received no sinister measure from his judge, but most willingly humbles himself to the determination of justice: yet had he framed to himself, by the instruction of his frailty, many deceiving promises of life; which I, by my good leisure, have discredited to him, and now is he resolv'd to die.

*Escal.* You have paid the heavens your function, and the prisoner the very debt of your calling. I have labour'd for the poor gentleman, to the extremest shore of my modesty; but my brother justice have I found so severe, that he hath forced me to tell him, he is indeed—justice.

*Duke.* If his own life answer the straitness of his proceeding, it shall become him well:

\* Guided.

† Opponent.

‡ Have a wench.

§ Transgress.

¶ Satisfied.

wherein, if he chance to fail, he hath sentenced himself.

*Escal.* I am going to visit the prisoner:  
Fare you well.

*Duke.* Peace be with you

[*Ereunt* ESCALUS and Provost.

He, who the sword of heaven will bear,

Should be as holy as severe;

Pattern in himself to know,

Grace to stand, and virtue go;

More nor less to others paying,

Than by self offences weighing,

Shame to him, whose cruel striking

Kills for faults of his own liking!

Twice treble shame on Angelo,  
To weel my vice, and let his grow  
O, what may man within him hide,  
Though angel on the outward side!  
How may likeness\*, made† in crimes,  
Making practice on the times,  
Draw with idle spiders' strings  
Most pond'rous and substantial things!  
Craft against vice I must apply:  
With Angelo to-night shall lie  
His old betrothed, but despis'd;  
So disguise shall, by the disguis'd,  
Pay with falsehood false exacting,  
And perform an old contracting.

[*Exit.*

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.

*A Room in Mariana's House.*

MARIANA discovered sitting: a Boy singing.

#### SONG

*Take, oh take those lips away,*

*That so sweetly were forsworn;*

*And those eyes the break of day,*

*Lights that do mislead the morn:*

*But my kisses bring again,*

*bring again,*

*Seals of love, but seal'd in vain,*

*seal'd in vain.*

*Mari.* Break off thy song, and haste thee quick away;

Here comes a man of comfort, whose advice  
Hath often still'd my brawling discontent.—

[*Exit Boy.*

*Enter DUKE.*

I cry you merey, sir; and well could wish

You had not found me here so musical:

Let me excuse me, and believe me so,—

My mirth it much displeas'd, but pleas'd my  
[such a charm,

*Duke.* 'Tis good: though musick oft hath

To make bad good, and good provoke to harm.

I pray you, tell me, hath any body inquired

for me here to-day? much upon this time  
have I promis'd here to meet.

*Mari.* You have not been inquired after:  
I have sat here all day.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

*Duke.* I do constantly believe you:—The  
time is come, even now. I shall crave your

forbearance a little; may be, I will call upon  
you anon, for some advantage to yourself.

*Mari.* I am always bound to you. [*Exit.*

*Duke.* Very well met, and welcome.

What is the news from this good deputy?

*Isab.* He hath a garden circummur'd‡ with  
brick,

Whose western side is with a vineyard back'd;

And to that vineyard is a planch'd§ gate,

That makes his opening with this bigger key:

This other doth command a little door,

Which from the vineyard to the garden leads;

There have I made my promise to call on him,

Upon the heavy middle of the night.

*Duke.* But shall you on your knowledge  
find this way? [upon't;

*Isab.* I have ta'en a due and wary note

With whispering and most guilty diligence,

In action all of precept, he did show me

The way twice o'er.

*Duke.* Are there no other tokens  
Between you 'greed, concerning her observ-

ance? [dark;

*Isab.* No, none, but only a repair 't the

And that I have possess'd ¶ him, my most stay

Can be but brief: for I have made him know,

I have a servant comes with me along.

That stays ¶ upon me; whose persuasion is,

I come about my brother.

*Duke.* 'Tis well borne up.

I have not yet made known to Mariana

A word of this:—What, ho! within! come  
forth!

*Re-enter MARIANA.*

I pray you, be acquainted with this maid;  
She comes to do you good.

*Isab.* I do desire the like.

*Duke.* Do you persuade yourself that I  
respect you?

*Mari.* Good friar, I know you do; and  
have found it. [the hand,

*Duke.* Take then this your companion by

Who hath a story ready for your ear:

I shall attend your leisure; but make haste;

The vaporous night approaches.

*Mari.* Will't please you walk aside?

[*Ereunt* MARIANA and ISABELLA.

*Duke.* O place and greatness, millions of  
false eyes

Are stuck upon thee! volumes of report  
Run with these false and most contrarious

quests\*

Upon thy doings! thousand 'scapes†† of wit

Make thee the father of their idle dream,

And rack thee in their fancies!—Welcome!

How agreed?

*Re-enter MARIANA and ISABELLA.*

*Isab.* She'll take the enterprise upon her,  
If you advise it. [father,

\* Appearance.  
Informed.

† Trained.  
¶ Waits.

‡ Walled round.  
•• Inquisitions, inquiries.

§ Planked, wooden.  
†† Sallies.



*Duke.* It is not my consent,  
But my entreaty too.  
*Isab.* Little have you to say,  
When you depart from him, but, soft and  
*Remember now my brother.* [low,  
*Mari.* Fear me not.  
*Duke.* Nor, gentle daughter, fear you not  
He is your husband on a pre-contract: [at all:  
To bring you thus together, 'tis no sin;  
Sith\* that the justice of your title to him  
Doth flourish† the deceit. Come, let us go;  
Our corn's to reap, for yet our tithe's‡ to sow.  
[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II. A Room in the Prison.

*Enter Provost and Clown.*

*Prov.* Come hither, sirrah: Can you cut off  
a man's head?

*Clow.* If the man be a bachelor, sir, I can:  
but if he be a married man, he is his wife's  
head, and I can never cut off a woman's head.

*Prov.* Come, sir, leave me your snatches,  
and yield me a direct answer. To-morrow  
morning are to die Claudio and Barnardine:  
Here is in our prison a common executioner,  
who in his office lacks a helper: if you will  
take it on you to assist him, it shall redeem  
you from your gyves§; if not, you shall have  
your full time of imprisonment, and your de-  
liverance with an unspitied whipping; for you  
have been a notorious bawd.

*Clow.* Sir, I have been an unlawful bawd,  
time out of mind: but yet I will be content  
to be a lawful hangman. I would be glad to  
receive some instruction from my fellow part-  
ner. [horson, there?

*Prov.* What ho, Abhorson! Where's Ab-  
*Enter ABHORSON.*

*Abhor.* Do you call, sir?

*Prov.* Sirrah, here's a fellow will help you  
to-morrow in your execution: If you think it  
meet, compound with him by the year, and  
let him abide here with you; if not, use him  
for the present, and dismiss him: He cannot  
plead his estimation with you; he hath been  
a bawd.

*Abhor.* A bawd, sir? Fye upon him, he  
will discredit our mystery||.

*Prov.* Go to, sir; you weigh equally; a  
feather will turn the scale. [Exit.

*Clow.* Pray, sir, by your good favour, (for,  
surely, sir, a good favour¶ you have, but that  
you have a hanging look,) do you call, sir,  
your occupation a mystery?

*Abhor.* Ay, sir; a mystery.

*Clow.* Painting, sir, I have heard say, is a  
mystery; and your whores, sir, being mem-  
bers of my occupation, using painting, do  
prove my occupation a mystery: but what  
mystery there should be in hanging, if I should  
be hang'd, I cannot imagine.

*Abhor.* Sir, it is a mystery.

*Clow.* Proof.

*Abhor.* Every true\*\* man's apparel fits your  
thief: If it be too little for your thief, your

true man thinks it big enough, if it be too big  
for your thief, your thief thinks it little enough:  
so every true man's apparel fits your thief.

*Re-enter Provost.*

*Prov.* Are you agreed?

*Clow.* Sir, I will serve him; for I do find,  
your hangman is a more penitent trade than  
your bawd; he doth oftener ask forgiveness.

*Prov.* You, sirrah, provide your block and  
your axe, to-morrow four o'clock.

*Abhor.* Come on, bawd; I will instruct  
thee in my trade; follow.

*Clow.* I do desire to learn, sir; and, I hope,  
if you have occasion to use me for your own  
turn, you shall find me yare††: for, truly sir,  
for your kindness, I owe you a good turn.

*Prov.* Call hither Barnardine and Claudio:

[*Exeunt Clown and ABHORSON.*  
One has my pity; not a jot the other,  
Being a murderer, though he were my brother.

*Enter CLAUDIO.*

Look, here's the warrant, Claudio, for thy  
death: [row

'Tis now dead midnight, and by eight to-mor-  
Thou must be made immortal. Where's Bar-  
nardine? [less labour

*Clow.* As fast lock'd up in sleep, as guilt-  
When it lies starkly‡‡ in the traveller's bones:  
He will not wake.

*Prov.* Who can do good on him?  
Well, go, prepare yourself. But hark, what  
noise? [Knocking within.

Heaven give your spirits comfort!  
[Exit CLAUDIO.

By and by:—

I hope it is some pardon, or reprieve,  
For the most gentle Claudio—Welcome, father.

*Enter DUKE.*

*Duke.* The best and wholesomest spirits of  
the night [here of late?

Envelop you, good Provost! Who call'd

*Prov.* None, since the curfew rung.

*Duke.* Not Isabel?

*Prov.* No.

*Duke.* They will then, ere't be long.

*Prov.* What comfort is for Claudio?

*Duke.* There's some in hope.

*Prov.* It is a bitter deputy.

*Duke.* Not so, not so; his life is parallel'd  
Even with the stroke and line of his great  
He doth with holy abstinence subdue [justice;  
That in him's if, which he spurs on his power  
To qualify§§ in others: were he meal'd¶¶  
With that which he corrects, then were he  
tyrannous; [come.—

But this being so, he's just.—Now are they  
[Knocking within.—Provost goes out.

This is a gentle provost: Seldom, when  
The steeld gaoler is the friend of men—

How now! What noise? That spirit's pos-  
sessed with haste, [strokes.

That wounds the unsisting postern with these  
Provost returns, speaking to one at the door.

*Prov.* There he must stay, until the officer  
Arise to let him in; he is call'd up.

\* Since. † Gild, or varnish over. ‡ Tith, land prepared for sowing. § Fett rs. ¶ Trade.  
Cantenance. \*\* Honest. †† Ready. ‡‡ Stuffy. §§ Moderate. ¶¶ Deited

*Duke.* Have you no countermand for Claudio yet,  
But he must die to-morrow?

*Prov.* None, sir, none.

*Duke.* As near the dawning, Provost, as it is,  
You shall hear more ere morning.

*Prov.* Happily\*,  
You something know; yet, I believe there comes

No countermand; no such example have we:  
Besides, upon the very siege† of justice,  
Lord Angelo hath to the public ear  
Profess'd the contrary.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Duke.* This is his lordship's man.

*Prov.* And here comes Claudio's pardon.

*Mess.* My lord hath sent you this note;  
and by me this further charge, that you swerve  
not from the smallest article of it, neither in  
time, matter, or other circumstance. Good  
morrow; for, as I take it, it is almost day.

*Prov.* I shall obey him. [*Exit Messenger.*]

*Duke.* This is his pardon; purchas'd by  
such sin, [*Aside.*]

For which the pardoner himself is in:  
Hence hath offence his quick celerity,  
When it is borne in high authority:  
When vice makes mercy, mercy's so extended,  
That for the fault's love, is the offender  
Now, sir, what news? [*friended.—*]

*Prov.* I told you: Lord Angelo, belike,  
thinking me remiss in mine office, awakens  
me with this unwonted putting on‡: methinks,  
strangely; for he hath not used it before.

*Duke.* Pray you, let's hear.

*Prov.* [*Reads.*] *Whatsoever you may hear  
to the contrary, let Claudio be executed  
by four of the clock; and, in the after-  
noon, Barnardine: for my better satisfac-  
tion, let me have Claudio's head sent me by  
five. Let this be duly perform'd; with a  
thought, that more depends on it than we  
must yet deliver. Thus fail not to do your  
office, as you will answer it at your peril.*  
What say you to this, sir?

*Duke.* What is that Barnardine, who is to  
be executed in the afternoon?

*Prov.* A Bohemian born; but here nursed  
up and bred: one that is a prisoner nine  
years old§.

*Duke.* How came it, that the absent duke  
had not either deliver'd him to his liberty, or  
executed him? I have heard, it was ever his  
manner to do so.

*Prov.* His friends still wrought reprieves  
for him: And, indeed, his fact, till now in  
the government of lord Angelo, came not to  
an undoubtful proof.

*Duke.* Is it now apparent?

*Prov.* Most manifest, and not denied by  
himself.

*Duke.* Hath he borne himself penitently in  
prison? How seems he to be touch'd?

*Prov.* A man that apprehends death no  
more dreadfully, but as a drunken sleep;  
careless, reckless, and fearless of what's past,

present, or to come; insensible of mortality,  
and desperately mortal.

*Duke.* He wants advice.

*Prov.* He will hear none: he hath ever  
more had the liberty of the prison; give him  
leave to escape hence, he would not: drunk  
many times a day, if not many days entirely  
drunk. We have very often awaked him, as  
if to carry him to execution, and show'd him  
a seeming warrant for it: it hath not moved  
him at all.

*Duke.* More of him anon. There is written  
in your brow, Provost, honesty and con-  
stancy: if I read it not truly, my ancient  
skill beguiles me; but, in the boldness of my  
cunning, I will lay myself in hazard. Claudio,  
whom here you have a warrant to execute, is  
no greater forfeit to the law than Angelo who  
hath sentenced him: To make you under-  
stand this in a manifested effect, I crave but  
four days' respite; for the which you are  
to do me both a present and a dangerous  
courtesy.

*Prov.* Pray, sir, in what?

*Duke.* In the delaying death.

*Prov.* Alack! how may I do it? having  
the hour limited; and an express command,  
under penalty, to deliver his head in the  
view of Angelo? I may make my case as  
Claudio's, to cross this in the smallest.

*Duke.* By the vow of mine order, I war-  
rant you, if my instructions may be your  
guide. Let this Barnardine be this morning  
executed, and his head borne to Angelo.

*Prov.* Angelo hath seen them both, and  
will discover the favour||.

*Duke.* O, death's a great disguiser: and  
you may add to it. Shave the head, and tie  
the beard; and say, it was the desire of the  
penitent to be so bared before his death:  
You know, the course is common. If any  
thing fall to you upon this, more than thanks  
and good fortune, by the saint whom I profess,  
I will plead against it with my life.

*Prov.* Pardon me, good father; it is against  
my oath.

*Duke.* Were you sworn to the duke, or to  
the deputy?

*Prov.* To him, and to his substitutes.

*Duke.* You will think you have made no  
offence, if the duke avouch the justice of your  
dealing?

*Prov.* But what likelihood is in that?

*Duke.* Not a resemblance, but a certainty.  
Yet since I see you fearful, that neither my  
coat, integrity, nor my persuasion, can with  
ease attempt you, I will go further than I  
meant, to pluck all fears out of you. Look  
you, sir, here is the hand and seal of the  
duke. You know the character, I doubt not;  
and the signet is not strange to you.

*Prov.* I know them both.

*Duke.* The contents of this is the return of  
the duke; you shall anon over-read it at your  
pleasure; where you shall find, within these  
two days he will be here. This is a thing

\* Perhaps. † Seat. ‡ Spur incitement.

§ Nine years in prison. || Countenance

that Angelo knows not: for he this very day receives letters of strange tenor; perchance, of the duke's death; perchance, entering into some monastery; but, by chance, nothing of what is writ. Look, the unfolding star calls up the shepherd: Put not yourself into amazement, how these things should be: all difficulties are but easy when they are known. Call your executioner, and off with Barnardine's head: I will give him a present shrift, and advise him for a better place. Yet you are amazed; but this shall absolutely resolve you. Come away; it is almost clear dawn. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *Another Room in the same.*

*Enter Clown.*

*Clo.* I am as well acquainted here, as I was in our house of profession: one would think, it were mistress Overdone's own house, for here be many of her old customers. First, here's young master Rash; he's in for a commodity of brown paper and old ginger, nine-score and seventeen pounds; of which he made five marks, ready money: marry, then, ginger was not much in request, for the old women were all dead. Then is there here one master Caper, at the suit of master Threepile the mercer, for some four suits of peach-colour'd satin, which now peaches him a beggar. Then have we here young Dizzy, and young master Deep-vow, and master Copper-spur, and master Starve-lackey the rapier and dagger-man, and young Drop-heir that kill'd lusty Pudding, and master Forth-right the tilter, and brave master Shoe-tie the great traveller, and wild Half-can that stabb'd Pots, and, I think, forty more; all great doers in our trade, and are now for the Lord's sake.

*Enter ABHORSON.*

*Abhor.* Sirrah, bring Barnardine hither.

*Clo.* Master Barnardine! you must rise and be hang'd, master Barnardine!

*Abhor.* What, ho, Barnardine!

*Barnar.* [*Within.*] A pox o' your throats! Who makes that noise there? What are you?

*Clo.* Your friends, sir; the hangman: You must be so good, sir, to rise and be put to death.

*Barnar.* [*Within.*] Away, you rogue, away; I am sleepy.

*Abhor.* Tell him, he must awake, and that quickly too.

*Clo.* Pray, master Barnardine, awake till you are executed, and sleep afterwards.

*Abhor.* Go in to him, and fetch him out.

*Clo.* He is coming, sir, he is coming; I hear his straw rustle.

*Enter BARNARDINE.*

*Abhor.* Is the axe upon the block, sirrah?

*Clo.* Very ready, sir.

*Barnar.* How now, Abhorson? what's the news with you?

*Abhor.* Truly, sir, I would desire you to clap into your prayers; for, look you, the warrant's come.

*Barnar.* You rogue, I have been drinking all night, I am not fitted for't.

*Clo.* O, the better, sir; for he that drinks all night, and is hang'd betimes in the morning, may sleep the sounder all the next day.

*Enter DUKE.*

*Abhor.* Look you, sir, here comes your ghostly father; Do we jest now, think you?

*Duke.* Sir, induced by my charity, and hearing how hastily you are to depart, I am come to advise you, comfort you, and pray with you.

*Barnar.* Friar, not I; I have been drinking hard all night, and I will have more time to prepare me, or they shall beat out my brains with billets: I will not consent to die this day, that's certain.

*Duke.* O, sir, you must: and therefore, I beseech you,

Look forward on the journey you shall go.

*Barnar.* I swear, I will not die to-day for any man's persuasion.

*Duke.* But hear you, —

*Barnar.* Not a word; if you have any thing to say to me, come to my ward; for thence will not I to-day. [*Exit.*]

*Enter Provost.*

*Duke.* Unfit to live, or die: O, gravel heart! — After him, fellows; bring him to the block.

[*Exeunt ABHORSON and Clown.*]

*Prov.* Now, sir, how do you find the prisoner?

*Duke.* A creature unprepar'd, unmeet for And, to transport him in the mind he is, [death; Were damnable.

*Prov.* Here in the prison, father, There died this morning of a cruel fever One Ragozine, a most notorious pirate, A man of Claudio's years; his beard, and head, Just of his colour: What if we do omit This reprobate, till he were well inclined; And satisfy the deputy with the visage Of Ragozine, more like to Claudio? [vides!]

*Duke.* O, 'tis an accident that heaven pre-despatch it presently; the hour draws on Prefix'd by Angelo: See, this be done, And sent according to command; whiles I Persuade this rude wretch willingly to die.

*Prov.* This shall be done, good father, presently.

But Barnardine must die this afternoon:

And how shall we continue Claudio, To save me from the danger that might come, If he were known alive? [holds,

*Duke.* Let this be done; — Put them in secret Both Barnardine and Claudio: Ere twice The sun hath made his journal greeting to The under generation\*, you shall find Your safety manifested.

*Prov.* I am your free dependant.

*Duke.* Quick, despatch, And send the head to Angelo. [*Exit Provost.* Now will I write letters to Angelo, — [tents The provost, he shall bear them, — whose con-Shall witness to him, I am near at home; And that, by great injunctions, I am bound To enter publicly: him I'll desire To meet me at the consecrated fount, A league below the city; and from thence,



By cold gradation and weal-balanced form,  
We shall proceed with Angelo.

*Re-enter Provost.*

*Prov.* Here is the head; I'll carry it myself.

*Duke.* Convenient is it: Make a swift return;  
For I would commune with you of such things,  
That want no ear but yours.

*Prov.* I'll make all speed. [*Exit.*]

*Isab.* [*Within.*] Peace, ho, be here! [know,

*Duke.* The tongue of Isabel:—She's come to  
If yet her brother's pardon be come hither:  
But I will keep her ignorant of her good,  
To make her heavenly comforts of despair,  
When it is least expected.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

*Isab.* Ho, by your leave. [cious daughter.

*Duke.* Good morning to you, fair and gra-

*Isab.* The better, given me by so holy a man.  
Hath yet the deputy sent my brother's pardon?

*Duke.* He hath releas'd him, Isabel, from the  
His head is off, and sent to Angelo. [world;

*Isab.* Nay, but it is not so.

*Duke.* It is no other:

Show your wisdom, daughter, in your close  
patience. [eyes.

*Isab.* O, I will to him, and pluck out his

*Duke.* You shall not be admitted to his sight.

*Isab.* Unhappy Claudio! Wretched Isabel!  
Injurious world! Most damned Angelo! [jot:

*Duke.* This nor hurts him, nor profits you a  
Forbear it therefore; give your cause to heaven.  
Mark what I say; which you shall find  
By every syllable, a faithful verity:

The duke comes home to-morrow;—nay, dry  
your eyes;

One of our convent, and his confessor,  
Gives me this instance: Already he hath carried  
Notice to Escalus and Angelo;

Who do prepare to meet him at the gates,  
There to give up their power. If you can,  
pace your wisdom

In that good path that I would wish it go;  
And you shall have your bosom\* on this wretch,  
Grace of the duke, revenges to your heart,  
And general honour.

*Isab.* I am directed by you.

*Duke.* This letter then to friar Peter give;  
Tis that he sent me of the duke's return:  
Say, by this token, I desire his company  
At Mariana's house to-night. Her cause, and  
yours,

I'll perfect him withal; and he shall bring you  
Before the Duke; and to the head of Angelo  
Accuse him home, and home. For my poor self,  
I am combined by a sacred vow, [letter:  
And shall be absent. Wend† you with this  
Command these fretting waters from your eyes  
With a light heart; trust not my holy order,  
If I pervert your course.—Who's here?

*Enter LUCIO.*

*Lucio.* Good even!

Friar, where is the provost?

*Duke.* Not within, sir.

*Lucio.* O, pretty Isabella, I am pale at  
mine heart, to see thine eyes so red: thou

must be patient: I am fain to dine and sup  
with water and bran; I dare not for my head  
fill my belly; one fruitful meal would set me  
to't: But they say the duke will be here to-  
morrow. By my troth, Isabel, I lov'd thy  
brother: if the old fantastical duke of dark  
corners had been at home, he had lived.

[*Exit ISABELLA.*]

*Duke.* Sir, the duke is marvellous little  
beholden to your reports; but the best is, he  
lives not in them.

*Lucio.* Friar, thou knowest not the duke  
so well as I do: he's a better woodman than  
thou takest him for.

*Duke.* Well, you'll answer this one day.  
Fare ye well.

*Lucio.* Nay, tarry; I'll go along with thee;  
I can tell thee pretty tales of the duke.

*Duke.* You have told me too many of him  
already, sir, if they be true; if not true, none  
were enough.

*Lucio.* I was once before him for getting a  
wench with child.

*Duke.* Did you such a thing?

*Lucio.* Yes, marry, did I: but was fain to  
forswear it; they would else have married me  
to the rotten medlar.

*Duke.* Sir, your company is fairer than  
honest: Rest you well.

*Lucio.* By my troth, I'll go with thee to  
the lane's end: If bawdy talk offend you,  
we'll have very little of it: Nay, friar, I am  
a kind of burr, I shall stick. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV. A Room in Angelo's House.

*Enter ANGELO and ESCALUS.*

*Escal.* Every letter he hath writ hath dis-  
vouch'd† other.

*Ang.* In most uneven and distracted man-  
ner. His actions show much like to madness:  
pray heaven, his wisdom be not tainted! And  
why meet him at the gates, and re-deliver  
our authorities there?

*Escal.* I guess not.

*Ang.* And why should we proclaim it in  
an hour before his entering, that, if any crave  
redress of injustice, they should exhibit their  
petitions in the street?

*Escal.* He shows his reason for that: to  
have a despatch of complaints; and to deliver  
us from devices hereafter, which shall then  
have no power to stand against us. [claim'd:

*Ang.* Well, I beseech you, let it be pro-  
betimes† the morn, I'll call you at your house:  
Give notice to such men of sort and suit\$,  
As are to meet him.

*Escal.* I shall, sir: fare you well. [*Exit.*]

*Ang.* Good night. [pregnant,  
This deed unshapes me quite, makes me un-  
And dull to all proceedings. A desic we'd maid! I  
And by an eminent body, that enforce'd  
The law against it!—But that her tender shame  
Will not proclaim against her maiden loss,  
How might she tongue me? Yet reason dres;  
her?—no:

\* Your heart's desire.

† Go.

‡ Contradicted.

§ Figure and rank.

|| Calls, challenges her to do it.

For my authority bears a credent \* bulk,  
That no particular scandal once can touch,  
But it confounds the breather t. He should  
have liv'd, [sense,  
Save that his riotous youth, with dangerous  
Might, in the times to come, have ta'en revenge,  
By so receiving a dishonour'd life, [had liv'd!  
With ransome of such shame. 'Would yet he  
Alack, when once our grace we have forgot,  
Nothing goes right; we would, and we would  
n t. [Exit.

SCENE V. *Fields without the Town.*

Enter DUKE in his own ha it, and Friar  
PETER.

Duke. These letters at fit time deliver me.  
[Giving letters.

The provost knows our purpose, and our plot.  
The matter being afoot, keep your instruction,  
And hold you ever to our special drift;  
Though sometimes you do blench; from this  
to that, [honse,  
As cause doth minister. Go, call at Flavius'  
And tell him where I stay: give the like notice,  
To Valentinus, Rowland, and to Crassus,  
And bid them bring the trumpets to the gate;  
But send me Flavius first.

F. Peter. It shall be speeded well.  
[Exit Friar.

Enter VARRIUS.

Duke. I thank thee, Varrius; thou hast  
made good haste: [friends  
Come, we will walk: There's other of our  
Will greet us here anon, my gentle Varrius.  
[Exeunt.

SCENE VI. *Street near the City Gate.*

Enter ISABELLA and MARIANA.

Isab. To speak so indirectly, I am loath;  
I would say the truth; but to accuse him so,  
That is your part: yet I'm advis'd to do it;  
He says, to veil full purpose.

Mari. Be rul'd by him. [ture

Isab. Besides, he tells me, that, if peradventure  
He speak against me on the adverse side,  
I should not think it strange; for 'tis a physic,  
That's bitter to sweet end.

Mari. I would, friar Peter—

Isab. O, peace; the friar is come.

Enter Friar PETER.

F. Peter. Come, I have found you out a  
stand most fit, [duke,  
Where you may have such vantage|| on the  
He shall not pass you; Twice have the trum-  
pets sounded;

The generous¶ and gravest citizens  
Have hent\*\* the gates, and very near upon  
The duke is ent'ring; therefore hence, away.  
[Exeunt.

## ACT V.

## SCENE I.

A public Place near the City Gate.

MARIANA, (veil'd,) ISABELLA, and PETER,  
at a distance. Enter at opposite doors,  
DUKE, VARRIUS, Lords; ANGELO, ESCA-  
LUS, LUCIO, Provost, Officers, & Citizens.

Duke. My very worthy cousin, fairly met:—  
Our old and faithful friend, we are glad to see  
you. [royal grace!

Ang. and Escal. Happy return be to your  
Duke. Many and hearty thankings to you  
both.

We have made inquiry of you; and we hear  
Such goodness of your justice, that our soul  
Cannot but yield you forth to public thanks,  
Forerunning more requital.

Ang. You make my bonds still greater.

Duke. O, your desert speaks loud; and I  
should wrong it,

To lock it in the wards of covert bosom,  
When it deserves with characters of brass  
A fortified residence, 'gainst the tooth of time,  
And rasure of oblivion: Give me your hand  
And let the subject see, to make them know  
That outward courtesies would fain proclaim  
Favours that keep within.—Come, Escalus;  
You must walk by us on our other hand,—  
And good supporters are you.

PETER and ISABELLA come forward.

F. Peter. Now is your time; speak loud,  
and kneel before him.

Isab. Justice, O, royal duke! Vail't† your  
regard

Upon a wrong'd, I'd fain have said, a maid!  
O worthy prince, dishonour not your eye  
By throwing it on any other object,  
Till you have heard me in my true complaint,  
And given me, justice, justice, justice, justice!

Duke. Relate your wrongs: In what? By  
whom? Be brief:

Here is lord Angelo shall give you justice;  
Reveal yourself to him.

Isab. O, worthy duke,  
You bid me seek redemption of the devil:  
Hear me yourself; for that which I must speak  
Must either punish me, not being believ'd,  
Or wring redress from you: hear me, O, hear  
me, here. [firm:

Ang. My lord, her wits, I fear me, are not  
She hath been a suitor to me for her brother,  
Cut off by course of justice.

Isab. By course of justice!

Ang. And she will speak most bitterly, and  
strange. [I speak:

Isab. Most strange, but yet most truly, will  
That Angelo's forsworn; is it not strange?  
That Angelo's a murderer; 'tst not strange?  
That Angelo is an adulterous thief,  
An hypocrite, a virgin-violator;  
Is it not strange, and strange?

Duke. Nay, ten times strange

Isab. It is not truer he is Angelo,  
Than this is all as true as it is strange:

\* Credit unquestionable. † Utterer. ‡ Start off. § Availful.  
|| Advantage. Most noble. \*\* Seized. †† Lower.

Nay, it is ten times true; for truth is truth  
To the end of reckoning.

*Duke.* Away with her:—Poor soul,  
She speaks this in the infirmity of sense.

*Isab.* O prince, I conjure thee, as thou  
believ'st

There is another comfort than this world,  
That thou neglect me not, with that opinion  
That I am touch'd with madness: make not  
impossible

[sible,  
That which but seems unlike: 'tis not impos-  
But one, the wicked'st caitiff on the ground,  
May seem as shy, as grave, as just, as absolute,  
As Angelo; even so may Angelo,  
In all his dressings\* characts, titles, forms,  
Be an arch-villain: believe it, royal prince,  
If he be less, he's nothing; but he's more,  
Had I more name for badness.

*Duke.* By mine honesty,  
If she be mad, (as I believe no other,)  
Her madness hath the oddest frame of sense,  
Such a dependency of thing on thing,  
As e'er I heard in madness.

*Isab.* O gracious duke,  
Harp not on that; nor do not banish reason  
For inequality: but let your reason serve  
To make the truth appear, where it seems hid;  
And hide the false, seems true.

*Duke.* Many that are not mad,  
Have, sure, more lack of reason.—What  
would you say?

*Isab.* I am the sister of one Claudio,  
Condemn'd upon the act of fornication  
To lose his head; condemn'd by Angelo:  
I, in probation of a sisterhood,  
Was sent to by my brother; One Lucio  
As then the messenger;—

*Lucio.* That's I, an't like your grace:  
I came to her from Claudio, and desir'd her  
To try her gracious fortune with lord Angelo,  
For her poor brother's pardon.

*Isab.* That's he, indeed.  
*Duke.* You were not bid to speak.

*Lucio.* No, my good lord;  
Nor wish'd to hold my peace.

*Duke.* I wish you now then;  
Pray you, take note of it: and when you have  
A business for yourself, pray heaven, you then  
Be perfect.

*Lucio.* I warrant your honour. [to it.  
*Duke.* The warrant's for yourself; take heed

*Isab.* This gentleman told somewhat of my  
*Lucio.* Right. [tate.

*Duke.* It may be right; but you are in the  
wrong

To speak before your time.—Proceed.

*Isab.* I went  
To this pernicious caitiff deputy.

*Duke.* That's somewhat madly spoken.

*Isab.* Pardon it;  
The phrase is to the matter.

*Duke.* Mended again: the matter;—Proceed.

*Isab.* In brief,—to set the needless process by,  
How I persuaded, how I pray'd, and kneel'd,  
How he repell'd† me, and how I reply'd;

(For this was of much length,) the vile con-  
clusion

I now begin with grief and shame to utter:  
He would not, but by gift of my chaste body  
To his concupiscent le intemperate lust, (ment,  
Release my brother; and, after much debate-  
My sisterly remorse† confutes mine honour,  
And I did yield to him: But the next morn-  
betimes,

His purpose surfeiting, he sends a warrant  
For my poor brother's head.

*Duke.* This is most likely!

*Isab.* O, that it were as like, as it is true!

*Duke.* By heaven, fond'st wretch, thou  
know'st not what thou speak'st;

Or else thou art suborn'd against his honour,  
In hateful practice||: First, his integrity  
Stands without blemish:—next, it imports no  
reason,

That with such vehemency he should pursue  
Faults proper to himself: if he had so offended,  
He would have weigh'd thy brother by himself,  
And not have cut him off: Some one hath set  
you on;

Confess the truth, and say by whose advice  
Thou cam'st here to complain.

*Isab.* And is this all?

Then, oh, you blessed ministers above,  
Keep me in patience; and, with ripen'd time,  
Unfold the evil which is here wrapt up  
In countenance!—Heaven shield your grace  
from woe,

As I, thus wrong'd, hence unbelieved go!

*Duke.* I know, you'd fain be gone:—An  
officer!

To prison with her:—Shall we thus permit  
A blasting and a scandalous breath to fall  
On him so near us? This needs must be a  
practice.—

Who knew of your intent, and coming hither?

*Isab.* One that I would were here, friar  
Lodowick. [that Lodowick?

*Duke.* A ghostly father, belike:—Who knows  
*Lucio.* My lord, I know him; 'tis a med-  
dling friar; [lord,

I do not like the man: had he been lay, my  
For certain words he spake against your grace  
In your retirement, I had swing'd‡ him soundly.

*Duke.* Words against me? This† a good friar,  
belike!

And to set on this wretched woman here  
Against our substitute!—Let this friar be found.

*Lucio.* But yesternight, my lord, she and  
that friar

I saw them at the prison: a saucy friar,  
A very scurvy fellow.

*F. Peter.* Blessed be your royal grace  
I have stood by, my lord, and I have heard  
Your royal ear abus'd: First, hath this woman  
Most wrongfully accus'd your substitute;  
Who is as free from touch or soil with her,  
As she from one ungot.

*Duke.* We did believe no less.  
Know you that friar Lodowick, that she speaks  
of?

\* Habits and characters of office.

† Conspiracy.

† Refuted.

‡ Pity.

§ Foolish.

¶ Beat.



*F. Peter.* I know him for a man divine and  
Not scurv'y, nor a temporary meddler, [holy ;  
As he's reported by this gentleman ;  
And, on my trust, a man that never yet  
Did, as he vouches, misreport your grace.

*Lucio.* My lord, most villanously ; believe  
it. [clear himself ;

*F. Peter.* Well, he in time may come to  
But at this instant he is sick, my lord,  
Of a strange fever : Upon his mere \* request,  
(Being come to knowledge that there was  
complaint

Intended 'gainst lord Angelo,) came I hither,  
To speak, as from his mouth, what he doth know  
Is true, and false ; and what he with his oath,  
And all probation, will make up full clear,  
Whosoever he's convented t. First, for this  
(To justify this worthy nobleman, [woman ;  
{ o vulgarly † and personally accus'd,)  
Her shall you hear disproved to her eyes,  
Till she herself confess it.

*Duke.* Good friar, let's hear it.  
[ISABELLA is carried off, guarded ;  
and MARIANA comes forward.

Do you not smile at this lord Angelo ?—  
O heaven ! the vanity of wretched fools !—  
Give us some seats.—Come, cousin Angelo ;  
In this I'll be impartial ; be you judge  
Of your own cause.—Is this the witness, friar ?  
First, let her show her face ; and, after, speak.

*Mari.* Pardon, my lord ; I will not show  
Until my husband bid me. [my face,

*Duke.* What, are you married ?

*Mari.* No, my lord.

*Duke.* Are you a maid ?

*Mari.* No, my lord.

*Duke.* A widow then ?

*Mari.* Neither, my lord.

*Duke.* Why, you  
Are nothing then :—Neither maid, widow,  
nor wife ?

*Lucio.* My lord, she may be a punk ; for  
many of them are neither maid, widow, nor  
wife. [some cause

*Duke.* Silence that fellow : I would, he had  
To prattle for himself.

*Lucio.* Well, my lord. [married ;

*Mari.* My lord, I do confess I ne'er was  
And, I confess, besides, I am no maid :  
I have known my husband ; yet my husband  
That ever he knew me. [knows not,

*Lucio.* He was drunk then, my lord ; it can  
be no better.

*Duke.* For the benefit of silence, 'would  
then wert so too.

*Lucio.* Well, my lord.

*Duke.* This is no witness for lord Angelo.

*Mari.* Now I come to't, my lord :

She, that accuses him of fornication,  
In self-same manner doth accuse my husband ;  
And charges him, my lord, with such a time,  
When I'll depose I had him in mine arms,  
With all the effect of love.

*Ang.* Charges she more than me ?

*Mari.* Not that I know.

\* Simple. † Convented.

‡ Her fortune fell short.

*Duke.* No ? you say, your husband.

*Mari.* Why, just, my lord, and that is Angelo,  
Who thinks, he knows, that he ne'er knew my  
body,

But knows, he thinks, that he knows Isabel's.

*Ang.* This is a strange abuse ‡—Let's see thy  
face. [unmask. (Unveiling.

*Mari.* My husband bids me ; now I will  
This is that face, thou cruel Angelo, [sing on :  
Which, once thou swor'st, was worth the look—  
This is the hand, which, with a vow'd contract,  
Was fast belock'd in thine : this is the body  
That took away the match from Isabel,  
And did supply thee at thy garden-house,  
In her imagined person.

*Duke.* Know you this woman ?

*Lucio.* Carnally, she says.

*Duke.* Sirrah, no more.

*Lucio.* Enough, my lord. [woman ;

*Ang.* My lord, I must confess, I know this  
And, five years since, there was some speech  
of marriage

Betwixt myself and her ; which was broke off,  
Partly, for that her promised proportions  
Came short of composition ; but, in chief,  
For that her reputation was disvalued  
In levity : since which time of five years,  
I never spake with her, saw her, nor heard  
Upon my faith and honour. [from her,

*Mari.* Noble prince,  
As there comes light from heaven, and words  
from breath,

As there is sense in truth, and truth in virtue,  
I am affianc'd this man's wife, as strongly  
As words could make up vows : and, my good  
lord, [house,

But Tuesday night last gone, in his garden—  
He knew me as a wife : As this is true  
Let me in safety raise me from my knees ;  
Or else for ever be confix'd here,  
A marble monument !

*Ang.* I did but smile till now ;  
Now, good my lord, give me the scope of  
justice ;

My patience here is touch'd : I do perceive,  
These poor informal ¶ women are no more  
But instruments of some more mightier mein-  
ber,

That sets them on : Let me have way, my lord,  
To find this practice \*\* out.

*Duke.* Ay, with my heart ;  
And punish them unto your height of pleasure.—

Thou foolish friar ; and thou pernicious woman,  
Compact with her that's gone ! think'st thou,  
thy oaths, [saint,

Though they would swear down each particular  
Were testimonies against his worth and credit,  
That's seal'd in approbation ?—You, lord Es-  
calns,

Sit with my consin ; lend him your kind pains  
To find out this abuse, whence 'tis deriv'd.—

There is another friar that set them on ;  
Let him be sent for. [he, indeed,

*F. Peter.* Would he were here, my lord ; for  
Hath set the women on to this complaint :

† Publicly.

¶ Crazy.

‡ Deception.

\*\* Conspiracy.

M

Your provost knows the place where he abides,  
And he may fetch him.

*Duke.* Go, do it instantly.—[*Exit Provost.*  
And you, my noble and well warranted cousin,  
Whom it concerns to hear this matter forth\*,  
Do with your injuries as seems you best,  
In any chastisement: I for a while—[*well*  
Will leave you; but stir not you, till you have  
Determined upon these slanderers.

*Escal.* My lord, we'll do it thoroughly.—  
[*Exit Duke.*—Signior Lucio, did not you say,  
you knew that friar Lodowick to be a dishonest person?

*Lucio.* *Cucullus non facit monachum*: honest in nothing, but in his clothes; and one that hath spoke most villanous speeches of the duke.

*Escal.* We shall entreat you to abide here till he come, and enforce them against him: we shall find this friar a notable fellow.

*Lucio.* As any in Vienna, on my word.

*Escal.* Call that same Isabel here once again; [*To an Attendant.*] I would speak with her: Pray you, my lord, give me leave to question; you shall see how I'll handle her.

*Lucio.* Not better than he, by her own report.

*Escal.* Say you?

*Lucio.* Marry, sir, I think, if you handled her privately, she would sooner confess; perchance, publicly she'll be ashamed.

*Re-enter Officers, with ISABELLA; the Duke, in the Friar's habit, and Provost.*

*Escal.* I will go darkly to work with her.

*Lucio.* That's the way; for women are light at midnight.

*Escal.* Come on, mistress: [*To ISABELLA.*] here's a gentlewoman denies all that you have said.

*Lucio.* My lord, here comes the rascal I spoke of; here with the provost.

*Escal.* In very good time:—speak not you to him, till we call upon you.

*Lucio.* Mum.

*Escal.* Come, sir: Did you set these women on to slander lord Angelo? they have confessed you did.

*Duke.* 'Tis false.

*Escal.* How! know you where you are?

*Duke.* Respect to your great place! and let the devil

Be sometime honour'd for his burning throne:—Where is the duke? 'tis he should hear me speak. [*You speak:*

*Escal.* The duke's in us; and we will hear Look, you speak justly.

*Duke.* Boldly, at least:—But, O, poor souls, Come you to seek the lamb here of the fox? Good night to your redress. Is the duke gone? Then is your cause gone too. The duke's unjust, Thus to retort† your manifest appeal, And put your trial in the villain's mouth, Which here you come to accuse. [*Of.*

*Lucio.* This is the rascal; this is he I spoke

*Escal.* Why, thou unreverend and unhal- low'd friar!

Is't not enough, thou hast suborn'd these women

To accuse this worthy man; but, in foul mouth And in the witness of his proper ear,  
To call him villain? [*himself;*

And then to glance from him to the duke  
To tax him with injustice?—Take him hence;  
To the rack with him:—We'll touze you joint by joint, [*just*

But we will know this purpose:—What I un-  
*Duke.* Be not so hot; the duke [*he*

Dare no more stretch this finger of mine, that Dare rack his own; his subject am I not, Nor here provincial: My business in this state, Made me a looker on here in Vienna, Where I have seen corruption boil and bubble Till it o'er-run the stew: laws, for all faults; But faults so countenanc'd, that the strong sta- tutes

Stand like the forfeits in a barber's shop, As much in mock as mark.

*Escal.* Slander to the state! Away with him to prison.

*Ang.* What can you vouch against him, signior Lucio?

Is this the man that you did tell us of?

*Lucio.* 'Tis he, my lord. Come hither goodman bald-pate: Do you know me?

*Duke.* I remember you, sir, by the sound of your voice: I met you at the prison, in the absence of the duke.

*Lucio.* O, did you so? And do you remember what you said of the duke?

*Duke.* Most notably, sir.

*Lucio.* Do you so, sir? And was the duke a flesh-monger, a fool, and a coward, as you then reported him to be?

*Duke.* You must, sir, change persons with me, ere you make that my report: you, indeed, spoke so of him; and much more, much worse.

*Lucio.* O thou damnable fellow! Did not I pluck thee by the nose, for thy speeches?

*Duke.* I protest, I love the duke, as I love myself.

*Ang.* Hark! how the villain would close now, after his treasonable abuses.

*Escal.* Such a fellow is not to be talk'd withal:—Away with him to prison:—Where is the provost?—Away with him to prison; lay bolts enough upon him: let him speak no more:—Away with those giglots‡ too, and with the other confederate companion. [*The Provost lays hands on the Duke.*

*Duke.* Stay, sir; stay a while.

*Ang.* What! resists he? Help him, Lucio.

*Lucio.* Come, sir; come, sir; come, sir; for, sir: Why, you bald-pated, lying rascal! you must be hooded, must you? Show your knave's visage, with a pox to you! show your sheep-biting face, and be hang'd an hour! Will't not off? [*Pulls off the Friar's hood, and discovers the Duke.*

*Duke.* Thou art the first knave, that e'er made a duke.—

First, provost, let me bail these gentle three:—

\* To the end.

† R for back.

‡ Accountable.

§ Wantons.

Sneak not away, sir; [*To Lucio.*] for the friar and you

Must have a word anon:—lay hold on him.

*Lucio.* This may prove worse than hanging.

*Duke.* What you have spoke, I pardon; sit you down.— [*To Escalus.*]

We'll borrow place of him:—Sir, by your leave:— [*To Angelo.*]

Hast thou or word, or wit, or impudence,

That yet can do thee office? If thou hast,

Rely upon it till my tale be heard,

And hold no longer out.

*Ang.* O, my dread lord,

I should be guiltier than my guiltiness,

To think I can be undiscernible, [*divine,*

When I perceive, your grace, like power

Hath look'd upon my passet: Then, good

No longer session hold upon my shame, [*prince,*

But let my trial be mine own confession;

Immediate sentence then, and sequent † death,

Is all the grace I beg.

*Duke.* Come, hither, Mariana:—

Say, wast thou e'er contracted to this woman?

*Ang.* I was, my lord. [*instantly.*—

*Duke.* Go take her hence, and marry her

Do you the office, friar; which consummate,

Return him here again:—Go with him, Provost.

[*Exit ANGELO, MARIANA, PETER,*

*and Provost.*]

*Escal.* My lord, I am more amaz'd at his

Than at the strangeness of it. [*dishonour,*

*Duke.* Come hither, Isabel:

Your friar is now your prince: As I was then

Advertising, and holy to your business,

Not changing heart with habit, I am still

Attorney'd at your service.

*Isab.* O, give me pardon,

That I, your vassal, have employ'd and pain'd

Your unknown sovereignty.

*Duke.* You are pardon'd, Isabel:

And now, dear maid, be you as free to us.

Your brother's death, I know, sits at your heart;

And you may marvel, why I obscur'd myself,

Labouring to save his life; and would not rather

Make rash remonstrance of my hidden power,

Than let him so be lost: O, most kind maid,

It was the swift celerity of his death,

Which I did think with slower foot came on,

That brain'd my purpose: But, peace be with

That life is better life, past fearing death [him;

Than that which lives to fear: make it your

So happy is your brother. [*comfort,*

*Re-enter ANGELO, MARIANA, PETER,*

*and Provost.*]

*Isab.* I do, my lord.

*Duke.* For this new-married man, approach-

ing here,

Whose salt imagination yet hath wrong'd

Your well-defended honour, you must pardon

For Mariana's sake: but as he adjudg'd you

(Being criminal, in double violation [brother,

Of sacred chastity, and of promise-breach,

Thereon dependant for your brother's life,)

The very mercy of the law cries out

Most audible, ever from his proper tongue,

An Angelo for Claudio, death for death.

Haste still pays haste, and leisure answers leisure; [*Measure.*]

Like doth quit like, and *Measure* still for

Then Angelo, thy fault's thus manifested;

Which though thou wouldst deny, denies thee vantage:

We do condemn thee to the very block Where Claudio stoop'd to death, and with

Away with him. [*like haste;—*

*Mari.* O, my most gracious lord,

I hope you will not mock me with a husband!

*Duke.* It is your husband mock'd you with a husband:

Consenting to the safeguard of your honour,

I thought your marriage fit; else imputation,

For that he knew you, might reproach your life,

And choke your good to come: for his sessions,

Although by confiscation they are ours,

We do instate and widow you withal,

To buy you a better husband.

*Mari.* O, my dear lord,

I crave no other, nor no better man.

*Duke.* Never crave him; we are definitive.

*Mari.* Gentle, my liege,— [*Kneeling.*]

*Duke.* You do but lose your labour;

Away with him to death.—Now, sir, [*To*

*LUCIO.*] to you. [*take my part;*

*Mari.* O, my good lord!—Sweet Isabel,

Lend me your knees, and all my life to come

I'll lend you, all my life to do you service.

*Duke.* Against all sense you do importune her:

Should she kneel down, in mercy of this fact,

Her brother's ghost his pained bed would break,

And take her hence in horror.

*Mari.* Isabel,

Sweet Isabel, do yet but kneel by me;

Hold up your hands, say nothing, I'll speak all.

They say, best men are moulded out of faults;

And, for the most, become much more the better

For being a little bad; so may my husband.

O, Isabel! will you not lend a knee?

*Duke.* He dies for Claudio's death.

*Isab.* Most bounteous sir, [*Kneeling.*]

Look, if it please you, on this man condemn'd,

As if my brother liv'd: I partly think,

A due sincerity govern'd his deeds,

Till he did look on me; since it is so,

Let him not die: My brother had but justice,

In that he did the thing for which he died:

For Angelo,

His act did not o'ertake his bad intent;

And must be buried but as an intent [*jects;*

That perish'd by the way: thoughts are no sub-

Intents but merely thoughts.

*Mari.* Merely, my lord. [*say.—*

*Duke.* Your suit's unprofitable; stand up, I

I have bethought me of another fault:—

Provost, how came it, Claudio was beheaded

At an unusual hour?

*Prov.* It was commanded so.

*Duke.* Had you a special warrant for the

deed? [*message.*]

*Prov.* No, my good lord; it was by private

*Duke.* For which I do discharge you of

Give up your keys. [*your office.*]



*Prov.* Pardon me, noble lord :  
I thought it was a fault, but knew it not ;  
Yet did repent me, after more advice \* :  
For testimony whereof, one in the prison  
That should by private order else have died,  
I have reserv'd alive.

*Duke.* What's he ?

*Prov.* His name is Barnardine.

*Duke.* I would thou hadst done so by Claudio.  
Go, fetch him hither ; let me look upon him.

[Exit Provost.]

*Escal.* I am sorry, one so learned and so wise,  
As you, lord Angelo, have still appear'd,  
Should slip so grossly, both in the heat of blood,  
And lack of temper'd judgment afterward.

*Ang.* I am sorry, that such sorrow I procure :  
And so deep sticks it in my penitent heart,  
That I crave death more willingly than mercy ;  
'Tis my deserving, and I do entreat it.

*Re-enter Provost, BARNARDINE, CLAUDIO,  
and JULIET.*

*Duke.* Which is that Barnardine ?

*Prov.* This, my lord.

*Duke.* There was a friar told me of this man :—  
Sirrah, thou art said to have a stubborn soul,  
That apprehends no further than this world,  
And squar'st thy life according. Thou'rt condemn'd ;

But, for those earthly faults, I quit them all ;  
And pray thee, take this mercy to provide  
For better times to come :—Friar, advise him ;  
I leave him to your hand.—What muffled  
fellow's that ?

*Prov.* This is another prisoner, that I sav'd,  
That should have died when Claudio lost his  
As like almost to Claudio, as himself. [head ;  
[Unmuffles CLAUDIO.]

*Duke.* If he be like your brother, [To  
ISABELLA.] for his sake

Is he pardon'd ; And, for your lovely sake,  
Give me your hand, and say you will be mine.  
He is my brother too : But fitter time for that.  
By this, lord Angelo perceives he's safe ;  
Methinks, I see a quick'ning in his eye.—  
Well, Angelo, your evil quits † you well :  
Look that you love your wife ; her worth, worth  
yours.—

I find an apt remission in myself :  
And yet here's one in place I cannot pardon ;—  
You, sirrah, [To LUCIO.] that knew me for a  
fool, a coward,

One all of luxury ‡, an ass, a madman ;  
Wherein have I so deserved of you,  
That you extol me thus ?

*Lucio.* 'Faith, my lord, I spoke it but ac-  
cording to the trick § : If you will hang me  
for it, you may, but I had rather it would  
please you, I might be whipp'd.

*Duke.* Whipp'd first, sir, and hang'd after.—  
Proclaim it, provost, round about the city ;  
If any woman's wrong'd by this lewd fellow,  
(As I have heard him swear himself, there's on  
Whom he begot with child,) let her appear,  
And he shall marry her : the nuptial finish'd,  
Let him be whipp'd and hang'd.

*Lucio.* I beseech your highness, do not mar-  
ry me to a whore ! Your highness said even  
now, I made you a duke ; good my lord, do  
not recompense me, in making me a cuckold.

*Duke.* Upon mine honour, thou shalt marry  
Thy slanders I forgive : and therewithal [her  
Remit thy other forfeits :—Take him to prison :  
And see our pleasure herein executed.

*Lucio.* Marrying a punk, my lord, is press-  
ing to death, whipping, and hanging.

*Duke.* Sland'ring a prince deserves it —  
She, Claudio, that you wrong'd, look you re-  
store.—

Joy to you, Mariana !—love her, Angelo ;  
I have confess'd her, and I know her virtue.—  
Thanks, good friend Escalus, for thy much  
goodness :

There's more behind, that is more gratefull ||.  
Thanks, Provost, for thy care, and secrecy ;  
We shall employ thee in a worthier place :—  
Forgive him, Angelo, that brought you home  
The head of Ragozine for Claudio's ;  
The offence pardons itself.—Dear Isabel,  
I have a mo' ¶ much imports your good ;  
Whereto if you'll a willing ear incline, [mine :  
What's mine is yours, and what is yours is  
So, bring us to our palace ; where we'll show  
What's yet behind, that's meet you all should  
know. [Exeunt.]

The novel of Giraldi Cinthio, from which Shakspeare is supposed to have borrowed this fable, may be read in *Shakspeare illustrated*, elegantly translated, with remarks which will assist the inquirer to discover how much absurdity Shakspeare has admitted or avoided.

I cannot but suspect that some other had new-modelled the novel of Cinthio, or written a story which in some particulars resembled it, and that Cinthio was not the author whom Shakspeare immediately followed. The Emperor in Cinthio is named Maximine: the Duke, in Shakspeare's enumeration of the persons of the drama, is called Vincentio. This appears a very slight remark ; but since the Duke has no name in the play, nor is ever mentioned but by his title, why should he be called Vincentio among the *persons*, but because the name was copied from the story, and placed superfluously at the head of the list by the mere habit of transcription ? It is, therefore, likely that there was then a story of Vincentio Duke of Vienna, different from that of Maximine Emperor of the Romans.

Of this play, the light or comic part is very natural and pleasing, but the grave scenes, if a few passages be excepted, have more labour than elegance. The plot is rather intricate than artful. The time of the action is indefinite ; some time, we know not how much, must have elapsed between the recess of the Duke and the imprisonment of Claudio ; for he must have learned the story of Mariana in his disguise, or he delegated his power to a man already known to be corrupted. The names of action and place are sufficiently preserved.—JOHNSON.

\* Consideration. † Reproaches. ‡ Incontinence. § A thoughtless practice. || To reward.

# MUCH ADO ABOUT NOTHING.

## Persons represented.

DON PEDRO, *Prince of Arragon.*  
 DON JOHN, *his bastard brother.*  
 CLAUDIO, *a young lord of Florence, favourite to Don Pedro.*  
 BENEDICK, *a young lord of Padua, favourite likewise of Don Pedro.*  
 LEONATO, *governor of Messina.*  
 ANTONIO, *his brother.*  
 BALTHAZAR, *servant to Don Pedro.*  
 BORACHIO, } *followers of Don John.*  
 CONRADE, }

DOGBERRY, } *two foolish officers.*  
 VERGES, }  
 A SEXTON.  
 A FRIAR.  
 A BOY.  
 HERO, *daughter to Leonato.*  
 BEATRICE, *niece to Leonato.*  
 MARGARET, } *gentlewomen attending on*  
 URSULA. } *Hero.*

*Messengers, Watch, and Attendants.*

*Scene,—Messina.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. *Before Leonato's House.*

*Enter LEONATO, HERO, BEATRICE, and others, with a Messenger.*

*Leon.* I learn in this letter that Don Pedro of Arragon comes this night to Messina.

*Mess.* He is very near by this; he was not three leagues off when I left him.

*Leon.* How many gentlemen have you lost in this action?

*Mess.* But few of any sort\*, and none of name.

*Leon.* A victory is twice itself, when the achiever brings home full numbers. I find here, that Don Pedro hath bestowed much honour on a young Florentine, called Claudio.

*Mess.* Much deserved on his part, and equally remembered by Don Pedro: He hath borne himself beyond the promise of his age; doing, in the figure of a lamb, the feats of a lion: he hath, indeed, better bettered expectation, than you must expect of me to tell you how.

*Leon.* He hath an uncle here in Messina will be very much glad of it.

*Mess.* I have already delivered him letters, and there appears much joy in him; even so much, that joy could not show itself modest enough, without a badge of bitterness.

*Leon.* Did he break out into tears?

*Mess.* In great measure†.

*Leon.* A kind overflow of kindness: There are no faces truer than those that are so washed. How much better is it to weep at joy, than to joy at weeping?

*Beat.* I pray you, is signior Montanto returned from the wars, or no?

*Mess.* I know none of that name, lady; there was none such in the army of any sort.

*Leon.* What is he that you ask for, niece?

*Hero.* My cousin means signior Benedick of Padua.

*Mess.* O, he is returned; and as pleasant as ever he was.

*Beat.* He set up his bills here in Messina, and challenged Cupid at the flight: and my uncle's fool, reading the challenge, subscribed for Cupid, and challenged him at the bird-bolt.—I pray you, how many hath he killed and eaten in these wars? But how many hath he killed? for, indeed, I promised to eat all of his killing.

*Leon.* Faith, niece, you tax signior Benedick too much; but he'll be meet§ with you, I doubt it not.

*Mess.* He hath done good service, lady, in these wars.

*Beat.* You had musty victual, and he hath holp to eat it: he is a very valiant trencherman, he hath an excellent stomach.

*Mess.* And a good soldier too, lady.

*Beat.* And a good soldier to a lady;—But what is he to a lord?

*Mess.* A lord to a lord, a man to a man; stuffed with all honourable virtues.

*Beat.* It is so, indeed; he's no less than a stuffed man||: but for the stuffing,—Well, we are all mortal.

*Leon.* You must not, sir, mistake my niece: there is a kind of merry war betwixt signior Benedick and her: they never meet, but there is a skirmish of wit between them.

*Beat.* Alas, he gets nothing by that. In our last conflict four of his five wits went

\* And. † Abundance. ‡ At long lengths. § Even. || A cuckold.

halting off, and now is the whole man governed with one: so that if he have wit enough to keep himself warm, let him bear it for a difference between himself and his horse: for it is all the wealth that he hath left, to be known a reasonable creature.—Who is his companion now? He hath every month a new sworn brother.

*Mess.* Is it possible?

*Beat.* Very easily possible: he wears his faith but as the fashion of his hat, it ever changes with the next block\*.

*Mess.* I see, lady, the gentleman is not in your books.

*Beat.* No: an he were, I would burn my study. But, I pray you, who is his companion? Is there no young squarer† now, that will make a voyage with him to the devil?

*Mess.* He is most in the company of the right noble Claudio.

*Beat.* O Lord! he will hang upon him like a disease: he is sooner caught than the pestilence, and the taker runs presently mad. God help the noble Claudio! if he have caught the Benedick, it will cost him a thousand pound ere he be cured.

*Mess.* I will hold friends with you, lady.

*Beat.* Do, good friend.

*Leon.* You will never run mad, niece.

*Beat.* No, not till a hot January.

*Mess.* Don Pedro is approached.

*Enter Don PEDRO, attended by BALTHAZAR, and others, Don JOHN, CLAUDIO, and BENEDICK.*

*D. Pedro.* Good signior Leonato, you are come to meet your trouble: the fashion of the world is to avoid cost, and you encounter it.

*Leon.* Never came trouble to my house in the likeness of your grace: for trouble being gone, comfort should remain; but, when you depart from me, sorrow abides, and happiness takes his leave.

*D. Pedro.* You embrace your charge‡ too willingly.—I think, this is your daughter.

*Leon.* Her mother hath many times told me so.

*Bene.* Were you in doubt, sir, that you asked her?

*Leon.* Signior Benedick, no; for then were you a child.

*D. Pedro.* You have it full, Benedick; we may guess by this what you are, being a man. Truly, the lady fathers herself:—Be happy, lady! for you are like an honourable father.

*Bene.* If signior Leonato be her father, she would not have his head on her shoulders, for all Messina, as like him as she is.

*Beat.* I wonder, that you will still be talking, signior Benedick; nobody marks you.

*Bene.* What, my dear lady Disdain! are you yet living?

*Beat.* Is it possible, disdain should die, while she hath such meet food to feed it, as signior Benedick! Courtesy itself must convert to disdain, if you come in her presence.

*Bene.* Then is courtesy a turn-coat:—But it is certain, I am loved of all ladies, only you excepted: and I would I could find in my heart that I had not a hard heart; for, truly, I love none.

*Beat.* A dear happiness to women; they would else have been troubled with a pernicious suitor. I thank God, and my cold blood, I am of your humour for that; I had rather hear my dog bark at a crow, than a man swear he loves me.

*Bene.* God keep your ladyship still in that mind! so some gentleman or other shall'scape a predestinate scratched face.

*Beat.* Scratching could not make it worse an'twere such a face as yours were.

*Bene.* Well, you are a rare parrot-teacher.

*Beat.* A bird of my tongue, is better than a beast of yours.

*Bene.* I would, my horse had the speed of your tongue; and so good a continuer: But keep your way o'God's name; I have done.

*Beat.* You always end with a jade's trick; I know you of old.

*D. Pedro.* This is the sum of all; Leonato,—signior Claudio, and signior Benedick,—my dear friend Leonato hath invited you all. I tell him, we shall stay here at the least a month; and he heartily prays, some occasion may detain us longer: I dare swear he is no hypocrite, but prays from his heart.

*Leon.* If you swear, my lord, you shall not be forsworn.—Let me bid you welcome, my lord: being reconciled to the prince your brother, I owe you all duty.

*D. John.* I thank you: I am not of many words, but I thank you.

*Leon.* Please it your grace lead on?

*D. Pedro.* Your hand, Leonato; we will go together.

[*Exeunt all but BENEDICK and CLAUDIO.*]

*Claud.* Benedick, didst thou note the daughter of signior Leonato?

*Bene.* I noted her not; but I looked on her.

*Claud.* Is she not a modest young lady?

*Bene.* Do you question me, as an honest man should do, for my simple true judgment; or would you have me speak after my custom, as being a professed tyrant to their sex?

*Claud.* No, I pray thee, speak in sober judgment.

*Bene.* Why, if faith, methinks she is too low for a high praise, too brown for a fair praise, and too little for a great praise: only this commendation I can afford her; that were she other than she is, she were unhand-some; and being no other but as she is, I do not like her.

*Claud.* Thou thinkest, I am in sport; I pray thee, tell me truly how thou likest her.

*Bene.* Would you buy her, that you inquire after her?

*Claud.* Can the world buy such a jewel?

*Bene.* Yea, and a case to put it into. But speak you this with a sad brow? or do you play the flouting Jack; to tell us Cupid is a

\* Mould for a hat.

† Quarrelsome fellow.

‡ Trust.



good hare-finder, and Vulcan a rare carpenter? Come, in what key shall a man take you, to go in the song?

*Claud.* In mine eye, she is the sweetest lady that ever I looked on.

*Bene.* I can see yet without spectacles, and I see no such matter: there's her cousin, an she were not possessed with a fury, exceeds her as much in beauty, as the first of May doth the last of December. But I hope, you have no intent to turn husband; have you?

*Claud.* I would scarce trust myself, though I had sworn the contrary, if Hero would be my wife.

*Bene.* Is it come to this, i'faith? Hath not the world one man, but he will wear his cap with suspicion? Shall I never see a bachelor of threescore again? Go to, i'faith; an thou wilt needs thrust thy neck into a yoke, wear the print of it, and sigh away Sundays. Look, Don Pedro is returned to seek you.

*Re-enter Don PEDRO.*

*D. Pedro.* What secret hath held you here, that you followed not to Leonato's?

*Bene.* I would, your grace would constrain me to tell.

*D. Pedro.* I charge thee on thy allegiance.

*Bene.* You hear, Count Claudio: I can be secret as a dumb man, I would have you think so; but on my allegiance,—mark you this, on my allegiance:—He is in love. With who?—now that is your grace's part.—Mark, how short his answer is:—With Hero, Leonato's short daughter.

*Claud.* If this were so, so were it uttered.

*Bene.* Like the old tale, my lord: it is not so, nor 'twas not so; but, indeed, God forbid it should be so.

*Claud.* If my passion change not shortly, God forbid it should be otherwise.

*D. Pedro.* Amen, if you love her; for the lady is very well worthy.

*Claud.* You speak this to fetch me in, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* By my troth, I speak my thought.

*Claud.* And, in faith, my lord, I spoke mine.

*Bene.* And, by my two faiths and troths, my lord, I spoke mine.

*Claud.* That I love her, I feel.

*D. Pedro.* That she is worthy, I know.

*Bene.* That I neither feel how she should be loved, nor know how she should be worthy, is the opinion that fire cannot melt out of me; I will die in it at the stake.

*D. Pedro.* Thou wast ever an obstinate heretic in the despite of beauty.

*Claud.* And never could maintain his part, but in the force of his will.

*Bene.* That a woman conceived me, I thank her; that she brought me up, I likewise give her most humble thanks: but that I will have a recheat\* winded in my forehead, or hang my bugle† in an invisible baldric‡, all women shall pardon me: Because I will not do them the wrong to mistrust any, I will do

myself the right to trust none; and the fine is, (for the which I may go the finer,) I will live a bachelor.

*D. Pedro.* I shall see thee, ere I die, look pale with love.

*Bene.* With anger, with sickness, or with hunger, my lord; not with love: prove, that ever I lose more blood with love, than I will get again with drinking, pick out mine eyes with a ballad-maker's pen, and hang me up at the door of a brothel-house, for the sign of blind Cupid.

*D. Pedro.* Well, if ever thou dost fall from this faith, thou wilt prove a notable argument.

*Bene.* If I do, hang me in a bottle like a cat, and shoot at me; and he that hits me, let him be clapped on the shoulder, and called Adam's.

*D. Pedro.* Well, as time shall try:

*In time the savage bull doth bear the yoke.*

*Bene.* The savage bull may; but if ever the sensible Benedick bear it, pluck off the bull's horns, and set them in my forehead: and let me be vilely painted; and in such great letters as they write, *Here is good horse to hire*, let them signify under my sign,—*Here you may see Benedick the married man.*

*Claud.* If this should ever happen, thou wouldest be horn-mad.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, if Cupid have not spent all his quiver in Venice, thou wilt quake for this shortly.

*Bene.* I look for an earthquake too then.

*D. Pedro.* Well, you will temporize with the hours. In the mean time, good signior Benedick, repair to Leonato's; commend me to him, and tell him, I will not fail him at supper; for, indeed, he hath made great preparation.

*Bene.* I have almost matter enough in me for such an embassy; and so I commit you—

*Claud.* To the tuition of God: From my house, (if I had it,)—

*D. Pedro.* The sixth of July: Your loving friend, Benedick.

*Bene.* Nay, mock not, mock not: The body of your discourse is sometime guarded with fragments, and the guards are but slightly basted on neither: ere you flout old ends any further, examine your conscience; and so I leave you. [Exit BENEDICK.]

*Claud.* My liege, your highness now may do me good. [It but how,

*D. Pedro.* My love is thine to teach; teach And thou shalt see how apt it is to learn Any hard lesson that may do thee good.

*Claud.* Hath Leonato any son, my lord?

*D. Pedro.* No child but Hero, she's his only

Dost thou affect her, Claudio! [Heir:

*Claud.* O, my lord  
When you went onward on this ended action,  
I look'd upon her with a soldier's eye,  
That lik'd, but had a rougher task in hand  
Than to drive liking to the name of love:

\* The tune sounded to call off the dogs. † Hunting-horn. ‡ Girdle. § The name of a famous archer. ¶ Trimmed.

But now I am return'd, and that war thoughts  
Have left their places vacant, in their rooms  
Come thronging soft and delicate desires,  
All prompting me how fair young Hero is,  
Saying, I lik'd her ere I went to wars.

*D. Pedro.* Thou wilt belike a lover presently,  
And tire the hearer with a book of words:  
if thou dost love fair Hero, cherish it;  
And I will break with her, and with her father,  
And thou shalt have her: Was't not to this end,  
That thou began'st to twist so fine a story?

*Claud.* How sweetly do you minister to love,  
That know love's grief by his complexion!  
But lest my liking might too sudden seem,  
I would have sav'd it with a longer treatise.

*D. Pedro.* What need the bridge much  
broader than the flood?

The fairest grant is the necessity: [lov'st;  
Look, what will serve, is fit: 'tis once\*, thou  
And I will fit thee with the remedy.

I know, we shall have reveling to-night;  
I will assume thy part in some disguise,  
And tell fair Hero I am Claudio;  
And in her bosom I'll unclasp my heart,  
And take her hearing prisoner with the force  
And strong encounter of my amorous tale:  
Then, after, to her father will I break;  
And, the conclusion is, she shall be thine:  
In practice let us put it presently. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. A Room in Leonato's House.

*Enter LEONATO and ANTONIO.*

*Leon.* How now, brother? Where is my  
cousin, your son? Hath he provided this  
music?

*Ant.* He is very busy about it. But, brother,  
I can tell you strange news that you yet  
dreamed not of.

*Leon.* Are they good?

*Ant.* As the event stamps them; but they  
have a good cover, they show well outward.  
The prince and Count Claudio, walking in a  
thick-pleach'd alley in my orchard, were  
thus much overheard by a nian of mine: The  
prince discovered to Claudio, that he loved  
my niece your daughter, and meant to acknow-  
ledge it this night in a dance; and, if he found  
her accordant, he meant to take the present  
time by the top, and instantly break with you  
of it.

*Leon.* Hath the fellow any wit, that told  
you this?

*Ant.* A good sharp fellow: I will send for  
him, and question him yourself.

*Leon.* No, no; we will hold it as a dream,  
till it appear itself:—but I will acquaint my  
daughter withal, that she may be the better  
prepared for an answer, if peradventure this  
be true. Go you, and tell her of it. [Several  
persons cross the stage.] Cousins, you know  
what you have to do.—O, I cry you mercy,  
friend; you go with me, and I will use your  
skill:—Good cousins have a care this busy  
time. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE III. Another Room in Leonato's House.

*Enter Don JOHN and CONRADE.*

*Con.* What the gongjere†, my lord! why are  
you thus out of measure sad?

*D. John.* There is no measure in the occa-  
sion that breeds it, therefore the sadness is  
without limit.

*Con.* You should hear reason.

*D. John.* And when I have heard it, what  
blessing bringeth it?

*Con.* If not a present remedy, yet a patient  
sufferance.

*D. John.* I wonder, that thou being (as  
thou say'st thou art) born under Saturn, goest  
about to apply a moral medicine to a morti-  
fying mischief. I cannot hide what I am: I  
must be sad when I have cause, and smile at  
no man's jests; eat when I have stomach, and  
wait for no man's leisure; sleep when I am  
drowsy, and tend to no man's business; laugh  
when I am merry, and claw§ no man in his  
humour.

*Con.* Yea, but you must not make the full  
show of this till you may do it without con-  
trolment. You have of late stood out against  
your brother, and he hath ta'en you newly  
into his grace; where it is impossible you  
should take true root, but by the fair weather  
that you make yourself: it is needful that  
you frame the season for your own harvest.

*D. John.* I had rather be a canker¶ in a  
hedge, than a rose in his grace; and it better  
fits my blood to be disdained of all, than to  
fashion a carriage to rob love from any: in  
this, though I cannot be said to be a flatter-  
ing honest man, it must not be denied that I  
am a plain dealing villain. I am trusted with  
a muzzel, and enfranchised with a clog; there-  
fore I have decreed not to sing in my cage:  
If I had my month, I would bite; if I had my  
liberty, I would do my liking: in the mean  
time, let me be that I am, and seek not to al-  
ter me.

*Con.* Can you make no use of your dis-  
content?

*D. John.* I make all use of it, for I use it  
only. Who comes here? What news, Bora-  
chio?

*Enter BORACHIO.*

*Bora.* I came yonder from a great supper;  
the prince, your brother, is royally entertained  
by Leonato; and I can give you intelligence  
of an intended marriage.

*D. John.* Will it serve for any model to  
build mischief on? What is he for a fool, that  
betroths himself to unquietness?

*Bora.* Marry, it is your brother's right  
hand.

*D. John.* Who? the most exquisite Claudio?

*Bora.* Even he.

*D. John.* A proper squire! And who, and  
who? which way looks he?

\* Once for all.

† Thickly-interwoven.

‡ The venereal disease.

§ Flatter.

¶ Dog-rose.

*Bora.* Marry, on Hero, the daughter and heir of Leonato.

*D. John.* A very forward March chick! How came you to this?

*Bora.* Being entertained for a perfumer, as I was smoking a musty room, comes me the prince and Claudio, hand in hand, in sad \* conference: I whipt me behind the arras; and there heard it agreed upon, that the prince should woo Hero for himself, and having obtained her, give her to count Claudio.

*D. John.* Come, come, let us thither; this

may prove food to my displeasure: that young start-up hath all the glory of my overthrow; if I can cross him any way, I bless myself every way: You are both sure, and will assist me?

*Con.* To the death, my lord.

*D. John.* Let us to the great supper; their cheer is the greater, that I am subdued: 'Would the cook were of my mind!—Shall we go prove what's to be done?

*Bora.* We'll wait upon your lordship.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. A Hall in Leonato's House.

*Enter* LEONATO, ANTONIO, HERO, BEATRICE, and others.

*Leon.* Was not count John here at supper?

*Ant.* I saw him not.

*Beat.* How tartly that gentleman looks! I never can see him, but I am heart-burned an hour after.

*Hero.* He is of a very melancholy disposition.

*Beat.* He were an excellent man, that were made just in the mid-way between him and Benedick: the one is too like an image, and says nothing; and the other, too like my lady's eldest son, evermore tattling.

*Leon.* Then half signior Benedick's tongue in count John's mouth, and half count John's melancholy in signior Benedick's face,—

*Beat.* With a good leg, and a good foot, uncle, and money enough in his purse, such a man would win any woman in the world,—if he could get her good will.

*Leon.* By my troth, niece, thou wilt never get thee a husband, if thou be so shrewd of thy tongue.

*Ant.* In faith, she is too curst.

*Beat.* Too curst is more than curst: I shall lessen God's sending that way: for it is said, *God sends a curst cow short horns*; but to a cow too curst he sends none.

*Leon.* So, by being too curst, God will send you no horns.

*Beat.* Just, if he send me no husband; for the which blessing, I am at him upon my knees every morning and evening: Lord! I could not endure a husband with a beard on his face; I had rather lie in the woollen.

*Leon.* You may light upon a husband, that hath no beard.

*Beat.* What should I do with him? dress him in my apparel, and make him my waiting gentlewoman? He that hath a beard, is more than a youth; and he that hath no beard, is less than a man; and he that is more than a youth, is not for me; and he that is less than a man, I am not for him. Therefore I will even take sixpence in earnest of the bear-herd, and lead his apes into hell.

*Leo.* Well then, go you into hell?

*Beat.* No; but to the gate; and there will the devil meet me, like an old cuckold, with horns on his head, and say, *Get you to heaven, Beatrice, get you to heaven; here's no place for you maids*: so deliver I up my apes, and away to Saint Peter for the heavens; he shows me where the bachelors sit, and there live we as merry as the day is long.

*Ant.* Well, niece, [*To* HERO.] I trust, you will be ruled by your father.

*Beat.* Yes, faith; it is my cousin's duty to make courtesy, and say, *Father, as it please you*:—but yet for all that, cousin, let him be a handsome fellow, or else make another courtesy, and say, *Father, as it please me*.

*Leon.* Well, niece, I hope to see you one day fitted with a husband.

*Beat.* Not till God make men of some other metal than earth. Would it not grieve a woman to be over-mastered with a piece of valiant dust? to make an account of her life to a clod of wayward marl? No, uncle, I'll none: Adam's sons are my brethren; and truly, I hold it a sin to match in my kindred.

*Leon.* Daughter, remember, what I told you: if the prince do solicit you in that kind, you know your answer.

*Beat.* The fault will be in the music, cousin, if you be not woo'd in good time: if the prince be too important†, tell him, there is measure in every thing, and so dance out the answer. For hear me, Hero; Wooing, wedding, and repenting, is as a Scotch jig, a measure, and a cinque-pace: the first suit is hot and hasty, like a Scotch jig, and full as fantastical; the wedding, mannerly†, modest, as a measure full of state and ancientry; and then comes repentance, and, with his bad legs, falls into the cinque-pace faster and faster, till he sink into his grave.

*Leon.* Cousin, you apprehend passing shrewdly.

*Beat.* I have a good eye, uncle; I can see a church by day-light.

*Leon.* The revellers are entering; brother, make good room.

\* Serious.

† Importunate.



*Enter* Don PEDRO, CLAUDIO, BENEDICK, BALTHAZAR; *Don* JOHN, BORACHIO, MARGARET, URSULA, and *others*, *masked*.

*D. Pedro.* Lady, will you walk about with your friend \*?

*Hero.* So you walk softly, and look sweetly, and say nothing, I am yours for the walk; and, especially, when I walk away.

*D. Pedro.* With me in your company?

*Hero.* I may say so, when I please.

*D. Pedro.* And when please you to say so?

*Hero.* When I like your favour; for God defend it, the lute should be like the case!

*D. Pedro.* My visor is Philemon's roof; within the house is Jove.

*Hero.* Why, then your visor should be thatch'd.

*D. Pedro.* Speak low, if you speak love.

[*Takes her aside.*]

*Bene.* Well, I would you did like me.

*Marg.* So would not I, for your own sake; for I have many ill qualities.

*Bene.* Which is one?

*Marg.* I say my prayers aloud.

*Bene.* I love you the better; the hearers may cry, Amen.

*Marg.* God match me with a good dancer!

*Balth.* Amen.

*Marg.* And God keep him out of my sight, when the dance is done!—Answer, clerk.

*Balth.* No more words; the clerk is answered.

*Urs.* I know you well enough; you are signior Antonio.

*Ant.* At a word, I am not.

*Urs.* I know you by the wagging of your head.

*Ant.* To tell you true, I counterfeit him.

*Urs.* You could never do him so ill-well, unless you were the very man: Here's his dry hand up and down; you are he, you are he.

*Ant.* At a word, I am not.

*Urs.* Come, come; do you think I do not know you by your excellent wit? Can virtue hide itself? Go to, mum, you are he: graces will appear, and there's an end.

*Beat.* Will you not tell me who told you so?

*Bene.* No, you shall pardon me.

*Beat.* Nor will you not tell me who you are?

*Bene.* Not now.

*Beat.* That I was disdainful,—and that I had my good wit out of the *Hundred merry Tales*;—Well, this was signior Benedick that said so.

*Bene.* What's he?

*Beat.* I am sure, you know him well enough.

*Bene.* Not I, believe me.

*Beat.* Did he never make you laugh?

*Bene.* I pray you, what is he?

*Beat.* Why, he is the prince's jester: a very dull fool; only his gift is in devising impossible † slanders: none but libertines de-

light in him; and the commendation is not in his wit, but in his villany; for he both pleases men, and angers them, and then they laugh at him, and beat him: I am sure, he is in the fleet; I would he had boarded § me.

*Bene.* When I know the gentleman, I'll tell him what you say.

*Beat.* Do, do: he'll but break a comparison or two on me; which, peradventure, not marked, or not laughed at, strikes him into melancholy; and then there's a partridge-wing saved, for the fool will eat no supper that night [*Music within.*] We must follow the leaders.

*Bene.* In every good thing.

*Beat.* Nay, if they lead to any ill, I will leave them at the next turning

[*Dance. Then exeunt all but Don JOHN, BORACHIO, and CLAUDIO.*]

*D. John.* Sure, my brother is amorous on Hero, and hath withdrawn her father to break with him about it: The ladies follow her, and but one visor remains.

*Bora.* And that is Claudio: I know him by his bearing||.

*D. John.* Are not you signior Benedick?

*Claudio.* You know me well; I am he.

*D. John.* Signior, you are very near my brother in his love: he is enamoured on Hero; I pray you, dissuade him from her, she is no equal for his birth: you may do the part of an honest man in it.

*Claudio.* How know you he loves her?

*D. John.* I heard him swear his affection.

*Bora.* So did I too; and he swore he would marry her to-night.

*D. John.* Come, let us to the banquet.

[*Exeunt Don JOHN and BORACHIO.*]

*Claudio.* Thus answer I in name of Benedick, But hear these ill news with the ears of Claudio.— [self.]

'Tis certain so;—the prince wooes for him Friendship is constant in all other things, Save in the office and affairs of love: Therefore, all hearts in love use their own tongues;

Let every eye negotiate for itself, And trust no agent: for beauty is a witch, Against whose charms faith melteth into blood¶.

This is an accident of hourly proof, [Hero] Which I mistrusted not: Farewell, therefore,

*Re-enter BENEDICK.*

*Bene.* Count Claudio?

*Claudio.* Yea, the same.

*Bene.* Come, will you go with me?

*Claudio.* Whither?

*Bene.* Even to the next willow, about your own business, count. What fashion will you wear the garland of? About your neck, like an usurer's chain? or under your arm, like a lieutenant's scarf? You must wear it one way, for the prince hath got your Hero.

*Claudio.* I wish him joy of her.

*Bene.* Why, that's spoken like an honest

\* Lover.

† Forbid.

‡ Incredible.

§ Accosted.

|| Carriage, demeanour.

¶ Passion.

drover; so they sell bullocks. But did you think, the prince would have served you thus?

*Claud.* I pray you, leave me.

*Bene.* Ho! now you strike like the blind man; 'twas the boy that stole your meat, and you'll beat the post.

*Claud.* If it will not be, I'll leave you.

[Exit.

*Bene.* Alas, poor hurt fowl! Now will he creep into sedges.—But, that my lady Beatrice should know me, and not know me! The prince's fool!—Ha! it may be, I go under that title, because I am merry.—Yea; but so; I am apt to do myself wrong: I am not so reputed: it is the base, the bitter disposition of Beatrice, that puts the world into her person, and so gives me out. Well, I'll be revenged as I may.

*Re-enter Don PEDRO, HERO, and LEONATIO.*

*D. Pedro.* Now, signior, where's the count; Did you see him?

*Bene.* Troth, my lord, I have played the part of lady Fame. I found him here as melancholy as a lodge in a warren; I told him, and, I think, I told him true, that your grace had got the good will of this young lady; and I offered him my company to a willow tree, either to make him a garland, as being forsaken, or to bind him up a rod, as being worthy to be whipped.

*D. Pedro.* To be whipped! What's his fault?

*Bene.* The flat transgression of a school-boy; who, being overjoy'd with finding a bird's nest, shows it his companion, and he steals it.

*D. Pedro.* Wilt thou make a trust a transgression? The transgression is in the stealer.

*Bene.* Yet it had not been amiss, the rod had been made, and the garland too; for the garland he might have worn himself; and the rod he might have bestow'd on you, who, as I take it, have stolen his bird's nest.

*D. Pedro.* I will but teach them to sing, and restore them to the owner.

*Bene.* If their singing answer your saying, by my faith, you say honestly.

*D. Pedro.* The lady Beatrice hath a quarrel to you; the gentleman, that danced with her, told her, she is much wronged by you.

*Bene.* O, she misused me past the endurance of a block; an oak, but with one green leaf on it, would have answered her; my very visor began to assume life, and scold with her: She told me, not thinking I had been myself, that I was the prince's jester; that I was duller than a great thaw; huddling jest upon jest, with such impossible\* conveyance, upon me, that I stood like a man at a mark, with a whole army shooting at me: She speaks poniards, and every word stabs; if her breath were as terrible as her terminations, there were no living near her, she would infect to the north star. I would not

marry her, though she were endowed with all that Adam had left him before he transgressed: she would have made Hercules have turned spit; yea, and have cleft his club to make the fire too. Come, talk not of her; you shall find her the infernal Até† in good apparel. I would to God, some scholar would conjure her; for, certainly, while she is here, a man may live as quiet in hell, as in a sanctuary; and people sin upon purpose, because they would go thither; so, indeed, all disquiet, horror, and perturbation follow her.

*Re-enter CLAUDIO and BEATRICE.*

*D. Pedro.* Look, here she comes.

*Bene.* Will your grace command me any service to the world's end? I will go on the slightest errand now to the Antipodes, that you can devise to send me on; I will fetch you a toothpicker now from the farthest inch of Asia; bring you the length of Prester John's foot; fetch you a hair off the great Cham's beard; do you any embassy to the Pigmies, rather than hold three words' conference with this harpy: You have no employment for me?

*D. Pedro.* None, but to desire your good company.

*Bene.* O God, sir, here's a dish I love not; I cannot endure my lady Tongue. [Exit.

*D. Pedro.* Come, lady, come; you have lost the heart of signior Benedick.

*Beat.* Indeed, my lord, he lent it me awhile; and I gave him use† for it, a double heart for his single one: marry, once before, he won it of me with false dice, therefore your grace may well say, I have lost it.

*D. Pedro.* You have put him down, lady, you have put him down.

*Beat.* So I would not he should do me, my lord, lest I should prove the mother of fools. I have brought count Claudio, whom you sent me to seek.

*D. Pedro.* Why, how now, count? wherefore are you sad?

*Claud.* Not sad, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* How then? Sick?

*Claud.* Neither, my lord.

*Beat.* The count is neither sad, nor sick, nor merry, nor well: but civil, count; civil as an orange, and something of that jealous complexion.

*D. Pedro.* I'faith, lady, I think your blazon to be true; though, I'll be sworn, if he be so, his conceit is false. Here, Claudio, I have wooed in thy name, and fair Hero is won; I have broke with her father, and his good will obtained: name the day of marriage, and God give thee joy!

*Leon.* Count, take of me my daughter, and with her my fortunes: his grace hath made the match, and all grace say Amen to it!

*Beat.* Speak, count, 'tis your cue§.

*Claud.* Silence is the perfectest herald of joy: I were but little happy, if I could say how much.—Lady, as you are mine, I am

\* Incredible.

† The Goddess of Discord.

‡ Interest.

§ Turn: a phrase among the players.

yours : I give away myself for you, and dote upon the exchange.

*Beat.* Speak, cousin ; or, if you cannot, stop his mouth with a kiss, and let him not speak, neither.

*D. Pedro.* In faith, lady, you have a merry heart.

*Beat.* Yea, my lord ; I thank it, poor fool, it keeps on the windy side of care :—My cousin tells him in his ear, that he is in her heart.

*Claud.* And so she doth, cousin.

*Beat.* Good lord, for alliance !—Thus goes every one to the world but I, and I am sunburned ; I may sit in a corner, and cry, heigh-ho ! for a husband.

*D. Pedro.* Lady Beatrice, I will get you one.

*Beat.* I would rather have one of your father's getting : Hath your grace ne'er a brother like you ? Your father got excellent husbands, if a maid could come by them.

*D. Pedro.* Will you have me, lady ?

*Beat.* No, my lord, unless I might have another for working-days ; your grace is too costly to wear every day :—But, I beseech your grace, pardon me : I was born to speak all mirth, and no matter.

*D. Pedro.* Your silence most offends me, and to be merry best becomes you ; for, out of question, you were born in a merry hour.

*Beat.* No, sure, my lord, my mother cry'd ; but then there was a star danced, and under that was I born.—Cousins, God give you joy !

*Leon.* Niece, will you look to those things I told you of ?

*Beat.* I cry you mercy, uncle.—By your grace's pardon. [Exit BEATRICE.]

*D. Pedro.* By my troth, a pleasant-spirited lady.

*Leon.* There's little of the melancholy element in her, my lord : she is never sad, but when she sleeps ; and not ever sad then ; for I have heard my daughter say, she hath often dreamed of unhappiness, and waked herself with laughing.

*D. Pedro.* She cannot endure to hear tell of a husband.

*Leon.* O, by no means ; she mocks all her wooers out of suit.

*D. Pedro.* She were an excellent wife for Benedick.

*Leon.* O lord, my lord, if they were but a week married, they would talk themselves mad.

*D. Pedro.* Count Claudio, when mean you o go to church ?

*Claud.* To-morrow, my lord : Time goes on crutches, till love have all his rites.

*Leon.* Nottill Monday, my dear son, which is hence a just seven-night ; and a time too brief too, to have all things answer my mind.

*D. Pedro.* Come, you shake the head at so long a breathing ; but, I warrant thee, Claudio, the time shall not go dully by us : I will, in the interim, undertake one of Hercules'

labours ; which is, to bring signior Benedick, and the lady Beatrice into a mountain of affection, the one with the other. I would fain have it a match ; and I doubt not but to fashion it, if you three will but minister such assistance as I shall give you direction.

*Leon.* My lord, I am for you, though it cost me ten nights' watchings.

*Claud.* And I, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* And you too, gentle Hero ?

*Hero.* I will do any modest office, my lord to help my cousin to a good husband.

*D. Pedro.* And Benedick is not the un-hopefullest husband that I know : thus far can I praise him ; he is of a noble strain \*, of approved valour, and confirmed honesty. I will teach you how to humour your cousin, that she shall fall in love with Benedick :—and I, with your two helps, will so practise on Benedick, that, in despite of his quick wit and his queasy † stomach, he shall fall in love with Beatrice. If we can do this, Cupid is no longer an archer ; his glory shall be ours, for we are the only love-gods. Go in with me, and I will tell you my drift. [Exit.]

## SCENE II.

*Another Room in Leonato's House.*

*Enter Don JOHN and BORACHIO.*

*D. John.* It is so ; the count Claudio shall marry the daughter of Leonato.

*Bora.* Yea, my lord ; but I can cross it.

*D. John.* Any bar, any cross, any impediment will be medicinable to me : I am sick in displeasure to him ; and whatsoever comes athwart his affection, ranges evenly with mine. How caust thou cross this marriage ?

*Bora.* Not honestly, my lord ; but so covertly that no dishonesty shall appear in me.

*D. John.* Show me briefly how.

*Bora.* I think, I told your lordship, a year since, how much I am in the favour of Margaret, the waiting-gentlewoman to Hero.

*D. John.* I remember.

*Bora.* I can, at any unseasonable instant of the night, appoint her to look out at her lady's chamber-window.

*D. John.* What life is in that, to be the death of this marriage ?

*Bora.* The poison of that lies in you to temper. Go you to the prince your brother ; spare not to tell him, that he hath wronged his honour in marrying the renowned Claudio (whose estimation do you mightily hold up) to a contaminated stale, such a one as Hero.

*D. John.* What proof shall I make of that ?

*Bora.* Proof enough to misse the prince, to vex Claudio, to undo Hero, and kill Leonato : Look you for any other issue ?

*D. John.* Only to despise them, I will endeavour any thing.

*Bora.* Go then, find me a meet hour to draw Don Pedro and the count Claudio, alone : tell them, that you know that Hero loves me ; intend ‡ a kind of zeal both to the prince and Claudio, as—in love of your brother's honour

\* Lineage.

† Fastidious.

‡ Pretend.



who hath made this match; and his friend's reputation, who is thus like to be cozened with the semblance of a maid,—that you have discovered thus. They will scarcely believe this without trial: offer them instances; which shall bear no less likelihood, than to see me at her chamber-window; hear me call Margaret, Hero; hear Margaret term me Borachio; and bring them to see this, the very night before the intended wedding: for, in the mean time, I will so fashion the matter, that Hero shall be absent; and there shall appear such seeming truth of Hero's disloyalty, that jealousy shall be call'd assurance, and all the preparation overthrown.

*D. John.* Grow this to what adverse issue it can, I will put it in practice: Be cunning in the working this, and thy fee is a thousand ducats.

*Bora.* Be you constant in the accusation, and my cunning shall not shame me.

*D. John.* I will presently go learn their day of marriage. *[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE III. Leonato's Garden.

*Enter BENEDICK and a Boy.*

*Bene.* Boy,—

*Boy.* Signior.

*Bene.* In my chamber-window lies a book; bring it hither to me in the orchard.

*Boy.* I am here already, sir.

*Bene.* I know that;—but I would have thee hence, and here again. *[Exit Boy.]*—I do much wonder, that one man, seeing how much another man is a fool when he dedicates his behaviours to love, will, after he hath laughed at such shallow follies in others, become the argument of his own scorn, by falling in love: And such a man is Claudio. I have known, when there was no music with him but the drum and fife; and now had he rather hear the tabor and the pipe: I have known, when he would have walked ten mile afoot, to see a good armour; and now will he lie ten nights awake, carving the fashion of a new doublet. He was wont to speak plain, and to the purpose, like an honest man, and a soldier; and now is he turn'd orthographer; his words are a very fantastical banquet, just so many strange dishes. May I be so converted, and see with these eyes? I cannot tell; I think not: I will not be sworn, but love may transform me to an oyster; but I'll take my oath on it, till he have made an oyster of me, he shall never make me such a fool. One woman is fair; yet I am well: another is wise; yet I am well: another virtuous; yet I am well: but till all graces be in one woman, one woman shall not come in my grace. Rich she shall be, that's certain; wise, or I'll none; virtuous, or I'll never cheapen her; fair, or I'll never look on her; mild, or come not near me; noble, or not I for an angel; of good discourse, an excellent musician, and her hair shall be of what colour it please God. Ha! the prince and monsieur Love! I will hide me in the arbour. *[Withdraws.]*

*Enter Don PEDRO, LEONATO, & CLAUDIO.*

*D. Pedro.* Come, shall we hear this music?

*Claud.* Yea, my good lord:—How still the evening is,

As hush'd on purpose to grace harmony!

*D. Pedro.* See you where Benedick hath hid himself?

*Claud.* O, very well, my lord: the music ended, We'll fit the kid-fox \* with a penny-worth.

*Enter BALTHAZAR, with music.*

*D. Pedro.* Come, Balthazar, we'll hear that song again. *[voice]*

*Balth.* O good my lord, tax not so bad a To slander music any more than once.

*D. Pedro.* It is the witness still of excellency, To put a strange face on his own perfection:—I pray thee, sing, and let me woo no more.

*Balth.* Because you talk of wooing, I will sing: Since many a wooer doth commence his suit To her he thinks not worthy; yet he woos; Yet will he swear, he loves.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, pray thee, come: Or, if thou wilt hold longer argument, Do it in notes.

*Balth.* Note this before my notes, There's not a note of mine that's worth the noting. *[that he speaks;]*

*D. Pedro.* Why these are very crotchets Note, notes, forsooth, and noting! *[Music.]*

*Bene.* Now, *Divine air!* now is his soul ravish'd!—Is it not strange, that sheep's guts should hale souls out of men's bodies?—Well, a horn for my money, when all's done.

*BALTHAZAR sings.*

*Balth.* *Sigh no more, ladies, sigh no more, Men were deceivers ever;*

*One foot in sea, and one on shore;*

*To one thing constant never:*

*Then sigh not so,*

*But let them go,*

*And be you blithe and bonny;*

*Converting all your sounds of woe*

*Into, Hey nonny, nonny.*

*Sing no more ditties, sing no mo't*

*Of dumps so dull and heavy;*

*The fraud of men was ever so,*

*Since summer first was leavy.*

*Then sigh not so, &c.*

*D. Pedro.* By my troth, a good song.

*Balth.* And an ill singer, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Ha? no; no, faith; thou singest well enough for a shift.

*Bene.* *[Aside.]* And he had been a dog, that should have howled thus, they would have hang'd him: and, I pray God, his bad voice bode no mischief! I had as lief have heard the night-raven, come what plague could have come after it.

*D. Pedro.* Yea, marry; *[To CLAUDIO.]*—Dost thou hear, Balthazar? I pray thee, get us some excellent music; for to-morrow night we would have it at the lady Hero's chamber-window.

*Balth.* The best I can, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Do so: farewell. *[Exeunt BAL]*

\* Young or cub-fox.

† Longer.

THAZAR and music.] Come hither, Leonato: What was it you told me of to-day? that your niece Beatrice was in love with signior Benedick?

*Claud.* O, ay:—Stalk on, stalk on; the fowl sits. [*Aside to PEDRO.*] I did never think that lady would have loved any man.

*Leon.* No, nor I neither; but most wonderful, that she should so dote on signior Benedick, whom she hath in all outward behaviours seemed ever to abhor.

*Bene.* Is't possible? Sits the wind in that corner?

[*Aside.*]

*Leon.* By my troth, my lord, I cannot tell what to think of it; but that she loves him with an enraged affection,—it is past the infinite of thought\*.

*D. Pedro.* May be, she doth but counterfeit.

*Claud.* 'Faith, like enough.

*Leon.* O God! counterfeit! There never was counterfeit of passion came so near the life of passion, as she discovers it.

*D. Pedro.* Why, what effects of passion shows she?

*Claud.* Bait the hook well; this fish will bite.

[*Aside.*]

*Leon.* What effects, my lord! She will sit you,—You heard my daughter tell you how.

*Claud.* She did, indeed.

*D. Pedro.* How, how, I pray you? You amaze me: I would have thought her spirit had been invincible against all assaults of affection.

*Leon.* I would have sworn it had, my lord; especially against Benedick.

*Bene.* [*Aside.*] I should think this a gull, but that the white-bearded fellow speaks it: knavery cannot, sure, hide itself in such reverence.

*Claud.* He hath ta'en the infection; hold it up.

[*Aside.*]

*D. Pedro.* Hath she made her affection known to Benedick?

*Leon.* No; and swears she never will: that's her torment.

*Claud.* 'Tis true, indeed; so your daughter says: *Shall I, says she, that have so oft encounter'd him with scorn, write to him that I love him?*

*Leon.* This says she now when she is beginning to write to him: for she'll be up twenty times a night; and there will she sit in her smock, till she have writ a sheet of paper:—my daughter tells us all.

*Claud.* Now you talk of a sheet of paper, I remember a pretty jest your daughter told us of.

*Leon.* O!—When she had writ it, and was reading it over, she found Benedick and Beatrice between the sheet?—

*Claud.* That.

*Leon.* O! she tore the letter into a thousand half-pence; railed at herself, that she should be so immodest to write to one that she knew would flout her: *I measure him*, says she, *by my own spirit; for I should flout him, if he writ to me; yea, though I love him, I should.*

*Claud.* Then down upon her knees she falls,

weeps, sobs, beats her heart, tears her hair prays, curses;—*O sweet Benedick!—Give me patience!*

*Leon.* She doth indeed; my daughter says so: and the ecstasy† hath so much overborn her, that my daughter is sometime afraid she will do a desperate outrage to herself; It is very true.

*D. Pedro.* It were good, that Benedick knew of it by some other, if she will not discover it.

*Claud.* To what end? He would but make a sport of it, and torment the poor lady worse.

*D. Pedro.* An he should it were an aim, to hang him: She's an excellent sweet lady, and, out of all suspicion, she is virtuous.

*Claud.* And she is exceeding wise.

*D. Pedro.* In every thing, but in loving Benedick.

*Leon.* O my lord, wisdom and blood combating in so tender a body, we have ten proofs to one, that blood hath the victory. I am sorry for her, as I have just cause, being her uncle and her guardian.

*D. Pedro.* I would she had bestowed this dotage on me; I would have daff'd‡ all other respects, and made her half myself: I pray you, tell Benedick of it, and hear what he will say.

*Leon.* Were it good, think you?

*Claud.* Hero thinks surely, she will die: for she says, she will die if he love her not; and she will die ere she makes her love known; and she will die if he woo her, rather than she will 'bate one breath of her accustomed crossness.

*D. Pedro.* She doth well: if she should make tender of her love, 'tis very possible he'll scorn it; for the man, as you know all, hath a contemptible§ spirit.

*Claud.* He is a very proper|| man.

*D. Pedro.* He hath, indeed, a good outward happiness.

*Claud.* 'Fore God, and in my mind, very wise.

*D. Pedro.* He doth, indeed, show some sparks that are like wit.

*Leon.* And I take him to be valiant.

*D. Pedro.* As Hector, I assure you: and in the managing of quarrels you may say he is wise; for either he avoids them with great discretion, or undertakes them with a most christian-like fear.

*Leon.* If he do fear God, he must necessarily keep peace; if he break the peace, he ought to enter into a quarrel with fear and trembling.

*D. Pedro.* And so will he do; for the man doth fear God, howsoever it seems not in him, by some large jests he will make. Well, I am sorry for your niece: Shall we go see Benedick, and tell him of her love?

*Claud.* Never tell him, my lord; let her wear it out with good counsel.

*Leon.* Nay, that's impossible; she may wear her heart out first.

*D. Pedro.* Well, we'll hear further of it by your daughter; let it cool the while. I love Benedick well; and I could wish he would

\* Beyond the power of thought to conceive.

† Thrown out.

‡ Contemptuous.

† Alienation of mind.

|| Handsome.

modestly examine himself, to see how much he is unworthy so good a lady.

*Leon.* My lord, will you walk? dinner is ready.

*Claud.* If he do not dote on her upon this, I will never trust my expectation. [*Aside.*]

*D. Pedro.* Let there be the same net spread for her; and that must your daughter and her gentlewoman carry. The sport will be, when they hold one an opinion of another's dotage, and no such matter; that's the scene that I would see, which will be merely a dumb show. Let us send her to call him in to dinner. [*Aside.*]

[*Exeunt DON PEDRO, CLAUDIO, & LEONATO.*]  
*Benedick advances from the arbour.*

*Bene.* This can be no trick: The conference was sadly borne\*.—They have the truth of this from Hero. They seem to pity the lady; it seems, her affections have their full bent. Love me! why, it must be requited. I hear how I am censured: they say, I will bear myself proudly, if I perceive the love come from her; they say, too, that she will rather die than give any sign of affection.—I did never think to marry:—I must not seem proud:—Happy are they that hear their detractions, and can put them to mending. They say, the lady is fair; 'tis a truth, I can bear them witness: and virtuous;—'tis so, I cannot prove it; and wise, but for loving me:—By my troth, it is no addition to her wit;—nor no great argument of her folly, for I will be horribly in love with her.—I may chance have some odd quirks and remnants of wit

broken on me, because I have railed so long against marriage:—But doth not the appetite alter? A man loves the meat in his youth, that he cannot endure in his age: Shall quips, and sentences, and these paper bullets of the brain, awe a man from the career of his humour? No: the world must be peopled. When I said, I would die a bachelor, I did not think I should live till I were married.—Here comes Beatrice: By this day, she's a fair lady: I do spy some marks of love in her.

*Enter BEATRICE.*

*Beat.* Against my will, I am sent to bid you come in to dinner.

*Bene.* Fair Beatrice, I thank you for your pains.

*Beat.* I took no more pains for those thanks, than you take pains to thank me; if it had been painful, I would not have come.

*Bene.* You take pleasure in the message?

*Beat.* Yea, just so much as you may take upon a knife's point, and choke a daw withal: You have no stomach, signior; fare you well.

[*Exit.*]

*Bene.* Ha! *Against my will I am sent to bid you come to dinner*—there's a double meaning in that. *I took no more pains for those thanks, than you took pains to thank me*—that's as much as to say, Any pains that I take for you is as easy as thanks:—If I do not take pity of her, I am a villain; if I do not love her, I am a Jew: I will go get her picture.

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. Leonato's Garden.

*Enter HERO, MARGARET, and URSULA.*

*Hero.* Good Margaret, run thee into the parlour; There shalt thou find my cousin Beatrice [lour; Proposing with the Prince and Claudio: Whisper her ear, and tell her, I and Ursula Walk in the orchard, and our whole discourse Is all of her; say, that thou overheard'st us; And bid her steal into the pleached bower, Where honey-suckles, ripen'd by the sun, Forbid the sun to enter;—like favourites, Made proud by princes, that advance their pride Against that power that bred it:—there will she hide her,

To listen our propose: This is thy office, Bear thee well in it, and leave us alone.

*Marg.* I'll make her come, I warrant you, presently. [*Exit.*]

*Hero.* Now, Ursula, when Beatrice doth come, As we do trace this alley up and down, Our talk must only be of Benedick: When I do name him, let it be thy part To praise him more than ever man did merit: My talk to thee must be, how Benedick Is sick in love with Beatrice: Of this matter Is little Cupid's crafty arrow made, That only wounds by hearsay. Now begin;

*Enter BEATRICE, behind.*

For look where Beatrice, like a lapwing, runs Close by the ground, to hear our conference.

*Urs.* The pleasant'st angling is to see the fish Cut with her golden oars the silver stream, And greedily devour the treacherous bait: So angle we for Beatrice; who even now Is couched in the woodbine coverture:

Fear you not my part of the dialogue. [nothing]  
*Hero.* Then go we near her, that her ear lose Of the false sweet bait that we lay for it.—

[*They advance to the bower.*]

No, truly, Ursula, she is too disdainful; I know her spirits are as coy and wild As haggards of the rock†.

*Urs.* But are you sure, That Benedick loves Beatrice so entirely?

*Hero.* So says the prince, and my new-trothed lord. [madam?]

*Urs.* And did they bid you tell her of it,  
*Hero.* They did entreat me to acquaint her of it:

But I persuaded them, if they lov'd Benedick, To wish him wrestle with affection, And never to let Beatrice know of it. [man]

*Urs.* Why did you so? Doth not the gentle-Deserve as full, as fortunate a bed, As ever Beatrice shall couch upon?

\* Seriously carried on.

† Discoursing.

‡ A species of hawks.



*Hero.* O God of love! I know, he doth de-  
As much as may be yielded to a man: [serve  
But nature never fram'd a woman's heart  
Of prouder stuff than that of Beatrice:  
Disdain and scorn ride sparkling in her eyes,  
Misprising\* what they look on; and her wit  
Values itself so highly, that to her  
All matter else seems weak: she cannot love,  
Nor take no shape nor project of affection,  
She is so self-endear'd.

*Urs.* Sure, I think so;  
And therefore, certainly, it were not good  
She knew his love, lest she make sport at it.

*Hero.* Why you speak truth: I never yet  
saw man, [tur'd,

How wise, how noble, young, how rarely fea-  
But she would spell him backward: if fair-faced,  
She'd swear, the gentleman should be her sister;  
If black, why, nature, drawing of an antic,  
Made a foul blot: if tall, a lance ill-headed;  
If low, an agate very vilely cut:

If speaking, why, a vane blown with all winds:  
If silent, why a block moved with none.  
So turns she every man the wrong side out;  
And never gives to truth and virtue, that  
Which simpleness and merit purchaseth.

*Urs.* Sure, sure, such carping is not com-  
mendable. [fashions,

*Hero.* No: not to be so odd, and from all  
As Beatrice is, cannot be commendable:  
But who dare tell her so? If I should speak,  
She'd mock me into air; O, she would laugh me  
Out of myself, press me to death with wit.  
Therefore let Benedick, like cover'd fire,  
Consume away in sighs, waste inwardly:

It were a better death than die with mocks;  
Which is as bad as die with tickling. [say.

*Urs.* Yet tell her of it; hear what she will

*Hero.* No; rather I will go to Benedick,  
And counsel him to fight against his passion:  
And, truly, I'll devise some honest slanders  
To stain my cousin with: One doth not know,  
How much an ill word may poison liking.

*Urs.* O, do not do your cousin such a wrong,  
She cannot be so much without true judgment,  
(Having so swift† and excellent a wit,  
As she is priz'd to have,) as to refuse  
So rare a gentleman as signior Benedick.

*Hero.* He is the only man of Italy,  
Always excepted my dear Claudio. [madam,

*Urs.* I pray you, be not angry with me,  
Speaking my fancy; signior Benedick,  
For shape, for bearing, argument‡, and valour,  
Goes foremost in report through Italy. [name.

*Hero.* Indeed, he hath an excellent good

*Urs.* His excellencedid earn it, ere he had it.  
When are you married, madam? [go in;

*Hero.* Why, every day;—to-morrow: Come,  
I'll show thee some attires; and have thy coun-  
Which is the best to furnish me to-morrow. [sel.

*Urs.* She's lim'd§ I warrant you; we have  
caught her, madam. [haps:

*Hero.* If it prove so, then loving goes by  
Some Cupid kills with arrows, some with traps.

[*Exeunt HERO and URSULA.*

*BEATRICE advances.*

*Beat.* What fire is in mine ears? Can this  
be true? [much?

Stand I condemn'd for pride and scorn so  
Contempt, farewell! and maiden pride, adieu!

No glory lives behind the back of such.

And, Benedick, love on, I will requite thee;  
Taming my wild heart to thy loving hand;

If thou dost love, my kindness shall incite thee  
To bind our loves up in a holy band:

For others say, thou dost deserve; and I  
Believe it better than reportingly. [*Exit.*

SCENE II. *A Room in Leonato's House.*

*Enter Don PEDRO, CLAUDIO, BENEDICK  
and LEONATO.*

*D. Pedro.* I do but stay till your marriage  
be consummate, and then I go toward Arragon.

*Claud.* I'll bring you thither, my lord, if  
you'll vouchsafe me.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, that would be as great a  
soil in the new gloss of your marriage, as to  
show a child his new coat, and forbid him to  
wear it. I will only be bold with Benedick  
for his company; for, from the crown of his  
head to the sole of his foot, he is all mirth;  
he hath twice or thrice cut Cupid's bow-string,  
and the little hangman dare not shoot at him:  
he hath a heart as sound as a bell, and his  
tongue is the clapper; for what his heart  
thinks, his tongue speaks.

*Bene.* Gallants, I am not as I have been.

*Leon.* So say I; methinks, you are sadder.

*Claud.* I hope, he be in love.

*D. Pedro.* Hang him, truant; there's no  
true drop of blood in him, to be truly touch'd  
with love: if he be sad, he wants money.

*Bene.* I have the tooth-ach.

*D. Pedro.* Draw it.

*Bene.* Hang it!

*Claud.* You must hang it first, and draw  
it afterwards.

*D. Pedro.* What? sigh for the tooth-ach?

*Leon.* Where is but a humour, or a worm?

*Bene.* Well, every one can master a grief  
but he that has it.

*Claud.* Yet say I, he is in love.

*D. Pedro.* There is no appearance of fancy  
in him, unless it be a fancy that he hath to  
strange disguises; as, to be a Dutchman to-  
day; a Frenchman to-morrow; or in the  
shape of two countries at once, as a German  
from the waist downward, all slops||; and a  
Spaniard from the hip upward, no doubtlet:  
Unless he have a fancy to this foolery, as it  
appears he hath, he is no fool for fancy, as  
you would have it appear he is.

*Claud.* If he be not in love with some woman  
there is no believing old signs: he brushes his  
hat o' mornings; What should that bode?

*D. Pedro.* Hath any man seen him at the  
barber's?

*Claud.* No, but the barber's man hath been  
seen with him; and the old ornament of his  
cheek hath already stuffed tennis-balls

\* Undervaluing. † Ready. ‡ Conversation. § Insuared with || Undressed.

|| Large loose breeches.

*Leon.* Indeed, he looks younger than he did, by the loss of a beard.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, he rubs himself with civet: Can you smell him out by that?

*Claud.* That's as much as to say, The sweet youth's in love.

*D. Pedro.* The greatest note of it is his melancholy.

*Claud.* And when was he wont to wash his face?

*D. Pedro.* Yea, or to paint himself? for the which, I hear what they say of him.

*Claud.* Nay, but his jesting spirit; which is now crept into a lute-string, and now governed by stops.

*D. Pedro.* Indeed, that tells a heavy tale for him: Conclude, conclude, he is in love.

*Claud.* Nay, but I know who loves him.

*D. Pedro.* That would I know too; I warrant, one that knows him not.

*Claud.* Yes, and his ill conditions; and, in despite of all, dies for him.

*D. Pedro.* She shall be buried with her face upwards.

*Bene.* Yet is this no charm for the tooth-ach.—Old signior, walk aside with me: I have studied eight or nine wise words to speak to you, which these hobby-horses must not hear.

[*Exeunt BENEDICK and LEONATO.*]

*D. Pedro.* For my life, to break with him about Beatrice.

*Claud.* 'Tis even so: Hero and Margaret have by this played their parts with Beatrice; and then the two bears will not bite one another, when they meet.

*Enter Don JOHN.*

*D. John.* My lord and brother, God save you.

*D. Pedro.* Good den, brother.

*D. John.* If your leisure served, I would speak with you.

*D. Pedro.* In private?

*D. John.* If it please you;—yet count Claudio may hear; for what I would speak of, concerns him.

*D. Pedro.* What's the matter?

*D. John.* Means your lordship to be married to-morrow? [To CLAUDIO.]

*D. Pedro.* You know, he does.

*D. John.* I know not that, when he knows what I know.

*Claud.* If there be any impediment, I pray you, discover it.

*D. John.* You may think, I love you not; let that appear hereafter, and aim better at me by that I now will manifest: For my brother, I think, he holds you well; and in dearthness of heart hath help to effect your ensuing marriage: surely, suit ill spent, and labour ill bestowed!

*D. Pedro.* Why, what's the matter?

*D. John.* I came hither to tell you; and, circumstances shortened, (for she hath been too long a talking of,) the lady is disloyal.

*Claud.* Who? Hero?

*D. John.* Even she; Leonato's Hero, your Hero, every man's Hero.

*Claud.* Disloyal?

*D. John.* The word is too good to paint out her wickedness; I could say, she were worse; think you of a worse title, and I will fit her to it. Wonder not till further warrant: go but with me to-night, you shall see her chamber-window entered; even the night before her wedding-day: if you love her then, to-morrow wed her; but it would better fit your honour to change your mind.

*Claud.* May this be so?

*D. Pedro.* I will not think it.

*D. John.* If you dare not trust that you see, confess not that you know: if you will follow me, I will show you enough; and when you have seen more, and heard more, proceed accordingly.

*Claud.* If I see any thing to-night why I should not marry her to-morrow; in the congregation, where I should wed, there will I shame her.

*D. Pedro.* And, as I wooed for thee to obtain her, I will join with thee to disgrace her.

*D. John.* I will disparage her no farther, till you are my witnesses: bear it coldly but till midnight, and let the issue show itself.

*D. Pedro.* O day untowardly turned!

*Claud.* O mischief strangely thwarting!

*D. John.* O plague right well prevented! So will you say, when you have seen the sequel. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. A Street.

*Enter DOGBERRY and VERGES, with the Watch.*

*Dogb.* Are you good men and true?

*Verg.* Yea, or else it were pity but they should suffer salvation, body and soul.

*Dogb.* Nay, that were a punishment too good for them, if they should have any alligiance in them, being chosen for the prince's watch.

*Verg.* Well, give them their charge, neighbour Dogberry.

*Dogb.* First, who think you the most desartless man to be constable?

*1 Watch.* Hugh Oatcake, sir, or George Seacoal; for they can write and read.

*Dogb.* Come hither, neighbour Seacoal.—God hath blessed you with a good name: to be a well-favoured man is the gift of fortune; but to write and read comes by nature.

*2 Watch.* Both which, master constable,—

*Dogb.* You have; I knew it would be your answer. Well, for your favour, sir, why, give God thanks, and make no boast of it; and for your writing and reading, let that appear when there is no need of such vanity. You are thought here to be the most senseless and fit man for the constable of the watch; therefore bear you the lantern: This is your charge; You shall comprehend all vagrom men; you are to bid any man stand, in the prince's name

*2 Watch.* How if he will not stand?

*Dogb.* Why then, take no note of him, but let him go; and presently call the rest of the watch together, and thank God you are rid of a knave.

*Verg.* If he will not stand when he is bid-den, he is none of the prince's subjects.

*Dogb.* True, and they are to meddle with none but the prince's subjects:—You shall also make no noise in the streets; for, for the watch to babble and talk, is most tolerable and not to be endured.

*2 Watch.* We will rather sleep than talk; we know what belongs to a watch.

*Dogb.* Why, you speak like an ancient and most quiet watchman; for I cannot see how sleeping should offend: only, have a care that your bills\* be not stolen:—Well, you are to call at all the ale-houses, and bid those that are drunk get them to bed.

*2 Watch.* How if they will not?

*Dogb.* Why then, let them alone till they are sober; if they make you not then the better answer, you may say, they are not the men you took them for.

*2 Watch.* Wei!, sir.

*Dogb.* If you meet a thief, you may suspect him, by virtue of your office, to be no true man: and, for such kind of men, the less you meddle or make with them, why, the more is for your honesty.

*2 Watch.* If we know him to be a thief, shall we not lay hands on him?

*Dogb.* Truly, by your office, you may; but, I think, they that touch pitch will be defiled: the most peaceable way for you, if you do take a thief, is, to let him show himself what he is, and steal out of your company.

*Verg.* You have been always called a merciful man, partner.

*Dogb.* Truly, I would not hang a dog by my will; much more a man who hath any honesty in him.

*Verg.* If you hear a child cry in the night, you must call to the nurse, and bid her still it.

*2 Watch.* How if the nurse be asleep, and will not hear us.

*Dogb.* Why then, depart in peace, and let the child wake her with crying: for the ewe that will not hear her lamb when it baes, will never answer a calf when he bleats.

*Verg.* 'Tis very true.

*Dogb.* This is the end of the charge. You, constable, are to present the prince's own person; if you meet the prince in the night, you may stay him.

*Verg.* Nay, by'r lady, that, I think, he cannot.

*Dogb.* Five shillings to one on't, with any man that knows the statutes, he may stay him: marry, not without the prince be willing: for, indeed, the watch ought to offend no man; and it is an offence to stay a man against his will.

*Verg.* By'r lady, I think, it be so.

*Dogb.* Ha, ha, ha! Well, masters, good night: an there be any matter of weight chances, call up me: keep your fellows' counsels and your own, and good night.—Come, neighbour.

*2 Watch.* Well, masters, we hear our charge:

let us go sit here upon the church-bench till two, and then all to-bed.

*Dogb.* One word more, honest neighbours: I pray you, watch about signior Leonato's door; for the wedding being there to-morrow, there is a great coil to-night: Adieu, be vigilant, I beseech you.

[*Exeunt DOGBERRY and VERGES.*]

*Enter BORACHIO and CONRADE.*

*Bora.* What! Conrade,—

*Watch.* Peace, stir not. [Aside.]

*Bora.* Conrade, I say!

*Con.* Here, man, I am at thy elbow.

*Bora.* Mass, and my elbow itched; I thought, there would a scab follow.

*Con.* I will owe thee an answer for that; and now forward with thy tale.

*Bora.* Stand thee close then under this pent-house, for it drizzles rain; and I will, like a true drunkard, utter all to thee.

*Watch.* [Aside.] Some treason, masters; yet stand close.

*Bora.* Therefore know, I have earned of Don John a thousand ducats.

*Con.* Is it possible that any villany should be so dear?

*Bora.* Thou shouldst rather ask, if it were possible any villany should be so rich; for when rich villains have need of poor ones, poor ones may make what price they will.

*Con.* I wonder at it.

*Bora.* That shows, thou art unconfirmed†: Thou knowest, that the fashion of a doublet, or a hat, or a cloak, is nothing to a man.

*Con.* Yes, it is apparel.

*Bora.* I mean, the fashion.

*Con.* Yes, the fashion is the fashion.

*Bora.* Tush! I may as well say, the fool's the fool. But see'st thou not what a deformed thief this fashion is?

*Watch.* I know that Deformed; he has been a vile thief this seven year; he goes up and down like a gentleman: I remember his name.

*Bora.* Didst thou not hear somebody?

*Con.* No; 'twas the vane on the house.

*Bora.* Seest thou not, I say, what a deformed thief this fashion is? how giddily he turns about all the hot bloods, between fourteen and five and thirty? sometime, fashioning them like Pharaoh's soldiers in the reechy‡ paint ing; sometime, like god Bel's priests in the old church window; sometime, like the shaven Hercules in the smirched§ worm-eaten tapestry, where his cod-piece seems as massy as his club?

*Con.* All this I see; and see, that the fashion wears out more apparel than the man: But art not thou thyself giddy with the fashion too, that thou hast shifted out of thy tale into telling me of the fashion?

*Bora.* Not so neither: but know, that I have to-night wooed Margaret, the lady Hero's gentlewoman, by the name of Hero; she leans me out at her mistress' chamber-window, bid,

\* Weapons of the watchmen.

‡ Smoked.

† Unpractised in the ways of the world.

§ Soiled.



me a thousand times good night,—I tell this tale vilely:—I should first tell thee, how the Prince, Claudio, and my master, planted, and placed, and possessed by my master, Don John, saw afar off in the orchard this amiable encounter.

*Con.* And thought they, Margaret was Hero?

*Bora.* Two of them did, the Prince and Claudio; but the devil my master knew she was Margaret; and partly by his oaths, which first possessed them, partly by the dark night, which did deceive them, but chiefly by my villany, which did confirm any slander that Don John had made, away went Claudio enraged; swore he would meet her as he was appointed, next morning at the temple, and there, before the whole congregation, shame her with what he saw over night, and send her home again without a husband.

1 *Watch.* We charge you in the prince's name, stand.

2 *Watch.* Call up the right master constable: We have here recovered the most dangerous piece of lechery that ever was known in the commonwealth.

1 *Watch.* And one Deformed is one of them; I know him, he wears a lock.

*Con.* Masters, masters.

2 *Watch.* You'll be inade bring Deformed forth, I warrant you.

*Con.* Masters,—

1 *Watch.* Never speak: we charge you, let us obey you to go with us.

*Bora.* We are like to prove a goodly commodity, being taken up of these men's bills.

*Con.* A commodity in question, I warrant you. Come, we'll obey you. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV. A Room in Leonato's House.

*Enter HERO, MARGARET, and URSULA.*

*Hero.* Good Ursula, wake my cousin Beatrice, and desire her to rise.

*Urs.* I will lady.

*Hero.* And bid her come hither.

*Urs.* Well. [*Exit URSULA.*]

*Marg.* Troth, I think, your other rabato\* were better.

*Hero.* No, pray thee, good Meg, I'll wear this.

*Marg.* By my troth, it's not so good; and I warrant, your cousin will say so.

*Hero.* My cousin's a fool, and thou art another; I'll wear none but this.

*Marg.* I like the new tire† within excellently, if the hair were a thought browner; and your gown's a most rare fashion, i'faith. I saw the duchess of Milan's gown, that they praise so.

*Hero.* O, that exceeds, they say.

*Marg.* By my troth it's but a night gown in respect of yours: Cloth of gold, and cuts, and laced with silver; set with pearls, down sleeves, side-sleeves‡, and skirts round, underborne with a bluish tinsel: but for a fine, quaint, graceful, and excellent fashion, yours is worth ten on't.

*Hero.* God give me joy to wear it, for my heart is exceeding heavy!

*Marg.* 'Twill be heavier soon, by the weight of a man.

*Hero.* Eye upon thee! art not ashamed?

*Marg.* Of what, lady? of speaking honourably? Is not marriage honourable in a beggar? Is not your lord honourable without marriage? I think, you would have me say, saving your reverence,—a husband: an bad thinking do not wrest true speaking, I'll offend nobody: Is there any harm in—the heavier for a husband? None, I think, an it be the right husband, and the right wife; otherwise 'tis light, and not heavy: Ask my lady Beatrice else, here she comes.

*Enter BEATRICE.*

*Hero.* Good morrow, coz.

*Beat.* Good morrow, sweet Hero.

*Hero.* Why, how now! do you speak in the sick tune?

*Beat.* I am out of all other tune, methinks.

*Marg.* Clap us into—*Light o' love*; that goes without burden; do you sing it, and I'll dance it.

*Beat.* Yea, *Light o' love*, with your heels!—then if your husband have stables enough, you'll see he shall lack no barns.

*Marg.* O illegitimate construction! I scorn that with my heels.

*Beat.* 'Tis almost five o'clock, cousin; 'tis time you were ready. By my troth I am exceeding ill:—hey ho!

*Marg.* For a hawk, a horse, or a husband?

*Beat.* For the letter that begins them all, H's.

*Marg.* Well, an you be not turned Turk, there's no more sailing by the star.

*Beat.* What means the fool, trow?

*Marg.* Nothing I; but God send every one their heart's desire!

*Hero.* These gloves the count sent me, they are an excellent perfume.

*Beat.* I am stuffed cousin, I cannot smell.

*Marg.* A maid, and stuffed! there's goodly catching of cold.

*Beat.* O, God help me! God help me! how long have you profess'd apprehension?

*Marg.* Ever since you left it: doth not my wit become me rarely?

*Beat.* It is not seen enough, you should wear it in your cap.—By my troth, I am sick.

*Marg.* Get you some of this distilled Carduus Benedictus, and lay it to your heart; it is the only thing for a qualm.

*Hero.* There thou prick'st her with a thistle.

*Beat.* Benedictus! why Benedictus? you have some moral|| in this Benedictus.

*Marg.* Moral? no, by my troth, I have no moral meaning; I meant, plain holy-thistle. You may think, perchance, that I think you are in love: nay, by'r lady, I am not such a fool to think what I list; nor I list not to think what I can; nor, indeed, I cannot think, if I would think my heart out of thinking, that you are in love, or that you will be in love, or that you can be in love: yet Bene-

\* A kind of ruff.

† Head-dress.

‡ Long-sleeves.

i. e., for an *ache* or pain.

|| Hidden meaning

dick was such another, and now is he become a man: he swore he would never marry; and yet now, in despite of his heart, he eats his meat without grudging: and how you may be converted, I know not; but methinks, you look with your eyes as other women do.

*Beat.* What pace is this that thy tongue keeps?

*Marg.* Not a false gallop.

*Re-enter URSULA.*

*Urs.* Madam, withdraw; the prince, the count, signior Benedick, Don John, and all the gallants of the town, are come to fetch you to church.

*Hero.* Help to dress me, good coz, good Meg, good Ursula. — [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE V.

*Another Room in Leonato's House.*

*Enter LEONATO, with DOGBERRY and VERGES.*

*Leon.* What would you with me, honest neighbour?

*Dogb.* Marry, sir, I would have some confidence with you, that decerns you nearly.

*Leon.* Brief, I pray you; for you see, 'tis a busy time with me.

*Dogb.* Marry, this it is, sir.

*Verg.* Yes, in truth it is, sir.

*Leon.* What is it, my good friends?

*Dogb.* Goodman Verges, sir, speaks a little off the matter: an old man, sir, and his wits are not so blunt, as, God help, I would desire they were; but, in faith, honest, as the skin between his brows.

*Verg.* Yes, I thank God, I am as honest as any man living, that is an old man, and no honester than I.

*Dogb.* Comparisons are odorous: *palabras*, neighbour Verges.

*Leon.* Neighbours, you are tedious.

*Dogb.* It pleases your worship to say so, but we are the poor duke's officers; but, truly, for mine own part, if I were as tedious as a king, I could find in my heart to bestow it all of your worship.

*Leon.* All thy tediousness on me! ha!

*Dogb.* Yea, and 'twere a thousand times

more than 'tis; for I hear as good exclamation on your worship, as of any man in the city; and though I be but a poor man, I am glad to hear it.

*Verg.* And so am I.

*Leon.* I would fain know what you have to say.

*Verg.* Marry, sir, our watch to-night, excepting your worship's presence, have ta'en a couple of as arrant knaves as any in Messina.

*Dogb.* A good old man, sir; he will be talking; as they say, When the age is in, the wit is out; God help us! it is a world to see \*!— Well said, i'faith, neighbour Verges:—well, God's a good man; an two men ride of a horse, one must ride behind:—An honest soul, i'faith, sir: by my troth he is, as ever broke bread: but, God is to be worshipped: All men are not alike; alas, good neighbour!

*Leon.* Indeed, neighbour, he comes too short of you.

*Dogb.* Gifts, that God gives.

*Leon.* I must leave you.

*Dogb.* One word, sir: our watch, sir, have, indeed, comprehended two aspicious persons, and we would have them this morning examined before your worship.

*Leon.* Take their examination yourself, and bring it me; I am now in great haste, as it may appear unto you.

*Dogb.* It shall be suffigance.

*Leon.* Drink some wine ere you go: fare you well.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, they stay for you to give your daughter to her husband.

*Leon.* I will wait upon them; I am ready.

[*Exeunt LEONATO and Messenger.*]

*Dogb.* Go, good partner, go, get you to Francis Seacoal, bid him bring his pen and inkhorn to the gaol; we are now to examine these men.

*Verg.* And we must do it wisely.

*Dogb.* We will spare for no wit, I warrant you; here's that [*Touching his forehead.*] shall drive some of them to a *non com*: only get the learned writer to set down our excommunication, and meet me at the gaol. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. *The Inside of a Church.*

*Enter Don PEDRO, Don JOHN, LEONATO, Friar, CLAUDIO, BENEDICK, HERO, and BEATRICE, &c.*

*Leon.* Come, friar Francis, be brief; only to the plain form of marriage, and you shall recount their particular duties afterwards.

*Friar.* You come hither, my lord, to marry his lady?

*Claud.* No.

*Leon.* To be married to her, friar; you come to marry her.

*Friar.* Lady, you come hither to be married to this count?

*Hero.* I do.

*Friar.* If either of you know any inward impediment why you should not be conjoined, I charge you, on your souls, to utter it.

*Claud.* Know you any, Hero?

*Hero.* None, my lord.

*Friar.* Know you any, count?

*Leon.* I dare make his answer, none.

*Claud.* O, what men dare do! what men may do! what men daily do! not knowing what they do!

*Bene.* How now! Interjections? Why, then some be of laughing, as, ha! ha! he!

*Claud.* Stand thee by, friar:—Father, by your leave!

Will you with free and unconstrained soul  
Give me this maid, your daughter?

*Leon.* As freely, son, as God did give her me.

*Claud.* And what have I to give you back, May counterpoise this rich and precious gift.

*D. Pedro.* Nothing, unless you render her again.

*Claud.* Sweet prince, you learn me noble There, Leonato, take her back again;  
Give not this rotten orange to your friend;  
She's but the sign and semblance of her honour:—

Behold, how like a maid she blushes here:  
what authority and show of truth  
an cunning sin cover itself withal!

Comes not that blood, as modest evidence,  
To witness simple virtue? Would you not swear,

All you that see her, that she were a maid,  
By these exterior shows? But she is none:  
She knows the heat of a luxurious \* bed:  
Her blush is guiltiness, not modesty.

*Leon.* What do you mean, my lord?

*Claud.* Not to be married.  
Not knit my soul to an approved wanton.

*Leon.* Dear my lord, if you, in your own proof

Have vanquish'd the resistance of her youth,  
And made defeat of her virginity,—

*Claud.* I know what you would say; If I have known her,

You'll say, she did embrace me as a husband,  
And so extenuate the 'forehand sin:

No, Leonato,  
I never tempted her with word too large †;  
But, as a brother to his sister, show'd

Bashful sincerity, and comely love.

*Hero.* And seem'd I ever otherwise to you?

*Claud.* Out on thy seeming! I will write against it:

You seem to me as Dian in her orb;  
As chaste as is the bud ere it be blown;

But you are more intemperate in your blood  
Than Venus, or those pamp'ring animals

That rage in savage sensuality. [so wide ‡?

*Hero.* Is my lord well, that he doth speak

*Leon.* Sweet prince, why speak not you?

*D. Pedro.* What should I speak?  
Is and dishonour'd, that have gone about

To link my dear friend to a common stale.

*Leon.* Are these things spoken? or do I but dream?

*D. John.* Sir, they are spoken, and these

*Bene.* This looks not like a nuptial.

*Hero.* True, O God!

*Claud.* Leonato, stand I here?

Is this the prince? Is this the prince's brother?  
Is this face Hero's? Are our eyes our own?

*Leon.* All this is so; But what of this, my lord?

*Claud.* Let me but move one question to And, by that fatherly and kindly power

That you have in her, bid her answer truly.

*Leon.* I charge thee do so, as thou art my child.

*Hero.* O God defend me! how am I be- What kind of catechizing call you this?

*Claud.* To make you answer truly to your name.

*Hero.* Is it not Hero? Who can blot that With any just reproach?

*Claud.* Marry, that can Hero; Hero itself can blot out Hero's virtue.

What man was he talk'd with you yester- night

Out at your window, betwixt twelve and Now, if you are a maid, answer to this.

*Hero.* I talk'd with no man at that hour, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Why, then are you no maiden.— I am sorry you must hear; Upon mine honour,

Myself, my brother, and this grieved count, Did see her, hear her, at that hour last night,

Talk with a ruffian at her chamber-window; Who hath, indeed, most like a liberal § villain,

Confess'd the vile encounters they have had A thousand times in secret.

*D. John.* Fye, fye! they are Not to be nam'd, my lord, not to be spoke of;

There is not chastity enough in language. Without offence, to utter them: Thus, pretty

lady, I am sorry for thy much misgovernment.

*Claud.* O Hero! what a Hero hadst thou been,

If half thy outward graces had been placed About thy thoughts, and counsels of thy heart!

But, fare thee well, most foul, most fair! fare- well,

Thou pure impiety, and impious purity! For thee I'll lock up all the gates of love,

And on my eye-lids shall conjecture hang, To turn all beauty into thoughts of harm,

And never shall it more be gracious ||.

*Leon.* Hath no man's dagger here a point for me?

*Beat.* Why, how now, cousin? wherefore sink you down?

*D. John.* Come, let us go: these things come thus to light,

Smother her spirits up.

[*Exeunt Don PEDRO, Don JOE, and CLAUDIO.*]

*Bene.* How doth the lady?

*Beat.* Dead, I think;—help, uncle;— Hero! why, Hero!—Uncle!—Signior Bene- dick!—friar!

*Leon.* O fate, take not away thy heavy hand!

Death is the fairest cover for her shame,

\* Lascivious.

† Licentious.

‡ Remote from the business in hand.

§ Too free on tongue.

|| Attractive.



That may be wish'd for.

*Beat.* How now, cousin Hero?

*Friar.* Have comfort, lady.

*Leon.* Dost thou look up?

*Friar.* Yea; Wherefore should she not?

*Leon.* Wherefore? Why, doth not every earthly thing

Cry shame upon her? Could she here deny

The story that is printed in her blood?—

Do not live, Hero: do not ope thine eyes:

For did I think thou wouldst not quickly die,

I thought I thy spirits were stronger than thy shames,

Myself would, on the rearward of reproaches,

Strike at thy life. Grief'd I, I had but one?

Chid I for that at frugal nature's frame\*?

O, one too much by thee! Why had I one?

Why ever wast thou lovely in my eyes?

Why had I not, with charitable hand,

Took up a beggar's issue at my gates;

Who smirched† thus, and mired with infamy,

I might have said, *No part of it is mine,*

*This shame derives itself from unknown loins?* [prais'd,

But mine, and mine I lov'd, and mine I

And mine that I was† proud on; mine so much,

That I myself was to myself not mine,

Valuing of her; why, she—O, she is fallen

Into a pit of ink! that the wide sea

Hath drops too few to wash her clean again;

And salt too little, which may season give

To her foul tainted flesh!

*Bene.* Sir, sir, be patient:

For my part, I am so attir'd in wonder,

I know not what to say.

*Beat.* O, on my soul, my cousin is belied!

*Bene.* Lady, were you her bedfellow last night? [night,

*Beat.* No, truly, not: although, until last I have this twelvemonth been her bedfellow.

*Leon.* Confirm'd, confirm'd! O, that is stronger made,

Which was before barr'd up with ribs of iron!

Would the two princes lie? and Claudio lie?

Who lov'd her so, that, speaking of her foulness, [die,

Wash'd it with tears? Hence from her; let her

*Friar.* Hear me a little;

For I have only been silent so long,

And given way unto this course of fortune,

By noting of the lady: I have mark'd

A thousand blushing apparitions start

Into her face; a thousand innocent shames

In angel whiteness bear away those blushes;

And in her eye there hath appear'd a fire,

To burn the errors that these princes hold

Against her maiden truth:—Call me a fool;

Trust not my reading, nor my observations,

Which with experimental seal doth warrant

The tenour of my book; trust not my age,

My reverence, calling, nor divinity,

If this sweet lady lie not guiltless here

Under some biting error.

*Leon.* Friar, it cannot be:

Thou seest, that all the grace that she hath left,

Is, that she will not add to her damnation

A sin of perjury; she not denies it:

Why seek'st thou then to cover with excuse

That which appears in proper nakedness?

*Friar.* Lady, what man is he you are accus'd off? [know none:

*Hero.* They know, that do accuse me; I

If I know more of any man alive, [rant,

Than that which maiden modesty doth war-

Let all my sins lack mercy!—O my father,

Prove you that any man with me convers'd

At hours unmeet, or that I yesternight [ture,

Maintain'd the change of words with any crea-

Refuse me, hate me, torture me to death.

*Friar.* There is some strange misprision‡ in the princes. [honour;

*Bene.* Two of them have the very bent of

And if their wisdoms be mis'd in this,

The practice of it lives in John the bastard,

Whose spirits toil in frame of villanies.

*Leon.* I know not; If they speak but truth of her, [honour,

These hands shall tear her; if they wrong her

The proudest of them shall well hear of it.

Time hath not yet so dried this blood of mine,

Nor age so eat up my invention,

Nor fortune made such havock of my means,

Nor my bad life left me so much of friends,

But they shall find, awak'd in such a kind,

Both strength of limb, and policy of mind,

Ability in means, and choice of friends,

To quit me of them thoroughly.

*Friar.* Pause a while,

And let my counsel sway you in this case.

Your daughter here the princes left for dead;

Let her awhile be secretly kept in,

And publish it, that she is dead indeed:

Maintain a mourning ostentation;

And on your family's old monument

Hang mournful epitaphs, and do all rites

That appertain unto a burial.

*Leon.* What shall become of this? What will this do?

*Friar.* Marry, this, well carried, shall on her behalf [good:

Change slander to remorse; that is some

But not for that, dream I on this strange

course,

But on this travail look for greater birth.

She dying, as it must be so maintain'd,

Upon the instant that she was accus'd,

Shall be lamented, pitied and excus'd,

Of every hearer: For it so falls out,

That what we have we prize not to the worth

Whiles§ we enjoy it; but being lack'd and

lost,

Why, then we rack ¶ the value; then we find

The virtue, that possession would not show

us [Claudio:

Whiles it was ours:—So will it fare with

When he shall hear she died upon ¶ his word,

The idea of her life shall sweetly creep

Into his study of imagination;

\* Disposition of things.

† Sullied.

‡ Misconception.

§ While.

¶ Over-act.

¶ By.

And every lovely organ of her life  
Shall come apparell'd in more precious habit,  
More moving-delicate, and full of life,  
Into the eye and prospect of his soul,  
Than when she liv'd indeed:—then shall he  
mourn,

(If ever love had interest in his liver,)  
And wish he had not so accused her;  
No, though he thought his accusation true.  
Let this be so, and doubt not but success  
Will fashion the event in better shape  
Than I can lay it down in likelihood.  
But if all aim but this be levell'd false,  
The supposition of the lady's death  
Will quench the wonder of her infamy:  
And, if it sort not well, you may conceal her  
(As best befits her wounded reputation,)  
In some reclusive and religious life,  
Out of all eyes, tongues, minds, and injuries.

*Bene.* Signior Leonato, let the friar advise  
you: [love]

And though, you know, my inwardness\* and  
Is very much unto the prince and Claudio,  
Yet, by mine honour, I will deal in this  
As secretly, and justly, as your soul  
Should with your body.

*Leon.* Being that I flow in grief,  
The smallest twine may lead me.

*Friar.* 'Tis well consented; presently  
away; [cure.—

For to strange sores strangely they strain the  
Come, lady, die to live: this wedding day,  
Perhaps, is but prolong'd; have patience, and  
endure.

[*Exeunt* Friar, HERO, and LEONATO.]

*Bene.* Lady Beatrice, have you wept all  
this while?

*Beat.* Yea, and I will weep a while longer.

*Bene.* I will not desire that.

*Beat.* You have no reason, I do it freely.

*Bene.* Surely, I do believe your fair cousin  
is wrong'd.

*Beat.* Ah, how much might the man deserve  
of me, that would right her!

*Bene.* Is there any way to show such  
friendship?

*Beat.* A very even way, but no such friend.

*Bene.* May a man do it?

*Beat.* It is a man's office, but not yours.

*Bene.* I do love nothing in the world so  
well as you; Is not that strange?

*Beat.* As strange as the thing I know not:  
It were as possible for me to say, I loved no-  
thing so well as you: but believe me not;  
and yet I lie not; I confess nothing, nor I  
deny nothing:—I am sorry for my cousin.

*Bene.* By my sword, Beatrice, thou lovest me.

*Beat.* Do not swear by it, and eat it.

*Bene.* I will swear by it, that you love me;  
and I will make him eat it, that says, I love  
not you.

*Beat.* Will you not eat your word?

*Bene.* With no sance that can be devised to  
it: I protest, I love thee.

*Beat.* Why then, God forgive me!

*Bene.* What offence, sweet Beatrice?

*Beat.* You have staid me in a happy hour;  
I was about to protest, I loved you.

*Bene.* And do it with all thy heart.

*Beat.* I love you with so much of my  
heart, that none is left to protest.

*Bene.* Come, bid me do any thing for thee

*Beat.* Kill Claudio.

*Bene.* Ha! not for the wide world.

*Beat.* You kill me to deny it: Farewell.

*Bene.* Tarry, sweet Beatrice.

*Beat.* I am gone, though I am here;—  
There is no love in you:—Nay, I pray you,  
let me go.

*Bene.* Beatrice,—

*Beat.* In faith, I will go.

*Bene.* We'll be friends first.

*Beat.* You dare easier be friends with me,  
than fight with mine enemy.

*Bene.* Is Claudio thine enemy?

*Beat.* Is he not approved in the height a  
villain, that hath slandered, scorned, disho-  
noured my kinswoman?—O, that I were  
a man!—What! bear her in hand† until  
they come to take hands; and then with  
public accusation, uncovered slander, unmi-  
tigated rancour,—O God, that I were a man!  
I would eat his heart in the market-place.

*Bene.* Hear me, Beatrice;—

*Beat.* Talk with a man out at a window?—  
a proper saying!

*Bene.* Nay but, Beatrice;—

*Beat.* Sweet Hero!—she is wronged, she  
is slandered, she is undone.

*Bene.* Beat—

*Beat.* Princes, and counties‡! Surely, a  
princely testimony, a goodly count-confect§;  
a sweet gallant, surely! O that I were a man  
for his sake! or that I had any friend would  
be a man for my sake! But manhood is  
melted into courtesies||, valour into compli-  
ment, and men are only turned into tongue,  
and trim ones too: he is now as valiant as  
Hercules, that only tells a lie, and swears it:—  
I cannot be a man with wishing, therefore I  
will die a woman with grieving.

*Bene.* Tarry, good Beatrice: By this hand,  
I love thee.

*Beat.* Use it for my love some other way  
than swearing by it.

*Bene.* Think you in your soul the coun-  
Claudio hath wronged Hero?

*Beat.* Yea, as sure as I have a thought, or  
a soul.

*Bene.* Enough, I am engaged, I will chal-  
lenge him; I will kiss your hand, and so leave  
you: By this hand, Claudio shall render me  
a dear account: As you hear of me, so think  
of me. Go, comfort your cousin: I must say,  
she is dead; and so, farewell. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. A Prison.

*Enter* DOGBERRY, VERGES, and Sexton in  
gowns; and the Watch, with CONRADE  
and BORACHIO.

*Dogb.* Is our whole dissembly appeared?

\* Intinacy. † Delude her with hopes. ‡ Noblemen. § A nobleman made out of sugar  
|| Ceremony.

*Verg.* O, a stool and a cushion for the sexton!

*Sexton.* Which be the malefactors?

*Dogb.* Marry, that an I and my partner.

*Verg.* Nay, that's certain; we have the exhibition to examine.

*Sexton.* But which are the offenders that are to be examined? let them come before master constable.

*Dogb.* Yea, marry, let them come before me.—What is your name, friend?

*Bora.* Borachio.

*Dogb.* Pray write down—Borachio.—Yours, sirrah?

*Con.* I am a gentleman, sir, and my name is Conrade.

*Dogb.* Write down—master gentleman Conrade.—Masters, do you serve God?

*Con.* Bora. Yea, sir, we hope.

*Dogb.* Write down—that they hope they serve God:—and write God first; for God defend but God should go before such villains!—Masters, it is proved already that you are little better than false knaves; and it will go near to be thought so shortly. How answer you for yourselves?

*Con.* Marry, sir, we say we are none.

*Dogb.* A marvellous witty fellow, I assure you; but I will go about with him.—Come you hither, sirrah; a word in your ear, sir; I say to you, it is thought you are false knaves.

*Bora.* Sir, I say to you, we are none.

*Dogb.* Well, stand aside.—Fore God, they are both in a tale: Have you writ down—that they are none?

*Sexton.* Master constable, you go not the way to examine; you must call forth the watch that are their accusers.

*Dogb.* Yea, marry, that's the effest way:—Let the watch come forth:—Masters, I charge you, in the prince's name, accuse these men.

*1 Watch.* This man said, sir, that Don John, the prince's brother, was a villain.

*Dogb.* Write down—prince John a villain:—Why this is flat perjury, to call a prince's brother—villain.

*Bora.* Master constable,—

*Dogb.* Pray thee, fellow, peace; I do not like thy look, I promise thee.

*Sexton.* What heard you him say else?

*2 Watch.* Marry, that he had received a thousand ducats of Don John, for accusing the lady Hero wrongfully.

*Dogb.* Flat burglary, as ever was committed.

*Verg.* Yea, by the mass, that it is.

*Sexton.* What else, fellow?

*1 Watch.* And that count Claudio did mean, upon his words, to disgrace Hero before the whole assembly, and not marry her.

*Dogb.* O villain! thou wilt be condemned into everlasting redemption for this.

*Sexton.* What else?

*2 Watch.* This is all.

*Sexton.* And this is more, masters, than you can deny. Prince John is this morning secretly stolen away; Hero was in this manner accused, in this very manner refused, and upon the grief of this, suddenly died.—Master constable, let these men be bound, and brought to Leonato's; I will go before, and show him their examination. [Exit.]

*Dogb.* Come, let them be opinioned.

*Verg.* Let them be in band\*.

*Con.* Off, coxcomb!

*Dogb.* God's my life! where's the sexton? let him write down—the prince's officer, coxcomb.—Come, bind them:—Thou naughty varlet!

*Con.* Away! you are an ass, you are an ass.

*Dogb.* Dost thou not suspect my place? Dost thou not suspect my years?—O that he were here to write me down—an ass!—but, masters, remember, that I am an ass; though it be not written down, yet forget not that I am an ass:—No, thou villain, thou art full of piety, as shall be proved upon thee by good witness. I am a wise fellow; and, which is more, an officer; and, which is more, a householder; and, which is more, as pretty a piece of flesh as any is in Messina; and one that knows the law, go to; and a rich fellow enough, go to; and a fellow that hath had losses; and one that hath two gowns, and every thing handsome about him:—Bring him away. O, that I had been writ down—an ass. [Exit.]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. Before Leonato's House.

*Enter LEONATO and ANTONIO.*

*Ant.* If you go on thus, you will kill yourself; And 'tis not wisdom, thus to second grief Against yourself.

*Leon.* I pray thee, cease thy counsel, Which falls into mine ear, as profitless As water in a sieve: give not me counsel; Nor let no comforter delight mine ear, But such a one whose wrongs do suit with mine. Bring me a father, that so lov'd his child, Whose joy of her is overwhelm'd like mine,

And bid him speak of patience; [mine,  
Measure his woe the length and breadth of  
And let it answer every strain for strain;  
As thus for thus, and such a grief for such,  
In every lineament, branch, shape, and form:  
If such a one will smile, and stroke his beard;  
Cry—sorrow, wag! and hem, when he should  
groan; [drunk  
Patch grief with proverbs; make misfortune  
With candle-wasters; bring him yet to me,  
And I of him will gather patience.  
But there is no such man: For, brother, mer-  
Can counsel, and speak comfort to that grief



Which they themselves not feel ; but, tasting it,  
 Their counsel turns to passion, which before,  
 Would give preceptual medicine to rage,  
 Fetter strong madness in a silken thread,  
 Charm ache with air, and agony with words :  
 No, no ; 'tis all men's office to speak patience  
 To those that wring under the load of sorrow ;  
 But no man's virtue, nor sufficiency,  
 To be so moral, when he shall endure  
 The like himself : therefore give me no counsel :  
 My griefs cry louder than advertisement \*.

*Ant.* Therein do men from children nothing differ. [and blood ;

*Leon.* I pray thee, peace : I will be flesh  
 For there was never yet philosopher,  
 That could endure the tooth-ach patiently ;  
 However they have writ the style of gods,  
 And made a pish at chance and sufferance.

*Ant.* Yet bend not all the harm upon yourself ;  
 Make those, that do offend you, suffer too.

*Leon.* There thou speak'st reason : nay, I will  
 My soul doth tell me, Hero is belied ; [do so :  
 And that shall Claudio know, so shall the  
 prince,

And all of them, that thus dishonour her.

*Enter DON PEDRO and CLAUDIO.*

*Ant.* Here comes the prince, and Claudio,

*D. Pedro.* Good den, good den. [hastily.

*Claud.* Good day to both of you.

*Leon.* Hear you, my lords,—

*D. Pedro.* We have some haste, Leonato.

*Leon.* Some haste, my lord !—well, fare  
 you well, my lord :—

Are you so hasty now ?—well, all is one.

*D. Pedro.* Nay, do not quarrel with us,  
 good old man. [relling,

*Ant.* If he could right himself with quar-  
 some of us would lie low.

*Claud.* Who wrongs him ?

*Leon.* Marry,  
 Thou, thou dost wrong me ; thou dissembler,  
 thou :—

Nay, never lay thy hand upon thy sword,  
 I fear thee not.

*Claud.* Marry, beshrew my hand,  
 If it should give your age such cause of fear :  
 In faith, my hand meant nothing to my sword.

*Leon.* Tush, tush, man, never fiercer and jest  
 I speak not like a dotard, nor a fool ; [at me :  
 As, under privilege of age, to brag [do,  
 What I have done being young, or what would  
 Were I not old : Know, Claudio, to thy head,  
 Thou hast so wrong'd mine innocent child and  
 That I am forc'd to lay my reverence by ; [me,  
 And, with gray hairs, and bruise of many days,  
 Do challenge thee to trial of a man.

I say, thou hast belied mine innocent child ;  
 Thy slander hath gone through and through  
 her heart,

And she lies buried with her ancestors :

O ! in a tomb where never scandal slept,  
 Save this of hers, fram'd by thy villany.

*Claud.* My villany !

*Leon.* Thine, Claudio ; thine I say.

*D. Pedro.* You say not right, old man.

*Leon.* My lord, my lord,

I'll prove it on his body, if he dare ;  
 Despite his nice fence, and his active practice†,  
 His May of youth, and bloom of lustihood.

*Claud.* Away, I will not have to do with you.

*Leon.* Canst thou so daff me ? Thou hast  
 kill'd my child ;

If thou kill'st me, boy, thou shalt kill a man.

*Ant.* He shall kill two of us, and men indeed ;  
 But that's no matter ; let him kill one first ;—  
 Win me and wear me,—let him answer me,—  
 Come, follow me, boy ; come, boy, follow me :  
 Sir boy, I'll whip you from your foining† fence ;  
 Nay, as I am a gentleman, I will.

*Leon.* Brother,—

*Ant.* Content yourself : God knows, I lov'd  
 my niece ;

And she is dead, slander'd to death by villains ;  
 That dare as well answer a man, indeed,  
 As I dare take a serpent by the tongue :  
 Boys, apes, braggarts, Jacks, milksops !—

*Leon.* Brother Antony,—

*Ant.* Hold you content ; What, man ! I  
 know them, yea, [scruple:  
 And what they weigh, even to the utmost  
 Scambling, out-facing, fashion-mong'ring boys,  
 That lie, and cog, and flout, deprave and slander,  
 Go anticly, and show outward hideousness,  
 And speak off half a dozen dangerous words,  
 How they might hurt their enemies, if they  
 And this is all. [durst,

*Leon.* But, brother Antony,—

*Ant.* Come, 'tis no matter ;  
 Do not you meddle, let me deal in this.

*D. Pedro.* Gentlemen both, we will not  
 wake your patience.

My heart is sorry for your daughter's death ;  
 But, on my honour, she was charg'd with  
 nothing

But what was true, and very full of proof.

*Leon.* My lord, my lord,—

*D. Pedro.* I will not hear you.

*Leon.* No ?

Brother, away :—I will be heard ;—  
*Ant.* And shall,

Or some of us will smart for it.

[*Exeunt LEONATO and ANTONIO.*

*Enter BENEDICK.*

*D. Pedro.* See, see ; here comes the man  
 we went to seek.

*Claud.* Now, signior ! what news !

*Bene.* Good day, my lord.

*D. Pedro.* Welcome, signior : You are  
 almost come to part almost a fray.

*Claud.* We had like to have had our two  
 noses snapped off with two old men without  
 teeth.

*D. Pedro.* Leonato and his brother : What  
 think'st thou ? Had we fought, I doubt, we  
 should have been too young for them.

*Bene.* In a false quarrel there is no true  
 valour. I came to seek you both.

*Claud.* We have been up and down to  
 seek thee ; for we are high-proof melancholy,  
 and would fain have it beaten away : Wilt  
 thou use thy wit ?

*Bene.* It is in my scabbard ; Shall I draw it ?

*D. Pedro.* Dost thou wear thy wit by thy side?

*Claud.* Never any did so, though very many have been beside their wit.—I will bid thee draw, as we do the minstrels; draw, to pleasure us.

*D. Pedro.* As I am an honest man, he looks pale:—Art thou sick, or angry?

*Claud.* What! courage, man! What though care killed a cat, thou hast mettle enough in thee to kill care.

*Bene.* Sir, I shall meet your wit in the career, an you charge it against me:—I pray you, choose another subject.

*Claud.* Nay, then give him another staff; this last was broke cross.

*D. Pedro.* By this light, he changes more and more; I think he be angry indeed.

*Claud.* If he be, he knows how to turn his girdle\*.

*Bene.* Shall I speak a word in your ear?

*Claud.* God bless me from a challenge!

*Bene.* You are a villain;—I jest not:—I will make it good how you dare, with what you dare and when you dare:—Do me right, or I will protest your cowardice. You have killed a sweet lady, and her death shall fall heavy on you: Let me hear from you.

*Claud.* Well, I will meet you, so I may have good cheer.

*D. Pedro.* What, a feast? a feast?

*Claud.* Faith, I thank him; he hath bid me to a calf's-head and a capon; the which if I do not carve most curiously, say, my knife's naught.—Shall I not find a woodcock too?

*Bene.* Sir, your wit ambles well; it goes easily.

*D. Pedro.* I'll tell thee how Beatrice praised thy wit the other day: I said, thou hadst a fine wit; *True*, says she, *a fine little one*: No, said I, *a great wit*; *Right*, says she, *a great gross one*: Nay, said I, *a good wit*; *Just*, said she, *it hurts nobody*: Nay, said I, *the gentleman is wise*; *Certain*, said she, *a wise gentleman*: Nay, said I, *he hath the tongues*; *That I believe*, said she, *for he swore a thing to me on Monday night, which he forswore on Tuesday morning*; *there's a double tongue*; *there's two tongues*. Thus did she, an hour together, transshape thy particular virtues; yet, at last, she concluded with a sigh, thou wast the properest man in Italy.

*Claud.* For the which she wept heartily, and said, she cared not.

*D. Pedro.* Yea, that she did; but yet, for all that, an if she did not hate him deadly, she would love him dearly: the old man's daughter told us all.

*Claud.* All, all; and moreover, *God saw him when he was hid in the arden*.

*D. Pedro.* But when shall we set the savage bull's horns on the sensible Benedick's head?

*Claud.* Yea, and text underneath, *Here dwells Benedick the married man*?

*Bene.* Fare you well, boy; you know my

mind; I will leave you now to your gossip-like humour: you break jests as braggarts do their blades, which, God be thanked, hurt not.—My lord, for your many courtesies I thank you: I must discontinue your company: your brother, the bastard, is fled from Messina: you have, among you, killed a sweet and innocent lady: For my lord Lack-beard, there, he and I shall meet; and till then, peace be with him. [Exit BENEDICK.]

*D. Pedro.* He is in earnest.

*Claud.* In most profound earnest; and I'll warrant you, for the love of Beatrice.

*D. Pedro.* And hath challenged thee?

*Claud.* Most sincerely.

*D. Pedro.* What a pretty thing man is, when he goes in his doublet and hose, and leaves off his wit!

*Enter DOGBERRY, VERGES, and the Watch, with CONRADE and BORACHIO.*

*Claud.* He is then a giant to an ape: but then is an ape a doctor to such a man.

*D. Pedro.* But, soft you, let be; pluck up, my heart, and be sad! Did he not say, my brother was fled?

*Dogb.* Come, you, sir; if justice cannot tame you, she shall ne'er weigh more reasons in her balance: nay, an you be a cursing hypocrite once, you must be looked to.

*D. Pedro.* How now, two of my brother's men bound! Borachio, one!

*Claud.* Hearken after their offence, my lord!

*D. Pedro.* Officers, what offence have these men done?

*Dogb.* Marry, sir, they have committed false report; moreover, they have spoken untruths; secondarily, they are slanders; sixth and lastly, they have belied a lady; thirdly, they have verified unjust things: and, to conclude, they are lying knaves.

*D. Pedro.* First, I ask thee what they have done; thirdly, I ask thee what's their offence; sixth and lastly, why they are committed; and, to conclude, what you lay to their charge.

*Claud.* Rightly reasoned, and in his own division; and, by my troth, there's one meaning well suited.

*D. Pedro.* Whom have you offended, masters, that you are thus bound to your answer? this learned constable is too cunning to be understood: What's your offence?

*Bora.* Sweet prince, let me go no further to mine answer; do you hear me, and let this count kill me. I have deceived even your very eyes: what your wisdoms could not discover, these shallow fools have brought to light; who, in the night, over-heard me confessing to this man, how Don John your brother incensed me to slander the lady Hero; how you were brought into the orchard, and saw me court Margaret in Hero's garments; how you disgraced her, when you should marry her: my villany they have upon record; which I had rather seal with my death, than repeat over to my shame: the

\* To give a challenge. † Invited. ‡ Serious. § Incited.

lady is dead upon mine and my master's false accusation; and, briefly, I desire nothing but the reward of a villain.

*D. Pedro.* Runs not this speech like iron through your blood?

*Claud.* I have drunk poison, whiles he utter'd it.

*D. Pedro.* But did my brother set thee on to this?

*Bora.* Yea, and paid me richly for the practice of it.

*D. Pedro.* He is compos'd and fram'd of And led heis upon this villany. [treachery:—

*Claud.* Sweet Hero! now thy image doth appear

In the rare semblance that I loved it first.

*Dogh.* Come, bring away the plaintiffs; by this time our sexton hath reformed signior Leonato of the matter: And masters, do not forget to specify, when time and place shall serve, that I am an ass.

*Verg.* Here, here comes master signior Leonato, and the Sexton too.

*Re-enter* LEONATO and ANTONIO, with the Sexton.

*Leon.* Which is the villain? Let me see his eyes;

That when I note another man like him, I may avoid him: Which of these is he?

*Bora.* If you would know your wronger, look on me. [breath hast kil'd

*Leon.* Art thou the slave, that with thy Mine innocent child?

*Bora.* Yea, even I alone.

*Leon.* No, not so, villain; thou belie'st thyself; Here's a and a pair of honourable men, A third is fled, that had a hand in it:— I thank you, princes, for my daughter's death; Record it with your high and worthy deeds; 'Twas bravely done, if you bethink you of it.

*Claud.* I know not how to pray your patience,

Yet I must speak: Choose your revenge Impose\* me to what penance your invention Can lay upon my sin: yet sinn'd I not, But in mistaking.

*D. Pedro.* By my soul, nor I;

And yet, to satisfy this good old man, I would bend under any heavy weight That he'll enjoin me to. [live,

*Leon.* I cannot bid you bid my daughter That were impossible; but, I pray you both, Possess† the people in Messina here How innocent she died: and, if your love Can labour aught in sad invention, Hang her an epitaph upon her tomb, And sing it to her bones; sing it to-night:— To-morrow morning come you to my house; And since you could not be my son-in-law, Be yet my nephew: my brother hath a daughter Almost the copy of my child that's dead, And she alone is heir to both of us; Give her the right you should have given her And so dies my revenge. [cousin,

*Claud.* O, noble sir, Your over-kindness doth wring tears from me!

I do embrace your offer; and dispose

For henceforth of poor Claudio. [coming

*Leon.* To-morrow then I will expect your To-night I take my leave.—This naughty man Shall face to face be brought to Margaret, Who, I believe, was pack'd‡ in all this wrong, Hid to it by your brother.

*Bora.* No, by my soul, she was not; Nor knew not what she did, when she spoke to But always hath been just and virtuous, [me; In any thing that I do know by her.

*Dogh.* Moreover, sir, (which, indeed, is not under white and black,) this plaintiff here, the offender, did call me ass: I beseech you, let it be remembered in his punishment: And also, the watch heard them talk of one Deformed: they say, he wears a key in his ear, and a lock hanging by it; and borrows money in God's name; the which he hath used so long, and never paid, that now men grow hard-hearted, and will lend nothing for God's sake: Pray you, examine him upon that point.

*Leon.* I thank thee for thy care and honest pains.

*Dogh.* Your worship speaks like a most thankful and reverend youth; and I praise God for you

*Leon.* There's for thy pains.

*Dogh.* God save the foundation!

*Leon.* Go, I discharge thee of thy prisoner, and I thank thee.

*Dogh.* I leave an arrant knave with your worship; which, I beseech your worship, to correct yourself, for the example of others, God keep your worship; I wish your worship well; God restore you to health: I humbly give you leave to depart; and if a merry meeting may be wished, God prohibit it.— Come, neighbour.

[*Exeunt* DOGBERRY, VERGES, and Watch.

*Leon.* Until to-morrow morning, lords, farewell. [to-morrow,

*Ant.* Farewell, my lords; we look for you

*D. Pedro.* We will not fail.

*Claud.* To-night I'll mourn with Hero.

[*Exeunt* DON PEDRO and CLAUDIO.

*Leon.* Bring you these fellows on; we'll talk with Margaret, [fellow,

How her acquaintance grew with this lewd § [Exeunt.

## SCENE II. Leonato's Garden.

*Enter* BENEDICK and MARGARET, meeting.

*Bene.* Pray thee, sweet mistress Margaret, deserve well at my hands, by helping me to the speech of Beatrice.

*Marg.* Will you then write me a sonnet in praise of my beauty?

*Bene.* In so high a style, Margaret, that no man living shall come over it; for, in most comely truth, thou deservest it.

*Marg.* To have no man come over me? why, shall I always keep below stairs?

*Bene.* Thy wit is as quick as the grey hound's mouth, it catches.

\* Command.

† Acquaint.

‡ Combined.

§ Ignorant.



*Marg.* And yours as blunt as the fencer's foils, which hit, but hurt not.

*Bene.* A most manly wit, Margaret, it will not hurt a woman; and so, I pray thee, call Beatrice: I give thee the bucklers.

*Marg.* Give us the swords, we have bucklers of our own.

*Bene.* If you use them, Margaret, you must put in the pikes with a vice; and they are dangerous weapons for maids.

*Marg.* Well, I will call Beatrice to you, who, I think, hath legs. [Exit MARGARET.]

*Bene.* And therefore will come.

*The god of love,* [Singing.]

*That sits above,*

*And knows me, and knows me,*

*How pitiful I deserve,*

I mean, in singing; but in loving,—Leander the good swimmer, Troilus the first employer of panders, and a whole book full of these quondam carpet-mongers, whose names yet run smoothly in the even road of a blank verse, why, they were never so truly turned over and over as my poor self, in love: *Marry*, I cannot show it in rhyme; I have tried; I can find out no rhyme to *lady* but *baby*, an innocent rhyme; for *scorn*, *horn*, a hard rhyme; for *school*, *fool*, a babbling rhyme; very ominous endings: No, I was not born under a rhyming planet, nor I cannot woo in festival terms\*.—

*Enter BEATRICE.*

Sweet Beatrice, wouldst thou come when I called thee?

*Beat.* Yea, signior, and depart when you bid me.

*Bene.* O, stay but till then!

*Beat.* Then, is spoken; fare you well now:—and yet, ere I go, let me go with that I came for, which is, with knowing what hath passed between you and Claudio.

*Bene.* Only foul words; and thereupon I will kiss thee.

*Beat.* Foul words is but foul wind, and foul wind is but foul breath, and foul breath is noisome; therefore I will depart unknissed.

*Bene.* Thou hast frightened the word out of his right sense, so forcible is thy wit: But, I must tell thee plainly, Claudio undergoes<sup>†</sup> my challenge; and either I must shortly hear from him, or I will subscribe him a coward. And, I pray thee now, tell me, for which of my bad parts didst thou first fall in love with me!

*Beat.* For them all together: which maintained so politic a state of evil, that they will not admit any good part to intermingle with them. But for which of my good parts did you first suffer love for me?

*Bene.* Suffer love; a good epithet! I do suffer love, indeed, for I love thee against my will.

*Beat.* In spite of your heart, I think; alas! poor heart! If you spite it for my sake, I will spite it for yours; for I will never love that which my friend hates.

*Bene.* Thou and I are too wise to woo peaceably.

*Beat.* It appears not in this confession: there's not one wise man among twenty that will praise himself.

*Bene.* An old, an old instance, Beatrice, that lived in the time of good neighbours: if a man do not erect in this age his own tomb ere he dies, he shall live no longer in monument, than the bell rings, and the widow weeps.

*Beat.* And how long is that, think you?

*Bene.* Question?—Why, an hour in clamour, and a quarter in rheum: Therefore it is most expedient for the wise, (if Don Worm his conscience, find no impediment to the contrary,) to be the trumpet of his own virtues, as I am to myself: So much for praising myself, (who, I myself will bear witness, is praise-worthy,) and now tell me, How doth your cousin?

*Beat.* Very ill.

*Bene.* And how do you.

*Beat.* Very ill too.

*Bene.* Serve God, love me, and mend: there will I leave you too, for here comes one in haste.

*Enter URSULA.*

*Urs.* Madam, you must come to your uncle; yonder's old coil<sup>‡</sup> at home: it is proved, my lady Hero hath been falsely accused, the Prince and Claudio mightily abused; and Don John is the author of all, who is fled and gone: will you come presently?

*Beat.* Will you go hear this news, signior?

*Bene.* I will live in thy heart, die in thy lap, and be buried in thy eyes; and, moreover, I will go with thee to thy uncle's.

[Exeunt.]

### SCENE III.

*The Inside of a Church.*

*Enter DON PEDRO, CLAUDIO, and Attendants, with music and tapers.*

*Claud.* Is this the monument of Leonato?

*Atten.* It is, my lord.

*Claud.* [Reads from a scroll.]

*Done to death by slanderous tongues*

*Was the Hero that here lies:*

*Death, in guerdon<sup>§</sup> of her wrongs*

*Gives her fame which never dies:*

*So the life, that died with shame,*

*Lives in death with glorious fame.*

*Hang thou there upon the tomb,* [affixing it.]

*Praising her when I am dumb.—*

Now, music, sound, and sing your solemn hymn.

### SONG.

*Pardon, Goddess of the night,*

*Those that slew thy virgin knight;*

*For the which, with songs of woe,*

*Round about her tomb they go.*

\* Holiday phrases.

† Is subject to.

‡ Stir.

*Midnight, assist our moan ;  
Help us to sigh and groan,  
Heavily, heavily :  
Graves, yawn, and yield your dead,  
Till death be uttered,  
Heavily, heavily.*

*Claud.* Now, unto thy bones good night!  
Yearly will I do this rite.

*D. Pedro.* Good morrow, masters; put  
your torches out: [tlay day,  
The wolves have prey'd; and look, the gen-  
Before the wheels of Phœbus, round about  
Dapples the drowsy east with spots of gray :  
Thanks to you all, and leave us; fare you  
well. [several way.

*Claud.* Good morrow, masters; each his

*D. Pedro.* Come, let us hence, and put on  
other weeds;

And then to Leonato's we will go.

*Claud.* And, Hymen, now with luckier is-  
sue speeds,

Than this, for whom we render'd up this woe!  
[*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE IV.

*A Room in Leonato's House.*

*Enter LEONATO, ANTONIO, BENEDICK,  
BEATRICE, URSULA, Friar, and HERO.*

*Friar.* Did I not tell you she was inno-  
cent?

*Leon.* So are the prince and Claudio, who  
accus'd her,

Upon the error that you heard debated:  
But Margaret was in some fault for this;  
Although against her will, as it appears  
In the true course of all the question.

*Ant.* Well, I am glad that all things sort  
so well. [enforc'd

*Bene.* And so am I, being else by faith  
To call young Claudio to a reckoning for it.

*Leon.* Well, daughter, and you gentlewo-  
men all,

Withdraw into a chamber by yourselves;  
And, when I send for you, come hither mask'd:

The prince and Claudio promis'd by this hour  
To visit me:—You know your office, brother;  
You must be father to your brother's daughter,  
And give her to young Claudio.

[*Exeunt Ladies.*

*Ant.* Which I will do with confirm'd coun-  
tenance. [think.

*Bene.* Friar, I must entreat your pains, I  
*Friar.* To do what, signior? [them.—

*Bene.* To bind me, or undo me, one of  
Signior Leonato, truth it is, good signior,  
Your niece regards me with an eye of favour.

*Leon.* That eye my daughter lent her; 'Tis  
most true. [quite her.

*Bene.* And I do with an eye of love re-  
*Leon.* The sight whereof, I think, you had  
from me,

From Claudio, and the prince; But what's  
your will?

*Bene.* Your answer, sir, is enigmatical:  
But, for my will, my will is, your good will  
May stand with ours, this day to be conjoin'd  
In the estate of honourable marriage;—

In which, good friar, I shall desire your help,

*Leon.* My heart is with your liking.

*Friar.* And my help.

Here comes the prince, and Claudio.

*Enter DON PEDRO and CLAUDIO, with  
Attendants.*

*D. Pedro.* Good morrow to this fair as-  
sembly. [row, Claudio;

*Leon.* Good morrow, prince; good mor-  
We here attend you; are you yet determin'd

To-day to marry with my brother's daughter?

*Claud.* I'll hold my mind, were she an  
Ethiope. [friar ready.

*Leon.* Call her forth, brother, here's the  
[*Exit ANTONIO.*

*D. Pedro.* Good morrow, Benedick: Why,  
what's the matter,

That you have such a February face,

So full of frost, of storm, and cloudiness?

*Claud.* I think, he thinks upon the savage  
bull:— [gold,

Tush, fear not, man, we'll tip thy horns with  
And all Europa shall rejoice at thee;

As once Europa did at lusty Jove,  
When he would play the noble beast in love.

*Bene.* Bull Jove, sir, had an amiable low;  
And some such strange bull leap'd your fa-  
ther's cow,

And got a calf in that same noble feat,  
Much like to you, for you have just his bleat.

*Re-enter ANTONIO, with the Ladies masked.*  
*Claud.* For this I owe you: here come  
other reckonings.

Which is the lady I must seize upon? [her.

*Ant.* This same is she, and I do give you  
*Claud.* Why, then she's mine: Sweet, let  
me see your face. [her hand

*Leon.* No, that you shall not, till you take  
Before this friar, and swear to marry her.

*Claud.* Give me your hand before this holy  
friar;

I am your husband, if you like of me.

*Hero.* And when I lived, I was your other  
wife: [Unmasking.

And when you loved, you were my other  
husband.

*Claud.* Another Hero?

*Hero.* Nothing certainer:

One Hero died defil'd; but I do live,  
And, surely as I live, I am a maid. [dead!

*D. Pedro.* The former Hero! Hero that is  
*Leon.* She died, my lord, but whiles her  
slander lived.

*Friar.* All this amazement can I qualify;  
When, after that the holy rites are ended,

I'll tell you largely of fair Hero's death:—  
Mean time, let wonder seem familiar,

And to the chapel let us presently.

*Bene.* Soft and fair, friar.—Which is Bea-  
trice?

*Beat.* I answer to that name; [Unmask-  
What is your will? [ing.

*Bene.* Do not you love me?

*Beat.* No, no more than reason.  
*Bene.* Why, then your uncle, and the  
prince, and Claudio,

Have been deceived; for they swore you did.

*Beat.* Do not you love me?  
*Bene.* No, no more than reason.  
*Beat.* Why, then my cousin, Margaret, and Ursula, <sup>did.</sup>  
 Are much deceiv'd; for they did swear you  
*Bene.* They swore that you were almost sick for me.  
*Beat.* They swore that you were well-nigh dead for me. <sup>[not love me?]</sup>  
*Bene.* 'Tis no such matter:—Then, you do  
*Beat.* No, truly, but in friendly recompense.  
*Leon.* Come, cousin, I am sure you love the gentleman.  
*Claud.* And I'll be sworn upon't, that he loves her;  
 For here's a paper, written in his hand,  
 A halting sonnet of his own pure brain,  
 Fashion'd to Beatrice.  
*Hero.* And here's another,  
 Writ in my cousin's hand, stolen from her pocket,  
 Containing her affection unto Benedick.  
*Bene.* A miracle! here's our own hands against our hearts!—Come, I will have thee; but, by this light, I take thee for pity.  
*Beat.* I would not deny you; but, by this good day, I yield upon great persuasion; and, partly, to save your life, for I was told you were in a consumption.  
*Bene.* Peace, I will stop your mouth.—  
<sup>[Kissing her.]</sup>  
*D. Pedro.* How dost thou, Benedick the married man?  
*Bene.* I'll tell thee what, prince; a college of wit-crackers cannot flout me out of my hu-

mour: Dost thou think, I care for a satire, or an epigram? No: if a man will be beaten with brains, he shall wear nothing handsome about him: In brief, since I do propose to marry, I will think nothing to any purpose that the world can say against it; and therefore never flout at me for what I have said against it; for man is a giddy thing, and this is my conclusion.—For thy part, Claudio, I did think to have beaten thee; but in that thou art like to be my kinsman, live unbruised, and love my cousin.

*Claud.* I had well hoped, thou wouldst have denied Beatrice, that I might have cudgelled thee out of thy single life, to make thee a double dealer; which, out of question, thou wilt be, if my cousin do not look exceeding narrowly to thee.

*Bene.* Come, come, we are friends:—let's have a dance ere we are married, that we may lighten our own hearts, and our wives' heels.

*Leon.* We'll have dancing afterwards.

*Bene.* First, o' my word; therefore, play, music.—  
 Prince, thou art sad; get thee a wife, get thee a wife: there is no staff more reverend than one tipped with horn.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, your brother John is ta'en in flight,

And brought with armed men back to Messina.

*Bene.* Think not on him till to-morrow, I'll devise thee brave punishments for him.—  
 Strike up, pipers. *'Dance. Exeunt.*

\* Because.

This play may be justly said to contain two of the most sprightly characters that Shakspeare ever drew. The wit, the humourist, the gentleman, and the soldier, are combined in Benedick. It is to be lamented, indeed, that the first, and most splendid of these distinctions, is disgraced by unnecessary profaneness; for the goodness of his heart is hardly sufficient to atone for the license of his tongue. The too sarcastic levity, which flashes out in the conversation of Beatrice, may be excused on account of the steadiness and friendship so apparent in her behaviour, when she urges her lover to risk his life by a challenge to Claudio. In the conduct of the fable, however, there is an imperfection similar to that which Dr. Johnson has pointed out in *The Merry Wives of Windsor*:—the second contrivance is less ingenious than the first:—or, to speak more plainly, the same incident is become stale by repetition. I wish some other method had been found to entrap Beatrice, than that very one which before had been successfully practised on Benedick.

*Much Ado about Nothing* (as I understand from one of Mr. Vertue's MSS.) formerly passed under the title of Benedick and Beatrice. Heming the player received, on the 20th of May, 1613, the sum of forty pounds, and twenty pounds more as his Majesty's gratuity, for exhibiting six plays at Hampton Court, among which was this comedy.—SKEEVENS.



# MIDSUMMER-NIGHT'S DREAM.

## Persons represented.

THESEUS, *Duke of Athens.*  
 EGEUS, *Father to Hermia.*  
 LYSANDER, } *in love with Hermia.*  
 DEMETRIUS, }  
 PHILOSTRATE, *Master of the Revels to Theseus.*  
 QUINCE, *the Carpenter.*  
 SNUG, *the Joiner.*  
 BOTTOM, *the Weaver.*  
 FLUTE, *the Bellows-mender.*  
 SNOUT, *the Tinker.*  
 STARVELING, *the Tailor.*  
 HIPPOLYTA, *Queen of the Amazons, betrothed to Theseus.*

HERMIA, *Daughter to Egeus, in love with Lysander.*  
 HELENA, *in love with Demetrius.*  
 OBERON, *King of the Fairies.*  
 TITANIA, *Queen of the Fairies.*  
 PUCK, or ROBIN-GOODFELLOW, *a Fairy.*  
 PEAS-BLOSSOM,  
 COBWEB,  
 MOTH,  
 MUSTARD-SEED, } *Fairies.*  
 PYRAMUS,  
 THISBE, } *Characters in the Interlude performed by the Clowns.*  
 WALL,  
 MOONSHINE,  
 LION,

*Other Fairies attending their King and Queen.*

*Attendants on THESEUS and HIPPOLYTA.*

*Scene,—Athens, and a Wood not far from it.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.

*Athens. A Room in the Palace of Theseus.*

*Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLYTA, PHILOSTRATE, and Attendants.*

*The.* Now, fair Hippolyta, our nuptial hour  
 Draws on apace; four happy days bring in  
 Another moon: but, oh, methinks, how slow  
 This old moon wanes! she lingers my desires,  
 Like to a step-dame, or a dowager,  
 Long withering out a young man's revenue.

*Hip.* Four days will quickly steep themselves in nights;

Four nights will quickly dream away the time;  
 And then the moon, like to a silver bow  
 New bent in heaven, shall behold the night  
 Of our solemnities.

*The.* Go, Philostrate,  
 Stir up the Athenian youth to merriments;  
 Awake the pert and nimble spirit of mirth;  
 Turn melancholy forth to funerals,  
 The pale companion is not for our pomp.—

[*Exit PHILOSTRATE.*]  
 Hippolyta, I woo'd thee with my sword,  
 And won thy love, doing thee injuries;  
 But I will wed thee in another key,  
 With pomp, with triumph\*, and with revelling.  
*Enter EGEUS, HERMIA, LYSANDER, and DEMETRIUS.*

*Ege.* Happy be Theseus, our renowned duke!  
*The.* Thanks, good Egeus: What's the news with thee?

*Ege.* Full of vexation come I, with complaint

Against my child, my daughter Hermia.—  
 Stand forth, Demetrius;—My noble lord,  
 This man hath my consent to marry her:—  
 Stand forth, Lysander;—and, my gracious duke,  
 This hath bewitch'd the bosom of my child:

Thou, thou, Lysander, thou hast given her  
 rhymes,  
 And interchang'd love-tokens with my child:  
 Thou hast by moon-light at her window sung,  
 With feigning voice, verses of feigning love;  
 And stol'n the impression of her fantasy  
 With bracelets of thy hair, rings, gawds†,  
 conceits, [sengs]

Knacks, trifles, nose-gays, sweet-meats; mes-  
 Of strong prevailment in unhardened youth:  
 With cunning hast thou filch'd my daughter  
 heart;

Turn'd her obedience, which is due to me,  
 To stubborn harshness:—And, my gracious duke,  
 Be it so she will not here before your grace  
 Consent to marry with Demetrius,  
 I beg the ancient privilege of Athens;  
 As she is mine, I may dispose of her:  
 Which shall be either to this gentleman,  
 Or to her death; according to our law,  
 Immediately provided in that case. [maid:]

*The.* Whatsay you, Hermia? be advis'd, fair  
 To you your father should be as a god;  
 One that compos'd your beauties; yea, and one  
 To whom you are but as a form in wax,  
 By him imprinted, and within his power

\* Shows.

† Baubles.

To leave the figure, or disfigure it.  
Demetrius is a worthy gentleman.

*Her.* So is Lysander.

*The.* In himself he is;

But, in this kind, wanting your father's voice,  
The other must be held the worthier. [my eyes.

*Her.* I would, my father look'd but with

*The.* Rather your eyes must with his judgment look.

*Her.* I do entreat your grace to pardon me.  
I know not by what power I am made bold;  
Nor how it may concern my modesty.

In such a presence here, to plead my thoughts;  
But I beseech your grace that I may know.

The worst that may befall me in this case,  
If I refuse to wed Demetrius.

*The.* Either to die the death, or to abjure  
For ever the society of men.

Therefore, fair Hermia, question your desires,  
Know of your youth, examine well your blood,

Whether, if you yield not to your father's  
You can endure the livery of a nun; [choice,

For aye\* to be in shady cloister mew'd,  
To live a barren sister all your life, [moon.

Chanting faint hymns to the cold fruitless  
Thrice blessed they, that master so their blood,

To undergo such maiden pilgrimage:  
But earthlier happy is the rose distill'd,

Than that, which, withering on the virgin thorn,  
Grows, lives, and dies, in single blessedness.

*Her.* So will I grow, so live, so die, my lord,  
Ere I will yield my virgin patent up

Unto his lordship, whose unwish'd yoke  
My soul consents not to give sovereignty.

*The.* Take time to pause: and, by the next  
new moon,

(The sealing-day betwixt my love and me,  
For everlasting bond of fellowship.)

Upon that day either prepare to die,  
For disobedience to your father's will;

Or else, to wed Demetrius, as he would:  
Or on Diana's altar to protest,

For aye, austerity and single life. [sander, yield  
*Dem.* Relent, sweet Hermia;—And, Ly-

Thy crazed title to my certain right.

*Lys.* You have her father's love, Demetrius;  
Let me have Hermia's: do you marry him.

*Ege.* Scornful Lysander! true, he hath my  
love;

And what is mine my love shall render him;  
And she is mine; and all my right of her  
I do estate unto Demetrius.

*Lys.* I am, my lord, as well deriv'd as he,  
As well possess'd; my love is more than his;

My fortunes every-way as fairly rank'd,  
If not with vantage, as Demetrius';

And, which is more than all these boasts can be,  
I am belov'd of beauteous Hermia:

Why should not I then prosecute my right?  
Demetrius, I'll avouch it to his head,

Made love to Nedar's daughter, Helena,  
And won her soul; and she, sweet lady, dotes,

Devoutly dotes, dotes in idolatry,  
Upon this spotted† and inconstant man.

*The.* I must confess, that I have heard so  
much,

And with Demetrius thought to have, poke  
But, being over full of self-affairs, [thereof;  
My mind did lose it.—But, Demetrius, come;  
And come, Egeus; you shall go with me,

I have some private schooling for you both.—  
For you, fair Hermia, look you arm yourself

To fit your fancies to your father's will;  
Or else the law of Athens yields you up

(Which by no means we may extenuate,)  
To death, or to a vow of single life.—

Come, my Hippolyta; What cheer, my love?—  
Demetrius, and Egeus, go along:

I must employ you in some business  
Against our nuptial; and confer with you

Of something nearly that concerns yourselves  
*Ege.* With duty, and desire we follow you.

[*Exeunt THEB. HIP. EG. DEM. and train.*  
*Lys.* How now, my love? Why is your  
cheek so pale?

How chance the roses there do fade so fast?  
*Her.* Belike, for want of rain; which I  
could well

Beteem them† from the tempest of mine eyes.  
*Lys.* Ah me! for aught that ever I could

Could ever hear by tale or history, [read,  
The course of true love never did run smooth:

But, either it was different in blood;— [low!  
*Her.* O cross! too high to be inthrall'd to

*Lys.* Or else misgrated, in respect of years;  
*Her.* O spite! too old to be engag'd to young!

*Lys.* Or else it stood upon the choice of friends;  
*Her.* O hell! to choose love by another's

eye!

*Lys.* Or, if there were a sympathy in choice,  
War, death, or sickness, did lay siege to it;

Making it momentary‡ as a sound,  
Swift as a shadow, short as any dream;

Brief as the lightning in the collied‖ night,  
That, in a spleen, unfolds both heaven and earth,

And ere a man hath power to say,—Behold!  
The jaws of darkness do devour it up:

So quick bright things come to confusion.

*Her.* If then true lovers have been ever  
It stands as an edict in destiny: [cross'd,

Then let us teach our trial patience,  
Because it is a customary cross; [sighs,

As due to love, as thoughts, and dreams, and  
Wishes, and tears, poor fancy's¶ followers.

*Lys.* A good persuasion; therefore, hear me,  
I have a widow aunt, a dowager [Hermia.

Of great revenue, and she hath no child:  
From Athens is her house remote seven leagues;

And she respects me as her only son.  
There, gentle Hermia, may I marry thee;

And to that place the sharp Athenian law  
Cannot pursue us: If then lov'st me then,

Steal forth thy father's house to-morrow night,  
And in the wood, a league without the town,

Where I did meet thee once with Helena,  
To do observance to a morn of May,

There will I stay for thee.

*Her.* My good Lysander! I  
I swear to thee, by Cupid's strongest bow;

By his best arrow with the golden head;  
By the simplicity of Venus's doves; [loves;

By that which knitteth souls, and prospers

\* Ever.    † Wicked.    ‡ Give, bestow.    § Momentary.    || Black    ¶ Love's.

And by that fire which burn'd the Carthage  
queen,  
When the false Trojan under sail was seen;  
By all the vows that ever men have broke,  
In number more than ever women spoke;—  
In that same place thou hast appointed me,  
To-morrow truly will I meet with thee.

*Lys.* Keep promise, love: Look, here comes  
Helena.

*Enter HELENA.*

*Her.* God speed, fair Helena! Whither away?

*Hel.* Call you me fair? that fair again unsay.

Demetrius loves your fair: O happy fair!  
Your eyes are lode-stars\*; and your tongue's  
sweet air

More tuneable than lark to shepherd's ear,  
When wheat is green, when hawthorn buds  
appear.

Sickness is catching; O, were favour† so!  
Yours would I catch, fair Hermia, ere I go;  
My ear should catch your voice, my eye your  
eye, [melody.]

My tongue should catch your tongue's sweet  
Were the world mine, Demetrius being bated,  
The rest I'll give to be to you translated.

O, teach me how you look; and with what art  
You sway the motion of Demetrius' heart.

*Her.* I frown upon him, yet he loves me still.

*Hel.* O, that your frowns would teach my  
smiles such skill!

*Her.* I give him curses, yet he gives me love.

*Hel.* O, that my prayers could such affection  
move! [me.]

*Her.* The more I hate, the more he follows

*Hel.* The more I love, the more he hateth me.

*Her.* His folly, Helena, is no fault of mine.

*Hel.* None but your beauty; 'Would that  
fault were mine! [my face;]

*Her.* Take comfort; he no more shall see

Lysander and myself will fly this place.—

Before the time I did Lysander see,

Seem'd Athens as a paradise to me:

O then, what graces in my love do dwell,

That he hath turn'd a heaven unto hell! [fold:]

*Lys.* Helen, to you our minds we will un-

To-morrow-night, when Phœbe doth behold

Her silver visage in the wat'ry glass,

Decking with liquid pearl the bladed grass,

(A time that lovers' flights doth still conceal,)

Through Athens' gates have we devis'd to steal.

*Her.* And in the wood, where often you and I

Upon faint primrose-beds were wont to lie,

Emptying our bosoms of their counsel sweet:

There my Lysander and myself shall meet:

And thence, from Athens, turn away our eyes,

To seek new friends and stranger companies.

Farewell, sweet playfellow; pray thou for us,

And good luck grant thee thy Demetrius!

Keep word, Lysander: we must starve our sight

From lover's food, till morrow deep midnight.

[Exit HERMIA.]

*Lys.* I will, my Hermia.—Helena, adieu:

As you on him, Demetrius dote on you.

[Exit Lys.]

*Hel.* How happy some, or other some can be!

Through Athens I am thought as fair as she.

But what of that? Demetrius thinks not so;  
He will not know what all but he do know.  
And as he errs, doting on Hermia's eyes,  
So I, admiring of his qualities.

Things base and vile, holding no quantity,  
Love can transpoise to form and dignity.

Love looks not with the eyes, but with the mind;  
And therefore is wing'd Cupid painted blind:

Nor hath love's mind of any judgment taste;  
Wings, and no eyes, figure unheedy haste:

And therefore is love said to be a child,  
Because in choice he is so oft beguild.

As waggish boys in game themselves forswear,  
So the boy love is perjur'd every where:

For ere Demetrius look'd on Hermia's eyne‡,  
He hail'd down oaths, that he was only mine;

And when this hail some heat from Hermia felt,  
So he dissolv'd, and showers of oaths did melt.

I will go tell him of fair Hermia's flight:  
Then to the wood will he, to-morrow night,

Pursue her; and for this intelligence  
If I have thanks, it is a dear expense:

But herein mean I to enrich my pain,  
To have his sight thither, and back again.

[Exit.]

## SCENE II.

*The same. A Room in a Cottage.*

*Enter SNUG, BOTTOM, FLUTE, SNOUT,  
QUINCE, and STARVELING.*

*Quin.* Is all our company here?

*Bot.* You were best to call them generally,  
man by man, according to the scrip.

*Quin.* Here is the scroll of every man's  
name, which is thought fit, through all Athens,  
to play in our interlude before the duke and  
duchess, on his wedding-day at night.

*Bot.* First, good Peter Quince say what  
the play treats on; then read the names of  
the actors; and so grow to a point.

*Quin.* Marry, our play is—The most lament-  
able comedy, and most cruel death of Pyra-  
mus and Thisby.

*Bot.* A very good piece of work, I assure  
you, and a merry.—Now, good Peter Quince,  
call forth your actors by the scroll: Masters,  
spread yourselves.

*Quin.* Answer, as I call you.—Nick Bot-  
tom, the weaver.

*Bot.* Ready: Name what part I am for,  
and proceed.

*Quin.* You, Nick Bottom, are set down for  
Pyramus.

*Bot.* What is Pyramus? a lover, or a tyrant?

*Quin.* A lover, that kills himself most gal-  
lantly for love.

*Bot.* That will ask some tears in the true  
performing of it: If I do it, let the audience  
look to their eyes; I will move storms, I will  
condole in some measure. To the rest:—Yet  
my chief humour is for a tyrant: I could play  
Ercles rarely, or a part to tear a cat in, to  
make all split.

"The raging rocks,

"With shivering shocks,

"Shall break the locks

\* Pole-stars.

† Countenance.

‡ Sport.

§ Eyes.



"Of prison-gates:  
 "And Phibbus' car  
 "Shall shine from far,  
 "And make and mar  
 "The foolish fates."

This was lofty!—Now name the rest of the players.—This is Eracles' vein, a tyrant's vein; a lover is more condoling.

*Quin.* Francis Flute, the bellows-mender.

*Flu.* Here, Peter Quince.

*Quin.* You must take Thisby on you.

*Flu.* What is Thisby? a wandering knight?

*Quin.* It is the lady that Pyramus must love.

*Flu.* Nay, faith, let me not play a woman; I have a beard coming.

*Quin.* That's all one; you shall play it in a mask, and you may speak as small as you will.

*Bot.* An I may hide my face, let me play Thisby too: I'll speak in a monstrous little voice;—*Thisne, Thisne.*—*Ah, Pyramus, my lover dear; thy Thisby dear! and lady dear!*

*Quin.* No, no; you must play Pyramus, and, Flute, you Thisby.

*Bot.* Well, proceed.

*Quin.* Robin Starveling, the tailor.

*Star.* Here, Peter Quince.

*Quin.* Robin Starveling, you must play Thisby's mother.—Tom Snout, the tinker.

*Snout.* Here, Peter Quince.

*Quin.* You, Pyramus's father; myself, Thisby's father; Snug, the joiner, you, the lion's part:—and, I hope, here is a play fitted.

*Snug.* Have you the lion's part written? pray you, if it be, give it me, for I am slow of study.

*Quin.* You may do it extempore, for it is nothing but roaring.

*Bot.* Let me play the lion too: I will roar, that I will do any man's heart good to hear me; I will roar, that I will make the duke say, *Let him roar again, Let him roar again.*

*Quin.* An you should do it too terribly, you would fright the duchess and the ladies, that they would shriek: and that were enough to hang us all.

*All.* That would hang us every mother's son.

*Bot.* I grant you, friends, if that you should fright the ladies out of their wits, they would have no more discretion but to hang us: but I will aggravate my voice so, that I will roar you as gently as any sucking dove; I will roar you an \*'twere any nightingale.

*Quin.* You can play no part but Pyramus: for Pyramus is a sweet-faced man; a proper man, as one shall see in a summer's day; a most lovely, gentleman-like man; therefore you must needs play Pyramus.

*Bot.* Well, I will undertake it. What beard were I best to play it in?

*Quin.* Why, what you will.

*Bot.* I will discharge it in either your straw-coloured beard, your orange-tawny beard, your purple-in-grain beard, or your French-crown-colour beard, your perfect yellow.

*Quin.* Some of your French crowns have no hair at all, and then you will play bare-faced.—But, masters, here are your parts: and I am to entreat you, request you, and desire you, to con them by to-morrow night; and meet me in the palace wood, a mile without the town, by moon-light; there will we rehearse: for if we meet in the city, we shall be dog'd with company, and our devices known. In the mean time I will draw a bill of properties †, such as our play wants. I pray you, fail me not.

*Bot.* We will meet; and there we may rehearse more obscenely, and courageously. Take pains; be perfect; adieu.

*Quin.* At the duke's oak we meet.

*Bot.* Enough; Hold, or cut bow-strings ‡.  
 [Exeunt.]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. A Wood near Athens.

Enter a Fairy at one door, and PUCK at another.

*Puck.* How now, spirit! whither wander you?

*Fai.* Over hill, over dale,

Thorough bush, thorough brier,

Over park, over pale,

Thorough flood, thorough fire,

I do wander every where,

Swifter than the moon's sphere;

And I serve the fairy queen,

To dew her orbs † upon the green:

The cowslips tall her pensioners be;

In their gold coats spots you see;

Those be rubies, fairy favours,

In those freckles live their savours:

I must go seek some dew-drops here,  
 And hang a pearl in every cowslip's ear.  
 Farewell, thou lob † of spirits, I'll be gone;  
 Our queen and all her elves come here anon.

*Puck.* The king doth keep his revels here to-night;  
 Take heed, the queen come not within his sight.  
 For Oberon is passing fell and wrath,  
 Because that she, as her attendant, hath  
 A lovely boy, stol'n from an Indian king;  
 She never had so sweet a changeling:  
 And jealous Oberon would have the child  
 Knight of his train, to trace the forests wild;  
 But she, perforce, withholds the loved boy,  
 Crowns him with flowers, and makes him all  
 her joy:

\* As if.

† Articles required in performing a play.

‡ At all events.

§ Circles.

|| A term of contempt.

And now they never meet in grove, or green,  
By fountain clear, or spangled star-light sheen\*,  
But they do square†; that all their elves, for fear,  
Creep into acorn cups, and hide them there.

*Fai.* Either I mistake your shape and making quite,

Or else you are that shrewd and knavish sprite,  
Call'd Robin Good-fellow: are you not he,  
That fright the maidens of the villagery;  
Skim milk; and sometimes labour in the quern‡,

And bootless make the breathless housewife  
And sometimes make the drink to bear no barm§; [churn; [leaven?

Mislead night-wanderers, laughing at their  
Those that Hobgoblin call you, and sweet Puck,  
You do their work, and they shall have good  
Are not you he? [luck:

*Puck.* Thou speak'st aright;  
I am that merry wanderer of the night.  
I jest to Oberon, and make him smile,  
When I a fat and bean-fed horse beguile,  
Neighing in likeness of a filly foal:

And sometime lurk I in a gossip's bowl,  
In very likeness of a roasted crab||;  
And, when she drinks, against her lips I bob,  
And on her wither'd dew-lap pour the ale.

The wisest aunt, telling the saddest tale,  
Sometime for three-foot stool mistaketh me;  
Then slip I from her bum, down topples she,  
And *tailor* cries, and falls into a cough;  
And then the whole quire hold their hips, and  
loffe;

And waxen in their mirth, and neeze, and swear  
A merrier hour was never wasted there.—  
But room, Faery, here comes Oberon.

*Fai.* And here my mistress:—'Would that  
he were gone!

## SCENE II.

*Enter OBERON, at one door, with his train,  
and TITANIA, at another, with hers.*

*Obe.* Ill met by moon-light, proud Titania.

*Tita.* What, jealous Oberon? Fairy, skip  
hence;

I have forsworn his bed and company.

*Obe.* Tarry, rash wanton; Am not I thy lord?

*Tita.* Then I must be thy lady: But I know  
When thou hast stol'n away from fairy land,  
And in the shape of Corin sat all day,  
Playing on pipes of corn, and versing love  
To amorous Phillida. Why art thou here,  
Come from the farthest steep of India?  
But that, forsooth, the bouncing Amazon,  
Your buskin'd mistress, and your warrior love,  
To Theseus must be wedded; and you come  
To give their bed joy and prosperity.

*Obe.* How canst thou thus, for shame, Titania,  
Glance at my credit with Hippolyta,  
Knowing I know thy love to Theseus?

I didst thou not lead him through the glimmering  
From Perigenia, whom he ravished? [night  
And make him with fair Æglé break his faith,  
With Ariadne, and Antiopa?

*Tita.* These are the forgeries of jealousy:  
And never, since the middle summer's spring,  
Met we on hill, in dale, forest, or mead,  
By paved fountain, or by rushy brook,  
Or on the beached margin of the sea,  
To dance our ringlets to the whistling wind,  
But with thy brawls thou hast disturb'd our sport.

Therefore the winds, piping to us in vain,  
As in revenge, have suck'd up from the sea  
Contagious fogs; which, falling in the land,  
Have every pelting river made so proud,  
That they have overborne their continents\*\*:  
The ox hath therefore stretch'd his yoke in  
vain, [corn

The ploughman lost his sweat; and the green  
Hath rotted, ere his youth attain'd a beard:  
The fold stands empty in the drowned field,  
And crows are fatt'd with the murrain flock;  
The nine men's morris†† is fill'd up with mud;  
And the quaint mazes in the wanton green,  
For lack of tread, are undistinguishable:

The human mortals want their winter here;  
No night is now with hymn or carol blest:—  
Therefore the moon, the governess of floods,  
Pale in her anger, washes all the air,  
That rheumatic diseases do abound:

And thorough this distemperature, we see  
The seasons alter: hoary-headed frosts  
Fall in the fresh lap of the crimson rose;  
And on old Hyems' chin, and icy crown,  
An odorous chaplet of sweet summer buds  
Is, as in mockery, set: The spring, the summer,  
The childing‡‡ autumn, angry winter, change  
Their wonted liveries; and the 'mazed world  
By their increase§§, now knows not which is  
And this same progeny of evils comes [which:  
From our debate, from our dissension;  
We are their parents and original.

*Obe.* Do you amend it then; it lies in you:  
Why should Titania cross her Oberon?

I do but beg a little changeling boy,  
To be my henchman|||.

*Tita.* Set your heart at rest,  
The fairy land buys not the child of me.  
His mother was a votress of my order:  
And, in the spiced Indian air, by night,  
Full often hath she gossip'd by my side;  
And set with me on Neptune's yellow sands  
Marking the embarked traders on the flood;  
When we have laugh'd to see the sails conceive  
And grow big-bellied, with the wanton wind:  
Which she, with pretty and with swimming  
gait, [squire,]

(Following her womb, then rich with my young  
Would imitate; and sail upon the land,  
To fetch me trifles, and return again,  
As from a voyage, rich with merchandise.  
But she, being mortal, of that boy did die;  
And, for her sake, I do rear up her boy:  
And, for her sake, I will not part with him.

*Obe.* How long within this wood intend  
you stay? [day]

*Tita.* Perchance, till after Theseus' wedding.

\* Shining. † Quarrel. ‡ Mill. § Yeast. || Wild Apple. ¶ Petty.

\*\* Banks which contain them. †† A game played by boys.

‡‡ Autumn producing flowers unseasonably. §§ Producce. ||| Page

If you will patiently dance in our round,  
And see our moon-light revels, go with us;  
If not, shun me, and I will spare your haunts.

*Obe.* Give me that boy, and I will go with thee.

*Tita.* Not for thy kingdom.—Fairies, away:  
We shall chide down-right, if I longer stay.

[*Exeunt TITANIA, and her train.*]

*Obe.* Well, go thy way: thou shalt not from this grove,

Till I torment thee for this injury.—[*ber'st*  
My gentle Puck, come hither: Thou remem-  
Since once I sat upon a promontory,  
And heard a mermaid, on a dolphin's back,  
Uttering such dulcet and harmonious breath,  
That the rude sea grew civil at her song;  
And certain stars shot madly from their  
To hear the sea-maid's music. [spheres,

*Puck.* I remember. [not,]

*Obe.* That very time I saw, (but thou couldst  
Flying between the cold moon and the earth,  
Cupid all arm'd: a certain aim he took  
At a fair vestal, throned by the west;  
And loos'd his love-shaft smartly from his bow,  
As it should pierce a hundred thousand hearts:  
But I might see young Cupid's fiery shaft  
Quench'd in the chaste beams of the wat'ry  
And the imperial vot'ress passed on [moon;  
In maiden meditation, fancy-free\*.  
Yet mark'd I where the bolt of Cupid fell:  
It fell upon a little western flower,—  
Before, milk-white; now purple with love's  
wound,—

And maidens call it, love-in-idleness. [once:  
Fetch me that flower; the herb I show'd thee  
The juice of it on sleeping eye-lids laid,  
Will make or man or woman madly dote  
Upon the next live creature that it sees.  
Fetch me this herb: and be thou here again,  
Ere the leviathan can swim a league.

*Puck.* I'll put a girdle round about the earth  
In forty minutes. [*Exit Puck.*]

*Obe.* Having once this juice,  
I'll watch Titania when she is asleep,  
And drop the liquor of it in her eyes:  
The next thing then she waking looks upon,  
(Be it on lion, bear, or wolf, or bull,  
On meddling monkey, or on busy ape,)  
She shall pursue it with the soul of love.  
And ere I take this charm off from her sight,  
(As I can take it, with another herb.)  
I'll make her render up her page to me.  
But who comes here? I am invisible;  
And I will over-hear their conference.

*Enter DEMETRIUS, HELENA following him.*

*Dem.* I love thee not, therefore pursue me  
Where is Lysander, and fair Hermia? [not.  
The one I'll slay, the other slayeth me.  
Thou told'st me, they were stol'n into this wood,  
And here am I, and wood't within this wood,  
Because I cannot meet with Hermia.

Hence, get thee gone, and follow me no more.

*Hel.* You draw me, you hard-hearted ada-  
mant;

But yet you draw not iron, for my heart

Is true as steel: Leave you your power to draw,  
And I shall have no power to follow you.

*Dem.* Do I entice you? Do I speak you fair?  
Or, rather, do I not in plainest truth  
Tell you—I do not, nor I cannot love you?

*Hel.* And even for that do I love you the  
I am your spaniel; and, Demetrius, [more.  
The more you beat me, I will fawn on you:  
Use me but as your spaniel, spurn me, strike  
Neglect me, lose me; only give me leave, [me,  
Unworthily as I am, to follow you.

What worse place can I beg in your love,  
(And yet a place of high respect with me,)  
Than to be used as you use your dog? [spirit;

*Dem.* Tempt not too much the hatred of my  
For I am sick, when I do look on thee.

*Hel.* And I am sick, when I look not on you.

*Dem.* You do impeach† my modesty too  
To leave the city, and commit yourself [much,  
Into the hands of one that loves you not;  
To trust the opportunity of night,  
And the ill counsel of a desert place,  
With the rich worth of your virginity.

*Hel.* Your virtue is my privilege for that.  
It is not night, when I do see your face,  
Therefore I think I am not in the night:  
Nor doth this wood lack worlds of company;  
For you, in my respect, are all the world:  
Then how can it be said, I am alone,  
When all the world is here to look on me?

*Dem.* I'll run from thee, and hide me in  
the brakes,

And leave thee to the mercy of wild beasts.

*Hel.* The wildest hath not such a heart as you.  
Run when you will, the story shall be chang'd;  
Apollo flies, and Daphne holds the chase:  
The dove pursues the griffin; the mild hind  
Makes speed to catch the tiger: Bootless speed I  
When cowardice pursues, and valour flies.

*Dem.* I will not stay thy questions; let me  
Or, if thou follow me, do not believe [go:  
But I shall do thee mischief in the wood.

*Hel.* Ay, in the temple, in the town, the  
You do me mischief. Fie, Demetrius! [field,  
Your wrongs do set a scandal on my sex:  
We cannot fight for love, as men may do;  
We should be woo'd, and were not made to woo.  
I'll follow thee, and make a heaven of hell,  
To die upon the hand I love so well.

[*Exeunt DEM. and HEL.*]

*Obe.* Fare thee well, nymph: ere he do leave  
this grove, [love.—  
Thou shalt fly him, and he shall seek thy

*Re-enter Puck.* Hast thou the flower there? Welcome, wan-  
Puck. Ay, there it is. [derer.

*Obe.* I pray thee, give it me.  
I know a bank whereon the wild thyme blows,  
Where ox-lips and the nodding violet grows;  
Quite over-canopied with lush woodbine,  
With sweet musk roses, and with eglantine:  
There sleeps Titania, some time of the night,  
Lull'd in these flowers with dances and delight;  
And there the snake throws her enamell'd skin,  
Weed wide enough to wrap a fairy in:

\* Exempt from love.

† Mad. raving.

‡ Bring in question.

§ By.

¶ The greater cowardice.

‡ Vigorous.



And with the juice of this I'll streak her eyes,  
And make her full of hateful fantasies.

Take thou some of it, and seek through this  
A sweet Athenian lady is in love [grove:  
With a disdainful youth: anoint his eyes;  
But do it, when the next thing he espies  
May be the lady: Thou shalt know the man  
By the Athenian garments he hath on.  
Effect it with some care; that he may prove  
More fond on her, than she upon her love:  
And look thou meet me ere the first cock crow.

*Puck.* Fear not, my lord, your servant shall  
do so. [Exeunt.

### SCENE III. Another part of the Wood.

*Enter TITANIA, with her train.*

*Tita.* Come, now a roundel\*, and a fairy song;  
Then, for the third part of a minute, hence;  
Some, to kill cankers in the musk-rose buds;  
Some, war with rear-mice† for their leathern  
wings, [back  
To make my small elves coats; and some, keep  
The clamorous owl, that nightly hoots, and  
wonders

At our quaint spirits‡: Sing me now asleep;  
Then to your offices, and let me rest.

#### SONG.

1 *Fai.* You spotted snakes, with double  
tongue,  
Thorny hedge-hogs, be not seen;  
Newts§, and blind-worms||, do no wrong;  
Come not near our fairy queen:

*CHORUS. Philomel, with melody,  
Sing in our sweet lullaby;  
Lulla, lulla, lullaby; lulla, lulla, lullaby:  
Never harm, nor spell, nor charm,  
Come our lovely lady nigh;  
So, good night, with lullaby.*

2 *Fai.* Weaving spiders, come not here;  
Hence, you long-legg'd spinners, hence:  
Beetles black, approach not near;  
Worm, nor snail, do no offence.

*CHORUS. Philomel, with melody, &c.*

1 *Fai.* Hence, away; now all is well:  
Oue, aloof, stand sentinel.

[Exeunt Fairies. TITANIA sleeps.

*Enter OBERON.*

*Obe.* What thou seest, when thou dost wake,  
[Squeezes the flower on TITANIA's eye-lids.  
Do it for thy true love take;  
Love and languish for his sake:  
Be it ounce¶, or cat, or bear,  
Pard, or boar with bristled hair,  
In thy eye that shall appear  
When thou wak'st, it is thy dear; }  
Wake, when some vile thing is near. } *Exit.*

*Enter LYSANDER and HERMIA.*

*Lys.* Fair love, you faint with wandering  
in the wood;

And to speak troth, I have forgot our way;  
We'll rest us, Hermia, if you think it good,  
And tarry for the comfort of the day.

*Her.* Be it so, Lysander: find you out a bed,  
For I upon this bank will rest my head.

*Lys.* One turf shall serve as pillow for us both;  
One heart, one bed, two bosoms, and one troth.

*Her.* Nay, good Lysander; for my sake,  
Lie further off yet, do not lie so near. [my dear,

*Lys.* O, take the sense, sweet, of my innocence;  
Love takes the meaning, in love's conference.  
I mean, that my heart unto yours is knit;

So that but one heart we can make of it:

Two bosoms interchain'd with an oath;

So then, two bosoms, and a single troth.

Then, by your side no bed-room me deny;

For, lying so, Hermia, I do not lie.

*Her.* Lysander riddles very prettily:—  
Now much beshrew my manners and my pride,

If Hermia meant to say, Lysander lied.

But, gentle friend, for love and courtesy

Lie further off; in human modesty

Such separation, as, may well be said,

Becomes a virtuous bachelor and a maid:

So far be distant; and good night, sweet friend!

Thy love ne'er alter, till thy sweet life end!

*Lys.* Amen, amen, to that fair prayer, say I;

And then end life, when I end loyalty!

Here is my bed; Sleep give thee all his rest!

*Her.* With half that wish the wisher's eyes  
be press'd! [They sleep.

*Enter PUCK.*

*Puck.* Through the forest have I gone,  
But Athenian found I none,

On whose eyes I might approve

This flower's force in stirring love.

Night and silence! who is here?

Weeds of Athens he doth wear:

This is he, my master said,

Despised the Athenian maid;

And here the maiden, sleeping sound,

On the dank and dirty ground.

Pretty soul! she durst not lie

Near this lack-love, kill-courtesy.

Churl, upon thy eyes I throw

All the power this charm doth owe:\*\*

When thou wak'st, let love forbid

Sleep his seat on thy eye-lid.

So awake, when I am gone;

For I must now to Oberon. [Exit.

*Enter DEMETRIUS and HELENA, running.*

*Hel.* Stay, though thou kill me, sweet De-  
metrius, [haunt me thus.

*Dem.* I charge thee, hence, and do not

*Hel.* O, wilt thou darkling†† leave me? do  
not so.

*Dem.* Stay, on thy peril; I alone will go.

[Exit DEMETRIUS.

*Hel.* O, I am out of breath in this fond chase!

The more my prayer, the lesser is my grace.

Happy is Hermia, wheresoe'er she lies;

For she hath blessed and attractive eyes. [tears;

How came her eyes so bright? Not with salt

If so, my eyes are oftener wash'd than hers.

No, no, I am as ugly as a bear;

For beasts that meet me, run away for fear:

Therefore, no marvel, though Demetrius

Do, as a monster, fly my presence thus.

What wicked and dissembling glass of mine

Made me compare with Hermia's sphery eye!—

\* A kind of dance.

† Bats.

‡ Sports.

§ Efts.

|| Slow-worms.

¶ The small tiger.

\*\* Possess.

†† In the dark.

But who is here?—Lysander! on the ground!  
Dead! or asleep? I see no blood, no wound:—  
Lysander, if you live, good sir, awake.

*Lys.* And run through fire I will, for thy  
sweet sake, [Waking.

Transparent Helena! Nature here shows art,  
That through thy bosom makes me see thy heart.  
Where is Demetrius? O, how fit a word  
Is that vile name, to perish on my sword!

*Hel.* Do not say so, Lysander; say not so:  
What though he love your Hermia? Lord,  
what though?

Yet Hermia still loves you: then be content.

*Lys.* Content with Hermia? No: I do repent  
The tedious minutes I with her have spent.

Not Hermia, but Helena I love:

Who will not change a raven for a dove?

The will of man is by his reason sway'd;

And reason says you are the worthier maid.

Things growing are not ripe until their season:

So I, being young, till now ripe not to reason;

And touching now the point of human skill,

Reason becomes the marshal to my will,

And leads me to your eyes; where I o'erlook

Love's stories written in love's richest book.

*Hel.* Wherefore was I to this keen mockery  
born?

When, at your hands, did I deserve this scorn?

Is't not enough, is't not enough, young man,

That I did never, no, nor never can,

Deserve a sweet look from Demetrius' eye,

But you must float my insufficiency? [do,  
Good troth, you do me wrong, good sooth, you  
In such disdainful manner me to woo.

But fare you well: perforce I must confess,  
I thought you lord of more true gentleness.

O, that a lady, of one man refus'd,  
Should, of another, therefore be abus'd! [Exit.

*Lys.* She sees not Hermia:—Hermia, sleep  
thou there;

And never mayst thou come Lysander near!

For, as a surfeit of the sweetest things

The deepest loathing to the stomach brings;

Or, as the heresies, that men do leave,

Are hated most of those they did deceive;

So thou, my surfeit, and my heresy,

Of all be hated; but the most of me! [might,

And all my powers, address your love and

To honour Helen, and to be her knight! [Exit.

*Her.* [starting.] Help me, Lysander, help  
me! do thy best,

To pluck this crawling serpent from my breast!

Ah me, for pity!—what a dream was here?

Lysander, look, how I do quake with fear:

Methought a serpent eat my heart away,

And you sat smiling at his cruel prey:—

Lysander! what, remov'd? Lysander! lord!

What, out of hearing? gone? no sound, no word!

Alack, where are you? speak, an if you hear;

Speak, of all loves\*; I swoon almost with fear.

No!—then I well perceive you are not nigh:

Either death, or you, I'll find immediately. [Exit.

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *The same. The Queen of  
Fairies lying asleep.*

Enter QUINCE, SNUG, BOTTOM, FLUTE,  
SNOUT, and STARVELING.

*Bot.* Are we all met?

*Quin.* Pat, pat; and here's a marvellous  
convenient place for our rehearsal: This green  
plot shall be our stage, this hawthorn brake  
our tiring-house; and we will do it in action,  
as we will do it before the duke.

*Bot.* Peter Quince,—

*Quin.* What sayst thou, bully Bottom?

*Bot.* There are things in this comedy of  
*Pyramus and Thisby*, that will never please.  
First, Pyramus must draw a sword to kill  
himself; which the ladies cannot abide. How  
answer you that?

*Snout.* By'r'lakin† a parlous‡ fear.

*Star.* I believe, we must leave the killing  
out, when all is done.

*Bot.* Not a whit; I have a device to make  
all well. Write me a prologue: and let the  
prologue seem to say, we will do no harm  
with our swords; and that Pyramus is not  
killed indeed: and, for the more better assur-  
ance, tell them, that I Pyramus am not Pyra-  
mus, but Bottom the weaver: This will put  
them out of fear.

*Quin.* Well, we will have such a prologue;  
and it shall be written in eight and six.—

*Bot.* No, make it two more, let it be  
written in eight and eight.

*Snout.* Will not the ladies be afeard of the  
lion?

*Star.* I fear it, I promise you.

*Bot.* Masters, you ought to consider with  
yourselves: to bring in, God shield us! a lion  
among ladies, is a most dreadful thing; for  
there is not a more fearful§ wild-fowl than  
your lion, living; and we ought to look to it.

*Snout.* Therefore, another prologue must  
tell, he is not a lion.

*Bot.* Nay, you must name his name, and  
half his face must be seen through the lion's  
neck; and he himself must speak through,  
saying thus, or to the same defect,—Ladies, or  
fair ladies, I would wish you, or, I would re-  
quest you, or, I would entreat you, not to fear,  
not to tremble: my life for yours. If you  
think I come hither as a lion, it were pity of  
my life: No, I am no such thing; I am a man  
as other men are:—and there, indeed, let him  
name his name; and tell them plainly, he is  
Snug the joiner.

*Quin.* Well, it shall be so. But there is  
two hard things; that is, to bring the moon-  
light into a chamber: for you know, Pyramus  
and Thisby meet by moon-light.

*Snug.* Doth the moon shine, that night we  
play our play?

*Bot.* A calendar, a calendar! look in the

\* By all that is dear. † By our ladykin. ‡ Dangerous. § Terrible.

almanack; find out moon-shine, find out moon-shine.

*Quin.* Yes, it doth shine that night.

*Bot.* Why, then you may leave a casement of the great chamber window, where we play, open; and the moon may shine in at the casement.

*Quin.* Ay; or else one must come in with a bush of thorns and a lantern, and say, he comes to disfigure, or to present, the person of moon-shine. Then, there is another thing: we must have a wall in the great chamber; for Pyramus and Thisby, says the story, did talk through the chink of a wall.

*Sng.* You never can bring in a wall.—What say you, Bottom?

*Bot.* Some man or other must present wall: and let him have some plaster, or some lome, or some rough-cast about him, to signify wall; or let him hold his fingers thus, and through that cranny shall Pyramus and Thisby whisper.

*Quin.* If that may be, then all is well. Come, sit down, every mother's son, and rehearse your parts. Pyramus, you begin: when you have spoken your speech, enter into that brake\* and so every one according to his cue.

*Enter Puck behind.*

*Puck.* What hempen home-spuns have we swaggering here,

So near the cradle of the fairy queen?

What, a play toward? I'll be an auditor;

An actor too, perhaps, if I see cause.

*Quin.* Speak, Pyramus:—Thisby, stand forth.

*Pyr.* Thisby, the flowers of odious savours

*Quin.* Odours, odours. [*Sweet,—*

*Pyr.* — odours savours sweet:

*So doth thy breath, my dearest Thisby dear.—*

*But, hark, a voice! stay thou but here a while,*

*And by and by I will to thee appear.* [*Exit.*

*Puck.* A stranger Pyramus than e'er play'd here! [*Aside.—Exit.*

*This.* Must I speak now?

*Quin.* Ay, marry, must you: for you must understand, he goes but to see a noise that he heard, and is to come again.

*This.* Most radiant Pyramus, most lily-white of hue, [*brier,*

*Of colour like the red rose on triumphant*

*Most briskly juvenal†, and eke most lovely*

*Jew,* [*never tire,*

*As true as truest horse, that yet would*

*I'll meet thee, Pyramus, at Ninus' tomb.*

*Quin.* Ninus' tomb, man: Why you must not speak that yet; that you answer to Pyramus: you speak all your part at once, cues‡, and all.—Pyramus enter; your cue is past; it is, *never tire.*

*Re-enter Puck, and Bottom with an ass's head.*

*This.* O,—*As true as truest horse, that yet would never tire.* [*Thine:—*

*Pyr.* *If I were fair, Thisby, I were only*

*Quin.* O monstrous! O strange! we are haunted, Pray, masters! fly, masters! help!

*Exeunt Clowns.*

*Puck.* I'll follow you, I'll lead you about a round, [*through brier;*  
Through bog, through bush, through brake,  
Sometime a horse I'll be, sometime a hound,  
A hog, a headless bear, sometime a fire;  
And neigh, and bark, and grunt, and roar, and burn,  
Like horse, hound, hog, bear, fire, at every turn.

[*Exit.*

*Bot.* Why do they run away? this is a knavery of them, to make me afraid.

*Re-enter SNOUT.*

*Snout.* O Bottom, thou art changed! what do I see on thee?

*Bot.* What do you see? you see an ass's head of your own; Do you?

*Re-enter QUINCE.*

*Quin.* Bless thee, Bottom! bless thee! thou art translated. [*Exit.*

*Bot.* I see their knavery: this is to make an ass of me; to fright me, if they could. But I will not stir from this place, do what they can: I will walk up and down here, and I will sing, that they shall hear I am not afraid. [*Sings.*

*The ouzel-cock, so black of hue,*

*With orange-tawny bill,*

*The throstle with his note so true,*

*The wren with little quill:—*

*Tita.* What angel wakes me from my flowery bed? [*Waking.*

*Bot.* The finch, the sparrow, and the lark,  
*The plain-song cuckoo|| gray,*

*Whose note full many a man doth mark,*

*And dures not answer, nay,—*

for, indeed, who would set his wit to so foolish a bird? who would give a bird the lie, though he cry, cuckoo, never so?

*Tita.* I pray thee, gentle mortal, sing again: Mine ear is much enamour'd of thy note, So is mine eye intrall'd to thy shape; [me, And thy fair virtue's force perforce doth move On the first view, to say, to swear, I love thee.

*Bot.* Methinks, mistress, you should have little reason for that: And yet, to say the truth, reason and love keep little company together now-a-days: The more the pity, that some honest neighbours will not make them friends. Nay, I can gleek¶ upon occasion.

*Tita.* Thou art as wise as thou art beautiful.

*Bot.* Not so, neither: but if I had wit enough to get out of this wood, I have enough to serve mine own turn.

*Tita.* Out of this wood do not desire to go; Thou shalt remain here, whether thou wilt or no. I am a spirit, of no common rate; The summer still doth tend upon my state, And I do love thee: therefore, go with me; I'll give thee fairies to attend on thee; And they shall fetch thee jewels from the deep: And sing, while thou on pressed flowers dost sleep:

And I will purge thy mortal grossness so, That thou shalt like an airy spirit go. [seed! Peas blossom! Cebweb! Moth! and Mustard-

\* Thicket. † Young man. ‡ The last words of the preceding speech, which serve as a hint to him who is to speak next. § Afraid. || The cuckoo with his uniform note. ¶ Joke



*Enter four Fairies.*

1 *Fai.* Ready.

2 *Fai.* And I.

3 *Fai.* And I.

4 *Fai.* Where shall we go?

*Tita.* Be kind and courteous to this gentleman;  
Hop in his walks, and gambol in his eyes;  
Feed him with apricocks and dewberries\*,  
With purple grapes, green figs, and mulberries;  
The honey-bags steal from the humble-bees,  
And, for night tapers, crop their waxen thighs,  
And light them at the fiery glow-worm's eyes,  
To have my love to bed, and to arise;  
And pluck the wings from painted butterflies,  
To fan the moon-beams from his sleeping eyes:  
Nod to him, elves, and do him courtesies.

1 *Fai.* Hail, mortal!

2 *Fai.* Hail!

3 *Fai.* Hail

4 *Fai.* Hail!

*Bot.* I cry your worship's mercy, heartily.  
—I beseech, your worship's name.

*Cob.* Cobweb.

*Bot.* I shall desire you of more acquaintance,  
good master Cobweb: If I cut my finger,  
I shall make bold with you.—Your name,  
honest gentleman?

*Peas.* Peas-blossom.

*Bot.* I pray you, commend me to mistress  
Squash, your mother, and to master Peascod,  
your father. Good master Peas-blossom, I  
shall desire you of more acquaintance too.—  
Your name, I beseech you, sir?

*Mus.* Mustard-seed.

*Bot.* Good master Mustard-seed, I know  
your patience well: that same cowardly, giant-like  
ox-beef hath devoured many a gentleman  
of your house: I promise you, your kindred  
bath made my eyes water ere now. I desire you  
more acquaintance, good master Mustard-seed.

*Tita.* Come, wait upon him; lead him to  
my bower.

The moon, methinks, looks with a watery  
And when she weeps, weeps every little flower,  
Lamenting some enforced chastity,

Tie up my love's tongue, bring him silently.

[*Eceunt.*]

SCENE II. *Another part of the Wood.*

*Enter OBERON.*

*Ob.* I wonder, if Titania be awak'd;  
Then, what it was that next came in her eye,  
Which she must dote on in extremity.

*Enter PUCK.* [spirit?]  
Here comes my messenger.—How now, mad  
What night-rulet now about this haunted grove?

*Puck.* My mistress with a monster is in love.  
Near to her close and con-secrated bower,  
While she was in her dull and sleeping hour,  
A crew of patches, rude mechanicals,  
That work for bread upon Athenian stalls,  
Were met together to rehearse a play,  
Intended for great Thesens' nuptial day.  
The shallowest thick skin of that barren sort\$,  
Who Pyramus presented, in their sport

Forsook his scene, and enter'd in a brake:

When I did him at this advantage take,  
An ass's now! I fixed on his head;  
Anon, his Thisbe must be answered, [him spy  
And forth my mimic comes: When they  
As wild geese that the creeping fowler eye,  
Or russet-pated choughs, many in sort,  
Rising and cawing at the gun's report,  
Sever themselves, and madly sweep the sky;  
So, at his sight, away his fellows fly:  
And, at our stamp, here o'er and o'er one falls;  
He murder cries, and help from Athens calls.  
Their sense, thus weak, lost with their fears,  
thus strong,

Made senseless things begin to do them wrong:  
For briars and thorns at their apparel snatch;  
Some, sleeves; some, hats; from yielders all  
things catch.

I led them on in this distracted fear,  
And left sweet Pyramus translated there:  
When in that moment (so it came to pass,)  
Titania wak'd, and straightway lov'd an ass.

*Ob.* This falls out better than I could devise.  
But hast thou yet latch'd\*\* the Athenian's eyes  
With the love-juice, as I did bid thee do?

*Puck.* I took him sleeping,—that is finish'd  
And the Athenian woman by his side; [too,—  
That, when he wak'd, of force she must be ey'd.

*Enter DEMETRIUS and HERMIA.*

*Ob.* Stand close; this is the same Athenian.  
*Puck.* This is the woman, but not this the man.

*Dem.* O, why rebuke you him that loves you  
Lay breath so bitter on your bitter foe. [so?

*Her.* Now I but chide, but I should use  
thee worse;

For thou, I fear, hast given me cause to curse.  
If thou hast slain Lysander in his sleep,  
Being o'er shoes in blood, plunge in the deep,  
And kill me too.

The sun was not so true unto the day,  
As he to me: Would he have stol'n away  
From sleeping Hermia? I'll believe as soon,  
This whole earth may be bor'd; and that the  
moon

May through the centre creep, and so displease  
Her brother's noon-tide with the Antipodes.  
It cannot be, but thou hast murder'd him;  
So should a murderer look; so dead, so grisly.

*Dem.* So should the murder'd look; and I  
should I, [elty

Plerc'd through the heart with your stern cry  
Yet you, the murderer, look as bright, as clear  
As yonder Venus in her glimmering sphere.

*Her.* What's this to my Lysander? where is he,  
Ah, good Demetrius, wilt thou give him me?

*Dem.* I had rather give his carcase to my  
hounds. [past the bounds

*Her.* Out, dog! out, cur! thou driv'st me  
Of maiden's patience. Hast thou slain him then?  
Henceforth be never number'd among men!  
O! once tell true, tell true, even for my sake;  
Durst thou have look'd upon him, being awake,  
And hast thou kill'd him sleeping? O brave  
touch ††!

Could not a worm, an adder, do so much? †

\* Gooseberries. † Revelry. ‡ Simple fellows. § Stupid company. || Head.  
¶ Actor. \*\* Infected †† Exploit.

An adder did it; for with doubler tongue  
Than thine, thou serpent, never adder stung.

*Dem.* You spend your passion on a mis-  
pris'd\* mood:

I am not guilty of Lysander's blood;  
Nor is he dead, for aught that I can tell.

*Her.* I pray thee, tell me then that he is  
well. [therefore?

*Dem.* And if I could, what should I get

*Her.* A privilege, never to see me more.—  
And from thy hated presence part I so:

See me no more, whether he be dead or no. [Ex.  
*Dem.* There is no following her in this fierce  
Here, therefore, for a while I will remain. [vein:  
So sorrow's heaviness doth heavier grow  
For debt that bankrupt sleep doth sorrow owe;  
Which now, in some slight measure it will  
If for his tender here I make some stay. [pay,  
[Lies down.

*Obe.* What hast thou done? thou hast mis-  
taken quite, [sight:

And laid the love juice on some true-love's  
Of thy misprision must perforce ensue [true,  
Some true-love turn'd, and not a false turn'd

*Puck.* Then fate o'er-rules; that, one man  
holding troth,

A million fail, confounding oath on oath.

*Obe.* About the wood go swifter than the  
And Helena of Athens look thou find: [wind,  
All fancy sick† she is, and pale of cheer‡  
With sighs of love, that cost the fresh blood  
By some illusion see thou bring her here; [dear:  
I'll charm his eyes, against she do appear.

*Puck.* I go, I go; look, how I go;  
Swifter than arrow from the Tartar's bow. [Exit.

*Obe.* Flower of this purple die,  
Hit with Cupid's archery,  
Sink in apple of his eye!  
When his love he doth espy,  
Let her shine as gloriously  
As the Venus of the sky.—  
When thou wak'st, if she be by,  
Beg of her for remedy.

*Re-enter Puck.*

*Puck.* Captain of our fairy band,  
Helena is here at hand;  
And the youth, mistook by me,  
Pleading for a lover's fee;  
Shall we their fond pageant see?  
Lord, what fools these mortals be!

*Obe.* Stand aside: the noise they make,  
Will cause Demetrius to awake.

*Puck.* Then will two at once, woo one;  
That must nee's be sport alone;  
And those things do best please me,  
That befall preposterously.

*Enter LYSANDER and HELENA.*

*Lys.* Why should you think, that I should  
woo in scorn?

Scorn and derision never come in tears:  
Look, when I vow, I weep; and vows so born,  
In their nativity all truth appears.

How can these things in me seem scorn to you,  
Bearing the badge of faith, to prove them true?

*Hel.* You do advance your cunning more  
and more.

When truth kills truth, O devilish holy fray!  
These vows are Hermia's; Will you give her  
o'er? [weigh:

Weigh oath with oath, and you will nothing  
Your vows, to her and me, put in two scales,  
Will even weigh, and both as light as tales.

*Lys.* I had no judgment, when to her I  
swore. [her o'er.

*Hel.* Nor none, in my mind, now you give

*Lys.* Demetrius loves her, and he loves not  
you. [perfect, divine!

*Dem.* [awaking.] O Helen, goddess, nymph,  
To what, my love, shall I compare thine eye?

Crytal is muddy. O, how ripe in show  
Thy lips, those kissing cherries, tempting grow!  
That pure congealed white, high Taurus' snow,  
Fann'd with the eastern wind turns to a crow,  
When thou hold'st up thy hand: O let me kiss  
This princess of pure white, this seal of bliss!

*Hel.* O spite! O hell! I see you all are bent  
To set against me, for your merriment.

If you were civil, and knew courtesy,  
You would not do me thus much injury.

Can you not hate me, as I know you do,  
But you must join, in souls\$, to mock me too?

If you were men, as men you are in show,  
You would not use a gentle lady so;

To vow, and swear, and superpraise my parts,  
When, I am sure, you hate me with your hearts.

You both are rivals, and love Hermia;  
And now both rivals, to mock Helena:

A trim exploit, a manly enterprize,  
To conjure tears up in a poor maid's eyes,

With your derision! none, of noble sort||,  
Would so offend a virgin; and extort

A poor soul's patience, all to make you sport.

*Lys.* You are unkind, Demetrius; be not so;  
For you love Hermia! this, you know, I know:

And here, with all good will, with all my heart,  
In Hermia's love I yield you up my part;

And yours of Helena to me bequeath,  
Whom I do love, and will do to my death.

*Hel.* Never did mockers waste more idle  
breath. [none:

*Dem.* Lysander, keep thy Hermia; I will  
If e'er I lov'd her, all that love is gone.

My heart with her but, as guest-wise, sojourn'd;  
And now to Helen is it home return'd,  
There to remain.

*Lys.* Helen, it is not so.

*Dem.* Disparage not the faith thou dost not  
Lest, to thy peril, thou aby it dear¶. [know,

Look, where thy love comes; yonder is thy dear.

*Enter HERMIA.* [tion takes,

*Her.* Dark night, that from the eye his func-  
The ear more quick of apprehension makes;

Wherein it doth impair the seeing sense.  
It pays the hearing double recompense:—

Thou art not by mine eye, Lysander, found;  
Mine ear, I thank it, brought me to thy sound.

But why unkindly didst thou leave me so?

*Lys.* Why should he stay, whom love doth  
press to go? [my side?

*Her.* What love could press Lysander from  
*Lys.* Lysander's love, that would not let him  
bide,

\* Mistaken. † Love-sick. ‡ Countenance. § Heartily. || Degree. ¶ Pay dearly for it.

Fair Helena; who more engilds the night  
Than all you fiery oes \* and eyes of light.  
Why seek'st thou me? could not this make thee  
know,

The hate I bear thee made me leave thee so?

*Her.* You speak not as you think; it cannot

*Hel.* Lo, she is one of this confederacy! [be.  
Now I perceive they have conjoin'd, all three,  
To fashion this false sport in spite of me.  
Injurious Hermia! most ungrateful maid!  
Have you conspir'd, have you with these con-  
To bait me with this foul derision? [triv'd  
Is all the counsel that we two have shar'd,  
The sisters' vows, the hours that we have spent,  
When we have chid the hasty-footed time  
For parting us,—O, and is all forgot?  
All school-days' friendship, childhood inno-  
cence?

We, Hermia, like two artificial† gods,  
Have with our needles‡ created both one flower,  
Both on one sampler, sitting on one cushion,  
Both warbling of one song, b. th in one key;  
As if our hands, our sides, voices, and minds,  
Had been incorporate. So we grew together,  
Like to a double cherry, seeming parted;  
But yet a union in partition,  
Two lovely berries moulded on one stem;  
So, with two seeming bodies, but one heart;  
Two of the first, like coats in heraldry,  
Due but to one, and crowned with one crest.  
And will you rent our ancient love asunder,  
To join with men in scorning your poor friend?  
It is not friendly, 'tis not maidenly:  
Our sex, as well as I, may chide you for it;  
Though I alone do feel the injury.

*Her.* I am amazed at your passionate words:  
I scorn you not; it seems that you scorn me.

*Hel.* Have you not set Lysander, as in scorn,  
To follow me, and praise my eyes and face?  
And made your other love, Demetrius,  
(Who even but now did spurn me with his foot,)  
To call me goddess, nymph, divine, and rare,  
Precious, celestial? Wherefore speaks he this  
To her he hates? and wherefore doth Lysander  
Deny your love, so rich within his soul,  
And tender me, forsooth, affection;  
But by your setting on, by your consent?  
What though I be not so in grace as you,  
So hang upon with love, so fortunate;  
But miserable most, to love unlov'd?  
This you should pity, rather than despise.

*Her.* I understand not what you mean by this.

*Hel.* Ay, do, persevere, counterfeit sad looks,  
Make mows‡ upon me when I turn my back;  
Wink at each other; hold the sweet jest up;  
This sport, well carried, shall be chronicled.  
If you have any pity, grace, or manners,  
You would not make me such an argument.  
But, fare ye well: 'tis partly mine own fault;  
Which death, or absence, soon shall remedy.

*Lys.* Stay, gentle Helena; hear my excuse;  
My love, my life, my soul, fair Helena!

*Hel.* O excellent!

*Her.* Sweet, do not scorn her so.

*Dem.* If she cannot entreat, I can compel.

*Lys.* Thou canst compel no more than she  
entreat; [weak prayers.—

Thy threats have no more strength, than her  
Helen, I love thee; by my life, I do;  
I swear by that which I will lose for thee,  
To prove him false, that says I love thee not.

*Dem.* I say, I love thee more than he can do.

*Lys.* If thou say so, withdraw, and prove

*Dem.* Quick, come,— [it too.

*Her.* Lysander, whereto tends all this?

*Lys.* Away, you Ethiop!

*Dem.* No, no, sir:—he will  
Seem to break loose; take on, as you would  
follow;

But yet come not: You are a tame man, go!

*Lys.* Hang off, thou cat, thou burr: vile  
thing let loose;

Or I will shake thee from me, like a serpent.

*Her.* Why are you grown so rude? what  
Sweet love? [change is this,

*Lys.* Thy love? out, tawny Tartar, out!

Out, loathed medicine! hated potion, hence!

*Her.* Do you not jest?

*Hel.* Yes, 'sooth; and so do you.

*Lys.* Demetrius, I will keep my word with  
thee. [ceive,

*Dem.* I would, I had your bond; for, I per-  
A weak bond holds you; I'll not trust your  
word. [kill her dead?

*Lys.* What should I hurt her, strike her,  
Although I hate her, I'll not harm her so.

*Her.* What, can you do me greater harm,  
than hate? [love?

Hate me! wherefore? O me! what news, my  
Am not I Hermia? Are not you Lysander?

I am as fair now, as I was erewhile. [left me:  
Since night, you lov'd me; yet, since night you  
Why, then you left me,—O, the gods forbid!—

In earnest, shall I say?

*Lys.* Ay, by my life;

And never did desire to see thee more.

Therefore, be out of hope, of question, doubt,  
Be certain, nothing truer; 'tis no jest,

That I do hate thee, and love Helena. [som||

*Her.* O me! you juggler! you canker-blos-  
You thief of love! what, have you come by  
And stolen my love's heart from him? [night,

*Hel.* Fine, 'faith!

Have you no modesty, no maiden shame,  
No touch of bashfulness? What, will you tear  
Impatient answers from my gentle tongue?

Fie, fie! you counterfeit, you puppet you! [game.

*Her.* Puppet! why so? Ay, that way goes the  
Now I perceive that she hath made compare  
Between our statues, she hath urg'd her height;  
And with her personage, her tall personage,  
Her height, forsooth, she hath prevail'd with  
him.—

And are you grown so high in his esteem,  
Because I am so dwarfish, and so low?

How low am I? thou painted maypole? speak;

How low am I? I am not yet so low,

But that my nails can reach unto thine eyes.

*Hel.* I pray you, though you mock me, gentle-  
Let her not hurt me: I was never curst; [men,

\* Circles. † Ingenious. ‡ Needles. § Wry faces. || A worm that preys on  
buds of flowers. ¶ Shrewish or mischievous.



I have no gift at all in shrewishness ;  
I am a right maid for my cowardice ; [think,  
Let her not strike me : You, perhaps, may  
Because she's something lower than myself,  
That I can match her.

*Her.* Lower ! hark, again.

*Hel.* Good Hermia, do not be so bitter with  
I evermore did love you, Hermia, [me,  
Did ever keep your counsels, never wrong'd  
I have, that, in love unto Demetrius, [you ;  
I told him of your stealth unto this wood :  
He follow'd you ; for love, I follow'd him.  
But he hath chid me hence ; and threaten'd me  
To strike me, spurn me, nay, to kill me too :  
And now, so you will let me quiet go,  
To Athens will I bear my folly back,  
And follow you no further : Let me go :  
You see how simple and how fond\* I am.

*Her.* Why, get you gone : Who is't that  
hinders you ? [hind.

*Hel.* A foolish heart, that I leave here be-

*Her.* What, with Lysander ?

*Hel.* With Demetrius.

*Lys.* Be not afraid : she shall not harm thee,  
Helena. [take her part.

*Dem.* No, sir ; she shall not, though you

*Hel.* O, when she's angry, she is keen and  
shrewd :

She was a vixen, when she went to school ;  
And, though she be but little, she is fierce.

*Her.* Little again? nothing but low and little?—  
Why will you suffer her to flout me thus?  
Let me come to her.

*Lys.* Get you gone, you dwarf ;  
You minimus, of hind'ring knot-grass† made ;  
You bead, you acorn.

*Dem.* You are too officious,  
In her behalf that scorns your services.

Let her alone ; speak not of Helena ;

Take not her part : for if thou dost intend‡

Never so little show of love to her,

Thou shalt aby it.

*Lys.* Now she holds me not ;  
Now follow, if thou dar'st, to try whose right,  
Or thine or mine, is most in Helena.

*Dem.* Follow ? nay, I'll go with thee, cheek  
by jole. [Exit Lys. and Dem.

*Her.* You, mistress, all this coil is 'long of you :  
Nay, go not back.

*Hel.* I will not trust you, I ;

Nor longer stay in your curst company.  
Your hands, than mine, are quicker for a fray ;

My legs are longer though, to run away. [Exit.

*Her.* I am amaz'd, and know not what to say.  
[Exit, pursuing HELENA.

*Obe.* This is thy negligence : still thou  
mistak'st,

Or else committ'st thy knaveries wilfully.

*Puck.* Believe me, king of shadows, I  
mistook.

Did not you tell me, I should know the man  
By the Athenian garments he had on ?

And so far blameless proves my enterprise,  
That I have 'nointed an Athenian's eyes :

And so far am I glad it so did sort §,  
As this their jangling I esteem a sport.

*Obe.* Thou seest, these lovers seek a place  
to fight :

Hie therefore, Robin, overcast the night ;

The starry welkin cover thou anon

With drooping fog, as black as Acheron ;

And lead these testy rivals so astray,

As one come not within another's way.

Like to Lysander sometime frame thy tongue,

Then stir Demetrius up with bitter wrong ;

And sometime rail thou like Demetrius ;

And from each other look thou lead them thus,

Till o'er their brows death-counterfeiting sleep

With leaden legs and batty wings doth creep :

Then crush this herb into Lysander's eye ;

Whose liquor hath this virtuous property ¶,

To take from thence all error, with his might,

And make his eye-balls roll with wonted sight.

When they next wake, all this derision

Shall seem a dream, and fruitless vision ;

And back to Athens shall the lovers wend ¶,

With league, whose date till death shall never

Whiles I in this affair do thee employ, [end.

I'll to my queen, and beg her Indian boy ;

And then I will her charmed eye release

From monster's view, and all things shall be  
peace. [haste ;

*Puck.* My fairy lord, this must be done with  
For night's swift dragons cut the clouds full  
And yonder shines Aurora's harbinger ; [fast,  
At whose approach, ghosts, wandering here  
and there,

Troop home to church-yards : damned spirits  
That in cross-ways and floods have burial, [all,  
Already to their wormy beds are gone ;  
For fear lest day should look their shames upon,  
They wilfully themselves exile from light,  
And must for aye consort with black-brow'd  
night.

*Obe.* But we are spirits of another sort :

I with the Morning's Love\*\* have oft made  
sport ;

And, like a forester, the groves may tread,

Even till the eastern gate, all fiery red,

Opening on Neptune with fair blessed beams,

Turns into yellow gold his salt-green streams.

But, notwithstanding, haste ; make no delay :

We may effect this business yet ere day.

[Exit OBERON.

*Puck.* Up and down, up and down ;

I will lead them up and down :

I am fear'd in field and town ;

Goblin, lead them up and down.

Here comes one.

Enter LYSANDER.

*Lys.* Where art thou, proud Demetrius ?  
speak thou now. [Where art thou ?

*Puck.* Here, villain ; drawn and ready.

*Lys.* I will be with thee straight.

*Puck.* Follow me then

To plainer ground.

[Exit Lys. as following the voice.

\* Foolish. † Anciently, knot-grass was believed to prevent the growth of children.

‡ Pretend.

§ Happen.

¶ Medicinal efficacy.

¶ Go

\*\* Cephalus, the paramour of Aurora.

*Enter DEMETRIUS.*

*Dem.* Lysander! speak again.  
Thou runaway, thou coward, art thou fled?  
Speak. In some bush? Where dost thou hide  
thy head? [the stars,

*Puck.* Thou coward, art thou bragging to  
Telling the bushes that thou look'st for wars,  
And wilt not come? Come, recreant; come,  
thou child;  
I'll whip thee with a rod: He is defil'd,  
That draws a sword on thee.

*Dem.* Yea; art thou there?

*Puck.* Follow my voice; we'll try no  
manhood here. [Exit.

*Re-enter LYSANDER.*

*Lys.* He goes before me, and still dares me on;  
When I come where he calls, then he is  
gone.

The villain is much lighter heel'd than I:  
I follow'd fast, but faster he did fly;  
That fallen am I in dark uneven way,  
And here will rest me. Come, thou gentle day!

For if but once thou show me thy gray light,  
I'll find Demetrius, and revenge this spite. [Lies down.

*Re-enter PUCK and DEMETRIUS.*

*Puck.* Ho, ho! ho, ho! Coward, why com'st  
thou not?

*Dem.* Abide me, if thou dar'st; for well  
I wot,

Thou runn'st before me, shifting every place;  
And dar'st not stand, nor look me in the face.  
Where art thou?

*Puck.* Come hither; I am here.

*Dem.* Nay, then thou mock'st me. Thou  
shalt buy this dear,

If ever I thy face by day light see:  
Now, go thy way. Faintness constraineth me  
To measure out my length on this cold bed.—  
By day's approach look to be visited.

[Lies down and sleeps.]

*Enter HELENA.*

*Hel.* O weary night, O long and tedious night,  
Abate thy hours: shine, comforts, from  
the east;

That I may back to Athens, by day-light,  
From these that my poor company detest:—  
And, sleep, that sometimes shuts up sorrow's  
eye,

Steal me awhile from mine own company. [Sleeps.]

*Puck.* Yet but three? Come one more;  
Two of both kinds makes up four.  
Here she comes, curst and sad:—  
Cupid is a knavish lad,  
Thus to make poor females mad.

*Enter HERMIA.*

*Her.* Never so weary, never so in woe.  
Bedabbled with the dew, and torn with  
briers;

I can no further crawl, no further go;  
My legs can keep no pace with my desires.  
Here will I rest me, till the break of day.  
Heavens shield Lysander, if they mean a fray! [Lies down.]

*Puck.* On the ground  
Sleep sound:  
I'll apply  
To your eye,  
Gentle lover, remedy.  
[Squeezing the juice on LYSANDER'S eye.]  
When thou wak'st,  
Thou tak'st  
True delight  
In the sight

Of thy former lady's eye:  
And the country proverb known,  
That every man should take his own,  
In your waking shall be shown:

Jack shall have Jill;  
Nought shall go ill; [be well.  
The man shall have his mare again, and all shall  
[Exit PUCK.—DEM. HEL. &c. sleep

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter TITANIA and BOTTOM, Fairies attending; OBERON behind unseen.*

*Tita.* Come, sit thee down upon this flowery  
bed,

While I thy amiable cheeks do coy,  
And stick mu k-roses in thy sleek smooth head,  
And kiss thy fair large ears, my gentle joy.

*Bot.* Where's Peas-blossom?

*Peas.* Ready.

*Bot.* Scratch my head, Peas-blossom.—  
Where's monsieur Cobweb?

*Cob.* Ready.

*Bot.* Monsieur Cobweb; good monsieur,  
yet your weapons in your hand, and kill me  
a red-hipped humble-bee on the top of a thistle;  
and, good monsieur, bring me the honey-bag.  
Do not fret yourself too much in the action,  
monsieur; and, good monsieur, have a care

the honey-bag break not; I would be loth  
to have you overflown with a honey-bag,  
signior.—Where's monsieur Mustard-seed?

*Must.* Ready.

*Bot.* Give me your neift, monsieur Mustard-  
seed. Pray you, leave your courtesy, good  
monsieur.

*Must.* What's your will?

*Bot.* Nothing, good monsieur, but to help  
cavalero Cobweb to scratch. I must to the  
barber's, monsieur; for, methinks, I am mar-  
vellous hairy about the face: and I am such  
a tender ass, if my hair do but tickle me, I  
must scratch.

*Tita.* What, wilt thou hear some music, my  
sweet love?

*Bot.* I have a reasonable good ear in  
music: let us have the tongs and the bones.

*Tita.* Or, say, sweet love, what thou desirest  
to eat.

• Stroke.

† Flet

*Bot.* Truly, a peck of provender ; I could munch your good dry oats. Methinks, I have a great desire to a bottle of hay : good hay, sweet hay, hath no fellow.

*Tita.* I have a venturous fairy that shall seek The squirrel's hoard, and fetch thee new nuts.

*Bot.* I had rather have a handful, or two, of dried peas. But, I pray you, let none of your people stir me ; I have an exposition of sleep come upon me. [my arms.]

*Tita.* Sleep thou, and I will wind thee in fairies, be gone, and be all ways away. So doth the woodbine, the sweet honeysuckle, gently entwine,—the female ivy so Enrings the barked fingers of the elm. O, how I love thee ! how I dote on thee !

[They sleep.]

*OBERON advances. Enter PUCK.*

*Obe.* Welcome, good Robin. See'st thou this sweet sight ?

Her dotage now I do begin to pity.

For meeting her of late, behind the wood,  
Seeking sweet savours for this hateful fool,  
I did upbraid her, and fall out with her :  
For she his hairy temples then had rounded  
With coronet of fresh and fragrant flowers ;  
And that same dew, which sometime on the buds  
Was wont to swell, like round and orient pearls,

Stood now within the pretty flow'ret's eyes,  
Like tears, that did their own disgrace bewail.  
When I had, at my pleasure, taunted her,  
And she, in mild terms, begg'd my patience,  
I then did ask of her her changeling child ;  
Which straight she gave me, and her fairy sent  
To bear him to my bower in fairy land.

And now I have the boy, I will undo  
This hateful imperfection of her eyes.  
And, gentle Puck, take this transformed scalp  
From off the head of this Athenian swain ;  
That he awaking when the other do,  
May all to Athens back again repair ;  
And think no more of this night's accidents,  
But as the fierce vexation of a dream.  
But first I will release the fairy queen.

Be, as thou wast wont to be ;

[Touching her eyes with an herb.]

See, as thou wast wont to see :

Dian's bud o'er Cupid's flower

Hath such force and blessed power.

Now, my Titania ; wake you, my sweet queen.

*Tita.* My Oberon ! what visions have I seen !  
Methought, I was enamour'd of an ass.

*Obe.* There lies your love.

*Tita.* How came these things to pass ?  
O, how mine eyes do loath his visage now !

*Obe.* Silence, awhile.—Robin, take off this head.—

Titania, music call ; and strike more dead  
Than common sleep, of all these five the sense.

*Tita.* Music, ho ! music ; such as charmeth sleep. [own fool's eyes peep.]

*Puck.* Now, when thou wak'st, with thine  
*Obe.* Sound, music. [Still music.] Come, my queen, take hands with me, [be.]

And rock the ground whereon these sleepers

Now thou and I are new in amity ;  
And will, to-morrow midnight, solemnly,  
Dance in duke Theseus' house triumphantly,  
And bless it to all fair posterity :

There shall the pairs of faithful lovers be  
Wedded, with Theseus, all in jollity.

*Puck.* Fairy king, attend and mark ;

I do hear the morning lark.

*Obe.* Then, my queen, in silence sad,

Trip we after the night's shade :

We the globe can compass soon,

Swifter than the wand'ring moon.

*Tita.* Come, my lord ; and in our flight,

Tell me how it came this night,

That I sleeping here was found,

With these mortals, on the ground. [Exeunt.]

[Horns sound within.]

*Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLYTA, EGEUS, and train.*

*The.* Go, one of you, find out the forester ;—

For now our observation is perform'd :

And since we have the vaward \* of the day,  
My love shall hear the music of my hounds.—

Uncouple in the western valley ; go :

Despatch, I say, and find the forester.—

We will, fair queen, up to the mountain's top,

And mark the musical confusion

Of hounds and echo in conjunction.

*Hip.* I was with Hercules, and Cadmus, once,

When in a wood of Crete they bay'd the bear

With hounds of Sparta : never did I hear

Such gallant chiding † ; for, besides the groves,

The skies, the fountains, every region near

Seem'd all one mutual cry : I never heard

So musical a discord, such sweet thunder.

*The.* My hounds are bred out of the Spartan  
kind, [hung]

So flew'd, so sanded ; and their heads are

With ears that sweep away the morning dew ;

Crook-kneed, and dew-lapp'd like Thessalian

bulls ; [bells]

Slow in pursuit, but match'd in mouth like

Each under each. A cry more tuneable

Was never holla'd to, nor cheer'd with horn,

In Crete, in Sparta, nor in Thessaly :

Judge, when you hear.—But, soft ; what

nymphs are these ?

*Ege.* My lord, this is my daughter here asleep :

And this, Lysander ; this Demetrius is ;

This Helena, old Nedar's Helena :

I wonder of their being here together.

*The.* No doubt, they rose up early, to observe

The rite of May ; and, hearing our intent,

Came here in grace of our solemnity.—

But, speak, Egeus ; is not this the day

That Hermia should give answer of her choice ?

*Ege.* It is, my lord. [their horns.]

*The.* Go, bid the huntsmen wake them with

horns, and shout within. DEMETRIUS,

LYSANDER, HERMIA, and HELENA, wake

and start up.

*The.* Good-morrow, friends. Saint Valen-

tine is past ;

Begin these wood birds but to couple now ?

*Lys.* Pardon, my lord.

[He and the rest kneel to THESEUS.]

\* Forepart.

† Sound.

‡ The flues are the large chaps of a hound.



*The.* I pray you all, stand up.  
I know, you are two rival enemies ;  
How comes this gentle concord in the world,  
That hatred is so far from jealousy,  
To sleep by hate, and fear no enmity ?

*Lys.* My lord, I shall reply amazedly,  
Half 'sleep, half waking : But, as yet, I swear,  
I cannot truly say how I came here :  
But, as I think, (for truly would I speak,—  
And now I do bethink me, so it is ;)  
I came with Hermia hither : our intent  
Was, to be gone from Athens, where we might  
Without the peril of the Athenian law. [be

*Ege.* Enough, enough, my lord ; you have  
enough :

I beg the law, the law, upon his head.—  
They would have stolen away, they would,  
Demetrius,

Thereby to have defeated you and me :  
You, of your wife ; and me, of my consent ;  
Of my consent that she should be your wife.

*Dem.* My lord, fair Helen told me of their  
stealth,

Of this their purpose hither, to this wood ;  
And I in fury hither follow'd them ;  
Fair Helena in fancy following me.  
But my good lord, I wot not by what power,  
(But by some power it is,) my love to Her-  
mia,

Melted as doth the snow, seems to me now  
As the remembrance of an idle gawd t,  
Which in my childhood I did dote upon :  
And all the faith, the virtue of my heart,  
The object, and the pleasure of mine eye,  
Is only Helena. To her, my lord,  
Was I betroth'd ere I saw Hermia :  
But, like in sickness, did I loath this food :  
But, as in health, come to my natural taste,  
Now do I wish it, love it, long for it,  
And will for evermore be true to it.

*The.* Fair lovers, you are fortunately met :  
Of this discourse we more will hear anon.—  
Egeus, I will overbear your will ;  
For in the temple, by and by with us,  
These couples shall eternally be knit.  
And, for the morning now is something worn,  
Our purpos'd hunting shall be set aside.—  
Away, with us, to Athens : Three and three,  
We'll hold a feast in great solemnity.—  
Come, Hippolyta.

[*Exeunt THE. HIP. EGE. and train.*]

*Dem.* These things seem small, and undis-  
tinguishable,

Like far-off mountains turned into clouds.

*Her.* Methinks, I see these things with parted  
When every thing seems double. [eye,

*Hel.* So methinks ;

And I have found Demetrius like a jewel,  
Mine own, and not mine own.

*Dem.* It seems to me.  
That yet we sleep, we dream.—Do not you  
think,

The duke was here, and bid us follow him ?

*Her.* Yea ; and my father.

*Hel.* And Hippolyta.

*Lys.* And he did bid us follow to the temple.

*Dem.* Why then, we are awake ; let's fol-  
low him ;  
And, by the way, let us recount our dreams.

[*Exeunt.*]

*As they go out, BOTTOM awakes.*

*Bot.* When my cue comes, call me, and I  
will answer :—my next is, *Most fair Pyra-  
mus.*—Hey, ho !—Peter Quince ! Flute, the  
bellows-mender ! Snout, the tinker ! Starve-  
ling ! God's my life ! stolen hence, and left me  
asleep ! I have had a most rare vision. I have  
had a dream,—past the wit of man to say  
what dream it was : Man is but an ass, if he  
go about to expound this dream. Methought  
I was—there is no man can tell what. Me-  
thought I was, and methought I had,—But,  
man is but a patched fool, if he will offer to  
say what methought I had. The eye of man  
hath not heard, the ear of man hath not seen ;  
man's hand is not able to taste, his tongue to  
conceive, nor his heart to report, what my  
dream was. I will get Peter Quince to write  
a ballad of this dream : it shall be called Bot-  
tom's Dream, because it hath no bottom ; and  
I will sing it in the latter end of a play, before  
the duke : Peradventure, to make it the more  
gracious, I shall sing it after death. [*Exit.*]

## SCENE II.

Athens. A Room in Quince's House.

*Enter QUINCE, FLUTE, SNOOT, and  
STARVELING.*

*Quin.* Have you sent to Bottom's house ? is  
he come home yet ?

*Star.* He cannot be heard of. Out of doubt,  
he is transported.

*Flu.* If he come not, then the play is mar-  
red ; It goes not forward, doth it ?

*Quin.* It is not possible : you have not a  
man in all Athens, able to discharge Pyramus,  
but he.

*Flu.* No ; he hath simply the best wit of  
any handicraft man in Athens.

*Quin.* Yea, and the best person too : and he  
is a very paramour, for a sweet voice.

*Flu.* You must say, paragon : a paramour  
is, God bless us, a thing of nought.

*Enter SNUG.*

*Snug.* Masters, the duke is coming from the  
temple, and there is two or three lords and  
ladies more married : if our sport had gone  
forward, we had all been made men.

*Flu.* O sweet bully Bottom ! Thus hath he  
lost sixpence a-day during his life ; he could  
not have 'scaped sixpence a-day : an the duke  
had not given him sixpence a-day for playing  
Pyramus, I'll be hanged ; he would have de-  
served it : sixpence a-day, in Pyramus, or  
nothing.

*Enter BOTTOM.*

*Bot.* Where are these lads ? where are these  
hearts ?

*Quin.* Bottom !—O most courageous day !  
O most happy hour !

*Bot.* Masters, I am to discourse wonders ;  
but ask me not what ; for, if I tell you, I am

no true Athenian. I will tell you every thing, right as it fell out.

*Quin.* Let us hear, sweet Bottom.

*Bot.* Not a word of me. All that I will tell you, is, that the duke hath dined: Get your apparel together; good strings to your beards, new ribbons to your pumps; meet presently at the palace; every man look o'er his part; for, the short and the long is, our

play is preferred. In any case, let Thisby have clean linen; and let not him, that plays the lion, pare his nails, for they shall hang out for the lion's claws. And, most dear actors, eat no onions, nor garlick, for we are to utter sweet breath; and I do not doubt, but to hear them say, it is a sweet comedy. No more words; away; go, away.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *The same. An Apartment in the Palace of Theseus.*

*Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLYTA, PHILOSTRATE, Lords, and Attendants.*

*Hip.* 'Tis strange, my Theseus, that these lovers speak of. [*believe*]

*The.* More strange than true. I never may These antique fables, nor these fairy toys. Lovers, and madmen, have such seething brains, Such shaping fantasies, that apprehend More than cool reason ever comprehends.

The lunatic, the lover, and the poet, Are of imagination all compact \* :

One sees more devils than vast hell can hold; That is, the madman: the lover, all as frantic, Sees Helen's beauty in a brow of Egypt:

The poet's eye, in a fine frenzy rolling, Doth glance from heaven to earth, from earth And as imagination bodies forth [*to heaven;*] The forms of things unknown, the poet's pen Turns them to shapes, and gives to airy nothing A local habitation, and a name.

Such tricks hath strong imagination; That, if it would but apprehend some joy, It comprehends some bringer of that joy; Or, in the night, imagining some fear, How easy is a bush suppos'd a bear! [*over,*]

*Hip.* But all the story of the night told And all their minds transfigur'd so together, More witnesseth than fancy's images, And grows to something of great constancy; but, howsoever, strange, and admirable.

*Enter LYSANDER, DEMETRIUS, HERMIA, and HELENA.*

*The.* Here come the lovers, full of joy and mirth.—

Joy, gentle friends! joy, and fresh days of love, Accompany your hearts!

*Lys.* More than to us Wait on your royal walks, your board, your bed! [*shall we have,*]

*The.* Come now; what masks, what dances To wear away this long age of three hours, Between our after-supper, and bed-time? Where is our usual manager of mirth? What revels are in hand? Is there no play, To ease the anguish of a torturing hour? Call Philostrate.

*Philostr.* Here, mighty Theseus.

*The.* Say, what abridgment† have you for this evening? [*gnile*]

What mask? what music? How shall we be The lazy time, if not with some delight?

*Philos.* There is a brief‡, how many sports are ripe;

Make choice of which your highness will see first. [*Giving a paper.*]

*The. reads.]* The battle with the Centaurs, to be sung

By an Athenian eunuch to the harp.

We'll none of that: that I have told my love, In glory of my kinsman Hercules.

The riot of the tipsy Bacchanals,

Tearing the Thracian singer in their rage.

That is an old device; and it was play'd

When I from Thebes came last a conqueror.

The thrice three Muses mourning for the death

Of learning, late decreas'd in beggary.

That is some satire, keen, and critical,

Not sorting with a nuptial ceremony.

A tedious brief scene of young Pyramus, And his love Thisbe; very tragical mirth.

Merry and tragical? Tedious and brief?

That is, hot ice, and wonderous strange snow.

How shall we find the concord of this discord?

*Philostr.* A play there is, my lord, some ten words long;

Which is as brief as I have known a play;

But by ten words, my lord, it is too long;

Which makes it tedious: for in all the play

There is not one word apt, one player fitted.

And tragical, my noble lord, it is;

For Pyramus therein doth kill himself.

Which, when I saw rehears'd, I must confess,

Made mine eyes water; but more merry tears

The passion of loud laughter never shed.

*The.* What are they, that do play it?

*Philostr.* Hard-handed men, that work in Athens here,

Which never labour'd in their minds till now;

And now have toil'd their unbreath'd memories

With this same play, against your nuptial.

*The.* And we will hear it.

*Philos.* No, my noble lord,

It is not for you: I have heard it over,

And it is nothing, nothing in the world;

Unless you can find sport in their intents,

\* Are made of mere imagination.  
‡ Short account.

† Stability.  
‡ Unexercised.

‡ Pastime.

Extremely stretch'd, and conn'd with cruel  
To do you service. [pain,

*The.* I will hear that play;

For never any thing can be amiss,

When simpleness and duty tender it.

Go, bring them in;—and take your places,  
ladies. [Exit PHILOSTRATE.

*Hip.* I love not to see wretchedness o'er-  
And duty in his service perishing. [charg'd,

*The.* Why, gentle sweet, you shall see no  
such thing. [kind.

*Hip.* He says, they can do nothing in this  
*The.* The kinder we, to give them thanks  
for nothing.

Our sport shall be, to take what they mistake:

And what poor duty cannot do,

Noble respect takes it in might, not merit.

Where I have come, great clowns have purposed

To greet me with premeditated welcomes;

Where I have seen them shiver and look pale,

Make periods in the midst of sentences,

Throttle their practis'd accent in their fears,

And, in conclusion, dumbly have broke off,

Not paying me a welcome: Trust me, sweet,

Out of this silence, yet, I pick'd a welcome;

And in the modesty of fearful duty

I read as much, as from the rattling tongue

Of sancy and audacious eloquence.

Love, therefore, and tongue-tied simplicity,

In least, speak most, to my capacity.

*Enter PHILOSTRATE.*

*Philost.* So please your grace, the prologue  
is address'd \*. [pets.

*The.* Let him approach. [Flourish of trum-

*Enter Prologue.*

*Pro.* If we offend, it is with our good will.

That you should think, we come not to  
offend,

But with good will. To shew our simple skill,

That is the true beginning of our end.

Consider then, we come but in despite.

We do not come as minding to content you,

Our true intent is. All for your delight,

We are not here. That you should here

repent you,

The actors are at hand; and, by, their show,

You shall know all, that you are like to know.

*The.* This fellow doth not stand upon points.

*Lys.* He hath rid his prologue, like a rough

colt, he knows not the stop. A good moral,

my lord: It is not enough to speak, but to

speak true.

*Hip.* Indeed he hath played on this pro-

logue, like a child on a recorder†; a sound,

but not in government.

*The.* His speech was like a tangled chain;

nothing impaired, but all disordered. Who

is next?

*Enter PYRAMUS and THISBE, Wall, Moon-*

*shine, and Lion, as in dumb show.*

*Pro.* "Gentles, perchance, you wonder at

this show; [plain.

\* But wonder on, till truth make all things

\* This man is Pyramus, if you would know;

\* This beauteous lady Thisby is, certain.

"This man, with lime and rough-cast, doth  
present [lovers sunder:

"Wall, that vile wall which did these

"And through wall's chink, poor souls, they

are content [wonder.

"To whisper; at the which let no man

"This man, with lantern, dog, and bush of

thorn, [know,

"Presenteth moonshine: for, if you will

"By moon-shine did these lovers think no

scorn [woo.

"To meet at Ninus' tomb, there, there to

"This grisly beast, which by name lion hight,

"The trusty Thisby, coming first by night,

"Did scare away, or rather did affright:

"And, as she fled, her mantle she did fall;

"Which lion vile with bloody mouth did

stain: [tall,

"Anon comes Pyramus, sweet yonth, and

"And finds his trusty Thisby's mantle

slain: [blade,

"Whereat with blade, with bloody blameful

"He bravely broach'd his boiling bloody

breast;

"And, Thisby tarrying in mulberry shade,

"His dagger drew, and died. For all the

rest, [twain,

"Let lion, moon-shine, wall, and lovers

"At large discourse, while here they do re-

main."

[*Exeunt* *PROL.* *THISBE*, *Lion*, and *MOONSHINE*.

*The.* I wonder, if the lion be to speak.

*Dem.* No wonder, my lord: one lion may,

when many asses do.

*Wall.* "In this same interlude, it doth be-

fall, [wall:

"That I, one Snout by name, present a

"And such a wall, as I would have you

think,

"That had in it a cranny'd hole, or chink,

"Through which the lovers, Pyramus and

Thisby,

"Did whisper often very secretly.

"This loam, this rough-cast, and this stone,

doth show

"That I am that same wall; the truth is so:

"And this the cranny is, right and sinister,

"Through which the fearful lovers are to

whisper."

*The.* Would you desire lime and hair to

speak better?

*Dem.* It is the wittiest partition that ever I

heard discourse, my lord.

*The.* Pyramus draws near the wall: silence!

*Enter PYRAMUS.*

*Pyr.* "O grim-look'd night! O night with

hue so black!

"O night, which ever art, when day is not!

"O night, O night, alack, alack, alack,

"I fear my Thisby's promise is forgot!—

"And thou, O wall, O sweet, O lovely wall,

"That stand'st between her father's ground

and mine; [wall,

"Thou wall, O wall, O sweet and lovely

"Show me thy chink, to blink through with

mine eye. [Wall holds up his fingers

\* Ready.

† A musical instrument.

‡ Called.



"Thanks, courteous wall: Jove shield thee well for this!

"But what see I? No Thisby do I see.

"O wicked wall, through whom I see no bliss; [me!]"

"Curst be thy stones for thus deceiving The. The wall, methinks, being sensible, should curse again.

*Pyr.* No, in truth, sir, he should not. *Deceiving me*, is Thisby's cue: she is to enter now, and I am to spy her through the wall. You shall see, it will fall pat as I told you:—Yonder she comes.

*Enter THISBE.*

*This.* "O wall, full often hast thou heard my moans,

"For parting my fair Pyramus and me;

"My cherry lips have often kiss'd thy stones;

"Thy stones with lime and hair knit up in thee."

*Pyr.* "I see a voice: now will I to the chink,

"To spy an I can hear my Thisby's face.

"Thisby!"

*This.* "My love! thou art my love, I think."

*Pyr.* "Think what thou wilt, I am thy lover's grace;

"And like Limander am I trusty still."

*This.* "And I like Helen, till the fates me kill." [true.]

*Pyr.* "Not Shafalus to Procrus was so

*This.* "As Shafalus to Procrus I to you."

*Pyr.* "O, kiss me through the hole of this vile wall."

*This.* "I kiss the wall's hole, not your lips at all."

*Pyr.* "Wilt thou at Ninny's tomb meet me straightway?"

*This.* "Tide life, tide death, I come without delay."

*Wall.* "Thus have I, wall, my part discharged so; [go.]

"And, being done, thus wall away doth [Exeunt Wall, PYRAMUS, and THISBE.

*The.* Now is the mural down between the two neighbours.

*Dem.* No remedy, my lord, when walls are so wilful to hear without warning.

*Hip.* This is the silliest stuff that ever I heard.

*The.* The best in this kind are but shadows: and the worst are no worse, if imagination amend them.

*Hip.* It must be your imagination then, and not theirs.

*The.* If we imagine no worse of them, than they of themselves, they may pass for excellent men. Here come two noble beasts in, a moon and a lion.

*Enter Lion and Moonshine.*

*Lion:* "You, ladies, you, whose gentle hearts do fear

"The smallest monstrous mouse that creeps on floor,

"May now, perchance, both quake and tremble here,

"When lion rough in wildest rage doth roar. [am

"Then know, that I, one Snug the joiner, A lion fell, nor else no lion's dam;

"For if I should as lion come in strife

"Into this place, 'twere pity on my life."

*The.* A very gentle beast and of a good conscience.

*Dem.* The very best at a beast, my lord, that e'er I saw.

*Lys.* This lion is a very fox for his valour.

*The.* True; and a goose for his discretion.

*Dem.* Not so, my lord: for his valour cannot carry his discretion; and the fox carries the goose.

*The.* His discretion, I am sure, cannot carry his valour; for the goose carries not the fox. It is well: leave it to his discretion, and let us listen to the moon.

*Moon.* "This lantern doth the horned moon present;"

*Dem.* He should have worn the horns on his head.

*The.* He is no crescent, and his horns are invisible within the circumference.

*Moon.* "This lantern doth the horned moon present;

"Myself the man i' the moon do seem to be"

*The.* This is the greatest error of all the rest: the man should be put into the lantern: How is it else the man i' the moon?

*Dem.* He dares not come there for the candle: for, you see, it is already in snuff\*.

*Hip.* I am aweary of this moon: Would, he would change!

*The.* It appears, by his small light of discretion, that he is in the wane: but yet, in courtesy, in all reason, we must stay the time.

*Lys.* Proceed, moon.

*Moon.* All that I have to say, is, to tell you, that the lantern is the moon; I, the man in the moon; this thorn-bush, my thorn-bush and this dog, my dog.

*Dem.* Why, all these should be in the lantern; for they are in the moon. But, silence here comes Thisbe.

*Enter THISBE.*

*This.* "This is old Ninny's tomb: Where is my love?"

*Lion.* "Oh—"

[The Lion roars.—THISBE runs off.]

*Dem.* Well roared, lion.

*The.* Well run, Thisbe.

*Hip.* Well shone, moon.—Truly, the moon shines with a good grace.

*The.* Well moused, lion.

[The Lion tears THISBE's mantle, and exit.]

*Dem.* And so comes Pyramus.

*Lys.* And then the moon vanishes.

*Enter PYRAMUS.*

*Pyr.* "Sweet moon, I thank thee for thy sunny beams;

"I thank thee, moon, for shining now so bright.

"For, by thy gracious, golden, glittering streams,

"I trust to taste of truest Thisby's sight.

"But stay;—O spite!

"But mark;—Poor knight,

"What dreadful dole is here?

"Eyes, do you see?

"How can it be?

"O dainty duck! O dear!

"Thy mantle good,

"What, stain'd with blood?

"Approach, ye furies fell!

"O fates! come, come;

"Cut thread and thrum\*;

"Quail, crush, conclude, and quell†!"

*The.* This passion, and the death of a dear friend, would go near to make a man look sad. [man.]

*Hip.* Beshrew my heart, but I pity the

*Pyr.* "O, wherefore, nature, didst thou lions frame? [dear.]

"Since lion vile hath here deflower'd my Which is—no, no—which was the fairest dame, [look'd with cheer?]

"That liv'd, that lov'd, that lik'd, that

"Come, tears, confound;

"Out, sword, and wound

"The pap of Pyramus:

"Ay, that left pap,

"Where heart doth hop:

"Thus die I, thus, thus, thus.

"Now am I dead,

"Now am I fled;

"My soul is in the sky:

"Tongue, lose thy light!

"Moon, take thy flight!

"Now die, die, die, die, die."

[Dies.—Exit Moonshine.

*Dem.* No die, but an ace, for him; for he is but one.

*Lys.* Less than an ace, man; for he is dead: he is nothing.

*The.* With the help of a surgeon, he might yet recover, and prove an ass.

*Hip.* How chance Moonshine is gone, before Thisbe comes back and finds her lover?

*The.* She will find him by star light.—Here she comes; and her passion ends the play.

*Enter THISBE.*

*Hip.* Methinks, she should not use a long one, for such a Pyramus: I hope, she will be brief.

*Dem.* A mote will turn the balance, which Pyramus, which Thisbe, is the better.

*Lys.* She hath spied him already with those sweet eyes.

*Dem.* And thus she moans, *videlicet*.—

*This.* "Asleep, my love?

"What, dead, my dove!

"O Pyramus, arise,

"Speak, speak. Quite dumb?

"Dead, dead? A tomb

"Must cover thy sweet eyes.

"These lily brows,

"This cherry nose,

"These yellow crowslip cheeks,

"Are gone, are gone:

"Lovers, make moan!

"His eyes were green as leeks.

"O sisters three,

"Come, come, to me,

"With hands as pale as milk;

"Lay them in gore,

"Since you have shore

"With shears his thread of silk.

"Tongue, not a word:—

"Come, trusty sword;

"Come, blade, my breast imbrue:

"And farewell, friends;—

"Thus Thisbe ends:

"Adieu, adieu, adieu." [Dies.]

*The.* Moonshine, and lion are left to bury the dead.

*Dem.* Ay, and wall too.

*Bot.* No, I assure you; the wall is down that parted their fathers. Will it please you to see the epilogue, or to hear a Bergomask dance, between two of our company?

*The.* No epilogue, I pray you; for your play needs no excuse. Never excuse; for when the players are all dead, there need none to be blamed. Marry, if he that writ it, had play'd Pyramus, and hanged himself in Thisbe's garter, it would have been a fine tragedy: and so it is, truly; and very notably discharged. But come, your Bergomask: let your epilogue alone.

[Here a dance of Clowns.

The iron tongue of midnight hath told twelve:—

Lovers, to bed; 'tis almost fairy time.

I fear we shall out-sleep the coming morn,

As much as we this night have overwatch'd.

This palpable gross play hath well beguil'd  
The heavy gait of night.—Sweet friends, to bed.—

A fortnight hold we this solemnity,  
In nightly revels, and new jollity. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II.

### Enter PUCK.

*Puck.* Now the hungry lion roars,

And the wolf belows the moon;

Whilst the heavy ploughman snores,

All with weary task fordone.

Now the wasted brands do glow,

Whilst the scritch-owl, scritch'ing loud,

Puts the wretch, that lies in woe,

In remembrance of a shroud.

Now it is the time of night,

That the graves, all gaping wide,

Every one lets forth his sprite,

In the church-way paths to glide

And we fairies, that do run

By the triple Hecat's team,

From the presence of the sun,

Following darkness like a dream,

Now are frolic; not a mouse

Shall disturb this hallow'd house:

I am sent, with broom, before,

To sweep the dust behind the door.

*Enter OBERON and TITANIA, with their Train.*

*Obe.* Through this house give glimmering light,

By the dead and drowsy fire :

Every elf, and fairy sprite,

Hop as light as bird from brier ;

And this ditty, after me,

Sing, and dance it trippingly.

*Tita.* First, rehearse this song by rote :

To each word a warbling note,

Hand in hand, with fairy grace,

Will we sing, and bless this place.

### SONG, AND DANCE.

*Obe.* Now, until the break of day,

Through this house each fairy stray.

To the best bride-bed will we,

Which by us shall blessed be ;

And the issue, there create,

Ever shall be fortunate.

So shall all the couples three

Ever true in loving be :

And the blots of nature's hand

Shall not in their issue stand ;

Never mole, hare-lip, nor scar,

Nor mark prodigious \* such as are

Despised in nativity,

Shall upon their children be.—

With this field dew consecrate,

Every fairy take his gait † ;

And each several chamber bless,

Through this palace with sweet peace :

E'er shall it in safety rest,

And the owner of it blest.

Trip away ;

Make no stay ;

Meet me all by break of day.

*[Exeunt OBERON, TITANIA, and Train.]*

*Puck.* If we shadows have offended,

Think but this, (and all is mended,) †

That you have but slumber'd here,

While these visions did appear.

And this weak and idle theme,

No more yielding but a dream,

Gentles, do not reprehend ;

If you pardon, we will mend.

And, as I'm an honest Puck,

If we have unearned luck

Now to 'scape the serpent's tongue,

We will make amends, ere long :

Else the Puck a liar call,

So, good-night unto you all.

Give me your hands, if we be friends,

And Robin shall restore amends.

*[Exit.]*

\* Portentous.

† Way.

Wild and fantastical as this play is, all the parts in their various modes are well written, and give the kind of pleasure which the author designed. Fairies in his time were much in fashion; common tradition had made them familiar, and Spenser's poem had made them great.—JOHNSON.



# LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST.

## Persons represented.

FERDINAND, *King of Navarre.*

BIRON, } *Lords, attending on the*  
LONGAVILLE, } *King.*

DUMAIN, } *Lords attending on the Prin-*  
BOYET, } *cess of France.*

MERCADE, }  
DON ADRIANO DE ARMADO, *a fantastical*  
*Spaniard.*

SIR NATHANIEL, *a Curate.*

HOLOFERNES, *a Schoolmaster.*

DULL, *a Constable.*

COSTARD, *a Clown.*

MOTH, *Page to Armado.*

A Forester.

Princess of France.

ROSALINE, } *Ladies, attending on the*  
MARIA, } *Princess.*

KATHARINE, }  
JAQUENETTA, *a country Wench.*

*Officers and others, Attendants on the King and Princess.*

*Scene,—Navarre.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.

*Navarre. A Park, with a Palace in it.*

*Enter the KING, BIRON, LONGAVILLE, and DUMAIN.*

*King.* Let fame, that all hunt after in their lives,

Live register'd upon our brazen tombs,  
And then grace us in the disgrace of death ;  
When, spite of cormorant-devouring time,  
The endeavour of this present breath may buy  
That honour, which shall bate his scythe's keen  
And make us heirs of all eternity. [edge,

Therefore, brave conquerors !—for so you are,  
That war against your own affections,  
And the huge army of the world's desires,—  
Our late edict shall strongly stand in force :  
Navarre shall be the wonder of the world ;  
Our court shall be a little Academe,  
Still and contemplative in living art.

You three, Biron, Dumain, and Longaville, [me,  
Have sworn for three years' term to live with  
My fellow-scholars, and to keep those statutes,  
That are recorded in this schedule here : names ;  
Your oaths are past, and now subscribe your  
That his own hand may strike his honour down,  
That violates the smallest branch herein :

If you are arm'd to do, as sworn to do,  
Subscribe to your deep oath, and keep it too.

*Long.* I am resolv'd : 'tis but a three years' fast ;  
The mind shall banquet, though the body pine :  
Fat paunches have lean pates ; and dainty bits  
Make rich the ribs, but bank'rout quite the wits.

*Dum.* My loving lord, Dumain is mortified ;  
The grosser manner of these world's delights  
He throws upon the gross world's baser slaves :  
To love, to wealth, to pomp, I pine and die ;  
With all these living in philosophy.

*Biron.* I can but say their protestation over,  
So much, dear liege, I have already sworn,  
That is, To live and study here three years.  
But there are other strict observances :

As, not to see a woman in that term ;  
Which, I hope well, is not enrolled there :  
And, one day in a week to touch no food ;  
And but one meal on every day beside ;  
The which, I hope, is not enrolled there :  
And then, to sleep but three hours in the night,  
And not be seen to wink of all the day ;  
(When I was wont to think no harm all night,  
And make a dark night too of half the day ;)  
Which, I hope well, is not enrolled there :  
O, these are barren tasks, too hard to keep ;  
Not to see ladies, study, fast, not sleep. [these.

*King.* Your oath is pass'd to pass away from  
*Biron.* Let me say no, my liege, an if you  
I only swore, to study with your grace, [please ;  
And stay here in your court for three years'  
space. [rest.

*Long.* You swore to that, Biron, and to the  
*Biron.* By yea and nay, sir, then I swore in  
What is the end of study ? let me know. [jest.—

*King.* Why, that to know, which else we  
should not know. [common sense ?

*Biron.* Things hid and barr'd, you mean, from  
*King.* Ay, that is study's god-like recompense.

*Biron.* Come on then, I will swear to study  
To know the thing I am forbid to know : [so,  
As thus—To study where I well may dine,

When I to feast expressly am forbid ;  
Or, study where to meet some mistress fine,

When mistresses from common sense are hid :  
Or, having sworn too hard-a-keeping oath,  
Study to break it, and not break my troth.  
If study's gain be thus, and this be so,  
Study knows that, which yet it doth not know :  
Swear me to this, and I will ne'er say, no.

*King.* These be the stops that hinder study  
And train our intellects to vain delight. [quite,

*Biron.* Why, all delights are vain ; but that  
most vain,

Which, with pain purchas'd, doth inherit pain :  
As, painfully to pore upon a book, [while  
To seek the light of truth ; while truth the

Doth falsely \* blind the eyesight of his look :

Light seeking light, doth light of light beguile :  
So, ere you find where light in darkness lies,  
Your light grows dark by losing of your eyes.  
Study me how to please the eye indeed,

By fixing it upon a fairer eye ;  
Who dazzling so, that eye shall be his heed,  
And give him light that was it blinded by.  
Study is like the heaven's glorious sun, [looks ;  
That will not be deep search'd with saucy  
Small have continual plodders ever won,  
Save base authority from others' books.  
These earthly godfathers of heaven's lights,  
That give a name to every fixed star,  
Have no more profit of their shining nights,  
Than those that walk, and wot not what they  
are. [fane ;

Too much to know, is, to know nought but  
And every godfather can give a name. [reading !

*King.* How well he's read, to reason against  
*Dum.* Proceeded well, to stop all good  
proceeding ! [grow the weeding.

*Long.* He weeds the corn, and still lets  
*Biron.* The spring is near, when green geese

*Dum.* How follows that ? [are a breeding.  
*Biron.* Fit in his place and time.

*Dum.* In reason nothing.  
*Biron.* Something then in rhyme.

*Long.* Biron is like an envious sneaping †  
frost, [spring.

That bites the first-born infants of the  
*Biron.* Well, say I am ; why should proud  
summer boast,

Before the birds have any cause to sing ?  
Why should I joy in an abortive birth ?

At Christmas I no more desire a rose  
Than wish a snow in May's new-fangled  
shows ‡ ;

But like of each thing, that in season grows. }  
So you, to study now it is too late,

Glimb o'er the house to unlock the little gate.  
*King.* Well, sit you out : go home, Biron ;  
adieu ! [to stay with you :

*Bir. n.* No, my good lord ; I have sworn  
And, though I have for barbarism spoke more,

Than for that angel knowledge you can say,  
Yet confident I'll keep what I have sworn,

And bide the penance of each three years' day.  
Give me the paper, let me read the same ;

And to the strict'st decrees I'll write my name. }  
*King.* How well this yielding rescues thee  
from shame !

*Biron.* [Reads.] Item, That no woman  
shall come within a mile of my court.—

And hath this been proclaim'd ?  
*Long.* Four days ago.

*Biron.* Let's see the penalty.  
[Reads.]—On pain of losing her tongue.—

Who devis'd this ?  
*Long.* Marry, that did I.

*Biron.* Sweet lord, and why ? [penalty.  
*Long.* To fright them hence with that dread

*Biron.* A dangerous law against gentility.  
[Reads.] Item, If any man be seen to  
talk with a woman within the term of three

years, he shall endure such public shame as  
the rest of the court can possibly devise.—

This article, my liege, yourself must break ;  
For, well you know, here comes in embassy  
The French King's daughter, with yourself to  
speak,—

A maid of grace, and complete majesty,—  
About surrender-up of Aquitain

To her decrepit, sick, and bed-ridden father :  
Therefore this article is made in vain,

Or vainly comes the admired princess hither.  
*King.* What say you, lords ? why, this was  
quite forgot.

*Biron.* So study evermore is overshot ;  
While it doth study to have what it would,

It doth forget to do the thing it should :  
And when it hath the thing it hunteth most,

'Tis won, as towns with fire ; so won, so lost.  
*King.* We must, of force, dispense with this

She must lie here on mere necessity. [decree ;  
*Biron.* Necessity will make us all forsworn

Three thousand times within this three years'  
For every man with his affects is born ; [space :

Not by might master'd, but by special grace :  
If I break faith, this word shall speak for me,

I am forsworn on mere necessity.—  
So to the laws at large I write my name :

[Subscribes.  
And he, that breaks them in the least degree,  
Stands in attainer of eternal shame :

Suggestions || are to others, as to me ;  
But, I believe, although I seem so loth,

I am the last that will last keep his oath.  
But is there no quick ¶ recreation granted ?

*King.* Ay, that there is : our court, you  
know, is haunted

With a refined traveller of Spain ;  
A man in all the world's new fashion planted,

That hath a mint of phrases in his brain :  
One, whom the music of his own vain tongue

Doth ravish, like enchanting harmony ;  
A man of complements, whom right and wrong

Have chose as umpire of their mutiny :  
This child of fancy, that Armado hight \*\*,

For interim to our studies, shall relate,  
In high-born words, the worth of many a knight

From tawny Spain, lost in the world's debate.  
How you delight, my lords, I know not, † ;

But, I protest, I love to hear him lie,  
And I will use him for my minstrelsy.

*Biron.* Armado is a most illustrious wight,  
A man of fire-new words, fashion's own knight.

*Long.* Costard, the swain, and he, shall be  
our sport ;

And, so to study, three years is but short.  
*Enter DULL, with a letter, and COSTARD.*

*Dull.* Which is the duke's own person ?  
*Biron.* This fellow ; What wouldst ?

*Dull.* I myself reprehend his own person,  
for I am his grace's tharborough †† : but I

would see his own person in flesh and blood.  
*Biron.* This is he.

*Dull.* Signior Arme — Arme — commends  
you. There's villany abroad ; this letter will  
tell you more.

Dishonestly treacherously. † Nipping. ‡ Games, sports. § Reside. || Temptations

\* Lively, sprightly. \*\* called. †† i. e., third-borough, a peace-officer.

*Cost.* Sir, the contempts thereof are as touching me.

*King.* A letter from the magnificent Armado.  
*Biron.* How low soever the matter, I hope in God for high words.

*Long.* A high hope for a low having: God grant us patience!

*Biron.* To hear? or forbear hearing?

*Long.* To hear meekly, sir, and to laugh moderately; or to forbear both.

*Biron.* Well, sir, be it as the style shall give us cause to climb in the merriness.

*Cost.* The matter is to me, sir, as concerning Jaquenetta. The manner of it is, I was taken with the manner\*.

*Biron.* In what manner?

*Cost.* In manner and form following, sir; all those three: I was seen with her in the manor house, sitting with her upon the form, and taken following her into the park; which, put together, is, in manner and form following. Now, sir, for the manner,—it is the manner of a man to speak to a woman: for the form,—in some form.

*Biron.* For the following, sir?

*Cost.* As it shall follow in my correction; And God defend the right!

*King.* Will you hear this letter with attention?

*Biron.* As we would hear an oracle.

*Cost.* Such is the simplicity of man to hearken after the flesh.

*King.* [Reads.] *Great deputy, the welkin's vicegerent, and sole dominator of Navarre, my soul's earth's God, and body's fostering patron,—*

*Cost.* Not a word of Costard yet.

*King.* So it is,—

*Cost.* It may be so: but if he say it is so, is, in telling true, but so, so.

*King.* Peace.

*Cost.* —be to me, and every man that dares not fight!

*King.* No words.

*Cost.* —of other men's secrets, I beseech you.

*King.* *So it is besieged with sable-coloured melancholy, I did commend the black-oppressing humour to the most wholesome physic of thy health-giving air; and, as I am a gentleman, betook myself to walk. The time when? About the sixth hour; when beasts most graze, birds best peck, and men sit down to that nourishment which is called supper. So much for the time when: Now for the ground which; which, I mean, I walked upon: it is clefted thy park. Then for the place where; where, I mean, I did encounter that obscene and most preposterous event, that draweth from my snow-white pen the ebon-coloured ink, which here thou viewest, beholdest, surveyest, or seest: But to the place, where,—It standeth north-north-east and by east from the west corner of thy curious-knotted garden. There did I see that low-spirited swain, that base minnow of thy mirth,*

*Cost.* Me.

*King.* —that unletter'd small-knowing soul,

*Cost.* Me.

*King.* —that shallow vassal,

*Cost.* Still me.

*King.* —which, as I remember, hight Costard,

*Cost.* O me!

*King.* —sorted and consorted, contrary to thy established proclaimed edict and continent canon, with—with,—O with—but with this I passion to say wherewith,

*Cost.* With a wench.

*King.* —with a child of our grandmother Eve, a female; or, for thy more sweet understanding, a woman. Him I (as my ever-esteemed duty pricks me on) have sent to thee, to receive the meed of punishment, by thy sweet grace's officer, Antony Dull; a man of good repute, carriage, bearing, and estimation.

*Dull.* Me, an't shall please you; I am Antony Dull.

*King.* For Jaquenetta. (so is the weaker vessel called, which I apprehended with the aforesaid swain,) I keep her as a vessel of thy law's fury; and shall, at the least of thy sweet notice, bring her to trial. Thine, in all compliments of devoted and heart-burning heat of duty,

DON ADRIANO DE ARMADO.

*Biron.* This is not so well as I looked for, but the best that ever I heard.

*King.* Ay, the best for the worst. But, sirrah, what say you to this?

*Cost.* Sir, I confess the wench.

*King.* Did you hear the proclamation?

*Cost.* I do confess much of the hearing it, but little of the marking of it.

*King.* It was proclaimed a year's imprisonment, to be taken with a wench.

*Cost.* I was taken with none, sir, I was taken with a damosel.

*King.* Well, it was proclaimed damosel.

*Cost.* This was no damosel neither, sir; she was a virgin.

*King.* It is so varied too; for it was proclaimed, virgin.

*Cost.* If it were, I deny her virginity; I was taken with a maid.

*King.* This maid will not serve your turn, sir.

*Cost.* This maid will serve my turn, sir.

*King.* Sir, I will pronounce your sentence; You shall fast a week with bran and water.

*Cost.* I had rather pray a month with nut-ton and porridge.

*King.* And Don Armadoshall be your keeper. —My lord Biron see him deliver'd o'er.—

And go we, lords, to put in practice that

Which each to other hath so strongly sworn.

[Exeunt KING, LONG, and DULL.]

*Biron.* I'll lay my head to any good man's hat These oaths and laws will prove an idle

Sirrah, come on. [scorn.—  
*Cost.* I suffer for the truth, sir: for true it is I was taken with Jaquenetta, and Jaquenetta



is a true girl; and therefore, Welcome the sour cup of prosperity! Affliction may one day smile again, and till then, Sit thee down, sorrow!

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

*Another part of the same. Armado's House.*

*Enter ARMADO and MOTH.*

*Arm.* Boy, what sign is it, when a man of great spirit grows melancholy?

*Moth.* A great sign, sir, that he will look sad.

*Arm.* Why, sadness is one and the self-same thing, dear imp.

*Moth.* No, no; O lord, sir, no.

*Arm.* How canst thou part sadness and melancholy, my tender juvenal\*?

*Moth.* By a familiar demonstration of the working, my tough senior.

*Arm.* Why tough senior? why tough senior?

*Moth.* Why tender juvenal? why tender juvenal?

*Arm.* I spoke it, tender juvenal, as a congruent epitheton, appertaining to thy young days, which we may nominate tender.

*Moth.* And I, tough senior, as an appertinent title to your old time, which we may name tough.

*Arm.* Pretty, and apt.

*Moth.* How mean you, sir? I pretty, and my saying apt? or I apt, and my saying pretty?

*Arm.* Thon pretty, because little.

*Moth.* Little pretty, because little: Wherefore apt?

*Arm.* And therefore apt, because quick.

*Moth.* Speak you this in my praise, master?

*Arm.* In thy condign praise.

*Moth.* I will praise an eel with the same praise.

*Arm.* What? that an eel is ingenious?

*Moth.* That an eel is quick.

*Arm.* I do say, thou art quick in answers: Thon heatest my blood.

*Moth.* I am answered, sir.

*Arm.* I love not to be crossed.

*Moth.* He speaks the mere contrary, crosses† love not him. [*Aside.*]

*Arm.* I have promised to study three years with the duke.

*Moth.* You may do it in an hour, sir.

*Arm.* Impossible.

*Moth.* How many is one thrice told?

*Arm.* I am ill at reckoning, it fitteth the spirit of a tapster.

*Moth.* You are a gentleman, and a gamester, sir.

*Arm.* I confess both; they are both the varnish of a complete man.

*Moth.* Then, I am sure, you know how much the gross sum of deuce-ace amounts to.

*Arm.* It doth amount to one more than two.

*Moth.* Which the base vulgar do call, three.

*Arm.* True.

*Moth.* Why, sir, is this such a piece of study? Now here is three studied, ere you'll thrice wink: and how easy it is to put years

to the word three, and study three years in two words, the dancing horse will tell you.

*Arm.* A most fine figure!

*Moth.* To prove you a cipher. [*Aside.*]

*Arm.* I will herenpon confess, I am in love; and, as it is base for a soldier to love, so am I in love with a base wench. If drawing my sword against the humour of affection would deliver me from the reprobate thought of it, I would take desire prisoner, and ransom him to any French courtier for a new devised courtesy. I think scorn to sigh; methinks, I should out-swear Cupid. Comfort me, boy: What great men have been in love?

*Moth.* Hercules, master.

*Arm.* Most sweet Hercules!—More authority, dear boy, name more; and, sweet my child, let them be men of good repute and carriage.

*Moth.* Sampson, master: he was a man of good carriage, great carriage; for he carried the town-gates on his back, like a porter: and he was in love.

*Arm.* O well-knit Sampson! strong-jointed Sampson! I do excel thee in my rapier, as much as thou didst me in carrying gates. I am in love too,—Who was Sampson's love, my dear Moth?

*Moth.* A woman, master.

*Arm.* Of what complexion?

*Moth.* Of all the four, or the three, or the two; or one of the four.

*Arm.* Tell me precisely of what complexion?

*Moth.* Of the sea-water green, sir.

*Arm.* Is that one of the four complexions?

*Moth.* As I have read, sir; and the best of them too.

*Arm.* Green, indeed, is the colour of lovers: but to have a love of that colour, methinks, Sampson had small reason for it. He, surely, affected her for her wit.

*Moth.* It was so, sir; for she had a green wit.

*Arm.* My love is most immaculate white and red.

*Moth.* Most maculate thoughts, master, are masked under such colours.

*Arm.* Define, define, well-educated infant.

*Moth.* My father's wit, and my mother's tongue, assist me!

*Arm.* Sweet invocation of a child; most pretty, and pathetic!

*Moth.* If she be made of white and red,

Her faults will ne'er be known;

For blushing cheeks by faults are bred,

And fears by pale-white shown:

Then, if she fear, or be to blame,

By this you shall not know;

For still her cheeks possess the same,

Which native she doth owe†.

A dangerous rhyme, master, against the reason of white and red.

*Arm.* Is there not a ballad, boy, of the King and the Beggar?

*Moth.* The world was very guilty of such a ballad some three ages since: but, I think, now 'tis not to be found; or, if it were, it

\* Young man. † The name of a coin once current. ‡ Of which she is naturally possessed.

would neither serve for the writing, nor the tune.

*Arm.* I will have the subject newly writ o'er, that I may example my digression \* by some mighty precedent. Boy, I do love that country girl, that I took in the park with the rational hind Costard; she deserves well.

*Moth.* To be whipped; and yet a better love than my master. [*Aside.*]

*Arm.* Sing, boy; my spirit grows heavy in love.

*Moth.* And that's great marvel, loving a light wench.

*Arm.* I say, sing.

*Moth.* Forbear till this company be past.

*Enter DULL, COSTARD, and JAQUENETTA.*

*Dull.* Sir, the duke's pleasure is, that you keep Costard safe: and you must let him take no delight, nor no penance; but a' must fast three days a-week: For this damsel, I must keep her at the park; she is allowed for the day-woman†. Fare you well.

*Arm.* I do betray myself with blushing.—Maid.

*Jaqu.* Man.

*Arm.* I will visit thee at the lodge.

*Jaqu.* That's hereby.

*Arm.* I know where it is situate.

*Jaqu.* Lord, how wise you are!

*Arm.* I will tell thee wonders.

*Jaqu.* With that face?

*Arm.* I love thee.

*Jaqu.* So I heard you say.

*Arm.* And so farewell.

*Jaqu.* Fair weather after you!

*Dull.* Come, Jaquenetta, away.

[*Exeunt DULL and JAQUENETTA.*]

*Arm.* Villain, thou shalt fast for thy offences, ere thou be pardoned.

*Cost.* Well, sir, I hope, when I do it, I shall do it on a full stomach.

*Arm.* Thou shalt be heavily punished.

*Cost.* I am more bound to you, than your fellows, for they are but lightly rewarded.

*Arm.* Take away this villain; shut him up.

*Moth.* Come, you transgressing slave; away

*Cost.* Let me not be pent up, sir; I will fast, being loose.

*Moth.* No, sir; that were fast and loose: thou shalt to prison.

*Cost.* Well, if ever I do see the merry days of desolation that I have seen, some shall see—

*Moth.* What shall some see?

*Cost.* Nay, nothing, master Moth, but what they look upon. It is not for prisoners to be too silent in their words; and, therefore, I will say nothing: I thank God, I have as little patience as another man; and, therefore, I can be quiet.

[*Exeunt MOTH and COSTARD.*]

*Arm.* I do affect‡ the very ground, which is base, where her shoe, which is baser, guided by her foot, which is basest, doth tread. I shall be forsworn, (which is a great argument of falsehood,) if I love: And how can that be true love, which is falsely attempted? Love is a familiar; love is a devil: there is no evil angel but love. Yet Sampson was so tempted: and he had an excellent strength: yet was Solomon so seduced; and he had a very good wit. Cupid's butt-shaft§ is too hard for Hercules' club, and therefore too much odds for a Spaniard's rapier. The first and second cause will not serve my turn; the passado he respects not, the duello he regards not: his disgrace is to be called boy; but his glory is, to subdue men. Adieu, valour! rust, rapier! be still, drum! for your manager is in love; yea, he loveth. Assist me some extemporal god of rhyme, for, I am sure, I shall turn sonneteer. Devise wit; write pen: for I am for whole volumes in folio. [*Exit.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.

*Another part of the same. A Pavilion and Tents at a distance.*

*Enter the Princess of France, ROSALINE, MARIA, KATHARINE, BOYET, Lords, and other Attendants.*

*Boyet.* Now, madam, summon up your dearest¶ spirits:

Consider who the king your father sends;  
To whom he sends; and what's his embassy:  
Yourself, held precious in the world's esteem;  
To parley with the sole inheritor  
Of all perfections that a man may owe,  
Matchless Navarre; the plea of no less weight  
Than Aquitaine; a dowry for a queen.  
Be now as prodigal of all dear grace,  
As nature was in making graces dear,  
When she did starve the general world beside,

And prodigally gave them all to you.

*Prin.* Good lord Boyet, my beauty, though but mean,

Needs not the painted flourish of your praise;  
Beauty is bought by judgment of the eye.

Not utter'd by base sale of chapmen's tongues:  
I am less proud to hear you tell my worth,

Than you much willing to be counted wise  
In spending your wit in the praise of mine.

But now to task the tasker,—Good Boyet,  
You are not ignorant, all-telling fame

Doth noise abroad, Navarre hath made a vow  
Till painful study shall outwear three years,

No woman may approach his silent court:  
Therefore to us seemeth it a needful course,

Before we enter his forbidden gates,  
To know his pleasure; and in that behalf,

Bold of your worthiness, we single you  
As our best-moving fair solicitor:

\* Transgression.

† Dairy-woman.

‡ Love.

§ Arrow to shoot at butts with.

¶ Best.

Tell him, the daughter of the king of France,  
On serious business, craving quick despatch,  
Impörtunes personal conference with his grace.  
Haste, signify so much; while we attend,  
Like humble-visag'd suitors, his high will.

*Boy.* Proud of employment, willingly I go.

*[Exit.]*

*Prin.* All pride is willing pride, and yours  
is so.—

Who are the votaries, my loving lords,  
That are vow-fellows with this virtuous duke?

*1 Lord.* Longaville is one.

*Prin.* Know you the man?

*Mar.* I know him, madam; at a marriage  
feast,

Between lord Perigort and the beauteous heir  
Of Jacques Falconbridge solemnized,  
In Normandy saw I this Longaville:

A man of sovereign parts he is esteem'd;  
Well fitted in the arts, glorious in arms:  
Nothing becomes him ill, that he would well,  
The only soil of his fair virtue's gloss,  
(If virtue's gloss will stain with any soil.)

Is a sharp wit match'd with too blunt a will;  
Whose edge hath power to cut, whose will  
still wills

It should none spare that come within his  
power. *[is't so?]*

*Prin.* Some merry mocking lord, belike;

*Mar.* They say so most, that most his hu-  
mours know. *[they grow.]*

*Prin.* Such short-liv'd wits do wither as  
Who are the rest? *[plish'd youth,]*

*Kath.* The young Dumain, a well accom-  
Of all that virtue love for virtue lov'd: [ill;  
Most power to do most harm, least knowing  
For he hath wit to make an ill shape good,  
And shape to win grace though he had no wit.  
I saw him at the duke Alençon's once;  
And much too little of that good I saw,  
Is my report, to his great worthiness.

*Ros.* Another of these students at that time  
Was there with him: if I have heard a truth,  
Biron they call him; but a merrier man  
Within the limit of becoming mirth,  
I never spent an hour's talk withal:  
His eye begets occasion for his wit;  
For every object that the one doth catch,  
The other turns to a mirth-moving jest;  
Which his fair tongue (conceit's expositor,)  
Delivers in such apt and gracious words,  
That aged ears play truant at his tales,  
And younger hearings are quite ravished;  
So sweet and voluble is his discourse.

*Prin.* God bless my ladies! are they all in  
That every one her own hath garnished [love;  
With such bedecking ornaments of praise?

*Mar.* Here comes Boyet.

*Re-enter BOYET.*

*Prin.* Now, what admittance, lord?

*Boyet.* Navarre had notice of your fair  
approach;

And he, and his competitors\* in oath,  
Were all address'd† to meet you, gentle lady,  
Before I came. Marry, thus much I have learnt,  
He rather means to lodge you in the field,

(Like one that comes here to besiege his court,)  
Than seek a dispensation for his oath,  
To let you enter his unpeopled house.

Here comes Navarre. *[The ladies mask.]*

*Enter KING, LONGAVILLE, DUMAIN,  
BIRON, and Attendants.*

*King.* Fair princess, welcome to the court  
of Navarre.

*Prin.* Fair, I give you back again; and,  
welcome I have not yet: the roof of this  
court is too high to be yours; and welcome  
to the wild fields too base to be mine.

*King.* You shall be welcome, madam, to  
my court. *[me thither.]*

*Prin.* I will be welcome then; conduct

*King.* Hear me, dear lady; I have sworn  
an oath. *[forsworn.]*

*Prin.* Our Lady help my lord! he'll be

*King.* Not for the world, fair madam, by  
my will. *[nothing else.]*

*Prin.* Why, will shall break it; will, and

*King.* Your ladyship is ignorant what it is.

*Prin.* Were my lord so, his ignorance were  
wise. *[norance]*

Where† now his knowledge must prove ig-  
I hear, your grace hath sworn-out house-  
keeping:

'Tis deadly sin to keep that oath, my lord,  
And sin to break it:

But pardon me, I am too sudden-bold;  
To teach a teacher ill beseemeth me.

Vouchsafe to read the purpose of my coming,  
And suddenly resolve me in my suit.

*[Gives a paper.]*

*King.* Madam, I will, if suddenly I may.

*Prin.* You will the sooner, that I were  
away;

For you'll prove perjurd, if you make me stay.

*Biron.* Did not I dance with you in Brabant  
once? *[once?]*

*Ros.* Did not I dance with you in Brabant

*Biron.* I know you did.

*Ros.* How needless was it then  
To ask the question?

*Biron.* You must not be so quick.

*Ros.* 'Tis 'long of you that spur me with  
such questions. *[twill tire.]*

*Biron.* Your wit's too hot, it speeds too fast,

*Ros.* Not till it leave the rider in the mire.

*Biron.* What time o' day?

*Ros.* The hour that fools should ask.

*Biron.* Now fair befall your mask!

*Ros.* Fair fall the face it covers!

*Biron.* And send you many lovers!

*Ros.* Amen, so you be none.

*Biron.* Nay, then will I be gone. *[mate]*

*King.* Madam, your father here doth inti-  
The payment of a hundred thousand crowns;

Being but the one half of an entire sum,  
Disbursed by my father in his wars.

But say, that he, or we, (as neither have,)  
Receiv'd that sum; yet there remains unpaid

A hundred thousand more; in surety of the  
One part of Aquitain is bound to us, [which,

Although not valued to the money's worth.  
If then the king your father will restore

\* Confederates.

† Prepared.

‡ Whereas.



But that one half which is unsatisfied,  
We will give up our right in Aquitain,  
And hold fair friendship with his majesty.  
But that, it seems, he little purposeth,  
For here he doth demand to have repaid  
An hundred thousand crowns; and not demands,

On payment of a hundred thousand crowns,  
To have his title live in Aquitain;  
Which we much rather had depart\* withal,  
And have the money by our father lent,  
Than Aquitain so gelded as it is.  
Dear princess, were not his requests so far  
From reason's yielding, your fair self should make

A yielding, 'gainst some reason, in my breast,  
And go well satisfied to France again. [wrong,

*Prin.* You do the king my father too much  
And wrong the reputation of your name,  
In so unseemingly to confess receipt  
Of that which hath so faithfully been paid.

*King.* I do protest, I never heard of it;  
And, if you prove it, I'll repay it back,  
Or yield up Aquitain.

*Prin.* We arrest your word:—  
Boyet, you can produce acquittances,  
For such a sum, from special officers  
Of Charles his father.

*King.* Satisfy me so. [come,  
*Boyet.* So please your grace, the packet is not  
Where that and other specialties are bound;  
To-morrow you shall have a sight of them.

*King.* It shall suffice me: at which inter-  
All liberal reason I will yield unto. [view,  
Mean time, receive such welcome at my hand,  
As honour, without breach of honour, may  
Make tender of to thy true worthiness:  
You may not come, fair princess, in my gate;  
But here without you shall be so receiv'd,  
As you shall deem yourself lodg'd in my heart,  
Though so denied fair harbour in my house.  
Your own good thoughts excuse me, and fare-  
To-morrow shall we visit you again. [well:

*Prin.* Sweet health and fair desires consort  
your grace!

*King.* Thy own wish wish I thee in every  
place! [Exeunt KING and his Train.

*Biron.* Lady, I will commend you to my  
own heart.

*Ros.* 'Pray you, do my commendations; I  
would be glad to see it.

*Biron.* I would, you heard it groan.

*Ros.* Is the fool sick?

*Biron.* Sick at heart.

*Ros.* Alack, let it bleed.

*Biron.* Would that do it good?

*Ros.* My physic says, It.

*Biron.* Will you prick't with your eye?

*Ros.* No poynt†, with my knife.

*Biron.* Now, God save thy life!

*Ros.* And yours from long living!

*Biron.* I cannot stay thanksgiving. [Retiring.

*Dum.* Sir, I pray you, a word: What lady  
is that same? [name.

*Boyet.* The heir of Alençon, Rosaline her

*Dum.* A gallant lady! Monsieur, fare you  
well. [Exit.

*Long.* I beseech you a word; What is she  
in the white? [in the light.

*Boyet.* A woman sometimes, an you saw her  
*Long.* Perchance, light in the light: I desire  
her name. [that, were a shame.

*Boyet.* She hath but one for herself; to desire  
*Long.* Pray you, sir, whose daughter?

*Boyet.* Her mother's, I have heard.

*Long.* God's blessing on your beard!

*Boyet.* Good sir, be not offended:

She is an heir of Falconbridge.

*Long.* Nay, my choler is ended.

She is a most sweet lady.

*Boyet.* Not unlike, sir; that may be.

[Exit LONG.

*Biron.* What's her name, in the cap?

*Boyet.* Katharine, by good hap.

*Biron.* Is she wedded, or no?

*Boyet.* To her will, sir, or so.

*Biron.* You are welcome, sir; adieu!

*Boyet.* Farewell to me, sir, and welcome  
to you. [Exit BIRON.—Ladies unmask.

*Mar.* That last is Biron, the merry mad-cap  
Not a word with him but a jest. [lord;

*Boyet.* And every jest but a word.

*Prin.* It was well done of you to take him  
at his word. [to board.

*Boyet.* I was as willing to grapple, as he was

*Mar.* Two hot sheeps, marry!

*Boyet.* And wherefore not ships?

No sheep, sweet lamb, unless we feed on your  
lips. [finish the jest?

*Mar.* You sheep, and I pasture; Shall that

*Boyet.* So you grant pasture for me.

[Offering to kiss her.

*Mar.*

My lips are no common, though several‡ they  
*Boyet.* Belonging to whom? [be.

*Mar.* To my fortunes and me.

*Prin.* Good wits will be jangling; but, gen-  
tles agree:

The civil war of wits were much better used  
On Navarre and his book-men; for here 'tis  
abused.

*Boyet.* If my observation, (which very sel-  
dom lies,) [eyes,

By the heart's still rhetoric, disclosed with  
Deceive me not now, Navarre is infected.

*Prin.* With what?

*Boyet.* With that which we lovers entitle,

*Prin.* Your reason? [affected.

*Boyet.* Why all his behaviours did make  
their retire [sire:

To the court of his eye, peeping thorough de-  
His heart, like an agate, with your print im-  
pressed,

Proud with his form, in his eye pride expressed:  
His tongue, all impatient to speak and not ee,  
Did stumble with haste in his eye-sight to be;  
All senses to that sense did make their repair,  
To feel only looking on fairest of fair: [eye,  
Methought, all his senses were lock'd in his  
As jewels in crystal for some prince to buy;

\* Part.

† Ay, yes.

‡ A French particle of negation.

§ A quibble, several signified unenclosed lands.

Who, tending their own worth, from where  
they were glass'd, [pass'd.  
Did point you to buy them, along as you  
His face's own margin did quote such amazes,  
That all eyes saw his eyes enchanted with  
gazes :

I'll give you Aquitain, and all that is his,  
And you give him for my sake but one loving  
kiss.

*Prin.* Come, to our pavilion: Boyet is dis-  
pos'd—

*Boyet.* But to speak that in words, which his  
eye hath disclos'd :

I only have made a mouth of his eye,  
By adding a tongue which I know will not lie.  
*Ros.* Thou art an old love-monger, and  
speak'st skilfully. [news of him.

*Mar.* He is Cupid's grandfather, and learns  
*Ros.* Then was Venus like her mother; for  
her father is but grim.

*Boyet.* Do you hear, my mad wenches?

*Mar.* No.

*Boyet.* What then, do you see?

*Ros.* Ay, our way to be gone.

*Boyet.* Your are too hard for me.  
[Exeunt

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. Another part of the same.

Enter ARMADO and MOTH.

*Arm.* Warble, child; make passionate my  
sense of hearing.

*Moth.* Concolinel— [Singing.

*Arm.* Sweet air!—Go, tenderness of years;  
take this key, give enlargement to the swain,  
bring him testinately \* hither; I must employ  
him in a letter to my love.

*Moth.* Master, will you win your love with  
a French brawl?

*Arm.* How mean'st thou? brawling in  
French?

*Moth.* No, my complete master; but to  
jig off a tune at the tongue's end, canary † to  
it with your feet, humour it with turning up  
your eyelids; sigh a note, and sing a note;  
sometime through the throat, as if you swal-  
lowed love with singing love; sometime  
through the nose, as if you snuffed up love by  
smelling love; with your hat penthouse-like,  
o'er the shop of your eyes; with your arms  
crossed on your thin belly-doublet, like a rab-  
bit on a spit; or your hands in your pocket,  
like a man after the old painting; and keep  
not too long in one tune, but a snip and away:  
These are complements, these are humours;  
these betray nice wenches—that would be be-  
trayed without these; and make them men of  
note, (do you note, men?) that most are af-  
fected to these.

*Arm.* How hast thou purchased this expe-  
rience?

*Moth.* By my penny of observation.

*Arm.* But O,—but O,—

*Moth.* —the hobby-horse is forgot.

*Arm.* Callest thou my love, hobby-horse?

*Moth.* No, master; the hobby-horse is but  
a colt, and your love, perhaps, a hackney.  
But have you forgot your love?

*Arm.* Almost I had.

*Moth.* Negligent student! learn her by heart.

*Arm.* By heart, and in heart, boy.

*Moth.* And out of heart, master: all those  
three I will prove?

*Arm.* What wilt thou prove?

*Moth.* A man, if I live; and this, by, in,  
and without, upon the instant: By Learnt you  
love her, because your heart cannot come by  
her: in heart you love her, because your  
heart is in love with her; and out of heart  
you love her, being out of heart that you can-  
not enjoy her.

*Arm.* I am all these three.

*Moth.* And three times as much more, and  
yet nothing at all.

*Arm.* Fetch hither the swain; he must car-  
ry me a letter.

*Moth.* A message well sympathized; a  
horse to be ambassador for an ass!

*Arm.* Ha, ha! what sayest thou?

*Moth.* Marry, sir, you must send the ass  
upon the horse, for he is very slow-gaited:  
But I go.

*Arm.* The way is but short; away.

*Moth.* As swift as lead, sir.

*Arm.* Thy meaning, pretty ingenious?

Is not lead a metal heavy, dull, and slow?

*Moth.* Minimé, honest master; or rather,  
master, no.

*Arm.* I say, lead is slow.

*Moth.* You are too swift ‡, sir, to say so:  
Is that lead slow which is fir'd from a gun?

*Arm.* Sweet smoke of rhetoric!

He reputes me a cannon; and the bullet, that's  
I shoot thee at the swain. [he:—

*Moth.* Thump then, and I flee. [Exit.

*Arm.* A most acute juvenal; voluble and  
free of grace! [thy face:

By thy favour, sweet welkin, I must sigh in  
Most rude melancholy, valour gives thee place,  
My herald is return'd.

Re-enter MOTH and COSTARD.

*Moth.* A wonder, master; here's a Cos-  
tard ¶ broken in a shin.

*Arm.* Some enigma, some riddle: come,—  
thy l'envoy ¶;—begin.

*Cost.* No egma, no riddle, no l'envoy; no  
salve in the mail, sir: O, sir, plantain, a plain  
plantain; no l'envoy, no l'envoy, no salve,  
sir, but a plantain!

\* Hastily. † A kind of dance. ‡ Canary was the name of a sprightly dance.

§ Quick, ready. ¶ A head. ¶ An old French term for concluding verses, which served  
either to convey the moral, or to address the poem to some person.

*Arm.* By virtue, thou enforcest laughter; thy silly thought, my spleen; the heaving of my lungs provokes me to ridiculous smiling: O, pardon me, my stars! Doth the inconsiderate take salve for *l'envoy*, and the word, *l'envoy*, for a salve?

*Moth.* Do the wise think them other? is not *l'envoy* a salve?

*Arm.* No, page: it is an epilogue or discourse, to make plain

Some obscure precedence that hath tofore I will example it: [been sain.

The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee, Were still at odds, being but three.

There's the moral: Now the *l'envoy*.

*Moth.* I will add the *l'envoy*: Say the moral again.

*Arm.* The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee, Were still at odds, being but three:

*Moth.* Until the goose came out of door, And stay'd the odds by adding four.

Now will I begin your moral, and do you follow with my *l'envoy*.

The fox, the ape, and the humble-bee, Were still at odds, being but three:

*Arm.* Until the goose came out of door, Staying the odds by adding four.

*Moth.* A good *l'envoy*, ending in the goose; Would you desire more?

*Cost.* The boy hath sold him a bargain, a goose, that's flat:— [be fat.—

Sir, your pennyworth is good, an your goose To sell a bargain well, is as cunning as fast and loose:

Let me see a fat *l'envoy*; ay, that's a fat goose.

*Arm.* Come hither, come hither: How did this argument begin? [in a shin.

*Moth.* By saying that a *Costard* was broken Then call'd you for the *l'envoy*.

*Cost.* True, and I for a plantain; Thus came your argument in;

Then the boy's fat *l'envoy*, the goose that you And he ended the market. [bought;

*Arm.* But tell me; how was there a *Costard* broken in a shin?

*Moth.* I will tell you sensibly.

*Cost.* Thou hast no feeling of it, *Moth*; I will speak that *l'envoy*:

I, *Costard*, running out, that was safely within, Fell over the threshold, and broke my shin.

*Arm.* We will talk no more of this matter.

*Cost.* Till there be more matter in the shin.

*Arm.* Sirrah *Costard*, I will enfranchise thee.

*Cost.* O, marry me to one Frances:—I smell some *l'envoy*, some goose, in this.

*Arm.* By my sweet soul, I mean, setting thee at liberty, enfranchising thy person; thou wert immured, restrained, captivated, bound.

*Cost.* True, true; and now you will be my purgation, and let me loose.

*Arm.* I give thee thy liberty, set thee from durance; and, in lieu thereof, impose on thee nothing but this: Bear this significant to the country maid Jaquenetta: there is remuneration; [Giving him money.] for the best ward

of mine honour, is, rewarding my dependants. *Moth.* follow. [Exit.

*Moth.* Like the sequel, I.—Signior *Costard*, adieu.

*Cost.* My sweet ounce of man's flesh! my inconv \* Jew!— [Exit *Moth*.

Now will I look to his remuneration. Remuneration! O, that's the Latin word for three farthings: three farthings—remuneration.—

*What's the price of this inkle? a penny:—*

*No, I'll give you a remuneration; why, it carries it.—*Remuneration!—why, it is a fairer name than French crown. I will never buy and sell out of this word.

*Enter BIRON.*

*Biron.* O, my good knave *Costard*! exceededingly well met.

*Cost.* Pray you, sir, how much carnation ribbon may a man buy for a remuneration?

*Biron.* What is a remuneration?

*Cost.* Marry, sir, half-penny farthing.

*Biron.* O, why then, three-farthings'-worth of silk.

*Cost.* I thank your worship: God be with you!

*Biron.* O, stay, slave, I must employ thee: As thou wilt win my favour, good my knave, Do one thing for me that I shall entreat.

*Cost.* When would you have it done, sir?

*Biron.* O, this afternoon.

*Cost.* Well, I will do it, sir: Fare you well.

*Biron.* O, thou knowest not what it is.

*Cost.* I shall know, sir, when I have done it.

*Biron.* Why, villain, thou must know first.

*Cost.* I will come to your worship to-morrow morning.

*Biron.* It must be done this afternoon. Hark, slave, it is but this;—

The princess comes to hunt here in the park, And in her train there is a gentle lady;

When tongues speak sweetly, then they name her name,

And *Rosaline* they call her: ask for her; And to her white hand see thou do commend

This seal'd-up counsel. There's thy guerdon†; go. [Gives him money.

*Cost.* Guerdon,—O sweet guerdon! better than remuneration; eleven-pence farthing better: Most sweet guerdon:—I will do it, sir, in print!—Guerdon—remuneration. [Exit

*Biron.* O!—And I, forsooth, in love! I, that have been love's whip;

A very beadle to a humorous sigh; A critic; nay, a night-watch constable;

A domineering pedant o'er the boy, Than whom no mortal so magnificent! [boy;

This wimpled‡, whining, purblind, wayward This senior-junior, giant-dwarf, Dan Cupid;

Regent of love-rhymes, lord of folded arms, The anointed sovereign of sighs and groans,

Liege of all loiterers and malcontents, Dread prince of plackets, king of codpieces,

Sole imperator, and great general Of trotting paritors‡,—O my little heart!— And I to be a corporal of his field,

And wear his colours like a tumbler's hoop!

\* Delightful. † Reward. ‡ With the utmost exactness. § Hooded, veiled.

¶ Petticoats. ¶ The officers of the spiritual courts who serve citations.



What? I love! I sue! I seek a wife!  
 A woman, that is like a German clock,  
 Still a repairing; ever out of frame;  
 And never going aright, being a watch,  
 But being watch'd that it may still go right?  
 Nay, to be perjur'd, which is worst of all;  
 And, among three, to love the worst of all;  
 A whitely wanton with a velvet brow, [eyes;  
 With two pitch balls stuck in her face for

Ay, and, by heaven, one that will do the deed,  
 Though Argus were her eunuch and her guard;  
 And I to sigh for her! to watch for her!  
 To pray for her! Go to; it is a plague  
 That Cupid will impose for my neglect  
 Of his almighty dreadful little might. [groan;  
 Well, I will love, write, sigh, pray, sue, and  
 Some men must love my lady, and some Joan.  
 [Exit.

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.

Another part of the same.

Enter the Princess, ROSALINE, MARIA,  
 KATHARINE, BOYET, Lords, Attendants,  
 and a Forester.

Prin. Was that the king, that spurr'd his  
 horse so hard  
 Against the steep uprisings of the hill?

Boyet. I know not; but, I think, it was  
 not he. [ing mind.

Prin. Whoe'er he was, he show'd a mount-  
 Well, lords, to-day we shall have our des-  
 patch;

On Saturday we will return to France.—  
 Then, forester, my friend, where is the bush,  
 That we must stand and play the murderer in?

For. Here by, upon the edge of yonder  
 coppice; [shoot.

A stand where you may make the fairest  
 Prin. I thank my beauty, I am fair that  
 shoot, [shoot:

And thereupon thou speak'st, the fairest  
 For. Pardon me, madam, for I meant  
 not so.

Prin. What, what? first praise me, and  
 again say, no?

O short-liv'd pride! Not fair? alack for woe!  
 For. Yes, madam, fair.

Prin. Nay, never paint me now;  
 Where fair is not, praise cannot mend the  
 brow. [true;

Here, good my glass, take this for telling  
 [Giving him money.

Fair payment for foul words is more than  
 due. [inherit.

For. Nothing but fair is that which you  
 Prin. See, see, my beauty will be sav'd  
 by merit.

O heresy in fair, fit for these days!

A giving hand, though foul, shall have fair  
 praise.— [kill,

But come, the bow:—Now mercy goes to  
 And shooting well is then accounted ill.  
 Thus will I save my credit in the shoot:

Not wounding, pity would not let me do't;  
 If wounding, then it was to shew my skill,  
 That more for praise, than purpose, meant to  
 kill.

And, out of question, so it is sometimes;  
 Glory grows guilty of detested crimes;

When, for fame's sake, for praise, an outwaite  
 part,

We bend to that the working of the heart:

As I, for praise alone, now seek to spill

The poor deer's blood, that my heart means  
 no ill. [sovereignty

Boyet. I do not curst wives hold that self-  
 Only for praise' sake, when they strive to be  
 Lords o'er their lords? [afford

Prin. Only for praise: and praise we may  
 To any lady that subdues a lord.

Enter COSTARD.

Prin. Here comes a member of the com-  
 mon-wealth.

Cost. God dig-you-den\* all! Pray you,  
 which is the head lady?

Prin. Thou shalt know her, fellow, by the  
 rest that have no heads.

Cost. Which is the greatest lady, the high-

Prin. The thickest, and the tallest. [est?

Cost. The thickest, and the tallest! it is  
 so; truth is truth.

And your waist, mistress, were as slender as  
 my wit, [should be fit.

One of these maids' girdles for your waist  
 Are not you the chief woman? you are the  
 thickest here.

Prin. What's your will, sir? what's your  
 will? [to one lady Rosaline.

Cost. I have a letter from monsieur Biron,

Prin. O, thy letter, thy letter; he's a good  
 friend of mine: [carve;

Stand aside, good bearer.—Boyet, you can  
 Break up this capon t.

Boyet. I am bound to serve.—  
 This letter is mistook, it importeth none  
 It is writ to Jaquenetta. [here;

Prin. We will read it, I swear;  
 Break the neck of the wax, and every one  
 give ear.

Boyet. [Reads.] By heaven, that thou  
 art fair, is most infallible; true, that thou  
 art beauteous; truth itself, that thou art  
 lovely: More fairer than fair, beautiful  
 than beauteous; truer than truth itself,  
 have commiseration on thy heroical vas-  
 sal! The magnanimous and most illus-  
 trate king Cophetua set eye upon the per-  
 nicious and indubitate beggar Zenelophon;  
 and he it was that might rightly say, vici,  
 vidi, vici; which to anatomize in the vul-

\* God give you good even.

† Open this letter.

‡ Illustrious.

gar, (O base and obscure vulgar!) videlicet, he came, saw, and overcame: he came, ore; saw, two; overcame, three. Who came? the king; Who did he come? to see; Why did he see? to overcome: To whom came he? to the beggar; What saw he? the beggar; Whom overcame he? the beggar: The conclusion is victory; On whose side? the king's: the captive is enrich'd; On whose side? the beggar's; The catastrophe is a nuptial; On whose side? the king's?—no, on both in one, or one in both. I am the king; for so stands the comparison: thou the beggar, for so witnesseth thy lowliness. Shall I command thy love? I may: Shall I force thy love? I could: Shall I entreat thy love? I will. What shalt thou exchange for rags? robes; For tittles, tittles; For this if, me. Thus, expecting thy reply, I profess my lips on thy foot, my eyes on thy picture, and my heart on thy every part.

Thine, in the dearest design of industry,  
DON ADRIANO DE ARMADO.

Thus dost thou hear the Nemean lion roar  
'Gainst thee, thou lamb, that standest as his prey;

Submissive fall his princely feet before,  
And he from forage will incline to play:  
But if thou strive, poor soul, what art thou then?

Food for his rage, repasture for his den.

Prin. What plume of feathers is he, that indited this letter?

What vane? what weather-cock? did you ever hear better?

Boyet. I am much deceived, but I remember the style, [it erewhile \*.

Prin. Else your memory is bad, going o'er

Boyet. This Armado is a Spaniard, that keeps here in court; [sport

A phantasm a Menarcho, and one that makes To the prince, and his book-mates.

Prin. Thou, fellow, a word:

Who gave thee this letter?

Cost. I told you; my lord.

Prin. To whom shouldst thou give it?

Cost. From my lord to my lady.

Prin. From which lord, to which lady?

Cost. From my lord Biron, a good master of mine,

To a lady of France, that he call'd Rosaline.

Prin. Thou hast mistaken his letter. Come, lords, away.

Here, sweet, put up this: 'twill be thine another day. [Exit Princess and Train.

Boyet. Who is the suitor? who is the suitor?

Ros. Shall I teach you to know?

Boyet. Ay, my continent of beauty.

Ros. Why, she that bears the bow.

Finely put off!

Boyet. My lady goes to kill horns; but, if thou marry,

hang me by the neck, if horns that year miscarry.

Finely put on!

Ros. Well then, I am the shooter.

Boyet. And who is your deer?

Ros. If we choose by the horns, yourself come near.

Finely put on, indeed!—

Mar. You still wrangle with her, Boyet and she strikes at the brow.

Boyet. But she herself is hit lower: Have I hit her now?

Ros. Shall I come upon thee with an old saying, that was a man when king Pepin of France was a little boy, as touching the hit it?

Biron. So I may answer thee with one as old, that was a woman when queen Guinever of Britain was a little wench, as touching the hit it.

Ros. Thou canst not hit it, hit it, hit it, [Singing.

Thou canst not hit it, my good man.

Boyet. An I cannot, cannot, cannot,

An I cannot, another can.

[Exit Ros. and KATH.

Cost. By my troth, most pleasant! how both did fit it!

Mar. A mark marvellous well shot; for they both did hit it.

Boyet. A mark! O, mark but that mark; A mark, says my lady!

Let the mark have a prick in't, to mete at, if it may be. [hand is out.

Mar. Wide o' the bow hand! I'faith your

Cost. Indeed, a' must shoot nearer, or he'll ne'er hit the clout. [your hand is in.

Boyet. An if my hand be out, then, belike

Cost. Then will she get the upshot by cleaving the pin.

Mar. Come, come, you talk greasily, your lips grow foul.

Cost. She's too hard for you at pricks, sir; challenge her to bowl.

Boyet. I fear too much rubbing; Good night, my good owl.

[Exit BOYET and MARIA.

Cost. By my soul, a swain! a most simple clown! [him down!

Lord, lord! how the ladies and I have put O' my troth, most sweet jests! most incony

vulgar wit!

When it comes so smoothly off, so obscenely as it were, so fit.

Armato o' the one side,—O, a most dainty man! [her fan

To see him walk before a lady, and to bear To see him kiss his hand! and how most

sweetly a' will swear! [wit!

And his page o' t' other side, that handful of Ah, heavens, it is a most pathological wit!

Sola, sola! [Shouting within.

[Exit COSTARD, running.

SCENE II. The same.

Enter HOLOFERNES, Sir NATHANIEL, and DULL.

Nath. Very reverent sport, truly and done in the testimony of a good conscience,

*Hol.* The deer was, as you know, in *sanguis*,—blood; ripe as a pomewater\*, who now hangeth like a jewel in the ear of *calo*,—the sky, the welkin, the heaven; and anon falleth like a crab, on the face of *terra*,—the soil, the land, the earth.

*Nath.* Truly, master Holofernes, the epithets are sweetly varied, like a scholar at the least: But, sir, I assure ye, it was a buck of the first head.

*Hol.* Sir Nathaniel, *haud credo*.

*Dull.* 'Twas not a *haud credo*, 'twas a pricket.

*Hol.* Most barbarous intimation! yet a kind of insinuation, as it were, *in via*, in way, of explication; *facere*, as it were, replication, or, rather, *ostentare*, to show, as it were, his inclination,—after his undressed, unpolished, uneducated, unpruned, untrained, or rather unlettered, or, ratherest, unconfirmed fashion,—to insert again my *haud credo* for a deer.

*Dull.* I said, the deer was not a *haud credo*; 'twas a pricket.

*Hol.* Twice sod simplicity, *bis coctus*!—O thou monster ignorance, how deformed dost thou look!

*Nath.* Sir, he hath never fed of the dainties that are bred in a book; he hath not eat paper, as it were; he hath not drunk ink: his intellect is not replenished; he is only an animal, only sensible in the duller parts; And such barren plants are set before us, that we thankful should be

(Which we of taste and feeling are) for those parts that do fructify in us more than he. For as it would ill become me to be vain, indiscreet, or a fool,

So, were there a patch† set on learning, to see him in a school:

But, *omne bene*, say I; being of an old father's mind, [the wind]

Many can brook the weather, that love not

*Dull.* You two are book-men: Can you tell by your wit,

What was a month old at Cain's birth, that's not five weeks old as yet?

*Hol.* Dictynna, good man Dull; Dictynna, good man Dull.

*Dull.* What is Dictynna?

*Nath.* A title to Phœbe, to Luna, to the moon. [Adam was no more;

*Hol.* The moon was a month old, when Adam raught‡ not to five weeks, when he came to fivescore.

The allusion holds in the exchange.

*Dull.* 'Tis true indeed; the collusion holds in the exchange.

*Hol.* God comfort thy capacity! I say, the allusion holds in the exchange.

*Dull.* And I say the pollution holds in the exchange; for the moon is never but a month old: and I say beside, that 'twas a pricket that the princess kill'd.

*Hol.* Sir Nathaniel, will you hear an extemporal epitaph on the death of the deer?

and, to humour the ignorant, I have call'd the deer the princess kill'd, a pricket.

*Nath.* *Perge*, good master Holofernes, *perge*; so it shall please you to abrogate scurrility.

*Hol.* I will something affect the letter; for it argues facility.

*The praiseful princess pierc'd and prick'd a pretty pleasing pricket;*

*Some say, a sore; but not a sore, till now made sore with shooting.*

*The dogs did yell; put L to sore, then sorel jumps from thicket;*

*Or pricket, sore, or else sorel; the people foll a hooting.*

*If sore be sore, then L to sore makes fifty sores; O sore L!*

*Of one sore I an hundred make, by adding but one more L.*

*Nath.* A rare talent!

*Dull.* If a talent be a claw, look how he claws him with a talent.

*Hol.* This is a gift that I have, simple, simple; a foolish extravagant spirit, full of forms, figures, shapes, objects, ideas, apprehensions, motions, revolutions: these are begot in the ventricle of memory, nourished in the womb of *pia mater*; and deliver'd upon the melting of occasion: But the gift is good in those in whom it is acute, and I am thankful for it.

*Nath.* Sir, I praise the Lord for you; and so may my parishioners; for their sons are well tutor'd by you, and their daughters profit very greatly under you: you are a good member of the commonwealth.

*Hol.* *Mehercle*, if their sons be ingenions, they shall want no instruction: if their daughters be capable, I will put it to them: But, *vir sapit, qui pauca loquitur*: a soul feminine saluteth us.

*Enter JAQUENETTA and COSTARD.*

*Jaq.* God give you good morrow, master person.

*Hol.* Master person,—*quasi* pers-on. And if one should be pierced, which is the one?

*Cost.* Marry, master schoolmaster, he that is likeliest to a hogshead.

*Hol.* Of piercing a hogshead! a good lustre of conceit in a turf of earth; fire enough for a flint, pearl enough for a swine: 'tis pretty; it is well.

*Jaq.* Good master parson, be so good as read me this letter; it was given me by Costard, and sent me from Don Armatho: I beseech you, read it.

*Hol.* *Fauste, precor gelidâ quando pecus omne sub umbrâ*

*Ruminat*,—and so forth. Ah, good old Mantuan! [nice:

I may speak of thee as the traveller doth of *Venezia*, *Vinegia*,

*Chi non te vede, ei non te pregia.*

Old Mantuan! old Mantuan! Who understandeth thee not, loves thee not.—*Ut, re, sol la, mi, fa*.—Under pardon, sir, what are the

\* A species of apple.

† A low fellow.

‡ Reached.



contents? or, rather, as Horace says in his—  
What, my soul, verses?

*Nath.* Ay, sir, and very learned.

*Hol.* Let me hear a stanza, a stanza, a verse;  
*Lege, domine.*

*Nath.* If love make me forsworn, how  
shall I swear to love?

Ah, never faith could hold, if not to beauty  
vowed! [prove;

Though to myself forsworn, to thee I'll faithful  
Those thoughts to me were oaks, to thee  
like osiers bowed.

Study his bias leaves, and makes his book  
thine eyes: [would comprehend:

Where all those pleasures live, that art  
If knowledge be the mark, to know thee shall  
suffice; [thee commend:

Well learned is that tongue, that well can  
All ignorant that soul, that sees thee without  
wonder; [parts admire:]

(Which is to me some praise, that I thy  
Thy eye Jove's lightning bears, thy voice  
his dreadful thunder,

Which, not to anger bent, is music, and  
sweet fire. [wrong.

Celestial, as thou art, oh pardon, love, this  
That sings heaven's praise with such an  
earthly tongue!

*Hol.* You find not the apostrophes, and so  
miss the accent: let me supervise the canzonet.  
Here are only numbers ratified; but,  
for the elegance, facility, and golden cadence  
of poetry, *caret*. Ovidius Naso was the man:  
and why, indeed, Naso; but for smelling out  
the odoriferous flowers of fancy, the jerks of  
invention? *Imitari*, nothing; so doth the  
hound his master, the eagle his keeper, the tired  
horse his rider. But Camosella virgin, was  
this directed to you?

*Jaq.* Ay, sir, from the Monsieur Biron, one  
of the strange quack lords.

*Hol.* I will overglance the superscript. To  
the snow-white hand of the most beauteous  
*Lady Rosalind*. I will look again on the  
intellect of the letter, for the nomination of  
the party writing to the person written unto:

*Your Ladyship's in all desired employment*, BIRON. Sir Nathaniel, this Biron is  
one of the votaries with the king; and here  
he hath framed a letter to a sequent of the  
stranger queen's, which, accidentally, or by the  
way of progression, hath miscarried.—Trip  
and go, my sweet; deliver this paper into the  
royal hand of the king; it may concern much:  
Stay not thy compliment; I forgive thy duty;  
adieu.

*Jaq.* Good Costard, go with me.—Sir, God  
save your life!

*Cost.* Have with thee, my girl.

[*Exeunt* COST. and JAQ.]

*Nath.* Sir, you have done this in the fear  
of God, very religiously; and, as a certain  
father saith—

*Hol.* Sir, tell not me of the father, I do  
fear colourable colours. But, to return to the  
verses; Did they please you, sir Nathaniel?

*Nath.* Marvellous well for the pen.

*Hol.* I do dine to-day at the father's of a  
certain pupil of mine; where if, before repast,  
it shall please you to gratify the table with a  
grace, I will, on my privilege I have with the  
parents of the foresaid child or pupil under  
take your *ben venuto*; where I will prove  
those verses to be very unlearned, neither  
savouring of poetry, wit, nor invention: I  
beseech your society.

*Nath.* And thank you too: for society,  
(saith the text,) is the happiness of life.

*Hol.* And, certes, the text most infallibly  
concludes it.—Sir, [TO DULL.] I do invite  
you too; you shall not say me, nay: *parva  
verba*. Away; the gentles are at their game,  
and we will to our recreation. [*Exeunt*.]

### SCENE III. Another part of the same.

*Enter* BIRON, with a paper.

*Biron.* The king he is hunting the deer; I  
am coursing myself: they have pitch'd a toil;  
I am toiling in a pitch; pitch that defies;  
defie! a foul word. Well, Set thee down,  
sorrow! for so, they say, the fool said, and so  
say I, and I the fool. Well proved, wit! By  
the lord, this love is as mad as Ajax: it kills  
sheep; it kills me, I a sheep: Well proved  
again on my side! I will not love: if I do,  
hang me; if faith, I will not. O, but her eye,  
—by this light, but for her eye, I would not  
love her; yes, for her two eyes. Well, I do  
nothing in the world but lie, and lie in my  
throat. By heaven, I do love: and it hath  
taught me to rhyme, and to be melancholy;  
and here is part of my rhyme, and here my  
melancholy. Well, she hath one of my sonnets  
already; the clown bore it, the fool sent  
it, and the lady hath it: sweet clown, sweeter  
fool, sweetest lady! By the world, I would  
not care a pin if the other three were in:  
Here comes one with a paper; God give him  
grace to groan! [*Gets up into a tree*.]

*Enter* the King, with a paper.

*King.* Ah me!

*Biron.* [*Aside*.] Shot, by heaven!—Pro-  
ceed, sweet Cupid; thou hast thump'd him  
with thy bird-bolt under the left pap:—I'faith  
secrets.—

*King.* [*Reads*.] *No sweet a kiss the golden  
sun gives not*

*To those fresh morning drops upon the rose,  
As thy eye-beams, when their fresh rays  
have smote* [*Flows*:

*The night of dew that on my cheeks down  
Nor shines the silver moon one half so bright  
Through the transparent bosom of the deep,  
As doth thy face through tears of mine give  
light*;

*Thou shin'st in every tear that I do weep:  
No drop out as a coach doth carry thee,  
So ridest thou triumphing in my woe;  
Do but behold the tears that swell in me,  
And they thy glory through thy grief will  
show*:

*But do not love thyself; then thou wilt keep  
My tears for glasses, and still make me weep.*

*O queen of queens, how far dost thou excel!  
No thought can think, nor tongue of mortal tell.—* [paper;

How shall she know my griefs? I'll drop the  
Sweet leaves, shade folly. Who is he comes  
here? [Steps aside.

*Enter LONGAVILLE, with a paper.*

What; Longaville! and reading! listen, ear.

*Biron.* Now, in thy likeness, one more fool,  
appear! [Aside.

*Long.* Ah me! I am forsworn.

*Biron.* Why, he comes in like a perjurer,  
wearing papers. [Aside.

*King.* In love, I hope; Sweet fellowship  
in shame! [Aside.

*Biron.* One drunkard loves another of the  
name. [Aside.

*Long.* Am I the first that have been per-  
jur'd so?

*Biron.* [Aside.] I could put thee in comfort;  
not by two, that I know:

Thou mak'st the triumvir, the corner cap of  
society, [plicity.

The shape of love's Tyburn that hangs up sim-  
Long. I fear, these stubborn lines lack

power to move:

O sweet Maria, empress of my love!

These numbers will I tear, and write in prose,  
*Biron.* [Aside.] O, rhymes are guards on

wanton Cupid's hose:

Disfigure not his slop.

*Long.* This same shall go.—  
[He reads the sonnet.

*Did not the heavenly rhetoric of thine eye  
(Gainst whom the world cannot hold ar-  
gument,)*

*Persuade my heart to this false perjury?  
Vows, for thee broke, deserve not punish-  
ment.*

*A woman I forswore; but, I will prove,  
Thou being a goddess, I forswore not thee:*

*My vow was earthly, thou a heavenly love;  
Thy grace being gain'd, cures all dis-  
grace in me.*

*Vows are but breath, and breath a vapour is:  
Then thou, fair sun, which on my earth  
dost shine,*

*Exhalest this vapour vow; in thee it is:  
If broken then, it is no fault of mine;  
If by me broke, What fool is not so wise,  
To lose an oath to win a paradise?*

*Biron.* [Aside.] This is the livervein, which  
makes flesh a deity;

A green goose, a goddess: pure, pure idolatry.  
God amend us, God amend! we are much out  
o' the way.

*Enter DUMAIN, with a paper.*

*Long.* By whom shall I send this?—Com-  
pany! stay. [Stepping aside.

*Biron.* [Aside.] All hid, all hid, an old infant  
play:

Like a demi-god here sit I in the sky,  
And wretched fools' secrets heedfully o'er-ey.

More sacks to the mill! O heavens, I have my  
wish; [dish!

Dumain transform'd: four woodcocks in a  
Dum. O most divine Kate!

*Biron.* O most profane coxcomb! [Aside.

*Dum.* By heaven, the wonder of a mortal eye!

*Biron.* By earth, she is but corporal; there  
you lie. [Aside.

*Dum.* Her amber hairs for foul have amber  
coted\*. [Aside.

*Biron.* An amber-colour'd raven was well  
noted. [Aside.

*Dum.* As upright as the cedar.  
*Biron.* Stoop, I say;  
Her shoulder is with child. [Aside.

*Dum.* As fair as day.

*Biron.* Ay, as some days; but then no sun  
must shine. [Aside.

*Dum.* O that I had my wish!

*Long.* And I had mine! [Aside.

*King.* And I mine too, good Lord! [Aside.

*Biron.* Amen, so I had mine: Is not that  
a good word? [Aside.

*Dum.* I would forget her; but a fever she  
Reigns in my blood, and will remember'd be.

*Biron.* A fever in your blood, why, then  
incision [sion. [Aside.

Would let her out in saucers; Sweet mispri-  
*Dum.* Once more I'll read the ode that I  
have writ.

*Biron.* Once more I'll mark how love can  
vary wit. [Aside.

*Dum.* On a day, (alack the day!)  
Love, whose month is ever May,

Spied a blossom, passing fair,  
Playing in the wanton air:

Through the velvet leaves the wind,  
All unseen, 'gan passage find;

That the lover, sick to death,  
Wish'd himself the heaven's breath.

Air, quoth he, thy cheeks may blow;  
Air, would I might triumph so!

But alack, my hand is sworn,  
Ne'er to pluck thee from thy thorn:

Vow, alack, for youth unmeet;  
Youth so apt to pluck a sweet.

Do not call it sin in me,  
That I am forsworn for thee:

Thou for whom even Jove would swear  
Juno but an Ethiop were;

And deny himself for Jove,  
Turning mortal for thy love.—

This will I send; and something else more plain,  
That shall express my true love's fasting pain

O, would the King, Biron, and Longaville,  
Were lovers too! Ill, to example ill,

Would from my forehead wipe a perjur'd note;  
For none offend, where all alike do dote.

*Long.* Dumain, [advancing.] thy love is far  
from charity,

That in love's grief desir'st society:  
You may look pale, but I should blush, I know,

And be o'erheard, and taken napping so.  
*King.* Come, sir, [advancing.] you blush;  
as his your case is such;

You chide at him, offending twice as much:

• Outstripped, surpassed.

You do not love Maria; Longaville  
Did never sonnet for her sake compile;  
Nor never lay his wreathed arms athwart  
His loving bosom, to keep down his heart.  
I have been closely shrouded in this bush,  
And mark'd you both, and for you both did  
blush. [fashion;]

I heard your guilty rhymes, observ'd your  
Saw sighs reek from you, noted well your  
passion:

Ah me! says one; O Jove! the other cries;  
One, her hairs were gold, crystal the other's  
eyes:

You would for paradise break faith and troth;  
[To LONG.]

And Jove, for your love, would infringe an  
oath. [To DUMAINE.]

What will Birón say, when that he shall hear  
A faith infrin'g'd, which such a zeal did swear?  
How will he scorn? how will he spend his  
wit?

How will he triumph, leap, and laugh at it?  
For all the wealth that ever I did see,  
I would not have him know so much by me.

Birón. Now step I forth to whiphypocrisy.—  
Ah, good my liege, I pray thee pardon me:

[Descends from the tree.]  
Good heart, what grace hast thou, thus to re-  
prove

These worms for loving, that art most in love?  
Your eyes do make no coaches; in your tears,  
There is no certain princess that appears:

You'll not be perjur'd, 'tis a hateful thing;  
Tush, none but minstrels like of sonneting.

But are you not ashamed? nay, are you not,  
All three of you, to be thus much o'ershot?

You found his mote; the king your mote did  
But I a beam do find in each of three. [see;]

O, what a scene of foolery I have seen,  
Of sighs, of groans, of sorrow, and of teen \*!

O me, with what strict patience have I sat,  
To see a king transformed to a gnat!

To see great Hercules whipping a gig,  
And Nestor play at push-pin with the boys,

And critic Timon laugh at idle toys!  
Where lies thy grief, O tell me, good Dumaine?

And, gentle Longaville, where lies thy pain?  
And where my liege's? all about the breast:—

A caudle, ho!

King. Too bitter is thy jest.  
Are we betray'd thus to thy over-view?

Birón. Not you by me, but I betray'd to  
I, that am honest; I, that hold it sin [you];

To break the vow I am engaged in;  
I am betray'd, by keeping company

With moon-like men, of strange inconstancy.  
When shall you see me write a thing in rhyme?

Or groan for Joan? or spend a minute's time  
In pruning? me? When shall you hear that I

Will praise a hand, a foot, a face, an eye,  
A gait, a state, a brow, a breast, a waist,

A leg, a limb?—  
King. Soft; Whither away so fast?

A true man, or a thief, that gallops so? [go.]  
Birón. I post from love; good lover, let me

Enter JAQUENETTA and COSTARD.

Jaqu. God bless the king!

King. What present hast thou there?

Cost. Some certain treason.

King. What makes treason here?

Cost. Nay, it makes nothing, sir.

King. If it mar nothing neither,  
The treason, and you, go in peace away toge-  
ther. [read;]

Jaqu. I beseech your grace, let this letter be  
Our parson misdoubts it; 'twas treason, he said.

King. Birón, read it over.

[Giving him the letter.]

Where hadst thou it?

Jaqu. Of Costard.

King. Where hadst thou it?

Cost. Of Dun Adramadio, Dun Adramadio.

King. How now! what is in you? why  
dost thou tear it? [needs not fear it.]

Birón. A toy, my liege, a toy; your grace  
Long. It did move him to passion, and

therefore let's hear it.  
Dum. It is Birón's writing, and here is his  
name. [Picks up the pieces.]

Birón. Ah, you whoreson loggerhead, [To  
Cost.] you were born to do me shame.—

Guilty, my lord, guilty; I confess, I confess.

King. What? [to make up the mess:]

Birón. That you three fools lack'd me fool  
He, he, and you, my liege, and I,

Are pick-purses in love, and we deserve to die.  
O, dismiss this audience, and I shall tell you

Dum. Now the number is even. [more.]  
Birón. True, true; we are four:—

Will these turtles be gone?

King. Hence, sirs; away.

Cost. Walk aside the true folk, and let the  
traitors stay. [Exeunt Cost. & Jaqu.]

Birón. Sweet lords, sweet lovers, O let us  
embrace!

As true we are, as flesh and blood can be:  
The sea will ebb and flow, heaven show his face;

Young blood will not obey an old decree;  
We cannot cross the cause why we were born;

Therefore, of all hands must we be forsworn.  
King. What, did these rent lines show some

love of thine? [heavenly Rosaline,  
Birón. Did they, quoth you? Who sees the

That, like a rude and savage man of Inde,  
At the first opening of the gorgeous east,

Bows not his vassal head; and, stricken blind,  
Kisses the base ground with obedient breast?

What peremptory eagle-sighted eye  
Dares look upon the heaven of her brow,

That is not blinded by her majesty? [now?]  
King. What zeal, what fury hath inspir'd thee

My love, her mistress, is a gracious moon;  
She, an attending star, scarce seen a light.

Birón. My eyes are then no eyes, nor a  
Birón:

O, but for my love, day would turn to night!  
Of all complexions the cull'd sovereignty

Do meet, as at a fair, in her fair cheek;  
Where several worthies make one dignity,

Where nothing wants, that want itself doth  
seek.



Lend me the flourish of all gentle tongues,—  
Fie, painted rhetoric! O, she needs it not:  
To things of sale a seller's praise belongs;  
She passes praise; then praise too short  
doth blot.

A wither'd hermit, five-score winters worn,  
Might shake off fifty, looking in her eye:  
Beauty doth varnish age, as if new-born,  
And gives the crutch the cradle's infancy.  
O, 'tis the sun, that maketh all things shine!  
*King.* By heaven, thy love is black as ebony.  
*Biron.* Is ebony like her? O wood divine!  
A wife of such wood were felicity.

O, who can give an oath: where is a book?  
That I may swear, beauty doth beauty lack,  
If that she learn not of her eye to look:  
No face is fair, that is not full so black.

*King.* O paradox! Black is the badge of hell,  
The hue of dungeons, and the scowl of night;  
And beauty's crest becomes the heavens well.  
*Biron.* Devils soonest tempt, resembling  
spirits of light.

O if in black my lady's brows be deckt,  
It mourns, that painting, and usurping hair,  
Should ravish doters with a false aspect;  
And therefore is she born to make black fair.  
Her favour turns the fashion of the days;  
For native blood is counted painting now;  
And therefore red, that would avoid dispraise,  
Paints itself black, to imitate her brow.

*Dum.* To look like her, are chimney-sweepers  
black. [ed bright.

*Long.* And, since her time, are colliers count-  
*King.* And Ethiops of their sweet com-  
plexion crack. [is light.

*Dum.* Dark needs no candles now, for dark  
*Biron.* Your mistresses dare never come in  
rain, [away.

For fear their colours should be wash'd  
*King.* 'Twere good, yours did; for, sir, to  
tell you plain,

I'll find a fairer face not wash'd to-day.  
*Biron.* I'll prove her fair, or talk till dooms-  
day here. [much as she.

*King.* No devil will fright thee then so  
*Dum.* I never knew man hold vile stuff so  
dear. [her face see. [Shoving his shoe.

*Long.* Look, here's thy love: my foot and  
*Biron.* O, if the streets were paved with  
thine eyes, [tread!

Her feet were much too dainty for such  
*Dum.* O vile! then as she goes, what up-  
ward lies, [head.

The street should see as she walk'd over  
*King.* But what of this? Are we not all in  
love? [forsworn.

*Biron.* O, nothing so sure; and thereby all  
*King.* Then leave this chat; and, good Biron,  
now prove

Our loving lawful, and our faith not torn.  
*Dum.* Ay, marry, there;—some flattery for  
this evil.

*Long.* O, some authority how to proceed;  
Some tricks, some quillets\*, how to cheat the  
*Dum.* Some salve for perjury. [devil.

*Biron.* O 'tis more than need!—

Have at you then, affection's men at arms:  
Consider, what you first did swear unto;—  
To fast,—to study,—and to see no woman;—  
Flat treason 'gainst the kingly state of youth.  
Say, can you fast? your stomachs are too young;  
And abstinence engenders maladies.  
And where that you have vow'd to study, lords,  
In that each of you hath forsworn his book:  
Can you still dream, and pore, and thereon look?  
For when would you, my lord, or you, or you,  
Have found the ground of study's excellence,  
Without the beauty of a woman's face?

From women's eyes this doctrine I derive!  
They are the ground, the books, the academes,  
From whence doth spring the true Promethean  
Why, universal plodding prisons up [fire  
The nimble spirits in the arteries;  
As motion, and long during action, tires  
The sinewy vigour of the traveller.  
Now, for not looking on a woman's face,  
You have in that forsworn the use of eyes;  
And study too, the causer of your vow:

For where is any author in the world,  
Teaches such beauty as a woman's eye?  
Learning is but an adjunct to ourself,  
And where we are, our learning likewise is.  
Then, when ourselves we see in ladies' eyes  
Do we not likewise see our learning there?

O, we have made a vow to study, lords;  
And in that vow we have forsworn our books;  
For when would you, my liege, or you, or you,  
In leaden contemplation, have found out  
Such fiery numbers, as the prompting eyes  
Of beauteous tutors have enrich'd you with?  
Other slow arts entirely keep the brain;  
And therefore finding barren practisers,  
Scarce show a harvest of their heavy toil:

But love, first learned in a lady's eyes,  
Lives not alone immured in the brain;  
But with the motion of all elements,  
Courses as swift as thought in every power;  
And gives to every power a double power,  
Above their functions and their offices.

It adds a precious seeing to the eye;  
A lover's eyes will gaze an eagle blind;  
A lover's ear will hear the lowest sound,  
When the suspicious head of theft is stopp'd  
Love's feeling is more soft, and sensible,  
Than are the tender horns of cockled snails;  
Love's tongue proves dainty Bacchus gross in  
For valour, is not love a Hercules, [taste:  
Still climbing trees in the Hesperides?  
Subtle as sphinx; as sweet, and musical,  
As bright Apollo's lute, strung with his hair;  
And, when love speaks, the voice of all the gods  
Makes heaven drowsy with the harmony.

Never durst poet touch a pen to write,  
Until his ink were temper'd with love's sighs;  
O, then his lines would ravish savage ears,  
And plant in tyrants mild humility.

From women's eyes this doctrine I derive:  
They sparkle still the right Promethean fire.  
They are the books, the arts, the academes,  
That show, contain, and nourish all the world;  
Else, none at all in aught proves excellent:  
Then fools you were these women to forswear;

Or, keeping what is sworn, you will prove fools.  
 For wisdom's sake, a word that all men love;  
 Or for love's sake, a word that loves all men;  
 Or for men's sake, the authors of these women;  
 Or women's sake, by whom we men are men;  
 Let us once lose our oaths, to find ourselves,  
 Or else we lose ourselves to keep our oaths:  
 It is religion to be thus forsworn:  
 For charity itself fulfils the law;  
 And who can sever love from charity?

*King.* Saint Cupid, then! and, soldiers, to the field!

*Biron.* Advance your standards, and upon Peil-mell, down with them! but be first advis'd, In conflict that you get the sun of them. [by:

*Long.* Now to plain dealing; lay these glozes Shall we resolve to woo these girls of France?

*King.* And win them too: therefore let us devise

Some entertainment for them in their tents.

*Biron.* First, from the park let us conduct them thither;

Then, homeward, every man attach the hand Of his fair mistress: in the afternoon We will with some strange pastime solace them, Such as the shortness of the time can shape; For revels, dances, masks, and merry hours, Fore-run fair Love, strewing her way with flowers.

*King.* Away, away! no time shall be omit- That will be time, and may by us be fitted.

*Biron.* *Allons! Allons!* Sow'd cockle reap'd no corn;

And justice always whirls in equal measure Light wenches may prove plagues to men forsworn;

If so, our copper buys no better treasure.

[*Exeunt*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. *Another part of the same.*

*Enter HOLOFERNES, Sir NATHANIEL, and DULL.*

*Hol.* *Satis quod sufficit.*

*Nath.* I praise God for you, sir: your reasons\* at dinner have been sharp and sententious: pleasant without scurrility, witty without affection†, andacious without impudency, learned without opinion, and strange without heresy. I did converse this *quondam* day with a companion of the king's, who is intitled, nominated, or called, Don Adriano de Armado.

*Hol.* *Novi hominem tanquam te:* His humour is lofty, his discourse peremptory, his tongue filed, his eye ambitious, his gait majestic, and his general behaviour vain, ridiculous, and thrasonical‡. He is too picked §, too spruce, too affected, too odd, as it were, too peregrinate, as I may call it.

*Nath.* A most singular and choice epithet

[*Takes out his table-book.*]

*Hol.* He draweth out the thread of his verbosity finer than the staple of his argument. I labor such fanatical phantasms, such insociable and point-divise|| companions; such rackers of orthography, as to speak, doubt, fine, when he should say, doubt; det, when he should pronounce, debt; d, e, b, t; not d, e, t: he clepeth a calf, cauf; half, hauf; neighbour, *vocatur*, nebour, neigh, abbreviated, ne: This is abominable, (which he would call abominable,) it insinuateth me of insanie; *Ne intelligis, domine?* to make frantic, lunatic.

*Nath.* *Laus Deo, bone intelligo.*

*Hol.* Bone?—bone, for bene: *Priscian* a little scratch'd; † will serve.

*Enter ARMADO, MOTH, and COSTARD.*

*Nath.* *Videsne quis venit?*

*Hol.* *Video, & gaudeo.*

*Arm.* Chirra!

[*To MOTH.*]

*Hol.* *Quare Chirra, not sirrah?*

*Arm.* Men of peace, well encounter'd.

*Hol.* Most military sir, salutation.

*Moth.* They have been at a great feast of languages, and stolen the scraps. [*To COST.* *aside.*]

*Cost.* O, they have lived long in the alms-basket of words! I marvel, thy master hath not eaten thee for a word; for thou art not so long by the head as *honorificabilitudinitatibus*: thou art easier swallowed than a flap-dragon¶.

*Moth.* Peace; the peal begins. [ter'd?

*Arm.* Monsieur, [*To HOL.*] are you not let

*Moth.* Yes, yes, he teaches boys the horn-book:— [his head?

What is a, b, spelt backward with a horn on

*Hol.* Ba, *pueritii*, with a horn added.

*Moth.* Ba, most silly sheep, with a horn:— You hear his learning.

*Hol.* *Quis, quis*, thou consonant?

*Moth.* The third of the five vowels, if you repeat them; or the fifth, if 1.

*Hol.* I will repeat them, a, e, i,—

*Moth.* The sheep: the other two concludes it; o, u.

*Arm.* Now, by the salt wave of the Mediterranean, a sweet touch\*\*, a quick venew of wit: snip, snap, quick and home; it rejoiceth my intellect: true wit.

*Moth.* Offer'd by a child to an old man; which is wit-old.

*Hol.* What is the figure? what is the figure?

*Moth.* Horns.

*Hol.* Thou disputest like an infant: go, whip thy gig.

*Moth.* Lend me your horn to make one, and I will whip about your infamy *circum circa*; A gig of a cuckold's horn!

*Cost.* An I had but one penny in the world, thou shouldst have it to buy gingerbread: hold, there is the very remuneration I had of thy master, thou half-penny purse of wit, thou

\* Discourses. † Affection. ‡ Boastful. § Over-dressed. || Finical exactness.

¶ A small inflammable substance, swallowed in a glass of wine. \*\* A hit.

pigeon-egg of discretion. O, an the heavens were so pleased, that thou wert but my bastard! what a joyful father wouldst thou make me! Go to; thou hast it *ad dunghill*, at the figners' ends, as they say.

*Hol.* O, I smell false Latin; dunghill for *unguem*.

*Arm.* Arts-man, *præambula*; we will be singled from the barbarous. Do you not educate youth at the charge-house\* on the top of the mountain?

*Hol.* Or, *mons*, the hill.

*Arm.* At your sweet pleasure, for the mountain.

*Hol.* I do, sans question.

*Arm.* Sir, it is the king's most sweet pleasure and affection, to congratulate the princess at her pavilion, in the posteriors of this day; which the rude multitude call, the afternoon.

*Hol.* The posterior of the day, most generous sir, is liable, congruent, and measurable for the afternoon: the word is well cull'd, chose; sweet and apt, I do assure you, sir, I do assure.

*Arm.* Sir, the king is a noble gentleman; and my familiar, I do assure you, very good friend:—For what is inward† between us, let it pass:—I do beseech thee, remember thy courtesy;—I beseech thee, apparel thy head;—and among other impertunate and most serious designs,—and of great import indeed, too;—but let that pass:—for I must tell thee, it will please his grace (by the world) sometime to lean upon my poor shoulder; and with his royal finger, thus, dally with my excrement‡, with my mustachio: but sweet heart, let that pass. By the world, I recount no fable; some certain special honours it pleaseth his greatness to impart to Armado, a soldier, a man of travel, that hath seen the world: but let that pass.—The very all of it is,—but, sweet heart, I do implore secrecy,—that the king would have me present the princess, sweet chuck, with some delightful ostentation, or show, or pageant, or antic, or firework. Now, understanding that the curate and your sweet self, are good at such eruptions, and sudden breaking out of mirth, as it were, I have acquainted you withal, to the end to crave your assistance.

*Hol.* Sir, you shall present before her the nine worthies.—Sir Nathaniel, as concerning some entertainment of time, some show in the posterior of this day, to be rendered by our assistance,—the king's command, and this most gallant, illustrate, and learned gentleman,—before the princess; I say, none so fit as to present the nine worthies.

*Nath.* Where will you find men worthy enough to present them?

*Hol.* Joshua, yourself; myself, or this gallant gentleman, Judas Maccabæus; this swain, because of his great limb or joint, shall pass Pompey the great; the page, Hercules.

*Arm.* Pardon, sir, error: he is not quan-

tity enough for that worthy's thumb: he is not so big as the end of his club.

*Hol.* Shall I have audience? he shall present Hercules in minority: his *enter* and *exit* shall be strangling a snake; and I will have an apology for that purpose.

*Moth.* An excellent device! so, if any of the audience hiss, you may cry: *well done, Hercules! now thou crushest the snake*: that is the way to make an offence gracious; though few have the grace to do it.

*Arm.* For the rest of the worthies?—

*Hol.* I will play three myself.

*Moth.* Thrice worthy gentleman!

*Arm.* Shall I tell you a thing?

*Hol.* We attend.

*Arm.* We will have, if this fadge|| not, an antic. I beseech you, follow.

*Hol.* *Via*¶, Goodman Dull! thou hast spoken no word all this while.

*Dull.* Nor understood none neither, sir.

*Hol.* *Attens!* we will employ thee.

*Dull.* I'll make one in a dance, or so; or I will play on the tabor to the worthies, and let them dance the hay.

*Hol.* Most dull, honest Dull, to our sport, away. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. *Another part of the same. Before the Princess's Pavilion.*

*Enter the Princess, KATHARINE, ROSALINE, and MARIA.*

*Prin.* Sweet hearts, we shall be rich ere we if fairings come thus plentifully in: [depart, A lady wall'd about with diamonds!—

Look you, what I have from the loving king.

*Ros.* Madam, came nothing else along with that? [in rhyme]

*Prin.* Nothing but this? yes, as much love as would be cram'd up in a sheet of paper, writ on both sides the leaf, margent and all; That he was fain to seal on Cupid's name.

*Ros.* That was the way to make his god-head wax\*\*;

For he hath been five thousand years a boy.

*Kath.* Ay, and a shrewd unhappy gallows too. [kill'd your sister.

*Ros.* You'll ne'er be friends with him; he *Kath.* He made her melancholy, sad, and heavy;

And so she died: had she been light, like you, Of such a merry, nimble, stirring spirit, She might have been a grandam ere she died: And so may you; for a light heart lives long.

*Ros.* What's your dark meaning, mouse††, of this light word?

*Kath.* A light condition in a beauty dark.

*Ros.* We need more light to find you meaning out. [in snuff‡‡]

*Kath.* You'll mar the light, by taking it. Therefore, I'll darkly end the argument.

*Ros.* Look, what you do, you do it still i' the dark.

*Kath.* So do not you; for you are a light wench.

\* Free school. † Confidential. ‡ Beard. § Chick. || Suit. ¶ Courage.

\*\* Grow. †† Formerly a term of endearment. ‡‡ In anger.



*Ros.* Indeed, I weigh not you; and therefore light. [care not for me.]

*Kath.* You weigh me no—O, that's you

*Ros.* Great reason; for, Past cure is still past care. [well play'd.]

*Prin.* Well bandied both; a set of wit

But, Rosaline, you have a favour too:

Who seat it? and what is it?

*Ros.* I would, you knew:

An if my face were but as fair as yours,  
My favour were as great; be witness this.

Nay, I have verses too, I thank Birón: [too,  
The numbers true; and, were the numb'ring

I were the fairest goddess on the ground:

I am compar'd to twenty thousand fairs.

O, he hath drawn my picture in his letter!

*Prin.* Any thing like? [praise.]

*Ros.* Much, in the letters; nothing in the

*Prin.* Beauteons as ink; a good conclusion.

*Kath.* Fair as a text B in a copy book.

*Ros.* 'Ware pencils! How? let me not  
die your debtor,

My red dominical, my golden letter:

O, that your face were not so full of O's!

*Kath.* A pox of that jest! and beshrew all  
shrows!

*Prin.* But what was sent to you from fair  
Dumain?

*Kath.* Madam, this glove.

*Prin.* Did he not send you twain?

*Kath.* Yes, madam; and moreover,  
Some thousand verses of a faithful lover:

A huge translation of hypocrisy,  
Vilely compild, profound simplicity.

*Mar.* This, and these pearls, to me sent  
Longaville;

The letter is too long by half a mile.

*Prin.* I think no less: Dost thou not wish  
in heart,

The chain were longer, and the letter short?

*Mar.* Ay, or I would these hands might  
never part. [so.]

*Prin.* We are wise girls, to mock our lovers

*Ros.* They are worse fools to purchase  
mocking so.

That same Birón I'll torture ere I go.

O, that I knew he were but in by the week!

How I would make him fawn, and beg,  
and seek;

And wait the season, and observe the times,  
And spend his prodigal wits in bootless rhymes;

And shape his service wholly to my behests;  
And make him proud to make me proud that  
jest!

So portent-like would I o'ersway his state,

That he should be my fool, and I his fate.

*Prin.* None are so surely caught, when  
they are catch'd,

As wit turn'd fool: folly, in wisdom hatch'd,  
Hath wisdom's warrant, and the help of school;

And wit's own grace to grace a learned fool.

*Ros.* The blood of youth burns not with such  
As gravity's revolt to wantonness. [excess,

*Mar.* Folly in fools bears not so strong  
a note,

As foolery in the wise, when wit doth dote;

Since all the power thereof it doth apply,  
To prove, by wit, worth in simplicity.

*Enter BOYET.*

*Prin.* Here comes Boyet, and mirth is in  
his face. [Where's her grace?

*Boyet.* O, I am stabb'd with laughter!

*Prin.* Thy news, Boyet?

*Boyet.* Prepare, madam, prepare!—  
Arm, wenches, arm! encounters mounted are

Against your peace: Love doth approach  
disguis'd,

Armed in arguments; you'll be surpris'd:

Muster your wits; stand in your own defence;  
Or hide your heads like cowards, and fly hence.

*Prin.* Saint Dennis to saint Cupid! What  
are they, [say.]

That charge their breath against us? say, scout,  
*Boyet.* Under the cool shade of a sycamore,

I thought to close mine eyes some half an hour:  
When, lo! to interrupt my purpos'd rest,

Toward that shade I might behold address  
The king and his companions: warily

I stole into a neighbour thicket by,  
And overheard what you shall overhear;

That, by and by, disguis'd they will be here  
Their herald is a pretty knavish page,

That well by heart hath conn'd his embassage:  
Action, and accent, did they teach him there;

*Thus must thou speak, and thus thy body*  
And ever and anon they made a doubt, [bear:

Presence majestical would put him out;  
*For, noth the king, an angel shalt thou see,*

*Yet fear not thou, but speak audaciously.*  
The boy reply'd, *An angel is not evil;*

*I should have fear'd her, had she been a devil.*  
With that all laugh'd, and clapp'd him on

the shoulder;  
Making the bold way by their praises bolder.

One rubb'd his elbow, thus; and fleer'd, and  
swore,

A better speech was never spoke before:  
Anot'er, with his finger and his thumb,

Cry'd, *Vial we will do't, come what will*  
come:

The third he caper'd, and cried, *All goes well:*  
The fourth turn'd on the toe, and down he fell.

With that, they all did tumble on the ground,  
With such a zealous laughter, so profound,

That in this spleen ridiculous appears,  
To check their folly, passion's solemn tears.

*Prin.* But what, but what, come they to  
visit us? [thus.—

*Boyet.* They do, they do; and are apparel'd  
Like Muscovites, or Russians: as I guess,

Their purpose is, to parle, to court, and dance:  
And every one his love-feat will advance

Unto his several mistress; which they'll know  
By favours several, which they did bestow.

*Prin.* And will they so? the gallants shall  
be task'd:—

For, ladies, we will every one be mask'd;  
And not a man of them shall have the grace,

Despite of suit, to see a lady's face.—  
Hold, Rosaline, this favour thou shalt wear;

And then the king will court thee for his dear;  
Hold, take thou this, my sweet, and give me

So shall Birón take me for Rosaline.— [thine:]  
And change you favours too; so shall your  
loves

Woe contrary, deceiv'd by these removes.

*Ros.* Come on then ; wear the favours most  
in sight. [intent ?]

*Kath.* But, in this changing, what is your

*Prin.* The effect of my intent is, to cross  
theirs :

They do it but in mocking merriment ;

And mock for mock is only my intent.

Their several counsels they unbosom shall

To loves mistook ; and so be mock'd withal,

Upon the next occasion that we meet,

With visages display'd, to talk, and greet.

*Ros.* But shall we dance, if they desire us  
to't ? [a foot :

*Prin.* No ; to the death, we will not move  
Nor to their penn'd speech render we no grace ;

But, while 'tis spoke, each turn away her face.

*Boyet.* Why, that contempt will kill the  
speaker's heart,

And quite divorce his memory from his part.

*Prin.* Therefore I do it ; and, I make no

The rest will ne'er come in, if he be out. [doubt,

There's no such sport, as sport by sport o'er-  
thrown ; [own :

To make theirs ours, and ours none but our

So shall we stay, mocking intended game ;

And they, well mock'd, depart away with  
shame. [Trumpets sound within.

*Boyet.* The trumpet sounds ; be mask'd, the  
maskers come. [The ladies mask.

*Enter the King. BIRON, LONGAVILLE, and  
DUMAIN, in Russian habits, and masked ;*

*MOTH, Musicians and Attendants.*

*Moth.* All hail, the richest beauties on  
the earth !

*Boyet.* Beauties no richer than rich taffata.

*Moth.* A holy parcel of the fairest dames.

[The Ladies turn their backs to him.

*That ever turn'd their—backs—to mortal  
views :*

*Biron.* Their eyes, villain, their eyes.

*Moth.* That ever turn'd their eyes to  
mortal views ! Out—

*Boyet.* True ; out, indeed.

*Moth.* Out of your favours, heavenly  
spirits, vouchsafe

Not to behold.—

*Biron.* Once to behold, rogue.

*Moth.* Once to behold with your sun-  
beamed eyes,

—with your sun-beamed eyes—

*Boyet.* They will not answer to that epithet ;

Yon were best call it, daughter-beamed eyes.

*Moth.* They do not mark me, and that brings  
me out. [you rogue.

*Biron.* Is this your perfectness ? be gone,

*Ros.* What would these strangers ? know  
their minds, Boyet :

If they do speak our language, 'tis our will

That some plain man recount their purposes :  
know what they would.

*Boyet.* What would you with the princess ?

*Biron.* Nothing but peace, and gentle visi-

*Ros.* What would they, say they ? [tation.

*Boyet.* Nothing but peace, and gentle visi-  
tation. [so be gone.

*Ros.* Why, that they have ; and bid them

*Boyet.* She says, you have it, and you may  
be gone.

*King.* Say to her, we have measur'd many  
miles

To tread a measure with her on this grass.

*Boyet.* They say, that they have measur'd  
many a mile,

To tread a measure with you on this grass.

*Ros.* It is not so : ask them, how many inches  
is in one mile : if they have measur'd many,

The measure then of one is easily told [miles,

*Boyet.* If, to come hither you have measur'd  
And many miles ; the princess bids you tell,

How many inches do fill up one mile. [steps.

*Biron.* Tell her, we measure them by weary

*Boyet.* She hears herself.

*Ros.* How many weary steps,

Of many weary miles you have o'ercome,

Are number'd in the travel of one mile !

*Biron.* We number nothing that we spend

Our duty is so rich, so infinite. [for you ;

That we may do it still without account.

Vouchsafe to show the sunshine of your face,

That we, like savages, may worship it. [too.

*Ros.* My face is but a moon, and clouded

*King.* Blessed are clouds, to do as such  
clouds do ! [to shine

Vouchsafe, bright moon, and these thy stars,  
(Those clouds remov'd,) upon our wat'ry eye.

*Ros.* O vain petitioner ! beg a greater matter ;  
Thou now request'st but moonshine in the

water. [safe one change :

*King.* Then, in our measure do but vouch-  
Thou bid'st me beg ; this begging is not strange.

*Ros.* Play, music, then : nay, you must do  
it soon. [Music pl y.

Not yet ;—no dance :—thus change I like the  
moon. [thus estrang'd ?

*King.* Will you not dance ? How come you

*Ros.* You took the moon at full ; but now  
she's chang'd. [man.

*King.* Yet still she is the moon, and I the  
the music plays ; vouchsafe some motion to it.

*Ros.* Our ears vouchsafe it.

*King.* But your legs should do it

*Ros.* Since you are strangers, and come  
here by chance, [dance.

We'll not be nice : take hands ;—we will not  
*King.* Why take we hands then !

*Ros.* Only to part friends :—  
Court'sy, sweet hearts ; and so the measure

ends. [not nice.

*King.* More measure of this measure ; be

*Ros.* We can afford no more at such a price.

*King.* Prize you yourselves ; What buys

*Ros.* Your absence only [your company ?

*King.* That can never be.

*Ros.* Then cannot we be bought : and so  
adieu ;

Twice to your visor, and half once to you !

*King.* If you deny to dance, let's hold more

*Ros.* In private then. [chat.

*King.* I am best pleas'd with that.

[They converse a-d-art.

*Biron.* White-handed mistress, one sweet  
word with thee. [is three.

*Prin.* Honey, and milk, and sugar ; there

*Biron.* Nay then, two treys, (an if you grow  
so nice,) [due !

Methuglin, wort, and malmsey ;—Well !

There's half a dozen sweets.

*Prin.* Seventh sweet, adieu!  
Since you can cog\*, I'll play no more with you.

*Biron.* One word in secret.

*Prin.* Let it not be sweet.

*Biron.* Thou griev'st my gall.

*Prin.* Gall? bitter.

*Biron.* Therefore meet.

[*They converse apart.*]

*Dum.* Will you vouchsafe with me to

*Mar.* Name it. [change a word?]

*Dum.* Fair lady,—

*Mar.* Say you so? Fair lord,—  
Take that for your fair lady.

*Dum.* Please it you,

As much in private, and I'll bid adieu.

[*They converse apart.*]

*Kath.* What, was your visor made without  
a tongue? [ask.]

*Long.* I know the reason, lady, why you

*Kath.* O, for your reason! quickly, sir; I  
long. [your mask.]

*Long.* You have a double tongue within  
And would afford my speechless visor half.

*Kath.* Veal, quoth the Dutchman;—Is not  
veal a calf?

*Long.* A calf, fair lady?

*Kath.* No, a fair lord calf.

*Long.* Let's part the word.

*Kath.* No, I'll not be your half:  
Take all, and wean it; it may prove an ox.

*Long.* Look, how you butt yourself in these  
sharp mocks!

Will you give horns, chaste lady? do not so.

*Kath.* Then die a calf, before your horns  
do grow. [I die.]

*Long.* One word in private with you, ere

*Kath.* Bleat softly then, the butcher hears  
you cry. [*They converse apart.*]

*Boyet.* The tongues of mocking wenches  
are as keen

As is the razor's edge invisible,  
Cutting a smaller hair than may be seen;

Above the sense of sense: so sensible  
Seemeth their conference; their conceits have  
wings, [swifter things.]

Fleeter than arrows, bullets, wind, thought,  
*Ros.* Not one word more, my maids; break

off, break off. [pure scoff!]

*Biron.* By heaven, all dry-beaten with  
Kings. Farewell, mad wenches; you have

simple wits.

[*Exeunt King, Lords, Moth, Music,  
and Attendants.*]

*Prin.* Twenty adieus, my frozen Muscovites.—

Are these the breed of wits so wonder'd at?

*Boyet.* Tapers they are, with your sweet  
breaths puff'd out. [gross; fat, fat.]

*Ros.* Well-liking wits they have; gross,

*Prin.* O poverty in wit, kingly-poor flout!  
Will they not, think you, hang themselves to  
night?

Or ever, but in visors, show their faces?  
This pert Birón was out of countenance quite.

*Ros.* O! they were all in lamentable cases!

The king was weeping-ripe for a good word.

*Prin.* Birón did swear himself out of all suit.

*Mar.* Dumain was at my service, and his  
sword; [mute.]

No point†, quoth I; my servant straight was  
*Kath.* Lord Longaville said, I came o'er his

And trow you, what he call'd me? [heart;]

*Prin.* Qualm, perhaps.

*Kath.* Yes, in good faith.

*Prin.* Go, sickness as thou art!

*Ros.* Well, better wits have worn plain  
statute-caps‡.

But will you hear? the king is my love  
sworn.

*Prin.* And quick Birón hath plighted faith  
to me. [born.]

*Kath.* And Longaville was for my service

*Mar.* Dumain is mine, as sure as bark on  
tree. [ear:]

*Boyet.* Madam, and pretty mistresses, give  
Immediately they will again be here  
In their own shapes; for it can never be,  
They will digest this harsh indignity.

*Prin.* Will they return?

*Boyet.* They will, they will, God knows;  
And leap for joy, though they are lame with  
blows: [repair,

Therefore, change favours§; and, when they  
Blow like sweet roses in this summer air.

*Prin.* How blow? how blow? speak to be  
understood. [their bud:]

*Boyet.* Fair ladies, mask'd, are roses in  
Dismask'd, their damask sweet commixture  
shown,

Are angels vailing clouds, or roses blown.

*Prin.* Avaunt, perplexity! What shall we do,  
If they return in their own shapes to woo?

*Ros.* Good madam, if by me you'll be  
advis'd, [guis'd:]

Let's mock them still, as well known as dis-  
Let us complain to them what fools were here,  
Disguis'd like Muscovites, in shapeless|| gear;  
And wonder, what they were; and to what end  
Their shallow shows, and prologue vilely  
penn'd,

And their rough carriage so ridiculous,  
Should be presented at our tent to us.

*Boyet.* Ladies, withdraw; the gallants are  
at hand. [land.]

*Prin.* Whip to our tents, as roses run over  
[*Exeunt Princess, Ros. Kath. & Mar.*]

*Enter the King, BIRON, LONGAVILLE, and  
DUMAIN, in their proper habits.*

*King.* Fair sir, God save you! Where is  
the princess? [majesty.]

*Boyet.* Gone to her tent: Please it your  
Command me any service to her thither?

*King.* That she vouchsafe me audience for  
one word.

*Boyet.* I will; and so will she, I know  
my lord. [*Exit.*]

*Biron.* This fellow pecks up wit, as pigeon,  
peas;

And utters it again when God doth please:

† Falsity dice, lie.

‡ A quibble on the French adverb of negation.

§ Better wits

may be found among citizens.

|| Features, countenances.

|| Mouth.



He is wits' pedlar; and retails his wares  
At wakes, and wassels\*, meetings, markets,  
fairs; [know,

And we that sell by gros, the Lord doth  
Have not the grace to grace it with such show.  
This gallant pins the wenches on his sleeve;  
Had he been Adam, he had tempted Eve;  
He can carve too, and lisp: Why, this is he,  
That kiss'd away his hand in courtesy;  
This is the ape of form, monsieur the nice,  
That, when he plays at tables, chides the dice  
In honourable terms; nay, he can sing  
A mean't most meanly; and, in ushering,  
Mend him who can: the ladies call him, sweet;  
The stairs, as he treads on them, kiss his feet:  
This is the flower that smiles on every one,  
To show his teeth as white as whales bone†:  
And consciences, that will not die in debt,  
Pay him the due of honey-tongued Boyet.

*King.* A blister on his sweet tongue, with  
my heart,

That put Armado's page out of his part!

*Enter the Princess, usher'd by BOYET;  
ROSALINE, MARIA, KATHARINE, and  
Attendants.*

*Biron.* See where it comes!—Behaviour,  
what wert thou, [now?

Fill this man show'd thee? and what art thou  
*King.* All hail, sweet madam, and fair time  
of day!

*Prin.* Fair, in all hail, is foul, as I conceive.

*King.* Construe my speeches better, if you  
may. [leave.

*Prin.* Then wish me better, I will give you  
*King.* We came to visit you; and purpose  
now

To lead you to our court: vouchsafe it then.

*Prin.* This field shall hold me; and so hold  
your vow:

Nor God, nor I, delight in perjur'd men.

*King.* Rebuke me not for that which you  
provoke;

The virtue of your eye must break my oath.

*Prin.* You nick-name virtue: vice you  
should have spoke;

For virtue's office never breaks men's troth.

Now, by my maiden honour, yet as pure  
As the unsullied lily, I protest,

A world of torments though I should endure,  
I would not yield to be your house's guest:

So much I hate a breaking-cause to be  
Of heavenly oaths, vow'd with integrity.

*King.* O, you have liv'd in desolation here,  
Unseen, unvisited, much to our shame.

*Prin.* Not so, my lord; it is not so, I swear;  
We have had pastimes here, and pleasant

A mess of Russians left us but of late. [game;

*King.* How, madam? Russians?

*Prin.* Ay, in truth, my lord;  
Trim gallants, full of courtship, and of state.

*Ros.* Madam, speak true:—It is not so, my  
My lady, (to the manner of the days§.) [lord;

In courtesy, gives undeserving praise.  
We four, indeed, confronted here with four  
In Russian habit: here they stay'd an hour,

And talk'd apace; and in that hour, my lord,  
They did not bless us with one happy word.  
I dare not call them fools; but this I think,  
When they are thirsty, fools would fain have  
drink.

*Biron.* This jest is dry to me—Fair, gentle  
sweet, [greet

Your wit makes wise things foolish; when we  
With eyes best seeing heaven's fiery eye,

By light we lose light: Your capacity  
Is of that nature, that to your huge store

Wise things seem foolish, and rich things but  
poor. [my eye,—

*Ros.* This proves you wise and rich; for in  
*Biron.* I am a fool, and full of poverty.

*Ros.* But that you take what doth to you  
belong,

It were a fault to snatch words from my tongue.

*Biron.* O, I am yours, and all that I possess.

*Ros.* All the fool mine?

*Biron.* I cannot give you less.

*Ros.* Which of the visors was it, that you wore?

*Biron.* Where? when? what visor? why  
demand you this? [case,

*Ros.* There, then, that visor; that superfluous  
That hid the worse, and show'd the better face.

*King.* We are desic'd: they'll mock us  
now downright.

*Dum.* Let us confess, and turn it to a jest.

*Prin.* Amaz'd, my lord? Why looks your  
highness sad? [Why look you pale?—

*Ros.* Help, hold his brows! he'll swoon!

Sea-sick, I think, coming from Muscovy.

*Biron.* Thus pour the stars down plagues  
for perjury.

Can any face of brass hold longer out?—  
Here stand I, lady; dart thy skill at me;

Bruise me with scorn, confound me with a  
flout; [rance;

Thrust thy sharp wit quite through my igno-  
Cut me to pieces with thy keen conceit;

And I will wish thee never more to dance,  
Nor never more in Russian habit wait.

O! never will I trust to speeches penn'd,  
Nor to the motion of a school boy's tongue;

Nor never come in visor to my friend||;  
Nor woo in rhyme, like a blind harper's song:

Taffeta phrases, silken terms precise,  
Three-pil'd hyperboles, spruce affectation,

Figures pedantic; these summer-flies  
Have blown me full of maggot ostentation:

I do forswear them: and I here protest,  
\*By this white glove, (how white the hand,  
God knows!)

Henceforth my wooing mind shall be express'd  
In russet yeas, and honest kersey noes;

And, to begin, wench,—so God help me, la!—  
My love to thee is sound, sans crack or flaw.

*Ros.* Sans sans, I pray you.

*Biron.* Yet I have a trick  
Of the old rage:—bear with me, I am sick;

I'll leave it by degrees. Soft, let us see;—  
Write, *Lord have mercy on us*, on those three;

They are infected, in their hearts it lies; [eyes:  
They have the plague, and caught it of your

\* Rustic merry-meetings.

† The tenor in music.

‡ The tooth of the horse-whale.

§ After the fashion of the times.

|| Mistress.

These lords are visited; you are not free,  
For the Lord's tokens on you do I see.

*Prin.* No, they are free, that gave these  
tokens to us. [undo us.]

*Biron.* Our states are forfeit, seek not to  
Ros. It is not so; For how can this be true,  
That you stand forfeit, being those that sue?

*Biron.* Peace; for I will not have to do  
with you.

*Ros.* Nor shall not, if I do as I intend. [end.]

*Bir. n.* Speak for yourselves, my wit is at an  
*King.* Teach us, sweet madam, for our rude  
Some fair excuse. [transgression]

*Prin.* The fairest is confession.

Were you not here, but even now, disguis'd?

*King.* Madam, I was.

*Prin.* And were you well advis'd?

*King.* I was, fair madam.

*Prin.* When you then were here,  
What did you whisper in your lady's ear?

*King.* That more than all the world I did  
respect her. [will reject her.]

*Prin.* When she shall challenge this, you  
*King.* Upon mine honour, no.

*Prin.* Peace, peace, forbear;

Your oath once broke, you force \* not to for-  
swear. [of mine.]

*King.* Despise me, when I break this oath

*Prin.* I will; and therefore keep it:—Rosaline,  
What did the Russian whisper in your ear?

*Ros.* Madam, he swore that he did hold me  
As precious eye-sight; and did value me [dear  
Above this world: adding thereto, moreover,  
That he would wed me, or else die my lover.]

*Prin.* God give thee joy of him! the noble  
Most honourably doth uphold his word. [lord]

*King.* What mean you, madam? by my life, my  
I never swore this lady such an oath. [truth,

*Ros.* By heaven, you did; and to confirm it  
You gave me this; but take it, sir, again [plain,

*King.* My faith, and this, the princess I did  
I knew her by this jewel on her sleeve. [give;

*Prin.* Pardon me, sir, this jewel did she wear;  
And ford Birón, I thank him, is my dear:—

What; will you have me, or your pearl again?

*Biron.* Neither of either; I remit both twain.—  
I see the trick on't;—Here was a consent,

(Knowing atorch end of our merriment,)   
To dash it like a Christmas comedy: [zany †,

Some carry-tale, some please-man, some slight  
Some mumble-news, some trencher-knight,

some Dick,— [the trick]

That smiles his cheek in years; and knows  
To make my lady laugh, when she's dispos'd,—

Told our intents before: which once disclos'd,  
The ladies did change favours; and then we,

Following the signs, woo'd but the sign of she.  
Now, to our perjury to add more terror,

We are again forsworn; in will, and error.  
Much upon this it is:—And might not you,

[To BOYET.]  
Foretell our sport, to make us thus untrue?

Do not you know my lady's foot by the squire §,  
And laugh upon the apple of her eye?

And stand between her back, sir, and the fire,  
Holding a trencher, jesting merrily?

You put our page out: Go, you are allow'd;  
Die when you will, a smock shall be your  
shroud.

You leer upon me, do you? there's an eye,  
Wounds like a leaden sword.

*Boyet.* Full merrily  
Hath this brave manage, this career, been run.

*Biron.* Lo, he is tilting straight! Peace; I  
have done.

*Enter COSTARD.*

Welcome, pure wit! thou partest a fair fray.

*Cost.* O Lord, sir, they would know,  
Whether the three worthies shall come in, or no.

*Biron.* What, are there but three?

*Cost.* No, sir; but it is vara fine,  
For every one pursents three.

*Biron.* And three times thrice is nine.

*Cost.* Not so, sir; under correction, sir; I  
hope, it is not so:

You cannot beg us, sir, I can assure you, sir;  
we know what we know:

I ope, sir, three times thrice, sir,—  
*Biron.* Is not nine.

*Cost.* Under correction, sir, we know where-  
until it doth amount. [for nine.]

*Biron.* By Jove, I always took three threes

*Cost.* O Lord! sir, it were pity you should  
get your living by reckoning, sir.

*Biron.* How much is it?

*Cost.* O Lord! sir, the parties themselves,  
the actors, sir, will show whereuntil it doth

amount: for my own part, I am, as they say,  
but to perfect one man,—e'en one poor man;

Pompion the great, sir.

*Biron.* Art thou one of the worthies?

*Cost.* It pleased them, to think me worthy  
of Pompion the great: for mine own part, I

know not the degree of the worthy; but I am  
to stand for him.

*Biron.* Go, bid them prepare.

*Cost.* We will turn it finely off, sir; we will  
take some care. [Exit COSTARD.]

*King.* Birón, they will shame us, let them  
not approach. [t'is some policy]

*Biron.* We are shame-proof, my lord: and  
To have oneshow worse than the king's and his

*King.* I say, they shall not come. [company.]

*Prin.* Nay, my good lord, let me o'er-rule  
you now; [how:]

That sport best pleases, that doth least know  
Where zeal strives to content, and the contents

Die in the zeal of them which it presents,  
Their form confounded makes most form in

mirth; [birth.]  
When great things labouring perish in their

*Biron.* A right description of our sport,  
my lord.

*Enter ARMADO.*

*Arm.* Anointed, I implore so much expense  
of thy royal sweet breath, as will utter a brace

of words. [ARM. converses with the King,  
and delivers him a paper.]

*Prin.* Doth this man serve God?

*Biron.* Why ask you? [making.]

*Prin.* He speaks not like a man of God's

*Arm.* That's all one, my fair, sweet, honey

\* Make no difficulty. † Conspiracy. ‡ Buffoon. § Rule.

monarch: for, I protest, the school-master is exceeding fantastical; too, too vain; too, too vain: But we will put it, as they say, to *fortuna della guerra*. I wish you the peace of mind, most royal complement! [*Exit ARM.*]

*King.* Here is like to be a good presence of worthies: He presents Hector of Troy; the swain, Pompey the great; the parish curate, Alexander; Armado's page, Hercules; the pedant, Judas Machabæus. [*thrive,* And if these four worthies in their first show These four will change habits, and present the other five.

*Biron.* There is five in the first show.

*King.* You are deceiv'd, 'tis not so.

*Biron.* The pedant, the bragart, the hedge-priest, the fool, and the boy:— [*again,* Abate a throw at novum\*; and the whole world Cannot prick† out five such, take each one in his vein. [*comes again.*

*King.* The ship is under sail, and here she

[*Sets brought for the King, Prin. &c.*

*Pageant of the Nine Worthies.*

*Enter COSTARD armed, for Pompey.*

*Cost. I Pompey am,—*

*Boyet.* You lie, you are not he.

*Cost. I Pompey am,—*

*Boyet.* With libbard's head on knee.

*Biron.* Wellsaid, old mocker; I must needs be friends with thee. [*the big,—*

*Cost. I Pompey am, Pompey surnam'd.*

*Dum.* The great. [*the great;*

*Cost.* It is great, sir;—*Pompey surnam'd*

*That oft in field, with targe and shield, did make my foe to sweat:*

*And, travelling along this coast, I here am come by chance;*

*And lay my arms before the legs of this sweet lass of France.*

*If your ladyship would say, Thanks, Pompey, I had done.*

*Prin.* Great thanks, great Pompey.

*Cost.* 'Tis not so much worth; but, I hope, I was perfect: I made a little fault in, *great.*

*Biron.* My hat to a halfpenny, Pompey proves the best worthy.

*Enter NATHANIEL armed, for Alexander.*

*Nath.* When in the world I liv'd, I was the world's commander;

*By east, west, north, and south, I spread my conquering might: [Alisander.*

*My scutcheon plain declares, that I am Boyet.* Your nose says, no, you are not; for it stands too right.

*Biron.* Your nose smells, no, in this, most tender-smelling knight.

*Prin.* The conqueror is dismay'd: proceed good Alexander.

*Nath.* When in the world I liv'd, I was the world's commander;—

*Boyet.* Most true, 'tis right; you were so,

*Biron.* Pompey the great,— [*Alisander.*

*Cost.* Your servant, and Costard.

*Biron.* Take away the conqueror, take away Alisander.

*Cost.* O, sir, [*To NATH.*] you have overthrown Alisander the conqueror! You will be scraped out of the painted cloth for this: your lion, that holds his poll-ax sitting on a rose-stool, will be given to A-jax: he will be the ninth worthy. A conqueror, and afraid to speak! run away for shame, Al'sander. [*NATH. retires.*] There, an't shall please you; a foolish mild man; an honest man, look you, and soon dash'd! He is a marvellous good neighbour, insooth; and a very good bowler: but, for Alisander, alas, you see, how 'tis;—a little o'erparted:—But there are worthies a coming will speak their mind in some other sort.

*Prin.* Stand aside, good Pompey.

*Enter HOLOFERNES armed, for Judas, and MOTH arm'd, for Hercules.*

*Hol.* Great Hercules is present'd by this imp, [*headed canus*

*Whose club kill'd Cerberus, that three-*

*And, when he was a babe, a child, a shrimp,*

*Thus did he strangle serpents in his manus: Quoniam, he seemeth in minority;*

*Ergo, I come with this apology.—*

*Keep some state in thy exit, and vanish.*

*Hol.* Judas I am,— [*Exit MOTH.*

*Dum.* A Judas!

*Hol.* Not Iscariot, sir.—

*Judas I am, clyped Machabæus.*

*Dum.* Judas Machabæus clipt, is plain Judas

*Biron.* A kissing traitor:—How art thou

*Hol.* Judas I am,— [*prov'd Judas!*

*Dum.* The more shame for you, Judas.

*Hol.* What mean you, sir?

*Boyet.* To make Judas hang himself.

*Hol.* Begin, sir; you are my elder.

*Biron.* Well follow'd: Judas was hang'd on an elder.

*Hol.* I will not be put out of countenance.

*Biron.* Because thou hast no face.

*Hol.* What is this?

*Boyet.* A cittern head.

*Dum.* The head of a bodkin.

*Biron.* A death's face in a ring. [*seen.*

*Long.* The face of an old Roman coin, scarce

*Boyet.* The pummel of Cæsar's falchion.

*Dum.* The carv'd-bone face on a flask†.

*Biron.* St. George's half-cheek in a brooch§.

*Dum.* Ay, and in a brooch of lead.

*Biron.* Ay, and worn in the cap of a tooth drawer: [*countenance.*

*And now, forward; for we have put thee in*

*Hol.* You have put me out of countenance.

*Biron.* False; we have given thee faces.

*Hol.* But you have out-fac'd them all.

*Biron.* An thou wert a lion, we would do so.

*Boyet.* Therefore, as he is, an ass, let him go.

*And so adieu, sweet Jude! nay, why dost thou*

*Dum.* For the latter end of his name. [*stay?*

*Biron.* For the ass to the Jude; give it

*him:—Jud-as, away. [humble.*

*Hol.* This is not generous, not gentle, not

*Boyet.* A light for monsieur Judas: it grows

*dark, he may stumble. [been baited!*

*Prin.* Alas, poor Machabæus, how hath he

\* A game with dice.

† Pick out.

‡ A soldier's powder-horn.

§ An ornamental buckle for fastening hat-bands, &c.



*Enter ARMADO armed, for Hector*  
*Biron.* Hide thy head, Achilles: here coines  
 Hector in arms.

*Dum.* Though my mocks come home by me,  
 I will now be merry.

*King.* Hector was but a Trojan in respect  
 of this.

*Boyet.* But is this Hector?

*Dum.* I think, Hector was not so clean-  
 timber'd.

*Long.* His leg is too big for Hector.

*Dum.* More calf, certain.

*Boyet.* No; he is best indued in the small.

*Biron.* This cannot be Hector.

*Dum.* He's a god or a painter; for he  
 makes faces. *[the almighty,*

*Arm.* The armipotent Mars, of lances \*  
 Gave Hector a gift,—

*Dum.* A gilt nutmeg.

*Biron.* A lemon.

*Long.* Stuck with cloves.

*Dum.* No, cloven.

*Arm.* Peace.

*The armipotent Mars, of lances the almighty,*  
*Gave Hector a gift, the heir of Ilion;*

*A man so breath'd, that certain he would*  
*fight, yea*

*From morn till night, out of his pavilion.*

*I am that flower,—*

*Dum.* That mint.

*Long.* That columbine.

*Arm.* Sweet lord Longaville, rein thy tongue.  
*Long.* I must rather give it the rein; for it  
 runs against Hector.

*Dum.* Ay, and Hector's a greyhound.

*Arm.* The sweet war-man is dead and rot-  
 ten; sweet chucks, beat not the bones of the  
 buried; when he breathed, he was a man—  
 But I will forward with my device: Sweet  
 royalty, *[to the Prin.]* bestow on me the  
 sense of hearing. *[BIRON whispers COST.]*

*Prin.* Speak, brave Hector; we are much  
 delighted.

*Arm.* I do adore thy sweet grace's slipper.

*Boyet.* Loves her by the foot.

*Dum.* He may not by the yard. *[nibal,—*

*Arm.* This Hector far surmounted Han-  
*Cost.* The party is gone, fellow Hector, she  
 is gone; she is two months on her way.

*Arm.* What meanest thou?

*Cost.* Faith, unless you play the honest Tro-  
 jan, the poor wench is cast away: she's quick;  
 the child brags in her belly already; 'tis yours.

*Arm.* Most thou infamizone me among po-  
 tentates? thou shalt die.

*Cost.* Then shall Hector be whipp'd, for  
 Jaquenetta that is quick by him; and hang'd,  
 for Pompey that is dead by him.

*Dum.* Most rare Pompey!

*Boyet.* Renowned Pompey!

*Biron.* Greater than great, great, great,  
 great Pompey! Pompey the huge!

*Dum.* Hector trembles.

*Biron.* Pompey is mov'd:—More Ates †,  
 more Ates; stir them on! stir them on!

*Dum.* Hector will challenge him.

*Biron.* Ay, if he have no more man's blood  
 in's belly than will sup a flea.

*Arm.* By the north pole, I do challenge thee.

*Cost.* I will not fight with a pole, like a  
 northern man; I'll slash; I'll do it by the sword:  
 —I pray you, let me borrow my arms again.

*Dum.* Room for the incensed worthies.

*Cost.* I'll do it in my shirt.

*Dum.* Most resolute Pompey!

*Moth.* Master, let me take you a button-  
 hole lower. Do you not see, Pompey is un-  
 casing for the combat? What mean you? you  
 will lose your reputation.

*Arm.* Gentlemen, and soldiers, pardon me;  
 I will not combat in my shirt.

*Dum.* You may not deny it; Pompey hath  
 made the challenge.

*Arm.* Sweet bloods, I both may and will.

*Biron.* What reason have you for't?

*Arm.* The naked truth of it is, I have no  
 shirt; I go woolward ‡ for penance.

*Boyet.* True, and it was enjoind him in  
 Rome for want of linen: since when, I'll be  
 sworn, he wore none, but a dish-clout of Ja-  
 quenetta's; and that 'a wears next his heart,  
 for a favour.

*Enter MERCADE.*

*Mer.* God save you, madam!

*Prin.* Welcome, Mercade;  
 But that thou interrupt'st our merriment.

*Mer.* I am sorry, madam; for the news I  
 bring,

Is heavy in my tongue. The king your father—

*Prin.* Dead, for my life.

*Mer.* Even so; my tale is told.

*Biron.* Worthies, away; the scene begins  
 to cloud.

*Arm.* For mine own part, I breathe free  
 breath: I have seen the day of wrong through  
 the little hole of discretion, and I will right  
 myself like a soldier. *[Exeunt Worthies.]*

*King.* How fares your majesty?

*Prin.* Boyet, prepare; I will away to-night.

*King.* Madam, not so; I do beseech you,  
 stay. *[lords,*

*Prin.* Prepare, Isay.—I thank you, gracious  
 For all your fair endeavours; and entreat,  
 Out of a new-sad soul, that you vouchsafe  
 In your rich wisdom, to excuse, or hide,  
 The liberal opposition of our spirits:  
 If over boldly we have borne ourselves  
 In the converse of breath, your gentleness  
 Was guilty of it.—Farewell, worthy lord!  
 A heavy heart bears not an humble tongue:  
 Excuse me so, coming so short of thanks  
 For my great suit so easily obtain'd.

*King.* The extreme parts of time extremely  
 All causes to the purpose of his speed; *[form*  
 And often, at his very loose, decides  
 That which long process could not arbitrate:  
 And though the morning brow of progeny  
 Forbid the smiling courtesy of love,  
 The holy suit which fain it would convince;  
 Yet, since love's argument was first on foot,

\* Lance-men.

† Até was the goddess of discord.

‡ A clown.

§ Clothed in wool, without linen.

¶ Free to excess.

Let not the cloud of sorrow justle it [lost,  
From what it purpos'd; since, to wail friends  
Is not by much so wholesome, profitable,  
As to rejoice at friends but newly found.

*Prin.* I understand you not; my griefs are double. [ear of grief;—

*Biron.* Honest plain words best pierce the  
And by these badges understand the king.

For your fair sakes have we neglected time,  
Play'd foul play with our oaths; your beauty,  
ladies, [mours

Hath much deform'd us, fashioning our ha-  
Even to the opposed end of our intents:

And what in us hath seem'd ridiculous,—  
As love is full of unbefitting strains;

All wanton as a child, skipping, and vain;  
Form'd by the eye, and, therefore, like the eye

Full of strange shapes, of habits, and of forms,  
Varying in subjects as the eye doth roll

To every varied object in his glance:  
Which party-coated presence of loose love

Put on by us, if, in your heavenly eyes,  
Have misbecom'd our oaths and gravities,

Those heavenly eyes, that look into these faults,  
Suggested \* us to make: Therefore, ladies,

Our love being yours, the error that love makes  
Is likewise yours: we to ourselves prove false,

By being once false for ever to be true  
To those that make us both,—fair ladies, you:

And even that falsehood, in itself a sin  
Thus purifies itself, and turns to grace. [love;

*Prin.* We have receiv'd your letters, full of  
Your favours, the ambassadors of love;

And, in our maiden council, rated them  
At courtship, pleasant jest, and courtesy,

As bombast, and as lining to the time:  
But more devout than this, in our respects,

Have we not been; and therefore met you  
In their own fashion, like a merriment. [loves

*Dum.* Our letters, madam, show'd much more  
*Long.* So did our looks. [than jest.

*Ros.* We did not quote† them so.  
*King.* Now, at the latest minute of the hour,

Grant us your loves.  
*Prin.* A time, methinks, too short.

To make a world-without-end bargain in:  
No, no, my lord, your grace is perjur'd much,

Full of dear guiltiness; and, therefore this,—  
If for my love (as there is no such cause)

You will do aught, this shall you do for me:  
Your oath I will not trust; but go with speed

To some forlorn and naked hermitage,  
Remote from all the pleasures of the world;

There stay, until the twelve celestial signs  
Have brought about their annual reckoning:

If this austere insociable life  
Change not your offer made in heat of blood;

If frosts, and fasts, hard lodging, and thin  
weeds‡,

Nip not the gaudy blossoms of your love,  
But that it bear this trial, and last love;

Then, at the expiration of the year,  
Come challenge, challenge me by these deserts,

And, by this virgin palm, now kissing thine,  
I will be thine; and, till that instant, shut

My woeful self up in a mourning house;

Raining the tears of lamentation,  
For the remembrance of my father's death.  
If this thou do deny, let our hands part;  
Neither entitled in the other's heart.

*King.* If this, or more than this, I would  
deny, [rest,

To flatter up these powers of mine with  
The sudden hand of death close up mine eye!

Hence ever then my heart is in thy breast.  
*Biron.* And what to me, my love? and what

to me? [rank;

*Ros.* You must be purged too, your sins are  
You are attain'd with faults and perjury;

Therefore, if you my favour mean to get,  
A twelvemonth shall you spend, and never rest,

But seek the weary beds of people sick.  
*Dum.* But what to me, my love? but what

to me? [honesty;

*Kath.* A wife!—A beard, fair health, and  
With three-fold love I wish you all these three.

*Dum.* O, shall I say, I thank you, gentle  
wife? [and a day

*Kath.* Not so, my lord;—a twelvemonth  
I'll mark no words that smooth-fac'd wooers say:

Come when the king doth to my lady come,  
Then, if I have much love, I'll give you some.

*Dum.* I'll serve thee true and faithfully till  
then. [again.

*Kath.* Yet swear not, lest you be forsworn  
*Long.* What says Maria?

*Mar.* At the twelvemonth's end,  
I'll change my black gown for a faithful friend.

*Long.* I'll stay with patience; but the time  
is long. [young.

*Mar.* The liker you; few taller are so  
*Biron.* Studies my lady? mistress look on me,

Behold the window of my heart, mine eye,  
What humble suit attends thy answer there;

Impose some service on me for thy love.  
*Ros.* Oft have I heard of you, my lord Biron,

Before I saw you: and the world's large tongue  
Proclaims you for a man replete with mocks;

Full of comparisons and wounding flouts;  
Which you on all estates will execute,

That lie within the mercy of your wit: [brain;  
To weed this wormwood from your fruitful

And, therewithal, to win me, if you please,  
(Without the which I am not to be won,) [day

You shall this twelvemonth term from day to  
Visit the speechless sick, and still converse

With groaning wretches; and your task shall  
With all the fierce endeavour of your wit, [be,

To enforce the pained impotent to smile.  
*Biron.* To move wild laughter in the throat

It cannot be; it is impossible: [of death?  
Mirth cannot move a soul in agony. [spirit,

*Ros.* Why, that's the way to choke-a-gibing  
Whose influence is begot of that loose grace,

Which shallow laughing hearers give to fools  
A jest's prosperity lies in the ear

Of him that hears it, never in the tongue  
Of him that makes it: then, it sickly ears,

Deaf'd with the clamours of their own dear  
groans,

Will hear your idle scorns, continue then,  
And I will have you, and that fault withal;

\* Tempted    † Regard.    ‡ Clothing.    § Vehement.    ¶ Immediate.

But if they will not, throw away that spirit,  
And I shall find you empty of that fault,  
Right joyful of your reformation.

*Biron.* A twelvemonth? well, befall what  
will befall,

I'll jest a twelvemonth in an hospital.

*Prin.* Ay, sweet my lord; and so I take  
my leave. [To the King.

*King.* No, madam: we will bring you on  
your way. [play;

*Biron.* Our wooing doth not end like an old  
Jack hath not Jill: these ladies' courtesy  
Might well have made our sport a comedy.

*King.* Come, sir, it wants a twelvemonth  
And then 'twill end. [and a day.

*Biron.* That's too long for a play.

*Enter ARMADO.*

*Arm.* Sweet majesty, vouchsafe me,—

*Prin.* Was not that Hector?

*Dum.* The worthy knight of Troy.

*Arm.* I will kiss thy royal finger, and take  
leave: I am a votary; I have vowed to Ja-  
quenetta to hold the plough for her sweet love  
three years. But, most esteemed greatness,  
will you hear the dialogue that the two learn-  
ed men have compiled, in praise of the owl  
and the cuckoo? it should have followed in  
the end of our show.

*King.* Call them forth quickly, we will do so.

*Arm.* Holla! approach.

*Enter HOLOFERNES, NATHANIEL, MOTH,  
COSTARD, and others.*

This side is Hiems, winter; this Ver, the  
spring; the one maintain'd by the owl, the  
other by the cuckoo. Ver, begin.

SONG.

Spring. *When daisies pied, and violets blue,  
And lady-smocks all silver-white,  
And cuckoo-buds of yellow hue,  
Do paint the meadows with delight,*

• Cool.

*The cuckoo then, on every tree,  
Mocks married men, for thus sings he,*

*Cuckoo;*

*Cuckoo, cuckoo,—O word of fear,  
Unpleasing to a married ear!*

II.

*When shepherd's pipe on oaten straws,  
And merry larks are ploughmen's clocks,  
When turtles tread, and rooks, and daws,  
And maidens bleach their summer  
smocks,*

*The cuckoo then, on every tree,  
Mocks married men, for thus sings he,*

*Cuckoo;*

*Cuckoo, cuckoo,—O word of fear,  
Unpleasing to a married ear!*

III.

*Winter. When icicles hang by the wall,  
And Dick the shepherd blows his nail,*

*And Tom bears logs into the hall,*

*And milk comes frozen home in pail,  
When blood is nipp'd, and ways be foul,  
Then nightly sings the staring owl,*

*To-who;*

*Tu-whit, to-who, a merry note,  
While greasy Joan doth keel\* the pot.*

IV.

*When all about the wind doth blow,  
And coughing drowns the parson's saw*

*And birds sit brooding in the snow,*

*And Marian's nose looks red and raw,  
When roasted crabs† hiss in the bowl,  
Then nightly sings the staring owl,*

*To-who;*

*Tu-whit, to-who, a merry note,  
While greasy Joan doth keel the pot.*

*Arm.* The words of Mercury are harsh after  
the songs of Apollo. You, that way; we,  
this way. [Exeunt.

† Wild apples.

In this play, which all the editors have concurred to censure, and some have rejected as unworthy of our poet, it must be confessed that there are many passages mean, childish, and vulgar; and some which ought not to have been exhibited, as we are told they were, to a maiden queen. But there are scattered through the whole many sparks of genius; nor is there any play that has more evident marks of the hand of Shakspeare.—JOHNSON.



# MERCHANT OF VENICE.

## Persons represented.

Duke of Venice.  
 Prince of Morocco, } suitors to Portia.  
 Prince of Arragon, }  
 ANTONIO, *the Merchant of Venice*.  
 BASSANIO, *his friend*.  
 SALARINO, } friends to Antonio and Bas-  
 SALARINO, } sanio.  
 GRATIANO, }  
 LORENZO, *in love with Jessica*.  
 SHYLOCK, *a Jew*.  
 TUBAL, *a Jew, his friend*.

LAUNCELOT GOBBO, *a clown, servant to Shylock*.  
 OLD GOBBO, *father to Launcelot*.  
 SALERIO, *a messenger from Venice*.  
 LEONARDO, *servant to Bassanio*.  
 BALTHAZAR, } servants to Portia.  
 STEPHANO, }  
 PORTIA, *a rich heiress*.  
 NERISSA, *her waiting-maid*.  
 JESSICA, *daughter to Shylock*.

*Magnificoes of Venice, Officers of the Court of Justice, Jailor, Servants, and other Attendants.*

*Scene,—Partly at Venice, and partly at Belmont, the Seat of Portia, on the Continent.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. Venice. A Street.

*Enter ANTONIO, SALARINO, and SALANIO.*

*Ant.* In sooth, I know not why I am so sad;  
 It wearies me; you say, it wearies you;  
 But how I caught it, found it, or came by it,  
 What stuff 'tis made of, whereof it is born,  
 I am to learn;  
 And such a want-wit sadness makes of me,  
 That I have much ado to know myself.

*Salar.* Your mind is tossing on the ocean;  
 There, where your argosies\* with portly sail,—  
 Like signiors and rich burghers of the flood,  
 Or, as it were the pageants of the sea,—  
 Do overpeer the petty traffickers,  
 That curt'sy to them, do them reverence,  
 As they fly by them with their woven wings.

*Salan.* Believe me, sir, had I such venture  
 The better part of my affections would [forth,  
 Be with my hopes abroad. I should be still  
 Plucking the grass, to know where sits the  
 wind; [roads;

Peering in maps, for ports, and piers, and  
 And every object, that might make me fear  
 Misfortune to my ventures, out of doubt,  
 Would make me sad.

*Salar.* My wind, cooling my broth,  
 Would blow me to an ague, when I thought  
 What harm a wind too great might do at sea.  
 I should not see the sandy hour-glass run,  
 But I should think of shallows and of flats;  
 And see my wealthy Andrew dock'd in sand,  
 Vailing† her high-top lower than her ribs,  
 To kiss her burial. Should I go to church,  
 And see the holy edifice of stone, [rocks?  
 And not bethink me straight of dangerous

Which touching but my gentle vessel's side,  
 Would scatter all her spices on the stream;  
 Enrobe the roaring waters with my silks;  
 And, in a word, but even now worth this,  
 And now worth nothing? Shall I have the  
 thought

To think on this; and shall I lack the thought,  
 That such a thing, bechanc'd would make me  
 But, tell not me; I know, Antonio [sad?  
 Is sad to think upon his merchandise. [for it,

*Ant.* Believe me, no: I thank my fortune  
 My ventures are not in one bottom trusted,  
 Nor to one place; nor is my whole estate  
 Upon the fortune of this present year:  
 Therefore, my merchandise makes me not sad.

*Salan.* Why then you are in love.

*Ant.* Fie, fie!

*Salan.* Not in love neither? Then let's say,  
 you are sad,  
 Because you are not merry: and 'twere as easy  
 For you, to laugh, and leap, and say, you are  
 merry, [Jannus,

Because you are not sad. Now, by two-headed  
 Nature hath fram'd strange fellows in her time:  
 Some that will evermore peep through their  
 And laugh, like parrots, at a bag-piper; [eyes,  
 And other of such vinegary aspect, [smile,  
 That they'll not show their teeth in way of  
 Though Nestor swear the jest be laughable.

*Enter BASSANIO, LORENZO, and GRATIANO.*

*Salan.* Here comes Bassanio, your most  
 noble kinsman,  
 Gratiano, and Lorenzo: Fare you well;  
 We leave you now with better company.

*Salar.* I would have staid till we had made you  
 merry,

\* Ships of large burthen. † Lowering.

If worthier friends had not prevented me.

*Ant.* Your worth is very dear in my regard.  
I take it, your own business calls on you,  
And you embrace the occasion to depart.

*Salar.* Good-morrow, my good lords.

*Bass.* Good signiors both, when shall we laugh? Say, when?

You grow exceeding strange: Must it be so?

*Salar.* We'll make our leisures to attend on yours.

[*Exit* SALARINO and SALANIO.]

*Lor.* My lord Bassanio, since you have found Antonio,

We two will leave you: but, at dinner-time, I pray you, have in mind where we must meet.

*Bass.* I will not fail you.

*Gra.* You look not well, signior Antonio; You have too much respect upon the world: They lose it, that do buy it with much care. Believe me, you are marvellously chang'd.

*Ant.* I hold the world but as the world, Gratiano;

A stage, where every man must play a part, And mine a sad one.

*Gra.* Let me play the fool: With mirth and laughter let old wrinkles come; And let my liver rather heat with wine, Than my heart cool with mortifying groans. Why should a man, whose blood is warm Sit like his grandsire cut in alabaster? [within, Sleep when he wakes? and creep into the jaundice

By being peevish? I tell thee what, Antonio,— I love thee, and it is my love that speaks;— There are a sort of men, whose visages Do cream and mantle, like a standing pond; And do a wilful stillness\* entertain, With purpose to be dress'd in an opinion Of wisdom, gravity, profound conceit; As who should say, *I am Sir Oracle,* And, when I *lope my lips, let no dog bark!*

O, my Antonio, I do know of these, That therefore only are reputed wise, For saying nothing; who, I am very sure, If they should speak, would almost damn those ears, [thems, fools.

Which, hearing them, would call their brother I'll tell thee more of this another time: But fish not, with this melancholy bait, For this fool's gudgeon, this opinion.—

Come, good Lorenzo:—Fare ye well, a while; I'll end my exhortation after dinner. [time:]

*Lor.* Well, we will leave you then till dinner: I must be one of these same dumb wise men, For Gratiano never lets me speak. [more,

*Gra.* Well, keep me company but two years Thou shalt not know the sound of thine own tongue.

*Ant.* Farewell: I'll grow a talker for this gear. [commendable

*Gra.* Thanks, i'faith; for silence is only In a neat's tongue dried, and a maid not vendible.

[*Exit* GRATIANO and LORENZO.]

*Ant.* Is that any thing now?

*Bass.* Gratiano speaks an infinite deal of

nothing, more than any man in all Venice. His reasons are as two grains of wheat hid in two bushels of chaff; you shall seek all day ere you find them; and when you have them, they are not worth the search.

*Ant.* Well; tell me now, what lady is this To whom you swore a secret pilgrimage, [same That you to-day promis'd to tell me of?

*Bass.* 'Tis not unknown to you, Antonio, How much I have disabled mine estate, By something showing a more swelling port Than my faint means would grant continuance: Nor do I now make moan to be abridg'd From such a noble rate; but my chief care Is, to come fairly off from the great debts, Wherein my time, something too prodigal, Hath left me gaged: To you, Antonio, I owe the most, in money, and in love; And from your love I have a warranty To unburthen all my plots, and purposes, How to get clear of all the debts I owe. [it;

*Ant.* I pray you, good Bassanio, let me know And, if it stand, as you yourself still do, Within the eye of honour, be assur'd, My purse, my person, my extremest means, Lie all unlock'd to your occasions. [one shaft,

*Bass.* In my school-days, when I had lost I shot his fellow of the self-same flight The self-same way, with more advised watch, To find the other forth; and by advent'ring both,

I oft found both: I urge this childhood proof, Because what follows is pure innocence.

I owe you much; and, like a wilful youth, That which I owe is lost: but if you please To shoot another arrow that self way Which you did shoot the first, I do not doubt, As I will watch the aim, or to find both, Or bring your latter hazard back again, And thankfully rest debtor for the first.

*Ant.* You know me well; and herein spend but time,

To wind about my love with circumstance; And, out of doubt, you do me now more In making question of my uttermost, [wrong. Than if you had made waste of all I have: Then do but say to me what I should do, That in your knowledge may by me be done, And I am prest unto it: therefore, speak.

*Bass.* In Belmont is a lady richly left, And she is fair, and fairer than that word, Of wondrous virtues; sometimes from her I did receive fair speechless messages: [eyes Her name is Portia; nothing undervalued To Cato's daughter, Brutus' Portia. Nor is the wide world ignorant of her worth; For the four winds blow in from every coast Renowned suitors; and her sunny locks Hang on her temples like a golden fleece; Which makes her seat of Belmont, Colchos' strand,

And many Jasons come in quest of her.

O my Antonio, had I but the means

To hold a rival place with one of them,

I have a mind presages me such thrift,

That I should questionless be fortunate.

*Ant.* Thou know'st, that all my fortunes are at sea;  
Nor have I money, nor commodity  
To raise a present sum : therefore go forth,  
Try what my credit can in Venice do ;  
That shall be rack'd, even to the uttermost,  
To furnish thee to Belmont, to fair Portia.  
Go, presently inquire, and so will I,  
Where money is : and I no question make,  
To have it of my trust, or for my sake.

[*Ereunt.*]

SCENE II. Belmont. *A Room in Portia's House.*

*Enter PORTIA and NERISSA.*

*Por.* By my troth, Nerissa, my little body is a-weary of this great world.

*Ner.* You would be, sweet madam, if your miseries were in the same abundance as your good fortunes are : And, yet, for aught I see, they are as sick, that surfeit with too much, as they that starve with nothing : It is no mean happiness therefore, to be seated in the mean ; superfluity comes sooner by white hairs, but competency lives longer.

*Por.* Good sentences, and well pronounced.

*Ner.* They would be better, if well followed.

*Por.* If to do were as easy as to know what were good to do, chapels had been churches, and poor men's cottages, princes' palaces. It is a good divine that follows his own instructions : I can easier teach twenty what were good to be done, than be one of the twenty to follow mine own teaching. The brain may devise laws for the blood ; but a hot temper leaps over a cold decree : such a hare is madness the youth, to skip o'er the meshes of good counsel the cripple. But this reasoning is not in the fashion to choose me a husband :—O me, the word choose ! I may neither choose whom I would, nor refuse whom I dislike ; so is the will of a living daughter curb'd by the will of a dead father :—Is it not hard, Nerissa, that I cannot choose one, nor refuse none ?

*Ner.* Your father was ever virtuous ; and holy men, at their death, have good inspirations ; therefore, the lottery, that he hath devised in these three chests, of gold, silver, and lead, (whereof who chooses his meaning, chooses you,) will, no doubt, never be chosen by any rightly, but one who you shall rightly love. But what warmth is there in your affection towards any of these princely suitors that are already come ?

*Por.* I pray thee, over-name them ; and as thou namest them, I will describe them ; and, according to my description, level at my affection.

*Ner.* First, there is the Neapolitan prince.

*Por.* Ay, that's a colt\*, indeed, for he doth nothing but talk of his horse ; and he makes it a great appropriation to his own good parts, that he can shoe him himself : I am much afraid, my lady his mother played false with a smith.

*Ner.* Then, is there the county† Palatine.

*Por.* He doth nothing but frown ; as who should say, *An if you will not have me, choose* : he hears merry tales, and smiles not : I fear, he will prove the weeping philosopher when he grows old, being so full of unmanly sadness in his youth. I had rather be married to a death's head with a bone in his mouth, than to either of these. God defend me from these two !

*Ner.* How say you by the French lord, Monsieur Le Bon ?

*Por.* God made him, and therefore let him pass for a man. In truth, I know it is a sin to be a mocker ; But, he ! why, he hath a sin to be a mocker ; But, he ! why, he hath a horse better than the Neapolitan's ; a better bad habit of frowning than the count Palatine : he is every man in no man : if : throstle sing, he falls straight a capering ; he will fence with his own shadow : if I should marry him, I should marry twenty husbands. If he would despise me, I would forgive him ; for if he love me to madness, I shall never requite him.

*Ner.* What say you then to Faulconbridge, the young baron of England ?

*Por.* You know, I say nothing to him ; for he understands not me, nor I him : he hath neither Latin, French, nor Italian ; and you will come into the court and swear, that I have a poor penny-worth in the English. He is a proper man's picture ; But, alas ! who can converse with a dumb-show ? How oddly he is suited ! I think, he bought his doublet in Italy, his round hose in France, his bonnet in Germany, and his behaviour every where.

*Ner.* What think you of the Scottish lord, his neighbour ?

*Por.* That he hath a neighbourly charity in him ; for he borrowed a box of the ear of the Englishman, and swore he would pay him again, when he was able : I think, the Frenchman became his surety, and sealed under for another.

*Ner.* How like you the young German, the duke of Saxony's nephew ?

*Por.* Very vilely in the morning, when he is sober ; and most vilely in the afternoon, when he is drunk : when he is best, he is a little worse than a man ; and when he is worst, he is little better than a beast : an the worst fall that ever fell, I hope, I shall make shift to go without him.

*Ner.* If he should offer to choose, and choose the right casket, you should refuse to perform your father's will, if you should refuse to accept him.

*Por.* Therefore, for fear of the worst, I pray thee, set a deep glass of Rhenish wine on the contrary casket : for, if the devil be within, and that temptation without, I know he will choose it. I will do any thing, Nerissa, ere I will be married to a sponge.

*Ner.* You need not fear, lady, the having any of these lords ; they have acquainted me



with their determination ; which is, indeed, to return to their home, and to trouble you with no more suit ; unless you may be won by some other sort than your father's imposition, depending on the caskets.

*Por.* If I live to be as old as Sibylla, I will die as chaste as Diana, unless I be obtained by the manner of my father's will : I am glad this parcel of wooers are so reasonable ; for there is not one among them but I dote on his very absence, and I pray God grant them a fair departure.

*Ner.* Do you not remember, lady, in your father's time, a Venetian, a scholar, and a soldier, that came hither in company of the Marquis of Montferrat ?

*Por.* Yes, yes, it was Bassanio ; as I think, so was he called.

*Ner.* True, madam ; he, of all the men that ever my foolish eyes looked upon, was the best deserving a fair lady.

*Por.* I remember him well ; and I remember him worthy of thy praise.—How now ! what news ?

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* The four strangers seek for you, madam, to take their leave : and there is a fore-runner come from a fifth, the prince of Morocco ; who brings word, the prince, his master, will be here to-night.

*Por.* If I could bid the fifth welcome with so good heart as I can bid the other four farewell, I should be glad of his approach : if he have the condition\* of a saint, and the complexion of a devil, I had rather he should shrive me than wive me. Come, Nerissa.—Sirrah, go before.—Whiles we shut the gate upon one wooer, another knocks at the door.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. Venice. *A public Place.*

*Enter BASSANIO and SHYLOCK.*

*Shy.* Three thousand ducats,—well.

*Bass.* Ay, sir, for three months.

*Shy.* For three months,—well.

*Bass.* For the which, as I told you, Antonio shall be bound.

*Shy.* Antonio shall become bound,—well.

*Bass.* May you stead me ? Will you pleasure me ? Shall I know your answer ?

*Shy.* Three thousand ducats, for three months, and Antonio bound.

*Bass.* Your answer to that.

*Shy.* Antonio is a good man.

*Bass.* Have you heard any imputation to the contrary ?

*Shy.* Ho, no, no, no, no :—my meaning, in saying he is a good man, is to have you understand me, that he is sufficient : yet his means are in supposition : he hath an argosy bound to Tripolis, another to the Indies ; I understand moreover upon the Rialto, he hath a third at Mexico, a fourth for England,—and other ventures he hath, squander'd abroad : But ships are but boards, sailors but

men : there be land-rats, and water-rats, water-thieves, and land-thieves ; I mean, pirates ; and then, there is the peril of waters, winds, and rocks : The man is, notwithstanding, sufficient ;—three thousand ducats ;—I think, I may take his bond.

*Bass.* Be assured you may.

*Shy.* I will be assured, I may ; and, that I may be assured, I will bethink me : May I speak with Antonio ?

*Bass.* If it please you to dine with us.

*Shy.* Yes, to smell pork ; to eat of the habitation which your prophet, the Nazarite, conjured the devil into : I will buy with you, sell with you, talk with you, walk with you, and so following ; but I will not eat with you, drink with you, nor pray with you. What news on the Rialto ?—Who is he comes here ?

*Enter ANTONIO.*

*Bass.* This is signior Antonio.

*Shy.* [*Aside.*] How like a fawning publican he looks !

I hate him for he is a christian : But more, for that, in low simplicity, He lends out money gratis, and brings down The rate of usance here with us in Venice. If I can catch him once upon the hip, I will feed fat the ancient grudge I bear him. He hates our sacred nation ; and he rails, Even there where merchants most do congregate, [thrust, On me, my bargains, and my well-won Which he calls interest : Cursed be my tribe, If I forgive him !

*Bass.* Shylock, do you hear ?

*Shy.* I am debating of my present store ; And, by the near guess of my memory, I cannot instantly raise up the gross Of full three thousand ducats : What of that ? Tubal, a wealthy Hebrew of my tribe, Will furnish me : But soft ; How many months [snior ;

Do you desire ?—Rest you fair, good signior ;

[*To ANTONIO.*]

Your worship was the last man in our mouths.

*Ant.* Shylock, albeit I neither lend nor borrow,

By taking, nor by giving of excess, Yet, to supply the ripe wants † of my friend, I'll break a custom :—Is he yet possess'd ‡, How much you would ?

*Shy.* Ay, ay, three thousand ducats.

*Ant.* And for three months.

*Shy.* I had forgot,—three months, you told me so.

Well then, your bond ; and, let me see,— But hear you ;

Methought, you said, you neither lend, nor borrow,

Upon advantage.

*Ant.* I do never use it.

*Shy.* When Jacob graz'd his uncle Laban's sheep,

This Jacob from our holy Abraham was

\* Temper, qualities.

† Wants which admit no longer delay.

‡ Informed.

(As his wise mother wrought in his behalf,)

The third possessor; ay, he was the third.

*Ant.* And what of him? did he take interest?

*Shy.* No, not take interest; not as you Directly interest: mark what Jacob did.

When Laban and himself were compromis'd, That all the earnings which were streak'd, and

pie'd, [rank, Should fall as Jacob's hire; the ewes, being

In the end of autumn turned to the rams:

And when the work of generation was

Between these woolly breeders in the act,

The skilful shepherd peel'd me certain wands,

And, in the doing of the deed of kind \*,

He stuck them up before the fulsome ewes;

Who, then conceiving, did in eaving time

Fall party-colour'd lambs, and those were

Jacob's.

This was a way to thrive, and he was blest;

And thrift is blessing, if men steal it not.

*Ant.* This was a venture, sir, that Jacob

serv'd for;

A thing not in his power to bring to pass,

But sway'd, and fashion'd, by the hand of

heaven.

Was this inserted to make interest good?

Or is your gold and silver, ewes and rams?

*Shy.* I cannot tell; I make it breed as fast:—

But note me, signior.

*Ant.* Mark you this, Bassanio,

The devil can cite scripture for his purpose.

An evil soul, producing holy witness,

Is like a villain with a smiling cheek;

A goodly apple rotten at the heart;

O, what a goodly outside falsehood hath!

*Shy.* Three thousand ducats,—'tis a good

round sum.

Three months from twelve, then let me see the

rate. [to you.

*Ant.* Well, Shylock, shall we be beholden

*Shy.* Signior Antonio, many a time and oft,

In the Rialto you have rated me

About my monies, and my usances †:

Still have I borne it with a patient shrug;

For sufferance is the badge of all our tribe:

You call me—misbeliever, cut-throat dog,

And spit upon my Jewish gaberdine,

And all for use of that which is mine own.

Well then, it now appears, you need my help:

Go to then; you come to me, and you say,

*Shylock, we would have monies;* You say so;

You, that did void your rheum upon my beard,

And foot me, as you spurn a stranger cur

Over your threshold; monies is your suit.

What should I say to you? Should I not say,

*Hath a dog money? is it possible,*

*A cur can lend three thousand ducats?* or

Shall I bend low, and in a bondman's key,

With 'bated breath, and whispering humbly—

Say this,— [ness,

*Fair sir, you spit on me on Wednesday*

*last;*

*You spurn'd me such a day; another time*

*You call'd me—dog; and for these cour-*

*I'll lend you thus much monies.* [tiesies

*Ant.* I am as like to call thee so again,

To spit on thee again, to spurn thee too.

If thou wilt lend this money, lend it not

As to thy friends; (for when did friendship

take

A breed for barren metal of his friend?)

But lend it rather to thine enemy;

Who if he break, thou may'st with better

Exact the penalty. [face

*Shy.* Why, look you, how you storm!

I would be friends with you, and have your

love, [with,

Forget the shames that you have stain'd me

Supply your present wants, and take no doit

Of usance for my monies, and you'll not hear

This is kind I offer. [me:]

*Ant.* This were kindness.

*Shy.* This kindness will I show:—

Go with me to a notary, seal me there

Your single bond; and, in a merry sport,

If you repay me not on such a day,

In such a place, such sun, or sums, as are

Express'd in the condition, let the forfeit

Be nominated for an equal pound

Of your fair flesh, to be cut off and taken

In what part of your body pleaseth me.

*Ant.* Content, in faith; I'll seal to such a

bond,

And say, there is much kindness in the Jew.

*Bass.* You shall not seal to such a bond for

me,

I'll rather dwell † in my necessity.

*Ant.* Why, fear not, man; I will not fore-

feit it; [before

Within these two months, that's a month

This bond expires, I do expect return

Of thrice three times the value of this bond.

*Shy.* O father Abraham, what these Chris-

tians are;

Whose own hard dealings teaches them sus-

pect [this;

The thoughts of others! Pray you, tell me

If he should break his day, what should I

By the exaction of the forfeiture? [gain

A pound of man's flesh, taken from a man,

Is not so estimable, profitable neither,

As flesh of muttons, beefs, or goats. I say,

To buy his favour, I extend this friendship:

If he will take it, so; if not, adieu;

And, for my love, I pray you, wrong me not.

*Ant.* Yes, Shylock, I will seal unto this

bond. [tary's;

*Shy.* Then meet me forthwith at the no-

Give him direction for this merry bond,

And I will go and purse the ducats straight;

See to my house, left in the fearful guard

Of an unthrifty knave; and presently

I will be with you. [Exit.

*Ant.* Hie thee, gentle Jew.

This Hebrew will turn Christian; he grows

kind.

*Bass.* I like not fair terms, and a villain's

mind. [dismay,

*Ant.* Come on: in this there can be no

My ships come home a month before the

day. [Exeunt.

\* Nature.

† Interest.

‡ Abide.

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.

Belmont. *A Room in Portia's House.*

*Flourish of Cornets. Enter the Prince of Morocco, and his Train; PORTIA, NERISSA, and other of her Attendants.*

*Mor.* Mislike me not for my complexion,  
The shadow'd livery of the burnish'd sun,  
To whom I am a neighbour, and near bred.  
Bring me the fairest creature northward born.  
Where Phœbus' fire scarce thaws the icicles,  
And let us make incision\* for your love,  
To prove whose blood is reddest, his, or mine.  
I tell thee, lady, this aspect of mine  
Hath fear'd the valiant; by my love, I  
The best-regarded virgins of our clime swear,  
Have lov'd it too: I would not change this  
hue, [queen.]

Except to steal your thoughts, my gentle  
*Por.* In terms of choice I am not solely  
By nice direction of a maiden's eyes: [led]  
Besides, the lottery of my destiny  
Bars me the right of voluntary choosing:  
But, if my father had not scanted me,  
And hugg'd me by his wit, to yield myself  
His wife, who wins me by that means I told  
you, [fair,  
Yourself, renowned prince, then stood as  
As any com'er I have look'd on yet,  
For my affection.

*Mor.* Even for that I thank you;  
Therefore, I pray you, lead me to the caskets,  
To try my fortune. By this scimitar,—  
That slew the Sophy, and a Persian prince,  
That won three fields of Sultan Solyman,—  
I would out-stare the sternest eyes that look,  
Out-brave the heart most daring on the earth,  
Pluck the young suckling cubs from the she  
bear,

Yea, mock the lion when he roars for prey,  
To win thee, lady: But, alas the while!  
If Hercules, and Lichas, play at dice  
Which is the better man, the greater throw  
May turn by fortune from the weaker hand:  
So is Alcides beaten by his page;  
And so may I, blind fortune leading me,  
Miss that which one unworthier may attain,  
And die with grieving.

*Por.* You must take your chance;  
And either not attempt to choose at all,  
Or swear, before you choose,—if you choose  
wrong,

Never to speak to lady afterward  
In way of marriage: therefore be advis'd †.

*Mor.* Nor will not; come, bring me unto  
my chance.

*Por.* First, forward to the temple; after  
Your hazard shall be made. [dinner]

*Mor.* Good fortune then! [Cornets.  
To make me bless'd, or curs'd† among men.  
[Exeunt.]

SCENE II. Venice. *A Street.*

*Enter LAUNCELOT GOBBO.*

*Laun.* Certainly my conscience will serve  
me to run from this Jew, my master: The  
fiend is at mine elbow; and tempts me, say-  
ing to me, *Gobbo, Launcelot Gobbo, good  
Launcelot, or good Gobbo, or good Launce-  
lot Gobbo, use your legs, take the start,  
run away:* My conscience says,—no; take  
heed, honest Launcelot; take heed, honest  
Gobbo; or, as aforesaid, honest Launcelot  
& Gobbo; do not run; scorn running with  
thy heels: Well, the most courageous fiend  
bids me pack; *vial* says the fiend; *away!*  
says the fiend, *for the heavens; rouse up a  
brave mind,* says the fiend, *and run.* Well,  
my conscience, hanging about the neck of my  
heart, says very wisely to me,—*my honest  
friend Launcelot, being an honest man's  
son,*—or rather an honest woman's son;—  
for, indeed, my father did something smack,  
something grow to, he had a kind of taste;—  
well, my conscience says, *Launcelot, budge  
not; budge,* says the fiend; *budge not,* says  
my conscience: Conscience, say I, you coun-  
sel well; fiend, say I, you counsel well: to  
be ruled by my conscience, I should stay with  
the Jew my master, who, (God bless the  
mark!) is a kind of devil; and, to run away  
from the Jew, I should be ruled by the fiend,  
who, saving your reverence, is the devil him-  
self: Certainly, the Jew is the very devil in  
carnation; and, in my conscience, my con-  
science is but a kind of hard conscience, to  
offer to counsel me to stay with the Jew:  
The fiend gives the more friendly counsel: I  
will run, fiend; my heels are at your com-  
mandment, I will run.

*Enter old Gobbo, with a Basket.*

*Gob.* Master, young man, you, I pray  
you; which is the way to master Jew's?

*Laun.* [Aside.] O heavens, this is my true  
begotten father! who, being more than sand-  
blind, high-gravel blind, knows me not:—I  
will try conclusions ‡ with him.

*Gob.* Master young gentleman, I pray you,  
which is the way to master Jew's?

*Laun.* Turn up on your right hand, at the  
next turning, but, at the next turning of all, on  
your left; marry, at the very next turning,  
turn of no hand, but turn down indirectly to  
the Jew's house.

*Gob.* By God's sotties, 'twill be a hard  
way to hit. Can you tell me whether one  
Launcelot, that dwells with him, dwell with  
him, or no?

*Laun.* Talk you of young master Launce-  
lot?—Mark me now; [aside.] now will I  
raise the waters:—Talk you of young master  
Launcelot?

\* Allusion to the eastern custom for lovers to testify their passion by cutting themselves in  
their mistresses' sight. † Terrified. ‡ Not precipitate. § Experiments.



*Gob.* No master, sir, but a poor man's son; his father, though I say it, is an honest exceeding poor man, and, God be thanked, well to live.

*Laun.* Well, let his father be what he will, we talk of young master Launcelot.

*Gob.* Your worship's friend, and Launcelot, sir.

*Laun.* But I pray you *ergo*, old man, *ergo*, I beseech you; Talk you of young master Launcelot?

*Gob.* Of Launcelot, an't please your mastership.

*Laun.* *Ergo*, master Launcelot; talk not of master Launcelot, father; for the young gentleman (according to fates and destinies, and such odd sayings, the sisters three, and such branches of learning,) is, indeed, deceased; or, as you would say, in plain terms, gone to heaven.

*Gob.* Marry, God forbid! the boy was the very staff of my age, my very prop.

*Laun.* Do I look like a cudgel, or a hovel-post, a staff, or a prop?—Do you know me, father?

*Gob.* Alack the day, I know you not, young gentleman: but, I pray you, tell me, is my boy, (God rest his soul!) alive, or dead?

*Laun.* Do you not know me, father?  
*Gob.* Alack, sir, I am sand blind, I know you not.

*Laun.* Nay, indeed, if you had your eyes, you might fail of the knowing me: it is a wise father, that knows his own child. Well, old man, I will tell you news of your son: Give me your blessing: truth will come to light; murder cannot be hid long, a man's son may; but, in the end, truth will out.

*Gob.* Pray you, sir, stand up; I am sure, you are not Launcelot, my boy.

*Laun.* Pray you, let's have no more fooling about it, but give me your blessing; I am Launcelot, your boy that was, your son that is, your child that shall be.

*Gob.* I cannot think, you are my son.

*Laun.* I know not what I shall think of that: but I am Launcelot, the Jew's man; and, I am sure, Margery, your wife, is my mother.

*Gob.* Her name is Margery, indeed: I'll be sworn, it thou be Launcelot, thou art mine own flesh and blood. Lord, worshipp'd might he be! what a beard hast thou got! thou hast got more hair on thy chin, than Dobbin my thill-horse\* has on his tail.

*Laun.* It should seem then, that Dobbin's tail grows backward; I am sure he had more hair on his tail, than I have on my face, when I last saw him.

*Gob.* Lord, how art thou changed! How dost thou and thy master agree? I have brought him a present; How 'gree you now?

*Laun.* Well, well; but, for mine own part, as I have set up my rest to run away, so I will not rest till I have run some ground:

my master's a very Jew: Give him a present! give him a halter: I am famish'd in his service; you may tell every finger I have with my ribs. Father, I am glad you are come; give me your present to one master Bassanio, who, indeed, gives rare new liveries; if I serve not him, I will run as far as God has any ground.—O rare fortune! here comes the man;—to him, father; for I am a Jew, if I serve the Jew any longer.

*Enter BASSANIO, with LEONARDO, and other Followers.*

*Bass.* You may do so;—but let it be so hasted, that supper be ready at the farthest by five of the clock: See these letters deliver'd; put the liveries to making; and desire Gratiano to come anon to my lodging.

*[Exit a Servant.]*

*Laun.* To him, father.

*Gob.* God bless your worship!

*Bass.* Gramercy; Wouldst thou aught wish me?

*Gob.* Here's my son, sir, a poor boy,——

*Laun.* Not a poor boy, sir, but the rich Jew's man; that would, sir, as my father shall specify,——

*Gob.* He hath a great infection, sir, as one would say, to serve——

*Laun.* Indeed, the short and the long is, I serve the Jew, and I have a desire, as my father shall specify,——

*Gob.* His master and he, (saving your worship's reverence,) are scarce eater-cousins;

*Laun.* To be brief, the very truth is, that the Jew having done me wrong, doth cause me, as my father, being I hope an old man, shall frutify unto you,——

*Gob.* I have here a dish of doves, that I would bestow upon your worship; and my suit is,——

*Laun.* In very brief, the suit is impertinent to myself, as your worship shall know by this honest old man; and, though I say it, though old man, yet, poor man, my father.

*Bass.* One speak for both;—What would you?

*Laun.* Serve you, sir.

*Gob.* This is the very defect of the matter, sir.

*Bass.* I know thee well, thou hast obtain'd thy suit:

Shylock, thy master, spoke with me this day And have prefer'd thee, if it be preferment, To leave a rich Jew's service; to become The follower of so poor a gentleman.

*Laun.* The old proverb is very well parted between my master Shylock and you, sir; you have the grace of God, sir, and he hath enough.

*Bass.* Thou speak'st it well: Go, father with thy son:—

Take leave of thy old master, and inquire My lodging out:—Give him a livery

*[To his Followers.]*

More guarded† than his fellows': See it done.

*Laun.* Father, in:—I cannot get a service no;—I have ne'er a tongue in my head.—

\* Shaft-horse.

† Guarded.

Well; [*Looking on his palm.*] if any man in Italy have a fairer table\*, which doth offer to swear upon a book.—I shall have good fortune; Go to, here's a simple line of life! here's a small trifle of wives: Alas, fifteen wives is nothing; eleven widows, and nine maids, is a simple coming-in for one man: and then, to 'scape drowning thrice; and to be in peril of my life with the edge of a feather-bed;—here are simple 'scapes! Well, if fortune be a woman, she's a good wench for this gear.—Father, come; I'll take my leave of the Jew in the twinkling of an eye.

[*Exeunt LAUN. and old GOBBO.*]

Bass. I pray thee, good Leonardo, think on this; [*stow'd,*

These things being bought, and orderly be-  
Return in haste, for I do feast to night

My best-esteem'd acquaintance; hie thee, go.

Leon. My best endeavours shall be done  
herein.

[*Enter GRATIANO.*]

Gra. Where is your master?

Leon. Yonder, sir, he walks.

[*Exit LEONARDO.*]

Gra. Signior Bassanio,—

Bass. Gratiano!

Gra. I have a suit to you.

Bass. You have obtain'd it.

Gra. You must not deny me; I must go  
with you to Belmont.

Bass. Why, then you must:—But hear  
thee, Gratiano; [*voice;*

Thou art too wild, too rude, and bold of  
Parts, that become thee happily enough,  
And in such eyes as ours appear not faults;  
But where thou art not known, why, there  
they show

Something too liberal †;—pray thee, take pain  
To allay with some cold drops of modesty  
Thy skipping spirit; lest, through thy wild  
behaviour

I be misconstrued in the place I go to,  
And lose my hopes.

Gra. Signior Bassanio, hear me:  
If I do not put on a sober habit,  
Talk with respect, and swear but now and then,  
Wear prayer-books in my pocket, look de-  
murely; [*eyes*

Nay more, while grace is saying, hood mine  
Thus with my hat, and sigh, and say, amen;  
Use all the observance of civility,  
Like one well studied in a sad ostent ‡  
To please his grandam, never trust me more.

Bass. Well, we shall see your bearing §.

Gra. Nay, but I bar to-night; you shall not  
By what we do to-night. [*gaffe me*

Bass. No, that were pity;  
I would entreat you rather to put on  
Your boldest suit of mirth, for we have friends  
That purpose merriment: But fare you well,  
I have some business.

Gra. And I must to Lorenzo, and the rest;  
But we will visit you at supper-time.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. A Room in  
Shylock's House.*

*Enter JESSICA and LAUNCELOT.*

Jes. I am sorry, thou wilt leave my father so;  
Our house is hell, and thou, a merry devil,  
Didst rob it of some taste of tediousness:  
But fare thee well; there is a ducat for thee.  
And, Launcelot, soon at supper shalt thou see  
Lorenzo, who is thy new master's guest:  
Give him this letter; do it secretly,  
And so farewell; I would not have my father  
See me talk with thee.

Laun. Adieu!—tears exhibit my tongue.—  
Most beautiful pagan,—most sweet Jew! If  
a Christian do not play the knave, and get  
thee, I am much deceived: But, adieu! these  
foolish drops do somewhat drown my manly  
spirit; adieu! [*Exit*

Jes. Farewell, good Launcelot.—  
Alack, what heinous sin is it in me,  
To be ashamed to be my father's child!  
But though I am a daughter to his blood,  
I am not to his manners: O Lorenzo,  
If thou keep promise, I shall end this strife;  
Become a Christian, and thy loving wife. [*Exit.*

SCENE IV. *The same. A Street.*

*Enter GRATIANO, LORENZO, SALARINO,  
and SALANIO.*

Lor. Nay, we will slink away in supper-  
Disguise us at my lodging, and return [time;  
All in an hour.

Gra. We have not made good preparation.  
Salar. We have not spoke us yet of torch-  
bearers. [*order'd;*

Salan. 'Tis vile, unless it may be quaintly  
And better, in my mind, not undertook.

Lor. 'Tis now but four a'clock; we have  
To furnish us:— [*two hours*

*Enter LAUNCELOT, with a letter.*

Friend Launcelot, what's the news?  
Laun. An it shall please you to break up  
this, it shall seem to signify.

Lor. I know the hand: in faith, 'tis a fair  
And whiter than the paper it writ on, [hand;  
Is the fair hand that writ.

Gra. Love-news, in faith.  
Laun. By your leave, sir.

Lor. Whither goest thou?  
Laun. Marry, sir, to bid my old master

the Jew to sup to-night with my new master  
the Christian. [*Jessica,*

Lor. Hold here, take this:—tell gentle  
I will not fail her;—speak it privately; go.—  
Gentlemen, [*Exit LAUNCELOT.*

Will you prepare you for this masque to-night?  
I am provided of a torch-bearer.

Salar. Ay, marry, I'll be gone about it  
Salan. And so will I. [*straight.*

Lor. Meet me, and Gratiano,  
At Gratiano's lodging some hour hence.

Salar. 'Tis good we do so.

[*Exeunt SALAR. and SALAN.*]

Gra. Was not that letter from fair Jessica?

\* The palm of the hand extended.

serious demeanour.

† Gross, licentious.

‡ Show of staid and

§ Carriage, deportment.

*Lor.* I must needs tell thee all: She hath directed,  
How I shall take her from her father's house;  
What gold, and jewels, she is furnish'd with;  
What page's suit she hath in readiness.  
If e'er the Jew her father come to heaven,  
It will be for his gentle daughter's sake:  
And never dare misfortune cross her foot,  
Unless she do it under this excuse,—  
That she is issue to a faithless Jew.  
Come, go with me; peruse this, as thou goest:  
Fair Jessica shall be my torch-bearer. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *The same. Before Shylock's House.*

*Enter SHYLOCK and LAUNCELOT.*

*Shy.* Well, thou shalt see, thy eyes shall be thy judge.

The difference of old Shylock and Bassanio:—  
What, Jessica!—thou shalt not gormandize,  
As thou hast done with me;—What, Jessica!—  
And sleep and snore, and rend apparel out;—  
Why, Jessica, I say!

*Laun.* Why, Jessica! [*call.*]

*Shy.* Who bids thee call? I do not bid thee

*Laun.* Your worship was wont to tell me,  
I could do nothing without bidding.

*Enter JESSICA.*

*Jes.* Call you? What is your will?

*Shy.* I am bid \* forth to supper, Jessica;  
There are my keys:—But wherefore should I  
I am not bid for love; they flatter me: [*go?*]  
But yet I'll go in hate, to feed upon  
The prodigal Christian.—Jessica, my girl,  
Look to my house:—I am right loth to go;  
There is some ill a brewing towards my rest,  
For I did dream of money-bags to-night.

*Laun.* I beseech you, sir, go; my young  
master doth expect your reproach.

*Shy.* So do I his.

*Laun.* And they have conspired together,—  
I will not say, you shall see a masque; but if  
you do, then it was not for nothing that my  
nose fell a bleeding on Black-Monday last,  
at six o'clock i'the morning, falling out that  
year on Ash-wednesday was four year in the  
afternoon.

*Shy.* What! are there masques? Hear you  
me, Jessica: [*drum.*]

Lock up my doors; and when you hear the  
And the vile squeaking of the wry-neck'd fife,  
Clamber not you up to the casements then,  
Nor thrust your head into the public street,  
To gaze on Christian fools with varnish'd faces:  
But stop my house's ears, I mean my casements;  
Let not the sound of shallow foppery enter  
My sober house.—By Jacob's staff, I swear,  
I have no mind of feasting forth to night;  
But I will go.—Go you before me, sirrah;  
Say, I will come.

*Laun.* I will go before, sir.—

Mistress, look out at window, for all this;  
There will come a Christian by,

Will be worth a Jewess' eye. [*Exit LAUN.*]

*Shy.* What says that fool of Hagar's off-  
spring, ha?

*Jes.* His words were, Farewell, mistress;  
nothing else.

*Shy.* The patch is kind enough; but a huge  
feeder.

Snail-slow in profit, and he sleeps by day [*me;*  
More than the wild cat; drones hive not with  
Therefore I part with him; and part with him  
To one that I would have him help to waste  
His borrow'd purse.—Well, Jessica, go in;  
Perhaps, I will return immediately;

Do as I bid you,  
Shut doors after you: Fast bind, fast find;  
A proverb never stale in thrifty mind. [*Exit.*]

*Jes.* Farewell: and if my fortune be not  
crossed,

I have a father, you a daughter, lost. [*Exit.*]

SCENE VI. *The same.*

*Enter GRATIANO and SALARINO, masked.*

*Gra.* This is the pent-house, under which  
Desir'd us to make stand. [*Lorenzo*

*Salar.* His hour is almost past.

*Gra.* And it is marvel he out-dwells his  
For lovers ever run before the clock. [*hour,*

*Salar.* O, ten times faster Venus' pigeons fly  
To seal love's bonds new made, than they are  
To keep oblig'd faith unforfeited! [*wont,*

*Gra.* That ever holds: Who riseth from a  
feast,

With that keen appetite that he sits down?  
Where is the horse that doth untread again  
His tedious measures with the unbated fire  
That he did pace them first? All things that are,  
Are with more spirit chased than enjoy'd.

How like a younker, or a prodigal,  
The scarfed bark puts from her native bay,  
Hugg'd and embraced by the strumpet wind!  
How like the prodigal doth she return,  
With over-weather'd ribs, and ragged sails,  
Lean, rent, and beggar'd by the strumpet wind!

*Enter LORENZO.*

*Salar.* Here comes Lorenzo;—more of this  
hereafter. [*long abode;*

*Lor.* Sweet friends, your patience for my  
Not I, but my affairs, have made you wait;  
When you shall please to play the thieves for  
wives,

I'll watch as long for you then.—Approach;  
Here dwells my father Jew:—Ho! who's  
within.

*Enter JESSICA above, in boy's clothes.*

*Jes.* Who are you? Tell me, for more cer-  
tainly,

Albeit I'll swear that I do know your tongue.

*Lor.* Lorenzo, and thy love.

*Jes.* Lorenzo, certain; and my love, indeed;  
For who love I so much? And now who knows  
But you, Lorenzo, whether I am yours?

*Lor.* Heaven, and thy thoughts are witness  
that thou art. [*pains.*

*Jes.* Here, catch this casket; it is worth the  
I am glad 'tis night, you do not look on me,  
For I am much ashamed of my exchange;  
But love is blind, and lovers cannot see  
The pretty follies that themselves commit;



For if they could, Cupid himself would blush  
To see me thus transformed to a boy.

*Lor.* Descend, for you must be my torch-  
bearer. [shames?

*Jes.* What, must I hold a candle to my  
They in themselves, good sobth, are too too  
Why, 'tis an office of discovery, love; [light.  
And I should be obscured.

*Lor.* So are you, sweet,  
Even in the lovely garnish of a boy.  
But come at once;  
For the close night doth play the run-away,  
And we are staid for at Bassanio's feast.

*Jes.* I will make fast the doors, and gild  
myself

With some more ducats, and be with you  
straight. [Exit, from above.

*Gra.* Now, by my hood, a Gentle and no  
Jew.

*Lor.* Beshrew me, but I love her heartily:  
For she is wise, if I can judge of her;  
And fair she is, if that mine eyes be true;  
And true she is, as she hath prov'd herself;  
And therefore, like herself, wise, fair, and true,  
Shall she be placed in my constant soul.

*Enter JESSICA, below.*

What, art thou come?—On, gentlemen, away;  
Our masquing mates by this time for us stay.

[Exit with JESSICA and SALARINO.

*Enter ANTONIO.*

*Ant.* Who's there?

*Gra.* Signior Antonio? [rest?

*Ant.* Fie, fie, Gratiano! where are all the  
'Tis nine o'clock; our friends all stay for you:—  
No masque to night; the wind is come about,  
Bassanio presently will go aboard:  
I have sent twenty out to seek for you.

*Gra.* I am glad on't; I desire no more  
delight,

Than to be under sail, and gone to-night.

[Exit.

SCENE VII. Belmont. A Room in Portia's  
House.

*Flourish of Cornets.* Enter PORTIA, with  
the Prince of Morocco, and both their  
Trains.

*Por.* Go, draw aside the curtains, and disco-  
The several caskets to this noble prince:— [ver  
Now make your choice.

*Mor.* The first, of gold, who this inscription  
bears;— [desire.

*Who chooseth me, shall gain what many men*  
The second, silver, which this promise car-  
ries;— [deserves.

*Who chooseth me, shall get as much as he*  
This third, dull lead, with warning all as  
blunt;— [he hath.

*Who chooseth me, must give and hazard all*  
How shall I know if I do choose the right?

*Por.* The one of them contains my picture,  
prince;

If you choose that, then I am yours withal.

*Mor.* Some god direct my judgment! Let  
me see,

will survey the inscriptions back again:

What says this leaden casket?

*Who chooseth me, must give and hazard all*  
he hath. [lead?

Must give—For what? for lead? hazard for  
This casket threatens: Men, that hazard all,  
Do it in hope of fair advantages:

A golden mind stoops not to shows of dress;  
I'll then nor give, nor hazard, aught for lead.

What says the silver, with her virgin hue?  
*Who chooseth me, shall get as much as he*  
deserves. [rocco,

As much as he deserves?—Pause there, Mo  
And weigh thy value with an even hand:

If thou be'st rated by thy estimation,  
Thou dost deserve enough; and yet enough

May not extend so far as to the lady;  
And yet to be afraid of my deserving,

Were but a weak disabling of myself.  
As much as I deserve!—Why, that's the lady:

I do in birth deserve her, and in fortunes,  
In graces, and in qualities of breeding;

But more than these, in love I do deserve.  
What if I stray'd no further, but chose here?—

Let's see once more this saying grav'd in gold:  
*Who chooseth me, shall gain what many*  
men desire.

Why, that's the lady; all the world desires her.  
From the four corners of the earth they come,

To kiss this shrine, this mortal breathing saint.  
The Hyrcanian deserts, and the vasty wilds

Of wide Arabia, are as through-fares now,  
For princes to come view fair Portia:

The watery kingdom, whose ambitious head  
Spits in the face of heaven, is no bar

To stop the foreign spirits; but they come,  
As o'er a brook, to see fair Portia.

One of these three contains her heavenly pic-  
ture. tion,

Is't like, that lead contains her? 'Twere damna-  
To think so base a thought; it were too gross

To rib\* her cerecloth in the obscure grave.  
Or shall I think, in silver she's immur'd,

Being ten times undervalued to try'd gold?  
O sinful thought! Never so rich a gem

Was set in worse than gold. They have in  
England

A coin, that bears the figure of an angel  
Stamped in gold; but that's insculp'd† upon;

But here an angel in a golden bed  
Lies all within.—Deliver me the key;

Here do I choose, and thrive I as I may!

*Por.* There, take it, prince, and if my form  
lie there, [casket.

Then I am yours. [He unlocks the golden  
Mor. O hell! what have we here?

A carrion death, within whose empty eye  
There is a written scroll? I'll read the writing

All that glisters is not gold,  
Often have you heard that told:

Many a man his life hath sold,  
But my outside to behold:

Gilded tombs do worms infold.  
Had you been as wise as bold,

Young in limbs, in judgment old,  
Your answer had not been inscroll'd.

Fare you well; your suit is cold.

Cold, indeed; and labour lost:  
Then, farewell, heat; and, welcome, frost.—  
Portia, adieu! I have too griev'd a heart  
To take a tedious leave: thus losers part. *[Exit.*  
*Por.* A gentle riddance:—Draw the curtains, go;— *[Exeunt.*  
Let all of his complexion choose me so.

## SCENE VIII. Venice. A Street.

*Enter SALARINO and SALANIO.*

*Salar.* Why, man, I saw Bassanio under sail;  
With him is Gratiano gone along;  
And in their ship, I am sure, Lorenzo is not.

*Salan.* The villain Jew with outcries rais'd  
the duke;

Who went with him to search Bassanio's ship.

*Salar.* He came too late, the ship was under  
sail:

But there the duke was given to understand,

That in a gondola were seen together

Lorenzo and his amorous Jessica:

Besides, Antonio certifi'd the duke,

They were not with Bassanio in his ship.

*Salan.* I never heard a passion so confus'd,

So strange, outrageous, and so variable,

As the dog Jew did utter in the streets:

*My daughter!—O my ducats!—O my*

*daughter!—* *[ducats!—*

*Fled with a Christian?—O my christian*

*justice! the law! my ducats, and my*

*daughter!*

*A sealed bag, two sealed bags of ducats,*

*if double ducats, stolen from me by my*

*daughter!—* *[cious stones,*

*And jewels; two stones, two rich and pre-*

*stern'd by my daughter!—Justice!—find the*

*girl!*

*She hath the stones upon her, and the ducats!*

*Salar.* Why, all the boys in Venice follow

him, *[ducats.*

Crying,—his stones, his daughter, and his

*Salan.* Let good Antonio look he keep his

Or he shall pay for this. *[day,*

*Salar.* Marry, well remember'd:

I reason'd\* with a Frenchman yesterday;

Who told me,—in the narrow seas, that part

The French and English, there miscarried

A vessel of our country, richly fraught:

I thought upon Antonio, when he told me;

And wish'd in silence, that it were not his.

*Salan.* You were best to tell Antonio what

you hear;

Yet do not suddenly, for it may grieve him.

*Salar.* A kinder gentleman treads not the

I saw Bassanio and Antonio part: *[earth.*

Bassanio told him, he would make some speed

Of his return; he answer'd—*Do not so,*

*Slubber not t business for my sake, Bassanio,*

*But stay the very riping of the time;*

*And for the Jew's bond, which he hath of*

*Let it not enter in your mind of love: [me,*

*Be merry; and employ your chiefest thoughts*

*in courtship, and such fair ostents of love*

*As shall conveniently become you: there*

*And even there, his eye being big with tears,*

Turning his face, he put his hand behind him,

And with affection wondrous sensible

He wrung Bassanio's hand, and so they parted

*Salan.* I think, he only loves the world for

I pray thee, let us go, and find him out. *[him.*

And quicken his embraced heaviness

With some delight or other.

*Salar.* Do we so. *[Exeunt.*

## SCENE IX. Belmont. A Room in Portia's House.

*Enter NERISSA, with a Servant.*

*Ner.* Quick, quick, I pray thee, draw the

curtain straight;

The prince of Arragon hath ta'en his oath,

And comes to his election presently.

*Flourish of Cornet. Enter the Prince of*

*Arragon, PORTIA, and their Trains.*

*Por.* Behold, there stand the caskets, noble

prince:

If you choose that wherein I am contain'd,

Straight shall our nuptial rites be solemniz'd,

But if you fail, without more speech, my lord,

You must be gone from hence immediately.

*Ar.* I am enjoin'd by oath to observe three

First, never to unfold to any one *[things:*

Which casket 'twas I chose; next, if I fail

Of the right casket, never in my life

To woo a maid in way of marriage; lastly,

If I do fail in fortune of my choice,

Immediately to leave you and begone. *[swear,*

*Por.* To these injunctions every one doth

That comes to hazard for my worthless self.

*Ar.* And so have I address'd me: Fortune

now *[lead.*

To my heart's hope!—Gold, s<sup>t</sup>ver, and base

Who chooseth me, must live and hazard

all he hath:

You shall look fairer, ere I give, or hazard.

What says the golden chest? ha! let me see:—

*Who chooseth me, shall gain what many*

*men desire.* *[meant*

What many men desire.—That many may be

By the fool multitude, that choose by show,

Not learning more than the fond eye doth teach;

Which pries not to the interior, but, like the

martlet,

Builds in the weather on the outward wall,

Even in the force of and road of casualty.

I will not choose what many men desire,

Because I will not jump\*\* with common

spirits,

And rank me with the barbarous multitudes.

Why, then to thee, thou silver treasure-house,

Tell me once more what title thou dost bear:

*Who chooseth me, shall get as much as he*

*deserves;*

And well said too: For who shall go about

To cozen fortune, and be honourable

Without the stamp of merit! Let none pre-

sume to wear an undeserv'd dignity. *[same*

), that estates, degrees, and offices, *[honour*

Were not deriv'd corruptly! and that clear

Were purchas'd by the merit of the wearer!

How many then should cover, that stand bare?

\* Conversed.

† To slubber is to do a thing carelessly.

‡ Shows, tokens.

The heaviness he is fond of.

|| Prepared.

% Power.

\*\* Agree with.

How many be commanded, that command :  
 How much low peasantry would then be  
   glean'd [much honour]  
 From the true seed of honour? and how  
 Pick'd from the chaff and ruin of the times,  
 To be new varnish'd? Well, but to my choice—  
*Who chooseth me, shall get as much as he  
 deserves :*

I will assume desert;—Give me a key for this,  
 And instantly unlock my fortunes here.

*Por.* Too long a pause for that which you  
   find there. [idiot,

*Ar.* What's here? the portrait of a blinking  
 Presenting me a schedule? I will read it.  
 How much unlike art thou to Portia?

How much unlike my hopes, and my deserv-  
   ings? [deserves.

*Who chooseth me, shall have as much as he  
 Did I deserve no more than a fool's head?*

Is that my prize? are my deserts no better?

*Por.* To offend, and judge, are distinct offices,  
 And of opposed natures.

*Ar.* What is here?

*The fire seven times tried this ;  
 Seven times tried that judgment is,  
 That did never choose amiss :  
 Some there be, that shadows kiss ;  
 Such have but a shadow's bliss :  
 There be fools alive, I wis\*,  
 Silver'd o'er ; and so was this.  
 Take what wife you will to bed,  
 I will ever be your head :  
 So begone, sir, you are sped.*

Still more fool I shall appear  
 By the time I linger here :  
 With one fool's head I came to woo  
 But I go away with two.—  
 Sweet, adieu ! I'll keep my oath,  
 Patiently to bear my wroth.

[*Exeunt Arragon, and Train.*

*Por.* Thus hath the candle sing'd the moth.  
 O these deliberate fools! when they do choose,  
 They have the wisdom by their wit to lose.

*Ner.* The ancient saying is no heresy ;—  
 Hanging and wiving goes by destiny.

*Por.* Come, draw the curtain, Nerissa.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* Where is my lady?

*Por.* Here ; what would my lord?

*Serv.* Madam, there is alighted at your gate  
 A young Venetian, one that comes before  
 To signify the approaching of his lord :  
 From whom he bringeth sensible regrets ;  
 To wit, besides commendments, and courteous breath,  
 Gifts of rich value ; yet I have not seen  
 So likely an ambassador of love :

A day in April never came so sweet,  
 To show how costly summer was at hand,  
 As this fore-spurrer comes before his lord.

*Por.* No more, I pray thee ; I am half afraid,  
 Thou wilt say anon, he is some kin to thee,  
 Thou spend'st such high-day wit in praising him  
 Come, come, Nerissa ; for I long to see  
 Quick Cupid's post, that comes so mannerly

*Fer.* Bassanio, lord love, if thy will it be.

[*Exeunt*

## ACT. III.

### SCENE I. Venice. A Street.

*Enter SALANIO and SALARINO.*

*Salar.* Now, what news on the Rialto?

*Salar.* Why, yet it lives there uncheck'd, that  
 Antonio hath a ship of rich lading wreck'd on  
 the narrow seas; the Goodwins, I think they  
 call the place; a very dangerous flat, and fatal,  
 where the carcasses of many a tall ship lie  
 buried, as they say, if my gossip report be an  
 honest woman of her word.

*Salar.* I would she were as lying a gossip  
 in that, as ever knapp'd ginger, or made her  
 neighbours believe she wept for the death of  
 a third husband : But it is true,—without any  
 slips of prolixity, or crossing the plain high-  
 way of talk,—that the good Antonio, the ho-  
 nest Antonio,—O that I had a title good  
 enough to keep his name company!—

*Salar.* Come, the full stop.

*Salar.* Ha,—what sayst thou?—Why the  
 end is, he hath lost a ship.

*Salar.* I would it might prove the end of  
 his losses!

*Salar.* Let me say amen betimes, lest the  
 devil cross my prayer; for here he comes in  
 the likeness of a Jew.—

*Enter SHYLOCK.*

How now, Shylock? what news among the  
 merchants?

*Say.* You knew, none so well, none so well  
 as you, of my daughter's flight.

*Salar.* That's certain; I, for my part, knew  
 the tailor that made the wings she flew withal.

*Salar.* And Shylock, for his own part, knew  
 the bird was fledged; and then it is the com-  
 plexion of them all to leave the dam.

*Shy.* She is damn'd for it. [her judge.

*Salar.* That's certain, if the devil may be  
*Shy.* My own flesh and blood to rebel!

*Salar.* Out upon it, old carrion! rebels it  
   at these years? [blood.

*Shy.* I say, my daughter is my flesh and

*Salar.* There is more difference between  
 thy flesh and hers, than between jet and  
 ivory; more between your bloods, than there  
 is between red wine and rhenish:—But tell  
 us, do you hear whether Antonio have had  
 any loss at sea or no?

*Shy.* There I have another bad match: a  
 bankrupt, a prodigal, who dare scarce show  
 his head on the Rialto;—a beggar, that used  
 to come so snug upon the mart;—let him look  
 to his bond: he was wont to call me usurer;  
 —let him look to his bond: he was wont to



Bass. None, but that ugly treason of mistrust,  
Which makes me fear the enjoying of my love.  
There may as well be amity and life  
Tween snow and fire, as treason and my love.

*Por.* Ay, but, I fear, you speak upon the rack,  
Where men enforced do speak any thing.

*Bass.* Promise me life, and I'll confess the  
*Por.* Well then, confess, and live. [truth.

*Bass.* Confess, and love,  
Had been the very sum of my confession :  
O happy torment, when my torturer  
Doth teach me answers for deliverance!  
But let me to my fortune and the caskets.

*Por.* Away then : I am lock'd in one of them ;  
If you do love me, you will find me out.—  
Nerissa, and the rest, stand all aloof.— [choice ;  
Let music sound, while he doth make his  
Then, if he lose, he makes a swan like end,  
Fading in music : that the comparison  
May stand more proper, my eye shall be the  
stream,

And wat'ry death bed for him : He may win ;  
And what is music then ? then music is  
Even as the flourish when true subjects bow  
To a new-crowned monarch : such it is,  
As are those dulcet sounds in break of day,  
That creep into the dreaming bridegroom's ear,  
And summon him to marriage. Now he goes,  
With no less presence\*, but with much more  
Than young Alcides, when he did redeem [love,  
The virgin tribute paid by howling Troy  
To the sea monster : I stand for sacrifice,  
The rest aloof are the Dardan an wives,  
With bleared visages, come forth to view  
The issue of the exploit. Go, Hercules !  
Live thou, I live :—With much much more  
dismay [fray.

I view the fight, than thou that makest the  
*Music, whilst BASSANIO comments on the  
caskets to himself.*

### SONG.

1. *Tell me, where is fancy† bred,  
Or in the heart, or in the head ?*

*How begot, how nourish'd ?*  
Reply. 2. *It is engender'd in the eyes,  
With gazing fed ; and fancy dies  
In the cradle where it lies :  
Let us all ring fancy's knell ;  
Plū begin it, — Ding, dong, bell.*

All. *Ding, dong, bell.*

*Bass.*—So may the outward shows be  
least themselves ;

The world is still deceived with ornament.  
In law, what plea so tainted and corrupt,  
But, being season'd with a gracious† voice,  
Obscures the show of evil ? In religion,  
What dunn'd error, but some sober brow  
Will bless it, and approve it with a text,  
Hiding the grossness with fair ornament ?  
There is no vice so simple, but assumes  
Some mark of virtue on his outward parts.  
How many cowards, whose hearts are all as  
faint

As stairs of sand, wear yet upon their chins  
The beards of Hercules, and frowning Mars ;  
Who, inward search'd, have livers white as  
milk ?

And these assume but valour's excrement,

To render them redoubt'd. Look on beauty,  
And you shall see 'tis purchas'd by the weight ;  
Which therein works a miracle in nature,  
Making them lightest that wear most of it :  
So are those crisped† snaky golden locks,  
Which make such wanton gambols with the  
Upon supposed fairness, often known [wind,  
To be the dowry of a second head,  
The scull that bred them, in the sepulchre.  
Thus ornament is but the guiled† shore  
To a most dangerous sea ; the beauteous scarf  
Veiling in Indian beauty ; in a word, [on  
The seeming truth which cunning times put  
To entrap the wisest. Therefore, thou gaudy  
gold,

Hard food for Midas, I will none of thee :  
Nor none of thee, thou pale and common dredge  
'Tween man and man : but thou, thou meagre  
lead, [caught,

Which rather threat'nest, than dost promise  
Thy plainness move\* me more than eloquence,  
And here choose I ; Joy be the consequence !

*Por.* How all the other passions fleet to air,  
As doubtful thoughts, and rash-embraced  
despair,

And shudd'ring fear and green-eyed jealousy.  
O love, be moderate, allay thy ecstasy,  
In measure rein thy joy, scant this excess ;  
I feel too much thy blessing, make it less,  
For fear I surfeit !

*Bass.* What find I here ?

[Opening the leaden casket.

Fair Portia's counterfeit† ! What demi-god  
Hath come so near creation ? Move these eyes—  
Or whether, riding on the balls of mine,  
Seem they in motion ? Here are sever'd lips,  
Parted with sugar breath ; so sweet a bar  
Should sunder such sweet friends : Here in  
her hairs

The painter plays the spider ; and hath woven  
A golden mesh to entrap the hearts of men,  
Faster than gnats in cobwebs : But her eyes,—  
How could he see to do them ! having made one,  
Methinks, it should have power to steal both his,  
And leave itself unfurnish'd : Yet look, how far  
The substance of my praise doth wrong this  
In underprizing it, so far this shadow [shadow  
Doth limp behind the substance.—Here's the  
scroll,

The continent and summary of my fortune.

*You that choose not by the view,  
Chance as fair and choose as true !*

*Since this fortune falls to you,*

*Be content and seek no new.*

*If you be well pleas'd with this,*

*And hold your fortune for your bliss*

*Turn you where your lady is,*

*And claim her with a loving kiss.*

A gentle scroll ;—Fair lady, by your leave ;

[Kissing her.

I come by note, to give, and to receive.

Like one of two contending in a prize, [eyes,  
That thinks he hath done well in people's  
Hearing applause, and universal shout,  
Giddy in spirit, still gazing, in a doubt

\* Dignity of mien.

† Love.

‡ Winning favour.

§ Curied.

|| Treacherous

¶ Likeness, portrait.

Whether those peals of praise be his or no ;  
So, thrice fair lady, stand I, even so ;  
As doubtful whether what I see be true,  
Until confirm'd, sign'd, ratified by you. [stand,

*Por.* You see me, lord Bassanio, where I  
Such as I am : though, for myself alone,  
I would not be ambitious in my wish,  
To wish myself much better ; yet, for you,  
I would be trebled twenty times myself ;  
A thousand times more fair, ten thousand times  
More rich ;

That only to stand high on your account,  
I might in virtues, beauties, livings, friends,  
Exceed account : but the full sum of me  
Is sum of something ; which, to term in gross,  
Is an unlesson'd girl, unschoold, unpractised :  
Happy in this, she is not yet so old  
But she may learn ; and happier than this,  
She is not bred so dull but she can learn ;  
Happiest of all, is, that her gentle spirit  
Commits itself to yours to be directed,  
As from her lord, her governor, her king.

Myself, and what is mine, to you, and yours  
Is now converted : but now I was the lord  
Of this fair mansion, master of my servants,  
Queen o'er myself ; and even now, but now,  
This house, these servants, and this same myself,  
Are yours, my lord ; I give them with this ring ;  
Which when you part from, lose, or give away,  
Let it presage the ruin of your love,  
And be my vantage to exclaim on you. [words,

*Bass.* Madam, you have bereft me of all :  
Only my blood speaks to you in my veins :  
And there is such confusion in my powers,  
As, after some oration fairly spoke  
By a beloved prince, there doth appear  
Among the buzzing pleased multitude ;  
Where every something, being blent \* together,  
Turns to a wild of nothing, save of joy,  
Express'd, and not express'd : But when this  
ring [hence ;  
Parts from this finger, then parts life from  
O, then be bold to say, Bassanio's dead.

*Ner.* My lord and lady, it is now our time,  
That have stood by, and seen our wishes  
prosper, [lady !

To cry, good joy ; Good joy, my lord, and  
*Gra.* My lord Bassanio, and my gentle lady,  
I wish you all the joy that you can wish ;  
For, I am sure, you can wish none from me :  
And, when your honours mean to solemnize  
The bargain of your faith, I do beseech you,  
Even at that time I may be married too.

*Bass.* With all my heart, so thou canst get  
a wife. [me one.

*Gra.* I thank your lordship ; you have got  
My eyes, my lord, can look as swift as yours :  
You saw the mistress, I beheld the maid ;  
You loved, I loved ; for intermission  
No more pertains to me, my lord, than you.  
Your fortune stood upon the caskets there ;  
And so did mine too, as the matter falls :  
For wooing here, until I sweat again ;  
And swearing, till my very roof was dry  
With oaths of love : at last, — if promise last, —  
I got a promise of this fair one here,

To have her love, provided that your fortune  
Achieved her mistress.

*Por.* Is this true, Nerissa ?

*Ner.* Madam, it is, so you stand pleased  
withal. [faith ?

*Bass.* And do you, Gratiano, mean good

*Gra.* Yes, 'faith, my lord. [your marriage.

*Bass.* Our feast shall be much honour'd in  
*Gra.* We'd play with them, the first boy  
for a thousand ducats.

*Ner.* What, and stake down ?

*Gra.* No ; we shall ne'er win at that sport,  
and stake down. —

But who comes here ? Lorenzo, and his infidel ?  
What, my old Venetian friend, Salerio ?

*Enter LORENZO, JESSICA, and SALERIO.*

*Bass.* Lorenzo, and Salerio, welcome hither ;

If that the youth of my new interest here  
Have power to bid you welcome : — By your  
I bid my very friends and countrymen, [leave,  
Sweet Portia, welcome.

*Por.* So do I, my lord ;

They are entirely welcome. [my lord,

*Lor.* I thank your honour : — For my part,  
My purpose was not to have seen you here ;  
But meeting with Salerio by the way,  
He did entreat me, past all saying nay,  
To come with him along.

*Sal.* I did, my lord,

And I have reason for it. Signior Antonio  
Commends him to you.

[Gives *BASSANIO* a letter.

*Bass.* Ere I open his letter,

I pray you, tell me how my good friend doth.

*Sal.* Not sick, my lord, unless it be in  
mind ;

Nor well, unless in mind : his letter there  
Will show you his estate.

*Gra.* Nerissa, cheer you' stranger ; bid her  
welcome. [Venice ?

Your hand, Salerio ; What's the news from  
How doth that royal merchant, good Antonio ?  
I know, he will be glad of our success ;  
We are the Jasons, we have won the fleece.

*Sal.* 'Would you had won the fleece that  
he hath lost ! [yon' same paper,

*Por.* There are some shrewd contents in  
That steal the colour from Bassanio's cheek :  
Some dear friend dead ; else nothing in the  
Could turn so much the constitution [world  
Of any constant man. What, worse and worse ? —  
With leave, Bassanio ; I am half yourself.  
And I must freely have the half of any thing  
That this same paper brings you.

*Bass.* O sweet Portia,

Here are a few of the unpleasant words,  
That ever blotted paper ! Gentle lady,

When I did first impart my love to you,

I freely told you, all the wealth I had

Ran in my veins, I was a gentleman ;

And then I told you true : and yet, dear lady,

Raving myself at nothing, you shall see

How much I was a braggart : When I told you

My state was nothing, I should then have told  
you

That I was worse than nothing ; for, indeed,



I have engaged myself to a dear friend,  
Engag'd my friend to his mere enemy,  
To feed my means. Here is a letter, lady;  
The paper as the body of my friend,  
And every word in it a gaping wound,  
Issuing life-blood.—But is it true, Salerio?  
Have all his ventures fail'd? What, not one hit?  
From Tripolis, from Mexico, and England,  
From Lisbon, Barbary, and India?  
And not one vessel 'scape the dreadful touch  
Of merchant-marring rocks?

*Sale.* Not one, my lord.  
Besides, it should appear, that if he had  
The present money to discharge the Jew,  
He would not take it: Never did I know  
A creature, that did bear the shape of man,  
So keen and greedy to confound a man:  
He plies the duke at morning, and at night;  
And doth impeach the freedom of the state,  
If they deny him justice: twenty merchants,  
The duke himself, and the magnificoes  
Of greatest port, have all persuaded with him;  
But none can drive him from the envious plea  
Of forfeiture, of justice, and his bond.

*Jes.* When I was with him, I have heard  
him swear,

To Tubal, and to Chus, his countrymen,  
That he would rather have Antonio's flesh,  
Than twenty times the value of the sum  
That he did owe him: and I know, my lord,  
If law, authority, and power deny not,  
It will go hard with poor Antonio.

*Por.* Is it your dear friend, that is thus in  
trouble? [man,

*Bass.* The dearest friend to me, the kindest  
The best condition'd and unwearied spirit  
In doing courtesies; and one in whom  
The ancient Roman honour more appears,  
Than any that draws breath in Italy.

*Por.* What sum owes he the Jew?

*Bass.* For me, three thousand ducats.

*Por.* What, no more?

Pay him six thousand, and deface the bond;  
Double six thousand, and then treble that,  
Before a friend of this description  
Shall lose a hair through Bassanio's fault.  
First, go with me to church, and call me wife:  
And then away to Venice to your friend;  
For never shall you lie by Portia's side  
With an unquiet soul. You shall have gold  
To pay the petty debt twenty times over;  
When it is paid, bring your true friend along:  
My maid Nerissa, and myself, mean time,  
Will live as maids and widows. Come, away;  
For you shall hence upon your wedding-day:  
Bid your friends welcome, show a merry  
cheer; [dear.—

Since you are dear bought, I will love you  
But let me hear the letter of your friend.

*Bass.* [Reads.] *Sweet Bassanio, my ships  
have all miscarried, my creditors grow  
cruel, my estate is very low, my bond to  
the Jew is forfeit; and since, in paying it,  
it is impossible I should live, all debts are  
cleared between you and I, if I might but  
see you at my death: notwithstanding, use*

*your pleasure: if your love do not per-  
suade you to come, let not my letter.*

*Por.* O love, despatch all business, and be  
gone. [away,

*Bass.* Since I have your good leave to go  
I will make haste: but, till I come again,  
No bed shall e'er be guilty of my stay,  
No rest be interposer 'twixt us twain.

[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III. Venice. A Street.

*Enter SHYLOCK, SALANIO, ANTONIO, and  
Gaoler.*

*Shy.* Gaoler, look to him;—Tell not me of  
mercy;—

This is the fool that lent out money gratis;—  
Gaoler, look to him.

*Ant.* Hear me yet, good Shylock.

*Shy.* I'll have my bond; speak not against  
my bond;

I have sworn an oath, that I will have my  
bond: [cause:

Thou call'dst me dog, before thou hadst a  
But, since I am a dog, beware my fangs:  
The duke shall grant me justice.—I do wonder,  
Thou naughty gaoler, that thou art so fond  
To come abroad with him at his request.

*Ant.* I pray thee, hear me speak.

*Shy.* I'll have my bond; I will not hear  
thee speak: [more.

I'll have my bond; and therefore speak no  
I'll not be made a soft and dull-eyed fool,  
To shake the head, relent, and sigh, and yield  
To christian intercessors. Follow not;  
I'll have no speaking; I will have my bond.

[*Exit SHYLOCK.*

*Salan.* It is the most impenetrable cur,  
That ever kept with men.

*Ant.* Let him alone;

I'll follow him no more with bootless prayers.  
He seeks my life; his reason well I know;  
I oft deliver'd from his forfeitures  
Many that have at times made moan to me;  
Therefore he hates me.

*Salan.* I am sure, the duke  
Will never grant this forfeiture to hold. [law;

*Ant.* The duke cannot deny the course of  
For the commodity that strangers have  
With us in Venice, if it be denied,  
Will much impeach the justice of the state;  
Since that the trade and profit of the city  
Consisteth of all nations. Therefore, go:  
These griefs and losses have so 'bated me,  
That I shall hardly spare a pound of flesh  
To-morrow to my bloody creditor.—

Weil, gaoler, on:—Pray God, Bassanio come  
To see me pay his debt, and then I care not!

[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE IV. Belmont. A Room in Portia's House.

*Enter PORTIA, NERISSA, LORENZO, JESSICA,  
and BALTHAZAR.*

*Lor.* Madam, although I speak it in your  
presence.

You have a noble and a true conceiv

Of god-like amity; which appears most strongly

In bearing thus the absence of your lord.  
But, if you knew to whom you show this ho-  
How true a gentleman you send relief, [nour,  
How dear a lover of my lord your husband,  
I know, you would be prouder of the work,  
Than customary bounty can enforce you.

*Por.* I never did repent for doing good,  
Nor shall not now: for in companions  
That do converse and waste the time together,  
Whose souls do bear an equal yoke of love,  
There must be needs a like proportion  
Of lineaments, of manners, and of spirit;  
Which makes me think, that this Antonio,  
Being the bosom lover of my lord,  
Must needs be like my lord: If it be so,  
How little is the cost I have bestow'd,  
In purchasing the semblance of my soul  
From out the state of hellish cruelty?

This comes too near the praising of myself;  
Therefore, no more of it: hear other things.—  
*Lorenzo*, I commit into your hands  
The husbandry and manage of my house,  
Until my lord's return: for mine own part,  
I have toward heaven breath'd a secret vow,  
To live in prayer and contemplation,  
Only attended by *Nerissa* here,  
Until her husband and my lord's return:  
There is a monastery two miles off.  
And there we will abide. I do desire you,  
Not to deny this imposition;  
The which my love, and some necessity,  
Now lays upon you.

*Lor.* Madam, with all my heart;  
I shall obey you in all fair commands.

*Por.* My people do already know my mind,  
And will acknowledge you and *Jessica*  
In place of lord Bassanio and myself.  
So fare you well, till we shall meet again.

*Lor.* Fair thoughts, and happy hours, attend  
on you.

*Jes.* I wish your ladyship all heart's content.  
*Por.* I thank you for your wish, and am well  
pleased

To wish it back on you: fare you well, *Jes-  
sica.* [*Exeunt Jes. and Lor.*

Now, *Balthazar*,  
As I have ever found thee honest, true,  
So let me find thee still: Take this same letter,  
And use thou all the endeavour of a man,  
In speed to Padua; see thou render this  
Into my cousin's hand, doctor Bellario;  
And, look, what notes and garments he doth  
give thee,  
Bring them, I pray thee, with imagined speed  
Unto the traject, to the common ferry  
Which trades to Venice:—waste no time in  
words,

But get thee gone: I shall be there before thee.  
*Balth.* Madam, I go with all convenient  
speed. [*Exit.*

*Por.* Come on, *Nerissa*; I have work in  
hand, [bands,  
That you yet know not of: we'll see our hus-  
band they think of us.

*Ner.* Shall they see us?

*Por.* They shall, *Nerissa*; but in such a  
habit,

That they shall think we are accomplished  
With what we lack. I'll hold thee any wager,  
When we are both accounted like young men,  
I'll prove the prettier fellow of the two,  
And wear my dagger with a braver grace;  
And speak, between the change of man and boy,  
With a reed voice; and turn two mincing steps  
Into a manly stride; and speak of frays,  
Like a fine bragging youth: and tell quaint lies,  
How honourable ladies sought my love,  
Which I denying, they fell sick and died;  
I could not do with all:—then I'll repent,  
And wish, for all that, that I had not kill'd  
And twenty of these puny lies I'll tell, [them:  
That men shall swear, I have discontinued  
school

Above a twelvemonth:—I have within my  
A thousand raw tricks of these bragging Jacks,  
Which I will practise.

*Ner.* Why, shall we turn to men?

*Por.* Fie! what a question's that,  
If thou wert wear a lewd interpreter?  
But come, I'll tell thee all my whole device  
When I am in my coach, which stays for us  
At the park gate; and therefore haste away,  
For we must measure twenty miles to day.

[*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE V. The same. A Garden.

*Enter LAUNCELOT and JESSICA.*

*Laun.* Yes, truly:—for, look you, the sins  
of the father are to be laid upon the children;  
therefore, I promise you, I fear you. I was  
always plain with you, and so now I speak  
my agitation of the matter: Therefore, be of  
good cheer; for, truly, I think, you are damn'd.  
There is but one hope in it that can do you  
any good; and that is but a kind of bastard  
hope neither.

*Jes.* And what hope is that, I pray thee?

*Laun.* Marry, you may partly hope that  
your father got you not, that you are not the  
Jew's daughter.

*Jes.* That were a kind of bastard hope, in-  
deed; so the sins of my mother should be  
visited upon me

*Laun.* Truly, then I fear you are damn'd  
both by father and mother: thus when I shew  
*Scylla*, your father, I fall into *Charybdis*, your  
mother: well, you are gone both ways.

*Jes.* I shall be saved by my husband; he  
hath made me a Christian.

*Laun.* Truly, the more to blame he: we  
were Christians enough before; e'en as many  
as could well live, one by another: This mak-  
ing of Christians will raise the price of hogs;  
if we grow all to be pork-eaters, we shall not  
shortly have a rasher on the coals for money.

*Enter LORENZO.*

*Jes.* I'll tell my husband, *Launcelot*, what  
you say; here he comes.

*Lor.* I shall grow jealous of you shortly,  
*Launcelot*, if you thus get my wife into corners.

*Jes.* Nay, you need not fear us, *Lorenzo*;  
*Launcelot* and I are out: he tells me flatly,

there is no mercy for me in heaven, because I am a Jew's daughter: and he says, you are no good member of the commonwealth; for, in converting Jews to Christians, you raise the price of pork.

*Lor.* I shall answer that better to the commonwealth, than you can the getting up of the negro's belly: the Moor is with child by you, Launcelot.

*Laun.* It is much, that the Moor should be more than reason: but if she be less than an honest woman, she is, indeed, more than I took her for.

*Lor.* How every fool can play upon the word! I think, the best grace of wit will shortly turn into silence; and discourse grow commendable in none only but parrots.—Go in, sirrah; bid them prepare for dinner.

*Laun.* That is done, sir; they have all stomachs.

*Lor.* Goodly lord, what a wit-snapper are you! then bid them prepare dinner.

*Laun.* That is done too, sir; only, cover is the word.

*Lor.* Will you cover then, sir?

*Laun.* Not so, sir, neither; I know my duty.

*Lor.* Yet more quarrelling with occasion! Will thou show the whole wealth of thy wit in an instant? I pray thee, understand a plain man in his plain meaning: go to thy fellows; bid them cover the table serve in the meat, and we will come in to dinner.

*Laun.* For the table, sir it shall be served in; for the meat, sir, it shall be covered; for

your coming in to dinner, sir, why, let it be as humours and conceits shall govern. •

[Exit LAUN.]

*Lor.* O dear discretion, how his words are The fool hath plant'd in his memory [suited] An army of good words: And I do know A many fools, that stand in better place, Garnish'd like him, that for a tricky word Defy the matter. How cheer'st thou, Jessica? And now, good sweet, say thy opinion, How dost thou like the lord Bassanio's wife?

*Jes.* Past all expressing: It is very meet, The lord Bassanio live an upright life; For, having such a blessing in his lady, He finds the joys of heaven here on earth; And, if on earth he do not mean it, it Is reason he should never come to heaven. Why, if two gods should play some heavenly match,

And on the wager lay two earthly women, And Portia one; there must be something else Pawn'd with the other; for the poor rude Hath not her fellow. [world]

*Lor.* Even such a husband

Hast thou of me, as she is for a wife.

*Jes.* Nay, but ask my opinion too of that.

*Lor.* I will anon; first, let us go to dinner.

*Jes.* Nay, let me praise you, while I have a stomach. [talk;]

*Lor.* No, pray thee, let it serve for table-Then, howsoever thou speak'st, 'mong other I shall digest it. [things]

*Jes.* Well, I'll set you forth.

[Exit.]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. Venice. A Court of Justice.

Enter the Duke, the Magnificoes; ANTONIO, BASSANIO, GRATIANO, SALARINO, SALANIO, and others.

*Duke.* What, is Antonio here?

*Ant.* Ready, so please your grace.

*Duke.* I am sorry for thee; thou art come to answer

A stony adversary, an inhuman wretch  
Uncapable of pity, void and empty  
From any dram of mercy.

*Ant.* I have heard,

Your grace hath ta'en great pains to qualify  
His rigorous course; but since he stands obdurate  
And that no lawful means can carry me [rate,  
Out of his envy's reach, I do oppose  
My patience to his fury; and am arm'd  
To suffer, with a quietness of spirit,  
The very tyranny and rage of his.

*Duke.* Go one, and call the Jew into the court. [my lord,

*Salan.* He's ready at the door: he comes,  
Enter SHYLOCK.

*Duke.* Make room, and let him stand before  
our face.—

Shylock, the world thinks, and I think so too,

That thou but lead'st this fashion of thy malice  
To the last hour of act; and then, 'tis thought,  
Thou'lt show thy mercy, and remorse, more  
strange

Than is thy strange apparent cruelty:  
And where's thou now exact'st the penalty,  
(Which is a pound of this poor merchant's flesh,)  
Thou wilt not only lose the forfeiture,  
But touch'd with human gentleness and love,  
Forgive a moiety of the principal;  
Glancing an eye of pity on his losses,  
That have of late so huddled on his back;  
Enough to press a royal merchant down,  
And pluck commiseration of his state  
From brassy bosoms, and rough hearts of flint,  
From stubborn Turks, and Tartars, never train'd  
To offices of tender courtesy.

We all expect a gentle answer, Jew.

*Shy.* I have possess'd your grace of what I  
purpose;

And by our holy Sabbath have I sworn,  
To have the due and forfeit of my bond:  
If you deny it, let the danger light  
Upon your charter, and your city's freedom.  
You'll ask me, why I rather choose to have  
A weight of carrion flesh, than to receive  
Three thousand ducats: I'll not answer that



Put, say, it is my humour\*; Is it answer'd? What if my house be troubled with a rat, And I be pleas'd to give ten thousand ducats To have it baned? What are you answer'd yet? Some men there are, love not a gaping pig; Some, that are mad, if they behold a cat; And others, when the bag pipe sings i' the nose, Cannot contain their urine; For affection†, Mistress of passion, sways it to the mood Of what it likes, or loaths: Now, for your answer:

As there is no firm reason to be render'd, Why he cannot abide a gaping‡ pig; Why he, a harmless necessary cat; Why he, a swollen bag-pipe; but of force Must yield to such inevitable shame, As to offend, himself being offended; So can I give no reason, nor I will not, More than a lodg'd hate, and a certain loathing, I bear Antonio, that I follow thus

A losing suit against him. Are you answer'd? *Bass.* This is no answer, thou unfeeling man, To excuse the current of thy cruelty.

*Shy.* I am not bound to please thee with my answer. [not love?

*Bass.* Do all men kill the things they do *Shy.* Hates any man the thing he would not kill?

*Bass.* Every offence is not a hate at first.

*Shy.* What, wouldst thou have a serpent sting thee twice? [the Jew:

*Ant.* I pray you, think you question‡ with You may as well go stand upon the beach, And bid the main flood bate his usual height; You may as well use question with the wolf, Why he hath made the ewe bleat for the lamb; You may as well forbid the mountain pines To wag their high tops, and to make no noise, When they are fretted with the gusts of heaven; You may as well do any thing most hard, As seek to soften that (than which what's harder?) [you,

His Jewish heart:—Therefore, I do beseech Make no more offers, use no further means, But, with all brief and plain conveniency, Let me have judgment, and the Jew his will.

*Bass.* For thy three thousand ducats here is six.

*Shy.* If every ducat in six thousand ducats Were in six parts, and every part a ducat, I would not draw them, I would have my bond.

\* *Duke.* How shalt thou hope for mercy, rendering none? [wrong?

*Shy.* What judgment shall I dread, doing no You have among you many a purchased slave, Which, like your asses, and your dogs, and You use in abject and in slavish parts, [mules, Because you bought them:—Shall I say to you, Let them be free, marry them to your heirs? Why sweat they under burdens? let their beds Be made as soft as yours, and let their palates Be season'd with such viands? You will answer, The slaves are ours:—So do I answer you: The pound of flesh, which I demand of him, Is dearly bought, is mine, and I will have it: If you deny me, fie upon your law!

There is no force in the decrees of Venice: I stand for judgment: answer; shall I have it?

*Duke.* Upon my power, I may dismiss thee Unless Bellario, a learned doctor, [court, Whom I have sent for to determine this, Come here to-day.

*Salar.* My lord, here stays without A messenger with letters from the doctor, New come from Padua. [ger.

*Duke.* Bring us the letters; Call the messenger. *Bass.* Good cheer, Antonio! What, man? courage yet! [all,

The Jew shall have my flesh, blood, bones, and Ere thou shalt lose for me one drop of blood.

*Ant.* I am a tainted wether of the flock, Meetest for death; the weakest kind of fruit Drops earliest to the ground, and so let me: You cannot better be employ'd, Bassanio, Than to live still, and write mine epitaph.

*Enter NERISSA, dressed like a lawyer's clerk.*

*Duke.* Came you from Padua, from Bellario? *Ner.* From both, my lord: Bellario greets your grace. [Presents a letter.

*Bass.* Why dost thou whet thy knife so earnestly? [rupt there.

*Shy.* To cut the forfeiture from that bankrupt. *Gra.* Not on thy sole, but on thy soul, harsh Jew, [can,

Thou mak'st thy knife keen: but no metal No, not the hangman's axe, bear half the keenness [thee?

Of thy sharp envy. Can no prayers pierce *Shy.* No, none that thou hast wit enough to make.

*Gra.* O, be thou damn'd, inexorable dog! And for thy life let justice be accus'd.

Thou almost mak'st me waver in my faith To hold opinion with Pythagoras, That souls of animals infuse themselves Into the trunks of men: thy currish spirit, Govern'd a wolf, who, hang'd for human slaughter,

Even from the gallows did his fell soul fleet, And whilst thou lay'st in thy unhallow'd dam, Infused itself in thee; for thy desires

Are wolfish, bloody, starved, and ravenous. *Shy.* Till thou canst rail the seal from off my bond,

Thou but offend'st thy lungs to speak so loud: Repair thy wit, good youth, or it will fall To careless ruin.—I stand here for law. [mend

*Duke.* This letter from Bellario doth contain A young and learned doctor to our court:— Where is he?

*Ner.* He attendeth here hard by, To know your answer, whether you'll admit him. [four of you,

*Duke.* With all my heart:—some three or Go give him courteous conduct to this place.— Mean time, the court shall hear Bellario's letter.

[Clerk reads.] Your grace shall understand, that, at the receipt of your letter I am very sick: but in the instant, but your messenger came, in loving visitation

\* Particular fancy.

† Prejudice.

‡ Crying.

§ Converse.

|| Malice.

*was with me a young doctor of Rome, his name is Balthasar: I acquainted him with the cause in controversy between the Jew and Antonio the merchant: we turned o'er many books together: he is furnish'd with my opinion; which, better'd with his own learning, (the greatness whereof I cannot enough commend,) comes with him, at my importunity, to fill up your grace's request in my stead. I beseech you, let his lack of years be no impediment to let him lack a reverend estimation; for I never knew so young a body with so old a head. I leave him to your gracious acceptance, whose trial shall better publish his commendation.*

*Duke.* You hear the learn'd Bellario, what he writes:

And here, I take it, is the doctor come.—

*Enter PORTIA, dressed like a doctor of laws.*  
Give me your hand: Came you from old Bel-

*Por.* I did, my lord. [lario?

*Duke.* You are welcome: take your place. Are you acquainted with the difference

That holds this present question in the court?

*Por.* I am informed thoroughly of the cause.

Which is the merchant here, and which the Jew?

*Duke.* Antonio and old Shylock, both stand

*Por.* Is your name Shylock? [forth.

*Shy.* Shylock is my name.

*Por.* Of a strange nature is the suit you follow;

Yet in such rule, that the Venetian law

Cannot impugn \* you, as you do proceed.—

You stand within his danger †, do you not?

[To ANTONIO.

*Ant.* Ay, so he says.

*Por.* Do you confess the bond?

*Ant.* I do.

*Por.* Then must the Jew be merciful.

*Shy.* On what compulsion must I tell me that.

*Por.* The quality of mercy is not strain'd;

It droppeth, as the gentle rain from heaven

Upon the place beneath: it is twice bless'd;

It blesseth him that gives, and him that takes:

'Tis mightiest in the mightiest; it becomes

The throned monarch better than his crown:

His sceptre shows the force of temporal power,

The attribute to awe and majesty,

Wherein doth sit the dread and fear of kings;

But mercy is above this sceptred sway,

It is enthroned in the hearts of kings,

It is an attribute to God himself;

And earthly power doth then show likest God's,

When mercy seasons justice. Therefore, Jew,

Though justice be thy plea, consider this,—

That, in the course of justice, none of us

Should see salvation: we do pray for mercy;

And that same prayer doth teach us all to render

The deeds of mercy. I have spoke thus much,

To mitigate the justice of thy plea;

Which if thou follow, this strict court of Venice

Must needs give sentence 'gainst the merchant

there.

*Shy.* My deeds upon my head! I crave the law,  
The penalty and forfeit of my bond.

*Por.* Is he not able to discharge the money?

\* Oppose.

*Bass.* Yes, here I tender it for him in the court; Yea, twice the sum: if that will not suffice, I will be bound to pay it ten times o'er, On forfeit of my hands, my head, my heart: If this will not suffice, it must appear [you, That malice bears down truth. And I beseech Wrest once the law to your authority: To do a great right, do a little wrong; And curb this cruel devil of his will.

*Por.* It must not be; there is no power in Can alter a decree established: [Venice

'Twill be recorded for a precedent;

And many an error, by the same example,

Will rush into the state: it cannot be.

*Shy.* A Daniel come to judgment! yea, a

Daniel.—

O wise young judge, how do I honour thee!

*Por.* I pray you, let me look upon the bond.

*Shy.* Here 'tis, most reverend doctor, here it is.

*Por.* Shylock, there's thrice thy money offer'd thee. [heaven:

*Shy.* An oath, an oath, I have an oath in

Shall I lay perjury upon my soul?

No, not for Venice.

*Por.* Why, this bond is forfeit

And lawfully by this the Jew may claim

A pound of flesh, to be by him cut off

Nearest the merchant's heart:—Be merciful;

Take thrice thy money; bid me tear the bond.

*Shy.* When it is paid according to the tenour.—

It doth appear, you are a worthy judge;

You know the law, your exposition [law

Hath been most sound: I charge you by the

Whereof you are a well-deserving pillar,

Proceed to judgment: by my soul I swear,

There is no power in the tongue of man

To alter me: I stay here on my bond.

*Ant.* Most heartily I do beseech the court

To give the judgment.

*Por.* Why then, thus it is.

You must prepare your bosom for his knife:

*Shy.* O noble judge! O excellent young man!

*Por.* For the intent and purpose of the law

Hath full relation to the penalty,

Which here appeareth due upon the bond.

*Shy.* 'Tis very true: O wise and upright judge!

How much more elder art thou than thy looks!

*Por.* Therefore, lay bare your bosom.

*Shy.* Ay, his breast:

So says the bond:—Doth it not, noble judge?—

Nearest his heart, those are the very words.

*Por.* It is so. Are there balance here, to

The flesh. [weigh

*Shy.* I have them ready. [your charge,

*Por.* Have by some surgeon, Shylock, on

To stop his wounds, lest he do bleed to death.

*Shy.* Is it so nominated in the bond?

*Por.* It is not so express'd; But what of that?

'Twere good you do so much for charity.

*Shy.* I cannot find it; 'tis not in the bond.

*Por.* Come, merchant, have you any thing

to say? [par'd.—

*Ant.* But little; I am arm'd, and well pre-

Give me your hand, Bassanio; fare you well!

Grieve not that I am fallen to this for you;

For herein fortune shows herself more kind

† Reach or control.

Than is her custom: it is still her use,  
To let the wretched man out-live his wealth,  
To view with hollow eye, and wrinkled brow,  
An age of poverty; from which lingering pe-  
Of such a misery doth she cut me off. [hance  
Commend me to your honourable wife:  
Tell her the process of Antonio's end,  
Say, how I lov'd you, speak me fair in death;  
And, when the tale is told, bid her be judge,  
Whether Bassanio had not once a love.  
Repent not you that you shall lose your friend,  
And he repents not that he pays your debt;  
For, if the Jew do cut but deep enough,  
I'll pay it instantly with all my heart.

*Bass.* Antonio, I am married to a wife,  
Which is as dear to me as life itself;  
But life itself, my wife, and all the world,  
Are not with me esteem'd above thy life:  
I would lose all, ay, sacrifice them all  
Here to this devil, to deliver you. [for that,

*Por.* Your wife would give you little thanks  
If she were by, to hear you make the offer.

*Gra.* I have a wife, whom, I protest, I love;  
I would she were in heaven, so she could  
Entreat some power to change this curish Jew.

*Ner.* 'Tis well you offer it behind her back;  
The wish would make else an unquiet house.

*Shy.* These be the christian husbands: I  
have a daughter;

'Would, any of the stock of Barabbas  
Had been her husband rather than a Christian!

[*Aside.*  
We trifle time; I pray thee, pursue sentence.

*Por.* A pound of that same merchant's  
flesh is thine;

The court awards it, and the law doth give it.

*Shy.* Most rightful judge! [his breast;

*Por.* And you must cut this flesh from off  
The law allows it, and the court awards it.

*Shy.* Most learned judge!—A sentence;  
come, prepare. [else,—

*Por.* Tarry a little;—there is something  
This bond doth give thee here no jot of blood;

The words expressly are, a pound of flesh:  
Take then thy bond, take thou thy pound of  
But, in the cutting it, if thou dost shed [flesh;

One drop of Christian blood, thy lands and  
Are, by the laws of Venice, confiscate [goods  
Unto the state of Venice. [learned judge!

*Gra.* O upright judge!—Mark, Jew;—O

*Shy.* Is that the law?

*Por.* Thyself shalt see the act:  
For, as thou urgest justice, be assur'd,

Thou shalt have justice, more than thou de-  
sirest. [learned judge!

*Gra.* O learned judge!—Mark, Jew;—a

*Shy.* I take this offer then;—pay the bond  
And let the Christian go. [thrice,

*Bass.* Here is the money.

*Por.* Soft; [haste;—  
The Jew shall have all justice;—soft!—no  
He shall have nothing but the penalty.

*Gra.* O Jew! an upright judge, a learned  
judge! [flesh.

*Por.* Therefore, prepare thee to cut off the  
Shed thou no blood; nor cut thou less, nor  
more,

But just a pound of flesh: if thou takest more,

Or less, than a just pound,—be it but so much  
As makes it light or heavy, in the substance,  
Or the division of the twentieth part  
Of one poor scruple; nay, if the scale do turn  
But in the estimation of a hair,—

Thou diest, and all thy goods are confiscate.  
*Gra.* A second Daniel, a Daniel, Jew!

Now, infidel, I have thee on the hip.

*Por.* Why doth the Jew pause? take thy  
forfeiture.

*Shy.* Give me my principal, and let me go.  
*Bass.* I have it ready for thee; here it is.

*Por.* He hath refus'd it in the open court;  
He shall have merely justice, and his bond.

*Gra.* A Daniel, still say I; a second Daniel!—  
I thank thee, Jew, for teaching me that word.

*Shy.* Shall I not have barely my principal?

*Por.* Thou shalt have nothing but the for-  
To be so taken at thy peril, Jew. [feiture,

*Shy.* Why then the devil give him good of  
I'll stay no longer question. [it!

*Por.* Tarry, Jew;  
The law hath yet another hold on you.

It is enacted in the laws of Venice,—  
If it be prov'd against an alien,

That by direct, or indirect attempts,  
He seek the life of any citizen,

The party, 'gainst the which he doth contrive,  
Shall seize one half his goods; the other half

Comes to the privy coffer of the state;  
And the offender's life lies in the mercy

Of the duke only, 'gainst all other voice.  
In which predicament, I say, thou stand'st:

For it appears by manifest proceeding,  
That, indirectly, and directly too,

Thou hast contriv'd against the very life  
Of the defendant; and thou hast incur'd  
The danger formerly by me rehears'd.

Down, therefore, and beg mercy of the duke.

*Gra.* Beg, that thou may'st have leave to  
hang thyself:

And yet, thy wealth being forfeit to the state,  
Thou hast not left the value of a cord;

Therefore, thou must be hang'd at the state's  
charge. [our spirit,

*Duke.* That thou shalt see the difference of  
I pardon thee thy life before thou ask it:

For half thy wealth, it is Antonio's;  
The other half comes to the general state,

Which humbleness may drive unto a fine.

*Por.* Ay, for the state; not for Antonio.

*Shy.* Nay, take my life and all, pardon not  
that: [prop

You take my house, when you do take the  
That doth sustain my house; you take my life,

When you do take the means whereby I live.

*Por.* What mercy can you render him, An-  
tonio?

*Gra.* A halter gratis; nothing else; for God's  
sake. [the court,

*Ant.* So please my lord the duke, and all  
To quit the fine for one half of his goods;

I am content, so he will let me have  
The other half in use,—to render it,

Upon his death, unto the gentleman  
That lately stole his daughter: [favour,  
Two things provided more,—That, for this  
He presently become a Christian;



The other, that he do record a gift,  
Here in the court, of all he dies possess'd,  
Unto his son Lorenzo, and his daughter.

*Duke.* He shall do this; or else I do recant  
The pardon, that I late pronounced here.

*Por.* Art thou contented, Jew, what dost

*Shy.* I am content. [thou say?]

*Por.* Clerk, draw a deed of gift.

*Shy.* I pray you, give me leave to go from  
I am not well; send the deed after me, [hence;  
And I will sign it.

*Duke.* Get thee gone, but do it.

*Gra.* In christening thou shalt have two  
godfathers; [more,  
Had I been judge, thou shouldst have had ten  
To bring thee to the gallows, not the font.

[Exit SHYLOCK.]

*Duke.* Sir, I entreat you home with me to  
dinner. [pardon;

*Por.* I humbly do desire your grace of  
I must away this night toward Padua,  
And it is meet, I presently set forth.

*Duke.* I am sorry, that your leisure serves  
Antonio, gratify this gentleman; [you not.  
For, in my mind, you are much bound to him.

[Exit Duke, Magnificoes, and Train.]

*Bass.* Most worthy gentleman, I and my  
friend,

Have by your wisdom been this day acquitted  
Of grievous penalties; in lieu whereof,  
Three thousand ducats, due unto the Jew,  
We freely cope your courteous pains withal.

*Ant.* And stand indebted, over and above,  
In love and service to you evermore.

*Por.* He is well paid, that is well satisfied;  
And I, delivering you, am satisfied,  
And therein do account myself well paid;  
My mind was never yet more mercenary.  
I pray you, know me, when we meet again;  
I wish you well, and so I take my leave.

*Bass.* Dear sir, of force I must attempt you  
further;

Take some remembrance of us, as a tribute,  
Not as a fee: grant me two things, I pray you,  
Not to deny me, and to pardon me. [yield.

*Por.* You press me far, and therefore I will  
Give me your gloves, I'll wear them for your  
sake; [you:—

And, for your love, I'll take this ring from  
Do not draw back your hand; I'll take no more;  
And you in love shall not deny me this.

*Bass.* This ring, good sir,—alas, it is a trifle;  
I will not shame myself to give you this.

*Por.* I will have nothing else but only this;  
And now, methinks, I have a mind to it.

*Bass.* There's more depends on this, than  
on the value.

The dearest ring in Venice will I give you,  
And find it out by proclamation:  
Only for this, I pray you, pardon me.

*Por.* I see, sir, you are liberal in offers:  
You taught me first to beg; and now, methinks,  
You teach me how a beggar should be answer'd.

*Bass.* Good sir, this ring was given me by  
my wife;

And, when she put it on, she made me vow,  
That I should neither sell, nor give, nor lose it.

*Por.* That 'scuse serves many men to save  
their gifts.

And if your wife be not a mad woman,  
And know how well I have deserved this ring,  
She would not hold out enemy for ever,  
For giving it to me. Well, peace be with you!

[Exit PORTIA and NERISSA.]

*Ant.* My lord Bassanio, let him have the ring;  
Let his deservings, and my love withal,  
Be valued 'gainst your wife's commandment.

*Bass.* Go, Gratiano, run and overtake him,  
Give him the ring; and bring him, if thou canst,  
Unto Antonio's house:—away, make haste.

[Exit GRATIANO.]

Come, you and I will thither presently;  
And in the morning early will we both  
Fly toward Belmont: Come, Antonio. [Exit.]

## SCENE II. The same. A Street.

Enter PORTIA and NERISSA.

*Por.* Inquire the Jew's house out, give  
him this deed,

And let him sign it; we'll away to-night,  
And be a day before our husband's home:  
This deed will be well welcome to Lorenzo.

Enter GRATIANO.

*Gra.* Fair sir, you are well overtaken:  
My lord Bassanio, upon more advice\*,  
Hath sent you here this ring; and doth entreat  
Your company at dinner.

*Por.* That cannot be:  
This ring I do accept most thankfully,  
And so, I pray you, tell him: Furthermore,  
I pray you, show my youth old Shylock's house.

*Gra.* That will I do.

*Ner.* Sir, I would speak with you:—  
I'll see if I can get my husband's ring,

[To PORTIA.]

Which I did make him swear to keep for ever.

*Por.* Thou mayst, I warrant: We shall have  
old swearing,

That they did give the rings away to men;  
But we'll outface them, and outswear them too.  
Away, make haste; thou know'st where I  
will tarry.

*Ner.* Come, good sir, will you show me to  
this house? [Exit.]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. Belmont. Avenue to Portia's House.

Enter LORENZO and JESSICA.

*Lor.* The moon shines bright:—In such a  
night as this,

When the sweet wind did gently kiss the trees,  
And they did make no noise; in such a night,  
Troilus, methinks, mounted the Trojan walls,  
And sigh'd his soul toward the Grecian tents,  
Where Cressid lay that night.

*Jes.* In such a night,  
Did Thisbe fearfully o'ertrip the dew;  
And saw the lion's shadow ere himself,  
And ran dismay'd away.

*Lor.* In such a night,  
Stood Dido with a willow in her hand  
Upon the wild sea-banks, and wav'd her love  
To come again to Carthage.

*Jes.* In such a night,  
Medea gather'd the enchanted herbs  
That did renew old *Æson*.

*Lor.* In such a night,  
Did Jessica steal from the wealthy Jew:  
And with an unthrift love did run from Venice,  
As far as Belmont.

*Jes.* And in such a night,  
Did young Lorenzo swear he lov'd her well;  
Stealing her soul with many vows of faith,  
And ne'er a true one.

*Lor.* And in such a night,  
Did pretty Jessica, like a little shrew,  
Slander her love, and he forgave it her.

*Jes.* I would out-night you, did no body come:  
But, hark, I hear the footing of a man.

*Enter STEPHANO.*

*Lor.* Who comes so fast in silence of the  
*Steph.* A friend. [night]

*Lor.* A friend! what friend? your name, I  
pray you, friend? [sword]

*Steph.* Stephano is my name; and I bring  
My mistress will before the break of day  
Be here at Belmont: she doth stray about  
By holy crosses, where she kneels and prays  
For happy wedlock hours.

*Lor.* Who comes with her?  
*Steph.* None, but a holy hermit, and her  
maid.

I pray you, is my master yet return'd?

*Lor.* He is not, nor we have not heard  
from him.—

But go we in, I pray thee, Jessica,  
And ceremoniously let us prepare  
Some welcome for the mistress of the house.

*Enter LAUNCELOT.*

*Laun.* Solal, solal, wo ha, ho, solal, solal!

*Lor.* Who calls?

*Laun.* Solal! did you see master Lorenzo,  
and mistress Lorenzo! solal, solal!

*Lor.* Leave hollaing, man; here.

*Laun.* Solal where? where?

*Lor.* Here.

*Laun.* Tell him, there's a post come from  
my master, with his horn full of good news;  
my master will be here ere morning. [Exit.]

*Lor.* Sweet soul, let's in, and there expect  
their coming.

And yet no matter;—Why should we go in?  
My friend Stephano, signify, I pray you,  
Within the house, your mistress is at hand;  
And bring your music forth into the air.—

[Exit STEPHANO.]

How sweet the moon-light sleeps upon this  
bank! [sic]

Here will we sit, and let the sounds of mu-  
Creep in our ears; soft stillness, and the  
night,

Become the touches of sweet harmony.

*Sit. Jessica:* Look, how the floor of heaven  
Is thick inlaid with patines \* of bright gold;  
There's not the smallest orb, which thou be-  
hold'st,

But in his motion like an angel sings,  
Still quiring to the young-ey'd cherubims:  
Such harmony is in immortal souls;  
But, whilst this muddy vesture of decay  
Doth grossly close it in, we cannot hear it.—

*Enter Musicians.*

Come, ho, and wake Diana with a hymn;  
With sweetest touches pierce your mistress'  
And draw her home with music. [lear,

*Jes.* I am never merry, when I hear sweet  
music. [Music.]

*Lor.* The reason is, your spirits are atten-  
tive;

For do but note a wild and wanton herd,  
Or race of youthful and unhandled colts  
Fetching mad bounds, bellowing, and neigh-  
ing loud,

Which is the hot condition of their blood;  
If they but hear perchance a trumpet sound  
Or any air of music touch their ears,

You shall perceive them make a mutual stand,  
Their savage eyes turn'd to a modest gaze,  
By the sweet power of music: Therefore,  
the poet

Did feign that Orpheus drew trees, stones,  
and floods; [rage,

Since nought so stockish, hard, and full of  
But music for the time doth change his  
nature:

The man that hath no music in himself,  
Nor is not mov'd with concord of sweet  
sounds,

Is fit for treasons, stratagems, and spoils;  
The motions of his spirit are dull as night,  
And his affections dark as Erebus:

Let no such man be trusted.—Mark the music.  
*En'er PORTIA and NERISSA, at a distance.*

*Por.* That light we see, is burning in my  
hall.

How far that little candle throws his beams!  
So shines a good deed in a naughty world.

*Ner.* When the moon shone, we did not  
see the candle. [less:

*Por.* So doth the greater glory dim the  
A substitute shines brightly as a king,  
Until a king be by; and then his state  
Empties itself, as doth an inland brook  
Into the main of waters. Music! hark!

*Ner.* It is your music, madam, of the  
house.

*Por.* Nothing is good, I see, without re-  
spect; [day.

Methinks, it sounds much sweeter than by

*Ner.* Silence bestows that virtue on it, ma-  
dam. [dark,

*Por.* The crow doth sing as sweetly as the  
When neither is attended; and, I think,  
The nightingale, if she should sing by day,  
When every goose is cackling, would be  
thought

No better a musician than the wren.

\* A small flat dish, used in the administration of the Eucharist.

How many things by season season'd are  
To their right praise, and true perfection!—  
Peace, ho! the moon sleeps with Endymion,  
And would not be awak'd! [*Music ceases.*]

*Lor.* That is the voice,  
Or I am much deceiv'd, of Portia.

*Por.* He knows me, as the blind man knows  
the cuckoo,  
By the bad voice.

*Lor.* Dear lady, welcome home.

*Por.* We have been praying for our husbands' welfare, [*words.*]  
Which speed, we hope, the better for our  
Are they return'd?

*Lor.* Madam, they are not yet;  
But there is come a messenger before,  
To signify their coming.

*Por.* Go in, Nerissa,  
Give order to my servants, that they take  
No note at all of our being absent hence;—  
Nor you, Lorenzo;—Jessica, nor you.

[*A tucket \* sounds.*]

*Lor.* Your husband is at hand, I hear his trumpet:

We are no tell-tales, madam; fear you not.

*Por.* This night, methinks, is but the day-  
light sick,

It looks a little paler; 'tis a day,  
Such as the day is when the sun is hid.

*Enter BASSANIO, ANTONIO, GRATIANO, and  
their Followers.*

*Bass.* We should hold day with the Antipodes,

If you would walk in absence of the sun.

*Por.* Let me give light, but let me not be  
light;

For a light wife doth make a heavy husband,  
And never be Bassanio so for me;

But God sort all!—You are welcome home,  
my lord.

*Bass.* I thank you, madam: give welcome  
to my friend.—

This is the man, this is Antonio,  
To whom I am so infinitely bound.

*Por.* You should in all sense be much  
bound to him,

For, as I hear, he was much bound for you.

*Ant.* No more than I am well acquitted of.

*Por.* Sir, you are very welcome to our  
house:

It must appear in other ways than words,  
Therefore, I scant this breathing courtesy.

[*GRATIANO and NERISSA seem to talk  
apart.*]

*Gra.* By yonder moon, I swear, you do  
me wrong;

In faith, I gave it to the judge's clerk:

Would he were gelt that had it, for my  
part, [*heart.*]

Since you do take it, love, so much at  
*Por.* A quarrel, ho, already? what's the  
matter?

*Gra.* About a hoop of gold, a paltry ring  
That she did give me; whose posy was  
For all the world, like cutler's poetry  
Upon a knife, *Love me, and leave me not.*

*Ner.* What talk you of the posy, or the  
value?

You swore to me, when I did give it you,  
That you would wear it till your hour of  
death; [*grave:*]

And that it should lie with you in your  
Though not for me, yet for your vehement  
oaths, [*kept it.*]

You should have been respective†, and have  
Gave it a judge's clerk!—but well I know,  
The clerk will ne'er wear hair on his face,  
that had it.

*Gra.* He will, an if he live to be a man.

*Ner.* Ay, if a woman live to be a man.

*Gra.* Now, by this hand, I gave it to a  
youth,—

A kind of boy; a little scrubbed boy,  
No higher than thyself, the judge's clerk;  
A prating boy, that begg'd it as a fee;  
I could not for my heart deny it him.

*Por.* You were to blame, I must be plain  
with you,

To part so slightly with your wife's first gift;  
A thing stuck on with oaths upon your finger  
And rivetted so with faith unto your flesh.

I gave my love a ring, and made him swear  
Never to part with it; and here he stands;

I dare be sworn for him, he would not leave it,  
Nor pluck it from his finger, for the wealth

That the world masters. Now, in faith, Gratiano,

You give your wife too unkind a cause of  
An 'twere to me, I should be mad at it.

*Bass.* Why, I were best to cut my left  
hand off, [*Aside.*]

And swear, I lost the ring defending it.

*Gra.* My lord Bassanio gave his ring away  
Unto the judge that begg'd it, and, indeed,

Deserv'd it too; and then the boy, his clerk,  
That took some pains in writing, he begg'd

mine: [*caught*]

And neither man, nor master, would take  
But the two rings.

*Por.* What ring gave you, my lord?  
Not that, I hope, which you received of me.

*Bass.* If I could add a lie unto a fault,  
I would deny it; but you see, my finger

Hath not the ring upon it, it is gone.  
*Por.* Even so void is your false heart of  
truth,

By heaven, I will ne'er come in your bed  
Until I see the ring.

*Ner.* Nor I in yours,  
Till I again see mine.

*Bass.* Sweet Portia,  
If you did know to whom I gave the ring,

If you did know for whom I gave the ring,  
And would conceive for what I gave the ring,

And how unwillingly I left the ring,  
When nought would be accepted but the ring,

You would abate the strength of your dis-  
pleasure. [*ring.*]

*Por.* If you had known the virtue of the  
Or half her worthiness that gave the ring,

Or your own honour to contain the ring,  
You would not then have parted with the ring

\* A flourish on a trumpet.

† Verbal, complimentary form.

‡ Regardful.



What man is there so much unreasonable,  
If you had pleas'd to have defended it  
With any terms of zeal, wanted the modesty  
To urge the thing held as a ceremony?

Nerissa teaches me what to believe;  
I'll die for't, but some woman had the ring.

*Bass.* No, by mine honour, madam, by my  
No woman had it, but a civil doctor, [soul,  
Which did refuse three thousand ducats of  
me, [him,

And begg'd the ring; the which I did deny  
And suffer'd him to go displeas'd away;  
Even he that had held up the very life  
Of my dear friend. What should I say,  
sweet lady?

I was enforc'd to send it after him;  
I was beset with shame and courtesy;  
My honour would not let ingratitude  
So much besmear it: Pardon me, good lady;  
For, by these blessed candles of the night,  
Had you been there, I think, you would have  
begg'd

The ring of me to give the worthy doctor.

*Por.* Let not that doctor e'er come near  
my house:

Since he hath got the jewel that I lov'd,  
And that which you did swear to keep for me,  
I will become as liberal as you:

I'll not deny him any thing I have,  
No, not my body, nor my husband's bed:

Know him I shall, I am well sure of it:

Lie not a night from home; watch me, like  
If you do not, if I be left alone, [Argus:

Now, by mine honour, which is yet my own,  
I'll have that doctor for my bedfellow.

*Ner.* And I his clerk; therefore be well  
advise'd,

How you do leave me to mine own protection.

*Gra.* Well, do you so: let not me take him  
then;

For, if I do, I'll mar the young clerk's pen.

*Ant.* I am the unhappy subject of these  
quarrels.

*Por.* Sir, grieve not you; You are wel-  
come notwithstanding. [wrong;

*Bass.* Portia, forgive me this enforced  
And, in the hearing of these many friends,

I swear to thee, even by thine own fair eyes,  
Wherein I see myself,—

*Por.* Mark you but that!  
In both my eyes he doubly sees himself:

In each eye one:—swear by your double self,  
And there's an oath of credit.

*Bass.* Nay, but hear me:  
Pardon this fault, and by my soul I swear,  
I never more will break an oath with thee.

*Ant.* I once did lend my body for his  
wealth\*;

Which, but for him that had your husband's  
ring, [To PORTIA.

Had quite miscarried: I dare be bound again,  
My soul upon the forfeit, that your lord  
Will never more break faith advisedly.

*Por.* Then you shall be his surety: Give  
him this;

And bid him keep it better than the other.

*Ant.* Here, lord Bassanio; swear to keep  
this ring. [the doctor!

*Bass.* By heaven, it is the same I gave

*Por.* I had it of him: pardon me, Bassanio;  
For by this ring the doctor lay with me.

*Ner.* And pardon me, my gentle Gratiano;  
For that same scrubbed boy, the doctor's  
clerk,

In lieu of this, last night did lie with me.

*Gra.* Why, this is like the mending of  
highways

In summer, where the ways are fair enough:  
What! are we cuckolds, ere we have deserv'd  
it? [amazed:

*Por.* Speak not so grossly. You are all  
Here is a letter, read it at your leisure;

It comes from Padua, from Bellario: [tor;

There you shall find, that Portia was the doc-  
Nerissa there, her clerk: Lorenzo here

Shall witness, I set forth as soon as you,  
And but even now return'd; I have not yet

Enter'd my house.—Antonio, you are wel-  
come;

And I have better news in store for you  
Than you expect: unseal this letter soon;

There you shall find, three of your argosies  
Are richly come to harbour suddenly:

You shall not know by what strange accident  
I chanced on this letter.

*Ant.* I am dumb.

*Bass.* Were you the doctor, and I knew  
you not?

*Gra.* Were you the clerk, that is to make  
me cuckold? [to do it,

*Ner.* Ay; but the clerk that never means  
Unless he live until he be a man.

*Bass.* Sweet doctor, you shall be my bed-  
fellow;

When I am absent, then lie with my wife.

*Ant.* Sweet lady, you have given me life,  
and living;

For here I read for certain, that my ships  
Are safely come to road.

*Por.* How now, Lorenzo?

My clerk hath some good comforts too for  
you. [a fee.—

*Ner.* Ay, and I'll give them him without  
There do I give to you, and Jessica,

From the rich Jew, a special deed of gift,  
After his death, of all he dies possess'd of.

*Lor.* Fair ladies, you drop manna in the way  
Of starved people.

*Por.* It is almost morning,  
And yet, I am sure, you are not satisfied

Of these events at full: Let us go in;  
And charge us there upon inter'gatories,

And we will answer all things faithfully.

*Gra.* Let it be so: The first inter'gatory,  
That my Nerissa shall be sworn on, is,

Whether till the next night she had rather stay;  
Or go to bed now, being two hours to day:

But were the day come, I should wish it dark  
That I were couching with the doctor's clerk

Well, while I live, I'll fear no other thing  
So sore, as keeping safe Nerissa's ring.

[Exeunt

# AS YOU LIKE IT.

## Persons represented.

DUKE, *living in exile.*

FREDERICK, *brother to the Duke, and usurper of his dominions.*

AMIENS, } *lords attending upon the Duke*  
JAQUES, } *in his banishment.*

LE BEAU, *a courtier attending upon Frederick.*

CHARLES, *his wrestler.*

OLIVER, }  
JAQUES, } *sons of Sir Rowland de Bois.*  
ORLANDO, }

ADAM, }  
DENNIS, } *servants to Oliver.*

TOUCHSTONE, *a clown.*

SIR OLIVER MAR-TEXT, *a vicar.*

CORIN, }  
SYLVIVS, } *shepherds.*

WILLIAM, *a country fellow, in love with Audrey.*

*A Person representing Hymen.*

ROSALIND, *daughter to the banished Duke.*

CELIA, *daughter to Frederick.*

PHEBE, *a shepherdess.*

AUDREY, *a country wench.*

*Lords belonging to the two Dukes ; Pages, Foresters, and other Attendants.*

*The Scene lies, first, near Oliver's House : afterwards, partly in the Usurper's Court, and partly in the forest of Arden.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *An Orchard, near Oliver's House.*

*Enter ORLANDO and ADAM.*

*Orl.* As I remember, Adam, it was upon this fashion bequeathed me : By will, but a poor thousand crowns ; and, as thou say'st, charged my brother, on his blessing, to breed me well ; and there begins my sadness. My brother Jaques he keeps at school, and report speaks goldenly of his profit : for my part, he keeps me rustically at home, or, to speak more properly, stays me here at home unkept : For call you that keeping for a gentleman of my birth, that differs not from the stalling of an ox ? His horses are bred better ; for, besides that they are fair with their feeding, they are taught their manage, and to that end riders dearly hired : but I, his brother, gain nothing under him but growth ; for the which his animals on his dung-hills are as much bound to him as I. Besides this nothing that he so plentifully gives me, the something that nature gave me, his countenance seems to take from me : he lets me feed with his hinds, bars me the place of a brother, and, as much as in him lies, mines my gentility with my education. This is it, Adam, that grieves me ; and the spirit of my father, which I think is within me, begins to mutiny against this servitude : I will no longer endure it, though yet I know no wise remedy how to avoid it.

*Enter OLIVER.*

*Adam.* Yonder comes my master, your brother.

*Orl.* Go apart, Adam, and thou shalt hear how he will shake me up.

*Oli.* Now, sir ! what make you here ?

*Orl.* Nothing : I am not taught to make any thing.

*Oli.* What mar you then, sir ?

*Orl.* Marry, sir, I am helping you to mar that which God made, a poor unworthy brother of yours, with idleness.

*Oli.* Marry, sir, be better employ'd, and be naught awhile.

*Orl.* Shall I keep your hogs, and eat husks with them ? What prodigal portion have I spent, that I should come to such penury ?

*Oli.* Know you where you are, sir ?

*Orl.* O, sir, very well : herein your orchard.

*Oli.* Know you before whom, sir ?

*Orl.* Ay, better than he I am before knows me. I know, you are my eldest brother ; and, in the gentle condition of blood, you should so know me : The courtesy of nations allows you my better, in that you are the first-born ; but the same tradition takes not away my blood, were there twenty brothers betwixt us : I have as much of my father in me, as you ; albeit, I confess, your coming before me is nearer to his reverence.

*Oli.* What, boy !

*Orl.* Come, come, elder brother, you are too young in this.

*Oli.* Wilt thou lay hands on me, villain ?

*Orl.* I am no villain † : I am the youngest son of sir Rowland de Bois ; he was my father ; and he is thrice a villain, that says, such a father begot villains : Wert thou not my brother, I would not take this hand from thy

\* What do you here ?    † Villain is used in a double sense ; by Oliver for a worthless fellow, and by Orlando for a man of base extraction.

throat, till this other had pulled out thy tongue for saying so; thou hast rail'd on thyself.

*Adam.* Sweet masters, be patient; for your father's remembrance, be at accord.

*Oli.* Let me go, I say.

*Orl.* I will not, till I please: you shall hear me. My father charged you in his will to give me good education: you have trained me like a peasant, obscuring and hiding from me all gentleman-like qualities: the spirit of my father grows strong in me, and I will no longer endure it: therefore allow me such exercises as may become a gentleman, or give me the poor allottery my father left me by testament; with that I will go buy my fortunes.

*Oli.* And what wilt thou do? beg, when that is spent? Well, sir, get you in: I will not long be troubled with you: you shall have some part of your will: I pray you, leave me.

*Orl.* I will no further offend you than becomes me for my good.

*Oli.* Get you with him, you old dog.

*Adam.* Is old dog my reward? Most true, I have lost my teeth in your service.—God be with my old master! he would not have spoke such a word.

[*Exeunt ORLANDO and ADAM.*]

*Oli.* Is it even so? begin you to grow upon me? I will physic your rankness, and yet give no thousand crowns neither. Holsa, Dennis!

*Enter DENNIS.*

*Den.* Calls your worship?

*Oli.* Was not Charles, the Duke's wrestler, here to speak with me?

*Den.* So please you, he is here at the door, and importunes access to you.

*Oli.* Call him in. [*Exit DENNIS.*—] 'Twill be a good way; and to-morrow the wrestling is.

*Enter CHARLES.*

*Cha.* Good-morrow to your worship.

*Oli.* Good monsieur Charles!—what's the new news at the new court?

*Cha.* There's no news at the court, sir, but the old news: that is, the old duke is banished by his younger brother the new duke; and three or four loving lords have put themselves into voluntary exile with him, whose lands and revenues enrich the new duke; therefore he gives them good leave \* to wander.

*Oli.* Can you tell, if Rosalind, the duke's daughter, be banished with her father.

*Cha.* O, no; for the duke's daughter, her cousin, so loves her,—being ever from their cradles bred together,—that she would have followed her exile, or have died to stay behind her. She is at the court, and no less beloved of her uncle than his own daughter; and never two ladies loved as they do.

*Oli.* Where will the old duke live?

*Cha.* They say, he is already in the forest of Arden, and a many merry men with him;

and there they live like the old Robin Hood of England: they say, many young gentlemen flock to him every day; and fleet the time carelessly, as they did in the golden world.

*Oli.* What, you wrestle to-morrow before the new duke?

*Cha.* Marry, do I, sir; and I came to acquaint you with a matter. I am given, sir, secretly to understand, that your younger brother, Orlando, hath a disposition to come in disguise'd against me to try a fall: To-morrow, sir, I wrestle for my credit; and he that escapes me without some broken limb, shall acquit him well. Your brother is but young, and tender; and, for your love, I would be loath to foil him, as I must, for my own honour, if he come in: therefore, out of my love to you, I came hither to acquaint you withal; that either you might stay him from his intentment, or brook such disgrace well as he shall run into; in that it is a thing of his own search, and altogether against my will.

*Oli.* Charles, I thank thee for thy love to me, which thou shalt find I will most kindly requite. I had myself notice of my brother's purpose herein, and have by underhand means laboured to dissuade him from it; but he is resolute. I'll tell thee, Charles,—it is the stubbornest young fellow of France; full of ambition, an envious emulator of every man's good parts, a secret and villanous contriver against me his natural brother; therefore use thy discretion; I had as lief thou didst break his neck as his finger: And thou wert best look to't; for if thou dost him any slight disgrace, or if he do not mightily grace himself on thee, he will practise against thee by poison, entrap thee by some treacherous device, and never leave thee till he hath ta'en thy life by some indirect means or other: for, I assure thee, and almost with tears I speak it, there is not one so young and so villanous this day living. I speak but brotherly of him; but should I anatomize him to thee as he is, I must blush and weep, and thou must look pale and wonder.

*Cha.* I am heartily glad I came hither to you: If he come to-morrow, I'll give him his payment: If ever he go alone again, I'll never wrestle for prize more: And so, God keep your worship! [*Exit.*]

*Oli.* Farewell, good Charles.—Now will I stir this gamester: I hope, I shall see an end of him; for my soul, yet I know not why, hates nothing more than he. Yet he's gentle; never school'd, and yet learned; full of noble device; of all sorts† enchantingly beloved; and, indeed, so much in the heart of the world, and especially of my own people, who best know him, that I am altogether misprised: but it shall not be so long; this wrestler shall clear all: nothing remains, but that I kindle the boy thither, which now I'll go about. [*Exit.*]

\* A ready assent.

† Frolicsome fellow.

‡ Of all ranks.



SCENE II. *A Lawn before the Duke's Palace.**Enter ROSALIND and CELIA.*

*Cel.* I pray thee, Rosalind, sweet my coz, be merry.

*Ros.* Dear Celia, I show more mirth than I am mistress of; and would you yet I were merrier? Unless you could teach me to forget a banished father, you must not learn me how to remember any extraordinary pleasure.

*Cel.* Herein, I see, thou lovest me not with the full weight that I love thee: if my uncle, thy banished father, had banished thy uncle, the duke my father, so thou hadst been still with me, I could have taught my love to take thy father for mine; so wouldst thou, if the truth of thy love to me were so righteously temper'd as mine is to thee.

*Ros.* Well, I will forget the condition of my estate, to rejoice in yours.

*Cel.* You know, my father hath no child but I, nor none is like to have; and, truly, when he dies, thou shalt be his heir: for what he hath taken away from thy father perforce, I will render thee again in affection; by mine honour, I will; and when I break that oath, let me turn monster: therefore, my sweet Rose, my dear Rose, be merry.

*Ros.* From henceforth I will, coz, and devise sports: let me see; What think you of falling in love?

*Cel.* Marry, I prythee, do, to make sport withal: but love no man in good earnest; nor no further in sport neither, than with safety of a pure blush thou mayst in honour come off again.

*Ros.* What shall be our sport then?

*Cel.* Let us sit and mock the good housewife, Fortune, from her wheel, that her gifts may henceforth be bestowed equally.

*Ros.* I would, we could do so; for her benefits are mightily misplaced: and the bountiful blind woman doth most mistake in her gifts to women.

*Cel.* 'Tis true: for those, that she makes fair, she scarce makes honest; and those, that she makes honest, she makes very ill-favour'dly.

*Ros.* Nay, now thou goest from fortune's office to nature's: fortune reigns in gifts of the world, not in the lineaments of nature.

*Enter TOUCHSTONE.*

*Cel.* No? When nature hath made a fair creature, may she not by fortune fall into the fire?—Though nature hath given us wit to float at fortune, hath not fortune sent in this fool to cut off the argument?

*Ros.* Indeed, there is fortune too hard for nature; when fortune makes nature's natural the cutter off of nature's wit.

*Cel.* Peradventure, this is not fortune's work neither, but nature's; who perceiving our natural wits too dull to reason of such goddesses, hath sent this natural for our whet-

stone: for always the dulness of the fool is the whetstone of his wit.—How now, wit? whither wander you?

*Touch.* Mistress, you must come away to your father.

*Cel.* Were you made the messenger?

*Touch.* No, by mine honour; but I was bid to come for you.

*Ros.* Where learned you that oath, fool?

*Touch.* Of a certain knight, that swore by his honour they were good pancakes, and swore by his honour the mustard was naught; now, I'll stand to it, the pancakes were naught, and the mustard was good; and yet was not the knight forsworn.

*Cel.* How prove you that, in the great heap of your knowledge?

*Ros.* Ay, marry; now unmuzzle your wisdom.

*Touch.* Stand you both forth now: stroke your chins, and swear by your beards that I am a knave.

*Cel.* By our beards, if we had them, thou art.

*Touch.* By my knavery, if I had it, then I were: but if you swear by that that is not, you are not forsworn: no more was this knight, swearing by his honour, for he never had any; or if he had, he had sworn it away, before ever he saw those pancakes or that mustard.

*Cel.* Prythee, who is't that thou mean'st?

*Touch.* One that old Frederick, your father, loves.

*Cel.* My father's love is enough to honour him. Enough: speak no more of him; you'll be whip'd for taxation\*, one of these days.

*Touch.* The more pity, that fools may not speak wisely, what wise men do foolishly.

*Cel.* By my troth, thou say'st true: for since the little wit, that fools have, was silenced, the little foolery, that wise men have, makes a great show. Here comes Monsieur Le Beau.

*Enter LE BEAU.*

*Ros.* With his mouth full of news.

*Cel.* Which he will put on us, as pigeons feed their young.

*Ros.* Then shall we be news-cramm'd.

*Cel.* All the better; we shall be the more marketable. *Bon jour, Monsieur Le Beau: What's the news?*

*Le Beau.* Fair princess, you have lost much good sport.

*Cel.* Sport? Of what colour?

*Le Beau.* What colour, madam? How shall I answer you?

*Ros.* As wit and fortune will.

*Touch.* Or as the destinies decree.

*Cel.* Well said; that was laid on with a trowel.

*Touch.* Nay, if I keep not my rank,—

*Ros.* Thou lovest thy old smell.

*Le Beau.* You amaze me, ladies: I would have told you of good wrestling, which you have lost the sight of.

*Ros.* Yet tell us the manner of the wrestling.

*Le Beau.* I will tell you the beginning,

and, if it please your ladyships, you may see the end; for the best is yet to do; and here, where you are, they are coming to perform it.

*Cel.* Well,—the beginning, that is dead and buried.

*Le Beau.* There comes an old man, and his three sons,—

*Cel.* I could match this beginning with an old tale.

*Le Beau.* Three proper young men, of excellent growth and presence;—

*Ros.* With bills on their necks,—*Be it known unto all men by these presents,*—

*Le Beau.* The eldest of the three wrestled with Charles, the duke's wrestler; which Charles in a moment threw him, and broke three of his ribs, that there is little hope of life in him: so he served the second, and so the third: Yonder they lie; the poor old man, their father, making such pitiful dole over them, that all the beholders take his part with weeping.

*Ros.* Alas!

*Touch.* But what is the sport, monsieur, that the ladies have lost?

*Le Beau.* Why, this that I speak of.

*Touch.* Thus men may grow wiser every day! It is the first time that ever I heard, breaking of ribs was sport for ladies.

*Cel.* Or I, I promise thee.

*Ros.* But is there any else longs to see this broken music in his sides? Is there yet another dotes upon rib-breaking?—Shall we see this wrestling, cousin?

*Le Beau.* You must, if you stay here: for here is the place appointed for the wrestling, and they are ready to perform it.

*Cel.* Yonder, sure, they are coming: Let us now stay and see it.

*Flourish.* Enter Duke FREDERICK, Lords, ORLANDO, CHARLES, and Attendants.

*Duke F.* Come on; since the youth will not be entreated, his own peril on his forwardness.

*Ros.* Is yonder the man?

*Le Beau.* Even he, madam.

*Cel.* Alas, he is too young: yet he looks successfully.

*Duke F.* How now, daughter, and cousin? are you crept hither to see the wrestling?

*Ros.* Yes, my liege! so please you give us leave.

*Duke F.* You will take little delight in it, I can tell you, there is such odds in the men: In pity of the challenger's youth, I would fain dissuade him, but he will not be entreated; speak to him, ladies; see if you can move him.

*Cel.* Call him hither, good Monsieur Le Beau.

*Duke F.* Do so; I'll not be by.

[*Duke goes apart.*]

*Le Beau.* Monsieur the challenger, the princesses call for you.

*Orl.* I attend them, with all respect and duty.

*Ros.* Young man, have you challenge Charles the wrestler?

*Orl.* No, fair princess; he is the general challenger: I come but in, as others do, to try with him the strength of my youth.

*Cel.* Young gentleman, your spirits are too bold for your years: You have seen cruel proof of this man's strength: if you saw yourself with your eyes, or knew yourself with your judgment, the fear of your adventure would counsel you to a more equal enterprise. We pray you, for your own sake, to embrace your own safety, and give over this attempt.

*Ros.* Do, young sir; your reputation shall not therefore be surpris'd: we will make it our suit to the duke, that the wrestling might not go forward.

*Orl.* I beseech you, punish me not with your hard thoughts; wherein I confess me much guilty, to deny so fair and excellent ladies any thing. But let your fair eyes, and gentle wishes, go with me to my trial: wherein if I be foiled, there is but one shamed that was never gracious; if killed, but one dead that is willing to be so: I shall do my friends no wrong, for I have none to lament me; the world no injury, for in it I have nothing; only in the world I fill up a place, which may be better supplied when I have made it empty.

*Ros.* The little strength that I have, I would it were with you.

*Cel.* And mine, to eke out hers.

*Ros.* Fare you well. Pray heaven, I be deceived in you!

*Cel.* Your heart's desires be with you.

*Cha.* Come, where is this young gallant, that is so desirous to lie with his mother earth?

*Orl.* Ready, sir; but his will hath in it a more modest working.

*Duke F.* You shall try but one fall.

*Cha.* No, I warrant your grace; you shall not entreat him to a second, that have so mightily persuaded him from a first.

*Orl.* You mean to mock me after; you should not have mocked me before: but come your ways.

*Ros.* Now, Hercules be thy speed, young man!

*Cel.* I would I were invisible, to catch the strong fellow by the leg.

[*CHARLES and ORLANDO wrestle.*]

*Ros.* O excellent young man!

*Cel.* If I had a thunderbolt in mine eye, I can tell who should down.

[*CHARLES is thrown. Shout.*]

*Duke F.* No more, no more.

*Orl.* Yes, I beseech your grace; I am not yet well breathed.

*Duke F.* How dost thou, Charles?

*Le Beau.* He cannot speak, my lord.

*Duke F.* Bear him away. [*CHARLES is borne out.*] What is thy name, young man?

*Orl.* Orlando, my liege; the youngest son of sir Rowland de Bois.

*Duke F.* I would, thou hadst been son to some man else.

The world esteem'd thy father: honourable  
But I did find him still mine enemy:

Thou shouldst have better pleased me with this deed,

Hadst thou descended from another house.

But fare thee well; thou art a gallant youth; I would, thou hadst told me of another father.

[*Exeunt Duke FRED. Train, and LE BEAU.*]

*Cel.* Were I my father, coz, would I do this?

*Orl.* I am more proud to be sir Rowland's son,

His youngest son;—and would not change that calling\*,

To be adopted heir to Frederick.

*Ros.* My father loved sir Rowland as his soul,

And all the world was of my father's mind. Had I before known this young man his son, I should have given him tears unto entreaties, Ere he should thus have ventured.

*Cel.* Gentle cousin, Let us go thank him, and encourage him: My father's rough and envious disposition Sticks me at heart.—Sir, you have well deserved:

If you do keep your promises in love, But justly, as you have exceeded promise, Your mistress shall be happy.

*Ros.* Gentleman, [Giving him a chain from her neck.

Wear this for me; one out of suits with fortune†; [lacks means.—

That could give more, but that her hand Shall we go, coz?

*Cel.* Ay:—Fare you well, fair gentleman. [ter parts

*Orl.* Can I not say, I thank you? My bet- Are all thrown down; and that which here stands up,

Is but a quintain‡, a mere lifeless block.

*Ros.* He calls us back: My pride fell with my fortunes: [sir?—

I'll ask him what he would:—Did you call, Sir, you have wrestled well, and overthrown More than your enemies.

*Cel.* Will you go, coz?

*Ros.* Have with you:—Fare you well.

[*Exeunt ROSALIND and CELIA.*]

*Orl.* What passion hangs these weights upon my tongue? [ence.

I cannot speak to her, yet she urged confer-  
*Re-enter LE BEAU.*

O poor Orlando! thou art overthrown;

Or Charles, or something weaker, masters thee. [counsel you

*Le Beau.* Good sir, I do in friendship To leave this place: Albeit you have deserv'd High commendation, true applause, and love; Yet such is now the duke's condition§,

That he misconstrues all that you have done. The duke is humorous; what he is, indeed, More suits you to conceive, than me to speak of. [true this;

*Orl.* I thank you, sir: and, pray you, tell Which of the two was daughter of the duke That here was at the wrestling?

*Le Beau.* Neither his daughter, if we judge by manners;

But yet, indeed, the shorter is his daughter: The other is daughter to the banish'd duke,

And here detain'd by her usurping uncle, To keep his daughter company; whose loves

Are dearer than the natural bond of sisters. But I can tell you, that of late this duke

Hath ta'en displeasure 'gainst his gentle niece; Grounded upon no other argument,

But that the people praise her for her virtues, And pity her for her good father's sake;

And, on my life, his malice 'gainst the lady Will suddenly break forth.—Sir, fare you well;

Hereafter, in a better world than this, I shall desire more love and knowledge of you.

*Orl.* I rest much bounden to you: fare you well! [*Exit LE BEAU.*

Thus must I from the smoke into the smother; From tyrant duke, unto a tyrant brother:—

But, heavenly Rosalind! [*Exit.*

### SCENE III. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter CELIA and ROSALIND.*

*Cel.* Why, cousin; why, Rosalind;—Cupid have mercy!—Not a word?

*Ros.* Not one to throw at a dog.

*Cel.* No, thy words are too precious to be cast away upon curs, throw some of them at me; come, lame me with reasons.

*Ros.* Then there were two cousins laid up; when the one should be lamed with reasons, and the other mad without any.

*Cel.* But is all this for your father?

*Ros.* No, some of it for my child's father: O, how full of briers is this working-day world!

*Cel.* They are but burs, cousin, thrown upon thee in holiday foolery; if we walk not in the trodden paths, our very petticoats will catch them.

*Ros.* I could shake them off my coat; these burs are in my heart.

*Cel.* Hem them away.

*Ros.* I would try; if I could cry hem, and have him.

*Cel.* Come, come, wrestle with thy affections.

*Ros.* O, they take the part of a better wrestler than myself.

*Cel.* O, a good wish upon you! you will try in time, in despite of a fall.—But, turning these jests out of service, let us talk in good earnest: Is it possible, on such a sudden, you should fall into so strong a liking with old sir Rowland's youngest son?

*Ros.* The duke my father loved his father dearly.

*Cel.* Doth it therefore ensue, that you should love his son dearly? By this kind of chase, I should hate him, for my father hated his father dearly; yet I hate not Orlando

*Ros.* No faith, hate him not, for my sake.

\* Appellation. † Turned out of her service. ‡ The object to dart at in martial exercises. § Temper, disposition. ¶ Inexactly.



*Cel.* Why should I not? doth he not deserve well?

*Ros.* Let me love him for that; and do you love him, because I do:—Look, here comes the duke.

*Cel.* With his eyes full of anger.

*Enter Duke FREDERICK, with Lords.*

*Duke F.* Mistress, despatch you with your safest haste,

And get you from our court.

*Ros.* Me, uncle?

*Duke F.* You, cousin;

Within these ten days if that thou be'st found So near our public court as twenty miles, Thou diest for it.

*Ros.* I do beseech your grace, Let me the knowledge of my fault bear with me:

If with myself I hold intelligence, Or have acquaintance with mine own desires; If that I do not dream, or be not frantic, (As I do trust I am not,) ther, dear uncle, Never, so much as in a thought unborn, Did I offend your highness.

*Duke F.* Thus do all traitors;

If their purgation did consist in words.

They are as innocent as grace itself:— Let it suffice thee, that I trust thee not.

*Ros.* Yet your mistrust cannot make me a traitor:

Tell me, whereon the likelihood depends.

*Duke F.* Thou art thy father's daughter, there's enough. [his dukedom;

*Ros.* So was I, when your highness took So was I, when your highness banish'd him: Pardon is not inherited, my lord; Or, if we did derive it from our friends, What's that to me? my father was no traitor: Then, good my liege, mistake me not so much, To think my poverty is treacherous.

*Cel.* Dear sovereign, hear me speak.

*Duke F.* Ay, Celia; we stay'd her for your sake,

Else had she with her father rang'd along.

*Cel.* I did not then entreat to have her stay, It was your pleasure, and your own remorse\*; I was too young that time to value her, But now I know her: if she be a traitor, Why so am I; we still have slept together, Rose at an instant, learn'd, play'd, eat together;

And wheresoe'er we went, like Juno's swans, Still we went coupled, and inseparable.

*Duke F.* She is too subtle for thee; and her smoothness,

Her very silence, and her patience, Speak to the people, and they pity her. Thou art a fool: she robs thee of thy name; And thou wilt show more bright, and seem more virtuous,

When she is gone: then open not thy lips;

Firm and irrevocable is my doom

Which I have pass'd upon her; she is banish'd.

*Cel.* Pronounce that sentence then on me I cannot live out of her company. [my liege

*Duke F.* You are a fool:—You, niece, provide yourself;

If you out-stay the time, upon mine honour, And in the greatness of my word, you die.

[*Exeunt Duke FRED. and Lords.*

*Cel.* O my poor Rosalind! whither wilt thou go? [mine.

Wilt thou change fathers? I will give thee I charge thee, be not thou more griev'd than

*Ros.* I have more cause. [I am.

*Cel.* Thou hast not, cousin; Pr'ythee, be cheerful: know'st thou not, the Hath banish'd me his daughter? [duke

*Ros.* That he hath not.

*Cel.* No? hath not? Rosalind lacks then the love

Which teacheth thee that thou and I am one: Shall we be sunder'd? shall we part, sweet

No; let my father seek another heir. [girl?

Therefore devise with me, how we may fly, Whither to go, and what to bear with us:

And do not seek to take your change upon you, To bear your griefs yourself, and leave me out;

For, by this heaven, now at our sorrows pale, Say what thou canst, I'll go along with thee.

*Ros.* Why, whither shall we go?

*Cel.* To seek my uncle.

*Ros.* Alas, what danger will it be to us,

Maids as we are, to travel forth so far?

Beauty provoketh thieves sooner than gold.

*Cel.* I'll put myself in poor and mean attire, And with a kind of umber† smirch my face; The like do you; so shall we pass along, And never stir assailants.

*Ros.* Were it not better,

Because that I am more than common tall,

That I did suit me all points like a man?

A gallant cuttle-axe‡ upon my thigh,

A boar-spear in my hand; and (in my heart

Lie there what hidden woman's fear there will,) We'll have a swashing§ and a martial outside;

As many other mannish cowards have,

That do outface it with their semblances.

*Cel.* What shall I call thee, when thou art

a man? [own page,

*Ros.* I'll have no worse a name than Jove's

And therefore look you call me, Ganymede.

But what will you be call'd?

*Cel.* Something that hath a reference to my

No longer Celia, but Aliena. [state;

*Ros.* But, cousin, what if we assay'd to steal

The clownish fool out of your father's court?

Would he not be a comfort to our travel?

*Cel.* He'll go along o'er the wide world with

Leave me alone to woo him: Let's away, [me;

And get our jewels and our wealth together;

Devise the fittest time, and safest way

To hide us from pursuit that will be made

After my flight: Now go we in content,

To liberty, and not to banishment. [*Exeunt*

\* Compassion. † A dusky, yellow-coloured earth. ‡ Cutlass. § Swaggering.

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *The Forest of Arden.*

*Enter DUKE senior, AMIENS, & other Lords, in the dress of Foresters.*

*Duke S.* Now, my co-mates, and brothers in exile,  
Hath not old custom made this life more sweet  
Than that of painted pomp? Are not these woods  
More free from peril than the envious court?  
Here feel we but the penalty of Adam,  
The seasons' difference; as, the icy fang,  
And churlish chiding of the winter's wind;  
Which when it bites and blows upon my body,  
Even till I shrink with cold, I smile, and say,—  
This is no flattery: these are counsellors  
That feelingly persuade me what I am.  
Sweet are the uses of adversity;  
Which, like the toad, ugly and venomous,  
Wears yet a precious jewel in his head;  
And this our life, exempt from public haunt,  
Finds tongues in trees, books in the running  
brooks,

Sermons in stones, and good in every thing.  
*Ami.* I would not change it: Happy is  
your grace,

That can translate the stubbornness of fortune  
Into so quiet and so sweet a style. [son?]

*Duke S.* Come, shall we go and kill us veni-  
And yet it irks me, the poor dappled fools,—  
Being native burghers of this desert city,—  
Should, in their own confines, with forked  
Have their round haunches gor'd. [heads\*]

*1 Lord.* Indeed, my lord,  
The melancholy Jaques grieves at that;  
And, in that kind, swears you do more usurp  
Than doth your brother that hath banish'd you.  
To-day, my lord of Amiens, and myself,  
Did steal behind him, as he lay along  
Under an oak, whose antique root peeps out  
Upon the brook that brawls along this wood:  
To the which place a poor sequester'd stag,  
That from the hunter's aim had ta'en a hurt,  
Did come to languish; and, indeed, my lord,  
The wretched animal heav'd forth such groans,  
That their discharge did stretch his leathern coat  
Almost to bursting; and the big round tears  
Coursed one another down his innocent nose  
In piteous chase: and thus the hairy fool,  
Much marked of the melancholy Jaques,  
Stood on the extremest verge of the swift brook,  
Augmenting it with tears.

*Duke S.* But what said Jaques?  
Did he not moralize this spectacle?

*1 Lord.* O, yes, into a thousand similes.  
First, for his weeping in the needful stream;  
*Poor deer, quoth he, thou makest a testament  
As worldlings do, giving thy sum of more  
To that which had too much:* Then, being alone  
Left and abandon'd of his velvet friends,  
*'Tis right, quoth he; this misery doth part  
The flux of company:* Anon, a careless herd,  
Full of the pasture, jumps along by him,

And never stays to greet him; *Ay, quoth Jaques,  
Sweep on, you fat and greasy citizens;  
'Tis just the fashion: Wherefore do you look  
Upon that poor and broken bankrupt there?*  
Thus most invectively he pierceth through  
The body of the country, city, court,  
Yea, and of this our life: swearing, that we  
Are mere usurpers, tyrants, and what's worse,  
To fright the animals, and to kill them up,  
In their assign'd and native dwelling-place.

*Duke S.* And did you leave him in this con-  
templation? [menting]

*2 Lord.* We did, my lord, weeping and com-  
Upon the sobbing deer.

*Duke S.* Show me the place;  
I love to cope† him in these sullen fits,  
For then he's full of matter.

*2 Lord.* I'll bring you to him straight.

[Exeunt]

SCENE II. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter Duke FREDERICK, Lords, & Attendants*

*Duke F.* Can it be possible, that no man  
saw them?

It cannot be: some villains of my court  
Are of consent and sufferance in this. [her.]

*1 Lord.* I cannot hear of any that did see  
The ladies, her attendants of her chamber,  
Saw her a-bed; and, in the morning early,  
They found the bed untreasur'd of their mistress

*2 Lord.* My lord, the roynish‡ clown, at  
whom so oft

Your grace was wont to laugh, is also missing.  
Hesperia, the princess' gentlewoman,  
Confesses, that she secretly o'er-heard  
Your daughter and her cousin nunn commend  
The parts and graces of the wrestler  
That did but lately foil the sinewy Charles;  
And she believes, wherever they are gone,  
That youth is surely in their company.

*Duke F.* Send to his brother; fetch that  
gallant hither;

If he be absent, bring his brother to me,  
I'll make him find him: do this suddenly;  
And let not search and inquisition quail§  
To bring again these foolish runaways.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III. *Before Oliver's House.*

*Enter ORLANDO and ADAM, meeting.*

*Orl.* Who's there? [gentle master]

*Adam.* What! my young master?—O, my  
O, my sweet master, O your memory!  
Of old sir Rowland! why, what make you  
here? you?

Why are you virtuous? Why do people love  
And wherefore are you gentle, strong, and  
valiant?

Why would you be so fond¶ to overcome  
The bony prizer of the humorous duke? [you.  
Your praise is come too swiftly home before

\* Barbed arrows.

† Encounter.

‡ Memorial.

§ Scurvy.

¶ Sink into dejection.

• Inconsiderate.

Know you not, master, to some kind of men  
Their graces serve them but as enemies?  
No more do yours; your virtues, gentle mas-  
Are sanctified and holy traitors to you. {ter,  
O, what a world is this, when what is comely  
Envenoms him that bears it?

*Orl.* Why, what's the matter?

*Adam.* O unhappy youth,  
Come not within these doors; within this roof  
The enemy of all your graces lives:  
Your brother—(no, no brother; yet the son—  
Yet not the son;—I will not call him son—  
Of him I was about to call his father,)—  
Hath heard your praises; and this night he  
means

To burn the lodging where you use to lie,  
And you within it: if he fail of that,  
He will have other means to cut you off:  
I overheard him, and his practices.  
This is no place\*, this house is but a butchery;  
Abhor it, fear it, do not enter it.

*Orl.* Why, whither, Adam, wouldst thou  
have me go? {not here.

*Adam.* No matter whither, so you come  
*Orl.* What, wouldst thou have me go and  
beg my food?

Or, with a base and boisterous sword, enforce  
A thievish living on the common road?  
This I must do, or know not what to do:  
Yet this I will not do, do how I can;  
I rather will subject me to the malice  
Of a diverted blood†, and bloody brother.

*Adam.* But do not so: I have five hundred  
crowns,

The thrifty hire I sav'd under your father,  
Which I did store, to be my foster-nurse,  
When service should in my old limbs lie lame,  
And unregarded age in corners thrown;  
Take that: and He that doth the ravens feed,  
Yea, providently caters for the sparrow,  
Be comfort to my age! Here is the gold;  
All this I give you: Let me be your servant;  
Though I look old, yet I am strong and lusty:  
For in my youth I never did apply  
Hot and rebellious liquors in my blood;  
Nor did not with unbashful forehead woo  
The means of weakness and debility;  
Therefore my age is as a lusty winter,  
Frosty, but kindly: let me go with you;  
I'll do the service of a younger man  
In all your business and necessities. {pears

*Orl.* O good old man; how well in thee ap-  
The constant service of the antique world,  
When service sweat for duty, not for meed!  
Thou art not for the fashion of these times,  
Where none will sweat, but for promotion;  
And having that, do choke their service up  
Even with the having: it is not so with thee.  
But, poor old man, thou prunest a rotten tree,  
That cannot so much as a blossom yield,  
In lieu of all thy pains and husbandry;  
But come thy ways, we'll go along together;  
And ere we have thy youthful wages spent,  
We'll light upon some settled low content.

*Adam.* Master, go on; and I will follow thee,

To the last gasp, with truth and loyalty.—  
From seventeen years till now almost fourscore  
Here lived I, but now live here no more.  
At seventeen years many their fortunes seek;  
But at fourscore, it is too late a week:  
Yet fortune cannot recompense me better,  
Than to die well, and not my master's debtor.  
[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV. The Forest of Arden.

*Enter ROSALIND in boy's clothes, CELIA  
drest like a Shepherdess, & TOUCHSTONE.*

*Ros.* O Jupiter! how weary are my spirits!

*Touch.* I care not for my spirits, if my  
legs were not weary.

*Ros.* I could find in my heart to disgrace  
my man's apparel, and to cry like a woman:  
but I must comfort the weaker vessel, as  
doublet and hose ought to show itself con-  
rageous to petticoat: therefore, courage, good  
Aliena.

*Cel.* I pray you, bear with me; I cannot  
go no further.

*Touch.* For my part, I had rather bear  
with you, than bear you: yet I should bear  
no cross†, if I did bear you; for, I think,  
you have no money in your purse.

*Ros.* Well, this is the forest of Arden.

*Touch.* Ay, now am I in Arden: the more  
fool I; when I was at home, I was in a better  
place; but travellers must be content.

*Ros.* Ay, be so, good Touchstone:—Look  
you, who comes here; a young man, and an  
old, in solemn talk.

*Enter CORIN and SILVIUS.*

*Cor.* That is the way to make her scorn you  
still. {love her!

*Sil.* O Corin, that thou knew'st how I do

*Cor.* I partly guess; for I have loved ere now.

*Sil.* No, Corin, being old, thou canst not guess;  
Though in thy youth thou wast as true a lover  
As ever sigh'd upon a midnight pillow:

But if thy love were ever like to mine,

(As sure I think did never man love so,)

How many actions most ridiculous

Hast thou been drawn to by thy fantasy?

*Cor.* Into a thousand that I have forgotten.

*Sil.* O, thou didst then ne'er love so heartily:

If thou rememb'rest not the slightest folly

That ever love did make thee run into,

Thou hast not loved:

Or if thou hast not sat as I do now,

Wearied thy hearer in thy mistress' praise,

Thou hast not loved:

Or if thou hast not broke from company,

Abruptly, as my passion now makes me,

Thou hast not loved: O Phebe, Phebe, Phebe

[*Exit SILVIUS.*]

*Ros.* Alas, poor shepherd! searching of  
thy wound,

I have by hard adventure found mine own.

*Touch.* And I mine: I remember, when I  
was in love, I broke my sword upon a stone,  
and bid him take that for coming a-night‡ to  
Jane Smile: and I remember the kissing of

\* Mansion, residence.

† Blood turned from its natural course.

‡ A piece of

money stamped with a cross.

§ In the night.



her batle\*, and the cow's dugs that her pretty chop'd hands had milk'd: and I remember the wooing of a peascod instead of her; from whom I took two cods, and, giving her them again, said with weeping tears, *Wear these for my suke*. We, that are true lovers, run into strange capers; but as all is mortal in nature, so is all nature in love mortal in folly.

*Ros.* Thou speak'st wiser, than thou art 'ware of.

*Touch.* Nay, I shall ne'er be 'ware of mine own wit, till I break my shins against it.

*Ros.* Jove! Jove! this shepherd's passion Is much upon my fashion.

*Touch.* And mine; but it grows something stale with me. [man]

*Cel.* I pray you, one of you question yond If he for gold will give us any food; I faint almost to death.

*Touch.* Holla; you, clown!

*Ros.* Peace, fool; he's not thy kinsman.

*Cor.* Who calls?

*Touch.* Your betters, sir.

*Cor.* Else are they very wretched.

*Ros.* Peace, I say:— Good even to you, friend.

*Cor.* And to you, gentle sir, and to you all.

*Ros.* I pr'ythee, shepherd, if that love, or gold,

Can in this desert place buy entertainment, Bring us where we may rest ourselves, and feed: [press'd,

Here's a young maid with travel much op- And faints for succour.

*Cor.* Fair sir, I pity her, And wish for her sake, more than for mine own, My fortunes were more able to relieve her: But I am shepherd to another man, And do not shear the fleeces that I graze; My master is of churlish disposition, And little recks† to find the way to heaven By doing deeds of hospitality:

Besides, his cote, his flocks, and bounds of feed, Are now on sale, and at our sheepcote now, By reason of his absence, there is nothing That you will feed on: but what is, come see, And in my voice most welcome shall you be.

*Ros.* What is he that shall buy his flock and pasture?

*Cor.* That young swain that you saw here but erewhile,

That little cares for buying any thing.

*Ros.* I pray thee, if it stand with honesty, Buy thou the cottage, pasture, and the flock, And thou shalt have to pay for it of us.

*Cel.* And we will mend thy wages: I like this place,

And willingly could waste my time in it.

*Cor.* Assuredly, the thing is to be sold:

Go with me: if you like, upon report,

The soil, the profit, and this kind of life,

I will your very faithful feeder be,

And buy it with your gold right suddenly.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE V. *The same.*

*Enter AMIENS, JAKUES, and others.*

### SONG.

*Ami.* Under the greenwood tree,  
Who loves to lie with me,  
And tune his merry note  
Unto the sweet bird's throat,  
Come hither, come hither, come hither;  
Here shall he see  
No enemy,

*But winter and rough weather.*

*Jaq.* More, more, I pr'ythee, more.

*Ami.* It will make you melancholy, monsieur Jaques.

*Jaq.* I thank it. More, I pr'ythee, more. I can suck melancholy out of a song, as a weasel sucks eggs: More, I pr'ythee, more.

*Ami.* My voice is ragged‡; I know, I cannot please you.

*Jaq.* I do not desire you to please me, I do desire you to sing: Come, more; another stanza; Call you them stanzas?

*Ami.* What you will, monsieur Jaques.

*Jaq.* Nay, I care not for their names; they owe me nothing: Will you sing?

*Ami.* More at your request, than to please myself.

*Jaq.* Well then, if ever I thank any man, I'll thank you: but that they call compliment, is like the encounter of two dog-apes; and when a man thanks me heartily, methinks, I have given him a penny, and he renders me the beggarly thanks. Come, sing; and you that will not, hold your tongues.

*Ami.* Well, I'll end the song.—Sirs, cover the while; the duke will drink under this tree:—he hath been all this day to look you.

*Jaq.* And I have been all this day to avoid him. He is too disputable§ for my company: I think of as many matters as he; but I give heaven thanks, and make no boast of them. Come, warble, come.

### SONG.

*Who doth ambition shun,* [All together here.  
*And loves to live i' the sun,*  
*Seeking the food he eats,*  
*And pleased with what he gets,*  
*Come hither, come hither, come hither;*  
*Here shall he see*

*No enemy,*

*But winter and rough weather.*

*Jaq.* I'll give you a verse to this note, that I made yesterday in despite of my invention.

*Ami.* And I'll sing it.

*Jaq.* Thus it goes:

*If it do come to pass,*

*That any man turn ass,*

*Leaving his wealth and ease*

*A stubborn will to please,*

*Duc ad me, duc ad me, duc ad me;*

*Here shall he see,*

*Gross fools as he,*

*An if he will come to Ami.*

\* The instrument with which washers beat clothes.  
had formerly the same meaning.

† Carra.

‡ Ragged and rugged

§ Disputatious.

*Ami.* What's that *duc ad me*?

*Jaq.* 'Tis a Greek invocation, to call fools into a circle. I'll go sleep if I can; if I cannot, I'll rail against all the first-born of Egypt.

*Ami.* And I'll go seek the duke; his banquet is prepared. [*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE VI. *The same.*

*Enter ORLANDO and ADAM.*

*Adam.* Dear master, I can go no further: O, I die for food! Here lie I down, and measure out my grave. Farewell, kind master.

*Orl.* Why, how now, Adam! no greater heart in thee? Live a little; comfort a little; cheer thyself a little: If this uncouth forest yield any thing savage, I will either be food for it, or bring it for food to thee. Thy conceit is nearer death than thy powers. For my sake, be comfortable; hold death awhile at the arm's end: I will here be with thee presently; and if I bring thee not something to eat, I'll give thee leave to die: but if thou diest before I come, thou art a mocker of my labour. Well said! thou look'st cheerly; and I'll be with thee quickly.—Yet thou liest in the bleak air: Come, I will bear thee to some shelter; and thou shalt not die for lack of a dinner, if there live any thing in this desert. Cheerly, good Adam! [*Exeunt*]

SCENE VII. *The same.*

*A table set out. Enter DUKE senior, AMIENS, Lords, and others.*

*Duke S.* I think he be transform'd into a For I can no where find him like a man. [beast;

*1 Lord.* My lord, he is but even now gone hence;

Here was he merry, hearing of a song. [sical,

*Duke S.* If he, compact of jars\*, grow inu- We shall have shortly discord in the spheres:— Go, seek him; tell him, I would speak with him.

*Enter JAQUES.*

*1 Lord.* He saves my labour by his own approach. [a lute is this,

*Duke S.* Why, how now, monsieur! what That your poor friends must woo your coin- What! you look merrily. [pany?

*Jaq.* A fool, a fool!—I met a fool i' the A motley fool;—a miserable world!— [forest, As I do live by food, I met a fool; Who laid him down and bask'd him in the sun, And rail'd on lady Fortune in good terms, In good set terms,—and yet a motley fool. Good-morrow, fool, quoth I: No, sir, quoth he, Call me not fool, till heaven hath sent me fortune:

And then he drew a dial from his poke; And looking on it with lack-lustre eye, Says, very wisely, *It is ten o'clock*: [wags: *'Tis thus may we see, quoth he, how the world 'Tis but an hour ago, since it was nine; And after an hour more, 'twill be eleven; And so from hour to hour, we ripe and ripe, And then, from hour to hour, we rot, and rot, And thereby hangs a tale.* When I did hear

The motley fool thus moral on the time, My lungs began to crow like chanticleer, That fools should be so deep-contemplative; And I did laugh, sans intermission, An hour by his dial.—O noble fool!

A worthy fool! Motley's the only wear't.

*Duke S.* What fool is this? [a courtier;

*Jaq.* O worthy fool!—One that hath been And says, if ladies be but young, and fair, They have the gift to know it: and in his brain,— Which is as dry as the remainder biscuit After a voyage,—he hath strange places cramm'd With observation, the which he vents In mangled forms:—O, that I were a fool! I am ambitious for a motley coat.

*Duke S.* Thou shalt have one.

*Jaq.*

It is my only snit; Provided, that you weed your better judgments Of all opinion that grows rank in them, That I am wise. I must have liberty Withal, as large a charter as the wind, To blow on whom I please; for so fools have: And they that are most galled with my folly, They must must laugh: And why, sir, must they so?

The *why* is plain as way to parish church:

He, that a fool doth very wisely hit, Doth very foolishly, although he smart, Not to seem senseless of the bob: if not, The wise man's folly is anatomized

Even by the squand'ring glances of the fool.

Invest me in my motley; give me leave

To speak my mind, and I will through and through

Cleanse the foul body of the infected world, If they will patiently receive my medicine.

*Duke S.* Fie on thee! I can tell what thou wouldst do. [good?

*Jaq.* What, for a counter, would I do, but

*Duke S.* Most mischievous foul sin, in chiding For thou thyself hast been a libertine, [sing sin: As sensual as the brutish sting itself; And all the embossed sores, and headed evils, That thou with license of free foot hast caught, Wouldst thou disgorge into the general world.

*Jaq.* Why, who cries out on pride, That can therein tax any private party?

Doth it not flow as hugely as the sea,

Till that the very very means do ebb?

What woman in the city do I name,

When that I say, The city-woman bears

The cost of princes on unworthy shoulders?

Who can come in, and say, that I mean her,

When such a one as she, such is her neighbour?

Or what is he of basest function,

That says, his bravery† is not on my cost,

[Thinking that I mean him,) but therein suits His folly to the mettle of my speech?

There then; How, what then? Let me see

wherein [right,

My tongue hath wrong'd him: if it do him

Then he hath wrong'd himself; if he be free,

Why then, my taxing, like a wild goose flies,

Unclaim'd of any man.—But who comes here?

*Enter ORLANDO, with his sword drawn.*

*Orl.* Forbear, and eat no more.

\* Made up of discords. † The fool was anciently dressed in a party-coloured coat. ‡ Finery

*Jaq.* Why, I have eat none yet.

*Orl.* Nor shalt not, till necessity be served.

*Jaq.* Of what kind should this cock come of?

*Duke S.* Art thou thus bolden'd, man, by thy distress;

Or else a rude despiser of good manners,  
That in civility thou seem'st so empty? [*point*]

*Orl.* You touch'd my vein at first; the thorny  
Of bare distress hath ta'en from me the show  
Of smooth civility: yet am I inland bred\*,  
And know some nurture†: But forbear, I say;  
He dies, that touches any of this fruit,

Till I and my affairs are answered. [*reason,*]

*Jaq.* An you will not be answered with  
I must die. [*tleness shall force,*]

*Duke S.* What would you have? Your gen-  
More than your force move us to gentleness.

*Orl.* I almost die for food, and let me have it.

*Duke S.* Sit down and feed, and welcome  
to our table. [*pray you:*]

*Orl.* Speak you so gently? Pardon me, I  
I thought, that all things had been savage here;  
And therefore put I on the countenance

Of stern commandment: But whate'er you are,  
That in this desert inaccessible,

Under the shade of melancholy boughs,  
Lose and neglect the creeping hours of time;

If ever you have look'd on better days,  
If ever been where bells have knoll'd to church;

If ever sat at any good man's feast;  
If ever from your eye-lids wiped a tear,

And know what 'tis to pity, and be pitied;  
Let gentleness my strong enforcement be:

In the which hope, I blush, and hide my sword.

*Duke S.* True is it that we have seen bet-  
ter days;

And have with holy bell been knoll'd to church;  
And satat good men's feasts; and wiped our eyes

Of drops that sacred pity hath engender'd:  
And therefore sit you down in gentleness,

And take upon command what help we have,  
That to your wanting may be ministred.

*Orl.* Then, but forbear your food a little while,  
Whiles, like a doe, I go to find my fawn,

And give it food. There is an old poor man,  
Who after me hath many a weary step

Limp'd in pure love; till he be first sufficed,—  
Oppress'd with two weak evils, age and hun-

I will not touch a bit. [*ger,—*]

*Duke S.* Go find him out,  
And we will nothing waste till you return.

*Orl.* I thank ye; and be bless'd for your  
good comfort! [*Exit.*]

*Duke S.* Thou seest, we are not all alone  
This wide and universal theatre [*unhappy:*]

Presents more woful pageants than the scene  
Where.n we play in.

*Jaq.* All the world's a stage,  
And all the men and women merely players:

They have their exits and their entrances;  
And one man in his time plays many parts,

His acts being seven ages. At first, the infant,  
Mewling and puking in the nurse's arms;

And then, the whining school-boy, with his  
satchel,

And shining morning face, creeping like snail  
Unwillingly to school: And then, the lover;

Sighing like furnace, with a woful ballad  
Made to his mistress' eye-brow: Then, a soldier;

Full of strange oaths, and bearded like the pard,  
Jealous in honour, sudden and quick in quarrel,

Seeking the bubble reputation [*justice;*]  
Even in the cannon's mouth: And then, the

In fair round belly, with good capon lined,  
With eyes severe, and beard of formal cut,

Full of wise saws and modern instances,  
And so he plays his part: The sixth age shifts

Into the lean and slipper'd pantaloony;  
With spectacles on nose, and pouch on side;

His youthful hose well saved, a world too wide  
For his shrunk shank; and his big manly voice,

Turning again toward childish treble, pipes  
And whistles in his sound: Last scene of all,

That ends this strange eventful history,  
Is second childishness, and mere oblivion;

Sans teeth, sans eyes, sans taste, sans every  
thing.

*Re-enter ORLANDO, with ADAM.*

*Duke S.* Welcome: Set down your vene-  
And let him feed. [*rable burden,*]

*Orl.* I thank you most for him.

*Adam.* So had you need;

I scarce can speak to thank you for myself. [*you*]

*Duke S.* Welcome, fall to: I will not trouble  
As yet, to question you about your fortunes:—

Give us some music; and, good cousin, sing.  
AMIEUS sings.

#### SONG.

##### I.

*Blow, blow, thou winter wind,  
Thou art not so unkind ||*

*As man's ingratitude;  
Thy tooth is not so keen,*

*Because thou art not seen,  
Although thy breath be rude.*

*Heigh, ho! sing, heigh, ho! unto the green  
holly: [*mere folly:*]*

*Most friendship is feigning, most loving  
Then, heigh, ho, the holly!*

*This life is most jolly.*

##### II.

*Freeze, freeze, thou bitter sky,  
That dost not bite so nigh*

*As benefits forgot:  
Though thou the waters warp,*

*Thy sting is not so sharp  
As friend remember'd ¶ not.*

*Heigh, ho! sing, heigh, ho! &c.*

*Duke S.* If that you were the good sir  
Rowland's son,—

As you have whisper'd faithfully, you were;  
And as mine eye doth his effigies witness

Most truly linn'd, and living in your face,—  
Betruely welcome hither: I am the duke, [*tune,*]

That loved your father: The residue of your for-  
Go to my cave and tell me.—Good old man,

Thou art right welcome as thy master is:  
Support him by the arm.—Give me your hand

And let me all your fortunes understand.  
[*Exeunt*]

\* Well brought up.

† Good manners.

‡ Violent.

§ Trite, common.

|| Unnatural.

¶ Remembering.



## ACT III.

SCENE I. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter Duke FREDERICK, OLIVER, Lords, and Attendants.*

*Duke F.* Not see him since? Sir, sir, that cannot be:

But were I not the better part made mercy, I should not seek an absent argument Of my revenge, thou present: But look to it; Find out thy brother, wheresoe'er he is; Seek him with candle; bring him dead or living, Within this twelvemonth, or turn thou no more To seek a living in our territory. [thine, Thy lands, and all things that thou dost call Worth seizure, do we seize into our hands; Till thou canst quit thee by thy brother's Of what we think against thee. [mouth,

*Oli.* O, that your highness knew my heart I never loved my brother in my life. [in this!

*Duke F.* More villain thou.—Well, push him out of doors;

And let my officers of such a nature Make an extent \* upon his house and lands: Do this expediently †, and turn him going.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The Forest.*

*Enter ORLANDO, with a paper.*

*Orl.* Hang there, my verse, in witness of my love: [survey

And, thou, thrice-crowned queen of night, With thy chaste eye, from thy pale sphere above, [sway.

Thy huntress' name, that my full life doth O Rosalind! these trees shall be my books, And in their barks my thoughts I'll character; That every eye, which in this forest looks, Shall see thy virtue witness'd every where. Run, run, Orlando; carve, on every tree, The fair, the chaste, and unexpressive ‡ she.

[*Exit.*

*Enter CORIN and TOUCHSTONE.*

*Cor.* And how like you this shepherd's life, master Touchstone?

*Touch.* Truly, shepherd, in respect of itself, it is a good life; but in respect that it is a shepherd's life, it is naught. In respect that it is solitary, I like it very well; but in respect that it is private, it is a very vile life. Now in respect it is in the fields, it pleaseth me well; but in respect it is not in the court, it is tedious. As it is a spare life, look you, it fits my humour well; but as there is no more plenty in it, it goes much against my stomach. Hast any philosophy in thee, shepherd?

*Cor.* No more, but that I know, the more one sickens, the worse at ease he is; and that he that wants money, means, and content, is without three good friends:—That the property of rain is to wet, and fire to burn: That good pasture makes fat sheep; and that a great

cause of the night, is lack of the sun: That he, that hath learned no wit by nature nor art, may complain of good breeding, or comes of a very dull kindred.

*Touch.* Such a one is a natural philosopher. Wast ever in court, shepherd?

*Cor.* No, truly.

*Touch.* Then thou art damn'd.

*Cor.* Nay, I hope,—

*Touch.* Truly, thou art damn'd; like an ill roasted egg, all on one side.

*Cor.* For not being at court? Your reason.

*Touch.* Why, if thou never wast at court, thou never saw'st good manners; if thou never saw'st good manners, then thy manners must be wicked; and wickedness is sin, and sin is damnation: Thou art in a parlous state, shepherd.

*Cor.* Not a whit, Touchstone: those that are good manners at the court, are as ridiculous in the country, as the behaviour of the country is most mockable at the court. You told me, you salute not at the court, but you kiss your hands; that courtesy would be uncleanly, if courtiers were shepherds.

*Touch.* Instance, briefly; come, instance.

*Cor.* Why, we are still handling our ewes; and their fells, you know, are greasy.

*Touch.* Why, do not your courtier's hands sweat? and is not the grease of a mutton as wholesome as the sweat of a man? Shallow, shallow: A better instance, I say; come.

*Cor.* Besides, our hands are hard.

*Touch.* Your lips will feel them the sooner. Shallow, again: A more sounder instance, come.

*Cor.* And they are often tarr'd over with the surgery of our sheep; And would you have us kiss tar? The courtier's hands are perfumed with civet.

*Touch.* Most shallow man!—Thou worms-meat, in respect of a good piece of flesh: Indeed!—Learn of the wise, and perpend: Civet is of a baser birth than tar; the very uncleanly flux of a cat. Mend the instance shepherd.

*Cor.* You have too courtly a wit for me: I'll rest.

*Touch.* Wilt thou rest damn'd? God help thee, shallow man! God make incision in thee! thou art raw §.

*Cor.* Sir, I am a true labourer; I earn that I eat, get that I wear; owe no man hate, envy no man's happiness; glad of other men's good; content with my harm: and the greatest of my pride is, to see my ewes graze, and my lambs suck.

*Touch.* That is another simple sin in you; to bring the ewes and the rams together, and to offer to get your living by the copulation of cattle: to be bawd to a bell-wether; and to betray a she-lamb of a twelvemonth, to a

\* Seize by legal process.

† Expeditionly.

‡ Inexpressible.

§ Unexperienced.

crooked-pated, old, cuckoldly ram, out of all reasonable match. If thou be'st not damn'd for this, the devil himself will have no shepherds; I cannot see else how thou shouldst 'scape.

*Cor.* Here comes young master Ganymede, my new mistress's brother.

*Enter ROSALIND, reading a paper.*

*Ros.* From the east to western Ind,  
No jewel is like Rosalind.  
Her worth, being mounted on the wind,  
Through all the world bears Rosalind.  
All the pictures, fairest lined \*,  
Are but black to Rosalind.  
Let no face be kept in mind,  
But the fair † of Rosalind.

*Touch.* I'll rhyme you so, eight years together; dinners, and suppers, and sleeping hours excepted: it is the right butter-woman's rank to market.

*Ros.* Out, fool!

*Touch.* For a taste:—

If a hart do lack a hind,  
Let him seek out Rosalind.  
If the cat will after kind,  
So, be sure, will Rosalind.  
Winter-garments must be lined,  
So must slender Rosalind.  
They that reap, must sheaf and bind;  
Then to cart with Rosalind.  
Sweetest nut hath sourest rind,  
Such a nut is Rosalind.  
He that sweetest rose will find,  
Must find love's prick, and Rosalind.

This is the very false gallop of verses; Why go you infect yourself with them.

*Ros.* Peace, you dull fool; I found them on a tree.

*Touch.* Truly, the tree yields bad fruit.

*Ros.* I'll graff it with you, and then I shall graff it with a medlar: then it will be the earliest fruit in the country: for you'll be rotten e'er you be half ripe, and that's the right virtue of the medlar.

*Touch.* You have said; but whether wisely or no, let the forest judge.

*Enter CELIA, reading a paper.*

*Ros.* Peace!

Here comes my sister, reading; stand aside.

*Cel.* Why should this desert silent be?

For it is unpeopled? No;

Tongues I'll hang on every tree,  
That shall civil ‡ sayings show.

Some, how brief the life of man

Runs his erring pilgrimage;

That the stretching of a span

Buckles in his sum of age.

Some, of violated vows

'Twixt the souls of friend and friend:

But upon the fairest boughs,

Or at every sentence † end,

Will I Rosalinda write;

Teaching all that read, to know

The quintessence of every sprite

Heaven would in little show.

Therefore heaven nature charged

That one body should be fill'd

With all graces wide enlarged:

Nature presently distill'd

Helen's cheek, but not her heart;

Cleopatra's majesty;

Alalanta's bitter part;

Sad Lucretia's modesty.

Thus Rosalind of many parts

By heavenly synod was devised;

Of many faces, eyes, and hearts;

To have the touches ‡ dearest prized.

Heaven would that she these gifts should

And I to live and die her slave. [Here,

*Ros.* O most gentle Jupiter!—what tedious homily of love have you wearied your parishioners withal, and never cry'd, *Have patience, good people!*

*Cel.* How now! back friends;—Shepherd, go off a little:—Go with him, sirrah.

*Touch.* Come, shepherd, let us make an honourable retreat: though not with bag and baggage, yet with scrip and scrippage.

*Exeunt CORIN and TOUCH.*

*Cel.* Didst thou hear these verses?

*Ros.* O, yes, I heard them all, and more too; for some of them had in them more feet than the verses would bear.

*Cel.* That's no matter; the feet might bear the verses.

*Ros.* Ay, but the feet were lame, and could not bear themselves without the verse, and therefore stood lamely in the verse.

*Cel.* But didst thou hear, without wondering how thy name should be hang'd and carved upon these trees?

*Ros.* I was seven of the nine days out of the wonder, before you came; for look here what I found on a palm-tree: I was never so be-rhymed since Pythagoras' time, that I was an Irish rat, which I can hardly remember.

*Cel.* Trow you, who hath done this?

*Ros.* Is it a man?

*Cel.* And a chain, that you once wore, about his neck: Change you colour?

*Ros.* I pr'ythee, who?

*Cel.* O lord, lord! it is a hard matter for friends to meet; but mountains may be removed with earthquakes, and so encounter.

*Ros.* Nay, but who is it?

*Cel.* Is it possible?

*Ros.* Nay, I pray thee now, with most petitionary vehemence, tell me who it is.

*Cel.* O wonderful, wonderful, and most wonderful wonderful, and yet again wonderful, and after that out of all whooping!!

*Ros.* Good my complexion! dost thou think, though I am caparison'd like a man I have a doublet and hose in my disposition? One inch of delay more is a South-sea off discovery. I pr'ythee, tell me, who is it? quickly and speak apace: I would thou couldst stammer, that thou might'st pour this concealed man out of thy mouth, as wine comes out of a narrow-mouth'd bottle; either too much at once, or none at all. I pr'ythee take the

\* Delineated. † Complexion, beauty. ‡ Grave, solemn. § Features. ¶ Out of all measure

cork out of thy mouth, that I may drink thy tidings.

*Cel.* So you may put a man in your belly.

*Ros.* Is he of God's making? What manner of man? Is his head worth a hat, or his chin worth a beard?

*Cel.* Nay, he hath but a little beard.

*Ros.* Why, God will send more, if the man will be thankful: let me stay the growth of his beard, if thou delay me not the knowledge of his chin.

*Cel.* It is young Orlando; that tripp'd up the wrestler's heels, and your heart, both in an instant.

*Ros.* Nay, but the devil take mocking; speak sad brow, and true maid\*.

*Cel.* P'faith, coz, 'tis he.

*Ros.* Orlando?

*Cel.* Orlando.

*Ros.* Alas the day! what shall I do with my doublet and hose?—What did he, when thou saw'st him? What said he? How look'd he? Wherein went he? What makes he here? Did he ask for me? Where remains he? How parted he with thee? and when shalt thou see him again? Answer me in one word.

*Cel.* You must borrow me Garagantua's† mouth first; 'tis a word too great for any mouth of this age's size: To say, ay, and no, to these particulars, is more than to answer in a catechism.

*Ros.* But doth he know that I am in this forest, and in man's apparel? Looks he as freshly as he did the day he wrestled?

*Cel.* It is as easy to count atomies‡, as to resolve the propositions of a lover:—but take a taste of my finding him, and relish it with a good observance. I found him under a tree, like a dropp'd acorn.

*Ros.* It may well be call'd Jove's tree, when it drops forth such fruit.

*Cel.* Give me audience, good madam.

*Ros.* Proceed.

*Cel.* There lay he, stretch'd along, like a wounded knight.

*Ros.* Though it be pity to see such a sight, it well becomes the ground.

*Cel.* Cry, holla! to thy tongue, I pry'thee; it curvets very unseasonably. He was furnish'd like a hunter.

*Ros.* O ominous! he comes to kill my heart.

*Cel.* I would sing my song without a burden; thou bring'st me out of tune.

*Ros.* Do you not know I am a woman? when I think, I must speak. Sweet, say on.

*Enter Orlando and Jaques.*

*Cel.* You bring me out:—Soft! comes he not here?

*Ros.* 'Tis he; slink by, and note him.

[*Cel. and Ros. retire.*]

*Jaq.* I thank you for your company; but, good faith, I had as lief have been myself alone.

*Orl.* And so had I; but yet, for fashion sake, I thank you too for your society.

*Jaq.* God be with you; let's meet as little as we can.

*Orl.* I do desire we may be better strangers.

*Jaq.* I pray you, mar no more trees with writing love-songs in their barks.

*Orl.* I pray you, mar no more of my verses with reading them ill-favour'dly.

*Jaq.* Rosalind is your love's name?

*Orl.* Yes, just.

*Jaq.* I do not like her name.

*Orl.* There was no thought of pleasing you, when she was christen'd.

*Jaq.* What stature is she of?

*Orl.* Just as high as my heart.

*Jaq.* You are full of pretty answers: Have you not been acquainted with goldsmiths' wives, and conn'd them out of rings?

*Orl.* Not so; but I answer you right painted cloth||, from whence you have studied your questions.

*Jaq.* You have a nimble wit; I think it was made of Atalanta's heels. Will you sit down with me? and we two will rail against our mistress the world, and all our misery.

*Orl.* I will chide no breather in the world, but myself; against whom I know most faults.

*Jaq.* The worst fault you have, is to be in love.

*Orl.* 'Tis a fault I will not change for your best virtue. I am weary of you.

*Jaq.* By my troth, I was seeking for a fool, when I found you.

*Orl.* He is drown'd in the brook; look but in, and you shall see him.

*Jaq.* There shall I see mine own figure.

*Orl.* Which I take to be either a fool or a cipher.

*Jaq.* I'll tarry no longer with you: fare-well, good signior love.

*Orl.* I am glad of your departure; adieu, good monsieur melancholy.

[*Exit JAQUES.—CELIA and ROSALIND come forward.*]

*Ros.* I will speak to him like a saucy lacquey, and under that habit play the knave with him.—Do you hear, forester?

*Orl.* Very well; What would you?

*Ros.* I pray you, what is't o'clock?

*Orl.* You should ask me what time o'day; there's no clock in the forest.

*Ros.* Then there is no true lover in the forest; else sighing every minute, and groaning every hour, would detect the lazy foot of time, as well as a clock.

*Orl.* And why not the swift foot of time? had not that been as proper?

*Ros.* By no means, sir: Time travels in divers paces with divers persons: I'll tell you who time ambles withal, who time trots withal, who time gallops withal, and who he stands still withal.

*Orl.* I pry'thee, who doth he trot withal?

*Ros.* Marry, he trots hard with a young maid, between the contract of her marriage, and the day it is solemnized: if the interim,

\* Speak seriously and honestly. † How was he dressed? ‡ The giant of Rabelais.

Motes

An allusion to the moral sentences on old tapestry hangings.



be but a se'nnight, time's pace is so hard that it seems the length of seven years.

*Orl.* Who ambles time withal?

*Ros.* With a priest that lacks Latin, and a rich man that hath not the gout: for the one sleeps easily, because he cannot study; and the other lives merrily, because he feels no pain: the one lacking the burden of lean and wasteful learning; the other knowing no burden of heavy tedious penury: These time ambles withal.

*Orl.* Who doth he gallop withal?

*Ros.* With a thief to the gallows: for though he go as softly as foot can fall, he thinks himself too soon there.

*Orl.* Who stays it still withal?

*Ros.* With lawyers in the vacation: for they sleep between term and term, and then they perceive not how time moves.

*Orl.* Where dwell you, pretty youth?

*Ros.* With this shepherdess, my sister; here in the skirts of the forest, like fringe upon a petticoat.

*Orl.* Are you native of this place?

*Ros.* As the coney, that you see dwell where she is kindled.

*Orl.* Your accent is something finer than you could purchase in so removed \* a dwelling.

*Ros.* I have been told so of many: but, indeed, an old religious uncle of mine taught me to speak, who was in his youth an in-land† man: one that knew courtship too well, for there he fell in love. I have heard him read many lectures against it; and I thank God, I am not a woman, to be touch'd with so many giddy offences as he hath generally tax'd their whole sex withal.

*Orl.* Can you remember any of the principal evils, that he laid to the charge of women?

*Ros.* There were none principal; they were all like one another, as half-pence are: every one fault seeming monstrous, till his fellow fault came to match it.

*Orl.* I pr'ythee, recount some of them.

*Ros.* No; I will not cast away my physic, but on those that are sick. There is a man haunts the forest, that abuses our young plants with carving Rosalind on their barks; hangs odes upon hawthorns, and elegies on brambles; all, forsooth, deifying the name of Rosalind; if I could meet that fancy-monger, I would give him some good counsel, for he seems to have the quotidian of love upon him.

*Orl.* I am he that is so love-shaked; I pray you, tell me your remedy.

*Ros.* There is none of my uncle's marks upon you: he taught me how to know a man in love; in which cage of rushes, I am sure, you are not prisoner.

*Orl.* What were his marks?

*Ros.* A lean cheek; which you have not: a blue eye, and sunken; which you have not: an unquestionable spirit‡; which you have not: a beard neglected; which you have not:—but I pardon you for that; for, simply,

your having § in beard is a younger brother's revenue:—Then your hose should be ungarter'd, your bonnet unbanded, your sleeve unbuttoned, your shoe untied, and every thing about you demonstrating a careless desolation. But you are no such man; you are rather point-device|| in your accoutrements; as loving yourself, than seeming the lover of any other.

*Orl.* Fair youth, I would I could make thee believe I love.

*Ros.* Me believe it? you may as soon make her that you love believe it; which, I warrant, she is apter to do, than to confess she does: that is one of the points in the which women still give the lie to their consciences. But, in good sooth, are you he that hangs the verses on the trees, wherein Rosalind is so admired?

*Orl.* I swear to thee, youth, by the white hand of Rosalind, I am that he, that unfortunate he.

*Ros.* But are you so much in love as your rhymes speak?

*Orl.* Neither rhyme nor reason can express how much.

*Ros.* Love is merely a madness; and, I tell you, deserves as well a dark house and a whip, as madmen do: and the reason why they are not so punished and cured, is, that the lunacy is so ordinary, that the whippers are in love too: Yet I profess curing it by counsel.

*Orl.* Did you ever cure any so?

*Ros.* Yes, one; and in this manner. He was to imagine me his love, his mistress; and I set him every day to woo me: At which time would I, being but a moonish¶ youth, grieve, be effeminate, changeable, longing, and liking; proud, fantastical, apish, shallow, inconstant, full of tears, full of smiles; for every passion something, and for no passion truly any thing, as boys and women are for the most part cattle of this colour: would now like him, now loath him; then entertain him, then forswear him; now weep for him, then spit at him; that I drave my suitor from his mad humour of love, to a living humour of madness; which was, to forswear the full stream of the world, and to live in a nook merely monastic: And thus I cured him; and this way will I take upon me to wash your liver as clean as a sound sheep's heart, that there shall not be one spot of love in't.

*Orl.* I would not be cured, youth.

*Ros.* I would cure you, if you would but call me Rosalind, and come every day to my cote, and woo me.

*Orl.* Now, by the faith of my love, I will; tell me where it is.

*Ros.* Go with me to it, and I'll show it you: and, by the way, you shall tell me where in the forest you live: Will you go?

*Orl.* With all my heart, good youth.

*Ros.* Nay, you must call me Rosalind;—Come, sister, will you go? [Exit.

\* Sequestered.

† Civilized.

‡ A spirit averse to conversation.

§ Estate.

|| Over-exact.

¶ Variable.

## SCENE III.

*Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY; JAGUES at a distance, observing them.*

*Touch.* Come apace, good Audrey; I will fetch up your goats, Audrey: And how, Audrey? am I the man yet? Doth my simple feature content you?

*Aud.* Your features! Lord warrant us! what features?

*Touch.* I am here with thee and thy goats, as the most capricious\* poet, honest Ovid, was among the Goths.

*Jaq.* O knowledge ill-inhabited†! worse than Jove in a thatch'd house! [*Aside.*

*Touch.* When a man's verses cannot be understood, nor a man's good wit seconded with the forward child, understanding, it strikes a man more dead than a great reckoning in a little room:—Truly, I would the gods had made thee poetical.

*Aud.* I do not know what poetical is: Is it honest in deed, and word? Is it a true thing?

*Touch.* No, truly; for the truest poetry is the most feigning; and lovers are given to poetry; and what they swear in poetry, may be said, as lovers, they do feign.

*Aud.* Do you wish then, that the gods had made me poetical?

*Touch.* I do, truly: for thou swear'st to me, thou art honest; now, if thou wert a poet, I might have some hope thou didst feign.

*Aud.* Would you not have me honest?

*Touch.* No truly, unless thou wert half-favour'd: for honesty coupled to beauty, is to have honey a sauce to sugar.

*Jaq.* A material fool! [*Aside.*

*Aud.* Well, I am not fair; and therefore I pray the gods make me honest!

*Touch.* Truly, and to cast away honesty upon a foul slut, to be put good meat into an unclean dish.

*Aud.* I am not a slut, though I thank the gods I am foul§.

*Touch.* Well, praised be the gods for thy foulness! sluttishness may come hereafter. But be it as it may be, I will marry thee: and to that end, I have been with Sir Oliver Mar-text, the vicar of the next village; who hath promised to meet me in this place of the forest, and to couple us.

*Jaq.* I would fain see this meeting. [*Aside.*

*Aud.* Well, the gods give us joy!

*Touch.* Amen. A man may, if he were of a fearful heart, stagger in this attempt; for here we have no temple but the wood, no assembly but horn-beasts. But what though? Courage! As horns are odious, they are necessary. It is said,—Many a man knows no end of his goods: right: many a man has good horns, and knows no end of them. Well, that is the dowry of his wife; 'tis none of his own getting. Horns? Even so:—Poor men

alone;—No, no; the noblest deer hath them as huge as the rascal ||. Is the single man therefore blessed? No: as a wall'd town is more worthier than a village, so is the forehead of a married man more honourable than the bare brow of a bachelor: and by how much defence¶ is better than no skill by so much is a horn more precious than to want.

*Enter Sir OLIVER MAR-TEXT.*

Here comes sir Oliver:—Sir Oliver Mar-text, you are well met: Will you despatch us here under this tree, or shall we go with you to your chapel?

*Sir Oli.* Is there none here to give the woman?

*Touch.* I will not take her on gift of any man.

*Sir Oli.* Truly, she must be given, or the marriage is not lawful.

*Jaq.* [*Discovering himself.*] Proceed, proceed; I'll give her.

*Touch.* Good even, good master *What ye call't*: How do you, sir? You are very well met: God!id you\*\* for your last company: I am very glad to see you:—Even a toy in hand here, sir:—Nay; pray, be covered.

*Jaq.* Will you be married, motley?

*Touch.* As the ox hath his bow †, sir, the horse his curb, and the falcon her bells, so man hath his desires: and as pigeons bill, so wedlock would be nibbling.

*Jaq.* And will you, being a man of your breeding, be married under a bush, like a beggar? Get you to church, and have a good priest that can tell you what marriage is: this fellow will but join you together as they join wainscot; then one of you will prove a shrunk pannel, and, like green timber, warp, warp.

*Touch.* I am not in the mind but I were better to be married of him than of another: for he is not like to marry me well; and not being well married, it will be a good excuse for me hereafter to leave my wife. [*Aside.*

*Jaq.* Go thou with me, and let me counsel thee.

*Touch.* Come, sweet Audrey; We must be married, or we must live in bawdry, Farewell, good master Oliver!

Not—O sweet Oliver,

O brave Oliver,

Leave me not behi' thee;

But—Wind away,

Begone, I say,

I will not to wedding wi' thee.

[*Exeunt JAQ. TOUCH. and AUDREY.*

*Sir Oli.* 'Tis no matter; ne'er a fantastical knave of them all shall flout me out of my calling. [*Exit.*

SCENE IV. *The same. Before a Cottage.*  
*Enter ROSALIND and CELIA.*

*Ros.* Never talk to me, I will weep.

\* Lascivious.

† Ill-lodged.

‡ A fool with matter in him.

§ Homely.

|| Lean deer are called rascal deer.

¶ The art of fencing.

\*\* God reward you.

†† Yoke.

*Cel.* Do, I pry thee; but yet have the grace to consider, that tears do not become a man.

*Ros.* But have I not cause to weep?

*Cel.* As good cause as one would desire; therefore weep.

*Ros.* His very hair is of the dissembling colour.

*Cel.* Something browner than Judas's: marry, his kisses are Judas's own children.

*Ros.* P'faith, his hair is of a good colour.

*Cel.* An excellent colour: your chestnut was ever the only colour.

*Ros.* And his kissing is as full of sanctity as the touch of holy bread.

*Cel.* He hath bought a pair of cast lips of Diana: a nun of winter's sisterhood kisses not more religiously; the very ice of chastity is in them.

*Ros.* But why did he swear he would come this morning, and comes not?

*Cel.* Nay certainly, there is no truth in him.

*Ros.* Do you think so?

*Cel.* Yes: I think he is not a pick-purse, nor a horse-stealer; but for his verity in love, I do think him as concave as a cover'd goblet, or a worm eaten nut.

*Ros.* Not true in love?

*Cel.* Yes, when he is in; but, I think he is not in.

*Ros.* You have heard him swear downright, he was.

*Cel.* Was is not is: besides, the oath of a lover is no stronger than the word of a tapster; they are both the confirmers of false reckonings: He attends here in the forest on the duke your father.

*Ros.* I met the duke yesterday, and had much question\* with him: He asked me, of what parentage I was; I told him, of as good as he; so he laugh'd, and let me go. But what talk we of fathers, when there is such a man as Orlando?

*Cel.* O, that's a brave man! he writes brave verses, speaks brave words, swears brave oaths, and breaks them bravely, quite reverse, athwart the heart of his lover; as a puny tilter, that spurs his horse but on one side, breaks his staff like a noble goose: but all's brave, that youth mounts, and folly guides:—Who comes here?

*Enter CORIN.*

*Cor.* Mistress, and master, you have oft inquired

After the shepherd that complain'd of love;  
Who you saw sitting by me on the turf,  
Praising the proud disdainful shepherdess  
That was his mistress.

*Cel.* Well, and what of him?

*Cor.* If you will see a pageant truly play'd,  
Between the pale complexion of true love  
And the red glow of scorn and proud disdain,  
Go hence a little, and I shall conduct you,  
If you will mark it.

*Ros.* O, come, let us remove;  
The sight of lovers feedeth those in love:—

Bring us unto this sight, and you shall say  
I'll prove a busy actor in their play. [*Exeunt*]

# SCENE V. Another part of the Forest.

*Enter SILVIUS and PHEBE.*

*Sil.* Sweet Phebe, do not scorn me; do not, Phebe:

Say, that you love me not; but say not so  
In bitterness. The common executioner,  
Whose heart the accustom'd sight of death  
makes hard,

Falls not the axe upon the humbled neck,  
But first begs pardon; Will you sterner be  
Than he that dies and lives by bloody drops?

*Enter ROSALIND, CELIA, and CORIN, at a distance.*

*Phe.* I would not be thy executioner;  
I fly thee, for I would not injure thee.  
Thou tell'st me, there is murder in mine eye  
'Tis pretty, sure, and very probable, [things  
That eyes,—that are the frail'st and softest  
Who shut their coward gates on atomies,—  
Should be call'd tyrants, butchers, murderers:]  
Now I do frown on thee with all my heart;  
And, if mine eyes can wound, now let them  
kill thee;

Now counterfeit to swoon; why now fall down;  
Or, if thou canst not, O, for shame, for shame,  
Lie not, to say mine eyes are murderers.  
Now show the wound mine eye hath made  
in thee:

Scratch thee but with a pin, and there remains  
Some scar of it; lean but upon a rush,  
The cicatrice and capable impressure  
Thy palm some moment keeps: but now  
mine eyes,

Which I have darted at thee, hurt thee not;  
Nor, I am sure, there is no force in eyes  
That can do hurt.

*Sil.* O dear Phebe,

If ever, (as that ever may be near,) [of fancy †,  
You meet in some fresh cheek the power  
Then shall you know the wounds invisible  
That love's keen arrows make.

*Phe.* But, till that time,

Come not thou near me: and, when that  
time comes,

Afflict me with thy mocks, pity me not;  
As, till that time, I shall not pity thee.

*Ros.* And why, I pray you? [*Advancing.*]

Who might be your mother,  
That you insult, exult, and all at once,  
Over the wretched? What though you have  
more beauty,

(As, by my faith, I see no more in you  
Than without candle may go dark to bed,)  
Must you be therefore proud and pitiless?  
Why, what means this? Why do you look  
on me?

I see no more in you, than in the ordinary  
Of nature's sale-work:—O! my little life!  
I think, she means to tangle my eyes too:—  
No, 'faith, proud mistress, hope not after it;  
'Tis not your ink-brows, your black-silk hair,  
Your bugle eye-balls, nor your cheek of cream,  
That can entame my spirits to your worship.—

\* Conversation.

† Mistress.

‡ Love.



You foolish shepherd, wherefore do you follow her,  
 Like foggy south, puffing with wind and rain ?  
 You are a thousand times a properer man,  
 Than she a woman : 'Tis such fools as you,  
 That maketh the world full of ill-favour'd children :  
 'Tis not her glass, but you, that flatters her ;  
 And out of you she sees herself more proper,  
 Than any of her lineaments can show her.—  
 But, mistress, know yourself ; down on your knees,  
 And thank heaven, fasting, for a good man's  
 For I must tell you friendly in your ear,—  
 Sell when you can ; you are not for all markets ;  
 Cry the man mercy ; love him ; take his offer ;  
 Foul is most foul, being foul to be a scoffer.  
 So take her to thee, shepherd :—fare you well.

*Phe.* Sweet youth, I pray you, chide a year together ;

I had rather hear you chide, than this man woo.

*Ros.* He's fallen in love with her foulness, and she'll fall in love with my anger : If it be so, as fast as she answers thee with frowning looks, I'll sauce her with bitter words.—Why look you so upon me ?

*Phe.* For no ill will I bear you.

*Ros.* I pray you, do not fall in love with me, For I am falser than vows made in wine : Besides, I like you not : If you will know my house,

'Tis at the tuft of olives, here hard by :—  
 Will you go, sister ?—Shepherd, ply her hard :—  
 Come, sister :—Shepherdess, look on him better, [see,

And be not proud : though all the world could  
 None could be so abus'd in sight as he.

Come, to our flock.

[*Exeunt ROSALIND, CELIA, and CORIN.*]

*Phe.* Dead shepherd ! now I find thy saw of might ; [sight ?

*Who ever loved, that loved not at first*

*Sil.* Sweet Phebe,—

*Phe.* Ha ! what say'st thou, Silvius ?

*Sil.* Sweet Phebe, pity me. [Silvius.

*Phe.* Why, I am sorry for thee, gentle

*Sil.* Wherever sorrow is, relief would be ;

If you do sorrow at my grief in love,  
 By giving love, your sorrow and my grief  
 Were both extermined. [neighbourly ?

*Phe.* Thou hast my love ; Is not that

*Sil.* I would have you.

*Phe.* Why, that were covetousness.

Silvius, the time was, that I hated thee ;  
 And yet it is not, that I bear thee love :

But since that thou canst talk of love so well,  
 Thy company, which erst was irksome to me,  
 I will endure ; and I'll employ thee too :  
 But do not look for further recompense,  
 Than thine own gladness that thou art employ'd.

*Sil.* So holy, and so perfect is my love,  
 And I in such a poverty of grace,  
 That I shall think it a most plenteous crop  
 To glean the broken ears after the man [then  
 That the main harvest reaps : loose now and  
 A scatter'd smile, and that I'll live upon.

*Phe.* Know'st thou the youth that spoke to me ere while ?

*Sil.* Not very well, but I have met him oft ;  
 And he hath bought the cottage, and the bounds,  
 That the old carlot \* once was master of.

*Phe.* Think not I love him, though I ask for him ;

'Tis but a peevish † boy :—yet he talks well ;—  
 But what care I for words ? yet words do well,  
 When he that speaks them pleasez those that  
 It is a pretty youth :—not very pretty :—[hear.  
 But, sure, he's proud ; and yet his pride be-  
 comes him : [him

He'll make a proper man : The best thing in  
 Is his complexion ; and faster than his tongue  
 Did make offence, his eye did heal it up.  
 He is not tall ; yet for his years he's tall :  
 His leg is but so so ; and yet 'tis well ;

There was a pretty redness in his lip ;  
 A little riper and more lusty red [difference  
 Than that mix'd in his cheek ; 'twas just the  
 Betwixt the constant red, and mingled damask.  
 There be some women, Silvius, had they  
 mark'd him

In parcels as I did, would have gone near  
 To fall in love with him : but, for my part,  
 I love him not, nor hate him not ; and yet  
 I have more cause to hate him than to love  
 For what had he to do to chide at me ? [him :  
 He said, mine eyes were black, and my hair  
 black ;

And, now I am remember'd, scorn'd at me :  
 I marvel, why I answer'd not again :  
 But that's all one ; omittance is no quittance.  
 I'll write to him a very taunting letter,  
 And thou shalt bear it : Wilt thou, Silvius ?

*Sil.* Phebe, with all my heart.

*Phe.* I'll write it straight ;  
 The matter's in my head, and in my heart :  
 I will be bitter with him, and passing short :  
 Go with me, Silvius.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter ROSALIND, CELIA, and JACQUES.*

*Jaq.* I pr'ythee, pretty youth, let me be better acquainted with thee.

*Ros.* They say, you are a melancholy fellow.

*Jaq.* I am so ; I do love it better than laughing.

*Ros.* Those, that are in extremity of either, are abominable fellows ; and betray themselves to every modern censure, worse than drunkards.

\* Peasant.

† Silly.

*Jaq.* Why, 'tis good to be sad and say nothing.

*Ros.* Why then, 'tis good to be a post.

*Jaq.* I have neither the scholar's melancholy, which is emulation; nor the musician's, which is fantastical; nor the courtier's, which is proud; nor the soldier's, which is ambitious; nor the lawyer's, which is politic; nor the lady's, which is nice\*; nor the lover's, which is all these: but it is a melancholy of mine own, compounded of many simples, extracted from many objects: and, indeed, the sundry contemplation of my travels, in which my often rumination wraps me, is a most humorous sadness.

*Ros.* A traveller! By my faith, you have great reason to be sad: I fear, you have sold your own lands, to see other men's; then, to have seen much, and to have nothing, is to have rich eyes and poor hands.

*Jaq.* Yes, I have gained my experience.

*Enter ORLANDO.*

*Ros.* And your experience makes you sad: I had rather have a fool to make me merry, than experience to make me sad; and to travel for it too.

*Orl.* Good-day, and happiness, dear Rosalind!

*Jaq.* Nay then, God be wi' you, an you talk in blank verse. *[Exit.]*

*Ros.* Farewell, monsieur traveller: Look, you lip, and wear strange suits; disable all the benefits of your own country; be out of love with your nativity, and almost chide God for making you that countenance you are; or I will scarce think you have swam in a gondola.—Why, how now, Orlando! where have you been all this while? You a lover?—An you serve me such another trick, never come in my sight more.

*Orl.* My fair Rosalind, I come within an hour of my promise.

*Ros.* Break an hour's promise in love? He that will divide a minute into a thousand parts, and break but a part of the thousandth part of a minute in the affairs of love, it may be said of him, that Cupid hath clapp'd him o' the shoulder, but I warrant him heart-whole.

*Orl.* Pardon me, dear Rosalind.

*Ros.* Nay, an you be so tardy, come no more in my sight: I had as lief be woo'd of a snail.

*Orl.* Of a snail?

*Ros.* Ay, of a snail; for though he comes slowly, he carries his house on his head; a better jointure, I think, than you can make a woman: Besides, he brings his destiny with him.

*Orl.* What's that?

*Ros.* Why, horns; which such as you are fain to be beholden to your wives for: but he comes armed in his fortune, and prevents the slander of his wife.

*Orl.* Virtue is no horn-maker; and my Rosalind is virtuous.

*Ros.* And I am your Rosalind.

*Cel.* It pleases him to call you so; but he hath a Rosalind of a better leer† than you.

*Ros.* Come, woo me, woo me; for now I am in a holiday humour, and like enough to consent: What would you say to me now, an I were your very Rosalind?

*Orl.* I would kiss, before I spoke.

*Ros.* Nay, you were better speak first; and when you were gravelled for lack of matter, you might take occasion to kiss. Very good orators, when they are out, they will spit; and for lovers, lacking (God warn us!) matter, the cleanliest shift is to kiss.

*Orl.* How if the kiss be denied?

*Ros.* Then she puts you to entreaty, and there begins new matter.

*Orl.* Who could be out, being before his beloved mistress?

*Ros.* Marry, that should you, if I were your mistress; or I should think my honesty ranker than my wit.

*Orl.* What, of my suit?

*Ros.* Not out of your apparel, and yet out of your suit. Am not I your Rosalind?

*Orl.* I take some joy to say you are, because I would be talking of her.

*Ros.* Well, in her person, I say—I will not have you.

*Orl.* Then, in mine own person, I die.

*Ros.* No, faith, die by attorney. The poor world is almost six thousand years old, and in all this time there was not any man died in his own person, *videlicet*, in a love-cause. Troilus had his brains dashed out with a Grecian club; yet he did what he could to die before; and he is one of the patterns of love. Leander, he would have lived many a fair year, though Hero had turned nun, if it had not been for a hot midsummer night: for, good youth, he went but forth to wash him in the Hellespont, and, being taken with the cramp, was drowned; and the foolish chroniclers of that age found it was—Hero of Sestos. But these are all lies; men have died from time to time, and worms have eaten them, but not for love.

*Orl.* I would not have my right Rosalind of this mind; for, I protest, her frown might kill me.

*Ros.* By this hand, it will not kill a fly: But come, now I will be your Rosalind in a more coming-on disposition; and ask me what you will, I will grant it.

*Orl.* Then love me, Rosalind.

*Ros.* Yes, faith will I, Fridays, and Saturdays, and all.

*Orl.* And wilt thou have me?

*Ros.* Ay, and twenty such.

*Orl.* What say'st thou?

*Ros.* Are you not good?

*Orl.* I hope so.

*Ros.* Why then, can one desire too much of a good thing?—Come, sister, you shall be the priest, and marry us.—Give me your hand, Orlando:—What do you say, sister?

*Orl.* Pray thee, marry us.

*Cel.* I cannot say the words.

\* Trifling.

† Undervalne.

‡ Complexion.

*Ros.* You must begin,—*Will you, Orlando,*—  
*Cel.* Go to:—Will you, Orlando, have to wife this Rosalind?

*Orl.* I will.

*Ros.* Ay, but when?

*Orl.* Why now; as fast as she can marry us.

*Ros.* Then you must say,—*I take thee, Rosalind, for wife.*

*Orl.* I take thee, Rosalind, for wife.

*Ros.* I might ask you for your commission; but,—I do take thee, Orlando, for my husband: There a girl goes before the priest; and, certainly, a woman's thought runs before her actions.

*Orl.* So do all thoughts; they are winged.

*Ros.* Now tell me, how long you would have her, after you have possessed her.

*Orl.* For ever, and a day.

*Ros.* Say a day, without the ever: No, no, Orlando; men are April when they woo, December when they wed: maids are May when they are maids, but the sky changes when they are wives. I will be more jealous of thee than a Barbary cock-pigeon over his hen; more clamorous than a parrot against rain; more new-fangled than an ape; more giddy in my desires than a monkey: I will weep for nothing, like Diana in the fountain, and I will do that when you are disposed to be merry; I will laugh like a hyen, and that when thou art inclined to sleep.

*Orl.* But will my Rosalind do so?

*Ros.* By my life, she will do as I do

*Orl.* O, but she is wise.

*Ros.* Or else she could not have the wit to do this: the wiser, the waywarder: Make the doors \* upon a woman's wit, and it will out at the casement; shut that, and 'twill out at the key-hole; stop that, 'twill fly with the smoke out at the chimney.

*Orl.* A man that had a wife with such a wit, he might say,—*Wit, whither wilt?*

*Ros.* Nay, you might keep that check for it, till you met your wife's wit going to your neighbour's bed.

*Orl.* And what wit could wit have to excuse that?

*Ros.* Marry, to say,—she came to seek you there. You shall never take her without her answer, unless you take her without her tongue. O, that woman that cannot make her fault her husband's occasion, let her never nurse her child herself, for she will breed it like a fool.

*Orl.* For these two hours, Rosalind, I will leave thee.

*Ros.* Alas, dear love, I cannot lack thee two hours.

*Orl.* I must attend the duke at dinner; by two o'clock I will be with thee again.

*Ros.* Ay, go your ways, go your ways;—I knew what you would prove; my friends told me as much, and I thought no less:—that flattering tongue of yours won me:—'tis but one cast away, and so,—come death.—Two o'clock is your hour?

*Orl.* Ay, sweet Rosalind.

*Ros.* By my troth, and in good earnest, and so God mend me, and by all pretty oaths that are not dangerous, if you break one jot of your promise, or come one minute behind your hour, I will think you the most pathetic break-promise, and the most hollow lover, and the most unworthy of her you call Rosalind, that may be chosen out of the gross band of the unfaithful: therefore beware my censure, and keep your promise.

*Orl.* With no less religion, than if thou wert indeed my Rosalind: So, adieu.

*Ros.* Well, time is the old justice that examines all such offenders, and let time try: Adieu! [*Exit ORLANDO.*]

*Cel.* You have simply misused our sex in your love-prate: we must have your doublet and hose plucked over your head, and show the world what the bird hath done to her own nest.

*Ros.* O coz, coz, coz, my pretty little coz, that thou didst know how many fathom deep I am in love! But it cannot be sounded; my affection hath an unknown bottom, like the bay of Portugal.

*Cel.* Or rather, bottomless; that as fast as you pour affection in, it runs out.

*Ros.* No, that same wicked bastard of Venus, that was begot of thought†, conceived of spleen, and born of madness; that blind rascally boy, that abuses every one's eyes, because his own are out, let him be judge, how deep I am in love:—I'll tell thee Aliena, I cannot be out of the sight of Orlando:—I'll go find a shadow, and sigh till he come.

*Cel.* And I'll sleep.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *Another part of the Forest.*  
*Enter JACQUES and Lords, in the habit of Foresters.*

*Jaq.* Which is he that killed the deer?

1 *Lord.* Sir, it was I.

*Jaq.* Let's present him to the duke, like a Roman conqueror; and it would do well to set the deer's horns upon his head, for a branch of victory:—Have you no song, forester, for this purpose?

2 *Lord.* Yes, sir.

*Jaq.* Sing it; 'tis no matter how it be in tune, so it make noise enough.

SONG.

1. *What shall he have, that kill'd the deer?*

2. *His leather skin, and horns to wear.*

1. *Then sing him home:*

*Take thou no scorn, to wear the } The rest shall*

*horn;* *It was a crest ere thou wast born;* *hear this*

1. *Thy father's father wore it;* *burden.*

2. *And thy father bore it:*

All. *The horn, the horn, the lusty horn, Is not a thing to laugh to scorn.*

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The Forest.*

*Enter ROSALIND and CELIA.*

*Ros.* How say you now? Is it not past two o'clock? and here much Orlando!

\* Bar the doors.

† Melancholy.



*Cel.* I warrant you, with pure love, and troubled brain, he hath ta'en his bow and arrows, and is gone forth—to sleep: Look, who comes here.

*Enter SILVIUS.*

*Sil.* My errand is to you, fair youth;—

My gentle Phebe bid me give you this:

[*Giving a letter.*]

I know not the contents; but, as I guess, By the stern brow, and waspish action Which she did use as she was writing of it, It bears an angry tenour: pardon me, I am but as a guiltless messenger. [letter,

*Ros.* Patience herself would startle at this And play the swaggerer; bear this, bear all: She says, I am not fair; that I lack manners; She calls me proud; and, that she could not love me

Were man as rare as phoenix; Od's my will! Her love is not the hare that I do hunt:

Why writes she so to me?—Well, shepherd, This is a letter of your own device. [well,

*Sil.* No, I protest, I know not the contents; Phebe did write it.

*Ros.* Come, come, you are a fool, And turn'd into the extremity of love.

I saw her hand: she has a leathern hand, A freestone-colour'd hand; I verily did think That her old gloves were on, but 'twas her hands;

She has a huswife's hand: but that's no matter: I say, she never did invent this letter:

This is a man's invention, and his hand.

*Sil.* Sure, it is hers.

*Ros.* Why, 'tis a boisterous and cruel style, A style for challengers; why, she defies me, Like Turk to Christian: woman's gentle brain Could not drop forth such giant-rude invention, Such Ethiop words, blacker in their effect Than in their countenance:—Will you hear the letter?

*Sil.* So please you, for I never heard it yet; Yet heard too much of Phebe's cruelty.

*Ros.* She Phebes me: Mark how the tyrant writes. [Reads.

*Art thou god to shepherd turn'd,*

*That a maiden's heart hath burn'd?—*

Can a woman rail thus?

*Sil.* Call you this railing?

*Ros.* Why, thy godhead laid apart,

*Warr'st thou with a woman's heart?*

Did you ever hear such railing?—

*Whiles the eye of man did woo me,*

*That could do no vengeance\* to me.—*

Meaning me a beast.—

*If the scorn of your bright eyne†*

*Have power to raise such love in mine,*

*Alack, in me what strange effect*

*Would they work in mild aspect?*

*Whiles you chid me, I did love;*

*How then might your prayers move?*

*He, that brings this love to thee,*

*Little knows this love in me:*

*And by him seal up thy mind:*

*Whether that thy youth and kind‡*

*Will the faithful offer take*  
*Of me, and all that I can make;*  
*Or else by him my love deny,*  
*And then I'll study how to die.*

*Sil.* Call you this chiding?

*Cel.* Alas, poor shepherd!

*Ros.* Do you pity him? no, he deserves no pity.—Wilt thou love such a woman?—What to make thee an instrument, and play false strains upon thee! not to be endured!—Well, go your way to her, (for I see, love hath made thee a tame snake,) and say this to her;—That if she love me, I charge her to love thee: if she will not, I will never have her, unless thou entreat for her.—If you be a true lover, hence, and not a word; for here comes more company. [Exit SILVIUS.

*Enter OLIVER.*

*Oli.* Good-morrow, fair ones: Pray you, if you know

Where, in the purlieus § of this forest, stands A sheep-cote, fenced about with olive trees!

*Cel.* West of this place, down in the neighbour bottom,

The rank of osiers, by the murmuring stream, Left on your right hand, brings you to the place;

But at this hour the house doth keep itself, There's none within.

*Oli.* If that an eye may profit by a tongue, Then I should know you by description; Such garments, and such years: *The boy is fair, Of female favour, and bestows himself Like a ripe sister: but the woman low, And browner than her brother.* Are not you The owner of the house I did inquire for?

*Cel.* It is no boast, being ask'd, to say, we are. [both;

*Oli.* Orlando doth commend him to you And to that youth, he calls his Rosalind, He sends this bloody napkin||; Are you he?

*Ros.* I am: What must we understand by this? [me

*Oli.* Some of my shame; if you will know of What man I am, and how, and why, and where This handkerchief was stain'd.

*Cel.* I pray you, tell it.

*Oli.* When last the young Orlando parted He left a promise to return again [from you, Within an hour; and, pacing through the forest, Chewing the food of sweet and bitter fancy, Lo, what befel! he threw his eye aside, And, mark, what object did present itself! Under an oak, whose boughs were moss'd with And high top bald with dry antiquity, [age, A wretched ragged man, o'ergrown with hair, Lay sleeping on his back: about his neck A green and gilded snake had wreath'd itself, Who, with her head, nimble in threats, approach'd

The opening of his mouth; but suddenly Seeing Orlando, it unlink'd itself, And with indented glides did slip away Into a bush: under which bush's shade A lioness, with udders all drawn dry,

\* Mischief.

† Eyes.

‡ Nature.

§ Environs of a forest.

|| Handkerchief.

Lay couching, head on ground, with cat-like watch,

When that the sleeping man should stir; for  
The royal disposition of that beast, [’tis  
To prey on nothing that doth seem as dead:  
This seen, Orlando did approach the man,  
And found it was his brother, his elder brother.

*Cel.* O, I have heard him speak of that same brother.

And he did render \* him the most unnatural  
That lived ’mongst men.

*Oli.* And well he might so do,  
For well I know he was unnatural.

*Ros.* But, to Orlando;—Did he leave him  
Food to the suck’d and hungry lioness? [there,

*Oli.* Twice did he turn his back, and purposed  
But kindness, nobler ever than revenge, [so:  
And nature, stronger than his just occasion,  
Made him give battle to the lioness, [ling†  
Who quickly fell before him; in which hurt-  
From miserable slumber I awaked.

*Cel.* Are you his brother?

*Ros.* Was it you he rescued?

*Cel.* Was’t you that did so oft contrive to  
kill him?

*Oli.* ’Twas I; but ’tis not I: I do not shame  
To tell you what I was, since my conversion  
So sweetly tastes, being the thing I am.

*Ros.* But, for the bloody napkin?—

*Oli.* By, and by.

When from the first to last, betwixt us two,  
Tears our recountments had most kindly bathed,  
As, how I came into that desert place;—  
In brief he led me to the gentle duke,  
Who gave me fresh array, and entertainment,  
Committing me unto my brother’s love;  
Who led me instantly unto his cave,  
There stripp’d himself, and here upon his arm  
The lioness had torn some flesh away, [fainted,  
Which all this while had bled; and now he

And cried, in fainting, upon Rosalind.  
Brief, I recover’d him; bound up his wound;  
And, after some small space, being strong at  
He sent me hither, stranger as I am, [heart,  
To tell this story, that you might excuse  
His broken promise, and to give this napkin,  
Dyed in this blood; unto the shepherd youth  
That he in sport doth call his Rosalind.

*Cel.* Why, how now, Ganymede? sweet  
Ganymede? [ROSALIND faints.

*Oli.* Many will swoon when they do look  
on blood. [mede!

*Cel.* There is more in it:—Cousin—Gany.

*Oli.* Look, he recovers.

*Ros.* I would, I were at home.

*Cel.* We’ll lead you thither:—

I pray you, will you take him by the arm?

*Oli.* Be of good cheer, youth:—You a man?—  
You lack a man’s heart.

*Ros.* I do so, I confess it. Ah, sir, a body  
would think this was well counterfeited: I  
pray you, tell your brother how well I coun-  
terfeited.—Heigh ho!—

*Oli.* This was not counterfeited; there is too  
great testimony in your complexion, that it  
was a passion of earnest.

*Ros.* Counterfeit, I assure you.

*Oli.* Well then, take a good heart, and coun-  
terfeit to be a man.

*Ros.* So I do; but, i’faith I should have  
been a woman by right.

*Cel.* Come, you look paler and paler;  
pray you, draw homewards:—Good sir, go  
with us.

*Oli.* That will I, for I must bear answer  
back: How you excuse my brother, Rosalind!

*Ros.* I shall devise something: But, I pray  
you, commend my counterfeiting to him:—  
Will you go?

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY.*

*Touch.* We shall find a time, Audrey; pa-  
tience, gentle Audrey.

*Aud.* ’Faith, the priest was good enough,  
for all the old gentleman’s saying.

*Touch.* A most wicked sir Oliver, Audrey,  
a most vile Mar-text. But, Audrey, there is  
a youth here in the forest lays claim to you.

*Aud.* Ay, I know who ’tis, he hath no inter-  
est in me in the world: here comes the man  
you mean.

*Enter WILLIAM.*

*Touch.* It is meat and drink to me to see a  
clowr. By my troth, we that have good wits,  
have much to answer for: we shall be flout-  
ing; we cannot hold.

*Will.* Good even, Audrey.

*Aud.* God ye good even, William.

*Will.* And good even to you, sir.

*Touch.* Good even, gentle friend: Cover  
thy head, cover thy head; nay, pr’ythee, be  
covered. How old are you, friend.

*Will.* Five and twenty, sir.

*Touch.* A ripe age: Is thy name, William?

*Will.* William, sir.

*Touch.* A fair name: Wast born i’ the  
forest here?

*Will.* Ay, sir, I thank God.

*Touch.* *Thank God*;—a good answer: Art  
rich?

*Will.* ’Faith, sir, so, so.

*Touch.* *So, so*, is good, very good, very ex-  
cellent good:—and yet it is not; it is but so  
so. Art thou wise?

*Will.* Ay, sir, I have a pretty wit.

*Touch.* Why, thou say’st well. I do now  
remember a saying; *The fool doth think he  
is wise, but the wise man knows himself to  
be a fool.* The heathen philosopher, when he  
had a desire to eat a grape, would open his

lips when he put it into his mouth; meaning thereby, that grapes were made to eat, and lips to open. You do love this maid?

*Will.* I do, sir.

*Touch.* Give me your hand: Art thou learned?

*Will.* No, sir.

*Touch.* Then learn this of me; To have, is to have: For it is a figure in rhetoric, that drink, being poured out of a cup into a glass, by filling the one doth empty the other: For all your writers do consent, that *ipse* is he; now you are not *ipse*, for I am he.

*Will.* Which he, sir?

*Touch.* He, sir, that must marry this woman: Therefore, you clown, abandon,—which is in the vulgar, leave,—the society,—which in the boorish is, company,—of this female,—which in the common is, woman, which together is, abandon the society of this female; or, clown, thou perishest; or, to thy better understanding, diest; to wit, I kill thee, make thee away, translate thy life into death, thy liberty into bondage: I will deal in poison with thee, or in bastinado, or in steel; I will bandy with thee in faction; I will o'er run thee with policy; I will kill thee a hundred and fifty ways; therefore tremble, and depart.

*Aud.* Do, good William.

*Will.* God rest you merry, sir. [Exit.]

*Enter CORIN.*

*Cor.* Our master and mistress seek you; come, away, away.

*Touch.* Trip, Audrey, trip, Audrey;—I attend, I attend. [Eleunt.]

## SCENE II. *The same.*

*Enter ORLANDO and OLIVER.*

*Orl.* Is't possible, that on so little acquaintance you should like her? that, but seeing, you should love her? and, loving, woo? and, wooing, she should grant? and will you persevere to enjoy her?

*Oli.* Neither call the giddiness of it in question, the poverty of her, the small acquaintance, my sudden wooing, nor her sudden consenting; but say with me, I love Aliena; say with her, that she loves me; consent with both, that we may enjoy each other: it shall be to your good; for my father's house, and all the revenue that was old sir Rowland's, will I estate upon you, and here live and die a shepherd.

*Enter ROSALIND.*

*Orl.* You have my consent. Let your wedding be to-morrow: thither will I invite the duke, and all his contented followers: Go you, and prepare Aliena; for, look you, here comes my Rosalind.

*Ros.* God save you, brother.

*Oli.* And you, fair sister.

*Ros.* O, my dear Orlando, how it grieves me to see thee wear thy heart in a scarf.

*Orl.* It is my arm.

*Ros.* I thought, thy heart had been wounded with the claws of a lion.

*Orl.* Wounded it is, but with the eyes of a lady.

*Ros.* Did your brother tell you how I counterfeited to swoon, when he showed me your handkerchief?

*Orl.* Ay, and greater wonders than that.

*Ros.* O, I know where you are:—Nay, 'tis true: there was never any thing so sudden, but the fight of two rams, and Cæsar's thrasonical brag of—I came, saw, and overcame: For your brother and my sister no sooner met, but they looked; no sooner looked, but they loved; no sooner loved, but they sighed; no sooner sighed, but they asked one another the reason; no sooner knew the reason, but they sought the remedy: and in these degrees have they made a pair of stairs to marriage, which they will climb incontinent, or else be incontinent before marriage: they are in the very wrath of love, and they will together; clubs cannot part them.

*Orl.* They shall be married to-morrow: and I will bid the duke to the nuptial. But, O, how bitter a thing it is to look into happiness through another man's eyes! By so much the more shall I to-morrow be at the height of heart-heaviness, by how much I shall think my brother happy, in having what he wishes for.

*Ros.* Why then, to-morrow I cannot serve your turn for Rosalind?

*Orl.* I can live no longer by thinking.

*Ros.* I will weary you no longer then with idle talking. Know of me, then, (for now I speak to some purpose,) that I know you are a gentleman of good conceit: I speak not this, that you should bear a good opinion of my knowledge, inasmuch, I say, I know you are; neither do I labour for a greater esteem than may in some little measure draw a belief from you, to do yourself good, and not to grace me. Believe, then, if you please, that I can do strange things: I have, since I was three years old, conversed with a magician, most profound in this art, and yet not damnable. If you do love Rosalind so near the heart as your gesture cries it out, when your brother marries Aliena, shall you marry her: I know into what straits of fortune she is driven; and it is not impossible to me, if it appear not inconvenient to you, to set her before your eyes to-morrow, human as she is, and without any danger.

*Orl.* Speakest thou in sober meanings?

*Ros.* By my life, I do; which I tender dearly, though I say I am a magician: Therefore, put you in your best array, bid your friends: for if you will be married to-morrow, you shall; and to Rosalind if you will.

*Enter SILVIUS and PHEBE.*

Look, here comes a lover of mine, and a lover of hers.

*Phe.* Youth, you have done me much ungentleness,

To show the letter that I writ to you.

*Ros.* I care not, if I have: it is my study, To seem despiteful and ungentle to you;



You are there follow'd by a faithful shepherd ;  
Look upon him, love him ; he worships you.

*Phe.* Good shepherd, tell this youth what 'tis to love.

*Sil.* It is to be all made of sighs and tears —  
And so am I for Phebe.

*Phe.* And I for Ganymede.

*Orl.* And I for Rosalind.

*Ros.* And I for no woman.

*Sil.* It is to be all made of faith and service ; —  
And so am I for Phebe.

*Phe.* And I for Ganymede.

*Orl.* And I for Rosalind.

*Ros.* And I for no woman.

*Sil.* It is to be all made of fantasy,  
All made of passion, and all made of wishes ;  
All adoration, duty and observance,  
All humbleness, all patience, and impatience,  
All purity, all trial, all observance ; —  
And so am I for Phebe.

*Phe.* And so am I for Ganymede.

*Orl.* And so am I for Rosalind.

*Ros.* And so am I for no woman.

*Phe.* If this be so, why blame you me to love you ? [To ROSALIND.]

*Sil.* If this be so, why blame you me to love you ? [To PHEBE.]

*Orl.* If this be so, why blame you me to love you ? [me to love you ?]

*Ros.* Who do you speak to, why blame you

*Orl.* To her, that is not here, nor doth not hear.

*Ros.* Pray you, no more of this ; 'tis like the howling of Irish wolves against the moon. — I will help you, [To SILVIUS] if I can : — I would love you, [To PHEBE] if I could. — To-morrow meet me all together. — I will marry you. [To PHEBE] if ever I marry woman, and I'll be married to-morrow : — I will satisfy you, [To ORLANDO] if ever I satisfied man, and you shall be married to-morrow : — I will content you, [To SILVIUS] if what pleases you contents you, and you shall be married to-morrow. — As you [To ORLANDO] love Rosalind, meet ; — as you, [To SILVIUS] love Phebe, meet ; And as I love no woman, I'll meet. — So, fare you well ; I have left you commands.

*Sil.* I'll not fail, if I live.

*Phe.* Nor I.

*Orl.* Nor I. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE III. The same.

*Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY.*

*Touch.* To-morrow is the joyful day, Audrey ; to-morrow will we be married.

*Aud.* I do desire it with all my heart : and I hope it is no dishonest desire, to desire to be a woman of the world \*. Here comes two of the banished duke's pages.

*Enter two Pages.*

*1 Page.* Well met, honest gentleman.

*Touch.* By my troth, well met : Come sit, sit, and a song.

*2 Page.* We are for you : sit i'the middle.

*1 Page.* Shall we clap into't roundly, without hawking, or spitting, or saying we are hoarse ; which are the only prologues to a bad voice ?

*2 Page.* I'faith, i'faith ; and both in a tune, like two gipsies on a horse.

### SONG.

*It was a lover, and his lass,  
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,  
That o'er the green corn-field did pass  
In the spring time, the only pretty rank time,*

*When birds do sing, hey ding a ding, ding ;  
Sweet lovers love the spring.*

*Between the acres of the rye,  
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,  
These pretty country folks would lie,  
In spring time, &c.*

*This carol they began that hour,  
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino,  
How that a life was but a flower  
In spring time, &c.*

*And therefore take the present time,  
With a hey, and a ho, and a hey nonino ;  
For love is crowned with the prime  
In spring time, &c.*

*Touch.* Truly, young gentlemen, though there was no greater matter in the ditty, yet the note was very untuneable.

*1 Page.* You are deceived, sir ; we kept time, we lost not our time.

*Touch.* By my troth, yes ; I count it but time lost to hear such a foolish song. God be with you ; and God mend your voices !  
*Come, Audrey.* [Exeunt.]

### SCENE IV. Another part of the Forest.

*Enter DUKE senior, AMIENS, JAUQUES, ORLANDO, OLIVER, and CELIA.*

*Duke S.* Dost thou believe, Orlando, that Can do all this that he hath promised ? [the boy

*Orl.* I sometimes do believe, and sometimes do not ; [fear.]

As those that fear they hope, and know they  
*Enter ROSALIND, SILVIUS, and PHEBE.*

*Ros.* Patience once more, whiles our compact is urged : —

You say, if I bring in your Rosalind, [To the DUKE.]

You will bestow her on Orlando here ?

*Duke S.* That would I, had I kingdoms to give with her. [I bring her ?]

*Ros.* And you say, you will have her, when [To ORLANDO.]

*Orl.* That would I, were I of all kingdoms king. [willing ;]

*Ros.* You say, you'll marry me, if I be [To PHEBE.]

*Phe.* That will I, should I die the hour after.

*Ros.* But, if you do refuse to marry me, You'll give yourself to this most faithful shepherd ?

*Phe.* So is the bargain. [herd ?]

*Ros.* You say, that you'll have Phebe, if she will ? [To SILVIUS]

*Sil.* Though to have her and death were both one thing. [even.]

*Ros.* I have promised to make all this matter. Keep you your word, O duke, to give your daughter;—

You yours, Orlando, to receive his daughter;—Keep your word, Phebe, that you'll marry me; Or else, refusing me, to wed this shepherd;—Keep your word, Silvius, that you'll marry her, If she refuse me;—and from hence I go, To make these doubts all even.

[*Exeunt ROSALIND and CELIA.*]

*Duke S.* I do remember in this shepherd-boy Some lively touches of my daughter's favour.

*Orl.* My lord, the first time that I ever saw him,

Methought he was a brother to your daughter; But, my good lord, this boy is forest-born; And hath been tutor'd in the rudiments Of many desperate studies by his uncle, Whom he reports to be a great magician, Obscured in the circle of this forest.

[*Enter TOUCHSTONE and AUDREY.*]

*Jaq.* There is, sure, another flood toward, and these couples are coming to the ark! Here comes a pair of very strange beasts, which in all tongues are called fools.

*Touch.* Salutation and greeting to you all!

*Jaq.* Good my lord, bid him welcome; This is the motley minded gentleman, that I have so often met in the forest: he hath been a courtier, he swears.

*Touch.* If any man doubt that, let him put me to my purgation. I have trod a measure\*; I have flattered a lady; I have been politic with my friend, smooth with mine enemy; I have undone three tailors; I have had four quarrels, and like to have fought one.

*Jaq.* And how was that ta'en up?

*Touch.* 'Faith, we met and found the quarrel was upon the seventh cause.

*Jaq.* How seventh cause?—Good my lord, like this fellow.

*Duke S.* I like him very well.

*Touch.* God'ild yon, sir; I desire you of the like. I press in here, sir, amongst the rest of the country copulatives, to swear, and to forswear; according as marriage binds, and blood breaks:—A poor virgin, sir, an ill-favoured thing, sir, but mine own; a poor humour of mine, sir, to take that that no man else will: Rich honesty dwells like a miser, sir, in a poor-house; as your pearl, in your foul oyster.

*Duke S.* By my faith, he is very swift and sententious.

*Touch.* According to the fool's bolt, sir, and such dulcet diseases.

*Jaq.* But, for the seventh cause; how did you find the quarrel on the seventh cause?

*Touch.* Upon a lie seven times removed;—Bear your body more seeming†, Audrey;—as thou'st, sir. I did dislike the cut of a certain courtier's beard; he sent me word, if I said his beard was not cut well, he was in the mind it was: This is called the *Retort cour-*

*teous.* If I sent him word again, it was not well cut, he would send me word, he cut it to please himself: This is called the *Quip modest.* If again, it was not well cut, he disabled my judgment: This is call'd the *Reply churlish.* If again, it was not well cut, he would answer, I spake not true: This is called the *Reproof valiant.* If again, it was not well cut, he would say, I lie: This is called the *Countercheck quarrelsome*; and so to the *Lie circumstantial*, and the *Lie direct.*

*Jaq.* And how oft did you say, his beard was not well cut?

*Touch.* I durst go no farther than the *Lie circumstantial*, nor he durst not give me the *Lie direct*; and so we measured swords, and parted.

*Jaq.* Can you nominate in order now the degrees of the lie?

*Touch.* O sir, we quarrel in print, by the book; as you have books for good manners: I will name you the degrees. The first, the *Retort courteous*; the second, the *Quip modest*; the third, the *Reply churlish*; the fourth, the *Reproof valiant*; the fifth, the *Countercheck quarrelsome*; the sixth, the *Lie with circumstance*; the seventh, the *Lie direct.* All these you may avoid, but the *Lie direct*; and you may avoid that too, with an *If.* I knew when seven justices could not take up a quarrel; but when the parties were met themselves, one of them thought but of an *If*, as, *If you said so, then I said so*; and they shook hands, and swore brothers. Your *If* is the only peace-maker; much virtue in *If.*

*Jaq.* Is not this a rare fellow, my lord? he's as good at any thing, and yet a fool.

*Duke S.* He uses his folly like a stalking-horse, and under the presentation of that, he shoots his wit.

[*Enter HYMEN, leading ROSALIND, in woman's clothes; and CELIA.*]

Still Music.

*Hym.* Then is there mirth in heaven,  
When earthly things made even  
Atone together.

Good duke, receive thy daughter,  
Hymen from heaven brought her,  
Yea, brought her hither; [his,  
That thou might'st join her hand with  
Whose heart within her bosom is.

*Ros.* To you I give myself, for I am yours.

[*To DUKE S.*]

To you I give myself, for I am yours.

[*To ORLANDO.*]

*Duke S.* If there be truth in sight, you are my daughter.

[*Rosalind.*]

*Orl.* If there be truth in sight, you are my *Phe.* If sight and shape be true,  
Why then,—my love alien!

*Ros.* I'll have no father, if you be not he;—

[*To DUKE S.*]

I'll have no husband, if you be not he;—

[*To ORLANDO.*]

Nor ne'er wed woman, if you be not she

[*To PHEBE*]

\* A stately solemn dance.

† Seemly.

*Hym* Peace, no! I bar confusion:

'Tis I must make conclusion

Of these most strange events:

Here's eight that must take hands,

To join in Hymen's bands,

If truth holds true contents\*.

You and you no cross shall part:

[*To ORL. and Ros.*

You and you are heart in heart:

[*To OLI. and CEL.*

You [*To PHEBE*] to his love must accord,

Or have a woman to your lord:—

You and you are sure together,

[*To TOUCH. and AUD.*

As the winter to foul weather.

Whiles a wedlock-hymn we sing,

Feed yourselves with questioning;

That reason wonder may diminish,  
How thus we met, and these things finish.

#### SONG.

*Wedding is great Juno's crown;*

*O blessed bond of board and bed!*

*'Tis Hymen peoples every town;*

*High wedlock then be honoured:*

*Honour, high honour and renown,*

*To Hymen, god of every town!*

*Duke S.* O my dear niece, welcome thou art to me;

Even daughter, welcome in no less degree.

*Phe.* I will not eat my word, now thou art mine;

Thy faith my fancy to thee doth combineth.

[*To SILV.*

*Enter JAKES DE BOIS.*

*Jaq. de B.* Let me have audience for a word or two;

I am the second son of old sir Rowland,

That bring these tidings to this fair assembly:—

*Duke Frederick*, hearing how that every day

Men of great worth resorted to this forest,

Address'd a mighty power! which were on foot,

In his own conduct, purposely to take

His brother here, and put him to the sword:

And to the skirts of this wild wood he came;

Where, meeting with an old religious man,

After some question with him, was converted

Both from his enterprise, and from the world:

His crown bequeathing to his banish'd brother,

And all their lands restored to them again

That were with him exiled: This to be true,

I do engage my life.

*Duke S.* Welcome, young man;

Thou offer'st fairly to thy brothers wedding:

To one, his lands withheld; and to the other,

A land itself at large, a potent dukedom.

First, in this forest, let us do those ends

That here were well begun, and well begot:

And after, every of this happy number, [us,

That have endured shrewd days and nights with

\* Unless truth fails of veracity. † Bind. ‡ Dressed. § That I liked.

Of this play the fable is wild and pleasing. I know not how the ladies will approve the facility with which both *Rosalind* and *Celia* give away their hearts. To *Celia* much may be forgiven for the heroism of her friendship. The character of *Jakes* is natural and well preserved. The comic dialogue is very sprightly, with less mixture of low buffoonery than in some other plays; and the graver part is elegant and harmonious. By hastening to the end of this work, *Shakspeare* suppressed the dialogue between the usurper and the hermit, and lost an opportunity of exhibiting a moral lesson in which he might have found matter worthy of his highest powers.—*JOHNSON.*

Shall share the good of our returned fortune,  
According to the measure of their states.

Meantime, forget this new-fall'n dignity,

And fall into our rustic revelry:—

Play, music;—and you brides and bridegrooms all, [fall.

With measure heap'd in joy, to the measures

*Jaq.* Sir, by your patience; If I heard you

The duke hath put on a religious life, [rightly,

And thrown into neglect the pompous court?

*Jaq. de B.* He hath.

*Jaq.* To him will I: out of these convertites

There is much matter to be heard and learn'd.—

You to your former honour I bequeath;

[*To Duke S.*

Your patience, and your virtue, well-deserves it:— [faith doth merit:—

You [*To ORLANDO*] to a love, that your true

You [*To OLIVER*] to your land, and love, and great allies:— [bed;—

You [*To SILVIUS*] to a long and well-deserved

And you [*To TOUCHSTONE*] to wrangling; for

thy loving voyage [pleasures;

Is but for two months victual'd:—So to your

I am for other than for dancing measures.

*Duke S.* Stay, *Jakes*, stay. [have

*Jaq.* To see no pastime, I:—what you would

I'll stay to know at your abandon'd cave. [*Exit.*

*Duke S.* Proceed, proceed: we will begin these rites,

And we do trust they'll end, in true delights.

[*A dance.*

#### EPILOGUE.

*Ros.* It is not the fashion to see the lady

the epilogue: but it is no more unhandsome,

than to see the lord the prologue. If it be

true, that good wine needs no bush, 'tis true,

that a good play needs no epilogue: Yet to

good wine they do use good bushes; and good

plays prove the better by the help of good

epilogues. What a case am I in then, that

am neither a good epilogue, nor cannot insi-

nuate with you in the behalf of a good play?

I am not furnished like a beggar, therefore

to beg will not become me: my way is, to

conjure you; and I'll begin with the women.

I charge you, O women, for the love you bear

to men, to like as much of this play as please

them: and so I charge you, O men, for the

love you bear to women, (as I perceive by

your simpering, none of you hate them,) that

between you and the women, the play may

please. If I were a woman, I would kiss as

many of you as had beards that pleased me,

complexions that liked me, and breaths that

I defied not: and, I am sure, as many as have

good beards, or good faces, or sweet breaths,

will, for my kind offer, when I make curtsy,

bid me farewell. [*Exeunt.*



# ALL'S WELL THAT ENDS WELL.

## Persons represented.

King of France.  
Duke of Florence.  
BERTRAM, *Count of Rousillon.*  
LAFEU, *an old Lord.*  
PAROLLES, *a follower of Bertram.*  
*Several young French Lords, that serve*  
*with Bertram in the Florentine war.*  
Steward, } *servants to the Countess of Rou-*  
Clown, } *sillon.*

A Page.  
Countess of Rousillon, *mother to Bertram.*  
HELENA, *a gentlewoman protected by the*  
*Countess.*  
An old Widow of Florence.  
DIANA, *daughter to the widow.*  
VIOLENTA, } *neighbours and friends to the*  
MARIANA, } *widow.*

*Lords, attending on the King: Officers, Soldiers, &c., French and Florentine.*

*Scene,—Partly in France, and partly in Tuscany.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.

Rousillon. *A Room in the Countess's Palace.*

*Enter BERTRAM, the Countess of Rousillon, HELENA, and LAFEU, in mourning.*

Count. IN delivering my son from me, I bury a second husband.

Ber. And I, in going, madam, weep o'er my father's death anew: but I must attend his majesty's command, to whom I am now in ward \*, evermore in subjection.

Laf. You shall find of the king a husband, madam;—you, sir, a father: He that so generally is at all times good, must of necessity hold his virtue to you; whose worthiness would stir it up where it wanted, rather than lack it where there is such abundance.

Count. What hope is there of his majesty's amendment?

Laf. He hath abandoned his physicians, madam; under whose practices he hath persecuted time with hope; and finds no other advantage in the process but only the losing of hope by time.

Count. This young gentlewoman had a father, (O, that *had* †! how sad a passage 'tis!) whose skill was almost as great as his honesty; had it stretched so far, would have made nature immortal, and death should have play for lack of work. 'Would, for the king's sake, he were living! I think, it would be the death of the king's disease.

Laf. How called you the man you speak of, madam?

Count. He was famous, sir, in his profes-

sion, and it was his great right to be so: Gerard de Narbon.

Laf. He was excellent, indeed, madam: the king very lately spoke of him, admiringly and mourningly: he was skilful enough to have lived still, if knowledge could be set up against mortality.

Ber. What is it, my good lord, the king languishes of?

Laf. A fistula, my lord.

Ber. I heard not of it before.

Laf. I would, it were not notorious.—Was this gentlewoman the daughter of Gerard de Narbon?

Count. His sole child, my lord; and bequeathed to my overlooking. I have those hopes of her good, that her education promises; her dispositions she inherits, which make fair gifts fairer; for where an unclean mind carries virtuous qualities †, there commendations go with pity, they are virtues and traitors too; in her they are the better for their simpleness §; she derives her honesty, and achieves her goodness.

Laf. Your commendations, madam, get from her tears.

Count. 'Tis the best brine a maiden can season her praise in. The remembrance of her father never approaches her heart, but the tyranny of her sorrows takes all liveli-hood from her cheek. No more of this, Helena, go to, no more; lest it be rather thought you affect a sorrow, than to have.

Hel. I do affect a sorrow, indeed, but I have it too.

Laf. Moderate lamentation is the right of

\* Under his particular care, as my guardian. † The countess recollects her own loss of a husband and observes how heavily *had* passes through her mind. ‡ Qualities of good breeding and erudition. § i. e., Her excellencies are the better because they are artless. || All appearance of life.

the dead, excessive grief the enemy to the living.

*Count.* If the living be enemy to the grief, the excess makes it soon mortal.

*Ber.* Madam, I desire your holy wishes.

*Laf.* How understand we that?

*Count.* Be thou blest, Bertram; and succeed thy father

In manners, as in shape! thy blood, and virtue, [ness

Contend for empire in thee; and thy good-Share with thy birth-right! Love all, trust a

few,

Do wrong to none; be able for thine enemy Rather in power, than use; and keep thy friend [silence,

Under thy own life's key: be check'd for But never tax'd for speech. What heaven

more will,

That thee may furnish\*, and my prayers pluck down,

Fall on thy head! Farewell.—My lord, 'Tis an unseason'd courtier; good my lord,

Advise him.

*Laf.* He cannot want the best That shall attend his love.

*Count.* Heaven bless him!—Farewell, Bertram. [Exit Countess.

*Ber.* The best wishes, that can be forged in your thoughts, [To HELENA] be servants to you! Be comfortable to my mother, your

mistress, and make much of her.

*Laf.* Farewell, pretty lady: You must hold the credit of your father.

[Exit BERTRAM and LAFEU.

*Hel. O,* were that all!—I think not on my father; [ignore

And these great tears grace his remembrance Than those I shed for him. What was he like?

I have forgot him: my imagination Carries no favour in it, but Bertram's.

I am undone; there is no living, none, If Bertram be away. It were all one,

That I should love a bright particular star, And think to wed it, he is so above me:

In his bright radiance and collateral light Must I be comforted, not in his sphere.

The ambition in my love thus plagues itself: The hind, that would be mated by the lion,

Must die for love. 'Twas pretty, though a plague,

To see him every hour; to sit and draw His arched brows, his hawking eye, his curls,

In our heart's table†; heart, too capable Of every line and trick § of his sweet favour ¶:

But now he's gone, and my idolatrous fancy Must sanctify his relics. Who comes here?

Enter PAROLLES.

One that goes with him: I love him for his sake;

And yet I know him a notorious liar, Think him a great way fool, solely a coward;

\* i. e., That may help thee with more and better qualifications.

† i. e., May you be mistress of your wishes, and have power to bring them to effect.

‡ Helena considers her heart as the tablet on which his resemblance was portrayed.

§ Peculiarity of feature.

¶ Countenance.

¶ Forbidden.

Yet these fix'd evils sit to fit in him, That they take place, when virtue's steely

bones [we see

Look bleak in the cold wind: withal, full oft Cold wisdom waiting on superfluous folly.

*Par.* Save you, fair queen.

*Hel.* And you, monarch.

*Par.* No.

*Hel.* And no.

*Par.* Are you meditating on virginity?

*Hel.* Ay. You have some stain of soldier in you; let me ask you a question: Man is enemy to virginity; how may we barricado it against him?

*Par.* Keep him out.

*Hel.* But he assails; and our virginity, though valiant in the defence, yet is weak: unfold to us some warlike resistance.

*Par.* There is none; man, sitting down before you, will undermine you, and blow you up.

*Hel.* Bless our poor virginity from underminers, and blowers up!—Is there no military policy, how virgins might blow up men?

*Par.* Virginity, being blown down, man will quicklier be blown up: marry, in blowing him down again, with the breach yourselves made, you lose your city. It is not politic in the commonwealth of nature, to preserve virginity. Loss of virginity is rational increase; and there was never virgin got, till virginity was first lost. That, you were made of, is metal to make virgins.

Virginity, by being once lost, may be ten times found: by being ever kept, it is ever lost: 'tis too cold a companion; away with it.

*Hel.* I will stand for't a little, though therefore I die a virgin.

*Par.* There's little can be said in't: 'tis against the rule of nature. To speak on the part of virginity, is to accuse your mothers; which is most infallible disobedience. He, that hangs himself, is a virgin: virginity murders itself; and should be buried in high-ways, out of all sanctified limit, as a desperate offendress against nature. Virginity breeds mites, much like a cheese; consumes itself to the very paring, and so dies with feeding his own stomach. Besides, virginity is peevish, proud, idle, made of self-love, which is the most inhibited sin in the canon. Keep it not; you cannot choose but lose by't: Out with't: within ten years it will make itself ten, which is a goodly increase; and the principal itself not much the worse: Away with't.

*Hel.* How might one do, sir, to lose it to her own liking?

*Par.* Let me see: Marry, ill, to like him that ne'er it likes. 'Tis a commodity will lose the gloss with lying; the longer kept, the less worth: off with't, while 'tis vendible: an-

\* i. e., May you

† Helena con-

‡ Peculiarity

answer the time of request. Virginity, like an old courtier, wears her cap out of fashion; richly suited, but unsuitable: just like the brooch and tooth-pick, which wear not now: Your date\* is better in your pie and your porridge, than in your cheek: And your virginity, your old virginity, is like one of our French withered pears; it looks ill, it eats dryly; marry, 'tis a withered pear; it was formerly better; marry, yet, 'tis a withered pear: Will you any thing with it?

*Hel.* Not my virginity yet.  
There shall your master have a thousand loves,

A mother, and a mistress, and a friend,  
A phoenix, captain, and an enemy,  
A guide, a goddess, and a sovereign,  
A counsellor, a traitress, and a dear;  
His humble ambition, proud humility,  
His jarring concord, and his discord dulcet,  
His faith, his sweet disaster; with a world  
Of pretty, fond, adoptions christendoms,  
That blinking Cupid gossips. Now shall he—  
I know not what he shall:—God send him well!—

The court's a learning-place;—and he is one—

*Par.* What one, i'faith?

*Hel.* That I wish well.—'Tis pity——

*Par.* What's pity?

*Hel.* That wishing well had not a body in't, [born,

Which might be felt: that we, the poorer  
Whose baser stars do shut us up in wishes,  
Might with effects of them follow our friends,  
And show what we alone must think †; which  
Returns us thanks. [never

*Enter a Page.*

*Page.* Monsieur Parolles, my lord calls for you. [Exit Page.

*Par.* Little Helen, farewell: if I can remember thee, I will think of thee at court.

*Hel.* Monsieur Parolles, you were born under a charitable star.

*Par.* Under Mars, I.

*Hel.* I especially think, under Mars.

*Par.* Why under Mars?

*Hel.* The wars have so kept you under, that you must needs be born under Mars.

*Par.* When he was predominant.

*Hel.* When he was retrograde, I think, rather.

*Par.* Why think you so?

*Hel.* You go so much backward, when you fight.

*Par.* That's for advantage.

*Hel.* So is running away, when fear proposes the safety: But the composition, that your valour and fear makes in you, is a virtue of a good wing, and I like the wear well.

*Par.* I am so full of businesses, I cannot answer thee acutely: I will return perfect courtier; in the which, my instruction shall serve to naturalize thee, so thou wilt be capable ‡ of a courtier's counsel, and understand what ad-

vice shall thrust upon thee; else thou diest in thine unthankfulness, and thine ignorance makes thee away: farewell. When thou hast leisure, say thy prayers; when thou hast none, remember thy friends: get thee a good husband, and use him as he uses thee: so farewell. [Exit.

*Hel.* Our remedies oft in ourselves do lie,  
Which we ascribe to heaven: the fated sky  
Gives us free scope; only, doth backward pull [dull.

Our slow designs, when we ourselves are  
What power is it, which mounts my love so high; [eye?

That makes me see, and cannot feed mine  
The mightiest space in fortune nature brings  
To join like likes, and kiss like native things.  
Impossible be strange attempts, to those  
That weigh their pains in sense; and do suppose  
What hath been cannot be: Who ever strove  
To show her merit, that did miss her love?  
The king's disease—my project may deceive me,  
But my intents are fix'd, and will not leave me. [Exit.

SCENE II. Paris. A Room in the King's Palace.

*Flourish of cornets.* Enter the King of France, with letters; Lords and others attending.

*King.* The Florentines and Senoys || are by the ears;  
Have fought with equal fortune, and continue  
A braving war.

1 Lord. So 'tis reported, sir. [ceive it

*King.* Nay, 'tis most credible; we here receive a certainty, vouch'd from our cousin Austria, With caution, that the Florentine will move us For speedy aid; wherein our dearest friend Prejudicates the business, and would seem To have us make denial.

1 Lord. His love and wisdom,  
Approved so to your majesty, may plead  
For amplest credence.

*King.* He hath arm'd our answer,  
And Florence is denied before he comes:  
Yet, for our gentlemen, that mean to see  
The Tuscan service, freely have they leave  
To stand on either part.

2 Lord. It may well serve  
A nursery to our gentry, who are sick  
For breathing and exploit.

*King.* What's he comes here?  
Enter BERTRAM, LAFEU, and PAROLLES

1 Lord. It is the count Rousillon, my good Young Bertram. [Lord

*King.* Youth, thou bear'st thy father's face;  
Frank nature, rather curious than in haste,  
Hath well composed thee. Thy father's moral parts

May'st thou inherit too! Welcome to Paris.

*Ber.* My thanks and duty are your majesty's.

*King.* I would I had that corporal soundness now,

\* A quibble on date, which means age, and candied fruit. † i. e., And show by realities what we now must only think. ‡ i. e., Thou wilt comprehend it. § Things formed by nature for each other. || The citizens of the small republic of which Siena is the capital.



As when thy father, and myself, in friendship  
First try'd our soldiership! He did look far  
Into the service of the time, and was  
Disciple of the bravest: he lasted long;  
But on us both did haggish age steal on,  
And wore us out of act. It much repairs\* me  
To talk of your good father: In his youth  
He had the wit, which I can well observe  
To-day in our young lords; but they may jest,  
Till their own scorn return to them unnoted,  
Ere they can hide their levity in honour.  
So, like a courtier, contempt nor bitterness  
Were in his pride or sharpness; if they were,  
His equal had awak'd them; and his honour,  
Clock to itself, knew the true minute when  
Exception bid him speak, and, at this time,  
His tongue obey'd his† hand: who were below  
He used as creatures of another place; [him  
And bow'd his eminent top to their low ranks,  
Making them proud of his humility,  
In their poor praise he humbled: Such a man  
Might be a copy to these younger times;  
Which, follow'd well, would demonstrate  
But goers backward. [them now

*Ber.* His good remembrance, sir,  
Lies richer in your thoughts, than on his tomb;  
So in approof‡ lives not his epitaph,  
As in your royal speech. [always say,

*King.* Would, I were with him! He would  
[Methinks, I hear him now; his plausible words  
He scatter'd not in ears, but grafted them,  
To grow there and to bear, — *Let me not*  
Thus his good melancholy oft began, [live, —  
On the catastrophe and heel of pastime,  
When it was out, — *let me not live*, quoth he,  
*After my flame lacks oil, to be the snuff*  
*Of younger spirits, whose apprehensive*  
*senses* [ments are

*All but new things disdain; whose judg-*  
*Mere fathers of their garments§; whose*  
*constancies* [wish'd:  
*Expire before their fashions: —* This he  
I, after him, do after him wish too,  
Since I nor wax, nor honey can bring home,  
I quickly were dissolved from my hive,  
To give some labourers room.

*2 Lord.* You are loved, sir;  
They, that least lend it you, shall lack you  
first. [is't, count,

*King.* I fill a place, I know't. — How long  
Since the physician at your father's died?  
He was much fam'd.

*Ber.* Some six months since, my lord.  
*King.* If he were living, I would try him yet;  
Lend me an arm; — the rest have worn me out  
With several applications: — nature and sickness  
Debate it at their leisure. Welcome, count;  
My son's no dearer.

*Ber.* Thank your majesty.  
[*Exeunt. Flourish.*

SCENE III. Rousillon. A Room in the  
Countess's Palace.

*Enter Countess, Steward, and Clown.*

*Count.* I will now hear: what say you of  
this gentlewoman?

*Stew.* Madam, the care I have had to even  
your content ¶, I wish might be found in the  
calendar of my past endeavours; for then we  
wound our modesty, and make foul the clear-  
ness of our deservings, when of ourselves we  
publish them.

*Count.* What does this knave here? Get  
you gone, sirrah: The complaints, I have heard  
of you, I do not all believe; 'tis my slowness,  
that I do not: for, I know, you lack not folly  
to commit them, and have ability enough to  
make such knaveries yours.

*Clo.* 'Tis not unknown to you, madam, I am  
a poor fellow.

*Count.* Well, sir.

*Clo.* No, madam, 'tis not so well, that I am  
poor; though many of the rich are damned:  
But, if I may have your ladyship's good-will  
to go to the world¶, Isbel the woman and I  
will do as we may.

*Count.* Wilt thou needs be a beggar?

*Clo.* I do beg your good-will in this case.

*Count.* In what case?

*Clo.* In Isbel's case, and mine own. Ser-  
vice is no heritage: and, I think, I shall never  
have the blessing of God, till I have issue of  
my body; for, they say, bearns\*\* are bless-  
ings.

*Count.* Tell me thy reason why thou wilt  
marry.

*Clo.* My poor body, madam, requires it: I  
am driven on by the flesh; and he must needs  
go, that the devil drives.

*Count.* Is this all your worship's reason?

*Clo.* Faith, madam, I have other holy rea-  
sons, such as they are.

*Count.* May the world know them?

*Clo.* I have been, madam, a wicked crea-  
ture, as you and all flesh and blood are; and  
indeed, I do marry, that I may repent.

*Count.* Thy marriage, sooner than thy wick-  
edness.

*Clo.* I am out of friends, madam; and I  
hope to have friends for my wife's sake.

*Count.* Such friends are thine enemies, knave.

*Clo.* You are shallow, madam; e'en great  
friends; for the knaves come to do that for  
me, which I am a-weary of. He, that ears††  
my land, spares my team, and gives me leave  
to inn the crop: if I be his cuckold, he's my  
drudge: He, that comforts my wife, is the  
cherisher of my flesh and blood; he, that  
cherishes my flesh and blood, loves my flesh  
and blood; he, that loves my flesh and blood,  
is my friend: *ergo* ¶¶, he that kisses my wife,  
is my friend. If men could be contented to  
be what they are, there were no fear in mar-  
riage; for young Charbon the puritan, and old  
Poysam the papist, howsoe'er their hearts are  
severed in religion, their heads are both one,  
they may joll horns together, like any deer  
i' the herd.

\* To repair here signifies to renovate.

† His is put for its.

‡ Approbation.

§ Who have no other use of their faculties than to invent new modes of dress

To act up to your desires. ¶ To be married. \*\* Children. †† Ploughs. ¶¶ Therefore.

*Count.* Wilt thou ever be a foul-mouthed and calumnious knave?

*Clo.* A prophet I, madam; and I speak the truth the next way\* :

*For I the ballad will repeat,  
Which men full true shall find;  
Your marriage comes by destiny,  
Your cuckoo sings by kind.*

*Count.* Get you gone, sir; I'll talk with you more anon.

*Stew.* May it please you, madam, that he bid Helen come to you; of her I am to speak.

*Count.* Sirrah, tell my gentlewoman, I would speak with her; Helen I mean.

*Clo.* Was this fair face the cause, quoth she, [Singing.

*Why the Grecians sacked Troy?  
Fond donet, done fond,  
Was this king Priam's joy.  
With that she sighed as she stood,  
With that she sighed as she stood,  
And gave this sentence then;  
Among nine bad if one be good,  
Among nine bad if one be good,  
There's yet one good in ten.*

*Count.* What, one good in ten? you corrupt the song, sirrah.

*Clo.* One good woman in ten, madam; which is a purifying o' the song: 'Would God would serve the world so all the year! we'd find no fault with the tithe-woman, if I were the parson: One in ten, quoth a'! an we might have a good woman born but every blazing star, or at an earthquake, 'twould mend the lottery well; a man may draw his heart out, ere he pluck one.

*Count.* You'll be gone, sir knave, and do as I command you?

*Clo.* That man should be at woman's command, and yet no hurt done!—Though honesty be no puritan, yet it will do no hurt; it will wear the surplice of humility over the black gown of a big heart.—I am going, forsooth: the business is for Helen to come hither.

*Count.* Well, now. [Exit Clown.

*Stew.* I know, madam, you love your gentlewoman entirely.

*Count.* Faith, I do: her father bequeathed her to me; and she herself, without other advantage, may lawfully make title to as much love as she finds: there is more owing her, than is paid; and more shall be paid her, than she'll demand.

*Stew.* Madam, I was very late more near her than, I think, she wished me: alone she was, and did communicate to herself, her own words to her own ears; she thought, I dare vow for her, they touched not any stranger sense. Her matter was, she loved your son: Fortune, she said, was no goddess, that had put such difference betwixt their two estates; Love, no god, that would not extend his might, only where qualities were level; Diana, no queen of virgins, that would suffer her poor knight to be surprised, without rescue, in the

first assault, or ransom afterward: This she delivered in the most bitter touch of sorrow, that e'er I heard virgin, exclaim in: which I held my duty, speedily to acquaint you withal; since, in the loss that may happen, it concerns you something to know it.

*Count.* You have discharged this honestly; keep it to yourself: many likelihoods informed me of this before, which hung so tottering in the balance, that I could neither believe, nor misdoubt: Pray you, leave me: stall this in your bosom, and I thank you for your honest care: I will speak with you further anon.

[Exit Steward.]

Enter HELENA.

*Count.* Even so it was with me, when I was young: [thorn

If we are nature's, these are ours; this doth to our rose of youth rightly belong;

Our blood to us, this to our blood is born; It is the show and seal of nature's truth, Where love's strong passion is impress'd in By our remembrances of days foregone, youth: Such were our faults;—or then we thought them none.

Her eye is sick on't; I observe her now.

*Hel.* What is your pleasure, madam?

*Count.* You know, Helen, I am a mother to you.

*Hel.* Mine honourable mistress.

*Count.* Nay, a mother; Why not a mother? When I said, a mother Methought you saw a serpent: What's in mother That you start at it? I say, I am your mother; And put you in the catalogue of those That were enwombed mine: 'Tis often seen, Adoption strives with nature; and choice breeds A native slip to us from foreign seeds: You ne'er oppress'd me with a mother's groan, Yet I express to you a mother's care:—God's mercy, maiden! does it curd thy blood, To say, I am thy mother? What's the matter, That this distemper'd messenger of woe, The many-colour'd Iris, rounds thine eye? Why?—that you are my daughter?

*Hel.* That I am not.

*Count.* I say, I am your mother.

*Hel.* Pardon, madam; The count Rousillon cannot be my brother: I am from humble, he from honour'd, name; No note upon my parents, his all noble: My master, my dear lord he is; and I His servant live, and will his vassal die: He must not be my brother.

*Count.* Nor I your mother?

*Hel.* You are my mother, madam; 'Would you were [ther,)  
(So that my lord, your son, were not my brother—Indeed, my mother!—or were you both our mothers,

I care no more for §, than I do for heaven, So I were not his sister: Can't no other, But, I your daughter, he must be my brother?

*Count.* Yes, Helen, you might be my daughter-in-law;

\* The nearest way. † Foolishly done. ‡ Since. § i. e., I care as much for: I wish it equally.

God shield, you mean it not! daughter, and mother,  
So strive \* upon your pulse: What, pale again?  
My fear hath catch'd your fondness: Now I see  
The mystery of your loneliness, and find  
Your salt tears' headt. Now to all sense 'tis gross,  
You love my son; invention is asham'd,  
Against the proclamation of thy passion,  
To say, thou dost not: therefore tell me true;  
But tell me then, 'tis so:—for, look, thy cheeks  
Confess it, one to the other; and thine eyes  
See it so grossly shown in thy behaviours,  
That in their kind† they speak it: only sin  
And hellish obstinacy tie thy tongue,  
That truth should be suspected: Speak, is't so?  
If it be so, you have wound a goodly clue;  
If it be not, forswear't: howe'er, I charge thee,  
As heaven shall work in me for thine avail,  
To tell me truly.

*Hel.* Good madam, pardon me!

*Count.* Do you love my son?

*Hel.* Your pardon, noble mistress!

*Count.* Love you my son?

*Hel.* Do not you love him, madam?

*Count.* Go not about; my love hath in't a bond,

[disclose

Whereof the world takes note: come, come,  
The state of your affection; for your passions  
Have to the full appeach'd.

*Hel.* Then, I confess,

Here on my knee, before high heaven and you,  
That before you, and next unto high heaven,  
I love your son:—

[love:

My friends were poor, but honest; so's my

Be not offended; for it hurts not him,

That he is lov'd of me: I follow him not

By any token of presumptions suit;

Nor would I have him, till I do deserve him;

Yet never know how that desert should be.

I know I love in vain, strive against hope;

Yet, in this captions and intenable sieve,

I still pour in the waters of my love,

And lack not to lose still: thus, Indian-like,

Religious in mine error, I adore

The sun, that looks upon his worshipper,

But knows of him no more. My dearest madam,

Let not your hate encounter with my love,

For loving where you do: but, if yourself,

Whose aged honour cites a virtuous youth‡,

Did ever, in so true a flame of liking,

Wish chastely, and love dearly, that your Dian

Was both herself and love; O then, give pity  
To her, whose state is such, that cannot choose  
But lend and give, where she is sure to lose,  
That seeks not to find that her search implies,  
But, riddle-like, lives sweetly where she dies.

*Count.* Had you not lately an intent, speak  
To go to Paris?

[truly

*Hel.* Madam, I had.

*Count.* Wherefore? tell true.

*Hel.* I will tell truth; by grace itself, I swear.  
You know, my father left me some prescriptions  
Of rare and proved effects, such as his reading,  
And manifest experience, had collected  
For general sovereignty; and that he wou'd me  
In heedfullest reservation to bestow them,  
As notes, whose faculties inclusive were,  
More than they were in note:† amongst the  
There is a remedy, approved, set down, [rest,  
To cure the desperate languishes, whereof  
The king is render'd lost.

*Count.* This was your motive

For Paris, was it? speak.

[of this;

*Hel.* My lord your son made me to think  
Else Paris, and the medicine, and the king,  
Had, from the conversation of my thoughts,  
Haply, been absent then.

*Count.* But think you, Helen,

If you should tender your supposed aid,

He would receive it? He and his physicians

Are of a mind; he, that they cannot help him,

They, that they cannot help: How shall they cre-

A poor unlearned virgin, when the schools, [dit

Embowell'd of their doctrine\*\*, have left off

The danger to itself?

*Hel.* There's something hints,

More than my father's skill, which was the great-

Of his profession, that his good receipt [est

Shall, for my legacy, be sanctified [honour

By the luckiest stars in heaven: and, would your

But give me leave to try success, I'd venture

The well-lost life of mine on his grace's cure,

By such a day, and hour.

*Count.* Dost thou believe't?

*Hel.* Ay, madam, knowingly.

[and love,

*Count.* Why, Helen, thou shalt have my leave,

Means, and attendants, and my loving greetings

To those of mine in court; I'll stay at home,

And pray God's blessing into thy attempt:

Be gone to-morrow; and be sure of this,

What I can help thee to, thou shalt not miss.

[Exit.

## ACT II.

SCENE I. Paris. A Room in the King's  
Palace.

*Flourish.* Enter King, with young Lords  
taking leave for the Florentine war;  
BERTRAM, PAROLLES, and Attendants.

*King.* Farewell, young lord, these warlike  
principles

Do not throw from you:—and you, my lord,  
farewell:—

[all

Share the advice betwixt you; if both gair

The gift doth stretch itself as 'tis received,

And is enough for both.

I Lord.

It is our hope, sir,

After well-enter'd soldiers, to return

And find your grace in health.

\* Contend. † The source, the cause of your grief. ‡ According to their nature.

i. e., Whose respectable conduct in age proves that you were no less virtuous when young

‡ i. e., Venus. ¶ Receipts in which greater virtues were enclosed than appeared.

\*\* Exhausted of their skill.



*King.* No, no, it cannot be; and yet my heart

Will not confess he owes the malady  
That doth my life besiege. Farewell, young lords:

Whether I live or die, be you the sons  
Of worthy Frenchmen: let higher Italy  
(Those 'bated, that inherit but the fall  
Of the last monarchy\*) see, that you come  
Not to woo honour, but to wed it: when  
The bravest questant† shrinks, find what you seek,

That fame may cry you loud: I say, farewell.

2 *Lord.* Health, at your bidding, serve your majesty! [them;]

*King.* Those girls of Italy, take heed of  
They say, our French lack language to deny,  
If they demand: beware of being captives,  
Before you serve‡.

*Both.* Our hearts receive your warnings.

*King.* Farewell.—Come hither to me.

[*The King retires to a couch.*]

1 *Lord.* O my sweet lord, that you will stay behind us!

*Par.* 'Tis not his fault; the spark——

2 *Lord.* O, 'tis brave wars!

*Par.* Most admirable: I have seen those wars.

*Ber.* I am commanded here, and kept a coil§ with; [early.

*Too young, and the next year, and 'tis too*

*Par.* An thy mind stand to it, boy, steal away bravely. [smock,

*Ber.* I shall stay here the forehorse to a  
Creaking my shoes on the plain masonry,  
Till honour be bought up, and no sword  
worn, [steal away.

But one to dance with||! By heaven, I'll

1 *Lord.* There's honour in the theft.

*Par.* Commit it, count.

2 *Lord.* I am your accessory; and so farewell.

*Ber.* I grow to you, and our parting is a tortured body.

1 *Lord.* Farewell, captain.

2 *Lord.* Sweet monsieur Parolles!

*Par.* Noble heroes, my sword and yours are kin. Good sparks and lustrous, a word, good metals:—You shall find in the regiment of the Spinii, one captain Spurio, with his cicatrice, an emblem of war, here on his sinister cheek; it was this very sword entrenched it: say to him, I live; and observe his reports for me.

2 *Lord.* We shall, noble captain.

*Par.* Mars dote on you for his novices!

[*Exeunt Lords.*] What will you do?

*Ber.* Stay; the king—— [*Seeing him rise.*

*Par.* Use a more spacious ceremony to the noble lords; you have restrained yourself within the list of too cold an adieu: be more

expressive to them; for they wear themselves in the cap of the time¶, there, do muster true gait\*\*, eat, speak, and move under the influence of the most received star; and though the devil lead the measure††, such are to be followed: after them, and take a more dilated farewell.

*Ber.* And I will do so.

*Par.* Worthy fellows; and like to prove most sinewy sword-men.

[*Exeunt BERTRAM and PAROLLES.*

*Enter LAFEU.*

*Laf.* Pardon, my lord, [*Kneeling.*] for me and for my tidings.

*King.* I'll see thee to stand up.

*Laf.* Then here's a man  
Stands, that has brought his pardon. I would, you

Had kneel'd, my lord, to ask me mercy; and That, at my bidding, you could so stand up.

*King.* I would I had; so I had broke thy pate,  
And ask'd thee mercy for't.

*Laf.* Goodfaith, across‡‡:

But, my good lord, 'tis thus; Will you be Of your infirmity? [cured

*King.* No.

*Laf.* O, will you eat

No grapes, my royal fox? yes, but you will, My noble grapes, an if my royal fox

Could reach them: I have seen a medicine§§, That's able to breathe life into a stone;

Quicken a rock, and make you dance canary|||, With spritely fire and motion; whose simple touch

Is powerful to araise king Pepin, nay, To give great Charlemain a pen in his hand, And write to her a love-line.

*King.* What her is this?

*Laf.* Why, doctor she: My lord, there's one arrived,

If you will see her,—now, by my faith and honour,

If seriously I may convey my thoughts In this my light deliverance, I have spoke

With one, that, in her sex, her years, profession¶¶,

Wisdom, and constancy, hath amazed me more Than I dare blame my weakness: Will you see her

(For that is her demand,) and know her business?

That done, laugh well at me.

*King.* Now, good Lafen,

Bring in the admiration; that we with thee May spend our wonder too, or take off thine, By wond'ring how thou took'st it.

*Laf.* Nay, I'll fit you,

And not be all day neither. [*Exit LAFEU.*

*King.* Thus he his special nothing ever prologues.

\* i. e., Those excepted who possess modern Italy, the remains of the Roman Empire.

† Seeker, inquirer. ‡ Be not captives before you are soldiers. § With a noise, bustle.

¶ In Shakspeare's time it was usual for gentlemen to dance with swords on. ¶ They are the foremost in the fashion. \*\* Have the true military step. †† The dance. ‡‡ A

skilfully: a phrase taken from the exercise at a quintaine. §§ A female physician. ||| A kind of dance. ¶¶ By profession is meant her declaration of the object of her coming.

*Re-enter LAFEU, with HELENA.*

*Laf.* Nay, come your ways.

*King.* This haste hath wings indeed.

*Laf.* Nay, come your ways;

This is his majesty, say your mind to him:  
A traitor you do look like; but such traitors  
His majesty seldom fears: I am Cressid's  
uncle \*,

That dare leave two together; fare you well.

[*Exit.*]

*King.* Now, fair one, does your business follow us?

[*was*]

*Hel.* Ay, my good lord. Gerard de Narbon  
My father; in what he did profess, well

*King.* I knew him.

[*found t.*]

*Hel.* The rather will I spare my praises  
towards him;

[*death*]

Knowing him, is enough. On his bed of  
Many receipts he gave me; chiefly one,  
Which, as the dearest issue of his practice,  
And of his old experience the only darling,  
He bad me store up, as a triple eye †, (so)  
Safer than mine own two, more dear; I have  
And, hearing your high majesty is touch'd  
With that malignant cause wherein the honour  
Of my dear father's gift stands chief in power,  
I come to tender it, and my appliance,  
With all bound humbleness.

*King.* We thank you, maiden;

But may not be so credulous of cure,—  
When our most learned doctors leave us; and  
The congregated college have concluded  
That labouring art can never ransom nature  
From her inaidable estate,—I say we must not  
So stain our judgment, or corrupt our hope,  
To prostitute our past-cure malady  
To empirics; or to disserve so  
Our great self and our credit, to esteem  
A senseless help, when help past sense we  
deem.

[*pains:*]

*Hel.* My duty then shall pay me for my  
I will no more enforce mine office on you;  
Humbly entreating from your royal thoughts  
A modest one, to bear me back again.

*King.* I cannot give thee less, to be call'd  
grateful:

[*I give,*]

Thou thought'st to help me; and such thanks  
As one near death to those that wish him live:  
But, what at full I know, thou know'st no  
I knowing all my peril, thou no art.

[*part;*]

*Hel.* What I can do, can do no hurt to try,  
Since you set up your rest 'gainst remedy:

He that of greatest works is finisher,  
Oft does them by the weakest minister:  
So holy writ in babes hath judgment shown,  
When judges have been babes. Great floods  
have flown

From simple sources †; and great seas have  
dried,

[*denied †.*]

When miracles have by the greatest been  
Oft expectation fails, and most oft there

• I am like Pandarus. † Of acknowledged excellence. ‡ A third eye. § An allusion to Daniel judging the two Elders. || i. e., When Moses smote the rock in Horeb

¶ This must refer to the children of Israel passing the Red Sea, when miracles had been denied by Pharaoh. \*\* i. e., Pretend to greater things than befits the mediocrity of my condition. †† The evening star. ‡‡ i. e., May be counted among the gifts enjoyed by thee

§§ The spring or morning of life.

Where most it promises: and oft it hits,  
Where hope is coldest, and despair most sits.

*King.* I must not hear thee; fare thee well,  
kind maid;

Thy pains, not used, must by thyself be paid:  
Proffers, not took, reap thanks for their reward.

*Hel.* Inspired merit so by breath is barr'd:  
It is not so with Him that all things knows,

As 'tis with us that square our guess by shows:  
But most it is presumption in us, when  
The help of heaven we count the act of men.

Dear sir, to my endeavours give consent;  
Of heaven, not me, make an experiment.

I am not an impostor, that proclaim  
Myself against the level of mine aim \*\*;

But know I think, and think I know most  
sure,

My art is not past power, nor you past cure.

*King.* Art thou so confident? Within what  
Hop'st thou my cure?

[*space*]

*Hel.* The greatest grace lending grace,  
Ere twice the horses of the sun shall bring

Their fiery torcher his diurnal ring;  
Ere twice in morn and occidental damp

Moist Hesperus †† hath quench'd his sleepy  
lamp;

Or four and twenty times the pilot's glass  
Hath told the thievish minutes how they pass;

What is infirm from your sound parts shall fly,  
Health shall live free, and sickness freely die.

*King.* Upon thy certainty and confidence,  
What dar'st thou venture?

*Hel.* Tax of impudence,—  
A strumpet's boldness, a divuiged shame,—

Traduced by odious ballads; my maiden's  
name

[*ed,*]

Sear'd otherwise; no worse of worst extend—  
With vilest torture let my life be ended.

*King.* Methinks, in these some blessed spi-  
rit doth speak;

His powerful sound, within an organ weak:  
And what impossibility would slay

In common sense, sense saves another way.  
Thy life is dear; for all, that life can rate

Worth name of life, in thee hath estimate ††.  
Youth, beauty, wisdom, courage, virtue, all

That happiness and prime §§ can happy call:  
Thou this to hazard, needs must intimate

Skill infinite, or monstrous desperate.  
Sweet practiser, thy physic I will try;

That ministers thine own death, if I die.

*Hel.* If I break time, or flinch in property  
Of what I spoke, unpitied let me die: [see

And well deserv'd: Not helping, death's my  
But, if I help, what do you promise me?

*King.* Make thy demand.

*Hel.* But will you make it even?  
*King.* Ay, by my sceptre, and my hopes α

[*hand*]

*Hel.* Then shalt thou give me, with thy kingly  
What husband in thy power I will command:

Exempted be from me the arrogance  
To choose from forth the royal blood of  
France;

My low and humble name to propagate  
With any branch or image of thy state:  
But such a one, thy vassal, whom I know  
Is free for me to ask, thee to bestow.

*King.* Here is my hand; the premises observed,

Thy will by my performance shall be served;  
So make the choice of thy own time; for I,  
Thy resolved patient, on thee still rely.

More should I question thee, and more I must;  
Though, more to know, could not be more to  
trust; [But rest

From whence thou cam'st, how tended on,—  
Unquestion'd welcome, and undoubted blest.—  
Give me some help here, ho!—If thou proceed

As high as word, my deed shall match thy  
[*Flourish. Exeunt.*

SCENE II. Rousillon. *A Room in the  
Countess's Palace.*

*Enter Countess and Clown.*

*Count.* Come on, sir; I shall now put you  
to the height of your breeding.

*Clo.* I will show myself highly fed, and  
lowly taught: I know my business is but to  
the court.

*Count.* To the court! why, what place make  
you special, when you put off that with such  
contempt? But to the court!

*Clo.* Truly, madam, if God have lent a man  
any manners, he may easily put it off at court:  
he that cannot make a leg, put off's cap, kiss  
his hand, and say nothing, has neither leg,  
hands, lip, nor cap; and, indeed, such a fellow,  
to say precisely, were not for the court:  
but, for me, I have an answer will serve all  
men.

*Count.* Marry, that's a bountiful answer,  
that fits all questions.

*Clo.* It is like a barber's chair, that fits all  
buttocks; the pin-buttock, the quatch buttock,  
the brawn-buttock, or any buttock.

*Count.* Will your answer serve fit to all  
questions?

*Clo.* As fit as ten groats is for the hand of  
an attorney, as your French crown for your  
taffata punk, as Tib's rush for Tom's fore-finger,  
as a pancake for Shrove-tuesday, a morris  
for May-day, as the nail to his hole, the cuckold  
to his horn, as a scolding quean to a wrangling  
knave, as the nun's lip to the friar's mouth;  
nay, as the pudding to his skin.

*Count.* Have you, I say, an answer of such  
fitness for all questions?

*Clo.* From below your duke, to beneath  
your constable, it will fit any question.

*Count.* It must be an answer of most monstrous  
size, that must fit all demands.

*Clo.* But a trifle neither, in good faith, if  
the learned should speak truth of it: here it  
is, and all that belongs to't: Ask me, if I am  
a courtier; it shall do you no harm to learn.

*Count.* To be young again, if we could: I  
will be a fool in question, hoping to be the  
wiser by your answer. I pray you, sir, are  
you a courtier?

*Clo.* O Lord, sir,—There's a simple putting  
off;—more, more, a hundred of them.

*Count.* Sir, I am a poor friend of yours,  
that loves you.

*Clo.* O Lord, sir,—Thick, thick, spare not me.

*Count.* I think, sir, you can eat none of  
this homely meat.

*Clo.* O Lord, sir,—Nay, put me to't, I  
warrant you.

*Count.* You were lately whipped, sir, as I  
think.

*Clo.* O Lord, sir,—Spare not me.

*Count.* Do you cry, *O Lord, sir*, at your  
whipping, and *spare not me*? Indeed, your  
*O Lord, sir*, is very sequent\* to your whipping;  
you would answer very well to a  
whipping, if you were but bound to't.

*Clo.* I ne'er had worse luck in my life, in  
my—*O Lord, sir*: I see, things may serve  
long, but not serve ever.

*Count.* I play the noble housewife with  
the time, to entertain it so merrily with a  
fool.

*Clo.* O Lord, sir,—Why, ther't serves well  
again.

*Count.* An end, sir, to your business: Give  
Helen this,

And urge her to a present answer back:

Commend me to my kinsmen, and my son;  
This is not much.

*Clo.* Not much commendation to them.

*Count.* Not much employment for you:  
You understand me?

*Clo.* Most fruitfully; I am there before my  
legs.

*Count.* Haste you again. [*Exeunt severally.*

SCENE III. Paris. *A Room in the King's  
Palace.*

*Enter BERTRAM, LAPEU, and PAROLLES.*

*Laf.* They say, miracles are past; and we  
have our philosophical persons, to make  
modern and familiar things, supernatural  
and causeless. Hence is it, that we make  
trifles of terrors; ensconcing ourselves into  
seeming knowledge, when we should submit  
ourselves to an unknown fear†.

*Par.* Why, 'tis the rarest argument of  
wonder, that hath shot out in our latter times.

*Ber.* And so 'tis.

*Laf.* To be relinquished of the artists,—

*Par.* So I say; both of Galen and Paracelsus.

*Laf.* Of all the learned and authentic  
fellows,—

*Par.* Right, so I say.

*Laf.* That gave him out incurable,—

*Par.* Why, there 'tis; so say I too.

*Laf.* Not to be helped,—

*Par.* Right; as 'twere, a man assured of an—

*Laf.* Uncertain life, and sure death.

*Par.* Just, you say well; so would I have  
said.

\* Properly follows

† Ordinary.

‡ Fear me not here the object of fear.



*Laf.* I may truly say, it is a novelty to the world.

*Par.* It is, indeed: if you will have it in showing, you shall read it in,—What do you call there?—

*Laf.* A showing of a heavenly effect in an earthly actor.

*Par.* That's it I would have said; the very same.

*Laf.* Why, your dolphin\* is not lustier: 'fore me I speak in respect—

*Par.* Nay, 'tis strange, 'tis very strange, that is the brief and the tedious of it; and he is of a most facinorous† spirit, that will not acknowledge it to be the—

*Laf.* Very hand of heaven.

*Par.* Ay, so I say.

*Laf.* In a most weak—

*Par.* And debile minister, great power, great transcendence: which should, indeed, give us a further use to be made, than alone the recovery of the king, as to be—

*Laf.* Generally thankful.

*Enter King, HELENA, and Attendants.*

*Par.* I would have said it; you say well: Here comes the king.

*Laf.* Lustick‡, as the Dutchman says: I'll like a maid the better, whilst I have a tooth in my head: Why, he's able to lead her a coranto.

*Par.* *Mort du Vinaigre!* Is not this Helen?

*Laf.* 'Fore God, I think so.

*King.* Go, call before me all the lords in court.— [Exit an Attendant.

Sit, my preserver, by thy patient's side; And with this healthful hand, whose banish'd sense

Thou hast repeal'd, a second time receive The confirmation of my promised gift, Which but attends thy naming.

*Enter several Lords.*

Fair maid, send forth thine eye: this youthful parcel

Of noble bachelors stand at my bestowing, O'er whom both sovereign power and father's voice§

I have to use: thy frank election make; Thou hast power to choose, and they none to forsake. [tuous mistress

*Hel.* To each of you one fair and vir-Fall, when love please!—marry, to each, but one||!

*Laf.* I'd give bay Curtal¶, and his furniture, My mouth no more were broken than these And writ as little beard. [boys',

*King.* Peruse them well: Not one of those, but had a noble father.

*Hel.* Gentlemen, [health. Heaven hath, through me, restored the king to All. We understand it, and thank heaven for you. [wealthiest,

*Hel.* I am a simple maid; and therein That, I protest, I simply am a maid:— Please it your majesty, I have done already:

The blushes in my cheeks thus whisper me,  
*We blush, that thou shouldst choose; but, be refused,*  
*Let the white death sit on thy cheek for ever;*  
*We'll ne'er come there again.*

*King.* Make choice; and, see, Who shuns thy love, shuns all his love in me.

*Hel.* Now, Dian, from thy altar do I fly; And to imperial Love, that god most high, Do my sighs stream.—Sir, will you hear my 1 Lord. And grant it. [suit?

*Hel.* Thanks, sir; all the rest is mute\*\*. *Laf.* I had rather be in this choice, than throw ames-ace†† for my life.

*Hel.* The honour, sir, that flames in your fair eyes,

Before I speak, too threateningly replies: Love make your fortunes twenty times above Her that so wishes, and her humble love!

2 Lord. No better, if you please.

*Hel.* My wish receive, Which great love grant! and so I take my leave.

*Laf.* Do all they deny her? An they were sons of mine, I'd have them whipped; or I would send them to the Turk, to make eunuchs of.

*Hel.* Be not afraid [To a Lord] that I your hand should take;

I'll never do you wrong for your own sake: Blessing upon your vows! and in your bed Find fairer fortune, if you ever wed!

*Laf.* These boys are boys of ice, they'll none have her: sure, they are bastards to the English; the French ne'er got them.

*Hel.* You are too young, too happy, and too good,

To make yourself a son out of my blood.

4 Lord. Fair one, I think not so.

*Laf.* There's one grape yet,—I am sure, thy father drank wine.—But if thou be'st not an ass, I am a youth of fourteen; I have known thee already.

*Hel.* I dare not say, I take you; [To BERTRAM] but I give

Me, and my service, ever whilst I live, Into your guiding power.—This is the man.

*King.* Why then, young Bertram, take her she's thy wife. [your highness

*Ber.* My wife, my liege? I shall beseech In such a business give me leave to use

The help of mine own eyes.

*King.* Know'st thou not, Bertram What she has done for me?

*Ber.* Yes, my good lord; But never hope to know why I should marry her. [from my sickly bed.

*King.* Thou know'st, she has raised me

*Ber.* But follows it, my lord, to bring me down [well;

Must answer for your raising? I know her She had her breeding at my father's charge:

A poor physician's daughter my wife!—Disdain Rather corrupt me ever! [the which

*King.* 'Tis only title‡‡ thou disdain'st in her,

\* The dauphin. † Wicked. ‡ Lustigh is the Dutch word for lusty, cheerful.

§ They were wards as well as subjects. || Except one, meaning Bertram. ¶ A docked horse.

\*\* i. e., I have no more to say to you. †† The lowest chance of the dice.

‡‡ i. e., The want of title.

I can build up. Strange is it, that our bloods,  
Of colour, weight, and heat, pour'd all together,  
Would quite confound distinction, yet stand off  
In differences so mighty : If she be  
All that is virtuous, (save what thou dislikest,  
A poor physician's daughter,) thou dislikest  
Of virtue for the name : but do not so : (ceed,  
From lowest place when virtuous things pro-  
The place is dignified by the doer's deed :

Where great additions\* swell, and virtue none,  
It is a dropsied honour : good alone  
Is good, without a name ; vileness is so † :  
The property by what it is should go,  
Not by the title. She is young, wise, fair ;  
In these to nature she's immediate heir ;  
And these breed honour : that is honour's scorn,  
Which challenges itself as honour's born,  
And is not like the sire : Honours best thrive,  
When rather from our acts we them derive  
Than our fore-goers : the mere word's a slave,  
Debauch'd on every tomb ; on every grave,  
A lying trophy, and as oft is dumb,  
Where dust, and damp'd oblivion, is the tomb  
Of honour'd bones indeed. What should be said ?  
If thou canst like this creature as a maid,  
I can create the rest : virtue, and she, [me-  
Is her own dower ; honour and wealth, from

*Ber.* I cannot love her, nor will strive to do't.

*King.* Thou wrong'st thyself, if thou  
shouldst strive to choose. [I am glad ;

*Hel.* That you are well restored, my lord,  
Let the rest go. [defeat,

*King.* My honour's at the stake ; which to  
I must produce my power : Here, take her  
hand,

Proud scornful boy, unworthy this good gift ;  
That dost in vile misprision shackle up  
My love, and her desert ; that canst not dream,  
We, poisoning us in her defective scale, [know,  
Shall weigh thee to the beam : that wilt not  
It is in us to plant thine honour, where [tempt :  
We please to have it grow : Check thy con-  
Obey our will, which travails in thy good :  
Believe not thy disdain, but presently  
Do thine own fortunes that obedient right,  
Which both thy duty owes, and our power  
claims ;

Or I will throw thee from my care for ever,  
Into the staggers, and the careless lapse [hate,  
Of youth and ignorance ; both my revenge and  
Loosing upon thee in the name of justice,  
Without all terms of pity : Speak ; thine answer.

*Ber.* Pardon, my gracious lord ; for I submit  
My fancy to your eyes : When I consider,  
What great creation, and what dote of honour,  
Flies where you bid it, I find, that she, which  
late

Was in my nobler thoughts most base, is now  
The praised of the king ; who, so ennobled,  
Is, as 'twere, born so.

*King.* Take her by the hand,  
And tell her, she is thine : to whom I promise  
A counterpoise ; if not to thy estate,  
A balance more replete.

*Ber.* I take her hand.

*King.* Good fortune, and the favour of the  
king,

Smile upon this contract ; whose ceremony  
Shall seem expedient on the now-born brief,  
And be perform'd to-night : the solemn feast  
Shall more attend upon the coming space,  
Expecting absent friends. As thou lovest her,  
Thy love's to me religious ; else, does err.

[*Exeunt King, Ber. HEL. Lords,*  
and Attendants.

*Laf.* Do you hear, monsieur ? a word with you.

*Par.* Your pleasure, sir ?

*Laf.* Your lord and master did well to make  
his recantation.

*Par.* Recantation ?—My lord ? my master ?

*Laf.* Ay ; Is it not a language, I speak ?

*Par.* A most harsh one ; and not to be  
understood without bloody succeeding. My  
master ?

*Laf.* Are you companion to the count Rou-  
sillon ?

*Par.* To any count ; to all counts ; to what  
is man.

*Laf.* To what is count's man ; count's mas-  
ter is of another style.

*Par.* You are too old, sir ; let it satisfy  
you, you are too old.

*Laf.* I must tell thee, sirrah, I write man ;  
to which title age cannot bring thee.

*Par.* What I dare too well do, I dare not do.

*Laf.* I did think thee, for two ordinaries ‡,  
to be a pretty wise fellow ; thou didst make  
tolerable vent of thy travel ; it might pass ;  
yet the scarfs, and the bannerets, about thee,  
did manifoldly dissuade me from believing  
thee a vessel of too great a burden. I have  
now found thee ; when I lose thee again, I  
care not : yet art thou good for nothing but  
taking up ; and that thou art scarce worth.

*Par.* Hadst thou not the privilege of anti-  
quity upon thee,—

*Laf.* Do not plunge thyself too far in anger,  
lest thou hasten thy trial ;—which if—Lord  
have mercy on thee for a hen ! So, my good  
window of lattice, fare thee well ; thy case-  
ment I need not open, for I look through  
thee. Give me thy hand.

*Par.* My lord, you give me most egregious  
indignity.

*Laf.* Ay, with all my heart ; and thou art  
worthy of it.

*Par.* I have not, my lord, deserved it.

*Laf.* Yes, good faith, every dram of it ; and  
I will not bate thee a scruple.

*Par.* Well, I shall be wiser.

*Laf.* E'en as soon as thou canst, for thou  
hast to pull at a smack o' the contrary. If  
ever thou be'st bound in thy scarf, and beaten,  
thou shalt find what it is to be proud of thy  
bondage. I have a desire to hold my acquaint-  
ance with thee, or rather my knowledge ;  
that I may say, in the default §, he is a man  
I know.

*Par.* My lord, you do me most insup-  
portable vexation.

\* Titles. † Good is good independent of any worldly distinction, and so is vileness vile,  
‡ i. e., While I sate twice with thee at dinner. § At a need.

*Laf.* I would it were hell-pains for thy sake, and my poor doing eternal: for doing I am past; as I will by thee, in what motion age will give me leave. *[Exit.]*

*Par.* Well, thou hast a son shall take this disgrace off me; scurvy, old, filthy, scurvy lord!—Well, I must be patient; there is no fettering of authority. I'll beat him, by my life, if I can meet him with any convenience, an he were double and double a lord. I'll have no more pity of his age, than I would have of—I'll beat him, an if I could but meet him again.

*Re-enter LAFEU.*

*Laf.* Sirrah, your lord and master's married, there's news for you; you have a new mistress.

*Par.* I most unfeignedly beseech your lordship to make some reservation of your wrongs: He is my good lord: whom I serve above, is my master.

*Laf.* Who? God?

*Par.* Ay, sir.

*Laf.* The devil it is, that's thy master. Why dost thou garter up thy arms o' this fashion? dost make hose of thy sleeves? do other servants so? Thou wert best set thy lower part where thy nose stands. By mine honour, if I were but two hours younger, I'd beat thee: methinks, thou art a general offence, and every man should beat thee. I think, thou wast created for men to breathe\* themselves upon thee.

*Par.* This is hard and undeserved measure, my lord.

*Laf.* Go to, sir; you were beaten in Italy for picking a kernel out of a pomegranate; you are a vagabond, and no true traveller: you are more saucy with lords, and honourable personages, than the heraldry of your birth and virtue gives you commission. You are not worth another word, else I'd call you knave. I leave you. *[Exit.]*

*Enter BERTRAM.*

*Par.* Good, very good; it is so then.—Good, very good; let it be concealed a while.

*Ber.* Undone, and forfeited to cares for ever!

*Par.* What is the matter, sweet heart?

*Ber.* Although before the solemn priest I will not bed her. *[have sworn,]*

*Par.* What? what, sweetheart? *[me:]*

*Ber.* O my Parolles, they have married I'll to the Tuscan wars, and never bed her.

*Par.* France is a dog-hole, and it no more merits

The tread of a man's foot: to the wars!

*Ber.* There's letters from my mother; what I know not yet. *[the import is,]*

*Par.* Ay, that would be known: To the wars, my boy, to the wars!

He wears his honour in a box unseen,  
That hugs his kicksy-wicksy† here at home;  
Spending his manly marrow in her arms,  
Which should sustain the bound and high curvet  
Of Mars's fiery steed: To other regions!

France is a stable; we that dwell in't, jade: Therefore, to the war! *[house,]*

*Ber.* It shall be so; I'll send her to my Acquaint my mother with my hate to her, And wherefore I am fled; write to the king That which I durst not speak: His present gift Shall furnish me to those Italian fields, Where noble fellows strike: War is no strife To the dark house‡, and the detested wife.

*Par.* Will this capricio hold in thee, art sure? *[me.]*

*Ber.* Go with me to my chamber, and advise I'll send her straight away: To-morrow I'll to the wars, she to her single sorrow.

*Par.* Why, these balls bound; there's noise in it.—'Tis hard;

A young man, married, is a man that's marr'd: Therefore away, and leave her bravely; go: The king has done you wrong; but, hush! 'tis so. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE IV. *The same. Another Room in the same.*

*Enter HELENA and Clown.*

*Hel.* My mother greets me kindly: Is she well?

*Clow.* She is not well; but yet she has her health: she's very merry; but yet she is not well: but thanks be given, she's very well, and wants nothing i'the world; but yet she is not well.

*Hel.* If she be very well, what does she ail, that she's not very well?

*Clow.* Truly, she's very well, indeed, but for two things.

*Hel.* What two things?

*Clow.* One, that she's not in heaven, whither God send her quickly! the other, that she's in earth, from whence God send her quickly!

*Enter PAROLLES.*

*Par.* Bless you, my fortunate lady!

*Hel.* I hope, sir, I have your good will to have mine own good fortunes.

*Par.* You had my prayers to lead them on: and to keep them on, have them still.—O, my knave! How does my old lady?

*Clow.* So that you had her wrinkles, and I her money, I would she did as you say.

*Par.* Why, I say nothing.

*Clow.* Marry, you are the wiser man; for many a man's tongue shakes out his master's undoing: To say nothing, to do nothing, to know nothing, and to have nothing, is to be a great part of your title; which is within a very little of nothing.

*Par.* Away, thou'rt a knave.

*Clow.* You should have said, sir, before a knave thou art a knave; that is, before me thou art a knave: this had been truth, sir.

*Par.* Go to, thou art a witty fool, I have found thee.

*Clow.* Did you find me in yourself, sir? or were you taught to find me? The search, sir, was profitable; and much fool may you find

\* Exercise. † A cant term for a wife.

‡ The house made gloomy by discontent.



in you, even to the world's pleasure, and the increase of laughter.

*Par.* A good knave, i'faith, and well fed.—Madam, my lord will go away to-night; A very serious business calls on him.

The great prerogative and rite of love, Which, as your due, time claims, he does acknowledge;

But puts it off by a compell'd restraint; Whose want, and whose delay, is strewed with sweets,

Which they distil now in the curbed time, To make the coming hour o'erflow with joy, And pleasure drown the brim.

*Hel.* What's his will else?

*Par.* That you will take your instant leave o' the king, [ceeding, And make this haste as your own good pro-Strengthen'd with what apology you think May make it probable need\*.

*Hel.* What more commands he?

*Par.* That, having this obtain'd, you pre-Attend his further pleasure. [sently

*Hel.* In every thing I wait upon his will.

*Par.* I shall report it so.

*Hel.* I pray you.—Come, sirrah.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE V. Another Room in the same.

*Enter LAFEU and BERTRAM.*

*Laf.* But, I hope, your lordship thinks not him a soldier.

*Ber.* Yes, my lord, and of very valiant ap-proof.

*Laf.* You have it from his own deliverance.

*Ber.* And by other warranted testimony.

*Laf.* Then my dial goes not true; I took his lark for a bunting t.

*Ber.* I do assure you, my lord, he is very great in knowledge, and accordingly valiant.

*Laf.* I have then sinned against his experience, and transgressed against his valour; and my state that way is dangerous, since I cannot yet find in my heart to repent. Here he comes; I pray you, make us friends, I will pursue the amity.

*Enter PAROLLES.*

*Par.* These things shall be done, sir.

[*To BERTRAM.*]

*Laf.* Pray you, sir, who's his tailor?

*Par.* Sir?

*Laf.* O, I know him well: Ay, sir; he, sir, is a good workman, a very good tailor.

*Ber.* Is she gone to the king?

[*Aside to PAROLLES.*]

*Par.* She is.

*Ber.* Will she away to night?

*Par.* As you'll have her. [treasure,

*Ber.* I have writ my letters, casketed my Given order for our horses; and to night, When I should take possession of the bride,—And, ere I do begin,—

*Laf.* A good traveller is something at the latter end of a dinner; but one that lies three-thirds, and uses a known truth to pass a thou-

sand nothings with, should be once heard, and thrice beaten.—God save you, captain.

*Ber.* Is there any kindness between my lord and you, monsieur?

*Par.* I know not how I have deserved to run into my lord's displeasure.

*Laf.* You have made shift to run into't, boots and spurs and all, like him that leaped into the custard; and out of it you'll run again, rather than suffer question for your residence.

*Ber.* It may be, you have mistaken him, my lord.

*Laf.* And shall do so ever, though I took him at his prayers. Fare you well, my lord; and believe this of me, there can be no kernel in this light nut; the soul of this man is his clothes: trust him not in matter of heavy consequence; I have kept of them tame, and know their natures.—Farewell, monsieur: I have spoken better of you, than you have or will deserve at my hand: but we must do good against evil. [*Exit.*]

*Par.* An idle lord, I swear.

*Ber.* I think so.

*Par.* Why, do you not know him?

*Ber.* Yes, I do know him well; and com-mou speech [clog

Gives him a worthy pass. Here comes my [*Enter HELENA.*]

*Hel.* I have, sir, as I was commanded from you, [*leav-*

Spoke with the king, and have procured his For present parting; only, he desires Some private speech with you.

*Ber.* I shall obey his will.

You must not marvel, Helen, at my course, Which holds not colour with the time, nor The ministration and required office [*does* On my particular: prepared I was not For such a business; therefore am I found [you So much unsettled: This drives me to entreat That presently you take your way for home; And rather muse I, than ask, why I entreat you For my respects are better than they seem; And my appointments have in them a need, Greater than shows itself, at the first view, To you that know them not. This to my mo-ther: [*Giving a letter.*]

'Twill be two days ere I shall see you; so I leave you to your wisdom.

*Hel.* Sir, I can nothing say,

But that I am your most obedient servant.

*Ber.* Come, come, no more of that.

*Hel.* And ever shall With true observance seek to eke out that, Wherein toward me my homely stars have To equal my great fortune. [*faill'd*

*Ber.* Let that go:

My haste is very great: Farewell; hie home.

*Hel.* Pray, sir, your pardon.

*Ber.* Well, what would you say?

*Hel.* I am not worthy of the wealth I owe; Nor dare I say, 'tis mine; and yet it is; But, like a timorous thief, most fain would What law does vouch mine own. [*stead*

\* A specious appearance of necessity. † The hunting nearly resembles the sky-lark; but has little or no song, which gives estimation to the sky-lark. ‡ Wonder. § Possess.

*Ber.* What would you have?  
*Hel.* Something; and scarce so much:—  
 nothing, indeed.— [Faith, yes;—  
 would not tell you what I would: my lord—  
 Strangers, and foes, do sunder, and not kiss.  
*Ber.* I pray you, stay not, but in haste to  
 horse. [my lord.  
*Hel.* I shall not break your bidding, good

*Ber.* Where are my other men, monsieur?—  
 Farewell. [Exit HELENA.  
 Go thou toward home; where I will never  
 come, [drum:—  
 Whilst I can shake my sword, or hear the  
 Away, and for our flight.  
*Par.* Bravely, coragio!  
 [Exeunt.

## ACT III.

SCENE I. Florence. *A Room in the Duke's Palace.*

*Flourish.* Enter the Duke of Florence, attended; two French Lords, & others.

*Duke.* So that, from point to point, now have you heard

The fundamental reasons of this war;  
 Whose great decision hath much blood let  
 And more thirsts after. [forth,

1 *Lord.* Holy seems the quarrel  
 Upon your grace's part; black and fearful  
 On the opposer. [France

*Duke.* Therefore we marvel much, our cousin  
 Would, in so just a business, shut his bosom  
 Against our borrowing prayers.

2 *Lord.* Good my lord,  
 The reasons of our state I cannot yield\*,  
 But like a common and an outward man†,  
 That the great figure of a council frames  
 By self-unable motion: therefore dare not  
 Say what I think of it; since I have found  
 Myself in my uncertain grounds to fail  
 As often as I guess'd.

*Duke.* Be it his pleasure.  
 2 *Lord.* But I am sure, the younger of our  
 nature‡,

That surfeit on their ease, will, day by day,  
 Come here for physic.

*Duke.* Welcome shall they be;  
 And all the honours, that can fly from us,  
 Shall on them settle. You know your places  
 well;

When better fall, for your avails they fell:  
 To-morrow to the field. [Flourish. Exeunt.

SCENE II. Roussillon. *A Room in the Countess's Palace.*

Enter Countess and Clown.

*Count.* It hath happened all as I would have  
 had it, save, that he comes not along with her.

*Clo.* By my troth, I take my young lord to  
 be a very melancholy man.

*Count.* By what observance, I pray you?

*Clo.* Why, he will look upon his boot, and  
 sing; mend the ruff, and sing; ask questions,  
 and sing; pick his teeth, and sing: I know a  
 man that had this trick of melancholy, sold a  
 goodly manor for a song.

*Count.* Let me see what he writes, and when  
 he means to come. [Opening a letter.

*Clo.* I have no mind to Isbel, since I was

at court: our old ling and our Isbels o' the  
 country are nothing like your old ling and your  
 Isbels o' the court: the brains of my Cupid's  
 knocked out; and I begin to love, as an old  
 man loves money, with no stomach.

*Count.* What have we here?  
*Clo.* E'en that you have there. [Exit.

*Count.* [Reads.] *I have sent you a daughter-in-law: she hath recovered the king, and undone me. I have wedded her, not bedded her; and sworn to make the not eternal. You shall hear, I am run away; know it, before the report come. If there be breadth enough in the world, I will hold a long distance. My duty to you,*

*Your unfortunate son,*  
 BERTRAM.

This is not well, rash and unbridled boy;  
 To fly the favours of so good a king;  
 To pluck his indignation on thy head,  
 By the misprizing of a maid too virtuous  
 For the contempt of empire.

*Re-enter Clown.*

*Clo.* O madam, yonder is heavy news with-  
 in, between two soldiers and my young lady.

*Count.* What is the matter?

*Clo.* Nay, there is some comfort in the news,  
 some comfort: your son will not be killed so  
 soon as I thought he would.

*Count.* Why should he be killed?

*Clo.* So say I, madam, if he run away, as  
 I hear he does: the danger is in standing to't;  
 that's the loss of men, though it be the getting  
 of children. Here they come, will tell you  
 more: for my part, I only hear, your son was  
 run away. [Exit Clown.

Enter HELENA and two Gentlemen.

1 *Gent.* Save you, good madam.

*Hel.* Madam, my lord is gone, for ever gone.

2 *Gent.* Do not say so. [Gentlemen,—

*Count.* Think upon patience.—Pray you,  
 I have felt so many quirks of joy, and grief,  
 That the first face of neither, on the start,  
 Can woman|| me unto't: Where is my son, I  
 pray you? [of Florence:

2 *Gent.* Madam, he's gone to serve the duke  
 We met him thitherward; from thence we  
 came,

And, after some despatch in hand at court,  
 Thither we bend again. [passport.

*Hel.* Look on his letter, inadam; here's my  
 [Reads.] *When thou canst get the ring*

\* i. e., I cannot inform you of the reasons.

† As we say at present, our young fellows.

‡ i. e., Affect me suddenly and deeply, as our sex are usually affected.

† One not in the secret of affairs.

§ The folding at the top of the boot

upon my finger\*, which never shall come off, and show me a child begotten of thy body, that I am father to, then call me husband: but in such a then I write a never. This is a dreadful sentence.

Count. Brought you this letter, gentlemen?

1 Gent. Ay, madam;

And, for the contents' sake, are sorry for our pains.

Count. I pry'thee, lady, have a better cheer; If thou engrossest all the griefs are thine†, Thou robbst me of a moiety: He was my son; But I do wash his name out of my blood, And thou art all my child.—Towards Florence

2 Gent. Ay, madam. [Is he?

Count. And to be a soldier?

2 Gent. Such is his noble purpose; and, believe't,

The duke will lay upon him all the honour That good convenience claims.

Count. Return you thither?

1 Gent. Ay, madam, with the swiftest wing of speed.

Hel. [Reads.] *Till I have no wife, I have 'Tis bitter.* [nothing in France.

Count. Find you that there?

Hel. Ay, madam.

1 Gent. 'Tis but the boldness of his hand, haply, which

His heart was not consenting to. [wife!

Count. Nothing in France, until he have no There's nothing here, that is too good for him, But only she; and she deserves a lord, That twenty such rude boys might tend upon, And call her hourly, mistress. Who was with him?

1 Gent. A servant only, and a gentleman Which I have some time known.

Count. Parolles, was't not?

1 Gent. Ay, my good lady, he.

Count. A very tainted fellow, and full of wickedness.

My son corrupts a well-derived nature With his inducement.

1 Gent. Indeed, good lady, The fellow has a deal of that, too much, Which holds him much to have.

Count. You are welcome, gentlemen; I will entreat you, when you see my son, To tell him, that his sword can never win The honour that he loses: more I'll entreat you Written to bear along.

2 Gent. We serve you, madam, In that and all your worthiest affairs.

Count. Not so, but as we change our Will you draw near? [courtesies].

[Exeunt Countess and Gentlemen.

Hel. *Till I have no wife, I have nothing in France.*

Nothing in France, until he has no wife! Thou shalt have none, Rousillon, none in France,

Then hast thou all again. Poor lord! is't I

That chase thee from thy country, and expose Those tender limbs of thine to the event Of the none-sparing war? and is it I [thou That drive thee from the sportive court, where Was shot at with fair eyes, to be the mark Of smoky muskets? O you leaden messengers, That ride upon the violent speed of fire, Fly with false aim; move the still piercing air, That sings with piercing, do not touch my lord! Whoever shoots at him, I set him there; Whoever charges on his forward breast, I am the caittif, that do hold him to it; And, though I kill him not, I am the cause His death was so effected: better 'twere, I met the ravin lion when he roar'd With sharp constraint of hunger; better 'twere That all the miseries, which nature owes, Were mine at once: No, come thou home Rousillon,

Whence honour but of danger wins a scar, As oft it loses all; I will be gone: My being here it is, that holds thee hence: Shall I stay here to do't? no, no, although The air of paradise did fan the house, And angels officed all: I will be gone; That pitiful rumour may report my flight, To console thine ear. Come, night; end, day! For, with the dark, poor thief, I'll steal away. [Exit.

### SCENE III. Florence. Before the Duke's Palace.

*Flourish.* Enter the Duke of Florence, BERTRAM, Lords, Officers, Soldiers, and others.

Duke. The general of our horse thou art; and we, [duce, Great in our hope, lay our best love and cre- Upon thy promising fortune.

Ber. Sir, it is A charge too heavy for my strength; but yet We'll strive to bear it for your worthy sake, To the extreme edge of hazard.

Duke. Then go thou forth; And fortune play upon thy prosperous helm, As thy auspicious mistress!

Ber. This very day, Great Mars, I put myself into thy file: [prove Make me but like my thoughts; and I shall A lover of thy drum, hater of love. [Exeunt.

### SCENE IV. Rousillon. A Room in the Countess's Palace.

Enter Countess and Steward.

Count. Alas! and would you take the letter of her? [has done, Might you not know, she would do as she By sending me a letter? Read it again.

Stew. *I am Saint Jaques' pilgrim; thither gone; Ambitious love hath so in me offended, That bare-foot plod I the cold ground upon, With sainted row my faults to have amended.*

\* i. e., When you can get the ring which is on my finger into your possession. † If thou keepest all thy sorrows to thyself. ‡ In reply to the gentlemen's declaration that they are her servants, the countess answers—no otherwise than as she returns the same offices of civility. § Raven us.



Write, write, that, from the bloody course  
of war,

My dearest master, your dear son may hie;  
Bless him at home in peace, whilst I from far,  
His name with zealous fervour sanctify:  
His taken labours bid him me forgive;  
I, his despicable Juno\*, sent him forth  
From courtly friends, with camping foes  
to live, [worth:]

Where death and danger dog the heels of  
He is too good and fair for death and me;  
Whom I myself embrace, to set him free.

Count. Ah, what sharp stings are in her  
mildest words!—

Rinaldo, you did never lack advice† so much;  
As letting her pass so; had I spoke with her,  
I could have well diverted her intents,  
Which thus she hath prevented.

Slew. Pardon me, madam:  
If I had given you this at over-night,  
She might have been o'erta'en; and yet she  
writes,  
Pursuit would be in vain.

Count. What angel shall  
Bless this unworthy husband? he cannot thrive,  
Unless her prayers, whom heaven delights to  
hear,

And loves to grant, reprieve him from the wrath  
Of greatest justice.—Write, write, Rinaldo,  
To this unworthy husband of his wife;  
Let every word weigh heavy of her worth,  
That he does weigh† too light: my greatest  
grief,

Though little he do feel it, set down sharply.  
Despatch the most convenient messenger:—  
When, haply, he shall hear that she is gone,  
He will return; and hope I may, that she,  
Hearing so much, will speed her foot again,  
Led hither by pure love: which of them both  
Is dearest to me, I have no skill in sense  
To make distinction:—Provide this mes-  
senger:—

My heart is heavy, and mine age is weak;  
Grief would have tears, and sorrow bids me  
speak. [Exeunt.

SCENE V. Without the Walls of Florence.  
A tucket afar off. Enter an old Widow of  
Florence, DIANA, VIOLENTA, MARIANA,  
and other Citizens.

Wid. Nay, come; for if they do approach  
the city, we shall lose all the sight.

Dia. They say, the French count has done  
most honourable service.

Wid. It is reported that he has taken their  
greatest commander; and that with his own  
hand he slew the duke's brother. We have  
lost our labour; they are gone a contrary way:  
hark! you may know by their trumpets.

Mar. Come, let's return again, and suffice  
ourselves with the report of it. Well, Diana,  
take heed of this French earl: the honour of  
a maid is her name; and no legacy is so rich  
as honesty.

Wid. I have told my neighbour, how you  
have been solicited by a gentleman his com-  
panion.

Mar. I know that knave; hang him! one  
Parolles: a filthy officer he is in those sug-  
gestions§ for the young earl.—Beware of  
them, Diana; their promises, enticements,  
oaths, tokens, and all these engines of lust,  
are not the things they go under||: many a  
maid hath been seduced by them; and the  
misery is, example, that so terrible shows in  
the wreck of maidenhood, cannot for all that  
dissuade succession, but that they are lined  
with the twigs that threaten them. I hope,  
I need not to advise you further; but, I hope,  
your own grace will keep you where you are,  
though there were no further danger known,  
but the modesty which is so lost.

Dia. You shall not need to fear me.  
Enter HELENA, in the dress of a Pilgrim.

Wid. I hope so.—Look, here comes a  
pilgrim: I know she will lie at my house:  
thither they send one another: I'll question  
her.—

God save you, pilgrim! Whither are you bound?

Hel. To Saint Jacques le grand.

Where do the palmers¶ lodge, I do beseech you?

Wid. At the Saint Francis here, beside

Hel. Is this the way? [the port.

Wid. Ay, marry, is it.—Hark you!

[A march afar off.  
They come this way:—If you will tarry, holy  
But till the troops come by, [pilgrim,  
I will conduct you where you shall be lodged;  
The rather, for, I think, I know your hostess  
As ample as myself.

Hel. Is it yourself?

Wid. If you shall please so, pilgrim.

Hel. I thank you, and will stay upon your  
leisure.

Wid. You came, I think, from France?

Hel. I did so.

Wid. Here you shall see a countryman of  
That has done worthy service. [yours,

Hel. His name, I pray you.

Dia. The count Rousillon; Know you  
such a one? [of him:

Hel. But by the ear, that hears most nobly  
His face I know not.

Dia. Whatsoe'er he is,  
He's bravely taken here. He stole from France,  
As 'tis reported, for \*\* the king had married him  
Against his liking: Think you it is so?

Hel. Ay, surely, mere the truth††; I know  
his lady. [the count.

Dia. There is a gentleman, that serves  
Reports but coarsely of her.

Hel. What's his name?

Dia. Monsieur Parolles.

Hel. O, I believe with him,  
In argument of praise, or to the worth  
Of the great count himself, she is too mean  
To have her name repeated; all her deserving  
Is a reserved honesty, and that

\* Alluding to the story of Hercules. † Discretion or thought. ‡ Weigh here means  
to value or esteem. § Temptations. || They are not the things for which their names  
would make them pass. ¶ Pilgrims; so called from a staff or bough of palm they were  
wont to carry. \*\* Because. †† The exact, the entire truth.

I have not heard examined.

*Dia.* Alas, poor lady !  
'Tis a hard bondage, to become the wife  
Of a detesting lord.

*Wid.* A right good creature: wheresoe'er  
she is, [might do lie]  
Her heart weighs sadly: this young maid  
A shrewd turn, if she pleased.

*Hel.* How do you mean ?  
May be, the amorous count solicits her  
In the unlawful purpose.

*Wid.* He does, indeed ;  
And brokes\* with all that can in such a suit  
Corrupt the tender honour of a maid :  
but she is arm'd for him, and keeps her guard  
In honestest defence.

*Enter with drum and colours, a party  
of the Florentine army, BERTRAM, and  
PAROLLES.*

*Mar.* The gods forbid else !  
*Wid.* So, now they come :—  
That is Antonio, the duke's eldest son ;  
That, Escalus.

*Hel.* Which is the Frenchman ?  
*Dia.* He ;  
That with the plume: 'tis a most gallant fellow ;  
I would, he loved his wife: if he were honest,  
He were much goodlier:—Is't not a handsome

*Hel.* I like him well. [gentleman ?]  
*Dia.* 'Tis pity, he is not honest: Yond's  
that same knave,

That leads him to these places; were I his lady,  
I'd poison that vile rascal.

*Hel.* Which is he ?  
*Dia.* That jack-an-apes with scarfs: Why  
is he melancholy ?

*Hel.* Perchance he's hurt i'the battle.  
*Par.* Lose our drum! well.

*Mar.* He's shrewdly vexed at something :  
Look, he has spied us.

*Wid.* Marry, hang you !  
*Mar.* And your courtesy, for a ring-carrier !

[*Exeunt* BERTRAM, PAROLLES, Officers,  
and Soldiers.

*Wid.* The troop is past: Come, pilgrim, I  
will bring you

Where you shall host: of enjoind penitents  
There's four or five, to great Saint Jaques bound,  
Already at my house.

*Hel.* I humbly thank you :  
Please it this matron, and this gentle maid,  
To eat with us to-night, the charge, and  
thanking,

Shall be for me; and, to requite you further,  
I will bestow some precepts on this virgin,  
Worthy the note.

*Both.* We'll take your offer kindly.  
[*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE VI. Camp before Florence.

*Enter* BERTRAM, and the two French Lords.

1 *Lord.* Nay, good my lord, put him to't ;  
let him have his way.

2 *Lord.* If your lordship find him not a  
sidding†, hold me no more in your respect.

1 *Lord.* On my life, my lord, a babbler.

*Ber.* Do you think, I am so far deceived  
in him ?

1 *Lord.* Believe it, my lord, in mine own  
direct knowledge, without any malice, but to  
speak of him as my kinsman, he's a most nota-  
ble coward, an infinite and endless liar, an  
hourly promise-breaker, the owner of no one  
good quality worthy your lordship's enter-  
tainment.

2 *Lord.* It were fit you knew him; lest,  
reposing too far in his virtue, which he hath  
not, he might, at some great and trusty busi-  
ness, in a main danger, fail you.

*Ber.* I would, I knew in what particular  
action to try him.

2 *Lord.* None better than to let him fetch  
off his drum, which you hear him so confi-  
dently undertake to do.

1 *Lord.* I, with a troop of Florentines, will  
suddenly surprise him; such I will have, whom,  
I am sure, he knows not from the enemy: we  
will bind and hood-wink him so, that he shall  
suppose no other but that he is carried into  
the leaguer‡ of the adversaries, when we bring  
him to our tents: Be your lordship pre-  
sent at his examination; if he do not, for the  
promise of his life, and in the highest com-  
pulsion of base fear, offer to betray you, and  
deliver all the intelligence in his power against  
you, and that with the divine forfeit of his  
soul upon oath, never trust my judgment in  
any thing.

2 *Lord.* O for the love of laughter, let him  
fetch his drum; he says, he has a stratagem  
for't: when your lordship sees the bottom of  
his success in't, and to what metal this coun-  
terfeit lamp of ore will be melted, if you give  
him not John Drum's entertainment, your in-  
clining cannot be removed. Here he comes.

*Enter* PAROLLES.

1 *Lord.* O, for the love of laughter, hinder  
not the humour of his design; let him fetch  
off his drum in any hand.

*Ber.* How now, monsieur? this drum sticks  
sorely in your disposition.

2 *Lord.* A pox on't let it go; 'tis but a drum.

*Par.* But a drum! Is't but a drum? A drum  
so lost!—There was an excellent command!  
to charge in with our horse upon our own  
wings, and to read our own soldiers.

2 *Lord.* That was not to be blamed in the  
command of the service; it was a disaster of  
war that Cæsar himself could not have pre-  
vented, if he had been there to command.

*Ber.* Well, we cannot greatly condemn our  
success: some dishonour we had in the loss of  
that drum; but it is not to be recovered.

*Par.* It might have been recovered.

*Ber.* It might, but it is not now.

*Par.* It is to be recovered; but that the  
merit of service is seldom attributed to the  
true and exact performer, I would have that  
drum or another, or *hic jacet* §.

*Ber.* Why, if you have a stomach to't, mon-

Deals with painters.

† A paltry fellow, a coward.

‡ The camp.

§ I would recover the lost drum or another, or die in the attempt.

sieur, if you think your mystery in stratagem can bring this instrument of honour again into his native quarter, be magnanimous in the enterprise, and go on; I will grace the attempt for a worthy exploit: if you speed well in it, the duke shall both speak of it, and extend to you what further becomes his greatness, even to the utmost syllable of your worthiness.

*Par.* By the hand of a soldier, I will undertake it.

*Ber.* But you must not now slumber in it.

*Par.* I'll about it this evening: and I will presently pen down my dilemmas\*, encourage myself in my certainty, put myself into my mortal preparation, and, by midnight, look to hear farther from me.

*Ber.* May I be bold to acquaint his grace, you are gone about it?

*Par.* I know not what the success will be, my lord; but the attempt I vow.

*Ber.* I know, thou art valiant; and, to the possibility of thy soldiership, will subscribe for thee. Farewell.

*Par.* I love not many words. [*Exit.*

*1 Lord.* No more than a fish loves water.—Is not this a strange fellow, my lord? that so confidently seems to undertake this business, which he knows is not to be done; damns himself to do, and dares better be damned than to do't.

*2 Lord.* You do not know him, my lord, as we do: certain it is, that he will steal himself into a man's favour, and, for a week, escape a great deal of discoveries; but when you find him out, you have him ever after.

*Ber.* Why, do you think, he will make no deed at all of this, that so seriously he does address himself unto?

*1 Lord.* None in the world; but return with an invention, and clap upon you two or three probable lies: but we have almost embossed him†, you shall see his fall to-night; for, indeed, he is not for your lordship's respect.

*2 Lord.* We'll make you some sport with the fox, ere we case him‡. He was first smoked by the old lord Lafau: when his disguise and he is parted, tell me what a sprat you shall find him; which you shall see this very night.

*1 Lord.* I must go look my twigs; he shall be caught.

*Ber.* Your brother, he shall go along with me.

*1 Lord.* As't please your lordship: I'll leave you. [*Exit.*

*Ber.* Now will I lead you to the house, and show you  
The lass I spoke of.

*2 Lord.* But, you say, she's honest.

*Ber.* That's all the fault: I spoke with her but once, [her,  
And found her wondrous cold; but I sent to  
By this same coxcomb that we have i'th' wind,  
Tokens and letters which she did re-send;

And this is all I have done: She's a fair creature  
Will you go see her? [*Exeunt.*

*2 Lord.* With all my heart, my lord.

[*Exeunt.*

# SCENE VII. Florence. A Room in the Widow's House.

*Enter HELENA and Widow.*

*Hel.* If you misdoubt me that I am not she, I know not how I shall assure you further, But I shall lose the grounds I work upon. [*Born,*

*Wid.* Though my estate be fallen, I was well  
Nothing acquainted with these businesses;  
And would not put my reputation now  
In any staining act.

*Hel.* Nor would I wish you.  
First, give me trust, the count he is my husband; [*spoken,*

And, what to your sworn counsel I have  
Is so, from word to word; and then you cannot,  
By the good aid that I of you shall borrow,  
Err in bestowing it.

*Wid.* I should believe you;  
For you have show'd me that, which well  
You are great in fortune. [*approves*

*Hel.* Take this purse of gold,  
And let me buy your friendly help thus far,  
Which I will over-pay, and pay again,  
When I have found it. The count he woos  
your daughter,

Lays down his wanton siege before her beauty,  
Resolves to carry her; let her, in fine, consent,  
As we'll direct her how 'tis best to bear it,  
Now his important blood will nought deny  
That she'll demand: A ring the county wears.  
That downward hath succeeded in his house,  
From son to son, some four or five descents  
Since the first father wore it: this ring he holds  
In most rich choice; yet, in his idle fire,  
To buy his will, it would not seem too dear,  
Howe'er repented after.

*Wid.* Now I see  
The bottom of your purpose.

*Hel.* You see it lawful then: It is no more,  
But that your daughter, ere she seems as won,  
Desires this ring; appoints him an encounter;  
In fine, delivers me to fill the time,  
Herself most chastely absent; after this,  
To marry her, I'll add three thousand crowns  
To what is past already.

*Wid.* I have yielded:  
Instruct my daughter how she shall persevere,  
That time and place, with this deceit so lawful,  
May prove coherent. Every night he comes  
With musics of all sorts, and songs composed  
To her unworthiness: It nothing steads us,  
To chide him from our eaves\*; for he persists  
As if his life lay on't.

*Hel.* Why then, to-night  
Let us assay our plot; which, if it speed,  
Is wicked meaning in a lawful deed,  
And lawful meaning in a lawful act;  
Where both not sin, and yet a sinful fact:  
But let's about it. [*Exeunt.*

\* I will pen down my plans and the probable obstructions. † Hunted him down.

‡ Before we strip him naked. § i. e., By discovering herself to the count.

|| Importunate ¶ i. e., Count.

\*\* From under our windows.



## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *Without the Florentine Camp.*

*Enter first Lord, with five or six Soldiers in ambush.*

1 Lord. He can come no other way but by this hedge' corner: When you sally upon him, speak what terrible language you will; though you understand it not yourselves, no matter: for we must not seem to understand him; unless some one among us, whom we must produce for an interpreter.

1 Sold. Good captain, let me be the interpreter.

1 Lord. Art not acquainted with him? knows he not thy voice?

1 Sold. No, sir, I warrant you.

1 Lord. But what linsy-woolsy hast thou to speak to us again?

1 Sold. Even such as you speak to me.

1 Lord. We must think us some band of strangers i' the adversary's entertainment\*. Now he hath a smack of all neighbouring languages; therefore we must every one be a man of his own fancy, not to know what we speak one to another; so we seem to know, is to know straight our purpose: chough's† language, gabble enough, and good enough. As for you, interpreter, you must seem very politic. But cough, ho! here he comes; and to beguile two hours in a sleep, and then to return and swear the lies he forges.

*Enter PAROLIES.*

Par. Ten o'clock: within these three hours 'twill be time enough to go home. What shall I say I have done? It must be a very plausible invention that carries it: They begin to smoke me; and disgraces have of late knocked too often at my door. I find, my tongue is too fool-hardy; but my heart hath the fear of Mars before it, and of his creatures, not daring the reports of my tongue.

1 Lord. This is the first truth that e'er thine own tongue was guilty of. [Aside.]

Par. What the devil should move me to undertake the recovery of this drum; being not ignorant of the impossibility, and knowing I had no such purpose? I must give myself some hurts, and say, I got them in exploit: Yet slight ones will not carry it: They will say, Came you off with so little? and great ones I dare not give. Wherefore? what's the instance? Tongue, I must put you into a butter-woman's mouth, and buy another of Baza-zet's mule, if you prattle me into these perils.

1 Lord. Is it possible he should know what he is, and be that he is? [Aside.]

Par. I would the cutting of my garments would serve the turn; or the breaking of my Spanish sword.

1 Lord. We cannot afford you so. [Aside.]

Par. Or the baring of my beard; and to say, it was in stratagem.

1 Lord. 'Twould not do. [Aside.]

Par. Or to drown my clothes, and say, I was stripped.

1 Lord. Hardly serve. [Aside.]

Par. Though I swore I leaped from the window of the citadel—

1 Lord. How deep? [Aside.]

Par. Thirty fathom.

1 Lord. 'Three great oaths would scarce make that be believed. [Aside.]

Par. I would, I had any drum of the enemy's; I would swear, I recovered it.

1 Lord. You shall hear one anon. [Aside.]

Par. A drum now of the enemy's!

[Alarm within.]

1 Lord. *Throca movousus, cargo, cargo,*

*All. Cargo, cargo, villianda par corbo, cargo.*

Par. O! ransome, ransome:—Do not hide mine eyes.

[They seize him and blindfold him.]

1 Sold. *Boskos thromuldo buskos.*

Par. I know you are the Muskos' regiment. And I shall lose my life for want of language: If there be here German, or Dane, low Dutch, Italian, or French, let him speak to me, I will discover that which shall undo The Florentine.

1 Sold. *Boskos vauvado:—*

I understand thee, and can speak thy tongue:—  
Kerelybonto:—Sir, Betake thee to thy faith, for seventeen poniards Are at thy bosom.

Par. O!!

1 Sold. O, pray, pray, pray.—

*Munka revania anliche.*

1 Lord. *Oscorbi dulchos rolivorca.*

1 Sold. The general is content to spare thee yet;

[on And, hood-wink'd as thou art, will lead thee To gather from thee: haply, thou may'st in- Something to save thy life. [form

Par. O, let me live, And all the secrets of our camp I'll show, Their force, their purposes: nay, I'll speak Which you will wonder at. [that

1 Sold. But wilt thou faithfully?

Par. If I do not, damn me.

1 Sold. *Acordo linta.—* Come on, thou art granted space.

[Exit, with PAROLIES, guarded.]

1 Lord. Go, tell the count Ronsillon, and my brother,

We have caught the woodcock, and will keep Till we do hear from them. [him muffled,

2 Sold. Captain, I will.

1 Lord. He will betray us all unto our Inform 'em that. [selves,—

2 Sold. So I will, sir.

1 Lord. Till then, I'll keep him dark, and safely lock'd. [Exeunt.]

\* I. e., Foreign troops in the enemy's pay.

† A bird like a jack-daw.

‡ The proof.

SCENE II. Florence. *A Room in the Widow's House.**Enter BERTRAM and DIANA.**Ber.* They told me, that your name was Fond-*Dia.* No, my good lord, Diana. [i]tbell.*Ber.* Titled goddess;And worth it, with addition! But, fair soul,  
In your fine frame hath love no quality?If the quick fire of youth light not your mind,  
You are no maiden, but a monument:When you are dead, you should be such a one  
As you are now, for you are cold and stern;  
And now you should be as your mother was,  
When your sweet self was got.*Dia.* She then was honest.*Ber.* So should you be.*Dia.* No:My mother did but duty; such, my lord,  
As you owe to your wife.*Ber.* No more of that!  
I pry'thee, do not strive against my vows\*:  
I was compell'd to her; but I love thee  
By love's own sweet constraint, and will for  
Do thee all rights of service. [i]ever*Dia.* Ay, so you serve us,  
Till we serve you: but when you have our roses,  
You barely leave our thorns to prick ourselves;  
And mock us with our bareness.*Ber.* How have I sworn?*Dia.* 'Tis not the many oaths, that make  
the truth;But the plain single vow, that is vow'd true.  
What is not holy, that we swear not by,  
But take the Highest to witness†: Then, pray  
you, tell me,If I should swear by Jove's great attributes,  
I loved you dearly, would you believe my oaths,  
When I did love you ill? this has no holding,  
To swear by him whom I protest to love,  
That I will work against him: Therefore,  
your oathsAre words, and poor conditions; but unseal'd;  
At least, in my opinion.*Ber.* Change it, change it;  
Be not so holy cruel: love is holy;  
And my integrity ne'er knew the crafts,  
That you do charge men with: Stand no more  
But give thyself unto my sick desires, [i]off,  
Who then recover: say, thou art mine, and ever  
My love, as it begins, shall so perséver.*Dia.* I see, that men make hopes, in such  
affairs, [i]ring,

That we'll forsake ourselves. Give me that

*Ber.* I'll lend it thee, my dear, but have no  
To give it from me. [i]power*Dia.* Will you not, my lord?*Ber.* It is an honour 'longing to our house,  
Bequeathed down from many ancestors;  
Which were the greatest obloquy i'the world  
In me to lose.*Dia.* Mine honour's such a ring:  
My chastity's the jewel of our house,  
Bequeathed down from many ancestors;Which were the greatest obloquy i'the world  
In me to lose: Thus your own proper wisdom  
Brings in the champion honour on my part,  
Against your vain assault.*Ber.* Here, take my ring;  
My house, mine honour, yea, my life be thine,  
And I'll be bid by thee. [i]chamber window;*Dia.* When midnight comes, knock at my  
I'll order take, my mother shall not hear.Now will I charge you in the band of truth,  
When you have conquer'd my yet maiden bed,  
Remain there but an hour, nor speak to me:  
My reasons are most strong; and you shall  
know them,When back again this ring shall be deliver'd:  
And on your finger, in the night, I'll put  
Another ring; that, what in time proceeds,  
May token to the future our past deeds.Adieu, till then; then, fail not: You have won  
A wife of me, though there my hope be done.*Ber.* A heaven on earth I have won, by  
wooing thee. [i]Exit.*Dia.* For which live long to thank both  
You may so in the end.— [i]heaven and me I  
My mother told me just how he would woo,  
As if she sat in his heart; she says, all men  
Have the like oaths: he had sworn to marry  
me, [i]him,When his wife's dead; therefore I'll lie with  
When I am buried. Since Frenchmen are so  
braid'd,Marry that will, I'll live and die a maid:  
Only, in this disguise, I think't no sin  
To cozen him that would unjustly win. [i]Exit.SCENE III. *The Florentine Camp.**Enter the two French Lords, and two or  
three Soldiers.**1 Lord.* You have not given him his mother's letter?*2 Lord.* I have delivered it an hour since:  
there is something in't that stings his nature;  
for, on the reading it, he changed almost into  
another man.*1 Lord.* He has much worthy blame laid  
upon him, for shaking off so good a wife, and  
so sweet a lady.*2 Lord.* Especially he hath incurred the  
everlasting displeasure of the king, who had  
even tuned his bounty to sing happiness to  
him. I will tell you a thing, but you shall  
let it dwell darkly with you.*1 Lord.* When you have spoken it, 'tis  
dead, and I am the grave of it.*2 Lord.* He hath perverted a young gentle  
woman here in Florence, of a most chaste re-  
nown; and this night he fleshes his will in  
the spoil of her honour: he hath given her  
his monumental ring, and thinks himself made  
in the unchaste composition.*1 Lord.* Now, God delay our rebellion; as  
we are ourselves, what things are we!*2 Lord.* Merely our own traitors. And as  
in the common course of all treasons, we still

\* i. e., Against his determined resolution never to cohabit with Helena.

† The sense is—we never swear by what is not holy, but take to witness the Highest,  
the Divinity.

‡ Crafty, deceitful.

see them reveal themselves, till they attain to their abhorred ends; so he, that in this action contrives against his own nobility, in his proper stream o'erflows himself\*.

1 *Lord*. Is it not meant damnable† in us, to be trumpeters of our unlawful intents?—We shall not then have his company to-night?

2 *Lord*. Not till after midnight; for he is dieted to his hour.

1 *Lord*. That approaches apace: I would gladly have him see his company; anatomized; that he might take a measure of his own judgments, wherein so curiously he had set this counterfeit.

2 *Lord*. We will not meddle with him till he come; for his presence must be the whip of the other.

1 *Lord*. In the mean time, what hear you of these wars?

2 *Lord*. I hear, there is an overture of peace.

1 *Lord*. Nay, I assure you, a peace concluded.

2 *Lord*. What will count Ronsillon do then? will he travel higher, or return again into France?

1 *Lord*. I perceive, by this demand, you are not altogether of his council.

2 *Lord*. Let it be forbid, sir! so should I be a great deal of his act.

1 *Lord*. Sir, his wife, some two months since, fled from his house; her pretence is a pilgrimage to Saint Jaques le grand; which holy undertaking, with most austere sanctimony, she accomplished: and, there residing, the tenderness of her nature became as a prey to her grief; in fine, made a groan of her last breath, and now she sings in heaven.

2 *Lord*. How is this justified?

1 *Lord*. The stronger part of it by her own letters; which makes her story true, even to the point of her death: her death itself, which could not be her office to say, is come, was faithfully confirmed by the rector of the place.

2 *Lord*. Hath the count all this intelligence?

1 *Lord*. Ay, and the particular confirmations, point from point, to the full arming of the verity.

2 *Lord*. I am heartily sorry, that he'll be glad of this.

1 *Lord*. How nightly, sometimes, we make us comforts of our losses!

2 *Lord*. And how nightly, some other times, we drown our gain in tears! The great dignity, that his valour hath here acquired for him, shall at home be encountered with a shame as ample.

1 *Lord*. The web of our life is of a mingled yarn, good and ill together: our virtues would be proud, if our faults whipt them not; and our crimes would despair, if they were not cherished by our virtues.—

*Enter a Servant.*

How now? where's your master?

*Serv.* He met the duke in the street, sir, of whom he hath taken a solemn leave; his lord-

ship will next morning for France. The duke hath offered him letters of commendations to the king.

2 *Lord*. They shall be no more than needful there, if they were more than they can commend.

*Enter BERTRAM.*

1 *Lord*. They cannot be too sweet for the king's tartness. Here's his lordship now. How now, my lord, is't not after midnight?

*Ber.* I have to-night despatched sixteen businesses, a month's length a-piece, by an abstract of success: I have conge'd with the duke, done my adieu with his nearest; buried a wife, mourned for her; writ to my lady mother, I am returning; entertained my convoy; and, between these main parcels of despatch, effected many nicer needs; the last was the greatest, but that I have not ended yet.

2 *Lord*. If the business be of any difficulty, and this morning your departure hence, it requires haste of your lordship.

*Ber.* I mean, the business is not ended, as fearing to hear of it hereafter: But shall we have this dialogue between the fool and the soldier?—Come, bring forth this counterfeit module; he has deceived me, like a double-meaning prophesier.

2 *Lord*. Bring him forth: [*Exeunt Soldiers.*] he has sat in the stocks all night, poor gallant knave.

*Ber.* No matter; his heels have deserved it, in usurping his spurs so long. How does he carry himself?

1 *Lord*. I have told your lordship already; the stocks carry him. But, to answer you as you would be understood; he weeps, like a wench that had shed her milk: he hath confessed himself to Morgan, whom he supposes to be a friar, from the time of his remembrance, to this very instant disaster of his setting i'th' stocks: And what think you he hath confessed?

*Ber.* Nothing of me, has he?

2 *Lord*. His confession is taken, and it shall be read to his face: if your lordship be n't as, I believe you are, you must have the patience to hear it.

*Re-enter Soldiers, with PAROLLES.*

*Ber.* A plague upon him! muffled! he can say nothing of me; hush! hush!

1 *Lord*. Hoodman comes!—*Porto tartarossa.*

1 *Sold.* He calls for the tortures; What will you say without 'em?

*Par.* I will confess what I know without constraint; if ye pinch me like a pasty, I can say no more.

1 *Sold.* *Boscho chimurcho.*

2 *Lord.* *Bobbindo chicurmuco.*

1 *Sold.* You are a merciful general:—Our general bids you answer to what I shall ask you out of a note.

*Par.* And truly, as I hope to live.

i. e., Betrays his own secrets in his own talk.

† For companion.

† Here, as elsewhere, used adverbially

§ Model, pattern.

|| An allusion to the degradation of a knight by hacking off his spurs.



1 Sold. *First demand of him how many horse the duke is strong.* What say you to that?

Par. Five or six thousand; but very weak and unserviceable: the troops are all scattered, and the commanders very poor rogues, upon my reputation and credit, and as I hope to live.

1 Sold. Shall I set down your answer so?

Par. Do; I'll take the sacrament ou't, how and which way you will.

Ber. All's one to him. What a past-saving slave is this!

1 Lord. You are deceived, my lord; this is monsieur Parolles, the gallant militarist, (that was his own phrase,) that had the whole theorick \* of war in the knot of his scarf, and the practice in the chape† of his dagger.

2 Lord. I will never trust a man again, for keeping his sword clean; nor believe he can have every thing in him, by wearing his apparel neatly.

1 Sold. Well, that's set down.

Par. Five or six thousand horse, I said,—I will say true,—or thereabouts, set down,—for I'll speak truth.

1 Lord. He's very near the truth in this.

Ber. But I con him no thanks for't, in the nature he delivers it.

Par. Poor rogues, I pray you, say.

1 Sold. Well, that's set down.

Par. I humbly thank you, sir: a truth's a truth, the rogues are marvellous poor.

1 Sold. *Demand of him, of what strength they are a-foot.* What say you to that?

Par. By my troth, sir, if I were to live this present hour, I will tell true. Let me see: Spurio a hundred and fifty, Sebastian so many, Corambus so many, Jaques so many; Guiltian, Cosmo, Lodowick, and Gratii, two hundred fifty each: mine own company, Chitopher, Vaumond, Benti, two hundred and fifty each: so that the muster-file, rotten and sound, upon my life, amounts not to fifteen thousand poll; half of which dare not shake the snow from off their cassocks‡, lest they shake themselves to pieces.

Ber. What shall be done to him?

1 Lord. Nothing, but let him have thanks. Demand of him my conditions§, and what credit I have with the duke.

1 Sold. Well, that's set down. *You shall demand of him, whether one Captain Dumain be i' the camp, a Frenchman; what his reputation is with the duke, what his valour, honesty, and expertness in wars; or whether he thinks, it were not possible, with well-weighing sums of gold, to corrupt him to a revolt.* What say you to this? what do you know of it?

Par. I beseech you, let me answer to the particular of the interrogatories||: Demand them singly.

1 Sold. Do you know this captain Dumain? Par. I know him: he was a butcher's apprentice in Paris, from whence he was whipped for getting the sheriff's fool¶ with child; a dumb innocent \*\*, that could not say him, nay.

[DUMAIN lifts up his hand in anger.

Ber. Nay, by your leave, hold your hands; though I know, his brains are forfeit to the next tile that falls.

1 Sold. Well, is this captain in the duke of Florence's camp?

Par. Upon my knowledge, he is, and lousy.

1 Lord. Nay, look not so upon me; we shall hear of your lordship anon.

1 Sold. What is his reputation with the duke?

Par. The duke knows him for no other but a poor officer of mine; and writ to me this other day, to turn him out o' the band; I think, I have his letter in my pocket.

1 Sold. Marry, we'll search.

Par. In good sadness, I do not know; either it is there, or it is upon a file, with the duke's other letters, in my tent.

1 Sold. Here 'tis; here's a paper: Shall I read it to you?

Par. I do not know, if it be it, or no.

Ber. Our interpreter does it well.

1 Lord. Excellently.

1 Sold. Dian. *The count's a fool, and full of gold,—*

Par. That is not the duke's letter, sir; that is an advertisement to a proper maid in Florence, one Diana, to take heed of the allurements of one count Rosillon, a foolish idle boy, but, for all that, very ruttish: I pray you, sir, put it up again.

1 Sold. Nay, I'll read it first, by your favour.

Par. My meaning in't, I protest, was very honest in the behalf of the maid: for I knew the young count to be a dangerous and lascivious boy; who is a whale to virginity, and devours up all the fry it finds.

Ber. Damnable, both sides rogue!

1 Sold. *When he swears oaths, bid him drop gold, and take it;*

*After he scores, he never pays the score. Half won is match well made; match, and well make it††;*

*He ne'er pays after debts, take it before; And say, a soldier, Dian, told thee this, Men are to mell with, boys are not to kiss: For count of this, the count's a fool, I know it,* [It.

*Who pays before, but not when he does owe Thine, as he vow'd to thee in thine ear,*

PAROLLES.

Ber. He shall be whipped through the army, with this rhyme in his forehead.

2 Lord. This is your devoted friend, sir,

\* Theory.

† The point of the scabbard.

‡ Cassock then signified a horse-

man's loose coat.

§ Disposition and character.

|| For interrogatories.

¶ An idiot under the care of the sheriff.

\*\* A natural fool.

†† i. e. A match well made is half won: make your match therefore, but make it well.

the manifold linguist, and the armipotent soldier.

*Ber.* I could endure any thing before but a cat, and now he's a cat to me.

*1 Sold.* I perceive, sir, by the general's looks, we shall be fain to hang you.

*Par.* My life, sir, in any case: not that I am afraid to die; but that, my offences being many, I would repent out the remainder of nature: let me live, sir, in a dungeon, i' the stocks, or any where, so I may live.

*1 Sold.* We'll see what may be done, so you confess freely; therefore, once more to this captain Dumain: You have answered to his reputation with the duke, and to his valour: What is his honesty?

*Par.* He will steal, sir, an egg out of a cloister\*; for rapes and ravishments he parallels Nessus†. He professes not keeping of oaths; in breaking them, he is stronger than Hercules. He will lie, sir, with such volubility, that you would think truth were a fool: drunkenness is his best virtue; for he will be swine-drunk; and in his sleep he does little harm, save to his bed-clothes about him; but they know his conditions, and lay him in straw. I have but little more to say, sir, of his honesty: he has every thing that an honest man should not have; what an honest man should have, he has nothing.

*1 Lord.* I begin to love him for this.

*Ber.* For this description of thine honesty? A pox upon him for me, he is more and more a cat.

*1 Sold.* What say you to his expertness in war?

*Par.* Faith, sir, he hasled the drum before the English tragedians,—to belie him, I will not,—and more of his soldieryship I know not; except, in that country, he had the honour to be the officer at a place there called Mile-end, to instruct for the doubling of files: I would do the man what honour I can, but of this I am not certain.

*1 Lord.* He hath out-villained villany so far, that the rarity redeems him.

*Ber.* A pox on him! he's a cat still.

*1 Sold.* His qualities being at this poor price, I need not ask you, if gold will corrupt him to revolt.

*Par.* Sir, for a *quart d'écu*‡ he will sell the fee-simple of his salvation, the inheritance of it; and cut the entail from all remainders, and a perpetual succession for it perpetually.

*1 Sold.* What's his brother, the other captain Dumain?

*2 Lord.* Why does he ask him of me?

*1 Sold.* What's he?

*Par.* E'en a crow of the same nest; not altogether so great as the first in goodness, but greater a great deal in evil. He excels his brother for a coward, yet his brother is reputed one of the best that is: In a retreat he out-runs any lackey; marry, in coming on he has the cramp.

*1 Sold.* If your life be saved, will you undertake to betray the Florentine?

*Par.* Ay, and the captain of his horse, count Rousillon.

*1 Sold.* I'll whisper with the general, and know his pleasure.

*Par.* I'll no more drumming; a plague of all drums! Only to seem to deserve well, and to beguile the supposition of that lascivious young boy the count, have I run into this danger: Yet, who would have suspected an ambush where I was taken? [*Aside.*]

*1 Sold.* There is no remedy, sir, but you must die: the general says, you, that have so traitorously discovered the secrets of your army, and made such pestiferous reports of men very nobly held, can serve the world for no honest use; therefore you must die. Come, headsman, off with his head.

*Par.* O Lord, sir; let me live, or let me see my death!

*1 Sold.* That shall you, and take your leave of all your friends. [*Unmuffling him.*]

So, look about you; Know you any here?

*Ber.* Good morrow, noble captain.

*2 Lord.* God bless you, captain Parolles.

*1 Lord.* God save you, noble captain.

*2 Lord.* Captain, what greeting will you to my lord Lafen? I am for France.

*1 Lord.* Good captain, will you give me a copy of the sonnet you writ to Diana in behalf of the count Rousillon? an I were not a very coward, I'd compel it of you; but fare you well. [*Exeunt BERTRAM, Lords, &c.*]

*1 Sold.* You are undone, captain: all but your scarf, that has a knot on't yet.

*Par.* Who cannot be crushed with a plot?

*1 Sold.* If you could find out a country where but women were that had received so much shame, you might begin an impudent nation. Fare you well, sir; I am for France too; we shall speak of you there. [*Exit.*]

*Par.* Yet am I thankful: if my heart were great,

'Twould burst at this: Captain, I'll be not  
But I will eat and drink, and sleep as soft

As captain shall: simply the thing I am  
Shall make me live. Who knows himself a  
braggart,

Let him fear this; for it will come to pass,  
That every braggart shall be found an ass.

Rust, sword! cool, blushes! and, Parolles,  
live

Safest in shame! being fool'd, by foolery  
There's place, and means, for every man  
alive.

I'll after them.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE IV. Florence. A Room in the Widow's House.

Enter HELENA, Widow, and DIANA.

*Hel.* That you may well perceive I have  
not wrong'd you,

\* i. e., He will steal any thing however trifling, from any place however holy.

† The Centaur killed by Hercules.

‡ The fourth part of the smaller French crown.

y To deceive the opinion.

One of the greatest in the Christian world  
Shall be my surety; 'fore whose throne, 'tis  
needful,

Ere I can perfect mine intents, to kneel :  
Time was, I did him a desired office,  
Dear almost as his life; which gratitude  
Through flinty Tartar's bosom would peep  
forth,

And answer, thanks: I duly am informed,  
His grace is at Marseilles; to which place  
We have convenient convoy. You must  
know,

I am supposed dead: the army breaking,  
My husband hies him home; where, heaven  
aiding,

And by the leave of my good lord the king,  
We'll be, before our welcome.

*Wid.* Gentle madam,  
You never had a servant, to whose trust  
Your business was more welcome.

*Hel.* Nor you, mistress,  
Ever a friend, whose thoughts more truly la-  
bour

To recompense your love; doubt not, but hea-  
Hath brought me up to be your daughter's  
dower,

As it hath fated her to be my motive \*  
And helper to a husband. But O strange  
men!

That can such sweet use make of what they  
When saucy † trusting of the cozen'd thoughts  
Defiles the pitchy night! so lust doth play  
With what it loaths, for that which is away :  
But more of this hereafter:—You, Diana,  
Under my poor instructions yet must suffer  
Something in my behalf.

*Dia.* Let death and honesty ‡  
Go with your impositions §, I am yours  
Upon your will to suffer.

*Hel.* Yet, I pray you,—  
But with the word, the time will bring on  
summer,

When briers shall have leaves as well as  
And be as sweet as sharp. We must away;  
Our waggon is prepared, and time revives us:  
*All's well that ends well* ||: still the fine's  
the crown;

Whate'er the course, the end is the renown.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. Rousillon. A Room in the  
Countess's Palace.

*Enter Countess, LAFEU, and Clown.*

*Laf.* No no, no, your son was misled with  
a snipt-taffata fellow there; whose villanous  
saffron ¶ would have made all the unbaked  
and doughy youth of a nation in his colour:  
your daughter-in-law had been alive at this  
hour; and your son here at home, more ad-  
vanced by the king, than by that red-tailed  
humble-bee I speak of.

*Count.* I would, I had not known him! it  
was the death of the most virtuous gentle-

woman, that ever nature had praise for cre-  
ating: if she had partaken of my flesh, and  
cost me the dearest groans of a mother, I  
could not have owed her a more rooted love.

*Laf.* 'Twas a good lady, 'twas a good lady:  
we may pick a thousand salads, ere we light  
on such another herb.

*Clo.* Indeed, sir, she was the sweet-marjo-  
ram of the salad, or, rather the herb of grace \*\*.

*Laf.* They are not salad herbs, you knave,  
they are nose-herbs.

*Clo.* I am no great Nebuchadnezzar, sir,  
have not much skill in grass.

*Laf.* Whether dost thou profess thyself; a  
knave, or a fool?

*Clo.* A fool, sir, at a woman's service, and  
a knave at a man's.

*Laf.* Your distinction?

*Clo.* I would cozen the man of his wife  
and do his service.

*Laf.* So you were a knave at his service,  
indeed.

*Clo.* And I would give his wife my bau-  
ble, sir, to do her service.

*Laf.* I will subscribe for thee; thou art  
both knave and fool.

*Clo.* At your service.

*Laf.* No, no, no.

*Clo.* Why, sir, if I cannot serve you, I can  
serve as great a prince as you are.

*Laf.* Who's that? a Frenchman?

*Clo.* Faith, sir, he has an English name;  
but his phisnomy is more hotter in France,  
than there.

*Laf.* What prince is that?

*Clo.* The black prince, sir, *alias*, the prince  
of darkness; *alias*, the devil.

*Laf.* Hold thee, there's my purse: I give  
thee not this to suggest †† thee from thy mas-  
ter thou talkest of; serve him still.

*Clo.* I am a woodland fellow, sir, that al-  
ways loved a great fire; and the master I  
speak of, ever keeps a good fire. But, sure,  
he is the prince of the world, let his nobility  
remain in his court. I am for the house with  
the narrow gate, which I take to be too little  
for pomp to enter: some, that humble them-  
selves, may; but the many will be too chill  
and tender; and they'll be for the flowery  
way, that leads to the broad gate, and the  
great fire.

*Laf.* Go thy ways, I begin to be a-weary  
of thee; and I tell thee so before, because I  
would not fall out with thee. Go thy ways;  
let my horses be well looked to, without any  
tricks.

*Clo.* If I put any tricks upon 'em, sir,  
they shall be jades' tricks; which are their  
own right by the law of nature. [*Exit.*]

*Laf.* A shrewd knave, and an unhappy ‡‡.

*Count.* So he is. My lord, that's gone,  
made himself much sport out of him: by his  
authority he remains here, which he thinks is

\* For mover.

† Lascivious.

‡ i.e., An honest death.

§ Commands.

¶ End.

¶ There was a fashion of using yellow starch for bands and ruffles, to which  
Lafau alludes.

\*\* i.e., Kue.

†† Seduce.

‡‡ Mischievously unhappy.

waggish.



a patent for his sauciness; and, indeed, he has no pace. but runs where he will.

*Laf.* I like him well; 'tis not amiss: and I was about to tell you. Since I heard of the good lady's death and that my lord your son was upon his return home, I moved the king my master, to speak in the behalf of my daughter; which, in the minority of them both, his majesty, out of a self-gracious remembrance, did first propose: his highness hath promised me to do it: and, to stop up the displeasure he hath conceived against your son, there is no fitter matter. How does your ladyship like it?

*Count.* With very much content, my lord, and I wish it happily effected.

*Laf.* His highness comes post from Marseilles, of as able body as when he numbered thirty; he will be here to-morrow, or I am deceived by him that in such intelligence hath seldom failed.

*Count.* It rejoices me, that I hope I shall see him ere I die. I have letters, that my son will be here to-night: I shall beseech

your lordship, to remain with me till they meet together.

*Laf.* Madam, I was thinking, with what manners I might safely be admitted.

*Count.* You need but plead your honourable privilege.

*Laf.* Lady, of that I have made a bold charter; but, I thank my God, it holds yet.

*Re-enter Clown.*

*Clo.* O madam, yonder's my lord your son with a patch of velvet on's face: whether there be a scar under it, or no, the velvet knows; but 'tis a goodly patch of velvet his left cheek is a cheek of two pile and a half, but his right cheek is worn bare.

*Laf.* A scar nobly got, or a noble scar, is a good livery of honour; so, belike, is that.

*Clo.* But it is your carbonadoed\* face.

*Laf.* Let us go see your son, I pray you. I long to talk with the young noble soldier.

*Clo.* 'Faith, there's a dozen of 'em, with delicate fine hats, and most courteous feathers, which bow the head, and nod at every man.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. Marseilles. A Street.

*Enter HELENA, Widow, and DIANA, with two Attendants.*

*Hel.* But this exceeding posting, day and night,

Must wear your spirits low: we cannot help it; But, since you have made the days and nights as one,

To wear your gentle limbs in my affairs, Be bold, you do so grow in my requital, As nothing can unroot you. In happy time;—

*Enter a gentle Astringer†.*

This man may help me to his majesty's ear, If he would spend his power.—God save you,

*Gent.* And you. [sir.]

*Hel.* Sir, I have seen you in the court of

*Gent.* I have been sometimes there. [France.]

*Hel.* I do presume, sir, that you are not fallen From the report that goes upon your goodness; And therefore, goaded with most sharp occasions,

Which lay nice manners by, I put you to The use of your own virtues, for the which I shall continue thankful.

*Gent.* What's your will?

*Hel.* That it will please you To give this poor petition to the king; And aid me with that store of power you have, To come into his presence.

*Gent.* The king's not here.

*Hel.* Not here, sir?

*Gent.* Not, indeed: He hence remov'd last night, and with more Than is his use. [haste]

*Wid.* Lord, how we lose our pains!

*Hel.* All's well that ends well; yet; Though time seem so adverse, and means I do beseech you, whither is he gone? [unfit.]

*Gent.* Marry, as I take it, to Rousillon; Whither I am going.

*Hel.* I do beseech you, sir, Since you are like to see the king before me, Commend the paper to his gracious hand; Which, I presume, shall render you no blame. But rather make you thank your pains for it: I will come after you, with what good speed Our means will make us means.

*Gent.* This I'll do for you

*Hel.* And you shall find yourself to be well thanked, [again;—

Whate'er falls more.—We must to horse Go, go, provide. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE II. Rousillon. The inner Court of the Countess's Palace.

*Enter Clown and PAROLLES.*

*Par.* Good monsieur Lavatch, give my lord Lafou this letter: I have ere now, sir, been better known to you, when I have held familiarity with fresher clothes; but I am now, sir, muddled in fortune's moat and smell somewhat strong of her strong displeasure.

*Clo.* Truly, fortune's displeasure is but slutish, if it smell so strong as thou speakest of: I will henceforth eat no fish of fortune's buttering. Prythee, allow the wind.

*Par.* Nay, you need not stop your nose, sir; I spake but by a metaphor.

*Clo.* Indeed, sir, if your metaphor stink, I will stop my nose; or against any man's metaphor. Prythee, get thee further.

\* Scotch'd like a piece of meat for the gridiron. † A gentleman Falconer.

*Par.* Pray you, sir, deliver me this paper.  
*Clot.* Foh, pr'ythee, stand away; A paper from fortune's close-stool to give to a nobleman! Look, here he comes himself.

*Enter LAFEU.*

Here is a pur of fortune's, sir, or of fortune's eat, (but not a musk-cat,) that has fallen into the unclean fishpond of her displeasure, and, as he says, is muddled withal: Pray you, sir, use the carp as you may; for he looks like a poor, decayed, ingenious, foolish, rascally knave. I do pity his distress in my smiles of comfort, and leave him to your lordship.

*[Exit Clown.]*

*Par.* My lord, I am a man whom fortune hath cruelly scratched.

*Laf.* And what would you have me to do? 'tis too late to pare her nails now. Wherein have you played the knave with fortune, that she should scratch you, who of herself is a good lady, and would not have knaves thrive long under her? There's a *quart d'ecu* for you: Let the justices make you and fortune friends; I am for other business.

*Par.* I beseech your honour, to hear me one single word.

*Laf.* You beg a single penny more: come, you shall ha't; save your word\*.

*Par.* My name, my good lord, is Parolles.

*Laf.* You beg more than one word then.—Cox! my passion! give me your hand:—How does your drum?

*Par.* O my good lord, you were the first that found me.

*Laf.* Was I, in sooth? and I was the first that lost thee.

*Par.* It lies in you, my lord, to bring me in some grace, for you did bring me out.

*Laf.* Out upon thee, knave! dost thou put upon me at once both the office of God and the devil? One brings thee in grace, and the other brings thee out. *[Trumpets sound.]* The king's coming, I know by his trumpets.—Sirrah, inquire further after me; I had talk of you last night: though you are a fool and a knave, you shall eat; go to, follow.

*Par.* I praise God for you. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III. *The same. A Room in the Countess's Palace.*

*Flourish.* *Enter* King, Countess, LAFEU, Lords, Gentlemen, Guards, &c.

*King.* We lost a jewel of her; and our esteem†

Was made much poorer by it: but your son, As mad in folly, lack'd the sense to know Her estimation home‡.

*Count.* 'Tis past, my liege: And I beseech your majesty to make it Natural rebellion, done i'th' blaze of youth; When oil and fire, too strong for reason's force, O'erbears it, and burns on.

*King.* My honour'd lady, I have forgiven and forgotten all;

\* You need not ask;—here it is. † Reckoning or estimate. ‡ Completely, in its full extent. § So in As you Like it:—to have “seen much and to have nothing, is to have rich eyes and poor hands.” || i. e., The first interview shall put an end to all recollection of the past. ¶ i. e., Of uninterrupted rain. \*\* Faunts repeated, if to the tunes

Though my revenges were high bent upon him, And watch'd the time to shoot.

*Laf.* This I must say,— But first I beg my pardon,—The young lord Did to his majesty, his mother, and his lady, Offence of mighty note; but to himself The greatest wrong of all: he lost a wife, Whose beauty did astonish the survey Of richest eyes; whose words all ears took captive; [serve,

Whose dear perfection, hearts that scorn'd to Humbly call'd mistress.

*King.* Praising what is lost, Makes the remembrance dear.—Well, call him hither;—

We are reconciled, and the first view shall kill All repetition:—Let him not ask your pardon; The nature of his great offence is dead, And deeper than oblivion do we bury The incensing relics of it: let him approach, A stranger, no offender; and inform him, So 'tis our will he should.

*Gent.* I shall, my liege. *[Exit Gentleman]*

*King.* What says he to your daughter? have you spoke? [highness.

*Laf.* All that he is hath reference to your

*King.* Then shall we have a match. I have letters sent me,

That set him high in fame.

*Enter BERTRAM.* He looks well on't.

*King.* I am not a day of season, For thou may'st see a sun-shine and a hail In me at once: But to the brightest beams Distracted clouds give way; so stand thou forth, The time is fair again.

*Ber.* My high-repent'd blames\*\*, Dear sovereign, pardon to me.

*King.* All is whole Not one word more of the consumed time. Let's take the instant by the forward top; For we are old, and on our quick'st decrees The inaudible and noiseless foot of time Steals ere we can effect them: You remember The daughter of this lord?

*Ber.* Admiringly, my liege: at first I stuck my choice upon her, ere my heart Durst make too bold a herald of my tongue: Where the impression of mine eye infixing, Contemphthis scornful perspective did lend me, Which warp'd the line of every other favour; Scorn'd a fair colour, or express'd it stol'n; Extended or contracted all proportions, To a most hideous object: Thence it came, That she, whom all men praised, and whom myself,

Since I have lost, have loved, was in mine eye The dust that did offend it.

*King.* Well excused: That thou didst love her, strikes some scores away [too late,

From the great compt: But love, that comes Like a remorseful pardon slowly carried,

To the great sender turns a sour offence,  
Crying, That's good that's gone: our rash faults  
Make trivial price of serious things we have,  
Not knowing them, until we know their grave:  
Oft our displeasures, to ourselves unjust,  
Destroy our friends, and after weep their dust:  
Our own love waking cries to see what's done,  
While shameful hate sleeps out the afternoon.  
Be this sweet Helen's knell, and now forget  
her.

Send forth your amorous token for fair Maud-  
The main consents are had; and here we'll stay  
To see our widower's second marriage-day.

Count. Which better than the first, O dear  
heaven, bless!

Or, ere they meet, in me, O nature, cease!

Laf. Come on, my son, in whom my house's  
name

Must be digested, give a favour from you,  
To sparkle in the spirits of my daughter,  
That she may quickly come.—By my old beard,  
And every hair that's on't, Helen, that's dead,  
Was a sweet creature; such a ring as this,  
The last that e'er I took her leave at court,  
I saw upon her finger.

Ber. Hers it was not.

King. Now, pray you, let me see it; for  
mine eye,

While I was speaking, oft was fasten'd to't.—  
This ring was mine; and, when I gave it Helen,  
I bade her, if her fortunes ever stood  
Necessitied to help, that by this token  
I would relieve her: Had you that craft, to  
Of what should stead her most? [reave her

Ber. My gracious sovereign,  
Howe'er it pleases you to take it so,  
The ring was never hers.

Count. Son, on my life,  
I have seen her wear it; and she reckon'd it  
At her life's rate.

Laf. I am sure, I saw her wear it.  
Ber. You are deceived, my lord, she never  
saw it:

In Florence was it from a casement thrown me,  
Wrapp'd in a paper, which contain'd the name  
Of her that threw it:—do she was, and  
thought

I stood ingag'd\*: but when I was subscribed  
To mine own fortune, and inform'd her fully,  
I could not answer in that course of honour  
As she had made the overture, she ceased,  
In heavy satisfaction, and would never  
Receive the ring again.

King. For myself, [cinct,  
That knows the time, multiplying medi-  
Hath not in nature's mystery more science,  
Than I have in this ring: 'twas mine, 'twas  
Helen's,

Whoever gave it you: Then, if you know  
That you are well acquainted with yourself,  
Confess 'twas hers, and by rough en-  
forcement [surety,  
You got it from her: she call'd the saints to  
That she would never put it from her finger,  
Unless she gave it to yourself in bed,

(Where you have never come,) or sent it us  
Upon her great disaster.

Ber. She never saw it.

King. Thou speak'st it falsely, as I love  
mine honour;

And make conjectural fears to come into me,  
Which I would fain shut out: If it should prove  
That thou art so inhuman,—'twill not prove  
so;—

And yet I know not:—thou didst hate her  
And she is dead; which nothing, but to close  
Her eyes myself, could win me to believe,  
More than to see this ring.—Take him away.—  
[Guards seize BERTRAM.

My fore-past proofs, howe'er the matter fall,  
Shall tax my fears of little vanity,  
Having vainly fear'd too little.—Away with  
We'll sift this matter further. [him;—

Ber. If you shall prove  
This ring was ever hers, you shall as easy  
Prove that I husbanded her bed in Florence,  
Where yet she never was.

[Exit BERTRAM, guarded.

Enter a Gentleman.

King. I am wrapp'd in dismal thinkings.

Gent. Gracious sovereign,  
Whether I have been to blame, or no, I know  
Here's a petition from a Florentine, [not;  
Who hath, for four or five removes, come  
To tender it herself. I undertook it, [short  
Vanquish'd thereto by the fair grace and speech  
Of the poor suppliant, who by this, I know,  
Is here attending: her business looks in her  
With an importing visage; and she told me,  
In a sweet verbal brief, it did concern  
Your highness with herself.

King. [Reads.] Upon his many pro'esta-  
tions to marry me, when his wife was dead,  
I blush to say it, he won me. Now is the  
count Rausillon a widower; his vows are  
forfeited to me, and my honour's paid to  
him. He stole from Florence, taking no  
leave, and I follow him to his country for  
justice: Grant it me, O King, if you it  
best lies; otherwise a sedition flourishes,  
and a poor maid is undone.

DIANA CAPULET.  
Laf. I will buy me a son-in-law in a fair,  
and toll him: for this, I'll not [him.

King. The heavens have thought well on  
thee, Laf. [suitors.—

To bring in this discovery.—Seek these  
Gentlemen, and bring again the count.

[Exit Gentleman, and some Attendants.  
I am afraid, the life of Helen, lady,  
Was foully snatch'd.

Count. Now, justice on the doers!

Enter BERTRAM, guarded.

King. I wonder, sir, since wives are mon-  
sters to you, [ship,

And that you fly them as you swear them lord-  
Yet you desire to marry.—What woman's that?  
Re-enter Gentleman, with Widow, and

DIANA.  
Diana. I am, my lord, a wretched Florentine,

\* In the sense of unengaged.  
the proper consciousness of your own actions.

† The philosopher's stone.

‡ Post-stages.

§ I. e., That you have

¶ Pay toll for him



Derived from the ancient Capulet:

My suit, as I do understand, you know,  
And therefore know how far I may be pitied.

*Wid.* I am her mother, sir, whose age and honour,

Both suffer under this complaint we bring,  
And both shall cease\*, without your remedy.

*King.* Come hither, count; Do you know these women?

*Ber.* My lord, I neither can, nor will deny  
But that I know them: Do they charge me further? [wife?

*Dia.* Why do you look so strange upon your

*Ber.* She's none of mine, my lord.

*Dia.* If you shall marry,  
You give away this hand, and that is mine;  
You give away heaven's vows, and those are mine;

You give away myself, which is known mine;  
For I by vow am so embodied yours,  
That she, which marries you, must marry me,  
Either both, or none.

*Laf.* Your reputation [To BERTRAM.] comes  
Too short for my daughter, you are no husband for her.

*Ber.* My lord, this is a fond and desperate creature.

[your highness  
Whom sometime I have laugh'd with: let  
Lay a more noble thought upon mine honour,  
Than for to think that I would sink it here.

*King.* Sir, for my thoughts, you have them  
ill to friend,

Till your deeds gain them: Fairer prove your  
Than in my thought it lies! [honour,

*Dia.* Good my lord,  
Ask him upon his oath, if he does think  
He had not my virginity.

*King.* What say'st thou to her?

*Ber.* She's impudent, my lord;  
And was a common gamester to the camp†.

*Dia.* He does me wrong, my lord: if I  
were so,

He might have bought me at a common price:  
Do not believe him: O, behold this ring,

Whose high respect, and rich validity,  
Did lack a parallel; yet, for all that,

He gave it to a commoner of the camp,  
If I be true.

*Count.* He blushes, and 'tis it:  
Of six preceding ancestors, that gem

Offer'd by testament † a segment issue,  
Hath it been owed and what full is his

That ring's a thousand proofs: † wife;  
*King.* Methought, you said,

You saw one here in court could witness it.

*Dia.* I did, my lord, but loth am to produce  
So bad an instrument; his name's Parolles.

*Laf.* I saw the man to-day, if man he be.

*King.* Find him, and bring him hither.

*Ber.* What of him?  
He's quoted ‡ for a most perfidious slave,

With all the spots o' the world tax'd and de-  
bosh'd ‡;

Whose nature sickens, but to speak a truth:

Am I or that, or this, for what he'll utter,

That will speak any thing?

*King.* She hath that ring of yours.

*Ber.* I think, she has: certain it is I liked  
her,

And boarded her i'the wanton way of youth:  
She knew her distance, and did angle for me,

Madding my eagerness with her restraint,  
As all impediments in fancy's † course

Are motives of more fancy; and, in fine,  
Her insult coming with her modern grace\*\*,

Subdued me to her rate: she got the ring:  
And I had that, which any inferior might

At market-price have bought.

*Dia.* I must be patient  
You, that turn'd off a first so noble wife,  
My justly diet me ††. I pray you yet.

(Since you lack virtue, I will lose a husband,)  
Send for your ring, I will return it home,

And give me mine again.

*Ber.* I have it not.  
*King.* What ring was yours, I pray you?

*Dia.* Sir, much like  
The same upon your finger.

*King.* Know you this ring? this ring was  
his of late. [a-bed.

*Dia.* And this was it I gave him, being  
*King.* The story then goes false, you threw  
Out of a casement. [it him

*Dia.* I have spoke the truth.  
*Enter PAROLLES.*

*Ber.* My lord, I do confess, the ring was hers  
*King.* You boggle shrewdly, every feather

Is this the man you speak of? [starts you.—  
*Dia.* Ay, my lord.

*King.* Tell me, sirrah, but tell me true, I  
charge you,

Not fearing the displeasure of your master,  
(Which, on your just proceeding, I'll keep  
off,) [you?

By him, and by this woman here, what know  
*Par.* So please your majesty, my master

hath been an honourable gentleman; tricks  
he hath had in him, which gentlemen have.

*King.* Come, come, to the purpose: Did  
he love this woman?

*Par.* 'Faith, she did love her: But how?  
*King.* How, I pray you?

*Par.* He lov'd her, sir, as a gentleman  
loves a woman. [a-bed

*King.* How is that?

*Par.* He lov'd her, sir, and lov'd her not.  
*King.* As thou art a knave, and no knave:

—What an equal companion †† is this?  
*Par.* I am a man, sir, and at your majesty's command.

*Laf.* He's a good drum, my lord, but a  
naughty orator.

*Dia.* Do you know, he promised me marriage?  
*Par.* 'Faith, I know more than I'll speak.

*King.* Will't thou not speak all thou  
know'st?

*Par.* Yes, so please your majesty; I did  
go between them, as I said; but more than

\* Decease, die. † Gamester when applied to a female, then meant a common woman.

‡ Value. § Noted. † Debauched. ¶ Love. \*\* Her solicitation concurring with

her appearance of being common. †† May justly make me fast. ‡ Fellow

that he loved her,—for, indeed, he was mad for her, and talked of Satan and of limbo, and of furies, and I know not what; yet I was in that credit with them at that time, that I knew of their going to bed; and of other motions, as promising her marriage, and things that would derive me ill will to speak of, therefore I will not speak what I know.

*King.* Thou hast spoken all already, unless thou canst say they are married: But thou art too fine\* in thy evidence: therefore stand aside.—

This ring, you say, was yours?

*Dia.* Ay, my good lord.

*King.* Where did you buy it? or who gave it you?

*Dia.* It was not given me, nor I did not buy it.

*King.* Who lent it you?

*Dia.* It was not lent me neither.

*King.* Where did you find it then?

*Dia.* I found it not.

*King.* If it were yours by none of all these How could you give it him? [ways,

*Dia.* I never gave it him.

*Laf.* This woman's an easy glove, my lord; she goes off and on at pleasure.

*King.* This ring was mine, I gave it his first wife. [I know.

*Dia.* It might be yours, or hers, for aught

*King.* Take her away, I do not like her now;

To prison with her: and away with him.—

Unless thou tell'st me where thou hadst this Thou diest within this hour. [ring,

*Dia.* I'll never tell you.

*King.* Take her away.

*Dia.* I'll put in bail, my liege.

*King.* I think thee now some common customer†.

*Dia.* By Jove, if ever I knew man, 'twas you.

*King.* Wherefore hast thou accused him all this while?

*Dia.* Because he's guilty, and he is not guilty; He knows, I am no maid, and he'll swear to't:

I'll swear, I am a maid, and he knows not.

Great king, I am no strumpet, by my life; I am either maid, or else this old man's wife.

[Pointing to LAFEU.]

*King.* She does abuse our ears; to prison with her. [royal sir;

*Dia.* Good mother, fetch my bail.—Stay, [Exit Widow.

The jeweller, that owes† the ring, is sent for, And he shall surety me. But for this lord, Who hath abused me, as he knows himself, Though yet he never harm'd me, here I quit him:

He knows himself, my bed he hath defiled; And at that time he got his wife with child: Dead, though she be, she feels her young one kick;

So, here's my riddle, One, that's dead, is quick: And now behold the meaning.

*Re-enter Widow, with HELENA.*

*King.* Is there no exorcist‡?

Beguiles the truer office of mine eyes?

Is't real, that I see?

*Hel.* No, my good lord;

'Tis but the shadow of a wife you see,

The name, and not the thing.

*Ber.* Both, both; O, pardon!

*Hel.* O, my good lord, when I was like this maid,

I found you wondrous kind. There is your ring, And, look you, here's your letter; This it says, *When from my finger you can get this ring, And are by me with child, &c.*—This is done: Will you be mine, now you are doubly won?

*Ber.* If she, my liege, can make me know this clearly,

I'll love her dearly, ever, ever dearly,

*Hel.* If it appear not plain, and proven true, Deadly divorce step between me and you!—

O, my dear mother, do I see you living?

*Laf.* Mine eyes smell onions, I shall weep anon:—Good Tom Drum, [To PAROLLES.]

lend me a handkerchief: So, I thank thee; wait on me home, I'll make sport with thee:

Let thy courtesies alone, they are scurvy ones.

*King.* Let us from point to point this story know,

To make the even truth in pleasure flow:—

If thou be'st yet a fresh uncropped flower.

[To DIANA.]

Choose thou thy husband, and I'll pay thy dower;

For I can guess, that, by the honest aid, Thou kept'st a wife herself, thyself a maid.—

Of that, and all the progress, more and less, Resolutely more leisure shall express:

All yet seems well; and, if it end so meet, The bitter past, more welcome is the sweet.

[Flourish]

*Advancing.*

*The king's a beggar, now the play is done:*

*All is well ended, if this suit be won,*

*That you express content; which we will pay,*

*With strife to please you, day exceeding day:*

*Ours be your patience then, and yours our parts;||*

*Your gentle hands lend us, and take our hearts.*

[Exeunt]

\* Too artful. † Common woman. ‡ Owns. § Enchanter. ¶ i. e. Hear us without interruption, and take our parts, support and defend us.

This play has many delightful scenes, though not sufficiently probable, and some happy characters, though not new, nor produced by any deep knowledge of human nature. Parolles is a boaster and a coward, such as has always been the sport of the stage, but perhaps never raised more laughter or contempt than in the hands of Shakspeare.

I cannot reconcile my heart to Bertram; a man noble without generosity, and young without truth; who marries Helen as a coward, and leaves her as a profligate: when she is dead by his unkindness, sneaks home to a second marriage, is accused by a woman whom he has wronged, defends himself by falsehood, and is dismissed to happiness.

The story of Bertram and Diana had been told before of Mariana and Angelo, and, to confess the truth, scarcely merited to be heard a second time.—JOHNSON.

# TAMING OF THE SHREW.

## Persons Represented.

A Lord.

CHRISTOPHER SLY, a drunken tinker.

Hostess, Page, Players, Huntsmen, and other Servants, attending on the Lord.

Persons  
in the  
Induction.

BAPTISTA, a rich gentleman of Padua.

V. NCENTIO, an old gentleman of Pisa.

LUCENTIO, son to Vincentio, in love with Bianca.

L'ETRUCHIO, a gentleman of Verona, a suitor to Katharina.

GREMIO, } suitors to Bianca.  
HORTENSIO, }

TRANIO, } servants to Lucentio.  
BIONDELLO, }

GRUMIO,

CURTIS,

PEDANT, an old fellow set up to personate Vincentio.

KATHARINA, the Shrew, } daughters to  
BIANCA, her sister, } Baptista.  
Widow.

Tailor, Haberdasher, and Servants attending on Baptista and Petruchio.

Scene,—sometimes in Padua; and sometimes in Petruchio's House in the Country.

## INDUCTION.

### SCENE I. Before an Alehouse on a Heath.

Enter Hostess and SLY.

Sly. I'll please \* you, in faith.

Host. A pair of stocks, you rogue!

Sly. Y'are a baggage; the Slies are no rogues: Look in the chronicles, we came in with Richard Conqueror. Therefore, *parucas pullabris*†; let the world slide: *Sessa*‡!

Host. You will not pay for the glasses you have burst§?

Sly. No, not a denier: Go by, says Jeronimy;—Go to thy cold bed, and warm thee||.

Host. I know my remedy, I must go fetch the thirdborough¶. [Exit.

Sly. Third, or fourth, or fifth borough, I'll answer him by law: I'll not budge an inch, boy; let him come, and kindly.

Lies down on the ground, and falls asleep.

Wind Horns. Enter a Lord from hunting, with Huntsmen and Servants.

Lord. Huntsman, I charge thee, tender well my hounds: [boss'd ††.

Brach \*\* Merriman,—the poor cur is em- And couple Clowder with the deep-mouth'd brach. [good

Saw'st thou not, boy, how Silver made it At the hedge corner, in the coldest fault?

I would not lose the dog for twenty pound.

1 Hun. Why, Belman is as good as he, my lord;

He cried upon it at the merest loss,

And twice to-day pick'd out the dullest scent. Trust me, I take him for the better dog.

Lord. Thou art a fool; if Echo were as fleet,

I would esteem him worth a dozen such. But sup them well, and look unto them all; To-morrow I intend to hunt again

1 Hun. I will, my lord.

Lord. What's here? one dead, or drunk? See, doth he breathe?

2 Hun. He breathes, my lord: Were he not warmed with ale,

This were a bed but cold to sleep so soundly.

Lord. O monstrous beast! how like a swine he lies! [thine image!

Grim death, how foul and loathsome is Sirs, I will practise on this drunken man.—

What think you, if he were conveyed to bed, Wrapp'd in sweet clothes, rings put upon his fingers,

A most delicious banquet by his bed, And brave attendants near him when he wakes,

Would not the beggar then forget himself?

1 Hun. Believe me, lord, I think he cannot choose. [when he waked.

2 Hun. It would seem strange unto him

Lord. Even as a flattering dream, or worthless fancy.

Then take him up, and manage well the jest:— Carry him gently to my fairest chamber,

And hang it round with all my wauton pictures:

\* Beat or knock.

† Few words.

‡ Be quiet.

§ Broke.

|| This

line and the scrap of Spanish is used in burlesque from an old play called Hieronymo, or the Spanish Tragedy.

¶ An officer whose authority equals a constable.

\*\* Bitch.

†† Strained.



Balm his foul head with warm distilled waters,  
And burn sweet wood to make the lodging  
sweet:

Procure me music ready when he wakes;  
To make a dulcet and a heavenly sound;  
And if he chance to speak, be ready straight,  
And, with a low submissive reverence,  
Say,—What is it your honour will command?  
Let one attend him with a silver bason, [ers;  
Full of rose-water, and bestrew'd with flow-  
Another bear the ewer\*, the third a diapert,  
And say,—Will't please your lordship cool  
your hands?

Some one be ready with a costly suit,  
And ask him what apparel he will wear;  
Another tell him of his hounds and horse,  
And that his lady mourns at his disease:  
Persuade him, that he hath been lunatic;  
And, when he says he is—, say, that he  
dreams,

For he is nothing but a mighty lord.  
This do, and do it kindly†, gentle sirs;  
It will be pastime passing excellent,  
If it be husbanded with modesty§.

1 *Hun.* My lord, I warrant you, we'll play  
our part,

As he shall think, by our true diligence,  
He is no less than what we say he is.

*Lord.* Take him up gently, and to bed with  
him;

And each one to his office, when he wakes.—  
[*Some bear out SLY. A trumpet sounds.*

Sirrah, go see what trumpet 'tis that sounds:—  
[*Exit Servant.*

Belike, some noble gentleman; that means,  
Travelling some journey, to repose him here.

*Re-enter a Servant.*

How now? who is it?

*Serv.* An it please your honour,  
Players that offer service to your lordship.

*Lord.* Bid them come near:—

*Enter Players.*

Now, fellows, you are welcome.

1 *Play.* We thank your honour.

*Lord.* Do you intend to stay with me to-  
night?

2 *Play.* So please your lordship to accept  
our duty.

*Lord.* With all my heart.—This fellow I  
remember,

Since once he play'd a farmer's eldest son;—  
'Twas where you woo'd the gentlewoman so  
well;

I have forgot your name; but, sure, that part  
Was aptly fitted, and naturally performed.

1 *Play.* I think, 'twas Soto that your ho-  
nour means. [*Exit.*

*Lord.* 'Tis very true;—thou didst it excel-  
Well, you are come to me in happy time;

The rather for I have some sport in hand,  
Wherein your cunning can assist me much.

There is a lord will hear you play to-night:  
But I am doubtful of your modesties;

Lest, over-eying of his odd behaviour,  
For yet his honour never heard a play,)

You break into some merry passion,

And so offend him; for I tell you, sirs,  
If you should smile, he grows impatient.

1 *Play.* Fear not, my lord; we can con-  
tain ourselves,

Were he the veriest antic in the world.

*Lord.* Go, sirrah, take them to the buttery  
And give them friendly welcome every one:  
Let them want nothing that my house affords.

[*Exeunt Servant and Players.*

Sirrah, go you to Bartholomew my page,

[*To a Servant.*

And see him dress'd in all suits like a lady:  
That done, conduct him to the drunkard's  
chamber,

And call him—madam, do him obeisance,  
Tell him from me, (as he will win my love  
He bear himself with honourable action,  
Such as he hath observed in noble ladies  
Under their Lords, by them accomplished;  
Such duty to the drunkard let him do,  
With soft low tongue, and lowly courtesy;  
And say,—What is't your honour will com-  
mand,

Wherein your lady, and your humble wife,  
May show her duty, and make known her  
love? [ing kisses,

And then—with kind embracements, tempt-  
And with declining head into his bosom,—  
Bid him shed tears, as being overjoy'd

To see her noble lord restored to health,  
Who, for twice seven years, hath esteemed  
him

No better than a poor and loathsome beggar:  
And if the boy have not a woman's gift,

To rain a shower of commanded tears,  
An onion will do well for such a shift;

Which in a napkin being close convey'd,  
Shall in despite enforce a watery eye.

See this despatch'd with all the haste thou  
canst;

Anon I'll give thee more instructions.—  
[*Exit Servant.*

I know, the boy will well usurp the grace,  
Voice, gait, and action of a gentlewoman:

I long to hear him call the drunkard, husband;  
And how my men will stay themselves from  
laughter,

When they do homage to this simple peasant.  
I'll in to counsel them: haply||, my presence  
May well abate the over-merry spleen,

Which otherwise would grow into extremes.  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. A Bedchamber in the Lord's  
House.

*SLY is discovered in a rich night gown,  
with Attendants; some with apparel,  
others with bason, ewer, and other ap-  
purtenances. Enter Lord, dressed like  
a Servant.*

*Sly.* For God's sake, a pot of small ale.

1 *Serv.* Will't please your lordship drink  
a cup of sack?

2 *Serv.* Will't please your honour taste of  
these conserves? [wear to-day |

3 *Serv.* What raiment will your honour

*Sly.* I am Christophero Sly; call not me—honour, nor lordship: I never drank sack in my life; and if you give me any conserves, give me conserves of beef: Ne'er ask me what raiment I'll wear; for I have no more doublets than backs, no more stockings than legs, nor no more shoes than feet; nay, sometimes, more feet than shoes, or such shoes as my toes look through the over-leather.

*Lord.* Heaven cease this idle humour in your honour!

O, that a mighty man, of such descent, Of such possessions, and so high esteem, Should be infused with so foul a spirit!

*Sly.* What, would you make me mad? Am not I Christopher Sly, old Sly's son of Burton-heath; by birth a pedlar, by education a card-maker, by transmutation a bear-herd, and now by present profession a tinker? Ask Marian Hacket, the fat ale-wife of Wincot, if she know me not: if she say I am not fourteen pence on the score for sheer ale, score me up for the lyinging knave in Christendom. What, I am not bestraught\*: Here's—

*1 Serv.* O, this it is that makes your lady mourn. [droop.

*2 Serv.* O, this it is that makes your servants *Lord.* Hence comes it that your kindred shun your house,

As beaten hence by your strange lunacy. O, noble lord, bethink thee of thy birth; [ment, Call home thy ancient thoughts from banish- And banish hence these abject lowly dreams: Look how thy servants do attend on thee, Each in his office ready at thy beck. Wilt thou have music? hark! Apollo plays, [Music.

And twenty caged nightingales do sing: Or wilt thou sleep? we'll have thee to a couch, Softer and sweeter than the lustful bed On purpose trimm'd up for Semiramis. Say, thou wilt walk; we will bestrew the ground:

Or wilt thou ride? thy horses shall be trapp'd, Their harness studded all with gold and pearl. Dost thou love hawking? thou hast hawks will soar

Above the morning lark: Or wilt thou hunt? Thy hounds shall make the welkin answer them, And fetch shrill echoes from the hollow earth.

*1 Serv.* Say, thou wilt course; thy grey-hounds are as swift

As breathed stags, ay, fleetier than the roe.

*2 Serv.* Dost thou love pictures? we will fetch thee straight

Adonis, painted by a running brook: And Cytherea all in sedges hid; [breath, Which seem to move and wanton with her Even as the waving sedges play with wind.

*Lord.* We'll show thee Io, as she was a maid; And how she was beguiled and surprised, As lively painted as the deed was done.

*3 Serv.* Or Daphne, roaming through a thorny wood; [bleeds:

Scratching her legs that one shall swear she And at that sight shall sad Apollo weep,

So workmanly the blood and tears are drawn  
*Lord.* Thou art a lord, and nothing but a  
Thou hast a lady far more beautiful [lord:  
Than any woman in this waning age.

*1 Serv.* And, till the tears that she hath shed for thee,  
Like envious floods, o'er-ran her lovely face,  
She was the fairest creature in the world;  
And yet she is inferior to none.

*Sly.* Am I a lord? and have I such a lady?  
Or do I dream? or have I dream'd till now?  
I do not sleep: I see, I hear, I speak;  
I smell sweet savours, and I feel soft things:—  
Upon my life, I am a lord, indeed;  
And not a tinker, nor Christophero Sly.—  
Well, bring our lady hither to our sight;  
And once again, a pot o' the smallest ale.

*2 Serv.* Will't please your mightiness to wash your hands?

[Servants present an ewer, bason, & napkin.  
O, how we joy to see your wit restored! [are!  
O, that once more you knew but what you  
These fifteen years you have been in a dream;  
Or, when you waked, so waked as if you slept.

*Sly.* These fifteen years! by my fay†, a goodly nap.

But did I never speak of all that time?  
*1 Serv.* O, yes, my lord; but very idle words:— [her,

For though you lay here in this goodly chain—  
Yet would you say, ye were beaten out of door;  
And rail upon the hostess of the house;  
And say, you would present her at theleet‡,  
Because she brought stone jugs and no seal'd quarts: [Hacket.

Sometimes you would call out for Cicely  
*Sly.* Ay, the woman's maid of the house.

*3 Serv.* Why, sir, you know no house, nor no such maid;

Nor no such men, as you have reckon'd up,—  
As Stephen Sly, and old John Naps of Greece,  
And Peter Turt, and Henry Pimpernell;  
And twenty more such names and men as these,  
Which never were, nor no man ever saw.

*Sly.* Now, Lord be thanked, for my good  
*All.* Amen. [amends!

*Sly.* I thank thee; thou shalt not lose by it.  
*Enter the Page, as a lady, with Attendants.*

*Page.* How fares my noble lord?

*Sly.* Marry, I fare well; for here is cheer  
Where is my wife? [enough.

*Page.* Here, noble lord; What is thy will with her? [me—husband?

*Sly.* Are you my wife, and will not call  
My men should call me—lord; I am your  
goodman. [and husband;

*Page.* My husband and my lord, my lord  
I am your wife in all obedience.

*Sly.* I know it well:—What must I call her?  
*Lord.* Madam.

*Sly.* Al'ce madam, or Joan madam?

*Lord.* Madam, and nothing else; so lords  
call ladies. [dream'd, and slept

*Sly.* Madam wife, they say that I have  
Above some fifteen year and more. [me;

*Page.* Ay, and the time seems thirty unto

\* Distracted. † Faith. ‡ Court-leet.

Being all this time abandon'd from your bed.

*Sly.* 'Tis much;—Servants, leave me and her alone.—

Madam, undress you, and come now to bed.

*Page.* Thrice noble lord, let me entreat of To pardon me yet for a night or two; [you, Or, if not so, until the sun be set:

For your physicians have expressly charged, In peril to incur your former malady, That I should yet absent me from your bed: I hope, this reason stands for my excuse.

*Sly.* Ay, it stands so, that I may hardly tarry so long. But I would be loth to fall into my dreams again; I will therefore tarry, in despite of the flesh and the blood.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* Your honour's players, hearing your amendment,

Are come to play a pleasant comedy, For so your doctors hold it very meet; Seeing too much sadness hath congeal'd your And melancholy is the nurse of frenzy, [blood, Therefore, they thought it good you hear a play, And frame your mind to mirth and merriment, Which bars a thousand harms, and lengthens life.

*Sly.* Marry, I will; let them play it: Is not a commony\* a Christmas gambol, or a tumbling-trick?

*Page.* No, my good lord; it is more pleasing stuff.

*Sly.* What, household stuff?

*Page.* It is a kind of history.

*Sly.* Well, we'll see't: Come, madam wife sit by my side, and let the world slip; we shall ne'er be younger. [They sit down.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. Padua. A public Place.

*Enter LUCENTIO and TRANIO.*

*Luc.* Tranio, since—for the great desire I To see fair Padua, nursery of arts,— [had I am arrived for fruitful Lombardy, The pleasant garden of great Italy; And, by my father's love and leave, am arm'd With his good will, and thy good company, Most trusty servant, well approved in all; Here let us breathe, and happily institute A course of learning, and ingenious† studies. Pisa, renowned for grave citizens, Gave me my being, and my father first, A merchant of great traffic through the world, Vincentio, come of the Bentivoli. Vincentio his son, brought up in Florence, It shall become, to serve all hopes conceived, To deck his fortune with his virtuous deeds: And therefore, Tranio, for the time I study, Virtue, and that part of philosophy Will I apply, that treats of happiness By virtue\* specially to be achieved. Tell me thy mind: for I have Pisa left, And aim to Padua come; as he that leaves A shallow plash‡, to plunge him in the deep, And with satiety seeks to quench his thirst.

*Tra.* My praonate§, gentle master mine, I am in all affected as yourself; Glad that you thus continue your resolve, To suck the sweets of sweet philosophy. Only, good master, while we do admire This virtue, and this moral discipline, Let's be no stoics nor no stocks, I pray; Or so devote to Aristotle's checks||, As Ovid be an outcast quite abjured: Talk logic with acquaintance that you have, And practise rhetoric in your common talk: Music and poesy use to quicken¶ you; The mathematics, and the metaphysics,

Fall to them, as you find your stomach serves you:

No profit grows, where is no pleasure ta'en;— In brief, sir, study what you most affect.

*Luc.* Gramercies, Tranio, well dost thou If, Biondello, thou wert come ashore, [advise. We could at once put us in readiness; And take a lodging, fit to entertain Such friends, as time in Padua shall beget. But stay awhile: What company is this?

*Tra.* Master, some show, to welcome us to town.

*Enter BAPTISTA, KATHARINA, BIANCA, Gremio, and Hortensio. LUCENTIO and TRANIO stand aside.*

*Bap.* Gentlemen, importune me no further, For how I firmly am resolved you know; That is,—not to bestow my youngest daughter, Before I have a husband for the elder: If either of you both love Katharina, Because I know you well, and love you well, Leave shall you have to court her at your pleasure. [me:—

*Gre.* To cart her rather: She's too rough or There, there Hortensio, will you any wife?

*Kath.* I pray you, sir, [To Bap.] is it your will

To make a stale\*\* of me amongst these mates?

*Hor.* Mates, maid! how mean you that? no mates for you,

Unless you were of gentler, milder mould.

*Kath.* P'faith, sir, you shall never need to I wist! it is not half way to her heart: [fear; But, if it were, doubt not her care should be To comb your noddle with a three-legg'd stool, And paint your face, and use you like a fool.

*Hor.* From all such devils, good Lord, deliver

*Gre.* And me too, good Lord! [us]

*Tra.* Hush, master! here is some good pastime toward;

\* For comedy. † Ingenious. ‡ Small piece of water. § Pardon me.  
|| Harsh rules. ¶ Animate. \*\* A bait or decoy. †† Think.



That wench is stark mad, or wonderful froward.

*Luc.* But in the other's silence I do see Maids' mild behaviour and sobriety.

Peace, Tranio. [your fill.]

*Tra* Well said, master: mum! and gaze

*Bap.* Gentlemen, that I may soon make good What I have said,—Bianca, get you in:

And let it not displease thee, good Bianca; For I will love thee ne'er the less, my girl.

*Kath.* A pretty peat! 'tis best

Put finger in the eye,—an she knew why.

*Bian.* Sister, content you in my discontent.—

Sir, to your pleasure humbly I subscribe: My books, and instruments, shall be my company;

On them to look, and practise by myself.

*Luc.* Hark, Tranio! thou may'st hear Minerva, speak. [Aside.]

*Hor.* Signior Baptista, will you be so strange? Sorry am I, that our good will effects Bianca's grief.

*Gre.* Why, will you mew† her up, Signior Baptista, for this fiend of hell, And make her bear the penance of her tongue?

*Bap.* Gentlemen, content ye; I am resolved:—

Go in, Bianca. [Exit BIANCA.]

And for I know, she taketh most delight In music, instruments, and poetry,

And schoolmasters will I keep within my house, Fit to instruct her youth.—If you, Hortensio,

Or signior Gremio, you,—know any such, Prefer† them hither; for to cunning§ men

I will be very kind, and liberal To mine own children in good bringing up;

And so farewell. Katharina, you may stay; For I have more to commune with Bianca.

[Exit.]

*Kath.* Why, and I trust, I may go too; May I not? [belike.]

What, shall I be appointed hours; as though, I knew not what to take, and what to leave?

Ha? [Exit.]

*Gre.* You may go to the devil's dam; your gifts|| are so good, here is none will hold you.

Their love is not so great, Hortensio, but we may blow our nails together, and fast it fairly

out; our cake's dough on both sides. Farewell:—Yet, for the love I bear my sweet

Bianca, if I can by any means light on a fit man, to teach her that wherein she delights, I

will wish him for her father.

*Hor.* So will I, signior Gremio: But a word, I pray. Though the nature of our quar-

rel yet never brook'd parle, know now, upon advice¶, it toucheth us both,—that we may

yet again have access to our fair mistress, and be happy rivals in Bianca's love,—to labour

and effect one thing 'specially.

*Gre.* What's that, I pray?

*Hor.* Marry, sir, to get a husband for her sister.

*Gre.* A husband! a devil.

*Hor.* I say, a husband.

*Gre.* I say, a devil: Think'st thou, Hortensio, though her father be very rich, any man is so very a fool to be married to hell?

*Hor.* Tush, Gremio, though it pass your patience, and mine, to endure her loud alarms, why, man, there be good fellows in the world, an a man could light on them, would take her with all faults, and money enough.

*Gre.* I cannot tell; but I had as lief take her dowry with this condition,—to be whipped at the high cross every morning.

*Hor.* Faith, as you say, there's small choice in rotten apples. But, come; since this bar in law makes us friends, it shall be so far forth friendly maintained,—till by helping Baptista's eldest daughter to a husband, we set his youngest free for a husband, and then have to't afresh.—Sweet Bianca!—Happy man be his dole \*\*! He that runs fastest, gets the ring. How say you, signior Gremio!

*Gre.* I am agreed; and 'would I had given him the best horse in Padua to begin his wooing, that would thoroughly woo her, wed her, and bed her, and rid the house of her. Come on. [Exit GRE. and HOR.]

*Tra.* [Advancing.] I pray, sir, tell me,—Is it possible

That love should of a sudden take such hold?

*Luc.* O Tranio, till I found it to be true, I never thought it possible, or likely;

But see! while idly I stood looking on, I found the effect of love in idleness:

And now in plainness do confess to thee,—

That art to me as secret, and as dear, As Anna to the queen of Carthage was,—

Tranio, I burn, I pine, I perish. Tranio, If I achieve not this young modest girl:

Counsel me, Tranio, for I know thou canst; Assist me, Tranio, for I know thou wilt.

*Tra.* Master it is no time to chide you now: Affection is not rated†† from the heart:

If love have touch'd you, nought remains but so,—

*Redime te captum quam queas minimo.*

*Luc.* Gramercies, lad; go forward: this contents;

The rest will comfort, for thy counsel's sound.

*Tra.* Master, you look'd so longly‡‡ on the maid,

Perhaps you mark'd not what's the pith of all.

*Luc.* O yes, I saw sweet beauty in her face, Such as the daughter§§ of Agenor had,

That made great Jove to humble him to her hand, [strand.]

When with his knees he kiss'd the Cretan

*Tra.* Saw you no more; mark'd you not, how her sister

Began to scold; and raise up such a storm, That mortal ears might hardly endure the din.

*Luc.* Tranio, I saw her coral lips to move, And with her breath she did perfume the air;

Sacred, and sweet, was all I saw in her.

\* Pet.                    † Shui.                    ‡ Recommend.                    § Knowing, learned.                    || Endowments.  
¶ Consideration.                    \*\* Gain or let.                    †† Driven out by chiding.                    ‡‡ Longingly  
§§ Europa.

*Tra.* Nay, then, 'tis time to stir him from his trance.

I pray, awake, sir; If you love the maid,  
Bend thoughts and wits to achieve her. Thus it stands:

Her elder sister is so curst and shrewd,  
That, till the father rid his hands of her,  
Master, your love must live a maid at home:  
And therefore has he closely mew'd her up,  
Because she shall not be annoy'd with suitors.

*Luc.* Ah, Tranio, what a cruel father's he!  
But art thou not advised, he took some care  
To get her cunning schoolmasters to instruct  
her? [plotted.]

*Tra.* Ay, marry, am I, sir; and now 'tis

*Luc.* I have it, Tranio.

*Tra.* Master, for my hand,  
Both our inventions meet and jump in one.

*Luc.* Tell me thine first.

*Tra.* You will be schoolmaster,  
And undertake the teaching of the maid:  
That's your device.

*Luc.* It is: May it be done?

*Tra.* Not possible: For who shall bear your  
And be in Padua here Vincentio's son? [part,  
Keep house, and ply' his book; welcome his  
friends;

Visit his countrymen, and banquet them?

*Luc.* Basta\*; content thee; for I have it full.  
We have not yet been seen in any house;  
Nor can we be distinguish'd by our faces,  
For man, or master: then it follows this:—  
Thou shalt be master, Tranio, in my stead,  
Keep house, and port, and servants as I should:  
I will some other be; some Florentine,  
Some Neapolitan, or mean man of Pisa.

'Tis hatch'd, and shall be so:—Tranio, at once  
Uncase thee; take my colour'd hat and cloak:  
When Biondello comes, he waits on thee;  
But I will charm him first to keep his tongue.

*Tra.* So had you need.

[They exchange habits.]

In brief then, sir, sith' it your pleasure is,  
And I am tied to be obedient;

[For so your father charged me at our parting;  
Be serviceable to my son, quoth he;

Although, I think, 'twas in another sense;]

I am content to be Lucentio,

Because so well I love Lucentio.

*Luc.* Tranio, be so, because Lucentio loves.  
And let me be a slave, to achieve that maid  
Whose sudden sight hath thrall'd my wounded  
eye.

*Enter BIONDELLO.*

Here comes the rogue.—Sirrah, where have  
you been? [where are you?]

*Bion.* Where have I been? Nay, how now,  
Master, has my fellow Tranio stolen your  
clothes? [news?]

Or you stolen his? or both? pray what's the

*Luc.* Sirrah, come hither: 'tis no time to jest,  
And therefore frame your manners to the time.  
Your fellow Tranio here, to save my life,  
Puts my apparel and my countenance on,  
And I for my escape have put on his;  
For in a quarrel, since I came ashore,

I kill'd a man, and fear I was descried;  
Wait you on him, I charge you, as becomes,  
While I make way from hence to save my life:  
You understand me?

*Bion.* I, sir, ne'er a whit.

*Luc.* And not a jot of Tranio in your mouth;  
Tranio is changed into Lucentio.

*Bion.* The better for him: Would I were so  
too! [wish after,—]

*Tra.* So would I, faith, boy, to have the next  
That Lucentio indeed had Baptista's younger  
daughter. [— I advise—]

But, sirrah,—not for my sake, but your master's  
You use your manners discreetly in all kind  
of companies:

When I am alone, why then I am Tranio;  
But in all places else, your master Lucentio.

*Luc.* Tranio, let's go:—

One thing more rests, that thyself execute:—  
To make one among these wooers: If thou  
ask me why,—

Sufficieth, my reasons are both good and  
weighty. [Exit *Luc.*]

1. Serv. My lord, you nod; you do not  
mind the play.

*Sly.* Yes, by Saint Anne, do I. A good  
matter, surely: Comes there any more of it?

*Page.* My lord, 'tis but begun.

*Sly.* 'Tis a very excellent piece of work,  
madam lady: 'Would 'twere done!

SCENE II. The same. Before Hortensio's  
House.

*Enter PETRUCHIO and GRUMIO.*

*Pet.* Verona, for a while I take my leave,  
To see my friends in Padua; but, of all,  
My best beloved and approved friend,  
Hortensio; and, I trow, this is his house:—  
Here, sirrah Grumio; knock. I say.

*Gru.* Knock, sir! whom should I knock?  
is there any man has rebused your worship?

*Pet.* Villain, I say, knock me here soundly.

*Gru.* Knock you here, sir? why, sir, what  
am I, sir, that I should knock you here, sir?

*Pet.* Villain, I say, knock me at this gate,  
And rap me well, or I'll knock your knave's  
pate.

*Gru.* My master is grown quarrelsome: I  
should knock you first,  
And then I know after who comes by the worst.

*Pet.* Will it not be?

'Faith, sirrah, an you'll not knock, I'll wring it;  
I'll try how you can *sol, fa*, and sing it.

[He wrings GRUMIO by the ears.]

*Gru.* Help, masters, help! my master is mad.

*Pet.* Now, knock when I bid you: sirrah!  
villain!

*Enter HORTENSIO.*

*Hor.* How now? what's the matter?—My  
old friend Grumio! and my good friend  
Petruchio!—How do you all at Verona!

*Pet.* Signior Hortensio, come you to part  
the fray?

*Con tutto il core bene trovato, may I say.*

*Hor. Alia nostra casa bene venuto,  
Molto honorato signor mio Petruchio.*

\* 'Tis enough.

Know, appearance.

I strike.

3 Observed.

Rise, Grumio, rise; we will compound this quarrel.

*Gr.* Nay, 'tis no matter, what he leges \* in Latin.—If this be not a lawful cause for me to leave his service—Look you, sir,—he bid me knock him, and raphim soundly, sir: Well, was it fit for a servant to use his master so; being, perhaps, (for aught I see,) two-and-thirty,—a pip out?

Whom, 'would to God, I had well knock'd at first,

Then had not Grumio come by the worst.

*Pet.* A senseless villain—Good Hortensio, I bade the rascal knock upon your gate, And could not get him for my heart to do it.

*Gr.* Knock at the gate?—O heavens!

Spake you not these words plain,—*Sirrah, knock me here,* [soundly?

*Rap me here, knock me well, and knock me* And come you now with—knocking at the gate?

*Pet.* Sirrah, be gone, or talk not, I advise you. [pledge:]

*Hor.* Petruchio, patience; I am Grumio's Why, this a heavy chance 'twixt him and you; Your ancient, trusty, pleasant servant Grumio. And tell me now, sweet friend,—what happy gale

Blows you to Padua here, from old Verona?

*Pet.* Such wind as scatters young men through the world,

To seek their fortunes further than at home, Where small experience grows. But, in a few †, Signior Hortensio, thus it stands with me:—Antonio, my father, is deceased;

And I have thrust myself into this maze, Haply to wive, and thrive, as best I may: Crowns in my purse I have, and goods at home, And so am come abroad to see the world.

*Hor.* Petruchio, shall I then come roundly to thee,

And wish thee to a shrewd ill-favour'd wife? Thou'dst thank me but a little for my counsel: And yet I'll promise thee she shall be rich, And very rich:—But thou'rt too much my friend,

And I'll not wish thee to her.

*Pet.* Signior Hortensio; 'twixt such friends as we

Few words suffice: and, therefore, if thou know One rich enough to be Petruchio's wife, (As wealth is burthen of my wooing dance,) Be she as foul as was Florentius' love ‡, As old as Sibyl, and as curst and shrewd As Socrates' Xantippe, or a worse, She moves me not, or not removes, at least, Affection's edge in me; were she as rough As are the swelling Adriatic seas:

I come to wive it wealthily in Padua;

If wealthily, then happily in Padua.

*Gr.* Nay, look you, sir, he tells you flatly what his mind is: Why, give him gold enough and marry him to a puppet, or an aglet-baby §; or an old trot with ne'er a tooth in her head, though she have as many diseases as two and

fifty horses: why, nothing comes amiss, so money comes withal.

*Hor.* Petruchio, since we have stepp'd thus I will continue that I broach'd in jest. [sar in I can. Petruchio, help thee to a wife

With wealth enough, and young, andauteous; Brought up as best becomes a gentlewoman: Her only fault (and that is faults enough,

Is,—that she is intolerably curst, [sure, And shrewd, and froward; so beyond all meat, were my state far worse than it is, I would not wed her for a mine of gold.

*Pet.* Hortensio, peace; thou know'st not gold's effect:

Tell me her father's name, and 'tis enough; For I will board her, though she chide as loud Asthunder, when the clouds in autumn crack.

*Hor.* Her father is Baptista Minola, An affable and courteous gentleman: Her name is Katharina Minola, Renown'd in Padua for her scolding tongue.

*Pet.* I know her father, though I know not And he knew my deceased father well: [her; I will not sleep, Hortensio, till I see her; And therefore let me be thus bold with you, To give you over at this first encounter, Unless you will accompany me thither.

*Gr.* I pray you, sir, let him go while the humour lasts. O' my word, an she knew him as well as I do, she would think scolding would do little good upon him: She may, perhaps, call him half a score of knaves, or so: why, that's nothing: an he begin once, he'll rail in his rope-tricks ||. I'll tell you what, sir,—an she stand ¶ him but a little he will throw a figure in her face, and so disfigure her with it, that she shall have no more eyes to see withal than a cat: You know him not, sir.

*H. r. Tarry, Petruchio, I must go with thee; For in Baptista's keep \* my treasure is: He hath the jewel of my life in hold, His youngest daughter, beautiful Bianca; And her withholds from me, and other more Suitors to her, and rivals in my love: Supposing it a thing impossible, (For those defects I have before rehearsed,) That ever Katharina will be woo'd; Therefore this order †† hath Baptista ta'en;— That none shall have access unto Bianca, Till Katharine the curst have got a husband.*

*Gr.* Katharine the curst! A title for a maid, of all titles the worst.

*Hor.* Now shall my friend Petruchio do me grace;

And offer me, disguised in sober robes, To old Baptista as a schoolmaster Well seen ‡‡ in music, to instruct Bianca: That so I may by this device, at least, Have leave and leisure to make love to her, And, unsuspected, court her by herself  
*Enter Gremio; with him Lucutio disguised, with books under his arm.*

*Gr.* Here's knavery! See, to beguile the

\* Alleges. † Few words. ‡ See the story, No. 39, of "A Thousand Notable Things."

§ A small image on the tag of a lace.

|| Abusive language

¶ Instantly.

\*\* Custody

†† These measures.

‡‡ Versed.



old folks, how the young folks lay their heads together! Master, master, look about you: Who goes there? ha!

*Hor.* Peace, Grumio: 'tis the rival of my Petruchio, stand by a while. [love:—

*Gru.* A proper stripling, and an amorous! [They retire.

*Gre.* O, very well; I have perused the note. Hark you, sir; I'll have them very fairly bound: All books of love, see that at any hand\*; And see you read no other lectures to her: You understand me;—Over and beside Signior Baptista's liberality, [persa too, I'll mend it with a largess:—Take your part: And let me have them very well perfumed; For she is sweeter than perfume itself, (her? To whom they go. What will you read to

*Luc.* What'er I read to her, I'll plead for you,

As for my patron, (stand you so assured.) As firmly as yourself were still in place: Yea, and (perhaps) with more successful words Than you, unless you were a scholar, sir.

*Gre.* O this learning; what a thing it is!

*Gru.* O this woodcock! what an ass it is!

*Pet.* Peace, sirrah. [Gremio!

*Hor.* Grumio, mum!—God save you, signior

*Gre.* And you're well met, signior Hortensio. Trow you,

Whither I am going?—To Baptista Minola. I promised to inquire carefully

About a schoolmaster for fair Bianca: And, by good fortune, I have lighted well On this young man; for learning and behaviour: Fit for her turn; well read in poetry [vour, And other books,—good ones I warrant you.

*Hor.* 'Tis well: and I have met a gentleman, Hath promised me to help me to another, A fine musician to instruct our mistress; So shall I no whit be behind in duty To fair Bianca, so beloved of me.

*Gre.* Beloved of me,—and that my deeds shall prove.

*Gru.* And that his bags shall prove [Aside.

*Hor.* Gremio, 'tis now no time to vent our Listen to me, and if you speak me fair, [love: I'll tell you news indifferent good for either. Here is a gentleman, whom by chance I met, Upon agreement from us to his liking, Will undertake to woo curst Katharine; Yea, and to marry her, if her dowry please.

*Gre.* So said, so done, is well:

Hortensio, have you told him all her faults?

*Pet.* I know, she is an irksome brawling scold;

If that be all, masters, I hear no harm.

*Gre.* No! say'st me so friend? What countryman?

*Pet.* Born in Verona, old Antonio's son: My father dead, my fortune lives for me; And I do hope good days, and long, to see.

*Gre.* O, sir, such a life, with such a wife, were strange: [name,

But, if you have a stomach, to't o' God's! You shall have me assisting you in all.

But wilt you woo this wild cat?

*Pet.*

Will I live?

*Gru.* Will he woo her? ay, or I'll ha' her. [Aside

*Pet.* Why came I hither, but to that intent? Think you, a little din can daunt mine ears? Have I not in my time heard lions roar? Have I not heard the sea, puff'd up with winds, Rage like an angry boar, chafed with sweat? Have I not heard great ordnance in the field? And heaven's artillery thunder in the skies? Have I not in a pitched battle heard [clan, Loud 'larums, neighing steeds, and trumpet? And do you tell me of a woman's tongue, That gives not half so great a blow to the ear As will a chestnut in a farmer's fire? Tush! tush! fear boys with bugs.

*Gru.* For he fears none. [Aside.

*Gre.* Hortensio, hark! This gentleman is happily arrived, My mind presumes, for his own good, and ours.

*Hor.* I promised we would be contributors And bear his charge of wooing, whatso'er.

*Gre.* And so we will; provided that he win her.

*Gru.* I would I were as sure of a good dinner. [Aside.

Enter TRANIO, bravely apparelled; and BIONDELLO.

*Tra.* Gentlemen, God save you! If I may be bold, [way

Tell me, I beseech you, which is the readiest To the house of signior Baptista Minola?

*Gre.* He that has the two fair daughters:—is't [Aside to TRANIO.] he you mean?

*Tra.* Even he. Biondello!

*Gre.* Hark you, sir; You mean not her to—

*Tra.* Perhaps him and her, sir; What have you to do?

*Pet.* Not her that chides, sir; at any hand. I pray. away.

*Tra.* I love no chiders, sir:—Biondello, let's

*Luc.* Well begun, Tranio. [Aside.

*Hor.* Sir, a word ere you go;— [or no? Are you a suitor to the maid you talk of, yea

*Tra.* An if I be, sir, is it any offence?

*Gre.* No; if without more words, you will get you hence. [as free

*Tra.* Why, sir, I pray, are not the streets For me as for you?

*Gre.* But so is not she.

*Tra.* For what reason, I beseech you?

*Gre.* For this reason, if you'll know,— That she's the choice love of signior Gremio.

*Hor.* That she's the chosen of signior Hortensio. [men,

*Tra.* Softly, my masters! if you be gentle Do me this right,—hear me with patience. Baptista is a noble gentleman, To whom my father is not all unknown; And, were his daughter fairer than she is, She may more suitors have, and me for one. Fair Leda's daughter had a thousand wooers; Then well one more may fair Bianca have: And so she shall; Lucentio shall make one, Though Paris came in hope to speed alone. [all.

*Gre.* What! this gentleman will out-talk us

*Luc.* Sir, give him head; I know he'll prove a jade. [words?]  
*Pet.* Hortensio, to what end are all these  
*Hor.* Sir, let me be so bold as to ask you, Did you yet ever see Baptista's daughter?  
*Tra.* No, sir; but hear I do, that he hath The one as famous for a scolding tongue, [two; As is the other for beauteous modesty. [by.  
*Pet.* Sir, sir, the first's for me; let her go  
*Gre.* Yea, leave that labour to great Her; And let it be more than Alcides' twelve. [cules;  
*Pet.* Sir, understand you this of me, in-sooth;—  
 The youngest daughter, whom you hearken for, Her father keeps from all access of suitors; And will not promise her to any man, Untill the elder sister first be wed:  
 The younger then is free, and not before.  
*Tra.* If it be so, sir, that you are the man

Must stead us all, and me among the rest;  
 An if you break the ice, and do this feat,—  
 Achieve the elder, set the younger free [her,  
 For our access,—whose hap shall be to have  
 Will not so graceless be, to be ingrate \* [ceive;  
*Hor.* Sir, you say well, and well you do con-  
 And since you do profess to be a suitor,  
 You must, as we do, gratify this gentleman,  
 To whom we all rest generally beholden.  
*Tra.* Sir, I shall not be slack: in sign whereof,  
 Please ye we may contrive this afternoon,  
 And quaff carouses to our mistress' health;  
 And do as adversaries do in law,—  
 Strive mightily, but eat and drink as friends.  
*Gre.* Lion. O excellent motion! Fellows, let's begone. [so:—  
*Hor.* The motion's good indeed, and be it  
 Petruchio, I shall be your *ben venuto*. [Exeunt.

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *The same. A Room in Baptista's House.*

*Enter KATHARINA and BIANCA.*

*Bian.* Good sister, wrong me not, nor wrong yourself,  
 To make a bondmaid and a slave of me; That I disdain: but for these other gawds †. Unbind my hands, I'll pull them off myself, Yea, all my raiment, to my petticoat; Or, what you will command me, will I do, So well I know my duty to my elders.

*Kath.* Of all thy suitors, here I charge thee, tell [not.  
 Whom thou lovest best: see thou dissemble  
*Bian.* Believe me, sister, of all the men I never yet beheld that special face [alive, Which I could fancy more than any other.

*Kath.* Minion, thou liest; Is't not Hortensio?  
*Bian.* If you affect § him, sister, here I swear, [him.  
 I'll plead for you myself, but you shall have  
*Kath.* O then, belike, you fancy riches  
 You will have Gremio to keep you fair. [more;  
*Bian.* Is it for him you do envy me so?  
 Nay, then you jest; and now I well perceive,  
 You have but jested with me all this while:  
 I pry'three, sister Kate, untie my hands.

*Kath.* If that be jest, then all the rest was so. [Strikes her.

*Enter BAPTISTA.*

*Bap.* Why, how now, dame! whence grows this insolence! —  
 Bianca, stand aside;—poor girl! she weeps:—  
 Go ply thy needle; meddle not with her.—  
 For shame, thou hilding || of a devilish spirit,  
 Why dost thou wrong her that did ne'er wrong thee?  
 When did she cross thee with a bitter word?  
*Kath.* Her silence flouts me, and I'll be revenged. [Flies after BIANCA.  
*Bap.* What, in my sight?—Bianca, get thee in. [Exit BIANCA.

*Kath.* Will you not suffer me? Nay, now I see, [band;  
 She is your treasure, she must have a husband;  
 I must dance bare-foot on her wedding-day,  
 And, for your love to her, lead apes in hell.  
 Talk not to me; I will go sit and weep,  
 Till I can find occasion of revenge.

[Exit KATHARINA.

*Bap.* Was ever gentleman thus grieved as I? But who comes here?

*Enter GREMIO, with LUCENTIO in the habit of a mean man; PETRUCHIO, with HORTENSIO as a Musician; and TRANIO, with BIONDELLO bearing a lute and books.*

*Gre.* Good morrow, neighbour Baptista.  
*Bap.* Good-morrow, neighbour Gremio: God save you, gentlemen!

*Pet.* And you, good sir! Pray, have you not a daughter

Call'd Katharina, fair, and virtuous?

*Bap.* I have a daughter, sir, call'd Katharina.

*Gre.* You are too blunt, go to it orderly.

*Pet.* You wrong me, signior Gremio; give I am a gentleman of Verona, sir, [me leave.—  
 That,—hearing of her beauty, and her wit,  
 Her affability, and bashful modesty,  
 Her wondrous qualities, and mild behaviour,—  
 Am bold to show myself a forward guest  
 Within your house, to make mine eye the wit  
 Of that report which I so oft have heard. [ness  
 And, for an entrance to my entertainment,  
 I do present you with a man of mine,

[Preventing HORTENSIO.

Cunning in music, and the mathematics,  
 To instruct her fully in those sciences,  
 Whereof, I know, she is not ignorant:  
 Accept of him, or else you do me wrong;  
 His name is Licio, born in Mantua.

*Bap.* You're welcome, sir; and he, for your good sake:

But for my daughter Katharine,—this I know,  
 She is not for your turn, the more my grief  
*Pet.* I see you do not mean to part with her;

\* Ungrateful. † Companions. ‡ Trifling ornaments. § Love. || A worthless woman.

Or else you like not of my company.

*Bap.* Mistake me not, I speak but as I find.  
Whence are you, sir? what may I call your name?

*Pet.* Petruccio is my name; Antonio's son,  
A man well known throughout all Italy.

*Bap.* I know him well: you are welcome  
for his sake.

*Gre.* Saving your tale, Petruccio, I pray,  
Let us, that are poor petitioners, speak too:  
Baccare\*! you are marvellous forward.

*Pet.* O, pardon me, signior Gremio; I  
would fain be doing. [your wooing.—

*Gre.* I doubt it not, sir; but you will curse  
Neighbour, this is a gift very grateful, I am  
sure of it. To express the like kindness my-  
self, that have been more kindly beholden to  
you than any, I freely give unto you this  
young scholar, [*Presenting LUCENTIO.*] that  
hath been long studying at Rheims; as cun-  
ning in Greek, Latin, and other languages; as  
the other in music and mathematics: his name  
is Cambio; pray, accept his service.

*Bap.* A thousand thanks, signior Gremio:  
welcome, good Cambio.—But, gentle sir, [*To*  
*TRANIO.*] methinks, you walk like a stranger;  
May I be so bold to know the cause of your  
coming?

*Tra.* Pardon me, sir, the boldness is mine  
That, being a stranger in this city here, [own;  
Do make myself a suitor to your daughter,  
Unto Bianca, fair, and virtuous.

Nor is your firm resolve unknown to me,  
In the preferment of the eldest sister:  
This liberty is all that I request,—

That, upon knowledge of my parentage,  
I may have welcome'mongst the rest that woo,  
And free access and favour as the rest.

And, toward the education of your daughters,  
I here bestow a simple instrument, [books:  
And this small packet of Greek and Latin  
If you accept them, then their worth is great.

*Bap.* Lucentio is your name? of whence,  
I pray?

*Tra.* Of Pisa, sir; son to Vincentio.

*Bap.* A mighty man of Pisa; by report  
I know him well: you are very welcome, sir.—  
Take you [*To Hor.*] the lute, and you [*To*  
*LUC.*] the set of books.

You shall go see your pupils presently.  
Holla, within!

*Enter a Servant.*

Sirrah, lead

These gentlemen to my daughters; and tell  
them both, [well.

These are their tutors; bid them use them  
[*Exit Servant, with HORTENSIO, LUCEN-*  
*TIO, and BIONDELLO.*

We will go walk a little in the orchard,

And then to dinner: You are passing welcome,  
And so I pray you all to think yourselves.

*Pet.* Signior Baptista, my business asketh  
And every day I cannot come to woo. [haste.  
You knew my father well; and in him, me,  
Left solely heir to all his lands and goods,

Which I have better'd rather than decreased;  
Then tell me, if I get your daughter's love,  
What dowry shall I have with her to wife?

*Bap.* After my death, the one half of my  
lands:

And, in possession, twenty thousand crowns.

*Pet.* And, for that dowry, I'll assure her of  
Her widowhood,—be it that she survive me,—  
In all my lands and leases whatsoever:

Let specialties be therefore drawn between us,  
That covenants may be kept on either hand.

*Bap.* Ay, when the special thing is well  
obtain'd,

This is,—her love; for that is all in all. [father,  
*Pet.* Why, that is nothing; for I tell you,  
I am as peremptory as she proud-minded;

And where two raging fires meet together,  
They do consume the thing that feeds their fury:

Though little fire grows great with little wind,  
Yet extreme gusts will blow out fire and all:

So I to her, and so she yields to me;  
For I am rough, and woo not like a babe.

*Bap.* Well may'st thou woo, and happy be  
thy speed!

But be thou arm'd for some unhappy words.

*Pet.* Ay, to the proof; as mountains are  
for winds,

That shake not, though they blow perpetually.  
*Re-enter HORTENSIO, with his head broken.*

*Bap.* How now, my friend? why dost thou  
look so pale?

*Hor.* For fear, I promise you, if I look pale

*Bap.* What, will my daughter prove a good  
musician?

*Hor.* I think, she'll sooner prove a soldier;  
Iron may hold with her, but never lutes.

*Bap.* Why, then thou canst not break her  
to the lute? [to me

*Hor.* Why, no; for she hath broke the lute  
I did but tell her, she mistook her frets †,

And bow'd her hand to teach her fingering;  
When, with a most impatient devilish spirit,

*Frets, call you these?* quoth she: *I'll fume*  
*with them:* [head,

And, with that word, she struck me on the  
And through the instrument my pate made

And there I stood amazed for a while, [way;  
As on a pillory, looking through the lute:

While she did call me,—rascal, nodder, [terms,  
And—twangling Jack; with twenty such vile

As she had studied to misuse me so. [wrench;  
*Pet.* Now, by the world it is a lusty

I love her ten times more than e'er I did:  
), now I long to have some chat with her!

*Bap.* Well, go with me, and be not so dis-  
comfited:

Proceed in practice with my younger daughter;  
She's apt to learn, and thankful for good turns.—

Signior Petruccio, will you go with us;  
Or shall I send my daughter Kate to you?

*Pet.* I pray you do: I will attend her here,—

[*Exeunt BAPTISTA, GREMIO, TRANIO,*  
*and HORTENSIO.*

And woo her with some spirit when she comes—  
Say, that she rail; Why, then I'll tell her plain,

\* A proverbial exclamation then in use,  
or regulates the vibration of the string.

† A fret in music is the stop which causes  
‡ Palsy musician.



She sings as sweetly as a nightingale: [clear  
Say, that she frown; I'll say, she looks as  
As morning roses newly wash'd with dew:  
Say, she be mute, and will not speak a word;  
Then I'll commend her volubility,  
And say—she uttereth piercing eloquence:  
If she do bid me pack, I'll give her thanks,  
As though she bid me stay by her a week;  
If she deny to wed, I'll crave the day [ried:—  
When I shall ask the banns, and when be mar-  
But here she comes; and now, Petruchio,  
speak.

*Enter KATHARINA.*

Good-morrow, Kate; for that's your name, I  
hear. [hard of hearing;

*Kath.* Well have you heard, but something  
They call me—Katharine, that do talk of me.

*Pet.* You lie, in faith; for you are call'd  
plain Kate,

And bonny Kate, and sometimes Kathe the curst;  
But Kate, the prettiest Kate in Christendom,  
Kate of Kate-Hall, my super-dainty Kate,  
For dainties are all cates: and therefore, Kate,  
Take this of me, Kate of my consolation;—  
Hearing thy mildness praised in every town,  
Thy virtues spoke of, and thy beauty sounded,  
(Yet not so deeply as to thee belongs,)  
Myself am moved to woo thee for my wife

*Kath.* Moved! in good time: let him that  
moved you hither,

Remove you hence: I knew you at the first,  
You were a moveable.

*Pet.* Why, what's a moveable?

*Kath.* A joint-stool.

*Pet.* Thou hast hit it: come, sit on me.

*Kath.* Asses are made to bear, and so are  
you. [you.

*Pet.* Women are made to bear, and so are

*Kath.* No such jade, sir, as you, if me you  
mean. [thee:

*Pet.* Alas, good Kate! I will not burden  
For, knowing thee to be but young and light,—

*Kath.* Too light for such a swain as you  
to catch;

And yet as heavy as my weight should be.

*Pet.* Should be? should buzz.

*Kath.* Well ta'en, and like a buzzard.

*Pet.* O, slow-wing'd turtle! shall a buzzard  
take thee? [zard.

*Kath.* Ay, for a turtle; as he takes a buz-

*Pet.* Come, come, you wasp; i'faith, you  
are too angry.

*Kath.* If I be waspish, best beware my sting.

*Pet.* My remedy is then, to pluck it out.

*Kath.* Ay, if the fool could find it where  
it lies. [wear his sting?

*Pet.* Who knows not where a wasp doth  
in his tail.

*Kath.* In his tongue.

*Pet.* Whose tongue?

*Kath.* Yours, if you talk of tails? and so  
farewell. [nay, come again,

*Pet.* What, with my tongue in your tail?  
Good Kate; I am a gentleman.

*Kath.* That I'll try.  
[Striking him.

*Pet.* I swear I'll cuff you, if you strike again.

*Kath.* So may you lose your arms:

If you strike me, you are no gentleman;  
And if no gentleman, why, then no arms.

*Pet.* A herald, Kate? O, put me in thy books.

*Kath.* What is your crest? a coxcomb?

*Pet.* A combs cock, so Kate will be my  
hen. [a craven\*.

*Kath.* No cock of mine, you crow too like

*Pet.* Nay, come, Kate, come; you must not  
look so sour.

*Kath.* It is my fashion, when I see a crab.

*Pet.* Why, here's no crab; and therefore

*Kath.* There is, there is. [look not sour.

*Pet.* Then show it me.

*Kath.* Had I a glass, I would.

*Pet.* What, you mean my face?

*Kath.* Well aim'd oft such a young one.

*Pet.* Now, by Saint George, I am too young

*Kath.* Yet you are wither'd. [for you.

*Pet.* 'Tis with cares.

*Kath.* I care not.

*Pet.* Nay, hear you, Kate: in sooth, you  
'scape not so.

*Kath.* I chafe you, if I tarry; let me go.

*Pet.* No, not a whit; I find you passing  
gentle. [sullen,

'Twas told me, you were rough, and coy, and  
And now I find report a very liar;

For thou art pleasant, gamesome, passing  
courteous; [flowers:

But slow in speech, yet sweet as spring-time  
Thou canst not frown, thou canst not look

askance,

Nor bite the lip, as angry wenches will;

Nor hast thou pleasure to be cross in talk;

But thou with mildness entertain'st thy wooers,  
With gentle conference, soft and affable. [limp?

Why does the world report, that Kate doth  
O slanderous world! Kate, like the hazel-twig,

Is straight, and slender; and as brown in hue  
As hazel nuts, and sweeter than the kernels.

O, let me see thee walk: thou dost not halt.

*Kath.* Go, fool, and whom thou keep'st  
command.

*Pet.* Did ever Dian so become a grove,  
As Kate this chamber with her princely gait?

O, be thou Dian, and let her be Kate; [ful!  
And then let Kate be chaste, and Dian sport-

*Kath.* Where did you study all this goodly  
speech?

*Pet.* It is extempore, from my mother-wit.

*Kath.* A witty mother! witless else her son.

*Pet.* Am I not wise?

*Kath.* Yes; keep you warm.

*Pet.* Marry, so I mean, sweet Katharine,  
in thy bed:

And therefore, setting all this chat aside,

Thus in plain terms:—Your father hath con-  
sented [on;

That you shall be my wife; your dowry 'greed  
And, will you, nil you, I will marry you.

Now, Kate, I am a husband for your turn;  
For, by this light, whereby I see thy beauty

(Thy beauty, that doth make me like thee  
well,)

\* A degenerate cock.

† By.

Thou must be married to no man but me:  
For I am he, am born to tame you, Kate;  
And bring you from a wild cat to a Kate  
Conformable, as other household Kates.  
Here comes your father; never make denial,  
I must and will have Katharine to my wife.

*Re-enter BAPTISTA, GREMIO, & TRANIO.*

*Bap.* Now,  
Signior Petruchio: How speed you with  
My daughter?

*Pet.* How but well, sir? how but well?  
It were impossible, I should speed amiss.

*Bap.* Why, how now, daughter Katharine?  
in your dumps? [mise you,

*Kath.* Call you me, daughter? now I pro-  
You have show'd a tender fatherly regard,  
To wish me wed to one half lunatic;  
A mad-cap ruffian, and a swearing Jack,  
That thinks with oaths to face the matter out.

*Pet.* Father, 'tis thus,—yourself and all the  
world,

That talk'd of her, have talk'd amiss of her;  
If she be curst it is for policy:

For she's not froward, but modest as the dove;  
She is not hot, but temperate as the morn;  
For patience she will prove a second Gris-el;  
And Roman Lucrece for her chastity: [ther,  
And to conclude,—we have 'greed so well toge-  
That upon Sunday is the wedding-day.

*Kath.* I'll see thee hang'd on Sunday first.

*Gre.* Hark, Petruchio! she says, she'll see  
thee hang'd first.

*Tra.* Is this your speeding? nay, then, good  
night our part!

*Pet.* Be patient, gentlemen; I choose her  
for myself;

If she and I be pleased, what's that to you?  
'Tis bargain'd 'twixt us twain, being alone,  
That she shall still be curst in company.

I tell you, 'tis incredible to believe  
How much she loves me: O, the kindest Kate!  
She hung about my neck; and kiss on kiss  
She vi'd\* so fast, protesting oath on oath,  
That in a twink she won me to her love.  
O, you are novices! 'tis a world to see†,  
How tame, when men and women are alone,  
A meacock‡ wretch can make the curstest  
shrew.—

Give me thy hand, Kate: I will unto Venice,  
To buy apparel 'gainst the wedding-day:—  
Provide the feast, father, and bid the guests;  
I will be sure, my Katharine shall be fine.

*Bap.* I know not what to say: but give me  
your hands;

God send you joy, Petruchio! 'tis a match.

*Gre. Tra.* Amen, say we; we will be wit-  
nesses. [adieu;

*Pet.* Father, and wife, and gentlemen,  
I will to Venice, Sunday comes apace:—  
We will have rings, and things, and fine array;  
And kiss me, Kate, we will be married o'Sun-  
day. [*Exeunt PETRUCHIO and*

*KATHARINE, severally.*

*Gre.* Was ever match clapp'd up so suddenly?

*Bap.* Faith, gentlemen, now I play a mer-  
chant's part,

And venture madly on a desperate mart.

*Tra.* 'Twas a commodity lay fretting by you:  
'Twill bring you gain, or perish on the seas.

*Bap.* The gain I seek is—quiet in the match.

*Gre.* No doubt, but he hath got a quiet catch.

But now, Baptista, to your younger daughter;—  
Now is the day we long have looked for;  
I am your neighbour, and was suitor first.

*Tra.* And I am one, that love Bianca more  
Than words can witness, or your thoughts can  
guess. [dear as I.

*Gre.* Youngling! thou canst not love so  
*Tra.* Grey-beard! thy love doth freeze.

*Gre.* But thine doth fry.  
Skipper, stand back; 'tis age, that nourisheth.

*Tra.* But youth, in ladies' eyes, that flou-  
risheth. [pound this strife:

*Bap.* Content you, gentlemen; I'll con-  
'Tis deeds, must win the prize; and he, of both,  
That can assure my daughter greatest dower,  
Shall have Bianca's love.—

Say, signior Gremio, what can you assure her?  
*Gre.* First, as you know, my house within  
the city

Is richly furnished with plate and gold;  
Basons, and ewers, to lave her dainty hands;  
My hangings all of Tyrian tapestry:

In ivory coffers I have stuf'd my crowns;  
In cypress chests my arras, counterpoints§,  
Costly apparel, tents, and canopies,

Fine linen, Turkey cushions boss'd with pearl,  
Valance of Venice gold in needle-work,  
Pewter and brass, and all things that belong

To house, or housekeeping: then, at my farm,  
I have a hundred milch kine to the pail,  
Sixscore fat oxen standing in my stalls,

And all things answerable to this portion.  
Myself am struck in years, I must confess;

And, if I die to-morrow, this is hers,  
If, whilst I live, she will be only mine.

*Tra.* That, only, came well in—[Sir, list  
I am my father's heir, and only son: [to me,

If I may have your daughter to my wife.  
I'll leave her houses three or four as good,

Within rich Pisa walls, as any one  
Old signior Gremio has in Padua;

Besides two thousand ducats by the year,  
Of fruitful land, all which shall be her join-  
ture.—

What, have I pinch'd you, signior Gremio?

*Gre.* Two thousand ducats by the year, of  
My land amounts not to so much in all: land!

That she shall have; besides an argosy¶,  
That now is lying in Marseilles' road:—

What, have I choked you with an argosy?

*Tra.* Gremio, 'tis known, my father hath  
no less [lasses¶,

Than three great argosies: besides two gal-  
And twelve tight galleys: these I will assure

her,  
And twice as much, whate'er thou offer'st next.

*Gre.* Nay, I have offer'd all, I have no more;

\* To vie and revye were terms at cards now superseded by the word brag. † It is well  
worth seeing. ‡ A dastardly creature. § Coverings for beds; now called counterpanes.  
A large merchant-ship. ¶ A vessel of burthen worked both with sails and oars.

And she can have no more than all I have;—  
If you like me, she shall have me and mine.

*Tra.* Why, then the maid is mine from all  
the world,

By your firm promise; Gremio is out-vied.

*Bap.* I must confess, your offer is the best;  
And, let your father make her the assurance,  
She is your own; else, you must pardon me:  
If you should die before him, where's her  
dower?

*Tra.* That's but a cavi; he is old, I young.

*Gre.* And may not young men die, as well

*Bap.* Well, gentlemen, [as old]  
I am thus resolved:—On Sunday next you know,  
My daughter Katharine is to be married:

Now, on the Sunday following, shall Bianca  
Be bride to you, if you make this assurance;  
If not, to signior Gremio:

And so I take my leave, and thank you both.

*Gre.* Adien, good neighbour.—Now I fear  
thee not; [fool

*Sirrah*, young gamester, your father were a  
To give thee all, and, in his waning age,  
Set foot under thy table: Tut! a toy!

An old Italian fox is not so kind, my boy. [*Exit.*

*Tra.* A vengeance on your crafty wither'd  
Yet I have faced it with a card of ten\*. [hide!  
'Tis in my head to do my master good:—

I see no reason, but supposed Lucentio

Must get a father, called—supposed Vincentio;

And that's a wonder: fathers, commonly,

Do get their children; but, in this case of

wooing,

A child shall get a sire, if I fail not of my

cunning. [*Exit.*

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. A Room in Baptista's House.

*Enter* LUCENTIO, HORTENSIO, and BIANCA.

*Luc.* Fiddler, forbear; you grow too forward, sir:

Have you so soon forgot the entertainment  
Her sister Katharine welcomed you withal?

*Hor.* But, wrangling pedant, this is  
The patroness of heavenly harmony:

Then give me leave to have prerogative;

And when in music we have spent an hour,

Your lecture shall have leisure for as much.

*Luc.* Preposterous ass! that never read so far

To know the cause why music was ordain'd!

Was it not, to refresh the mind of man,

After his studies, or his usual pain?

Then give me leave to read philosophy,

And, while I pause, serve in your harmony.

*Hor.* Sirrah, I will not bear these braves  
of thine. [wrong,

*Bian.* Why, gentlemen, you do me double

To strive for that which resteth in my choice:

I am no breaching scholar† in the schools;

I'll not be tied to hours, nor 'pointed times,

But learn my lessons as I please myself.

And, to cut off all strife, here sit we down:—

Take you your instrument, play you the whites;

His lecture will be done, ere you have tuned.

*Hor.* You'll leave his lecture when I am in

tune? [*To* BIANCA.—*HOR. retires.*

*Luc.* That will be never;—tune your in-

strument. Where left we last? [strument.

*Luc.* Here, madam:—

*Hac ibat Simois; hic est Sigeia tellus;*

*Hic steterat Priami regis celsa senis.*

*Bian.* Construe them.

*Luc.* *Hac ibat*, as I told you before,—*Si-*

*mois*, I am Lucentio,—*hic est*, son unto Vin-

centio of Pisa,—*Sigeia tellus*, disguised thus

to get your love:—*Hic steterat*, and that

Lucentio that comes a-wooing,—*Priami*, is

my man Tranio,—*regia*, bearing my port,—

*celsa senis*, that we might beguile the old  
pantaloon].

*Hor.* Madam, my instrument's in tune.

[*Returning.*

*Bian.* Let's hear;— [*HORTENSIO plays.*  
O fie! the treble jars.

*Luc.* Spit in the hole, man, and tune again.

*Bian.* Now let me see if I can construe it:

*Hac ibat Simois*, I know you not; *hic est*

*Sigeia tellus*, I trust you not;—*Hic steterat*

*Priami*, take heed he hear us not;—*regia*,

presume not;—*celsa senis*, despair not.

*Hor.* Madam, 'tis now in tune.

*Luc.* All but the base.

*Hor.* The base is right; 'tis the base knave

that jars.

How fiery and forward our pedant is!

Now, for my life, the knave doth court my

*Pedascule*§, I'll watch you better yet. [love:

*Bian.* In time I may believe, yet I mistrust.

*Luc.* Mistrust it not; for, sure, *Æacides*

Was Ajax,—call'd so from his grandfather.

*Bian.* I must believe my master; else I

promise you,

I shal'd be arguing still upon that doubt:

But let it rest.—Now, Licio, to you:—

Good masters, take it not unkindly, pray,

That I have been thus pleasant with you both.

*Hor.* You may go walk, [*To* LUCENTIO.]

and give me leave awhile;

My lessons make no music in three parts.

*Luc.* Are you so formal, sir? well, I must wait,

And watch withal; for, but I be deceived,

Our fine musician groweth amorous. [*Aside.*

*Hor.* Madam, before you touch the instru-

To learn the order of my fingering, [meut,

I must begin with rudiments of art;

To teach you gamut in a briefer sort,

More pleasant, pithy, and effectual,

Than hath been taught by any of my trade:

And there it is in writing, fairly drawn.

*Bian.* Why, I am past my gamut long ago

*Hor.* Yet read the gamut of Hortensio.

\* The highest card.

† No school boy, liable to be whipt.

‡ The old colly in Italian farces.

§ Pedant.



Bian. [*Reads.*] Gamut I am, the ground  
of all accord.

A re, to plead Hortensio's passion;

B mi, Bianca, take him for thy lord;

C faut, that loves with all affection;

D sol re, one cliff, two notes have I;

E la mi, show pity, or I die.

Call you this—gamut? tut! I like it not:

Old fashions please me best; I am not so nice,

To change true rules for odd inventions.

*Enter a Servant.*

Serv. Mistress, your father prays you leave  
your books,

And help to dress your sister's chamber up;

You know, to-morrow is the wedding-day.

Bian. Farewell, sweet masters, both; I must  
be gone. [*Exit BIANCA & Servant.*]

Luc. Faith, mistress, then I have no cause  
to stay. [*Exit.*]

Hor. But I have cause to pry into this pedant;  
Methinks, he looks as though he were in love:—  
Yet if thy thoughts, Bianca, be so humble,  
To cast thy wand'ring eyes on every stale†,  
Seize thee, that list: If once I find thee ranging,  
Hortensio will be quit with thee by changing.  
[*Exit.*]

## SCENE II. The same. Before Baptista's House.

*Enter BAPTISTA, GREMIO, TRANIO, KATHARINA, BIANCA, LUCENTIO, & Attendants.*

Bap. Signior Lucentio, [*To TRANIO.*] this  
is the 'pointed day [*cried,*  
That Katharine and Petruchio should be mar-  
ried, And yet we hear not of our son-in-law:  
What will be said? what mockery will it be,  
To want the bridegroom, when the priest attends  
To speak the ceremonial rites of marriage?  
What says Lucentio to this shame of ours?

Kath. No shame but mine: I must, for-  
sooth, be forced

To give my hand, opposed against my heart,  
Unto a mad-brain rudesby, full of spleen‡;  
Who woo'd in haste, and means to wed at lei-  
I told you, I, he was a frantic fool, [*sure.*  
Hiding his bitter jests in blunt behaviour:

And, to be noted for a merry man,  
He'll woo a thousand, 'point the day of mar-  
riage, [*banns;*

Make friends, invite, yes, and proclaim the  
Yet never means to wed where he hath woo'd.  
Now must the world point at poor Katharine,  
And say,—*Lo, there is mad Petruchio's wife,*  
*If it would please him come and marry her.*

Tra. Patience, good Katharine, and Bap-  
tista too;

Upon my life, Petruchio means but well,  
Whatever fortune stays him from his word:  
Though he be blunt, I know him passing wise;  
Though he be merry, yet withal he's honest.

Kath. 'Would Katharine had never seen  
him though! [*Exit, weeping, fol-  
lowed by BIANCA, and others.*]

Bap. Go, girl; I cannot blame thee now  
to weep;

For such an injury would vex a saint,  
Much more a shrew of thy impatient humour.

*Enter BIONDELLO.*

Bion. Master, master! news, old news, and  
such news as you never heard of!

Bap. Is it new and old too? how may  
that be?

Bion. Why, is it not news, to hear of Pe-  
truchio's coming?

Bap. Is he come?

Bion. Why, no, sir.

Bap. What then?

Bion. He is coming.

Bap. When will he be here?

Bion. When he stands where I am, and  
sees you there.

Tra. But, say, what:—To thine old news.

Bion. Why, Petruchio is coming, in a new  
hat and an old jerkin; a pair of old breeches,  
thrice turned; a pair of boots that have been  
candle-cases, one buckled, another laced; an  
old rusty sword ta'en out of the town armory,  
with a broken hilt, and chapeless; with two  
broken points: His horse hipp'd with an old  
mothy saddle, the stirrups of no kindred: be-  
sides, possessed with the glanders, and like to  
mose in the chine; troubled with the lampass,  
infected with the fashions, full of wind-  
galls, sped with spavins, rai'd with the yel-  
lows, past cure of the fives, stark spoiled  
with the staggers, begnawn with the bots;  
swayed in the back, and shoulder shotten;  
ne'er-legged before, and with a half-checked  
bit, and a head-stall of sheep's leather; which,  
being restrained to keep him from stumbling,  
hath been often burst, and now repaired with  
knots: one girt six times pieced, and a wo-  
man's crupper of velure¶, which hath two  
letters for her name, fairly set down in studs,  
and here and there pieced with packthread.

Bap. Who comes with him?

Bion. O, sir, his lackey, for all the world  
caparisoned like the horse; with a linen  
stock\*\* on one leg, and a kersey boot-hose on  
the other, gartered with a red and blue list;  
an old hat, and *The humour of forty fancies*  
pricked in't for a feather: a monster, a very  
monster in apparel; and not like a christian  
footboy, or a gentleman's lackey.

Tra. 'Tis some odd humour pricks him to  
this fashion;—

Yet oftentimes he goes but mean apparell'd.

Bap. I am glad he is come, howsoe'er he  
comes.

Bion. Why, sir, he comes not.

Bap. Didst thou not say, he comes?

Bion. Who? that Petruchio came?

Bap. Ay, that Petruchio came.

Bion. No, sir; I say, his horse comes with  
him on his back.

Bap. Why, that's all one.

Bion. Nay, by Saint Jamy, I hold you  
penny,

A horse and a man is more than one, and you  
not many.

• Fantastical. † Bait, decoy. ‡ Caprice, inconstancy. § Farcy. || Vives,  
distemper in horses, little differing from the strangles. ¶ Velvet. \*\* Stocking.

*Enter PETRUCHIO and GRUMIO.*

*Pet.* Come, where be these gallants? who is at home?

*Bap.* You are welcome, sir.

*Pet.* And yet I come not well.

*Bap.* And yet you halt not.

*Tra.* Not so well apparell'd As I wish you were.

*Pet.* Were it better I should rush in thus. But where is Kate? where is my lovely bride? How does my father?—Gentles, methinks you frown:

And wherefore gaze this goodly company; As if they saw some wondrous monument, Some comet, or unusual prodigy?

*Bap.* Why, sir, you know, this is your wedding-day: [come;

First were we sad, fearing you would not Now sadder, that you come so unprovided. Fie! doff this habit, shame to your estate, An eye-sore to our solemn festival.

*Tra.* And tell us, what occasion of import Hath all so long detained you from your wife, And seat you hither so unlike yourself?

*Pet.* Tedious it were to tell, and harsh to hear:

Sufficeth, I am come to keep my word, Though in some part enforced to digress\*; Which, at more leisure, I will so excuse As you shall well be satisfied withal.

But, where is Kate? I stay too long from her; [church.

The morning wears, 'tis time we were at *Tra.* See not your bride in these unreve-  
rent robes;

Go to my chamber, put on clothes of mine.

*Pet.* Not I, believe me; thus I'll visit her.

*Bap.* But thus, I trust, you will not marry her. [done with words;

*Pet.* Good sooth, even thus; therefore have To me she's married, not unto my clothes: Could I repair what she will wear in me, As I can change these poor accoutrements, 'Twere well for Kate, and better for myself. But what a fool am I, to chat with you, When I should bid good-morrow to my bride,

And seal the title with a lovely kiss?

[*Exeunt PETRUCHIO, GRUMIO, and BIONDELLO.*

*Tra.* He hath some meaning in his mad We will persuade him, be it possible, [attire: To put on better ere he go to church.

*Bap.* I'll after him, and see the event of this. [Exit.

*Tra.* But, sir, to her love concerneth us to add Her father's liking: Which to bring to pass, As I before imparted to your worship, I am to get a man,—whate'er he be, It skill'st not much; we'll fit him to our turn, And he shall be Vincentio of Pisa; And make assurance, here in Padua, Of greater sums than I have promised. So shall you quietly enjoy your hope, And marry sweet Bianca with consent.

*Luc.* Were it not that my fellow school master

Doth watch Bianca's steps so narrowly, 'Twere good, methinks, to steal our marriage; Which once perform'd, let all the world say—no,

I'll keep mine own, despite of all the world.

*Tra.* That by degrees we mean to look into,

And watch our vantage in this business: We'll over-reach the greybeard, Gremio, The narrow-prying father, Minola; The quaint musician, amorous Licio; All for my master's sake, Lucentio.—

*Re-enter GREMIO.*

Signior Gremio! came you from the church?

*Gre.* As willingly as e'er I came from school.

*Tra.* And is the bride and bridegroom coming home? [indeed,

*Gre.* A bridegroom, say you? 'tis a groom, A grumbling groom, and that the girl shall find.

*Tra.* Carster than she? why, 'tis impossible. [fiend.

*Gre.* Why, he's a devil, a devil, a very

*Tra.* Why, she's a devil, a devil, the devil's dam. [hin.

*Gre.* Tut! she's a lamb, a dove, a fool to I'll tell you, sir Lucentio; When the priest Should ask—if Katharine should be his wife, Ay, by gogs-wounds, quoth he; and swore so loud,

That, all amazed, the priest let fall the book: And, as he stoop'd again to take it up, The mad-brain'd bridegroom took him such a cuff, [priest;

That down fell priest and book, and book and Now take them up, quoth he, if any list.

*Tra.* What said the wench, when he arose again? [stamp'd, and swore,

*Gre.* Trembled and shook; for why, he As if the vicar meant to cozen him.

But after many ceremonies done, He calls for wine:—A health, quoth he; as if He had been aboard carousing to his mates After a storm:—Quaff'd off the muscadel §, And threw the sops all in the sexton's face; Having no other reason,— But that his beard grew thin and hungerly, And seem'd to ask him sops as he was drinking. This done, he took the bride about the neck; And kiss'd her lips with such a clamorous smack,

That, at the parting, all the church did echo. I, seeing this, came thence for very shame; And after me, I know, the rout is coming: Such a mad marriage never was before; Hark, hark! I hear the minstrels play.

*Music.*

*Enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, BIANCA, BAPTISTA, HORTENSIO, GRUMIO, and Train.*

*Pet.* Gentlemen and friends, I thank you for your pains:

\* i. e., To deviate from my promise. † Matters. ‡ Strange. § It was the custom for the company present to drink wine immediately after the marriage-ceremony.

I know, you think to dine with me to-day,  
And have prepared great store of wedding  
cheer;

But so it is, my haste doth call me hence,  
And therefore here I mean to take my leave.

*Bap.* Is't possible, you will away to-night?

*Pet.* I must away to-day, before night  
come :— [ness,

Make it no wonder; if you knew my busi-  
ness you would entreat me rather go than stay.  
And, honest company, I thank you all,  
That have beheld me give away myself  
To this most patient, sweet, and virtuous  
wife:

Dine with my father, drink a health to me;  
For I must hence, and farewell to you all.

*Tra.* Let us entreat you stay till after dinner.

*Pet.* It may not be.

*Gre.* Let me entreat you.

*Pet.* It cannot be.

*Kath.* Let me entreat you.

*Pet.* I am content.

*Kath.* Are you content to stay?

*Pet.* I am content you shall entreat me  
stay;

But yet not stay, entreat me how you can.

*Kath.* Now, if you love me, stay.

*Pet.* Grumio, my horses.

*Gr.* Ay, sir, they be ready; the oats have  
eaten the horses.

*Kath.* Nay, then,

Do what thou canst, I will not go to-day;  
No, nor to-morrow, nor till I please myself.

The door is open, sir, there lies your way,  
You may be jogging, whilst your boots are  
green;

For me, I'll not be gone, till I please myself;  
'Tis like, you'll prove a jolly surly groom,  
That take it on you at the first so roundly.

*Pet.* O, Kate, content thee; pr'ythee, be  
not angry.

*Kath.* I will be angry; What hast thou to  
do?—

Father, be quiet; he shall stay my leisure.

*Gre.* Ay, marry, sir: now it begins to  
work. [dinner:—

*Kath.* Gentlemen, forward to the bridal

I see, a woman may be made a fool,  
If she had not a spirit to resist.

*Pet.* They shall go forward, Kate, at thy  
command:—

Obeys the bride, you that attend on her:  
Go to the feast, revel and domineer,  
Carouse full measure to her maidenhead,  
Be mad and merry,—or go hang yourselves;  
But for my bonny Kate, she must with me.  
Nay, look not big, nor stamp, nor stare, nor  
fret;

I will be master of what is mine own:  
She is my goods, my chattels; she is my  
house,

My household-stuff, my field, my barn,  
My horse, my ox, my ass, my any thing;  
And here she stands, touch her whoever dare;  
I'll bring my action on the proudest he  
That stops my way in Padua.—Grumio,  
Draw forth thy weapon, we're beset with  
thieves;

Rescue thy mistress, if thou be a man:—

Fear not, sweet wench, they shall not touch  
thee, Kate;

I'll buckler thee against a million.

[*Exeunt* PETRUCHIO, KATHARINE, and  
GRUMIO.

*Bap.* Nay, let them go, a couple of quiet  
ones. [with laughing.

*Gre.* Went they not quickly, I should die  
*Tra.* Of all mad matches, never was the  
like! [your sister's

*Luc.* Mistress, what's your opinion of  
*Bian.* That, being mad herself, she's madly  
mated.

*Gre.* I warrant him, Petruchio is Kated.

*Bap.* Nei, hours and friends, though bride  
and bridegroom wants

For to supply the places at the table,  
You know, there wants no junkets \* at the  
feast;— [place:

Lucentio, you shall supply the bridegroom's  
And let Bianca take her sister's room.

*Tra.* Shall sweet Bianca practise how to  
bride it?

*Bap.* She shall, Lucentio.—Come, Gentle-  
men, let's go. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. A Hall in Petruchio's Country House.

*Enter* GRUMIO.

*Gr.* Fie, fie, on all tired jades! on all  
mad masters! and all foul ways! Was ever  
man so beaten? Was ever man so rayed?  
Was ever man so weary? I am sent before to  
make a fire, and they are coming after to  
warm them. Now, were not I a little pot,  
and soon hot, my very lips might freeze to  
my teeth, my tongue to the roof of my mouth,  
my heart in my belly, ere I should come by a  
fire to thaw me:—But, I, with blowing the

fire, shall warm myself; for, considering the  
weather, a taller man than I will take cold.  
Holla, ho! Curtis!

*Enter* CURTIS.

*Curt.* Who is that, calls so coldly?

*Gr.* A piece of ice: If thou doubt it, thou  
may'st slide from my shoulder to my heel,  
with no greater a run but my head and my  
neck. A fire, good Curtis.

*Curt.* Is my master and his wife coming  
Grumio?

*Gr.* O, ay, Curtis, ay: and therefore fire,  
fire; cast on no water.

\* Delicacies.

† Bewrayed; dirty.



*Curt.* Is she so hot a shrew as she's reported?

*Gru.* She was, good Curtis, before this frost: but, thou know'st, winter tames man, woman, and beast; for it hath tamed my old master, and my new mistress, and myself, fellow Curtis.

*Curt.* Away, you three-inch fool! I am no beast.

*Gru.* Am I but three inches? why, thy horn is a foot; and so long am I, at the least. But wilt thou make a fire, or shall I complain on thee to our mistress, whose hand (she being now at hand) thou shalt soon feel, to thy cold comfort, for being slow in thy hot office.

*Curt.* I prythee, good Grumio, tell me, How goes the world?

*Gru.* A cold world, Curtis, in every office but thine; and, therefore, fire: Do thy duty, and have thy duty; for my master and mistress are almost frozen to death.

*Curt.* There's fire ready; And therefore, good Grumio, the news?

*Gru.* Why, Jack boy! ho boy! and as much news as thou wilt.

*Curt.* Come, you are so full of coney-catching.

*Gru.* Why therefore, fire; for I have caught extreme cold. Where's the cook? is supper ready, the house trimmed, rushes strewed, cobwebs swept; the serving-men in their new fustian, their white stockings, and every officer his wedding-garment on? Be the Jacks fair within, the Jills fair without, the carpets laid, and every thing in order?

*Curt.* All ready; And, therefore, I pray thee, news?

*Gru.* First, know, my horse is tired; my master and mistress fallen out.

*Curt.* How?

*Gru.* Out of their saddles into the dirt; And thereby hangs a tale.

*Curt.* Let's ha't, good Grumio.

*Gru.* Lend thine ear.

*Curt.* Here.

*Gru.* There.

*Curt.* This is to feel a tale, not to hear a tale.

*Gru.* And therefore 'tis called, a sensible tale; and this cuff was but to knock at your ear, and beseech listening. Now I begin: *Imprints*, we came down a foul hill, my master riding behind my mistress:—

*Curt.* Both on one horse?

*Gru.* What's that to thee?

*Curt.* Why, a horse.

*Gru.* Tell thou the tale:—But hadst thou not crossed me, thou shouldst have heard how her horse fell, and she under her horse; thou shouldst have heard, in how miry a place: how she was bemoiled\*; how he left her with the horse upon her; how he beat me because her horse stumbled; how she waded through the dirt to pluck him off me; how he swore; how she prayed—that never prayed before; how I cried; how the horses ran away; how her bridle was burst; how

I lost my crupper;—with many things of worthy memory; which now shall die in oblivion, and thou return unexperienced to thy grave.

*Curt.* By this reckoning, he is more shrew than she.

*Gru.* Ay; and that, thou and the proudest of you all shall find, when he comes home. But what talk I of this?—call forth Nathaniel, Joseph, Nicholas, Philip, Walter, Sugarsop, and the rest; let their heads be sleekly combed, their blue coats brushed, and their garters of an indifferent† knit: let them curtsy with their left legs; and not presume to touch a hair of my master's horse-tail, till they kiss their hands. Are they all ready?

*Curt.* They are.

*Gru.* Call them forth.

*Curt.* Do you hear, ho? you must meet my master, to countenance my mistress.

*Gru.* Why, she hath a face of her own.

*Curt.* Who knows not that?

*Gru.* Thou, it seems; that callest for company to countenance her.

*Curt.* I call them forth to credit her.

*Gru.* Why, she comes to borrow nothing of them.

*Enter several Servants.*

*Nath.* Welcome home, Grumio.

*Phil.* How now, Grumio?

*Jos.* What, Grumio!

*Nich.* Fellow Grumio!

*Nath.* How now, old lad?

*Gru.* Welcome, you;—how now, you; what, you;—fellow, you;—and thus much for greeting. Now, my spruce companions, is all ready, and all things neat?

*Nath.* All things is ready: How near is our master?

*Gru.* E'en at hand, alighted by this; and therefore be not,—Cock's passion, silence!—I hear my master.

*Enter PETRUCHIO and KATHARINA.*

*Pet.* Where be these knaves? What, no man at door,

To hold my stirrup, nor to take my horse! Where is Nathaniel, Gregory, Philip!—

*All Serv.* Here, here, sir; here, sir. [sir!—

*Pet.* Here, sir! here, sir! here, sir! here, You logger-headed and unpolish'd grooms! What, no attendance? no regard? no duty?—Where is the foolish knave I sent before?

*Gru.* Here, sir; as foolish as I was before.

*Pet.* You peasant swain! you whoreson malt-house drudge!

Did I not bid thee meet me in the park, And bring along these rascal knaves with thee?

*Gru.* Nathaniel's coat, sir, was not fully made, [heel;

And Gabriel's pumps were all unpink'd i' the There was no link‡ to colour Peter's hat, And Walter's dagger was not come from sheath ing:

There were none fine, but Adam, Ralph, and Gregory;

The rest were ragged, old, and beggarly;

\* Bemired. † Broken. ‡ Not different one from the other. § A torch of pitch.

Yet, as they are, here are they come to meet you. [in.—

*Pet.* Go, rascals, go, and fetch my supper  
[*Exeunt some of the Servants.*

*Where is the life that late I led—* [Sings.  
Where are those—Sit down, Kate, and wel-  
Sond, sould, sould, sould\*! [come.

*Re-enter Servants, with supper.*

Why, when, I say?—Nay, good sweet Kate,  
be merry.

Off with my boots, you rogues, you villains;  
When?

*It was the friar of orders gray,* [Sings.

*As he forth walked on his way:—*

Out, out, you rogue! you pluck my foot awry:  
Take that, and mend the plucking off the  
other.— [Strikes him.

Be merry, Kate:—Some water, here; what,  
ho!— [hence,

Where's my spaukel Troilus?—Sirrah, get you  
And bid my cousin Ferdinand come hither:—

[*Exit Servant.*

One, Kate, that you must kiss, and be ac-  
quainted with.—

Where are my slippers?—Shall I have some  
water? [*A basin is presented to him.*

Come, Kate, and wash, and welcome heartily:—  
[*Servant lets the cover fall.*

You whoreson villain! will you let it fall?  
[Strikes him.

*Kath.* Patience, I pray you; 'twas a fault  
unwilling. [knave!

*Pet.* A whoreson, beetle-headed, flap-ear'd  
Come, Kate, sit down; I know you have a  
stomach. [shall I?—

Will you give thanks, sweet Kate; or else  
What is this? mutton?

*I Serv.* Ay.

*Pet.* Who brought it?

*I Serv.* I.

*Pet.* 'Tis burnt; and so is all the meat:  
What dogs are these?—Where is the rascal  
cook? [dresser,

How durst you, villains, bring it from the  
And serve it thus to me that love it not?

There, take it to you, trenchers, cups, and all:  
[*Throws the meat, &c. about the stage.*

You heedless joltheads, and unmanner'd slaves!  
What, do you grumble? I'll be with you  
straight. [quiet;

*Kath.* I pray you, husband, be not so dis-  
turb'd. The meat was well, if you were so contented.

*Pet.* I tell thee, Kate, 'twas burnt and  
dried away;

And I expressly am forbid to touch it,  
For it engenders choler, planteth anger;

And better 'twere, that both of us did fast,—  
Since, of ourselves, ourselves are choleric,—

Than feed it with such over roasted flesh.  
Be patient; to-morrow it shall be mended,

And, for this night, we'll fast for company:—  
Come, I will bring thee to thy bridal chamber.

[*Exeunt PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA,  
and CURTIS.*

*Nath.* [*Advancing.*] Peter, didst ever see  
the like?

*Peter.* He kills her in her own humour.

*Re-enter CURTIS.*

*Gru.* Where is he?

*Curt.* In her chamber,

Making a sermon of continuency to her:

And rails, and swears, and rates; that she,  
poor soul, [speak;

Knows not which way to stand, to look, to  
And sits as one new-risen from a dream.

Away, away! for he is coming hither. [*Exeunt.*  
*Re-enter PETRUCHIO.*

*Pet.* Thus have I politely begun my reign,  
And 'tis my hope to end successfully:

My falcon now is sharp, and passing empty;  
And, till she stoop, she must not be tuff-go'd;

For then she never looks upon her lure†.  
Another way I have to man my haggard†,

To make her come, and know her keeper's call,  
That is,—to watch her, as we watch these kites,

That bate§, and beat, and will not be obedient.  
She eat no meat to day, nor none shall eat;

Last night she slept not, nor to-night shall  
As with the meat, some undeserved fault. [not;

I'll find about the making of the bed;  
And here I'll fling the pillow, there the bolster,

This way the coverlet, another way the  
Ay, and amid this hurly, I intend||, [sheets:—

That all is done in reverend care of her;  
And, in conclusion, she shall watch all night:

And, if she chance to nod, I'll rail, and brawl,  
And with the clamour keep her still awake.

This is a way to kill a wife with kindness.  
And thus I'll curb her mad and headstrong

humour:—  
He that knows better how to tame a shrew,

Now let him speak: 'tis charity to shew. [*Exit.*

## SCENE II. Padua. Before Baptista's House.

*Enter TRANIO and HORTENSIO.*

*Tra.* Is't possible, friend Licio, that Bianca  
Doth fancy any other but Lucentio?

I tell you, sir, she bears me fair in hand.

*Hor.* Sir, to satisfy you in what I have said,  
Stand by, and mark the manner of his teach-  
ing. [They stand aside.

*Enter BIANCA and LUCENTIO.*

*Luc.* Now, mistress, profit you in what you  
read? [me that.

*Bian.* What, master, read you? first resolve

*Luc.* I read that I profess, the art to love.

*Bian.* And may you prove, sir, master of  
your art.

*Luc.* While you, sweet dear, prove mistress  
of my heart. [They retire.

*Hor.* Quick proceeders, marry! Now, tell  
me, I pray,

You that durst swear that your mistress Bianca  
Loved none in the world so well as Lucentio.

*Tra.* O despicable love! unconstant woman  
I tell thee, Licio, this is wonderful. [kind:—

*Hor.* Mistake no more: I am not Licio,

\* A word coined by Shakspeare to express the noise made by a person heated and fatigued  
† A thing stuffed to look like the game which the hawk was to pursue.

To tame my wild hawk.

§ Flutter.

Pretend.

Is nor a musician, as I seem to be;  
But one that scorn to live in this disguise,  
For such a one as leaves a gentleman,  
And makes a god of such a cullion\*:  
Know, sir, that I am call'd—Hortensio.

*Tra.* Signior Hortensio, I have often heard  
Of your entire affection to Bianca; [ness,  
And since mine eyes are witness of her light-  
I will with you,—if you be so contented,—  
Forswear Bianca and her love for ever.

*Hor.* See, how they kiss and court!—  
Signior Lucentio,  
Here is my hand, and here I firmly vow—  
Never to woo her more; but do forswear her,  
As one unworthy all the former favours  
That I have fondly flatter'd her withal.

*Tra.* And here I take the like unfeigned  
oath,— [treat:  
Ne'er to marry with her though she would en-  
File on her! see, how beastly she doth court  
him. [forsworn!

*Hor.* 'Would, all the world, but he, had quite  
For me,—that I may surely keep mine oath,  
I will be married to a wealthy widow, [me,  
Ere three days pass; which hath as long loved  
As I have loved this proud disdainful haggard:  
And so farewell, signior Lucentio.—  
Kindness in women, not their beauteous looks,  
Shall win my love:—and so I take my leave,  
In resolution as I swore before.

[*Exit HORTENSIO.*—*LUCENTIO and  
BIANCA advance.*

*Tra.* Mistress Bianca, bless you with such  
As 'longeth to a lover's blessed case! [grace  
Nay, I have ta'en you napping, gentle love;  
And have forsworn you, with Hortensio.

*Bian.* Tranio, you jest; But have you both  
*Tra.* Mistress, we have. [forsworn me?

*Luc.* Then we are rid of Licio.  
*Tra.* I'faith, he'll have a lusty widow now,  
That shall be woo'd and wedded in a day.

*Bian.* God give him joy!

*Tra.* Ay, and he'll tame her.

*Bian.* He says so, Tranio.  
*Tra.* 'Faith, he is gone unto the taming-  
school. [such a place?

*Bian.* The taming-school! what, is there  
*Tra.* Ay, mistress, and Petruchio is the  
master;

That teacheth tricks eleven and twenty long,—  
To tame a shrew, and charm her chattering  
tongue.

[*Enter BIONDELLO, running.*

*Bion.* O master, master, I have watch'd so  
That I'm dog-weary; but at last I spied [long  
An ancient angel† coming down the hill,  
Whil serve the turn.

*Tra.* What is he, Biondello?

*Bion.* Master, a mercantile, or a pedant‡,  
I know not what; but formal in apparel,  
In gait and countenance surely like a father.

*Luc.* And what of him, Tranio?

*Tra.* If he be credulous, and trust my tale,  
I'll make him glad to seem Vincentio;  
And give assurance to Baptista Minola,

As if he were the right Vincentio.

Take in your love, and then let me alone.

[*Exeunt* *LUCENTIO and* *BIANCA.*

*Enter* a *Pedant.*

*Ped.* God save you, sir!

*Tra.* And you, sir! you are welcome.  
Travel you far on, or are you at the furthest?

*Ped.* Sir, at the furthest for a week or two:  
But then up further; and as far as Rome;  
And so to Tripoly, if God lend me life.

*Tra.* What countryman, I pray?

*Ped.* Of Mantua.

*Tra.* Of Mantua, sir?—marry, God forbid!  
And come to Padua, careless of your life?

*Ped.* My life, sir! how, I pray? for that  
goes hard.

*Tra.* 'Tis death for any one in Mantua  
To come to Padua; Know you not the cause?  
Your ships are staid at Venice; and the duke  
(For private quarrel 'twixt your duke and him,)  
Hath publish'd and proclaim'd it openly:  
'Tis marvel; but that you're but newly come,  
You might have heard it else proclaim'd about.

*Ped.* Alas, sir, it is worse for me than so;  
For I have bills for money by exchange  
From Florence, and must here deliver them.

*Tra.* Well, sir, to do you courtesy,  
This will I do, and this will I advise you:—  
First, tell me, have you ever been at Pisa?

*Ped.* Ay, sir, in Pisa have I often been;  
Pisa, renowned for grave citizens. [tis?

*Tra.* Among them, know you one Vincen-  
*Ped.* I know him not, but I have heard of  
A merchant of incomparable wealth. [him;

*Tra.* He is my father, sir; and, sooth to say,  
In countenance somewhat doth resemble you.

*Bion.* As much as an apple doth an oyster,  
and all one. [*Aside.*

*Tra.* To save your life in this extremity,  
This favour will I do you for his sake;  
And think it not the worst of all your fortunes,  
That you are like to sir Vincentio.

His name and credit shall you undertake,  
And in my house you shall be friendly lodged;—  
Look, that you take upon you as you should;  
You understand me, sir;—so shall you stay  
Till you have done your business in the city:  
If this be courtesy, sir, accept of it.

*Ped.* O, sir, I do; and will repute you ever  
The patron of my life and liberty. [good.

*Tra.* Then go with me, to make the matter  
This, by the way, I let you understand!—  
My father is here look'd for every day,  
To pass assurance of a dower in marriage  
'Twixt me and one Baptista's daughter here:  
In all these circumstances I'll instruct you:  
Go with me, sir, to clothe you as becomes you.  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *A Room in Petruchio's House.*

[*Enter* *KATHARINA and* *GRUMIO.*

*Gru.* No, no; forsooth; I dare not, for my  
life. [appears:

*Kath.* The more my wrong, the more his spite  
What, did he marry me to famish me?

\* Despicable fellow. † Messenger.

‡ A merchant, or a schoolmaster.



Beggars, that come unto my father's door,  
Upon entreaty, have a present alms;  
If not, elsewhere they meet with charity:  
But I,—who never knew how to entreat,—  
Am starved for meat, giddy for lack of sleep:  
With oaths kept waking, and with brawling  
fed: [wants,

And that which spites me more than all these  
He does it under name of perfect love;  
As who should say,—if I should sleep, or eat,  
'Twere deadly sickness, or else present death.—  
I pr'ythee go, and get me some repast;  
I care not what, so it be wholesome food.

*Gru.* What say you to a neat's foot?

*Kath.* 'Tis passing good; I pr'ythee let me have it.

*Gru.* I fear, it is too choleric a meat:—  
How say you to a fat tripe, finely broil'd?

*Kath.* I like it well; good Grumio, fetch it me.

*Gru.* I cannot tell; I fear, 'tis choleric.

What say you to a piece of beef, and mustard?

*Kath.* A dish that I do love to feed upon.

*Gru.* Ay, but the mustard is too hot a little.

*Kath.* Why, then the beef, and let the mustard rest. [the mustard,

*Gru.* Nay, then I will not; you shall have  
Or else you get no beef of Grumio. [wilt.

*Kath.* Then both, or one, or any thing thou

*Gru.* Why, then the mustard without the beef.

*Kath.* Go, get thee gone, thou false deluding slave, [Beats him.

That feed'st me with the very name of meat:  
Sorrow on thee, and all the pack of you,

That triumph thus upon my misery!

Go, get thee gone, I say.

*Enter PETRUCHIO with a dish of meat; and HORTENSIO.*

*Pet.* How fares my Kate? What, sweeting,

*Hor.* Mistress, what cheer? [all amot\*?

*Kath.* 'Faith, as cold as can be.

*Pet.* Pluck up thy spirits, look cheerfully upon me.

Here, love; to thou see'st how diligent I am,  
To dress thy meat myself, and bring it thee:

[Sets the dish on a table.

I am sure, sweet Kate, this kindness merits thanks. [not;

What, not a word? Nay, then, thou lovest it  
And all my pains is sorted to no proof:—

Here, take away this dish.

*Kath.* 'Pray you, let it stand.

*Pet.* The poorest service is repaid with thanks;

And so shall mine, before you touch the meat.

*Kath.* I thank you, sir. [blame!

*Hor.* Signior Petruchio, fie! you are to  
Come, mistress Kate, I'll bear you company.

*Pet.* Eat it up all, Hortensio, if thou lovest me.— [Aside.

Much good do it unto thy gentle heart!

Kate, eat apace:—And now, my honey love,  
Will we return unto thy father's house;

And revel it as bravely as the best,

With silken coats, and caps, and golden rings,

With ruffs, and cuffs, and farthingales, and  
things; [bravery t,

With scarfs, and fans, and double change of  
With amber bracelets, beads, and all this

knavery. [leisure,

What, hast thou dined? The tailor stays thy  
To deck thy body with his ruffling† treasure.

*Enter Tailor.*

Come, tailor, let us see these ornaments;

*Enter Haberdasher.*

Lay forth the gown.—What news with you,  
sir? [speak.

*Hab.* Here is the cap your worship did be-

*Pet.* Why, this was moulded on a porringer;

A velvet dish;—fie, fie! 'tis lewd and filthy:

Why, 'tis a cockle, or a walnut-shell,

A knack, a toy, a trick, a baby's cap;

Away with it, come, let me have a bigger.

*Kath.* I'll have no bigger; this doth fit the  
time,

And gentlewomen wear such caps as these.

*Pet.* When you are gentle, you shall have  
And not till then. [one too,

*Hor.* That will not be in haste. [Aside.

*Kath.* Why, sir, I trust, I may have leave  
to speak;

And speak I will; I am no child, no babe:  
Your betters have endured me say my mind;

And, if you cannot, best you stop your ears.

My tongue will tell the anger of my heart;

Or else my heart, concealing it, will break:

And, rather than it shall, I will be free

Even to the uttermost, as I please, in words.

*Pet.* Why, thou say'st true; it is a paltry  
A custard-coffin‡, a bauble, a silken pie: [cap;

I love thee well, in that thou likest it not.

*Kath.* Love me, or love me not, I like the  
And it I will have, or I will have none. [cap;

*Pet.* Thy gown? why, ay:—Come, tailor,  
let us see't.

O mercy, God! what masking stuff is here?

What's this? a sleeve? 'tis like a demi-cannon:

What! up and down, carved like an apple-tart?

Here's snip, and nip, and cut, and slash, and slash,

Like to a censer|| in a barber's shop:— [this?

Why, what, o' devil's name, tailor, call'st thou

*Hor.* I see, she's like to have neither cap  
nor gown. [Aside.

*Tai.* You bid me make it orderly and well,  
According to the fashion, and the time.

*Pet.* Marry, and did; but if you be remem-  
I did not bid you mar it to the time. [ber'd,

Go, hop me over every kennel home,  
For you shall hop without my custom, sir:

I'll none of it; hence, make your best of it.

*Kath.* I never saw a better-fashion'd gown,  
More quaint¶, more pleasing, nor more com-  
mendable:

Belike, you mean to make a puppet of me.

*Pet.* Why, true; he means to make a pup-  
pet of thee.

*Tai.* She says, your worship means to make  
a puppet of her. [thou thread,

*Pet.* O monstrous arrogance! Thou liest,  
Thou thimble,

\* Dispirited; a gallicism.

† Finery.

‡ Rustling.

§ A coffin was the culinary

term for raised crust.

|| These censers resembled our braziers in shape.

¶ Curious.

Thou yard, three-quarters, half-yard, quarter,  
 nail,

Thou flea, thou nit, thou winter-cricket thou :—  
 Braved in mine own house with a skein of  
 thread!

Away, thou rag, thou quantity, thou remnant;  
 Or I shall so be-mete\* thee with thy yard,  
 As thou shalt think on prating whilst thou livest!  
 I tell thee, I, that thou hast marr'd her gown.

*Tai.* Your worship is deceived; the gown  
 Just as my master had direction: [is made  
 Grumio gave order how it should be done.

*Gru.* I gave him no order, I gave him the  
 stuff. [made?

*Tai.* But how did you desire it should be  
*Gru.* Marry, sir, with needle and thread.

*Tai.* But did you not request to have it cut?  
*Gru.* Thou hast faced many things†.

*Tai.* I have.

*Gru.* Face not me: thou hast braved many  
 men; brave not me; I will neither be faced  
 nor braved. I say unto thee,—I bid thy mas-  
 ter cut out the gown; but I did not bid him  
 cut it to pieces: ergo, thou liest.

*Tai.* Why, here is the note of the fashion  
 to testify.

*Pet.* Read it.

*Gru.* The note lies in his throat, if he say  
 I said so.

*Tai.* *Imprimis, a loose-bodied gown:*

*Gru.* Master, if ever I said loose-bodied  
 gown, sew me in the skirts of it, and beat me  
 to death with a bottom of brown thread: I  
 said, a gown.

*Pet.* Proceed.

*Tai.* *With a small compassed cape‡;*

*Gru.* I confess the cape.

*Tai.* *With a trunk sleeve;—*

*Gru.* I confess two sleeves.

*Tai.* *The sleeves curiously cut.*

*Pet.* Ay, there's the villany.

*Gru.* Error i'the bill, sir; error i'the bill. I  
 commanded the sleeves should be cut out, and  
 sewed up again; and that I'll prove upon thee,  
 though thy little finger be armed in a thimble.

*Tai.* This is true, that I say; and I had thee  
 in place where, thou shouldst know it.

*Gru.* I am for thee straight: take thou the  
 bill, give me thy mete-yard§, and spare not me.

*Hor.* God-a-mercy, Grumio! then he shall  
 have no odds.

*Pet.* Well, sir, in brief, the gown is not for  
 me.

*Gru.* You are i'the right, sir; 'tis for my  
 mistress.

*Pet.* Go, take it up unto thy master's use.

*Gru.* Villain, not for thy life; Take up my  
 mistress' gown for thy master's use!

*Pet.* Why, sir, what's your conceit in that?

*Gru.* O, sir, the conceit is deeper than you  
 think for:

Take up my mistress' gown to his master's use!  
 O, fie, fie, fie!

*Pet.* Hortensio, say thou wilt see the tailor  
 paid:— [Asiae.

Go take it hence; begone, and say no more.

*Hor.* Tailor, I'll pay thee for thy gown to-  
 morrow.

Take no unkindness of his hasty words:

Away, I say; commend me to thy master.

[Exit Tailor.

*Pet.* Well, come, my Kate; we will unto  
 your father's,

Even in these honest mean habiliments;  
 Our purses shall be proud, our garments poor:  
 For 'tis the mind that makes the body rich;  
 And as the sun breaks through the darkest  
 clouds,

So honour peereth|| in the meanest habit.

What, is the jay more precious than the lark,  
 Because his feathers are more beautiful?

Or is the adder better than the eel,

Because his painted skin contents the eye?

O, no, good Kate; neither art thou the worse  
 For this poor furniture, and mean array.

If thou account'st it shame, lay it on me:

And therefore, frolic; we will hence forthwith,  
 To feast and sport us at thy father's house.—

Go, call my men, and let us straight to him;  
 And bring our horses unto Long-lane end,

There will we mount, and thither walk on foot.—  
 Let's see; I think, 'tis now some seven o'clock,

And well we may come there by dinner time.

*Kath.* I dare assure you, sir, 'tis almost two;  
 And 'twill be supper time, ere you come there.

*Pet.* It shall be seven, ere I go to horse:

Look, what I speak, or do, or think to do,  
 You are still crossing it.—Sirs, let't alone:

I will not go to-day; and ere I do,

It shall be what o'clock I say it is.

*Hor.* Why, so! this gallant will command  
 the sun. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE IV. Padua. Before Baptista's House.

Enter TRANIO, and the Pedant dressed like  
 VINCENTIO.

*Tra.* Sir, this is the house; Please it you,  
 that I call?

*Ped.* Ay, what else? and, but I be deceived,  
 Signior Baptista may remember me,  
 Near twenty years ago, in Genoa, where  
 We were lodgers at the Pegasus.

*Tra.* 'Tis well;  
 And hold your own, in any case, with such  
 Austerity as 'longeith to a father.

Enter BIONDELLO.

*Ped.* I warrant you: But, sir, here comes  
 'Twere good, he were school'd. [your boy;

*Tra.* Fear you not him. Sirrah, Biondello,  
 Now do your duty thoroughly, I advise you;  
 Imagine 'twere the right Vincentio.

*Bion.* Tut! fear not me.

*Tra.* But hast thou done thine errand to  
 Baptista? [Venice;

*Bion.* I told him, that your father was at  
 And that you look'd for him this day in Padua.

*Tra.* Thou'rt a tall¶ fellow; hold thee that  
 to drink. [sit.—

Here comes Baptista:—set your countenance,

\* Be-measure.

† Turned up many garments with facings.

‡ A round cape.

§ Measuring-yard.

|| Appeareth.

¶ Brave.

*Enter BAPTISTA and LUCENTIO.*

Signior Baptista, you are happily met:—  
Sir, [To the Pedant.]

This is the gentleman I told you of;  
I pray you, stand good father to me now,  
Give me Bianca for my patrimony.

*Ped.* Soft, son!—

Sir, by your leave; having come to Padua  
To gather in some debts, my son Lucentio  
Made me acquainted with a weighty cause  
Of love between your daughter and himself:  
And,—for the good report I hear of you;  
And for the love he beareth to your daughter,  
And she to him,—to stay him not too long,  
I am content, in a good father's care, [like  
To have him matched; and,—if you please to  
No worse than I, sir,—upon some agreement,  
Me shall you find most ready and most willing  
With one consent to have her so bestow'd;  
For curious \* I cannot be with you,  
Signior Baptista, of whom I hear so well.

*Bap.* Sir, pardon me in what I have to say:—  
Your plainness, and your shortness, please me  
Right true it is, your son Lucentio here [well.  
Doth love my daughter, and she loveth him,  
Or both dissemble deeply their affections:  
And, therefore, if you say no more than this,  
That like a father you will deal with him,  
And pass † my daughter a sufficient dower,  
The match is fully made, and all is done:  
Your son shall have my daughter with consent.

*Tra.* I thank you, sir. Where then do you  
know best,

We be affid ‡; and such assurance ta'en,  
As shall with either part's agreement stand?

*Bap.* Not in my house, Lucentio; for, you  
know,

Pitchers have ears, and I have many servants:  
Besides, old Gremio is heark'ning still:  
And, happily §, we might be interrupted.

*Tra.* Then at my lodging, an it like you, sir:  
There doth my father lie; and there, this night,  
We'll pass the business privately and well:  
Send for your daughter by your servant here,  
My boy shall fetch the scrivener presently.  
The worst is this,—that, at so slender warning,  
You're like to have a thin and slender pittance.

*Bap.* It likes me well:—Cambio, hie you  
home,

And bid Bianca make her ready straight;  
And, if you will, tell what hath happened:—  
Lucentio's father is arriv'd in Padua,  
And how she's like to be Lucentio's wife.

*Luc.* I pray the gods she may, with all my  
heart! [gone.

*Tra.* Daily not with the gods, but get thee  
Signior Baptista, shall I lead the way?  
Welcome! one mess is like to be your cheer:  
Come, sir; we'll better it in Pisa.

*Bap.* I follow you.

[*Exeunt TRANIO, Pedant, and BAPTISTA.*

*Bion.* Cambio.—

*Luc.* What say'st thou, Biondello?

*Bion.* You saw my master wink and laugh  
upon you?

*Luc.* Biondello, what of that?

*Bion.* 'Faith nothing; but he has left me  
here behind, to expound the meaning or  
moral || of his signs and tokens.

*Luc.* I pray thee, moralize them.

*Bion.* Then thus. Baptista is safe, talking  
with the deceiving father of a deceitful son.

*Luc.* And what of him?

*Bion.* His daughter is to be brought by  
you to the supper.

*Luc.* And then?—

*Bion.* The old priest at Saint Luke's church  
is at your command at all hours.

*Luc.* And what of all this?

*Bion.* I cannot tell; except they are busied  
about a counterfeit assurance: Take you assur-  
ance of her, *cum privilegio ad imprimendum  
solum*: to the church;—take the priest, clerk,  
and some sufficient honest witnesses:

If this be not that you look for, I have no  
more to say,

But, bid Bianca farewell for ever and a day.

[*Going.*

*Luc.* Hear'st thou, Biondello?

*Bion.* I cannot tarry: I knew a wench  
married in an afternoon as she went to the  
garden for parsley to stuff a rabbit; and so  
may you, sir; and so adieu, sir. My master  
hath appointed me to go to Saint Luke's, to  
bid the priest be ready to come against you  
come with your appendix. [Exit.

*Luc.* I may, and will, if she be so con-  
tented: [doubt?

She will be pleased, then wherefore should I  
Hap what hap may, I'll roundly go about her;  
It shall go hard, if Cambio go without her.

[*Exit.*

## SCENE V. A public Road.

*Enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, and HOR-  
TENSIO.*

*Pet.* Come on, o' God's name; once more  
toward our father's. [moon!

Good Lord, how bright and goodly shines the  
*Kath.* The moon! the sun; it is not moon-  
light now.

*Pet.* I say, it is the moon that shines so bright.

*Kath.* I know, it is the sun that shines so  
bright. [myself,

*Pet.* Now, by my mother's son, and that's  
It shall be moon, or star, or what I list,  
Or ere I journey to your father's house:—  
Go on, and fetch our horses back again.—  
Evermore cross'd, and cross'd; nothing but  
cross'd!

*Hor.* Say as he says, or we shall never go.

*Kath.* Forward, I pray, since we have come  
so far,

And be it moon, or sun, or what you please:  
And if you please to call it a rush candle,  
Henceforth I vow it shall be so for me.

*Pet.* I say, it is the moon.

*Kath.* I know it is.

*Pet.* Nay, then you lie; it is the blessed  
sun.

• Scrupulous.

† Assure or convey.

‡ Betrothed.

§ Accidentaily.

|| Secret purpose.



*Kath.* Then, God be bless'd, it is the blessed  
 But son it is not, when you say it is not; [sun:  
 And the moon changes, even as your mind.  
 What you will have it named, even that it is;  
 And so it shall be so, for Katharine.

*Hor.* Petruchio, go thy ways; the field is won.

*Pet.* Well, forward, forward: thus the bowl  
 should run,

And not unluckily against the bias.—

But soft: what company is coming here?

*Enter VINCENTIO, in a travelling dress.*

Good-morrow, gentle mistress: Where away?

[*To VINCENTIO.*]

Tell me, sweet Kate, and tell me truly too,  
 Hast thou beheld a fresher gentlewoman?

Such war of white and red within her cheeks!

What stars do spangle heaven with such beauty,

As those two eyes become that heavenly face?—

Fair lovely maid, once more good day to thee:—

Sweet Kate, embrace her for her beauty's sake.

*Hor.* 'A will make the man mad, to make  
 a woman of him.

*Kath.* Young budding virgin, fair, and  
 fresh, and sweet,

Whither away; or where is thy abode?

Happy the parents of so fair a child;

Happier the man, whom favourable stars

Allot thee for his lovely bed-fellow!

*Pet.* Why, how now, Kate! I hope thou  
 art not mad:

This is a man, old, wrinkled, faded, wither'd;

And not a maiden, as thou say'st he is.

*Kath.* Pardon, old father, my mistaking eyes,  
 That have been so bedazzled with the sun,

That every thing I look on seemeth green:

Now I perceive, thou art a reverend father;

Pardon, I pray thee, for my mad mistaking.

*Pet.* Do, good old grandsire; and, withal,  
 make known

Which way thou travellest: if along with us,  
 We shall be joyful of thy company.

*Vin.* Fair sir,—and you my merry mistress,—  
 That with your strange encounter much  
 amazed me; [Pisa;

My name is call'd—Vincentio; my dwelling—

And bound I am to Padua; there to visit

A son of mine, which long I have not seen.

*Pet.* What is his name?

*Vin.* Lucentio, gentle sir.

*Pet.* Happily met; the happier for thy son.

And now by law, as well as reverend age,

I may entitle thee—my loving father;

The sister to my wife, this gentlewoman,

Thy son by this hath married: Wonder not,

Nor be not grieved; she is of good esteem,

Her dowry wealthy, and of worthy birth;

Beside, so qualified as may beseem

The spouse of any noble gentleman.

Let me embrace with old Vincentio:

And wander we to see thy honest son,

Who will of thy arrival be full joyous. [sure,

*Vin.* But is this true? or is it else your plea-

Like pleasant travellers, to break a jest

Upon the company you overtake?

*Hor.* I do assure thee, father, so it is.

*Pet.* Come, go along, and see the truth hereof;

For our first merryment hath made thee jealous.

[*Exeunt PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, and  
 VINCENTIO.*]

*Hor.* Well, Petruchio, this hath put me in  
 heart.

Have to my widow; and if she be froward,

Then hast thou taught Hortensio to be unto-

ward. [*Exit.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. Padua. Before Lucentio's  
 House.

*Enter on one side BIONDELLO, LUCENTIO,  
 and BIANCA; GREMIO walking on the  
 other side.*

*Bion.* Softly and swiftly, sir; for the priest  
 is ready.

*Luc.* I fly, Biondello: but they may chance  
 to need thee at home, therefore leave us.

*Bion.* Nay, faith, I'll see the church o' your  
 back; and then come back to my master as  
 soon as I can.

[*Exeunt LUCENTIO, BIANCA, and  
 BIONDELLO.*]

*Gre.* I marvel Cambio comes not all this  
 while.

*Enter PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, VINCEN-  
 TIO, and Attendants.*

*Pet.* Sir, here's the door, this is Lucentio's  
 house, [place;

My father's bears more toward the market-  
 Thither must I, and here I leave you, sir.

*Vin.* You shall not choose but drink before  
 you go;

I think, I shall command your welcome here,  
 And, by all likelihood, some cheer is toward.

[*Kuoc.s.*]

*Gre.* They're busy within, you were best  
 knock louder.

*Enter Pedant above, at a window.*

*Ped.* What's he, that knocks as he would  
 beat down the gate!

*Vin.* Is signior Lucentio within, sir?

*Ped.* He's within, sir, but not to be spoken  
 withal.

*Vin.* What if a man bring him a hundred  
 pound or two, to make merry withal?

*Ped.* Keep your hundred pounds to your-  
 self; he shall need none, so long as I live.

*Pet.* Nay, I told you, your son was beloved  
 in Padua.—Do you hear, sir?—to leave fri-  
 volous circumstances,—I pray you, tell sig-  
 nior Lucentio, that his father is come from  
 Pisa, and is here at the door to speak with  
 him.

*Ped.* Thou liest; his father is come from  
 Pisa, and here looking out at the window.

*Vin.* Art thou his father?

*Ped.* Ay, sir; so his mother says, if I may  
 believe her.

*Pet.* Why, how now, gentleman! [*To  
 VINCEN.*] why, this is flat knavery, to take  
 upon you another man's name.

*Ped.* Lay hands on the villain; I believe

'a means to cozen somebody in this city under my countenance.

*Re-enter BIONDELLO.*

*Bion.* I have seen them in the church together; God send 'em good shipping!—But who is here? mine old master, Vincentio? now we are undone, and brought to nothing.

*Vin.* Come hither, crack-hemp.

[*Seeing BIONDELLO.*

*Bion.* I hope, I may choose, sir.

*Vin.* Come hither, you rogue; What, have you forgot me?

*Bion.* Forgot you? no, sir: I could not forget you, for I never saw you before in all my life.

*Vin.* What, you notorious villain, didst thou never see thy master's father, Vincentio?

*Bion.* What, my old, worshipful old master? yes, marry, sir; see where he looks out of the window.

*Vin.* Is't so, indeed? [*Beats BIONDELLO.*

*Bion.* Help, help, help! here's a madman will murder me. [*Exit.*

*Ped.* Help, son! help, signior Baptista!

[*Exit, from the window.*

*Pet.* Pr'ythee, Kate, let's stand aside, and see the end of this controversy. [*They retire.*

*Re-enter Pedant below; BAPTISTA, TRANIO, and Servants.*

*Tra.* Sir, what are you, that offer to beat my servant?

*Vin.* What am I, sir? nay, what are you, sir?—O immortal gods! O fine villain! A silken doublet! a velvet hose! a scarlet cloak! and a copatain hat\*!—O, I am undone! I am undone! while I ply the good husband at home, my son and my servant spend all at the university.

*Tra.* How now! what's the matter?

*Bap.* What, is the man lunatic?

*Tra.* Sir, you seem a sober ancient gentleman by your habit, but your words show you a madman; Why, sir, what concerns it you, if I wear pearl and gold? I thank my good father, I am able to maintain it.

*Vin.* Thy father? O, villain! he is a sail-maker in Bergamo.

*Bap.* You mistake, sir; you mistake, sir: Pray, what do you think is his name?

*Vin.* His name? as if I knew not his name: I have brought him up ever since he was three years old, and his name is—Tranio.

*Ped.* Away, away, mad ass! his name is Lucentio; and he is mine only son, and heir to the lands of me, signior Vincentio.

*Vin.* Lucentio! O, he hath murdered his master!—Lay hold on him, I charge you, in the duke's name:—O, my son, my son!—tell me, thou villain, where is my son Lucentio?

*Tra.* Call forth an officer: [*Enter one with an Officer.*] Carry this mad knave to the gaol:—Father Baptista, I charge you see, that he be forth-coming.

*Vin.* Carry me to the gaol!

*Gre.* Stay, officer; he shall not go to prison.

*Bap.* Talk not, signior Gremio; I say, he shall go to prison.

*Gre.* Take heed, signior Baptista, lest you be coney-catched; in this business; I dare swear, this is the right Vincentio.

*Ped.* Swear, if thou darest.

*Gre.* Nay, I dare not swear it.

*Tra.* Then thou wert best say, that I am not Lucentio.

*Gre.* Yes, I know thee to be signior Lucentio.

*Bap.* Away with the dotard; to the gaol with him.

*Vin.* Thus strangers may be haied and abused: O monstrous villain!

*Re-enter BIONDELLO, with LUCENTIO, and BIANCA.*

*Bion.* O, we are spoiled, and—Yonder he is; deny him, forswear him, or else we are all undone.

*Luc.* Pardon, sweet father. [*Kneeling.*

*Vin.* Lives my sweetest son?

[*BIONDELLO, TRANIO, and Pedant run out.*

*Bian.* Pardon, dear father. [*Kneeling.*

*Bap.* How hast thou offended?—Where is Lucentio?

*Luc.* Here's Lucentio,

Right son unto the right Vincentio; That have by marriage made thy daughter mine, While counterfeit supposes blear'd thine eyes.

*Gre.* Here's packing\$, with a witness, to deceive us all!

*Vin.* Where is that damned villain, Tranio, That faced and braved me in this matter so?

*Bap.* Why, tell me, is not this my Cambio?

*Bian.* Cambio is changed into Lucentio.

*Luc.* Love wrought these miracles. Bianca's love

Made me exchange my state with Tranio, While he did bear my countenance in the town; And happily I have arrived at last Unto the wished haven of my bliss:—

What Tranio did, myself enforced him to; Then pardon him, sweet father, for my sake.

*Vin.* I'll slit the villain's nose, that would have sent me to the gaol.

*Bap.* But do you hear, sir? [*To LUCENTIO.*] Have you married my daughter without asking my good will?

*Vin.* Fear not, Baptista; we will content you, go to: But I will in, to be revenged for this villany. [*Exit.*

*Bap.* And I, to sound the depth of this knavery. [*Exit.*

*Luc.* Look not pale, Bianca; thy father will not frown. [*Exeunt LUC. and BIAN.*

*Gre.* My cake is dough ||: But I'll in among the rest;

Out of hope of all,—but my share of the feast. [*Exit.*

*PETRUCHIO and KATHARINA advance.*

*Kath.* Husband, let's follow, to see the end of this ado.

*Pet.* First kiss me, Kate, and we will.

*Kath.* What, in the midst of the street?

*Pet.* What, art thou ashamed of me?

\* A hat with a conical crown.

† Cheated.

‡ Deceived thy eyes.

§ Tricking, underhand contrivances. || A proverbial expression, repeated after a disappointment.

*Kath.* No, sir; God forbid:—but ashamed to kiss. [sirrah, let's away.

*Pet.* Why, then let's home again:—Come,

*Kath.* Nay, I will give thee a kiss: now pray thee, love, stay. [Kate;

*Pet.* Is not this well?—Come, my sweet Better once than never, for never too late.

*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. A Room in Lucentio's House.

A Banquet set out. Enter BAPTISTA, VINCENTIO, GREMIO, the Pedant, LUCENTIO, BIANCA, PETRUCHIO, KATHARINA, HORTENSIO, and Widow. TRANIO, BIONDELLO, GRUMIO, and Others, attending.

*Luc.* At last, though long, our jarring notes agree:

And time it is, when raging war is done,  
To smile at 'scapes and perils overblown.—  
My fair Bianca, bid my father welcome,  
While I with self-same kindness welcome thine:  
Brother Petruchio,—sister Katharina,—  
And thou, Hortensio, with thy loving widow,—  
Feast with the best, and welcome to my house;  
My banquet \* is to close our stomachs up,  
After our great good cheer: Pray you sit down;  
For now we sit to chat, as well as eat.

[They sit at table.

*Pet.* Nothing but sit and sit, and eat and eat!

*Bap.* Padua affords this kindness, son Petruchio.

*Pet.* Padua affords nothing but what is kind.  
*Hor.* For both our sakes, I would that word were true. [widow.

*Pet.* Now, for my life, Hortensio fears † his  
*Wid.* Then never trust me if I be afraid.

*Pet.* You are sensible, and yet you miss my sense;

I mean, Hortensio is afraid of you.

*Wid.* He that is giddy, thinks the world turns round.

*Pet.* Roundly replied.

*Kath.* Mistress, how mean you that?

*Wid.* Thus I conceive by him. [tensio that?

*Pet.* Conceive by me!—How likes Hor-

*Hor.* My widow says, thus she conceives her tale.

*Pet.* Very well mended: Kiss him for that, good widow. [turns round:—

*Kath.* He that is giddy, thinks the world I pray you, tell me what you meant by that.

*Wid.* Your husband, being troubled with a shrew,

Measures my husband's sorrow by his woe:

And now you know my meaning.

*Kath.* A very mean meaning.

*Wid.* Right, I mean you.

*Kath.* And I am mean, indeed, respecting

*Pet.* To her, Kate! [you.

*Hor.* To her, widow! [her down.

*Pet.* A hundred marks, my Kate does put

*Hor.* That's my office. [lad.

*Pet.* Spoke like an officer:—Ha' to thee,

[Drinks to HORTENSIO.

*Bap.* How likes Gremio these quick-witted folks?

*Gre.* Believe me, sir, they butt together well.

*Bian.* Head, and butt? an hasty-witted body Would say, your head and butt were head and horn. [you?

*Vin.* Ay, mistress bride, hath that awaken'd

*Bian.* Ay, but not frighted me; therefore

I'll sleep again. [have begun.

*Pet.* Nay, that you shall not; since you Have at you for a bitter jest or two. [bush.

*Bian.* Am I your bird? I mean to shift my And then pursue me as you draw your bow:— You are welcome all.

[Exeunt BIANCA, KATHARINA, and Widow.

*Pet.* She hath prevented me.—Here, signior Tranio,

This bird you aim'd at, though you hit her not; Therefore a health to all that shot and miss'd.

*Tra.* O, sir, Lucentio slipp'd me like his greyhound, [master.

Which runs himself, and catches for his

*Pet.* A good swift ‡ simile, but something currish. [self;

*Tra.* 'Tis well, sir, that you hunted for your-

'Tis thought, your deer does hold you at a bay.

*Bap.* O ho, Petruchio, Tranio hits you now.

*Luc.* I thank thee for that gird, good Tranio.

*Hor.* Confess, confess, hath he not hit you here?

*Pet.* 'A has a little gall'd me, I confess; And, as the jest did glance away from me,

'Tis ten to one it maim'd you two outright.

*Bap.* Now, in good sadness, son Petruchio, I think thou hast the veriest shrew of all.

*Pet.* Well, I say—no: and therefore, for Let's each one send unto his wife; [assurance, And he, whose wife is most obedient

To come at first when he doth send for her, Shall win the wager which we will propose.

*Hor.* Content:—What is the wager?

*Luc.* Twenty crowns.

*Pet.* Twenty crowns!

I'll venture so much on my hawk, or hound, But twenty times so much upon my wife.

*Luc.* A hundred then.

*Hor.* Content.

*Pet.* A match; 'tis done.

*Hor.* Who shall begin?

*Luc.* That will I. Go,

Biondello, bid your mistress come to me.

*Bion.* I go. [Exit.

*Bap.* Son, I will be your half, Bianca comes. [self.

*Luc.* I'll have no halves; I'll bear it all my-  
*Re-enter BIONDELLO.*

How now! what news?

*Bion.* Sir, my mistress sends you word That she is busy, and she cannot come.

*Pet.* How! she is busy, and she cannot come. Is that an answer?

*Gre.* Ay, and a kind one too:

Pray God, sir, your wife send you not a worse.

*Pet.* I hope, better. [wife

*Hor.* Sirrah, Biondello, go, and entreat my To come to me forthwith. [Exit BIONDELLO.]

*Pet.* O, ho! entreat her!

Nay, then she must needs come.

\* A banquet was a refection consisting of fruit, cakes, &c. † Dreads. ‡ Witty. § Sarcasms.



*Hor.* I am afraid, sir,  
Do what you can, yours will not be entreated.

*Re-enter BIONDELLO.*

Now where's my wife? [in hand;

*Bion.* She says, you have some goodly jest  
She will not come; she bids you come to her.

*Pet.* Worse and worse; she will not come!  
Intolerable, not to be endured! [O vile,  
Sirrah, Grumio, go to your mistress;  
Say, I command her come to me.

[*Exit GRUMIO.*

*Hor.* I know her answer.

*Pet.* What?

*Hor.* She will not come.

*Pet.* The fouler fortune mine, and there  
an end.

*Enter KATHARINA.*

*Bap.* Now, by my holidame, here comes  
Katharina. [for me?

*Kath.* What is your will, sir, that you send

*Pet.* Where is your sister, and Hortensio's  
wife?

*Kath.* They sit conferring by the parlour fire.

*Pet.* Go fetch them hither; if they deny to  
come, [bands:

Swinge me them soundly forth unto their hus-  
Away, I say, and bring them hither straight.

[*Exit KATHARINA.*

*Luc.* Here is a wonder, if you talk of a  
wonder.

*Hor.* And so it is; I wonder what it bodes.

*Pet.* Marry, peace it bodes, and love, and  
quiet life,

An awful rule, and right supremacy; [happy.  
And, to be short, what not, that's sweet and

*Bap.* Now fair befall thee, good Petruchio!

The wager thou hast won; and I will add  
Unto their losses twenty thousand crowns;  
Another dowry to another daughter,  
For she is changed, as she had never been.

*Pet.* Nay, I will win my wager better yet;  
And show more sign of her obedience,  
Her new-built virtue and obedience.

*Re-enter KATHARINA, with BIANCA, and  
Widow.*

See, where she comes; and brings your fro-  
ward wives

As prisoners to her womanly persuasion.—  
Katharine, that cap of yours becomes you not;  
Off with that bauble, throw it under foot.

[*KATHARINA pulls off her cap, and  
throws it down.*

*Wid.* Lord, let me never have a cause to sigh,  
Till I be brought to such a silly pass!

*Bian.* Fie! what a foolish duty call you this?

*Luc.* I would, your duty were as foolish too:  
The wisdom of your duty, fair Bianca,  
Hath cost me an hundred crowns since sup-  
per-time [duty.

*Bian.* The more fool you, for laying on my  
*Pet.* Katharine, I charge thee, tell these  
headstrong women [bands.

What duty they do owe their lords and hus-

*Wid.* Come, come, you're mocking, we will  
have no telling. [her.

*Pet.* Come on, I say; and first begin with

*Wid.* She shall not.

*Pet.* I say, she shall!—and first begin with  
her. [kind brow;

*Kath.* Fie, fie! unknit that threat'ning un-  
And dart not scornful glances from those eyes,

To wound thy lord, thy king, thy governor:  
It blots thy beauty, as frosts bite the meads;

Confounds thy fame, as whirlwinds shake fair  
And in no sense is meet, or amiable. [buds;

A woman moved, is like a fountain troubled,  
Muddy, ill-seeming, thick, bereft of beauty;

And, while it is so, none so dry or thirsty  
Will deign to sip, or touch one drop of it.

Thy husband is thy lord, thy life, thy keeper,  
Thy head, thy sovereign; one that cares for thee,

And for thy maintenance: commits his body  
To painful labour, both by sea and land;

To watch the night in storms, the day in cold,  
While thou liest warm at home, secure and safe

And craves no other tribute at thy hands,  
But love, fair looks, and true obedience;—

Too little payment for so great a debt.  
Such duty as the subject owes the prince,

Even such, a woman oweth to her husband;  
And, when she's froward, peevish, sullen, sour,

And not obedient to his honest will,  
What is she, but a foul contending rebel,

And graceless traitor to her loving lord?—  
I am ashamed, that women are so simple

To offer war, where they should kneel for peace,  
Or seek for rule, supremacy, and sway,

When they are bound to serve, love, and obey.  
Why are our bodies soft, and weak, and smooth,

Unapt to toil and trouble in the world;  
But that our soft conditions \* and our hearts,

Should well agree with our external parts?  
Come, come, you froward and unable worms!

My mind hath been as big as one of yours,  
My heart as great; my reason, haply, more,

To bandy word for word, and frown for frown:  
But now, I see our lances are but straws;

Our strength as weak, our weakness past com-  
pare,—

That seeming to be most, which we least are.  
Then vail your stomachs†, for it is no boot;

And place your hands below your husband's  
In token of which duty, if he please, [foot:

My hand is ready, may it do him ease.

*Pet.* Why, there's a wench!—Come on, and  
kiss me, Kate. [shalt ha't.

*Luc.* Well, go thy ways, old lad; for thou  
*Vin.* 'Tis a good hearing, when children  
are toward.

*Luc.* But a harsh hearing, when women  
are froward.

*Pet.* Come, Kate, we'll to bed:—  
We three are married, but you two are sped.

'Twas I won the wager, though you hit the  
white; [To LUCENTIO.

And, being a winner, God give you good night!  
[*Exeunt PETRUCHIO and KATH.*

*Hor.* Now go thy ways, thou hast tamed a  
curst shrew.

*Luc.* 'Tis a wonder, by your leave, she  
will be tamed so. [*Exeunt.*

\* Gentle tempers.

† Abate your spirits.

# WINTER'S TALE.

## Persons represented.

LEONTES, *King of Sicilia.*

MAMILLIUS, *his son.*

CAMILLO,

ANTIGONUS,

CLEOMENES,

DION,

*Another Sicilian Lord.*

ROGERO, *a Sicilian gentleman.*

*An Attendant on the young prince Mamillius.*

Officers of a court of judicature.

POLIXENES, *King of Bohemia.*

FLORIZEL, *his son.*

ARCHIDAMUS, *a Bohemian lord.*

A Mariner:

Gaoler.

*An old Shepherd, reputed father of Perdita.*

Clown, *his son.*

Servant to the old shepherd.

AUTOLYCUS, *a rogue.*

Time, *as Chorus.*

HERMIONE, *Queen to Leontes.*

PERDITA, *daughter to Leontes and Hermione.*

PAULINA, *wife to Antigonus.*

EMILIA, *a lady,*

*Two other Ladies, } attending the Queen.*

MOPSA, *} shepherdesses.*

DORCAS,

*Lords, Ladies, and Attendants; Satyrs for a dance; Shepherds, Shepherdesses, Guards, &c.*  
*Scene,—sometimes in Sicilia, sometimes in Bohemia.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *Sicilia. An Antechamber in Leontes' Palace.*

*Enter CAMILLO and ARCHIDAMUS.*

*Arch.* If you shall chance, Camillo, to visit Bohemia, on the like occasion whereon my services are now on foot, you shall see, as I have said, great difference betwixt our Bohemia, and your Sicilia.

*Cam.* I think, this coming summer, the king of Sicilia means to pay Bohemia the visitation which he justly owes him.

*Arch.* Wherein our entertainment shall shame us, we will be justified in our loves: for, indeed,—

*Cam.* 'Beseech you,—

*Arch.* Verily, I speak it in the freedom of my knowledge: we cannot with such magnificence—in so rare—I know not what to say.—We will give you sleepy drinks; that your senses, unintelligent of our insufficiency, may, though they cannot praise us, as little accuse us.

*Cam.* You pay a great deal too dear, for what's given freely.

*Arch.* Believe me, I speak as my understanding instructs me, and as mine honesty puts it to utterance.

*Cam.* Sicilia cannot shew himself over-kind to Bohemia. They were trained together in their childhoods; and there rooted betwixt them then such an affection, which cannot choose but branch now. Since their more mature dignities, and royal necessities, made separation of their society, their encounters,

though not personal, have been royally attended\*, with interchange of gifts, letters, loving embassies; that they have seemed to be together, though absent; shook hands as over a vast†; and embraced, as it were, from the ends of opposed winds. The heavens continue their loves!

*Arch.* I think, there is not in the world either malice, or matter, to alter it. You have an unspeakable comfort of your young prince Mamillius; it is a gentleman of the greatest promise, that ever came into my note.

*Cam.* I very well agree with you in the hopes of him: it is a gallant child; one that, indeed, physics the subject‡, makes old hearts fresh: they, that went on crutches ere he was born, desire yet their life, to see him a man.

*Arch.* Would they else be content to die?

*Cam.* Yes; if there were no other excuse why they should desire to live.

*Arch.* If the king had no son, they would desire to live on crutches till he had one.

[*Ereunt.*]

SCENE II. *The same. A Room of State in the Palace.*

*Enter LEONTES, POLIXENES, HERMIONE, MAMILLIUS, CAMILLO, and Attendants.*

*Pol.* Nine changes of the watery star have been [throne

The shepherd's note, since we have left our Without a burden: time as long again

Would be fill'd up, my brother, with our And yet we should, for perpetuity, [thanks

\* Nobly supplied by substitution of embassies.

† Wide waste of country.

‡ Affords a cordial to the state.

Go hence in debt: And therefore, like a cipher,  
Yet standing in rich place, I multiply,  
With one we-thank-you, many thousands more  
That go before it.

*Leon.* Stay your thanks awhile;

And pay them when you part.

*Pol.* Sir, that's to-morrow. [chance,  
I am question'd by my fears, of what may  
Or breed upon our absence: That may blow  
No sneaping\* winds at home, to make us say,  
*This is put forth too truly!* Besides, I have  
To tire your royalty. [stay'd

*Leon.* We are tougher, brother,  
Than you can put us to't.

*Pol.* No longer stay.

*Leon.* One seven-night longer.

*Pol.* Very sooth, to-morrow.

*Leon.* We'll part the time between's then:  
I'll no gain-saying. [and in that

*Pol.* Press me not, 'beseech you, so;  
There is no tongue that moves, none, none  
i' the world, [now,

So soon as yours, could win me: so it should  
Were there necessity in your request, although  
'Twere needful I denied it. My affairs  
Do even drag me homeward: which to hinder,  
Were in your love, a whip to me; my stay,  
To you a charge, and trouble: to save both,  
Farewell, our brother.

*Leon.* Tongue-tied, our queen? speak you.

*Her.* I had thought, sir, to have held my  
peace, until [You, sir,  
You had drawn oaths from him, not to stay.  
Charge him too coldly: Tell him, you are sure,  
All in Bohemia's well: this satisfaction  
The by-gone day proclaim'd: say this to him,  
He's beat from his best ward.

*Leon.* Well said, Hermione.

*Her.* To tell, he longs to see his son, were  
strong:

But let him say so then, and let him go;  
But let him swear so, and he shall not stay,  
We'll thrack him hence with distaffs—  
Yet of your royal presence [To POLIX.] I'll  
adventure

The borrow of a week. When at Bohemia  
You take my lord, I'll give him my com-  
mission,

To let him there a month, behind the gest †  
Prefix'd for his parting: yet, good deed ‡,

*Leontes,*

I love thee not a jar † o' the clock behind

What lady she her lord.—You'll stay?

*Pol.* No, madam.

*Her.* Nay, but you will?

*Pol.* I may not, verily.

*Her.* Verily!

You put me off with limber ‖ vows: But I,  
Though you would seek to unsphere the stars  
with oaths,

Should yet say, *Sir, no going.* Verily,  
You shall not go; a lady's verily is  
As potent as a lord's. Will you go yet?

Force me to keep you as a prisoner,

Not like a guest; so you shall pay your fees,  
When you depart, and save your thanks.

How say you? [verily,

My prisoner? or my guest? by your dread  
One of them you shall be.

*Pol.*

Your guest then, madam:  
To be your prisoner, should import offending;  
Which is for me less easy to commit,  
Than you to punish.

*Her.*

Not your gaoler then,  
But your kind hostess. Come, I'll question you  
Of my Lord's tricks, and yours, when you  
You were pretty lordings † then. [were boys;

*Pol.*

We were, fair queen, [behind,  
Two lads, that thought there was no more  
But such a day to-morrow as to-day,  
And to be boy eternal. [two?

*Her.*

Was not my lord the verier wag o' the  
*Pol.* We were as twinn'd lambs, that did  
frisk i' the sun, [chang'd,

And bleat the one at the other: what we  
Was innocence for innocence; we knew not  
The doctrine of ill-doing, no, nor dream'd  
That any did: Had we pursued that life,  
And our weak spirits ne'er been higher rear'd  
With stronger blood, we should have answer'd  
heaven

Boldly, *Not guilty*; the imposition clear'd,  
Hereditary ours\*\*.

*Her.*

By this we gather,  
You have tripp'd since.

*Pol.*

O my most sacred lady, [for  
Temptations have since then been born to us:  
In those unfledged days was my wife a girl:  
Your precious self had then not cross'd the eyes  
Of my young play-fellow.

*Her.*

Grace to boot!  
Of this make no conclusion; lest you say,  
Your queen and I are devils: Yet, go on;  
The offences we have made you do, we'll  
answer;

If you first sinn'd with us, and that with us  
You did continue fault, and that you slipp'd not  
With any but with us.

*Leon.*

Is he won yet?

*Leon.*

At my request, he would not.  
Hermione, my dearest, thou never spok'st  
To better purpose.

*Her.*

Never?

*Leon.*

Never, but once.  
*Her.* What? have I twice said well? when  
was't before? [make us

I pry'thee, tell me: Cram us with praise, and  
As fat as tame things: One good deed, dying  
tongueless,

Slaughters a thousand, waiting upon that.

Our praises are our wages: You may ride us,  
With one soft kiss, a thousand furlongs, ere  
With spur we heat an acre: But to the goal;—  
My last good was, to entreat his stay;

What was my first? it has an elder sister,  
Or I mistake you: O, would her name were  
Grace!

\* Nipping. † Gests were the names of the stages where the king appointed to lie during a royal progress. ‡ Indeed. § Tick. || Flimsy  
‡ A diminutive of lords. \*\* Setting aside original sin.



But once before I spoke to the purpose:  
 Nay, let me have't; I long. [When?

*Leon.* Why, that was when  
 Three crabbed months had sour'd themselves  
 to death,

Ere I could make thee open thy white hand,  
 And clap thyself my love; then didst thou  
*I am yours for ever.* [utter,

*Her.* It is Grace, indeed.—  
 Why, lo you now, I have spoke to the purpose  
 twice:

The one for ever earn'd a royal husband;  
 The other, for some while a friend.

[*Giving her hand to POLIXENES.*

*Leon.* Too hot, too hot: [*Aside.*  
 To mingle friendship far, is mingling bloods.  
 I have *tremor cordis*\* on me:—my heart  
 dances;

But not for joy,—not joy.—This entertainment  
 May a free face put on; derive a liberty  
 From heartiness, from bounty, fertile bosom,  
 And well become the agent: it may, I grant:  
 But to be paddling palms, and pinching fingers,  
 As now they are; and making practised smiles,  
 As in a looking-glass;—and then to sigh, as  
 'twere [ment

The mort o' the deer†; O, that is entertain't  
 My bosom likes not, nor my brows.—Mamili-  
 Art thou my boy? [lius,

*Mam.* Ay, my good lord.

*Leon.* 'Tis hecks?  
 Why that's my bawcock‡. What, hast smutch'd  
 thy nose?— [captain,

They say, it's a copy out of mine. Come,  
 We must be neat; not neat, but cleanly, cap-  
 tain:

And yet the steer, the heifer, and the calf,  
 Are all call'd neat.—Still virginalling§

*Observing POLIXENES and HERMIONE.*  
 Upon his palm?—How now, you wanton calf?  
 Art thou my calf?

*Mam.* Yes, if you will, my lord.

*Leon.* Thou want'st a rough pash, and the  
 shoots that I have||,

To be full like me:—yet, they say, we are  
 Almost as like as eggs; women say so,  
 That will say any thing: But were they false  
 As o'er-died blacks, as wind, as waters; false  
 As dice are to be wish'd, by one that fixes  
 No bourn¶ twixt his and mine; yet were it  
 true [page,

To say this boy were like me.—Come, sir  
 Look on me with your welkin\*\* eye: Sweet  
 villain! [may't be?

Most dear†† my collop!—Can thy dam?—  
 Affection! thy intention stabs the centre;  
 Thou dost make possible, things not so held  
 Communicat'st with dreams;—(How can this  
 With what's unreal thou coactive art, [be?—  
 And fellow'st nothing: Then, 'tis very cre-  
 dent††. [thou dost;  
 Thou may'st co-join with something; and

(And that beyond commission; and I find it),  
 And that to the infection of my brains,  
 And hardening of my brows.

*Pol.* What means Sicilia?

*Her.* He something seems unsettled.

*Pol.* How, my lord?

What cheer? how is't with you, best brother?

*Her.* You look,

As if you held a brow of much distraction:

Are you moved, my lord?

*Leon.* No, in good earnest.—

How sometimes nature will betray its folly,  
 Its tenderness, and make itself a pastime  
 To harder bosoms! Looking on the lines  
 Of my boy's face, methoughts, I did recoil  
 Twenty-three years; and saw myself un-  
 breech'd,

In my green velvet coat; my dagger muzzled,  
 Lest it should bite its master, and so prove,  
 As ornaments oft do, too dangerous.

How like, methought, I then was to this kernel,

This squash‡‡, this gentleman:—Mine honest

Will you take eggs for money§§? [friend,

*Mam.* No, my lord, I'll fight.

*Leon.* You will? why, happy man be his  
 dole!!!—My brother,

Are you so fond of your young prince, as we  
 Do seem to be of ours?

*Pol.* If at home, sir,

He's all my exercise, my mirth, my matter:

Now my sworn friend, and then mine enemy;

My parasite, my soldier, statesman, all:

He makes a July's day short as December;

And, with his varying childness, cures in me  
 Thoughts that would thicken my blood.

*Leon.* So stands this squire

Officed with me: We two will walk, my lord,

And leave you to your graver steps.—Her-  
 mione, [welcome

How thou lovest us, show in our brother's

Let what is dear in Sicily, be cheap:

Next to thyself, and my young rover, he's

Apparent¶¶ to my heart.

*Her.* If you would seek us,

We are yours i'the garden: Shall's attend you  
 there? [you'll be found,

*Leon.* To your own bents dispose you:

Be you beneath the sky:—I am angling now,

Though you perceive me not how I give line.

Go to, go to!

[*Aside. Observing POL. and HER.*

How she holds up the neb\*\*\*, the bill to him!

And arms her with the boldness of a wife

To her allowing†† husband! Gone already;

Inch-thick, knee-deep; o'er head and ears a  
 fork'd one‡‡.—

[*Exeunt POL. HER. and Attendants.*

Go, play, boy, play;—thy mother plays, and I

Play too; but so disgraced a part, whose issue

Will hiss me to my grave; contempt and

clamour [There have been,

Will be my knell.—Go, play, boy, play;—

\* Trembling of the heart. † The tune played at the death of the deer. ‡ Hearty fellow.

§ i. e., Playing with her fingers as if on a spinnet. || Thou wantest a rough head, and the  
 budding horns that I have. ¶ Boundary. \*\* Blue. †† Credible. ‡‡ Pea-cod.

§§ Will you be cajoled? ||| May his share of life be an happy one! ¶¶ Heir apparent  
 next claimant. \*\*\* Mouth. ††† Approving. ‡‡‡ A horned one, a cuckold.

Or I am much deceived, cuckolds ere now;  
And many a man there is, even at this present,  
Now, while I speak this, holds his wife by  
the arm, [absence,  
That little thinks she has been sliced in his  
And his pond fish'd by his next neighbour, by  
Sir Smile, his neighbour: nay, there's comfort  
in't, [open'd,  
Whiles other men have gates; and those gates  
As mine, against their will: Should all despair,  
That have revolted wives, the tenth of mankind  
Would hang themselves. Physic for't there is  
none;

It is a bawdy planet, that will strike [think it,  
Where 'tis predominant; and 'tis powerful,  
From east, west, north, and south: Be it con-  
cluded,

No barricado for a belly; know it;  
It will let in and out the enemy,  
With bag and baggage: many a thousand of us  
Have the disease, and feel't not.—How now,  
boy?

*Mam.* I am like you, they say.

*Leon.* Why that's some comfort.—  
What! Camillo there?

*Cam.* Ay, my good lord.

*Leon.* Go play, Mamillius; thou'rt an honest  
man.— [Exit MAMILLIUS.

Camillo, this great sir will yet stay longer.

*Cam.* You had much ado to make his anchor  
When you cast out, it still came home. Hold:

*Leon.* Didst note it?

*Cam.* He would not stay at your petitions;  
His business more material. [made

*Leon.* Didst perceive it?—  
They're here with me already; whispering,  
*Scyllia* is a so-forth: 'tis far gone, [rounding\*,  
When I shall gust† it last.—How came't, Ca-  
That he did stay? [smillo,

*Cam.* At the good queen's entreaty.

*Leon.* At the queen's, be't: good, should be  
But so it is, it is not. Was this taken [pertinent;  
By any understanding pate but thine?

For thy conceit is soaking, will draw in [is't,  
More than the common blocks:—Not noted  
But of the finer natures? by some severals,  
Of head-piece extraordinary? lower menses‡  
Perchance, are to this business purblind: say.

*Cam.* Business, my lord? I think, most un-  
derstand

Bohemia stays here longer.

*Leon.* Ha?

*Cam.* Stays here longer.

*Leon.* Ay, but why? [treaties

*Cam.* To satisfy your highness, and the en-  
Of our most gracious mistress.

*Leon.* Satisfy

The entreaties of your mistress?—satisfy?—  
Let that suffice. I have trusted thee, Camillo,  
With all the nearest things to my heart, as well  
My chamber-councils: wherein, priest-like,  
thou

Hast cleansed my bosom; I from thee departed  
Thy penitent reform'd: but we have been  
Deceived in thy integrity, deceived

In that which seems so.

*Cam.* Be it forbid, my lord!

*Leon.* To bide upon't;—Thou art not ho-  
nest: or,

If thou inclinest that way, thou art a coward;  
Which boxes§ honesty behind, restraining  
From course required: Or else thou must be  
counted

A servant, grafted in my serious trust,  
And therein negligent; or else a fool, [drawn,  
That seest a game play'd home, the rich stake  
And takest it all for jest.

*Cam.* My gracious lord,

I may be negligent, foolish, and fearful;  
In every one of these no man is free,  
But that his negligence, his folly, fear,  
Amongst the infinite doings of the world,  
Sometime puts forth: in your affairs, my lord,  
If ever I were wilful-negligent,  
It was my folly; if industriously  
I play'd the fool, it was my negligence,  
Not weighing well the end; if ever fearful  
To do a thing, where I the issue doubted,  
Whereof the execution did cry out  
Against the non-performance, 'twas a fear  
Which oft affects the wisest: these, my lord,  
Are such allow'd infirmities, that honesty  
Is never free of. But, 'beseech your grace,  
Be plainer with me; let me know my trespass  
By its own visage: if I then deny it,  
'Tis none of mine.

*Leon.* Have not you seen, Camillo,  
(But that's past doubt: you have; or your eye-  
glass

Is thicker than a cuckold's horn;) or heard,  
(For, to a vision so apparent, rumour  
Cannot be mute,) or thought, (for cogitation  
Resides not in that man, that does not think it,)  
My wife is slippery? If thou wilt confess,  
(Or else be impudently negative, [say,  
To have nor eyes, nor ears, nor thought,) then  
My wife's a hobby-horse; deserves a name  
As rank as any flax-wench, that puts to  
Before her troth-plight: say it, and justify it.

*Cam.* I would not be a stander-by, to hear  
My sovereign mistress clouded so, without  
My present vengeance taken: 'shrew my heart,  
You never spoke what did become you less  
Than this; which to reiterate, were sin  
As deep as that, though true.

*Leon.* Is whispering nothing?  
Is leaning cheek to cheek? is meeting noses?  
Kissing with inside lip? stopping the career  
Of laughter with a sigh? (a note infallible  
Of breaking honesty:) horsing foot on foot?  
Skulking in corners? wishing clocks more  
swift? [blind

Hours, minutes? noon, midnight? and all eyes  
With the pin and web||, but theirs, theirs only,  
That would unseen be wicked? is this nothing?  
Why, then the world, and all that's in't, is  
nothing;

The covering sky is nothing; Bohemia nothing  
My wife is nothing; nor nothing have these  
nothings,

\* To round in the ear was to tell secretly.  
o box is to hamstring.

† Taste. ‡ Inferiors in rank.  
|| Disorders of the eye.

If this be nothing.

*Cam.* Good my lord, be cured  
Of this diseased opinion, and betimes;  
For 'tis most dangerous.

*Leon.* Say, it be; 'tis true.

*Cam.* No, no, my lord.

*Leon.* It is; you lie, you lie:  
I say, thou liest, Camillo, and I hate thee;  
Pronounce thee a gross lout, a mindless slave;  
Or else a hovering temporizer, that  
Canst with thine eyes at once see good and evil,  
Inclining to them both: were my wife's liver  
Infected as her life, she would not live  
The running of one glass\*.

*Cam.* Who does infect her?

*Leon.* Why he, that wears her like her  
medal, hanging  
About his neck, Bohemia: who—if I  
Had servants true about me: that bare eyes  
To see alike mine honour as their profits, [that  
Their own particular thrifts,—they would do  
Which should undo more doing: Ay, and thou,  
His cup-bearer,—whom I from meaner form  
Have bench'd, and rear'd to worship; who  
may'st see [heaven,  
Plainly, as heaven sees earth, and earth sees  
How I am galled,—might'st bespice a cup,  
To give mine enemy a lasting wink;  
Which draught to me were cordial.

*Cam.* Sir, my lord,  
I could do this; and that with no rash† potion,  
But with a ling'ring dram, that should not work  
Maliciously‡ like poison: but I cannot  
Believe this crack to be in my dread mistress,  
So sovereignly being honourable.  
I have loved thee,—

*Leon.* Make't thy question, and go rot!  
Dost think, I am so muddy, so unsettled,  
To appoint myself in this vexation? sully  
The purity and whiteness of my sheets, [spotted,  
Which to preserve is sleep; which being  
Is goads, thorns, nettles, tails of wasps?  
Give scandal to the blood o' the prince my son,  
Who, I do think is mine, and love as mine;  
Without ripe moving to 't? Would I do this?  
Could man so blench?

*Cam.* I must believe you, sir;  
I do; and will fetch off Bohemia for't: [ness  
Provided, that when he's removed your high-  
Will take again your queen, as yours at first;  
Even for your son's sake; and, thereby, for  
sealing

The injury of tongues, in courts and kingdoms  
Known and allied to yours.

*Leon.* Thou dost advise me,  
Even so as I mine own course have set down:  
I'll give no blemish to her honour, none.

*Cam.* My lord,  
Go then; and with a countenance as clear [mia,  
As friendship wears at feasts, keep with Bohe-  
And with your queen: I am his cupbearer;  
If from me he have wholesome beverage,  
Account me not your servant.

*Leon.* This is all:  
Do't and thou hast the one half of my heart;

Do't not, thou split'st thine own.

*Cam.* I'll do't, my lord.  
*Leon.* I will seem friendly as thou hast ad-  
vised me. [Exit.

*Cam.* O miserable lady!—But, for me,  
What case stand I in? I must be the poisoner  
Of good Polixenes: and my ground to do't  
Is the obedience to a master; one,  
Who, in rebellion with himself, will have  
All that are his, so too.—To do this deed,  
Promotion follows: If I could find example  
Of thousands, that had struck anointed kings,  
And flourish'd after, I'd not do't: but since [one,  
Nor brass nor stone, nor parchment, bears not  
Let villany itself forswear't. I must  
Forsake the court: to do't, or no, is certain  
To me a break-neck. Happy star, reign now  
Here comes Bohemia.

*Enter POLIXENES.*

*Pol.* This is strange! methinks,  
My favour here begins to warp. Not speak?—  
Good-day, Camillo.

*Cam.* Hail, most royal sir!

*Pol.* What is the news i' the court?

*Cam.* None rare, my lord.

*Pol.* The king hath on him such a counte-  
nance,

As he had lost some province, and a region,  
Loved as he loves himself: even now I met him  
With customary compliment; when he,  
Wasting his eyes to the contrary, and falling  
A lip of much contempt, speeds from me; and  
So leaves me, to consider what is breeding,  
That changes thus his manners.

*Cam.* I dare not know, my lord.

*Pol.* How! dare not? do not. Do you  
know, and dare not  
Be intelligent to me? 'Tis thereabouts;  
For, to yourself, what you do know, you must;  
And cannot say, you dare not. Good Camillo,  
Your changed complexions are to me a mirror,  
Which shows me mine changed too: for I  
must be

A party in this alteration, finding  
Myself thus alter'd with it.

*Cam.* There is a sickness  
Which puts some of us in distemper; but  
I cannot name the disease; and it is caught  
Of you that yet are well.

*Pol.* How! caught of me?  
Make me not sighted like the basilisk: [better  
I have look'd on thousands, who have sped the  
By my regard, but kill'd none so. Camillo,—  
As you are certainly a gentleman; thereto  
Clerk-like, experienced, which no less adorns  
Our gentry, than our parents' noble names,  
In whose success|| we are gentle¶,—I beseech  
you, [knowledge

If you know aught which does behove my  
Thereof to be inform'd, imprison it not  
In ignorant concealment.

*Cam.* I may not answer.

*Pol.* A sickness caught of me, and yet I well;  
I must be answer'd.—Dost thou hear, Camillo  
I conjure thee, by all the parts of man,

\* Hour-glass. † Hasty. ‡ Maliciously, with effects openly hurtful. § i. e., Could any war  
start off from propriety? || For succession. ¶ Gentle was opposed to simple; well-born



Which honour does acknowledge,—whereof  
the least

Is not this suit of mine,—that thou declare  
What incidence thou dost guess of harm  
Is creeping toward me; how far off, how near;  
Which way to be prevented, if to be;  
If not, how best to bear it.

*Cam.* Sir, I'll tell you;  
Since I am charged in honour, and by him—  
That I think honourable: Therefore, mark my  
counsel;

Which must be even as swiftly follow'd, as  
I mean to utter it; or both yourself and me  
Cry, *lost*, and so good-night.

*Pol.* On, good Camillo.

*Cam.* I am appointed Him to murder you\*.

*Pol.* By whom, Camillo?

*Cam.* By the king.

*Pol.* For what?

*Cam.* He thinks, nay, with all confidence  
he swears,

As he had seen't, or been an instrument  
To vice† you to't,—that you have touch'd his  
Forbiddenly. [queen

*Pol.* O, then my best blood turn  
To an infected jelly; and my name  
Be yoked with his, that did betray the best!  
Turn then my freshest reputation to  
A savour, that may strike the dullest nostril  
Where I arrive; and my approach be shunn'd,  
Nay, hated too, worse than the great'st infec-  
That e'er was heard, or read! [tion

*Cam.* Swear his thought over  
By each particular star in heaven, and  
By all their influences, you may as well  
Forbid the sea for to obey the moon,  
As or, by oath, remove, or counsel, shake,  
The fabric of his folly; whose foundation  
Is piled upon his faith†, and will continue  
The standing of his body.

*Pol.*

How should this grow?

*Cam.* I know not: but, I am sure, 'tis safer  
to [born.

Avoid what's grown, than question how 'tis  
If therefore you dare trust my honesty,—  
That lies enclosed in this trunk, which you  
Shall bear along impawn'd,—away to-night.  
Your followers I will whisper to the business;  
And will, by twos and threes, at several posterns,  
Clear them o' the city: For myself, I'll put  
My fortunes to your service, which are here  
By this discovery lost. Be not uncertain;  
For, by the honour of my parents, I  
Have utter'd truth: which if you seek to prove,  
I dare not stand by; nor shall you be safer  
Than one condemn'd by the king's own mouth  
His execution sworn. [thereon

*Pol.*

I do believe thee:

I saw his heart in his face. Give me thy hand;  
Be pilot to me, and thy places shall  
Still neighbour mine; My ships are ready, and  
My people did expect my hence departure  
Two days ago.—'Tis jealousy

Is for a precious creature: as she's rare,  
Must it be great; and, as his person's mighty,  
Must it be violent; and as he does conceive  
He is dishonour'd by a man which ever  
Profess'd to him, why, his revenges must [me.  
In that be made more bitter. Fear o'ershades  
Good expedition be my friend, and comfort  
The gracious queen, part of his theme, but  
nothing

Of his ill-ta'en suspicion! Come, Camillo;

I will respect thee as a father, if

Thou bear'st my life off hence: Let us avoid.

*Cam.* It is in mine authority, to command  
The keys of all the posterns: Please you  
highness

To take the urgent hour: come, sir, away.

[*Exeunt*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter* HERMIONE, MAMILLIUS, and Ladies.

*Her.* Take the boy to you: he so troubles  
'Tis past enduring. [me,

1 *Lady.* Come, my gracious lord,  
Shall I be your play-fellow?

*Mam.* No, I'll none of you.

1 *Lady.* Why, my sweet lord? [as if

*Mam.* You'll kiss me hard; and speak to me  
I were a baby still.—I love you better.

2 *Lady.* And why so, my good lord?

*Mam.* Not for because  
Your brows are blacker; yet black brows,  
they say,

Become some women best; so that there be  
not

Too much hair there, but in a semi-circle,  
Or half-moon made with a pen.

2 *Lady.* Who taught you this?

*Mam.* I learn'd it out of women's faces.—

What colour are your eye-brows? [Pray now

1 *Lady.* Blue, my lord.

*Mam.* Nay, that's a mock: I have seen a

lady's nose

That has been blue, but not her eye-brows.

2 *Lady.* Hark ye:

The queen, your mother, rounds apace: we shall  
Present our services to a fine new prince,  
One of these days: and then you'd wanton  
If we would have you. [with us,

1 *Lady.* She is spread of late

Into a goodly bulk: Good time encounter her!

*Her.* What wisdom stirs amongst you?

Come, sir, now

I am for you again: Pray you, sit by us,  
And tell 's a tale.

*Mam.* Merry, or sad, shall't be?

*Her.* As merry as you will.

*Mam.* A sad tale's best for winter

\* i. e., I am the person appointed, &c.

† Pray

‡ Settled belief.

have one of sprites and goblins.

*Her.* Let's have that, sir.  
Come on, sit down:—Come on, and do your best [ful at it.

To fright me with your sprites: you're power-

*Mam.* There was a man, —

*Her.* Nay, come, sit down; then on.

*Mam.* Dwelt by a church-yard;—I will tell

You crickets shall not hear it. [it softly;

*Her.* Come on then,

And give't me in mine ear.

*Enter LEONTES, ANTIGONUS, Lords, and Others.*

*Leon.* Was he met there? his train? Camillo with him? [them; never

1 *Lord.* Behind the tuft of pines I met  
Saw I men scour so on their way: I eyed them  
Even to their ships.

*Leon.* How bless'd am I  
In my just censure? in my true opinion?—  
Alack, for lesser knowledge! How accursed,  
In being so blest!—There may be in the cup  
A spider; steep'd, and one may drink; depart,  
And yet partake no venom; for his knowledge  
Is not infected: but if one present

The abhorr'd ingredient to his eye, make known  
How he hath drank, he cracks his gorge, his  
sides, [the spider.

With violent hefts;—I have drank and seen  
Camillo was his help in this, his pander:—  
There is a plot against my life, my crown;  
All's true that is mistrusted:—that false villain,  
Whom I employ'd, was pre-employ'd by him:  
He has discover'd my design, and I

Remain a pinch'd thing; yea, a very trick  
For them to play at will:—How came the  
So easily open? [posterns

1 *Lord.* By his great authority;  
Which often hath no less prevail'd than so,  
On your command.

*Leon.* I know't too well.—  
Give me the boy; I am glad, you did not nurse  
him: [you

Though he does bear some signs of me, yet  
Have too much blood in him.

*Her.* What is this? sport?  
*Leon.* Bear the boy hence, he shall not  
come about her;

Away with him:—and let her sport herself  
With that she's big with; for 'tis Polixenes  
Has made thee swell thus.

*Her.* But I'd say, he had not,  
And, I'll be sworn, you would believe me  
Howe'er you lean to the nayward. [saying,

*Leon.* You, my lords,  
Look on her, mark her well; be but about  
To say, *she is a goodly lady*, and  
The justice of your hearts will thereto add,  
'Tis pity she's not honest, honourable:

Praise her but for this her without-door form,  
(Which, on my faith, deserves high speech,)  
and straight [brands,

The shrug, the hum, or ha; these petty

That calumny doth use:—O, I am out,  
That mercy does; for calumny will sear ¶  
Virtue itself:—these shrugs, these hums, and  
ha's, [tween,

When you have said, she's goodly, come be-  
ere you can say she's honest: But be it known  
From him that has most cause to grieve it  
She's an adulteress. [should be,

*Her.* Should a villain say so,  
The most replenish'd villain in the world,  
He were as much more villain: you, my lord,  
Do but mistake.

*Leon.* You have mistook, my lady,  
Polixenes for Leontes: O thou thing,  
Which I'll not call a creature of thy place,  
Lest barbarism, making me the precedent,  
Should a like language use to all degrees,  
And mannerly distinguishment leave out  
Betwixt the prince and beggar!—I have said,  
She's an adulteress; I have said with whom:  
More, she's a traitor; and Camillo is  
A federary \*\* with her; and one that knows  
What she should shame to know herself,  
But †† with her most vile principal, that she's  
A bed-swarver, even as bad as those  
That vulgars give bold titles; ay, and privy  
To this their late escape.

*Her.* No, by my life  
Privy to none of this: How will this grieve  
you, [that  
When you shall come to clearer knowledge.  
You thus have publish'd me? Gentle my lord,  
You scarce can right me thoroughly then, to say  
You did mistake.

*Leon.* No, no; if I mistake  
In those foundations which I build upon,  
The centre is not big enough to bear  
A school-boy's top.—Away with her to prison;  
He, who shall speak for her, is afar off guilty ‡,  
But that he speaks §§.

*Her.* There's some ill planet reigns:  
I must be patient, till the heavens look  
With an aspect more favourable.—Good my  
I am not prone to weeping, as our sex [lords,  
Commonly are; the want of which vain dew,  
Perchance, shall dry your pities: but I have  
That honourable grief lodged here, which  
burns [lord,

Worse than tears drown: Beseech you all, my  
With thoughts so qualified as your charities  
Shall best instruct you, measure me;—and so  
The king's will be perform'd!

*Leon.* Shall I be heard?  
[To the Guards.

*Her.* Who is't, that goes with me?—Be-  
seech your highness,  
My women may be with me; for, you see,  
My plight requires it. Do not weep, good  
fools; [mistress  
There is no cause: when you shall know, you  
Has deserved prison, then abound in tears,  
As I come out: this action, I now go on,  
Is for my better grace.—Adieu, my lord:

\* Judgment. † O that my knowledge were less. ‡ Spiders were esteemed poisonous  
in our author's time.

¶ Brand as infamous. §§ Confederate. || A thing pinch'd out of clouts, a puppet.

†† Only. ‡‡ Remotely guilty

§§ In merely speaking.

I never wish'd to see you sorry; now, [leave.  
I trust, I shall.—My women, come; you have  
*Leon.* Go, do our bidding; hence.

[*Exeunt Queen and Ladies.*

*1 Lord.* 'Beseech your highness, call the queen again. [justice

*Ant.* Be certain what you do, sir; lest your Prove violence; in the which three great ones suffer,

Yourself, your queen, your son.

*1 Lord.* For her, my lord,—

I dare my life lay down, and will do't, sir,  
Please you to accept it, that the queen is spotless  
P'the eyes of heaven, and to you; I mean,  
In this which you accuse her.

*Ant.* If it prove

She's otherwise, I'll keep my stables\* where  
I lodge my wife; I'll go in couples with her;  
Than when I feel, and see her, no further trust  
her;

For every inch of woman in the world,  
Ay, every dram of woman's flesh, is false,  
If she be.

*Leon.* Hold your peace.

*1 Lord.* Good my lord—

*Ant.* It is for you we speak, not for ourselves:  
You are abused, and by some putter-on†,

That will be damn'd for't; 'would I knew the villain, [flaw'd,—

I would land-damn him: Be she honour-  
I have three daughters; the eldest is eleven;  
The second, and the third, nine, and some five;  
If this prove true, they'll pay for't: by mine honour,

I'll geld them all; fourteen they shall not see,  
To bring false generations: they are co-heirs;  
And I had rather glib myself, than they  
Should not produce fair issue.

*Leon.* Cease; no more.

You smell this business with a sense as cold  
As is a dead man's nose: I see't, and feel't,  
As you feel doing thus; and see withal  
The instruments that feel.

*Ant.* If it be so,

We need no grave to bury honesty;  
There's not a grain of it, the face to sweeten  
Of the whole dungy earth.

*Leon.* What! lack I credit?

*1 Lord.* I had rather you did lack than I,  
my lord, [me

Upon this ground: and more it would content  
To have her honour true, than your suspicion;  
Be blamed for't how you might.

*Leon.* Why, what need we

Commune with you of this? but rather follow  
Our forceful instigation? Our prerogative [ness  
Calls not your counsels; but our natural good-  
Imparts this: which,—if you (or stupified,  
Or seeming so in skill,) cannot, or will not,  
Relish as truth, like us; inform yourselves,  
We need no more of your advice: the matter,  
The loss, the gain, the ordering on't, is all  
Properly ours.

*Ant.* And I wish, my liege,

You had only in your silent judgment tried it,  
Without more overture.

*Leon.*

How could that be?

Either thou art most ignorant by age,  
Or thou wert born a fool. Camillo's flight,  
Added to their familiarity,  
(Which was as gross as ever touch'd conjecture.  
That lack'd sight only, nought for approbation;†  
But only seeing, all other circumstances  
Made up to the deed,) doth push on this pro-  
Yet, for a greater confirmation, [ceeding:  
(For, in an act of this importance, 'twere [post  
Most piteous to be wild,) I have despatch'd in  
To sacred Delphos, to Apollo's temple,  
Cleomenes and Dion, whom you know  
Of stuff'd sufficiency: Now, from the oracle  
They will bring all; whose spiritual counsel had  
Shall stop, or spur me. Have I done well?

*1 Lord.* Well done, my lord. [more

*Leon.* Though I am satisfied, and need not  
Than what I know, yet shall the oracle  
Give rest to the minds of others; such as he,  
Whose ignorant credulity will not [good  
Come up to the truth: So have we thought in  
From our free person she should be confined;  
Lest that the treachery of the two, fled hence,  
Be left her to perform. Come, follow us;  
We are to speak in public: for this business  
Will raise us all.

*Ant.* [*Aside.*] To laughter, as I take it,  
If the good truth were known. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The same. The outer Room  
of a Prison.*

*Enter PAULINA and Attendants.*

*Paul.* The keeper of the prison,—call to  
him; [Exit an Attendant.  
Let him have knowledge who I am.—Good  
lady!

No court in Europe is too good for thee, [sir,  
What dost thou then in prison?—Now, good  
*Re-enter Attendant, with the Keeper.*

You know me, do you not?

*Keep.* For a worthy lady,  
And one whom I much honour.

*Paul.* Pray you, then,

Conduct me to the queen.

*Keep.* I may not, madam; to the contrary  
I have express commandment.

*Paul.* Here't adoe,

To lock up honesty and honour from  
The access of gentle visitors!—Is it lawful,  
Pray you, to see her women? any of them?  
Emilia?

*Keep.* So please you, madam, to put  
Apart these your attendants, I shall bring  
Emilia forth.

*Paul.* I pray now, call her.

Withdraw yourselves. [*Exeunt Attend.*

*Keep.* And, madam,

I must be present at your conference.

*Paul.* Well, be it so, pray thee. [*Exit Keeper.*  
Here's such ado to make no stain a stain,  
As passes colouring.

*Re-enter Keeper, with EMILIA.*

Dear gentlewoman, how fares our gracious lady?

*Emil.* As well as one so great, and so forlorn,  
May hold together: On her frights, and griefs

\* Take my station.

† Instigator.

‡ Proof.

§ Of abilities more than sufficient.



(Which never tender lady hath borne greater.)  
She is, something before her time, deliver'd.

*Paul.* A boy?

*Emil.* A daughter; and a goodly babe,  
Lusty, and like to live: the queen receives  
Much comfort in't: says, *My poor prisoner,*  
*I am innocent as you.*

*Paul.* I dare be sworn: —  
These dangerous unsafe lunes \* o' the king!  
beshrew them!

He must be told on't, and he shall: the office  
Becomes a woman best; I'll take't upon me:  
If I prove honey-month'd, let my tongue  
And never to my red-look'd anger be [blister;  
The trumpet any more:—Pray you, *Emilia*,  
Commend my best obedience to the queen;  
If she dares trust me with her little babe,  
I'll show't the king, and undertake to be  
Her advocate to th' londest: We do not know  
How he may soften at the sight o' the child;  
The silence often of pure innocence  
Persuades, when speaking fails.

*Emil.* Most worthy madam,  
Your honour, and your goodness, is so evident,  
That your free undertaking cannot miss  
A thriving issue; there is no lady living,  
So meet for this great errand: Please your la-  
To visit the next room, I'll presently [dyship  
Acquaint the queen of your most noble offer;  
Who, but to-day, hammer'd of this design;  
But durst not tempt a minister of honour,  
Lest she should be denied.

*Paul.* Tell her, *Emilia*,  
I'll use that tongue I have: if wit flow from it,  
As boldness from my bosom, let it not be  
I shall do good. [doubted]

*Emil.* Now be you blest for it!  
I'll to the queen: Please you, come something  
nearer. [the babe,

*Keep.* Madam, if't please the queen to send  
I know not what I shall incur, to pass it,  
Having no warrant.

*Paul.* You need not fear it, sir:  
The child was prisoner to the womb; and is,  
By law and process of great nature, thence  
Free'd and enfranchis'd: not a party to  
The anger of the king; nor guilty of,  
If any be, the trespass of the queen.

*Keep.* I do believe it.

*Paul.* Do not you fear: upon  
Mine honour, I will stand 'twixt you and  
danger. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. *The same. A Room in the  
Palace.*

*Enter LEONTES, ANTIAGONUS, Lords, and  
other Attendants.*

*Leon.* Nor night, nor day, no rest: It is  
but weakness

To bear the matter thus; mere weakness, if  
The cause were not in being;—part o' the cause,  
She, the adulteress:—for the harlot king  
Is quite beyond mine arm, out of the blank  
And level† of my brain, plot-proof: but she  
I can hook to me: Say, that she were gone,  
Given to the fire, a moiety of my rest

Might come to me again.——Who's there?  
*I Atten.* My lord?

[Advancing.

*Leon.* How does the boy?

*I Atten.* He took good rest to-night,  
'Tis hop'd, his sickness is discharged.

*Leon.* To see

His nobleness!

Conceiving the dishonour of his mother,  
He straight declined, droop'd, took it deeply;  
Fasten'd and fix'd the shame on't in himself;  
Threw off his spirit, his appetite, his sleep,  
And downright languish'd.—Leave me solely‡:  
—go, [no thought of him;—

See how he fares. [*Exit Atten.*—Fie, fie!  
The very thought of my revenges that way  
Recoil upon me: in himself too mighty;  
And in his parties, his alliance,—Let him be,  
Until a time may serve: for present vengeance,  
Take it on her. *Camillo* and *Polixenes*:  
Laugh at me; make their pastime at my sorrow:  
They should not laugh, if I could reach them;  
Shall she, within my power, [nor

*Enter PAULINA, with a Child.*

*I Lord.* You must not enter.

*Paul.* Nay, rather, godd my lords, be se-  
cond to me:

Fear you his tyrannous passion more, alas,  
Than the queen's life? a gracious innocent soul;  
More free, than he is jealous.

*Ant.* That's enough.

*I Atten.* Madam, he hath not slept to-night;  
None should come at him. [commanded]

*Paul.* Not so hot, good sir;  
I come to bring him sleep. 'Tis such as you,—  
That creep like shadows by him, and do sigh  
At each his needless heavings,—such as you  
Nourish the cause of his awaking: I  
Do come with words as medicinal as true;  
Honest, as either; to purge him of that humour,  
That presses him from sleep.

*Leon.* What noise there, ho?

*Paul.* No noise, my lord; but needful confer-  
About some gossipings for your highness. [ence,

*Leon.* How?—

Away with that audacious lady: *Antagonus*,  
I charged thee, that she should not come about  
I knew, she would. [me;

*Ant.* I told her so, my lord,  
On your displeasure's peril, and on mine,  
She should not visit you.

*Leon.* What, canst not rule her?

*Paul.* From all dishonesty, he can: in this,  
(Unless he take the course that you have done,  
Commit me, for committing honour,) trust it,  
He shall not rule me.

*Ant.* Lo you now; you hear!  
When she will take the rein, I let her run;  
But she'll not stumble.

*Paul.* Good my liege, I come,—  
And, I beseech you, hear me, who profess  
Myself your loyal servant, your physician,  
Your most obedient counsellor; yet that dare  
Less appear so, in comforting your evils§,  
Than such as most seem yours:—I say, I come  
From your good queen.

\* Frenzies.

† Marl and aim.

‡ Alone.

§ Abetting your ill courses.

*Leon.* Good queen!  
*Paul.* Good queen, my lord, good queen: I say, good queen;  
 And would by combat make her good, so were I  
 A man, the worst\* about you.

*Leon.* Force her hence.  
*Paul.* Let him, that makes but trifles of his eyes,  
 First hand me: on mine own accord, I'll off;  
 But, first, I'll do my errand.—The good queen,  
 For she is good, hath brought you forth a daughter  
 Here 'tis; commend it to your blessing. [ter;  
 [Laying down the Child.

*Leon.* Out!  
 A unkind† witch! Hence with her, out o'  
 A most intelligencing bawd! [door:

*Paul.* Not so:  
 I am as ignorant in that, as you  
 In so entitling me: and no less honest [rant,  
 Than you are mad; which is enough, I'll war-  
 As this world goes, to pass for honest.

*Leon.* Traitors!  
 Will you not push her out? Give her the bas-  
 tard:— [man-tired], unroosted  
 Thou, dotard, [To ANTIGONUS.] thou art wo-  
 By thy dame Partlet here,—take up the  
 bastard;  
 Take't up, I say; give't to thy crone‡.

*Paul.* For ever  
 Unvenerable be thy hands, if thou [ness  
 Takest up the princess, by that forced|| base-  
 Which he has put upon't!

*Leon.* He dreads his wife.  
*Paul.* So, I would, you did; then, 'twere  
 past all doubt,

You'd call your children yours.

*Leon.* A nest of traitors!  
*Ant.* I am none, by this good light.

*Paul.* Nor I: nor any,  
 But one, that's here; and that's himself: for he  
 The sacred honour of himself, his queen's,  
 His hopeful son's, his babe's, betrays to slander,  
 Whose sting is sharper than the sword's; and  
 will not

(For, as the case now stands, it is a curse  
 He cannot be compell'd to:\*) once remove  
 The root of his opinion, which is rotten,  
 As ever oak, or stone, was sound.

*Leon.* A callat¶,  
 Of boundless tongue; who late hath beat her  
 husband,

And now baits me!—This brat is none of mine;  
 It is the issue of Polixenes:  
 Hence with it, and together with the dam,  
 Commit them to the fire.

*Paul.* It is yours; [charge,  
 And, might we lay the old proverb to your  
 So like you 'tis the worse.—Behold, my lords,  
 Although the print be little, the whole matter  
 And copy of the father: eye, nose, lip, [valley,  
 The trick of his frown, his forehead; nay, the  
 The pretty dimples of his chin, and cheek; his  
 smiles; finger:—

The very mould and frame of hand, nail,

And, thou, good goddess nature, which hast  
 made it

So like to him that got it, if thou hast [colours  
 The ordering of the mind too, 'mongst all  
 No yellow\*\* in't; lest she suspect as he does,  
 Her children not her husband's!

*Leon.* A gross hag!—  
 And, Lozell†, thou art worthy to be hang'd,  
 That wilt not stay her tongue.

*Ant.* Hang all the husbands,  
 That cannot do that feat, you'll leave yourself  
 Hardly one subject.

*Leon.* Once more, take her hence  
*Paul.* A most unworthy and unnatural lord  
 Can do no more.

*Leon.* I'll have thee burn'd.

*Paul.* I care not:  
 It is an heretic, that makes the fire, [tyrant;  
 Not she which burns in't. I'll not call you  
 But this most cruel usage of your queen  
 (Not able to produce more accusation [savours  
 Than your own weak-hinged fancy,) something  
 Of tyranny, and will ignoble make you,  
 Yea, scandalous to the world.

*Leon.* On your allegiance,  
 Out of the chamber with her. Were I a tyrant  
 Where were her life? she durst not call me so  
 If she did know me one. Away with her. [gone

*Paul.* I pray you do not push me; I'll be  
 Look to your babe, my lord; 'tis yours: Jove  
 send her [hands!—

A better guiding spirit!—What need these  
 You, that are thus so tender o'er his follies,  
 Will never do him good, not one of you.  
 So, so:—Farewell; we are gone. [Exit.

*Leon.* Thou, traitor, hast set on thy wife to  
 this.—

My child? away with't!—even thou, that hast  
 A heart so tender o'er it, take it hence,  
 And see it instantly consumed with fire;  
 Even thou, and none but thou. Take it up  
 straight:

Within this hour bring me word 'tis done,  
 (And by good testimony,) or I'll seize thy life,  
 With what thou else call'st thine: If thou refuse,  
 And wilt encounter with my wrath, say so;  
 The bastard brains with these my proper hands  
 Shall I dash out. Go, take it to the fire;  
 For thou sett'st on thy wife.

*Ant.* I did not, sir:  
 These lords, my noble fellows, if they please,  
 Can clear me in't.

*1 Lord.* We can; my royal liege,  
 He is not guilty of her coming hither.

*Leon.* You are liars all. [better credit:

*1 Lord.* 'Beseech your highness, give us  
 We have always truly served you; and beseech  
 So to esteem of us: And on our knees we beg,  
 (As recompense of our dear services, [purpose;  
 Past, and to come,) that you do change this  
 Which, being so horrible, so bloody, must  
 Lead on to some foul issue: We all kneel.

*Leon.* I am a feather for each wind that  
 blows:—

\* Lowest. † Masculine. ‡ Pecked by a woman; hen-pecked. § Worn-out old woman.  
 ¶ Faced is false; uttered with violence to truth. ¶ Trull. \*\* The colour of jealousy.

Shall I live on, to see this bastard kneel  
And call me father? Better burn it now,  
Than curse it then. But, be it; let it live:  
It shall not neither.—You, sir, come you  
hither; [To ANTIGONUS.]

You, that have been so tenderly officious  
With lady Margery, your midwife, there,  
To save this bastard's life:—for 'tis a bastard,  
So sure as this beard's gray,—what will you  
To save this brat's life? [adventure

*Ant.* Any thing, my lord,  
That my ability may undergo,  
And nobleness impose: at least, thus much;  
I'll pawn the little blood which I have left,  
To save the innocent: any thing possible.

*Leon.* It shall be possible: Swear by this  
thou wilt perform my bidding. [sword \*,

*Ant.* I will, my lord.

*Leon.* Mark, and perform it; (seest thou?)  
Of any point in't shall not only be [for the fail  
Death to thyself, but to thy lewd-tongued wife;  
Whom, for this time, we pardon. We enjoin  
thee,

As thou art liegeman to us, that thou carry [it  
This female bastard hence; and that thou bear  
To some remote and desert place, quite out  
Of our dominions; and that there thou leave it,  
Without more mercy, to its own protection,  
And favour of the climate. As by strange  
fortune

It came to us, I do in justice charge thee,—  
On thy soul's peril, and thy body's torture,—  
That thou commend it strangely to some place †,

Where chance may nurse, or end it: Take it up.

*Ant.* I swear to do this, though a present  
death [babe]

Had been more merciful—Come on, poor  
Some powerful spirit instruct the kites and  
ravens,

To be thy nurses! Wolves and bears, they say,  
Casting their savageness aside, have done  
Like offices of pity.—Sir, be prosperous  
In more than this deed doth require! and  
blessing,

Against this cruelty, fight on thy side,  
Poor thing, condemn'd to loss!

[Exit, with the Child.

No, I'll not rear

*Leon.*

Another's issue.

*1 Atten.* Please your highness, posts,  
From those you sent to the oracle, are come  
An hour since: Cleomenes and Dion, [landed,  
Being well arrived from Delphos, are both  
Hasting to the court.

*1 Lord.* So please you, sir, their speed  
Hath been beyond account.

*Leon.*

Twenty-three days  
They have been absent: 'Tis good speed; fore-  
The great Apollo suddenly will have [tels,  
The truth of this appear. Prepare you lords;  
Summon a session, that we may arraign  
Our most disloyal lady: for, as she hath  
Been publicly accused, so shall she have  
A just and open trial. While she lives,  
My heart will be a burden to me. Leave me,  
And think upon my bidding. [Exeunt.

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *The same. A street in some  
Town.*

*Enter CLEOMENES and DION.*

*Cleo.* The climate's delicate; the air most  
sweet;

Fertile the isle; the temple much surpassing  
The common praise it bears.

*Dion.* I shall report,  
For most it caught me, the celestial habits,  
(Methinks, I so should term them), and the  
reverence

Of the grave wearers. O, the sacrifice!  
How ceremonious, solemn, and unearthly  
It was i' the offering!

*Cleo.* But, of all, the burst  
And the ear-deafening voice o' the oracle,  
Kin to Jove's thunder, so surprised my sense,  
That I was nothing.

*Dion.* If the event o' the journey  
Prove as successful to the queen,—O, be't  
so!—

As it hath been to us, rare, pleasant, speedy,  
The time is worth the use on't.

*Cleo.* Great Apollo,  
Turn all to the best! These proclamations,  
So forcing faults upon Hermione,  
I little like.

*Dion.* The violent carriage of it  
Will clear, or end, the business: When the  
oracle,

(Thus by Apollo's great divine seal'd up)  
Shall the contents discover, something rare,  
Even § then will rush to knowledge.—Go,—  
fresh horses;—

And gracious be the issue! [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—*The same. A Court of Justice.*

LEONTES, Lords, and Officers, appear pro-  
perly seated.

*Leon.* This sessions (to our great grief, we  
pronounce),

Even pushes 'gainst our heart: The party tried,  
The daughter of a king; our wife; and one  
Of us too much beloved.—Let us be clear'd  
Of being tyrannous, since we so openly  
Proceed in justice; which shall have due course  
Even § to the guilt, or the purgation.—  
Produce the prisoner.

*Offi.* It is his highness' pleasure, that the queen  
Appear in person here in court.—Silence!

HERMIONE is brought in, guarded; PAULI  
NA and Ladies, attending.

*Leon.* Read the indictment.

*Offi.* Hermione, queen to the worthy Leontes,  
king of Sicilia, thou art here accused

\* It was anciently a practice to swear by the cross at the hilt of a sword. † i. e., Commit it to some place as a stranger. ‡ i. e., Our journey has recompensed us the time we spent in it. § Equal.



*and arraigned of high treason, in committing adultery with Polixenes, king of Bohemia; and conspiring with Camillo to take away the life of our sovereign lord the king, thy royal husband; the patience\* whereof being by circumstances partly laid open, thou, Hermione, contrary to the faith and allegiance of a true subject, didst counsel and aid them, for their better safety, to fly away by night.*

*Her.* Since what I am to say, must be but that Which contradicts my accusation; and The testimony on my part, no other [boot me But what comes from myself; it shall scarce To say, *Not guilty*: mine integrity, Being counted falsehood†, shall, as I express it, Be so received. But thus,—If powers divine Behold our human actions, (as they do,) I doubt not, then, but innocence shall make False accusation blush, and tyranny [know, Tremble at patience.—You, my lord, best (Who least will seem to do so,) my past life Hath been as continent, as chaste, as true, As I am now unhappy; which is more Than history can pattern, though devised, And play'd, to take spectators: For behold me, A fellow of the royal bed, which owe† A moiety of the throne, a great king's daughter, The mother to a hopeful prince,—here standing To prate and talk for life, and honour, †fore Who please to come and hear. For life, I prize it As I weigh grief, which I would spare: for †is a derivative from me to mine, [honour, And only that I stand for. I appeal To your own conscience, sir, before Polixenes Came to your court, how I was in your grace, How merited to be so; since he came, With what encounter so concurrent I Have strain'd, to appear thus: if one jot beyond The bound of honour; or, in act, or will, That way inclining; harden'd be the hearts Of all that hear me, and my near'st of kin Cry, lie upon my grave!

*Leon.* I ne'er heard yet, That any of these bolder vices wanted Less impudence to gainsay what they did, Than to perform it first.

*Her.* That's true enough Though 'tis a saying, sir, not due to me.

*Leon.* You will not own it.

*Her.* More than mistress of, Which comes to me in name of fault, I must At all acknowledge. For Polixenes, [not (With whom I am accused,) I do confess, I loved him, as in honour he required; With such a kind of love, as might become A lady like me: with a love, even such, So, and no other, as yourself commanded: Which not to have done, I think, had been in Both disobedience and ingratitude, [me To you, and toward your friend; whose love had spoke

Even since it could speak, from an infant, That it was yours. Now, for conspiracy, [freely,

\* Scheme laid. † Treachery. ‡ Own, possess. § Is within the reach. ¶ They who have done like you. ¶ Ill starred; born under an inauspicious planet. \*\* i. e., The degree of strength which it is customary to acquire before women are suffered to go abroad a. ter child-bearing

I know not how it tastes; though it be dish'd For me to try how: all I know of it, Is, that Camillo was an honest man; And, why he left your court, the gods themselves, Wotting no more than I, are ignorant. [selves, *Leon.* You knew of his departure, as you know

What you have undertaken to do in his absence. *Her.* Sir,

You speak a language that I understand not: My life stands in the level of your dreams, Which I'll lay down.

*Leon.* Your actions are my dreams; You had a bastard by Polixenes, [all shame, And I but dream'd it:—As you were past (Those of your fact† are so,) so past all truth Which to deny, concerns more than avails:

For as Thy brat hath been cast out, like to itself, No father owning it, (which is, indeed, More criminal in thee, than it,) so thou Shalt feel our justice; in whose easiest pass Look for no less than death. [sage,

*Her.* Sir, spare your threats; The bug, which you would fright me with, I To me can life be no commodity: [seek. The crown and comfort of my life, your father I do give lost; for I do feel it gone, [vow, But know not how it went: My second joy, And first-fruits of my body, from his presence, I am barred, like one infectious: My third comfort,

Starr'd most unluckily ¶, is from my breast The innocent milk in its most innocent mouth Haled out to murder: Myself on every post Proclaim'd a strumpet; With immodest hatred, The child-bed privilege denied, which †ongs To women of all fashion:—Lastly, hurried Here to this place, †he open air, before I have got strength of limit \*\*. Now, my liege, Tell me what blessings I have here alive, That I should fear to die? Therefore, proceed. But yet hear this; mistake me not;—No!

life, I prize it not a straw:—but for mine honour, (Which I would free,) if I shall be condemn'd † Upon surmises; all proofs sleeping else, But what your jealousies awake; I tell you, 'Tis rigour, and not law. Your honours all, I do refer me to the oracle;

*Apollō be my judge.* *Lord.* This your request Is altogether just: therefore, bring forth, And in Apollō's name, his oracle.

[*Enter certain Officers.*

*Her.* The emperor of Russia was my father: O, that he were alive, and here beholding His daughter's trial! that he did but see The flatness of my misery; yet with eyes Of pity, not revenge!

*Re-enter Officers with CLEOMENES and DION.*

*Offi.* You here shall swear upon this sword That you, Cleomenes and Dion, have [of justice

Been both at Delphos; and from thence have brought

This seal'd-up oracle, by the hand deliver'd  
Of great Apollo's priest; and that, since then,  
You have not dared to break the holy seal,  
Nor read the secrets in't.

*Cleo. Dion.* All this we swear.

*Leon.* Break up the seals, and read.

*Offi. [Reads.]* *Hermione is chaste. Polixenes blameless, Camillo a true subject, Leontes a jealous tyrant, his innocent babe truly begotten; and the king shall live without an heir, if that, which is lost, be not found.*

*Lords.* Now blessed be the great Apollo!

*Her.* Praised!

*Leon.* Hast thou read truth?

*Offi.* Ay, my lord; even so  
As it is here set down.

*Leon.* There is no truth at all i'the oracle:  
The sessions shall proceed; this is mere false-

*Enter a Servant, hastily.* [hood.

*Serv.* My lord the king, the king!

*Leon.* What is the business?

*Serv.* O sir, I shall be hated to report it:  
The prince your son, with mere conceit and  
Of the queen's speed\*, is gone. [fear

*Leon.* How! gone?

*Serv.* Is dead. [themselves

*Leon.* Apollo's angry; and the heavens  
Do strike at my injustice [HERMIONE faints]  
How now there? [—Look down,

*Paul.* This news is mortal to the queen;  
And see what death is doing.

*Leon.* Take her hence:  
Her heart is but o'ercharged; she will recover.—  
I have too much believed mine own suspi-  
\*Beseech you, tenderly apply to her [cion:—  
Some remedies for life.—Apollo, pardon  
[Exit PAULINA and Ladies, with HERM.

My great profaneness 'gainst thine oracle!—  
I'll reconcile me to Polixenes;  
New woo my queen: recall the good Camillo;  
Whom I proclaim a man of truth, of mercy:  
For, being transported by my jealousies  
To bloody thoughts and to revenge, I chose  
Camillo for the minister, to poison  
My friend Polixenes: which had been done,  
But that the good mind of Camillo tardied  
My swift command, though I with death, and with  
Reward, did threaten and encourage him,  
Not doing it, and being done: he, most humane,  
And fill'd with honour, to my kingly guest  
Unclass'd my practice; quit his fortunes  
here, [hazard

Which you knew great; and to the certain  
Of all uncertainties himself commended\*,  
No richer than his honour:—How he glisters  
Thorough my rust! and how his piety  
Does my deeds make the blacker!

*Re-enter PAULINA.*

*Paul.* Woe the while!  
O, cut my lace; lest my heart, cracking it,  
Break too!

1 *Lord.* What fit is this, good lady?

*Paul.* What studied torments, tyrant, hast  
for me? [boiling

What wheels? racks? fires? What flaying  
In leads, or oils? what old, or newer torture  
Must I receive; whose every word deserves  
To taste of thy most worst? Thy tyranny  
Together working with thy jealousies,—  
Fancies too weak for boys, too green and idle  
For girls of nine! O, think, what they have done,  
And then run mad, indeed; stark mad! for all  
Thy by-gone fooleries were, but spices of it.  
That thou betray'dst Polixenes, 'twas nothing;  
That did but show thee, of a fool, inconstant,  
And damnably ungrateful: nor was't much,  
Thou would'st have poison'd good Camillo's  
honour,

To have him kill a king; poor trespasses,  
More monstrous standing by: whereof I reckon  
The casting forth to crows thy baby daughter,  
To be or none, or little; though a devil  
Would have shed water out of fire†, ere done't:  
Nor is't directly laid to thee, the death  
Of the young prince; whose honourable  
thoughts [heart

[Thoughts high for one so tender,] cleft the  
That could conceive, a gross and foolish sire  
Blemish'd his gracious dam: this is not, no,  
Laid to thy answer: But the last,—O, lords,  
When I have said, cry, woe!—the queen, the  
queen, [vengeance for't  
The sweetest, dearest, creature's dead; and  
Not dropp'd down yet.

1 *Lord.* The higher powers forbid?

*Paul.* I say, she's dead; I'll swear't: if  
word, nor oath,

Prevail not, go and see: if you can bring  
Tincture, or lustre, in her lip, her eye,  
Heat outwardly, or breath within, I'll serve you  
As I would do the gods.—But, O thou tyrant!  
Do not repeat these things; for they are heavier  
Than all thy woes can stir: therefore betake  
To nothing but despair. A thousand knees [thee  
Ten thousand years together, naked, fasting,  
Upon a barren mountain, and still winter  
In storm perpetual, could not move the gods  
To look that way thou wert.

*Leon.* Go on, go on:

Thou canst not speak too much: I have de-  
All tongues to talk their bitterest. [served

1 *Lord.* Say no more;

Howe'er the business goes, you have made  
I'the boldness of your speech. [fault

*Paul.* I am sorry for't; them,  
All faults I make, when I shall come to know  
I do repent: Alas, I have show'd too much  
The rashness of a woman: he is touch'd  
To the noble heart.—What's gone, and what's  
past help,

Should be past grief: Do not receive affliction  
At my petition, I beseech you; rather  
Let me be punish'd, that have misdeed you  
Of what you should forget. Now, good my luge,  
Sir, royal sir, forgive a foolish woman:  
The love I bore your queen,—lo, fool again!—  
I'll speak of her no more, nor of your children;

\* Of the event of the queen's trial. † Committed. ‡ i. e., A devil would have shed  
tears of pity, ere he would have perpetrated such an action.

I'll not remember you of my own lord,  
Who is lost too : Take your patience to you,  
And I'll say nothing.

*Leon.* Thou didst speak but well, [better  
When most the truth ; which I receive much  
Than to be pitied of thee. Pr'ythee, bring me  
To the dead bodies of my queen, and son :  
One grave shall be for both : upon them shall  
The causes of their death appear, unto  
Our shame perpetual : Once a day I'll visit  
The chapel where they lie ; and tears, shed  
Shall be my recreation : So long as [there,  
Nature will bear up with this exercise,  
So long I daily vow to use it. Come,  
And lead me to these sorrows. *[Exit.*

SCENE III. Bohemia. A desert Country  
near the Sea.

*Enter ANTIGONUS, with the Child ; and a  
Mariner.*

*Ant.* Thou art perfect\* then, our ship hath  
The deserts of Bohemia? [touch'd upon

*Mar.* Ay, my lord ; and fear  
We have landed in ill time : the skies look  
grimly, [science,  
And threaten present blusters. In my con-  
The heavens with that we have in hand are  
And frown upon us. [angry,

*Ant.* Their sacred wills be done!—Go, get  
abroad ;

Look to thy bark ; I'll not be long, before  
I call upon thee.

*Mar.* Make your best haste ; and go not  
Too far i'the land : 'tis like to be loud weather ;  
Besides, this place is famous for the creatures  
Of prey, that keep upon't.

*Ant.* Go thou away :  
I'll follow instantly.

*Mar.* I am glad at heart  
To be so rid o'the business. *[Exit.*

*Ant.* Come, poor babe :—  
I have heard, (but not believed,) the spirits of  
the dead

May walk again : if such thing be, thy mother  
Appear'd to me last night ; for ne'er was dream  
So like a waking. To me comes a creature,  
Sometimes her head on one side, some another ;  
I never saw a vessel of like sorrow,  
So fill'd, and so becoming : in pure white robes,  
Like very sanctity, she did approach  
My cabin where I lay : thrice bow'd before me ;  
And, gasping to begin some speech, her eyes  
Became two spouts : the fury spent, anon  
Did this break from her : *Good Antigonus,  
Since fate, against thy better disposition,  
Hath made thy person for the thrower-out  
Of my poor babe, according to thine oath,—  
Places remote enough are in Bohemia,  
There weep, and leave it crying ; and, for,  
Is counted lost for ever, Perdita, [the babe  
I pr'ythee, call't ; for this ungentle business,  
Put on thee by my lord, thou ne'er shalt see  
Thy wife Paulina more :—and so, with shrieks  
She melted into air. Affrighted much,  
I did in time collect myself ; and thought [toys:  
This was so, and no slumber. Dreams are*

Yet, for this once, yea, superstitiously,  
I will be squared by this. I do believe,  
Hermione hath suffer'd death ; and that  
Apollo would, this being indeed the issue  
Of king Polixenes, it should here be laid,  
Either for life, or death, upon the earth  
Of its right father.—Blossom, speed thee well!

*[Laying down the Child.*  
There lie ; and there thy character : there  
these ; *[Laying down a Bundle.*

Which may, if fortune please, both breed  
thee, pretty, [Poor wretch,

And still rest thine.—The storm begins :—  
That, for thy mother's fault, art thus exposed  
To loss, and what may follow !—Weep I cannot,  
But my heart bleeds : and most accursed am I,  
To be by oath enjoin'd to this.—Farewell!

The day frowns more and more ; thou art  
A lullaby too rough : I never saw [like to have  
The heavens so dim by day. A savage cla-  
mour !—

Well may I get aboard !—This is the chase ;  
I am gone for ever. *[Exit, pursued by a Bear  
Enter an old Shepherd.*

*Shep.* I would, there were no age between  
ten and three-and-twenty ; or that youth  
would sleep out the rest : for there is nothing  
in the between but getting wenches with child,  
wronging the ancience, stealing, fighting.—  
Hark you now !—Would any but these boil-  
ed brains of nineteen, and two-and-twenty,  
hunt this weather? They have scared away  
two of my best sheep ; which, I fear, the wolf  
will sooner find, than the master : if any  
where I have them, 'tis by the sea-side,  
browsing on ivy. Good luck, an't be thy  
will ! what have we here? *[Taking up the  
Child.]* Mercy on's, a barne! ; a very pretty  
barne ! A boy, or a child, I wonder? A  
pretty one ; a very pretty one : Sure, some  
scape : though I am not bookish, yet I can  
read waiting-gentlewoman in the scape. This  
has been some stair-work, some trunk-work,  
some behind-door-work : they were warmer  
that got this, than the poor thing is here. I'll  
take it up for pity : yet I'll tarry till my son  
come ; he halloo'd but even now. Whoa, ho  
hoa ! *Enter Clown.*

*Clow.* Hilloa, loa !

*Shep.* What, art so near ? If thou'lt see a  
thing to talk on when thou art dead and rot-  
ten, come hither. What ailest thou, man ?

*Clow.* I have seen two such sights, by sea,  
and by land ;—but I am not to say, it is a sea,  
for it is now the sky ; betwixt the firmament  
and it, you cannot thrust a bodkin's point.

*Shep.* Why, boy, how is it ?

*Clow.* I would, you did but see how it  
chafes, how it rages, how it takes up the  
shore ! but that's not to the point : O, the  
most piteous cry of the poor souls ! sometimes  
to see 'em, and not to see 'em : now the ship  
boring the moon with her main-mast ; and  
anon swallowed with yest and froth, as you'd  
thrust a cork into a hogshead. And then for  
the land service,—To see how the bear tore

\* Well assured. † The writing afterward discovered with Perdita. ‡ Child. § Female infant



out his shoulder-bone ; how he cried to me for help, and said, his name was Antigonus, a nobleman :—But to make an end of the ship :—to see how the sea flap-dragoned \* it :—but, first, how the poor souls roared, and the sea mocked them ;—and how the poor gentleman roared, and the bear mocked him, both roaring louder than the sea, or weather.

*Shep.* 'Name of mercy, when was this, boy ?

*Clo.* Now, now ; I have not winked since I saw these sights : the men are not yet cold under water, nor the bear half dined on the gentleman ; he's at it now.

*Shep.* Would I had been by, to have helped the old man !

*Clo.* I would you had been by the ship side, to have helped her ; there your charity would have lacked footing.

[*Aside.*

*Shep.* Heavy matters ! heavy matters ! but look thee here, boy. Now bless thyself ; thou met'st with things dying, I with things new born. Here's a sight for thee ; look thee, a bearing-cloth† for a squire's child ! Look thee here : take up, take up, boy ; open't.

So, let's see ; It was told me, I should be rich by the fairies : this is some changeling †—open't : What's within, boy ?

*Clo.* You're a made old man ; if the sins of your youth are forgiven you, you're well to live. Gold ! all gold !

*Shep.* This is fairy gold, boy, and 'twill prove so : up with it, keep it close ; home, home, the next § way. We are lucky, boy ; and to be so still, requires nothing but secrecy.—Let my sheep go :—Come, good boy, the next way home.

*Clo.* Go you the next way with your findings ; I'll go see if the bear be gone from the gentleman, and how much he hath eaten : they are never curst ¶, but when they are hungry ; if there be any of him left, I'll bury it.

*Shep.* That's a good deed : If thou may'st discern by that which is left of him, what he is, fetch me to the sight of him.

*Clo.* Marry, will I ; and you shall help to put him i'the ground.

*Shep.* 'Tis a lucky day, boy ; and we'll do good deeds on't. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

*Enter Time, as Chorus.*

*Time.* I,—that please some, try all ; both joy, and terror, [error,—

Of good and bad ; that make, and unfold  
Now take upon me, in the name of Time,  
To use my wings. Impute it not a crime,  
To me, or my swift passage, that I slide (tried  
O'er sixteen years, and leave the growth un-  
Of that wide gap¶ ; since it is in my power  
To o'erthrow law, and in one self-born hour  
To plant and o'erwhelm custom : Let me pass  
The same I am, ere ancient'st order was,  
Or what is now received : I witness to  
The times that brought them in ; so shall I do  
To the freshest things now reigning ; and make  
The glistening of this present, as my tale [stale  
Now seems to it. Your patience this allowing,  
I turn my glass ; and give my scene such  
growing.

As you had slept between. Leontes leaving  
The effects of his fond jealousies ; so grieving,  
That he shuts up himself ; imagine me \*\*,  
Gentle spectators, that I now may be  
In fair Bohemia ; and remember well,  
I mentioned a son o'the king's, which Florizel  
I now name to you ; and with speed so pace  
To speak of Perdita, now grown in grace  
Equal with wond'ring : What of her ensues,  
I list not prophesy ; but let Time's news  
Be known, when 'tis brought forth :—a shep-  
herd's daughter,

And what to her adheres, which follows after,  
Is the argument †† of time : Of this allow ‡  
If ever you have spent time worse ere now :

If never yet, that Time himself doth say,  
He wishes earnestly, you never may. [*Exit.*

SCENE I. *The same. A Room in the Palace of Polixenes.*

*Enter POLIXENES and CAMILLO.*

*Pol.* I pray thee, good Camillo, be no more importunate : 'tis a sickness, denying thee any thing ; a death, to grant this.

*Cam.* It is fifteen years, since I saw my country : though I have, for the most part, been aired abroad, I desire to lay my bones there. Besides, the penitent king, my master, hath sent for me : to whose feeling sorrows I might be some allay, or I o'erween §§ to think so ; which is another spur to my departure.

*Pol.* As thou lovest me, Camillo, wipe not out the rest of thy services, by leaving me now : the need I have of thee, thine own goodness hath made ; better not to have had thee, than thus to want thee : thou, having made me businesses, which none, without thee can sufficiently manage, must either stay to execute them thyself, or take away with thee the very services thou hast done : which if I have not enough considered, (as too much I cannot) to be more thankful to thee, shall be my study ; and my profit therein, the heaping friendships ¶¶. Of that fatal country Sicilia, pr'ythee speak no more : whose very naming punishes me with the remembrance of that penitent, as thou call'st him, and reconciled king, my brother ; whose loss of his most

\* Swallowed. † The mantle in which a child was carried to be baptized. ‡ Some child left behind by the fairies, in the room of one which they had stolen. § Nearest.

¶ Mischievous. ¶ i. e., Leave unexamined the progress of the intermediate time which filled up the gap in Perdita's story. \*\* Imagine for me. †† Subject. ‡ Approve.

§§ Think too highly. ¶¶ Friendly offices.

precious queen, and children, are even now to be afresh lamented. Say to me, when saw'st thou the prince Florizel my son? Kings are no less unhappy, their issue not being gracious, than they are in losing them, when they have approved their virtues.

*Cam.* Sir, it is three days, since I saw the prince: What his happier affairs may be, are to me unknown: but I have, missingly, noted\*, he is of late much retired from court: and is less frequent to his princely exercises, than formerly he hath appeared.

*Pol.* I have considered so much, Camillo; and with some care; so far, that I have eyes under my service, which look upon his removedness: from whom I have this intelligence; That he is seldom from the house of a most homely shepherd; a man, they say, that from very nothing, and beyond the imagination of his neighbours, is grown into an unspeakable estate.

*Cam.* I have heard, sir, of such a man, who hath a daughter of most rare note: the report of her is extended more, than can be thought to begin from such a cottage.

*Pol.* That's likewise part of my intelligence. But, I fear the angle that plucks our son thither, Thou shalt accompany us to the place: where we will, not appearing what we are, have some question; with the shepherd; from whose simplicity, I think it not uneasy to get the cause of my son's resort thither. Prythee, be my present partner in this business, and lay aside the thoughts of Sicilia.

*Cam.* I willingly obey your command.

*Pol.* My best Camillo!—We must disguise ourselves. [Exit.

SCENE II. The same. A Road near the Shepherd's Cottage.

*Enter AUTOLYCUS, singing:*

*When daffodils begin to peer,—*

*With, heigh! the doxy over the dale,—*

*Why, then comes in the sweet o'the year;*

*For the red blood reigns in the winter's pale †.*

*The white sheet bleaching on the hedge,—*

*With, hey! the sweet birds, O how they*

*Doth set my pugging ‡ tooth on edge; [sing?]*

*For a quart of ale is a dish for a king.*

*The lark, that tirra-tirra chants,— [jay:—*

*With, hey! with, hey the thrush and the*

*Are summer songs for me and my aunts ‖,*

*While we lie tumbling in the hay.*

I have served prince Florizel, and, in my time, wore three-pile ¶; but now I am out of service:

*But shall I go mourn for that, my dear?*

*The pale moon shines by night:*

*And when I wander here and there,*

*I then do most go right.*

*If tinkers may have leave to live,*

*And bear the sow-skin budget;*

*Then my account I well may give,*

*And in the stocks atouch it.*

My traffick is sheets; when the kite builds, look to lesser linen. My father named me, Autolycus; who, being, as I am, littered under Mercury, was likewise a snapper-up of unconsidered trifles: With die, and drab, I purchased this caparison; and my revenue is the silly cheat\*: Gallows, and knock, are too powerful on the highway: beating, and hanging, are terrors to me; for the life, to come, I sleep out the thought of it.—A prize! a prize!

*Enter Clown.*

*Clo.* Let me see:—Every † eleven wether—todst†; every tod yields—pound and odd shilling: fifteen hundred shorn,—What comes the wool to? [Aside.

*Aut.* If the springe hold, the cock's mine.

*Clo.* I cannot do't without counters ‡.—

Let me see; what I am to buy for our sheep-

shearing feast? *Three pound of sugar; five*

*pound of currants; rice—*What will this

sister of mine do with rice? But my father

hath made her mistress of the feast, and she

lays it on. She hath made me four-and-

twenty nosegays for the shearers: three-man

song-men§§ all, and very good ones; but they

are most of them means|| and bases: but one

Puritan amongst them, and he sings psalms to

hornpipes. I must have *saffron*, to colour

the warden pies ¶¶; *mace*,—*dates*,—none;

that's out of my note: *nutmegs*, seven; a

*ginger*, or two, of *ginger*; but that I may beg;

—*four pound of prunes*, and as many of

*raisins o'the sun.*

*Aut.* O, that ever I was born!

[Groveling on the ground.

*Clo.* I'the name of me,—

*Aut.* O, help me, help me! pluck but off these rags; and then, death, death!

*Clo.* Alack, poor soul! thou hast need of more rags to lay on thee, rather than have these off.

*Aut.* O, sir, the loathsomeness of them offends me more than the stripes I have received; which are mighty ones and millions.

*Clo.* Alas! poor man! a million of beating may come to a great matter.

*Aut.* I am robbed, sir, and beaten; my money and apparel taken from me, and these detestable things put upon me.

*Clo.* What, by a horse-man, or a foot-man?

*Aut.* A foot-man, sweet sir, a foot-man.

*Clo.* Indeed, he should be a foot-man, by the garments he hath left with thee; if this be a horse-man's coat, it hath seen very hot service. Lend me thy hand, I'll help thee: come, lend me thy hand. [Helping him up.

*Aut.* O! good sir, tenderly, oh!

\* Observed at intervals. † Talk. ‡ i. e., The spring blood reigns over the parts lately under the dominion of winter. § Thievish. || Doxies. ¶ Rich velvet. \*\* Picking pockets. †† Every eleven sheep will produce a tod or 28 pounds of wool. ‡‡ Circular pieces of base metal anciently used by the illiterate to adjust their reckonings. §§ Singers of catches in three parts. || Tenors. ¶¶ A species of pears.

*Clo.* Alas, poor soul.

*Aut.* O, good sir, softly, good sir: I fear, sir, my shoulder-blade is out.

*Clo.* How now? canst stand?

*Aut.* Softly, dear sir; [*Picks his pocket.*] good sir, softly: you ha' done me a charitable office.

*Clo.* Dost lack any money? I have a little money for thee.

*Aut.* No, good sweet sir; no, I beseech you, sir: I have a kinsman not past three quarters of a mile hence, unto whom I was going; I shall there have money, or any thing I want: Offer me no money, I pray you; that kills my heart.

*Clo.* What manner of fellow was he that robbed you?

*Aut.* A fellow, sir, that I have known to go about with trol-my-dames\*: I knew him once a servant of the prince; a bailiff, then he was certainly whipped out of the court.

*Clo.* His vices, you would say; there's no virtue whipped out of the court: they cherish it, to make it stay there; and yet it will no more but abidet.

*Aut.* Vices I would say, sir. I know this man well: he hath been since an ape-bearer; then a process-server, a bailiff; then he compassed a motion† of the prodigal son, and married a tinker's wife within a mile where my land and living lies; and, having flown over many knavish professions, he settled only in rogue: some call him Autolycus.

*Clo.* Out upon him! Prig§, for my life, prig: he haunts wakes, fairs, and bear-baitings.

*Aut.* Very true, sir; he, sir, he; that's the vogue, that put me into this apparel.

*Clo.* Not a more cowardly rogue in all Bohemia; if you had but looked big, and spit at him, he'd have run.

*Aut.* I must confess to you, sir, I am no fighter: I am false of heart that way; and that he knew, I warrant him.

*Clo.* How do you now?

*Aut.* Sweet sir, much better than I was; I can stand, and walk: I will even take my leave of you, and pace softly towards my kinsman's.

*Clo.* Shall I bring thee on the way?

*Aut.* No, good-faced sir; no, sweet sir.

*Clo.* Then fare thee well; I must go buy spices for our sheep-shearing.

*Aut.* Prosper you, sweet sir!—[*Exit Clown.*] Your purse is not hot enough to purchase your spice. I'll be with you at your sheep-shearing too: If I make not this cheat bring out another, and the shearers prove sheep, let me be unrolled, and my name put in the book of virtue!

*Sog on, jog on, the foot path way,*

*And merrily hent|| the stile-a:*

*A merry heart goes all the day,*

*Your sad tires in a mile-a.*

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*The same. A Shepherd's Cot tage.*

*Enter FLORIZEL and PERDITA.*

*Flo.* These your unusual weeds to each part of you

Do give a life: no shepherdess; but Flora, [ing Peering in April's front. This your sheep-shear- Is as a meeting of the petty gods, And you the queen on't.

*Per.* Sir, my gracious lord, To chide at your extremes¶, it not becomes me; [self,

O, pardon, that I name them; your high The gracious mark\*\* o'the land, you have obscured [maid,

With a swain's wearing; and me, poor lowly Most goddess-like prank'd†† up: But that our In every mess have folly, and the feeders [feasts Digest it with a custom, I should blush To see you so attired; sworn, I think, To show myself a glass.

*Flo.* I bless the time, When my good falcon made her flight across Thy father's ground.

*Per.* Now Jove afford you counsel To me, the difference‡‡ forges dread; your greatness [ble

Hath not been used to fear. Even now I trem- To think, your father, by some accident, Should pass this way, as you did: O, the fates! How would he look, to see his work, so noble Vilely bound up? What would he say? Or how Should I, in these my borrow'd flaunts, behold The sternness of his presence?

*Flo.* Apprehend Nothing but jollity. The gods themselves, Humbling their deities to love, have taken The shapes of beasts upon them: Jupiter [tune Became a bull, and bellow'd; the green Nep A ram, and bleated; and the fire-rob'd god, Golden Apollo, a poor humble swain, As I seem now: Their transformations Were never for a piece of beauty rarer; Nor in a way so chaste: since my desires Run not before mine honour; nor my lusts Burn hotter than my faith.

*Per.* O but, dear sir, Your resolution cannot hold, when 'tis Oppos'd, as it must be, by the power o'the king One of these two must be necessities, Which then will speak; that you must change Or I my life. [this purpose,

*Flo.* Thou dearest Perdita, [not With these forc'd§§ thoughts, I prythee, darken The mirth o'the feast: Or I'll be thine, my fair, Or not my father's: for I cannot be Mine own, nor any thing to any, if I be not thine: to this I am most constant, Though destiny say, no. Be merry, gentle; Strangle such thoughts as these, with any thing That you behold the while. Your guests are coming:

\* The machine used in the game of pigeon-holes. † Sojourn. ‡ Puppet-show.

§ Thief. || Take hold of. ¶ Excesses. \*\* Object of all men's notice.

†† Dressed with ostentation. ‡‡ i. e., Of station. §§ Far fetched.



Lift up your countenance: as it were the day  
Of celebration of that nuptial, which  
We two have sworn shall come.

*Per.* O lady fortune.

Stand you auspicious!

*Enter Shepherd, with POLIXENES and CAMILLO, disguised; Clown, MOPSA, DORCAS, and Others.*

*Flo.* See, your guests approach:  
Address yourself to entertain them sprightly,  
And let's be red with mirth.

*Shep.* Fie, daughter! when my old wife  
lived, upon

This day, she was both pantler, butler, cook;  
Both dame and servant: welcomed all;  
served all: [now here,

Would sing her song, and dance her turn:  
At upper end o'the table, now i'the middle;  
On his shoulder, and his: her face o' fire [it,  
With labour; and the thing, she took to quench  
She would to each one sip: You are retired,  
As if you were a feasted one, and not  
The hostess of the meeting: Pray you bid  
These unknown friends to us welcome: for  
it is

A way to make us better friends, more known.  
Come, quench your blushes; and present  
yourself [Come on,

That which you are mistress o'the feast:  
And bid us welcome to your sheep-shearing,  
As your good flock shall prosper.

*Per.* Welcome, sir! [*To POL.*  
It is my father's will, I should take on me  
The hostess-ship o'the day:—You're welcome,  
sir! [*To CAMILLO.*

Give me those flowers there, Dorcas.—Reve-  
rend sirs,

For you there's rosemary, and rue; these keep  
Seeming, and savour\*, all the winter long:  
Grace and remembrance be to you both,  
And welcome to our shearing!

*Pol.* Shepherdess,  
(A fair one are you,) well you fit our ages  
With flowers of winter.

*Per.* Sir, the year growing ancient,—  
Not yet on summer's death, nor on the birth  
Of trembling winter,—the fairest flowers  
o'the season

Are our carnations, and streak'd gillyflowers,  
Which some call nature's bastards: of that kind  
Our rustic garden's barren; and I care not  
To get slips of them.

*Pol.* Wherefore, gentle maiden,  
Do you neglect them?

*Per.* For† I have heard it said,  
There is an art, which, in their piedness shares  
With great creating nature.

*Pol.* Say, there be;  
Yet nature is made better by no mean,  
But nature makes that mean: so, o'er that art,  
Which, you say, adds to nature, is an art  
That nature makes. You see, sweet maid, we  
A gentler scion to the wildest stock; [marry  
And make conceive a bark of baser kind  
By bud of nobler race; This is an art

Which does mend nature,—change it rather:  
The art itself is nature. [but

*Per.* So it is. [flowers,

*Pol.* Then make your garden rich in gilly-  
And do not call them bastards.

*Per.* I'll not put

The dibble‡ in earth to set one slip of them;  
No more than, were I painted, I would wish  
This youth should say, 'twere well; and only  
therefore [you;

Desire to breed by me.—Here's flowers for  
Hot lavender, minis, savory, marjoram;  
The marigold, that goes to bed with the sun,  
And with him rises weeping; these are flowers  
Of middle summer, and, I think, they are given  
To men of middle age. You are very welcome.

*Cam.* I should leave grazing, were I of your  
And only live by gazing. [flock,

*Per.* Out, alas!

You'd be so lean, that blasts of January  
Would blow you through and through.—Now,  
my fairest friend, [that might  
I would, I had some flowers o'the spring,  
Become your time of day; and yours, and  
yours;

That wear upon your virgin branches yet  
Your maidenheads growing:—O Proserpina,  
For the flowers now, that, frightened, thou let'st  
From Dis's§ waggon! daffodils, [fall  
That come before the swallow dares, and take  
The winds of March with beauty; violets, dim,  
But sweeter than the lids of Juno's eyes,  
Or Cytherea's breath; pale primroses,  
That die unmarried, ere they can behold  
Bright Phæbus in his strength, a malady  
Most incident to maids; bold oxlips, and  
The crown imperial; lilies of all kinds,  
The flower-de-luce being one! O, these I lack,  
To make you garlands of; and, my sweet  
To strew him o'er and o'er. [friend,

*Flo.* What? like a corse?

*Per.* No, like a bank, for love to lie and play  
Not like a corse: or if,—not to be buried, [on;  
But quick||, and in mine arms. Come, take  
your flowers:

Methinks, I play as I have seen them do  
In Whitsun' pastorals: sure, this robe of mine  
Does change my disposition.

*Flo.* What you do,

Still betters what is done. When you speak,  
sweet,

I'd have you do it ever: when you sing,  
I'd have you buy and sell so; so give alms;  
Pray so; and, for the ordering your affairs,  
To sing them too: When you do dance, I  
wish you

A wave o'the sea, that you might ever do  
Nothing but that; move still, still so, and own  
No other function: Each your doing, [deeds,  
So singular in each particular,  
Crowns what you are doing in the present  
That all your acts are queens.

*Per.* O Doricles,

Your praises are too large: but that your  
youth,

\* Likeness and smell. † Because that. ‡ A tool to set plants. § Pluto. || Living.

And their blood, which tanly preps through hit,  
Do plainly give you out an unstain'd shepherd;  
With wisdom I might fear, my Doricles,  
You wou'd me the false way.

*Flo.* I think, you have  
As little skill to fear, as I have purpose  
To put you to't.—But, come; our dance, I pray:  
Your hand, my Perdita: so turtles pair,  
That never mean to part.

*Per.* I'll swear for 'em.

*Pol.* This is the prettiest low-born lass, that  
ever [seems,  
Ran on the green-sward\*: nothing she does, or  
But smacks of something greater than herself;  
Too noble for this place.

*Cam.* He tells her something, [she is  
That makes her blood look out: Good sooth,  
The queen of curds and cream.

*Clo.* Come on, strike up.

*Dor.* Mopsa must be your mistress: marry,  
To mend her kissing with.— [garlic.

*Mop.* Now, in good time!

*Clo.* Not a word, a word; we stand upon  
our manners.—

Come, strike up. [Music.

Here a dance of *Shepherds and Shepherd-*  
*esses.*

*Pol.* Pray, good shepherd, what [daughter?  
Fair swain is this, which dances with your  
*Shep.* They call him Doricles, and he boasts  
himself

To have a worthy feeding†: but I have it  
Upon his own report, and I believe it;  
He looks like sooth‡: He says, he loves my  
daughter;

I think so too, for never gazed the moon  
Upon the water, as he'll stand, and read,  
As'twere, my daughter's eyes: and, to be plain,  
I think, there is not half a kiss to choose,  
Who loves another best.

*Pol.* She dances featly§.

*Shep.* So she does any thing; though I report  
That should be silent: if young Doricles [it,  
Do light upon her, she shall bring him that  
Which he not dreams of.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* O master, if you did but hear the  
pedlar at the door, you would never dance  
again after a tabor and pipe; no, the bagpipe  
could not move you: he sings several tunes  
faster than you'll tell money; he utters them  
as he had eaten ballads, and all men's ears  
grow to his tunes.

*Clo.* He could never come better: he shall  
come in: I love a ballad but even too well;  
if it be doleful matter, merrily set down, or  
a very pleasant thing indeed, and sung la-  
mentably.

*Serv.* He hath songs, for man, or woman,  
of all sizes; no milliner can so fit his cus-  
tomers with gloves: he has the prettiest love-  
songs for maids; so without bawdry, which is

strange; with such delicate burdens of *dildo*,  
and *fadings*; *jump her and thump her*;  
and where some stretch-mouth'd rascal would,  
as it were, mean mischief, and break a foul  
gap into the matter, he makes the maid to  
answer, *Whoop, do me no harm, good man*;  
puts him off, slights him, with *Whoop, do me*  
*no harm, good man*.

*Pol.* This is a brave fellow.

*Clo.* Believe me, thou talkest of an admir-  
able conceited fellow. Has he any unbraided  
wares||?

*Serv.* He hath ribands of all the colours  
† the rainbow; points, more than all the law-  
yers in Bohemia can learnedly handle, though  
they come to him by the gross; inkles¶, cad-  
disses\*\*, cambrics, lawns: why, he sings them  
over, as they were gods or goddesses; you  
would think, a smock were a she-angel; he  
so chants to the sleeve-hand††, and the work  
about the square on't‡‡.

*Clo.* Prythee, bring him in; and let him  
approach singing.

*Per.* Forewarn him, that he use no scur-  
rilous words in his tunes.

*Clo.* You have of these pedlars, that have  
more in 'em than you'd think, sister.

*Per.* Ay, good brother, or go about to think.

*Enter AUTOLYCUS, singing.*

*Lawn, as white as driven snow;  
Cyprus, black as e'er was crow;  
Gloves, as sweet as damask roses;  
Masks for juces, and for noses;  
Bugle bracelet, necklace-amber,  
Perfume for a lady's chamber§§.  
Golden quiffs, and stomachers,  
For my lads to give their dears,  
Pins and poking-sticks of steel,  
What maids lack from head to heel:  
Come, buy of me, come; come buy, come  
Buy, lads, or else your lusses cry; [buy,  
Come, buy, &c.*

*Clo.* If I were not in love with Mopsa, thou  
should'st take no money of me; but being in-  
thrall'd as I am, it will also be the bondage  
of certain ribands and gloves.

*Mop.* I was promised them against the  
feast; but they come not too late now.

*Dor.* He hath promised you more than that,  
or there be liars.

*Mop.* He hath paid you all he promised  
you: may be, he has paid you more; which  
will shame you to give him again.

*Clo.* Is there no manners left among maids?  
will they wear their plackets, where they  
should bear their faces? Is there not milk-  
ing-time, when you are going to bed, or kiln  
hole¶¶, to whistle off these secrets; but you  
must be tittle-tattling before all our guests?  
'Tis well they are whispering: Clamour your  
tongues\*\*\*, and not a word more.

\* Green turf. † A valuable tract of pasture. ‡ Truth. § Neatly. || Plain goods.  
¶ Worst'd galloon. \*\* A kind of tape. †† The cuffs. ‡‡ The work about the bosom.  
§§ Amber of which necklaces were made fit to perfume a lady's chamber. ¶¶ Fire-place  
for drying malt; still a noted gossiping-place. \*\*\* Ring a dumb peal.

*Mop.* I have done. Come, you promised me a tawdry lace\*, and a pair of sweet gloves.

*Clo.* Have I not told thee, how I was cozened by the way, and lost all my money?

*Aut.* And, indeed, sir, there are cozeners abroad; therefore it behoves men to be wary.

*Clo.* Fear not thou, man, thou shalt lose nothing here.

*Aut.* I hope so, sir; for I have about me many parcels of charge.

*Clo.* What hast here? ballads?

*Mop.* Pray now, buy some: I love a ballad in print, a' life; for then we are sure they are true.

*Aut.* Here's one to a very doleful tune. How a usurer's wife was brought to bed of twenty money-bags at a burden; and how she longed to eat adders' heads, and toads car-bonadoed.

*Mop.* Is it true, think you?

*Aut.* Very true; and but a month old.

*Dor.* Bless me from marrying a usurer!

*Aut.* Here's the midwife's name to't, one mistress Taleporter; and five or six honest wives' that were present: Why should I carry lies abroad?

*Mop.* Pray you now, buy it.

*Clo.* Come on, lay it by: And let's first see more ballads; we'll buy the other things anon.

*Aut.* Here's another ballad, of a fish, that appeared upon the coast, on Wednesday the fourscore of April, forty thousand fathom above water, and sung this ballad against the hard hearts of maids: it was thought, she was a woman, and was turned into a cold fish, for she would not exchange flesh with one that loved her: The ballad is very pitiful, and as true.

*Dor.* Is it true too, think you?

*Aut.* Five justices' hands at it; and wittnesses, more than my pack will hold.

*Clo.* Lay it by too: Another.

*Aut.* This is a merry ballad; but a very pretty one.

*Mop.* Let's have some merry ones.

*Aut.* Why this is a passing merry one; and goes to the tune of, *Two maids wooing a man*: there's scarce a maid westward, but she sings it; 'tis in request, I can tell you.

*Mop.* We can both sing it; if thou'lt bear a part, thou shalt have; 'tis in three parts.

*Dor.* We had the tune on't a month ago.

*Aut.* I can bear my part; you must know, 'tis my occupation: have at it with you.

SONG.

*A.* Get you hence, for I must go;  
Where, it fits not you to know.

*D.* Whither? *M.* O, whither? *D.* Whither;  
*M.* It becomes thy oath full well,  
Thou to me thy secrets tell.

*D.* Me too, let me go thither.

*M.* Or thou go'st to the grange, or mill:

*D.* If to either, thou dost ill.

*A.* Neither. *D.* What, neither? *A.* Nei-

*D.* Thou hast sworn my love to be; [ther.

*M.* Thou hast sworn it more to me:

Then, whither go'st? say, whither?

*Clo.* We'll have this song out anon by ourselves; My father and the gentleman are in sad talk, and we'll not trouble them: Come, bring away thy pack after me. Wenches, I'll buy for you both:—Pedlar, let's have the first choice.—Follow me, girls.

*Aut.* And you shall pay well for 'em. [Aside.

Will you buy any tape,

Or lace for your cape,

My da'nty duck, my dear-a?

Any silk, any thread,

Any toys for your head,

Of the new'st; and fin'st, fin'st wear-a?

Come to the pedlar;

Money's a meddler,

That doth utter† all men's ware-a.

[Exeunt CLOWN, AUTOLYCUS, DORCAS,  
and MOPSA.]

Enter a Servant.

*Serv.* Master, there is three carters, three shepherds, three neat-herds, three swine-herds, that have made themselves all men of hair§; they call themselves saltiers||: and they have a dance which the wenches say is a gallimaufry ¶ of gambols, because they are not in't; but they themselves are o'the mind, (if it be not too rough for some, that know little but bowling,) it will please plentifully.

*Shep.* Away! we'll none on't; here has been too much humble foolery already:—I know, sir, we weary you.

*Pol.* You weary those that refresh us: Pray, let's see these four threes of herdsmen.

*Serv.* One three of them, by their own report, sir, hath danced before the king; and not the worst of the three, but jumps twelve foot and a half by the squire\*\*.

*Shep.* Leave your prating; since these good men are pleased, let them come in; but quickly now.

*Serv.* Why, they stay at door, sir. [Exit. Re-enter Servant, with Twelve Rustics habited like Satyrs. They dance, and then exeunt.]

*Pol.* O, father, you'll know more of that hereafter.— [them.—]

Is it not too far gone?—'Tis time to part He's simple, and tells much. [Aside.]—How now, fair shepherd? take

Your heart is full of something, that does Your mind from feasting. Sooth, when I was young,

And handed love, as you do, I was wont To load my she with knacks: I would have ransack'd

The pedlar's silken treasury, and have pour'd To her acceptance; you have let him go, [it

And nothing mated † with him: if your lass Interpretation should abuse; and call this

Your lack of love, or bounty: you were strait- For a reply, at least, if you make a care [ed ††

Of happy holding her.

\* A lace to wear about the head or waist. † Serious. ‡ Vend. § Dressed themselves in habits imitating hair. || Satyrs. ¶ Medley. \*\* Foot rule. †† Bought, trafficked

‡ Put to difficulties.



*Flo.* Old sir, I know  
She prizes not such trifles as these are :  
The gifts, she looks from me, are pack'd and  
lock'd

Up in my heart ; which I have given already,  
But not deliver'd.—O, hear me breathe my life  
Before this ancient sir, who, it should seem,  
Hath sometime loved : I take thy hand ; this  
hand,

As soft as dove's down, and as white as it ;  
Or Ethiopian's tooth, or the fann'd snow,  
That's bolted\* by the northern blasts twice

*Pol.* What follows this ?— [o'er.  
How prettily the young swain seems to wash  
The hand was fair before!—I have put you  
But to your protestation ; let me hear [out.—  
What you profess.

*Flo.* Do, and be witness to't.

*Pol.* And this my neighbour too?

*Flo.* And he, and more  
Than he, and men ; the earth, the heavens, and  
all : [narch,

That,—were I crown'd the most imperial mo-  
Thereof most worthy ; were I the fairest youth  
That ever made eye swerve ; had force, and  
knowledge, [them,  
More than was ever man's,—I would not prize  
Without her love : for her, employ them all ;  
Commend them, and condemn them, to her  
Or to their own perdition. [service,

*Pol.* Fairly offer'd.

*Cam.* This shows a sound affection.

*Shep.* But, my daughter,  
Say you the like to him?

*Per.* I cannot speak  
So well, nothing so well ; no, nor mean better :  
By the pattern of mine own thoughts I cut out  
The purity of his.

*Shep.* Take hands, a bargain ;—  
And, friends unknown you shall bear witness  
I give my daughter to him, and will make [to't :  
Her portion equal his.

*Flo.* O, that must be  
The virtue of your daughter : one being dead,  
I shall have more than you can dream of yet ;  
Enough then for your wonder : But, come on,  
Contract us 'fore these witnesses.

*Shep.* Come, your hand :—  
And, daughter, yours.

*Pol.* Soft, swain, awhile, 'beseech you ;  
Have you a father?

*Flo.* I have : But what of him?

*Pol.* Knows he of this?

*Flo.* He neither does, nor shall.

*Pol.* Methinks, a father  
Is, at the nuptial of his son, a guest  
That best becomes the table. Pray you, once  
Is not your father grown incapable [more ;  
Of reasonable affairs? is he not stupid  
With age, and altering rheums? Can he speak?  
hear? [estate?†

Know man from man? dispute his own  
Lies he not bed-rid? and again does nothing,  
But what he did being childish?

*Flo.* No, good sir ;

He has his health, and ampler strength, indeed,  
Than most have of his age.

*Pol.* By my white beard,  
You offer him, if this be so, a wrong  
Something unfilial : Reason, my son, [son,  
Should choose himself a wife ; but as good rea-  
The father, (all whose joy is nothing else  
But fair posterity,) should hold some counsel  
In such a business.

*Flo.* I yield all this ;  
But, for some other reasons, my grave sir,  
Which 'tis not fit you know, I not acquaint  
My father of this business.

*Pol.* Let him know't.

*Flo.* He shall not.

*Pol.* Pr'ythee, let him.

*Flo.* No, he must not.  
*Shep.* Let him, my son ; he shall not need  
At knowing of thy choice. [to grieve

*Flo.* Come, come he must not :—  
Mark our contract.

*Pol.* Mark your divorce, young sir.  
[Discovering himself.

Whom son I dare not call ; thou art too base  
To be acknowledged : Thou a sceptre's heir,  
That thus affect'st a sheep-hook!—Thou old  
traitor,

I am sorry, that, by hanging thee, I can but  
Shorten thy life one week.—And thou, fresh  
piece [know

Of excellent witchcraft ; who, of force, must  
The royal fool thou copest with ;—

*Shep.* O, my heart!

*Pol.* I'll have thy beauty scratch'd with  
briers, and made [boy,—

More homely than thy state.—For thee, fond  
If I may ever know, thou dost but sigh,  
That thou no more shalt see this knack, (as never  
I mean thou shalt,) we'll bar thee from succes-  
Not hold thee of our blood, no not our kin. [sion  
Far † than Deucalion off :—Mark thou my  
words ; [time,

Follow us to the court.—Thou churl, for this  
Though full of our displeasure, yet we free thee  
From the dead blow of it.—And you, enchant-  
ment,—

Worthy enough a herdsman ; yea, him too,  
That makes himself, but for our honour therein,  
Unworthy thee,—if ever, henceforth, thou  
These rural latches to his entrance open,  
Or hoop his body more with thy embraces,  
I will devise a death as cruel for thee,  
As thou art tender to't. [Exit.

*Per.* Even here undone!

I was not much afraid : for once, or twice,  
I was about to speak ; and tell him plainly,  
The selfsame sun, that shines upon his court,  
Hides not his visage from our cottage, but  
Looks on alike.—Will't please you, sir, be gone?  
[To FLORIZEL.

I told you, what would come of this : 'Be-  
seech you, [mine,—

Of your own state take care : this dream of  
Being now awake, I'll queen it no inch further,  
But milk my ewes, and weep.

\* The sieve used to separate flour from bran is called a bolting cloth.

† Talk over his

affairs. † Further.

§ Doors.

*Cam.* Why, how now, father?  
Speak, ere thou diest.

*Shep.* I cannot speak, nor think,  
Nor dare to know that which I know.—O, sir,  
[To FLORIZEL.

You have undone a man of fourscore three,  
That thought to fill his grave in quiet; yea,  
To die upon the bed my father died,  
To lie close by his honest bones: but now [me  
Some hangman must put on my shroud, and lay  
Where no priest shovels-in dust.—O cursed  
wretch! [To PERDITA.

That knew'st this was the prince, and would'st  
adventure

To mingle faith with him.—Undone! undone!  
If I might die within this hour, I have lived  
To die when I desire. [Exit.

*Flo.* Why look you so upon me?  
I am but sorry, not afraid; delay'd,  
But nothing alter'd: What I was, I am:  
More straining on, for plucking back; not  
My leash \* unwillingly. [following

*Cam.* Gracious my lord.  
You know your father's temper: at this time  
He will allow no speech,—which, I do guess,  
You do not purpose to him;—and as hardly  
Will he endure your sight as yet, I fear:  
Then till the fury of his highness settle,  
Come not before him.

*Flo.* I not purpose it.

I think, Camillo.

*Cam.* Even he, my lord.

*Per.* How often have I told you, 'twould be  
How often said, my dignity would last [thus?  
But till 'twere known?

*Flo.* It cannot fail, but by  
The violation of my faith; And then  
Let nature crush the sides o'the earth together,  
And mar the seeds within!—Lift up thy looks:—  
From my succession wipe me, father! I  
Am heir to my affection.

*Cam.* Be advised.

*Flo.* I am; and by my fancy+: if my reason  
Will thereto be obedient, I have rea-on;  
If not, my senses, better pleased with madness,  
Do bid it welcome.

*Cam.* This is desperate, sir.

*Flo.* So call it: but it does fulfil my vow;  
I needs must think it honesty. Camillo,  
Not for Bohemia, nor the pomp that may  
Bethereat glea'n'd; for all the sun sees, or [hide  
The close earth wombs, or the profound seas  
In unknown fathoms, will I break my oath  
To this my fair beloved: Therefore, I pray you,  
As you have e'er been my father's honour'd  
friend, [not

When he shall miss me, (as, in faith, I mean  
To see him any more,) cast your good counsels  
Upon his passion: Let myself and fortune,  
Tug for the time to come. This you may know,  
And so deliver,—I am put to sea  
With her, whom here I cannot hold on shore;  
And, most opportune to our need, I have  
A vessel rides fast by, but not prepared  
For this design. What course I mean to hold,

Shall nothing benefit your knowledge, nor  
Concern me the reporting.

*Cam.* O, my lord,  
I would your spirit were easier for advice,  
Or stronger for your need.

*Flo.* Hark, Perdita.—[Takes her aside.  
I'll hear you by and by. [To CAMILLO.

*Cam.* He's irremovable,  
Resolved for flight: Now were I happy, if  
His going I could frame to serve my turn;  
Save him from danger, do him love and honour;  
Purchase the sight again of dear Sicilia,  
And that unhappy king, my master, whom  
I so much thirst to see.

*Flo.* Now, good Camillo,  
I am so fraught with curious business, that  
I leave out ceremony. [Going

*Cam.* Sir, I think,  
You have heard of my poor services, i'the love  
That I have borne your father?

*Flo.* Very nobly  
Have you deserved: it is my father's music,  
To speak your deeds; not little of his care  
To have them recompensed as thought on.

*Cam.* Well, my lord,  
If you may please to think I love the king;  
And, through him, what is nearest to him,  
which is

Your gracious self; embrace but my direction  
(If your more ponderous and settled project  
May suffer alteration,) on mine honour (ing  
I'll point you where you shall have such receiv-  
As shall become your highness; where you may  
Enjoy your mistress; (from the whom, I see,  
There's no disjunction to be made, but by,  
As heavens forfend! your ruin :) marry her:  
And (with my best endeavours, in your ab-  
sence,)

Your discontenting † father strive to qualify,  
And bring him up to liking.

*Flo.* How, Camillo,  
May this, almost a miracle, be done? [man,  
That I may call thee something more than  
And, after that, trust to thee.

*Cam.* Have you thought on  
A place, whereto you'll go?

*Flo.* Not any yet:  
But as the unthought-on accident § is guilty  
To what we wildly do; so we profess  
Ourselves to be the slaves of chance, and flies  
Of every wind that blows.

*Cam.* Then list to me: [purpose  
This follows,—if you will not change you  
But undergo this flight;—Make for Sicilia;  
And there present yourself, and your fair  
princess,

(For so, I see, she must be,) 'fore Leontes;  
She shall be habit'd, as it becomes  
The partner of your bed. Methinks, I see  
Leontes opening his free arms, and weeping  
His welcomes forth: asks thee, the son, for  
giveness,

As 'twere i'the father's person: kisses the hands  
Of your fresh princess: o'er and o'er divides his  
'Twixt his unkindness and his kindness; the one

\* A leading string.

† Love.

‡ For discontented.

§ This unthought-on

accident is the unexpected discovery made by Polixenes.

He chides to hell, and bids the other grow,  
Faster than thought, or time.

*Flo.* Worthy Camillo,  
What colour for my visitation shall I  
Hold up before him?

*Cam.* Sent by the king your father  
To greet him, and to give him comforts. Sir,  
The manner of your bearing towards him, with  
What you, as from your father, shall deliver  
Things known betwixt us three, I'll write you  
down: [ting \*,

The which shall point you forth at every sit-  
What you must say; that he shall not perceive,  
But that you have your father's bosom there,  
And speak his very heart.

*Flo.* I am bound to you:  
There is some sap in this.

*Cam.* A course more promising  
Than a wild dedication of yourselves [certain,  
To unpath'd waters, undream'd shores; most  
To miseries enough: no hope to help you;  
But, as you shake off one, to take another:  
Nothing so certain as your anchors: who  
Do their best office, if they can but stay you  
Where you'll be loath to be: Besides you know  
Prosperity's the very bond of love; [gether  
Whose fresh complexion and whose heart to-  
Affliction alters.

*Per.* One of these is true:  
I think, affliction may subdue the cheek,  
But not take in † the mind.

*Cam.* Yea, say you so?  
There shall not, at your father's house, these  
Be born another such. [seven years,

*Flo.* My good Camillo,  
She is as forward of her breeding, as  
I the rear of birth.

*Cam.* I cannot say, 'tis pity  
She lacks instructions; for she seems a mistress  
To most that teach.

*Per.* Your pardon, sir, for this;  
I'll blush you thanks.

*Flo.* My prettiest Perdita.— [lo,—  
But, O, the thorns we stand upon!—Camil-  
Preserver of my father, now of me;  
The medicin of our house!—how shall we do?  
We are not furnish'd like Bohemia's son;  
Nor shall appear in Sicily—

*Cam.* My lord,  
Fear none of this: I think, you know, my for-  
Do all lie there: it shall be so my care [tunes  
To have you royally appointed, as if [sir,  
The scene you play, were mine. For instance,  
That you may know you shall not want,—one  
word. [They talk aside.

*Enter AUTOLYCUS.*

*Aut.* Ha, ha! what a fool honesty is! and  
trust, his sworn brother, a very simple gentle-  
man! I have sold all my trumpery: not a  
counterfeit stone, not a riband, glass, pomander  
‡, brooch, table-book, ballad, knife, tape,  
glove, shoe-tie, bracelet, horn-ring, to keep  
my pack from fasting: they throng who  
should buy first; as if my trinkets had been

hallowed, and brought a benediction to the  
buyer: by which means, I saw whose purse  
was best in picture; and, what I saw, to my  
good use, I remembered. My clown (who  
wants but something to be a reasonable man,)  
grew so in love with the wenches' song, that  
he would not stir his petticoats, till he had both  
tune and words; which so drew the rest of  
the herd to me, that all their other senses stuck  
in ears: you might have pinched a placket, it  
was senseless; 'twas nothing, to geld a cod-  
piece of a purse; I would have filed keys off,  
that hung in chains: no hearing, no feeling,  
but my sir's song, and admiring the nothing  
of it. So that, in this time of lethargy, I  
picked and cut most of their festival purses:  
and had not the old man come in with a  
whoobub against his daughter and the king's  
son, and scared my choughs ‡ from the chaff,  
I had not left a purse alive in the whole army.

[CAMILLO, FLORIZEL, and PERDITA,  
come forward.

*Cam.* Nay, but my letters by this means being  
So soon as you arrive, shall clear that doubt.

*Flo.* And those that you'll procure from  
king Leontes,—

*Cam.* Shall satisfy your father.

*Per.* Happy be you!  
All, that you speak, shows fair.

*Cam.* Who have we here?  
[Seeing AUTOLYCUS.

We'll make an instrument of this; omit  
Nothing, may give us aid.

*Aut.* If they have overheard me now,—  
why hanging. [Aside.

*Cam.* How now, good fellow? Why shak-  
est thou so? Fear not man; here's no harm  
intended to thee.

*Aut.* I am a poor fellow, sir.

*Cam.* Why, be so still; here's nobody will  
steal that from thee: Yet, for the outside of  
thy poverty, we must make an exchange:  
therefore, disease thee instantly, (thou must  
think, there's necessity in't,) and change gar-  
ments with this gentleman: Though the pen-  
nyworth, on his side, be the worst, yet hold  
thee, there's some boot!]

*Aut.* I am a poor fellow, sir:—I know ye  
well enough. [Aside.

*Cam.* Nay, prythee, despatch: the gentle-  
man is half flayed † already.

*Aut.* Are you in earnest, sir?—I smell the  
trick of it.— [Aside.

*Flo.* Despatch, I prythee.

*Aut.* Indeed, I have had earnest; but I  
cannot with conscience take it.

*Cam.* Unbuckle, unbuckle.—

[FLO. and AUTOL. exchange garments.

Fortunate mistress,—let my prophecy  
Come home to you!—you must retire yourself  
Into some covert: take your sweet heart's hat,  
And pluck it o'er your brows; muffle your face;  
Dismantle you: and as you can, dislikén  
The truth of your own seeming; that you may,

\* The council-days were called the sittings.  
† Conquer.  
‡ A little ball made of per  
fumes, and worn to prevent infection in times of plague.  
§ Birds.  
¶ Stripped.  
over and above.      Somethin



(For I do fear eyes over you,) to shipboard  
Get undescried.

*Per.* I see, the play so lies,  
That I must bear a part.

*Cam.* No remedy.—  
Have you done there?

*Flo.* Should I now meet my father,  
He would not call me son.

*Cam.* Nay, you shall have  
No hat:—Come, lady, come.—Farewell, my

*Aut.* Adieu, sir. [friend.]

*Flo.* O Perdita, what have we twain forgot?  
Pray you, a word. [They converse apart.]

*Cam.* What I do next, shall be, to tell the  
king [Aside.]

Of this escape, and whither they are bound;  
Wherein, my hope is, I shall so prevail,  
To force him after: in whose company  
I shall review Sicilia; for whose sight  
I have a woman's longing.

*Flo.* Fortune speed us!—  
Thus we set on, Camillo, to the sea-side.

*Cam.* The swifter speed, the better.

*Exeunt FLORIZEL, PERDITA, and  
CAMILLO.*

*Aut.* I understand the business, I hear it:  
To have an open ear, a quick eye, and a nimble  
hand, is necessary for a cut-purse; a good nose  
is requisite also, to smell out work for the  
other senses. I see, this is the time that the  
unjust man doth thrive. What an exchange  
had this been, without boot? what a boot is  
here, with this exchange? Sure, the gods do  
this year connive at us, and we may do any  
thing *extempore*. The prince himself is about  
a piece of iniquity; stealing away from his  
father, with his clog at his heels: If I thought  
it were not a piece of honesty to acquaint the  
king withal, I would do't: I hold it the more  
knavery to conceal it: and therein am I con-  
stant to my profession.

*Enter Clown and Shepherd.*

Aside, aside;—here is more matter for a hot  
brain: Every lane's end, every shop, church,  
session, hanging, yields a careful man work.

*Clo.* See, see; what a man you are now!  
there is no other way, but to tell the king she's  
a changeling, and none of your flesh and blood.

*Shep.* Nay, but hear me.

*Clo.* Nay, but hear me.

*Shep.* Go to then.

*Clo.* She being none of your flesh and blood,  
your flesh and blood has not offended the  
king; and, so, your flesh and blood is not to  
be punished by him. Show those things you  
found about her; those secret things, all but  
what she has with her: This being done, let  
the law go whistle; I warrant you.

*Shep.* I will tell the king all, every word,  
yea, and his son's pranks too; who, I may  
say, is no honest man neither to his father, nor  
to me, to go about to make me the king's  
brother-in-law.

*Clo.* Indeed, brother-in-law was the furthest  
off you could have been to him; and then your

blood had been the dearer, by I know how  
much an ounce.

*Aut.* Very wisely; puppies! [Aside.]

*Shep.* Well; let us to the king; there is  
that in this fardel\*, will make him scratch  
his beard.

*Aut.* I know not what impediment this  
complaint may be to the flight of my master.

*Clo.* 'Pray heartily he be at palace.

*Aut.* Though I am not naturally honest, I  
am so sometimes by chance:—Let me pocket  
up my pedlar's excrement†—[Takes off his  
false beard.] How now, rustics? whither  
are you bound?

*Shep.* To the palace, an it like your worship.

*Aut.* Your affairs there? what! with whom?  
the condition of that fardel, the place of your  
dwelling, your names, your ages, of what hav-  
ing‡, breeding, and any thing that is fitting to  
be known, discover.

*Clo.* We are but plain fellows, sir.

*Aut.* A lie; you are rough and hairy: Let me  
have no lying; it becomes none but tradesmen,  
and they often give us soldiers the lie: but we  
pay them for it with stamped coin, not stabbing  
steel; therefore they do not give us the lie.

*Clo.* Your worship had like to have given  
us one, if you had not taken yourself with the  
manner§.

*Shep.* Are you a courtier, an't like you, sir?

*Aut.* Whether it like me, or no, I am a  
courtier. See'st thou not the air of the court,  
in these enfoldings? hath not my gait in it, the  
measure of the court||? receives not thy nose  
court-odour from me? reflect I not on thy base-  
ness, court-contempt? Think'st thou, for that I  
insinuate, or toze¶ from thee thy business, I  
am therefore no courtier? I am courtier, cap-  
a-pe; and one that will either push on, or  
pluck back thy business there: whereupon I  
command thee to open thy affair.

*Shep.* My business, sir, is to the king.

*Aut.* What advocate hast thou to him?

*Shep.* I know not, an't like you.

*Clo.* Advocate's the court-word for a phea-  
sant; say, you have none.

*Shep.* None, sir; I have no pheasant, cock,  
nor hen.

*Aut.* How bless'd are we, that are not  
simple men!

Yet nature might have made me as these are,  
Therefore I'll not disdain.

*Clo.* This cannot be but a great courtier.

*Shep.* His garments are rich, but he wears  
them not handsomely.

*Clo.* He seems to be the more noble in being  
fantastical; a great man, I'll warrant; I know,  
by the picking on's teeth.

*Aut.* The fardel there? what's i'the fardel?  
Wherefore that box?

*Shep.* Sir, there lies such secrets in this far-  
del, and box, which none must know but the  
king; and which he shall know within this  
hour, if I may come to the speech of him.

*Aut.* Age, thou hast lost thy labour.

\* Bundle, parcel. † His false beard. ‡ Estate, property. § In the fact.  
|| The stately tread of courtiers. ¶ I cajole or force.

*Shep.* Why, sir?

*Aut.* The king is not at the palace; he is gone aboard a new ship to purge melancholy, and air himself: For, if thou be'st capable of things serious, thou must know, the king is full of grief.

*Shep.* So 'tis said, sir; about his son, that should have married a shepherd's daughter.

*Aut.* If that shepherd be not in hand-fast, let him fly; the curses he shall have, the tortures he shall feel, will break the back of man, the heart of monster.

*Clo.* Think you so, sir?

*Aut.* Not he alone shall suffer what wit can make heavy, and vengeance bitter; but those that are germane\* to him, though removed fifty times, shall all come under the hangman: which though it be great pity, yet it is necessary. An old sheep-whistling rogue, a ram-tender, to offer to have his daughter come into grace! Some say, he shall be stoned; but that death is too soft for him, say I: Draw our throne into a sheep-cote! all deaths are too few, the sharpest too easy.

*Clo.* Has the old man e'er a son, sir, do you hear, an't like you, sir?

*Aut.* He has a son, who shall be flayed alive; then 'ointed over with honey, set on the head of a wasp's nest; then stand, till he be three quarters and a dram dead: then recovered again with aqua-vitæ, or some other hot infusion: then, raw as he is, and in the hottest day prognostication proclaims†, shall he be set against a brick wall, the sun looking with a southward eye upon him; where he is to behold him, with flies blown to death. But what talk we of these traitorly rascals, whose miseries are to be smiled at, their offences being so capital? Tell me, (for you seem to be honest plain men,) what you have to the king: being something gently considered‡, I'll bring you where he is aboard, tender your persons to his presence, whisper him in your behalfs; and, if it be in man, besides the king, to effect your suits, here is man, shall do it.

*Clo.* He seems to be of great authority:

close with him, give him gold; and though authority be a stubborn bear, yet he is oft led by the nose with gold: show the inside of your purse to the outside of his hand, and no more ado: Remember stoned, and flayed alive.

*Shep.* An't please you, sir, to undertake the business for us, here is that gold I have: I'll make it as much more; and leave this young man in pawn, till I bring it you.

*Aut.* After I have done what I promised?

*Shep.* Ay, sir.

*Aut.* Well, give me the moiety:—Are you a party in this business?

*Clo.* In some sort, sir: but though my case be a pitiful one, I hope I shall not be flayed out of it.

*Aut.* O, that's the case of the shepherd's son:—Hang him, he'll be made an example.

*Clo.* Comfort, good comfort: we must to the king, and show our strange sights; he must know, 'tis none of your daughter nor my sister; we are gone else. Sir, I will give you as much as this old man does, when the business is performed; and remain, as he says your pawn, till it be brought you.

*Aut.* I will trust you. Walk before toward the sea-side; go on the right hand; I will but look upon the hedge, and follow you.

*Clo.* We are blessed in this man, as I may say, even blessed.

*Shep.* Let's before, as he bids us: he was provided to do us good. [*Ex. Shep. and Clo.*]

*Aut.* If I had a mind to be honest, I see, fortune would not suffer me; she drops booties in my mouth. I am courted now with a double occasion; gold, and a means to do the prince my master good; which, who knows how that may turn back to my advancement? I will bring these two moles, these blind ones, aboard him: if he think it fit to shore them again, and that the complaint they have to the king concerns him nothing, let him call me, rogue, for being so far officious; for I am proof against that title, and what shame else belongs to't: To him will I present them, there may be matter in it.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. Sicily. A Room in the Palace of Leontes.

*Enter LEONTES, CLEOMENES, DION, PAULINA, and Others.*

*Cleo.* Sir, you have done enough, and have perform'd

A saint-like sorrow: no fault could you make, Which you have not redeem'd; indeed, paid down

More penitence, than done trespass: At the Do, as the heavens have done; forget your With them, forgive yourself.

*Leon.* Whilst I remember Her, and her virtues, I cannot forget My blemishes in them; and so still think of

The wrong I did myself: which was so much, That heirless it hath made my kingdom; and Destroy'd the sweet'st companion, that e'er Bred his hopes out of.

*Paul.* True, too true, my lord: If, one by one, you wedded all the world, Or, from the all that are, took something good, To make a perfect woman; she, you kill'd, Would be unparallel'd.

*Leon.* I think so. Kill'd! She I kill'd? I did so: but thou strik'st me So'rely to say I did; it is as bitter [good now, Upon thy tongue, as in my thought: Now, Say so but seldom.

*Cleo.* Not at all, good lady: [would You might have spoken a thousand things that

\* Related. † The hottest day foretold in the almanac. ‡ Being handsomely bribed.

Have done the time more benefit, and graced  
Your kindness better.

*Paul.* You are one of those,  
Would have him wed again.

*Dion.* If you would not so,  
You pity not the state, nor the remembrance  
Of his most sovereign dame; consider little,  
What dangers, by his Highness' fail of issue,  
May drop upon his kingdom, and devour  
Incertain lookers-on. What were more holy,  
Than to rejoice, the former queen is well? \*  
What holier, than,—for royalty's repair,  
For present comfort and for future good,—  
To bless the bed of majesty again  
With a sweet fellow to't?

*Paul.* There is none worthy,  
Respecting her that's gone. Besides, the gods  
Will have fulfill'd their secret purposes:  
For has not the divine Apollo said,  
Is't not the tenour of his oracle,  
That king Leontes shall not have an heir,  
Till his lost child be found? which, that it shall,  
Is all as monstrous to our human reason,  
As my Antigonus to break his grave,  
And come again to me; who, on my life,  
Did perish with the infant. 'Tis your counsel,  
My lord should to the heavens be contrary,  
Oppose against their wills.—Care not for  
issue; [*To LEONTES.*]  
The crown will find an heir: Great Alexander  
Left his to the worthiest; so his successor  
Was like to be the best.

*Leon.* Good Paulina,—  
Who hast the memory of Hermione,  
I know, in honour,—O, that ever I [now,  
Had squared me to thy counsel!—then, even  
I might have look'd upon my queen's full eyes;  
Have taken treasure from her lips,—

*Paul.* And left them  
More rich, for what they yielded.

*Leon.* Thou speak'st truth.  
No more such wives; therefore, no wife; one  
worse,

And better used, would make her sainted spirit  
Again possess her corpse; and, on this stage  
(Where we offenders now appear,) soul-  
Begin, *And why to me?* [vexed,

*Paul.* Had she such power,  
She had just cause.

*Leon.* She had; and would incense† me  
To murder her I married.

*Paul.* I should so:  
Were I the ghost that walk'd, I'd bid you mark  
Her eye; and tell me, for what dull part in't  
You chose her: then I'd shriek, that even your  
ears [follow'd  
Should rift‡ to hear me; and the words that  
Should be, *Remember mine.*

*Leon.* Stars, very stars,  
And all eyes else dead coals!—fear thou no  
I'll have no wife, Paulina. [wife,

*Paul.* Will you swear  
Never to marry, but by my free leave?

*Leon.* Never, Paulina: so be bless'd my  
spirit!

*Paul.* Then, good my lords, bear witness to  
*Cleo.* You tempt him over much. [his oath.

*Paul.* Unless another,  
As like Hermione as is her picture,  
Affront§ his eye.

*Cleo.* Good madam,—  
*Paul.* I have done.

Yet, if my lord will marry,—if you will, sir,  
No remedy, but you will; give me the office  
To choose you a queen: she shall not be so  
young

As was your former; but she shall be such,  
As, walk'd your first queen's ghost, it should  
To see her in your arms. [take joy

*Leon.* My true Paulina,  
We shall not marry, till thou bidd'st us.

*Paul.* That  
Shall be, when your first queen's again in  
Never till then. [breath;

*Enter a Gentleman.*  
*Gent.* One that gives out himself prince  
Florizel,

Son of Polixenes, with his princess, (she  
The fairest I have yet beheld,) desires access  
To your high presence.

*Leon.* What with him? he comes not  
Like to his father's greatness: his approach,  
So out of circumstance, and sudden, tells us  
'Tis not a visitation framed, but forced  
By need, and accident. What train?

*Gent.* But few,  
And those but mean.

*Leon.* His princess, say you, with him?  
*Gent.* Ay; the most peerless piece of earth,  
That e'er the sun shone bright on. [I think,

*Paul.* O Hermione,  
As every present time doth boast itself  
Above a better, gone; so must thy grave

Give way to what's seen now. Sir, you yourself  
Have said, and writ so, (but your writing now  
Is colder than that theme,) *She had not been,*  
*Nor was not to be equal'd*;—thus your verse  
Flour'd with her beauty once; 'tis shrewdly  
To say, you have seen a better. [ebb'd,

*Gent.* Pardon, madam,  
The one I have almost forgot; (your pardon.)  
The other, when she has obtain'd your eye,  
Will have your tongue too. This is such a  
creature,

Would she begin a sect, might quench the zeal  
Of all professors else: make proselytes  
Of who she but bid follow.

*Paul.* How? not women?  
*Gent.* Women will love her, that she is a  
woman

More worth than any man; men, that she is  
The rarest of all women.

*Leon.* Go, Cleomenes:  
Yourself, assisted with your honour'd friends,  
Bring them to our embracement.—Still 'tis  
strange,

[*Exit* CLEO., Lords, and Gentlemen.  
He thus should steal upon us.

*Paul.* Had our prince,  
(Jewel of children,) seen this hour, he had pair'd

\* At rest, dead.

† Instigate.

‡ Split.

§ Meet.

|| i. e. Than the corpse of Hermione, the subject of your writing.



Well with this lord; there was not full a  
Between their births. [month

*Leon.* Pr'ythee, no more; thou know'st  
He dies to me again, when talk'd of: sure,  
When I shall see this gentleman, thy speeches  
Will bring me to consider that, which may  
Unfurnish me of reason.—They are come.—  
*Re-enter CLEOMENES, with FLORIZEL, PER-*  
*DITA, and Attendants.*

Your mother was most true to wedlock, prince;  
For she did print your royal father off,  
Conceiving you: Were I but twenty-one,  
Your father's image is so hit in you,  
His very air, that I should call you brother,  
As I did him; and speak of something, wildly  
By us perform'd before. Most dearly welcome!  
And your fair princess, goddess!—O, alas!  
I lost a couple, that 'twixt heaven and earth  
Might thus have stood, begetting wonder, as  
You, gracious couple, do! and then I lost  
(All mine own folly,) the society,  
Amity too, of your brave father; whom,  
Though bearing misery, I desire my life  
Once more to look upon.

*Flo.* By his command  
Have I here touch'd Sicilia: and from him  
Give you all greetings; that a king, at friend,  
Can send his brother: and, but infirmity  
(Which waits upon worn times,) hath something  
His wish'd ability, he had himself [seized  
The lands and waters 'twixt your throne and his  
Measur'd to look upon you; whom he loves  
(He bade me say so,) more than all the sheep-  
And those that bear them, living. [tres,

*Leon.* O, my brother,  
(Good gentleman!) the wrongs I have done  
thee, stir

Afresh within me; and these thy offices,  
So rarely kind, are as interpreters [ther,  
Of my behind hand slackness!—Welcome hi-  
As is the spring to the earth: And hath he too  
Exposed this paragon to the fearful usage  
(At least, ungentle,) of the dreadful Neptune,  
To greet a man, not worth her pains; much less  
The adventure of her person?

*Flo.* Good my lord,  
She came from Libya.

*Leon.* Where the warlike Smalus,  
That noble honour'd lord, is fear'd and loved?

*Flo.* Most royal sir, from thence; from him,  
whose daughter [thence  
His tears proclaim'd his, parting with her:  
(A prosperous south-wind friendly,) we have  
cross'd,

To execute the charge my father gave me,  
For visiting your highness: My best train  
I have from your Sicilian shores dismiss'd;  
Who for Bohemia bend, to signify  
Not only my success in Libya, sir,  
But my arrival, and my wife's, in safety  
Here, where we are.

*Leon.* The blessed gods  
Purge all infection from our air, whilst you  
Do climate here! You have a holy father,  
A graceful\* gentleman; against whose person,

So sacred as it is, I have done sin:  
For which the heavens taking angry note,  
Have left me issueless; and your father's bless'd  
(As he from heaven merits it,) with you, [been,  
Worthy his goodness. What might I have  
Might I a son and daughter now have look'd on,  
Such goodly things as you?

*Enter a Lord.*

*Lord.* Most noble sir,  
That, which I shall report, will bear no credit,  
Were not the proof so high. Please you great sir,  
Bohemia greet you from himself, by me:  
Desires you to attach† his son; who has  
(His dignity and duty both cast off)  
Fled from his father, from his hopes, and with  
A shepherd's daughter.

*Leon.* Where's Bohemia? speak.

*Lord.* Here in the city; I now came from  
him.

I speak amazedly; and it becomes  
My marvel, and my message. To your court  
Whiles he was hastening, (in the chase, it seems,  
Of this fair couple,) meets he on the way  
The father of this seeming lady, and  
Her brother, having both their country quitted  
With this young prince.

*Flo.* Camillo has betray'd me;  
Whose honour, and whose honesty, till now,  
Endured all weathers.

*Lord.* Lay't so, to his charge;  
He's with the king your father.

*Leon.* Who? Camillo?

*Lord.* Camillo, sir; I spake with him; who  
now

Has these poor men in question‡. Never saw I  
Wretches so quake: they kneel, they kiss the  
earth;

Forswear themselves as often as they speak:  
Bohemia stops his ears, and threatens them  
With divers deaths in death.

*Per.* O, my poor father!—  
The heaven sets spies upon us, will not have  
Our contract celebrated.

*Leon.* You are married?

*Flo.* We are not, sir, nor are we like to be;  
The stars, I see, will kiss the valleys first:—  
The odds for high and low's alike§.

*Leon.* My lord,  
Is this the daughter of a king?

*Flo.* She is,

When once she is my wife. [speed,

*Leon.* That once, I see, by your good father's  
Will come on very slowly. I am sorry,  
Most sorry, you have broken from his liking,  
Where you were tied in duty: and as sorry,  
Your choice is not so rich in worth|| as beauty,  
That you might well enjoy her.

*Flo.* Dear, look up:  
Though fortune, visible an enemy,  
Should chase us, with my father; power no jot  
Hath she, to change our loves.—Beseech you,  
Remember since you owed no more to time[sir,  
Than I do now: with thought of such affection's,  
Step forth mine advocate; at your request.  
My father will grant precious things as trifles.

\* Full of grace and virtue.

† Seize, arrest.

‡ Conversation.

§ A quibble on the false dice so called.

|| Descent or wealth.

*Leon.* Would he do so, I'd beg your precious mistress,  
Which he counts but a trifle.

*Paul.* Sir, my liege,  
Your eye hath too much youth in't: not a month  
'Fore your queen died, she was more worth  
Than what you look on now. [such gazes]

*Leon.* I thought of her,  
Even in these looks I made.—But your petition  
[To FLORIZEL.]

Is yet unanswer'd: I will to your father;  
Your honour not o'erthrown by your desires,  
I am a friend to them, and you: upon which  
errand

I now go toward him; therefore, follow me  
And mark what way I make: Come, good my  
lord. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. *The same. Before the Palace.*

*Enter AUTOLYCUS and a Gentleman.*

*Aut.* 'Beseech you, sir, were you present at  
this relation?

*1 Gent.* I was by at the opening of the fardel,  
heard the old shepherd deliver the manner how  
he found it: whereupon, after a little amazed-  
ness, we were all commanded out of the cham-  
ber; only this, methought I heard the shepherd  
say, he found the child. [It.]

*Aut.* I would most gladly know the issue of

*1 Gent.* I make a broken delivery of the  
business:—But the changes I perceived in the  
king, and Camillo, were very notes of admi-  
ration: they seemed almost, with staring on  
one another, to tear the cases of their eyes:  
there was speech in their dumbness, language  
in their very gesture; they looked, as they had  
heard of a world ransom'd, or one destroyed:  
A notable passion of wonder appeared in them:  
but the wisest beholder, that knew no more but  
seeing, could not say, if the importance\* were  
joy, or sorrow: but in the extremity of the one,  
it must needs be.

*Enter another Gentleman.*

Here comes a gentleman, that, happily, knows  
The news, Rogero? [more:]

*2 Gent.* Nothing but bonfires: The oracle is  
fulfill'd; the king's daughter is found: such a  
deal of wonder is broken out within this hour,  
that ballad-makers cannot be able to express it.

*Enter a third Gentleman.*

Here comes the lady Paulina's steward; he can  
deliver you more.—How goes it now, sir? this  
news, which is called true, is so like an old tale,  
that the verity of it is in strong suspicion: Has  
the king found his heir?

*3 Gent.* Most true; if ever truth were preg-  
nant by circumstance: that, which you hear,  
you'll swear you see, there is such unity in the  
proofs. The mantle of queen Hermione:—her  
jewel about the neck of it:—the letters of An-  
tigonus, found with it, which they know to be  
his character:—the majesty of the creature, in  
resemblance of the mother:—the affection† of  
nobleness, which nature shows above her breed-  
ing,—and many other evidences, proclaim her,

with all certainty, to be the king's daughter.  
Did you see the meeting of the two kings?

*2 Gent.* No.

*3 Gent.* Then have you lost a sight, which was  
to be seen, cannot be spoken of. There might  
you have beheld one joy crown another; so,  
and in such manner, that, it seemed, sorrow  
wept to take leave of them; for their joy waded  
in tears. There was casting up of eyes, holding  
up of hands; with countenance of such dis-  
traction, that they were to be known by gar-  
ment, not by favour‡. Our king, being ready to  
leap out of himself for joy of his found daughter;  
as if that joy were now become a loss, cries,  
*O, thymother, thymother!* then asks Bohemia  
forgiveness; then embraces his son-in-law; then  
again worries he his daughter, with clipping  
her; now he thanks the old shepherd, which  
stands by, like a weather-bitten conduit of many  
kings' reigns. I never heard of such another  
encounter, which lames report to follow it, and  
undoes description to do it.

*2 Gent.* What, pray you, became of Antigo-  
nus, that carried hence the child?

*3 Gent.* Like an old tale still; which will  
have matter to rehearse, though credit be asleep,  
and not an ear open: He was torn to pieces  
with a bear; this avouches the shepherd's son;  
who has not only his innocence, (which seems  
much,) to justify him, but a handkerchief, and  
rings, of his, that Paulina knows.

*1 Gent.* What became of his bark, and his  
followers?

*3 Gent.* Wrecked, the same instant of their  
master's death; and in the view of the shep-  
herd: so that all the instruments, which aided  
to expose the child, were even then lost, when  
it was found. But, O, the noble combat, that,  
'twixt joy and sorrow, was fought in Paulina!  
She had one eye declined for the loss of her  
husband; another elevated that the oracle  
was fulfilled: She lifted the princess from the  
earth; and so locks her in embracing, as if she  
would pin her to her heart, that she might no  
more be in danger of losing.

*1 Gent.* The dignity of this act was worth the  
audience of kings and princes; for by such was  
it acted.

*3 Gent.* One of the prettiest touches of all,  
and that which angled for mine eyes (caught  
the water though not the fish,) was, when at  
the relation of the queen's death, with the  
manner how she came to it, (bravely confessed,  
and lamented by the king,) how attentiveness  
wounded his daughter: till, from one sign of  
dour to another, she did, with an *alas!* I  
would fain say, bleed tears; for, I am sure,  
my heart wept blood. Who was most marble  
there||, changed colour; some swooned, all sor-  
row'd: if all the world could have seen it, the  
woe had been universal.

*1 Gent.* Are they returned to the court?

*3 Gent.* No: the princess, hearing of her  
mother's statue, which is in the keeping of  
Paulina, a piece many years in doing, and

\* The thing imported.

† Disposition or quality.

‡ Countenance, features.

§ Embracing.

|| Most petrified with wonder.

now newly performed by that rare Italian master, Julio Romano; who, had he himself eternity, and could put breath into his work, would beguile nature of her custom, so perfectly he is her ape: he so near to Hermione hath done Hermione, that, they say, one would speak to her, and stand in hope of answer: thither, with all greediness of affection, are they gone; and there they intend to sup.

*2 Gent.* I thought, she had some great matter there in hand; for she hath privately, twice or thrice a day, ever since the death of Hermione, visited that removed \*house. Shall we thither, and with our company piece the rejoicing?

*1 Gent.* Who would be thence, that has the benefit of access? every wink of an eye, some new grace will be born: our absence makes us unthrifty to our knowledge. Let's along.

[*Exeunt Gentlemen.*]

*Aut.* Now, had I not the dash of my former life in me, would preferment drop on my head. I brought the old man and his son aboard the prince; told him, I heard him talk of a fardel, and I know not what: but he, at that time, overfond of the shepherd's daughter, (so he then took her to be,) who began to be much seasick, and himself little better, extremity of weather continuing, this mystery remained undiscovered. But 'tis all one to me: for had I been the finder-out of this secret, it would not have relished among my other discredits.

[*Enter Shepherd and Clown.*]

Here come those I have done good to, against my will, and already appearing in the blossoms of their fortune.

*Shep.* Come, boy; I am past more children; but thy sons and daughters will be all gentlemen born.

*Clo.* You are well met, sir: You denied to fight with me this other day, because I was no gentleman born: See you these clothes? say, you see them not, and think me still no gentleman born: you were best say, these robes are not gentlemen born. Give me the lie; do; and try whether I am not now a gentleman born.

*Aut.* I know, you are now, sir, a gentleman born.

*Clo.* Ay, and have been so any time these four hours.

*Shep.* And so have I, boy.

*Clo.* So you have:—but I was a gentleman born before my father: for the king's son took me by the hand, and called me, brother; and then the two kings called my father, brother; and then the prince, my brother, and the princess, my sister, called my father, father; and so we wept: and there was the first gentleman-like tears that ever we shed.

*Shep.* We may live, son, to shed many more.

*Clo.* Ay; or else 'twere hard luck, being in so preposterous estate as we are.

*Aut.* I humbly beseech you, sir, to pardon me all the faults I have committed to your worship, and to give me your good report to the prince my master.

*Shep.* 'Pr'ythee, son, do; for we must be gentle, now we are gentlemen.

*Clo.* Thou wilt amend thy life?

*Aut.* Ay, an it like your good worship.

*Clo.* Give me thy hand: I will swear to the prince, thou art as honest a true fellow as any is in Bohemia.

*Shep.* You may say it, but not swear it.

*Clo.* Not swear it, now I am a gentleman? Let boors and franklins† say it, I'll swear it.

*Shep.* How if it be false, son?

*Clo.* If it be ne'er so false, a true gentleman may swear it, in the behalf of his friend:—And I'll swear to the prince, thou art a tall‡ fellow of thy hands, and that thou wilt not be drunk; but I know, thou art no tall fellow of thy hands, and that thou wilt be drunk; but I'll swear it: and I would, thou would'st be a tall fellow of thy hands.

*Aut.* I will prove so, sir, to my power.

*Clo.* Ay, by any means prove a tall fellow: If I do not wonder, how thou darest venture to be drunk, not being a tall fellow, trust me not.—Hark! the kings and the princes, our kindred, are going to see the queen's picture. Come, follow us: we'll be thy good masters. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. A Room in Paulina's House.*

*Enter LEONTES, POLIXENES, FLORIZEL, PERDITA, CAMILLO, PAULINA, Lords, and Attendants.*

*Leon.* O grave and good Paulina, the great That I have had of thee! [*comfort*]

*Paul.* What, sovereign sir, I did not well, I meant well: All my services, You have paid home; but that you have vouchsafed [*contracted*] With your crown'd brother, and these your Heirs of your kingdoms, my poor house to visit, It is a surplus of your grace, which never My life may last to answer.

*Leon.* O Paulina, We honour you with trouble: But we came To see the statue of our queen: your gallery Have we pass'd through, not without much In many singularities; but we saw not [*content*] That which my daughter came to look upon, The statue of her mother.

*Paul.* As she lived peerless, So her dead likeness, I do well believe, Excels whatever yet you look'd upon, Or hand of man hath done; therefore I keep it Lonely, apart: But here it is: prepare To see the life as lively mock'd, as ever [*well*]. Still sleep mock'd death: behold; and say, 'tis [*PAULINA undraws a Curtain, and discovers a statue.*]

I like your silence, it the more shows off Your wonder: But yet speak;—first, you, my Comes it not something near? [*liege.*]

*Leon.* Her natural posture!— Chide me, dear stone; that I may say, indeed Thou art Hermione: or, rather, thou art she, In thy not chiding; for she was as tender As infancy, and grace.—But yet, Paulina,

\* Remote.

† Yeomen.

‡ Stout.



Hermione was not so much wrinkled; nothing so aged, as this seems.

*Pol.* O, not by much. [lence;

*Paul.* So much the more our carver's excel-  
Which lets go by some sixteen years, and  
As she lived now. [makes her

*Leon.* As now she might have done,  
So much to my good comfort, as it is  
Now piercing to my soul. O, thus she stood,  
Even with such life of majesty, (warm life,  
As now it coldly stands,) when first I woo'd her!  
I am ashamed: Does not the stone rebuke me,  
For being more stone than it?—O, royal piece,  
There's magic in thy majesty; which has  
My evils conjured to remembrance; and  
From thy admiring daughter took the spirits,  
Standing like stone with thee!

*Per.* And give me leave;  
And do not say, 'tis superstition, that  
I kneel, and then implore her blessing.—Lady,  
Dear queen, that ended when I but began,  
Give me that hand of yours, to kiss.

*Paul.* O, patience;  
The statue is but newly fix'd, the colour's  
Not dry. [laid on;

*Cam.* My lord, your sorrow was too sore  
Which sixteen winters cannot blow away,  
So many summers, dry: scarce any joy  
Did ever so long live; no sorrow,  
But kill'd itself much sooner.

*Pol.* Dear my brother,  
Let him, that was the cause of this, have power  
To take off so much grief from you, as he  
Will piece up in himself.

*Paul.* Indeed, my lord,  
If I had thought, the sight of my poor image  
Would thus have wrought\* you, (for the stone  
I'd not have show'd it. [is mine)

*Leon.* Do not draw the curtain.

*Paul.* No longer shall you gaze on't; lest  
May think, anon, it moves. [your fancy

*Leon.* Let be, let be. [ready—  
Would I were dead, but that, methinks al-  
What was he, that did make it?—See, my  
lord, [those veins  
Would you not deem, it breathed? and that  
Did verily bear blood?

*Pol.* Masterly done:  
The very life seems warm upon her lip. [in't†  
*Leon.* The fixure of her eye has motion  
As† we are mock'd with art.

*Paul.* I'll draw the curtain;  
My lord's almost so far transported, that  
He'll think, anon, it lives.

*Leon.* O sweet Paulina,  
Make me to think so twenty years together;  
No settled senses of the world can match  
The pleasure of that madness. Let 't alone.

*Paul.* I am sorry, sir, I have thus far stirr'd  
I could afflict you further [you: but

*Leon.* Do, Paulina;  
For this affliction has a taste as sweet  
As any cordial comfort.—Still, methinks, [sel  
There is an air comes from her: What fine chi-  
Could ever yet cut breath? Let no man mock  
For I will kiss her. [me,

*Paul.* Good my lord, forbear:  
The rudeness upon her lip is wet;  
You'll mar it, if you kiss it; stain your own  
With oily painting: Shall I draw the curtain?  
*Leon.* No, not these twenty years.

*Per.* So long could I  
Stand by, a looker-on.

*Paul.* Either forbear,  
Quit presently the chapel; or resolve you  
For more amazement: If you can behold it,  
I'll make the statue move indeed; descend,  
And take you by the hand: but then you'll  
(Which I protest against,) I am assisted [think,  
By wicked powers.

*Leon.* What you can make her do,  
I am content to look on: what to speak,  
I am content to hear; for 'tis as easy  
To make her speak, as move.

*Paul.* It is required, [still;  
You do awake your faith: Then, all stand  
Or those, that think it is unlawful business  
I am about, let them depart.

*Leon.* Proceed;  
No foot shall stir.

*Paul.* Music; awake her: strike.—  
[Music.

'Tis time; descend; be stone no more: ap-  
proach;

Strike all that look upon with marvel. Come;  
I'll fill your grave up: stir; nay, come away:  
Bequeath to death your numbness, for from him  
Dear life redeems you.—You perceive, she stirs:

[HERMIONE comes down from the Pedestal.  
Start not: her actions shall be holy, as,  
You hear, my spell is lawful: do not shun her,  
Until you see her die again; for then  
You kill her double: Nay, present your hand:  
When she was young, you woo'd her; now, in  
Is she become the suitor. [age,

*Leon.* O, she's warm! [Embracing her.  
If this be magic, let it be an art  
Lawful as eating.

*Pol.* She embraces him.

*Cam.* She hangs about his neck;

If she pertain to life, let her speak too.

*Pol.* Ay, and make't manifest where she  
Or, how stolen from the dead? [has lived,

*Paul.* That she is living,  
Were it but told you, should be hooted at  
Like an old tale; but it appears, she lives,  
Though yet she speak not. Mark a little while.—  
Please you to interpose, fair madam; kneel,  
And pray your mother's blessing.—Turn, good  
Our Perdita is found. [lady;

Presenting PERDITA, who kneels to HER-  
MIONE.

*Her.* You gods, look down,  
And from your sacred vials pour your graces  
Upon my daughter's head!—Tell me, mine own,  
Where hast thou been preserved where lived?  
how found

Thy father's court? for thou shalt hear, that  
Knowing by Paulina, that the oracle [I,—  
Gave hope thou wast in being,—have pre-  
Myself, to see the issue. [served

*Paul.* There's time enough for that;

\* Worked agitated. † i. e., Though her eye be fixed it seems to have motion in it. ‡ As it

Lest they desire, upon this push to trouble  
Your joys with like relation.—Go together,  
You precious winners \* all; your exultation  
Partake† to every one. I, an old turtle,  
Will wing me to some wither'd bough; and  
My mate, that's never to be found again, [there  
Lament till I am lost.

*Leon.* O peace, Paulina;  
Thou should'st a husband take by my consent,  
As I by thine, a wife: this is a match, [mine;  
And made between's my vows. Thou hast found  
But how, is to be question'd: for I saw her,  
As I thought, dead; and have, in vain, said  
many

A prayer upon her grave: I'll not seek far  
(For him, I partly know his mind,) to find thee

An honourable husband:—Come, Camillo,  
And take her by the hand: whose worth, and  
Is richly noted; and here justified [honesty,  
By us, a pair of kings.—Let's from this place.—  
What?—Look upon my brother:—both your  
pardons,

That e'er I put between your holy looks

My ill suspicion.—This your son-in-law,

And son unto the king, (whom heavens di-  
recting,) [lina,

Is troth-plight to your daughter.—Good Pau-

Lead us from hence; where we may leisurely

Each one demand, and answer to his part

Perform'd in this wide gap of time, since first

We were dissever'd; Hastily lead away.

[*Exeunt.*

\* You who by this discovery have gained what you desired.

† Participate.

This play, as Dr. Warburton justly observes, is, with all its absurdities, very entertaining. The character of Autolycus is naturally conceived, and strongly represented.—JOHNSON.

# COMEDY OF ERRORS.

## Persons represented.

SOLINUS, *duke of Ephesus.*  
 ÆGEON, *a merchant of Syracuse.*  
 ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus, } *twin brothers, and sons to*  
 ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse, } *Ægeon and Emilia, but un-*  
 DROMIO of Ephesus, } *known to each other.*  
 DROMIO of Syracuse, } *twin brothers, and Attend-*  
 BALTHAZAR, } *ants on the two Antipho-*  
*luses.*  
 BALTHAZAR, *a merchant.*

ANGELO, *a goldsmith.*  
 A Merchant, *friend to Antipholus of Syra-*  
*cuse.*  
 PINCH, *a schoolmaster, and a conjurer.*  
 EMILIA, *wife to Ægeon, an abbess at Ephe-*  
*sus.*  
 ADRIANA, *wife to Antipholus of Ephesus.*  
 LUCIANA, *her sister.*  
 LUCE, *her servant.*  
 A Courtezan.

*Gaoler, Officers, and other Attendants.*

*Scene,—Ephesus.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. *A Hall in the Duke's Palace.*

*Enter Duke, ÆGEON, Gaoler, Officer, and other Attendants.*

*Æg.* Proceed, Solinus, to procure my fall,  
 And, by the doom of death, end woes and all.

*Duke.* Merchant of Syracuse, plead no more;  
 I am not partial, to infringe our laws:  
 The enmity and discord, which of late [duke  
 Sprung from the rancorous outrage of your  
 To merchants, our well-dealing countrymen,—  
 Who, wanting gilders\* to redeem their lives,  
 Have seal'd his rigorous statutes with their  
 bloods,—

Excludes all pity from our threat'ning looks.

For, since the mortal and intestine jars  
 'Twixt thy seditious countrymen and us,  
 It hath in solemn synods been decreed,  
 Both by the Syracusans and ourselves,  
 To admit no traffic to our adverse towns:  
 Nay, more,

If any born at Ephesus, be seen  
 At any Syracusan marts† and fairs,  
 Again, If any Syracusan born,  
 Come to the bay of Ephesus, he dies,  
 His goods confiscate to the duke's dispose;  
 Unless a thousand marks be levied,  
 To quit the penalty, and to ransom him.  
 Thy substance, valued at the highest rate,  
 Cannot amount unto a hundred marks;  
 Therefore, by law thou art condemn'd to die.

*Æge.* Yet this my comfort; when your  
 words are done,

My woes end likewise with the evening sun.

*Duke.* Well, Syracusan, say, in brief, the  
 cause

Why thou departedst from thy native home;  
 And for what cause thou cam'st to Ephesus.

*Æge.* A heavier task could not have been  
 imposed,

Than I to speak my griefs unspeakable:  
 Yet, that the world may witness, that my end  
 Was wrought by nature‡, not by vile offence.  
 I'll utter what my sorrow gives me leave.  
 In Syracuse was I born; and wed  
 Unto a woman, happy but for me,  
 And by me too, had not our hap been bad.  
 With her I lived in joy; our wealth increased,  
 By prosperous voyages I often made  
 To Epidamnus, till my factor's death;  
 And he (great care of goods at random left)  
 Drew me from kind embracements of my  
 spouse: [old

From whom my absence was not six months  
 Before herself (almost at fainting, under  
 The pleasing punishment that women bear,)  
 Had made provision for her following me,  
 And soon, and safe, arrived where I was.  
 There she had not been long, but she became  
 A joyful mother of two goodly sons; [other,  
 And, which was strange, the one so like the  
 As could not be distinguish'd but by names.  
 That very hour, and in the self-same inn,  
 A poor mean woman was delivered  
 Of such a burden, male twins, both alike:  
 Those, for their parents were exceeding poor,  
 I bought, and brought up to attend my sons.  
 My wife, not meanly proud of two such boys,  
 Made daily motions for our home return:  
 Unwilling I agreed; alas, too soon.

We came aboard:  
 A league from Epidamnus had we sail'd,  
 Before the always-wind-obeying deep  
 Gave any tragic instance of our harm:  
 But longer did we not retain much hope;  
 For what obscured light the heavens did grant  
 Did but convey unto our fearful minds  
 A doubtful warrant of immediate death;  
 Which, though myself would gladly have em-  
 Yet the incessant weepings of my wife, [braced

\* Name of a coin.

† Markets.

Natural affection.



Weeping before for what she saw must come,  
And piteous plainings of the pretty babes,  
That mourn'd for fashion, ignorant what to fear,  
Forced me to seek delays for them and me.  
And this it was,—for other means was none.—

The sailors sought for safety by our boat,  
And left the ship, then sinking-ripe, to us:  
My wife, more careful for the latter-born,  
Had fastened him unto a small spare mast,  
Such as sea-faring men provide for storms;  
To him one of the other twins was bound,  
Whilst I had been like heedful of the other.

The children thus disposed, my wife and I,  
Fixing our eyes on whom our care was fix'd,  
Fasten'd ourselves at either end the mast;  
And floating straight, obedient to the stream.  
Were carried towards Corinth, as we thought  
At length the sun, gazing upon the earth,  
Dispersed those vapours that offended us;  
And, by the benefit of his wish'd light,  
The seas wax'd calm, and we discovered  
Two ships from far making amain to us,  
Of Corinth that, of Epidaurus this:

But ere they came,—O, let me say no more!  
Gather the sequel by that went before. [Off so;  
*Duke.* Nay, forward, old man, do not break  
For we may pity, though not pardon thee.

*Æge.* O, had the gods done so, I had not now  
Worthily term'd them merciless to us!  
For, ere the ships could meet by twice five  
leagues,

We were encounter'd by a mighty rock;  
Which being violently borne upon,  
Our helpful ship was splitt'd in the midst,  
So that, in this unjust divorce of us,  
Fortune had left to both of us alike  
What to delight in, what to sorrow for.  
Her part, poor soul! seeming as burdened  
With lesser weight, but not with lesser woe,  
Was carried with more speed before the wind;  
And in our sight they three were taken up  
By fishermen of Corinth, as we thought.  
At length, another ship had seized on us!  
And, knowing whom it was their hap to save,  
Gave helpful welcome to their shipwreck'd  
guests;

And would have reft \* the fishers of their prey,  
Had not their bark been very slow of sail,  
And therefore homeward did they bend their  
course.—

Thus have you heard me sever'd from my bliss;  
That by misfortunes was my life prolong'd,  
To tell sad stories of my own mishaps.

*Duke.* And, for the sake of them thou sor-  
do me the favour to dilate at full [rowest for,  
What hath befall'n of them, and thee, till now.

*Æge.* My youngest boy, and yet my eldest  
At eighteen years became inquisitive [care,  
After his brother; and importuned me,  
That his attendant, (for his case was like,  
Reft of his brother, but retain'd his name.)  
Might bear him company in the quest of him:  
Whom whilst I labour'd of a love to see,  
I hazarded the loss of whom I loved.

Five summers have I spent in furthest Greece,

Roaming clean† through the bounds of Asia,  
And, coasting homeward, came to Ephesus;  
Hopeless to find, yet loth to leave unsought,  
Or that, or any place that harbours men.  
But here must end the story of my life;  
And happy were I in my timely death.  
Could all my travels warrant me they live.

*Duke.* Hapless Ægeon, whom the fates have  
To bear the extremity of dire mishap! [mark'd  
Now, trust me, were it not against our laws,  
Against my crown, my oath, my dignity,  
Which princes, would they, may not disannul,  
My soul should sue as advocate for thee.  
But, though thou art adjudged to the death,  
And passed sentence may not be recal'd,  
But to our honour's great disparagement,  
Yet will I favour thee in what I can:  
Therefore, merchant, I'll limit thee this day,  
To seek thy help by beneficial help:  
Try all the friends thou hast in Ephesus;  
Beg thou, or borrow, to make up the sum,  
And live; if not, then thou art doom'd to die:—  
Gaoler, take him to thy custody.

*Gaol.* I will, my lord.

*Æge.* Hopeless, and helpless, doth Ægeon  
wend:

But to procrastinate his lifeless end. [Exeunt.

## SCENE II. A public Place.

Enter ANTIPHOLUS and DROMIO of Syra-  
cuse and a Merchant.

*Mer.* Therefore, give out, you are of Epidam-  
num,

Lest that your goods too soon be confiscate.

This very day, a Syracusan merchant  
Is apprehended for arrival here;

And, not being able to buy out his life,  
According to the statute of the town,  
Dies ere the weary sun set in the west.

There is your money that I had to keep. [Host,

*Ant. S.* Go bear it to the Centaur's, where we  
And stay there, Dromio, till I come to thee.

Within this hour it will be dinner-time:

Till that, I'll view the manners of the town,  
Peruse the traders, gaze upon the buildings,

And then return, and sleep within mine inn;

For with long travel I am stiff and weary.

Get thee away.

*Dro. S.* Many a man would take you at  
And go indeed, having so good a mean.

[Exit DRO. S.

*Ant. S.* A trusty villain], sir; that very oft,  
When I am dull with care and melancholy,

Lightens my humour with his merry jests.

What, will you walk with me about the town,  
And then go to my inn, and dine with me?

*Mer.* I am invited, sir, to certain merchants.  
Of whom I hope to make much benefit;

I crave your pardon. Soon, at five o'clock,

Please you, I'll meet with you upon the mart‡,  
And afterwards consort you till bed-time;

My present business calls me from you now.

*Ant. S.* Farewell till then: I will go lose  
myself,

And wander up and down, to view the city.

\* Deprived. † Clear, completely. ‡ Go. § The sign of their hotel. || i. e. Servant.  
¶ Exchange, market-place

*Mer* Sir, I commend you to your own content. [Exit Merchant.]

*Ant. S.* He that commends me to mine own content,

Commends me to the thing I cannot get.  
I to the world am like a drop of water,  
That in the ocean seeks another drop;  
Who, falling there to find his fellow forth,  
Unseen, inquisitive, confounds himself:  
So I, to find a mother, and a brother,  
In quest of them, unhappy, lose myself.

*Enter DROMIO of Ephesus.*

Here comes the almanack of my true date,—  
What now? How chance, thou art returned so soon? [too late:]

*Dro. E.* Return'd so soon! rather approach'd  
The capon burns, the pig falls from the spit;  
The clock has stricken twelve upon the bell,  
My mistress made it one upon my cheek:  
She is so hot, because the meat is cold;  
The meat is cold, because you come not home;  
You come not home because you have no stomach;

You have no stomach, having broke your fast;  
But we, that know what 'tis to fast and pray,  
Are penitent for your default to-day. [I pray;

*Ant. S.* Stop in your wind, sir; tell me this,  
Where have you left the money that I gave you?

*Dro. E.* O,—six-pence, that I had o' Wednesday last,

To pay the saddler for my mistress' crupper;—  
The saddler had it, sir, I kept it not.

*Ant. S.* I am not in a sportive humour now:  
Tell me, and dally not, where is the money?

We being strangers here, how dar'st thou trust  
So great a charge from thine own custody?

*Dro. E.* I pray you jest, sir, as you sit at dinner:

I from my mistress come to you in post;  
If I return, I shall be post indeed;  
For she will score your fault upon my pate.  
Methinks, your maw, like mine, should be your clock,

And strike you home without a messenger.

*Ant. S.* Come, Dromio, come, these jests are out of season.

Reserve them till a merrier hour than this:

Where is the gold I gave in charge to thee?

*Dro. E.* To me, sir? why you gave no gold to me. [your foolishness,

*Ant. S.* Come on, sir knave, have done  
And tell me, how thou hast disposed thy charge.

*Dro. E.* My charge was but to fetch you from the mart [ner;

Home to your house, the Phoenix, sir, to dine.  
My mistress, and her sister, stay for you.

*Ant. S.* Now, as I am a christian, answer me, [money;

In what safe place you have bestow'd my  
Or I shall break that merry scone \* of yours,

That stands on tricks when I am undispos'd:  
Where is the thousand marks thou hadst of me?

*Dro. E.* I have some marks of yours upon my pate, [ders,

Some of my mistress' marks upon my shoulder.  
But not a thousand marks between you both.—

If I should pay your worship those again,  
Perchance, you will not bear them patiently.

*Ant. S.* Thy mistress' marks! what mistress, slave, hast thou? [at the Phoenix.

*Dro. E.* Your worship's wife, my mistress.  
She that doth fast, till you come home to dinner,

And prays, that you will hie you home to dinner. [my face,

*Ant. S.* What, wilt thou flout me thus unto  
Being forbid? There, take you that, sir knave.

*Dro. E.* What mean you, sir? for God's sake, hold your hands;

Nay, an you will not, sir, I'll take my heels. [Exit DROMIO, E.]

*Ant. S.* Upon my life, by some device or other,

The villain is o'er-raught † of all my money.

They say, this town is full of cozenage;  
As, nimble jugglers, that deceive the eye,

Dark-working sorcerers, that change the mind  
Soul-killing witches, that deform the body;

Disguised cheaters, prating mountebanks,  
And many such-like liberties of sin:

If it prove so, I will be gone the sooner.  
I'll to the Centaur, to go seek this slave;

I greatly fear, my money is not safe. [Exit

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. A public place.

*Enter ADRIANA, and LUCIANA.*

*Adr.* Neither my husband, nor the slave return'd,

That in such haste I sent to seek his master!  
Sure, Luciana, it is two o'clock.

*Luc.* Perhaps, some merchant hath invited him, [dinner,

And from the mart he's somewhere gone to  
Good sister, let us dine, and never fret:

A man is master of his liberty:

Time is their master; and, when they see time,  
They'll go, or come: If so, be patient, sister.

*Adr.* Why should their liberty than ours be more?

*Luc.* Because their business still lies out o'door.

*Adr.* Look, when I serve him so, he takes it ill.

*Luc.* O, know, he is the bridle of your will.

*Adr.* There's none, but asses, will be bridled so. [woe.

*Luc.* Why, headstrong liberty is lash'd with  
There's nothing, situate under heaven's eye,

But hath his bound, in earth, in sea, and sky:  
The beasts, the fishes, and the winged fowls,

Are their males' subject, and at their controul:  
Men, more divine, the masters of all these,

Lords of the wide world, and wild water seas,  
Indued with intellectual sense and souls,

Of more pre-eminence than fish and fowls,

\* Head.

† Over-reached.

Are masters to their females, and their lords :  
Then let your will attend on their accords.

*Adr.* This servitude makes you to keep  
unwed, [bed.]

*Luc.* Not this, but troubles of the marriage

*Adr.* But, were you wedded, you would  
bear some sway.

*Luc.* Ere I learn love, I'll practise to obey.

*Adr.* How if your husband start some other  
where? [forbear.]

*Luc.* Till he come home again, I would

*Adr.* Patience, unmoved, no marvel though  
she pance;

They can be meek, that have no other cause.

A wretched soul, bruised with adversity,

We bid be quiet, when we hear it cry ;

But were we burden'd with like weight of  
pain, [plain:]

As much, or more, we should ourselves com-

So thou, that hast no unkind mate to grieve

thee, [lieve me:]

With urging helpless patience wouldst re-

But, if thou live to see like right bereft,

This fool-begged patience in thee will be left.

*Luc.* Well, I will marry one day, but to  
try; [nigh.]

Here comes your man, now is your husband

*Enter DROMIO of Ephesus.*

*Adr.* Say, is your tardy master now at hand?

*Dro. E.* Nay, he is at two hands with me,  
and that my two ears can witness.

*Adr.* Say, didst thou speak with him?  
know'st thou his mind?

*Dro. E.* Ay, ay, he told his mind upon  
mine ear:

Beshrew his hand, I scarce could understand it.

*Luc.* Spake he so doubtfully, thou couldst  
not feel his meaning?

*Dro. E.* Nay, he struck so plainly I could  
too well feel his blows; and withal so doubt-  
fully, that I could scarce understand them\*.

*Adr.* But say, I pry'ee, is he coming home?  
It seems, he hath great care to please his wife.

*Dro. E.* Why, mistress, sure my master is  
horn-mad.

*Adr.* Horn-mad, thou villain!

*Dro. E.* I mean not cuckold-mad; but, sure,  
he's stark mad:

When I desired him to come home to dinner,  
He ask'd me for a thousand marks in gold:

'Tis dinner-time, quoth I; My gold, quoth he,  
Your meat doth burn, quoth I; My gold,

quoth he: [quoth he:]

Will you come home? quoth I; My gold,  
Where is the thousand marks I gave thee,

villain? [quoth he:]

The pig, quoth I, is burn'd; My gold,  
My mistress, sir, quoth I; Hang up thy

mistress: [tress!]

I know not thy mistress; out on thy mis-

*Luc.* Quoth who?

*Dro. E.* Quoth my master: [mistress;—  
I know, quoth he, no house, no wife, no  
he that my errand, due unto my tongue,  
I thank him, I bear home upon my shoulders;

For, in conclusion, he did beat me there.

*Adr.* Go back again, thou slave, and fetch  
him home. [home!]

*Dro. E.* Go back again, and be new beaten  
For God's sake, send some other messenger.

*Adr.* Back, slave, or I will break thy pate  
across. [other beating:]

*Dro. E.* And he will bless that cross with  
between you I shall have a holy head.

*Adr.* Hence, prating peasant; fetch thy  
master home. [with me,]

*Dro. E.* Am I so round with you, as you  
That like a football you do spurn me thus?

You spurn me hence, and he will spurn me  
hither:

If I last in this service, you must case me in  
leather. [Exit.]

*Luc.* Fie, how impatience low'reth in your  
face. [grace,]

*Adr.* His company must do his minions  
Whilst I at home starve for a merry look.

Hath homely age the alluring beauty took  
From my poor cheek? then he hath wasted it:

Are my discourses dull? barren my wit?  
If voluble and sharp discourse be marr'd,

Unkindness blunts it, more than marble hard.  
Do their gay vestments his affections bait?

That's not my fault, he's master of my state:  
What ruins are in me, that can be found

By him not ruin'd? then is he the ground  
Of my defeatures: † My decayed fair †

A sunny look of his would soon repair:  
But, too unruily deer, he breaks the pale,

And feeds from home; poor I am but his  
stale. [hence.]

*Luc.* Self-arming jealousy!—fie, beat it  
[dispende.]

*Adr.* Unfeeling fools can with such wrongs  
I know his eye doth homage elsewhere;

Or else, what lets †, it but he would be here?  
Sister, you know, he promised me a chain;—

Would that alone alone he would detain,  
So he would keep fair quarter with his bed!

I see, the jewel, best enamelled,  
Will lose his beauty; and though gold †bides

still,  
That others touch, yet often touching will

Wear gold: and so no man, that hath a name,  
But falsehood and corruption doth it shame.

Since that my beauty cannot please his eye,  
I'll weep what's left away, and weeping die.

*Luc.* How many fond fools serve mad  
jealousy! [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. The same.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse.*

*Ant. S.* The gold, I gave to Dromio, is laid up  
Safe at the Centaur; and the heedful slave

Is wander'd forth, in care to seek me out.  
By computation, and mine host's report,

I could not speak with Dromio, since at first  
I sent him from the mart: See, here he comes.

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse.*

How now, sir? is your merry humour alter'd  
As you love strokes, so jest with me again.

\* e., Scarce stand under them. † Alteration of features. ‡ Fair, for fairness.

§ Stalking horse. || Hinders.



You know no Centaur? you received no gold?  
Your mistress sent to have me home to dinner?  
My house was at the l'henix? Wast thou mad,  
That thus so madly thou didst answer me?

*Dro. S.* What answer, sir? when spake I  
such a word? [hour since.]

*Ant. S.* Even now, even here, not half an

*Dro. S.* I did not see you since you sent  
me hence, [gave me.]

Home to the Centaur, with the gold you

*Ant. S.* Villain, thou didst deny the gold's  
receipt;

And told'st me of a mistress, and a dinner;  
For which, I hope, thou felt'st I was displeased.

*Dro. S.* I am glad to see you in this merry  
vein: [tell me.]

What means this jest? I pray you, master,

*Ant. S.* Yea, dost thou jeer, and flout me  
in the teeth?

Think'st thou, I jest? Hold, take thou that,  
and that. [Beating him.]

*Dro. S.* Hold, sir, for God's sake: now  
your jest is earnest:

Upon what bargain do you give it me?

*Ant. S.* Because that I familiarly sometimes  
Do use you for my fool, and chat with you,  
Your sauciness will jest upon my love,  
And make a common of my serious hours \*—  
When the sun shines, let foolish gnats make  
sport, [beams.]

But creep in crannies, when he hides his  
If you will jest with me, know my aspect,  
And fashion your demeanour to my looks,  
Or I will beat this method in your sounce.

*Dro. S.* Sounce, call you it? so you would  
leave battering, I had rather have it a head:  
an you use these blows long, I must get a  
sounce for my head, and insconce it too; or  
else I shall seek my wit in my shoulders. But,  
I pray, sir, why am I beaten?

*Ant. S.* Dost thou not know?

*Dro. S.* Nothing, sir; but that I am beaten.

*Ant. S.* Shall I tell you why?

*Dro. S.* Ay, sir, and wherefore; for, they  
say, every why hath a wherefore.

*Ant. S.* Why, first,—for flouting me; and  
then, wherefore,—

For urging it the second time to me.

*Dro. S.* Was there ever any man thus beaten  
out of season!

When, in the why, and the wherefore, is nei-  
ther rhyme nor reason?—

Well, sir, I thank you.

*Ant. S.* Thank me, sir? for what?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, for this something that  
you gave me for nothing.

*Ant. S.* I'll make you amends next, to give  
you nothing for something. But say, sir, is it  
dinner-time?

*Dro. S.* No, sir; I think, the meat wants  
that I have.

*Ant. S.* In good time, sir, what's that?

*Dro. S.* Basting.

*Ant. S.* Well, sir, then 'twill be dry.

*Dro. S.* If it be, sir, I pray you eat none of it.

*Ant. S.* Your reason?

*Dro. S.* Lest it make you cholerick, and  
purchase me another dry basting.

*Ant. S.* Well, sir, learn to jest in good time;  
There's a time for all things.

*Dro. S.* I durst have denied that, before you  
were so cholerick.

*Ant. S.* By what rule, sir?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, by a rule as plain as the  
plain bald pate of father Time himself.

*Ant. S.* Let's hear it.

*Dro. S.* There's no time for a man to reco-  
ver his hair, that grows bald by nature.

*Ant. S.* May he not do it by fine and reco-  
very?

*Dro. S.* Yes, to pay a fine for a peruke,  
and recover the lost hair of another man.

*Ant. S.* Why is time such a niggard of hair,  
being, as it is, so plentiful an excrement?

*Dro. S.* Because it is a blessing that he be-  
stows on beasts: and what he hath scantied  
men in hair, he hath given them in wit.

*Ant. S.* Why, but there's many a man hath  
more hair than wit.

*Dro. S.* Not a man of those, but he hath the  
wit to lose his hair.

*Ant. S.* Why, thou didst conclude hairy  
men plain dealers without wit.

*Dro. S.* The plainer dealer, the sooner lost:  
Yet he loseth it in a kind of jollity.

*Ant. S.* For what reason?

*Dro. S.* For two; and sound ones too.

*Ant. S.* Nay, not sound, I pray you.

*Dro. S.* Sure ones, then.

*Ant. S.* Nay, not sure, in a thing falsing.

*Dro. S.* Certain ones then.

*Ant. S.* Name them.

*Dro. S.* The one, to save the money that he  
spends in tiring; the other, that at dinner they  
should not drop in his porridge.

*Ant. S.* You would all this time have prov-  
ed, there is no time for all things.

*Dro. S.* Marry, and did, sir; namely, no  
time to recover hair lost by nature.

*Ant. S.* But your reason was not substanc-  
tial, why there is no time to recover.

*Dro. S.* Thus I mend it: Time himself is  
bald, and therefore, to the world's end, will  
have bald followers.

*Ant. S.* I knew, 'twould be a bald conclu-  
sion: But soft! who wafts \$us yonder?

*Enter ADRIANA and LUCIANA.*

*Adr.* Ay, ay, Antipholus, look strange, and  
frown;

Some other mistress hath thy sweet aspects  
I am not Adriana, nor thy wife.

The time was once, when thou unurg'd wouldst  
vow

That never words were music to thine ear,  
That never object pleasing in thine eye,

That never touch well-welcome to thy hand,  
That never meat sweet savour'd in thy taste,

Unless I spake, look'd, touch'd, or carved to thee.  
How comes it now, my husband, oh, how comes

That thou art then estranged from thyself? [it,

i. e., Intrude on them when you please.  
a fortification.

† Study my countenance.  
§ Beckons.

‡ A sounce was

Thyself I call it, ~~that~~ strange to me,  
That, undividable, ~~incorporate~~,  
Am better than thy dear self's better part.  
Ah, do not tear away thyself from me;  
For know, my love, as easy may'st thou fall  
A drop of water in the breaking gulf,  
And take unmingled thence that drop again,  
Without addition, or diminishing,  
As take from me thyself, and not me too.  
How dearly would it touch thee to the quick,  
Shouldst thou not hear I were licentious?  
And that this body, consecrate to thee,  
By ruffian lust should be contaminate? [me,  
Wouldst thou not spit at me, and spurn at  
And hurl the name of husband in my face,  
And tear the stain'd skin off my harlot brow,  
And from my false hand cut the wedding ring,  
And break it with a deep-divorcing vow?  
I know thou canst; and therefore, see, thou  
I am possess'd with an adulterate blot; [do it.  
My blood is mingled with the crime of lust:  
For, if we two be one, and thou play false,  
I do digest the poison of thy flesh,  
Being strumpeted by thy contagion. [bed;  
Keep then fair league and truce with thy true  
I live dis-stain'd, thou undishonoured.

*Ant. S.* Plead you to me, fair dame? I know  
In Ephesus I am but two hours old, [you not:  
As strange unto your town, as to your talk;  
Who, every word by all my wit being scann'd,  
Want wit in all one word to understand.

*Luc.* Fie, brother! how the world is changed  
with you:

When were you wont to use my sister thus?  
She sent for you by Dromio home to dinner.

*Ant. S.* By Dromio?

*Dro. S.* By me?

[from him,—

*Adr.* By thee: and this thou didst return  
That he did buffet thee, and, in his blows  
Deny'd my house for his, me for his wife.

*Ant. S.* Did you converse, sir, with this  
gentlewoman?

What is the course and drift of your compact?

*Dro. S.* I, sir? I never saw her till this time.

*Ant. S.* Villain, thou liest; for even her very  
Didst thou deliver to me on the mart. [words

*Dro. S.* I never spake with her in all my life.

*Ant. S.* How can she thus then call us by our  
Unless it be by inspiration? [names,

*Adr.* How ill agrees it with your gravity,

To counterfeit thus grossly with your slave,  
Abetting him to thwart me in my mood?

Be it my wrong, you are from me exempt,  
But wrong not that wrong with a more con-  
tempt.

Come, I will fasten on this sleeve of thine:  
Thou art an elm, my husband, I a vine;  
Whose weakness, married to thy stronger state,  
Makes me with thy strength to communicate:  
If aught possess thee from me, it is dross,  
Usurping ivy, brier, or idle \* moss;  
Who, all for want of pruning, with intrusion  
Infect thy sap, and live on thy confusion.

*Ant. S.* To me she speaks; she moves me  
for her theme:

What, was I married to her in my dream?  
Or sleep I now, and think I hear all this?  
What error drives our eyes and ears amiss?  
Until I know this sure uncertainty,  
I'll entertain the offer'd fallacy.

*Luc.* Dromio, go bid the servants spread  
for dinner. [sinner.

*Dro. S.* O, for my beads! I cross me for a  
This is the fairy land;—O, spite of spites!—  
We talk with goblins, owls, and elvish sprites;  
If we obey them not, this will ensue, [blue.  
They'll suck our breath, or pinch us black and

*Luc.* Why pratest thou to thyself, and ar-  
swer'st not? [sot!

Dromio, thou drone, thou snail, thou slug, thou  
*Dro. S.* I am transform'd, master, am not I?

*Ant. S.* I think, thou art, in mind, and so am I.

*Dro. S.* Nay, master, both in mind, and in my  
*Ant. S.* Thou hast thine own form. [shape.

*Dro. S.* No, I am an ape. [ass.

*Luc.* If thou art changed to aught, 'tis to an  
*Dro. S.* 'Tis true; she rides me, and I long  
for grass.

'Tis so, I am an ass; else it could never be,  
But I should know her as well as she knows me.

*Adr.* Come, come, no longer will I be a fool,  
To put the finger in the eye and weep, [scorn.—  
Whilst man, and master, laugh my woes to  
Come, sir, to dinner; Dromio, keep the gate:—  
Husband, I'll dine above with you to-day,  
And shrieve \* you of a thousand idle pranks:  
Sirrah, if any ask you for your master,  
Say, he dines forth, and let no creature enter.—  
Come, sister:—Dromio, play the porter well.

*Ant. S.* Am I in earth, in heaven, or in hell?  
Sleeping or waking? mad, or well-advis'd?  
Known unto these, and to myself disguis'd!  
I'll say as they say, and persevere so,  
And in this mist at all adventures go.

*Dro. S.* Master, shall I be porter at the gate?  
*Adr.* Ay; and let none enter, lest I break  
your pate.

*Luc.* Come, come, Antipholus, we dine too  
late. [Exeunt

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus, DROMIO of  
Ephesus, ANGELO, and BALTHAZAR.*

*Ant. E.* Good signior Angelo, you must  
excuse us all;

My wife is shrewish, when I keep not hours;  
Say, that I linger'd with you at your shop,  
To see the making of her carkanet †,  
And that to-morrow you will bring it home.  
But here's a villain, that would face me down  
He met me on the mart; and that I beat him,

\* Unfertile.

† Absolve.

‡ A necklace strung with pearls.

And charged him with a thousand marks in gold;

And that I did deny my wife and house:—  
Thou drunkard, thou, what didst thou mean by this? [what I know:]

*Dro. E.* Say what you will, sir, but I know  
That you beat me at the mart, I have your hand to show:

If the skin were parchment, and the blows you gave were ink, [think.]

Your own handwriting would tell you what I  
*Ant. E.* I think, thou art an ass.

*Dro. E.* Marry, so it doth appear  
By the wrongs I suffer, and the blows I bear.  
I should kick, being kick'd; and, being at that pass, [of an ass.]

You would keep from my heels, and beware  
*Ant. E.* You are sad, signior Balthazar:

'Pray God our cheer [come here.]  
May answer my good will, and your good wel-

*Bal.* I hold your duties cheap, sir, and  
your welcome dear. [or fish.]

*Ant. E.* O, signior Balthazar, either at flesh  
A table full of welcome makes scarce one dainty dish. [churl affords.]

*Bal.* Good meat, sir, is common; that every  
*Ant. E.* And welcome more common; for that's nothing but words. [a merry feast.]

*Bal.* Small cheer, and great welcome, makes  
*Ant. E.* Ay, to a niggardly host, and more sparing guest: [good part:]

But though my cates\* be mean, take them in  
Better cheer may you have, but not with better heart. [us in.]

But, soft; my door is lock'd; Go bid them let  
*Dro. E.* Maud, Bridget, Marian, Cicely, Gil-

lian, Jen'! [pon, coxcomb, idiot, pitch!]  
*Dro. S.* [within.] Moine†, malt-horse, ca-

Either get thee from the door, or sit down at  
the hatch: [for such store,]

Dost thou conjure for wenches, that thou call'st  
When one is one too many? Go, get thee from the door. [My master stays in the street.]

*Dro. E.* What patch is made our porter?  
*Dro. S.* Let him walk from whence he came,

lest he catch cold on's feet. [the door.]

*Ant. E.* Who talks within there? ho, open  
*Dro. S.* Right, sir, I'll tell you when, an

you'll tell me wherefore.  
*Ant. E.* Wherefore? for my dinner; I have

not dined to day. [again, when you may.]  
*Dro. S.* Nor to-day here you must not; come

*Ant. E.* What art thou, that keep'st me out  
from the house I owe'§?

*Dro. S.* The porter for this time, sir, and my  
name is Dromio. [office and my name;]

*Dro. E.* O villain, thou hast stolen both mine  
The one ne'er got me credit, the other mickle

blame.  
If thou hadst been Dromio to-day in my place,

Thou wouldst have changed thy face for a  
name, or thy name for an ass.

*Luce.* [within.] What a coil|| is there?  
Dromio, who are those at the gate?

*Dro. E.* Let my master in, *Luce.*

*Luce.* Faith no; he comes too late;  
And so tell your master.

*Dro. E.* O Lord, I must laugh:—  
Have at you with a proverb.—Shall I set in  
my staff? [When? can you tell?]

*Luce.* Have at you with another: that's,—  
*Dro. S.* If thy name be call'd *Luce*, *Luce*,

thou hast answer'd him well.  
*Ant. E.* Do you hear, you minion? you'll

let us in, I hope?  
*Luce.* I thought to have ask'd you.

*Dro. S.* And you said, no.  
*Dro. E.* So, come, help; well struck; there

was blow for blow.  
*Ant. E.* Thou baggage, let me in.

*Luce.* Can you tell for whose sake?  
*Dro. E.* Master, knock the door hard.

*Luce.* Let him knock till it ake.  
*Ant. E.* You'll cry for this, minion, if I beat

the door down. [stocks in the town?]  
*Luce.* What needs all that, and a pair of

*Adr.* [within.] Who is that at the door, that  
keeps all this noise? [with unruly boys.]

*Dro. S.* By my troth, your town is troubled  
*Ant. E.* Are you there, wife? you might

have come before. [the door.]  
*Adr.* Your wife, sir knave! go, get you from

*Dro. E.* If you were in pain, master, this  
knave would go sore.

*Ang.* Here is neither cheer, sir, nor wel-  
come; we would fain have either.

*Bal.* In debating which was best, we shall  
part¶ with neither.

*Dro. E.* They stand at the door, master; bid  
them welcome hither. [we cannot get in.]

*Ant. E.* There is something in the wind, that  
*Dro. E.* You would say so, master, if your

garments were thin. [here in the cold:]  
Your cake here is warm within; you stand

It would make a man mad as a buck, to be so  
bought and sold \*\*. [ope the gate.]

*Ant. E.* Go, fetch me something, I'll break  
*Dro. S.* Break any breaking here, and I'll

break your knave's pate.  
*Dro. E.* A man may break a word with you,

sir; and words are but wind; [behind.]  
Ay, and break it in your face, so he break it not

*Dro. S.* It seems, thou wantest breaking;  
Out upon thee, hind!

*Dro. E.* Here's too much, out upon thee! I  
pray thee, let me in.

*Dro. S.* Ay, when fowls have no feathers,  
and fish have no fin. [a crow.]

*Ant. E.* Well, I'll break in; Go borrow me  
*Dro. E.* A crow without a feather; master,

mean you so? [a feather:]  
For a fish without a fin, there's a fowl without

If a crow help us in, sirrah, we'll pluck a crow  
together. [crow,]

*Ant. E.* Go, get thee gone, fetch me an iron  
*Bal.* Have patience, sir: O, let it not be so

Herein you war against your reputation,  
And draw within the compass of suspect

The unviolated honour of your wife. [dom,]  
Once this,—Your long experience of her wis-

\* Dishes of meat.

† Blockhead.

‡ Fool.

§ I own, am owner of.

|| Bustle, tumult.

¶ Have part.

\*\* A proverbial phrase.



Her sober virtue, years, and modesty,  
Plead on her part some cause to you unknown;  
And doubt not, sir, but she will well excuse  
Why at this time the doors are made \* against  
you.

Be ruled by me; depart in patience,  
And let us to the Tiger all to dinner:  
And, about evening, come yourself alone,  
To know the reason of this strange restraint.  
If by strong hand you offer to break in,  
Now in the stirring passage of the day,  
A vulgar comment will be made on it;  
And that supposed by the common rout  
Against your yet ungalled estimation,  
That may with foul intrusion enter in, [dead:  
And dwell upon your grave when you are  
For slander lives upon succession;  
For ever housed, where it once gets possession.

*Ant. E.* You have prevail'd; I will depart  
in quiet,

And, in despite of mirth, mean to be merry.  
I know a wench of excellent discourse,—  
Pretty and witty; wild, and, yet too, gentle;—  
There will we dine: this woman that I mean,  
My wife (but, I protest, without desert,)  
Hath oftentimes upbraided me withal:  
To her will we to dinner.—Get you home,  
And fetch the chain; by this†, I know, 'tis  
Bring it, I pray you, to the Porcupine; [made:  
For there's the house; that chain will I bestow  
(Be it for nothing but to spite my wife,)  
Upon mine hostess there: good sir, make haste:  
Since mine own doors refuse to entertain me,  
I'll knock elsewhere, to see if they'll disdain  
me.

*Ang.* I'll meet you at that place, some hour

*Ant. E.* Do so; This jest shall cost me some  
expense. [Exeunt.

## SCENE II. The same.

*Enter LUCIANA, and ANTIPHOLUS of  
Syracuse.*

*Luc.* And may it be that you have quite forgot  
A husband's office? shall, Antipholus, hate,  
Even in the spring of love, thy love-springs†  
Shall love, in building, grow so ruinate? [rot?  
If you did wed my sister for her wealth,  
Then, for her wealth's sake, use her with  
more kindness:

Or, if you like elsewhere, do it by stealth;  
Muffle your false love with some show of  
blindness:

Let not my sister read it in your eye;  
Be not thy tongue thy own shame's orator;  
Look sweet, speak fair, become disloyalty;  
Apparel vice like virtue's harbinger:  
Bear a fair presence, though your heart be  
tainted;

Teach sin the carriage of a holy saint;  
Be secret-false: What need she be acquainted?  
What simple thief brags of his own attainment?

'Tis double wrong, to truant with your bed,  
And let her read it in thy looks at board:  
Shame hath a bastard fame, well managed;

Ill deeds are doubled with an evil word.  
Alas, poor women! make us but believe,  
Being compact of credit, that you love us;  
Though others have the arm, show us the sleeve;  
We in your motion turn, and you may move  
Then, gentle brother, get you in again; [us.  
Comfort my sister, cheer her, call her wife:  
'Tis holy sport, to be a little vain ||, [strife.

When the sweet breath of flattery conquers  
*Ant. S.* Sweet mistress, (what your name is  
else, I know not,

Nor by what wonder you do hit on mine),  
Less, in your knowledge, and your grace, you  
show not, [divine.

Than our earth's wonder; more than earth  
Teach me, dear creature, how to think and  
speak;

Lay open to my earthy gross conceit,  
Smother'd in errors, feeble, shallow, weak,  
The folded meaning of your words' deceit.

Against my soul's pure truth why labour you,  
To make it wander in an unknown field?

Are you a god? would you create me new?

Transform me then, and to your power I'll  
But if that I am I, then well I know, [yield.

Your weeping sister is no wife of mine,  
Nor to her bed no homage do I owe;

Far more, far more, to you do I decline.

O, train me not, sweet mermaid ¶, with thy  
note,

To drown me in thy sister's flood of tears;  
Sing, siren, for thyself, and I will dote: [hail's  
Spread o'er the silver waves thy golden

And as a bed I'll take thee, and there lie;

And, in that glorious supposition, think  
He gains by death, that hath such means to  
die:— [sink!

Let love, being light, be drowned if she  
*Luc.* What are you mad, that you do reason  
so? [not know.

*Ant. S.* Not mad, but mated \*\*; how, I do  
*Luc.* It is a fault that springeth from your  
eye. [being by.

*Ant. S.* For gazing on your beams, fair sun,  
*Luc.* Gaze where you should, and that will  
clear your sight. [on night.

*Ant. S.* As good to wink, sweet love, as look  
*Luc.* Why call you me love? call my sister

*Ant. S.* Thy sister's sister. [so.  
*Luc.* That's my sister.

*Ant. S.* No;

It is thyself, mine own self's better part;  
Mine eye's clear eye, my dear heart's dearer  
heart;

My food, my fortune, and my sweet hope's aim,  
My sole earth's heaven, and my heaven's claim.

*Luc.* All this my sister is, or else should be.  
*Ant. S.* Call thyself sister, sweet, for I aim  
thee:

Thee will I love, and with thee lead my life;  
Thou hast no husband yet, nor I no wife:

Give me thy hand.

*Luc.* O, soft, sir, hold you still;  
I'll fetch my sister, to get her good will.

[Exit *Luc.*

\* i. e., Made fast.

† By this time.

‡ Love-springs are young plants or shoots of love.

§ i. e. Being made altogether of credulity.  
siren.

|| Vain, is light of tongue.

¶ Mermaid for

\*\* i. e. Confounded.

*Enter, from the house of ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus, DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Ant. S.* Why, how now, Dromio? where runn'st thou so fast?

*Dro. S.* Do you know me, sir? am I Dromio? am I your man? am I myself?

*Ant. S.* Thou art Dromio, thou art my man, thou art thyself.

*Dro. S.* I am an ass, I am a woman's man, and besides myself.

*Ant. S.* What woman's man? and how besides thyself?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, besides myself, I am due to a woman; one that claims me, one that haunts me, one that will have me.

*Ant. S.* What claim lays she to thee?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, such claim as you would lay to your horse; and she would have me as a beast: not that, I being a beast, she would have me; but that she, being a very beastly creature, lays claim to me.

*Ant. S.* What is she?

*Dro. S.* A very reverent body; ay, such a one as a man may not speak of without he say, sir-reverence: I have but lean luck in the match, and yet is she a wondrous fat marriage?

*Ant. S.* How dost thou mean, a fat marriage?

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, she's the kitchen-wench, and all grease; and I know not what use to put her to, but to make a lamp of her, and run from her by her own light. I warrant, her rags, and the tallow in them, will burn a Poland winter: if she lives till doomsday, she'll burn a week longer than the whole world.

*Ant. S.* What complexion is she of?

*Dro. S.* Swart\*, like my shoe, but her face nothing like so clean kept: For why? she sweats, a man may go over shoes in the grime of it.

*Ant. S.* That's a fault that water will mend.

*Dro. S.* No, sir, 'tis in grain; Noah's flood could not do it.

*Ant. S.* What's her name?

*Dro. S.* Nell, sir;—but her name and three quarters, that is, an ell and three quarters, will not measure her from hip to hip.

*Ant. S.* Then she bears some breadth?

*Dro. S.* No longer from head to foot, than from hip to hip: she is spherical, like a globe; I could find out countries in her. [Ireland?]

*Ant. S.* In what part of her body stands

*Dro. S.* Marry, sir, in her buttocks; I found it out by the bogs.

*Ant. S.* Where Scotland?

*Dro. S.* I found it by the barrenness; hard, in the palm of the hand.

*Ant. S.* Where France?

*Dro. S.* In her forehead; arm'd and reverted, making war against her hair.

*Ant. S.* Where England?

*Dro. S.* I look'd for the chalky cliffs, but I could find no whiteness in them: but I guess, it stood in her chin, by the salt rheum that ran between France and it.

*Ant. S.* Where Spain?

*Dro. S.* Faith, I saw it not; but I felt it, hot in her breath.

*Ant. S.* Where America, the Indies?

*Dro. S.* O, sir, upon her nose, all o'er embellish'd with rubies, carbuncles, sapphires, declining their rich aspect to the hot breath of Spain; who sent whole armadas of car-racks† to be ballast at her nose. [lands?]

*Ant. S.* Where stood Belgia, the Nether-

*Dro. S.* O, sir, I did not look so low. To conclude, this drudge, or diviner, laid claim to me: call'd me Dromio; swore, I was assur'd‡ to her; told me what privy marks I had about me, as the mark of my shoulder, the mole in my neck, the great wart on my left arm, that I, amazed, ran from her as a witch: and, I think, if my breast had not been made of faith, and my heart of steel, she had transform'd me to a curtail-dog, and made me turn i'the wheel§. [road;]

*Ant. S.* Go, hie thee presently, post to the And if the wind blow any way from shore, I will not harbour in this town to-night.

If any bark put forth, come to the mart,

Where I will walk, till thou return to me.

If every one know us, and we know none,

'Tis time, I think, to trudge, pack, and be gone. [for life]

*Dro. S.* As from a bear a man would run So fly I from her that would be my wife. [Exit.]

*Ant. S.* There's none but witches do inhabit here,

And therefore 'tis high time that I were hence. She, that doth call me husband, even my soul Doth for a wife abhor: but her fair sister, Possess'd with such a gentle sovereign grace, Of such enchanting presence and discourse, Hath almost made me traitor to myself:

But, lest myself be guilty to self-wrong, I'll stop mine ears against the mermaid's song.

*Enter ANGELO.*

*Ang. Master Antipholus?*

*Ant. S.* Ay, that's my name. [chain;]

*Ang.* I know it well, sir: Lo, here is the I thought to have ta'en you at the Porcupine: The chain unfinished‡ made me stay thus long.

*Ant. S.* What is your will, that I shall do with this? [it for you.]

*Ang.* What please yourself, sir; I have made

*Ant. S.* Made it for me, sir! I bespoke it not. [you have:]

*Ang.* Not once, nor twice, but twenty times Go home with it, and please your wife withal;

And soon at supper-time I'll visit you,

And then receive my money for the chain.

*Ant. S.* I pray you, sir, receive the money now,

For fear you ne'er see chain, nor money, more.

*Ang.* You are a merry man, sir; fare you well. [Exit.]

*Ant. S.* what I should think of this, I cannot tell;

But this I think, there's no man is so vain, That would refuse so fair an offer'd chain. I see, a man here needs not live by shifts, When in the streets he meets such golden gifts. I'll to the mart, and there for Dromio stay; If any ship put out, then straight away. [Exit]

\* Swarthy.

† Large ships.

‡ Affianced.

§ A turnspit.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter a Merchant, ANGELO, and an Officer.*

*Mer.* You know, since Pentecost the sum is due,  
And since I have not much impórtun'd you;  
Nor now I had not, but that I am bound  
To Persia, and want gilders \* for my voyage:  
Therefore make present satisfaction,  
Or I'll attach you by this officer.

*Ang.* Even just the sum that I do owe to you,  
Is growing † to me by Antipholus:  
And, in the instant that I met with you,  
He had of me a chain; at five o'clock,  
I shall receive the money for the same:  
Pleaseth you walk with me down to his house,  
I will discharge my bond, and thank you too.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus, and DROMIO of Ephesus.*

*Off.* That labour may you save; see where he comes. [go thon

*Ant. E.* While I go to the goldsmith's house,  
And buy a rope's end; that will I bestow  
Among my wife and her confederates,  
For locking me out of my doors by day.—  
But soft, I see the goldsmith:—get thee gone;  
Buy thou a rope, and bring it home to me.

*Dro. E.* I buy a thousand pound a year!  
I buy a rope! [Exit DROMIO.

*Ant. E.* A man is well help up, that trusts to  
I promised your presence, and the chain; [you:  
But neither chain, nor goldsmith, came to me:  
Belike, you thought our love would last too  
long, [came not.

If it were chain'd together; and therefore  
*Ang.* Saving your merry humour, here's  
the note. [carat;

How much your chain weighs to the utmost  
The fineness of the gold, and chargeful fashion;  
Which doth amount to three odd ducats more  
That I stand debted to this gentleman;  
I pray you, see him presently discharged,  
For he is bound to sea, and stays but for it.

*Ant. E.* I am not furnish'd with the present  
money;

Besides, I have some business in the town:  
Good signior, take the stranger to my house,  
And with you take the chain, and bid my wife  
Disburse the sum on the receipt thereof;  
Perchance, I will ‡ be there as soon as you.

*Ang.* Then you will bring the chain to her  
yourself? [not time enough.

*Ant. E.* No; bear it with you, lest I come

*Ang.* Well, sir, I will: Have you the chain  
about you? [have;

*Ant. E.* An if I have not, sir, I hope you  
Or else you may return without your money.

*Ang.* Nay, come, I pray you, sir, give me  
the chain;

Both wind and tide stays for this gentleman,  
And I, to blame, have held him here too long.

*Ant. E.* Good lord, you use this dalliance,  
to excuse

Your breach of promise to the Porcupine:  
I should have chid you for not bringing it,  
But, like a shrew, you first begin to braw!

*Mer.* The hour steals on; I pray you, sir, de-  
spatch. [chain—

*Ang.* You hear, how he impórtunes me: the

*Ant. E.* Why, give it to my wife, and fetch  
your money. [even now;

*Ang.* Come, come, you know, I gave it you  
Either send the chain, or send me by some  
token. [of breath:

*Ant. E.* Fie! now you run this humour out  
Come, where's the chain? I pray you let me  
see it. [liance;

*Mer.* My business cannot brook this dal-  
Good sir, say, where you'll answer me, or no:  
If not, I'll leave him to the officer.

*Ant. E.* I answer you! What should I an-  
swer you? [chain—

*Ang.* The money, that you owe me for the

*Ant. E.* I owe you none, till I receive the  
chain. [since.

*Ang.* You know, I gave it you half an hour

*Ant. E.* You gave me none; you wrong me  
much to say so.

*Ang.* You wrong me more, sir, in denying it:  
Consider, how it stands upon my credit.

*Mer.* Well, officer, arrest him at my suit.

*Off.* I do; and charge you in the duke's  
name, to obey me.

*Ang.* This touches me in reputation:—

Either consent to pay this sum for me,  
Or I attach you by this officer. [had

*Ant. E.* Consent to pay thee that I never  
Arrest me, foolish fellow, if thou darest.

*Ang.* Here is thy fee; arrest him officer;  
I would not spare my brother in this case,  
If he should scorn me so apparently.

*Off.* I do arrest you, sir; you hear the suit.

*Ant. E.* I do obey thee, till I give thee bail:—  
But, sirrah, you shall buy this sport as dear  
As all the metal in your shop will answer.

*Ang.* Sir, sir, I shall have law in Ephesus,  
To your notorious shame, I doubt it not.

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Dro. S.* Master, there is a bark of Epidam-  
num,

That stays but till her owner comes aboard,  
And then, sir, bears away: our freightage §, sir  
I have conveyed aboard; and I have bought  
The oil, the balsamum, and aqua-vitæ.

The ship is in her trim; the merry wind  
Blows fair from land: they stay for nought at  
But for their owner, master, and yourself. [all,

*Ant. E.* How now! a madman! Why thou  
peevish || sheep,

What ship of Epidamnum stays for me?

*Dro. S.* A ship you sent me to, to hire waf-  
tage ¶. [a rope;

*Ant. E.* Thou drunken slave, I sent thee for  
And told thee to what purpose and what end.

*Dro. S.* You sent me, sir, for a rope's end as  
You sent me to the bay, sir, for a bark. [soon:

\* A coin. † Accruing ‡ I shall.

§ Freight, cargo.

|| Silly.

¶ Carriage



*Ant. E.* I will debate this matter at more leisure,

And teach your ears to listen with more heed.  
To Adriana, villain, lie thee straight:  
Give her this key, and tell her, in the desk  
That's cover'd o'er with Turkish tapestry,  
There is a purse of ducats: let her send it;  
Tell her, I am arrested in the street,  
And that shall bail me: bid the slave; begone.  
On, officer, to prison till it come.

[*Exeunt Merchant, ANG. Officer, and ANT. E.*]

*Dro. S.* To Adriana! that is where he dined,  
Where Dowsabel did claim me for her husband:  
She is too big, I hope, for me to compass.  
Thither I must, although against my will,  
For servants must their masters' minds fulfil.  
[*Exit.*]

## SCENE II. *The same.*

*Enter ADRIANA and LUCIANA.*

*Adr.* Ah, Luciana, did he tempt thee so?  
Might'st thou perceive austerly in his eye  
That he did plead in earnest, yea or no? [rily?]

Look'd hear red, or pale; or sad, or mer-  
What observation mad'st thou in this case,  
Of his heart's meteors tilting in his face\*?

*Luc.* First, he denied you had in him no  
right. [my spite.]

*Adr.* He meant, he did me none; the more  
*Luc.* Then swore he, that he was a stranger  
here. [sworn he were.]

*Adr.* And true he swore, though yet for-  
*Luc.* Then pleaded I for you.

*Adr.* And what said he?  
*Luc.* That love I begg'd for you, be begg'd  
of me. [thy love?]

*Adr.* With what persuasion did he tempt  
*Luc.* With words, that in an honest suit  
might move. [speech.]

First, he did praise my beauty; then, my  
*Adr.* Didst speak him fair?

*Luc.* Have patience, I beseech.

*Adr.* I cannot, nor I will not, hold me still;  
My tongue, though not my heart, shall have his  
He is deformed, crooked, old, and sere†, will.  
Ill-faced, worse-bodied, shapeless every where;  
Vicious, ungentle, foolish, blunt, unkind;  
Stigmatical in making‡, worse in mind. [one?]

*Luc.* Who would be jealous then of such a  
No evil lost is wail'd when it is gone.

*Adr.* Ah! but I think him better than I say,  
And yet would herein others' eyes were  
worse:

Far from her nest the lapwing cries away §;  
My heart prays for him, though my tongue  
do curse.

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Dro. S.* Here, go; the desk, the purse,  
sweet now, make haste.

*Luc.* How hast thou lost thy breath?

*Dro. S.* By running fast.

*Adr.* Where is thy master, Dromio? is he well?

*Dro. S.* No, he's in tartar limbo, worse  
than hell:

A devil in an everlasting garment || hath him,  
One, whose hard heart is button'd up with  
A fiend, a fairy, pitiless and rough; [steel;  
A wolf, nay, worse, a fellow all in buff;  
A back-friend, a shoulder-clapper, one that  
countermands [lands;

The passages of alleys, creeks, and narrow  
A hound that runs counter, and yet draws dry-  
foot well; [souls to hell?]

One that before the judgment carries poor  
*Adr.* Why, man, what is the matter?

*Dro. S.* I do not know the matter? he is  
'rested on the case. [whose suit.]

*Adr.* What, is he arrested? tell me, at  
*Dro. S.* I know not at whose suit he is ar-  
rested, well; [that can I tell:]

But he's in a suit of buff, which 'rested him,  
Will you send him, mistress, redemption, the  
money in the desk?

*Adr.* Go fetch it, sister.—This I wonder at,  
[*Exit LUCIANA.*]

That he, unknown to me, should be in debt:  
Tell me, was he arrested on a band\*\*?

*Dro. S.* Not on a band, but on a stronger  
A chain, a chain; do you not hear it ring?

*Adr.* What, the chain?

*Dro. S.* No, no, the bell: 'tis time, that I  
were gone. [strikes one.]

It was two ere I left him, and now the clock  
*Adr.* The hours come back! that did I never  
hear. [a'turns back for very fear.]

*Dro. S.* O yes, if any hour meet a sergeant.

*Adr.* As if time were in debt! how fondly  
dost thou reason?

*Dro. S.* Time is a very bankrupt, and owes  
more than he's worth to season. [say]

Nay, he's a thief too! Have you not heard men  
That time comes stealing on by night and day?

If he be in debt, and theft, and a sergeant in  
the way, day?

Hath he not reason to turn back an hour in a  
*Enter LUCIANA.*

*Adr.* Go, Dromio; there's the money, bear  
it straight;

And bring thy master home immediately.  
Come, sister; I am press'd down with conceit††;

Conceit, my comfort, and my injury.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III. *The same.*

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse.*

*Ant. S.* There's not a man I meet, but both  
salute me

As if I were their well-acquainted friend;  
And every one doth call me by my name.

Some tender money to me, some invite me;  
Some other give me thanks for kindnesses;

Some offer me commodities to buy:  
Even now a tailor call'd me in his shop,

And show'd me silks that he had bought for me,

\* An allusion to the redness of the northern lights, likened to the appearance of armies.  
† Dry, withered. ‡ Marked by nature with deformity. § Who crieth most  
where her nest is not. || The officers in those days were clad in buff, which is also a  
cant expression for: a man's skin. ¶ Hell was the cant term for prison. \*\* i. e., Bond

†† Fanciful conception.

And, therewithal took measure of my body.

These are but imaginary wiles,  
And Lapland sorcerers inhabit here.

*Enter DROMIO of Syracuse.*

*Dro. S.* Master, here's the gold you sent me for: What, have you got the picture of old Adam new apparel'd?

*Ant. S.* What gold is this? what Adam dost thou mean?

*Dro. S.* Not that Adam, that kept the paradise, but that Adam, that keeps the prison: he that goes in the calf's-skin that was kill'd for the prodigal; he that came behind you, sir, like an evil angel, and bid you forsake your liberty.

*Ant. S.* I understand thee not.

*Dro. S.* No? why, 'tis a plain case: he that went like a bass-viol, in a case of leather; the man, sir, that, when gentlemen are tired, gives them a fob, and 'rests them; he, sir, that takes pity on decayed men, and gives them suits of durance; he that sets up his rest to do more exploits with his mace, than a morris-pike.

*Ant. S.* What! thou mean'st an officer?

*Dro. S.* Ay, sir, the sergeant of the band; he, that brings any man to answer it, that breaks his band: one that thinks a man always going to bed, and says, *God give you good rest.*

*Ant. S.* Well, sir, there rest in your foolery. Is there any ship puts forth to-night? may we be gone?

*Dro. S.* Why, sir, I brought you word an hour since, that the bark Expedition put forth to-night; and then were you hindered by the sergeant, to tarry for the boy, Delay: Here are the angels that you sent for, to deliver you.

*Ant. S.* The fellow is distract, and so am I; And here we wander in illusions;  
Some blessed power deliver us from hence!

*Enter a Courtezan.*

*Cour.* Well met, well met, master Antipholus. I see, sir, you have found the goldsmith now; Is that the chain, you promised me to-day?

*Ant. S.* Satan, avoid! I charge thee tempt me not!

*Dro. S.* Master, is this mistress Satan?

*Ant. S.* It is the devil.

*Dro. S.* Nay, she is worse, she is the devil's dam; and here she comes in the habit of a light wench; and thereof comes, that the wenches say, *God damn me*, that's as much as to say, *God make me a light wench*. It is written, they appear to men like angels of light: light is an effect of fire, and fire will burn; ergo, light wenches will burn; Come not near her.

*Cour.* Your man and you are marvellous merry, sir. [here.]

Will you go with me? We'll mend our dinner  
*Dro. S.* Master, if you do, expect spoon meat, or bespeak a long spoon.

*Ant. S.* Why, Dromio?

*Dro. S.* Marry, he must have a long spoon, that must eat with the devil.

*Ant. S.* Avoid then, fiend! what tell'st thou me of supping?

Thou art, as you are all, a sorceress:

I conjure thee to leave me, and be gone.

*Cour.* Give me the ring of mine you had at dinner,

Or, for my diamond, the chain you promis'd; And I'll be gone, sir, and not trouble you.

*Dro. S.* Some devils ask but the paring of one's nail,

A rush, a hair, a drop of blood, a pin,  
A nut, a cherry-stone: but she, more covetous,  
Would have a chain.

Master, be wise; and if you give it her, [it.]  
The devil will shake her chain, and fright us with

*Cour.* I pray you, sir, my ring, or else the I hope you do not mean to cheat me so. [chain.]

*Ant. S.* Avaunt, thou witch! Come Dromio let us go. [tress that you know]

*Dro. S.* Fly pride, says the peacock: Mis [Exeunt ANT. and Dro.]

*Cour.* Now, out of doubt, Antipholus is mad  
Else would he never so demean himself:

A ring he hath of mine worth forty ducats,  
And for the same he promis'd me a chain!

Both one, and other, he denies me now.  
The reason that I gather he is mad,

(Besides this present instance of his rage,) Is a mad tale, he told to-day at dinner, [trance,

Of his own doors being shut against his en-  
Belike, his wife, acquainted with his fits,

On purpose shut the doors against his way.  
My way is now, to hie home to his house,

And tell his wife, that, being lunatic,  
He rush'd into my house, and took perforce

My ring away: This course I fittest choose;  
For forty ducats is too much to lose. [Exit.]

#### SCENE IV. *The same.*

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS of Ephesus, and an Officer.*

*Ant. E.* Fear me not, man, I will not break away;

I'll give thee, ere I leave thee, so much money  
To warrant thee, as I am 'rested for.

My wife is in a wayward mood to-day;  
And will not lightly trust the messenger,

That I should be attach'd in Ephesus:  
I tell you, 'twill sound harshly in her ears.—

*Enter DROMIO of Ephesus with a rope's end.*  
Here comes my man; I think, he brings the

money.  
How now, sir? have you that I sent you for?

*Dro. E.* Here's that, I warrant you, will pay  
*Ant. E.* But where's the money? [them all \*.]

*Dro. E.* Why, sir, I gave the money for the rope.

*Ant. E.* Five hundred ducats, villain, for a rope? [the rate.]

*Dro. E.* I'll serve you, sir, five hundred at  
*Ant. E.* To what end did I bid thee hie

thee home? [end am I return'd.]  
*Dro. E.* To a rope's end, sir; and to that

*Ant. E.* And to that end, sir, I will welcome you. [Beating him.]

*Off.* Good sir, be patient. [in adversity.]  
*Dro. E.* Nay, 'tis for me to be patient; I am

*Off.* Good now, hold thy tongue. [his hands.]  
*Dro. E.* Nay, rather persuade him to hold

*Ant. E.* Thou whoreson, senseless villain!

*Dro. E.* I would I were senseless, sir, that I might not feel your blows.

*Ant. E.* Thou art sensible in nothing but blows. and so is an ass.

*Dro. E.* I am an ass, indeed; you may prove it by my long ears. I have served him from the hour of my nativity to this instant, and have nothing at his hands for my service, but blows: when I am cold, he heats me with beating: when I am warm, he cools me with beating: I am waked with it, when I sleep; raised with it, when I sit; driven out of doors with it, when I go from home; welcomed home with it, when I return: nay, I bear it on my shoulders, as a beggar wont her brat; and, I think, when he hath lamed me, I shall beg with it from door to door.

*Enter ADRIANA, LUCIANA, and the Courtezan, with PINCH, and Others.*

*Ant. E.* Come, go along; my wife is coming yonder.

*Dro. E.* Mistress, *respice finem*, respect your end; or rather the prophecy, like the parrot, *Beware the rope's end*.

*Ant. E.* Wilt thou still talk? [*Beats him.*]

*Cour.* How say you now? is not your husband mad?

*Adr.* His incivility confirms no less.—

Good doctor Pinch, you are a conjurer; Establish him in his true sense again. And I will please you what you will demand.

*Luc.* Alas, how fiery and how sharp he looks

*Cour.* Mark, how he trembles in his ecstasy!

*Pinch.* Give me your hand, and let me feel your pulse. [*your ear.*]

*Ant. E.* There is my hand, and let it feel

*Pinch.* I charge thee, Satan, housed within this man,

To yield possession to my holy prayers, and to thy state of darkness bid thee straight; conjure thee by all the saints in heaven.

*Ant. E.* Peace, dotting wizard, peace; I am not mad. [*soul!*]

*Adr.* O, that thou wert not, poor distressed

*Ant. E.* You minion you, are these your customers?

Did this companion \* with a saffron face Revel and feast it at my house to-day, Whilst upon me the guilty doors were shut, And I denied to enter in my house?

*Adr.* O, husband, God doth know, you dined at home,

Where 'would you had remain'd until this time, Free from these slanders, and this open shame?

*Ant. E.* I dined at home! Thou villain, what says't thou? [*at home.*]

*Dro. F.* Sir, sooth to say, you did not dine

*Ant. E.* Were not my doors lock'd up, and I shut out? [*you shut out.*]

*Dro. F.* Perdyt, your doors were lock'd, and

*Ant. E.* And did not she herself revile me there? [*there.*]

*Dro. E.* Sans fable †, she herself reviled you

*Ant. E.* Did not her kitchen maid rail, taunt, and scorn me?

*Dro. E.* Certes ‡, she did; the kitchen-vestal scorn'd you. [*thence?*]

*Ant. E.* And did not I in rage depart from

*Dro. E.* In verity you did;—my bones bear witness,

That since have felt the vigour of his rage.

*Adr.* Is't good to soothe him in these contraries? [*vein,*]

*Pinch.* It is no shame; the fellow finds his And, yielding to him, humours well his frenzy.

*Ant. E.* Thou hast suborn'd the goldsmith to arrest me.

*Adr.* Alas, I sent you money to redeem By Dromio here, who came in haste for it. [*you*]

*Dro. E.* Money by me? heart and good-will you might,

But, surely master, not a rag of money. [*ducats!*]

*Ant. E.* Went'st not thou to her for a purse of

*Adr.* He came to me, and I deliver'd it. [*did.*]

*Luc.* And I am witness with her, that she

*Dro. E.* God and the rope-maker, bear me

That I was sent for nothing but a rope! [*witness,*]

*Pinch.* Mistress, both man and master is possess'd;

I know it by their pale and deadly looks: They must be bound and laid in some dark room. [*forth to-day,*]

*Ant. E.* Say, wherefore didst thou lock me And why dost thou deny the bag of gold?

*Adr.* I did not, gentle husband, lock thee forth. [*gold;*]

*Dro. E.* And, gentle master, I receiv'd no But I confess, sir, that we were lock'd out.

*Adr.* Dissembling villain, thou speak'st false in both. [*in all;*]

*Ant. E.* Dissembling harlot, thou art false And art confederate with a damned pack, To make a loathsome abject scorn of me:

But with these nails I'll pluck out these false eyes,

That would behold in me this shameful sport. [*PINCH and his assistants bind ANT. and DROMIO.*]

*Adr.* O, bind him, bind him, let him not come near me. [*within him.*]

*Pinch.* More company;—the fiend is strong

*Luc.* Ah me, poor man, how pale and wan he looks! [*gaoler, thou,*]

*Ant. E.* What, will you murder me? Thou I am thy prisoner; wilt thou suffer them

To make a rescue?

*Off.* Masters, let him go; He is my prisoner, and you shall not have him.

*Pinch.* Go, bind this man, for he is frantic too.

*Adr.* What wilt thou do, thou peevish || offi- Hast thou delight to see a wretched man [*cer?*]

Do outrage and displeasure to himself?

*Off.* He is my prisoner; if I let him go, The debt he owes, will be required of me.

*Adr.* I will discharge thee, ere I go from Bear me forthwith unto his creditor, [*thee*]

\* Fellow.

† A corruption of the French oath—*pardieu*.  
‡ Certainty.

|| Foolish.

‡ Without a fable.



And, knowing how the debt grows, I will pay  
Good master doctor, see him safe convey'd [it.  
Home to my house.—O most unhappy day!

*Ant. E.* O most unhappy \* strumpet!

*Dro. E.* Master, I'm here enter'd in bond  
for you. [thou mad me?

*Ant. E.* Out on thee, villain! wherefore dost

*Dro. E.* Will you be bound for nothing? be  
mad,

Good master : cry, the devil.— [talk !

*Luc.* God help, poor souls, how idly do they

*Adr.* Go bear him hence.—Sister, go you  
with me.—

[*Exeunt* PINCH and Assistants, with  
ANT. and DRO.

Say now, whose suit is he arrested at ? [him ?

*Off.* One Angelo, a goldsmith : Do you know

*Adr.* I know the man : What is the sum he

*Off.* Two hundred ducats. [owes ?

*Adr.* Say, how grows it due ? [him.

*Off.* Due for a chain, your husband had of

*Adr.* He did bespeak a chain for me, but  
had it not. [to-day

*Cour.* When as your husband, all in rage,  
Came to my house, and took away my ring,

(The ring I saw upon his finger now.)

Straight after, did I meet him with a chain.

*Adr.* It may be so, but I did never see it :—  
Come, gaoler, bring me where the goldsmith  
I long to know the truth hereof at large. [is,  
*Enter* ANTIPHOLUS of Syracuse, with his  
rapier drawn, and DROMIO of Syracuse.

*Luc.* God, for thy mercy ! they are loose  
again. [call more help,

*Adr.* And come with naked swords : let's  
To have them bound again.

*Off.* Away, they'll kill us.

[*Exeunt* Officer, *ADR.* and *LUC.*

*Ant. S.* I see, these witches are afraid of  
swords. [ran from you.

*Dro. S.* She, that would be your wife, now

*Ant. S.* Come to the Centaur : fetch our  
stuff from thence :

I long, that we were safe and sound aboard.

*Dro. S.* Faith, stay here this night, they will  
surely do us no harin ; you saw, they speak us  
fair, give us gold : methinks, they are such a  
gentle nation, that but for the mountain of mad  
flesh that claims marriage of me, I could find in  
my heart to stay here still, and turn witch.

*Ant. S.* I will not stay to-night for all the  
Therefore away, to get our stuff aboard. [town ;

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. The same.

*Enter* Merchant and ANGELO.

*Ang.* I am sorry, sir, that I have hinder'd  
Put, I protest, he had the chain of me, [you ;  
Though most dishonestly he doth deny it.

*Mer.* How is the man esteem'd here in the

*Ang.* Of very reverend reputation, sir, [city ?

Of credit infinite, highly beloved,

Second to none that lives here in the city ;

His word might bear my wealth at any time.

*Mer.* Speak softly : yonder, as I think, he  
walks.

*Enter* ANTIPHOLUS and DROMIO of Syra-  
cuse.

*Ang.* 'Tis so ; and that self chain about his  
neck, [have.

Which he forswore, most monstrously, to

Good sir draw near to me, I'll speak to him.

Senior Antipholus, I wonder much [trouble ;

That you would put me to this shame and

And not without some scandal to yourself,

With circumstance, and oaths, so to deny

This chain, which now you wear so openly :

Besides the charge, the shame, imprisonment,

You have done wrong to this my honest friend ;

Who, but for staying on our controversy,

Had hoisted sail, and put to sea to-day :

This chain you had of me, can you deny it ?

*Ant. S.* I think, I had ; I never did deny it

*Mer.* Yes, that you did, sir ; and forswore  
it too. [swear it ?

*Ant. S.* Who heard me to deny it, or for-

*Mer.* These ears of mine, thou knowest, did  
hear thee :

Fie on thee, wretch ! 'tis pity that thou livest  
To walk where any honest men resort.

*Ant. S.* Thou art a villain, to impeach me  
thus :

I'll prove mine honour and mine honesty

Against thee presently, if thou dar'st stand.

*Mer.* I dare, and do defy thee for a villain.

[*They draw.*

*Enter* ADRIANA, LUCIANA, Courtezan, and  
others. [is mad ;—

*Adr.* Hold, hurt him not, for God's sake : he  
Some get within him ; take his sword away :

Bind Dromio too, and bear them to my house.

*Dro. S.* Run, master, run ; for God's sake,  
take a house §.

This is some priory ;—In, or we are spoil'd.

[*Exeunt* ANT. and DRO. to the Priory.

*Enter* the Abbess.

*Abb.* Be quiet, people ; Wherefore throng  
you hither ? [hence :

*Adr.* To fetch my poor distracted husband

Let us come in, that we may bind him fast,

And bear him home for his recovery.

*Ang.* I knew, he was not in his perfect wits.

*Mer.* I am sorry now, that I did draw on him.

*Abb.* How long hath this possession held the  
man ? [sad,

*Adr.* This week he hath been heavy, sour,  
And much, much different from the man he

But, till this afternoon, his passion [was ;  
Ne'er brake into extremity of rage.

\* Unhappy for unlucky, i. e., mischievous.  
grapple with him

† Baggage.

‡ i. e., Close,

§ i. e., Go into a house.

*Abb.* Hath he not lost much wealth by wreck at sea? [eye]

Bury'd some dear friend? Hath not else his Stray'd his affection in unlawful love?

A sin prevailing much in youthful men,

Who give their eyes the liberty of gazing.

Which of these sorrows is he subject to?

*Adr.* To none of these, except it be the last; Namely, some love, that drew him oft from home. [him.]

*Abb.* You should for that have reprehended

*Adr.* Why, so I did.

*Abb.* Ay, but not rough enough.

*Adr.* As roughly as my modesty would let

*Abb.* Haply, in private. [me-]

*Adr.* And in assemblies too.

*Abb.* Ay, but not enough.

*Adr.* It was the copy \* of our conference:

In bed, he slept not for my urging it;

At board, he felt not for my urging it;

Alone, it was the subject of my theme;

In company, I often glanced it;

Still did I tell him it was vile and bad. [mad:]

*Abb.* And thereof came it, that the man was

The venom clamours of a jealous woman  
Poison more deadly than a mad dog's tooth.

It seems his sleeps were hinder'd by thy railing:

And thereof comes it that his head is light.

Thou say'st, his meat was sauced with thy up-

Unquiet meals make ill digestions, [braidings:]

Thereof the raging fire of fever bred;

And what's a fever but a fit of madness?

Thou say'st, his sports were hinder'd by thy brawls:

Sweet recreation barr'd, what doth ensue,

But moody and dull melancholy,

(Kinsman to grief and comfortless despair;)

And, at her heels, a huge infectious troop

Of pale distemperatures, and foes to life!

In food, in sport, and life-preserving rest

To be disturb'd, would mad or man, or beast;

The consequence is then, thy jealous fits

Have scared thy husband from the use of wits.

*Luc.* She never reprehended him but mildly,  
When he demean'd himself rough, rude, and wildly,—

Why bear you these rebukes, and answer not?

*Adr.* She did betray me to my own reproof.

Good people, enter, and lay hold on him.

*Abb.* No, not a creature enters in my house.

*Adr.* Then, let your servants bring my husband forth. [tuary.]

*Abb.* Neither; he took this place for sanc-

And it shall privilege him from your hands,

Till I have brought him to his wits again,

Or lose my labour in assaying it.

*Adr.* I will attend my husband, be his nurse,

Diet his sickness, for it is my office,

And will have no attorney but myself;

And therefore let me have him home with me.

*Abb.* Be patient: for I will not let him stir,

Till I have us'd the approved means I have,

With wholesome syrups, drugs, and holy prayers.

To make of him a formal man again†:

It is a branch and parcel‡ of mine oath,

A charitable duty of my order;

Therefore depart, and leave him here with me.

*Adr.* I will not hence, and leave my husband

And ill it doth beseech your holiness, [here;]

To separate the husband and the wife.

*Abb.* Be quiet, and depart, thou shalt not have him. [Exit Abbess]

*Luc.* Complain unto the duke of this indignity. [feet,]

*Adr.* Come, go; I will fall prostrate at his

And never rise until my tears and prayers

Have won his grace to come in person hither,

And take perforce my husband from the abbess

*Mer.* By this, I think, the dial points at five:

Anon, I am sure, the duke himself in person

Comes this way to the melancholy vale;

The place of death and sorry‡ execution,

Behind the ditches of the abbey here.

*Ang.* Upon what cause?

*Mer.* To see a reverend Syracusan mer-

Who put unluckily into this bay [chant,]

Against the laws and statutes of this town,

Behanded publicly for his offence.

*Ang.* See, where they come; we will behold his death. [abbey.]

*Luc.* Kneel to the duke, before he pass the

*Enter Duke attended; Ægon bare-headed;*

*with the Headsman and other Officers.*

*Duke.* Yet once again proclaim it publicly,

If any friend will pay the sum for him,

He shall not die, so much we tender him.

*Adr.* Justice, most sacred duke, against the abbess! [lady;]

*Duke.* She is a virtuous and a reverend  
It cannot be, that she hath done thee wrong.

*Adr.* May it please your grace, Antipholus,  
my husband,—

Whom I made lord of me and all I had,

At your important‖ letters,—this ill day

A most outrageous fit of madness took him;

That desperately he hurried through the street,

(With him his bondman, all as mad as he,)

Doing displeasure to the citizens

By rushing in their houses, bearing thence

Rings, jewels, any thing his rage did like.

Once did I get him bound and sent him home,

Whilst to take order¶ for the wrongs I went,

That here and there his fury had committed.

Anon, I wot\*\* not by what strong escape,

He broke from those that had the guard of him;

And, with his mad attendant and himself,

Each one with ireful passion, with drawn

Met us again, and, madly bent on us, [swords,

Chased us away; till raising of more aid,

We came again to bind them: then they fled

Into this abbey, whither we pursued them;

And here the abbess shuts the gates on us,

And will not suffer us to fetch him out, [hence.

Nor send him forth, that we may bear him

Therefore, most gracious duke, with thy com-

mand, [help.]

Let him be brought forth, and borne hence for

*Duke.* Long since, thy husband served me  
in my wars;

\* The theme. † i. e., To bring him back to his senses.

‡ Part.

§ Sad.

¶ Importunate.

‖ i. e., To take measures.

\*\* Know.

And I to thee engaged a prince's word,  
When thou didst make him master of thy bed,  
To do him all the grace and good I could.—  
Go, some of you, knock at the abbey gate,  
And bid the lady abdess come to me;  
I will determine this, before I stir.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* O mistress, mistress, shift and save yourself!

My master and his man are both broke loose,  
Beaten the maids a-row \*, and bound the doctor,  
Whose beard they have singed off with brands  
And ever as it blazed they threw on him [of fire;  
Great pails of puddled mire to quench the hair:  
My master preaches patience to him, while  
His man with scissors nicks him † like a fool:  
And, sure, unless you send some present help,  
Between them they will kill the conjurer.

*Adr.* Peace, fool, thy master and his man are here;

And that is false thou dost report to us.

*Serv.* Mistress, upon my life, I tell you true;  
I have not feared almost, since I did see it.  
He cries for you, and vows, if he can take you,  
To scorch your face and to disfigure you:

[*Cry within.*

Hark, hark, I hear him, mistress; fly, be gone.

*Duke.* Come, stand by me, fear nothing:  
Guard with halberds.

*Adr.* Ah me, it is my husband! Witness you,  
That he is borne about invisible:

Even now we housed him in the abbey here;  
And now he's there, past thought of human reason.

*Enter ANTIPHOLUS and DROMIO of Ephesus.*

*Ant. E.* Justice, most gracious duke, oh,  
grant me justice!

Even for the service that long since I did thee,  
When I bestrid thee in the wars, and took  
Deep scars to save thy life; even for the blood  
That then I lost for thee, now grant me justice.

*Ege.* Unless the fear of death doth make me  
I see my son Antiphilus and Dromio. [dote,

*Ant. E.* Justice, sweet prince, against that  
woman there.

She whom thou gavest to me to be my wife;  
That hath abused and dishonour'd me,  
Even in the strength and height of injury!  
Beyond imagination is the wrong,

That she this day hath shameless thrown on me.

*Duke.* Discover how, and thou shalt find me  
just. [doors upon me,

*Ant. E.* This day, great duke, she shut the  
While she with harlots ‡ feasted in my house.

*Duke.* A grievous fault: Say, woman, didst  
thou so? [my sister,

*Adr.* No, my good lord;—myself, he, and  
To-day did dine together: So befal my soul,  
As this is false, he burdens me withal! [night,

*Luc.* Ne'er may I look on day, nor sleep on  
But she tells to your highness simple truth!

*Ang.* O perjured woman! They are both for-  
sworn.

In this the madman justly chargeth them.

*Ant. E.* My liege, I am advised what I say;  
Neither disturb'd with the effect of wine,  
Nor heady-rash, provoked with raging ire,  
Albeit, my wrongs might make one wiser mad.  
This woman lock'd me out this day from dinner;  
That goldsmith there, were he not pack'd with  
Could witness it, for he was with me then; [her  
Who parted with me to go fetch a chain,  
Promising to bring it to the Porcupine,  
Where Balthazar and I did dine together.

Our dinner done, and he not coming thither,  
I went to seek him: in the street I met him;  
And in his company, that gentleman, [down,  
There did this perjured goldsmith swear me  
That I this day of him received the chain,  
Which, God he knows, I saw not: for the which,  
He did arrest me with an officer.

I did obey; and sent my peasant home  
For certain ducats: he with none return'd.

Then fairly I bespoke the officer,  
To go in person with me to my house.

By the way we met

My wife, her sister, and a rabble more  
Of vile confederates; along with them  
They brought one Pinch; a hungry lean-faced  
A mere anatomy, a mountebank, [villain,  
A thread-bare juggler, and a fortune-teller;  
A needy, hollow-eyed, sharp-looking wretch,  
A living dead man: this pernicious slave,  
Forsooth, took on him as a conjurer;

And gazing in mine eyes, feeling my pulse,  
And with no face, as 'twere, outfacing me,  
Cries out, I was possess'd: then altogether  
They fell upon me, bound me, bore me thence,  
And in a dark and dankish vault at home  
There left me and my man, both bound together;  
Till gnawing with my teeth my bonds in sunder,  
I gain'd my freedom, and immediately  
Ran hither to your grace; whom I beseech  
To give me ample satisfaction

For these deep shames and great indignities.

*Ang.* My lord, in truth, thus far I witness  
with him;

That he dined not at home but was lock'd out.

*Duke.* But had he such a chain of thee, or no?

*Ang.* He had, my lord: and when he ran in  
here;

These people saw the chain about his neck.

*Mer.* Besides, I will be sworn, these ears of  
mine

Heard you confess you had the chain of him,  
After you first forswore it on the mart,  
And, thereupon, I drew my sword on you;  
And then you fled into this abbey here,  
From whence, I think, you are come by miracle.

*Ant. E.* I never came within these abbey  
walls,

Nor ever didst thou draw thy sword on me:  
I never saw the chain, so help me heaven!  
And this is false, you burden me withal. [this!

*Duke.* Why, what an intricate impeach is  
I think, you all have drank of Circe's cup.

If here you housed him, here he would have  
been; [coldly :-

If he were mad, he would not plead -

\* i. e., Successively, one after another.

† i. e., Cuts his hair close.

‡ Harlot

was a term of reproach applied to cheats among men, as well as to wantons among women.



You say, he dined at home; the goldsmith here  
Denies that saying:—Sirrah, what say you?

*Dro. E.* Sir, he dined with her there, at the Porcupine. [that ring.]

*Cour.* He did; and from my finger snatch'd

*Ant. E.* 'Tis true, my liege, this ring I had of her. [here?]

*Duke.* Saw'st thou him enter at the abbey

*Cour.* As sure, my liege, as I do see your grace. [abbess hither;]

*Duke.* Why, this is strange:—Go call the I think you are all mated\*, or stark mad.

[Exit an Attendant.]

*Æge.* Most mighty duke, vouchsafe me speak a word;

Haply I see a friend will save my life,

And pay the sum that may deliver me.

*Duke.* Speak freely, Syracusan, what thou wilt. [pholus?]

*Æge.* Is not your name, sir, call'd Anti- And is not that your bondman Dromio?

*Dro. E.* Within this hour I was his bond- man, sir,

But he, I thank him, gnaw'd in two my cords; Now am I Dromio, and his man, unbound.

*Æge.* I am sure, you both of you remember me. [by you;]

*Dro. E.* Ourselves we do remember, sir, For lately we were bound as you are now.

You are not Pinch's patient, are you, sir?

*Æge.* Why look you strange on me? you know me well. [now.]

*Ant. E.* I never saw you in my life, till

*Æge.* Oh! grief hath changed me, since you saw me last;

And careful hours, with Time's deformed hand Have written strange defeatures† in my face:

But tell me yet, dost thou not know my voice?

*Ant. E.* Neither.

*Æge.* Dromio, nor thou?

*Dro. E.* No, trust me, sir, nor I.

*Æge.* I am sure, thou dost.

*Dro. E.* Ay, sir? but I am sure, I do not; and whatsoever a man denies, you are now bound to believe him.

*Æge.* Not know my voice! O, time's ex- tremity! [tongue,

Hast thou so crack'd and splitted my poor In seven short years, that here my only son

Knows not my feeble key of untuned cares?

Though now this grained I face of mine be hid In sap-consuming winter's drizzled snow,

And all the conduits of my blood froze up;

Yet hath my sight of life some memory,

My wasting lamp some fading glimmer left,

My dull deaf ears a little use to hear:

All these old witnesses (I cannot err.)

Tell me, thou art my son Antipholus.

*Ant. E.* I never saw my father in my life.

*Æge.* But seven years since, in Syracuse, boy, [son,

Thou know'st, we parted: but, perhaps, my Thou shamest to acknowledge me in misery.

*Ant. E.* The duke, and all that know me in the city,

Can witness with me that it is not so;

I ne'er saw Syracusa in my life.

*Duke.* I tell thee, Syracusan, twenty years

Have I been patron to Antipholus,

During which time he ne'er saw Syracusa:

I see, thy age and dangers make thee dote.

*Enter the Abbess, with ANTIPHOLUS SYRA- cusan, and DROMIO Syracusan.*

*Abb.* Most mighty duke, behold a man much wrong'd. [All gather to see him.]

*Adr.* I see two husbands, or mine eyes de- ceive me. [other;]

*Duke.* One of these men is Genius to the And so of these: Which is the natural man, And which the spirit? Who deciphers them?

*Dro. S.* I, sir, am Dromio; command him away. [stay.]

*Dro. E.* I, sir, am Dromio; pray, let me

*Ant. S.* Ægeon, art thou not? or else his ghost? [him here?]

*Dro. S.* O, my old master! who hath bound

*Abb.* Whoever bound him, I will loose his bonds,

And gain a husband by his liberty:—

Speak, old Ægeon, if thou be'st the man That hadst a wife once call'd Æmilia,

That bore thee at a burden two fair sons: O, if thou be'st the same Ægeon, speak,

And speak unto the same Æmilia!

*Æge.* If I dream not, thou art Æmilia; If thou art she, tell me, where is that son

That floated with thee on the fatal raft?

*Abb.* By men of Epidamnus, he, and I,

And the twin Dromio, all were taken up; But, by and by, rude fishermen of Corinth

By force took Dromio and my son from them, And me they left with those of Epidamnus:

What then became of them, I cannot tell; I, to this fortune that you see me in. [right?]

*Duke.* Why, here begins his morning story These two Antipholus's, these two so like,

And these two Dromio's, one in semblance,— Besides her urging of her wreck at sea,—

These are the parents to these children, Which accidentally are met together.

Antipholus, thou camest from Corinth first.

*Ant. S.* No, sir, not I; I came from Syra- cuse. [is which.]

*Duke.* Stay, stand apart; I know not which

*Ant. E.* I came from Corinth, my most gracious lord.

*Dro. E.* And I with him. [famous warrior,

*Ant. E.* Brought to this town with that most Duke Menaphon, your most renowned uncle.

*Adr.* Which of you two did dine with me to-

*Ant. S.* I, gentle mistress. day?

*Adr.* And are not you my husband?

*Ant. E.* No, I say nay to that.

*Ant. S.* And so do I, yet did she call me so;

And this fair gentlewoman, her sister here, Did call me brother:—What I told you then,

I hope, I shall have leisure to make good; If this be not a dream, I see, and hear. [me.]

*Ang.* That is the chain, sir, which you had of

*Ant. S.* I think it be, sir; I deny it not.

\* Confounded.

† Alteration of features.

‡ Furrowed, lined.

§ The morning story is what Ægeon tells the Duke in the first scene of this play.

*Ant. E.* And you, sir, for this chain arrested  
*Ang.* I think I did, sir; I deny it not. [me.  
*Adr.* I sent you money, sir, to be your bail,  
 By Dromio; but I think he brought it not.

*Dro. E.* No, none by me.

*Ant. S.* This purse of ducats I received from  
 And Dromio my man did bring them me: [you,  
 I see, we still did meet each other's man,  
 And I was ta'en for him, and he for me,  
 And thereupon these errors are arose.

*Ant. E.* These ducats pawn I for my father  
 here. [life.

*Duke.* It shall not need, thy father hath his  
*Cour.* Sir, I must have that diamond from  
 you. [my good cheer.

*Ant. E.* There, take it; and much thanks for  
*Abb.* Renowned duke, vouchsafe to take the  
 To go with us into the abbey here, [pains  
 And hear at large discoursed all our fortunes:—  
 And all that are assembled in this place,  
 That by this sympathized one day's error  
 Have suffer'd wrong, go, keep us company,  
 And we shall make full satisfaction.—  
 Twenty-five years have I but gone in travail  
 Of you, my sons; nor, till this present hour,  
 My heavy burdens are delivered:—  
 The duke, my husband, and my children both,  
 And you, the calendars of their nativity,  
 Go to a gossip's feast, and go with me;  
 After so long grief, such nativity!

*Duke.* With all my heart, I'll gossip at this  
 feast.

[*Exeunt Duke, Abbess, ÆGEON, Cour-  
 tezan, Merchant, ANGELO, and At-  
 tendants.* [shipboard?

*Dro. S.* Master, shall I fetch your stuff from

*Ant. E.* Dromio, what stuff of mine hast  
 thou embark'd? [the Centaur.

*Dro. S.* Your goods, that lay at host, sir, in  
*Ant. S.* He speaks to me; I am your master,

Dromio:

Come, go with us; we'll look to that anon:  
 Embrace thy brother, there, rejoice with him.

[*Exeunt ANTIPHOLUS S. and E.*  
*ADR. and LUC.* [house,

*Dro. S.* There is a fat friend at your master's  
 That kitchen'd me for you to-day at dinner;  
 She now shall be my sister, not my wife.

*Dro. E.* Methinks, you are my glass, and not  
 my brother:

I see by you, I am a sweet-faced youth.

Will you walk in to see their gossiping?

*Dro. S.* Not I, sir; you are my elder. [it]

*Dro. E.* That's a question: how shall we try

*Dro. S.* We will draw cuts for the senior:  
 till then, lead thou first.

*Dro. E.* Nay, then thus: [brother:

We came into the world, like brother and  
 And now let's go hand in hand, not one before  
 another. [*Exeunt*

On a careful revision of the foregoing scenes, I do not hesitate to pronounce them the composition of two very unequal writers. Shakspeare had undoubtedly a share in them; but that the entire play was no work of his, is an opinion which (as Benedick says) "fire cannot melt out of me; I will die in it at the stake." Thus, as we are informed by Anlus Gellius, Lib. III. Cap. 3., some plays were absolutely ascribed to Plautus, which in truth had only been (*retractatæ et expolitæ*) retouched and polished by him.

In this comedy we find more intricacy of plot than distinction of character; and our attention is less forcibly engaged, because we can guess in great measure how the denouement will be brought about. Yet the subject appears to have been reluctantly dismissed, even in this last and unnecessary scene, where the same mistakes are continued, till the power of affording entertainment is entirely lost.—STEEVENS.

# MACBETH.

## Persons represented.

DUNCAN, *King of Scotland.*

MALCOLM, } *his sons.*

DONALBAIN, } *Generals of the King's*

MACBETH, } *army.*

BANQUO, } *noblemen of Scotland.*

MACDUFF, } *noblemen of Scotland.*

LENOX, } *noblemen of Scotland.*

ROSSE, } *noblemen of Scotland.*

MENTETH, } *noblemen of Scotland.*

ANGUS, } *noblemen of Scotland.*

CATHNESS, } *noblemen of Scotland.*

FLEANCE, *son to Banquo.*

SIWARD, *Earl of Northumberland, General of the English forces.*

Young SIWARD, *his son.*

SEYTON, *an officer attending on Macbeth.*

Son to Macduff.

An English Doctor. A Scotch Doctor.

A Soldier. A Porter. An old Man.

Lady MACBETH.

Lady MACDUFF.

Gentlewoman, *attending on Lady Macbeth.*

Hecate, *and three Witches.*

*Lords, Gentlemen, Officers, Soldiers, Murderers, Attendants, and Messengers; the Ghost of Banquo, and several other Apparitions.*

*Scene,—in the end of the fourth act, lies in England; through the rest of the play, in Scotland; and, chiefly, at Macbeth's castle.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *An open Place. Thunder and Lightning.*

*Enter three Witches.*

1 *Witch.* When shall we three meet again  
In thunder, lightning, or in rain?

2 *Witch.* When the hurlyburly's done,  
When the battle's lost and won:

3 *Witch.* That will be ere set of sun.

1 *Witch.* Where the place?

2 *Witch.* Upon the heath:

3 *Witch.* There to meet with Macbeth.

1 *Witch.* I come, Graymalkin!

*All.* Paddock calls:—Aun.—

Fair is foul, and foul is fair:

Hover through the fog and filthy air.

[*Witches vanish.*]

SCENE II. *A Camp near Fores.*

*Alarum within. Enter King DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, LENOX, with Attendants, meeting a bleeding Soldier.*

*Dun.* What bloody man is that? He can  
As seemeth by his plight, of the revolt [report,  
The newest state.

*Mat.* This is the serjeant,  
Who, like a good and hardy soldier, fought  
'Gainst my captivity:—Hail, brave friend!  
Say to the king the knowledge of the broil,  
As thou didst leave it.

*Sold.* Doubtfully it stood;  
As two spent swimmers, that do cling together,  
And choke their art. The merciless Macdon-  
[Worthy to be a rebel; for, to that, wald  
The multiplying villainies of nature

Do swarm upon him,) from the western isles  
Of Kernes and Gallowglasses is supplied;  
And fortune, on his damned quarrel smiling,  
Show'd like a rebel's whore: But all's too weak:  
For brave Macbeth, (well he deserves that

name,) Disdaining fortune, with his brandish'd steel,  
Which smok'd with bloody execution,  
Like valour's minion, Carved out his passage, till he faced the slave;  
And ne'er shook hands, nor bade farewell to  
him, [chaps,  
Till he unseam'd him from the nave to the  
And fix'd his head upon our battlements.

*Dun.* O valiant cousin! worthy gentleman!  
*Sold.* As whence the sun 'gins his reflection  
Shipwrecking storms and direful thunders  
break; [to come,

So from that spring, whence comfort seem'd  
Discomfort swells. Mark, king of Scotland,  
mark:

No sooner justice had, with valour arm'd,  
Compell'd these skipping Kernes to trust their  
heels,

But the Norwegian lord, surveying vantage,  
With furbish'd arms, and new supplies of men,  
Began a fresh assault.

*Dun.* Dismay'd not this  
Our captains, Macbeth and Banquo?

*Sold.* Yes;

As sparrows, eagles; or the hare, the lion.  
If I say sooth||, I must report they were  
As cannons overcharg'd with double cracks  
So they

• Tumult.

|| s. e., Supplied with light and heavy-armed troops.  
The opposite to comfort.

‡ Cause.

Truth.



Doubly redoubled strokes upon the foe:  
Except they meant to bathe in reeking wounds,  
Or memorize another Golgotha\*,  
I cannot tell:—

But I am faint, my gashes cry for help.

*Dun.* So well thy words become thee, as  
thy wounds;

They smack of honour both:—Go, get him  
surgeons. [*Exit Soldier attended.*]

*Enter Rosse.*

Who comes here?

*Mal.* The worthythane of Rosse.

*Len.* What a haste looks through his eyes!

So should he look,

That seems to speak things strange.

*Rosse.* God save the king!

*Dun.* Whence camest thou, worthythane?

*Rosse.* From Fife, great king,

Where the Norweyan banners flout† the sky,  
And fan our people cold.

Norway himself, with terrible numbers,

Assisted by that most disloyal traitor

Thethane of Cawdor, 'gan a dismal conflict:

Till that Bellona's bridegroom‡ lapp'd in proof§,

Confronted him with self-comparisons,

Point against point rebellious, arm 'gainst arm,

Curbing his lavish spirit: And, to conclude,

The victory fell on us:—

*Dun.* Great happiness!

*Rosse.* That now

Sveno, the Norways' king, craves composition;

Nor would we deign him burial of his men,

Till he disbursed, at Saint Colmes' inch,

Ten thousand dollars to our general use.

*Dun.* No more thatthane of Cawdor shall  
deceive [*death,*]

Our bosom interest:—Go, pronounce his  
And with his former title greet Macbeth.

*Rosse.* I'll see it done.

*Dun.* What he hath lost, noble Macbeth  
hath won. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. A Heath.

*Thunder.* *Enter the three Witches.*

1 *Witch.* Where hast thou been, sister?

2 *Witch.* Killing swine.

3 *Witch.* Sister, where thou? [*her lap,*]

1 *Witch.* A sailor's wife had chestnuts in  
And mounch'd, and mounch'd, and mounch'd:—

*Give me,* quoth I: [*cries,*]

*Aroint thee||, witch!* the rump-fed ronyon¶

Her husband's to Aleppo gone, master o' the

But in a sieve I'll thither sail, [*Tiger:*]

And, like a rat without a tail,

I'll do, I'll do, and I'll do.

2 *Witch.* I'll give thee a wind.

1 *Witch.* Thou art kind.

3 *Witch.* And I another.

1 *Witch.* I myself have all the other;

And the very ports they blow,

All the quarters that they know

I' the shipman's card\*\*.

I will drain him dry as hay:

Sleep shall, neither night nor day,

Hang upon his pent-house lid;

He shall live a man forbid††;

Weary sev'n nights, nine times nine,

Shall he dwindle, peak, and pine:

Though his bark cannot be lost,

Yet it shall be tempest-toss'd.

Look what I have.

2 *Witch.* Show me, show me.

1 *Witch.* Here I have a pilot's thumb,

Wreck'd as he did homeward come.

[*Drum within*]

3 *Witch.* A drum, a drum:

Macbeth doth come.

*All.* The weird sisters‡‡, hand in hand,

Posters of the sea and land,

Thus do go about, about;

Thrice to thine, and thrice to mine,

And thrice again, to make up nine:

Peace!—the charm's wound up.

*Enter MACBETH and BANQUO.*

*Macb.* So foul and fair a day I have not  
seen. [*are these,*]

*Ban.* How far is't call'd to Fores?—What

So wither'd and so wild in their attire;

That look not like the inhabitants o' the earth,

And yet are on't? Live you? or are you aught

That man may question? You seem to un-  
derstand me,

By each at once her choppy finger laying

Upon her skinny lips:—You should be women,

And yet your beards forbid me to interpret

That you are so.

*Macb.* Speak, if you can;—What are you?

1 *Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee,

thane of Glamis! [*thane of Cawdor!*]

2 *Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! hail to thee,

3 *Witch.* All hail, Macbeth! that shalt be  
king hereafter. [*to fear*]

*Ban.* Good sir, why do you start; and seem

Things that do sound so fair?—P'the name of

Are ye fantastical§§, or that indeed [*truth,*]

Which outwardly ye show? My noble partner

You greet with present grace, and great pre-

Of noble having|||, and of royal hope, [*diction*]

That he seems rapt¶¶ withal; to me you speak

not:

If you can look into the seeds of time, [*not;*]

And say, which grain will grow, and which will

Speak then to me, who neither beg, nor fear,

Your favours, nor your hate.

1 *Witch.* Hail!

2 *Witch.* Hail!

3 *Witch.* Hail!

1 *Witch.* Lesser than Macbeth, and greater.

2 *Witch.* Not so happy, yet much happier.

3 *Witch.* Thou shalt get kings, though thou be

So, all hail, Macbeth, and Banquo! [*none:*]

1 *Witch.* Banquo, and Macbeth, all hail!

*Macb.* Stay, you imperfect speakers, tell me

more: [*Glamis;*]

By Sinel's death, I know, I amthane of

But how of Cawdor? thethane of Cawdor lives,

\* Make another Golgotha as memorable as the first.

† Mock.

‡ Shakspeare means Mars.

§ Defended by armour of proof.

|| Avaunt, begone.

¶ A scurvy woman fed on offals.

\*\* Sailor's chart.

†† Accursed.

‡‡ Prophetic sisters.

§§ Supernatural, spiritual.

||| Estate.

¶¶ Rapturously affected.

A prosperous gentleman; and, to be king,  
Stands not within the prospect of belief.  
No more than to be Cawdor. Say, from whence  
You owe this strange intelligence? or why  
Upon this blasted heath you stop our way  
With such prophetic greeting?—Speak, I  
charge you. [Witches vanish.]

*Ban.* The earth hath bubbles, as the water  
has, [vanish'd?]

And these are of them:—Whither are they  
*Macb.* Into the air; and what seem'd corpo-  
ral, melted [staid!]

As breath into the wind.—'Would they had  
*Ban.* Were such things here; as we do speak  
Or have we eaten of the insane root\*, [about?]  
That takes the reason prisoner?

*Mac.* Your children shall be kings.

*Ban.* You shall be king.

*Macb.* And thane of Cawdor too; went it  
not so? [Who's here?]

*Ban.* To the self-same tune, and words.  
*Enter Rosse and Angus.*

*Rosse.* The king hath happily received, Mac-  
beth,

The news of thy success: and when he reads  
Thy personal venture in the rebels' fight,  
His wonders and his praises do contend, [that,  
Which should be thine, or his: Silenced with  
In viewing o'er the rest o' the self-same day,  
He finds thee in the stout Norweyan ranks,  
Nothing afraid of what thyself didst make,  
Strange images of death. As thick as tale†,  
Came post with post; and every one did bear  
Thy praises in his kingdom's great defence,  
And pour'd them down before him.

*Ang.* We are sent,  
To give thee, from our royal master, thanks;  
To herald thee into his sight, not pay thee.

*Rosse.* And, for an earnest of a greater ho-  
nour, [dor:]  
He bade me, from him, call thee thane of Caw-  
In which addition‡, hail, most worthy thane!  
For it is thine.

*Ban.* What, can the devil speak true?

*Macb.* The thane of Cawdor lives; Why  
In borrow'd robes? [do you dress me]

*Ang.* Who was the thane, lives yet;  
But under heavy judgment bears that life  
Which he deserves to lose. Whether he was  
Combined with Norway; or did line the rebel  
With hidden help and vantage; or that with  
both [not;]

He labour'd in his country's wreck, I know  
But treasons capital, confess'd, and proved,  
Have overthrown him.

*Macb.* Glamis, and thane of Cawdor:  
The greatest is behind.—Thanks for your pains.  
Do you not hope your children shall be kings.  
When those that gave the thane of Cawdor to  
Promised no less to them? [me.]

*Ban.* That, trusted home,  
Might yet enkindle § you unto the crown,

Besides the thane of Cawdor. But 'tis strange:  
And oftentimes, to win us to our harm,  
The instruments of darkness tell us truths;  
Win us with honest trifles, to betray us  
In deepest consequence.—  
Consins, a word, I pray you.

*Macb.* Two truths are told,

As happy prologues to the swelling act  
Of the imperial theme.—I thank you, gentle-  
This supernatural soliciting|| [men.—  
Cannot be ill; cannot be good:—If ill,  
Why hath it given me earnest of success,  
Commencing in a truth? I am thane of Cawdor:  
If good, why do I yield to that suggestion¶  
Whose horrid image doth unfix my hair,  
And make my seated \*\* heart knock at my ribs,  
Against the use of nature? Present fears  
Are less than horrible imaginings: [tical,  
My thought, whose murder yet is but fantas-  
Shakes so my single state of man, that function  
Is smother'd in surmise ††; and nothing is,  
But what is not.

*Ban.* Look, how our partner's rapt.

*Macb.* If chance will have me king, why,  
Without my stir. [chance may crown me]

*Ban.* New honours come upon him  
Like our strange garments; cleave not to their  
But with the aid of use. [mould,]

*Macb.* Come what come may;  
Time and the hour ‡‡ runs through the roughest  
day. [leisure:]

*Ban.* Worthy Macbeth, we stay upon your

*Macb.* Give me your favour§§:—my dull  
brain was wrought [pains]

With things forgotten. Kind gentlemen, your  
Are register'd where every day I turn  
The leaf to read them.—Let us toward the  
king.— [time.]

Think upon what hath chanced: and, at more  
The interim having weigh'd it, let us speak  
Our free hearts each to other.

*Ban.* Very gladly.

*Macb.* Till then, enough—Come, friends.  
[Exeunt.]

SCENE IV. Fores. A Room in the Palace.

*Flourish.* Enter DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DO-  
NALD BAIN, LENOX, and Attendants.

*Dun.* Is execution done on Cawdor? Are not  
Those in commission yet return'd?

*Mal.* My liege,  
They are not yet come back. But I have spoke  
With one that saw him die: who did report,  
That very frankly he confess'd his treasons;  
Implored your highness' pardon; and set forth  
A deep repentance: nothing in his life  
Became him, like the leaving it; he died  
As one that had been studied in his death,  
To throw away the dearest thing he owed|||,  
As 'twere a careless trifle.

*Dun.* There's no art,

To find the mind's construction in the face¶¶

\* The root which makes insane.

† As fast as they could be counted.

‡ Title

§ Stimulate. || Incitement.

¶ Temptation. \*\* Firmly fixed.

†† Time and opportunity.

‡‡ Pardon.

§§ Owned, possessed.

||| We cannot construe the disposition of the mind by the linea-  
ments of the face.

He was a gentleman on whom I built  
An absolute trust.—O worthiest cousin!

*Enter MACBETH, BANQUO, ROSSE, and ANGUS.*

The sin of my ingratitude even now  
Was heavy on me: Thon art so far before,  
That swiftest wing of recompense is slow  
To overtake thee. 'Would thou hadst less de-

served; [ment  
That the proportion both of thanks and pay-  
Might have been mine! only I have left to say,  
More is thy due than more than all can pay.

*Macb.* The service and the loyalty I owe,  
In doing it, pays itself. Your highness' part  
Is to receive our duties: and our duties  
Are to your throne and state, children and ser-

vants [every thing  
Which do but what they should, by doing  
Safe toward your love and honour.

*Dun.* Welcome hither:  
I have begun to plant thee, and will labour  
To make thee full of growing\*.—Noble Banquo,  
That hast no less deserved, nor must be known  
No less to have done so, let me infold thee,  
And hold thee to my heart.

*Ban.* There if I grow,  
The harvest is your own.

*Dun.* My plenteous joys,  
Wanton in fulness, seek to hide themselves  
In drops of sorrow.—Sons, kinsmen, thanes,  
And you whose places are the nearest, know,  
We will establish our estate upon [after,  
Our eldest, Malcolm; whom we name here-  
The prince of Cumberland: which honour must  
Not, unaccompanied, invest him only,  
But signs of nobleness, like stars, shall shine  
On all deserv'ers.—From hence to Inverness,  
And bind us further to you. [for you:

*Macb.* The rest is labour, which is not used  
I'll be myself the harbinger, and make joyful  
The hearing of my wife with your approach;  
So, humbly take my leave.

*Dun.* My worthy Cawdor!  
*Macb.* The prince of Cumberland!—That is  
a step. [Aside.

On which I must fall down, or else o'er-leap,  
For in my way it lies. Stars, hide your fires!  
Let not light see my black and deep desires:  
The eye wink at the hand! yet let that be,  
Which the eye fears, when it is done, to see.

[Exit.  
*Dun.* True, worthy Banquo; he is full so  
And in his commendations I am fed; [valiant†;  
It is a banquet to me. Let us after him,  
Whose care is gone before to bid us welcome:  
It is a peerless kinsman. [Flourish. *Exeunt.*

SCENE V. Inverness. A Room in Macbeth's  
Castle.

*Enter Lady MACBETH, reading a letter.*

*Lady M.* They met me in the day of suc-  
cess; and I have learned by the perfectest  
report†, they have more in them than mor-  
tal knowledge. When I burned in desire

to question them further, they made them-  
selves—air, into which they vanished.  
Whiles I stood rapt in the wonder of it,  
came missives§ from the king, who all-hail-  
ed me, Thane of Cawdor; by which title,  
before, these weird sisters saluted me, and  
referred me to the coming on of time, with,  
Hail, king that shalt be! This have I thought  
good to deliver thee, my dearest partner of  
greatness; that thou mightest not lose the  
dues of rejoicing, by being ignorant of what  
greatness is promised thee. Lay it to thy  
heart, and farewell.

Glamis thou art, and Cawdor; and shalt be  
What thou art promised:—Yet do I fear thy na-  
ture;

It is too full o' the milk of human kindness,  
To catch the nearest way: Thou wouldst be  
Art not without ambition; but without [great;  
The illness should attend it. What thou  
wouldst highly, [false.

That wouldst thou holily; wouldst not play  
And yet wouldst wrongly win: thou'dst have  
great Glamis, [have it;

That which cries, *Thus thou must do, if thou*  
*And that which rather thou dost fear to do,*  
*Than wishest should be undone.* Hie thee  
hither,

That I may pour my spirits in thine ear,  
And chastise with the valour of my tongue,  
All that impedes thee from the golden round||,  
Which fate and metaphysical¶ aid deth seem  
To have thee crown'd withal.—What is your  
tidings?

*Enter an Attendant.*

*Attend.* The King comes here to-night.

*Lady M.* Thou'rt mad to say it:

Is not thy master with him? who were't so,  
Would have inform'd for preparation.

*Attend.* So please you, it is true; our thane  
is coming:

One of my fellows had the speed of him;  
Who, almost dead for breath, had scarcely  
Than would make up his message. [more

*Lady M.* Give him tending  
He brings great news. The raven himself is  
hoarse, [Exit Attendant.

That croaks the fatal entrance of Duncan  
Under my battlements. Come, come, you spirits  
That tend on mortal\*\* thoughts, unsex me here;  
And fill me, from the crown to the toe, top-  
Of direst cruelty! make thick my blood, [full  
Stop up the access and passage to remorse††;  
That no punctuations visitings of nature  
Shake my fell purpose, nor keep peace between  
The effect, and it! Come to my woman's breasts,  
And take my milk for gall; you murdering mi-  
Wherever in your sightless substances [isters,  
You wait on nature's mischief! Come, thick  
night,

And pall‡‡ thee in the dunest smoke of hell!  
That my keen knife§§ see not the wound it  
makes; [dark,

Nor heaven peep through the blauket of the

\* Exuberant.

† Full as valiant as described.

‡ The best intelligence.

§ Messengers.

|| Diadem.

¶ Supernatural.

\*\* Murderous.

†† Pity.

‡‡ Wrap as in a mantle

§§ Knife anciently meant a sword or dagger.



To cry, *Hold, Hold!*—Great Glamis! worthy Cawdor!

*Enter MACBETH.*

Greater than both, by the all-hail hereafter!  
Thy letters have transported me beyond  
This ignorant present\*; and I feel now  
The future in the instant.

*Macb.* My dearest love,  
Duncan comes here to-night.

*Lady M.* And when goes hence!

*Macb.* To-morrow,—as he purposes.

*Lady M.* O, never  
Shall sun that morrow see!  
Your face, my thane, is as a book, where men  
May read strange matters: To beguile the time,  
Look like the time; bear welcome in your eye,  
Your hand, your tongue: look like the innocent flower,

But be the serpent under it. He that's coming  
Must be provided for: and you shall put  
This night's great business into my despatch;  
Which shall to all our nights and days to come  
Give solely sovereign sway and masterdom.

*Macb.* We will speak further.

*Lady M.* Only look up clear;  
To alter favour† ever is to fear:  
Leave all the rest to me. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *The same. Before the Castle.*

*Hautboys.* Servants of Macbeth attending.

*Enter DUNCAN, MALCOLM, DONALBAIN, BANQUO, LENOX, MACDUFF, ROSSE, ANGUS, and Attendants.*

*Dun.* This castle hath a pleasant seat; the air  
Nimbly and sweetly recommends itself  
Unto our gentle senses.

*Ban.* This guest of summer,  
The temple-haunting marlet, does approve,  
By his loved mansionry, that the heaven's  
breath, [tress,  
Smells wooingly here: no jutty, frieze, but-  
Nor coigne of vantage‡, but this bird hath  
made [they  
His pendent bed, and procreant cradle. Where  
Most breed and haunt, I have observed, the air  
Is delicate.

*Enter Lady MACBETH.*

*Dun.* See, seal our honour'd hostess!  
The love that follows us, sometime is our  
trouble, [you,  
Which still we thank as love. Herein I teach  
How you shall bid God yield us for your pains,  
And thank us for your trouble.

*Lady M.* All our service  
In every point twicedone, and then donedouble,  
Were poor and single business, to contend  
Against those honours deep and broad, where-  
with [old.

Your majesty loads our house: For those of  
And the late dignities heap'd up to them,  
We rest your hermits||.

*Dun.* Where's the thane of Cawdor?  
We counsel'd him at the heels, and had a purpose

To be his purveyor: but he rides well;  
And his great love, sharp as his spur, hath  
hold him

To his home before us: Fair and noble hostess,  
We are your guest to-night.

*Lady M.* Your servants ever  
Have theirs, themselves, and what is theirs,  
in compt¶,

To make their audit at your highness' pleasure  
Still to return your own.

*Dun.* Give me your hand:  
Conduct me to mine host; we love him highly,  
And shall continue our graces towards him.  
By your leave, hostess. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII. *The same. A Room in the Castle.*

*Hautboys and torches. Enter, and pass over the stage, a Sewer\*\*, and divers Servants with dishes and service. Then enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* If it were done, when 'tis done, then  
'twere well

It were done quickly: If the assassination  
Could trammel upon the consequence, and  
catch,

With his surcense, success; that but this blow  
Might be the be-all and the end-all here,  
But here, upon this bank and shoal of time,—  
We'd jump the life to come. But, in these cases,  
We still have judgment here; that we but teach  
Bloody instructions, which, being taught, re-  
turn [tice

To plague the inventor: This even-handed jus-  
Commends the ingredients of our poison'd  
chalice

To our own lips. He's here in double trust:  
First, as I am his kinsman and his subject,  
Strong both against the deed: then, as his host,  
Who should against his murderer shut the  
door, [can

Not bear the knife myself. Besides, this Dun-  
Hath borne his faculties so meek, hath been  
So clear in his great office, that his virtues  
Will plead like angels, trumpet-tongued, against  
The deep damnation of his taking-off:

And pity, like a naked new-born babe,  
Striding the blast, or heaven's cherubin, horsed  
Upon the sightless couriers†† of the air,  
Shall blow the horrid deed in every eye,  
That tears shall drown the wind.—I have no  
To prick the sides of my intent, but only [spur  
Vaulting ambition, which o'er-leaps itself,  
And falls on the other. How now, what news?

*Enter Lady MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* He has almost supp'd; Why have  
you left the chamber?

*Macb.* Hath he ask'd for me?

*Lady M.* Know you not, he has?

*Macb.* We will proceed no further in this  
business: [bought

He hath honour'd me of late; and I have  
Golden opinions from all sorts of people,

\* i. e., Beyond the present time, which is, according to the process of nature, ignorant of the future. † Look, countenance. ‡ Convenient corner. § Reward. || i. e., We as hermits shall ever pray for you. ¶ Subject to accompt. \*\* An officer so called from his placing the dishes on the table. †† Winds; sightless is invisible.

Which would be worn now in their newest  
Not cast aside so soon. [gloss.

*Lady M.* Was thè hope drunk, [since?  
Wherein you dress'd yourself? hath it slept  
And wakes it now, to look so green and pale  
At what it did so freely? From this time,  
Such I account thy love. Art thou afraid  
To be the same in thine own act and valour,  
As thou art in desire? Wouldst thou have  
that

Which thou esteem'st the ornament of life,  
And live a coward in thine own esteem;  
Letting I dare not wait upon I would,  
Like the poor cat i' the adage?

*Macb.* Pr'ythee, peace:  
I dare do all that may become a man;  
Who dares do more, is none.

*Lady M.* What beast was it then,  
That made you break this enterprise to me?  
When you durst do it, then you were a man;  
And, to be more than what you were, you  
would [place,  
Be so much more the man. Nor time, nor  
Did then adhere \*, and yet you would make  
both: [ness now  
They have made themselves, and that their fit.  
Does unmake you. I have given suck; and  
know [me:  
How tender 'tis, to love the babe that milks  
I would, while it was smiling in my face,  
Have pluck'd my nipple from his boneless  
gums,

And dash'd the brains out, had I so sworn, as  
Have done to this. [you

*Macb.* If we should fail, —  
*Lady M.* We fail!  
But screw your courage to the sticking-place,  
And we'll not fail. When Duncan is asleep,  
(Whereto the rather shall his day's hard jour-  
Soundly invite him,) his two chamberlains [ney  
Will I with wine and wassel + so convince ‡,  
That memory, the warder§ of the brain,  
Shall be a fume, and the receipt of reason  
A limbeck only: When in swinish sleep  
Their drenched natures lie, as in a death,  
What cannot you and I perform upon  
The unguarded Duncan? what not put upon  
His spongy officers; who shall bear the guilt  
Of our great quell ||?

*Macb.* Bring forth men-children only!  
For thy undaunted mettle should compose  
Nothing but males. Will it not be received ¶,  
When we have mark'd with blood those sleepy  
two [gers,  
Of his own chamber, and used their very dag-  
That they have done't?

*Lady M.* Who dares receive it other,  
As we shall make our griefs and clamour roar  
Upon his death?

*Macb.* I am settled, and bend up  
Each corporal agent to this terrible feat.  
Away, and mock the time with fairest show:  
False face must hide what the false heart doth  
know. [Exeunt.

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. *The same.*

*Court within the Castle.*

*Enter BANQUO and FLEANCE, and a Ser-  
vant, with a torch before them.*

*Ban.* How goes the night, boy? [the clock.  
*Fle.* The moon is down; I have not heard  
*Ban.* And she goes down at twelve.  
*Fle.* I take't, 'tis later, sir.

*Ban.* Hold, take my sword:—There's hus-  
bandry \*\* in heaven,  
Their candles are all out.—Take thee that too.  
A heavy summons lies like lead upon me,  
And yet I would not sleep: Merciful powers!  
Pestrain in me the cursed thoughts, that na-  
ture [sword;—  
Gives way to in repose!—Give me my  
*Enter MACBETH, and a Servant with a  
torch.*

Who's there?

*Macb.* A friend. [a-bed;  
*Ban.* What, sir, not yet at rest? The king's  
He hath been in unusual pleasure, and  
Sent forth great largess † to your offices ‡:  
This diamond he greets your wife withal,  
By the name of most kind hostess; and shut  
In measureless content. [up §§

*Macb.* Being unprepared,

Our will became the servant to defect;  
Which else should free have wrought.

*Ban.* Al's well.  
I dreamt last night of the three weird sisters.  
To you they have show'd some truth.

*Macb.* I think not of them:  
Yet, when we can entreat an hour to serve,  
Would spend it in some words upon that bu  
If you would grant the time. [siness

*Ban.* At your kind'st leisure.  
*Macb.* If you shall cleave to my consent,—  
It shall make honour for you. [when 'tis

*Ban.* So I lose none  
In seeking to augment it, but still keep  
My bosom franchised, and allegiance clear,  
I shall be counsell'd.

*Macb.* Good repose, the whi-  
*Ban.* Thanks, sir; The like to you!

[*Exit BANQUO.*  
*Macb.* Go, bid thy mistress, when my drink  
is ready,

She strike upon the bell. Get thee to bed,  
[*Exit Servant.*  
Is this a dagger, which I see before me,  
The handle toward my hand? Come, let me  
clutch thee:—

I have thee not, and yet I see thee still.  
Art thou not, fatal vision, sensible

\* In the same sense as cohere. † Intemperance. ‡ Overpower. § Sentinel. || Murder  
¶ Apprehended \*\* Thrift. †† Bounty. †† The rooms appropriated to servants  
§§ Conclude.

To feeling, as to sight? or art thou but  
A dagger of the mind; a false creation,  
Proceeding from the heat-oppressed brain?  
I see thee yet, in form as palpable  
As this which now I draw.

Thou marshall'st me the way that I was going;  
And such an instrument I was to use.  
Mine eyes are made the fools o' the other  
senses,

Or else worth all the rest: I see thee still;  
And on thy blade, and dudgeon \*, gouts † of  
blood, [thing :  
Which was not so before.—There's no such  
It is the bloody business, which informs  
Thus to mine eyes.—Now o'er the one half  
world

Nature seems dead, and wicked dreams abuse  
The curtain'd sleep; now witchcraft celebrates  
Pale Hecate's offerings; and wither'd murder,  
Alarm'd by his sentinel, the wolf, [pace,  
Whose howl's his watch, thus with his stealthy  
With Tarquin's ravishing strides, towards his  
design [earth,

Moves like a ghost.—Thou sure and firm-set  
Hear not my steps, which way they walk, for  
fear

Thy very stones prate of my where-about,  
And take the present horror from the time,  
Which now suits with it.—Whiles I threat,  
he lives; [gives.

Words to the heat of deeds too cold breath  
[A bell rings.

I go, and it is done; the bell invites me.  
Hear it not, Duncan; for it is a knell  
That summons thee to heaven, or to hell. [Exit.

## SCENE II. The same.

Enter Lady MACBETH.

Lady M. That which hath made them  
drunk, hath made me bold:  
What hath quench'd them, hath given me fire:—  
Hark!—Peace!

It was the owl that shriek'd, the fatal bellman,  
Which gives the stern'st good-night. He is  
about it:

The doors are open: and the surfeited grooms  
Do mock their charge with snores: I have  
drugg'd their possets,

That death and nature do contend about  
Whether they live, or die. [them,

Macb. [Within.] Who's there?—what, ho!

Lady M. Alack! I am afraid they have  
awaked, [deed,

And 'tis not done:—the attempt, and not the  
Confounds us:—Hark!—I laid their daggers  
ready, [seem'd

He could not miss them.—Had he not re-  
My father as he slept, I had done't.—My  
husband?

Enter MACBETH.

Macb. I have done the deed:—Didst thou  
not hear a noise? [crickets cry.

Lady M. I heard the owl scream, and the  
did not you speak?

Macb. When?

Lady M. Now.

Macb. As I descended?

Lady M. Ay.

Macb. Hark!—

Who lies i' the second chamber?

Lady M.

Donalbain.

Macb. This is a sorry sight.

[Looking on his hands.

Lady M. A foolish thought, to say a sorry  
sight. [and one cried, murder!

Macb. There's one did laugh in his sleep,  
That they did wake each other: I stood and  
heard them: [them

But they did say their prayers, and address'd  
Again to sleep.

Lady M. There are two lodged together.

Macb. One cried, God bless us! and, Amen,  
the other; [hands.

As† they had seen me with these hangman's  
Listening their fear, I could not say, amen,  
When they did say, God bless us.

Lady M. Consider it not so deeply.

Macb. But wherefore could not I pronounce,  
amen?

I had most need of blessing, and amen  
Stuck in my throat. [thought

Lady Macb. These deeds must not be  
After these ways; so, it will make us mad.

Macb. Methought I heard a voice cry,  
Sleep no more! [sleep;

Macbeth does murder sleep, the innocent  
Sleep, that knits up the ravel'd sleeve § of  
care, [bath,

The death of each day's life, sore labour's  
Balm of hurt minds, great nature's second  
Chief nourisher in life's feast; [course,

Lady M. What do you mean?

Macb. Still it cried, Sleep no more! to all  
the house: [Cawdor

Glamis hath murder'd sleep; and therefore  
Shall sleep no more. Macbeth shall sleep  
no more! [worthy than,

Lady M. Who was it that thus cried? Wh  
You do unbend your noble strength, to this.  
So brainsickly of things:—Go, get some water  
And wash this filthy witness from your hand.  
Why did you bring these daggers from th  
place? [smear

They must lie there: Go, carry them, an  
The sleepy grooms with blood.

Macb. I'll go no more

I am afraid to think what I have done;  
Look on't again, I dare not.

Lady M. Infirm of purpose!

Give me the daggers: The sleeping, and the  
dead,

Are but as pictures: 'tis the eye of childhood,  
That fears a painted devil. If he do bleed,  
I'll gild the faces of the grooms withal,  
For it must seem their guilt.

[Exit. Knocking within.

Macb. Whence is that knocking?

How is't with me, when every noise appals  
me? [mine eyes!

What hands are here? Ha! they pluck out  
Will all great Neptune's ocean wash this blood

\* Haft. † Drops. ‡ As if. § Sleeve is unwrought silk.



Clean from my hand? No; this my hand will rather

he multitudinous seas incarnadine \*  
Making the green—one red.

*Re-enter Lady MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* My hands are of your colour; but I shame [a knocking]  
To wear a heart so white. [*Knock.*] I hear  
At the south entry:—retire we to our chamber:  
A little water clears us of this deed: [ber:  
How easy is it then? Your constancy  
Hath left you unattended.—[*Knocking.*]

Hark! more knocking:  
Get on your nightgown lest occasion call us,  
And show us to be watchers:—Be not lost  
So poorly in your thoughts.

*Macb.* To know my deed,—'twere best not  
know myself. [*Knock.*]  
Wake Duncan with thy knocking! Ay,  
would thou couldst! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same.*

*Enter a Porter.* [*Knocking within.*]

*Porter.* Here's a knocking, indeed! If a man  
were porter of hell-gate, he should have old  
turning the key. [*Knocking.*] knock, knock,  
knock: Who's there, i'th' name of Belzebub?  
Here's a farmer, that hanged himself on  
the expectation of plenty: come in time; have  
napkins; enough about you; here you'll sweat  
for't. [*Knocking.*] Knock, knock: Who's there,  
i'th' other devil's name? Faith, here's an  
equivocator, that could swear in both the  
scales against either scale; who committed  
treason enough for God's sake, yet could not  
equivocate to heaven: O, come in, equivocator.  
[*Knocking.*] knock, knock, knock: Who's  
there? Faith, here's an English tailor come  
hither, for stealing out of a French hose: Come  
in, tailor; here you may roast your goose.  
[*Knocking.*] Knock, knock: Never at quiet!  
What are you?—But this place is too cold for  
hell. I'll devil-porter it no further: I had  
thought to have let in some of all professions,  
that go the primrose way to the everlasting  
bonfire. [*Knocking.*] Anon, anon; I pray  
you, remember the porter. [*Opens the gate.*]

*Enter MACDUFF and LENOX.*

*Macd.* Was it so late, friend, ere you went  
That you do lie so late? [to bed,

*Port.* 'Faith, sir, we were carousing till  
the second cock; and drink, sir, is a great  
provoker of three things.

*Macd.* What three things does drink especially  
provoke?

*Port.* Marry, sir, nose-painting, sleep, and  
urine. Lechery, sir, it provokes, and unpro-  
vokes: it provokes the desire, but it takes  
away the performance: Therefore, much  
drunken may be said to be an equivocator with  
lechery: it makes him, and it mars him; it  
sets him on, and it takes him off; it persuades  
him, and disheartens him; makes him stand

to, and not stand to: in conclusion, equiv-  
cates him in a sleep, and, giving him the lie,  
leaves him. [night

*Macd.* I believe, drink gave thee the lie last  
*Port.* That it did, sir, i'th' very throat  
o'me: But I requited him for his lie; and, I  
think, being too strong for him, though he  
took up my legs sometime, yet I made a shift  
to cast him.

*Macd.* Is thy master stirring?—  
Our knocking has awaked him; here he comes.

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Len.* Good-morrow, noble sir!

*Macb.* Good-morrow, both!

*Macd.* Is the king stirring, worthy thane?

*Macb.* Not yet.

*Macd.* He did command me to call timely  
I have almost slipp'd the hour. [on him;

*Macb.* I'll bring you to him.

*Macd.* I know, this is a joyful trouble to  
But yet, 'tis one. [you;

*Macb.* The labour we delight in, physics  
This is the door. [pain.

*Macd.* I'll make so bold to call,  
For 'tis my limited service. [Exit MACDUFF.

*Len.* Goes the king

From hence to-day?

*Macb.* He does:—he did appoint it so.

*Len.* The night has been unruly: Where  
we lay, [say,

Our chimneys were blown down: and, as they  
Lamentings heard i'th' air; strange screams  
of death;

And prophesying, with accents terrible,  
Of dire combustion, and confused events,

New hatch'd to the woeful time. The ob-  
scure bird

Clamour'd the livelong night: some say, th  
earth

Was feverous, and did shake.

*Macb.* 'Twas a rough night.

*Len.* My young remembrance cannot pa-  
A fellow to it. [rallel

*Re-enter MACDUFF.*

*Macd.* O horror! horror! horror! Tongue,  
Cannot conceive, nor name thee! [nor hear,

*Macb. Len.* What's the matter?

*Macd.* Confusion now hath made his mas-  
ter-piece!

Most sacrilegious murder hath broke ope  
The Lord's anointed temple, and stole thence

The life o'th' building.

*Macb.* What is't you say? the life?

*Len.* Mean you his majesty? [your sight

*Macd.* Approach the chamber, and destroy

With a new Gorgon:—Do not bid me speak;  
See, and then speak yourselves.—Awake,

awake!—

[*Exeunt MACBETH and LENOX*

Ring the alarm-bell:—Murder! and treason!  
Banquo, and Donalbain! Malcolm! awake!

Shake off this downy sleep, death's counterfeit  
And look on death itself!—up, up, and see

\* To incarnadine is to stain of a flesh colour, † Frequent. ‡ Handkerchiefs.

§ Cockerowing. || i. e., Affords a cordial to it. ¶ Appointed service.

\*\* The use of two negatives, not to make an affirmative, but to deny more strongly,  
is common in our author.

The great doom's image? — Malcolm! Banquo!  
 As from your graves rise up, and walk like  
 To countenance this horror! *[Bell rings.]*

*Enter Lady MACBETH.*

*Lady M.* What's the business,  
 That such a hideous trumpet calls to parley  
 The sleepers of the house? speak, speak, —

*Macd.* O, gentle lady,  
 'Tis not for you to hear what I can speak:  
 The repetition, in a woman's ear, *[Banquo!]*  
 Would murder as it fell. — O Banquo!

*Enter BANQUO.*

Our royal master's murder'd!  
*Lady M.* Woe, alas!  
 What, in our house?

*Ban.* Too cruel, any where. —  
 Dear Duff, I pry'thee, contradict thyself,  
 And say, it is not so.

*Re-enter MACBETH and LENOX.*

*Macb.* Had I but died an hour before this  
 chance, *[instant,*  
 I had lived a blessed time; for, from this  
 There's nothing serious in mortality:  
 All is but toys: renown, and grace, is dead;  
 The wine of life is drawn, and the mere lees  
 Is left this vault to brag of.

*Enter MALCOLM and DONALBAIN.*

*Don.* What is amiss?

*Macb.* You are, and do not know it:  
 The spring, the head, the fountain of your  
 blood

Is stopp'd; the very source of it is stopp'd.

*Macd.* Your royal father's murder'd.

*Mal.* O, by whom?

*Len.* Those of his chamber, as it seem'd,  
 had don't: *[blood,*  
 Their hands and faces were all badged with  
 So were their daggers, which, unwiped, we  
 Upon their pillows: *[found*  
 They stared, and were distracted; no man's  
 Was to be trusted with them. *[life*

*Macb.* O, yet I do repent me of my fury,  
 That I did kill them.

*Macd.* Wherefore did you so?

*Macb.* Who can be wise, amazed, tem-  
 perate, and furious,

Loyal and neutral, in a moment? No man:

The expedition of my violent love  
 Out-ran the pauser reason. — Here lay Duncan,  
 His silver skin lac'd with his golden blood;  
 And his gash'd stabs look'd like a breach in  
 nature, *[derers,*

For ruin's wasteful entrance: there, the mur-  
 Steep'd in the colours of their trade, their  
 daggers

Unmannerly breech'd with gore: Who could  
 That had a heart to love, and in that heart  
 Courage to make his love known?

*Lady M.* Help me hence, ho!

*Macd.* Look to the lady.

*Mal.* Why do we hold our tongues,  
 That most may claim this argument for ours?

*Don.* What should be spoken here,  
 Where our fate, hid within an augre-hole,  
 May rush and seize us? Let's away; our tears

Are not yet brew'd.

*Mal.* Nor our strong sorrow or  
 The foot of motion.

*Ban.* Look to the lady: —  
*[Lady MACBETH is carried out.]*

And when we have our naked frailties hid,  
 That suffer in exposure, let us meet,  
 And question this most bloody piece of work,  
 To know it further. Fears and scruples shake  
 us. *[thence.]*

In the great hand of God I stand, and  
 Against the unavenged pretence I fight  
 Of treasonous malice.

*Macb.* And so do I. *[Sc a.]*

*Macb.* Let's briefly put on manly reason,  
 And meet it the hall together.

*All.* We'll contented.  
*[Exeunt all but MAL. and DON.]*

*Mal.* What will you do? Let's not consort  
 with them:

To show an unfelt sorrow, 's an office *[land.*  
 Which the false man does easy: I'll to Eng-

*Don.* To Ireland, I; our separated fortune  
 Shall keep us both the safer: where we are,  
 There's daggers in men's smiles: the near in  
 The nearer bloody. *[blood,*

*Mal.* This murderous shaft that's shot,  
 Hath not yet lighted; and our safest way  
 Is, to avoid the aim. Therefore, to horse;  
 And let us not be dainty of leave-taking,  
 But shift away: There's warrant in that theft  
 Which steals itself, when there's no mercy left.

*[Exeunt.]*

#### SCENE IV. Without the Castle.

*Enter ROSSE and an old Man.*

*Old M.* Threescore and ten I can remember  
 well:

Within the volume of which time, I have seen  
 Hours dreadful, and things strange; but this  
 Hath trifled former knowings. *[sore night*

*Rosse.* Ah, good father,  
 Thou see'st, the heavens, as troubled with  
 man's act, *[day,*

Threaten his bloody stage: by the clock, 'tis  
 And yet dark night strangles the travelling  
 lamp:

Is it night's predominance, or the day's shame,  
 That darkness does the face of earth entomb,  
 When living light should kiss it?

*Old M.* 'Tis unnatural,  
 Even like the deed that's done. On Tuesday  
 A falcon, tow'ring in her pride of place, *[last,*  
 Was by a mousing owl hawk'd at, and kill'd.

*Rosse.* And Duncan's horses, (a thing most  
 strange and certain,)

Beauteous and swift, the minions of their race,  
 Turn'd wild in nature, broke their stalls, flang  
 out, *[make*

Contending 'gainst obedience, as they would  
 War with mankind.

*Old M.* 'Tis said, they ate each other.  
*Rosse.* They did so to the amazement of  
 mine eyes, *[Macduff:—*

That look'd upon't. Here comes the good

• Covered with blood to their hilt.

† Power.

‡ Intention.

*Enter MACDUFF.*

How goes the world, sir, now?

*Macd.* Why, see you not?*Rosse.* Is't known who did this more than bloody deed?*Macd.* Those that Macbeth hath slain.*Rosse.* Alas, the day!

What good could they pretend\*?

*Macd.* They were suborn'd:Malcolm, and Donalbain, the king's two sons,  
Are stolen away and fled; which puts upon

Suspicion of the deed. [them]

*Rosse.* 'Gainst nature still:

Thrifless ambition, that will ravin up

Thine own life's means!—Then 'tis most like,

The sovereignty will fall upon Macbeth.

*Macd.* He is already named; and gone to  
To be invested. [Scone,*Rosse.* Where is Duncan's body?*Macd.* Carried to Colmeskill;

The sacred storehouse of his predecessors,

And guardian of their bones.

*Rosse.* Will you to Scone?*Macd.* No, cousin, I'll to Fife.*Rosse.* Well, I will thither.*Macd.* Well, may you see things well done  
there;—adieu!—

Lest our old robes sit easier than our new!

*Rosse.* Father, farewell. [with those]*Old M.* God's benison go with you; and

That would make good of bad, and friends of

foes!

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

SCENE I. Fores. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter BANQUO.**Ban.* Thou hast it now, King, Cawdor,  
Glamis, all,As the weird women promised; and, I fear,  
Thou play'st most foully for't: yet it wasIt should not stand in thy posterity; [said,  
But that myself should be the root, and fatherOf many kings. If there come truth from them,  
(As upon thee, Macbeth, their speeches shine,)Why, by the verities on thee made good,  
May they not be my oracles as well, [more.

And set me up in hope? But, hush; no

*Senet sounded.* *Enter MACBETH, as King;**Lady MACBETH, as Queen; LENOX, ROSSE,**Lords, Ladies, and Attendants.**Macb.* Here's our chief guest.*Lady M.* If he had been forgotten,

It had been as a gap in our great feast,

And all things unbecoming.

*Macb.* To-night we hold a solemn supper,

And I'll request your presence. [sir,

*Ban.* Let your highness

Command upon me, to the which, my duties

Are with a most indissoluble tie

For ever knit.

*Macb.* Ride you this afternoon?*Ban.* Ay, my good lord.*Macb.* We should have else desired your

good advice [sperous,

(Which still hath been both grave and pro-

In this day's council; but we'll take to-morrow.

Is't far you ride?

*Ban.* As far, my lord, as will fill up the

time [better,

'Twixt this and supper: go not my horse the

I must become a borrower of the night,

For a dark hour, or twain.

*Macb.* Fail not our feast.*Ban.* My lord, I will not [stow'd]*Macb.* We hear, our bloody consins are be-

In England, and in Ireland; not confessing

Their cruel parricide, filling their hearers

With strange invention: But of that to-

morrow;

When therewithal, we shall have cause of state,

Craving us jointly. Hie you to horse: Adieu,  
Till you return at night. Goes Fleance with

you? [upon us.]

*Ban.* Ay, my good lord: our time does call*Macb.* I wish your horses swift, and sure

of foot;

And so I do commend† you to their backs.

Farewell.— [Exit BANQUO.]

Let every man be master of his time

Till seven at night; to make society

The sweeter welcome, we will keep ourself

Till supper-time alone; while then, God be

with you.

[*Exeunt Lady MACBETH, Lords, Ladies, &c.**Sirrah,* a word: Attend those men our plea-

sure?

*Atten.* They are, my Lord, without the

palace gate.

*Macb.* Bring them before us.—[*Exit Atten.*

To be thus, is nothing;

But to be safely thus:—Our fears in Banquo

stick deep; and in his royalty‡ of nature

Reigns that which would be fear'd: 'Tis much

he dares;

And, to that dauntless temper of his mind,

He hath a wisdom that doth guide his valour

To act in safety. There is none, but he,

Whose being I do fear; and, under him,

My genius is rebuked; as, it is said,

Mark Antony's was by Cæsar. He chid the

sisters, [me,

When first they put the name of King upon

And bade them speak to him; then, prophet-like

They hail'd him father to a line of kings;

Upon my head they placed a fruitless crown

And put a barren sceptre in my gripe,

Thence to be wrench'd with an unliqual hand

No son of mine succeeding. If it be so,

For Banquo's issue have I filed§ my mind;

For them the gracious Duncan have I mur-

der'd;

Put rancours in the vessel of my peace

Only for them; and mine eternal jewel

Given to the common enemy of man,

To make them kings, the seed of Banquo kings¶

Rather than so, come, Fate, into the list,

\* Intend to themselves.

† Commit.

‡ Nobleness.

§ For defiled.



And champion me to the utterance \*!—  
Who's there?—

*Re-enter Attendant, with two Murderers.*  
Now to the door, and stay there till we call.

[*Exit Attendant.*]

Was it not yesterday we spoke together?

1 *Mur.* It was, so please your highness,  
*Macb.* Well then, now

Have you considered of my speeches? Know,  
That it was he, in the times past, which held you  
Sunder fortune; which, you thought, had been  
Our innocent self: this I made good to you  
In our last conference; pass'd in probation  
with you, [the instruments;  
How you were borne in hand; how cross'd;  
Who wrought with them; and all things else,  
To half a soul, and a notion crazed, [that might  
Say, Thus did Banquo.

1 *Mur.* You made it known to us.

*Macb.* I did so; and went further, which is  
now

Our point of second meeting. Do you find  
Your patience so predominant in your nature,  
That you can let this go? Are you so gospell'd,  
To pray for that good man, and for his issue,  
Whose heavy hand hath bow'd you to the grave,  
And beggar'd yours for ever?

1 *Mur.* We are men, my liege,

*Macb.* Ay, in the catalogue ye go for men;  
As hounds, and greyhounds, mongrels, spaniels,  
curs, [cleped]

Shoughs, water-rugs, and demi-wolves, are  
All by the name of dogs: the valued file  
Distinguishes the swift, the slow, the subtle,  
The horse-keeper, the hunter, every one  
According to the gift which bounteous nature  
Hath in him closed; whereby he does receive  
Particular addition \*\*, from the bill

That writes them all alike: and so of men,  
Now, if you have a station in the file,  
And not in the worst rank of manhood, say it:  
And I will put that business in your bosoms,  
Whose execution takes your enemy off;  
Grapples you to the heart and love of us,  
Who wear our health but sickly in his life,  
Which in his death were perfect.

2 *Mur.* I am one, my liege,  
Whom the vile blows and buffets of the world  
Have so incensed, that I am reckless †† what  
I do, to spite the world.

1 *Mur.* And I another,  
So weary with disasters, tugg'd ‡‡ with fortune,  
That I would set my life on any chance,  
To mend it, or be rid on't.

*Macb.* Both of you  
Know, Banquo was your enemy.

2 *Mur.* True, my lord.

*Macb.* So is he mine: and in such bloody  
distance §§,

That every minute of his being thrusts  
Against my near'st of life: And though I could  
With bare-faced power sweep him from my  
sight,

And bid my will avouch it; yet I must not,

For ||| certain friends that are both his and mine  
Whose loves I may not drop, but wail his fall  
Whom I myself struck down: and thence it is  
That I to your assistance do make love;  
Masking the business from the common eye.  
For sundry weighty reasons.

2 *Mur.* We shall, my lord,  
Perform what you command us.

1 *Mur.* Though our lives—  
*Macb.* Your spirits shine through you.

Within this hour at most,  
I will advise you where to plant yourselves.  
Acquaint you with the perfect spy o'the time,  
The moment on't: for't must be done to-night,  
And something from the palace; always  
thought,

That I require a clearness: And with him,  
(To leave no rubs, nor botches, in the work,)  
Fleance his son, that keeps him company,  
Whose absence is no less material to me  
Than is his father's, must embrace the fate  
Of that dark hour. Resolve yourselves apart;  
I'll come to you anon.

2 *Mur.* We are resolved, my lord.

*Macb.* I'll call upon you straight; abide  
within.

It is concluded:—Banquo, thy soul's flight,  
If it find heaven, must find it out to-night.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The same. Another Room.*

*Enter Lady MACBETH, and a Servant.*

*Lady M.* Is Banquo gone from court?

*Serv.* Ay, madam, but returns again to-night.

*Lady M.* Say to the king, I would attend  
For a few words. [his leisure

*Serv.* Madam, I will. [*Exit.*]

*Lady M.* Nought's had, all's spent,  
Where our desire is got without content:

'Tis safer to be that which we destroy,  
Than, by destruction, dwell in doubtful joy.

*Enter MACBETH.*

How now, my lord? why do you keep alone,  
Of sorriest ¶¶ fancies your companions making?  
Using those thoughts, which should indeed  
have died [remedy,

With them they think on? Things without  
Should be without regard: what's done, is  
done. [kill'd it;

*Macb.* We have scotch'd the snake, not  
She'll close, and be herself; whilst our poor  
ma-Remains in danger of her former tooth. [lice  
But let [suffer,

The frame of things disjoint, both the worlds  
Ere we will eat our meal in fear, and sleep  
In the affliction of these terrible dreams

That shake us nightly: Better be with the dead,  
Whom we, to gain our place, have sent to peace,  
Than on the torture of the mind to lie

In restless ecstasy\*\*\*. Duncan is in his grave;  
After life's fitful fever, he sleeps well; [son,  
Treason has done his worst: nor steel, nor poi-  
Malice domestic, foreign levy, nothing,  
Can touch him further!

\* Challenge me to extremities. † Proved. ‡ Deluded. § Are you so obedient to the  
precept of the Gospel. || Wolf-dogs. ¶ Called. \*\* Title, description. \*\*\* Agony.  
† Worried. §§ Mortal enmity. ||| Because of. ¶¶ Most melancholy.

*Lady M.* Come on;  
Gentle my lord, sleek o'er your rugged looks;  
Be bright and jovial 'mong your guests to-night.

*Macb.* So shall I, love; and so, I pray, be  
Let your remembrance apply to Banquo: [you:  
Present him eminence\*, both with eye and  
Unsafe the while, that we [tongue:  
Must have our honours in these flattering  
streams;

And make our faces vizards to our hearts,  
Disguising what they are.

*Lady M.* You must leave this.

*Macb.* O, full of scorpions is my mind, dear  
wife! [lives.

Thou know'st, that Banquo, and his Fleance,  
*Lady M.* But in them nature's copy's not  
eternel. [able;

*Macb.* There's comfort yet; they are assail-  
Then be thou jocund: Ere the bat hath flown  
His cloister'd flight; ere, to black Hecate's  
saunmons,

The shard-bone beetle† with his drowsy hums,  
Hath rung night's yawning peal, there shall be  
A deed of dreadful note. [done

*Lady M.* What's to be done?

*Macb.* Be innocent of the knowledge, dear-  
est chuck §, [night,

Till thou applaud the deed. Come, seeling||  
Skarf up the tender eye of pitiful day;

And, with thy bloody and invisible hand,  
Cancel, and tear to pieces, that great bond  
Which keeps me pale!—Light thickens; and  
Makes wing to the rooky wood: [the crow

Good things of day begin to droop and drowse;  
Whiles night's black agents to their prey do  
rouse. [still;

Thou marvell'st at my words; but hold thee  
Things, bad begun, make strong themselves by  
ill:

So, prythee, go with me. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. *The same. A Park or Lawn,  
with a Gate leading to the Palace.*

*Enter Three Murderers.*

*1 Mur.* But who did bid thee join with us?

*3 Mur.* Macbeth.

*2 Mur.* He needs not our mistrust; since he  
Our offices, and what we have to do, [delivers  
To the direction just.

*1 Mur.* Then stand with us.

The west yet glimmers with some streaks of  
Now spurs the lated traveller apace, [day:  
To gain the timely inn; and near approaches  
The subject of our watch.

*3 Mur.* Hark! I hear horses.

*Ban.* [Within.] Give us a light there, ho!

*2 Mur.* Then it is he; the rest  
That are within the note of expectation ¶,  
Already are i' the court.

*1 Mur.* His horses go about.

*3 Mur.* Almost a mile; but he does usually,  
So all men do, from hence to the palace gate  
Make it their walk.

*Enter BANQUO and FLEANCE, a Servant  
with a torch preceding them.*

*2 Mur.* A light, a light!

*3 Mur.* 'Tis he.

*1 Mur.* Stand to't.

*Ban.* It will be rain to-night.

*1 Mur.* Let it come down.  
[Assaults BANQUO.

*Ban.* O, treachery! Fly, good Fleance, fly,  
Thou may'st revenge. O slave! [fly, fly;

[Dies. FLEANCE and Servant escape.

*3 Mur.* Who did strike out the light?

*1 Mur.* Was't not the way?

*3 Mur.* There's but one down: the son is  
fled.

*2 Mur.* We have lost best half of our affair.

*1 Mur.* Well, let's away, and say how much  
is done. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV. *A Room of State in the Palace.  
A Banquet prepared.*

*Enter MACBETH, Lady MACBETH, ROSSE,  
LENOX, Lords, and Attendants.*

*Macb.* You know your own degrees, sit  
down: at first

And last, the hearty welcome.

*Lords.* Thanks to your majesty.

*Macb.* Ourselves will mingle with society,  
And play the humble host.

Our hostess keeps her state \*\*: but, in best time,  
We will require her welcome. [friends;

*Lady M.* Pronounce it for me, sir, to all our  
For my heart speaks they are welcome.

*Enter first Murderer, to the door.*

*Macb.* See, they encounter thee with their  
hearts' thanks:—

Both sides are even: Here I'll sit i' the midst:  
Be large in mirth; anon we'll drink a measure  
The table round.—I here's blood upon thy face.

*Mur.* 'Tis Banquo's then. [within.

*Macb.* 'Tis better thee without, than he  
Is he despatch'd? [for him.

*Mur.* My lord, his throat is cut; that I did

*Macb.* Thou art the best o' the cut-throats:

Yet he's good,  
That did the like for Fleance: if thou didst it,  
Thou art the nonpareil.

*Mur.* Most royal sir,  
Fleance is 'scaped. [been perfect;

*Macb.* Then comes my fit again: I had else  
Whole as the marble, founded as the rock;

As broad, and general, as the casing air: [in  
But now, I am cabin'd, cribb'd, confin'd, bound  
To saucy doubts and fears. But Banquo's safe?

*Mur.* Ay, my good lord: safe in a ditch he  
bides,

With twenty trenched gashes on his head;  
The least a death to nature.

*Macb.* Thanks for that:—  
There the grown serpent lies; the worm, that's  
Hath nature that in time will venom breed [fled,  
No teeth for the present.—Get thee gone; to-  
morrow

\* Do him the highest honours.  
† i. e., The copy, the lease, by which they hold their  
lives from nature, has its time of termination  
or scaly wings. ‡ A term of endearment.  
§ set down in the list of guests, and expected to supper.

¶ i. e., They who are  
Blinding. \*\* Continues in her chair of state

We'll hear ourselves again. [*Exit Murderer.*]

*Lady M.* My royal lord,  
You do not give the cheer: the feast is sold,  
That is not often vouch'd, while 'tis a making,  
'Tis given with welcome: To feed were best  
at home;

From thence, the sauce to meat is ceremony;  
Meeting were bare without it.

*Mach.* Sweet remembrancer!—  
Now, good digestion wait on appetite,  
And health on both!

*Len.* May it please your highness sit?  
[*The Ghost of BANQUO rises, and  
sits in MACBETH'S place.*]

*Mach.* Here had we now our country's ho-  
nour roof'd,

Were the graced person of our Banquo present;  
Who may I rather challenge for unkindness,  
Than pity for mischance!

*Rosse.* His absence, sir,  
Lays blame upon his promise. Please it your  
To grace us with your royal company? [highness  
*Mach.* The table's full.

*Len.* Here's a place reserved, sir.

*Mach.* Where? [moves your highness?]

*Len.* Here, my lord. What is't that  
*Mach.* Which of you have done this?

*Lords.* What, my good lord!

*Mach.* Thou canst not say I did it: never  
shake thy gory locks at me. [well.]

*Rosse.* Gentlemen, rise; his highness is not

*Lady M.* Sit, worthy friends:—my lord is  
often thus, [seat;

And hath been from his youth: 'pray you, keep  
The fit is momentary; upon a thought \*

He will again be well: If much you note him,  
You shall offend him, and extend his passion †;  
Feed, and regard him not.—Are you a man?

*Mach.* Ay, and a bold one, that dare look on  
Which might appal the devil. [that

*Lady M.* O proper stuff!

This is the very painting of your fear:

This is the air-drawn dagger, which, you said,  
Led you to Duncan. O, these flaws ‡, and starts

(Impostors to true fear) would well become  
A woman's story, at a winter's fire,

Authorized by her grandam. Shame itself!  
Why do you make such faces? When all's

You look but on a stool. [done,

*Mach.* Prithee, see there! behold! look!

lo! how say you?— [too.—

Why, what care I? If thou canst nod, speak  
If churl-houses, and our graves, must send

Those that we bury, back, our monuments  
Shall be the maws of kites.

[*Ghost disappears.*]

*Lady M.* What! quite unmann'd in folly?

*Mach.* If I stand here, I saw him.

*Lady M.* Fie, for shame!

*Mach.* Blood hath been shed ere now, i'th  
olden time,

Ere human statute purged the gentle weal;

Ay, and since too, murders have been per-  
form'd

Too terrible for the ear: the times have been,

That, when the brains were out the man would  
And there an end: but now, they rise again. [die,  
With twenty mortal murders on their crowns,  
And push us from our stools: This is more  
Than such a murder is. [strange

*Lady M.* My worthy lord,  
Your noble friends do lack you.

*Mach.* I do forget:—  
Do not muse † at me, my most worthy friends;

I have a strange infirmity, which is nothing  
To those that know me. Come, love and health

to all; [full:]  
Then I'll sit down:—Give me some wine, fill

I drink to the general joy of the whole table,  
[*Ghost rises.*]

And to our dear friend Banquo, whom we miss:  
Would he were here! to all, and him, we thirst,

And all to all ‡.

*Lords.* Our duties, and the pledge.  
*Mach.* Avaunt! and quit my sight! Let the

earth hide thee!  
Thy bones are marrowless, thy blood is cold;

Thou hast no speculation in those eyes  
Which thou dost glare with!

*Lady M.* Think of this, good peers  
But as a thing of custom: 'tis no other;

Only it spoils the pleasure of the time.

*Mach.* What man dare, I dare:  
Approach thou like the rugged Russian bear,

The arm'd rhinoceros, or the Hyrcan tiger,  
Take any shape but that, and my firm nerves

Shall never tremble: Or, be alive again,  
And dare me to the desert with thy sword:

If trembling I inhibit † thee, protest me  
The baby of a girl. Hence, horrible shadow!

[*Ghost disappears.*]  
Unreal mockery, hence!—Why, so;—being  
I am a man again.—Pray you, sit still. [gone

*Lady M.* You have displaced the mirth, broke  
the good meeting,

With most admired disorder.

*Mach.* Can such things be,  
And overcome \*\* us like a summer's cloud,

Without our special wonder? You make me  
Even to the disposition that I owe †, [strange

When now I think you can behold such sights,  
And keep the natural ruby of your cheeks,

When mine are blanch'd with fear.

*Rosse.* What sights, my lord?

*Lady M.* I pray you, speak not; he grows  
worse and worse;

Question enrages him: at once good night:—  
Stand not upon the order of your going,

But go at once.

*Len.* Good night, and better health  
Attend his majesty!

*Lady M.* A kind good night to all!  
[*Exeunt Lords and Attendants.*]

*Mach.* It will have blood; they say, blood  
will have blood; [to speak,

Stones have been known to move, and trees  
Augurs, and understood relations, have

By magot-pies ‡, and choughs, and rooks  
brought forth [night]

The secret'st man of blood.—What is this?

\* As quick as thought.

† Prolong his suffering.

‡ Sudden gusts.

§ Wonder.

|| All good wishes to all.

¶ Forbid.

\*\* Pass over

†† Possess.

‡‡ Magpies.



*Lady M.* Almost at odds with morning, which is which. [his person]

*Macb.* How say'st thou, that Macduff denies At our great bidding?

*Lady M.* Did you send to him, sir? [send:]

*Macb.* I hear it by the way; but I will There's not a one\* of them, but in his house I keep a servant feed'd. I will to-morrow, (Betimes I will,) unto the weird sisters: More shall they speak; for now I am bent to know, [good]

By the worst means, the worst; for mine own All causes shall give way: I am in blood Stept in so far, that, should I wade no more, Returning were as tedious as go o'er:

Strange things I have in head, that will to hand; [scann'd.]

Which must be acted, ere they may be

*Lady M.* You lack the season of all natures, sleep. [self-abuse]

*Macb.* Come, we'll to sleep: My strange and Is the initiate fear, that wants hard use:—

We are yet but young in deed. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE V. The Heath.

*Thunder. Enter HECATE, meeting the Three Witches.*

*1 Witch.* Why, how now, Hecate, you look angrily? [are, as you]

*Hec.* Have I not reason, beldams, as you Saucy, and overbold? How did you dare

To trade and traffic with Macbeth,

In riddles, and affairs of death;

And I, the mistress of your charms,

The close contriver of all harms,

Was never call'd to bear my part,

Or show the glory of our art?

And, which is worse, all you have done

Hath been but for a wayward son,

Spiteful, and wrathful; who, as others do,

Loves for his own ends; not for you.

But make amends now: Get you gone,

And at the pit of Acheron,

Meet me i'the morning; thither he

Will come to know his destiny.

Your vessels, and your spells, provide,

Your charms, and every thing beside:

I am for the air; this night I'll spend

Unto a dismal-fatal end.

Great business must be wrought ere noon:

Upon the corner of the moon

There hangs a vaporous drop profound;†

I'll catch it ere it come to ground:

And that, distill'd by magic slights,

Shall raise such artificial sprights,

As, by the strength of their illusion,

Shall draw him on to his confusion:

He shall spurn fate, scorn death, and bear

His hopes 'bove wisdom, grace, and fear;

And you all know, security

Is mortal's chiefest enemy.

Song. [Within.] Come away, come away,

Hark, I am call'd; my little spirit, see, [sc.]

Sits in a foggy cloud, and stays for me. [Exit.]

*1 Witch.* Come, let's make haste; she'll soon be back again. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE VI.

Fores. A Room in the Palace

*Enter LENOX and another Lord.*

*Len.* My former speeches have but hit your thoughts,

Which can interpret further: only, I say,

Things have been strangely borne: The gracious Duncan [deaf:]—

Was pitied of Macbeth;—marry, he was And the right-valiant Banquo walk'd too late;

Whom, you may say, if it please you, Fleance kill'd, [late]

For Fleance fled. Men must not walk too

Who cannot want the thought, how inonstrous

It was for Malcolm, and for Donalbain,

To kill their gracious father? damned fact!

How it did grieve Macbeth! did he not straight,

In pious rage, the two delinquents tear [sleep?]

That were the slaves of drink, and thralls of

Was not that nobly done? Ay, and wisely

For 'twould have anger'd any heart alive, [too;]

To hear the men deny it. So that, I say,

He has borne all things well, and I do think,

That, had he Duncan's sons under his key,

(As, an't please heaven, he shall not,) they should find

What 'twere to kill a father; so should Fleance

But, peace!—for, from broad words, and 'cause he fail'd

His presence at the tyrant's feast, I hear,

Macduff lives in disgrace: Sir, can you tell

Where he bestows himself?

*Lord.*

The son of Duncan,

From whom this tyrant holds the due of birth,

Lives in the English court; and is received

Of the most pious Edward with such grace,

That the malevolence of fortune nothing [duff]

Takes from his high respect: Thither Mac

Is gone to pray the holy king, on his aid

To wake Northumberland, and warlike Siward:

That, by the help of these, (with Him above

To ratify the work,) we may again

Give to our tables meat, sleep to our nights;

Free from our feasts and banquets bloody knives;

Do faithful homage, and receive free honours;†

All which we pine for now: And this report

Hath so exasperat'd the king, that he

Prepares for some attempt of war.

*Len.*

Sent he to Macduff?

*Lord.* He did: and with an absolute, Sir,

The cloudy messenger turns me his back, [not I]

And hums; as who should say, You'll rue the

That clogs me with this answer. [time]

*Len.*

And that well might

Advise him to a caution, to hold what distance

His wisdom can provide. Some holy angel

Fly to the court of England, and unfold [ing]

His message ere he come; that a swift bless

May soon return to this our suffering country

Under a hand accurs'd!

*Lord.*

My prayers with him! [Exeunt]

\* An individual. † Examined nicely.

† Honours freely bestowed.

† i.e., A drop that has deep or hidden qualities For exasperated.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *A dark Cave. In the middle a Caldron boiling.*

*Thunder. Enter the Three Witches.*

1 *Witch.* Thrice the bridled cat hath mew'd.

2 *Witch.* Thrice and once the hedge-pig whined.

3 *Witch.* Harper cries!—"Tis time, 'tis time.

1 *Witch.* Round about the caldron go;

In the poison'd entrails throw.—

Toad, that under coldest stone,

Days and nights hast thirty-one

Swelter'd \* venom, sleeping got,

Boil thou first i'the charmed pot!

*All.* Double, double toil and trouble;

Fire, burn; and, caldron, bubble.

2 *Witch.* Fillet of a fenny snake,

In the caldron boil and bake:

Eye of newt, and toe of frog,

Wool of bat, and tongue of dog,

Adder's fork, and blind-worm's sting,

Lizard's leg, and owl's wing,

For a charm of powerful trouble,

Like a hell-broth boil and bubble.

*All.* Double, double, toil and trouble;

Fire, burn; and, caldron, bubble.

3 *Witch.* Scale of dragon, tooth of wolf;

Witch's mummy; maw and gulf†

Of the ravin'd‡ salt-sea shark;

Root of hemlock, digg'd i'the dark;

Liver of blaspheming Jew;

Gall of goat; and slips of yew,

Sliver'd in the moon's eclipse;

Nose of Turk, and Tartar's lips;

Finger of birth-strangled babe,

Ditch-deliver'd by a drab,

Make the gruel thick and slab:

Add thereto a tiger's chauldron§,

For the ingredients of our caldron.

*All.* Double, double toil and trouble;

Fire, burn; and, caldron, bubble.

2 *Witch.* Cool it with a baboon's blood,

Then the charm is firm and good.

*Enter HECATE, and the other Three Witches.*

*Hec.* O, well done! I commend your pains;

And every one shall share i'the gains.

And now about the caldron sing,

Like elves and fairies in a ring,

Euchanting all that you put in.

## SONG.

*Black spirits and white,*

*Red spirits and grey;*

*Mingle, mingle, mingle,*

*You that mingle may.*

2 *Witch.* By the pricking of my thumbs,

Something wicked this way comes:—

Open, locks, whoever knocks.

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* How now, you secret, black, and midnight hags?

What is't you do?

*All.* A deed without a name.

*Macb.* I conjure you, by that which you profess,

(Howe'er you come to know it,) answer me:

Though you untie the winds, and let them fight

Against the churches; though the yesty || waves

Confound and swallow navigation up;

Though bladed corn be lodged¶, and trees

blown down;

Though castles topple\*\* on their warders' heads;

Though palaces, and pyramids, do slope

Their heads to their foundations; though the

treasure

Of nature's germin†† tumble all together,

Even till destruction sicken, answer me

To what I ask you.

1 *Witch.* Speak.

2 *Witch.* Demand.

3 *Witch.* We'll answer

1 *Witch.* Say, if thou'dst rather hear it from our mouths,

Or from our masters'?

*Macb.* Call them, let me see them.

1 *Witch.* Pour in sow's blood, that hath

eaten

Her nine farrow; grease, that's sweaten

From the murderer's gibbet, throw

Into the flame.

*All.* Come, high, or low;

Thyself, and office, dextly ‡ show.

*Thunder. An Apparition of an Armed Head rises.*

*Macb.* Tell me, thou unknown power,—

1 *Witch.* He knows thy thought;

Hear his speech, but say thou nought.

*App.* Macbeth! Macbeth! Macbeth! beware Macduff;

Beware the thane of Fife.—Dismiss me:—

Enough. [*Descends.*]

*Macb.* Whate'er thou art, for thy good caution, thanks;

Thou hast harp'd§§ my fear aright:—But one word more:—

1 *Witch.* He will not be commanded: Here's another,

More potent than the first.

*Thunder. An Apparition of a bloody Child rises.*

*App.* Macbeth! Macbeth! Macbeth!—

*Macb.* Had I three ears, I'd hear thee.

*App.* Be bloody, bold,

And resolute: laugh to scorn the power of man

For none of woman born shall harm Macbeth.

[*Descends.*]

\* This word is employed to signify that the animal was hot and sweating with venom, although sleeping under a cold stone. † The throat. ‡ Ravenous. § Entrails. || Frothy.

¶ Laid flat by wind or rain.

\*\* Tumble.

†† Seeds which have begun to sprout.

‡ Adroitly. §§ Touched on a passion as a harper touches a string.

*Macb.* Then live, Macduff; What need I fear of thee?

But yet I'll make assurance double sure,  
And take a bond of fate: thou shalt not live;  
That I may tell pale-hearted fear it lies,  
And sleep in spite of thunder.—What is this

[*Thunder. An Apparition of a Child crowned, with a Tree in his Hand, rises.*]

That rises like the issue of a king;  
And wears upon his baby brow the round  
And top of sovereignty?\*

*All.* Listen, but speak not

*App.* Belion-mettled, proud; and take no care  
Who chafes, who frets, or where conspirers are;  
Macbeth shall never vanquish'd be, until  
Great Birnam wood to high Dunsinane hill  
Shall come against him. [*Descends.*]

*Macb.* That will never be,  
Who can impress the forest †; bid the tree  
Unfix his earth-bound root? sweet bodements!  
good!

Rebellious head, rise never, till the wood  
Of Birnam rise, and our high-placed Macbeth  
Shall live the lease of nature, pay his breath  
To time, and mortal custom.—Yet my heart  
Throbs to know one thing; Tell me, (if your art  
Can tell so much,) shall Banquo's issue ever  
Reign in this kingdom?

*A. L.* Seek to know no more.

*Macb.* I will be satisfied: deny me this,  
And an eternal curse fall on you! Let me know:  
Why sinks that caldron? and what noise ‡ is  
this? [*Hautboys.*]

1 *Witch.* Show! 2 *Witch.* Show! 3 *Witch.*  
Show!

*All.* Show his eyes, and grieve his heart;  
Come like shadows, so depart.

*Eight Kings appear, and pass over the stage in order; the last with a glass in his hand; BANQUO following.*

*Macb.* Thou art too like the spirit of Banquo;  
down! [thy hair,

Thy crown does sear mine eye-balls:—And  
Thou other gold-bound brow, is like the first:—  
A third is like the former:—Filthy hags!

Why do you show me this?—A fourth?—Start  
eyes! [doom?]

What! will the line stretch out to the crack of  
Another yet?—A seventh?—I'll see no more:  
And yet the eighth appears, who bears a glass,  
Which shows me many more; and some I see,  
That two-fold balls and treble sceptres carry:  
Horrible sight!—Ay, now, I see, 'tis true; [me,  
For the blood-bolter'd Banquo smiles upon  
And points at them for his.—What, is this so?

1 *Witch.* Ay, sir, all this is so:—But why  
Stands Macbeth thus amazedly?  
Come, sisters, cheer we up his sprights ¶,  
And show the best of our delights;  
I'll charm the air, to give a sound,  
While you perform your antique round:  
That this great king may kindly say,

Our duties did his welcome pay.

[*Music. The Witches dance, and vanish.*]

*Macb.* Where are they? Gone?—Let this  
pernicious hour

Stand aye accus'd in the calendar!—  
Come in, without there!

*Enter LENOX.*

*Len.* What's your grace's will?

*Macb.* Saw you the weird sisters?

*Len.* No, my lord

*Macb.* Came they not by you?

*Len.* No, indeed, my lord

*Macb.* Infected be the air whereon they  
ride; [hear

And damn'd all those that trust them!—I did  
The galloping of horse; Who was't came by?

*Len.* 'Tis two or three, my lord, that bring  
Macduff is fled to England. [you word,

*Macb.* Fled to England?

*Len.* Ay, my good lord. [exploits:

*Macb.* Time, thou anticipatest \*\* my dread  
The flighty purpose never is o'ertook,  
Unless the deed go with it: From this mo-  
The very firstlings of my heart shall be [ment,  
The firstlings of my hand. And even now  
To crown my thoughts with acts, be it thought  
and done:

The castle of Macduff I will surprise:  
Seize upon Fife; give to the edge o'the sword  
His wife, his babes, and all unfortunate souls  
That trace †† his line. No boasting like a fool:  
This deed I'll do, before this purpose cool:  
But no more sights;—Where are these gentle-  
Come, bring me where they are. [men?

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.

Fife. A Room in Macduff's Castle.

*Enter Lady MACDUFF, her Son, and Rosse*

*L. Macd.* What had he done, to make him  
fly the land?

*Rosse.* You must have patience, madam.

*L. Macd.* He had none;

His flight was madness: When our actions do  
Our fears do make us traitors ‡.

[not,  
*Rosse.* You know not,  
Whether it was his wisdom, or his fear.

*L. Macd.* Wisdom! to leave his wife, to  
leave his babes,

His mansion, and his titles, in a place  
From whence himself does fly? He loves us  
not; [wren,

He wants the natural touch §§: for the poor  
The most diminutive of birds, will fight |||,

Her young ones in her nest, against the owl.

All is the fear, and nothing is the love:

As little is the wisdom, where the flight

So runs against all reason.

*Rosse.* My dearest coz', [husband.

I pray you, school yourself: But, for your  
He is noble, wise, judicious, and best knows  
The fits o'the season. I dare not speak much  
further:

\* The round is that part of a crown which encircles the head: the top is the ornament which rises above it. † Who can command the forest to serve him like a soldier impressed.

‡ Music. § The dissolution of nature. || Besmeared with blood. ¶ i. e., Spirits.

\*\* Preventest, by taking away the opportunity. † Follow. ‡† Our flight is con- sidered as evidence of our treason. §§ Natural affection. ||| Fight for.



But cruel are the times, when we are traitors,  
And do not know ourselves; when we hold  
rumour [fear;  
From what we fear, yet know not what we  
But float upon a wild and violent sea, [you:  
Each way, and move.—I take my leave of  
Shall not be long but I'll be here again:  
Things at the worst will cease, or else climb  
upward

To what they were before.—My pretty cousin  
Blessing upon you! [fatherless.

*L. Macd.* Father'd he is, and yet he's  
*Rosse.* I am so much a fool, should I stay  
longer, [fort:

It would be my disgrace, and your discom-  
I take my leave at once. [Exit Rosse.

*L. M. cd.* Sirrah\*, your father's dead;  
And what will you do now? How will you  
*Son.* As birds do, mother. [live?]

*L. Macd.* What, with worms and flies?  
*Son.* With what I get, I mean; and so do  
they. [the net, nor lime,

*L. Macd.* Poor bird! thou'dst never fear  
The pit-fall, nor the gin.

*Son.* Why should I, mother? Poor birds  
they are not set for.

My father is not dead, for all your saying.

*L. Macd.* Yes, he is dead; how wilt thou  
do for a father?

*Son.* Nay, how will you do for a husband?

*L. Macd.* Why, I can buy me twenty at  
any market.

*Son.* Then you'll buy 'em to sell again.

*L. Macd.* Thou speak'st with all thy wit;  
With wit enough for thee. [and yet I'faith,

*Son.* Was my father a traitor, mother?

*L. Macd.* Ay, that he was.

*Son.* What is a traitor?

*L. Macd.* Why, one that swears and lies.

*Son.* And be all traitors, that do so?

*L. Macd.* Every one that does so, is a  
traitor, and must be hanged.

*Son.* And must they all be hanged, that  
swear and lie?

*L. Macd.* Every one.

*Son.* Who must hang them?

*L. Macd.* Why, the honest men.

*Son.* Then the liars and swearers are fools:  
for there are liars and swearers enough to  
beat the honest men, and hang up them.

*L. Macd.* Now, God help thee, poor  
But how wilt thou do for a father? [monkey!

*Son.* If he were dead, you'd weep for him:  
if you would not, it were a good sign that I  
should quickly have a new father.

*L. Macd.* Poor prattler! how thou talk'st.

*Enter a Messenger.* [known,  
*Mess.* Bless you, fair dame! I am not to you  
Though in your state of honour I am perfect t.  
I doubt, some danger does approach you nearly:  
If you will take a homely man's advice,  
Be not found here; hence, with your little ones.  
To fright you thus, methinks, I am too savage;  
To do worse to you, were fell cruelty, [serve you!  
Which is too nigh your person. Heaven pre-

I dare abide no longer. [Exit Messenger

*L. Macd.* Whither should I fly?

I have done no harm. But I remember now  
I am in this earthly world; where, to do harm,  
Is often laudable; to do good, sometime,  
Accounted dangerous folly: Why then, alas!  
Do I put up that womanly defence, [faces?  
To say I have done no harm?—What are these

*Enter Murderers.*

*Mur.* Where is your husband? [fied,

*L. Macd.* I hope, in no place so unsancti-  
Where such as thou may'st find him.

*Mur.* He's a traitor

*Son.* Thou liest, thou shag-ear'd villain.

*Mur.* What, you egg! [Stabbing him  
Young fry of treachery!

*Son.* He has killed me, mother;

Run away, I pray you. [Dies.

[Exit Lady MACDUFF, crying murder,  
and pursued by the Murderers.

SCENE III. England. A Room in the  
King's Palace.

*Enter MALCOLM and MACDUFF.*

*Mal.* Let us seek out some desolate shade,  
Weep our sad bosoms empty. [and there

*Macd.* Let us rather  
Hold fast the mortal sword; and, like good  
men, [new morn,

Bestride our downfall'n birthdom: Each  
New widows howl; new orphans cry; new  
sorrows

Strike heaven on the face, that it resounds

As if it felt with Scotland, and yell'd out  
Like syllable of dolour.

*Mal.* What I believe, I'll wail:  
What know, believe; and, what I can redress,  
As I shall find the time to friend §, I will.

What you have spoke, it may be so, per-  
chance. [tongues,

This tyrant, whose sole name blisters our  
Was once thought honest: you have loved  
him well; [but something

He hath not touch'd you yet. I am young;  
You may deserve of him through me; and  
wisdom

To offer up a weak, poor, innocent lamb,  
To appease an angry god.

*Macd.* I am not treacherous.

*Mal.* But Macbeth is.  
A good and virtuous nature may recoil,  
In an imperial charge||. But 'reave your  
pardon; [transpose:

That which you are, my thoughts cannot  
Angels are bright still, though the brightest  
fell: [of grace,

Though all things foul would wear the brows  
Yet grace must still look so.

*Macd.* I have lost my hopes.

*Mal.* Perchance, even there, where I did  
find my doubts,

Why in that rawness left you wife and child,  
(Those precious motives, those strong knots of  
Without leave taking?—I pray you, [love,])

Let not my jealousies be your dishonours,

\* Sirrah was not in our author's time a term of reproach.

I am perfectly acquainted with your rank.

† Birthright.

§ Befriend.

.. e., A good mind may recede from goodness in the execution of a royal commission

But mine own safeties:—You may be rightly  
Whatever I shall think. [just,

*Macd.* Bleed, bleed, poor country!  
Great tyranny, lay thou thy basis sure,  
For goodness dares not check thee! wear thou  
thy wrongs,

Thy title is affeer'd\*!—Fare thee well, lord:  
I would not be the villain that thou think'st  
For the whole space that's in the tyrant's  
And the rich East to boot. [grasp.

*Mal.* Be not offended:  
I speak not as in absolute fear of you.  
I think our country sinks beneath the yoke;  
It weeps, it bleeds; and each new day a gash  
Is added to her wounds: I think, withal,  
There would be hands uplifted in my right;  
And here, from gracious England, have I offer  
Of goodly thousands: But, for all this,  
When I shall tread upon the tyrant's head,  
Or wear it on my sword, yet my poor country  
Shall have more vices than it had before;  
More suffer, and more sundry ways than ever,  
By him that shall succeed.

*Macd.* What should he be?  
*Mal.* It is myself I mean: in whom I know  
All the particulars of vice so grafted,  
That, when they shall be open'd, black Macbeth  
Will seem as pure as snow: and the poor state  
Esteem him as a lamb, being compared  
With my confineless harms.

*Macd.* Not in the legions  
Of horrid hell, can come a devil more damn'd  
In evils, to top Macbeth.

*Mal.* I grant him bloody,  
Luxurious†, avaricious, false, deceitful,  
Sudden‡, malicious, smacking of every sin  
That has a name: But there's no bottom,  
none, [ters,  
In my voluptuousness: your wives, your daugh-  
ters, your matrons, and your maids, could not fill  
The cistern of my lust: and my desire [up  
All continent impediments would o'er-bear,  
That did oppose my will; Better Macbeth,  
Than such a one to reign.

*Macd.* Boundless intemperance  
In nature is a tyranny; it hath been  
The untimely emptying of the happy throne,  
And fall of many kings. But fear not yet  
To take upon you what is yours: you may  
Convey your pleasures in a spacious plenty,  
And yet seem cold, the time you may so hood-  
wink. [not be

We have willing dames enough; there can-  
That vulture in you, to devour so many  
As will to greatness dedicate themselves,  
Finding it so inclined.

*Mal.* With this, there grows,  
In my most ill-composed affection, such  
A staunchless avarice, that, were I king,  
I should cut off the nobles for their lands;  
Desire his jewels, and this other's house:  
And my more having would be as a sauce  
To make me hunger more: that I should forge  
Quarrels unjust against the good, and loyal,  
Destroying them for wealth.

*Macd.* This avarice

Sticks deeper; grows with more pernicious  
root

Than summer-seeding lust: and it hath been  
The sword of our slain kings: Yet do not fear,  
Scotland hath foysons§ to fill up your will,  
Of your mere own: All these are portable||,  
With other graces weigh'd. [graces

*Mal.* But I have none: The king-becoming  
As justice, verity, temperance, stableness,  
Bonity, perseverance, mercy, lowliness,  
Devotion, patience, courage, fortitude,  
I have no relish of them; but abound  
In the division of each several crime, [should  
Acting it many ways. Nay, had I power, I  
Pour the sweet milk of concord into hell,  
Uproar the universal peace, confound  
All unity on earth.

*Macd.* O Scotland! Scotland!

*Mal.* If such a one be fit to govern, speak;  
I am as I have spoken.

*Macd.* Fit to govern!  
No, not to live.—O nation miserable,  
With an untitled tyrant bloody-sceptred,  
When shalt thou see thy wholesome days again?  
Since that the truest issue of thy throne  
By his own interdiction stands accursed;  
And does blaspheme his breed?—Thy royal  
father [bore thee,

Was a most sainted king: the queen, that  
Often upon her knees than on her feet,  
Died every day she lived. Fare thee well!  
These evils, thou repeat'st upon thyself,  
Have banish'd me from Scotland.—O, my  
Thy hope ends here! [breast,

*Mal.* Macduff, this noble passion,  
Child of integrity, hath from my soul  
Wiped the black scruples, reconciled my  
thoughts [Macbeth

To thy good truth and honour. Devilish  
By many of these trains hath sought to win me  
Into his power; and modest wisdom plucks me  
From over-credulous haste¶; But God above  
Deal between thee and me! for even now

I put myself to thy direction, and  
Unspeak mine own detraction: here abjure  
The taluts and blames I laid upon myself,  
For strangers to my nature. I am yet  
Unknown to woman; never was forsworn;  
Scarcely have coveted what was mine own;  
At no time broke my faith; would not betray  
The devil to his fellow; and delight [speaking  
No less in truth, than life: my first false  
Was this upon myself: What I am truly,  
Is thine, and my poor country's, to command:  
Whither, indeed, before thy here-approach,  
Old Siward, with ten thousand warlike men,  
All ready at a point, was setting forth:

Now we'll together; And the chance of good-  
ness, [silent?

Be like our warranted quarrel! Why are you  
*Macd.* Such welcome and unwelcome things  
'Tis hard to reconcile. [at once,

*Enter a Doctor.*

*Mal.* Well; more anon.—Comes the king  
forth, I pray you? [souls,

*Doct.* Ay, sir: there are a crew of wretched

\* Legally settled by those who had the final adjudication.

† Lascivious.

‡ Passionate

§ Plenty.

|| May be endured.

¶ Over-hasty credulity.

That stay his cure: their malady convinces\*  
The great assay of art; but, at his touch,  
Such sanctity hath heaven given his hand,  
They presently amend.

*Mal.* I thank you, doctor.  
[Exit Doctor.]

*Macd.* What's the disease he means?  
*Mal.* 'Tis call'd the evil:

A most miraculous work in this good king;  
Which often, since my here-remain in England,  
I have seen him do. How he solicits heaven,  
Himself best knows: but strangely-visited

people,  
All swoln and ulcerous, pitiful to the eye,  
The mere despair of surgery, he cures:  
Hanging a golden staint† about their necks,  
Put on with holy prayers: and 'tis spoken,  
To the succeeding royalty he leaves  
The healing benediction. With this strange  
virtue,

He hath a heavenly gift of prophecy;  
And sundry blessings hang about his throne,  
That speak him full of grace.

*Enter Rosse.*

*Macd.* See, who comes here?

*Mal.* My countryman; but yet I know  
him not. [hither.]

*Macd.* My ever-gentle cousin, welcome

*Mal.* I know him now: Good God, betimes  
The means that make us strangers! [remove

*Rosse.* Sir, Amen.

*Macd.* Stands Scotland where it did?

*Rosse.* Alas, poor country!  
Almost afraid to know itself! It cannot [thing,  
Be call'd our mother, but our grave: where no-  
But who knows nothing, is once seen to smile:  
Where sighs, and groans, and shrieks that rend  
the air, [seems

Are made, not mark'd; where violent sorrow  
A modern ecstasy; the dead man's knell  
Is there scarce ask'd, for who; and good men's  
Expire before the flowers in their caps, [lives  
Dying, or ere they sicken.

*Macd.* O, relation,  
Too nice, and yet too true!

*Mal.* What is the newest grief?

*Rosse.* That of an hour's age doth hiss the  
Each minute teems a new one. [speaker;]

*Macd.* How does my wife?

*Rosse.* Why, well.

*Macd.* And all my children?

*Rosse.* Well too.

*Macd.* The tyrant has not batter'd at their  
peace? [did leave them.]

*Rosse.* No; they were well at peace, when I

*Macd.* Be not a niggard of your speech;  
How goes it? [tidings,

*Rosse.* When I came hither to transport the  
Which I have heavily borne, there ran a ru-  
Of many worthy fellows that were out; [mour  
Which was to my belief witness'd the rather,  
For that I saw the tyrant's power a-foot:

Now is the time of help! your eye in Scotland  
Would create soldiers, make our women fight,  
To doff‡ their dire distresses.

*Mal.* Be it their comfort,

We are coming thither: gracious England hath  
Lent us good Siward, and ten thousand men;  
An older, and a better soldier, none  
That Christendom gives out.

*Rosse.* 'Would I could answer  
This comfort with the like! But I have words,  
That would be howl'd out in the desert air,  
Where hearing should not latch|| them.

*Macd.* What concern they?  
The general cause? or is it a fee-grief¶,  
Due to some single breast?

*Rosse.* No mind, that's honest,  
But in it shares some woe; though the main  
Pertains to you alone. [part

*Macd.* If it be mine,  
Keep it not from me, quickly let me have it.

*Rosse.* Let not your ears despise my tongue  
for ever, [sound  
Which shall possess them with the heaviest  
That ever yet they heard.

*Macd.* Humph! I guess at it.

*Rosse.* Your castle is surprised; your wife,  
and babes,

Savagely slaughter'd: to relate the manner,  
Were, on the quarry\*\* of these murder'd deer,  
To add the death of you.

*Mal.* Merciful heaven!—  
What, man! ne'er pull your hat upon your  
brows; [speak,

Give sorrow words: the grief, that does not  
Whispers the o'erfraught heart, and bids it

*Macd.* My children too? [break.

*Rosse.* Wife, children, servants, all  
That could be found.

*Macd.* And I must be from thence!  
My wife kill'd too?

*Rosse.* I have said.

*Mal.* Be comforted:  
Let's make us med'cines of our great revenge,  
To cure this deadly grief.

*Macd.* He has no children.—All my pretty  
ones?

Did you say, all?—O, hell-kite!—All?  
What, all my pretty chickens, and their dam,  
At one fell swoop?

*Mal.* Dispute it like a man.

*Macd.* I shall do so;  
But I must also feel it as a man:

I cannot but remember such things were,  
That were most precious to me.—Did heaven  
look on, [duff,

And would not take their part? Sinful Mac-  
They were all struck for thee! naught that I am,  
Not for their own demerits, but for mine,  
Fell slaughter on their souls; Heaven rest them  
now! [let grief

*Mal.* Be this the whetstone of your sword:  
Convert to anger; blunt not the heart, enrage it.

*Macd.* O, I could play the woman with  
mine eyes,

And braggart with my tongue!—But, gentle  
heaven,

Cut short all intermission††: front to front,  
Bring thou this fiend of Scotland, and myself  
Within my sword's length set him: if he'scape  
Heaven forgive him too!

\* Overpowers, subdues. † The coin called an Angel. ‡ Common distress of mind. § Put off  
Catch. ¶ A grief that has a single owner. \*\* The game after it is killed. †† All pause



*Mal.* This tune goes manly.  
Come, go we to the king: our power is ready;  
Our lack is nothing out our leave: Macbeth  
Is ripe for shaking, and the powers above

Put on their instruments. Receive what cheer  
you may;  
The night is long that never finds the day.  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

## SCENE I. Dunsinane. A Room in the Castle.

*Enter a Doctor of Physic, and a waiting Gentlewoman.*

*D. Ct.* I have two nights watched with you, but can perceive no truth in your report. When was it she last walked?

*G. t.* Since his majesty went into the field, I have seen her rise from her bed, throw her night-gown upon her, unlock her closet, take forth paper, fold it, write upon it, read it, afterwards seal it, and again return to bed; yet all this while in a most fast sleep.

*D. Ct.* A great perturbation in nature! to receive at once the benefit of sleep, and do the effects of watching.—In this slumbry agitation, besides her walking, and other actual performances, what, at any time, have you heard her say?

*Gent.* That, sir, which I will not report after her.

*Doct.* You may, to me; and 'tis most meet you should.

*Gent.* Neither to you, nor any one; having no witness to confirm my speech.

*Enter Lady MACBETH, with a Taper.*

Lo you, here she comes! This is her very guise; and, upon my life, fast asleep. Observe her; stand close.

*Doct.* How came she by that light?

*Gent.* Why, it stood by her: she has light by her continually; 'tis her command.

*Doct.* You see her eyes are open.

*Gent.* Ay, but their sense is shut.

*Doct.* What is it she does now? Look, how she rubs her hands.

*Gent.* It is an accustomed action with her, to seem thus washing her hands; I have known her continue in this a quarter of an hour.

*Lady M.* Yet here's a spot.

*Doct.* Hark, she speaks: I will set down what comes from her, to satisfy my remembrance the more strongly.

*Lady M.* Out, damned spot! out, I say!—One: Two: Why, then, 'tis time to do't:—Hell is murky!—Fie, my lord, fie! a soldier, and afeard? What need we fear who knows it, when none can call our power to account?—Yet who would have thought the old man to have had so much blood in him?

*Doct.* Do you mark that?

*Lady M.* The thane of Fife had a wife: Where is she now?—What, will these hands ne'er be clean?—No more o'that, my lord, no more o'that: you mar all with this starting.

*Doct.* Go to, go to; you have known what you should not.

*Gent.* She has spoke what she should not,

I am sure of that: Heaven knows what she has known.

*Lady M.* Here's the smell of the blood still: all the perfumes of Arabia will not sweeten this little hand. Oh! oh! oh!

*Doct.* What a sigh is there! The heart is sorely charged.

*Gent.* I would not have such a heart in my bosom, for the dignity of the whole body.

*Doct.* Well, well, well,—

*Gent.* 'Pray God, it be, sir.

*Doct.* This disease is beyond my practice: yet I have known those which have walked in their sleep, who have died hourly in their beds.

*Lady M.* Wash your hands, put on your night gown: look not so pale:—I tell you yet again, Banquo's buried; he cannot come out of his grave.

*Doct.* Even so?

*Lady M.* To bed, to bed; there's knocking at the gate. Come, come, come, come, give me your hand: What's done cannot be undone: To bed, to bed, to bed. [*Exit Lady*]

*Doct.* Will she go now to bed? [*MACBETH.*]

*Gent.* Directly.

*Doct.* Foul whisperings are abroad: Unnatural deeds

Do breed unnatural troubles: Infected minds To their deaf pillows will discharge their secrets [*scen.—*]

More needs she the divine, than the physician: God, forgive us all! Look after her; Remove from her the means of all annoyance, And still keep eyes upon her:—So, good night: My mind she has mated, and amazed my I think, but dare not speak. [*sight:*]

*Gent.* Good night, good doctor.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. The Country near Dunsinane.

*Enter, with Drums and Colours, MENTETH, CATHNESS, ANGUS LENOX, and Soldiers.*

*Ment.* The English power is near led on by Malcolm,

His uncle Siward, and the good Macduff.

Revenge burn in them: for their dear causes Would, to the bleeding and the grim alarm, Excite the mortified man.†

*Ang.* Near Birnam wood Shall we well meet them; that way are they coming. [*brother?*]

*Cath.* Who knows, if Donalbain be with him  
*Len.* For certain, sir, he is not: I have a file Of all the gentry; there is Siward's son, And many unrough youths, that even now Protest their first of manhood.

*Ment.* What does the tyrant?  
*Cath.* Great Dunsinane he strongly fortifies:

¶ Dark.

† Confounded.

‡ A religious; an ascetic.

§ Unhearded.

Some say, he's mad; others, that lesser hate  
Do call it valiant fury: but, for certain, [him,  
He cannot buckle his distemper'd cause  
Within the belt of rule.

*Ang.* Now does he feel  
His secret murders sticking on his hands;  
Now minutely revolts upbraid his faith-breach;  
Those he commands move only in command,  
Nothing in love: now does he feel his title  
Hang loose about him, like a giant's robe  
Upon a dwarfish thief.

*Ment.* Who then shall blame  
His pester'd senses to recoil, and start,  
When all that is within him does condemn  
Itself for being there?

*Cath.* Well, march we on,  
To give obedience where 'tis truly owed:  
Meet we the medicin\* of the sickly weal;  
And with him pour we, in our country's purge,  
Each drop of us.

*Len.* Or so much as it needs,  
To dew the sovereign flower, and drown the  
Make we our march towards Birnam. [weeds.  
[*Exeunt marching.*

### SCENE III. Dunsinane. A Room in the Castle.

*Enter MACBETH, Doctor and Attendants.*

*Macb.* Bring me no more reports; let them  
fly all;

Till Birnam wood remove to Dunsinane,  
I cannot taint with fear. What's the boy  
Malcolm! [know  
Was he not born of woman? The spirits that  
All mortal consequents, pronounced me thus:  
*Fear not, Macbeth: no man, that's born of  
woman,* [false thanes,  
*Shall ev' have power on thee.*—Then fly,  
And mingle with the English epicures:  
The mind I sway by, and the heart I bear, [fear.  
Shall never saggt with doubt nor shake with  
*Enter a Servant.*

The devil damn thee black, thou cream-faced  
Where got'st thou that goose look? [loot†!

*Serv.* There is ten thousand—

*Macb.* Geese, villain?

*Serv.* Soldiers, sir. [fear,

*Macb.* Go, prick thy face, and over-red thy  
Thon lily-liver'd boy. What soldier's, patch †?  
Death of thy soul! those linen cheeks of thine  
Are counsellors to fear. What soldiers, whey-  
face?

*Serv.* The English force, so please you.

*Macb.* Take thy face hence.—Seyton!—I  
am sick at heart,

When I behold—Seyton, I say!—This push  
Will cheer me ever, or disseat me now.  
I have liv'd long enough: my way of life  
Is fall'n into the sear†, the yellow leaf:  
And that which should accompany old age,  
As honour, love, obedience, troops of friends,  
I must not look to have; but, in their stead,  
Curses, not loud, but deep, mouth-honour,  
breath, [dare not.

Which the poor heart would fain deny, but  
Seyton!—

*Enter SEYTON.*

*Sey.* What is your gracious pleasure?

*Macb.* What news more?  
*Sey.* All is confirm'd, my lord, which was  
reported. [be back'd.

*Macb.* I'll fight, till from my bones my flesh  
Give me my armour.

*Sey.* 'Tis not needed yet.

*Macb.* I'll put it on. [round;  
Send out more horses, skirr† the country  
Hang those that talk of fear.—Give me mine  
How does your patient, doctor? [armour.

*Doct.* Not so sick, my lord,  
As she is troubled with thick-coming fancies,  
That keep her from her rest.

*Macb.* Cure her of that:  
Canst thou not minister to a mind diseased;  
Pluck from the memory a rooted sorrow;  
Raze out the written troubles of the brain;  
And, with some sweet oblivious antidote,  
Cleanse the stuff'd bosom of that perilous stuff,  
Which weighs upon the heart?

*Doct.* Therein the patient  
Must minister to himself. [of it:—

*Macb.* Throw physic to the dogs, I'll none  
Come, put mine armour on; give me my  
staff:— [me:

Seyton, send out.—Doctor, the thanes fly from  
Come, sir, despatch:—If thou couldst, doctor,  
The water of my land, find her disease, [cast  
And purge it to a sound and pristine health,  
I would applaud thee to the very echo,  
That should applaud again.—Pull't off, I say.  
What rhubarb, senna, or what purgative drug,  
Would scour these English hence?—Hearest  
thou of them? [paration

*Doct.* Ay, my good lord; your royal pre-  
Makes us hear something.

*Macb.* Bring it after me.—

I will not be afraid of death and bane,  
Till Birnam forest come to Dunsinane. [*Exit.*

*Doct.* Were I from Dunsinane away and clear,  
Profit again should hardly draw me here. [*Exit.*

### SCENE IV. Country near Dunsinane: A Wood in View.

*Enter, with Drum and Colours, MALCOLM,  
old SIWARD and his Son, MACDUFF,  
MENTETH, CATHNESS, ANGUS, LENOX,  
ROSSE, and Soldiers, marching.*

*Mal.* Cousins, I hope the days are near at  
That chambers will be safe. [hand

*Ment.* We doubt it nothing.

*Siw.* What wood is this before us?

*Ment.* The wood of Birnam.

*Mal.* Let every soldier hew him down a  
bough, [dow  
And bear't before him; thereby shall we sha-  
The numbers of our host, and make discovery  
Err in report of us.

*Sold.* It shall be done. [tyrant

*Siw.* We learn no other but the confident  
Keeps still in Dunsinane, and will endure  
Our setting down before't.

*Mal.* 'Tis his main hope:

• The physician.

† Sink.

‡ Base fellow.

§ An appellation of contempt.

¶ Dry.

‡ Scour.

For where there is advantage to be given,  
Both more and less\* have given him the revolt;  
And none serve with him but constrained  
Whose hearts are absent too. [things,

*Macd.* Let our just censures  
Attend the true event, and put we on  
Industrious soldiership.

*Siw.* The time approaches,  
That will with due decision make us know  
What we shall say we have, and what we owe.  
Thoughts speculative their unsure hopes relate;  
But certain issue strokes must arbitrate†:  
Towards which, advance the war.

[*Exeunt, marching.*]

SCENE V. Dunsinane. *Within the Castle.*

*Enter, with Drums and Colours, MACBETH, SEYTON, and Soldiers.*

*Macb.* Hang out our banners on the out-  
ward walls; [strength  
The cry is still, *They come:* Our castle's  
Will laugh a siege to scorn; here let them lie,  
Till famine, and the ague, eat them up:

Were they not forced with those that should  
be ours, [beard,

We might have met them darest, beard to  
And beat them backward home. What is that  
noise? [A cry within, of Women.

*Sey.* It is the cry of women, my good lord.

*Macb.* I have almost forgot the taste of fears:  
The time has been, my senses would have  
cool'd

To hear a night-shriek: and my fell† of hair  
Would at a dismal treatise rouse, and stir  
As life were in't: I have sup'd full with hor-  
rors;

Direness, familiar to my slaughterous thoughts,  
Cannot once start.—Wherefore was that cry?

*Sey.* The queen, my lord, is dead.

*Macb.* She should have died hereafter;  
There would have been a time for such a word.  
To-morrow, and to-morrow, and to-morrow,  
Creeps in this petty pace from day to day,  
To the last syllable of recorded time;  
And all our yesterdays have lighted fools  
The way to dusty death. Out, out, brief candle!  
Life's but a walking shadow; a poor player,  
That struts and frets his hour upon the stage,  
And then is heard no more: it is a tale  
Told by an idiot, full of sound and fury,  
Signifying nothing.—

*Enter a Messenger.*

Thou comest to use thy tongue; thy story quick-  
ly.

*Mess.* Gracious my lord, [ly.  
I shall report that which I say I saw,  
But know not how to do it.

*Macb.* Well, say, sir.

*Mess.* As I did stand my watch upon the hill,  
I look'd toward Birnam, and anon, methought,  
The wood began to move.

*Macb.* Liar and slave! [Striking him.

*Mess.* Let me endure your wrath, if't be not  
so:

Within this three mile may you see it coming;  
I say, a moving grove.

*Macb.*

If thou speak'st false,  
Upon the next tree shalt thou hang alive,  
Till famine cling's thee: if thy speech be sooth,  
I care not if thou dost for me as much.—  
I pall in resolution; and begin  
To doubt the equivocation of the fiend,  
That lies like truth: *Fear not, till Birnam*  
*wood*

*Do come to Dunsinane;*—and now a wood  
Comes toward Dunsinane.—Arm, arm, and  
out!

If this, which he avouches, does appear,  
There is nor flying hence, nor tarrying here.  
I 'gin to be a-weary of the sun,  
And wish the estate o'the world were now un-  
done.—

Ring the alarm-bell:—Blow, wind! come,  
wrack!

At least we'll die with harness on our back.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *The same. A plain before the*  
*Castle.*

*Enter, with Drums and Colours, MALCOLM, old SIWARD, MACDUFF, &c., and their*  
*Army, with Boughs.*

*Mal.* Now near enough; your leavy screens  
throw down, [uncle,

And show like those you are:—You, worthy  
Shall, with my cousin, your right-noble son,  
Lead our first battle: worthy Macduff, and we,  
Shall take upon us what else remains to do,  
According to our order.

*Siw.* Fare you well.—  
Do we but find the tyrant's power to-night,  
Let us be beaten, if we cannot fight.

*Macd.* Make all our trumpets speak; give  
them all breath,  
Those clamorous harbingers of blood and death.  
[*Exeunt. Alarums continued.*]

SCENE VII. *The same. Another Part of*  
*the Plain.*

*Enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* They have tied me to a stake; I can-  
not fly,  
But, bear-like, I must fight the course.—What's  
That was not born of woman? Such a one [he,  
Am I to fear, or none.

*Enter young SIWARD.*

*Yo. Siw.* What is thy name?  
*Macb.* Thou't be afraid to hear it.  
*Yo. Siw.* No; though thou call'st thyself a  
Than any is in hell. [hotter name

*Macb.* My name's Macbeth.  
*Yo. Siw.* The devil himself could not pro-  
More hateful to mine ear. [nounce a title

*Macb.* No, nor more fearful.  
*Yo. Siw.* Thou liest, abhorred tyrant; with  
I'll prove the lie thou speak'st. [my sword

[*They fight, and young Siward is slain.*]  
*Macb.* Thou wast born of woman.—  
But swords I smile at, weapons laugh to scorn,  
Brandish'd by man that's of a woman born.

[*Exit.*]

\* i. e., Greater and less.

§ Shriveled.

† Determine.

‡ Armour.

§ Skin.



*Alarums. Enter MACDUFF.*

*Macd.* That way the noise is:—Tyrant, show thy face:

If thou be'st slain, and with no stroke of mine,  
My wife and children's ghost will haunt me still.  
I cannot strike at wretched kernes\*, whose

arms [Macbeth,  
Are hired to bear their staves; either thou,  
Or else my sword, with an unbatter'd edge,  
I sheathe again undeeded. There thou shouldst  
By this great clatter, one of greatest note [be;  
Seems bruted†: Let me find him, fortunate!  
And more I beg not. [Exit. *Alarums.*

*Enter MALCOLM and old SIWARD.*

*Siw.* This way, my lord;—the castle's gently  
render'd:

The tyrant's people on both sides do fight;  
The noble thanes do bravely in the war;  
The day almost itself professes yours,  
And little is to do.

*Mal.* We have met with foes  
That strike beside us.

*Siw.* Enter, sir, the castle.

[*Exeunt. Alarums.*

*Re-enter MACBETH.*

*Macb.* Why should I play the Roman fool,  
and die gashes  
On mine own sword? whiles I see lives, the  
Do better upon them.

*Re-enter MACDUFF.*

*Macd.* Turn, hell-hound, turn.

*Macb.* Of all men else I have avoided thee:  
But get thee back, my soul is too much charged  
With blood of thine already.

*Macd.* I have no words,  
My voice is in my sword; thou bloodier villain  
Than terms can give thee out! [Thy fight.

*Macb.* Thou lovest labour:  
As easy may'st thou the intrenchant air‡  
With thy keen sword impress, as make me  
Let fall thy blade on vulnerable crests; [bleed:  
I bear a charmed life, which must not yield  
To one of woman born.

*Macd.* Despair thy charm;  
And let the angel, whom thou still hast served,  
Tell thee, Macduff was from his mother's womb  
Untimely ripp'd. [so,

*Macb.* Accursed be that tongue that tells me  
For it hath cow'd my better part of man!  
And be these juggling fiends no more believed,  
That palter§ with us in a double sense;  
That keep the word of promise to our ear,  
And break it to our hope. I'll not fight with thee.

*Macd.* Then yield thee, coward,  
And live to be the show and gaze of the time.  
We'll have thee, as our rarer monsters are,  
Painted upon a pole: and underwrit,  
*Here may you see the tyrant.*

*Macb.* I'll not yield, [feet,  
To kiss the ground before young Malcolm's  
And to be baited with the rabble's curse.  
Though Birnam wood be come to Dunsinane,  
And thou opposed, being of no woman born,  
Yet I will try the last: Before my body

I throw my warlike shield: lay on, Macduff;  
And damn'd be him that first cries, *Holla,*  
*enough.* [*Exeunt, j.g. ting.*

*Retreat. Flourish. Re-enter, with Drum  
and Colours, MALCOLM, old SIWARD,  
ROSSE, LENOX, ANGUS, CATHLISS, MEN-  
TETH, and Soldiers.*

*Mal.* I would, the friends we miss were  
safe arrived. [see,

*Siw.* Some must go off: and yet, by these I  
So great a day as this is cheaply bought.

*Mal.* Macduff is missing, and your noble son.

*Rosse.* Your son, my lord, has paid a sol-  
dier's debt:

He only lived but till he was a man;  
The which no sooner had his prowess confirm'd  
In the unshrinking station where he fought,  
But like a man he died.

*Siw.* Then he is dead?

*Rosse.* Ay, and brought off the field: your  
cause of sorrow

Must not be measured by his worth, for then  
It hath no end.

*Siw.* Had he his hurts before?

*Rosse.* Ay, on the front.

*Siw.* Why then, God's soldier be he!  
Had I as many sons as I have hairs,  
I would not wish them to a tairer death:  
And so his knell is knoll'd.

*Mal.* He's worth more sorrow,  
And that I'll spend for him.

*Siw.* He's worth no more;  
They say, he parted well, and paid his score:  
So, God be with him!—Here comes newer  
comfort

*Re-enter MACDUFF, with MACBETH'S Head  
on a Pole.*

*Macd.* Hail, king! for so thou art: Behold,  
where stands

The usurper's cursed head: the time is free:  
I see thee compass'd with thy kingdom's pearl||.  
That speak my sanitation in their minds;  
Whose voices I desire aloud with mine,—  
Hail, king of Scotland!

*All.* King of Scotland, hail! [*Flourish.*  
*Mal.* We shall not spend a large expense of  
time,

Before we reckon with your several loves,  
And make us even with you. My thanes and  
kinsmen, [and  
Henceforth be earls, the first that ever Scot-  
In such an honour named. What's more to do,  
Which would be planted newly with the time,  
As calling home our exiled friends abroad,  
That fled the snares of watchful tyranny;  
Producing forth the cruel ministers  
Of this dead butcher, and his fiend-like queen;  
Who, as 'tis thought, by self and violent hands  
Took off her life:—This, and what needful else  
That calls upon us, by the grace of Grace,  
We will perform in measure, time, and place:  
So thanks to all at once, and to each one,  
Whom we invite to see us crown'd at Scone.  
[*Flourish. Exeunt*

\* Soldiers. † Reported with clamour. ‡ The air which cannot be cut. § Snuffles.  
|| Thy kingdom's wealth or ornament.

# KING JOHN.

## Persons represented.

King JOHN.

Prince HENRY, his son, afterwards King Henry III.

ARTHUR, Duke of Bretagne, son of Geoffrey, late Duke of Bretagne, the elder brother of King John.

WILLIAM MARESHALL, Earl of Pembroke.

GEFFREY FITZ-PETER, Earl of Essex, chief justiciary of England.

WILLIAM LONGSWORD, Earl of Salisbury.

ROBERT BIGOT, Earl of Norfolk.

HUBERT DE BURGH, chamberlain to the King.

ROBERT FAULCONBRIDGE, son of Sir Robert Faulconbridge.

PHILIP FAULCONBRIDGE, his half-brother, bastard son to King Richard the First.

JAMES GURNEY, servant to Lady Faulconbridge.

PETER of Pomfret, a prophet.

PHILIP, King of France.

LEWIS, the Dauphin.

Archduke of Austria.

Cardinal PANDULPH, the Pope's legate.

MELUN, a French lord.

CHATILLON, ambassador from France to King John.

ELINOR, the widow of King Henry II. and mother of King John.

CONSTANCE, mother to Arthur.

BLANCH, daughter to Alphonso, King of Castile, and niece to King John.

Lady FAULCONBRIDGE, mother to the bastard, and Robert Faulconbridge.

Lords, Ladies, Citizens of Angiers, Sheriff, Heralds, Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and other Attendants.

Scene,—sometimes in England, and sometimes in France.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. Northampton. A Room of State in the Palace.

Enter King JOHN, Queen ELINOR, PEMBROKE, ESSEX, SALISBURY, and others, with CHATILLON.

K. John. Now, say, Chatillon, what would France with us? [of France,

Chat. Thus, after greeting, speaks the king in my behaviour\*, to the majesty, The borrow'd majesty of England here.

Eli. A strange beginning;—borrow'd majesty! [in embassy.

K. John. Silence, good mother; hear the Chat. Philip of France, in right and true behalf

Of thy deceased brother Geoffrey's son, Arthur Plantagenet, lays most lawful claim

To this fair island, and the territories;

To Ireland, Poitiers, Anjou, Touraine, Maine:

Desiring thee to lay aside the sword,

Which sways usurpingly these several titles;

And put the same into young Arthur's hand,

Thy nephew, and right royal sovereign.

K. John. What follows, if we disallow of this?

Chat. The proud control of fierce and bloody war,

To enforce these rights so forcibly withheld.

K. John. Here have we war for war, and blood for blood, [France.

Controlment for controlment: so answer

Chat. Then take my king's defiance from my mouth,

The furthest limit of my embassy. [in peace:

K. John. Bear mine to him, and so depart

Be thou as lightning in the eyes of France;

For ere thou canst report I will be there,

The thunder of my cannon shall be heard:

So, hence! Be thou the trumpet of our wrath,

And sullen presage of your own decay.—

An honourable conduct let him have:—

Pembroke, look to't: Farewell, Chatillon.

[Exit CHATILLON and PEMBROKE.

Eli. What now, my son? have I not ever said,

How that ambitious Constance would not cease,

Till she had kindled France and all the world,

Upon the right and party of her son?

This might have been prevented and made

With very easy arguments of love! [whole,

Which now the manage† of two kingdoms must

With fearful bloody issue arbitrate.

K. John. Our strong possession, and our right for us.

Eli. Your strong possession, much more than your right;

Or else it must go wrong with you, and me:

So much my conscience whispers in your ear;

Which none but heaven, and you, and I, shall hear.

Enter the Sheriff of Northamptonshire, who whispers ESSEX.

Essex. My liege, here is the strangest controversy,

Come from the country to be judged by you,

That e'er I heard: Shall I produce the men?

K. John. Let them approach.— [Exit Sheriff.

Our abbeyes, and our priories, shall pay

\* In the manner I now do.

† Conduct, administration.

*Re-enter Sheriff, with ROBERT FAULCONBRIDGE, and PHILIP, his bastard brother.*

This expedition's charge.—What men are you?

*Bast.* Your faithful subject I, a gentleman,  
Born in Northamptonshire; and eldest son,  
As I suppose, to Robert Faulconbridge;  
A soldier, by the honour-giving hand  
Of Cœur-de-lion knighted in the field.

*K. John.* What art thou?

*Rob.* The son and heir to that same Faulconbridge. [heir?]

*K. John.* Is th. the elder, and art thou the  
You came not of a mother then, it seems.

*Bast.* Most certain of one mother, mighty  
king,

Is well known; and, as I think, one father:  
for the certain knowledge of that truth,

I put you o'er to heaven, and to my mother;  
Of that I doubt, at all men's children may.

*Eli.* Out on thee, rude man! thou dost shame  
thy mother,

And wound her honour with this diffidence.

*Bast.* I, madam? no, I have no reason for it;  
That is my brother's plea, and none of mine;  
The which if he can prove, 'a pops me out  
At least from fair five hundred pounds a-year:  
Heaven guard my mother's honour, and my  
land! [younger born,

*K. John.* A good blunt fellow:—Why, being  
Doth he lay claim to thine inheritance?

*Bast.* I know not why, except to get the land.  
But once he slander'd me with bastardy:

But wher' I be as true-begot, or no,  
That still I lay upon my mother's head;  
But, that I am as well begot, my liege,  
(Fair fall the bones that took the pains for me!)  
Compare our faces, and be judge yourself.  
If old sir Robert did beget us both,  
And were our father, and this son like him;—  
O, old sir Robert, father, on my knee  
I give heaven thanks, I was not like to thee.

*K. John.* Why, what a madcap hath heaven  
lent us here!

*Eli.* He hath a trick † of Cœur-de-lion's face,  
The accent of his tongue affecteth him:

Do you not read some tokens of my son  
In the large composition of this man? [parts,

*K. John.* Mine eye hath well examined his  
And finds them perfect Richard.—Sirrah, speak,  
What doth move you to claim your brother's  
land? [father;

*Bast.* Because he hath a half-face, like my  
With that half face would he have all my land:  
A half-faced groat five hundred pound a year!

*Rob.* My gracious liege, when that my father  
lived,

Your brother did employ my father much;—  
*Bast.* Well, sir, by this you cannot get my land;

Your tale must be how he employ'd my mother.

*Rob.* And once despatch'd him in an embassy  
To Germany, there, with the emperor,  
To treat of high affairs touching that time:

The advantage of his absence took the king,  
And in the mean time sojourn'd at my father's;  
Where how he did prevail, I shame to speak:  
But truth is truth; large lengths of seas and shores

Between my father and my mother lay,  
(As I have heard my father speak himself.)

When this same lusty gentleman was got.  
Upon his death-bed he by will bequeath'd  
His lands to me; and took it, on his death,  
That this, my mother's son, was none of his;  
And, if he were, he came into the world  
Full fourteen weeks before the course of time.  
Then, good my liege, let me have what is mine,  
My father's land, as was my father's will.

*K. John.* Sirrah, your brother is legitimate;  
Your father's wife did after wedlock bear him:  
And, if she did play false, the fault was her's;  
Which fault lies on the hazards of all husbands  
That marry wives. Tell me, how if my brother,  
Who, as you say, took pains to get this son,  
Had of your father claim'd this son for his?

In sooth, good friend, your father might have  
kept

This calf bred from his cow, from all the world;  
In sooth, he might: then, if he were my brother's,

My brother might not claim him; nor your  
father,

Being none of his, refuse him: This concludes,—  
My mother's son did get your father's heir,  
Your father's heir must have your father's land.

*Rob.* Shall then my father's will be of no force,  
To dispossess that child which is not his?

*Bast.* Of no more force to dispossess me, sir,  
Than was his will to get me, as I think.

*Eli.* Whether hadst thou rather,—be a Faulconbridge,

And like thy brother, to enjoy thy land;  
Or the reputed son of Cœur-de-lion,  
Lord of thy presence ‡, and no land beside?

*Bast.* Madam, an if my brother had my shape,  
And I had his, sir Robert his, like him;  
And if my legs were two such riding-rods,  
My arms such eel-skins stuff'd; my face so thin,  
That in mine ear I durst not stick a rose,  
Lest men should say, Look, where three-far  
things goes!

And, to his shape, were heir to all this land,  
Would I might never stir from off this place,  
I'd give it every foot to have this face;  
I would not a sir Nob's in any case.

*Eli.* I like ee well; Wilt thou forsake thy  
fortune,

Bequeath thy land to him, and follow me?  
I am a soldier, and now bound to France.

*Bast.* Brother, take you my land, I'll take  
my chance:—

Your face hath got five hundred pounds a year;  
Yet sell your face for five pence, and 'tis dear.—  
Madam, I'll follow you unto the death.

*Eli.* Nay, I would have you go before me  
thither. [way.

*Bast.* Our country manners give our betters  
*K. John.* What is thy name?

*Bast.* Philip, my liege; so is my name begun;  
Philip, good old sir Robert's wife's eldest son.

*K. John.* From henceforth bear his name  
whose form thou bear'st:

Kneel thou down Philip, but arise more great  
Arise sir Richard, and Plantagenet.



*Bast.* Brother, by the mother's side, give me your hand;

My father gave me honour, your's gave land:—  
Now blessed be the hour, by night or day,  
When I was got, sir Robert was away.

*Eli.* The very spirit of Plantagenet!  
I am thy grandame, Richard; call me so.

*Bast.* Madam, by chance, but not by truth:  
What though?

Something about, a little from the right,  
In at the window, or else o'er the hatch:  
Who dares not stir by day, must walk by night;  
And have is have, however men do catch:  
Near or far off, well won is still well shot;  
And I am I, howe'er I was begot. [thy desire,  
*K. John.* Go, Faulconbridge; now hast thou  
A landless knight makes thee a landed squire.—  
Come, madam, and come, Richard; we must  
speed

For France, for France; for it is more than need.

*Bast.* Brother, adieu; Good fortune come to  
For thou wast got i'th way of honesty. [thee!  
[*Ereunt att but the Bastard.*

A foot of honour better than I was;  
But many a foot of land the worse.  
Well, now I can make any Joan a lady:—  
*Good den\*, sir Richard,—God-a-mercy, fel-  
low;*

And if his name be George, I'll call him Peter:  
For new-made honour doth forget men's names;  
'Tis too respectu\*, and too sociable,  
For your conversion†. Now your traveller,—  
He and his tooth-pick at my worship's mess;  
And when my knightly stomach is sufficed,  
Why then I suck my teeth, and catechize  
My picked man of countries§:—*My dear sir,*  
(Thus, leaning on mine elbow, I begin.)

*I shall beseech you*—That is question now;  
And then comes answer like an ABC-Book||:—  
*O sir,* says answer, at your best command;  
*At your employment; at your service, sir:*—  
*No, sir,* says question, *I, sweet sir, at yours:*  
And, so, ere answer knows what question  
(Saying in dialogue of compliment; [would,  
And talking of the Alps and Apeunines,  
The Pyrenean, and the river Po,)

It draws towards supper in conclusion so.  
But this is worshipful society,  
And fits the mounting spirit, like myself:  
For he is but a bastard to the time,  
That doth not smack of observation:  
(And so am I, whether I smack, or no;)  
And not alone in habit and device,  
Exterior form, outward accoutrement;  
But from the inward motion to deliver  
Sweet, sweet, sweet poison for the age's tooth:  
Which, though I will not practise to deceive,  
Yet, to avoid deceit, I mean to learn;  
For it shall strew the footsteps of my rising.—  
But who comes in such haste, in riding robes?  
What woman-post is this? hath she no husband,  
That will take pains to blow a horn before her?

*Enter Lady FAULCONBRIDGE and JAMES  
GURNEY.*

O me! it is my mother:—How now, good lady?

What brings you here to court so hastily?

*Lady F.* Where is that slave, thy brother  
where is he?

That holds in chase mine honour up and down?

*Bast.* My brother Robert! old sir Robert's son?  
Colbrand the giant, that same mighty man?

Is it sir Robert's son, that you seek so?

*Lady F.* Sir Robert's son! Ay, thou unre-  
verend boy, [Robert?

Sir Robert's son! Why scorn'st thou at sir  
He is sir Robert's son; and so art thou.

*Bast.* James Gurney, wilt thou give us leave

*Gur.* Good leave, good Philip. [awhile?

*Bast.* Philip?—sparrow!—James,  
There's toys abroad; and anon I'll tell thee more.

[*Exit GURNEY.*

Madam, I was not old sir Robert's son;

Sir Robert might have eat his part in me

Upon Good-Friday, and ne'er broke his fast:

Sir Robert could do well; marry, (to confess I)

Could he get me? Sir Robert could not do it;

We know his handy-work:—therefore, good mo-

To whom am I beholden for these limbs? [thee,

Sir Robert never help to make this leg.

*Lady F.* Hast thou conspired with thy bro-  
ther too, [honour?

That for thine own gain shouldst defend mine

What means this scorn, thou most untoward  
knave? [disco-like\*\*:

*Bast.* Knight, knight, good mother,—Basi-

What! I am dubb'd; I have it on my shoulder

But, mother, I am not sir Robert's son;

I have disclaim'd sir Robert, and my land;

Legitimation, name, and all is gone:

Then, good my mother, let me know my father;

Some proper man, I hope; Who was it, mother?

*Lady F.* Hast thou denied thyself a Faulcon-  
bridge?

*Bast.* As faithfully as I deny the devil.

*Lady F.* King Richard Cœur-de-lion was  
thy father;

By long and vehement suit I was seduced

To make room for him in my husband's bed:—

Heaven lay not my transgression to my charge!

Thou art the issue of my dear offence,

Which was so strongly urged, past my defence.

*Bast.* Now, by this light, were I to get again,

Madam, I would not wish a better father.

Some sins do bear their privilege on earth,

And so doth yours; your fault was not your folly:

Needs must you lay your heart at his dispose,—

Subjected tribute to commanding love,—

Against whose fury and unmatched force,

The aweless lion could not wage the fight, hand

Nor keep his princely heart from Richard's

He, that perforce robs lions of their hearts,

May easily win a woman's. Ay, my mother,

With all my heart I thank thee for my father!

Who lives and dares but say, thou didst not well

When I was got, I'll send his soul to hell.

Come, lady, I will show thee to my kin;

And they shall say, when Richard me begot,

If thou hadst said him nay, it had been sin:

Who says it was, he lies; I say, 'twas not.

[*Ereunt.*

\* Good evening. † Respectable. ‡ Change of condition. § My travelled fop. || Catechism  
¶ Idle reports. \*\* A character in an old Drama called *Soliman and Perseda*.

## ACT II.

SCENE I. France. Before the Walls of Angiers.

*Enter, on one side, the Archduke of Austria, and Forces; on the other, PHILIP, King of France, and Forces; LEWIS, CONSTANCE, ARTHUR, and Attendants.*

*Lew.* Before Angiers well met, brave Anstria. Arthur, that great forerunner of thy blood, Richard, that robb'd the lion of his heart, And fought the holy wars in Palestine, By this brave duke came early to his grave: And, for amends to his posterity, At our importance\*, hither is he come, To spread his colours, boy, in thy behalf; And to rebuke the usurpation Of thy unnatural uncle, English John: Embrace him, love him, give him welcome hither. [death,

*Arch.* God shall forgive you Cœur-de-lion's The rather, that you give his offspring life, Shadowing their right under your wings of war: I give you welcome with a powerful hand, But with a heart full of unsained love: Welcome before the gates of Angiers, duke.

*Lew.* A noble boy! Who would not do thee right!

*Aust.* Upon thy cheek lay I this zealous kiss, As seal to this indenture of my love: That to my home I will no more return, Till Angiers, and the right thou hast in France, Together with that pale, that white-faced shore, Whose foot spurs back the ocean's roaring tides,

And coops from other lands her islanders, Eventill that England, hedg'd in with the main, That water-walled bulwark, still secure And confident from foreign purposes, Even till that utmost corner of the west Salute thee for her king: till then, fair boy, Will I not think of home, but follow arms.

*Const.* O, take his mother's thanks, a widow's thanks, [strength, Till your strong hand shall help to give him To make a more requital to your love.

*Aust.* The peace of heaven is theirs, that lift their swords

In such a just and charitable war.

*K. Phi.* well, then, to work; our cannon shall be bent

Against the brows of this resisting town.— Call for our chiefest men of discipline, To cull the plots of best advantages:— We'll lay before this town our royal bones, Wade to the market-place in Frenchmen's blood,

But we will make it subject to this boy.

*Const.* Stay for an answer to your embassy, Lest unadvised you stain your swords with blood:

My lord Chatillon may from England bring

That right in peace, which here we urge in war: And then we shall repent each drop of blood, That hot rash haste so indirectly shed.

*Enter CHATILLON.*

*K. Phi.* A wonder, lady!—lo, upon thy wish, Our messenger Chatillon is arrived.—

What England says, say briefly, gentle lord, We coldly pause for thee; Chatillon, speak.

*Chat.* Then turn your forces from this paltry siege,

And stir them up agains' a mightier task. England, impatient of your just demands, Hath put himself in arms; the adverse winds Whose leisure I have staid, have given him time To land his legions all as soon as I:

His marches are expedient † to this town, His forces strong, his soldiers confident.

With him along is come the mother-queen, And Ate ‡, stirring him to blood and strife:

With her her niece, the lady Blanch of Spain; With them a bastard of the king deceased:

And all the unsettled humours of the land,— Rash, inconsiderate, fiery voluntaries,

With ladies' faces, and fierce dragons' spleens,— Have sold their fortunes at their native homes

Bearing their birthrights proudly on their backs,

To make a hazard of new fortunes here.

In brief, a braver choice of dauntless spirits, Than now the English bottoms have wait o'er,

Did never float upon the swelling tide, To do offence and scath in Christendom.

The interruption of their churlish drums [Drums beat.

Cuts off more circumstance: they are at hand, To parley, or to fight; therefore, prepare.

*K. Phi.* How much unlook'd for is this expedition!

*Aust.* By how much unexpected, by so much We must awake endeavour for defence;

For courage mounteth with occasion: Let them be welcome, then, we are prepared.

*Enter King JOHN, ELINOR, BLANCH, the Bastard, PEMBROKE, and Forces.*

*K. John.* Peace be to France; if France in peace permit

Our just and lineal entrance to our own! If not; bleed France, and peace ascend to heaven!

Whiles we, God's wrathful agent, do correct Their proud contempt that beat his peace to heaven.

*K. Phi.* Peace be to England; if that war return From France to England, thereto live in peace!

England we love; and, for that England's sake, With burden of our armour here we sweat:

This toil of ours should be a work of thine; But thou from loving England art so far,

That thou hast underwrought † his lawful king Cut off the sequence\*\* of posterity,

Outfaced infant state, and done a rape

\* Importance. † Best stations to over-awe the town. ‡ Immediate, expeditions.  
§ The Goddess of Revenge. || Mischief. ¶ Undermined. \*\* Succession.

Upon the maiden virtue of the crown.  
Look here upon thy brother Geoffrey's face;—  
These eyes, these brows, were moulded out of  
his:

This little abstract doth contain that large,  
Which died in Geoffrey; and the hand of time  
Shall draw this brief\* into as huge a volume.  
That Geoffrey was thy elder brother born,  
And this his son; England was Geoffrey's right,  
And this is Geoffrey's: In the name of God,  
How comes it then, that thou art call'd a king,  
When living blood doth in these temples beat,  
Which owe the crown that thou o'ermasterest?

*K. John.* From whom hast thou this great  
commission, France,

To draw my answer from thy articles?

*K. Phi.* From that supernal judge, that  
stirs good thoughts

In any breast of strong authority,  
To look into the blots and stains of right.  
That judge hath made me guardian to this boy;  
Under whose warrant, I impeach thy wrong;  
And, by whose help, I mean to chastise it.

*K. John.* Alack, thou dost usurp authority.

*K. Phi.* Excuse; it is to beat usurping down.

*Eli.* Who is it thou dost call usurper, France?

*Const.* Let me make answer;—thy usurping  
son.

*Eli.* Out, insolent! thy bastard shall be king;  
That thou may'st be a queen, and check the  
world!

*Const.* My bed was ever to thy son as true,  
As thine was to thy husband: and this boy,  
Liker in feature to his father Geoffrey,  
Than thou and John in manners; being as like,  
As rain to water, or devil to his dam.

My boy a bastard! By my soul, I think,  
His father never was so true begot;  
It cannot be, an if thou wert his mother.

*Eli.* There's a good mother, boy, that blots  
thy father. [would blot thee.

*Const.* There's a good grandam, boy, that  
*Aust.* Peace!

*Bast.* Hear the crier.

*Aust.* What the devil art thou?

*Bast.* One that will play the devil, sir, with  
you,

An 'a may catch your hide and you alone.  
You are the hare of whom the proverb goes,  
Whose valour plucks dead lions by the beard;  
I'll smoke your skin-coat; an I catch you  
Sirrah, look to't; i'faith, I will, i'faith, right;

*Blanch.* Owell did he become that lion's robe,  
That did disrobe the lion of that robe!

*Bast.* It lies as sightly on the back of him,  
As great Alcides' shows upon an ass:—  
But, ass, I'll take that burden from your back,  
Or lay on that shall make your shoulders crack.

*Aust.* What cracker is this same, that deafs  
our ears

With this abundance of superfluous breath?

*K. Phi.* Lewis, determine what we shall do  
straight. [ference.—

*Lew.* Women and fools, break off your con-  
king John, this is the very sum of all,—

England, and Ireland, Anjou, Touraine, Maine,  
In right of Arthur do I claim of thee:

Wilt thou resign them, and lay down thy arms?  
*K. John.* My life as soon:—I do defy thee  
France.

Arthur of Bretagne, yield thee to my hand;  
And, out of my dear love, I'll give thee more  
Than e'er the coward hand of France can win  
Submit thee, boy.

*Eli.* Come to thy grandam, child.

*Const.* Do, child, go to it' grandam, child;  
Give grandam kingdom, and it' grandam will  
Give it a plum, a cherry, and a fig:  
There's a good grandam.

*Arth.* Good my mother, peace!

I would that I were low laid in my grave;  
I am not worth this coil; that's made for me.

*Eli.* His mother shames him so, poor boy,  
he weeps. [or no!

*Const.* Now shame upon you, whe'r|| she does  
His grandam's wrongs, and not his mother's  
shames, [poor eyes,

Draw those heaven-moving pearls from his  
Which heaven shall take in nature of a fee;  
Ay, with these crystal beads heaven shall be  
bribed

To do him justice, and revenge on you.

*Eli.* Thou monstrous slanderer of heaven  
and earth! [and earth;

*Const.* Thou monstrous injurer of heaven  
Call not me slanderer; thou, and thine, usurp  
The dominations, royalties, and rights, [son,  
Of this oppressed boy: This is thy eldest son's  
Infortunate in nothing but in thee;  
Thy sins are visited in this poor child;  
The canon of the law is laid on him,  
Being but the second generation  
Removed from thy sin-conceiving womb.

*K. John.* Beldam, have done.

*Const.* I have but this to say,—

That he's not only plagued for her sin,  
But God hath made her sin and her the plague  
On this removed issue, plagued for her,  
And with her plague, her sin; his injury  
Her injury, the beadle to her sin;  
All punish'd in the person of this child,  
And all for her; A plague upon her!

*Eli.* Thou unadvised scold, I can produce  
A will, that bars the title of thy son. [will;

*Const.* Ay, who doubts that? a will! a wicked  
A woman's will; a canker'd grandam's will!

*K. Phi.* Peace, lady; pause, or be more tem-  
perate:

It ill beseems this presence, to cry aim ¶

To these ill-tuned repetitions.—

Some trumpet summon hither to the walls  
These men of Angiers; let us hear them speak,  
Whose title they admit, Arthur's or John's.

*Trumpets sound.* Enter Citizens upon the  
walls.

1 Cit. Who is it that hath warn'd us to the  
walls?

*K. Phi.* 'Tis France, for England.

*K. John.* England, for itself.

You men of Angiers, and my loving subjects,—

\* A short writing.

† Celestial.

‡ Austria wears a lion's skin.

§ Bustle.

¶ Whether.

¶ To encourage.



*K. Phi.* You loving men of Angiers, Arthur's subjects,

Our trumpet call'd you to this gentle parle\*.

*K. John.* For our advantage;—Therefore, hear us first.—

These flags of France that are advanced here Before the eye and prospect of your tow'n, Have hither march'd to your endamagement: The cannons have their bowels full of wrath; And ready mounted are they, to spit forth Their iron indignation 'gainst your walls: All preparation for a bloody siege, And merciless proceeding by these French, Confront your city's eyes, your winking gates; And, but for our approach, those sleeping stones, That as a waist do girdle you about, By the compulsion of their ordnance By this time from their fixed beds of lime Had been dishabited, and wide havoc made For bloody power to rush upon your peace. But, on the sight of us, your lawful king,— Who painfully, with much expedient march, Have brought a countercheck before your gates, To save unscratch'd your city's threatened cheeks,—

Behold, the French, amazed, vouchsafe a parle: And now, instead of bullets wrapp'd in fire, To make a shaking fever in your walls, They shoot but calm words, folded up in smoke, To make a faithless error in your ears: Which trust accordingly, kind citizens, And let us in, your king; whose labour'd spirits, Forwearied in this action of swift speed, Crave harbourage within your city walls.

*K. Phi.* When I have said, make answer to us both.

Lo, in this right hand, whose protection Is most divinely vow'd upon the right Of him it holds, stands young Plantagenet; Son to the elder brother of this man, And king o'er him, and all that he enjoys: For this down-trodden equity, we tread In warlike march these greens before your Being no further enemy to you, [town, Than the constraint of hospitable zeal, In the relief of this oppressed child, Religiously provokes. Be pleased then To pay that duty, which you truly owe, To him that owes it; namely, this young prince: And then our arms, like to a muzzled bear, Save in aspect, have all offence seal'd up; Our cannons' malice vainly shall be spent Against the invulnerable clouds of heaven; And, with a blessed and unsex'd retire, With unhack'd swords, and helmets all unbruised, We will bear home that lusty blood again, Which here we came to spout against your town, [peace. And leave your children, wives, and you, in But if you fondly pass our proffer'd offer, 'Tis not the roundure of your old-faced walls, Can hide you from our messengers of war; Though all these English, and their discipline, Were harbour'd in their rude circumference. Then, tell us, shall your city call us lord,

In that behalf which we have challenged it? Or shall we give the signal to our rage, And stalk in blood to our possession?

*1 Cit.* In brief, we are the king of England's subjects;

For him, and in his right, we hold this town.

*K. John.* Acknowledge then the king, and let me in. [the king,

*1 Cit.* That can we not: but he that proves To him will we prove loyal; till that time, Have we ramm'd up our gates against the world. [prove the king?

*K. John.* Doth not the crown of England And, if not that, I bring you witnesses, Twice fifteen thousand hearts of England's

*Bast.* Bastards, and else. [breed,—

*K. John.* To verify our title with their lives.

*K. Phi.* As many, and as well-born bloods

*Bast.* Some bastards too. [as those,—

*K. Phi.* Stand in his face, to contradict his claim. [worthiest,

*1 Cit.* Till you compound whose right is We, for the worthiest, hold the right from both.

*K. John.* Then God forgive the sin of all those souls,

That to their everlasting residence, Before the dew of evening fall, shall fleet, In dreadful trial of our kingdom's king!

*K. Phi.* Amen, Amen!—Mount, chevaliers! to arms!— [and e'er since,

*Bast.* St. George,—that swinged the dragon, Sits on his horseback at mine hostess' door, Teach us some fence!—Sirrah, were I at home, At your den, sirrah, [To AUSTRIA] with your lioness,

I'd set an ox-head to your lion's hide, And make a monster of you.

*Aust.* Peace; no more.

*Bast.* O, tremble; for you hear the lion roar.

*K. John.* Up higher to the plain; where we'll set forth,

In best appointment, all our regiments.

*Bast.* Speed, then, to take advantage of the field. [the other hill

*K. Phi.* It shall be so;—[To LEWIS] and at Command the rest to stand.—God, and our right! [Exeunt

## SCENE II. *The same.*

*Alarums and Excursions; then a Retreat. Enter a French Herald, with trumpets, to the gates.*

*F. Her.* You men of Angiers, open wide your gates,

And let young Arthur, duke of Bretagne, in; Who, by the hand of France, this day hath made Much work for tears in many an English mother, Whose sons lie scatter'd on the bleeding ground:

Many a widow's husband grovelling lies, Coldly embracing the discolour'd earth; And victory, with little loss, doth play Upon the dancing banners of the French; Who are at hand, triumphantly display'd, To enter conquerors, and to proclaim Arthur of Bretagne, England's king, and yours.

*Enter an English Herald, with trumpets.*

*E. Her.* Rejoice, you men of Angiers, ring your bells; [proach, King John, your king and England's, doth appoint you Commander of this hot malicious day! Their armours, that march'd hence so silver-bright,

Hither return all gilt with Frenchmen's blood; There stuck no plume in any English crest, That is removed by a staff of France; Our colours do return in those same hands That did display them, when we first march'd forth;

And, like a jolly troop of huntsmen, come Our lusty English, all with purpled hands, Dyed in the dying slaughter of their foes: Open your gates, and give the victors way.

*Cit.* Heralds, from off our towers we might From first to last, the onset and retire [behold, Of both your armies; whose equality, By our best eyes cannot be censured\*: Blood hath bought blood, and blows have answer'd blows; [confronted power: Strength match'd with strength, and power

Both are alike; and both alike we like. [even, One must prove greatest: while they weigh so We hold our town for neither; yet for both.

*Enter, at one side, King JOHN, with his power; ELINOR, BLANCH, and the Bastard; at the other, King PHILIP, LEWIS, AUSTRIA, and Forces.*

*K. John.* France, hast thou yet more blood to cast away?

Say, shall the current of our right run on? Whose passage, vex'd with thy impediment, Shall leave his native channel, and o'er-swell With course disturb'd even thy confining shores; Unless thou let his silver water keep A peaceful progress to the ocean.

*K. Phil.* England, thou hast not saved one drop of blood,

In this hot trial, more than we of France; Rather, lost more: And by this hand I swear, That sways the earth this climate overlooks,— Before we will lay down our just-borne arms, We'll put thee down, 'gainst whom these arms Or add a royal number to the dead; [we bear, Gracing the scroll, that tells of this war's loss, With slaughter coupled to the name of kings.

*Bast.* Ha, majesty! how high thy glory towers, When the rich blood of kings is set on fire! O, now doth death line his dead chaps with steel;

The swords of soldiers are his teeth, his fangs; And now he feasts, mousing the flesh of men, In undetermined differences of kings.—

Why stand these royal fronts amazed thus? Cry, havoc, kings! back to the stained field, You equal potents †, fiery-kindled spirits!

Then let confusion of one part confirm [death! The other's peace; till then, blows, blood, and

*K. John.* Whose party do the townsmen yet admit? [your king?

*K. Phil.* Speak, citizens, for England; who's

*1 Cit.* The king of England, when we know the king.

*K. Phil.* Know him in us, that here hold up his right.

*K. John.* In us, that are our own great deputy, And bear possession of our person here; Lord of our presence, Angiers, and of you.

*1 Cit.* A greater power than we, denies all this; And, till it be undoubted, we do lock Our former scruple in our strong bar'd gates: King'd of our fears; until our fears, resolved, Be by some certain king purged and deposed.

*Bast.* By heaven, these scroyles ‡ of Angiers flout you, kings;

And stand securely on their battlements, As in a theatre, whence they gape and point At your industrious scenes and acts of death. Your royal presences be ruled by me;

Do like the mutines § of Jerusalem, Be friends a while, and both conjointly bend Your sharpest deeds of malice on this town: By east and west let France and England mount Their battering cannon, charged to the mouths; Till their soul-fearing clamours have brawl'd down

The flinty ribs of this contemptuous city:

I'd play incessantly upon these jades,

Even till unfenced desolation

Leave them as naked as the vulgar air.

That done, dis sever † our united strengths,

And part your mingled colours once again;

Turn face to face, and bloody point to point:

Then, in a moment, fortune shall cull forth

Out of one side her happy minion;

To whom in favour she shall give the day,

And kiss him with a glorious victory.

How like you this wild counsel, mighty states? Smacks it not something of the policy?

*K. John.* Now, by the sky that hangs above our heads, [powers,

I like it well;—France, shall we kuit our

And lay this Angiers even with the ground;

Then, after, fight who shall be king of it?

*Bast.* An if thou hast the mettle of a king,— Being wrong'd, as we are, by this peevish

Turn thou the month of thy artillery, [town,—

As we will our's, against these saucy walls:

And when that we have dash'd them to the ground,

Why, then defy each other; and, pell-mell, Make work upon ourselves, for heaven, or hell.

*K. Phil.* Let it be so:—Say, where will you assault?

*K. John.* We from the west will send Into this city's bosom. [destruction

*Aust. 1,* from the north.

*K. Phil.* Our thunder from the south, Shall rain their drift of bullets on this town.

*Bast.* O prudent discipline! From north to south,

Austria and France shoot in each other's mouth: [Aside.

I'll stir them to't: Come, away, away!

*1 Cit.* Hear us, great kings! vouchsafe a while to stay, [league;

And I shall shew you peace, and fair-faced Win you this city without stroke or wound;

Rescue those breathing lives to die in beds.

\* Judged, determined.

† Potentates.

‡ Scabby fellows.

§ Mutineers.

That here come sacrifices for the field:

Persever not, but hear me, mighty kings.

*K. John.* Speak on, with favour; we are bent to hear. [Blanch,

*1 Cit.* That daughter there of Spain, the lady Is near to England: Look upon the years Of Lewis the dauphin, and that lovely maid: If lusty love should go in quest of beauty, Where should he find it fairer than in Blanch? If zealous love should go in search of virtue, Where should he find it purer than in Blanch? If love ambitious sought a match of birth, Whose veins bound richer blood than lady Blanch?

Such as she is, in beauty, virtue, birth, Is the young dauphin every way complete: If not complete, O say, he is not she; And she again wants nothing, to name want, If want it be not, that she is not he: He is the half part of a blessed man, Left to be finished by such a she; And she a fair divided excellence, Whose fulness of perfection lies in him. O, two such silver currents, when they join, Do glorify the banks that bound them in: And two such shores to two such streams made one,

Two such controlling bounds shall you be, kings, To these two princes, if you marry them. This union shall do more than battery can, To our fast-closed gates; for, at this match, With swifter spleen† than powder can enforce, The mouth of passage shall we fling wide ope, And give you entrance; but, without this match, The sea enraged is not half so deaf, Lions more confident, mountains and rocks More free from motion; no, not death himself In mortal fury half so peremptory, As we to keep this city.

*Bast.* Here's a stay, That shakes the rotten carcass of old death Out of his rags! Here's a large mouth, indeed, That spits forth death, and mountains, rocks, and seas;

Talks as familiarly of roaring lions, As maids of thirteen do of puppy-dogs! What cannaveer begot this lusty blood? He speaks plain cannon, fire, and smoke, and bounce;

He gives the hastinado with his tongue; Our ears are cudgell'd; not a word of his, But buffets better than a fist of France: Zounds! I was never so bethump'd with words, Since I first call'd my brother's father, dad.

*Ed.* Son, list to this conjunction, make this match;

Give with our niece a dowry large enough: For by this knot thou shalt so surely tie Thy now unsured assurance to the crown, That yon green boy shall have no sun to ripe The bloom that promiseth a mighty fruit. I see a yielding in the looks of France; Mark, how they whisper: urge them, while Are capable of this ambition: [their souls Less zeal, now melted, by the windy breath Of soft petitions, pity, and remorse,

Cool and congeal again to what it was.

*1 Cit.* Why answer not the double majesties This friendly treaty of our threaten'd town?

*K. Phi.* Speak England first, that hath been forward first

To speak unto this city: What say you?

*K. John.* If that the dauphin there, thy princely son,

Can in this book of beauty read, I love, Her dowry shall weigh equal with a queen: For Anjou, and fair Touraine, Maine, Poitiers, And all that we upon this side the sea (Except this city now by us besieged) Find liable to our crown and dignity, Shall gild her bridal bed; and make her rich In titles, honours, and promotions, As she in beauty, education, blood, Holds hand with any princess of the world.

*K. Phi.* What sayst thou, boy? look in the lady's face.

*Lew.* I do, my lord, and in her eye I find A wonder, or a wondrous miracle, The shadow of myself form'd in her eye; Which, being but the shadow of your son, Becomes a sun and makes your son a shadow. I do protest, I never loved myself, Till now infixed I beheld myself, Drawn in the flattering table† of her eye.

[*Whispers with BLANCH*

*Bast.* Drawn in the flattering table of her eye!— [browl—

Hang'd in the frowning wrinkle of her And quarter'd in her heart!—he doth espy Himself love's traitor: This is pity now, That hang'd, and drawn, and quarter'd, there In such a love, so vile a lout as he. [should be, *Blanch.* My uncle's will, in this respect, is mine:

If he see aught in you, that makes him like, That any thing he sees, which moves his liking, I can with ease translate it to my will; Or, if you will, (to speak more properly,) I will enforce it easily to my love. Further I will not flatter you, my lord, That all I see in you is worthy love, Than this,—that nothing do I see in you, (Though churlish thoughts themselves should be your judge,)

That I can find should merit any hate.

*K. John.* What say these young ones? What say you, my niece? [to do

*Blanch.* That she is bound in honour still What you in wisdom shall vouchsafe to say.

*K. John.* Speak then, prince dauphin; can you love this lady?

*Lew.* Nay, ask me if I can refrain from love; For I do love her most unfeignedly.

*K. John.* Then do I give Volquessen, Touraine, Maine, Poitiers, and Anjou, these five provinces, With her to thee; and this addition more, Full thirty thousand marks of English coin.— Philip of France, if thou be pleased withal, Command thy son and daughter to join hands.

*K. Phi.* It likes us well;—Young princes close your hands.



*Aust.* And your lips too; for, I am well assured,

That I did so, when I was first assured\*.

*K. Phi.* Now, citizens of Angiers, open your gates,

Let in that amity which you have made;  
For at saint Mary's chapel, presently,  
The rites of marriage shall be solemnized.—  
Is not the lady Constance in this troop?

I know, she is not; for this match, made up,  
Her presence would have interrupted much:—  
Where is she and her son? tell me, who knows. [ness' tent.

*Lew.* She is sad and passionate† at your high-

*K. Phi.* And, by my faith, this league, that we have made,

Will give her sadness very little cure.—

Brother of England, how may we content

This widow lady? In her right we came;

Which we, God knows, have turn'd another  
To our own vantage‡. [way,

*K. John.* We will heal up all; [tagne,  
For we'll create young Arthur duke of Bre-

And earl of Richmond; and this rich fair town  
We make him lord of.—Call the lady Con-

Some speedy messenger bid her repair [tance;  
To our solemnity:—I trust we shall,

If not fill up the measure of her will,

Yet in some measure satisfy her so,

That we shall stop her exclamation.

Go we, as well as haste will suffer us,

To this unlook'd for, unprepared pomp.

[*Exeunt a l but the Bastard.—The Citizens retire from the walls.*

*Bast.* Mad world! mad kings! mad composition!

John, to stop Arthur's title in the whole,

Hath willingly departed with a part:

And France, (whose armour conscience buckled  
Whom zeal and charity brought to the field, [on;  
As God's own soldier,) rounded § in the ear  
With that same purpose-changer, that sly devil;  
That broker, that still breaks the pate of faith;  
That daily break-vow; he that wins of all,  
Of kings, of beggars, old men, young men,  
maids;—

Who having no external thing to lose

But the word maid,—cheats the poor maid of  
that; [modity ||;—

That smooth-faced gentleman, tickling com-

Modesty, the bias of the world;

The world, who of itself is peised ¶ well,

Made to run even, upon even ground;

Till this advantage, this vile drawing bias,

This sway of motion, this commodity,

Makes it take head from all indifference,  
From all direction, purpose, course, intent:

And this same bias, this commodity,

This bawd, this broker, this all-changing word,  
Clapp'd on the outward eye of fickle France,

Hath drawn him from his own determined aid,  
From a resolved and honourable war,

To a most base and vile-concluded peace.—

And why rail I on this commodity?  
But for because he hath not woo'd me yet:

Not that I have the power to clutch\*\* my hand,  
When his fair angels†† would salute my palm:

But for my hand, as unattempted yet,  
Like a poor beggar, raileth on the rich.

Well, whiles I am a beggar, I will rail,

And say—there is no sin, but to be rich;

And being rich, my virtue then shall be,

To say,—there is no vice, but beggary:

Since kings break faith upon commodity,

Gain, be my lord! for I will worship thee!  
[*Exit.*

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *The same. The French King's Tent.*

*Enter CONSTANCE, ARTHUR, & SALISBURY.*

*Const.* Gone to be married! gone to swear  
a peace! [friends!

False blood to false blood join'd! Gone to be  
Shall Lewis have Blanch? and Blanch those  
provinces?

It is not so; thou hast misspoke, misheard;

Be well advised, tell o'er thy tale again:

It cannot be; thou dost but say, 'tis so:

I trust, I may not trust thee; for thy word

Is but the vain breath of a common man:

Believe me, I do not believe thee, man;

I have a king's oath to the contrary.

Thou shalt be punish'd for thus frightening me,

For I am sick, and capable ‡ of fears; [fears;

Oppress'd with wrongs, and therefore full of

A widow, husbandless, subject to fears;

A woman, naturally born to fears; [jest,

And though thou now confess, thou didst but

With my vex'd spirits I cannot take a truce,

But they will quake and tremble all this day.

What dost thou mean by shaking of thy head?

Why dost thou look so sadly on my son?

What means that hand upon that breast of thine?

Why hold'st thine eye that lamentable rheum,

Like a proud river peering § o'er his bounds?

Be these sad signs confirmers of thy words?

Then speak again; not all thy former tale,

But this one word, whether thy tale be true.

*Sal.* As true, as, I believe, you think them  
false,

That give you cause to prove my saying true.

*Const.* O, if thou teach me to believe this  
sorrow,

Teach thou this sorrow how to make me die

And let belief and life encounter so,

As doth the fury of two desperate men,

Which, in the very meeting, fall, and die.—

Lewis marry Blanch! O, boy, then where art  
thou? [of me!—

France friend with England! what becomes

Fellow, be gone; I cannot brook thy sight;

This news hath made thee a most ugly man.

\* Allienced.

† Mournful.

‡ Advantage.

§ Conspired.

|| Interest.

¶ Poised, balanced

\*\* Clasp.

†† Coin.

‡‡ Susceptible.

§§ Appearing.

*Sal.* What other harm have I, good lady, done,

But spoke the harm that is by others done?

*Const.* Which harm within itself so heinous is, As it makes harmful all that speak of it.

*Arth.* I do beseech you, madam, be content.

*Const.* If thou, that bidd'st me be content, wert grim,

Ugly, and slanderous to thy mother's womb, Full of unpleasing blots, and sightless \* stains, Lame, foolish, crooked, swart, prodigious †, Patch'd with foul moles, and eye-offending marks,

I would not care, I then would be content; For then I should not love thee; no, nor thou Become thy great birth, nor deserve a crown. But thou art fair; and at thy birth, dear boy! Nature and fortune join'd to make thee great: Of nature's gifts thou may'st with lilies boast, And with the half-blown rose: but fortune, O! She is corrupted, changed, and won from thee; She adulterates hourly with thine uncle John; And with her golden hand hath pluck'd on France

To tread down fair respect of sovereignty, And made his majesty the bawd to theirs. France is a bawd to fortune, and king John; That strumpet fortune, that usurping John:— Tell me, thou fellow, is not France forsworn? Envenom him with words; or get thee gone, And leave those woes alone, which I alone Am bound to under-bear.

*Sal.* Pardon me, madam, I may not go without you to the kings.

*Const.* Thou may'st, thou shalt, I will not go with thee:

I will instruct my sorrows to be proud; For grief is proud, and makes his owner stout. To me, and to the state ‡ of my great grief, Let kings assemble; for my grief's so great, That no supporter but the huge firm earth Can hold it up: here I and sorrow sit; Here is my throne, bid kings come bow to it.

[*She throws herself on the ground.*]

*Enter* King JOHN, King PHILIP, LEWIS, BLANCH, ELINOR, Bastard, AUSTRIA, and Attendants.

*K. Phil.* 'Tis true, fair daughter; and this blessed day,

Ever in France shall be kept festival: To solemnize this day, the glorious sun Stays in his course, and plays the alchemist; Tuning, with splendour of his precious eye, The meagre cloddy earth to glittering gold: The yearly course, that brings this day about, Shall never see it but a holyday.

*Const.* A wicked day, and not a holyday!—

[*Rising.*]

What hath this day deserved? what hath it That it in golden letters should be set, [done; Among the high tides §, in the kalendar? Nay, rather, turn this day out of the week; This day of shame, oppression, perjury: Or, if it must stand still, let wives with child Pray, that their burdens may not fall this day, Lest that their hopes prodigiously be cross'd:

But on this day, let seamen fear no wreck; No bargains break, that are not this day made: This day, all things begun come to ill end; Yea, faith itself to hollow falsehood change!

*K. Phil.* By heaven, lady, you shall have no cause

To curse the fair proceedings of this day: Have I not pawn'd to you my majesty?

*Const.* You have beguiled me with a counterfeit, [and tried, Resembling majesty; which, being touch'd, Proves valueless: You are forsworn, forsworn; You came in arms to spill mine enemies' blood, But now in arms you strengthen it with yours: The grappling vigour and rough frown of war, Is cold in amity and painted peace, And our oppression hath made up this league:— Arm, arm, you heavens, against these perjured kings!

A widow cries; be husband to me, heavens! Let not the hours of this ungodly day Wear out the day in peace; but, ere sunset, Set armed discord 'twixt these perjured kings! Hear me, O, hear me!

*Aust.* Lady Constance, peace.

*Const.* War! war! no peace! peace is to me a war.

O Lymoges! O Austria! thou dost shame That bloody spoil: Thou slave, thou wretch, thou coward;

Thou little valiant, great in villany! Thou ever strong upon the stronger side! Thou fortune's champion, that dost never fight But when her humours ladyship is by To teach thee safety! thou art perjured too, And sooth'st up greatness. What a fool art thou, A ramping fool; to brag, and stamp, and swear, Upon my party! Thou cold-blooded slave, Hast thou not spoke like thunder on my side? Been sworn my soldier? bidding me depend Upon thy stars, thy fortune, and thy strength? And dost thou now fall over to my foes? Thou wear a lion's hide! doff || it for shame, And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs.

*Aust.* O, that a man should speak those words to me! [creant limbs.

*Bast.* And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs. Thou dar'st not say so, villain, for thy life. [creant limbs

*Bast.* And hang a calf's-skin on those recreant limbs. We like not this; thou dost forget thyself.

*Enter* PANDULPH.

*K. Phil.* Here comes the holy legate of the pope. [ven:—

*Pand.* Hail, you anointed deputies of heaven! To thee, king John, my holy errand is. I, Pandulph, of fair Milan cardinal, And from pope Innocent the legate here, Do, in his name, religiously demand, Why thou against the church, our holy motner So wilfully dost spurn; and, force perforce, Keep Stephen Langton, chosen archbishop Of Canterbury, from that holy see? This, in our foresaid holy father's name. Pope Innocent, I do demand of thee.

\* Unightly. † Portentous. ‡ Seated in state. § Solemn seasons. || Do off.

*K. John.* What earthly name to interrogatories,

Can task the free breath of a sacred king?  
Thou canst not, cardinal, devise a name  
So slight, unworthy, and ridiculous,  
To charge me to an answer, as the pope. [land,  
Tell him this tale; and from the mouth of Eng-  
Add thus much more,—That no Italian priest  
Shall tithe or toll in our dominions;  
But as we under heaven are supreme head,  
So under him, that great supremacy,  
Where we do reign, we will alone uphold,  
Without the assistance of a mortal hand:  
So tell the pope: all reverence set apart,  
To him and his usurp'd authority.

*K. Phi.* Brother of England, you blasphemers in this. [Christendom,

*K. John.* Though you, and all the kings of  
Are led so grossly by this meddling priest,  
Dreading the curse that money may buy out;  
And, by the merit of vile gold, dross, dust,  
Purchase corrupted pardon of a man,  
Who, in that sale, sells pardon from himself:  
Though you, and all the rest, so grossly led,  
This juggling witchcraft with revenue cherish;  
Yet I, alone, alone do me oppose  
Against the pope, and count his friends my foes.

*Pand.* I hen, by the lawful power that I have,  
Thou shalt stand cursed, and excommunicate:  
And blessed shall he be, that doth revolt  
From his allegiance to an heretic;  
And meritorious shall that hand be call'd,  
Canonized, and worshipp'd as a saint,  
That takes away by any secret course  
Thy hateful life.

*Const.* O, lawful let it be,  
That I have room with Rome to curse a while!  
Good father cardinal, cry thou, amen,  
To my keen curses; for, without my wrong,  
There is no tongue hath power to curse him right.

*Pand.* There's law and warrant, lady, for my curse. [no right,

*Const.* And for mine too; when law can do  
Let it be lawful, that law bar no wrong:  
Law cannot give my child his kingdom here;  
For he that holds his kingdom, holds the law:  
Therefore, since law itself is perfect wrong,  
How can the law forbid my tongue to curse?

*Pand.* Philip of France, on peril of a curse,  
Let go the hand of that arch-heretic;  
And raise the power of France upon his head,  
Unless he do submit himself to Rome.

*Eli.* Lookst thou pale, France? do not let go thy hand. [repent,

*Const.* Look to that, devil! lest that France  
Aud, by disjoining hands, hell lose a soul.

*Aust.* King Philip, listen to the cardinal.

*Bast.* And hang a calf's-skin on his recreant limbs. [wrongs,

*Aust.* Well, ruffian, I must pocket up these  
Because—

*Bast.* Your breeches best may carry them.

*K. John.* Philip, what sayst thou to the cardinal?

*Const.* What should he say, but as the cardinal?

*Lew.* Bethink you, father; for the difference  
Is, purchase of a heavy curse from Rome,  
Or the light loss of England for a friend:  
Forego the easier.

*Blanch.* That's the curse of Rome.

*Const.* O, Lewis, stand fast; the devil tempts thee here,

In likeness of a new untrimmed \* bride.

*Blanch.* The lady Constance speaks not from  
But from her need. [her faith,

*Const.* O, if thou grant my need,  
Which only lives but by the death of faith,  
That need must needs infer this principle,—  
That faith would live again by death of need;  
O, then, tread down my need, and faith  
mounts up;

Keep my need up, and faith is trodden down.

*K. John.* The king is moved, and answers  
not to this. [well,

*Const.* O, be removed from him, and answer

*Aust.* Do so, king Philip; hang no more in  
doubt. [sweet lout.

*Bast.* Hang nothing but a calf's-skin, most

*K. Phi.* I am perplex'd, and know not what  
to say. [thee more,

*Pand.* What canst thou say, but will perplex  
If thou stand excommunicate and cursed?

*K. Phi.* Good reverend father, make my  
person yours,

And tell me, how you would bestow yourself.  
This royal hand and mine are newly knit;  
And the conjunction of our inward souls  
Married in league, coupled and link'd together  
With all religious strength of sacred vows;  
The latest breath that gave the sound of words,  
Was deep-sworn faith, peace, amity, true love,  
Between our kingdoms and our royal selves;  
And even before this truce, but new before,—  
No longer than we well could wash our hands,  
To clap this royal bargain up of peace,—  
Heaven knows, they were, besmear'd and over-  
stain'd [paint

With slaughter's pencil; where revenge did  
The fearful difference of incensed kings:—  
And shall these hands, so lately purged of blood,  
So newly join'd in love, so strong in both,  
Unyoke this seizure, and this kind regret?  
Play fast and loose with faith? so jest with  
heaven,

Make such unconstant children of ourselves,  
As now again to snatch our palm from palm;  
Unswear faith sworn; and on the marriage bed  
Of smiling peace to march a bloody host,  
And make a riot on the gentle brow  
Of true sincerity? O, holy sir,  
My reverend father, let it not be so:  
Out of your grace, devise, ordain, impose  
Some gentle order; and then we shall be bless'd  
To do your pleasure, and continue friends.

*Pand.* All form is formless, order orderless,  
Save what is opposite to England's love.  
Therefore, to arms! be champion of our church!  
Or let the church, our mother, breathe her curse,

\* "When unadorn'd adorn'd the most."—*Thomson's Autumn*, 206.

† Exchange of salutation.



A mother's curse, on her revolting son.  
 France, thou mayst hold a serpent by the tongue,  
 A cased lion by the mortal paw,  
 A fasting tiger safer by the tooth, [hold.  
 Than keep in peace that hand which thou dost  
*K. Phi.* I may disjoin my hand, but not my  
 faith. [faith;

*Pand.* So makest thou faith an enemy to  
 And, like a civil war, set'st oath to oath,  
 Thy tongue against thy tongue. O, let thy vow  
 First made to heaven, first be to heaven per-  
 form'd;

That is, to be the champion of our church!  
 What since thou sworest, is sworn against thy-  
 And may not be performed by thyself: [self,  
 For that, which thou hast sworn to do amiss,  
 Is not amiss when it is truly done;  
 And being not done, where doing tends to ill,  
 The truth is then most done not doing it:  
 The better act of purposes mistook  
 Is, to mistake again; though indirect,  
 Yet indirection thereby grows direct, [fire,  
 And falsehood falsehood cures; as fire cools  
 Within the scorched veins of one new burn'd.  
 It is religion, that doth make vows kept;  
 But thou hast sworn against religion;  
 By what thou swear'st, against the thing thou  
 swear'st;

And makest an oath the surety for thy truth  
 Against an oath: The truth thou art unsure  
 To swear, swear only not to be forsworn;  
 Else, what a mockery should it be to swear?  
 But thou dost swear only to be forsworn:  
 And most forsworn, to keep what thou dost  
 swear.

Therefore, thy latter vows, against thy first,  
 Is in thyself rebellion to thyself:  
 And better conquest never canst thou make,  
 Than arm thy constant and thy nobler parts  
 Against those giddy loose suggestions:  
 Upon which better part our prayers come in,  
 If thou vouchsafest them: but, if not, then know,  
 The peril of our curses light on thee;  
 So heavy, as thou shalt not shake them off,  
 But, in despair, die under their black weight.

*Aust.* Rebellion, flat rebellion!

*Bast.* Will't not be?

Will not a calf's-skin stop that mouth of thine?  
*Lew.* Father, to arms!

*Blanch.* Upon thy wedding day?  
 Against the blood that thou hast married?  
 What, shall our feast be kept with slaughter'd  
 men? [drums.—

Shall braying trumpets, and loud churlish  
 Clamours of hell,—be measures \* to our pomp?  
 O, husband, hear me!—ah, alack! how new  
 Is husband in my mouth!—even for that name,  
 Which till this time my tongue did ne'er pro-  
 Upon my knee I beg, go not to arms [nounce,  
 Against mine uncle.

*Const.* O, upon my knee,  
 Made hard with kneeling, I do pray to thee,  
 Thou virtuous Daphnion, alter not the doom  
 Fore-thought by heaven. [motive may

*Blanch.* Now shall I see thy love: What  
 Be stronger with thee than the name of wife?

*Const.* That which upholdeth him that thee  
 upholds, [honour!  
 His honour: O, thine honour, Lewis, thine  
*Lew.* I muse, your majesty doth seem so cold,  
 When such profound respects do pull you on.  
*Pand.* I will denounce a curse upon his head.  
*K. Phi.* Thou shalt not need:—England, I'll  
 fall from thee.

*Const.* O fair return of banish'd majesty!  
*Eli.* O foul revolt of French inconstancy!  
*K. John.* France, thou shalt rue this hour  
 within this hour. [sexton time,

*Bast.* Old time the clock-setter, that bald  
 Is it as he will? well then, France shall rue.

*Blanch.* The sun's o'ercast with blood: Fair  
 day, adieu!

Which is the side that I must go withal?  
 I am with both: each army hath a hand;  
 And, in their rage, I having hold of both,  
 They whirl asunder, and dismember me.  
 Husband, I cannot pray that thou mayst win;  
 Uncle, I needs must pray that thou mayst lose;  
 Father, I may not wish the fortune thine;  
 Grandam, I will not wish thy wishes thrive:  
 Whoever wins, on that side shall I lose;  
 Assured loss, before the match be play'd.

*Lew.* Lady, with me; with me thy fortune  
 lies. [there my life dies.

*Blanch.* There where my fortune lives,  
*K. John.* Cousin, go draw our puissance †  
 together. [Exit Bastard.

France, I am burn'd up with inflaming wrath;  
 A rage, whose heat hath this condition,  
 That nothing can allay, nothing but blood,  
 The blood, and dearest-valued blood, of France.

*A. Phi.* Thy rage shall burn thee up, and  
 thou shalt turn

To ashes, ere our blood shall quench that fire:  
 Lock to thyself, thou art in jeopardy.

*K. John.* No more than he that threatens.—  
 To arms let's hie! [Exeunt.

SCENE II. *The same. Plains near Angiers.*

*Alarums, Excursions. Enter the Bastard,  
 with AUSTRIA'S Head.*

*Bast.* Now, by my life, this day grows  
 wondrous hot;

Some airy devil hovers in the sky,  
 And pours down mischief. Austria's head lie  
 While Philip breathes. [there:

*Enter King JOHN, ARTHUR, and HUBERT.*

*K. John.* Hubert, keep this boy:—Philip,  
 My mother is assailed in our tent, [make up:  
 And t'en, I fear.

*Bast.* My lord, I rescued her;  
 Her highness is in safety, fear you not:  
 But on, my dege: for very little pains  
 Will bring this labour to an happy end.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III. *The same.*

*Alarums; Excursions; Retreat. Enter  
 King JOHN, ELINOR, ARTHUR, the Bas-  
 tard, HUBERT, and Lords.*

*K. John.* So shall it be; your grace shall  
 stay behind, [To ELINOR,

\* Music for dancing.

† Wonder.

‡ Force.

So strongly guarded.—Cousin, look not sad:

[To ARTHUR.

Thy grandam loves thee, and thy uncle will  
As dear be to thee as thy father was. [grief.

Arth. O, this will make my mother die wit

K. John. Cousin, [To the Bastard.] away for  
England; haste before:

And, ere our coming, see thou shake the bags  
Of hoarding abbots: angels\* imprisoned  
Set thou at liberty: the fat ribs of peace  
Must by the hungry now be fed upon:  
Use our commission in his utmost force.

Bast. Bell, book, and candle shall not drive  
me back;

When gold and silver beckns me to come on.  
I leave your highness:—Grandam, I will pray  
(If ever I remember to be holy,)

For your fair safety; so I kiss your hand.

Eli. Farewell, my gentle cousin.

K. John. Coz, farewell. [Exit Bastard.

Eli. Come hither, little kinsman: hark, a  
word. [She takes ARTHUR aside.

K. John. Come hither, Hubert. O, my  
gentle Hubert,

We owe thee much; within this wall of flesh  
There is a soul counts thee her creditor,  
And with advantage means to pay thy love:  
And, my good friend, thy voluntary oath  
Lives in this bosom, dearly cherished.  
Give me thy hand. I had a thing to say,—  
But I will fit it with some better time.  
By heaven, Hubert, I am almost ashamed  
To say what good respect I have of thee.

Hub. I am much bounden to your majesty.

K. John. Good friend, thou hast no cause  
to say so yet; [slow,

But thou shalt have; and creep time ne'er so  
Yet it shall come, for me to do thee good.  
I had a thing to say,—But let it go:

The sun is in the heaven, and the proud day,  
Attended with the pleasures of the world,  
Is all too wanton, and too full of gaw st,  
To give me audience:—If the midnight bell  
Did, with his iron tongue and brazen mouth,  
Sound one unto the drowsy race of night;  
If this same were a church-yard where we  
stand,

And thou possessed with a thousand wrongs;  
Or if that surly spirit, melancholy,  
Had baked thy blood, and made it heavy,  
thick; [veins,

(Which, else, runs tickling up and down the  
Making that idiot, laughter, keep men's eyes,  
And strain their cheeks to idle merriment,  
A passion hateful to my purposes:)

Or if that thou couldst see me without eyes,  
Hear me without thine ears, and make reply  
Without a tongue, using conceit alone,  
Without eyes, ears, and harmful sound of words;  
Then, in despite of brooded watchful day,  
I would into thy bosom pour my thoughts:  
But, ah, I will not:—Yet I love thee well;  
And, by my troth, I think, thou lovest me well.

Hub. So well, that what you bid me under-  
take,

though that my death were adjunct to my  
By heaven, I'd do't. [act,

K. John. Do not I know, thou wouldst?  
Good Hubert, Hubert, Hubert, throw thine eye  
On yon young boy: I'll tell thee what, my  
He is a very serpent in my way; [friend,  
And, wheresoe'er this foot of mine doth tread,  
He lies before me: Dost thou understand me?  
Thou art his keeper.

Hub. And I will keep him so,  
That he shall not offend your majesty.

K. John. Death.

Hub. My lord?

K. John. A grave.

Hub. He shall not live.

K. John. Enough.

I could be merry now: Hubert, I love thee;  
Well, I'll not say what I intend for thee:  
Remember.—Madam, fare you well:  
I'll send those powers o'er to your majesty.

Eli. My blessing go with thee!

K. John. For England, cousin:  
Hubert shall be your man, attend on you  
With all true duty.—On toward Calais, ho!

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV. The same. The French King's  
Tent.

Enter King PHILIP, LEWIS, PANDULPH, and  
Attendants.

K. Phi. So, by a roaring tempest on the flood,  
A whole armada of convicted sail  
Is scatter'd and disjoin'd from fellowship.

Pand. Courage and comfort! all shall yet  
go well. [run so ill?

K. Phi. What can go well, when we have  
Are we not beaten? Is not Angiers lost?  
Arthur ta'en prisoner? divers dear friends  
slain?

And bloody England into England gone,  
O'erbearing interruption, spite of France?

Lew. What he hath won, that hath he for-  
tified:

So hot a speed with such advice disposed,  
Such temperate order in so fierce a cause,  
Doth want example: Who hath read, or heard,  
Of any kindred action like to this?

K. Phi. Well could I bear that England had  
this praise,

So we could find some pattern of our shame

Enter CONSTANCE.

Look, who comes here! a grave unto a soul;  
Holding the eternal spirit, against her will,  
In the vile prison of afflicted breath:—  
I prithee, lady, go away with me.

Const. Lo, now! now see the issue of your  
peace! [Constance!

K. Phi. Patience, good lady! comfort, gentle  
Const. No, I defy \*\* all counsel, all redress  
But that which ends all counsel, true redress  
Death, death:—O amiable lovely death!

Thou odoriferous stench! sound rottenness!  
Arise forth from the couch of lasting night,

Thou hate and terror to prosperity,  
And I will kiss thy detestable bones;

\* Gold coin.

† Showy ornaments.

‡ Conception.

§ Joined.

↓ Fleet of war.

¶ Overcome.

\*\* Refuse.

And put my eye-balls in thy vaulty brows;  
And ring these fingers with thy household  
worms; [dust.  
And stop this gap of breath with fulsome  
And be a carrion monster like thyself: [est.  
Come, grin on me; and I will think thou smil-  
And buss thee as thy wife! Misery's love,  
O, come to mel

*K. Phi.* O, fair affliction, peace.

*Const.* No, no, I will not, having breath to  
cry:— [mouth!

O, that my tongue were in the thunder's  
hen with a passion would I shake the world;  
And rouse from sleep that fell anatomy,  
Which cannot hear a lady's feeble voice,  
Which scorns a modern \* invocation. [sorrow.

*Pand.* Lady, you utter madness, and not

*Const.* Thou art not holy to belie me so;

I am not mad: this hair I tear is mine;  
My name is Constance; I was Geoffrey's wife;  
Young Arthur is my son, and he is lost:  
I am not mad;—I would to heaven, I were!  
For then, 'tis like I should forget myself:  
O, if I could, what grief should I forget!—  
Preach some philosophy to make me mad,  
And thou shalt be canonized, cardinal;  
For, being not mad, but sensible of grief,  
My reasonable part produces reason  
How I may be deliver'd of these woes,  
And teaches me to kill or hang myself:  
If I were mad, I should forget my son;  
Or madly think, a babe of clouts were he;  
I am not mad: too well, too well I feel  
The different plague of each calamity.

*K. Phi.* Bind up those tresses; O, what love  
In the fair multitude of those her hairs! [I note  
Where but by chance a silver drop hath fallen,  
Even to that drop ten thousand wiry friends  
Do glew themselves in sociable grief;  
Like true, inseparable, faithful loves,  
Sticking together in calamity.

*Const.* To England, if you will.

*K. John.* Bind up your hairs.

*Const.* Yes, that I will; and wherefore will  
I do it?

I tore them from their bonds; and cried aloud,  
O that these hands could so redeem my son,  
As they have given these hairs their liberty!  
But now I envy at their liberty,  
And will again commit them to their bonds,  
Because my poor child is a prisoner.—  
And, father cardinal, I have heard you say,  
That we shall see and know our friends in hea-  
If that be true, I shall see my boy again; [ven;  
For, since the birth of Cain, the first male  
To him that did but yesterday aspire, [child,  
There was not such a gracious creature born.  
Put now will canker sorrow eat my bud,  
And chase the native beauty from his cheek,  
And he will look as hollow as a ghost;  
As dim and meagre as an ague's fit;  
And so he'll die; and, rising so again,  
When I shall meet him in the court of heaven  
I shall not know him: therefore never, never  
Must I behold my pretty Arthur more [grief.

*Pand.* You hold too heinous a respect of

*Const.* He talks to me, that never had a son.

*K. Phi.* You are as fond of grief, as of  
your child. [child,

*Const.* Grief fills the room up of my absent  
Lies in his bed, walks up and down with me;  
Puts on his pretty looks, repeats his words,  
Remembers me of all his gracious parts,  
Stuffs out his vacant garments with his form;  
Then, have I reason to be fond of grief.  
Fare you well: had you such a loss as I,  
I could give better comfort than you do.—  
I will not keep this form upon my head,

[Tearing off her head-dress.

When there is such disorder in my wit.

O lord, my boy, my Arthur, my fair son!

My life, my joy, my food, my all the world!

My widow-comfort, and my sorrow's cure.

[Exit.

*K. Phi.* I fear some outrage, and I'll follow  
her. [Exit.

*Lew.* There's nothing in this world can mak  
Life is as tedious as a twice-told tale, [me joy:  
Vexing the dull ear of a drowsy man;  
And bitter shame hath spoil'd the sweet world's  
taste, [ness.

That it yields nought, but shame, and bitter-

*Pand.* Before the curing of a strong disease

Even in the instant of repair and health,

The fit is strongest; evils, that take leave,

On their departure most of all show evil:

What have you lost by losing of this day?

*Lew.* All days of glory, joy, and happiness.

*Pand.* If you had won it, certainly, you  
have. [good,

No, no; when fortune means to men most  
She looks upon them with a threatening eye.

'Tis strange, to think how much king John  
hath lost

In this which he accounts so clearly won:

Are not you grieved, that Arthur is his pri-  
soner?

*Lew.* As heartily, as he is glad he hath him.

*Pand.* Your mind is all as youthful as your  
blood.

Now hear me speak, with a prophetic spirit;  
For even the breath of what I mean to speak

Shall blow each dust, each straw, each little rub,

Out of the path which shall directly lead

Thy foot to England's throne; and, therefore,  
mark.

John hath seized Arthur; and it cannot be,  
That, whilst warm life plays in that infant's

veins,

The misplaced John should entertain an hour,

One minute, nay, one quiet breath of rest:

A sceptre, snatch'd with an unruly hand,

Must be as loisterously maintain'd as gain'd:

And he, that stands upon a slippery place,

Makes nice of no vile hold to stay him up:

That John may stand, then Arthur needs must

So be it, for it cannot be but so. [fall;

*Lew.* But what shall I gain by young Ar-  
thur's fall? [your wife,

*Pand.* You, in the right of lady Blanch  
May then make all the claim that Arthur did.

*Lew.* And lose it, life and all, as Arthur did.



*Pand.* How green are you, and fresh in this old world! [you:  
John lays you plots; the times conspire with  
For he, that steeps his safety in true blood,  
Shall find but bloody safety, and untrue.  
This act, so evilly born, shall cool the hearts  
Of all his people, and freeze up their zeal;  
That none so small advantage shall step forth,  
To check his reign, but they will cherish it:  
No natural exhalation in the sky,  
No scape of nature, no distemper'd day,  
No common wind, no custom'd event,  
But they will pluck away his natural cause,  
And call them meteors, prodigies, and signs,  
Abortives, présages, and tongues of heaven,  
Plainly denouncing vengeance upon John.

*Lew.* May be, he will not touch young Arthur's life,  
But hold himself safe in his prisonment.

*Pand.* O, sir, when he shall hear of your approach,  
If that young Arthur be not gone already,

Even at that news he dies: and then the hearts  
Of all his people shall revolt from him,  
And kiss the lips of unacquainted change;  
And pick strong matter of revolt, and wrath,  
Out of the bloody fingers' ends of John.  
Methinks, I see this hurly all on foot;  
And, O, what better matter breeds for you,  
Than I have named!—The bastard Faulcon-  
bridge

Is now in England, ransacking the church,  
Offending charity: If but a dozen French  
Were there in arms, they would be as a call  
To train ten thousand English to their side;  
Or, as a little snow, tumbled about,  
Anon becomes a mountain. O, noble dauphin,  
Go with me to the king: 'Tis wonderful,  
What may be wrought out of their discontent:  
Now that their souls are topfull of offence,  
For England go; I will whet on the king.

*Lew.* Strong reasons make strong actions,  
Let us go;

If you say, ay, the king will not say, no. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. Northampton. A Room in the Castle.

*Enter HUBERT and two Attendants.*

*Hub.* Heat me these irons hot; and, look thou stand  
Within the arras\*: when I strike my foot  
Upon the bosom of the ground, rush forth:  
And bind the boy, which you shall find with me,  
Fast to the chair: be heedful: hence, and watch.  
*1 Attend.* I hope your warrant will bear out the deed.

*Hub.* Uncleanly scruples! Fear not you: look to't.— [*Exeunt Attendants.*  
Young lad, come forth; I have to say with you.

*Enter ARTHUR.*

*Arth.* Good morrow, Hubert.

*Hub.* Good morrow, little prince.  
*Arth.* As little prince (having so great a title  
To be more prince) as may be.—You are sad.  
*Hub.* Indeed, I have been merrier.

*Arth.* Mercy on me!  
Methinks nobody should be sad but I:  
Yet, I remember, when I was in France,  
Young gentlemen would be as sad as night,  
Only for wantonness. By my christendom,  
So I were out of prison, and kept sheep,  
I should be as merry as the day is long;  
And so I would be here, but that I doubt  
My uncle practises more harm to me:  
He is afraid of me, and I of him:  
Is it my fault that I was Geoffrey's son?  
No, indeed, is't not: And I would to heaven,  
I were your son, so you would love me, Hubert.

*Hub.* If I talk to him, with his innocent prate  
He will awake my mercy, which lies dead:  
Therefore will besudden, and despatch. [*Aside.*

*Arth.* Are you sick, Hubert? you look pale to-day:  
In sooth, I would you were a little sick;

That I might sit all night, and watch with you:  
I warrant, I love you more than you do me.

*Huo.* His words do take possession of my bosom.—

Read here, young Arthur. [*Shewing a paper.*  
How now, foolish rheum! [*Aside.*

Turning spiteous torture out of door!  
I must be brief, lest resolution drop  
Out at mine eyes, in tender womanish tears.—  
Can you not read it? is it not fair writ?

*Arth.* Too fairly, Hubert, for so foul effect:  
Must you with hot irons burn out both mine eyes!

*Hub.* Young boy, I must.

*Arth.* And will you?

*Hub.* And I will.  
*Arth.* Have you the heart? When your head  
did but ache,

I knit my handkerchief about your brows,  
(The best I had, a princess wrought it me,)  
And I did never ask it you again:  
And with my hand at midnight held your head;  
And, like the watchful minutes to the hour,  
Still and anon cheer'd up the heavy time;  
Saying, What lack you? and, Where lies your  
grief?

Or, What good love may I perform for you?  
Many a poor man's son would have lain still,  
And ne'er have spoke a loving word to you;  
But you at your sick service had a prince.  
Nay, you may think my love was crafty love,  
And call it cunning; do, an if you will:  
If heaven be pleased that you must use me ill,  
Why, then you must.—Will you put out mine  
eyes?

These eyes, that never did, nor never shall,  
So much as frown on you?

*Hub.* I have sworn to do it;  
And with hot irons must I burn them out.

*Arth.* Ah, none, but in this iron age, would  
The iron of itself, though heat red hot, [do it]

Approaching near these eyes, would drink my  
And quench his fiery indignation [tears,  
Even in the matter of mine innocence:  
Nay, after that, consume away in rust,  
But for containing fire to harm mine eye.  
Are you more stubborn-hard than hammer'd  
An if an angel should have come to me, [iron?  
Auc told me, Hubert should put out mine eyes,  
I would not have believed no tongue, but  
Hubert's.

Hub. Come forth. [Stamps.

Re-enter Attendants, with Cord, Irons, &c.  
Do as I bid you do. [eyes are out,

Arth. O, save me, Hubert, save me! my  
Even with the fierce looks of these bloody men.

Hub. Give me the iron, I say, and bind him  
here. [rough?

Arth. Alas, what need you be so boist'rous-  
I will not struggle, I will stand stone-still.  
For heaven's sake, Hubert, let me not be  
bound;

Nay, hear me, Hubert, drive these men away!  
And I will sit as quiet as a lamb;  
I will not stir, nor wince, nor speak a word,  
Nor look upon the iron angrily: [you,  
Thrust but these men away, and I'll forgive  
Whatever torment you do put me to. [him.

Hub. Go, stand within; let me alone with  
I Attend. I am best pleased to be from such  
a deed. [Exeunt Attendants.

Arth. Alas! I then have chid away my  
friend;

He hath a stern look, but a gentle heart:—  
Let him come back, that his compassion may  
Give life to yours.

Hub. Come, boy, prepare yourself.

Arth. Is there no remedy?

Hub. None, but to lose your eyes.

Arth. O heaven!—that there were but a  
mote in yours,

A grain, a dust, a gnat, a wand'ring hair,  
Any annoyance in that precious sense! [there,  
Then, feeling what small things are boist'rous  
Your vile intent must needs seem horrible.

Hub. Is this your promise? go to, hold  
your tongue. [tongues

Arth. Hubert, the utterance of a brace of  
Must needs want pleading for a pair of eyes:  
Let me not hold my tongue; let me not,  
Hubert!

Or, Hubert, if you will, cut out my tongue,  
So I may keep mine eyes; O, spare mine eyes;  
Though to no use, but still to look on you!  
Lo, by my troth, the instrument is cold,  
And would not harm me.

Hub. I can heat it, boy.

Arth. No, in good sooth; the fire is dead with  
Being create for comfort, to be used [grief,  
In undeserv'd extremes\*: See else yourself;  
There is no malice in this burning coal;  
The breath of heaven hath blown his spirit out,  
And strew'd repentant ashes on his head.

Hub. But with my breath I can revive it, boy,

Arth. And if you do, you will but make it  
blush,

And glow with shame of your proceedings,  
Hubert:

Nay, it, perchance, will sparkle in your eyes;  
And, like a dog that is compell'd to fight,  
Snatch at his master that doth tarre† him on.  
All things, that you should use to do me wrong,  
Deny their office: only you do lack  
That mercy, which fierce fire, and iron, extends,  
Creatures of note, for mercy-lacking uses.

Hub. Well, see to live; I will not touch  
thine eyes

For all the treasure that thine uncle owes‡:  
Yet am I sworn, and I did purpose, boy,  
With this same very iron to burn them out.

Arth. O, now, you look like Hubert! all this  
You were disguised. [while

Hub. Peace: no more. Adieu;

Your uncle must not know but you are dead:  
I'll fill these dogged spies with false reports.  
And, pretty child, sleep doubtless, and secure,  
That Hubert, for the wealth of all the world,  
Will not offend thee.

Arth. O heaven!—I thank you, Hubert.

Hub. Silence; no more: Go closely § in  
with me;

Much danger do I undergo for thee. [Exeunt.

SCENE II. The same. A Room of State  
in the Palace.

Enter King JOHN, crowned; PEMBROKE,  
SALISBURY, and other Lords. The King  
takes his State.

K. John. Here once again we sit, once again  
crown'd,

And look'd upon, I hope, with cheerful eyes.

Pem. This once again, but that your high-  
ness pleased, [before,

Was once superfluous: you were crown'd  
And that high royalty was ne'er pluck'd off;  
The faiths of men ne'er stained with revolt;  
Fresh expectation troubled not the land,  
With any long'd-for change, or better state.

Sal. Therefore, to be possess'd with double  
To guard¶ a title that was rich before, [pomp,  
To gild refined gold, to paint the lily,  
To throw a perfume on the violet,  
To smooth the ice, or add another hue  
Unto the rainbow, or with taper-light  
To seek the beauteous eye of heaven to garnish¶,  
Is wasteful and ridiculous excess.

Pem. But that your royal pleasure must be  
This act is as an ancient tale new told; [done,  
And, in the last repeating, troublesome,  
Being urg'd at a time unseasonable.

Sal. In this, the antique and well-noted face  
Of plain old form is much disfigured:  
And, like a shifted wind unto a sail,  
It makes the course of thoughts to fetch about:  
Startles and frights consideration;  
Makes sound opinion sick, and truth suspected,  
For putting on so new a fashion'd robe.

Pem. When workmen strive to do better  
than well,

They do confound their skill in covetousness\*:  
And, oftentimes, excusing of a fault,

\* In cruelty I have not deserved.

¶ Lace.

¶ Decorate.

† Set him on.

‡ Owns.

§ Secretly.

\*\* Desire of excelling.

Doth make the fault the worse by the excuse;  
As patches, set upon a little breach,  
Discredit more in hiding of the fault,  
Than did the fault before it was so patch'd.

*Sal.* To this effect, before you were new-crown'd, [highness  
We breathed our counsel: but it pleased your  
To overbear it, and we are all well pleased;  
Since all and every part of what we would,  
Doth make a stand at what your highness will.

*K. John.* Some reasons of this double coronation [strong;  
I have possess'd you with, and think them  
And more, more strong, (when lesser is my  
fear),

I shall induce you with: Mean time, but ask  
What you would have reform'd, that is not well;  
And well shall you perceive, how willingly  
I will both hear and grant you your requests.

*Pem.* Then I, (as one that am the tongue of  
these,

To sound \* the purposes of all their hearts),  
Both for myself and them, (but, chief of all,  
Your safety, for the which myself and them  
Bend their best studies), heartily request [strait  
The enfranchisement† of Arthur: whose re-  
Doth move the murmuring lips of discontent  
To break into this dangerous argument,—  
If, what in rest you have, in right you hold,  
Why then your fears, (which, as they say,  
attend [up

The steps of wrong,) should move you to mew  
Your tender kinsman, and to choke his days  
With barbarous ignorance, and deny his youth  
The rich advantage of good exercise?

That the time's enemies may not have this  
To grace occasions, let it be our suit,  
That you have bid us ask his liberty;  
Which for our goods we do no further ask,  
Than whereupon our weal, on you depending,  
Counts it your weal, he have his liberty.

*K. John.* Let it be so; I do commit his youth  
*Enter* HUBERT.

To your direction.—Hubert, what news with  
you. [deed;

*Pem.* This is the man should do the bloody  
He show'd his warrant to a friend of mine:  
The image of a wicked heinous fault  
Lives in his eye; that close aspect of his  
Does show the mood of a much-troubled breast;  
And I do fearfully believe, 'tis done,  
What we so fear'd he had a charge to do. [go,

*Sal.* The colour of the king doth come and  
Between his purpose and his conscience,  
Like heralds 'twixt two dreadful battles set;  
His passion is so ripe, it needs must break.

*Pem.* And, when it breaks, I fear, will issue  
thence

The soul corruption of a sweet child's death.

*K. John.* We cannot hold mortality's strong  
hand:—

Good lords, although my will to give is living,  
The suit which you demand is gone and dead:  
He tells us, Arthur is deceased to night.

*Sal.* Indeed, we fear'd, his sickness was past  
cure.

*Pem.* Indeed we heard how near his death  
he was,

Before the child himself felt he was sick;  
This must be answer'd, either here, or hence.

*K. John.* Why do you bend such solemn  
brows on me?

Think you, I bear the shears of destiny?  
Have I commandment on the pulse of life?

*Sal.* It is apparent foul-play; and 'tis shame  
That greatness should so grossly offer it:  
So thrive it in your game! and so farewell.

*Pem.* Stay yet, lord Salisbury; I'll go with  
thee,

And find the inheritance of this poor child,  
His little kingdom of a forced grave. [isle,  
That blood, which ow'd‡ the breath of all this  
Three foot of it doth hold; Bad world the while!  
This must not be thus borne: this will break out  
To all our sorrows, and ere long, I doubt.

[*Exeunt* Lords  
*K. John.* They burn in indignation; I re-  
There is no sure foundation set on blood; [pent;  
No certain life achieved by others' death.---

*Enter* a Messenger.

A fearful eye thou hast; Where is that blood  
That I have seen inhabit in those cheeks?  
So foul a sky clears not without a storm:  
Pour down thy weather:—How goes all in  
France? [a power‡

*Mess.* From France to England never such  
For any foreign prepararion,

Was levied in the body of a land!  
The copy of your speed is learn'd by them;  
For, when you should be told they do prepare  
The tidings come, that they are all arrived.

*K. John.* O, where hath our intelligence  
been drunk? [care†

Where hath it slept? Where is my mother's  
That such an army could be drawn in France,  
And she not hear of it?

*Mess.* My liege, her ear  
Is stopp'd with dust; the first of April, died  
Your noble mother: And, as I hear, my lord  
The lady Constance in a frenzy died [tongue  
Three days before: but this from rumour's  
I idly heard; if true or false I know not. [sigh!

*K. John.* Withhold thy speed, dreadful occa-  
O, make a league with me, till I have pleased  
My discontented peers!—What! mother dead?  
How wildly then walks my estate in France!—  
Under whose conduct came those powers of  
France,

That thou for truth givest out, are landed here!

*Mess.* Under the Dauphin.

*Enter* the Bastard and PETER OF POMFREY

*K. John.* Thon hast made me giddy  
With these ill tidings.—Now, what says the  
To your proceedings? do not seek to stuff [world  
My head with more ill news, for it is full.

*Bast.* But, if you be afraid to hear the worst,  
Then let the worst, unheard, fall on your head.

*K. John.* Bear with me, cousin; for I was  
amazed ||

Under the tide: but now I breathe again  
Aloft the flood; and can give audience  
To any tongue, speak it of what it will.



*Bast.* How I have sped among the clergy-men,

The sums I have collected shall express.

But, as I travelled hither through the land,

I find the people strangely fantasied;

Possess'd with rumours, full of idle dreams;

Not knowing what they fear, but full of fear:

And here's a prophet, that I brought with me  
From forth the streets of Pomfret, whom I  
found

With many hundreds treading on his heels;

To whom he sung, in rude harsh-sounding  
rhymes,

That, ere the next Ascension-day at noon,

Your highness should deliver up your crown.

*K. John.* Thou idle dreamer, wherefore  
didst thou so? [out so.]

*Peter.* Foreknowing that the truth will fall

*K. John.* Hubert, away with him; imprison  
him;

And on that day at noon, whereon, he says,

I shall yield up my crown, let him be hang'd:

Deliver him to safety\*, and return,

For I must use thee.—O my gentle cousin,

[Exit HUBERT, with PETER.]

Hear'st thou the news abroad, who are arrived?

*Bast.* The French, my lord; men's mouths  
are full of it:

Besides, I met lord Bigot, and lord Salisbury,

(With eyes as red as new enkindled fire,)

And others more, going to seek the grave

Of Arthur, who, they say, is kill'd to-night

On your suggestion.

*K. John.* Gentle kinsman, go,

And thrust thyself into their companies:

I have a way to win their loves again;

Bring them before me.

*Bast.* I will seek them out,

*K. John.* Nay, but make haste; the better  
foot before.—

O, let me have no subject enemies,

When adverse foreigners affright my towns

With dreadful pomp of stout invasion!—

Be mercury, set feathers to thy heels;

And fly, like thought, from them to me again.

*Bast.* The spirit of the time shall teach me  
speed. [Exit.]

*K. John.* Spoke like a sprightly noble gen-  
tleman.—

Go after him; for he, perhaps, shall need

Some messenger betwixt me and the peers;

And be thou he.

*Mess.* With all my heart, my liege.  
[Exit.]

*K. John.* My mother dead!

[Re-enter HUBERT.]

*Hub.* My lord, they say five moons were  
seen to-night:

Four fixed: and the fifth did whirl about

The other four, in wondrous motion.

*K. John.* Five moons? [in the streets]

*Hub.* Old men, and beldams,

Do prophesy upon it dangerously: [mouths:]

Young Arthur's death is common in their

And when they talk of him they shake their

And whisper one another in the ear; [heads,

And he, that speaks, doth gripe the hearer's  
wrist;

Whilst he, that hears, makes fearful action,  
With wrinkled brows, with nods, with rolling  
eyes.

I saw a smith stand with his hammer, thus,

The whilst his iron did on the anvil cool.

With open mouth swallowing a tailor's news;

Who, with his shears and measure in his hand,

Standing on slippers, (which his nimble haste

Had falsely thrust upon contrary feet,)

Told of a many thousand warlike French,

That were embattel'd and rank'd in Kent:

Another lean unwash'd artificer

Cuts off his tale, and talks of Arthur's death.

*K. John.* Why seek'st thou to possess me  
with these fears?

Why urgest thou so oft young Arthur's death?

Thy hand hath murder'd him: I had mighty  
cause [him.]

To wish him dead, but thou hadst none to kill

*Hub.* Had none, my lord! why, did you  
not provoke me?

*K. John.* It is the curse of kings to be  
attended [warrant]

By slaves, that take their humours for a

To break within the bloody house of life:

And, on the winking of authority,

To understand a law; to know the meaning

Of dangerous majesty, when, perchance, it  
frowns

More upon humour than advised respect.

*Hub.* Here is your hand and seal for what  
I did. [heaven and earth]

*K. John.* O, when the last account 'twixt

Is to be made, then shall this hand and seal

Witness against us to damnation!

How oft the sight of means to do ill deeds,

Makes deeds ill done! Hadest thou not been

A fellow by the hand of nature mark'd, [by,

Quoted†, and sign'd, to do a deed of shame,

This murder had not come into my mind:

But, taking note of thy abhor'd aspect,

Finding thee fit for bloody villany,

Apt, liable, to be employ'd in danger,

I faintly broke with thee of Arthur's death;

And thou, to be endeared to a king,

Made it no conscience to destroy a prince.

*Hub.* My lord,—

*K. John.* Hadst thou but shook thy head,  
or made a pause,

When I spake darkly what I purpos'd;

Or turn'd an eye of doubt upon my face,

As bid me tell my tale in express words;

Deep shame had struck me dumb, made me  
break off, [fears in me:]

And those thy fears might have wrought

But thou didst understand me by my signs,

And didst in signs again parley with sin;

Yea, without stop, didst let thy heart consent,

And, consequently, thy rude hand to act

The deed, which both our tongues held vile to  
name,—

Out of my sight, and never see me more!

My nobles leave me; and my state is brav'd

Even at my gates, with ranks of foreign powers

\* Custody.

† Deliberate consideration.

‡ Observed.

Nay, in the body of this fleshy land \*,  
This kingdom, this confine of blood and breath,  
Hostility and civil tumult reigns [death.  
Between my conscience, and my cousin's

*Hub.* Arm you against your other enemies,  
I'll make a peace between your soul and you.  
Young Arthur is alive: This hand of mine  
Is yet a maiden and an innocent hand,  
Not painted with the crimson spots of blood.  
Within this bosom never enter'd yet  
The dreadful motion of a murd'rous thought,  
And you have slander'd nature in my form;  
Which, howsoever rude exteriorly,  
Is yet the cover of a fairer mind  
Than to be butcher of an innocent child.

*K. John.* Doth Arthur live? O, haste thee  
to the peers,

Throw this report on their incensed rage,  
And make them tame to their obedience!  
Forgive the comment that my passion made  
Upon thy feature; for my rage was blind,  
And foul imaginary eyes of blood  
Presented thee more hideous than thou art,  
O, answer not; but to my closet bring  
The angry lords with all expedient † haste:  
I conjure thee but slowly; run more fast.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. Before the Castle.*

*Enter ARTHUR, on the Walls.*

*Arth.* The wall is high; and yet will I leap  
down:—

Good ground, be pitiful, and hurt me not!—  
There's few, or none, do know me: if they  
did, [quite.  
This ship-boy's semblance hath disguised me  
I am afraid; and yet I'll venture it.  
If I get down, and do not break my limbs,  
I'll find a thousand shifts to get away:  
As good to die, and go, as die, and stay.

[*Leaps down.*]

O me! my uncle's spirit is in these stones—  
Heaven take my soul, and England keep my  
bones. [Dies.

*Enter PEMBROKE, SALISBURY, and EIGOR.*  
*Sal.* Lords, I will meet him at saint Ed-  
mund's-Bury;

It is our safety, and we must embrace  
This gentle offer of the perilous time.

*Pem.* Who brought that letter from the car-  
dinal? [France;]

*Sal.* The count Melun, a noble lord of  
Whose private with me ‡, of the dauphin's love  
Is much more general than these lines import.

*Big.* To-morrow morning let us meet him  
then. [be]

*Sal.* Or, rather then set forward: for 'twill  
Two long days' journey, lords, or e'er we meet.

*Enter the Bastard.*

*Bast.* Once more to-day well met, distem-  
per'd † lords! [straight.

The king, by me, requests your presence  
*Sal.* The king hath disposess'd himself of us;  
We will not line his thin bestained cloak

With our pure honours, nor attend the foot  
That leaves the print of blood where'er it  
walks:

Return, and tell him so; we know the worst.

*Bast.* Whate'er you think, good words, I  
think, were best. [now.

*Sal.* Our griefs, and not our manners, reason

*Bast.* But there is little reason in your grief;

Therefore, 'twere reason you had manners now.

*Pem.* Sir, sir, impatience hath his privilege.

*Bast.* 'Tis true; to hurt his master, no man  
else.

*Sal.* This is the prison: What is he lies  
here? [Seeing ARTHUR.

*Pem.* O death, made proud with pure and  
princely beauty!

The earth had not a hole to hide this deed.

*Sal.* Murder, as hating what himself hath  
Doth lay it open, to urge on revenge. [done,

*Big.* Or, when he doom'd this beauty to a  
grave,

Found it too precious-princely for a grave.

*Sal.* Sir Richard, what think you? Have  
you beheld, [think I]

Or have you read, or heard? or could you  
Or do you almost think, although you see,  
That you do see? could thought, without this  
object,

Form such another? This is the very top,  
The height, the crest, or crest unto the crest,  
Of murder's arms: this is the bloodiest shame,  
The wildest savag'ry, the vilest stroke,  
That ever wall-eyed wrath, or staring rage,  
Presented to the tears of soft remorse!]

*Pem.* All murders-past do stand excused in  
And this, so sole, and so unmatchable, [this;  
Shall give a holiness, a purity, ]

To the yet-unbought sin of time;  
And prove a deadly bloodshed but a jest,  
Exampl'd by this heinous spectacle.

*Bast.* It is a damned and a bloody work;  
The graceless action of a heavy hand,  
If that it be the work of any hand.

*Sal.* If that it be the work of any hand?—  
We had a kind of light what would ensue:

It is the shameful work of Hubert's hand;  
The practice, and the purpose, of the king:—

From whose obedience I forbid my soul,  
Kneeling before this ruin of sweet life,

And breathing to his breathes excellence  
The incense of a vow, a holy vow;

Never to taste the pleasures of the world,  
Never to be infected with delight,

Nor conversant with ease and idleness,  
Till I have set a glory to this hand †,

By giving it the worship of revenge. [words  
*Pem. Big.* Our souls religiously confirm thy

*Enter HUBERT.* [you:  
*Hub.* Lords, I am hot with haste in seeking  
Arthur doth live; the king hath sent for you.

*Sal.* O, he is bold, and blushes not at death:  
Avaunt, thou hateful villain, get thee gone!

*Hub.* I am no villain.  
*Sal.* Must I rob the law?

[*Drawing his sword.*]

\* His own body. † Expeditious. ‡ Private account. § Out of humour.

¶ Pity. ¶ Hand should be head; a glory is the circle of rays which surrounds the heads  
of saints in pictures

*Bast.* Your sword is bright, sir; put it up again.

*Sal.* Not till I sheath it in a murderer's skin.

*Hub.* Stand back, lord Salisbury, stand back, I say; [yours:]  
By heaven, I think, my sword's as sharp as I would not have you, lord, forget yourself, Nor tempt the danger of my true\* defence; Lest I, by marking of your rage, forget Your worth, your greatness, and nobility.

*Big.* Out, dunghill! dar'st thou brave a nobleman?

*Hub.* Not for my life: but yet I dare defy My innocent life against an emperor. [fend]

*Sal.* Thou art a murderer.

*Hub.* Do not prove me so†; Yet, I am none: Whose tongue soe'er speaks false,

Not truly speaks; who speaks not truly, lies.

*Pem.* Cut him to pieces.

*Bast.* Keep the peace, I say.

*Sal.* Stand by, or I shall gall you, Faulconbridge? [Salisbury:]

*Bast.* Thou wert better gall the devil, If thou but frown on me, or stir thy foot, Or teach thy hasty spleen to do me shame, I'll strike thee dead. Put up thy sword betime; Or I'll so maul you and your toasting-iron, That you shall think the devil is come from hell.

*Big.* What wilt thou do, renowned Faulcon-Second a villain, and a murderer? [bridge?]

*Hub.* Lord Bigot, I am none.

*Big.* Who killed this prince?

*Hub.* 'Tis not an hour since I left him well: I honour'd him, I loved him; and will weep My date of life out, for his sweet life's loss.

*Sal.* Trust not those cunning wavers of his For villany is not without such rheum ‡; [eyes, And he, long traded in it, makes it seem Like rivers of remorse§ and innocence.

Away, with me all you whose souls abhor The uncleanly savours of a slaughter-house, For I am stifled with this smell of sin. [there!]

*Big.* Away, toward Bury, to the Dauphin

*Pem.* There, tell the king, he may inquire us out. [Exeunt Lords.]

*Bast.* Here's a good world!—Knew you of this fair work?

Beyond the infinite and boundless reach Of mercy, if thou didst this deed of death, Art thou damn'd, Hubert.

*Hub.* Do but hear me, sir. [black:]

*Bast.* Ha, I'll tell thee what; Thou art damn'd as black—nay, nothing is so Thou art more deep damn'd than prince Lu- There is not yet so ugly a fiend of hell [[cifer:] As thou shalt be, if thou didst kill this child.

*Hub.* Upon my soul,—

*Bast.* If thou didst but consent To this most cruel act, do but despair, And, if thou want'st a cord, the smallest thread That ever spider twisted from her womb Will serve to strangle thee; a rush will be A beam to hang thee on; or would'st thou Put but a little water in a spoon, [drown thyself, And it shall be as all the ocean, Enough to stifle such a villain up.— I do suspect thee very grievously.

*Hub.* If I in act, consent, or sin of thought Be guilty of the stealing that sweet breath Which was embounded in this beauteous clay, Let hell want pains enough to torture me! I left him well.

*Bast.* Go bear him in thine arms.— I am amaz'd, methinks; and lose my way Among the thorns and dangers of this world.— How easy dost thou take all England up! From forth this morsel of dead royalty, The life, the right, and truth of all this realm Is fled to heaven: and England now is left To tug and scramble, and to part by the teeth The unow'd¶ interest of proud-swelling state. Now, for the bare-pick'd bone of majesty, Doth dogged war bristle his angry crest, And snarlth in the gentle eyes of peace: Now powers from home, and discontents at home,

Meet in one line; and vast confusion waits (As doth a raven on a sick-fallen beast,) The imminent decay of wrested pomp. Now happy he, whose cloak and cincture\*\* can Hold out this tempest. Bear away that child And follow me with speed: I'll to the king A thousand businesses are brief in hand, And heaven itself doth frown upon the land. [Exeunt]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *The same. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter King JOHN, PANDULPH with the Crown, and Attendants.*

*K. John.* Thus have I yielded up into your The circle of my glory. [hand]

*Pand.* Take again.

[Giving JOHN the Crown.]

From this my hand, as holding of the pope, Your sovereign greatness and authority.

*K. John.* Now keep your holy word: go meet the French;

And from his holiness use all your power To stop their marches, 'fore we are inflamed.

Our discontented counties do revolt;  
Our people quarrel with obedience;  
Swearing allegiance, and the love of soul,  
To stranger blood, to foreign royalty.  
This inundation of mistemper'd humour  
Rests by you only to be qualified.  
Then pause not; for the present time's so sick,  
That present medicine must be minister'd,  
Or overthrow incurable ensues.

*Pand.* It was my breath that blew this tem-  
Upon your stubborn usage of the pope: [pest up  
But since you are a gentle convertite††,  
My tongue shall hush again this storm of war,  
And make fair weather in your blustering land.]

\* Honest.

† By compelling me to kill you.

‡ Moisture.

§ Pity.

¶ Confounded.

¶ Unowned.

\*\* Girdle.

†† Convert.



On this Ascension-day, remember well,  
Upon your oath of service to the pope,  
Go I to make the French lay down their arms.

[Exit.

*K. John.* Is this Ascension-day? Did not  
the prophet

Say, that, before Ascension-day at noon,  
My crown I should give off? Even so I have:  
I did suppose, it should be on constraint;  
But, heaven be thank'd, it is but voluntary.

Enter the Bastard.

*Bast.* All Kent hath yielded; nothing there  
holds out,  
But Dover castle: London hath received,  
Like a kind host, the Dauphin and his powers:  
Your nobles will not hear you, but are gone  
To offer service to your enemy;  
And wild amazeiment hurries up and down  
The little number of your doubtful friends.

*K. John.* Would not my lords return to me  
again,  
After they heard young Arthur was alive?

*Bast.* They found him dead, and cast into  
the streets;

An empty casket, where the jewel of life  
By some daunt'd hand was robb'd and ta'en  
away.

*K. John.* That villain Hubert told me, he did  
*Bast.* So, on my soul, he did, for aught he  
knew.

But wherefore do you droop? why look you  
Be great in act as you have been in thought;  
Let not the world see fear, and sad distrust,  
Govern the motion of a kingly eye:  
Be stirring as the time; be fire with fire;  
Threaten the threat'ner, and outface the brow  
Of bragging horror: so shall inferior eyes,  
That borrow their behaviours from the great,  
Grow great by your example, and put on  
The dauntless spirit of resolution.

Away; and glisten like the god of war,  
When he intendeth to become the field:  
Show boldness, and aspiring confidence.  
What, shall they seek the lion in his den,  
And fright him there? and make him tremble  
O, let it not be said:—Forage, and run [there?  
To meet displeasure further from the doors;  
And grapple with him, ere he comes so nigh.

*K. John.* The legate of the pope hath been  
with me,

And I have made a happy peace with him;  
And he hath promised to dismiss the powers\*  
Led by the Dauphin.

*Bast.* O inglorious league!  
Shall we, upon the footing of our land,  
Send fair-play orders, and make compromise,  
Insinuation, parley, and base truce,  
To arms invasive? shall a beardless boy,  
A cocker'd† silken wanton brave our fields,  
And flesh his spirit in a warlike soil,  
Mocking the air with colours idly spread,  
And find no check? Let us, my liege, to arms:  
Perchance, the cardinal cannot make your  
peace;

Or if he do, let it at least be said,  
They saw we had a purpose of defence.

*K. John.* Have thou the ordering of this  
present time.

[know,

*Bast.* Away then, with good courage; yet, I  
Our party may well meet a prouder foe.

[Exit.

SCENE II. A plain near St. Edmund's  
Bury.

Enter, in arms, LEWIS, LEWIS, SALISBURY, ME-  
LUN, PEMBROKE, BIGOT, and Soldiers.

*Lew.* My lord Melun, let this be copied out,  
And keep it safe for our remembrance;  
Return the precedent to these lords again;  
That, having our fair order written down,  
Both they, and we, perusing o'er these notes,  
May know wherefore we took the sacrament,  
And keep our faiths firm and inviolable.

*Sal.* Upon our sides it never shall be broken.  
And, noble Dauphin, albeit we swear  
A voluntary zeal, and unurged faith,  
To your proceedings; yet, believe me, prince,  
I am not glad that such a sore of time  
Should seek a plaster by contemn'd revolt,  
And heal the inveterate canker of one wound,  
By making many: O, it grieves my soul,  
That I must draw this metal from my side  
To be a widow-maker; O, and there,  
Where honourable rescue, and defence,  
Cries out upon the name of Salisbury:  
But such is the infection of the time,  
That, for the health and physic of our right,  
We cannot deal but with the very hand  
Of stern injustice and confused wrong.—

And is't not pity, O my grieved friends!  
That we, the sons and children of this isle,  
Were born to see so sad an hour as this;  
Wherein we step after a stranger march  
Upon her gentle bosom, and fill up  
Her enemies' ranks, (I must withdraw and weep  
Upon the spot of this enforced cause),  
To grace the gentry of a land remote,  
And follow unacquainted colours here?  
What, here?—O nation, that thou couldst re-  
move!

[about

That Neptune's arms, who clippeth‡ thee  
Would bear thee from the knowledge of thy-  
And grapple thee unto a pagan shore; [self,  
Where these two Christian armies might com-  
The blood of malice in a vein of league, [bine  
And not to spend it so unneighbourly!

*Lew.* A noble temper dost thou show in this;  
And great affections, wrestling in thy bosom,  
Do make an earthquake of nobility.

O, what a noble combat hast thou fought,  
Between compulsion and a brave respect §!  
Let me wipe off this honourable dew,  
That silverly doth progress on thy cheeks:  
My heart hath melted at a lady's tears,  
Being an ordinary inundation;  
But this effusion of such manly drops,  
This shower, blown up by tempest of the soul,  
Startles mine eyes, and makes me more amazed  
Than had I seen the vanity top of heaven  
Figured quite o'er with burning meteors.  
Lift up thy brow, renowned Salisbury,  
And with a great heart heave away this storm.

\* Forces.

† Fundled.

‡ Embraceth.

§ Love of country.

Commend these waters to those baby eyes,  
That never saw the giant world enraged;  
Nor met with fortune other than at feasts,  
Full warm of blood, of mirth, of gossiping.  
Come, come; for thou shalt thrust thy hand as  
Into the purse of rich prosperity, [deep  
As Lewis himself;—so, nobles, shall you all,  
That knit your sinews to the strength of mine.

*Enter PANDULPH, attended.*

And even there, methinks, an angel spake:  
Look, where the holy legate comes apace,  
To give us warrant from the hand of heaven;  
And on our actions set the name of right,  
With holy breath.

*Pand.* Hail, noble prince of France!  
The next is this,—king John hath reconciled  
Himself to Rome; his spirit is come in,  
That so stood out against the holy church,  
The great metropolis and see of Rome: [up,  
Therefore thy threatening colours now wind  
And tame the savage spirit of wild war;  
That, like a lion foster'd up at hand,  
It may lie gently at the foot of peace,  
And be no further harmful than in show.

*Lew.* Your grace shall pardon me, I will not  
I am too high-born to be propertied\*, [back;  
To be a secondary at control,  
Or useful serving-man, and instrument,  
To any sovereign state throughout the world.  
Your breath first kindled the dead coal of wars,  
Between this chastised kingdom and myself  
And brought in matter that should feed this  
And now 'tis far too huge to be blown out [fire;  
With that same weak wind which enkindled it.  
You taught me how to know the face of right,  
Acquainted me with interest to this land,  
Yea, thrust this enterprise into my heart;  
And come you now to tell me, John hath made  
His peace with Rome? What is that peace to  
I, by the honour of my marriage-bed, [me?  
After young Arthur, claim this land for mine;  
And, now it is half-conquer'd, must I back,  
Because that John hath made his peace with  
Rome? [borne,

Am I Rome's slave? What penny hath Rome  
What men provided, what munition sent,  
To underprop this action? is't not I,  
That undergo this charge? Who else but I,  
And such as to my claim are liable,  
Sweat in this business, and maintain this war?  
Have I not heard these islanders shout out,  
*Vive le roi!* as I have bank'd their towns?  
Have I not here the best cards for the game,  
To win this easy match play'd for a crown?  
And shall I now give o'er the yielded set?  
No, on my soul, it never shall be said. [work.

*Pand.* You look but on the outside of this

*Lew.* Outside or inside, I will not return  
Till my attempt so much be glorified  
As to my ample hope was promised  
Before I drew this gallant head of war,  
And call'd these fiery spirits from the world,  
To outlook† conquest, and to win renown  
Even in the jaws of danger and of death.—

[Trumpet sounds.

What lusty trumpet thus doth summon us?

*Enter the Bastard, attended.*

*Bast.* According to the fair play of the world  
Let me have audience: I am sent to speak:  
My holy lord of Milan, from the king  
I come, to learn how you have dealt for him;  
And, as you answer, I do know the scope  
And warrant limited unto my tongue.

*Pand.* The Dauphin is too wilful-opposite,  
And will not temporize with my entreaties;  
He flatly says, he'll not lay down his arms.

*Bast.* By all the blood that ever fury breathed,  
The youth says well:—Now hear our English  
For thus his royalty doth speak in me. [king;  
He is prepared; and reason too, he should:  
This apish and unmannerly approach,  
This harness'd masque, and unadvised revel,  
This unhair'd sauciness, and boyish troops,  
The king doth smile at; and is well prepared  
To whip this dwarfish war, these pigmy arms,  
From out the circle of his territories. [door,  
That hand, which had the strength, even at your  
To cudgel you, and make you take the hatch‡;  
To dive, like buckets, in concealed § wells;  
To crouch in litter of your stable planks;  
To lie, like pawns, lock'd up in chests and  
trunks;

To hug with swine; to seek sweet safety out  
In vaults and prisons; and to thrill, and shake,  
Even at the crying of your nation's crow ||,  
Thinking his voice an armed Englishman;—  
Shall that victorious hand be feeble here,  
That in your chambers gave you chastisement?  
No: Know, the gallant monarch is in arms;  
And like an eagle o'er his airy ¶ towers,  
To souse annoyance that comes near his nest.—  
And you degenerate, you ingrate revolts,  
You bloody Neroes, ripping up the womb  
Of your dear mother England, blush for shame:  
For your own ladies, and pale-visaged maids,  
Like Amazons, come tripping after drums;  
Their trimbles into armed gauntlets change,  
Their necks \*\* to lances, and their gentle hearts  
To fierce and bloody inclination.

*Lew.* There end thy bravett, and turn thy  
face in peace; [well;  
We grant, thou canst outscold us: fare thee  
We hold our time too precious to be spent  
With such a brabblor.

*Pand.* Give me leave to speak,

*Bast.* No, I will speak.

*Lew.* We will attend to neither:  
Strike up the drums; and let the tongue of war  
Plead for our interest, and our being here.

*Bast.* Indeed, your drums, being beaten,  
will cry out;

And so shall you, being beaten: Do but start  
And echo with the clamour of thy drum,  
And even at hand a drum is ready braced,  
That shall reverberate all as loud as thine;  
Sound but another, and another shall,  
As loud as thine, rattle the welkin's ‡ ear.  
And mock the deep-mouth'd thunder: for at  
hand

(Not trusting to this halting legate here,

\* Appropriated. † Face down. ‡ Leap over the hatch. § Covered. || The crowing  
of a cock. ¶ Nest. \*\* Needles. †† Boast. ‡‡ Sky.

Whom he hath used rather for sport than need),  
Is warlike John; and in his forehead sits  
A bare-ribb'd death, whose office is this day  
To feast upon whole thousands of the French.

*Lew.* Strike up our drums, to find this danger out.

*Bast.* And thou shalt find it, Dauphin, do not doubt.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. A Field of Battle.*

*Alarums.* Enter King JOHN and HUBERT.

*K. John.* How goes the day with us? O, tell me, Hubert.

*Hub.* Badly, I fear: How fares your majesty?

*K. John.* This fever, that hath troubled me so long,

Is heavy on me; O, my heart is sick!

Enter a Messenger.

*Mess.* My lord, your valiant kinsman, Faulconbridge,

Desires your majesty to leave the field;  
And send him word by me, which way you go.

*K. John.* Tell him, toward Swinstead, to the abbey there.

*Mess.* Be of good comfort; for the great sup-  
That was expected by the Dauphin here,  
Are wreck'd three nights ago on Goodwin  
sands.

(now:  
This news was brought to Richard but even  
The French fight coldly, and retire themselves.

*K. John.* Ah me! this tyrant fever burns me  
up,

And will not let me welcome this good news.—  
Set on toward Swinstead: to my litter straight;

Weakness possesseth me, and I am faint.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *The same. Another Part of the same.*

Enter SALISBURY, PEMROKE, BIGOT, and Others.

*Sal.* I did not think the king so stored with friends.

*Pem.* Up once again; put spirit in the  
If they miscarry, we miscarry too.

*Sal.* That misbegotten devil, Faulconbridge,  
In spite of spite, alone upholds the day.

*Pem.* They say, king John, sore sick, hath  
left the field.

Enter MELUN wounded, and led by Soldiers.

*Mel.* Lead me to the revolts of England here.

*Sal.* When we were happy, we had other

*Pem.* It is the Count Melun.

*Sal.* Wounded to death.

*Mel.* Fly, noble English, you are bought  
and sold\*;

Unthread the rude eye of rebellion,  
And welcome home again discarded faith.

Seek out king John, and fall before his feet;  
For, if the French be lords of this loud day,

He† means to recompense the pains you take,  
By cutting off your heads: Thus hath he sworn,

And I with him, and many more with me,  
Upon the altar at Saint Edmund's-Bury;

Even on that altar, where we swore to you  
Dear amity and everlasting love.

*Sal.* May this be possible? may this be true?

*Mel.* Have I not hideous death within my  
Retaining but a quantity of life;

Which bleeds away, even as a form of wax  
Resolved from his figure 'gainst the fire?‡

What in the world should make me now de-  
Since I must lose the use of all deceit? §

Why should I then be false; since it is true  
That I must die here, and live hence by truth?

I say again, if Lewis do win the day,  
He is forsworn, if e'er those eyes of yours

Behold another day break in the east: ¶  
But even this night,—whose black contagious

Already smokes about the burning crest  
Of the old, feeble, and day-wearied sun,—

Even this ill night, your breathing shall expire;  
Paying the fine of rated treachery,

Even with a treacherous fine of all your lives,  
If Lewis by your assistance win the day.

Commend me to one Hubert, with your king;  
The love of him,—and this respect besides,

For that my grandsire was an Englishman,—  
Awakes my conscience to confess all this.

In lieu § whereof, I pray you bear me hence  
From forth the noise and rumour of the field;

Where I may think the remnant of my thoughts  
In peace, and part this body and my soul

With contemplation and devout desires.

*Sal.* We do believe thee,—And beshrew ¶  
But I do love the favour and the form [my soul

Of this most fair occasion, by the which  
We will untread the steps of damned flight;

And, like a bated and retired flood,  
Leaving our rankness and irregular course.

Stoop low within those bounds we have o'er-  
And calmly run on in obedience, ¶

Even to our ocean, to our great king John.  
My arm shall give thee help to bear thee hence;

For I do see the cruel pang of death ¶  
Right ¶ in thine eye.—Away, my friends! New

And happy newness \*\*, that intends old right.

[*Exeunt, leading off MELUN.*]

SCENE V. *The same. The French Camp.*

Enter LEWIS and his Train.

*Lew.* The sun of heaven, methought, was  
loath to set; ¶

But stay'd, and made the western welkin ¶  
When the English measured backward their

own ground,  
In faint retire: O, bravely came we off,

When with a volley of our needless shot,  
After such bloody toil, we bid good night;

And wound our tatter'd colours clearly up,  
Last in the field, and almost lords of it!

Enter a Messenger.

*Mess.* Where is my prince, the Dauphin?

*Lew.* Here:—What news?

*Mess.* The count Melun is slain; the English  
By his persuasion, are again fallen off: ¶

And your supply, which you have wish'd so  
long,

\* A proverb intimating treachery.

† Lewis.

‡ In allusion to the images made by witches.

§ Place.

¶ Ill betide.

¶ Immediate.

\*\* Innovation.

†† Sky.



Are cast away, and sunk, on Goodwin sands.

*Lew.* Ah, foul shrewd news!—Beshrew thy very heart!

I did not think to be so sad to night,  
As this hath made me.—Who was he, that said,  
King John did fly, an hour or two before  
The stumbling night did part our weary powers?

*Mess.* Whoever spoke it, it is true, my lord.

*Lew.* Well; keep good quarter\*, and good care to-night;

The day shall not be up so soon as I,  
To try the fair adventure of to-morrow.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *An open Place in the Neighbourhood of Swinstead-Abbey.*

*Enter the Bastard and HUBERT, meeting.*

*Hub.* Who's there? speak, ho! speak quickly or I shoot.

*Bast.* A friend:—What art thou?

*Hub.* Of the part of England.

*Bast.* Whither dost thou go? [demand]

*Hub.* What's that to thee? Why may not I  
Of thine affairs, as well as thou of mine?

*Bast.* Hubert, I think.

*Hub.* Thou hast a perfect thought:  
I will upon all hazards, well believe  
Thou art my friend, that know'st my tongue so  
Who art thou? [well:]

*Bast.* Who thou wilt: an if thou please,  
Thou may'st befriend me so much, as to think  
I come one way of the Plantagenets.

*Hub.* Unkind remembrance! thou, and  
eyeless night, [me]  
Have done me shame:—Brave soldier, pardon  
That any accent, breaking from thy tongue,  
Should'scape the true acquaintance of mine ear.

*Bast.* Come, come; sans† compliment,  
what news abroad?

*Hub.* Why, here walk I, in the black brow  
To find you out. [of night]

*Bast.* Brief, then; and what's the news?

*Hub.* O, my sweet sir, news fitting to the  
night,  
Black, fearful, comfortless, and horrible.

*Bast.* Show me the very wound of this ill  
I am no woman, I'll not swoon at it. [news:]

*Hub.* The king, I fear, is poison'd by a  
monk:

I left him almost speechless, and broke out  
To acquaint you with this evil; that you might  
The better arm you to the sudden time,  
Than if you had at leisure known of this.

*Bast.* How did he take it? who did taste to him?

*Hub.* A monk, I tell you; a resolved villain,  
Whose bowels suddenly burst out: the king  
Yet speaks, and, peradventure, may recover.

*Bast.* Who didst thou leave to tend his  
majesty? [all come back]

*Hub.* Why, know you not? the lords are  
And brought prince Henry in their company;  
At whose request the king hath pardon'd them,  
And they are all about his majesty. [heaven,]

*Bast.* Withhold thine indignation, mighty  
And tempt us not to bear above our power!—

I'll tell thee, Hubert, half my power; this night,  
Passing these flats, are taken by the tide,  
These Lincoln washes have devoured them;  
Myself well-mounted, hardly have escaped.  
Away, before I conduct me to the king;  
I doubt, he will be dead, or ere I come.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII. *The Orchard of Swinstead-Abbey.*

*Enter Prince HENRY, SALISBURY, and BIGOT.*

*P. Hen.* It is too late; the life of all his  
blood

Is touch'd corruptibly; and his pure brain  
(Which some suppose the soul's frail dwelling-  
house),

Doth by the idle comments that it makes,  
Foretell the ending of mortality.

*Enter PEMBROKE.*

*Pem.* His Highness yet doth speak; and  
holds belief,

That being brought into the open air,  
It would allay the burning quality

Of that fell poison which assaileth him.

*P. Hen.* Let him be brought into the  
orchard here.—

Doth he still rage? [*Exit BIGOT.*]

*Pem.* He is more patient

Than when you left him; even now he sung.

*P. Hen.* O vanity of sickness! fierce ex-  
tremes,

In their continuance, will not feel themselves.  
Death, having prey'd upon the outward parts,  
Leaves them insensible; and his siege is now  
Against the mind, the which he pricks and  
wounds

With many legions of strange fantasies;  
Which, in their throng and press to that last  
hold, [should sing.]—

Confound themselves. 'Tis strange, that death  
I am the cygnet to this pale faint swan,  
who chants a doleful hymn to his own death;  
And, from the organ-pipe of frailty, sings  
His soul and body to their lasting rest.

*Sal.* Be of good comfort, prince; for you  
To set a form upon that indigest [are born  
Which he hath left so shapeless and so rude.

*Re-enter BIGOT and Attendants, who bring  
in King JOHN in a Chair.*

*K. John.* Ay, marry, now my soul hath  
elbow-room;

It would not out at windows, nor at doors,  
There is so hot a summer in my bosom,  
That all my bowels crumble up to dust:  
I am a scribbled form, drawn with a pen  
Upon a parchment; and against this fire  
Do I shrink up.

*P. Hen.* How fares your majesty?

*K. John.* Poison'd,—ill fare;—dead, for-  
sook, cast off:

And none of you will bid the winter come  
To thrust his icy fingers in my maw;  
Nor let my kingdom's rivers take their course  
Through my burn'd bosom; nor entreat the  
north

\* In your posts or stations.

† Without.

‡ Forces.

To make his bleak winds kiss my parched lips,  
And comfort me with cold:—I do not ask  
you much,

[I beg cold comfort; and you are so strait\*,  
And so ingrateful, you deny me that.

*P. Hen.* O, that there were some virtue in  
that might relieve you? [my tears,

*K. John.* The salt in them is hot.—  
Within me is a hell; and there the poison  
Is, as a fiend, confin'd to tyrannize  
On unreprieveable condemned blood.

*Enter the Bastard.*

*Bast.* O, I am scalded with my violent  
motion,

And spleen of speed to see your Majesty.

*K. John.* O cousin, thou art come to set  
mine eye:

The tackle of my heart is crack'd and burn'd;  
And all the shruds, wherewith my life should  
Are turned to one thread, one little hair: [sail,  
My heart hath one poor string to stay it by,  
Which holds but till thy news be uttered;  
And then all this thou see'st, is but a clod,  
And module of confounded royalty.

*Bast.* The Dauphin is preparing hitherward;  
Where, heaven he knows, how we shall  
answer him:

For, in a night, the best part of my power,  
As I upon advantage did remove,  
Were in the washes, all unwarily,  
Devoured by the unexpected flood.

[*The King dies.*

*Sal.* You breathe these dead news in as dead  
an ear.— [thus,

My liege! my lord!—But now a king,—now

*P. Hen.* Even so must I run on, and even  
so stop. [stay,

What surety of the world, what hope, what  
When this was now a king, and now is clay!

*Bast.* Art thou gone so? I do but stay be-  
To do the office for thee of revenge! [hind,

And then my soul shall wait on thee to heaven,  
As it on earth hath been thy servant still.—

Now, now, you stars, that move in your right  
spheres, [mended faiths;

Where be your powers? Show now your  
And instantly return with me again,

To push destruction, and perpetual shame,  
Out of the weak door of our fainting land:  
Straight let us seek, or straight we shall be  
The Dauphin rages at our very heels. [sought;  
*Sal.* It seems, you know not then so much  
as we:

The cardinal Pandulph is within at rest,  
Who half an hour since came from the Dauphin;  
And brings from him such offers of our peace  
As we with honour and respect may take,  
With purpose presently to leave this war.

*Bast.* He will the rather do it, when he sees  
Ourselves well sinewed to our defence.

*Sal.* Nay, it is in a manner done already;  
For many carriages he hath despatch'd  
To the sea-side, and put his cause and quarrel  
To the disposing of the cardinal:

With whom yourself, myself, and other lords,  
If you think meet this afternoon will post,  
To consummate this business happily. [prince,

*Bast.* Let it be so:—And you, my noble  
With other princes that may best be spared,  
Shall wait upon your father's funeral. [terr'd;

*P. Hen.* At Worcester must his body be in-  
For so he will'd it.

*Bast.* Thither shall it then.

And happily may your sweet self put on  
The lineal state and glory of the land!

To whom, with all submission, on my knee,  
I do bequeath my faithful services  
And true subjection everlastingly.

*Sal.* And the like tender of our love we  
To rest without a spot for evermore. [make,

*P. Hen.* I have a kind soul, that would give  
you thanks,  
And knows not how to do it, but with tears.

*Bast.* O, let us pay the time but needful woe,  
Since it hath been beforehand with our griefs.

This England never did, (nor never shall,)   
Lie at the proud foot of a conqueror,  
But when it first did help to wound itself.

Now these her princes are come home again,  
Come the three corners of the world in arms,  
And we shall shock them: Nought shall make  
If England to itself do rest but true. [us rue,

[*Exeunt.*

\* Narrow, avaricious.

† Model.

The tragedy of KING JOHN, though not written with the utmost power of Shakspeare, is varied with a very pleasing interchange of incidents and characters. The lady's grief is very affecting; and the character of the Bastard contains that mixture of greatness and levity which this author delighted to exhibit.—JOHNSON.

# THE LIFE AND DEATH OF KING RICHARD II.

## Persons represented.

King RICHARD the SECOND.

EDMUND of Langley, D. of York; } uncles to  
JOHN of Gaunt, D. of Lancaster; } the King.  
HENRY, surnamed Bolingbroke, Duke of  
Hereford, son to John of Gaunt; after-  
wards King Henry IV.

Duke of AUMERLE, son to the Duke of York.

MOWBRAY, Duke of Norfolk.

Duke of Surrey.

Earl of Salisbury. Earl BERKLEY.

BUSHY,

BAGOT, } creatures to King Richard.

GREEN,

Earl of Northumberland.

HENRY PERCY, his son.

Lord ROSS. Lord WILLOUGHBY. Lord  
FITZWATER.

Bishop of Carlisle. Abbot of Westminster.

Lord Marshal; and another Lord.

Sir PIERCE of Exton. Sir STEPHEN SCROOP.

Captain of a band of Welshmen.

Queen to King Richard.

Duchess of Gloster.

Duchess of York.

Lady attending on the Queen.

Lords, Herald, Officers, Soldiers, two Gardeners, Keeper, Messenger, Groom, and  
other Attendants.

Scene,—dispersedly in England and Wales.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. London. A Room in the Palace.

Enter King RICHARD; attended: JOHN of  
GAUNT, and other Nobles, with him.

K. Rich. Old John of Gaunt, time-honour'd  
Lancaster,

Hast thou, according to thy oath and band\*,  
Brought hither Henry Hereford thy bold son;  
Here to make good the boisterous late appeal,  
Which then our leisure would not let us hear,  
Against the duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mow-  
Gaunt. I have, my liege. [bray?

K. Rich. Tell me moreover, hast thou  
sounded him,

If he appeal the duke on ancient malice;  
Or worthily as a good subject should,  
On some known ground of treachery in him?  
Gaunt. As near as I could sift him on that  
argument,—

On some apparent danger seen in him,  
Aim'd at your highness, no inveterate malice.

K. Rich. Then call them to our presence;  
face to face,

And frowning brow to brow, ourselves will hear  
The accuser, and the accused, freely speak:—

[Exit some Attendants.  
High-stomach'd are they both, and full of ire,  
In rage deaf as the sea, hasty as fire.

Re-enter Attendants, with BOLINGBROKE  
and NORFOLK.

Boling. May many years of happy days besfall  
My gracious sovereign, my most loving liege!

Nor. Each day still better oth'rs happiness;

Until the heavens, envying earth's good hap,  
Add an immortal title to your crown!

K. Rich. We thank you both: yet one but  
flatters us,

As well appeareth by the cause you come:  
Namely, to appeal† each other of high treason.  
Cousin of Hereford, what dost thou object  
Against the duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mow-  
bray?

Boling. First, (heaven be the record of my  
In the devotion of a subject's love, [speech!]

Tendering the precious safety of my prince,  
And free from other misbegotten hate,  
Come I appell'ant to this princely presence.—  
Now, Thomas Mowbray, do I turn to thee,  
And mark my greeting well; for what I speak,  
My body shall make good upon this earth,  
Or my divine soul answer it in heaven.

Thou art a traitor, and a miscreant;  
Too good to be so, and too bad to live;  
Since, the more fair and crystal is the sky,  
The uglier seem the clouds that in it fly.  
Once more, the more to aggravate the note,  
With a foul traitor's name stuff I thy throat;  
And wish, (so please my sovereign,) ere I move,  
What my tongue speaks, my right-drawn sword  
may prove. [zeal:

Nor. Let not my cold words here accuse my  
'Tis not the trial of a woman's war,  
The bitter clamour of two eager tongues,  
Can arbitrate this cause betwixt us twain:  
The blood is hot, that must be cool'd for this,  
Yet can I not or such tame patience boast,

\* Bond.

† Charge.



As to be hush'd, and nought at all to say : [me  
First, the fair reverence of your highness curbs  
From giving reins and spurs to my free speech;  
Which else would post, until it had return'd  
These terms of treason doubled down his throat.  
Setting aside his high blood's royalty,  
And let him be no kinsman to my liege,  
I do defy him, and I spit at him;  
Call him—a slanderous coward, and a villain:  
Which to maintain, I would allow him odds;  
And meet him, were I tied to run a-foot  
Even to the frozen ridges of the Alps,  
Or any other ground inhabitable\*  
Where ever Englishman durst set his foot,  
Mean time, let this defend my loyalty,—  
By all my hopes, most falsely doth he lie.

*Boling.* Pale trembling coward, there I  
throw my gage,

Disclaiming here the kindred of a king;  
And lay aside my high blood's royalty, [cept:  
Which fear, not reverence, makes thee to ex-  
If guilty dread hath left thee so much strength,  
As to take up mine honour's pawn, then stoop;  
By that, and all the rites of knighthood else,  
Will I make good against thee, arm to arm,  
What I have spoke, or thou canst worse devise.

*Nor.* I take it up; and, by that sword I swear,  
Which gently lay'd my knighthood on my  
I'll answer thee in any fair degree, [shoulder,  
Or chivalrous design of knightly trial:  
And, when I mount, alive may I not light,  
If I be traitor, or unjustly fight!

*K. Rich.* What doth our cousin lay to Mow-  
bray's charge?

It must be great, that can inherit us  
So much as of a thought of ill in him.

*Boling.* Look, what I speak my life shall  
prove it true;— [nobles,

That Mowbray hath received eight thousand  
In name of lendings for your highness sol-  
diers; [ments,

The which he hath detain'd for lewd & employ-  
Like a false traitor, and injurious villain.

Besides I say, and will in battle prove,—  
Or here, or elsewhere, to the furthest verge

That ever was survey'd by English eye,—  
That all the treasons, for these eighteen years

Complotted and contrived in this land, [spring.  
Fetch from false Mowbray their first head and

Further I say,—and further will maintain  
Upon his bad life, to make all this good,—

That he did plot the duke of Gloster's death;  
Suggest<sup>†</sup> his soon believing adversaries;

And, consequently, like a traitor coward,  
Sluic'd out his innocent soul through streams

of blood :  
Which blood, like sacrificing Abel's, cries,

Even from the tongueless caverns of the earth,  
To me, for justice, and rough chastisement;

And, by the glorious worth of my descent,  
This arm shall do it, or this life be spent.

*K. Rich.* How high a pitch his resolution  
soars!—

Thomas of Norfolk, what say'st thou to this?  
*Nor.* O, let my sovereign turn away his face,

And bid his ears a little while be deaf,  
Till I have told this slander of his blood||,  
How God, and good men, hate so foul a liar.

*K. Rich.* Mowbray, impartial are our eyes  
and ears :

Were he my brother, nay, my kingdom's heir,  
(As he is but my father's brother's son,)

Now by my sceptre's awe I make a vow,  
Such neighbour nearness to our sacred blood

Should nothing privilege him, nor partialize  
The unstooping firmness of my upright soul;

He is our subject, Mowbray, so art thou;  
Free speech, and fearless, I to thee allow.

*Nor.* Then, Bolingbroke, as low as to thy  
heart, [liest I

Through the false passage of thy throat, thou  
Three parts of that receipt I had for Calais,

Disbursed I duly to his highness' soldiers:  
The other part reserved I by consent;

For that my sovereign liege was in my debt,  
Upon remainder of a dear account,

Since last I went to France to fetch his queen:  
Now swallow down that lie.—For Gloster's

death,——  
I slew him not; but to my own disgrace,

Neglected my sworn duty in that case.—  
For you, my noble lord of Lancaster,

The honourable father to my foe,  
Once did I lay in ambush for your life,

A trespass that doth vex my grieved soul:  
But, ere I last received the sacrament,

I did confess it; and exactly begged  
Your grace's pardon, and, I hope, I had it.

This is my fault: As for the rest appeal'd ¶,  
It issues from the rancour of a villain,

A recreant and most degenerate traitor:  
Which in myself I boldly will defend;

And interchangeably hurl down my gage  
Upon this overweening\*\* traitor's foot,

To prove myself a loyal gentleman  
Even in the best blood chamber'd in his bosom

In haste whereof, most heartily I pray  
Your highness to assign our trial day. [by me;

*K. Rich.* Wrath-kindled gentlemen, be ruled  
Let's purge this choler without letting blood:

This we prescribe though no physician;  
Deep malice makes too deep incision:

Forget, forgive; conclude, and be agreed;  
Our doctors say, this is no time to bleed.—

Good uncle, let this end where it begun; [son.  
We'll calm the duke of Norfolk, you your

*Gaunt.* To be a make-peace shall become  
my age: [scape.

Throw down, my son, the duke of Norfolk's  
*K. Rich.* And, Norfolk, throw down his.

*Gaunt.* When, Harry? when?  
Obedience bids, I should not bid again.

*K. Rich.* Norfolk, throw down; we bid;  
there is no boot ††. [foot

*Nor.* Myself I throw, dread sovereign, at thy  
My life thou shalt command, but not my shame

The one my duty owes; but my fair name,  
(Despite of death, that lives upon my grave,)

To dark dishonour's use thou shalt not have.  
I am disgrac'd, impeach'd, and baffled here:

\* Uninhabitable.  
his ancestry.

† Possess.  
‡ Charged

‡ Wicked.  
\*\* Arrogant.

§ Prompt. || Reproach to  
†† No advantage in delay.

Pierced to the soul with slander's venom'd spear; [blood]  
The which no balm can cure, but his heart-  
Which breathed this poison.

*K. Rich.* Rage must be withstood:  
Give me his gage:—Lions make leopards tame.

*Nor.* Yea, but not change their spots; take  
but my shame,

And I resign my gage. My dear dear lord,  
The purest treasure mortal times afford,  
Is—spotless reputation; that away,  
Men are but gilded loam, or painted clay.  
A jewel in a ten-times-barr'd-up chest  
Is—a bold spirit in a loyal breast.  
Mine honour is my life; both grow in one;  
Take honour from me, and my life is done:  
Then, dear my liege, mine honour let me try;  
In that I live, and for that will I die.

*K. Rich.* Cousin, throw down your gage;  
do you begin. [foul sin!]

*Boling.* O, God defend my soul from such  
Shall I seem crest-fallen in my father's sight?  
Or with pale beggar-fear impeach my height  
Before this out-dar'd dastard! Ere my tongue  
Shall wound mine honour with such feeble  
wrong,

Or sound so base a parle, my teeth shall tear  
The slavish motive of recanting fear;  
And spit it bleeding in his high disgrace,  
Where shame doth harbour even in Mowbray's  
face. [Exit GAUNT. command:]

*K. Rich.* We were not born to sue, but to  
Which since we cannot do to make you friends,  
Be ready, as your lives shall answer it,  
At Coventry, upon St. Lambert's day;  
There shall your swords and lances arbitrate  
The swelling difference of your settled hate;  
Since we cannot atone \* you, we shall see  
Justice design \* the victor's chivalry.—  
Marshal, command our officers at arms  
Be ready to direct these home-alarms. [Exit.]

SCENE II. The same. A Room in the  
Duke of Lancaster's Palace.

Enter GAUNT, and Duchess of Gloster.

*Gaunt.* Alas! the part† I had in Gloster's  
blood

Doth more solicit me, than your exclaims,  
To stir against the butchers of his life,  
But since correction lieth in those hands,  
Which made the fault that we cannot correct,  
Put we our quarrel to the will of heaven;  
Who when he sees the hours ripe on earth,  
Will rain hot vengeance on offenders' heads.

*Duch.* Finds brotherhood in thee no sharper  
Hath love in thy old blood no living fire? [spur  
Edward's seven sons, when of thyself art one,  
Were as seven phials of his sacred blood,  
Or seven fair branches springing from one  
root: [course,

Some of those seven are dried by nature's  
Some of those branches by the destinies cut:  
But Thomas, my dear lord, my life, my Glos-  
One phial full of Edward's sacred blood, [ter,—  
One flourishing branch of his most royal root—

Is crack'd, and all the precious liquor spilt;  
Is hacked down, and his summer leaves all fad  
By envy's hand, and murder's bloody axe. [ed.  
Ah, Gaunt! his blood was thine; that bed,  
that womb,

That metal, that self-mould, that fashioned  
thee, [breath'st,

Made him a man; and though thou livest and  
Yet art thou slain in him: thou dost consent §  
In some large measure to thy father's death,  
In that thou seest thy wretched brother die,  
Who was the model of thy father's life.  
Call it not patience, Gaunt, it is despair:

In suffering thus thy brother to be slaughter'd,  
Thou show'st the naked pathway to thy life,  
Teaching stern murder how to butcher thee:  
That which in mean men we entitle—patience,  
Is pale cold cowardice in noble breasts.

What shall I say? to safeguard thine own life,  
The best way is—to 'venge my Gloster's death.

*Gaunt.* Heaven's is the quarrel; for hea-  
ven's substitute,

His deputy anointed in his sight,  
Hath caus'd his death: the which if wrongfully,  
Let heaven revenge; for I may never lift  
An angry arm against his minister.

*Duch.* Where, then, alas! may I complain  
myself? [and defence.

*Gaunt.* To heaven, the widow's champion  
*Duch.* Why then, I will. Farewell, old  
Thou go'st to Coventry, there to behold [Gaunt,  
Our cousin Hereford and fell Mowbray fight:  
O, sit my husband's wrongs on Hereford's  
spear,

That it may enter butcher Mowbray's breast!  
Or, if misfortune miss the first career,  
Be Mowbray's sins so heavy in his bosom,  
That they may break his foaming courser's back,  
And throw the rider headlong in the lists,  
A caitiff || recreant to my cousin Hereford!  
Farewell, old Gaunt; thy sometime brother's  
wife,

With her companion grief must end her life.

*Gaunt.* Sister, farewell; I must to Coventry:  
As much good stay with thee, as go with me!

*Duch.* Yet one word more;—Grief boundeth  
where it falls,

Not with the empty hollowness, but weight:  
I take my leave before I have begun:  
For sorrow ends not when it seemeth done.  
Commend me to my brother, Edmund York.  
Lo, this is all:—Nay, yet depart not so;  
Though this be all, do not so quickly go;  
I shall remember more. Bid him—O, what?  
With all good speed at Plashy \*\* visit me.  
Alack, and what shall good old York there see,  
But empty lodgings and unfurnish'd walls,  
Unpeopled offices, untrodden stones?

And what cheer there for welcome, but my  
groans? [there,

Therefore commend me; let him not come  
To seek out sorrow that dwells every where:  
Desolate, desolate, will I hence and die;  
The last leave of thee takes my weeping eye.

[Exit]

Reconcile.

† Shew.

‡ Relationship.

§ Assent.

|| A base villain.

¶ Cowardly.

\*\* Her house in Essex.

SCENE III. Gosford Green, near Coventry.

*Lists set out, and a Throne. Heralds, &c. attending.*

*Enter the Lord Marshal, and AUMERLE.*

*Mar.* My lord Aumerle, is Harry Hereford arm'd? [in.]

*Aum.* Yea, at all points; and longs to enter

*Mar.* The duke of Norfolk, sprightly and bold, [trumpet.]

Stays but the summons of the appellant's *Aum.* Why then, the champions are prepared, and stay

For nothing but his majesty's approach.

*Flourish of Trumpets. Enter King RICHARD, who takes his seat on his throne;*

*GAUNT, and several Noblemen, who take their places. A Trumpet is sounded, and answered by another Trumpet within.*

*Then enter NORFOLK in armour, preceded by a Herald.*

*K. Rich.* Marshal, demand of yonder cham-

The cause of his arrival here in arms: [pion

Ask him his name; and orderly proceed To swear him in the justice of his cause.

*Mar.* In God's name, and the king's, say who thou art, [arms;

And why thou com'st, thus knightly clad in Against what man thou com'st, and what thy quarrel:

Speak truly, on thy knighthood, and thy oath; And so defend thee heaven, and thy valour!

*Nor.* My name is Thomas Mowbray, duke of Norfolk;

Who hither come engaged by my oath, (Which heaven defend a knight should violate!)

Both to defend my loyalty and truth, To God, my king, and my succeeding issue,

Against the duke of Hereford that appeals me; And, by the grace of God, and this mine arm,

To prove him, in defending of myself, A traitor to my God, my king, and me:

And, as I truly fight, defend me heaven!

[*He takes his seat.*]

*Trumpet sounds. Enter BOLINGBROKE, in armour, preceded by a Herald.*

*K. Rich.* Marshal, ask yonder knight in arms,

Both who he is, and why he cometh hither Thus plated in habiliments of war;

And formally according to our law Depose him in the justice of his cause.

*Mar.* What is thy name? and wherefore com'st thou hither,

Before King Richard, in his royal lists? [quarrel? Against whom comest thou; and what's thy

Speak like a true knight, so defend thee heaven!

*Boling.* Harry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Am I; who ready here do stand in arms, [Derby,

To prove, by heaven's grace, and my body's valour, [folk,

In lists, on Thomas Mowbray duke of Northampton, that he's a traitor, foul and dangerous,

To God of heaven, king Richard, and to me; And, as I truly fight, defend me heaven!

*Mar.* On pain of death, no person be so Or daring-hardy, as to touch the lists; [bold,

Except the marshal, and such officers

Appointed to direct these fair designs.

*Boling.* Lord marshal, let me kiss my sovereign's hand,

And bow my knee before his majesty:

For Mowbray and myself, are like two men That vow a long and weary pilgrimage;

Then let us take a ceremonious leave,

And loving farewell, of our several friends.

*Mar.* The appellant in all duty greets your highness, [leave.

And craves to kiss your hand, and take his

*K. Rich.* We will descend, and fold him in our arms.

Cousin of Hereford, as thy cause is right,

So be thy fortune in this royal fight!

Farewell, my blood; which if to-day thou shed, Lament we may, but not revenge thee dead.

*Boling.* O, let no noble eye profane a tear

For me, if I be gored with Mowbray's spear; As confident, as is the falcon's flight

Against a bird, do I with Mowbray fight.~ My loving lord, [*To Lord Marshal.*] I take my

leave of you;—

Of you, my noble cousin, lord Aumerle:—

Not sick, although I have to do with death;

But lusty, young, and cheerily drawing breath.

Lo, as at English feasts, so I regret

The daintiest last, to make the end most sweet:

O thou, the earthly author of my blood,—

[*To GAUNT*

Whose youthful spirit in me regenerate,

Doth with a two fold vigour lift me up

To reach at victory above my head,—

Add proof unto mine armour with thy prayers;

And with thy blessings steel my lance's point,

That it may enter Mowbray's waxen coat,

And furbish new the name of John of Gaunt,

Even in the lusty haviour of his son.

*Gaunt.* Heaven in thy good cause make

thee prosperous!

Be swift like lightning in the execution;

And let thy blows, doubly redoubled,

Fall like amazing thunder on the casque†

Of thy adverse pernicious enemy: [live.

Rouse up thy youthful blood, be valiant and

*Boling.* Mine innocence, and Saint George

to thrive! [*He takes his seat.*

*Nor.* [*Rising.*] However heaven, or fortune,

cast my lot,

There lives or dies, true to king Richard's

A loyal, just, and upright gentleman: [throne,

Never did captive with a freer heart

Cast off his chains of bondage, and embrace

His golden uncontroll'd enfranchisement,

More than my dancing soul doth celebrate

This feast of battle with mine adversary.—

Most mighty liege, and my companion peers,

Take from my mouth the wish of happy years:

As gentle and as jocund, as to jests,

Go I to fight; Truth hath a quiet breast.

*K. Rich.* Farewell, my lord; securely I espy

Virtue with valour conched in thine eye.

Order the trial, marshal, and begin.

[*The King and the Lords return to their seats.*

\* Yielding

† Frighten up.

‡ Helmet.

§ Play a part in a mask.



*Mar.* Harry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby,

Receive thy lance; and God defend the right!  
*Boling.* [Rising.] Strong as a tower in hope,  
I cry—amen.

*Mar.* Go bear this lance [To an Officer.]  
to Thomas duke of Norfolk. [Derby,

1 *Her.* Harry of Hereford, Lancaster, and  
Stands here for God, his sovereign, and him—  
Or pain to be found false and recreant, [self,  
To prove the duke of Norfolk, Thomas Mow-  
bray,

A traitor to his God, his king, and him,  
And dares him to set forward to the fight.

2 *Her.* Here standeth Thomas Mowbray,  
duke of Norfolk,

On pain to be found false and recreant,  
Both to defend himself, and to approve  
Henry of Hereford, Lancaster, and Derby,  
To God, his sovereign, and to him, disloyal;  
Courageously, and with a free desire,  
Attending but the signal to begin.

*Mar.* Sound, trumpets; and set forward,  
combatants, [A Charge sounded.

Stay. The king hath thrown his warder\* down.

*K. Rich.* Let them lay by their helmets and  
their spears,

And both return back to their chairs again:—  
Withdraw with us; and let the trumpets sound,  
While we return these dukes what we de-  
cree.— [A long Flourish.

Draw near. [To the Combatants.  
And list, what with our council we have done.  
For that our kingdom's earth should not be soil'd  
With that dear blood which it hath fostered;  
And for our eyes do hate the dire aspect  
Of civil wounds plough'd up with neighbours'  
swords;

[And for we think the eagle-winged pride  
Of sky-aspiring and ambitious thoughts,  
With rival-hating envy, set you on [cradle  
To wake our peace, which in our country's  
Draws the sweet infant breath of gentle sleep:]  
Which so roused up with boisterous untuned  
drums,

With harsh resounding trumpets' dreadful bray,  
And grating shock of wrathful iron arms,  
Might from our quiet confines fright fair peace,  
And make us wade even in our kindred's blood;  
Therefore we banish you our territories:—  
You, cousin Hereford, upon pain of death,  
Till twice five summers have enrich'd our fields,  
Shall not regret our fair dominions,  
But tread the stranger paths of banishment.

*Boling.* Your will be done: this must my  
comfort be,— [me;

That sun, that warms you here, shall shine on  
And those his golden beams, to you here lent,  
Shall point on me, and gild my banishment.

*K. Rich.* Norfolk, for thee remains a hea-  
vier doom,

Which I with some unwillingness pronounce:  
The fly-slow hours shall not determinate  
The dateless limit of thy dear exile;—  
The hopeless word of—never to return  
Breathe I against thee, upon pain of life.

*Nor.* A heavy sentence, my most sovereign  
liege, [mouth:]

And all unlook'd for from your highness'  
A dearer merit, not so deep a main  
As to be cast forth in the common air,  
Have I deserved at your highness' hand.  
The language I have learn'd these forty years,  
My native English, now I must forego:  
And now my tongue's use is to me no more,  
Than an unstring'd viol or a harp;  
Or like a cunning instrument cased up,  
Or, being open, put into his hands  
That knows no touch to tune the harmony.  
Within my mouth you have engao'd my  
tongue,

Doubly portcullis'd† with my teeth and lips;  
And dull, unfeeling, barren ignorance  
Is made my goaler to attend on me.  
I am too old to fawn upon a nurse,  
Too far in years to be a pupil now;  
What is thy sentence then, but speechless death,  
Which robs my tongue from breathing native  
breath? [ate:]

*K. Rich.* It boots thee not to be compassion-  
After our sentence plaining comes too late.

*Nor.* Then thus I turn me from my country's  
light,

To dwell in solemn shades of endless night.  
[Retiring.]

*K. Rich.* Return again, and take an oath  
with thee.

Lay on our royal sword your banish'd hands;  
Swear by the duty that you owe to heaven,  
(Our part therein we banish with yourselves.)  
To keep the oath that we administer:—  
You never shall (so help you truth and heaven!)  
Embrace each other's love in banishment;  
Nor never look upon each other's face;  
Nor never write, regret, nor reconcile  
This lowering tempest of your home-bred hate;  
Nor never by advised|| purpose meet,  
To plot, contrive, or complot any ill,  
\*Gainst us, our state, our subjects, or our land.

*Boling.* I swear.

*Nor.* And I, to keep all this.

*Boling.* Norfolk, so far as to mine enemy;—  
By this time, had the king permitted us,  
One of our souls had wander'd in the air,  
Banish'd this frail sepulchre of our flesh,  
As now our flesh is banish'd from this land:  
Confess thy treasons, ere thou fly the realm;  
Since thou hast far to go, bear not along  
The clogging burden of a guilty soul.

*Nor.* No, Bolingbroke, if ever I were  
traitor,

My name be blotted from the book of life,  
And I from heaven banish'd, as from hence!  
But what thou art, Heaven, thou, and I do  
know; rue.—

And all too soon, I fear, the king shall  
Farewell, my liege:—Now no way can I stray;  
Save back to England, all the world's my  
way. [Exit.]

*K. Rich.* Uncle, even in the glasses of thine  
eyes

I see thy griev'd heart; thy sad aspect

\* Truncheon.

† Nursed.

‡ Barr'd.

§ To move compassion.

|| C. needed,

Hath from the number of his banish'd years  
Pluck'd four away: Six frozen winters spent,  
Return [To BOLING.] with welcome home  
from banishment. [word!]

*Boling.* How long a time lies in one little  
Four lagging winters and four wanton springs,  
End in a word; Such is the breath of kings.

*Gaunt.* I thank my liege, that, in regard  
of me,

He shortens four years of my son's exile:  
But little vantage shall I reap thereby;  
For, ere the six years, that he hath to spend,  
Can change their moons, and bring their times  
about,

My oil-dried lamp, and time-bewasted light,  
Shall be extinct with age, and endless night;  
My inch of taper will be burnt and done,  
And blindfold death not let me see my son.

*K. Rich.* Why, uncle, thou hast many years  
to live. [canst give:]

*Gaunt.* But not a minute, king, that thou  
Shorten my days thou canst with sullen sor-  
row: [morrow:]

And pluck nights from me, but not lend a  
Thou canst help time to furrow me with age,  
But stop no wrinkle in his pilgrimage;  
Thy word is current with him for my death;  
But, dead, thy kingdom cannot buy my breath.

*K. Rich.* Thy son is banish'd upon good  
advice\*,

Whereto thy tongue a party† verdiet gave;  
Why at our justice seem'st thou then to lower?

*Gaunt.* Things sweet to taste, prove in  
digestion sour.

You urged me as a judge; but I had rather  
You would have bid me argue like a father:—  
O, had it been a stranger, not my child,  
To smooth his fault I should have been more  
A partial slanderer; sought I to avoid, [mild:]  
And in the sentence my own life destroy'd.  
Alas, I look'd, when some of you should say,  
I was too strict, to make my own away;  
But you gave leave to my unwilling tongue,  
Against my will to do myself this wrong.

*K. Rich.* Cousin, farewell:—and, uncle,  
bid him so;

Six years we banish him, and he shall go.

[*Flourish.* *Exeunt* K. RICHARD and Train.]

*Aum.* Cousin, farewell: what presence must  
not know,

From where you do remain, let paper show.  
*Mar.* My lord, no leave take I; for I will  
ride,

As far as land will let me, by your side.

*Gaunt.* O, to what purpose dost thou hoard  
thy words,

That thou return'st no greeting to thy friends?

*Boling.* I have too few to take my leave  
of you,

When the tongue's office should be prodigal  
To breathe the abundant dolour of the heart.

*Gaunt.* Thy grief is but thy absence for a  
time. [time.]

*Boling.* Joy absent, grief is present for that

*Gaunt.* What is six winters? they are  
quickly gone. [one hour ten.]

*Boling.* To men in joy; but grief makes  
*Gaunt.* Call it a travel that thou tak'st for  
pleasure. [it so,]

*Boling.* My heart will sigh, when I miscall  
Which finds it an enforced pilgrimage.

*Gaunt.* The sullen passage of thy weary  
steps

Esteem a foil, wherein thou art to set  
The precious jewel of thy home-return.

*Boling.* Nay, rather, every tedious stride I  
make

Will but remember me, what a deal of world  
I wander from the jewels that I love.

Must I not serve a long apprenticeship

To foreign passages; and in the end,

Having my freedom, boast of nothing else,  
But that I was a journeyman to grief?

*Gaunt.* All places that the eye of heaven  
visits,

Are to a wise man ports and happy havens:

Teach thy necessity to reason thus;

There is no virtue like necessity.

Think not, the king did banish thee: [sit,

But thou the king: Woe doth the heavier  
Where it perceives it is but faintly borne.

Go, say—I sent thee forth to purchase honour,

And not—the king exiled thee: or suppose,

Devouring pestilence hangs in our air,

And thou art flying to a fresher clime.

Look, what thy soul holds dear, imagine it

To lie that way thou go'st, not whence thou

Suppose the singing birds, musicians; [comest:]

The grass whereon thou tread'st, the pres-  
ence|| strew'd; [more]

The flowers, fair ladies; and thy steps, no

Than a delightful measure, or a dance:

For gnarling sorrow hath less power to bite

The man that mocks at it, and sets it light.

*Boling.* O, who can hold a fire in his hand,

By thinking on the frosty Caucasus?

Or cloy the hungry edge of appetite,

By bare imagination of a feast?

Or wallow naked in December snow,

By thinking on fantastic summer's heat

O, no! the apprehension of the good,

Gives but the greater feeling to the worse:

Fell sorrow's tooth doth never rankle more,

Than when it bites, but lanceth not the sore.

*Gaunt.* Come, come, my son, I'll bring thee  
on thy way:

Had I thy youth, and cause, I would not stay

*Boling.* Then, England's ground, farewell:

sweet soil, adieu;

My mother, and my nurse, that bears me yet!

Where'er I wander, boast of this I can, —

Though banish'd, yet a trueborn Englishman. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV. *The same. A Room in the  
King's Castle.*

*Enter* King RICHARD, BAGOT, and GREEN  
AUMERLE following.

*K. Rich.* We did observe.—Cousin Aumerle

Consideration.

† Had a part or share.

‡ Reproach of partiality.

§ Grief.

|| Presence chamber at court.

¶ Growling.

How far brought you high Hereford on his way? [him so,

*Aum.* I brought high Hereford, if you call  
 But to the next highway, and there I left him.

*K. Rich.* And say, what store of parting  
 tears were shed? [east wind,

*Aum.* 'Faith, none by me: except the north-  
 Which then blew bitterly against our faces,  
 Awaked the sleeping rheum; and so, by  
 chance,

Did grace our hollow parting with a tear.

*K. Rich.* What said our cousin, when you  
*Aum.* Farewell: [parted with him?

And, for my heart disdained that my tongue  
 Should so profane the word, that taught me  
 craft

To counterfeit oppression of such grief,  
 That words seem'd buried in my sorrow's  
 grave. [en'd hours,

Marry, would the word farewell have length-  
 And added years to his short banishment,  
 He should have had a volume of farewells;  
 But, since it would not, he had none of me.

*K. Rich.* He is our cousin, cousin; but 'tis  
 doubt, [ment,

When time shall call him home from banish-  
 Whether our kinsman come to see his friends.

Ourself, and Bushy, Bagot here, and Green,  
 Observed his courtship to the common people:  
 How he did seem to dive into their hearts,  
 With humble and familiar courtesy;

What reverence he did throw away on slaves;  
 Wooing poor craftsmen, with the craft of  
 smiles,

And patient underbearing of his fortune,  
 As 'twere, to banish their affects with him.

Off goes his bonnet to an oyster-wench;  
 A brace of draymen bid—God speed him well,  
 And had the tribute of his supple knee.

With—*Thanks my countrymen, my loving  
 friends;—*

As were our England in reversion his,  
 And he our subjects' next degree in hope.

*Green.* Well, he is gone; and with him go  
 these thoughts. [land;—

Now for the rebels, which stand out in Ire  
 Expedient \* manage must be made, my liege;  
 Ere further leisure yield them further means,  
 For their advantage, and your highness' loss.

*K. Rich.* We will ourself in person to this  
 war.

And, forth our coffers—with too great a court  
 And liberal largess,—are grown somewhat  
 light,

We are enforced to farm our royal realm;  
 The revenue whereof shall furnish us

For our affairs in hand: If that come short,  
 Our substitutes at home shall have blank  
 charters; [rich,

Whereto, when they shall know what men are  
 They shall subscribe them for large sums of  
 gold,

And send them after to supply our wants;  
 For we will make for Ireland presently.

*Enter Bushy.*

Bushy, what news? [my lord;

*Bushy.* Old John of Gaunt is grievous sick,  
 Suddenly taken; and hath sent post-haste,  
 To entreat your majesty to visit him.

*K. Rich.* Where lies he?

*Bushy.* At Ely-house. [sician's mind,

*K. Rich.* Now put it, heaven, in his ply-  
 To help him to his grave immediately!

The lining of his coffers shall make coats  
 To deck our soldiers for these Irish wars.—

Come, gentlemen, let's all go visit him:  
 Pray God, we may make haste, and come too  
 late!

*Exeunt.*

## ACT II.

SCENE I. London. *A Room in Ely-house.*

*GAUNT on a Couch; the Duke of YORK,  
 and Others standing by him.*

*Gaunt.* Will the king come? that I may  
 breathe my last

In wholesome counsel to his unstaid youth.

*York.* Vex not yourself, nor strive not with  
 your breath;

For all in vain comes counsel to his ear.

*Gaunt.* O, but they say, the tongues of  
 dying men

Enforce attention, like deep harmony:  
 Where words are scarce, they are seldom  
 spent in vain: [words in pain.

For they breathe truth, that breathe their  
 He, that no more must say, is listen'd more

Than they whom youth and ease have taught  
 to glose;

More are men's ends mark'd, than their lives  
 before:

The setting sun, and music at the close,  
 As the last taste of sweets, is sweetest last;

Writ in remembrance, more than things long  
 past: [hear,

Though Richard my life's counsel would not  
 My death's sad tale may yet undeaf his ear.

*York.* No; it is stopp'd with other flatter-  
 ing sounds,

As, praises of his state: then, there are found  
 Lascivious metres; to whose venom sound

The open ear of youth doth always listen:  
 Report of fashions in proud Italy;

Whose manners still our tardy apish nation  
 Limpers after, in base imitation,

Where doth the world thrust forth a vanity,  
 (So it be new, there's no respect how vile),

That is not quickly buzz'd into his ears?  
 Then all too late comes counsel to be heard,

Where will doth mutiny with wit's regard.  
 Direct not him, whose way himself will  
 choose; [thou lose,

'Tis breath thou lack'st, and that breath wit  
*Gaunt.* Methinks, I am a prophet new  
 inspired;

And thus, expiring, do foretel of him.

\* Expeditions.

+ Because.

‡ Flatter.



His rash fierce blaze of riot cannot last;  
For violent fires soon burn out themselves:  
Small showers last long, but sudden storms  
are short;

He tires betimes, that spurs too fast betimes;  
With eager feeding, food doth choke the  
Light vanity, insatiate cormorant, [feeder:  
Consuming means, soon preys upon itself.

This royal throne of kings, this sceptred isle,  
This earth of majesty, this seat of Mars,  
This other Eden, demi-paradise;

This fortress, built by nature for herself,  
Against infection, and the hand of war;  
This happy breed of men, this little world;

This precious stone set in the silver sea,  
Which serves it in the office of a wall,  
Or as a moat defensive to a house,  
Against the envy of less happier lands;

This blessed plot, this earth, this realm, this  
England,  
This nurse, this teeming womb of royal kings,  
Fear'd by their breed, and famous by their  
birth,

Renowned for their deeds as far from home,  
(For Christian service, and true chivalry,)

As is the sepulchre in stubborn Jewry,  
Of the world's ransom, blessed Mary's son:

This land of such dear souls, this dear dear land,  
Dear for her reputation through the world,

Is now leased out (I die pronouncing it),  
Like to a tenement, or pelting\* farm:

England, bound in with the triumphant sea,  
Whose rocky shore beats back the envious  
siege [shame,

Of watery Neptune, is now bound in with  
With inky blots, and rotten parchment bonds;

That England, that was wont to conquer others,  
Hath made a shameful conquest of itself:

O, would the scandal vanish with my life,  
How happy then were my ensuing death!

*Enter King RICHARD, and Queen; AU-  
MERLE, BUSHY, GREEN, BAGOT, ROSS,  
and WILLOUGHBY.*

*York.* The king is come: deal mildly with  
his youth; [more.

For young hot colts, being raged, do rage the  
*Queen.* How fares our noble uncle, Lan-  
caster? [with aged Gaunt?

*K. Rich.* What comfort, man? How is't  
*Gaunt.* O, how that name befits my com-  
position!

Old Gaunt, indeed; and gaunt† in being old:  
Within me grief hath kept a tedious fast;

And who abstains from meat, that is not gaunt?  
For sleeping England long time have I watch'd;

Watching breeds leanness, leanness is all gaunt:  
The pleasure, that some fathers feed upon,

Is my strict fast, I mean—my children's looks;  
And, therein fasting, hast thou made me gaunt:

Gaunt am I for the grave, gaunt as a grave,  
Whose hollow womb inherits nought but bones.

*K. Rich.* Can sick men play so nicely with  
their names? [itself:

*Gaunt.* No, misery makes sport to mock  
Since thou dost seek to kill my name in me,  
I mock my name, great king, to flatter thee.

*K. Rich.* Should dying men flatter with  
those that live? [that die.

*Gaunt.* No, no; men living flatter those  
*K. Rich.* Thou, now a dying, say'st—thou  
flatter'st me. [sicker be.

*Gaunt.* Oh! no; thou diest, though I live  
*K. Rich.* I am in health, I breathe, and see  
thee ill. [see thee ill;

*Gaunt.* Now, He that made me, knows I  
ill in myself to see, and in thee seeing ill.

Thy death-bed is no lesser than the land,  
Wherein thou liest in reputation sick:

And thou, too careless patient as thou art,  
Committ'st thy anointed body to the cure

Of those physicians that first wounded thee:  
A thousand flatterers sit within thy crown,

Whose compass is no bigger than thy head;  
And yet, incaged in so small a verge,

The waste is no whit lesser than thy land.  
O, had thy grandsire, with a prophet's eye,

Seen how his son's son should destroy his sons,  
From forth thy reach he would have laid thy  
shame;

Deposing thee before thou wert possess'd,  
Which art possess'd; now to depose thyself.

Why, cousin, wert thou regent of the world,  
It were a shame to let this land be lease:

But, for thy world, enjoying but this land,  
Is it not more than shame, to shame it so?

Landlord of England art thou now, not king:  
Thy state of law is bondsman to the law;

And thou—  
*K. Rich.* —a lunatic lean-witted fool,

Presuming on an ague's privilege,  
Dar'st with thy frozen admonition

Make pale our cheek; chasing the royal blood,  
With fury, from his native residence.

Now by my seat's right royal majesty,  
Wert thou not brother to great Edward's son,

This tongue that runs so roundly in thy head,  
Should run thy head from thy unreverend

shoulders. [ward's son,

*Gaunt.* O, spare me not, my brother Ed-  
For that I was his father Edward's son;

That blood already, like the pelican,  
Hast thou tapp'd out, and drunkenly caroused;

My brother Gloster, plain well-meaning soul,  
(Whom fair befal in heaven 'mongst happy

May be a precedent and witness good, [sculis!]  
That thou respect'st not spilling Edward's

blood:

Join with the present sickness that I have;  
And thy unkindness be like crooked age,

To crop at once a too-long wither'd flower.  
Live in thy shame, but die not shame with

thee!—  
These words hereafter thy tormentors be!—

Convey me to my bed, then to my grave:  
Love they to live, that love and honour have.

[*Exit, borne out by his Attendants.*

*K. Rich.* And let them die, that age and  
sullens have;

For both hast thou, and both become the grave.  
*York.* 'Peseech your majesty, impute his

To wayward sickness and age in him: [words  
He loves you, on my life, and holds you dear

\* Paltry.

† Lean, thin.

‡ Mad.

As Harry duke of Hereford, were he here.

*K. Rich.* Right; you say true: as Hereford's love, so his.

As theirs, so mine; and all be as it is.

*Enter NORTHUMBERLAND.*

*North.* My liege, old Gaunt commends him to your majesty.

*K. Rich.* What says he now?

*North.* Nay, nothing; all is said: His tongue is now a stringless instrument; Words, life, and all, old Lancaster hath spent.

*York.* Be York the next that must be bankrupt so!

Though death be poor, it ends a mortal woe.

*K. Rich.* The ripest fruit first falls, and so doth he;

His time is spent, our pilgrimage must be:

So much for that—Now for our Irish wars:

We must supplant those rough rug-headed kerns\*;

Which live like venom, where no venom else, But only they, hath privilege to live†.

And for these great affairs do ask some charge,

Towards our assistance, we do seize to us

The plate, coin, revenues, and moveables,

Whereof our uncle Gaunt did stand possess'd.

*York.* How long shall I be patient? Ah, how shall tender duty make me suffer wrong? [long

Not Gloster's death, nor Hereford's banishment, [wrongs,

Not Gaunt's rebukes, nor England's private

Nor the prevention of poor Bolingbroke

About his marriage, nor my own disgrace,

Have ever made me sour my patient cheek,

Or bend one wrinkle on my sovereign's face.—

I am the last of noble Edward's sons,

Of whom thy father, prince of Wales, was first;

In war, was never lion rag'd more fierce,

In peace was never gentle lamb more mild,

Than was that young and princely gentleman:

His face thou hast, for even so look'd he,

Accomplish'd with the number of thy hours‡;

But, when he frown'd, it was against the French,

And not against his friends: his noble hand

Did win what he did spend, and spent not that

Which his triumphant father's hand had won:

His hands were guilty of no kindred's blood,

But bloody with the enemies of his kin.

O, Richard! York is too far gone with grief,

Or else he never would compare between.

*K. Rich.* Why, uncle, what's the matter?

*Yor.* O, my liege,

Pardon me, if you please; if not, I pleased

Not to be pardoned, am content withal.

Seek you to seize, and gripe into your hands,

The royalties and rights of banish'd Hereford?

Is not Gaunt dead? and doth not Hereford live?

Was not Gaunt just? and is not Harry true?

Did not the one deserve to have an heir?

Is not his heir a well-deserving son?

Take Hereford's rights away, and take from

His charters, and his customary rights, [time

Let not to-morrow then ensue to-day;

Be not thyself, for how art thou a king,

But by fair sequence and succession?

Now, afore God (God forbid, I say true!)

If you do wrongfully seize Hereford's rights,

Call in the letters patent that he hath

By his attornies-general to sue

His livery§, and deny his offer'd homage,

You pluck a thousand dangers on your head,

You lose a thousand well-disposed hearts,

And prick my tender patience to those thoughts

Which honour and allegiance cannot think.

*K. Rich.* Think what you will; we seize into our hands

His plate, his goods, his money, and his lands.

*York.* I'll not be by, the while: my liege, farewell:

What will ensue hereof, there's none can tell;

But by bad courses may be understood,

That their events can never fall out good. [*Erit.*

*K. Rich.* Go, Bushy, to the Earl of Wiltshire straight;

Bid him repair to us to Ely-house,

To see this business: To-morrow next

We will for Ireland; and 'tis time, I trow;

And we create, in absence of ourself,

Our uncle York lord governor of England,

For he is just, and always loved us well.—

Come on our queen: to-morrow must we part;

Be merry, for our time of stay is short.

[*Flourish.*

[*Exeunt King, Queen, BUSHY, AUMERIK, GREEN, and BAGOT.*

*North.* Well, lords, the duke of Lancaster is dead. [duke.

*Ross.* And living too; for now his son is Willo. Barely in title, not in revenue. [right.

*North.* Richly in both, if justice had her

*Ross.* My heart is great; but it must break with silence,

Ere't he disburden'd with a liberal|| tongue.

*North.* Nay, speak thy mind; and let him ne'er speak more,

That speaks thy words again to do thee harm!

*Willo.* Tends that thou'dst speak, to the duke of Hereford?

If it be so, out with it boldly, man; Quick is mine ear to hear of good towards him.

*Ross.* No good at all, that I can do for him; Unless you call it good to pity him,

Bereft and gelded¶ of his patrimony.

*North.* Now, afore heaven, 'tis shame, such wrongs are borne,

In him a royal prince, and many more Of noble blood in this declining land.

The king is not himself, but basely led By flatterers; and what they will inform,

Merely in hate, 'gainst any of us all, That will the king severely prosecute

'Gainst us, our lives, our children, and our heirs.

*Ross.* The commons hath he pill'd\*\* with grievous taxes,

And lost their hearts: the nobles hath he fined For ancient quarrels, and quite lost their hearts.

*Willo.* And daily new exactions are devised;

As blanks, benevolences, and I wot not what: But what, o' God's name, doth become of this,

\* Irish soldiers.

† When of thy age

‡ Alluding to the idea that no venomous reptiles live in Ireland.

§ Taking possession.

|| Free.

¶ Deprived.

\*\* Pillaged.

*North.* Wars have not wasted it, for war<sup>d</sup> he hath not,

But basely yielded upon compromise  
That which his ancestors achieved with blows:  
More hath he spent in peace, than they in wars.

*Ross.* The earl of Wiltshire hath the realm in farm. [broken man.

*Willo.* The king's grown bankrupt, like a *North.* Reproach, and dissolution, hangeth over him. [wars,

*Ross.* He hath not money for these Irish  
His burdensome taxations notwithstanding,  
But by the robbing of the banish'd duke.

*North.* His noble kinsman: most degenerate king!

But, lords, we hear this fearful tempest sing,  
Yet seek no shelter to avoid the storm:

We see the wind set sore upon our sails,  
And yet we strike not, but securely perish\*.

*Ross.* We see the very wreck that we must  
And unavoids is the danger now, [suffer;  
For suffering so the causes of our wreck.

*North.* Not so; even through the hollow eyes of death,

I spy life peering; but I dare not say  
How near the tidings of our comfort is.

*Willo.* Nay, let us share thy thoughts as thou dost ours. [land:

*Ross.* Be confident to speak, Northumberland:  
We three are but thyself; and, speaking so,  
Thy words are but as thoughts; therefore be bold. [Blanc, a bay

*North.* Then thus:—I have from Port le In Brittany, received intelligence,  
That Harry Hereford, Reignold lord Cobham,  
[The son of Richard earl of Arundel,]  
That late broke from the duke of Exeter,  
His brother, archbishop late of Canterbury,  
Sir Thomas Erpingham, sir John Ramston,  
Sir John Norbery, sir Robert Waterton, and Francis Quaint,—

All these well furnish'd by the duke of Bretagne,  
With eight tall ships, three thousand men of war,

Are making hither with all due expedience†,  
And shortly mean to touch our northern shore:  
Perhaps, they had ere this; but that they stay  
The first departing of the king for Ireland.

If then we shall shake off our slavish yoke,  
Imps out our drooping country's broken wing,  
Redeem from broking pawn the blemish'd crown,

Wipe off the dust that hides our sceptre's gilt‡,  
And make high majesty look like itself,  
Away, with me, in post to Ravenspur:  
Put if you faint, as fearing to do so,  
Stay, and be secret, and myself will go.

*Ross.* To horse, to horse! urge doubts to them that fear. [be there.

*Willo.* Hold out my horse, and I will first [Exeunt.

SCENE II. *The same. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter Queen, Bushy, and Bagot.*

*Bushy.* Madam, your majesty is too much sad:

You promised, when you parted with the king,  
To lay aside life-harming heaviness,  
And entertain a cheerful disposition.

*Queen.* To please the king, I did; to please myself,

I cannot do it; yet I know no cause  
Why I should welcome such a guest as grief,  
Save bidding farewell to so sweet a guest  
As my sweet Richard: Yet, again, methinks,  
Some unborn sorrow, ripe in fortune's womb,  
Is coming towards me; and my inward soul  
With nothing trembles: at something it grieves,  
More than with parting from my lord the king.

*Bushy.* Each substance of a grief hath twenty shadows,

Which show like grief itself, but are not so:  
For sorrow's eye, glazed with blinding tears,  
Divides one thing entire to many objects;  
Like perspectives¶, which, rightly gazed upon,  
Show nothing but confusion; eyed awry,  
Distinguish form: so your sweet majesty,  
Looking awry upon your lord's departure,  
Finds shapes of grief, more than himself to wail,  
Which, lock'd on as it is, is nought but shadow  
Of what it is not. Then, thrice-gracious queen,  
More than your lord's departure weep not;  
more's not seen:

Or if it be, 'tis with false sorrow's eye,  
Which, for things true, weeps things imaginary.

*Queen.* It may be so; but yet my inward soul

Persuades me, it is otherwise: Howe'er it be,  
I cannot but be sad; so heavy sad, [think,—  
As,—though, in thinking, on no thought I  
Makes me with heavy nothing faint and shrink.

*Bushy.* 'Tis nothing but conceit\*\*, my gracious lady. [rived

*Queen.* 'Tis nothing less: conceit is still de-  
From some forefather grief; mine is not so;  
For nothing hath begot my something grief;  
Or something hath the nothing that I grieve:  
'Tis in reversion that I do possess;  
But what it is, that is not yet known; what  
I cannot name; 'tis nameless woe, I wot††.

*Enter GREEN.*

*Green.* God save your majesty!—and well met, gentlemen:—

I hope, the king is not yet shipp'd for Ireland.

*Queen.* Why hopest thou so? 'tis better hope he is; [hope;

For his designs crave haste, his haste good  
Then wherefore dost thou hope, he is not shipp'd? [tired his power‡‡.

*Green.* That he, our hope, might have re-  
And driven into despair an enemy's hope,  
Who strongly hath set footing in this land:  
The banish'd Bolingbroke repeals himself,  
And with uplifted arms is safe arrived  
At Ravenspur.

*Queen.* Now God in heaven forbid!  
*Green.* O, madam, 'tis too true: and that is worse,— [Henry Percy,

The lord Northumberland, his young son  
The lords of Ross, Beaumont, and Willoughby,  
With all their powerful friends, are fled to him.

\* Perish by confidence in our security. † Stout. ‡ Expedition. § Supply with new feathers. ¶ Gilding. ¶ Pictures. \*\* Fanciful conception. †† Know. ‡‡ Drawn it back



*Bushy.* Why have you not proclaim'd  
Northumberland,

And all the rest of the revolting faction  
Traitors? [cester

*Green.* We have: whereon the earl of Wor-  
Hath broke his staff, resign'd his stewardship,  
And all the household servants fled with him  
To Bolingbroke. [my woe,

*Queen.* So, Green, thou art the midwife to  
And Bolingbroke my sorrow's dismal heir:  
Now hath my soul brought forth her prodigy;  
And I, a gasping new-deliver'd mother,  
Have woe to woe, sorrow to sorrow join'd.

*Bushy.* Despair not, madam.

*Queen.* Who shall hinder me?  
I will despair, and be at enmity  
With cozening hope; he is a flatterer,  
A parasite, a keeper-back of death,  
Who gently would dissolve the bands of life,  
Which false hope lingers in extremity.

*Enter York.*

*Green.* Here comes the duke of York. [neck;  
*Queen.* With signs of war about his aged  
O full of careful business are his looks I—  
Uncle,

For heaven's sake, speak comfortable words.

*York.* Should I do so, I should belie my  
thoughts:

Comfort's in heaven; and we are on the earth,  
Where nothing lives but crosses, care, and  
Your husband he is gone to save far off, [grief.  
Whilst others come to make him lose at home:  
Here am I left to underprop his land;  
Who, weak with age, cannot support my-  
self!— [made;

Now comes the sick hour that his swift  
Now shall he try his friends that flatter'd him.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* My lord, your son was gone before  
I came. [way it will!—

*York.* He was?—Why, so!—go all which  
The nobles they are fled, the commons cold,  
And will, I fear, revolt on Hereford's side.—  
Wrrah,

Get thee to Plashy, to my sister Gloster;  
Bid her send me presently a thousand pound:—  
Hold, take my ring.

*Serv.* My lord, I had forgot to tell your lord-  
to-day, as I came by, I called there; [ship:  
But I shall grieve you to report the rest.

*York.* What is it, knave? [died.

*Serv.* An hour before I came, the duchess

*York.* God for his mercy! what a tide of woes

Comes rushing on this woful land at once!

I know not what to do:—I would to God,

(So my untruth\* had not provoked him to it,)

The king had cut off my head with my bro-  
ther's.— [land?—

What, are there posts despatch'd for Ire-

How shall we do for money for these wars?—

Come, sister,—cousin, I would say: pray, par-  
don me.— [provide some carts,

Go, fellow, [To the Servant] get thee home,

And bring away the armour that is there.—

[Exit Servant.

Gentlemen, will you go muster men? if I know

How, or which way, to order these affairs,  
Thus thrust disorderly into my hands,  
Never believe me. Both are my kinsmen;  
The one's my sovereign, whom both my oath  
And duty bids defend; the other again,  
Is my kinsman, whom the king hath wrong'd;  
Whom conscience and my kindred bid to right.  
Well, somewhat we must do.—Come, cousin, I'll  
Dispose of you:—Go, muster up your men,  
And meet me presently at Berkley-castle.  
I should to Plashy too;—  
But time will not permit:—all is uneven,  
And every thing is left at six and seven.

[Exit YORK and Queen.

*Bushy.* The wind sets fair for news to go  
to Ireland,

But none returns. For us to levy power,  
Proportionable to the enemy,

Is all impossible. [love,

*Green.* Besides our nearness to the king in  
Is near the hate of those love not the king.

*Bagot.* And that's the wavering commons:  
for their love

Lies in their purses; and who so empties them,  
By so much fills their hearts with deadly hate.

*Bushy.* Wherein the king stands generally  
condemn'd. [we,

*Bagot.* If judgment lie in them, then so do  
Because we ever have been near the king.

*Green.* Well, I'll for refuge straight to  
Bristol castle;

The earl of Wilts're is already there. [office

*Bushy.* Thither will I with you: for little

The hateful commons will perform for us;

Except like curs to tear us all to pieces.—

Will you go along with us?

*Bagot.* No; I'll to Ireland to his majesty.

Farewell: if heart's presages be not vain,

We three here part, that ne'er shall meet  
again. [Bolingbroke.

*Bushy.* That's as York thrives to beat back

*Green.* Alas, poor duke! the task he un-  
dertakes [dry;

Is—numb'ring sands, and drinking oceans  
Where one on his side fights, thousands will  
fly. [and ever.

*Bushy.* Farewell at once; for once, for all,

*Green.* Well, we may meet again.

*Bagot.* I fear me, never. [Exit.

SCENE III. The Wilds in Glostershire.

*Enter BOLINGBROKE and NORTHUMBER-  
LAND, with Forces.*

*Boling.* How far is it, my lord, to Berkley

*North.* Believe me, noble lord, [now?

I am a stranger here in Glostershire.

These high wild hills, and rough uneven ways,

Draw out our miles, and make them wear-  
some:

And yet your fair discourse hath been as sugar,

Making the hard way sweet and delectable.

But, I bethink me, what a weary way

From Ravenspurg to Cotswold, will be found

In Roes and Willoughby, wanting your com-  
pany;

Which, I protest, hath very much beguiled

The tediousness and process of my travel:  
But theirs is sweeten'd with the hope to have  
The present benefit which I possess:  
And hope to joy, is little less in joy,  
Than hope enjoy'd: by this the weary lords  
Shall make their way seem short; as mine  
hath done

By sight of what I have, your noble company.

*Boling.* Of much less value is my company,  
Than your good words. But who comes here?

*Enter HARRY PERCY.*

*North.* It is my son, young Harry Percy,  
Sent from my brother Worcester, whence so  
Harry, how fares your uncle? [ever.—

*Percy.* I had thought, my lord, to have learn'd  
his health of you.

*North.* Why, is he not with the queen?

*Percy.* No, my good lord, he hath torsook  
the court,

Broken his staff of office, and dispersed

The household of the king.

*North.* What was his reason?  
He was not so resolved, when last we spake  
together. [traitor.

*Percy.* Because your lordship was proclaimed  
But he, my lord, is gone to Ravenspurg,  
To offer service to the duke of Hereford;  
And sent me o'er by Berkley, to discover  
What power the duke of York had levied there:  
Then with direction to repair to Ravenspurg.

*North.* Have you forgot the duke of Here-  
ford, boy? [forgot

*Percy.* No, my good lord; for that is not  
Which ne'er I did remember: to my know-  
I never in my life did look on him. [ledge.

*North.* Then learn to know him now; this  
is the duke. [service,

*Percy.* My gracious lord, I tender you my  
Such as it is, being tender, raw, and young;  
Which elder days shall ripen, and confirm  
To more approved service and desert. [sure,

*Boling.* I thank thee, gentle Percy; and be  
I count myself in nothing else so happy,  
As in a soul remembering my good friends;  
And, as my fortune ripens with thy love,  
It shall be still thy true love's recompense:  
My heart this covenant makes, my hand thus  
seals it. [stir

*North.* How far is it to Berkley? And what  
Keeps good old York there with his men of  
war? [of trees,

*Percy.* There stands the castle, by yon tuft  
Mann'd with three hundred men, as I have  
heard: [Seymour;

And in it are the lords of York, Berkley, and  
None else of name, and noble estimate.

*Enter Ross and WILLOUGHBY.*

*North.* Here come the lords of Ross and  
Willoughby,

Bloody with spurring, fiery red with haste.

*Boling.* Welcome, my lords: I wot\*, your  
love pursues

A banish'd traitor; all my treasury  
Is yet but unfelt thanks, which, more enrich'd,  
Shall be your love and labour's recompense,

*Ross.* Your presence makes us rich, most  
noble lord. [tain it.

*Will.* And far surmounts our labour to at-  
*Boling.* Evermore thanks, the exchequer of  
the poor;

Which, till my infant fortune comes to years,  
Stands for my bounty. But who comes here?

*Enter BERKLEY.*

*North.* It is my lord of Berkley, as I guess.

*Berk.* My lord of Hereford, my message is  
to you. [ter;

*Boling.* My lord, my answer is—to Lanca-  
And I am come to seek that name in England:  
And I must find that title in your tongue,

Before I make reply to aught you say. [meaning

*Berk.* Mistake me not, my lord; 'tis not my  
To raze one title of your honour out:—

To you, my lord, I come, (what lord you will,)  
From the most glorious regent of this land,  
The duke of York: to know, what pricks you on  
To take advantage of the absent time, [arms.  
And fright our native peace with self-born

*Enter York attended.*

*Boling.* I shall not need transport my words  
by you; [uncle!

Here comes his grace in person.—My noble  
[kneels.

*York.* Show me thy humble heart, and not  
Whose duty is deceitful and false. [thy knee,

*Boling.* My gracious uncle!—

*York.* Tut, tut!

Grace me no grace, nor uncle me no uncle:  
I am no traitor's uncle; and that word—grace,  
In an ungracious mouth, is but profane.

Why have those banish'd and forbidden legs  
Dared once to touch a dust of England's  
ground? [to march

But then more why;—Why have they dared  
So many miles upon her peaceful bosom;

Frighting her pale-faced villages with war,  
And ostentation of despised arms? [hence?

Comest thou because the anointed king is  
Why, foolish boy, the king is left behind,

And in my loyal bosom lies his power.  
Were I but now the lord of such hot youth,

As when brave Gaunt, thy father, and myself,  
Rescued the Black Prince, that young Mars  
of men, [French;

From forth the ranks of many thousand  
O, then, how quickly should this arm of mine,

Now prisoner to the palsy, chaste thee,  
And minister correction to thy fault! [fault;

*Boling.* My gracious uncle, let me know my  
On what condition stands it, and wherein?

*York.* Even in condition of the worst de-  
gree,—

In gross rebellion, and derested treason:  
Thou art a banish'd man, and here art come,

Before the expiration of thy time,  
In braving arms against thy sovereign

*Boling.* As I was banish'd, I was banish'd  
But as I come, I come for Lancaster. [Hereford;

And, noble uncle, I beseech your grace,  
Look on my wrongs with an indifferent eye:

You are my father, for, methinks, in you

\* Know.

† Time of the king's absence.

‡ Impartial.

I see old Gaunt alive, O, then, my father!  
Will you permit that I shall stand condemn'd  
A wand'ring vagabond; my rights and royal-  
ties [away  
Pluck'd from my arms perforce, and given  
To upstart unthrifths? Wherefore was I born?  
If that my cousin king be king of England,  
It must be granted, I am duke of Lancaster.  
You have a son, Annerle, my noble kinsman;  
Had you first died, and he had been thustrod  
down, [ther,  
He should have found his uncle Gaunt a fa-  
To rouse his wrongs\*, and chase them to the  
I am denied to sue my livery† here, [bay.  
And yet my letters-patent give me leave:  
My father's goods are all distrain'd, and sold;  
And these, and all, are all amiss employ'd.  
What would you have me do? I am a subject,  
And challenge law: Attornies are denied me;  
And therefore personally I lay my claim  
To my inheritance of free descent.

*North.* The noble duke hath been too much  
abused. [right.

*Ross.* It stands your grace upon†, to do him  
*Will.* Base men by his endowments are  
made great. [this,—

*York.* My lords of England, let me tell you  
I have had feeling of my cousin's wrongs,  
And labour'd all I could to do him right:  
But in this kind to come, in braving arms,  
Be his own carver, and cut out his way,  
To find out right with wrong.—it may not be;  
And you, that do abet him in this kind,  
Cherish rebellion, and are rebels all.

*North.* The noble duke hath sworn, his  
coming is  
But for his own: and, for the right of that,  
We all have strongly sworn to give him aid;  
And let him ne'er see joy, that breaks that  
oath.

*York.* Well, well, I see the issue of these  
arms;  
I cannot mend it, I must needs confess,  
Because my power is weak, and all ill left:  
But, if I could, by Him that gave me life,  
I would attach you all, and make you stoop  
Unto the sovereign mercy of the king;  
But, since I cannot, be it known to you,

I do remain as neuter. So, fare you well;—  
Unless you please to enter in the castle,  
And there repose you for this night.

*Boling.* An offer, uncle, that we will accept.  
But we must win your grace, to go with us  
To Bristol castle; which, they say, is held  
By Bushy, Bagot, and their complices,  
The caterpillars of the commonwealth,  
Which I have sworn to weed, and pluck away

*York.* It may be, I will go with you:—but  
yet I'll pause;

For I am loath to break our country's laws.  
Nor friends, nor foes, to me welcome you are:  
Things past redress, are now with me past care.

[Exit.

#### SCENE IV. A Camp in Wales.

*Enter SALISBURY, and a Captain.*

*Capt.* My lord of Salisbury, we have staid  
ten days,

And hardly kept our countrymen together,  
And yet we hear no tidings from the king;  
Therefore we will disperse ourselves: farewell.

*Sal.* Stay yet another day, thou trusty  
Welshman;

The king reposeth all his confidence  
In thee. [not stay.

*Cap.* 'Tis thought, the king is dead; we will  
The bay-trees in our country are all wither'd,  
And meteors fright the fixed stars of heaven;  
The pale-faced moon looks bloody on the earth,  
And lean-look'd prophets whisper fearful  
change: [leap,—

Rich men look sad, and ruffians dance and  
The one, in fear to lose what they enjoy,  
The other, to enjoy by rage and war:  
These signs forerun the death or fall of kings.—  
Farewell; our countrymen are gone and fled,  
As well assured, Richard their king is dead.

[Exit.

*Sal.* Ah, Richard! with the eyes of heavy  
I see thy glory, like a shooting star, [mind,  
Fall to the base earth from the firmament!  
Thy sun sets weeping in the lowly west,  
Witnessing storms to come, woe, and unrest:  
Thy friends are fled, to wait upon thy foes;  
And crossly to thy good all fortune goes.

[Exit.

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I. Bolingbroke's Camp at Bristol.

*Enter BOLINGBROKE, YORK, NORTHUMBERLAND, PERCY, WILLOUGHBY, ROSS: Officers behind with BUSHY and GREEN, prisoners.*

*Boling.* Bring forth these men.—

Bushy, and Green, I will not vex your souls  
'Snce presently your souls must part your  
bodies),

With too much urging your pernicious li es,  
For't were no charity: yet, to wash your blood

From off my hands, here, in the view of men,  
I will unfold some causes of your death.

You have misde a prince, a royal king,  
A happy gentleman in blood and lineaments,  
By you unhappy and disfigured clean.  
You have, in manner, with your sinful hours,  
Made a divorce betwixt his queen and him;  
Broke the possession of a royal bed,  
And stain'd the beauty of a fair queen's cheeks  
With tears drawn from her eyes by your foul  
wrongs.

Myself—a prince, by fortune of my birth;

The persons who wrong him.

† Possession of my land, &c.

‡ It is your interest

§ Completely.



Near to the king in blood; and near in love,  
 Till you did make him misinterpret me;—  
 Have stoop'd my neck under your injuries,  
 And sigh'd my English breath in foreign  
 Eating the bitter bread of banishment: [clouds,  
 Whilst you have fed upon my signories,  
 Dispark'd\* my parks, and fell'd my forest  
 woods; [cont'd  
 From my own windows torn my household  
 Razed out my impress; leaving me no sign,—  
 Save men's opinions, and my living blood,—  
 To show the world I am a gentleman.

This, and much more, much more than twice  
 all this, [liver'd over

Condemns you to the death:—See them de-  
 To execution and the hand of death. [to me,

*Bushy.* More welcome is the stroke of death  
 n Bolingbroke to England.—Lords, fare-  
 well. [take our souls;

*Green.* My comfort is,—that heaven will  
 And plague injustice, with the pains of hell.

*Boling.* My lord Northumberland, see  
 them despatch'd.

[*Exeunt NORTHUMBERLAND and  
 others, with Prisoners.*

Uncle, you say, the queen is at your house;  
 For heaven's sake, fairly let her be entreated:  
 Tell her, I send to her my kind commends; §  
 Take special care my greetings be deliver'd.

*York.* A gentleman of mine I have de-  
 spatch'd

With letters of your love to her at large.

*Boling.* Thanks, gentle uncle.—Come, lords,  
 away;

To fight with Glendower and his complices;  
 Awhile to work, and, after, holiday. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The Coast of Wales. A castle  
 in view.*

*Flourish: Drums and Trumpets. Enter  
 King RICHARD, Bishop of Carlisle, AU-  
 MURLE, and Soldiers.*

*K. Rich.* Barkloughly castle call you this  
 at hand? [grace the air,

*Aum.* Yea, my lord: How brooks your  
 After late tossing on the breaking seas?

*K. Rich.* Means must I like it well; I weep  
 for joy,

To stand upon my kingdom once again.—  
 Dear earth, I do salute thee with my hand,  
 Though rebels wound thee with their horses'  
 hoofs:

As a long parted mother with her child  
 Plays fondly with her tears, and smiles in  
 meeting;

So, weeping, smiling, greet I thee, my earth,  
 And do thee favour with my royal hands.

Feed not thy sovereign's foe, my gentle earth,  
 Nor with thy sweets comfort his ravenous  
 sense:

But let thy spiders, that suck up thy venom,  
 And heavy-gaited toads, lie in their way;  
 Doing annoyance to the treacherous feet,  
 Which with usurping steps do trample thee.  
 Yield stinging nettles to mine enemies:  
 And when they from thy bosom pluck a flower,

Guard it, I pray thee, with a lurking adder;  
 Whose double tongue may with a mortal touch  
 Throw death upon thy sovereign's enemies.—  
 Mock not my senseless conjuration, lords;  
 This earth shall have a feeling, and these stones  
 Prove armed soldiers, ere her native king  
 Shall falter under foul rebellious arms.

*Bishop.* Fear not, my lord; that Power,  
 that made you king,

Hath power to keep you king, in spite of all.  
 The means that heaven yields must be em-  
 braced,

And not neglected; else, if heaven would,  
 And we will not, heaven's offer we refuse;

The proffer'd means of succour and redress.

*Aum.* He means, my lord, that we are too  
 remiss;

Whilst Bolingbroke, through our security,  
 Grows strong and great, in substance, and in  
 friends.

*K. Rich.* Discomfortable cousin! know'st  
 thou not,

That when the searching eye of heaven is hid  
 Behind the globe, and lights the lower world,  
 Then thieves and robbers range abroad unseen,  
 In murders, and in outrage, bloody here;  
 But when, from under this terrestrial ball,  
 He fires the proud tops of the eastern pines,  
 And darts his light through every guilty hole  
 Then murders, treasons, and detested sins,  
 The cloak of night being pluck'd from off their  
 backs, [selves?

Stand bare and naked, trembling at them.  
 So when this thief, this traitor, Bolingbroke,—  
 Who all this while hath revell'd in the night,  
 Whilst we were wandering with the antipodes,  
 Shall see us rising in our throne the east,  
 His treasons will sit basking in his face,  
 Not able to endure the sight of day

But, self-affrighted, tremble at his sin.

Not all the water in the rough rude sea  
 Can wash the balm from an anointed king:

The breath of worldly men cannot depose  
 The deputy elected by the Lord:

For every man that Bolingbroke hath press'd,  
 To lift shrewd steel against our golden crown,  
 God for his Richard hath in heavenly pay  
 A glorious angel: then, if angels fight,

Weak men must fall; for heaven still guards  
 the right.

*Enter SALISBURY.*

Welcome, my lord; How far off lies your  
 power||?

*Sal.* Nor near, nor further off, my gracious  
 lord, [tongue,

Than this weak arm: Discomfort guides my  
 And bids me speak of nothing but despair.

One day too late, I fear, my noble lord,  
 Hath clouded all thy happy days on earth:

O, call back yesterday, bid time return,  
 And thou shalt have twelve thousand fighting

To-day, to-day, unhappy day, too late, [men:  
 O'erthrows thy joys, friends, fortune, and thy  
 state!

For all the Welshmen, hearing thou wert dead  
 Are gone to Bolingbroke, dispers'd and fled.

\* Thrown down the hedges. † Of arms.

‡ Motte.

§ Commendations

|| Force

*Aum.* Comfort, my liege: why looks your grace so pale? [thousand men]

*K. Rich.* But now, the blood of twenty Did triumph in my face, and they are fled; And, till so much blood thither come again, Have I not reason to look pale and dead? All souls that will be safe, fly from my side; For time hath set a blot upon my pride.

*Aum.* Comfort, my liege, remember who you are. [king?]

*K. Rich.* I had forgot myself: Am I not Awake, thou sluggard majesty! thou sleep'st. Is not the king's name forty thousand names? Arin, arm, my name! a puny subject strikes At thy great glory.—Look not to the ground, Ye favourites of a king; Are we not high? High be our thoughts: I know, my uncle York Hath power enough to serve our turn. But who Comes here?

*Enter SCROOP.*

*Scroop.* More health and happiness betide my liege,

Than can my care-tuned tongue deliver him.

*K. Rich.* Mine ear is open, and my heart prepared;

The worst is worldly loss, thou canst unfold. Say, is my kingdom lost? why, 'twas my care;

And what loss is it, to be rid of care?

Strives Bolingbroke to be as great as we?

Greater he shall not be; if he serve God,

We'll serve him too, and be his fellow so;

Revolt our subjects? that we cannot mend;

They break their faith to God, as well as us;

Cry, woe, destruction, ruin, loss, decay: [day.]

The worst is—death, and death will have his

*Scroop.* Glad am I, that your highness is so

To bear the tidings of calamity. [arm'd]

Like an unseasonable stormy day, [shores,

Which makes the silver rivers drown their

As if the world were all dissolved to tears;

So high above his limits swells the rage

Of Bolingbroke, covering your fearful land

With hard bright steel, and hearts harder than

steel. [less scalp]

White-beards have arm'd their thin and hair-

Against thy majesty; boys, with women's voices,

Strive to speak big, and clap their female joints

In stiff unwieldy arms against thy crown:

The very headsmen learn to bend their bows

Of double-fatal yew against thy state;

Yea, distaff-women manage rusty bills

Against thy seat; both young and old rebel,

And all goes worse than I have power to tell.

*K. Rich.* Too well, too well, thou tell'st a

tale so ill.

Where is the earl of Wiltshire? where is Bagot?

What is become of Bushy? where is Green?

That they have let the dangerous enemy

Measure our confines with such peaceful steps?

If we prevail, their heads shall pay for it.

I warrant, they have made peace with Boling-

broke. [indeed, my lord.]

*Scroop.* Peace have they made with him,

*K. Rich.* O villains, vipers, damn'd with-

out redemption!

Dogs, easily won to fawn on any man!

Snakes, in my heart blood wern'd, that sting

my heart!

Three Judasses, each one thrice worse than Judas!

Would they make peace? terrible hell make Upon their spotted souls for this offence! [war

*Scroop.* Sweet love, I see, changing his property,

Turns to the sonnest and most deadly hate:— Again uncure their souls; their peace is made

With heads, and not with hands: those whom you curse, [wound,

Have felt the worst of death's destroying And lie full low, grav'd in the hollow ground.

*Aum.* Is Bushy, Green, and the earl of Wiltshire, dead? [heads.]

*Scroop.* Yea, all of them at Bristol lost their

*Aum.* Where is the duke my father with his power? [man speak:]

*K. Rich.* No matter where; of comfort no Let's talk of graves, of worms, and epitaphs;

Make dust our paper, and with rainy eyes Write sorrow on the bosom of the earth.

Let's choose executors, and talk of wills: And yet not so,—for what can we bequeath,

Save our deposed bodies to the ground? Our lands, our lives, and all are Bolingbroke's,

And nothing can we call our own, but death; And that small model of the barren earth,

Which serves as paste and cover to our bones. For heaven's sake, let us sit upon the ground,

And tell sad stories of the death of kings:— How some have been deposed, some slain in war;

Some haunted by the ghosts they have deposed; Some poison'd by their wives, some sleeping

kill'd; All murder'd:—For within the hollow crown,

That rounds the mortal temples of a king, Keeps death his court: and there the antic sits,

Scorning his state, and grinning at his pomp; Allowing him a breath, a little scene

To monarchize, be fear'd, and kill with looks; Infusing him with self and vain conceit,—

As if this flesh, which walls about our life, Were brass impregnable; and, humour'd thus,

Comes at the last, and with a little pin [king] Bores through his castle wall, and—farewell!

Cover your heads, and mock not flesh and blood With solemn reverence; throw away respect,

Tradition, form, and ceremonious duty, For you have but mistook me all this while:

I live with bread like you, feel want, taste grief, Need friends:—Subjected thus,

How can you say to me—I am a king?

*Car.* My lord, wise men ne'er wail their present woes,

But presently prevent the ways to wail. To fear the foe, since fear oppresseth strength,

Gives, in your weakness, strength unto your foe, And so your follies fight against yourself.

Fear, and be slain; no worse can come, to fight And fight and die, is death destroying death:

Where fearing dying, pays death servile breath: *Aum.* My father hath a power, inquire of And learn to make a body of a limb. [him:]

*K. Rich.* Thou chidest me well:—Proud Bolingbroke, I come [do:]

To change blows with thee for our day of This ague-fit of fear is over-blown;

An easy task it is, to win our own.——

Say, Scroop, where lies our uncle with his power?

Speak sweetly, man, although thy looks be sour.

Scroop. Men judge by the complexion of the state the inclination of the day: [sky]

So may you by my dull and heavy eye, My tongue hath but a heavier tale to say.

I play the torturer, by small and small, To lengthen out the worst that must be spoken:

Your uncle York hath join'd with Bolingbroke; And all your northern castles yielded up,

And all your southern gentlemen in arms Upon his party.\*

K. Rich. Thon hast said enough.— Beshrew† thee, cousin, which didst lead me forth

[To Aumerle.] Of that sweet way I was in to despair!

What say you now? What comfort have we By heaven, I'll hate him everlastingly, [now?]

That bids me be of comfort any more. Go, to Flint castle; there I'll pine away;

A king, woe's slave, shall kingly woe obey. [go]

That power‡ I have, discharge; and let them To ear§ the land that hath some hope to grow,

For I have none:—Let no man speak again To alter this, for counsel is but vain.

Aum. My liege, one word.

K. Rich. He does me double wrong That wounds me with the flatteries of his tongue.

[Away.] Discharge my followers, let them hence;— From Richard's night, to Bolingbroke's fair day.

[Exeunt.] SCENE III.

Wales. Before Flint Castle.

Enter, with Drum and Colours, BOLINGBROKE and Forces; YORK, NORTHUMBERLAND, and Others.

Boling. So that by this intelligence we learn, The Welshmen are dispersed; and Salisbury

is gone to meet the king, who lately landed, With some few private friends, upon this coast.

North. The news is very fair and good, my lord;

Richard, not far from hence, hath hid his York. It would besem the lord Northumberland,

To say—king Richard:—Alack the heavy day, When such a sacred king should hide his head!

North. Your grace mistakes me; only to Left I his title out. [be brief!]

York. The time hath been, [would]

Would you have been so brief with him, he Have been so brief with you, to shorten you,

For taking so the head¶, your whole head's length. [should.]

Boling. Mistake not, uncle, further than you York. Take not, good cousin, further than you should,

[head.] Lest you mistake: The heavens are o'er your York. I know it, uncle; and oppose not

Myself against their will.—But who comes Enter PERCY. [here?]

What, Harry; what, will not this castle yield?

Percy. The castle royally is mann'd, my lord, Against thy entrance.

Boling. Royally! Why, it contains no king?

Percy. Yes, my good lord, It doth contain a king; king Richard lies

Within the limits of yon lime and stone: And with him are the lord Aumerle, lord Sa-

lisbury, Sir Stephen Scroop; besides a clergyman

Of holy reverence, who, I cannot learn.

North. Belike, it is the bishop of Carlisle.

Boling. Noble lord [To North.] Go to the rude ribs of that ancient castle;

Through brazen trumpet send the breath of

parle\*\* Into his ruin'd ears, and thus deliver.

Harry Bolingbroke [hand;]

On both his knees doth kiss king Richard's And sends allegiance, and true faith of heart,

To his most royal person: hither come Even at his feet to lay my arms and power;

Provided that, my banishment repeal'd, And lands restored again, be freely granted:

If not, I'll use the advantage of my power, And lay the summer's dust with showers of

blood, [fishmen:] Rain'd from the wounds of slaughter'd Eng-

The which, how far off from the mind of Bo-

lingbroke It is, such crimson tempest should bedrench

The fresh green lap of fair king Richard's land, My stooping duty tenderly shall show.

Go, signify as much; while here we march Upon the grassy carpet of this plain.—

[NORTHUMBERLAND advances to the Castle, with a Trumpet.]

Let's march without the noise of threatening drum,

That from the castle's totter'd battlements Our fair appointments may be well perused.

Methinks, king Richard and myself should With no less terror than the elements [meet]

Of fire and water, when their thund'ring shock At meeting tears the cloudy cheeks of heaven.

Be he the fire, I'll be the yielding water: The rage be his, while on the earth I rain

My waters; on the earth, and not on him. March on, and mark king Richard how he

looks. A parle sounded, and answered by another

Trumpet within. Flourish. Enter on the walls King RICHARD, the Bishop of Carlisle, AUMERLE, SCROOP, and SALIS-

BURY.

York. See, see, king Richard doth himself As doth the blushing discontented sun [appear]

From out the fiery portal of the east; When he perceives the envious clouds are bent

To dim his glory, and to stain the track Of his bright passage to the occident.

Yet looks he like a king; behold, his eye, As bright as is the eagle's, lightens forth

Controlling majesty; Alack, alack, for woe, That any harm should stain so fair a show!

\* Part. † Lil betide. ‡ Force. § Plough. ¶ Short. ¶ Such liberty

\*\* Parley.



*K. Rich.* We are amazed, and thus long have we stood

To watch the fearful bending of thy knee,

[To NORTHUMBERLAND.]

Because we thought ourself thy lawful king:

And if we be, how dare thy joints forget

To pay their awful duty to our presence?

If we be not, show us the hand of God

That hath dismiss'd us from our stewardship;

For well we know, no hand of blood and bone

Can gripe the sacred handle of our sceptre,

Unless he do profane, steal, or usurp. [done,

And though you think, that all, as you have

Have torn their souls, by turning them from us,

And we are barren, and bereft of friends;—

Yet know,—my master. God omnipotent,

Is must'ring in his clouds, on our behalf,

Armies of pestilence; and they shall strike

Your children yet unborn, and unbegot,

That lift your vassal hands against my head,

And threat the glory of my precious crown.

Tell Bolingbroke, (for yond' methinks, he is,) *[he is,]*

That every stride he makes upon my land,

Is dangerous treason: He is come to ope

The purple testament of bleeding war;

But ere the crown he looks for live in peace,

Ten thousand bloody crowns of mothers' sons

Shall ill become the flower of England's face\*:

Change the complexion of her maid-pale peace

To scarlet indignation, and bedew

Her pastures' grass with faithful English blood.

*North.* The King of heaven forbid, our lord

Should so with civil and uncivil arms [the king

Be rush'd upon! Thy thrice-noble cousin,

Harry Bolingbroke, doth humbly kiss thy

And by the honourable tomb he swears, [hand;

That stands upon thy royal grandsire's bones;

And by the royalties of both your bloods,

Currents that spring from one most gracious

head;

And by the buried hand of warlike Gaunt;

And by the worth and honour of himself,

Comprising all that may be sworn or said,—

His coming hither hath no further scope,

Than for his lineal royalties, and to beg

Enfranchisement immediate on his knees:

Which on thy royal party granted once,

His glittering arms he will commend † to rust,

His barbed steeds to stables, and his heart

To faithful service of your majesty.

This swears he, as he is a prince, is just;

And, as I am a gentleman, I credit him.

*K. Rich.* Northumberland, say,—thus the

king returns;—

His noble cousin is right welcome hither;

And all the number of his fair demands

Shall be accomplish'd without contradiction:

With all the gracious utterance thou hast,

Speak to his gentle hearing kind commends.—

We do debase ourself, cousin, do we not,

[To AUMERLE.]

To look so poorly, and to speak so fair?

Shall we call back Northumberland, and send

Defiance to the traitor, and so die?

*Aum.* No, good my lord; let's fight with

gentle words,

Till time lend friends, and friends their help  
ful swords.

*K. Rich.* O God! O God! that e'er this

That laid the sentence of dread banishment

On you proud man, should take it off again

With words of sooth! O, that I were as great

As is my grief, or lesser than my name!

Or that I could forget what I have been!

Or not remember what I must be now!

Swell'st thou, proud heart? I'll give thee scope

to beat, [me.]

Since foes have scope to beat both thee and

*Aum.* Northumberland comes back from

Bolingbroke. [Must he submit?

*K. Rich.* What must the king do now?

The king shall do it. Must he be deposed?

The king shall be contented: Must he lose

The name of king? o'God's name, let it go:

I'll give my jewels, for a set of beads;

My gorgeous palace, for a hermitage;

My gay apparel, for an alms-man's gown;

My figured gobelets, for a dish of wood;

My sceptre, for a palmer's walking-staff;

My subjects, for a pair of carved saints;

And my large kingdom for a little grave,

A little little grave, an obscure grave:—

Or I'll be buried in the king's highway, [feet

Some way of common trade, where subjects'

May hourly trample on their sovereign's head:

For on my heart they tread, now whilst I live;

And, buried once, why not upon my head?—

Aumerle, thou weep'st; My tender-hearted

consin!—

We'll make foul weather with despised tears;

Our sighs, and they, shall lodge the summer

corn,

And make a dearth in this revolting land.

Or shall we play the wantons with our woes.

And make some pretty match with shedding

tears?

As thus:—To drop them still upon one place

Till they have fretted us a pair of graves

Within the earth; and, therein laid, *There lie,*

*Two kinsmen, digg'd their graves with weep-*

*ing eyes?*

Would not this ill do well?—Well, well, I see

I talk but idly, and you mock at me.—

Most mighty prince, my lord Northumberland,

What says king Bolingbroke? will his majesty

Give Richard leave to live till Richard die?

You make a leg§, and Bolingbroke says—ay.

*North.* My lord, in the base|| court he doth

attend [down?]

To speak with you; may't please you to come

*K. Rich.* Down, down, I come; like glisten-

ing Phaëton,

Wanting the manage of unruly jades.

[NORTH retires to BOLING

In the base court? Base court, where kings

grow base,

To come at traitors' calls, and do them grace.

In the base court? Come down? Down, court

down king! [should sing.

For night-owls shriek, where mounting lark.

[Exeunt, from above

*Boling.* What says his Majesty?

\* Soil.

+ Commit.

† Softness.

§ A bow.

|| Lower

*North.* Sorrow and grief of heart  
Makes him speak fondly \*, like a frantic man :  
Yet he is come.

*Enter King RICHARD, and his Attendants,  
below.*

*Boling.* Stand all apart,  
And show fair duty to his majesty.—  
My gracious lord,— [Kneeling.

*K. Rich.* Fair cousin, you debase your  
princely knee,

To make the base earth proud with kissing it :  
Me rather had, my heart might feel your love,  
Than my unpleasant eye see your courtesy.

Up, cousin, up; your heart is up, I know,  
Thus high at least, [Touching his own head.]  
although your knee be low.

*Boling.* My gracious lord, I come but for  
mine own. [yours, and all.

*K. Rich.* Your own is yours, and I am  
*Boling.* So far be mine, my most redoubted

lord,  
As my true service shall deserve your love.

*K. Rich.* Well you deserve :—They well  
deserve to have,

that know the strong'st and surest way to get.  
Uncle, give me your hand : nay, dry your eyes ;

Tears show their love, but want their remedies.  
Cousin, I am too young to be your father,

Though you are old enough to be my heir.  
What you will have, I'll give, and willing too ;

For do we must, what force will have us do.  
Set on towards London :—Cousin, is it so ?

*Boling.* Yea, my good lord.  
*K. Rich.* Then I must not say, no.

[Flourish. *Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. Langley. The Duke of York's  
Garden.

*Enter the Queen, and two Ladies.*

*Queen.* What sport shall we devise here in  
this garden,

To drive away the heavy thought of care ?  
*1 Lady.* Madam, we'll play at bowls.

*Queen.* 'Twill make me think,  
The world is full of rubs, and that my fortune

Runs 'gainst the bias †.  
*1 Lady.* Madam, we will dance.

*Queen.* My legs can keep no measure in de-  
light,

When my poor heart no measure keeps in grief :  
Therefore, no dancing, girl ; some other sport.

*1 Lady.* Madam, we'll tell tales.  
*Queen.* Of sorrow, or of joy ?

*1 Lady.* Of either, madam.  
*Queen.* Of neither, girl :

For if of joy, being altogether wanting,  
It doth remember me the more of sorrow ;

Or, if of grief, being altogether had,  
It adds more sorrow to my want of joy :

For what I have, I need not to repeat ;  
And what I want, it boots ‡ not to complain.

*1 Lady.* Madam, I'll sing.  
*Queen.* 'Tis well, that thou hast cause ;

But thou shouldst please me better, wouldst  
thou weep.

\* Foolishly. † A weight fixed on one side of the bowl which turns it from the straight line  
‡ Profits. § Enclosure. || Figures planted in box. ¶ No doubt.

*1 Lady.* I could weep, madam would it  
do you good.

*Queen.* And I could weep, would weeping  
do me good.

And never borrow any tear of thee.  
But stay, here come the gardeners :

Let's step into the shadow of these trees.—  
*Enter a Gardener, and two Servants.*

My wretchedness unto a row of pins,  
They'll talk of state : for every one doth so

Against a change : Woe is forerun with woe.  
[Queen and Ladies retire.

*Gard.* Go, bind thou up yon' daunting  
apricocks,

Which, like unruly children, make their sire  
Stoop with oppression of their prodigal weight :

Give some supportance to the bending twigs.  
Go thou, and like an executioner,

Cut off the heads of too-fast-growing sprays  
That look too lofty in our commonwealth :

All must be even in our government.—  
You thus employ'd, I will go root away

The noisome weeds, that without profit suck  
The soil's fertility from wholesome flowers.

*1 Serv.* Why should we, in the compass of  
a pale§,

Keep law, and form, and due proportion,  
Showing, as in a model, our firm estate ?

When our sea-walled garden, the whole land  
Is full of weeds : her fairest flowers choked up,

Her fruit-trees all unpruned, her hedges ruin'd,  
Her knots|| disorder'd, and her wholesome

Swarming with caterpillars? [herbs  
*Gard.* Hold thy peace :—

He that hath suffer'd this disorder'd spring,  
Hath now himself met with the fall of leaf :

The weeds, that his broad-spreading leaves did  
shelter,

That seem'd in eating him to hold him up,  
Are pluck'd up, root and all, by Bolingbroke ;

I mean, the earl of Wiltshire, Bushy, Green.  
*1 Serv.* What, are they dead ?

*Gard.* They are ; and Bolingbroke [is it,  
Hath seized the wasteful king.—Oh ! what pity

That he had not so trimm'd and dress'd his  
land,

As we this garden ! We at time of year  
Do wound the bark, the skin of our fruit-trees ;

Lest, being over-proud with sap and blood,  
With too much riches it confound itself :

Had he done so to great and growing men,  
They might have lived to bear, and he to taste

Their fruits of duty. All superfluous branches  
We lop away, that bearing boughs may live :

Had he done so, himself had borne the  
crown,

Which waste of idle hours hath quite thrown  
down.

*1 Serv.* What, think you then, the king shall  
be deposed ?

*Gard.* Depress'd he is already ; and deposed,  
'Tis doubt ¶, he will be : Letters came last night

To a dear friend of the good duke of York's,  
That tell black tidings.

*Queen.* O, I am press'd to death

I rough want of speaking!—Thou, old Adam's likeness,

*[Coming from her concealment.]*

Set to dress this garden, how dares <sup>[news?]</sup>  
Thy harsh-rude tongue sound this displeasing  
What Eve, what serpent hath suggested thee  
To make a second fall of cursed man?

Why dost thou say, king Richard is deposed?  
Darest thou, thou little better thing than earth,  
Divine his downfall? Say, where, when, and  
how, <sup>[wretch.]</sup>

Camest thou by these ill tidings? speak, thou

*Gard.* Pardon me, madam: little joy have I,  
To breathe this news; yet, what I say, is true.  
King Richard, he is in the mighty hold  
Of Bolingbroke; their fortunes both are  
weigh'd:

In your lord's scale is nothing but himself:  
And some few vanities that make him light;  
But in the balance of great Bolingbroke,  
Besides himself, are all the English peers,  
And with that odds he weighs king Richard  
down.

Post you to London, and you'll find it so;

I speak no more than every one doth know.

*Queen.* Nimble mischance, that art so light  
of foot,

Doth not thy embassy belong to me,  
And am I last that knows it? O, thou think'st  
To serve me last, that I may longest keep  
Thy sorrow in my breast.—Come, ladies, go,  
To meet, at London, London's king in woe.—  
What, was I born to this! that my sad look  
Should grace the triumph of great Bolingbroke?  
Gardener, for telling me this news of woe,  
I would, the plants thou graft'st, may never  
grow. <sup>[Exeunt Queen and Ladies.]</sup>

*Gard.* Poor queen! so that thy state might  
be no worse,

I would, my skill were subject to thy curse.—  
Here did she drop a tear; here, in this place,  
I'll set a bank of rue, sour herb of grace:  
Rue, even for ruth \* here shortly shall be seen,  
In the remembrance of a weeping queen.

*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. London. Westminster Hall.

*The Lords spiritual on the right side of the  
Throne: the Lords temporal on the left;  
the Commons below. Enter BOLINGBROKE,  
AUMERLE, SURREY, NORTHUMBERLAND,  
PERCY, FITZWATER, another  
Lord, Bishop of Carlisle, Abbot of West-  
minster, and Attendants. Officers behind,  
with BAGOT.*

*Boling.* Call forth Bagot:—

Now, Bagot, freely speak thy mind;  
What thou dost know of noble Gloster's death;  
Who wrought it with the king, and who per-  
form'd the bloody office of his timeless end. <sup>[form'd]</sup>

*Bagot.* Then set before my face the lord  
Aumerle. <sup>[that man.]</sup>

*Boling.* Cousin, stand forth, and look upon  
*Bagot.* My lord Aumerle, I know your  
daring tongue

Scorns to unsay what once it hath deliver'd.  
Is that dead time when Gloster's death was  
plotted,

I heard you say,—*Is not my arm of length,  
That reacheth from the restless English  
As far as Calais, to my uncle's head?* <sup>[court]</sup>  
Amongst much other talk, that very time,  
I heard you say, that you had rather refuse  
The offer of an hundred thousand crowns,  
Than Bolingbroke's return to England;  
Adding withal, how blest this land would be,  
In this your cousin's death.

<sup>[Aum.]</sup> Princes, and noble lords,  
What answer shall I make to this base man?  
Shall I so much dishonour my fair stars,  
On equal terms to give him chastisement?  
Either I must, or have mine honour soil'd  
With the attainer of his slanderous lips.—  
There is my gage, the manual seal of death,

That marks thee out for hell: I say, thou art  
And will maintain, what thou hast said, is false  
In thy heart-blood, though being all too base  
To stain the temper of my knightly sword.

*Boling.* Bagot, forbear, thou shalt not take  
it up. <sup>[b. st]</sup>

*Aum.* Excepting one, I would he were the  
In all this presence, that hath moved me so.

*Fitz.* If that thy valour stand on sympathies,  
There is my gage, Aumerle, in gage to thine:  
By that fair sun that shows me where thou  
stand'st, <sup>[it]</sup>

I heard thee say, and vauntingly thou spak'st  
That thou wert cause of noble Gloster's death.  
If thou deny'st it, twenty times thou liest;  
And I will turn thy falsehood to thy heart,  
Where it was forged, with my rapier's point.

*Aum.* Thou dar'st not, coward, live to see  
that day. <sup>[hour.]</sup>

*Fitz.* Now, by my soul, I would it were this  
*Aum.* Fitzwater thou art damn'd to hell for  
this. <sup>[as true.]</sup>

*Percy.* Aumerle, thou liest; his honour is  
In this appeal, as thou art all unjust:

And, that thou art so, there I throw my gage,  
To prove it on thee to the extremest point  
Of mortal breathing; seize it, if thou dar'st.

*Aum.* And if I do not, may my hands not off,  
And never brandish more revengeful steel  
Over the glittering helmet of my foe!

*Lord.* I take the earth to the like, forsworn  
Aumerle;

And spur thee on with full as many lies  
As may be holl'd in thy treacherous ear  
From sun to sun: there is my honour's pawn;  
Engage it to the trial if thou dar'st.

*Aum.* Who sets me else? by heaven I'll  
throw at all:

I have a thousand spirits in one breast,



To answer twenty thousand such as you. [well  
*Surrey.* My lord Fitzwater, I do remember  
 The very time Aumerle and you did talk. [then;  
*Fitz.* My lord, 'tis true: you were in presence  
 And you can witness with me, this is true.

*Surrey.* As false, by heaven, as heaven itself

*Fitz.* Surrey, thou liest. [is true.

*Surrey.* Dishonourable boy!

That lie shall lie so heavy on my sword,  
 That it shall render vengeance and revenge,  
 Till thou the lie-giver, and that lie, do lie  
 In earth as quiet as thy father's scull.  
 In proof whereof, there is my honour's pawn;  
 Engage it to the trial, if thou darest. [horse!

*Fitz.* How fondly dost thou spur a forward  
 If I dare eat, or drink, or breathe, or live,  
 I dare meet Surrey in a wilderness,  
 And spit upon him, whilst I say, he lies,  
 And lies, and lies: there is my bond of faith,  
 To tie thee to my strong correction.—

As I intend to thrive in this new world,  
 Aumerle is guilty of my true appeal:  
 Besides, I heard the banish'd Norfolk say,  
 That thou, Aumerle, didst send two of thy men  
 To execute the noble duke at Calais. [a gage,

*Aum.* Some honest Christian trust me with  
 That Norfolk lies: here I do throw down this,  
 If he may be repeal'd to try his honour. [gage,

*Boling.* These differences shall all rest under  
 Till Norfolk be repeal'd: repeal'd he shall be,  
 And, though mine enemy, restored again [turn'd,  
 To all his land and signories: when he's re-  
 Against Aumerle we will enforce his trial.

*Car.* That honourable day shall ne'er be seen.  
 Many a time hath banish'd Norfolk fought  
 For Jesu Christ: in glorious Christian field

Streaming the ensign of the Christian cross,  
 Against black Pagans, Turks, and Saracens:  
 And, toil'd with works of war, retired himself  
 To Italy; and there, at Venice, gave  
 His body to that pleasant country's earth,

And his pure soul unto his captain Christ,  
 Under whose colours he had fought so long.

*Boling.* Why, bishop, is Norfolk dead?

*Car.* As sure as I live, my lord. [the bosom

*Boling.* Sweet peace conduct his sweet soul to  
 Of good old Abraham!—Lords Appellants,  
 Your differences shall all rest under gage,  
 Till we assign you to your days of trial.

*Enter York, attended.*

*York.* Great duke of Lancaster, I come to  
 thee [ing soul

From plume-pluck'd Richard; who with will  
 Adopts thee heir, and his high sceptre yields  
 To the possession of thy royal hand:

Ascend his throne, descending now from him—  
 And long live Henry, of that name the fourth!

*Boling.* In God's name, I'll ascend the regal

*Car.* Marry, God forbid!— [throne.

Worst in this royal presence may I speak,  
 Yet best beeming me to speak the truth.

Would God, that any in this noble presence  
 Were enough noble to be upright judge

Of noble Richard; then true nobless\* would  
 Learn him forbearance from so foul a wrong.

What subject can give sentence on his king?

And who sits here, that is not Richard's subject?  
 Thieves are not judged, but they are by to hear,  
 Although apparent guilt be seen in them:  
 And shall the figure of God's majesty,  
 His captain, steward, deputy elect,  
 Anointed, crowned, planted many years,  
 Be judged by subject and inferior breath,  
 And he himself not present? O, forbid it, God,  
 That, in a Christian climate, souls refined  
 Should show so heinous, black, obscene a deed!  
 I speak to subjects, and a subject speaks,  
 Stirr'd up by heaven, thus boldly for his king.

My lord of Hereford here, whom you call king,  
 Is a foul traitor to proud Hereford's king:

And if you crown him, let me prophesy,—  
 The blood of English shall manure the ground,  
 And future ages groan for this foul act;

Peace shall go sleep with Turks and Infidels,  
 And, in this seat of peace, tumultuous wars  
 Shall kin with kin, and kind with kind con-

Disorder, horror, fear, and mutiny, [found;  
 Shall here inhabit, and this land be call'd  
 The field of Golgotha, and dead men's skulls.

O, if you rear this house against this house,  
 It will the wofullest division prove,  
 That ever fell up in this cursed earth:

Prevent, resist it, let it not be so,  
 Lest child, child's children, cry against you—

woe! [your pains,

*North.* Well have you argued, sir; and, for  
 Of capital treason we arrest you here:—

My lord of Westminster, be it your charge  
 To keep him safely till his day of trial.—

May't please you, lords, to grant the common's  
 suit. [mon view

*Boling.* Fetch hither Richard, that in com-  
 He may surrender; so we shall proceed  
 Without suspicion.

*York.* I will be his conduct. [Exit.

*Boling.* Lords, you that are here under our  
 arrest,

Procure your sureties for your days of answer.  
 Little are we beholden to your love,

[To CARLISLE.  
 And little look'd for at your helping hands.

*Re-enter YORK, with King RICHARD, and  
 Officers bearing the crown, &c.*

*K. Rich.* Alack, why am I sent for to a king,  
 Before I have shook off the regal thoughts  
 Wherewith I reign'd? I hardly yet have learn'd

To insinuate, flatter, bow, and bend my knee:—  
 Give sorrow leave a while to tutor me  
 To this submission. Yet I well remember

The favours of these men: Were they not mine?  
 Did they not sometime cry, all hail! to me?

So Judas did to Christ: but he, in twelve,  
 Found truth in all, but one; I, in twelve

thousand, none.

God save the king!—Will no man say, amen?  
 Am I both priest and clerk? well then, amen.

God save the king! although I be not he;  
 And yet, amen, if heaven do think him me.—

To do what service am I sent for hither? [will,  
*York.* To do that office, of thine own good

Which tired majesty did make thee offer,—  
 The resignation of thy state and crown

To Henry Bolingbroke. [seize the crown;

*K. Rich.* Give me the crown:—Here, cousin, Here, on this side, my hand; on that side, thine. Now is this golden crown like a deep well, That owes\* two buckets filling one another; The emptier ever dancing in the air, The other down, unseem, and full of water: That bucket down, and full of tears, am I, [high. Drinking my griefs, whilst you mount up on

*Boling.* I thought you had been willing to resign. [are nine:

*K. Rich.* My crown, I am; but still my griefs You may my glories and my state depose, But not my griefs; still am I king of those.

*Boling.* Part of your cares you give me with your crown. [my cares down.

*K. Rich.* Your cares set up, do not pluck My care is—loss of care, by old care done; Your care is—gain of care, by new care won: The cares I give, I have, though given away; They tend† the crown, yet still with me they stay. [crown?

*Boling.* Are you contented to resign the

*K. Rich.* Ay, no;—no, ay;—for I must not Therefore no no, for I resign to thee. [thing be; Now mark me how I will undo myself:— I give this heavy weight from off my head, And this unwieldy sceptre from my hand, The pride of kingly sway from out my heart; With mine own tears I wash away my balm, With mine own hands I give away my crown, With mine own tongue deny my sacred state, With mine own breath release all tedious All pomp and majesty I do forswear; [oaths; My manors, rents, revenues, I forego; My acts, decrees, and statutes, I deny: God pardon all oaths, that are broke to me! God keep all vows unbroke, are made to thee! Make me, that nothing have, with nothing grieved;

And thou with all pleased, that hast all achieved! Long may'st thou live in Richard's seat to sit, And soon lie Richard in an earthy pit! God save king Henry, unking'd Richard says, And send him many years of sunshine days!— What more remains?

*North.* No more, but that you read [Offering a Paper.

These accusations, and these grievous crimes, Committed by your person, and your followers, Against the state and profit of this land; That, by confessing them, the souls of men May deem that you are worthily deposed.

*K. Rich.* Must I do so? and must I ravel out My weaved-up follies? Gentle Northumberland, If thy offences were upon record, [land, Would it not shame thee in so fair a troop, To read a lecture of them? If thou wouldst, There should'st thou find one heinous article,— Containing the deposing of a king, And cracking the strong warrant of an oath,— Mark'd with a blot, damn'd in the book of heaven:—

Nay, all of you, that stand and look upon me, Whilst that my wretchedness doth bait myself,— [hands,

Though some of you, with Pilate, wash your

Showing an outward pity; yet you Pilates Have here deliver'd me to my sour cross, And water cannot wash away your sin.

*North.* My lord, despatch; read o'er these articles. [cannot see:

*K. Rich.* Mine eyes are full of tears, I And yet salt water blinds them not so much, But they can see a sort of traitors here.

Nay, if I turn mine eyes upon myself, I find myself a traitor with the rest:

For I have given here my soul's consent, To undeck the pompous body of a king; Make glory base; and sovereignty, a slave; Proud majesty, a subject; state, a peasant.

*North.* My lord,——

*K. Rich.* No lord of thine, thou haught]], insulting man,

Nor no man's lord: I have no name, no title,— No, not that name was given me at the fount,— But 'tis usurp'd:—Alack the heavy day,

That I have worn so many winters out, And know not now what name to call myself!

O, that I were a mockery king of snow, Standing before the sun of Bolingbroke,

To melt myself away in water-drops!— Good king,—great king,—(and yet not greatly good.)

As if my word be sterling yet in England, Let it command a mirror hither straight;

That it may show me what a face I have, Since it is bankrupt of his majesty.

*Boling.* Go some of you, and fetch a looking-glass. [Exit an Attendant.

*North.* Read o'er this paper, while the glass doth come. [I come to hell.

*K. Rich.* Fiend! thou torment'st me ere

*Boling.* Urge it no more, my lord Northumberland. [satisfied.

*North.* The commons will not then be

*K. Rich.* They shall be satisfied: I'll read enough,

When I do see the very book indeed Where all my sins are writ, and that's—myself.

*Re-enter Attendant, with a Glass.*

Give me that glass, and therein wilt I read.— No deeper wrinkles yet? Hath sorrow struck

So many blows upon this face of mine, And made no deeper wounds? O, flattering

Like to my followers in prosperity, [glass, Thou dost beguile me! Was this face the face,

That every day under his household roof Did keep ten thousand men? Was this the face,

That, like the sun, did make beholders wink? Was this the face, that faced so many follies,

And was at last out-faced by Bolingbroke? A brittle glory shineth in this face:

As brittle as the glory is the face; [Dashes the Glass against the ground.

For there it is, crack'd in a hundred shivers.— Mark, silent king, the moral of this sport,—

How soon my sorrow hath destroy'd my face.

*Boling.* The shadow of your sorrow hath The shadow of your face. [destroy'd

*K. Rich.* Say that again. The shadow of my sorrow? Hal let's see:— 'Tis very true, my grief lies all within;

And these external manners of lament

\* Oaths.

Attend.

Oil of consolation

S. Part

Humble

Are merely shadows to the unseen grief,  
That swells with silence in the tortured soul;  
There lies the substance: and I thank thee,  
king,  
For thy great bounty, that not only givest  
Me cause to wail, but teachest me the way  
How to lament the cause. I'll beg one boon,  
And then be gone, and trouble you no more.  
Shall I obtain it?

*Boling.* Name it, fair cousin.

*K. Rich.* Fair cousin? Why, I am greater  
than a king:

For, when I was a king, my flatterers  
Were then but subjects; being now a subject,  
I have a king here to my flatterer.

Being so great, I have no need to beg.

*Boling.* Yet ask.

*K. Rich.* And shall I have?

*Boling.* You shall.

*K. Rich.* Then give me leave to go.

*Boling.* Whither?

*K. Rich.* Whither you will, so I were from  
your sights. [the Tower.]

*Boling.* Go, some of you, convey him to

*K. Rich.* O, good! Convey?—Conveyors\*  
are you all,

That rise thus nimbly by a true king's fall.

[*Exeunt* K. RICHARD, some Lords,  
and a Guard.]

*Boling.* On Wednesday next, we solemnly  
set down

Our coronation: lords, prepare yourselves

[*Exeunt all but the Abbot, Bishop  
of Carlisle, and AUWERLE.*]

*Abbot.* A woful pageant have we here be-  
held. [unborn]

*Car.* The woe's to come; the children yet  
Shall feel this day as sharp to them as thorn.

*Ann.* You holy clergymen, is there no plot  
To rid the realm of this pernicious blot?

*Abbot.* Before I freely speak my mind herein  
You shall not only take the sacrament

To bury † mine intents, but to effect

Whatever I shall happen to devise:—

I see your brows are full of discontent,

Your hearts of sorrow, and your eyes of tears

Come home with me to supper; I will lay  
A plot, shall show us all a merry day. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. London. A Street leading to  
the Tower.

*Enter Queen, and Ladies.*

*Queen.* This way the king will come;  
this is the way

To Julius Caesar's ill-erected tower†,  
To whose flint bosom my condemned lord  
Is doom'd a prisoner, by proud Bolingbroke:  
Here let us rest, if this rebellious earth  
Have any resting for her true king's queen.

*Enter King RICHARD, and Guards.*

But soft, but see, or rather do not see,  
My fair rose wither: Yet look up; behold;  
That you in pity may dissolve to dew,  
And wash him fresh again with true-love  
tears.— [stand:]

Ah, thou, the model where old Troy did  
Thou map§ of honour; thou king Richard's  
tomb. [teous inn,

And not king Richard; thou most beau-  
tiful Why should hard-favour'd grief be lodged in  
thee,

When triumph is become an ale-house guest?

*K. Rich.* Join not with grief, fair woman,  
do not so, [soul,

To make my end too sudden: learn, good  
To think our former state a happy dream;  
From which awak'd, the truth of what we are  
Shows us but this: I am sworn brother, sweet,  
To grim necessity; and he and I [France,  
Will keep a league till death. Bid thee to  
And cloister thee in some religious house:  
Our holy lives must win a new world's crown,  
Which our profane hours here have stricken  
down. [and mind

*Queen.* What, is my Richard both in shape

Transform'd, and weaken'd? Hath Boling-  
broke [heart?]

Deposed thine intellect? hath he been in thy  
The lion dying, thrusteth forth his paw,

And wounds the earth, if nothing else, with  
rage

To be o'er power'd; and wilt thou, pupil-like,  
Take thy correction mildly? kiss the rod;

And fawn on rage with base humility,  
Which art a lion, and a king of beasts?

*K. Rich.* A king of beasts, indeed; if aught  
but beast,

I had been still a happy king of men.

Good sometime queen, prepare thee hence  
for France: [takest,

Think, I am dead: and that even here thou  
As from my death-bed, my last living leave.

In winter's tedious nights, sit by the fire  
With good old folks; and let them tell thee

Of woful ages, long ago betid ||: [tales

And, ere thou bid good night, to quit¶ their  
Tell thou the lamentable fall of me, [grief,

And send the hearers weeping to their beds.  
For why, the senseless brands will sympathize

The heavy accent of thy moving tongue,  
And, in compassion, weep the fire out:

And some will mourn in ashes, some coal-  
For the depositing of a rightful king. [black,

*Enter* NORTHUMBERLAND, attendi.

*North.* My lord, the mind of Bolingbroke  
is changed;

You must to Pomfret, not unto the Tower.—  
And, madam, there is order taken for you;

With all swift speed you must away to  
France. [whereaway

*K. Rich.* Northumberland, thou ladder  
The mounting Bolingbroke ascends my throne

\* Jugglers, also robbers.

† Conceal.

‡ Tower of London.

§ Picture of greatness

|| Passed.

¶ Be even with them.



The time shal. not be many hours of age  
More than it is, ere foul sin, gathering head,  
Shall break into corruption: thou shalt think,  
Though he divideth the realm, and give thee half,  
It is too little, helping him to all;  
And he shall think, that thou, which know'st  
the way

To plant unrightful kings, wilt know again,  
Being ne'er so little urged, another way  
To pluck him headlong from the usurped  
throne.

e love of wicked friends converts to fear;  
a fear, to hate; and hate turns one, or both,  
worthy danger, and deserved death.

*North.* My guilt be on my head, and there  
an end.

Take leave, and part; for you must part  
forthwith.

*K. Rich.* Doubly divorced?—Bad men, ye  
violate [me;

A twofold marriage; 'twixt my crown and  
And then, betwixt me and my married wife:—  
Let me unkiss the oath 'twixt thee and me!

And yet not so, for with a kiss 'twas made.—  
Part us, Northumberland; I towards the  
north, [clime;

Where shivering cold and sickness pines the  
My wife to France, from whence, set forth  
in pomp,

She came adorned hither like sweet May,  
Sent back like Hallowmas\*, or short'st of  
day.

*Queen.* And must we be divided? must we  
part? [and heart from heart.

*K. Rich.* Ay, hand from hand, my love,

*Queen.* Banish us both, and send the king  
with me. [licy.

*North.* That were some love, but little po-

*Queen.* Then whither he goes, thither let  
me go! [one woe.

*K. Rich.* So too, together weeping, make  
Weep thou for me in France, I for thee here;  
Better far off than—near, be ne'er the near't.  
Go, count thy way with sighs; I, mine with  
groans. [est moans.

*Queen.* So longest way shall have the long-

*K. Rich.* Twice for one step I'll groan, the  
way being short,

And piece the way out with a heavy heart.  
Come, come, in wooing sorrow let's be brief,  
Since, wedding it, there is such length in  
grief. [part;

One kiss shall stop our mouths, and dumbly  
Thus give I mine, and thus I take thy heart.

[They kiss.

*Queen.* Give me mine own again; 'twere  
no good part,

To take on me to keep, and kill thy heart.

[Kiss again.

So, now I have mine own again, begone,  
That I may strive to kill it with a groan.

*K. Rich.* We make woe wanton with this  
fond delay:

Once more, adieu; the rest let sorrow say.

[Exit.

# SCENE II. The same.

*A Room in the Duke of York's Palace.*

*Enter YORK and his Duchess.*

*Duch.* My lord, you told me, you would  
tell the rest,

When weeping made you break the story off  
Of our two cousins coming into London.

*York.* Where did I leave?

*Duch.* At that sad stop, my lord,  
Where rude misgovern'd hands, from win-  
dows' tops, [head.

Threw dust and rubbish on king Richard's  
*York.* Then, as I said, the duke, great Boling-

Mounted upon a hot and fiery steed, [broke,—  
Which his aspiring rider seem'd to know,—

With slow, but stately pace, kept on his course,  
While all tongues cried—God save thee, Boling-

broke! [spake;  
You would have thought the very windows

So many greedy looks of young and old  
Through casements darted their desiring eyes

Upon his visage; and that all the walls,  
With painted imagery†, had said at once,—

Jesu preserve thee! welcome, Bolingbroke!  
Whilst he from one side to the other turning,

Bare-headed, lower than his proud steed's neck,  
Bespoke them thus,—I thank you, countrymen:

And thus still doing, thus he pass'd along.

*Duch.* Alas, poor Richard! where rides he  
the while?

*York.* As in a theatre, the eyes of men,  
After a well-graced actor leaves the stage,

Are idly bent; on him that enters next,  
Thinking his prattle to be tedious: [eyes

Even so, or with much more contempt, men's  
Did scowl on Richard; no man cried, God

save him;  
No joyful tongue gave him his welcome home:

But dust was thrown upon his sacred head;  
Which with such gentle sorrow he shook off,—

His face still combating with tears and smiles,  
The badges of his grief and patience,— [steal'd

That had not God, for some strong purpose,  
The hearts of men, they must perforce have

And barbarism itself have pitied him. [melted,  
But heaven hath a hand in these events;

To whose high will we bound our calm contents,  
To Bolingbroke are we sworn subjects now,

Whose state and honour I for aye|| allow!

*Enter AUMERLE.*

*Duch.* Here comes my son Aumerle.  
*York.* Aumerle that was;

But that is lost, for being Richard's friend,  
And, madam, you must call him Rutland now.

I am in parliament pledge for his truth,  
And lasting fealty to the new-made king.

*Duch.* Welcome, my son: Who are the  
violets now, [spring!

That strew the green lap of the new-come  
*Aum.* Madam, I know not, nor I greatly care

God knows, I had as lief be none, as one. [not:  
*York.* Well, bear you well in this new

spring of time,  
Lest you be cropp'd before you come to prime

\* All-hallows, i. e., All-saints, Nov. 1.  
the windows.

† Never the nigher.  
§ Carelessly turned.

‡ Tapestry hung from  
|| Ever

What news from Oxford? hold those justs \*  
and triumphs?

*Aum.* For aught I know, my lord, they do.

*York.* You will be there, I know.

*Aum.* If God prevent it not; I purpose so.

*York.* What seal is that, that hangs without  
thy bosom?

Yea, look'st thou pale? let me see the writing.

*Aum.* My lord, 'tis nothing.

*York.* No matter then who sees it:

I will be satisfied, let me see the writing.

*Aum.* I do beseech your grace to pardon me;

It is a matter of small consequence,

Which for some reasons I would not have seen.

*York.* Which for some reasons, sir, I mean

I fear, I fear,— [to see.]

*Duch.* What should you fear?

'Tis nothing but some bond that he is enter'd

For gay apparel, 'gainst the triumph day. [into

*York.* Bound to himself? what doth he

with a bond

That he is bound to? Wife, thou art a fool.—

Boy, let me see the writing. [not show it]

*Aum.* I do beseech you, pardon me; I may

*York.* I will be satisfied; let me see it, I say.

[Snatches it, and reads.]

Treason! foul treason!—villain! traitor! slave!

*Duch.* What is the matter, my lord?

*York.* Ho! who is within there? [Enter a

Servant.] Saddle my horse:

God for his mercy! what treachery is here!

*Duch.* Why, what is it, my lord? [horse:]—

*York.* Give me my boots, I say: saddle my

Now by mine honour, by my life, my troth,

I will appeach the villain. [Exit Servant.]

*Duch.* What's the matter?

*York.* Peace, foolish woman. [matter, son?]

*Duch.* I will not peace:—What is the

*Aum.* Good mother, be content; it is no more

Than my poor life must answer.

*Duch.* Thy life answer!

Re-enter Servant, with Boots.

*York.* Bring me my boots, I will unto the

king. [thou art amazed:]

*Duch.* Strike him, Annerle.—Poor boy,

Hence, villain; never more come in my sight.

[To the Servant.]

*York.* Give me my boots, I say.

*Duch.* Why, York, what wilt thou do?

Wilt thou not hide the trespass of thine own?

Have we more sons? or are we like to have?

Is not my teeming date drunk up with time?

And wilt thou pluck my fair son from mine age,

And rob me of a happy mother's name?

Is he not like thee? is he not thine own?

*York.* Thou fond mad woman,

Wilt thou conceal this dark conspiracy? [ment.]

A dozen of them here have ta'en the sacra-

And interchangeably set down their hands,

To kill the king at Oxford.

*Duch.* He shall be none;

We'll keep him here: Then what is that to

*York.* Away, [him?]

Fond woman! were he twenty times my son,

I would appeach him.

*Duch.* Hadst thou groan'd for him,

As I have done, thou'dst be more pitiful.

But now I know thy mind; thou dost suspect

That I have been disloyal to thy bed,

And that he is a bastard, not thy son: [mind:]

Sweet York, sweet husband, be not of that

He is as like thee as a man may be.

Not like to me, or any of my kin,

And yet I love him.

*York.* Make way, unruly woman.

[Exit.]

*Duch.* After, Annerle; mount thee upon his  
horse;

Spur, post; and get before him to the king,

And beg thy pardon ere he do accuse thee.

I'll not be long behind; though I be old,

I doubt not but to ride as fast as York:

And never will I rise up from the ground,

Till Bolingbroke have pardon'd thee: Away;

Begone. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III. Windsor. A Room in the Castle.

Enter BOLINGBROKE, as King; PERCY, and  
other Lords.

*Boling.* Can no man tell of my unthrifty  
son?

'Tis full three months since I did see him last:—

If any plague hang over us, 'tis he.

I would to God, my lords, he might be found:

Inquire at London, 'mongst the taverns there,

For there they say, he daily doth frequent,

With unrestrained loose companions;

Even such, they say, as stand in narrow lanes,

And beat our watch, and rob our passengers;

While he, young, wanton, and effeminate boy,

Takes on the point of honour, to support

So dissolute a crew. [the prince;]

*Percy.* My lord, some two days since I saw

And told him of these triumphs held at Oxford.

*Boling.* And what said the gallant? [stews;]

*Percy.* His answer was,—he would unto the

And from the common'st creature pluck a

glove,

And wear it as a favour; and with that

He would unhorse the lustiest challenger.

*Boling.* As dissolute, as desperate: yet,

through both,

I see some sparkles of a better hope,

Which elder days may happily bring forth.

But who comes here?

Enter AUMERLE, hastily,

*Aum.* Where is the king?

*Boling.* What means

Our cousin, that he stares and looks so wildly?

*Aum.* God save your grace. I do beseech

your majesty,

To have some conference with your grace alone.

*Boling.* Withdraw yourselves, and leave us

here alone. [Exeunt PERCY and Lords.]

What is the matter with our cousin now?

*Aum.* For ever may my knees grow to the

earth, [Kneels.]

My tongue cleave to my roof within my mouth,

Unless a pardon, ere I rise, or speak.

*Boling.* Intended, or committed, was this?

If but the first, how heinous e'er it be, [fault?]

To win thy after love, I pardon thee.

\* Tilts and tournaments.

+ Perplexed, confounded.

; Breeding.

*Aum.* Then give me leave that I may turn the  
That no man enter till my tale be done. [key,  
*Boling.* Have thy desire.

[*AUMERLE* looks the door.

*York.* [Within.] My liege, beware; look  
to thyself;

Thou hast a traitor in thy presence there.

*Boling.* Villain, I'll make thee safe.

[*Drawing.*

*Aum.* Stay thy revengeful hand;

Thou hast no cause to fear. [hardy king:

*York.* [Within.] Open the door, secure, fool-  
Shall I, for love, speak treason to thy face?  
Open the door, or I will break it open.

[*BOLINGBROKE* opens the door.  
*Enter YORK.*

*Boling.* What is the matter, uncle? speak;  
Recover breath; tell us how near is danger,  
That we may arm us to encounter it.

*York.* Peruse this writing here, and thou  
shalt know

The treason that my haste forbids me show.

*Aum.* Remember, as thou read'st, thy pro-  
mise past:

I do repent me; read not my name there,  
My heart is not confederate with my hand.

*York.* 'Twas, villain, ere thy hand did set  
it down.—

I tore it from the traitor's bosom king:

Fear, and not love begets his penitence:

Forget to pity him, lest thy pity prove

A serpent that will sting thee to the heart.

*Boling.* O heinous, strong, and bold conspi-  
O loyal father of a treacherous son! [racy!  
Thou sheer\*, immaculate, and silver fountain,  
From whence this stream through muddy pas-  
sages,

Hath held his current and defiled himself

Thy overflow of good converts to bad;

And thy abundant goodness shall excuse

This deadly blot in thy digressing† son.

*York.* So shall my virtue be his vice's bawd;

And he shall spend mine honour with his shame,

As thriftless sons their scraping† fathers' gold.

Mine honour lives when his dishonour dies,

Or my shamed life in his dishonour lies:

Thou kill'st me in his life; giving him breath,

The traitor lives, the true man's put to death.

*Duch.* [Within.] What ho, my liege! for  
God's sake let me in.

*Boling.* What shrill-voiced suppliant makes  
this eager cry? [king; 'tis I.

*Duch.* A woman, and thine aunt, great

Speak with me, pity me, open the door;

A beggar begs, that never begg'd before.

*Boling.* Our scene is alter'd, — from a serious  
thing, [King:—

And now changed to *The Beggar and the*

My dangerous cousin, let your mother in;

I know, she's come to play for your foul sin.

*York.* If thou do pardon whosoever pray,

More sins, for this forgiveness, prosper may.

This fester'd joint cut off, the rest rests sound;

This, let alone, will all the rest confound.

*Enter Duchess.* [man;

*Duch.* O king, believe not this hard-hearted

Love, loving not itself, none other can.

*York.* Thou frantic woman, what dost  
thou make'st here?

Shall thy old dugs once more a traitor rear?

*Duch.* Sweet York, be patient: Hear me  
gentle liege. [Kneels.

*Boling.* Rise up, good aunt.

*Duch.* Not yet, I thee beseech:

For ever will I kneel upon my knees,

And never see day that the happy sees,

Till thou give joy; until thou bid me joy,

By pardoning Rutland my transgressing boy.

*Aum.* Unto my mother's prayers I bend my  
knee. [Kneels.

*York.* Against them both my true joints bend-  
ed be. [Kneels.

Ill may'st thou thrive, if thou grant any grace!

*Duch.* Pleads he in earnest? look upon his  
face;

His eyes do drop no tears, his prayers are in  
jest; [our breast:

His words come from his mouth, our's from

He prays but faintly, and would be denied;

We pray with heart, and soul, and all beside:

His weary joints would gladly rise, I know;

Our knees shall kneel till to the ground they

His prayers are full of false hypocrisy; [grow:

Ours, of true zeal and deep integrity. [have

Our prayers do out-pray his; then let them

That mercy which true prayers ought to have.

*Boling.* Good aunt, stand up.

*Duch.* Nay, do not say—stand up;

But, pardon, first; and afterwards, stand up.

An if I were thy nurse, thy tongue to teach,

Pardon—should be the first word of thy speech.

I never long'd to hear a word till now;

Say—pardon, king; let pity teach thee how:

The word is short, but not so short as sweet;

No word like, pardon, for kings' months so

meet. [donna may]].

*York.* Speak it in French, king; say, *par-*

*Duch.* Dost thou teach pardon pardon to  
destroy?

Ah, my sour husband, my hard-hearted lord,

That set'st the word itself against the word!—

Speak pardon, as 'tis current in our land;

The chopping French we do not understand.

Thine eye begins to speak, set thy tongue there:

Or, in thy piteous heart plant thou thine ear;

That, hearing how our plaints and prayers do

perce,

Pity may move thee, pardon to rehearse.

*Boling.* Good aunt, stand up.

*Duch.* I do not sue to stand,

Pardon is all the suit I have in hand. [me.

*Boling.* I pardon him, as God shall pardon

*Duch.* O happy vantage of a kneeling kneel!

Yet am I sick for fear: speak it again;

Twice saying pardon, doth not pardon twain,

But makes one pardon strong.

*Boling.* With all my hear-

I pardon him.

*Duch.* A god on earth thou art.

*Boling.* But for our trusty brother-in-law,—

and the abbot,

With all the rest of that consorted crew,—

\* Transparent.

† Transgressing.

‡ An old ballad.

§ Do.

|| Excuse me



Destruction straight shall dog them at the heels.  
 Good uncle, help to order several powers \*  
 To Oxford, or where'er these traitors are :  
 They shall not live within this world, I swear,  
 But I will have them, if I once know where.  
 Uncle, farewell,—and cousin too, adieu : [true.  
 Your mother well hath pray'd and prove you  
*Duch.* Come, my old son ;—I pray God  
 make thee new. [Exeunt.

## SCENE IV.

Enter EXTON, and a Servant.

*Exton.* Didst thou not mark the king, what  
 words he spake ? [Fear?  
*Have I no friend will rid me of this living*  
*Was it not so ?*

*Serv.* Those were his very words.

*Exton.* Have I no friend ? quoth he : he  
 spake it twice,  
 And urged it twice together ; did he not ?

*Serv.* He did.

*Exton.* And, speaking it, he wistfully look'd  
 on me ; [man  
 As who should say,—I would, thou wert the  
 That would divorce this terror from my heart ;  
 Meaning, the king at Pomfret. Come, let's go ;  
 I am the king's friend, and will rid his foe.  
 [Exeunt.

## SCENE V. Pomfret. The Dungeon of the Castle.

Enter King RICHARD.

*K. Rich.* I have been studying how I may  
 compare

This prison, where I live, unto the world :  
 And, for because the world is populous,  
 And here is not a creature but myself,  
 I cannot do it ;—Yet I'll hammer it out.  
 My brain I'll prove the female to my soul ;  
 My soul, the father : and these two beget  
 A generation of still-breeding thoughts,  
 And these same thoughts people this little  
 world † ;

In humours, like the people of this world,  
 For no thought is contented. The better sort,—  
 As thoughts of things divine,—are intermix'd  
 With scruples, and do set the word itself  
 Against the word † :  
 As thus,—Come little ones ; and then again,—  
 It is as hard to come, as for a camel  
 To thread the postern † of a needle's eye.  
 Thoughts tending to ambition, they do plot  
 Unlikely wonders : how these vain weak nails  
 May tear a passage through the flinty ribs  
 Of this hard world, my ragged prison walls ;  
 And, for they cannot, die in their own pride.  
 Thoughts tending to content, flatter themselves,  
 That they are not the first of fortune's slaves,  
 Nor shall not be the last ; like silly beggars,  
 Who, sitting in the stocks refuge their shame,  
 That many have, and others must sit there :  
 And in this thought they find a kind of ease,  
 Bearing their own misfortune on the back  
 Of such as have before endured the like,

This play I, in one person, many people,  
 And none contented : Sometimes am I king ;  
 Then treason makes me wish myself a beggar,  
 And so I am : Then crushing penury  
 Persuades me I was better when a king ;  
 Then am I king'd again : and, by-and-by,  
 Think that I am unking'd by Bolingbroke,  
 And straight am nothing :—But, whate'er I am,  
 Nor I, nor any man, that but man is,  
 With nothing shall be pleased, till he be eased  
 With being nothing.—Music do I hear ?  
 [Music.

Ha, ha ! keep time :—How sour sweet music is,  
 When time is broke, and no proportion kept !  
 So is it in the music of men's lives.  
 And here have I the daintiness of ear,  
 To check time broke in a disorder'd string ;  
 Out, for the concord of my state and time,  
 Had not an ear to hear my true time broke.  
 I wasted time, and now doth time waste me.  
 For now hath time made me his numbring  
 clock : [jar †

My thoughts are minutes ; and, with sighs, they  
 Their watches on to mine eyes, the outward  
 watch,  
 Wherein my finger, like a dial's point,  
 Is pointing still, in cleansing them from tears.  
 Now, sir, the sound, that tells what hour it is,  
 Are clamorous groans, that strike upon my  
 heart, [groans,

Which is the bell : So sighs, and tears, and  
 Show minutes, times, and hours :—but my time  
 Runs posting on in Bolingbroke's proud joy,  
 While I stand fooling here, his Jack o'the  
 clock †.

This music mads me, let it sound no more ;  
 For, though it have holpe madmen to their wits,  
 In me, it seems it will make wise men mad.  
 Yet blessing on his heart that gives it me !  
 For 'tis a sign of love ; and love to Richard  
 Is a strange brooch \*\* in this all-hating world.

Enter Groom.

*Groom.* Hail, royal prince !

*K. Rich.* Thanks, noble peer ;  
 The cheapest of us is ten groats too dear.  
 What art thou ? and how comest thou hither,  
 Where no man never comes, but that sad dog  
 That brings me food, to make misfortune live ?

*Groom.* I was a poor groom of thy stable,  
 king, [wards York,  
 When thou wert king ; who, travelling to—  
 With much ado, at length have gotten leave  
 To look upon my sometimes †† master's face.  
 O, how it yerr'd my heart, when I beheld,  
 In London streets, that coronation day,  
 When Bolingbroke rode on roan Barbary !  
 That horse, that thou so often hast bestrid ;  
 That horse, that I so carefully have dress'd !

*K. Rich.* Rode he on Barbary ? Tell me  
 How went he under him ? [gentle friend,

*Groom.* So proudly, as if he disdain'd the  
 ground. [on his back !

*K. Rich.* So proud that Bolingbroke was  
 That jade hath eat bread from my royal hand ;

\* Forces. † His own body. † Holy scripture. § Little gate.

¶ Jack. † Strike for him, like the figure of a man on a bell.

\*\* An ornamented buckle, and also a jewel in general. †† Former

This hand hath made him proud with clapping him. [down,

Would he not stumble? Would he not fall (Since pride must have a fall), and break the neck

Of that proud man that did usurp his back? Forgiveness, horse! why do I rail on thee, Since thou, created to be awed by man, Wast born to bear? I was not made a horse; And yet I bear a burden like an ass, Spur-gall'd, and tired, by jauncing \* Bolingbroke.

*Enter Keeper, with a Dish.*

*Keeper.* Fellow, give place; here is no longer stay. [To the Groom.

*K. Rich.* If thou love me, 'tis time thou wert away.

*Groom.* What my tongue dares not, that my heart shall say. [Exit.

*Keeper.* My lord, will't please you to fall to?

*K. Rich.* Taste of it first, as thou art wont to do.

*Keeper.* My lord, I dare not; sir Pierce of Exton, who

Lately came from the king, commands the contrary. [caster, and thee!

*K. Rich.* The devil take Henry of Lancaster! Patience is stale, and I am weary of it.

[Beats the Keeper.

*Keeper.* Help, help, help!

*Enter EXTON, and Servants, armed.*

*K. Rich.* How now? what means death in this rude assault? [strument.

Villain, thine own hand yields thy death's in- [Snatching a weapon and killing one.

Go thou, and fill another room in hell.

[He kills another, then EXTON strikes him down.

That hand shall burn in never quenching fire, That staggers thus my person.—Exton, thy fierce hand

Hath with the king's blood stain'd the king's own land.

Mount, mount, my soul! thy seat is up on high; Whilst my gross flesh sinks downward, here to die. [Dies

*Exton.* As full of valour, as of royal blood: Both have I spilt; O, would the deed were good!

For now the devil, that told me—I did well, Says, that this deed is chronicled in hell.

This dead king to the living king I'll bear;— Take hence the rest, and give them burial here. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI. Windsor. A Room in the Castle.

*Flourish.* Enter BOLINGBROKE, and YORK, with Lords and Attendants.

*Boling.* Kind uncle York, the latest news we hear

Is—that the rebels have consumed with fire Our town of Cicester in Glostershire; [not. But whether they be ta'en, or slain, we hear

*Enter NORTHUMBERLAND.*

Welcome, my lord: What is the news?

*North.* First, to thy sacred state wish I all happiness.

The next news is,—I have to London sent The heads of Salisbury, Spencer, Blunt, and Kent:

The manner of their taking may appear At large discoursed in this paper here.

[Presenting a paper.

*Boling.* We thank thee, gentle Percy, for thy pains;

And to thy worth will add right worthy gains.

*Enter FITZWATER.*

*Fitz.* My lord, I have from Oxford sent to London

The heads of Brocas, and Sir Bennet Seely; Two of the dangerous consorted traitors, That sought at Oxford thy dire overthrow.

*Boling.* Thy pains, Fitzwater, shall not be Right noble is thy merit, well I wot. [forgot;

*Enter PERCY with the Bishop of Carlisle.*

*Percy.* The grand conspirator, abbot of Westminster,

With clog of conscience, and sour melancholy, Hath yielded up his body to the grave;

But here is Carlisle living, to abide

Thy kingly doom, and sentence of his pride.

*Boling.* Carlisle, this is your doom:—

Choose out some secret place, some reverend room,

More than thou hast, and with it joy thy life; So, as thou livest in peace, die free from strife

For though mine enemy thou hast ever been, High sparks of honour in thee have I seen.

*Enter EXTON, with Attendants bearing a Coffin.*

*Exton.* Great king, within this coffin I pre Thy buried fear: herein all breathless lies [saw;

The mightiest of thy greatest enemies, Richard of Bourdeaux, by me hither brought.

*Boling.* Exton, I thank thee not; for thou hast wrought

A deed of slander with thy fatal hand, Upon my head, and all this famous land.

*Exton.* From your own mouth, my lord, did I this deed. [need,

*Boling.* They love not poison that do poison Nor do I thee; though I did wish him dead,

I hate the murderer, love him murdered. The guilt of conscience take thou for thy labour,

But neither my good word, nor princely favour: With Cain go wander through the shade of night,

And never show thy head by day nor light.— Lords, I protest, my soul is full of woe,

That blood should sprinkle me to make me grow:

Come, mourn with me for what I do lament, And put on sullen black incontinent;

I'll make a voyage to the Holy Land, To wash this blood off from my guilty hand:—

March sadly after; grace my mournings here, In weeping after this untimely bier. [Exeunt.

\* Jaunting.

† Immediately.

# KING HENRY IV

## Persons represented.

King HENRY the FOURTH.  
 HENRY, *Prince of Wales*, } *Sons to the*  
 Prince JOHN of Lancaster, } *King.*  
 Earl of WESTMORELAND, } *Friends to the*  
 Sir WALTER BLUNT, } *King.*  
 THOMAS PERCY, *Earl of Worcester.*  
 HENRY PERCY, *Earl of Northumberland:*  
 HENRY PERCY, *surnamed HOTSPUR, his son.*  
 EDWARD MORTIMER, *Earl of March.*  
 SCROOP, *Archbishop of York.*  
 ARCHIBALD, *Earl of Douglas.*  
 OWEN GLENDOWER.  
 Sir RICHARD VERNON.

Sir JOHN FALSTAFF.  
 POINE.  
 GADSHILL.  
 PETO.  
 BARDOLPH.

Lady PERCY, *wife to Hotspur, and sister to Mortimer.*  
 Lady MORTIMER, *daughter to Glendower, and wife to Mortimer.*  
 Mrs. QUICKLY, *Hostess of a Tavern in Eastcheap.*

*Lords, Officers, Sheriff, Vintner, Chamberlain, Drawers, two Carriers, Travellers and Attendants.*

*Scene,—England.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. London. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter King HENRY, WESTMORELAND, Sir WALTER BLUNT, and Others.*

*K. Hen.* Soshaken as we are, so wan with care,  
 Find we a time for frighted peace to pant,  
 And breathe short-winded accents of new broils  
 To be commenced in stronds \* afar remote.  
 No more the thirsty Erinnyst of this soil  
 Shall daub her lips with her own children's  
 blood;  
 No more shall trenching war channel her fields,  
 Nor braise her flow'rets with the armed hoofs  
 Of hostile paces: those opposed eyes,  
 Which,—like the meteors of a troubled heaven,  
 All of one nature, of one substance bred,—  
 Did lately meet in the intestine shock  
 And furious close of civil butchery,  
 Shall now, in mutual, well-beseeming ranks,  
 March all one way; and be no more opposed  
 Against acquaintance, kindred, and allies:  
 The edge of war, like an ill-sheathed knife,  
 No more shall cut his master. Therefore,  
 As far as to the sepulchre of Christ, [friends,  
 (Whose soldier now, under whose blessed cross  
 We are impressed and engaged to fight,)  
 Forthwith a power; of English shall we levy:  
 Whose arms were moulded in their mothers'  
 womb  
 To chase these pagans, in those holy fields,

Over whose acres, walk'd those blessed feet,  
 Which, fourteen hundred years ago, wer  
 For our advantage on the bitter cross. [nail'd  
 But this our purpose is a twelvemonth old,  
 And bootless; 'tis to tell you—we will go;  
 Therefore we meet not now:—Then let me hear  
 Of you, my gentle cousin Westmoreland,  
 What yesternight our council did decree,  
 In forwarding this dear expedience||. [tion,  
*West.* My liege, this haste was hot in ques  
 And many limits¶ of the charge set down  
 But yesternight: when, all athwart, there came  
 A post from Wales, loaden with heavy news;  
 Whose worst was,—that the noble Mortimer  
 Leading the men of Herefordshire to fight  
 Against the irregular and wild Glendower,  
 Was by the rude hands of that Welshman  
 And a thousand of his people butchered: [taken  
 Upon whose dead corps there was such misuse,  
 Such beastly, shameless transformation,  
 By those Welshwomen done, as may not be,  
 Without much shame, re-told or spoken of.

*K. Hen.* It seems, then, that the tidings o  
 this broil  
 Brake off our business for the Holy Land.  
*West.* This, match'd with other, did, my  
 gracious lord;  
 For more uneven and unwelcome news  
 Came from the north, and thus it did import  
 On Holy-rood day\*\*, the gallant Hotspur there  
 Young Harry Percy, and brave Archibald,

\* Strands, banks of the sea.

§ Needless.

|| Expedition.

† The Fury of discord.

¶ Estimates.

‡ Force, army.

\*\* September 14.



That ever valiant and approved Scot,  
At Holmedon met,  
Where they did spend a sad and bloody hour;  
As by discharge of their artillery,  
And shape of likelihood, the news was told;  
For he that brought them in the very heat  
And pride of their contention did take horse,  
Uncertain of the issue any way.

*K. Hen.* Here is a dear and true-industrious friend,

Sir Walter Blunt, new lighted from his horse,  
Stain'd \* with the variation of each soil  
Betwixt that Holmedon and this seat of ours;  
And he hath brought us smooth and welcome news.

The earl of Douglas is discomfited;  
Ten thousand bold Scots, two-and-twenty knights,

Balk'd† in their own blood, did sir Walter see  
On Holmedon's plains: Of prisoners, Hotspur took

Mordake the earl of Fife, and eldest son  
To beaten Douglas; and the earls of Athol,  
Of Murray, Angus, and Menteith.

And is not this an honourable spoil?  
A gallant prize? ha, consin, is it not?

*West.* In faith,

It is a conquest for a prince to boast of.

*K. Hen.* Yea, there thou makest me sad,  
and makest me sin

In envy that my lord Northumberland  
Should be the father of so blest a son:

A son, who is the theme of honour's tongue;  
Amongst a grove, the very straightest plant;  
Who is sweet fortune's minion, and her pride;  
Whilst I, by looking on the praise of him,  
See riot and dishonour stain the brow  
Of my young Harry. O, that it could be proved,

That some night-tripping fairy had exchanged  
In cradle-clothes our children where they lay,  
And call'd mine—Percy, his—Plantagenet!  
Then would I have his Harry, and he mine.  
But let him from my thoughts:—What think you coz',

Of this young Percy's pride? the prisoners,  
Which he in this adventure hath surprised,  
To his own use he keeps; and sends me word,  
I shall have none but Mordake earl of Fife.

*West.* This is his uncle's teaching, this is his Worcester,

Malevolent to you in all aspects‡; [up  
Which makes him prune himself, and bristle  
The crest of youth against your dignity.

*K. Hen.* But I have sent for him to answer this;

And, for this cause, awhile we must neglect  
Our holy purpose to Jerusalem.

Cousin, on Wednesday next our council we  
Will hold at Windsor, so inform the lords:  
But come yourself with speed to us again;  
For more is to be said, and to be done,  
Than out of anger can be uttered:

*West.* I will, my liege.

[*Exeunt.*]

\* Covered with dirt of different colours.

† Trim, as birds clean their feathers.

•• More wine.

† Piled up in a heap.

‡ Favourite.

†† The dress of Sheriff's officers.

‡ Points.

¶ Stand still.

## SCENE II. *The same. Another Room in the Palace.*

*Enter HENRY Prince of Wales, and*  
*FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* Now, Hal, what time of day is it, lad?

*P. Hen.* Thou art so fat-witted, with drinking of old sack, and unbuttoning thee after supper, and sleeping upon benches after noon, that thou hast forgotten to demand that truly which thou wouldst truly know. What the devil hast thou to do with the time of the day? unless hours were cups of sack, and minutes capons, and clocks the tongues of bawds, and dials the signs of leaping-houses, and the blessed sun himself a fair hot wench in flame-colour'd taffata; I see no reason, why thou shouldst be so superfluous to demand the time of the day.

*Fal.* Indeed, you come near me, now, Hal: for we, that take purses, go by the moon and seven stars; and not by rhæbns,—he, *that wandering knight so fair.* And, I pray thee, sweet wag, when thou art king,—as, God save thy grace, (majesty, I should say; for grace thou wilt have none,)—

*P. Hen.* What, none?

*Fal.* No, by my troth; not so much as will serve to be prologue to an egg and butter.

*P. Hen.* Well, how then? come, roundly, roundly.

*Fal.* Marry, then, sweet wag, when thou art king, let not us, that are squires of the night's body, be called thieves of the day's beauty: let us be—Diana's foresters, gentlemen of the shade, minions of the moon: And let men say, we be men of good government; being governed as the sea is, by our noble and chaste mistress the moon, under whose countenance we—steal.

*P. Hen.* Thou say'st well; and it holds well too: for the fortune of us, that are the moon's men, doth ebb and flow like the sea; being governed as the sea is, by the moon. As, for proof, now: A purse of gold most resolutely snatched on Monday night, and most dissolutely spent on Tuesday morning; got with swearing—lay by‡; and spent with crying—bring in‡: now, in as low an ebb as the foot of the ladder; and by and by, in as high a flow as the ridge of the gillows.

*Fal.* By the Lord, thou say'st true, lad. And is not my hostess of the tavern a most sweet wench?

*P. Hen.* As the honey of Hybla, my old lad of the castle. And is not a buff jerkin a most sweet robe of defence†?

*Fal.* How now, how now, mad wag? what, in thy quips, and thy quiddities? what a plague have I to do with a buff jerkin?

*P. Hen.* Why, what a pox have I to do with my hostess of the tavern?

*Fal.* Well, thou hast called her to a reckon-  
ing many a time and oft.

*P. Hen.* Did I ever call for thee to pay thy part?

*Fal.* No; I'll give thee thy due, thou hast paid all there.

*P. Hen.* Yea, and elsewhere, so far as my coin would stretch; and, where it would not, I have used my credit.

*Fal.* Yea, and so used it, that were it not here apparent that thou art heir apparent,—But, I pr'ythee, sweet wag, shall there be gallows standing in England when thou art king? and resolution thus fobbed as it is, with the rusty curb of old father antic the law? Do not thou, when thou art king, hang a thief.

*P. Hen.* No; thou shalt.

*Fal.* Shall I? O rare! By the Lord, I'll be a brave judge.

*P. Hen.* Thou judgest false, already; I mean, thou shalt have the hanging of the thieves, and so become a rare hangman.

*Fal.* Well, Hal, well; and in some sort it jumps with my humour, as well as waiting in the court, I can tell you.

*P. Hen.* For obtaining of snits?

*Fal.* Yea, for obtaining of suits: whereof the hangman hath no lean wardrobe. 'Sblood, I am as melancholy as a gib\* cat, or a lugged bear.

*P. Hen.* Or an old lion; or a lover's lute.

*Fal.* Yea, or the drone of a Lincolnshire bagpipe†?

*P. Hen.* What sayest thou to a hare, or the melancholy of Moor-ditch?

*Fal.* Thou hast the most unsavoury smiles; and art, indeed, the most comparative, rascalliest,—sweet young prince,—But, Hal, I pr'ythee, trouble me no more with vanity. I would to God, thou and I knew where a commodity of good names were to be bought. An old lord of the council rated me the other day in the street about you, sir; but I marked him not: and yet he talked very wisely: but I regarded him not: and yet he talked wisely, and in the street too.

*P. Hen.* Thou didst well; for wisdom cries out in the streets, and no man regards it.

*Fal.* O thou hast damnable iteration‡; and art, indeed, able to corrupt a saint. Thou hast done much harm upon me, Hal,—God forgive thee for it! Before I knew thee, Hal, I knew nothing; and now am I, if a man should speak truly, little better than one of the wicked. I must give over this life, and I will give it over; by the Lord, an I do not, I am a villain; I'll be damned for never a king's son in Christendom.

*P. Hen.* Where shall we take a purse to-morrow, Jack?

*Fal.* Where thou wilt, lad, I'll make one; an I do not, call me villain, and baffle§ me.

*P. Hen.* I see a good amendment of life in that; from praying, to purse-taking.

*Enter POINS, at a distance.*

*Fal.* Why, Hal, 'tis my vocation, Hal; 'tis

no sin for a man to labour in his vocation. Poins!—Now shall we know if Gadshill have set a match||. O, if men were to be saved by merit, what hole in hell were hot enough for him? This is the most omnipotent villain, that ever cried, Stand, to a true¶ man.

*P. Hen.* Good morrow, Ned.

*Poins.* Good morrow, sweet Hal.—What says monsieur Remorse? What says Sir John Sack-and-Sugar? Jack, how agrees the devil and thee about thy soul, that thou soldest him on Good-friday last, for a cup of Madeira, and a cold capon's leg?

*P. Hen.* Sir John stands to his word, the devil shall have his bargain; for he was never yet a breaker of proverbs, he will give the devil his due.

*Poins.* Then art thou damned for keeping thy word with the devil.

*P. Hen.* Else he had been damned for cenzening the devil.

*Poins.* But, my lads, my lads, to-morrow morning, by four o'clock, early at Gadshill: There are pilgrims going to Canterbury with rich offerings, and traders riding to London with fat purses: I have visors\*\* for you all, you have horses for yourselves; Gadshill lies to-night in Rochester; I have bespoke supper to-morrow night in Eastcheap; we may do it as secure as sleep: If you will go, I will stuff your purses full of crowns; if you will not, tarry at home, and be hanged.

*Fal.* Hear me, Yedward; if I tarry at home, and go not, I'll hang you for going.

*Poins.* You wilt, chops?

*Fal.* Hal, wilt thou make one?

*P. Hen.* Who, I rob? I a thief? not I, by my faith.

*Fal.* There's neither honesty, manhood, nor good fellowship in thee, nor thou earnest not of the blood royal, if thou darest not stand for ten shillings††.

*P. Hen.* Well, then once in my days I'll be a mad-cap.

*Fal.* Why, that's well said.

*P. Hen.* Well, come what will, I'll tarry at home.

*Fal.* By the Lord, I'll be a traitor then, when thou art king.

*P. Hen.* I care not.

*Poins.* Sir John, I pr'ythee, leave the prince and me alone; I will lay him down such reasons for this adventure, that he shall go.

*Fal.* Well, may'st thou have the spirit of persuasion, and he the ears of profiting, that what thou speakest may move, and what he hears may be believed, that the true prince may (for recreation sake,) prove a false thief; for the poor abuses of the time want countenance, Farewell: You shall find me in Eastcheap.

*P. Hen.* Farewell, thou latter spring! Farewell All-hallowen summer‡‡! [*Exit FALSTAFF.*]

*Poins.* Now, my good sweet honey lord,

\* *Gib-cat*, should be *lib-cat*,—a Scotch term at this day for a gelded cat.

† Citation of holy texts.

¶ Honest.

\*\* Masks.

§ Treat me with ignominy.

† Croak of a frog.

|| Made an appointment.

‡ The value of a coin called *real* or *roy*.

‡‡ Fine weather at All-hallowen-tide, i. e. All Saints, Nov. 1st., is called an All-hallowen summer

ride with us to-morrow; I have a jest to execute, that I cannot manage alone. Falstaff, Bardolph, Peto, and Gadshill, shall rob those men that we have already way-laid; yourself, and I, will not be there: and when they have the booty, if you and I do not rob them, cut this head from my shoulders.

*P. Hen.* But how shall we part with them in setting forth?

*Poins.* Why, we will set forth before or after them, and appoint them a place of meeting, wherein it is at our pleasure to fail; and then will they adventure upon the exploit themselves: which they shall have no sooner achieved, but we'll set upon them.

*P. Hen.* Ay, but 'tis like, that they will know us, by our horses, by our habits, and by every other appointment, to be ourselves.

*Poins.* Tut! our horses they shall not see, I'll tie them in the wood; our visors we will change, after we leave them; and, sirrah, I have cases of buckram for the nonce\*, to immask our noted outward garments.

*P. Hen.* But, I doubt, they will be too hard for us.

*Poins.* Well, for two of them, I know them to be as true-bred cowards as ever turned back; and for the third, if he fight longer than he sees reason, I'll forswear arms. The virtue of this jest will be, the incomprehensible lies that this same fat rogue will tell us, when we meet at supper: how thirty, at least, he fought with; what wards, what blows, what extremities he endured; and, in the reproof† of this, lies the jest.

*P. Hen.* Well, I go with thee: provide us all things necessary, and meet me to-morrow night in Eastcheap, there I'll sup. Farewell.

*Poins.* Farewell, my lord. [*Exit POINS.*]

*P. Hen.* I know you all, and will a while uphold

The unyoked humour of your idleness:

Yet herein will I imitate the sun;

Who doth permit the base contagious clouds

To smother up his beauty from the world,

That, when he please again to be himself,

Being wanted, he may be more wonder'd at,

By breaking through the foul and ugly mists

Of vapours, that did seem to strangle him.

If all the year were playing holidays,

To sport would be as tedious as to work;

But, when they seldom come, they wish'd-for come,

And nothing pleaseth but rare accidents.

So, when this loose behaviour I throw off,

And pay the debt I never promised,

By how much better than my word I am,

By so much shall I falsify men's hopes;‡

And, like bright metal on a sullen ground,

My reformation, glittering o'er my fault, [eyes,

Shall show more goodly, and attract more

Than that which hath no foil to set it off.

I'll so offend, to make offence a skill;

Redeeming time, when men think least I will.

[*Exit.*]

## SCENE III.

*The same. Another Room in the Palace*

*Enter King HENRY, NORTHUMBERLAND, WORCESTER, HOTSPIR, Sir WALTER BLUNT, and Others.*

*K. Hen.* My blood hath been too cold and Unapt to stir at these indignities, [temperate, And you have found me; for, accordingly, You tread upon my patience: but, be sure, I will from henceforth rather be myself, Mighty, and to be fear'd, than my condition ||; Which hath been smooth as oil, soft as young And therefore lost that title of respect. [down, Which the proud soul ne'er pays, but to the proud. [deserves

*Wor.* Our house, my sovereign liege, little The scourge of greatness to be used on it;

And that same greatness too which our own Have help to make so portly. [hands

*North.* My lord, — [danger

*K. Hen.* Worcester, get thee gone, for I see And disobedience in thine eye: O, sir, Your presence is too bold and peremptory, And majesty might never yet endure The moody frontier ¶ of a servant brow.

You have good leave \*\* to leave us; when we need [you. —

Your use and counsel, we shall send for [Exit WORCESTER.

You were about to speak. [To NORTH.

*North.* Yea, my good lord. [manded, Those prisoners in your highness' name de- Which Harry Percy here at Holmedon took, Were, as he says, not with such strength denied As is deliver'd to your majesty: Either envy, therefore, or misprision Is guilty of this fault, and not my son.

*Hof.* My liege, I did deny no prisoners. But, I remember, when the fight was done, When I was dry with rage, and extreme toil, Breathless and faint, leaning upon my sword, Came there a certain lord, neat, trimly dress'd, Fresh as a bridegroom; and his chin, new reap'd,

Show'd like a stubble-land at harvest-home; He was perfum'd like a milliner; And 'twixt his finger and his thumb he held A pouncet-box †, which ever and anon He gave his nose, and took't away again; — Who, therewith angry, when it next came there [talk'd;

Took it in snuff: — and still he smiled, and And, as the soldiers bore dead bodies by, He call'd them — untaught knaves, unmannerly, To bring a slovenly unhandsome corpse Betwixt the wind and his nobility. With many holiday and lady terms He question'd me; among the rest demanded My prisoners, in your majesty's behalf. [cold, I then, all smarting, with my wounds being To be so pester'd with a popinjay ‡, Out of my grief §§ and my impatience, Answer'd neglectingly, I know not what:

He should, or he should not; — for he made me mad,

\* Occasion.  
¶ F. rehead.

† Confutation.  
\*\* Ready assent.

‡ Expectations.  
†† A small box for musk or other perfumes.  
§§ Pain.

§ Dull.

|| Disposition.  
‡‡ Parrot.



To see him shine so brisk, and smell so sweet,  
And talk so like a waiting gentlewoman,  
Of guns, and drums, and wounds, (God save  
the mark !)

And telling me, the sovereign'st thing on earth  
Was parmaceti, for an inward bruise ;  
And that it was great pity, so it was,  
That villainous salt-petre should be digg'd  
Out of the bowels of the harmless earth,  
Which many a good tall \* fellow had destroy'd  
So cowardly ; and, but for these vile guns,  
He would himself have been a soldier.

This bald unjointed chat of his, my lord,  
I answer'd indirectly, as I said ;  
And, I beseech you, let not his report  
Come current for an accusation,  
Betwixt my love and your high majesty. [lord,  
*Blunt.* The circumstance considered, goodmy

Whatever Harry Percy then had said,  
To such a person, and in such a place,  
At such a time, with all the rest re-told,  
May reasonably die, and never rise  
To do him wrong, or any way impeach  
What then he said, so he unsay it now. [ers ;

*K. Hen.* Why, yet he doth deny his prison-  
But with proviso, and exception,— [straight  
That we, at our own charge, shall ransom  
His brother-in-law, the foolish Mortimer ;  
Who, on my soul, hath wilfully betray'd  
The lives of those that he did lead to fight  
Against the great magician, damn'd Glen-  
dower ; [March

Whose daughter, as we hear, the earl of  
Hath lately married. Shall our coffers then  
Be emptied, to redeem a traitor home ?  
Shall we buy treason ? and indent † with fears,  
When they have lost and forfeited themselves ?  
No, on the barren mountains let him starve ;  
For I shall never hold that man my friend,  
Whose tongue shall ask me for one penny cost  
To ransom home revolted Mortimer.

*Hot.* Revolted Mortimer !  
He never did fall off, my sovereign liege,  
But by the chance of war ;—To prove that  
true, [wounds,  
Needs no more but one tongue for all those  
Thosemouthed wounds, which valiantly he took,  
When on the gentle Severn's sedgy bank,  
In single opposition, hand to hand,  
He did confound ‡ the best part of an hour  
In changing hardiments with great Glendower :  
Three times they breathed, and three times did  
they drink,

Upon agreement, of swift Severn's flood ;  
Who then, affrighted with their bloody looks,  
Ran fearfully among the trembling reeds,  
And hid his crisp ¶ head in the hollow bank  
Blood-stained with these valiant combatants.  
Never did bare and rotten policy  
Colour her working with such deadly wounds ;  
Nor never could the noble Mortimer  
Receive so many, and all willingly :  
Then let him not be slander'd with revolt.

*K. Hen.* Thou dost belie him, Percy, thou  
dost belie him,

He never did encounter with Glendower ;  
I tell thee,  
He durst as well have met the devil alone,  
As Owen Glendower for an enemy.  
Art not ashamed ? But, sirrah, henceforth  
Let me not hear you speak of Mortimer :  
Send me your prisoners with the speediest  
means,

Or you shall hear in such a kind from me  
As will displease you.—My lord Northumber-  
land,

We license your departure with your son :—  
Send us your prisoners, or you'll hear of it.

[*Exeunt King HENRY, BLUNT, and Train.*

*Hot.* And if the devil come and roar for  
them,

I will not send them :—I will after straight,  
And tell him so ; for I will ease my heart,  
Although it be with hazard of my head.

*North.* What, drunk with choler ? stay, and  
Here comes your uncle. [pause awhile ;

*Re-enter WORCESTER.*

*Hot.* Speak of Mortimer ?  
Zounds, I will speak of him ; and let my soul  
Want mercy, if I do not join with him :

Yea, on his part, I'll empty all these veins,  
And shed my dear blood drop by drop i'th  
But I will lift the down-trod Mortimer [dust,  
As high i'th' air as this unthankful king,  
As this ingrate ¶ and canker'd Bolingbroke.

*North.* Brother, the king hath made your  
nephew mad. [To WORCESTER.

*Wor.* Who struck this heat up, after I was  
gone ? [soners ;

*Hot.* He will, forsooth, have all my pri-  
And when I urged the ransom once again  
Of my wife's brother, then his cheek look'd  
pale ;

And on my face he turn'd an eye of death,  
Trembling even at the name of Mortimer.

*Hor.* I cannot blame him : Was he not  
proclaim'd,

By Richard that dead is, the next of blood ?

*North.* He was ; I heard the proclamation :  
And then it was, when the unhappy king  
(Whose wrongs in us God pardon !) did set  
Upon his Irish expedition ; [forth  
From whence he, intercepted, did return  
To be deposed, and shortly, murdered.

*Wor.* And for whose death, we in the world's  
wide mouth

Live scandalized, and foully spoken of.

*Hot.* But, soft, I pray you ; Did king Richard  
then

Proclaim my brother Edmund Mortimer  
Heir to the crown ?

*North.* He did ; myself did hear it.

*Hot.* Nay, then I cannot blame his cousin  
king, [starved,

That wish'd him on the barren mountains  
But shall it be, that you,—that set the crown  
Upon the head of this forgetful man ;  
And, for his sake, wear the detested blot  
Of murderous subordination,—shall it be,  
That you a world of curses undergo ;

\* Brave.

† Sign an indenture.  
‡ Curled.

† Expend.  
¶ Ungrateful.

§ Hardiness.

Being the agents, or base second means,  
The cords, the ladder, or the hangman rather?  
O, pardon me, that I descend so low,  
To show the line, and the predicament,  
Wherein you range under this subtle king.—  
Shall it, for shame, be spoken in these days,  
Or fill up chronicles in time to come,  
That men of your nobility and power,  
Did gage them both in an unjust behalf,—  
As both of you, God pardon it! have done,—  
To put down Richard, that sweet lovely rose,  
And plant this thorn, this canker\*, Boling-  
broke?

And shall it, in more shame, be further spoken,  
That you are fool'd, discarded, and shook off  
By him, for whom these shames ye under-  
went?

No; yet time serves, wherein you may redeem  
Your banish'd honours, and restore yourselves  
Into the good thoughts of the world again:  
Revenge the jeering, and disdain'd + contempt,  
Of this proud king; who studies, day and  
To answer all the debt he owes to you, [night,  
Even with the bloody payment of your deaths.  
Therefore, I say, —

*Wor.* Peace, cousin, say no more:  
And now I will unclasp a secret book,  
And to your quick-conceiving discontents  
I'll read you matter deep and dangerous;  
As full of peril, and advent'rous spirit,  
As to o'er-walk a current, roaring loud,  
On the unsteadfast footing of a spear.

*Hot.* If he fall in, good night:—or sink or  
swim:

Send danger from the east unto the west,  
So honour cross it from the north to south,  
And let them grapple;—O! the blood more  
To rouse a lion, than to start a hare. [stirs,

*North.* Imagination of some great exploit  
Drives him beyond the bounds of patience.

*Hot.* By heaven, methinks, it were an easy  
leap. [moon;

To pluck bright honour from the pale-faced  
Or dive into the bottom of the deep,  
Where fathom-line could never touch the  
ground,

And pluck up drowned honour by the locks;  
So he, that doth redeem her thence, might  
Without corrival ‡, all her dignities: [wear,  
But out upon this half-faced fellowship§!

*Wor.* He apprehends a world of figures||  
here,

But not the form of what he should attend.—  
Good cousin, give me audience for a while.

*Hot.* I cry you mercy.

*Wor.* Those same noble Scots,  
That are your prisoners, —

*Hot.* I'll keep them all;  
By heaven, he shall not have a Scot of them:  
No, if a Scot would save his soul, he shall not:  
I'll keep them, by this hand.

*Wor.* You start away,  
And lend no ear unto my purposes.—  
Those prisoners you shall keep.

*Hot.* Nay, I will; that's flat:—  
He said, he would not ransom Mortimer,  
Forbad my tongue to speak of Mortimer;  
But I will find him when he lies asleep,  
And in his ear I'll holla—Mortimer!  
Nay,  
I'll have a starting shall be taught to speak  
Nothing but Mortimer, and give it him,  
To keep his anger still in motion.

*Wor.* Hear you,  
Cousin; a word.

*Hot.* All studies here I solemnly defy ¶,  
Save how to gall and pinch this Bolingbroke:  
And that same sword-and buckler\*\* prince of  
Wales,—

But that I think his father loves him not,  
And would be glad he met with some mis-  
chance,

I'd have him poison'd with a pot of ale.  
*Wor.* Farewell, kinsman! I will talk to you,  
When you are better temper'd to attend.

*North.* Why, what a wasp-stung and im-  
patient fool

Art thou, to break into this woman's mood †;  
Tying thine ear to no tongue but thine own?

*Hot.* Why, look you, I am whipp'd and  
scourged with rods,

Nettled, and stung with pismires, when I hear  
Of this vile politician, Bolingbroke.

In Richard's time, What do you call the place?  
A plague upon't—it is in Gloucestershire;—

'Twas where the mad-cap duke his uncle kept,  
His uncle York;—where I first bow'd my knee  
Unto this king of smiles, this Bolingbroke  
When you and he came back from Ravens-

*North.* At Berkley castle. [purg.

*Hot.* You say true:—  
Why, what a candy †† deal of courtesy.

This fawning greyhound then did proffer me  
Look,—when his infant fortune came to age,  
And, gentle Hurry Percy, and, kind cousin,  
O, the devil take such cozeners!—God forgive  
me!—

Good uncle, tell your tale, for I have done.

*Wor.* Nay, if you have not, to't again;  
We'll stay your leisure.

*Hot.* I have done, i'faith.

*Wor.* Then once more to your Scottish pri-  
soners.

Deliver them up without their ransome straight  
And make the Douglas' son your only mean  
For powers in Scotland; which—for divers  
reasons,

Which I shall send you written,—be assured,  
Will easily be granted.—You, my lord,—

[To NORTHUMBERLAND

Your son in Scotland being thus employ'd,—  
Shall secretly into the bosom creep

Of that same noble prelate, well beloved,  
The archbishop

*Hot.* Of York, isn't not?  
*Wor.* True; who bears hard

His brother's death at Bristol, the lord Scroop  
I speak not this in estimation§§,

\* The dog-rose.

+ Disdainful.

† A rival.

§ Friendship.

|| Shapes created by his imagination.

¶ Refuse.

\*\* The term for a blustering

quarrelsome fellow.

†† Mind, humour

‡ Sugared.

§§ Conjecture

As what I think might be, but what I know  
Is ruminated, plotted, and set down;  
And only stays but to behold the face  
Of that occasion that shall bring it on.

*Hot.* I smell it; upon my life, it will do well.

*North.* Before the game's a foot, thou still  
let'st slip. [plot:—]

*Hot.* Why, it cannot choose but be a noble  
And then the power of Scotland, and of York,  
To join with Mortimer, ha?

*Wor.* And so they shall.

*Hot.* In faith, it is exceedingly well aim'd.

*Wor.* And 'tis no little reason bids us speed,  
To save our heads by raising of a head\*:  
For, bear ourselves as even as we can,  
The king will always think him in our debt;  
And think we think ourselves unsatisfied,  
Till he hath found a time to pay us home.

And see already, how he doth begin  
To make us strangers to his looks of love.

*Hot.* He does, he does; we'll be revenged  
on him.

*Wor.* Cousin, farewell! No further go in this,  
Than I by letters shall direct your course.

When time is ripe, (which will be suddenly,)  
I'll steal to Glendower, and lord Mortimer;  
Where you and Douglas, and our powers at  
once,

(As I will fashion it,) shall happily meet,  
To bear our fortunes in our own strong arms,  
Which now we hold at much uncertainty.

*North.* Farewell, good brother: we shall  
thrive, I trust.

*Hot.* Uncle, adieu! O let the hours be short,  
Till fields, and blows, and groans applaud our  
sport! [Exeunt.]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. Rochester. An Inn Yard.

*Enter a Carrier, with a Lantern in his hand.*

*1 Car.* Heigh ho! An't be not four by the  
day, I'll be hanged: Charles' wain† is over  
the new chimney, and yet our horse not packed.  
What, ostler!

*Ost.* [Within.] Anon, anon.

*1 Car.* I pry'thee, Tom, beat Cut's‡ saddle:  
put a few flocks in the point; the poor jade is  
wrong in the withers out of all cess§.

*Enter another Carrier.*

*2 Car.* Pease and beans are as dank|| here as  
a dog, and that is the next way to give poor  
jades the bots¶: this house is turned upside  
down, since Robin Ostler died.

*1 Car.* Poor fellow! never joyed since the  
price of oats rose; it was the death of him.

*2 Car.* I think, this be the most villanous  
house in all London road for fleas: I am stung  
like a tench\*\*.

*1 Car.* Like a tench? by the mass, there is  
ne'er a king in Christendom could be better  
bit than I have been since the first cock.

*2 Car.* Why, they will allow us ne'er a  
jorden, and then we leak in your chimney;  
and your chamber-lie breeds fleas like a  
loach††.

*1 Car.* What, ostler! come away and be  
hanged, come away.

*2 Car.* I have a gammon of bacon, and two  
races of ginger, to be delivered as far as  
Charing-cross.

*1 Car.* 'Odsbody! the turkeys in my pannier  
are quite starved.—What, ostler!—A plague  
on thee! hast thou never an eye in thy head?  
canst not hear? An't were not as good a deed  
as drink, to break the pate of thee, I am a  
very villain.—Come, and be hanged!—Hast  
no faith in thee?

### *Enter GADSHILL.*

*Gads.* Good morrow, carriers. What's  
o'clock?

*1 Car.* I think it be two o'clock.

*Gads.* I pry'thee, lend me thy lantern, to  
see my gelding in the stable.

*1 Car.* Nay, soft, I pray ye; I know a trick  
worth two of that, i'faith.

*Gads.* I pry'thee, lend me thine.

*2 Car.* Ay, when? canst tell?—Lend me thy  
lantern, quoth a!—marry, I'll see thee hanged  
first.

*Gads.* Sirrah carrier, what time do you  
mean to come to London?

*2 Car.* Time enough to go to bed with a  
candle, I warrant thee.—Come, neighbour  
Mugs, we'll call up the gentlemen; they will  
along with company, for they have great  
charge. [Exeunt Carriers.]

*Gads.* What, ho! chamberlain!

*Cham.* [Within.] At hand, quoth pick-  
purse‡‡.

*Gads.* That's even as fair as—at hand, quoth  
the chamberlain: for thou variest no more  
from picking of purses, than giving direction  
doth from labouring; thou lay'st the plot how.

*Enter Chamberlain.*

*Cham.* Good morrow, master Gadshill. It  
holds current that I told you yesternight:  
There's a franklin§§ in the wild of Kent, hath  
brought three hundred marks with him in  
gold: I heard him tell it to one of his com-  
pany, last night, at supper; a kind of auditor;  
one that hath abundance of charge too, God  
knows what. They are up already, and call  
for eggs and butter. They will away pre-  
sently.

*Gads.* Sirrah, if they meet not with saint  
Nicholas' clerks|||, I'll give thee this neck.

*Cham.* No, I'll none of it: I pry'thee, keep  
that for the hangman; for, I know, thou wor-

\* A body of forces.

† The constellation, *Ursa major*.

‡ Name of his horse.

§ Measure.

|| Wet.

¶ Worms.

\*\* Spotted like a tench.

†† A small fish supposed to breed fleas.

‡‡ A proverb, from the pick-purse being always ready.

|| Freeholder

||| Cant term for highway men.



ship'st saint Nicholas as truly as a man of falsehood may.

*Gads.* What talkest thou to me of the hang-man? if I hang, I'll make a fat pair of gallows: for, if I hang, old sir John hangs with me; and, thou knowest, he's no starveling. Tut! there are other Trojans that thou drestamest not of, the which, for sport sake, are content to do the profession some grace; that would, if matters should be looked into, for their own credit sake, make all whole. I am joined with no foot land-rakers\*; no long-staff, six-penny strikers; none of these mad, mustachio purple-hued malt-worms: but with nobility, and tranquillity; burgomasters, and great oneyerst; such as can hold in; such as will strike sooner than speak, and speak sooner than drink, and drink sooner than pray. And yet I lie; for they pray continually, to their saint, the commonwealth; or, rather, not pray to her, but prey on her; for they ride up and down on her, and make her their boots.

*Cham.* What, the commonwealth their boots? will she hold out water in foul way?

*Gads.* She will, she will; justice hath lacquered her. We steal as in a castle, cock-sure; we have the receipt of fern-seed, we walk invisible.

*Cham.* Nay, by my faith! I think you are more beholden to the night, than to fern-seed, for your walking invisible.

*Gads.* Give me thy hand: thou shalt have a share in our purchase||, as I am a true¶ man.

*Cham.* Nay, rather let me have it, as you are a false thief.

*Gads.* Go to; *Homo* is a common name to all men. Bid the ostler bring my gelding out of the stable. Farewell, you muddy knave.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. *The Road by Gadshill.*

*Enter* Prince HENRY and POINS; BARDOLPH and PETO, at some distance.

*Poins.* Come, shelter, shelter; I have removed Falstaff's horse, and he frets like a gummed velvet.

*P. Hen.* Stand close.

*Enter* FALSTAFF.

*Fal.* Poins! Poins, and be hanged! Poins!

*P. Hen.* Peace, ye fat-kidneyed rascal! What a brawling dost thou keep?

*Fal.* Where's Poins, Hal?

*P. Hen.* He is walked up to the top of the hill; I'll go seek him. [*Pretends to seek* POINS.]

*Fal.* I am accursed to rob in that thief's company: the rascal hath removed my horse, and tied him I know not where. If I travel but four foot by the squire\*\* further afoot, I shall break my wind. Well, I doubt not but to die a fair death for all this, if I 'scape hanging for killing that rogue. I have forsworn his company hourly any time this two-and-twenty years, and yet I am bewitched with the rogue's company. If the rascal have not

given me medicines†† to make me love him, I'll be hanged; it could not be else; I have drunk medicines.—Poins!—Hal!—a plague upon you both!—Bardolph!—Peto!—I'll starve, ere I'll rob a foot further. An 'twere not as good a deed as drink, to turn trae‡ man, and leave these rogues, I am the veriest varlet that ever chewed with a tooth. Eight yards of uneven ground, is threescore and ten miles afoot with me; and the stony-hearted villains know it well enough. A plague upon't, when thieves cannot be true to one another! [*They whistle.*] Whew!—A plague upon you all! Give me my horse, you rogues; give me my horse, and be hanged.

*P. Hen.* Peace, ye fat-guts! lie down; lay thine ear close to the ground, and list if thou canst hear the tread of travellers.

*Fal.* Have you any levers to lift me up again, being down? 'Sblood, I'll not bear mine own flesh so far afoot again, for all the coin in thy father's exchequer. What a plague mean ye to colt§§ me thus?

*P. Hen.* Thou liest, thou art not colted, thou art uncolled.

*Fal.* I pr'ythee, good prince Hal, help me to my horse; good king's son.

*P. Hen.* Out, you rogue! shall I be your ostler!

*Fal.* Go, hang thyself in thy own heir-apparent garters! If I be taken, I'll peach for this. An I have not ballads made on you all, and sung to filthy tunes, let a cup of sack be my poison! When a jest is so forward, and afoot too,—I hate it.

*Enter* GADSHILL.

*Gads.* Stand.

*Fal.* So I do, against my will.

*Poins.* O, 'tis our setter: I know his voice.

*Enter* BARDOLPH.

*Bard.* What news?

*Gads.* Case ye, case ye; on with your visors; there's money of the king's coming down the hill; 'tis going to the king's exchequer.

*Fal.* You lie, you rogue; 'tis going to the king's tavern.

*Gads.* There's enough to make us all—

*Fal.* To be hanged.

*P. Hen.* Sirs, you four shall front them in the narrow lane; Ned Poins, and I will walk lower: if they 'scape from your encounter then they light on us.

*Peto.* How many be there of them?

*Gads.* Some eight, or ten.

*Fal.* Zounds! will they not rob us?

*P. Hen.* What, a coward, sir John Paunch?

*Fal.* Indeed, I am not John of Gaunt, your grandfather; but yet no coward, Hal.

*P. Hen.* Well, we leave that to the proof.

*Poins.* Sirrah Jack, thy horse stands behind the hedge; when thou needest him, there thou shalt find him. Farewell, and stand fast.

*Fal.* Now cannot I strike him, if I should be hanged.

\* Foot-pads. † Public accountants. ‡ Booty. § Oiled, smoothed her over.

|| In what we acquire. ¶ Honest. \*\* Square. †† Love-powder.

‡‡ Honest. §§ Make a youngster of me.

*P. Hen.* Ned, where are our disguises?

*Poins.* Here, hard by; stand close.

[*Exeunt P. HENRY and POINS.*]

*Fal.* Now, my masters, happy man be his dole\* say I; every man to his business.

*Enter Travellers.*

*I Trav.* Come, neighbour; the boy shall lead our horses down the hill: we'll walk about awhile, and ease our legs.

*Thieves.* Stand.

*All Trav.* Jesu bless us!

*Fal.* Strike; down with them; cut the villains' throats! Ah! whoreson caterpillars! bacon-fed knaves! they hate us youth: down with them; fleece them!

*I Trav.* O, we are undone, both we and ours, for ever.

*Fal.* Hang ye, gorbellied knaves! Are ye undone? No, ye fat chuffs†; I would your store were here! On, bacons, on! What, ye knaves? young men must live: You are grand-jurors are ye? We'll jure ye, i'faith.

[*Exeunt FAL., &c., driving the Travellers out.*]

*Re-enter Prince HENRY and POINS.*

*P. Hen.* The thieves have bound the true men: Now could thou and I rob the thieves, and go merrily to London, it would be argument for a week, laughter for a month, and good jest for ever.

*Poins.* Stand close, I hear them coming.

*Re-enter Thieves.*

*Fal.* Come, my masters, let us share, and then to horse before day. An the prince and Poins be not two arrant cowards, there's no equity stirring: there's no more valour in that Poins, than in a wild duck.

*P. Hen.* Your money! [*Rushing out upon them.*]

*Poins.* Villains.

[*As they are sharing, the Prince and POINS set upon them. FALSTAFF, after a blow or two, and the rest, run away, leaving their booty behind them.*]

*P. Hen.* Got with much ease. Now merrily to horse. [*fear*]

The thieves are scatter'd, and possess'd with so strongly, that they dare not meet each other; Each takes his fellow for an officer.

Away, good Ned. Falstaff sweats to death, And lards‡ the lean earth as he walks along: Were't not for laughing, I should pity him.

*Poins.* How the rogue roar'd! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. Warkworth. A Room in the Castle.

*Enter HOTSPUR, reading a Letter.*

—But, for mine own part, my lord, I could be well contented to be there, in respect of the love I bear your house.—He could be contented,—Why is he not then? In respect of the love he bears our house:—he shows in this, he loves his own barn better than he loves our house. Let me see some more. *The purpose you undertake is dan-*

*gerous*;—Why, that's certain; 'tis dangerous to take a cold, to sleep, to drink: but I tell you, my lord fool, out of this nettle, danger, we pluck this flower, safety. *The purpose you undertake is dangerous; the friends you have named uncertain; the time itself unsorted: and your whole plot too light, for the counterpoise of so great an opposition.*—Say you so, say you so? I say unto you again, you are a shallow, cowardly hind, and you lie. What a lack-brain is this! By the Lord, our plot is a good plot as ever was laid; our friends true and constant: a good plot, good friends, and full of expectation: an excellent plot, very good friends. What a frosty-spirited rogue is this! Why, my lord of York commends the plot, and the general course of the action. 'Zounds, an I were now by this rascal, I could brain him with his lady's fan. Is there not my father, my uncle, and myself? lord Edmund Mortimer, my lord of York, and Owen Glendower? Is there not, besides, the Douglas? Have I not all their letters, to meet me in arms by the ninth of the next month? and are they not, some of them, set forward already? What a pagan rascal is this! an infidel! Ha! you shall see now, in very sincerity of fear and cold heart, will he to the king, and lay open all our proceedings. O, I could divide myself, and go to buffets, for moving such a dish of skimmed milk with so honourable an action! Hang him! let him tell the king: We are prepared: I will set forward to-night.

*Enter Lady PERCY.*

How now, Kate? I must leave you within these two hours. [*alone?*]

*Lady.* O my good lord, why are you thus? For what offence have I, this fortnight, been A banish'd woman from my Harry's bed?

Tell me, sweet lord, what is't that takes from thee

Thy stomach, pleasure, and thy golden sleep?

Why dost thou bend thine eyes upon the earth; And start so often when thou sitt'st alone?

Why hast thou lost the fresh blood in thy cheeks; [*thee,*]

And given my treasures, and my rights of To thick-eyed musing, and cursed melancholy?

In thy faint slumbers, I by thee have watch'd, And heard thee murmur tales of iron wars:

Speak terms of manage to thy bounding steed; Cry, *Courage!—to the field!* And thou hast talk'd

Of sallies, and retires; of trenches, tents, Of palisadoes, frontiers, parapets;

Of basilisks, of cannon, culverin; Of prisoners' ransome, and of soldiers slain,

And all the currents¶ of a heady fight. Thy spirit within thee hath been so at war,

And thus hath so bestir'd thee in thy sleep, That beads\*\* of sweat have stood upon thy brow,

Like bubbles in a late-disturbed stream: And in thy face strange motions have appear'd,

\* Portion. † Fat, corpulent. ‡ Clowns. § A subject. || Drops his fat.

¶ Occurrences. \*\* Drops.

Such as we see when men restrain their breath  
On some great sudden haste. O, what portents  
are these?

Some heavy business hath my lord in hand,  
And I must know it, else he loves me not.

*Hot.* What, ho! is Gilliams with the packet  
gone?

*Enter Servant,*

*Serv.* He is, my lord, an hour ago.

*Hot.* Hath Butler brought those horses from  
the sheriff? [now.]

*Serv.* One horse, my lord, he brought e'en

*Hot.* What horse? a roan, a crop-ear, is it

*Serv.* It is, my lord. [not?]

*Hot.* That roan shall be my throne.

Well, I will back him straight: O *esperance*!  
Bid Butler lead him forth into the park.

[*Exit Servant.*]

*Lady.* But hear you, my lord.

*Hot.* What say'st, my lady?

*Lady.* What is it carries you away?

*Hot.* My horse, My horse,

My love, my horse.

*Lady.* Out, you mad-headed ape!

A weasel hath not such a deal of spleen,  
As you are toss'd with. In faith,  
I'll know your business, Harry, that I will.

I fear, my brother Mortimer doth stir  
About his title; and hath sent for you,  
To line† his enterprise: But if you go——

*Hot.* So far afoot, I shall be weary, love.

*Lady.* Come, come, you paraquito‡, answer  
Directly to this question that I ask. [me]

In faith, I'll break thy little finger, Harry,  
An if thou wilt not tell me all things true.

*Hot.* Away,

Away, you trifter!—Love?—I love thee not,  
I care not for thee, Kate: this is no world  
To play with mammet§, and to tilt with lips:  
We must have bloody noses, and crack'd  
crowns, [horse!—]

And pass them current too.—Gods me, my  
What say'st thou, Kate? what would'st thou  
have with me? [indeed?]

*Lady.* Do you not love me? do you not,  
Well, do not then; for, since you love me not,  
I will not love myself. Do you not love me?  
Nay, tell me, if you speak in jest, or no.

*Hot.* Come, wilt thou see me ride?

And when I am o'horseback, I will swear  
I love thee infinitely. But hark you, Kate,  
I must not have you henceforth question me  
Whither I go, nor reason whereabouts:

Whither I must, I must; and, to conclude,  
This evening must I leave you, gentle Kate.  
I know you wise; but yet no further wise,  
Than Harry Percy's wife: constant you are;  
But yet a woman: and for secrecy,  
No lady closer; for I well believe,  
Thou wilt not utter what thou dost not know;  
And so far will I trust thee, gentle Kate!

*Lady.* How! so far? [Kate!]

*Hot.* Not an inch further. But hark you,  
Whither I go, thither shall you go too;  
To-day will I set forth, to-morrow you.—

Will this content you, Kate?

*Lady.* It must, of force.  
[*Exeunt*]

# SCENE IV. Eastcheap. A Room in the Boar's Head Tavern.

*Enter Prince HENRY and POINS.*

*P. Hen.* Ned, prythee, come out of that fat  
room, and lend me thy hand to laugh a little.

*Poins.* Where hast been, Hal?

*P. Hen.* With three or four loggerheads,  
amongst three or four score hogsheads. I have  
sounded the very base string of humility.  
Sirrah, I am sworn brother to a leaz|| of  
drawers; and can call them all by their  
Christian names, as—Tom, Dick, and Francis.  
They take it already upon their salvation,  
that though I be but prince of Wales,  
yet I am the king of courtesy; and tell me  
flatly I am no proud Jack, like Falstaff; but a  
Corinthian¶, a lad of mettle, a good boy,—by  
the Lord, so they call me; and when I am  
king of England, I shall command all the  
good lads in Eastcheap. They call drinking  
deep, dyeing scarlet: and when you breathe in  
your watering, they cry hein! and bid you play  
it off.—To conclude, I am so good a proficient  
in one quarter of an hour, that I can drink  
with any tinker in his own language during  
my life. I tell thee, Ned, thou hast lost much  
honour, that thou wert not with me in this  
action. But, sweet Ned,—to sweeten which  
name of Ned, I give thee this pennyworth of  
sugar, clapped even now in my hand by an  
under-skiner\*\*; one that never spake other  
English in his life, than—*Eight shillings and  
sixpence*, and—*You are welcome*; with this  
shrill addition,—*Anon, anon, sir! Score a  
pint of bastard in the Half-moon*, or so.  
But, Ned, to drive away the time till Falstaff  
come, I prythee, do thou stand in some by-  
room, while I question my puny drawer, to  
what end he gave me the sugar; and do thou  
never leave calling—Francis, that his tale to  
me may be nothing but—anon. Step aside,  
and I'll show thee a precedent.

*Poins.* Francis!

*P. Hen.* Thou art perfect.

*Poins.* Francis! [*Exit POINS.*]

*Enter FRANCIS.*

*Fran.* Anon, anon, sir.—Look down into  
the Pomegranate, Ralph.

*P. Hen.* Come hither, Francis.

*Fran.* My lord.

*P. Hen.* How long hast thou to serve,  
Francis!

*Fran.* Forsooth, five year, and as much as  
to—

*Poins.* [Within.] Francis!

*Fran.* Anon, anon, sir.

*P. Hen.* Five years, by'r lady, a long lease  
for the clinking of pewter. But, Francis,  
darest thou be so valiant, as to play the  
coward with thy indenture, and to shew it a  
fair pair of heels, and run from it?

\* Motto of the Percy family.

|| Three.

† Strengthen.

¶ A wench.

‡ Parrot.

\*\* Tapster.

§ Puppets.



*Fran.* O lord, sir! I'll be sworn upon all the books in England, I could find in my heart—

*Poins.* [*Within.*] Francis!

*Fran.* Anon, anon, sir.

*P. Hen.* How old art thou, Francis?

*Fran.* Let me see,—About Michaelmas next I shall be—

*Poins.* [*Within.*] Francis!

*Fran.* Anon, sir.—Pray you, stay a little, my lord.

*P. Hen.* Nay, but hark you, Francis: For the sugar thou gavest me,—'twas a pennyworth, was't not?

*Fran.* O lord, sir! I would, it had been two.

*P. Hen.* I will give thee for it a thousand pound: ask me when thou wilt, and thou shalt have it.

*Poins.* [*Within.*] Francis!

*Fran.* Anon, anon.

*P. Hen.* Anon, Francis? No, Francis: but to-morrow, Francis; or, Francis, on Thursday; or, indeed, Francis, when thou wilt. But, Francis,—

*Fran.* My lord?

*P. Hen.* Wilt thou rob this leathern-jerkin, crystal-button, nodd-pated, agate-ring, puke-stocking, caddis-garter, smooth-tongue, Spanish-pouch,—

*Fran.* O lord, sir, who do you mean?

*P. Hen.* Why then, your brown bastard \* is your only drink; for, look you, Francis, your white canvass doublet will sully: in Barbary, sir, it cannot come to so much.

*Fran.* What, sir?

*Poins.* [*Within.*] Francis!

*P. Hen.* Away, you rogue! Dost thou not hear them call?

[*Here they both call him; the Drawer stands amazed, not knowing which way to go.*]

*Enter Vintner.*

*Vint.* What! stand'st thou still, and hear'st such a calling? Look to the guests within. [*Exit FRAN.*] My lord, old Sir John, with half a dozen more, are at the door; Shall I let them in!

*P. Hen.* Let them alone awhile, and then open the door. [*Exit Vintner.*] *Poins!*

*Re-enter POINS.*

*Poins.* Anon, anon, sir.

*P. Hen.* Sirrah, Falstaff and the rest of the thieves are at the door; Shall we be merry?

*Poins.* As merry as crickets, my lad. But hark ye; What cunning match have you made with this jest of the drawer? come, what's the issue?

*P. Hen.* I am now of all humours, that have show'd themselves humours, since the old days of Goodman Adam, to the pupil age of this present twelve o'clock at midnight. [*Re-enter FRANCIS with Wine.*] What's o'clock, Francis?

*Fran.* Anon, anon, sir.

*P. Hen.* That ever this fellow should have fewer words than a parrot, and yet the son of a woman!—His industry is—up-stairs, and

down-stairs; his eloquence, the parcel of a reckoning. I am not yet of Percy's mind, the Hotspur of the north; he that kills me some six or seven dozen of Scots at a breakfast, washes his hands, and says to his wife,—*Fie upon this quiet life! I want war.* O my sweet Harry, says she, *how many hast thou killed to-day? Give my roan horse a drench,* says he; and answers, *Some fourteen,* an hour after; a trifle, a trifle. I prythee, call in Falstaff; I'll play Percy, and that damned brawn shall play dame Mortimer his wife. *Rivo,* says the drunkard. Call in ribs, call in tallow.

*Enter FALSTAFF, GADSHILL, BARDOLPH, and PETO.*

*Poins.* Welcome, Jack. Where hast thou been?

*Fal.* A plague of all cowards, I say, and a vengeance too! marry, and amen!—Give me a cup of sack, boy.—Ere I lead this life long, I'll sew nether stocks†, and mend them, and foot them too. A plague of all cowards!—Give me a cup of sack, rogue.—Is there no virtue extant? [*He drinks.*]

*P. Hen.* Didst thou never see Titan kiss a dish of butter? pitiful-hearted Titan, that melted at the sweet tale of the sun! if thou didst, then behold that compound.

*Fal.* You rogue, here's lime in this sack too: There is nothing but roguery to be found in villanous man: Yet a coward is worse than a cup of sack with lime in it; a villanous coward.—Go thy ways, old Jack; die when thou wilt, if manhood, good manhood, be not forgot upon the face of the earth, then am I a shotten herring. There live not three good men unchanged in England; and one of them is fat, and grows old: God help the while! A bad world, I say! I would I were a weaver; I could sing psalms or any thing: A plague of all cowards, I say still.

*P. Hen.* How now, wool-sack? what mutter you?

*Fal.* A king's son! If I do not beat thee out of thy kingdom with a dagger of lath, and drive all thy subjects afore thee like a flock of wild geese, I'll never wear hair on my face more. You prince of Wales!

*P. Hen.* Why you whoreson round man! what's the matter?

*Fal.* Are you not a coward? answer me to that; and Poins there?

*Poins.* 'Pounds, ye fat paunch, an ye call me coward, I'll stab thee.

*Fal.* I call thee coward! I'll see thee damned ere I call thee coward; but I would give a thousand pound, I could run as fast as thou canst. You are straight enough in the sholders, you care not who sees your back: Call you that backing of your friends? A plague upon such backing! give me them that will face me.—Give me a cup of sack:—I am a rogue, if I drunk to-day.

*P. Hen.* O villain! thy lips are scarce wiped since thou drunk'st last.

\* A sweet wine.

† Stockings.

*Fal.* All's one for that. A plague of all cowards, still say I. [*He drinks.*]

*P. Hen.* What's the matter?

*Fal.* What's the matter? there be four of us nere have ta'en a thousand pound this morning.

*P. Hen.* Where is it, Jack? where is it?

*Fal.* Where is it? taken from us it is; a hundred upon poor four of us.

*P. Hen.* What, a hundred, man?

*Fal.* I am a rogue, if I were not at half-sword with a dozen of them two hours together. I have 'scaped by miracle. I am eight times thrust through the doublet; four through the hose; my buckler cut through and through; my sword hacked like a hand-saw, *ecce signum*. I never dealt better since I was a man; all would not do. A plague of all cowards!—Let them speak: if they speak more or less than truth, they are villains, and the sons of darkness.

*P. Hen.* Speak, sirs; how was it?

*Gads.* We four set upon some dozen—

*Fal.* Sixteen, at least, my lord—

*Gads.* And bound them.

*Peto.* No, no, they were not bound.

*Fal.* You rogue, they were bound, every man of them; or I am a Jew else, an Ebrew Jew.

*Gads.* As we were sharing, some six or seven fresh men set upon us,——

*Fal.* And unbound the rest, and then come in the other.

*P. Hen.* What, fought ye with them all?

*Fal.* All? I know not what ye call, all; but if I fought not with fifty of them, I am a bunch of radish: if there were not two or three and fifty upon poor old Jack, then I am no two-legged creature.

*Poins.* Pray God, you have not murdered some of them.

*Fal.* Nay, that's past praying for: for I have peppered two of them: two, I am sure, I have paid; two rogues in buckram suits. I tell thee what, Hal,—if I tell thee a lie, spit in my face, and call me horse. Thou knowest my old ward;—here I lay, and thus I bore my point. Four rogues in buckram let drive at me,——

*P. Hen.* What, four? thou said'st but two, even now.

*Fal.* Four, Hal; I told thee four.

*Poins.* Ay, ay, he said four.

*Fal.* These four came all a-front, and mainly thrust at me. I made me no more ado, but took all their seven points in my target, thus.

*P. Hen.* Seven? why, there were but four, even now.

*Fal.* In buckram.

*Poins.* Ay, four, in buckram suits.

*Fal.* Seven, by these hilts, or I am a villain else.

*P. Hen.* Pr'ythee, let him alone; we shall have more anon.

*Fal.* Dost thou hear me, Hal?

*P. Hen.* Ay, and mark thee too, Jack.

*Fal.* Do so, for it is worth the listening to. These nine in buckram, that I told thee of,——

*P. Hen.* So, two more already.

*Fal.* Their points being broken,——

*Poins.* Down fell their hose.

*Fal.* Began to give me ground: But I followed me close, came in foot and hand; and, with a thought, seven of the eleven I paid.

*P. Hen.* O monstrous! eleven buckram men grown out of two!

*Fal.* But, as the devil would have it, three mis-begotten knaves, in Kendal\* green, came at my back, and let drive at me;—for it was so dark, Hal, that thou couldst not see thy hand.

*P. Hen.* These lies are like the father that begets them; gross as a mountain, open, palpable. Why, thou clay-brained guts; thou knotty-pated fool; thou whoreson, obscene, greasy tallow-keech!——

*Fal.* What, art thou mad? art thou mad? is not the truth, the truth?

*P. Hen.* Why, how couldst thou know these men in Kendal green, when it was so dark thou couldst not see thy hand; come tell us your reason: What sayest thou to this?

*Poins.* Come, your reason, Jack, your reason.

*Fal.* What, upon compulsion? No; were I at the strappado, or all the racks in the world, I would not tell you on compulsion. Give you a reason on compulsion! if reasons were as plenty as blackberries, I would give no man a reason upon compulsion, I.

*P. Hen.* I'll be no longer guilty of this sin; this sanguine coward, this bed-presser, this horse-back-breaker, this huge hill of flesh!——

*Fal.* Away, you starveling, you elf-skin, you dried neat's-tongue, bull's pizzle, you stock-fish,—O, for breath to utter what is like thee!—you tailor's yard, you sheath, you bow-case, you vile standing tuck!——

*P. Hen.* Well, breathe awhile, and then to it again; and when thou hast tired thyself in base comparisons, hear me speak but this.

*Poins.* Mark, Jack.

*P. Hen.* We two saw you four set on four; you bound them, and were masters of their wealth.——Mark now, how plain a tale shall put you down.——Then did we two set on you four: and, with a word, out-faced you from your prize, and have it; yea, and can show it you here in the house:—and, Falstaff, you carried your guts away as nimbly, with as quick dexterity, and roared for mercy, and still ran and roared, as ever I heard bull-calf. What a slave art thou, to hack thy sword as thou hast done; and then say, it was in fight! What trick, what device, what starting-hole, canst thou now find out, to hide thee from this open and apparent shame?

*Poins.* Come, let's hear, Jack! What trick hast thou now?

*Fal.* By the Lord, I knew ye, as well as he that made ye. Why, hear ye, my masters: Was it for me to kill the heir-apparent? Should I turn upon the true prince? Why, thou knowest, I am as valiant as Hercules: but beware instinct; the lion will not touch the

\* A 'own in Westmoreland famous for making cloth.

† A round lump of fat.

true prince. Instinct is a great matter; I was a coward on instinct. I shall think the better of myself and thee, during my life; I, for a valiant lion, and thou for a true prince. But, by the Lord, lads, I am glad you have the money.—Hostess, clap to the doors; watch to-night, pray to-morrow.—Gallants, lads, boys, hearts of gold. All the titles of good fellowship come to you! What, shall we be merry? shall we have a play extempore?

*P. Hen.* Content;—and the argument shall be, thy running away.

*Fal.* Ah! no more of that, Hal, an thou lovest me.

*Enter Hostess.*

*Host.* My lord the prince,——

*P. Hen.* How now, my lady the hostess? what say'st thou to me?

*Host.* Marry, my lord, there is a nobleman of the court at door, would speak with you: he says, he comes from your father.

*P. Hen.* Give him as much as will make him a royal man, and send him back again to my mother.

*Fal.* What manner of man is he?

*Host.* An old man.

*Fal.* What doth gravity out of his bed at midnight?—Shall I give him his answer?

*P. Hen.* Pr'ythee, do, Jack.

*Fal.* Faith, and I'll send him packing.

*[Exit.]*

*P. Hen.* Now, sirs; by'r lady, you fought fair;—so did you, Peto;—so did you, Bardolph: you are lions too, you ran away upon instinct, you will not touch the true prince; no,—fie!

*Bard.* Faith, I ran when I saw others run.

*P. Hen.* Tell me now in earnest: How came Falstaff's sword so hacked?

*Peto.* Why, he hacked it with his dagger; and said, he would swear truth out of England, but he would make you believe it was done in fight; and persuaded us to do the like.

*Bard.* Yea, and to tickle our noses with spear-grass, to make them bleed; and then to beslobber our garments with it, and to swear it was the blood of true men. I did that I did not this seven year before; I blushed to hear his monstrous devices.

*P. Hen.* O villain, thou stolest a cup of sack eighteen years ago, and wert taken with the manner\*, and ever since thou hast blushed extempore. Thou hadst fire and sword on thy side, and yet thou ran'st away! What instinct hast thou for it?

*Bard.* My lord, do you see these meteors? do you behold these exhalations?

*P. Hen.* I do.

*Bard.* What think you they portend?

*P. Hen.* Hot livers and cold purses†.

*Bard.* Choler, my lord, if rightly taken.

*P. Hen.* No, if rightly taken, halter.

*Re-enter FALSTAFF.*

Here comes lean Jack, here comes bare-bone.

How now, my sweet creature of bombast‡? How long is't ago, Jack, since thou sawest thine own knee?

*Fal.* My own knee? when I was about thy years, Hal, I was not an eagle's talon in the waist; I could have crept into any alderman's thumb-ring: A plague of sighing and grief! it blows a man up like a bladder. There's villainous news abroad: here was sir John Bracy from your father; you must to the court in the morning. That same bad fellow of the north, Percy; and he of Wales, that gave Amaimon§ the bastinado, and made Lucifer cuckold, and swore the devil his true liegeman upon the cross of a Welsh hook,—What, a plague, call you him?—

*Poins.* O, Glendower.

*Fal.* Owen, Owen; the same;—and his son-in-law, Mortimer; and old Northumberland; and that sprightly Scot of Scots, Douglas, that runs o'horseback up a hill perpendicular.

*P. Hen.* He that rides at high speed, and with his pistol kills a sparrow flying.

*Fal.* You have hit it.

*P. Hen.* So did he never the sparrow.

*Fal.* Well, that rascal hath good mettle in him; he will not run.

*P. Hen.* Why, what a rascal art thou then, to praise him so for running?

*Fal.* O'horseback, ye cuckoo! but, afoot, he will not budge a foot.

*P. Hen.* Yes, Jack, upon instinct.

*Fal.* I grant ye, upon instinct. Well, he is there too; and one Mordake, and a thousand blue caps|| more: Worcester is stolen away to-night; thy father's beard is turned white with the news you may buy land now as cheap as stinking mackerel.

*P. Hen.* Why then, 'tis like, if there come a hot June, and this civil buffeting hold, we shall buy maidenheads as they buy hobnails, by the hundreds.

*Fal.* By the mass, lad, thou sayest true; it is like we shall have good trading that way.—But, tell me, Hal, art thou not horribly afraid? thou being heir-apparent, could the world pick thee out three such enemies again, as that fiend Douglas, that spirit Percy, and that devil Glendower? Art thou not horribly afraid? doth not thy blood thrill at it?

*P. Hen.* Not a whit, if faith; I lack some of thy instinct.

*Fal.* Well, thou wilt be horribly chid to-morrow, when thou comest to thy father: if thou love me, practise an answer.

*P. Hen.* Do thou stand for my father, and examine me upon the particulars of my life.

*Fal.* Shall I? content:—This chair shall be my state¶, this dagger my sceptre, and this cushion my crown.

*P. Hen.* Thy state is taken for a joint-stool, thy golden sceptre for a leaden dagger, and thy precious rich crown for a pitiful bald crown!

\* In the fact.

† Drunkenness and poverty.

‡ Bombast is the stuffing of clothes.

§ A demon, who is described as one of the four kings, who rule over all the demons in the world.

Scotsmen in blue bonnets.

¶ Chair of state.



*Fal.* Well, an the fire of grace be not quite out of thee, now shalt thou be moved.—Give me a cup of sack, to make mine eyes look red, that it may be thought I have wept; for I must speak in passion, and I will do it in king Cambyse's vein.

*P. Hen.* Well, here is my leg †.

*Fal.* And here is my speech:—Stand aside, nobility.

*Host.* This is excellent sport, i'faith.

*Fal.* Weep not, sweet queen, for trickling tears are vain.

*Host.* O, the father, how he holds his countenance!

*Fal.* For God's sake, lords, convey my tristful ‡ queen,  
For tears do stop the flood gates of her eyes.

*Host.* O rare! he doth it as like one of these harlotry players, as I ever see.

*Fal.* Peace, good pint-pot; peace, good tickle-brain §.—Harry, I do not only marvel where thou spendest thy time, but also how thou art accompanied: for though the camomile, the more it is trodden on, the faster it grows, yet youth, the more it is wasted, the sooner it wears. That thou art my son, I have partly thy mother's word, partly my own opinion; but chiefly, a villanous trick of thine eye, and a foolish hanging of thy nether lip, that doth warrant me. If then thou be son to me, here lies the point:—Why, being son to me, art thou so pointed at? Shall the blessed sun of heaven prove a micher ||, and eat blackberries? a question not to be asked. Shall the son of England prove a thief, and take purses? a question to be asked. There is a thing, Harry, which thou hast often heard of, and it is known to many in our land by the name of pitch: this pitch, as ancient writers do report, doth defile; so doth the company thou keepest: for, Harry, now I do not speak to thee in drink, but in tears; not in pleasure, but in passion; not in words only, but in woes also:—And yet there is a virtuous man, whom I have often noted in thy company, but I know not his name.

*P. Hen.* What manner of man, an it like your majesty?

*Fal.* A good portly man, i'faith, and a corpulent; of a cheerful look, a pleasing eye, and a most noble carriage; and, as I think, his age some fifty, or, by'r lady, inclining to threescore; and now I remember me, his name is Falstaff: if that man should be lewdly given, he deceiveth me; for, Harry, I see virtue in his looks. If then the tree may be known by the fruit, as the fruit by the tree, then, peremptorily I speak it, there is virtue in that Falstaff: him keep with, the rest banish. And tell me now, thou naughty varlet, tell me, where hast thou been this month?

*P. Hen.* Dost thou speak like a king? Do thou stand for me, and I'll play my father.

*Fal.* Depose me? if thou dost it half so gravely, so majestically, both in word and matter, hang me up by the heels for a rabbit-sucker ¶, or a poulter's hare.

*P. Hen.* Well, here I am set.

*Fal.* And here I stand:—judge, my masters.

*P. Hen.* Now, Harry? whence come you?

*Fal.* My noble lord, from Eastcheap.

*P. Hen.* The complaints I hear of thee are grievous.

*Fal.* 'Sblood, my lord, they are false:—nay, I'll tickle ye for a young prince, i'faith.

*P. Hen.* Swearst thou, ungracious boy? henceforth, ne'er look on me. Thou art violently carried away from grace: there is a devil haunts thee, in the likeness of a fat old man: a tun of man is thy companion. Why dost thou converse with that trunk of humours, that bolting-hutch \*\* of beastliness, that swoln parcel of dropsies, that huge bombard ¶ of sack, that stuffed cloak-bag of guts, that roasted Manningtree ¶ ox with the pudding in his belly, that reverend vice, that grey iniquity, that father ruin, that vanity in years? Where in is he good, but to taste sack and drink it? wherein neat and cleanly, but to carve a capon and eat it? wherein cunning, but in craft? wherein crafty, but in villany? wherein villanous, but in all things? wherein worthy, but in nothing?

*Fal.* I would your grace would take me with you §§! Whom means your grace?

*P. Hen.* That villanous abominable misleader of youth, Falstaff; that old white-bearded Satan.

*Fal.* My lord, the man I know.

*P. Hen.* I know, thou dost.

*Fal.* But to say I know more harm in him than in myself, were to say more than I know. That he is old, (the more the pity,) his white hairs do witness it: but that he is (saving your reverence) a whoremaster, that I utterly deny. If sack and sugar be a fault, God help the wicked! If to be old and merry be a sin, then many an old host that I know, is damned: if to be fat be to be hated, then Pharaoh's lean kine are to be loved. No, my good lord; banish Peto, banish Bardolph, banish Poins: but for sweet Jack Falstaff, kind Jack Falstaff, true Jack Falstaff, valiant Jack Falstaff, and therefore more valiant, being as he is, old Jack Falstaff, banish not him thy Harry's company; banish plump Jack, and banish all the world.

*P. Hen.* I do, I will. [A knocking heard.  
[Exit Hostess, FRANCIS, and BARDOLPH.]

Re-enter BARDOLPH, running.

*Bard.* O, my lord, my lord; the sheriff, with a most monstrous watch, is at the door.

*Fal.* Out, you rogue! play out the play: I have much to say in the behalf of that Falstaff.

Re-enter Hostess, hastily.

*Host.* O Jesu, my lord, my lord!—

\* A character in a Tragedy by T. Preston, 1570.

† Obeisance.

‡ Sorrowful.

§ Name of a strong liquor.

|| A truant boy.

¶ A young rabbit.

\*\* The machine which separates flour from bran.

Essex, where a large ox was roasted whole.

†† A leather black jack to hold beer.

‡‡ In

§§ Go no faster than I can follow.

*Fal.* Heigh, heigh! the devil rides upon a fiddle-stick: What's the matter?

*Host.* The sheriff and all the watch are at the door: they are come to search the house; Shall I let them in?

*Fal.* Dost thou hear, Hal? never call a true piece of gold a counterfeit: thou art essentially mad, without seeming so.

*P. Hen.* And thou a natural coward, without instinct.

*Fal.* I deny your *major*: if you will deny the sheriff, so; if not, let him enter: if I become not a cart as well as another man, a plague on my bringing up! I hope, I shall as soon be strangled with a halter, as another.

*P. Hen.* Go, hide thee behind the arras\*; —the rest walk up above. Now, my masters, for a true face, and good conscience.

*Fal.* Both which I have had; but their date is out, and therefore I'll hide me.

[*Exeunt all but the Prince and POINS.*]

*P. Hen.* Call in the sheriff.—

*Enter Sheriff and Carrier.*

Now, master sheriff; what's your will with me?

*Sher.* First pardon me, my lord. A hue

and cry

Hath follow'd certain men unto this house.

*P. Hen.* What men?

*Sher.* One of them is well known, my gracious lord, a gross fat man.

*Car.* As fat as butter.

*P. Hen.* The man, I do assure you, is not here;

For I myself at this time have employed him.

And, sheriff, I will engage my word to thee,

That I will, by to-morrow dinner-time,

Send him to answer thee, or any man,

For any thing he shall be charged withal:

And so let me entreat you leave the house.

*Sher.* I will, my lord: There are two gentlemen

Have in this robbery lost three hundred marks.

*P. Hen.* It may be so: if he have robb'd these men,

He shall be answerable; and so, farewell.

*Sher.* Good night, my noble lord.

*P. Hen.* I think it is good morrow: is it not?

*Sher.* Indeed, my lord, I think it be two o'clock. [*Exeunt Sheriff and Carrier.*]

*P. Hen.* This oily rascal is known as well as Paul's\*. Go, call him forth.

*POINS.* Falstaff!—fast asleep behind the arras, and snorting like a horse.

*P. Hen.* Hark, how hard he fetches breath: Search his pockets. [*POINS searches.*] What hast thou found?

*POINS.* Nothing but papers, my lord.

*P. Hen.* Let's see what they be: read them.

*POINS.* Item, A capon, 2s. 2d.

Item, Sauce, 4d.

Item, Sack, two gallons, 5s. 8d.

Item, Anchovies, and sack after supper, 2s. 6d.

Item, Bread, a halfpenny.

*P. Hen.* O monstrous, but one half-penny: worth of bread to this intolerable deal of sack!

—What there is else, keep close; we'll read it at more advantage: there let him sleep till day. I'll to the court in the morning; we

must all to the wars, and thy place shall be honourable. I'll procure this fat rogue a charge

of foot; and, I know, his death will be a march

of twelve score. The money shall be paid back

again with advantage. Be with me betimes

in the morning; and so good morrow, Poins.

*POINS.* Good morrow, good my lord.

[*Exeunt*]

## ACT III.

SCENE I. Bangor. *A Room in the Archdeacon's House.*

*Enter HOTSPUR, WORCESTER, MORTIMER, and GLENDOWER.*

*Mort.* These promises are fair, the parties sure,

And our induction† full of prosperous hope.

*Hot.* Lord Mortimer,—and cousin Glendower. Will you sit down? — [dower,—

And uncle Worcester.—A plague upon it!

I have forgot the map.

*Glend.* No, here it is.

Sit, cousin Percy; sit, good cousin Hotspur:

For by that name as oft as Lancaster

Doth speak of you, his cheek looks pale; and

A rising sigh, he wisheth you in heaven. [with

*Hot.* And you in hell, as often as he hears

Owen Glendower spoke of.

*Glend.* I cannot blame him: at my nativity,

The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes,

Of burning cressets§; and at my birth,

The frame and huge foundation of the earth

Shaked like a coward.

*Hot.* Why, so it would have done

At the same season, if your mother's cat had

But kitten'd, though yourself had ne'er been

born. [born.

*Glend.* I say, the earth did shake when I was

*Hot.* And I say, the earth was not of my

mind,

If you suppose, as fearing you it shook.

*Glend.* The heavens were all on fire, the earth did tremble. [vens on fire,

*Hot.* O, then the earth shook to see the heavens

And not in fear of your nativity.

Diseased nature oftentimes breaks forth

In strange eruptions: oft the teeming earth

Is with a kind of colic pinch'd and vex'd

By the imprisoning of unruly wind

Within her womb; which, for enlargement

striving, [down

Shakes the old beldame earth, and topples

Steeple, and moss-grown towers. At your

birth,

Our grandam earth, having this distemperature,

\* Tapestry.

† St. Paul's cathedral.

ways upon beacons, and also upon poles which

‡ Beginning.

§ Lights set cross-

were used in processions, &c. || Tumbles.

In passion shook.

*Glend.* Consin, of many men  
I do not hear these crossings. Give me leave  
To tell you once again,—that at my birth,  
The front of heaven was full of fiery shapes;  
The goats ran from the mountains, and the  
herds [fields.

Were strangely clamorous to the frighted  
These signs have marked me extraordinary;  
And all the courses of my life do show,  
I am not in the roll of common men.

Where is he living,—clipp'd in with the sea  
That chides the banks of England, Scotland,  
Wales,—

Which calls me pupil, or hath read to me?  
And bring him out, that is but woman's son,  
Can trace me in the tedious ways of art,  
And hold me pace in deep experiments.

*Hot.* I think there is no man speaks better  
Welsh:—

I will to dinner. [him mad.

*Mort.* Peace, cousin Percy; you will make  
*Glend.* I can call spirits from the vasty deep.

*Hot.* Why, so can I; or so can any man:  
But will they come, when you do call for them?

*Glend.* Why, I can teach you, cousin, to  
command

The devil.

*Hot.* And I can teach thee, coz, to shame the  
devil, [devil.—

By telling truth; Tell truth, and shame the  
If thou have power to raise him, bring him  
hither, [hence.

And I'll be sworn, I have power to shame him  
O, while you live, tell truth, and shame the

*Mort.* Come, come. [devil.

No more of this unprofitable chat.

*Glend.* Three times hath Henry Boling-  
broke made head [Wye,

Against my power: thrice from the banks of  
And sandy-bottom'd Severn, have I sent him,  
Bootless\* home, and weather-beaten back.

*Hot.* Home without boots, and in foul wea-  
ther too!

How 'scapes he agnes, in the devil's name?

*Glend.* Come, here's the map; Shall we  
divide our right,

According to our three-fold order ta'en?

*Mort.* The archdeacon hath divided it

Into three limits, very equally:

England, from Trent and Severn hitherto,

By south and east, is to my part assign'd;

All westward Wales, beyond the Severn shore,

And all the fertile land within that bound,

To Owen Glendower:—and, dear coz, to you

The remnant northward, lying off from Trent.

And our indentures tripartite† are drawn,

(Which being sealed interchangeably,

A business that this night may execute,)

To-morrow, cousin Percy, you, and I,

And my good lord of Worcester, will set forth,

To meet your father, and the Scottish power‡,

As is appointed us, at Shrewsbury.

My father, Glendower, is not ready yet,

Nor shall we need his help these fourteen days:

Within that space, [To *Glend.*] you may have  
drawn together

Your tenants, friends, and neighbouring gentle-  
men. [lords,

*Glend.* A shorter time shall send me to you,  
And in my conduct shall your ladies come:  
From whom you now must steal, and take no  
leave;

For there will be a world of water shed,  
Upon the parting of your wives and you.

*Hot.* Methinks, my moiety§, north from  
Burton here,

In quantity equals not one of your's:

See, how this river comes me cranking in,  
And cuts me from the best of all my land,

A huge half moon, a monstrous cantle|| out.

I'll have the current in this place damm'd up

And here the smug and silver Trent shall run

In a new channel, fair and evenly:

It shall not wind with such a deep indent,

To rob me of so rich a bottom here.

*Glend.* Not wind? it shall, it must; you

*Mort.* Yea, [see, it doth.

But mark, how he bears his course, and runs  
me up

With like advantage on the other side;  
Gelding¶ the opposed continent as much

As on the other side it takes from you.

*Wor.* Yea, but a little charge will trench  
him here,

And on this north side win this cape of land;  
And then he runs straight and even.

*Hot.* I'll have it so; a little charge will do it.

*Glend.* I will not have it alter'd.

*Hot.* Will uot you?

*Glend.* No, nor you shall not.

*Hot.* Who shall say me nay?

*Glend.* Why, that will I.

*Hot.* Let me not understand you then,  
Speak it in Welsh.

*Glend.* I can speak English, lord, as well as  
For I was train'd up in the English court: [you;

Where, being but young, I framed to the harp  
Many an English ditty, lovely well,

And gave the tongue a helpful ornament;

A virtue that was never seen in you. [heart;

*Hot.* Marry, and I'm glad of it with all my

I had rather be a kitten, and cry—mew,

Than one of these same metre ballad-mongers:

I had rather hear a brazen canstick\*\* turn'd,

Or a dry wheel grate on an axle-tree;

And that would set my teeth nothing on edge,

Nothing so much as mauling poetry;

'Tis like the forced gait of a shuffling nag.

*Glend.* Come, you shall have Trent turn'd.

*Hot.* I do not care: I'll give thrice so much

To any well-deserving friend; [land

But, in the way of bargain, mark ye me,

I'll cavil on the ninth part of a hair.

Are the indentures drawn? shall we be gone?

*Glend.* The moon shines fair, you may away

I'll haste the writer††, and, withal, [to night:

Break‡‡ with your wives of your departure

hence:

I am afraid, my daughter will run mad,

\* Unsuccessful. † Three copiez.

† Cutting.

\*\* Candlestick.

‡ Force.

§ Part.

|| Corner.

†† The writer of the articles.

‡‡ Break the matter



So much she doteth on her Mortimer. [*Exit.*]

*Mort.* Fie, cousin Percy! how you cross my father! [*me,*]

*Hot.* I cannot choose: sometimes he angers With telling me of the moldwarp\* and the aut, Of the dreamer Merlin and his prophecies; And of a dragon and a finless fish, A clip-wing'd griffin, and a moulten raven, A couching lion, and a ramping cat, And such a deal of skumble-skamble stuff As puts me from my faith. I tell you what,— He held me, but last night, at least nine hours, In reckoning up the several devil's names, That were his lackeys: I cried, humph,—and well,—go to,—

But marked him not a word. O, he's as tedious As is a tired horse, a railing wife; Worse than a smoky house: I had rather live With cheese and garlic in a windmill far, Than feed on cates †, and have him talk to me, In any summer-house in Christendom.

*Mort.* In faith, he is a worthy gentleman; Exceedingly well read, and profited In strange concealments‡; valiant as a lion, And wondrous affable; and as bountiful As mines of India. Shall I tell you, cousin? He holds your temper in a high respect, And curbs himself even of his natural scope, When you do cross his humour; faith, he does: I warrant you, that man is not alive, Might so have tempted him as you have done, Without the taste of danger and reproof; But do not use it oft, let me entreat you.

*Wor.* In faith, my lord, you are too wilful-blame;

And since your coming hither have done enough To put him quite beside his patience. You must needs learn, lord, to amend this fault: Though sometimes it show greatness, courage, blood,

(And that's the dearest grace it renders you,) Yet oftentimes it doth present harsh rage, Defect of manners, want of government, Pride, haughtiness, opinion, and disdain: The least of which, haunting a nobleman, Loseth men's hearts; and leaves behind a stain Upon the beauty of all parts besides, Begniling them of commendation.

*Hot.* Well, I am school'd; good manners be your speed!

Here come our wives, and let us take our leave.

*Re-enter GLENDOWER, with the Ladies.*

*Mort.* This is the deadly spite that angers me, My wife can speak no English, I no Welsh.

*Glend.* My daughter weeps; she will not part with you,

She'll be a soldier too, she'll to the wars.

*Mort.* Good father, tell her,—that she, and my aunt Percy,

Shall follow in your conduct § speedily.

*GLENDOWER speaks to his daughter in Welsh, and she answers him in the same.*

*Glend.* She's desperate here; a peevish self-will'd harlotry,

One no persuasion can do good upon.

[*Lady M. speaks to MORTIMER in Welsh.*]

*Mort.* I understand thy looks: that pretty Welsh [*heavens,*]

Which thou pourest down from these swelling I am too perfect in; and, but for shame, In such a parley would I answer thee.

[*Lady M. speaks.*]

I understand thy kisses, and thou mine, And that's a feeling disputation: But I will never be a truant, love, Till I have learn'd thy language, for thy tongue Makes Welsh as sweet as ditties highly penn'd, Sung by a fair queen in a summer's bower, With ravishing division, to her lute ||.

*Glend.* Nay, if you melt, then will she run mad.

[*Lady M. speaks again.*]

*Mort.* O, I am ignorance itself in this.

*Glend.* She bids you

Upon the wanton rushes lay you down, And rest your gentle head upon her lap, And she will sing the song that pleaseth you, And on your eye-lids crown the god of sleep, Charming your blood with pleasing heaviness; Making such difference 'twixt wake and sleep, As is the difference betwixt day and night, The hour before the heavenly-harness'd team Begins his golden progress in the east.

*Mort.* With all my heart I'll sit, and hear her sing:

By that time will our book ¶, I think, be drawn.

*Glend.* Do so;

And those musicians that shall play to you, Hang in the air a thousand leagues from hence; Yet straight they shall be here: sit, and attend.

*Hot.* Come, Kate, thou art perfect in lying down: Come, quick, quick; that I may lay my head in thy lap.

*Lady P.* Go, ye giddy goose.

[*GLENDOWER speaks some Welsh words, and then the Music plays.*]

*Hot.* Now I perceive, the devil understands Welsh;

And 'tis no marvel, he's so humorous.

By'r-lady, he's a good musician.

*Lady P.* Then should you be nothing but musical; for you are altogether governed by humours. Lie still, ye thief, and hear the lady sing in Welsh.

*Hot.* I had rather hear *Lady*, my brach \*\*, howl in Irish.

*Lady P.* Wouldst thou have thy head broken?

*Hot.* No.

*Lady P.* Then be still.

*Hot.* Neither; 'tis a woman's fault.

*Lady P.* Now God help thee!

*Hot.* To the Welsh lady's bed.

*Lady P.* What's that?

*Hot.* Peace! she sings.

A Welsh SONG sung by *Lady M.*

*Hot.* Come, Kate, I'll have your song too.

*Lady P.* Not mine, in good sooth.

*Hot.* Not yours, in good sooth! 'Heart you, you swear like a comfit-maker's wife! Not you, in good sooth; and, As true as I live; and, As

\* Moie.

† Dainties.

‡ Secrets.

§ Guard, escort.

\* A compliment to queen Elizabeth.

¶ Our paper of conditions.

\*\* Hound.

God shall mend me; and, As sure as day :  
And givest such sarcenet surety for thy oaths,  
As if thou never walk'dst further than Fins-  
bury \*.

Swear me, Kate, like a lady, as thou art,  
A good mouth-filling oath; and leave in sooth,  
And such protest of pepper-gingerbread,  
To velvet-guard†, and Sunday citizens.  
Come, sing.

*Lady P.* I will not sing.

*Hot.* 'Tis the next way to turn tailor, or be  
red-breast teacher. An the indentures be  
drawn, I'll away within these two hours; and  
so come in when ye will. [Exit.]

*Glend.* Come, come, lord Mortimer; you  
are as slow,

As hot lord Percy is on fire to go. [then  
By this, our book's drawn; we'll but seal, and  
To horse immediately.]

*Mort.* With all my heart.

[Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. London. A Room in the Palace.

Enter King HENRY, Prince of Wales, and  
Lords.

*K. Hen.* Lords, give us leave; the Prince of  
Wales and I, [hand,  
Must have some conference: But be near at  
For we shall presently have need of you.—

[Exeunt Lords.]

I know not whether God will have it so,  
For some displeasing service I have done,  
That in his secret doom, out of my blood  
He'll breed revengement and a scourge for me;  
But thou dost, in thy passages of life,  
Make me believe, that thou art only mark'd  
For the hot vengeance and the rod of heaven,  
To punish my mis-treadings. Tell me else,  
Could such inordinate and low desires,  
Such poor, such bare, such lewd, such mean  
attempts‡,

Such barren pleasures, rude society,  
As thou art match'd withal, and grafted to,  
Accompany the greatness of thy blood,  
And hold their level with thy princely heart?

*P. Hen.* So please your majesty, I would  
I could

Quit all offences with as clear excuse,  
As well as, I am doubtless I can purge  
Myself of many I am charged withal:  
Yet such extenuation let me beg,  
As, in reproof of many tales devised,—  
Which oft the ear of greatness needs must  
hear,— [gers,

By smiling pick-thanks§ and base newsmen  
I may, for some things true, wherein my youth  
Hath faintly wander'd and irregular,  
Find pardon on my true submission.

*K. Hen.* God pardon thee!—yet let me  
wonder, Harry,

At thy affections, which do hold a wing  
Quite from the flight of all thy ancestors.  
Thy place in council thou hast rudely lost,

Which by thy younger brother is supplied;  
And art almost an alien to the hearts  
Of all the court and princes of my blood:  
The hope and expectation of thy time  
Is ruin'd: and the soul of every man  
Prophetically does fore-think thy fall.  
Had I so lavish of my presence been,  
So common-hackney'd in the eyes of men,  
So stale and cheap to vulgar company,  
Opinion, that did help me to the crown,  
Had still kept loyal to possession||;  
And left me in reputeless banishment,  
A fellow of no mark, nor likelihood.  
By being seldom seen, I could not stir,  
But, like a comet, I was wonder'd at:  
That men would tell their children, *This is he,*  
Others would say,—*Where? which is Boling-  
broke?*

And then I stole all courtesy from heaven,  
And dress'd myself in such humility,  
That I did pluck allegiance from men's hearts,  
Loud shouts and salutations from their mouths,  
Even in the presence of the crowned king.  
Thus did I keep my person fresh, and new;  
My presence, like a robe pontifical,  
Ne'er seen, but wonder'd at: and so my state,  
Seldom, but sumptuous, showed like a feast;  
And won, by rareness, such solemnity.  
The skipping king, he ambled up and down  
With shallow jesters, and rash bavin¶ wits,  
Soon kindled, and soon burn'd: carded his  
state;

Mingled his royalty with capering fools;  
Had his great name profaned with their scorns;  
And gave his countenance, against his name,  
To laugh at gibing boys, and stand the push  
Of every beardless vain comparative\*\*:  
Grew a companion to the common streets,  
Enfeoffed†† himself to popularity:  
That being daily swallow'd by men's eyes,  
They surfeited with honey: and began  
To loathe the taste of sweetness, whereof a  
little

More than a little is by much too much.  
So, when he had occasion to be seen,  
He was but as the cuckoo in June,  
Heard, not regarded; seen, but with such eyes  
As, sick and blunted with community,  
Afford no extraordinary gaze,  
Such as is bent on sun-like majesty  
When it shines seldom in admiring eyes:  
But rather drow'd, and hung their eye-lids  
down,

Slept in his face, and render'd such aspect  
As cloudy men use to their adversaries;  
Being with his presence glutted, gorged, and  
full.

And in that very line, Harry, stand'st thou:  
For thou hast lost thy princely privilege,  
With vile participation; not an eye  
But is a-weary of thy common sight,  
Save mine, which hath desired to see thee more;  
Which now doth that I would not have it do,  
Make blind itself with foolish tenderness.

\* In Moorfields. † Laced velvet, the finery of cockneys. ‡ Unworthy undertakings.

§ Olficious parasites.

|| True to him that had then possession of the crown.

¶ Brushwood.

\*\* Rival.

†† Possessed

*P. Hen.* I shall hereafter, my thrice-gracious lord, be more myself.

*K. Hen.* For all the world, As thou art to this hour, was Richard then When I from France set foot at Ravenspur; And even as I was then, is Percy now. Now by my sceptre, and my soul to boot, He hath more worthy interest to the state, Than thou, the shadow of succession: For, of no right, nor colour like to right, He doth fill fields with harness\* in the realm; Turns head against the lion's armed jaws; And, being no more in debt to years than thou, Leads ancient lords and reverend bishops on, To bloody battles, and to bruising arms. What never-dying honour hath he got Against renowned Douglas; whose high deeds, Whose hot incursions, and great name in arms, Holds from all soldiers chief majority, And military title capital, [Christ! Through all the kingdoms that acknowledge Thrice hath this Hotspur Mars in swathing clothes,

This infant warrior in his enterprises, Discomfited great Douglas: ta'en him once, Enlarged him, and made a friend of him, To fill the mouth of deep defiance up, And shake the peace and safety of our throne. And what say you to this? Percy, Northumberland,

The archbishop's grace of York, Douglas, Morcapitulate† against us, and are up. But wherefore do I tell these news to thee? Why, Harry, do I tell thee of my foes, Which art my near'st and dearest enemy? Thou that art like enough,—through vassal fear, Base inclination, and the start of spleen,—To fight against me under Percy's pay, To dog his heels, and court'sy at his frowns, To show how much degenerate thou art. [It so;

*P. Hen.* Do not think so, you shall not find And God forgive them, that have so much sway'd

Your majesty's good thoughts away from me! I will redeem all this on Percy's head, And, in the closing of some glorious day, Be bold to tell you, that I am your son; When I will wear a garment all of blood, And stain my favours in a bloody mask, [It. Which, wash'd away, shall scour my shame with And that shall be the day, when'er it lights, That this same child of honour and renown, This gallant Hotspur, this all-praised knight, And your unthought-of Harry, chance to meet: For every honour sitting on his helm, Would they were multitudes; and on my head My shames redoubled! for the time will come, That I shall make this northern youth exchange His glorious deeds for my indignities. Percy is but my factor, good my lord, To engross up glorious deeds on my behalf; And I will call him to so strict account, That he shall render every glory up, Yea, even the slightest worship of his time, Or I will tear the reckoning from his heart.

This, in the name of God, I promise here: The which if he be pleased I shall perform. I do beseech your majesty may salve The long-grown wounds of my intemperance; If not, the end of life cancels all bands; And I will die a hundred thousand deaths. Ere break the smallest parcel of this vow.

*K. Hen.* A hundred thousand rebels die in this:—

Thou shalt have charge, and sovereign trust, Enter BLUNT.

How now, good Blunt? thy looks are full of speed.

*Blunt.* So hath the business that I come to. Lord Mortimer of Scotland hath sent word,—That Douglas, and the English rebels, met, The eleventh of this month, at Shrewsbury: A mighty and a fearful head they are, If promises be kept on every hand, As ever offer'd foul play in a state.

*K. Hen.* The earl of Westmoreland set forth With him my son, lord John of Lancaster; For this advertisement ¶ is five days old:—On Wednesday next, Harry, you shall set Forward; on Thursday, we ourselves will march:

Our meeting is Bridgnorth: and, Harry, you Shall march through Glostershire; by which account,

Our business valued, some twelve days hence Our general forces at Bridgnorth shall meet.

Our hands are full of business: let's away; Advantage feeds him fat\*\*, while men delay.

[Exeunt. SCENE III. Eastcheap. A Room in the Boar's Head Tavern.

Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.

*Fal.* Bardolph, am I not fallen away vilely since this last action? do I not bate? do I not dwindle? Why, my skin hangs about me like an old lady's loose gown; I am wither'd like an old apple-John. Well, I'll repent, and that suddenly, while I am in some liking†; I shall be out of heart shortly, and then I shall have no strength to repent. An I have not forgotten what the inside of a church is made of, I am a pepper-corn, a brewer's horse: the inside of a church! Company, villanous company, hath been the spoil of me.

*Bard.* Sir John, you are so fretful, you cannot live long.

*Fal.* Why, there it is:—come sing me a bawdy song; make me merry. I was as virtuously given, as a gentleman need to be; virtuously enough: swore little; diced, not above seven times a week; went to a bawdy-house, not above once in a quarter—of an hour; paid money that I borrowed, three or four times; lived well, and in good compass: and now I live out of all order, out of all compass.

*Bard.* Why, you are so fat, sir John, that you must needs be out of all compass; out of all reasonable compass, sir John.

*Fal.* Do thou amend thy face, and I'll amend

\* Armour. † Combine. ‡ Most fatal.  
\*\* Feeds himself.

§ Bonds. ¶ Part. ¶ Intelligence.  
†† Have some flesh.



my life: Thou art our admiral\*, thou bearest the lantern in the poop,—but 'tis in the nose of thee; thou art the knight of the burning lamp.

*Bard.* Why, sir John, my face does you no harm.

*Fal.* No, I'll be sworn; I make as good use of it as many a man doth of a death's head; or a *mevonto mori*: I never see thy face, but I think upon hell-fire, and Dives that lived in purple; for there he is in his robes, burning, burning. If thou wert any way given to virtue, I would swear by thy face; my oath should be, By this fire: but thou art altogether given over; and wert indeed, but for the light in thy face, the son of utter darkness. When thou ran'st up Gad's-hill in the night to catch my horse, if I did not think thou hadst been an *ignis fatuus*, or a ball of wildfire, there's no purchase in money. O, thou art a perpetual triumph, an everlasting bonfire-light! Thou hast saved me a thousand marks in links and torches, walking with thee in the night betwixt tavern and tavern: but the sack that thou hast drunk me, would have bought me lights as good cheap, at the dearest chandler's in Europe. I have maintained that Salamander of your's with fire, any time this two and thirty years; Heaven reward me for it!

*Bard.* 'Sblood, I would my face were in your belly!

*Fal.* God-a-mercy! so should I be sure to be heart-burned.

*Enter Hostess.*

How now, dame Partlet the hen? have you inquired yet, who picked my pocket?

*Host.* Why, sir John! what do you think, sir John? Do you think I keep thieves in my house? I have searched, I have inquired, so has my husband, man by man, boy by boy, servant by servant: the tithe of a hair was never lost in my house before.

*Fal.* You lie, hostess; Bardolph was shaved, and lost many a hair: and I'll be sworn, my pocket was picked: Go to, you are a woman, go.

*Host.* Who I? I defy thee? I was never called so in mine own house before.

*Fal.* Go to, I know you well enough.

*Host.* No, sir John; you do not know me, sir John: I know you, sir John: you owe me money, sir John, and now you pick a quarrel to beguile me of it: I bought you a dozen of shirts to your back.

*Fal.* Dowlas, filthy dowlas: I have given them away to bakers' wives, and they have made bolters of them.

*Host.* Now, as I am a true woman, holland of eight shillings an ell. You owe money here besides, sir John, for your diet, and by-drinkings, and money lent you, four and twenty pound.

*Fal.* He had his part of it; let him pay.

*Host.* He? alas, he is poor; he hath nothing.

*Fal.* How! poor? look upon his face;

What call you rich? let them coin his nose, let them coin his cheeks; I'll not pay a denier. What, will you make a younker of me? shall I not take mine ease in mine inn, but I shall have my pocket picked? I have lost a sealing of my grandfather's worth forty mark.

*Host.* O Jesu! I have heard the prince tell him, I know not how oft, that that ring was copper.

*Fal.* How! the prince is a Jack †, a sneak-cup; and, if he were here, I would cudgel him like a dog, if he would say so.

*Enter Prince HENRY and POINS, marching.*

*FALSTAFF meets the Prince, playing on his truncheon like a fife.*

*Fal.* How now, lad? is the wind in that door, 'faith? must we all march?

*Bard.* Yea, two and two, newgate-fashion!

*Host.* My lord, I pray you, hear me.

*P. Hen.* What sayest thou, mistress Quickly? How does thy husband? I love him well, he is an honest man.

*Host.* Good my lord, hear me.

*Fal.* Prythee, let her alone, and list to me.

*P. Hen.* What sayest thou, Jack?

*Fal.* The other night I fell asleep here behind the arras, and had my pocket picked: this house is turned bawdy-house, they pick pockets.

*P. Hen.* What didst thou lose, Jack?

*Fal.* Wilt thou believe me, Hal? three or four bonds of forty pound a-piece, and a sealing of my grandfather's.

*P. Hen.* A trifle, some eight-penny matter.

*Host.* So I told him, my lord; and I said, I heard your grace say so: And, my lord, he speaks most vilely of you, like a foul-mouthed man as he is; and said, he would cudgel you.

*P. Hen.* What! he did not?

*Host.* There's neither faith, truth, nor womanhood in me else.

*Fal.* There's no more faith in thee than in a stewed prune; nor no more truth in thee, than in a drawn fox; and for womanhood, maid Marian ‡ may be the deputy's wife of the ward to thee. Go, you thing, go.

*Host.* Say, what thing? what thing?

*Fal.* What thing? why, a thing to thank God on.

*Host.* I am no thing to thank God on, I would thou shouldst know it; I am an honest man's wife: and, setting thy knighthood aside, thou art a knave to call me so.

*Fal.* Setting thy womanhood aside, thou art a beast to say otherwise.

*Host.* Say, what beast, thou knave thou!

*Fal.* What beast? why an otter.

*P. Hen.* An otter, sir John! why an otter?

*Fal.* Why, she's neither fish, nor flesh; a man knows not where to have her.

*Host.* Thou art an unjust man in saying so; thou or any man knows where to have me, thou knave thou!

*P. Hen.* Thou sayest true, hostess; and he slanders thee most grossly.

*Host.* So he doth you, my lord; and said

\* Admiral's ship. † In the story-book of Reynard the Fox. ‡ A term of contempt frequently used by Shakspeare. § A man dressed like a woman, who attends morris dancers.

this other day, you ought him a thousand pound.

*P. Hen.* Sirrah, do I owe you a thousand pound?

*Fal.* A thousand pound, Hal? a million: thy love is worth a million; thou owest me thy love.

*Host.* Nay, my lord, he called you Jack, and said, he would cudgel you.

*Fal.* Did I, Bardolph?

*Bard.* Indeed, sir John, you said so.

*Fal.* Yea; if he said, my ring was copper.

*P. Hen.* I say, 'tis copper: Darest thou be as good as thy word now?

*Fal.* Why, Hal, thou knowest, as thou art but man, I dare: but, as thou art prince, I fear thee, as I fear the roaring of the lion's whelp.

*P. Hen.* And why not, as the lion?

*Fal.* The king himself is to be feared as the lion: Dost thou think, I'll fear thee as I fear thy father? nay, an I do, I pray God my girdle break!

*P. Hen.* O, if it should, how would thy guts fall about thy knees! But, sirrah, there's no room for faith, truth, nor honesty, in this bosom of thine; it is filled up with guts, and midriff. Charge an honest woman with picking thy pocket! Why, thou whoreson, impudent, embossed \* rascal, if there were any thing in thy pocket but tavern-reckonings, memorandums of hawdy-houses, and one poor penny-worth of sugar-candy to make thee long winded; if thy pocket were enriched with any other injuries but these, I am a villain. And yet you will stand to it; you will not pocket up wrong: Art thou not ashamed?

*Fal.* Dost thou hear, Hal? thou knowest, in the state of innocence, Adam fell; and what should poor Jack Falstaff do, in the days of villany? Thou seest, I have more flesh than another man; and therefore more frailty.—You confess then, you picked my pocket?

*P. Hen.* It appears so by the story.

*Fal.* Hostess, I forgive thee: Go, make

ready breakfast; love thy husband, look to thy servants, cherish thy guests: thou shalt find me tractable to any honest reason: thou seest, I am pacified.—Still?—Nay, pr'ythee, be gone. [*Exit Hostess.*] Now, Hal, to the news at court: for the robbery, lad,—How is that answered?

*P. Hen.* O, my sweet beef, I must still be good angel to thee:—The money is paid back again.

*Fal.* O, I do not like that paying back, 'tis a double labour.

*P. Hen.* I am good friends with my father, and may do any thing.

*Fal.* Rob me the exchequer the first thing thou doest, and do it with unwashed hands too.

*Bard.* Do, my lord.

*P. Hen.* I have procured thee, Jack, a char e of foot.

*Fal.* I would it had been of horse. Where shall I find one that can steal well? O for a fine thief, of the age of two and twenty, or thereabouts! I am heinously unprovided. Well, God be thanked for these rebels, they offend none but the virtuous; I laud them, I praise them.

*P. Hen.* Bardolph—

*Bard.* My lord. [*of Lancaster,*

*P. Hen.* Go bear this letter to lord John My brother John; this to my lord of Westmoreland.—

Go, Poins, to horse, to horse; for thou, and I, Have thirty miles to ride yet ere dinner time.—Jack

Meet me to-morrow i'the Temple-hall,

At two o'clock i'the afternoon: [*receive*

There shalt thou know thy charge; and there Money, and order for thy furniture.

The land is burning; Percy stands on high; And either they, or we, must lower lie.

*Exeunt Prince, Poins, and Bardolph.*

*Fal.* Rare words! brave world!—Hostess, my breakfast; come:—

O, I could wish this tavern were my drum. [*Exit.*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The Rebel Camp near Shrewsbury.*

*Enter HOTSPUR, WORCESTER, and DOUGLAS.*

*Hot.* Well said, my noble Scot: If speaking truth,  
In this fine age, were not thought flattery,  
Such attribution should the Douglas † have,  
As not a soldier of this season's stamp ‡  
Should go so general current through the world.  
By heaven, I cannot flatter; I defy  
The tongues of soothers: but a braver place  
In my heart's love, hath no man than yourself:

Nay, task me to the word; approve me, lord.

*Doug.* Thou art the king of honour:

No man so potent breathes upon the ground,  
But I will beard § him.

*Hot.* Do so, and 'tis well:—

*Enter a Messenger, with Letters.*

What letters hast thou there?—I can but thank you.

*Mess.* These letters come from your father.

*Hot.* Letters from him! why comes he not himself? [*vous sick.*

*Mess.* He cannot come, my lord; he's grie-

*Hot.* 'Zounds! how has he the leisure to be sick,

In such a justling time? Who leads his power ||? Under whose government come they along?

*Mess.* His letters bear his mind, not I, my lord. [*bed?*

*Wor.* I pry'thee tell me, doth he keep his

Swain, puffy. † This expression is applied by way of pre-eminence to the head of the Douglas family. ‡ Disdain. § Meet him face to face. || Forces.

*Mess.* He did, my lord, four days ere I set forth;

And at the time of my departure thence,  
He was much fear'd by his physicians.

*Wor.* I would the state of time had first been whole,

Ere he by sickness had been visited;  
His health was never better worth than now.

*Hot.* Si-k now! droop now! this sickness doth infect

The very life-blood of our enterprise;  
Tis catching hither, even to our camp.—

He writes me here,—that inward sickness—  
And that his friends by deputation could not

So soon be drawn; nor did he think it meet,  
To lay so dangerous and dear a trust

On any soul removed, but on his own.  
Yet doth he give us bold advertisement,—

That with our small conjunction, we should on,  
To see how fortune is disposed to us:

For, as he writes, there is no quailing \* now;  
Because the king is certainly possess'd †

Of all our purposes. What say you to it?

*Wor.* Your father's sickness is a maim to us.

*Hot.* A perilous gash, a very limb lopp'd off:  
And yet, in faith, 'tis not; his present want

Seems more than we shall find it:—Were it  
To set the exact wealth of all our states [good,

All at one cast? to set so rich a main  
On the nice hazard of one doubtful hour?

It were not good: for therein should we read  
The very bottom and the soul of hope;

The very list ‡, the very utmost bound  
Of all our fortunes.

*Doug.* 'Faith, and so we should;  
Where § now remains a sweet reversion:

We may boldly spend upon the hope of what  
Is to come in:

A comfort of retirement lives in this.

*Hot.* A rendezvous, a home to fly unto,  
If that the devil and mischance look big

Upon the maidenhead of our affairs.

*Wor.* But yet, I would your father had been  
The quality and hair || of our attempt [here,

Brooks no division: It will be thought  
By some, that know not why he is away,

That wisdom, loyalty, and mere dislike  
Of our proceedings, kept the earl from hence;

And think, how such an apprehension  
May turn the tide of fearful faction,

And breed a kind of question in our cause:  
For, well you know, we of the offering side

Must keep aloof from strict arbitrement;  
And stop all sight-holes, every loop, from

whence  
The eye of reason may pry in upon us:

This absence of your father's draws a curtain,  
That shows the ignorant a kind of fear

Before not dreamt of.

*Hot.* You strain too far.  
I, rather, of his absence make this use;—

It lends a lustre, and more great opinion,  
A larger dare to our great enterprise, [think,

Than if the earl were here: for men must

If we, without his help, can make a head  
To push against the kingdom; with his help,  
We shall o'erturn it topsy-turvy down.—

Yet all goes well, yet all our joints are whole.

*Doug.* As heart can think: there is not such  
a word

Spoke of in Scotland, as this term of fear.

*Enter Sir RICHARD VERNON.*  
*Hot.* My cousin Vernon! welcome, by my

soul. [come, lord.  
*Ver.* Pray God, my news be worth a wel

The earl of Westmoreland, seven thousand  
strong, [John.

Is marching hitherwards; with him, prince  
*Hot.* No harm: What more?

*Ver.* And further, I have learn'd,—  
The king himself in person is set forth,

Or hitherwards intended speedily,  
With strong and mighty preparation. [his son,

*Hot.* He shall be welcome too. Where is  
The nimble footed mad-cap prince of Wales,

And his comrades, that doff'd ¶ the world  
And bid it pass? [aside,

*Ver.* All furnish'd, all in arms,  
All plumed like estridges \*\* that wing the wind;

Bated like eagles having lately bath'd ††;  
Glittering in golden coats, like images;

As full of spirit as the month of May,  
And gorgeous as the sun at midsummer;

Wanton as youthful goats, wild as young bulls.  
I saw young Harry,—with his beaver on,

His cuisses ‡‡ on his thighs, gallantly arm'd,—  
Rise from the ground like feather'd Mercury,

And vaulted with such ease into his seat,  
As if an angel dropp'd down from the clouds,

To turn and wind a fiery Pegasus, [ship.  
And witch §§ the world with noble horseman—

*Hot.* No more, no more; worse than the  
sun in March, [come;

This praise doth nourish agues. Let them  
They come like sacrifices in their trim,

And to the fire-eyed maid of smoky war,  
All hot, and bleeding, will we offer them:

The mailed Mars shall on his altar sit,  
Up to the ears in blood. I am on fire,

To hear this rich reprisal is so nigh, [horse,  
And yet not ours:—Come, let me take my

Who is to bear me, like a thunderbolt,  
Against the bosom of the prince of Wales:

Harry to Harry shall, hot horse to horse,  
Meet, and ne'er part, till one drop down a

O, that Glendower were come! [corse.—  
*Ver.* There is more news:

I learn'd in Worcester, as I rode along,  
He cannot draw his power this fourteen days.

*Doug.* That's the worst tidings that I hear  
of yet. [sound.

*Wor.* Ay, by my faith, that bears a frosty  
*Hot.* What may the king's whole battle

*Ver.* To thirty thousand. [reach unto?  
*Hot.* Forty let it be;

My father and Glendower being both away,  
The powers of us may serve so great a day.

Come, let us make a muster speedily:

\* Languishing. † Informed. ‡ Line. § Whereas. || The complexion, the character  
¶ Thrown off. \*\* Dressed with ostrich feathers. †† Fresh as birds just washed.  
‡‡ Armour. §§ Bewitch, charm.



Doomsday is near; die all, die merrily.

*Doug.* Talk not of dying; I am out of fear [year.  
Of death, or death's hand, for this one half [Exit.

SCENE II. A Public Road near Coventry.

*Enter FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.*

*Fal.* Bardolph, get thee before to Coventry; fill me a bottle of sack: our soldiers shall march through; we'll to Sutton-Colfield to-night.

*Bard.* Will you give me money, captain?

*Fal.* Lay out, lay out.

*Bard.* This bottle makes an angel.

*Fal.* An if it do, take it for thy labour; and if it make twenty, take them all, I'll answer the coinage. Bid my lieutenant Peto meet me at the town's end.

*Bard.* I will, captain: farewell. [Exit.

*Fal.* If I be not ashamed of my soldiers, I am a sonced gurnet\*. I have misused the king's press damnably. I have got, in exchange of a hundred and fifty soldiers, three hundred and odd pounds. I press me none but good householders, ye men's sons: inquire me out contracted bachelors, such as had been asked twice on the bans; such a commodity of warm slaves, as had as lief hear the devil as a drum; such as fear the report of a caliver†, worse than a struck fowl, or a hurt wild-duck. I pressed me none but such toasts and butter, with hearts in their bellies no bigger than pins' heads, and they have bought out their services; and now my whole charge consists of ancients, corporals, lieutenants, gentlemen of companies, slaves as ragged as Lazarus in the painted cloth, where the glut-ton's dogs licked his sores: and such as, indeed, were never soldiers; but discarded unjust serving-men, younger sons to younger brothers, revolted tapsters, and ostlers trade-fallen; the cankers of a calm world, and a long peace; ten times more dishonourable ragged than an old faced ancient‡: and such have I, to fill up the rooms of them that have bought out their services, that you would think that I had a hundred and fifty tattered prodigals, lately come from swine keeping, from eating draff and husks. A mad fellow met me on the way, and told me, I had un-loaded all the gibbets, and pressed the dead bodies. No eye hath seen such scarecrows. I'll not march through Coventry with them, that's flat:—Nay, and the villains march wide betwixt the legs, as if they had gyves§ on; for, indeed, I had t' e most of them out of prison. There's but a shirt and a half in all my company: and the half-shirt is two nap-kins, tacked together, and thrown over the shoulders like a herald's coat without sleeves; and the shirt, to say the truth, stolen from my host at Saint Alban's, or the red-nose inn-keeper of Dainty||. But that's all one; they'll find linen enough on every hedge

*Enter Prince HENRY and WESTMORELAND.*

*P. Hen.* How now, blown Jack? how now, quait?

*Fal.* What, Hal? How now, mad wag? what a devil dost thou in Warwickshire?—My good lord of Westmoreland, I cry you mercy; I thought your honour had already been at Shrewsbury.

*West.* Faith, sir John, 'tis more than time that I were there, and you too; but my powers are there already: The king, I can tell you, looks for us all; we must away all night.

*Fal.* Tut, never fear me; I am as vigilant as a cat to steal cream.

*P. Hen.* I think, to steal cream indeed; for thy theft hath already made thee butter. But tell me, Jack; Whose fellows are these that come after?

*Fal.* Mine, Hal, mine.

*P. Hen.* I did never see such pitiful rascals.

*Fal.* Tut, tut; good enough to toss; food for powder, food for powder; they'll fill a pit, as well as better: tush, man, mortal men, mortal men.

*West.* Ay, but, sir John, methinks they are exceeding poor and bare; too beggarly.

*Fal.* Faith, for their poverty.—I know not where they had that: and for their bareness,—I am sure, they never learned that of me.

*P. Hen.* No, I'll be sworn; unless you call three fingers on the ribs, bare. But, sirral, make haste; Percy is already in the field.

*Fal.* What, is the king encamped?

*West.* He is, sir John; I fear, we shall stay too long.

*Fal.* Well, [of a feast,  
To the latter end of a fray, and the beginning  
Fits a dull fighter, and a keen guest. [Exit.

SCENE III. The Rebel Camp near Shrewsbury.

*Enter HOTSPUR, WORCESTER, DOUGLAS, and VERNON.*

*Hot.* We'll fight with him to-night.

*Wor.* It may not be.

*Doug.* You give him then advantage.

*Ver.* Not a whit.

*Hot.* Why say you so? looks he not for

*Ver.* So do we. [supply?

*Hot.* His is certain, ours is doubtful.

*Wor.* Good cousin, be advised; stir not to-

*Ver.* Do not, my lord. [night.

*Doug.* You do not counsel well; You speak it out of fear, and cold heart.

*Ver.* Do me no slander, Douglas: by my life, (And I dare well maintain it with my life,)

If well respected honour bid me on,

I hold as little counsel with weak fear,

As you my lord, or any Scot that lives:—

Let it be seen to-morrow in the battle,

Which of us fears.

*Doug.* Yea, or to-night.

*Ver.* Content.

*Hot.* To-night, say I.

*Ver.* Come, come, it may not be.

\* A fish.

† A gunn.

‡ Standard.

§ Fetters.

|| Daventry.

wonder much, being men of such great leading \*;

That you foresee not what impediments  
Drag back our expedition: Certain horse  
Of my cousin Vernon's are not yet come up:  
Your uncle Worcester's horse came but to-day;  
And now their pride and mettle is asleep,  
Their courage with hard labour tame and dull,  
That not a horse is half the half himself.

*Hot.* So are the horses of the enemy  
In general, journey-bated, and brought low;  
The better part of ours is full of rest.

*Wor.* The number of the king exceedeth ours:  
For God's sake, cousin, stay till all come in.

[*The Trumpet sounds a parley.*]

*Enter Sir WALTER BLUNT.*

*Blunt.* I come with gracious offers from  
the king,

If you vouchsafe me hearing, and respect.

*Hot.* Welcome, sir Walter Blunt; and 'would  
You were of our determination! [to God,  
Some of us love you well: and even those some  
Envy your great deserving, and good name;  
Because you are not of our quality †,  
But stand against us like an enemy.]

*Blunt.* And God defend, but still I should  
stand so,

So long as out of limit, and true rule,  
You stand against anointed majesty! [know  
But, to my charge.—The king hath sent to  
The nature of your griefs; and whereupon  
You conjure from the breast of civil peace  
Such bold hostility, teaching his duteous land  
Audacious cruelty: If that the king  
Have any way your good deserts forgot, —  
Which he confesseth to be manifold, —  
He bids you name your griefs: and, with all  
speed,

You shall have your desires, with interest;  
And pardon absolute for yourself, and these,  
Herein misled by your suggestion.

*Hot.* The king is kind; and, well we know,  
the king

Knows at what time to promise, when to pay.  
My father, and my uncle, and myself,  
Did give him that same royalty he wears:  
And,—when he was not six and twenty strong,  
Sick in the world's regard, wretched and low,  
A poor unmind outlaw sneaking home,—  
My father gave him welcome to the shore:  
And,—when he heard him swear and vow to  
Him came but to be duke of Lancaster, [God,  
To sue his livery ‡, and beg his peace;  
With tears of innocency, and terms of zeal,—  
My father, in kind heart and pity moved,  
Swore him assistance, and perform'd it too.  
Now, when the lords, and barons of the realm  
Perceived Northumberland did lean § to him,  
The more and less came in with cap and knee;  
Met him in boroughs, cities, villages;  
Attended him on bridges, stood in lanes,  
Laid gifts before him, proffer'd him their oaths,  
Gave him their heirs; as pages follow'd him,  
Even at the heels, in golden multitudes.  
He presently,—as greatness knows itself,—

Steps me a little higher than his vow  
Made to my father, while his blood was poor,  
Upon the naked shore at Ravenspur;  
And now, forsooth, takes on him to reform  
Some certain edicts, and some strait decrees,  
That lie too heavy on the commonwealth:

Cries out upon abuses, seems to weep  
Over his country's wrongs; and, by this face,  
This seeming brow of justice, did he win  
The hearts of all that he did angle for.  
Proceeded further; cut me off the heads  
Of all the favourites, that the absent king  
In deputation left behind him here,  
When he was personal in the Irish war.

*Blunt.* Tut, I came not to hear this.

*Hot.* Then, to the point.

In short time after, he deposed the king;  
Soon after that, deprived him of his life;  
And, in the neck of that, task'd the whole  
state: [March,

To make that worse, suffer'd his kinsman,  
(Who is, if every owner were well placed,  
Indeed his king,) to be incaged in Wales,  
There without ransom to lie forfeited:  
Disgraced me in my happy victories;  
Sought to entrap me by intelligence §;  
Rated my uncle from the council-board;  
In rage dismiss'd my father from the court;  
Broke oath on oath, committed wrong on  
wrong:

And, in conclusion, drove us to seek out  
This head of safety; and, withal, to pry  
Into his title, the which we find  
Too indirect for long continuance. [king?]

*Blunt.* Shall I return this answer to the

*Hot.* Not so, sir Walter; we'll withdraw  
awhile.

Go to the king; and let there be impawn'd  
Some surety for a safe return again,  
And in the morning early shall mine uncle  
Bring him our purposes: and so farewell.

*Blunt.* I would you would accept of grace

*Hot.* And, may be, so we shall. [and love-

*Blunt.* Pray heaven, you do!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. York. *A Room in the Arch-  
bishop's House.*

*Enter the Archbishop of York, and a  
Gentleman.*

*Arch.* Hie, good sir Michael? bear this  
sealed brief ¶,  
With winged haste, to the lord marshal;  
This to my cousin Scroop; and all the rest  
To whom they are directed: if you knew  
How much they do import, you would make  
*Gent.* My good lord, [haste.  
I gues their tenor.

*Arch.* Like enough, you do.  
To-morrow, good sir Michael, is a day,  
Wherein the fortune of ten thousand men  
Must bide the touch: For, sir, at Shrewsbury,  
As I am truly given to understand,  
The king, with mighty and quick-raised power,  
Meets with lord Harry: and I fear, sir Michael,

\* Conduct, experience.

† Fellowship.

‡ Grievances.

§ The delivery of his lands

¶ The greater and the less.

¶ Letter.

What with the sickness of Northumberland,  
(Whose power was in the first proportion,)  
And what with Owen Glendower's absence  
thence,

(Who with them was a rated sinew too\*,  
And comes not in, o'er-ruled by prophecies,)—  
I fear, the power of Percy is too weak  
To wage an instant trial with the king.

*Gent.* Why, good my lord, you need not  
fear; there's Douglas,  
And Mortimer.

*Arch.* No, Mortimer's not there.

*Gent.* But there is Mordake, Vernon, lord  
Harry Percy,  
And there's my lord of Worcester; and a head  
Of gallant warriors, noble gentlemen. [drawn]

*Arch.* And so there is: but yet the king hath

The special head of all the land together;—  
The prince of Wales, lord John of Lancaster,  
The noble Westmoreland, and warlike Blunt;  
And many more co-rivals, and dear men  
Of estimation and command in arms.

*Gent.* Doubt not, my lord, they shall be  
well opposed. [fear;

*Arch.* I hope no less, yet needful 'tis to  
And, to prevent the worst, sir Michael speed:  
For, if lord Percy thrive not, ere the king  
Dismiss his power, he means to visit us,—  
For he hath heard of our confederacy.

And 'tis but wisdom to make strong against  
him;

Therefore, make haste: I must go write again  
To other friends; and so farewell, sir Michael.

*Exeunt severally.*

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. *The King's Camp near Shrewsbury.*

*Enter* King HENRY, Prince HENRY, Prince  
JOHN of Lancaster, Sir WALTER BLUNT,  
and Sir JOHN FALSTAFF.

*K. Hen.* How bloodily the sun begins to  
peer  
Above yon bosky † hill! the day looks pale  
At his distemperature.

*P. Hen.* The southern wind  
Doth play the trumpet to his purposes;  
And, by his hollow whistling in the leaves,  
Foretells a tempest, and a blustering day.

*K. Hen.* Then with the losers let it sympa-  
thize;

For nothing can seem foul to those that win.

*Trumpet. Enter* WORCESTER and  
VERNON.

How now, my lord of Worcester? 'tis not well,  
That you and I should meet upon such terms  
As now we meet: You have deceived our trust;  
And made us doff † our easy robes of peace,  
To crush our old limbs in ungentle steel:  
This is not well, my lord, this is not well.  
What say you to't? will you again unknit  
This churlish knot of all-aborred war?  
And move in that obedient orb again,  
Where you did give a fair and natural light;  
And be no more an exhaled meteor,  
A prodigy of fear, and a portent  
Of broached mischief to the unborn times?

*Wor.* Hear me, my liege:

For mine own part, I could be well content  
To entertain the lag-end of my life  
With quiet hours; for, I do protest,  
I have not sought the day of this dislike.

*K. Hen.* You have not sought for it! how  
comes it then? [it.

*Fal.* Rebellion lay in his way and he found

*P. Hen.* Peace, chewet §, peace. [looks

*Wor.* It pleased your majesty, to turn your  
Of favour, from myself, and all our house;  
And yet I must remember you, my lord,

We were the first and dearest of your friends.  
For you, my staff of office did I break  
In Richard's time; and posted day and night  
To meet you on the way, and kiss your hand,  
When yet you were in place and in account  
Nothing so strong and fortunate as I.  
It was myself, my brother, and his son,  
That brought you home and boldly did outdare  
The dangers of the time: You swore to us,—  
And you did swear that oath at Doncaster,—  
That you did nothing purpose 'gainst the state,  
Nor claim no further than your new-fall'n right,  
The seat of Gaunt, dukedom of Lancaster:  
To this we swore our aid. But, in short space,  
It rain'd down fortune showering on your head;  
And such a flood of greatness fell on you,—  
What with our help; what with the absent king;  
What with the injuries of a wanton time;  
The seeming sufferances that you had borne;  
And the contrarious winds that held the king  
So long in his unlucky Irish wars,  
That all in England did repute him dead,—  
And, from this swarm of fair advantages,  
You took occasion to be quickly woo'd  
To gripe the general sway into your hand:  
Forgot your oath to us at Doncaster;  
And, being fed by us, you used us so  
As that ungentle gull, the cuckoo's bird,  
Useth the sparrow: did oppress our nest;  
Grew by our feeding to so great a bulk, [sight,  
That even our love durst not come near your  
For fear of swallowing; but with nimble wing  
We were enforced, for safety's sake to fly  
Out of your sight, and raise this present head:  
Whereby we stand opposed by such means  
As you yourself have forged against yourself;  
By unkind usage, dangerous countenance,  
And violation of all faith and troth  
Sworn to us in your younger enterprise.

*K. Hen.* These things, indeed, you have ar-  
ticulated ||,

Proclaim'd at market-crosses, read in churches;  
To face the garment of rebellion  
With some fine colour, that may please the eye

\* A strength on which we reckoned.  
§ A chattering bird, a pie.

† Woody. ‡ Put off.  
|| Exhibited in articles.



Of fickle changelings, and poor discontents,  
Which gape, and rub the elbow, at the news  
Of hurlyburly innovation:  
And never yet did insurrection want  
Such water-colours, to impart his cause;  
Nor moody beggars, starv'ng for a time.  
Of pellmell havoc and confusion. [a sonl

*P. Hen.* In both our armies, there is many  
Shall pay full dearly for this encounter,  
If once they join in trial. Tell your nephew,  
The prince of Wales doth join with all the  
world

In praise of Henry Percy: By my hopes,—  
This present enterprise set off his head,—  
I do not think, a braver gentleman,  
More active-valiant, or more valiant-young,  
More daring, or more bold, is now alive,  
To grace this latter age with noble deeds.  
For my part, I may speak it to my shame,  
I have a truant been to chivalry;  
And so, I hear, he doth account me too:  
Yet this before my father's majesty,—  
I am content, that he shall take the odds  
Of his great name and estimation;  
And will, to save the blood on either side,  
Try fortune with him in a single fight.

*K. Hen.* And, prince of Wales, so dare we  
Albeit, considerations infinite [venture thee,  
Do make against it:—No, good Worcester, no,  
We love our people well; even those we love,  
That are misled upon your cousin's part:  
And, will they take the offer of our grace,  
Both he, and they, and you, yea, every man  
Shall be my friend again, and I'll be his:  
So tell your cousin, and bring me word  
What he will do:—But if he will not yield,  
Rebuke and dread correction wait on us,  
And they shall do their office. So, be gone;  
We will not now be troubled with reply:  
We offer fair, take it advisedly.

[*Exeunt WORCESTER and VERNON.*]

*P. Hen.* It will not be accepted, on my life:  
The Douglas and the Hotspur both together  
Are confident against the world in arms.

*K. Hen.* Hence, therefore, every leader to his  
charge;

For, on their answer, will we set on them:  
And God befriend us, as our cause is just!

[*Exeunt King, BLUNT, and Prince JOHN.*]

*Fal.* Hal, if thou sec me down in the battle,  
and bestride me, so; 'tis a point of friendship.

*P. Hen.* Nothing but a Colossus can do thee  
that friendship. Say thy prayers, and farewell.

*Fal.* I would it were bed-time, Hal, and  
all well.

*P. Hen.* Why, thou owest God a death.

[*Exit.*]

*Fal.* 'Tis not due yet; I would be loath to  
pay him before his day. What need I be so  
forward with him that calls not on me? Well,  
'tis no matter: Honour pricks me on. Yea,  
but how if honour prick me off when I come  
on? how then? Can honour set to a leg? No.  
Or an arm? No. Or take away the grief of a  
wound? No. Honour hath no skill in surgery  
then? No. What is honour? A word. What

is in that word, honour? What is that honour?  
*Air.* A trim reckoning!—Who hath it? He  
that died of Wednesday. Doth he feel it? No.  
Doth he hear it? No. Is it insensible then?  
Yea, to the dead. But will it not live with the  
living? No. Why? Detraction will not suffer  
it:—therefore I'll none of it: Honour is a mere  
scutcheon\*, and so ends my catechism. [*Exit.*]

## SCENE II. *The Rebel Camp.*

*Enter WORCESTER and VERNON.*

*Wor.* O, no, my nephew must not know,  
The liberal kind offer of the king. [sir Richard,  
*Ver.* 'Twere best, he did.

*Wor.* Then are we all undone.

It is not possible, it cannot be,  
The king should keep his word in loving us;  
He will suspect us still, and find a time  
To punish this offence in other faults:  
Suspicion shall be all stuck full of eyes:  
For treason is but trusted like the fox;  
Who, ne'er so tame, so cherish'd, and lock'd up,  
Will have a wild trick of his ancestors.  
Look how we can, or sad, or merrily,  
Interpretation will misquote our looks;  
And we shall feed like oxen at a stall,  
The better cherish'd, still the nearer death.  
My nephew's trespass may be well forgot,  
It hath the excuse of youth, and heat of blood,  
And an adopted name of privilege:—  
A hair-brain'd Hotspur, govern'd by a spleen;  
All his offences live upon my head,  
And on his father's;—we did train him on;  
And, his corruption being ta'en from us,  
We, as the spring of all, shall pay for all.  
Therefore, good cousin, let not Harry know,  
In any case, the offer of the king.

*Ver.* Deliver what you will, I'll say 'tis so.  
Here comes your cousin.

*Enter HOTSPUR and DOUGLAS; and Officers  
and Soldiers, behind.*

*Hot.* My uncle is return'd:—Deliver up  
My lord of Westmoreland.—Uncle, what  
news?

*Wor.* The king will bid you battle presently.

*Doug.* Defy him by the lord of Westmore-  
land.

*Hot.* Lord Douglas, go you and tell him so.

*Doug.* Marry, and shall, and very willingly.  
[*Exit.*]

*Wor.* There is no seeming mercy in the king.

*Hot.* Did you beg any? God forbid!

*Wor.* I told him gently of our grievances,  
Of his oath-breaking; which he mended thus,—  
By now forswearing that he is forsworn:  
He calls us rebels, traitors; and will scourge  
With haughty arms this hateful name in us.

*Re-enter DOUGLAS.*

*Doug.* Arm, gentlemen; to arms! for I have  
brought

A brave defiance in King Henry's teeth, [it;  
And Westmoreland, that was engaged, did bear  
Which cannot choose but bring him quickly on.

*Wor.* The prince of Wales stepp'd forth  
before the king,  
And, nephew, challenged you to single fight.

*Hot.* O, would the quarrel lay upon our heads; [to-day,  
And that no man might draw short breath  
But I, and Harry Monmouth! Tell me, tell me,  
How show'd his tasking? seem'd it in contempt?  
*Ver.* No, by my soul; I never in my life  
Did hear a challenge urged more modestly,  
Unless a brother should a brother dare  
To gentle exercise and proof of arms.  
He gave you all the duties of a man; [tongue;  
Trimm'd up your praises with a princely  
Spoke your deservings like a chronicle;  
Making you ever better than his praise,  
By still dispraising praise, valued with you:  
And, which became him like a prince indeed,  
He made a blushing cital\* of himself;  
And chid his truant youth with such a grace,  
As if he master'd there a double spirit,  
Of teaching, and of learning, instantly.  
There did he pause: But let me tell the world,—  
If he outlive the envy of this day,  
England did never owe so sweet a hope,  
So much misconstrued in his wantonness.

*Hot.* Cousin, I think, thou art enamoured  
Upon his follies; never did I hear  
Of any prince, so wild, at liberty:—  
But, be he as he will, yet once ere night  
I will embrace him with a soldier's arm,  
That he shall shrink under my courtesy.—  
Arm, arm, with speed:—And, fellows, soldiers,  
Better consider what you have to do, [friends,  
Than I, that have not well the gift of tongue,  
Can lift your blood up with persuasion.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, here are letters for you.

*Hot.* I cannot read them now.—  
O gentlemen, the time of life is short;  
To spend that shortness basely were too long,  
If life did ride upon a dial's point,  
Still ending at the arrival of an hour.  
An if we live, we live to tread on kings;  
If die, brave death, when princes die with us!  
Now for our conscience,—the arms are fair,  
When the intent of bearing them is just.

*Enter another Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, prepare; the king comes on apace. [tale,

*Hot.* I thank him, that he cuts me from my  
For I profess not talking; Only this—  
Let each man do his best: and here draw I  
A sword, whose temper I intend to stain  
With the best blood that I can meet withal  
In the adventure of this perilous day.  
Now,—Esperance!—Percy!—and set on.—  
Sound all the lofty instruments of war,  
And by that music let us all embrace:  
For, heaven to earth, some of us never shall  
A second time do such a courtesy. [The Trumpets sound. They embrace, and exeunt.

SCENE III. Plain near Shrewsbury.

*Excursions, and Parties fighting. Alarm to the Battle. Then enter DOUGLAS and BLUNT, meeting.*

*Blunt.* What is thy name, that in the battle thus

Thou crossest me? what honour dost thou seek  
Upon my head?

*Doug.* Know then, my name is Douglas;  
And I do haunt thee in the battle thus,  
Because some tell me that thou art a king.

*Blunt.* They tell thee true. [bought

*Doug.* The lord of Stafford dear to-day hath  
Thy likeness: for, instead of thee, king Harry,  
This sword hath ended him: so shall it thee,  
Unless thou yield thee as my prisoner.

*Blunt.* I was not born a yielder, thou proud  
Scot;

And thou shalt find a king that will revenge  
Lord Stafford's death.

[*They fight, and BLUNT is slain.*

*Enter HOTSPUR.*

*Hot.* O Douglas, hadst thou fought at Holme-  
don thus,  
I never had triumph'd upon a Scot.

*Doug.* All's done, all's won; here breathless  
lies the king.

*Hot.* Where?

*Doug.* Here.

*Hot.* This, Douglas? no, I know this face  
full well:

A gallant knight he was, his name was Blunt;  
Sensibly § furnish'd like the king himself.

*Doug.* A fool go with thy soul, whither it  
goes!

A borrow'd title hast thou bought too dear.

Why didst thou tell me that thou wert a king?  
*Hot.* The king hath many marching in his  
coats. [his coats;

*Doug.* Now, by my sword, I will kill all  
I'll murder all his wardrobe, piece by piece,  
Until I meet the king.

*Hot.* Up, and away;

Our soldiers stand full fairly for the day. [Exeunt.

*Other Alarums. Enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* Though I could 'scape shot-free at  
London, I fear the shot here; here's no scor-  
ing, but upon the pate.—Soft! who art thou?  
Sir Walter Blunt;—there's honour for you:  
Here's no vanity!—I am as hot as molten  
lead, and as heavy too: God keep lead out of  
me! I need no more weight than mine own  
bowels.—I have led my raggamuffins where  
they are peppered: there's but three of my  
hundred and fifty left alive; and they are for  
the town's end, to beg during life. But who  
comes here!

*Enter Prince HENRY.*

*P. Hen.* What, stand'st thou idle here?  
lend me thy sword:

Many a nobleman lies stark and stiff  
Under the hoofs of vaunting enemies,  
Whose deaths are unrevenge'd: Pr'ythee, lend  
thy sword.

*Fal.* O Hal, I pr'ythee, give me leave to  
breathe a while.—Turk Gregory never did  
such deeds in arms, as I have done this day.  
I have paid Percy. I have made him sure.

*P. Hen.* He is, indeed; and living to kill  
thee. Lend me thy sword I pr'ythee.

*Fal.* Nay, before God, Hal, if Percy be

\* Recital

† Own.

‡ The motto of the Percy family.

§ In resemblance.

alive, thou get'st not my sword; but take my pistol, if thou wilt.

*P. Hen.* Give it me; What, is it in the case?

*Fal.* Ay, Hal; 'tis hot, 'tis hot; there's that will sack a city.

[*The Prince draws out a bottle of sack.*]

*P. Hen.* What, is't a time to jest and dally now? [*Throws it at him, and exit.*]

*Fal.* Well, if Percy be alive, I'll pierce him. If he do come in my way, so: if he do not, if I come in his, willingly, let him make a carbinado\* of me. I like not such grinning honour as sir Walter hath: Give me life: which if I can save, so; if not, honour comes unlooked for, and there's an end.

[*Exit.*]

#### SCENE IV. Another Part of the Field.

*Alarums. Excursions. Enter the King, Prince HENRY, Prince JOHN, and WESTMORELAND.*

*K. Hen.* I pr'ythee, [much:] Harry, withdraw thyself; thou bleed'st too Lord John of Lancaster, go you with him.

*P. John.* Not I, my lord, unless I did bleed too. [up,]

*P. Hen.* I do beseech your majesty, make Less your retirement do amaze your friends.

*K. Hen.* I will do so:— [tent.] My lord of Westmoreland, lead him to his West. Come, my lord, I will lead you to your tent. [your help:]

*P. Hen.* Lead me, my lord? I do not need And heaven forbid a shallow scratch should drive

The prince of Wales from such a field as this; Where stain'd nobility lies trodden on, And rebels' arms triumph in massacres!

*P. John.* We breathe too long.—Come, cousin Westmoreland, [come.] Our duty this way lies; for God's sake, [*Exit Prince JOHN and WESTMORELAND.*]

*P. Hen.* By heaven, thou hast deceived me, Lancaster, I did not think thee lord of such a spirit: Before, I loved thee as a brother, John; But now, I do respect thee as my soul.

*K. Hen.* I saw him hold lord Percy at the point, [for] With lustier maintenance than I did look Of such an ungrown warrior.

*P. Hen.* O, this boy Lends mettle to us all! [*Exit.*]

*Alarums. Enter DOUGLAS.*

*Doug.* Another king! they grow like Hydra's heads:

I am the Douglas, fatal to all those [thou,] That wear those colours on them.—What art That counterfeit'st the person of a king?

*K. Hen.* The king himself; who, Douglas, grieves at heart,

So many of his shadows thou hast met, And not the very king. I have two boys Seek Percy and thyself about the field: But, seeing thou fal'st on me so luckily, I will assay thee; so defend thyself.

*Doug.* I fear, thou art another counterfeit; And yet, in faith, thou bear'st thee like a king But mine, I am sure, thou art, whoe'er thou be And thus I win thee.

[*They fight; the King being in danger, enter Prince HENRY.*]

*P. Hen.* Hold up thy head, vile Scot, or thou art like

Never to hold it up again! the spirits Of Shirley, Stafford, Blunt, are in my arms: It is the prince of Wales, that threatens thee; Who never promiseth, but he means to pay.—

[*They fight; DOUGLAS flies.*]

Cheerly, my lord; How fares your grace?— Sir Nicholas Gawsey hath for succour sent, And so hath Clifton; I'll to Clifton straight.

*K. Hen.* Stay, and breathe a while:— Thou hast redeem'd thy lost opinion; And show'd thou makest some tender of my life, In this fair rescue thou hast brought to me.

*P. Hen.* O heaven! they did me too much injury,

That ever said, I hearken'd for your death. If it were so, I might have let alone

The insulting hand of Douglas over you; Which would have been as speedy in your end, As all the poisonous potions in the world, And saved the treacherous labour of your son.

*K. Hen.* Make up to Clifton, I'll to sir Nicholas Gawsey. [*Exit King HENRY Enter HOTSPUR.*]

*Hot.* If I mistake not, thou art Harry Monmouth. [my name.]

*P. Hen.* Thou speak'st as if I would deny *Hot.* My name is Harry Percy.

*P. Hen.* Why, then I see A very valiant rebel of that name. I am the prince of Wales; and think not, Percy, To share with me in glory any more:

Two stars keep not their motion in one sphere; Nor can one England brook a double reign, Of Harry Percy and the prince of Wales.

*Hot.* Nor shall it, Harry, for the hour is come To end the one of us; And 'would to God, Thy name in arms were now as great as mine!

*P. Hen.* I'll make it greater, ere I part from thee;

And all the budding honours on thy crest I'll crop, to make a garland for my head.

*Hot.* I can no longer brook thy vanities. [*They fight.*]

*Enter FALSTAFF.*

*Fal.* Well said, Hal! to it, Hal!—Nay, you shall find no boy's play here, I can tell you.

*Enter DOUGLAS; he fights with FALSTAFF, who falls down as if he were dead, and exit DOUGLAS. HOTSPUR is wounded, and falls.*

*Hot.* O, Harry, thou hast robb'd me of my I better brook the loss of brittle life, [youth,] Than those proud titles thou hast won of me; They wound my thoughts, worse than thy sword my flesh:— [fool]

But thought's the slave of life, and life time's And time, that takes survey of all the world Must have a stop. O, I could prophesy,

\* A piece of meat cut crosswise for the gridiron.

† Reputation



But that the earthy and cold hand of death  
Lies on my tongue:—No, Percy, thou art dust,  
And food for— [Dies.]

*P. Hen.* For worms, brave Percy: Fare  
thee well, great heart! [shrunk!] *Ill-weaved ambition, how much art thou*  
When that this body did contain a spirit,  
A kingdom for it was too small a bound;  
But now, two paces of the vilest earth [dead,  
Is room enough:—This earth, that bears thee  
Bears not alive so stout a gentleman.  
If thou wert sensible of courtesy,  
I should not make so dear a show of zeal:—  
But let my favours\* hide thy mangled face;  
And, even in thy behalf, I'll thank myself  
For doing these fair rites of tenderness. [ven!  
Adieu, and take thy praise with thee to hea-  
Thy ignomy sleep with thee in the grave.  
But not remember'd in thy epitaph!—

[*He sees Falstaff on the ground.*  
What! old acquaintance! could not all this  
Keep in a little life? Poor Jack, farewell! [flesh  
I could have better spared a better man.  
O, I should have a heavy miss of thee,  
If I were much in love with vanity.

Death hath not struck so fat a deer to-day,  
Though many dearer, in this bloody fray:—  
Embowell'd will I see thee by and by;  
Till then, in blood by noble Percy lie. [*Exit.*

*Fal.* [*Rising slowly.*] Embowell'd! if thou  
embowel me to-day, I'll give you leave to pow-  
der† me, and eat me too, to-morrow. 'Sblood,  
'twas time to counterfeit, or that hot terma-  
gant Scot had paid me scot and lot too.  
Counterfeit? I lie, I am no counterfeit: To  
die, is to be a counterfeit; for he is but the  
counterfeit of a man, who hath not the life of  
a man: but to counterfeit dying, when a man  
thereby liveth, is to be no counterfeit, but the  
true and perfect image of life indeed. The bet-  
ter part of valour is—discretion; in the which  
better part, I have saved my life. 'Zounds  
I am afraid of this gunpowder Percy, though  
he be dead: How, if he should counterfeit  
too, and rise? I am afraid, he would prove  
the better counterfeit. Therefore I'll make  
him sure: yea, and I'll swear I killed him.  
Why may not he rise, as well as I? Nothing  
confutes me but eyes, and nobody sees me.  
Therefore, sirrah, [*Stabbing him.*] with a new  
wound in your thigh, come you along with me.

[*Takes Hotspur on his back.*  
*Re-enter Prince Henry and Prince John.*

*P. Hen.* Come, brother John, full bravely  
Thy maiden sword. [has thou flesh'd

*P. John.* But, soft! whom have we here?  
Did you not tell me, this fat man was dead?

*P. Hen.* I did; I saw him dead, breathless  
Upon the ground. [and bleeding

Art thou alive? or is it phantasy  
That plays upon our eyesight? I pr'ythee,  
speak; [ears:—

We will not trust our eyes, without our  
Thou art not what thou seem'st.

*Fal.* No, that's certain; I am not a double  
man: but if I be not Jack Falstaff, then am I

a Jack. There is Percy: [*Throwing the body  
down.*] if your father will do me any honour,  
so; if not, let him kill the next Percy himself.  
I look to be either earl or duke, I can assure  
you.

*P. Hen.* Why, Percy I killed myself, and  
saw thee dead.

*Fal.* Didst thou?—Lord, lord, how this  
world is given to lying!—I grant you, I was  
down, and out of breath; and so was he: but  
we rose both at an instant, and fought a long  
hour by Shrewsbury clock. If I may be be-  
lieved so; if not, let them, that should reward  
valour, bear the sin upon their own heads.  
I'll take it upon my death, I gave him this  
wound in the thigh: if the man were alive,  
and would deny it, I would make him eat a  
piece of my sword.

*P. John.* This is the strangest tale that e'er  
I heard. [John.—

*P. Hen.* This is the strangest fellow, brother  
Come, bring your luggage nobly on your back:  
For my part, if a lie may do thee grace,  
I'll gild it with the happiest terms I have.

[*A Retreat is sounded.*  
The trumpet sounds retreat, the day is ours.  
Come, brother, let's to the highest of the field,  
To see what friends are living, who are dead.

[*Exeunt Prince Henry and Prince John.*

*Fal.* I'll follow, as they say, for reward.  
He that rewards me, God reward him! If I do  
grow great, I'll grow less; for I'll purge, and  
leave sack, and live cleanly, as a nobleman  
should do. [*Exit, bearing off the body.*

SCENE V. Another Part of the Field.  
*The Trumpets sound. Enter King Henry,  
Prince Henry, Prince John, West  
Moreland, and Others, with Worcester,  
and Vernon, prisoners.*

*K. Hen.* Thus ever did rebellion find re-  
buke.—

Ill-spirited Worcester! did we not send grace  
Pardon, and terms of love to all of you?  
And wouldst thou turn our offers contrary?  
Misuse the tenor of thy kinsman's trust?  
Three knights upon our party slain to-day,  
A noble earl, and many a creature else,  
Had been alive this hour,  
If, like a christian, thou hadst truly borne  
Betwixt our armies true intelligence.

*Wor.* What I have done, my safety urged  
And I embrace this fortune patiently, [me to;  
Since not to be avoided it falls on me.

*K. Hen.* Bear Worcester to the death, and  
Vernon too:

Other offenders we will pause upon.—  
*Exeunt Worcester and Vernon, guarded.*  
How goes the field? [he saw

*P. Hen.* The noble Scot, lord Douglas, when  
The fortune of the day quite turn'd from him,  
The noble Percy slain, and all his men  
Upon the foot of fear,—fled with the rest;  
And, falling from a hill, he was so bruised,  
That the pursuers took him. At my tent  
The Douglas is; and I beseech your grace,

\* Scarf, with which he covers Percy's face.

† Salt.

I may dispose of him.

*K. Hen.* With all my heart.

*P. Hen.* Then, brother John of Lancaster,  
This honourable bounty shall belong; [to you  
Go to the Douglas, and deliver him  
Up to his pleasure, ransomeless, and free:  
His valour, shown upon our crests to-day,  
Hath taught us how to cherish such high deeds,  
Even in the bosom of our adversaries.

*K. Hen.* Then this remains,—that we divide  
our power.—

You, son John, and my cousin Westmoreland,

Towards York shall bend you, with your dear-  
est speed, [Scrioop,

To meet Northumberland, and the prelate  
Who, as we hear, are busily in arms: [Wales,  
Myself,—and you, son Harry,—will towards  
To fight with Glendower, and the earl of March.  
Rebellion in this land shall lose his way,  
Meeting the check of such another day:  
And since this business so fair is done,  
Let us not leave till all our own be won.

[Exeunt.]

## SECOND PART OF KING HENRY IV.

### Persons represented.

**King HENRY the FOURTH:**  
**HENRY Prince of Wales, afterwards King HENRY V;**  
**THOMAS, Duke of Clarence;**  
**Prince JOHN of Lancaster, afterwards (2 HENRY V.) Duke of Bedford;**  
**Prince HUMPHREY of Gloster, afterwards (2 HENRY V.) Duke of Gloster;**  
**Earl of WARWICK;**  
**Earl of WESTMORELAND;**  
**GOWER; HARCOURT;**  
**Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench.**  
**A Gentleman attending on the Chief Justice.**  
**Earl of NORTHUMBERLAND.**  
**SCROOP, Archbishop of York;**  
**Lord MOWBRAY;**  
**Lord HASTINGS;**  
**Lord BARDOLPH;**  
**Sir JOHN COLEVILLE;**

**TRAVERS and MORTON, domestics of Northumberland.**  
**FALSTAFF, BARDOLPH, PISTOL, and Page.**  
**POINS and PETO, attendants on Prince Henry.**  
**SHALLOW, } country Justices.**  
**SILENCE, }**  
**DAVY, servant to Shallow.**  
**MOULDY, SHADOW, WART, FEEBLE, and BULLCAMP, recruits.**  
**FANG, and SNARE, Sheriff's officers.**  
**RUMOUR, a porter.**  
**A Dancer, speaker of the Epilogue.**

**Lady NORTHUMBERLAND. Lady PERCY.**  
**Hostess QUICKLY. DOLL TEAR-SHEET.**  
**Lords and other Attendants; Officers, Soldiers, Messenger, Drawers, Beadles, Grooms, &c.**

*Scene,—England.*

### INDUCTION.

*Warkworth. Before Northumberland's Castle.*

*Enter RUMOUR, painted full of tongues.*

*Rum. Open your ears; For which of you will stop*

*The vent of hearing, when loud Rumour speaks?*  
*I, from the orient to the drooping west,*  
*Making the wind my post-horse, still unfold*  
*The acts commenced on this ball of earth:*  
*Upon my tongues continual slanders ride;*  
*The which in every language I pronounce,*  
*Stuffing the ears of men with false reports.*  
*I speak of peace, while covert enmity,*  
*Under the smile of safety, wounds the world*  
*And who but Rumour, who but only I,*  
*Make fearful musters, and prepared defence;*  
*Whilst the big year, swollen with some other grief,*  
*Is thought with child by the stern tyrant war,*  
*And no such matter? Rumour is a pipe*  
*Blown by surmises, jealousies, conjectures;*  
*And of so easy and so plain a stop,*  
*That the blunt monster with uncoated heads,*  
*The still-discordant wavering multitude,*

*Can play upon it. But what need I thus*  
*My well-known body to anatomize?*  
*Among my household? Why is rumour here?*  
*I run before king Harry's victory;*  
*Who, in a bloody field by Shrewsbury,*  
*Hath beaten down young Hotspur and his troops,*  
*Quenching the flame of bold rebellion*  
*Even with the rebels' blood. But what mean I*  
*To speak so true at first? my office is*  
*To noise abroad,—that Harry Monmouth fell*  
*Under the wrath of noble Hotspur's sword;*  
*And that the king before the Douglas' rage*  
*Stoop'd his anointed head as low as death.*  
*This have I rumour'd through the peasant towns*  
*Between that royal field of Shrewsbury*  
*And this worm-eaten hold of ragged stone\*,*  
*Where Hotspur's father, old Northumberland,*  
*Lies crafty-sick: the posts come tiring on,*  
*And not a man of them brings other news*  
*Than they have learn'd of me; from Rumour's*  
*tongues*  
*They bring smooth comforts false, worse than*  
*true wrongs.* *[Exit.]*

### ACT I.

**SCENE I. The same.**

*The Porter before the gate; Enter Lord BARDOLPH.*

*Bard. Who keeps the gate here, ho!—*

*Where is the earl?*  
*Port. What shall I say you are?*  
*Bard. Tell thou the earl,*  
*That the lord Bardolph doth attend him*  
*here.*

\* Northumberland's castle.



*Port.* His lordship is walk'd forth into the orchard;  
Please it your honour knock but at the gate,  
And he himself will answer.

*Enter NORTHUMBERLAND.*

*Bard.* Here comes the earl.

*North.* What news, lord Bardolph? every minute now

Should be the father of some stratagem\*:  
The times are wild; contention, like a horse,  
Full of high feeding, madly hath broke loose,  
And bears down all before him.

*Bard.* Noble earl,  
I bring you certain news from Shrewsbury.

*North.* Good, an heaven will!

*Bard.* As good as heart can wish:—  
The king is almost wounded to the death;  
And, in the fortune of my lord your son,  
Prince Harry slain outright; and both the

Blunts [John,  
Kill'd by the hand of Douglas: young prince  
And Westmoreland, and Stafford, fled the field;  
And Harry Monmouth's brawn, the hulk Sir  
Is prisoner to your son: O, such a day, [John,  
So fought, so follow'd, and so fairly won,  
Came not, till now, to dignify the times,  
Since Cæsar's fortunes!

*North.* How is this derived?  
Saw you the field? came you from Shrewsbury?

*Bard.* I spake with one, my lord, that  
came from thence;

A gentleman well bred, and of good name,  
That freely render'd me these news for true.

*North.* Here comes my servant Travers,  
whom I sent

On Tuesday last to listen after news.

*Bard.* My lord, I over-rode him on the way;  
And he is furnish'd with no certainties,  
More than he haply may retail from me.

*Enter TRAVERS.*

*North.* Now, Travers, what good tidings  
come with you?

*Tra.* My lord, Sir John Umfreville turn'd me  
With joyful tidings; and, being better horsed,  
Out-rode me. After him, came, spurring hard,  
A gentleman almost forspent† with speed,  
That stopp'd by me to breathe his bloodied horse:  
He ask'd the way to Chester; and of him  
I did demand, what news from Shrewsbury.  
He told me, that rebellion had bad luck.  
And that young Harry Percy's spur was cold:  
With that, he gave his able horse the head,  
And, bending forward, struck his armed heels  
Against the panting sides of his poor jade  
Up to the rowel-head; and starting so,  
He seem'd in running to devour the way,  
Staying no longer question.

*North.* Ha! — Again.  
Said he, young Harry Percy's spur was cold?  
Of Hotspur, coldspur? that rebellion  
Had met ill-luck?

*Bard.* My lord, I'll tell you what:—  
If my young lord your son have not the day,  
Upon mine honour for a silken point‡  
I'll give my barony: never talk of it.

*North.* Why should the gentleman, that  
rode by Travers,

Give then such instances of loss?

*Bard.* Who, he?  
He was some hidling fellow, that had stolen  
The horse he rode on; and, upon my life,  
Spoke at a venture. Look, here comes more  
news.

*Enter MORTON.*

*North.* Yea, this man's brow, like to a title-  
leaf,

Foretells the nature of a tragic volume:  
So looks the strand, whereon the imperious  
Hath left a witness'd usurpation||. — [ flood  
Say, Morton, didst thou come from Shrews-  
bury?

*Mor.* I ran from Shrewsbury, my noble lord;  
Where hateful death put on his ugliest mask,  
To fright our party.

*North.* How doth my son, and brother?  
Thou tremblest; and the whiteness in thy cheek  
Is apter than thy tongue to tell thy errand.

Even such a man, so faint, so spiritless,  
So dull, so dead in look, so woe-begone,  
Drew Priam's curtain in the dead of night,  
And would have told him, half his Troy was  
burn'd:

But Priam found the fire, ere he his tongue,  
And I my Percy's death, ere thou report'st it.  
This thou wouldst say, — Your son did thus,  
and thus; [glas;

Your brother, thus; so fought the noble Dor:  
Stopping my greedy ear with their bold deeds:  
But in the end, to stop mine ear indeed,  
Thou hast a sigh to blow away this praise,  
Ending with — brother, son, and all are dead.

*Mor.* Douglas is living, and your brother  
But, for my lord your son, — [yet;

*North.* Why, he is dead.  
See, what a ready tongue suspicion bath!

He, that but fears the thing he would not know,  
Hath, by instinct, knowledge from others' eyes,  
That what he fear'd is chanced. Yet speak,  
Tell thou thy earl, his divination lies; [Morton;  
And I will take it as a sweet disgrace,  
And make thee rich for doing me such wrong.

*Mor.* You are too great to be by me gain-  
said:

Your spirit is too true, your fears too certain.

*North.* Yet, for all this, say not that Percy's  
I see a strange confession in thine eye: [dead.  
Thou shakest thy head, and hold'st it fear, or  
To speak a truth. If he be slain, say so: [sin,  
The tongue offends not, that reports his death:  
And he doth sin, that doth belie the dead;  
Not he, which says the dead is not alive.  
Yet the first bringer of unwelcome news  
Hath but a losing office; and his tongue  
Sounds ever after as a sullen bell,  
Remember'd knolling a departed friend.

*Bard.* I cannot think, my lord, your son is  
dead. [lieve

*Mor.* I am sorry I should force you to be-  
That, which I would to heaven I had not seen:  
But these, mine eyes saw him in bloody state

\* Important or dreadful event.

§ Hilderling, base, cowardly,

† Exhausted.

‡ Lace tagged.

|| An attestation of its ravage.

Rend'ring faint quittance\*, wearied and out-  
breath'd, [down  
To Harry Monmouth: whose swift wrath beat  
The never-daunted Percy to the earth, [up.  
From whence with life he never more sprung  
In few†, his death (whose spirit lent a fire  
Even to the dullest peasant in his camp)  
Being bruited‡ once, took fire and heat away  
From the best temper'd courage in his troops:  
For from his metal was his party steel'd;  
Which once in him abated, all the rest  
Turn'd on themselves, like dull and heavy lead.  
And as the thing that's heavy in itself,  
Upon enforcement, flies with grætest speed;  
So did our men, heavy in Hotspur's loss, [fear,  
Lend to this weight such lightness with their  
That arrows fled not swifter toward their aim,  
Than did our soldiers, aiming at th-ir safety,  
Fly from the field: Then was that noble Wor-  
cester

Too soon ta'en prisoner: and that furious Scot,  
The bloody Douglas, whose well-labouring  
sword [king,  
Had three times slain the appearance of the  
'Gan vail§ his stomach, and did grace the shame  
Of those that turn'd their backs; and, in his  
flight,  
Stumbling in fear, was took. The sum of all  
Is,—that the king hath won; and hath sent out  
A speedy power to encounter you, my lord,  
Under the conduct of young Lancaster,  
And Westmoreland: this is the news at full.

*North.* For this I shall have time enough to  
mourn.

In poison there is physic; and these news, [sick,  
Having been well, that would have made me  
Being sick, have in some measure made me well:  
And as the wretch, whose fever-weakn'd joints,  
Like strengthless hinges, buckle under life,  
Impatient of his fit, breaks like a fire  
Out of his keeper's arms; even so my limbs,  
Weaken'd with grief, being now enraged with  
grief, [nice|| crutch;  
Are thrice themselves: hence therefore, thou  
A scaly gauntlet now, with joints of steel,  
Must glove this hand: and hence, thou sickly  
quoit¶,

Thou art a guard too wanton for the head,  
Which princes, flesh'd with conquest, aim to hit.  
Now bind my brows with iron; and approach  
The ragged'st hour that time and spite dare  
bring,

To frown upon the enraged Northumberland!  
Let heaven kiss earth! Now let not nature's  
hand

Keep the wild flood confined! let order die!  
And let this world no longer be a stage,  
To feed contention in a lingering act;  
But let one spirit of the first-born Cain  
Reign in all bosoms, that each heart being set  
On bloody courses, the rude scene may end,  
And darkness be the burier of the dead!

*Tra.* This strained passion doth you wrong,  
my lord. [your honour.

*Bard.* Sweet earl, divorce not wisdom from

*Mor.* The lives of all your loving 'complices  
Lean on your health; the which, if you give  
To stormy passion, must perforce decay. [o'er  
You cast the event of war, my noble lord,  
And summ'd the account of chance, before  
you said,—

Let us make head. It was your presumise,  
That in the dole\*\* of blows your son might drop:  
You knew, he walk'd o'er perils, on an edge,  
More likely to fall in, than to get o'er:  
You were advised, his flesh was capable  
Of wounds and scars; and that his forward  
spirits [ranged;

Would lift him where most trade of danger  
Yet did you say,—Go forth; and none of this,  
Though strongly apprehended, could restrain  
The stiff-borne action: What hath then be-  
fallen, [forth,

Or what hath this bold enterprise brought  
More than that being which was like to be?

*Bard.* We all, that are engaged to this loss,  
Knew that we ventured on such dangerous seas,  
That, if we wrought out life, 'twas ten to one:  
And yet we ventured, for the gain proposed  
Choked the respect of likely peril fear'd;  
And, since we are o'erset, venture again.  
Come, we will all put forth, body and goods.

*Mor.* 'Tis more than time: And, my most  
noble lord,

I hear for certain, and do speak the truth,—  
The gentle archbishop of York is up,  
With well-appointed powers††; he is a man,  
Who with a double surety binds his followers.  
My lord your son had only but t- a corpse,  
But shadows, and the shows of men, to fight:  
For that same word, rebellion, did divide  
The action of their bodies from their souls;  
And they did fight with queasiness‡‡, constrain'd,  
As men drink potions; that their weapons only  
Seem'd on our side, but, for their spirits and  
This word rebellion, it had froze them up, [souls,  
As fish are in a pond: But now the bishop  
Turns insurrection to religion:  
Supposed sincere and holy in his thoughts,  
He's fellow'd both with body and with mind;  
And doth enlarge his rising with the blood  
Of fair king Richard, scraped from Pomfret  
stones.

Derives from heaven his quarrel, and his cause;  
Tells them he doth bestride a bleeding land,  
Gasping for life under great Bolingbroke;  
And more§§, and less, do flock to follow him.

*North.* I knew of this before; but, to speak  
truth,

This present grief had wiped it from my mind.  
Go in with me; and counsel every man  
The aptest way for safety, and revenge: [speed;  
Get posts, and letters, and make friends with  
Never so few, and never yet more need.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II. London. A Street.

Enter Sir JOHN FALSTAFF, with his Page  
bearing his Sword and Buckler.

*Fal.* Sirrah, you giant, what says the doctor  
to my water?

\* Return of blows. † In few words.  
¶ Cap. \*\* Distribution. †† Forces.

‡ Reported. § Let fall || Trifling  
‡‡ Against their stomachs §§ Greater

*Page.* He said, sir, the water itself was a good healthy water; but, for the party that owed \* it, he might have more diseases than he knew for.

*Fal.* Men of all sorts take a pride to gird† at me: The brain of this foolish-compounded clay, man, is not able to vent any thing that tends to laughter, more than I invent, or is invented on me: I am not only witty in myself, but the cause that wit is in other men. I do here walk before thee, like a sow, that hath overwhelmed all her litter but one. If the prince put thee into my service for any other reason than to set me off, why then I have no judgment. Thou whoreson mandrake‡, thou art fitter to be worn in my cap, than to wait at my heels. I was never manned with an agate§ till now: but I will set you neither in gold nor silver, but in vile apparel, and send you back again to your master for a jewel: the juvenal, the prince your master, whose chin is not yet fledged. I will sooner have a beard grow in the palm of my hand, than he shall get one on his cheek; and yet he will not stick to say, his face is a face-royal: God may finish it when he will, it is not a hair amiss yet: he may keep it still as a face-royal, for a barber shall never earn sixpence out of it; and yet he will be crowing, as if he had writ man ever since his father was a bachelor. He may keep his own grace, but he is almost out of mine, I can assure him.—What said master Dumbleton about the satin for my short cloak, and slops?

*Page.* He said, sir, you should procure him better assurance than Bardolph: he would not take his bond and yours; he liked not the security.

*Fal.* Let him be damned like a glutton! may his tongue be hotter!—A whoreson Achitophel! a rascally yea-forsooth knave! to bear a gentleman in hand, and then stand upon security!—The whoreson smooth-pates do now wear nothing but high shoes, and bunches of keys at their girdles: and if a man is thorough|| with them in honest taking up, then they must stand upon—security! I had as lief they would put ratsbane in my mouth, as offer to stop it with security. I looked he should have sent me two-and-twenty yards of satin, as I am a true knight, and he sends me security. Well, he may sleep in security; for he hath the horn of abundance, and the lightness of his wife shines through it: and yet cannot he see, though he have his own lantern to light him.—Where's Bardolph?

*Page.* He's gone into Smithfield, to buy your worship a horse.

*Fal.* I bought him in Paul's, and he'll buy me a horse in Smithfield: an I could get me but a wife in the stews, I were manned, horsed, and wived¶.

*Enter the Lord Chief Justice, and an Attendant.*

*Page.* Sir, here comes the gentleman that committed the prince for striking him about Bardolph.

*Fal.* Wait close, I will not see him.

*Ch. Just.* What's he that goes there?

*Atten.* Falstaff, an't please your lordship.

*Ch. Just.* He that was in question for the robbery?

*Atten.* He, my lord: but he hath since done good service at Shrewsbury; and, as I hear, is now going with some charge to the lord John or Lancaster.

*Ch. Just.* What, to York? Call him back again.

*Atten.* Sir John Falstaff!

*Fal.* Boy, tell him I am deaf.

*Page.* You must speak louder, my master is deaf.

*Ch. Jus.* I am sure he is, to the hearing of any thing good.—Go, pluck him by the elbow; I must speak with him.

*Atten.* Sir John,—

*Fal.* What! a young knave, and beg! Is there not wars? is there not employment? Doth not the king lack subjects? do not the rebels need soldiers? Though it be a shame to be on any side but one, it is worse shame to beg than to be on the worst side, were it worse than the name of rebellion can tell how to make it.

*Atten.* You mlstake me, sir.

*Fal.* Why, sir, did I say you were an honest man? setting my knighthood and my soldiiership aside, I had lied in my throat if I had said so.

*Atten.* I pray you, sir, then set your knight hood and your soldiiership aside; and give me leave to tell you, you lie in your throat, if you say I am any other than an honest man.

*Fal.* I give thee leave to tell me so! I lay aside that which grows to me! If thou gett'st any leave of me, hang me; if thou take'st leave, thou wert better be hanged: You hunt-counter\*\*, hence! avaunt!

*Atten.* Sir, my lord would speak with you.

*Ch. Just.* Sir John Falstaff, a word with you.

*Fal.* My good lord!—God give your lordship good time of day. I am glad to see your lordship abroad: I heard say, your lordship was sick: I hope, your lordship goes abroad by advice. Your lordship, though not clean past your youth, hath yet some smae of age in you, some relish of the saltness of time; and I most humbly beseech your lordship, to have a reverend care of your health.

*Ch. Just.* Sir John, I sent for you before your expedition to Shrewsbury.

*Fal.* An't please your lordship, I hear, his

\* Owned.

† Gibe.

‡ A root supposed to have the shape of a man.

§ A little figure cut in an agate.

|| In their debt.

¶ Alluding to an old proverb: Who goes to Westminster for a wife, to St. Paul's for a man, and to Smithfield for a horse, may meet with a whore, a knave, and a jade.

\*\* A catch-pole or bum-bailiff.



majesty is returned with some discomfort from Wales.

*Ch. Just.* I talk not of his majesty:—You would not come when I sent for you.

*Fal.* And I hear moreover, his highness is fallen into this same whoreson apoplexy.

*Ch. Just.* Well, heaven mend him! I pray, let me speak with you.

*Fal.* This apoplexy is, as I take it, a kind of lethargy, an't please your lordship; a kind of sleeping in the blood, a whoreson tingling.

*Ch. Just.* What tell you me of it? be it as it is.

*Fal.* It hath its original from much grief; from study, and perturbation of the brain: I have read the cause of his effects in Galen; it is a kind of deafness.

*Ch. Just.* I think, you are fallen into the disease; for you hear not what I say to you.

*Fal.* Very well, my lord, very well: rather, an't please you, it is the disease of not listening, the malady of not marking, that I am troubled withal.

*Ch. Just.* To punish you by the heels, would amend the attention of your ears; and I care not, if I do become your physician.

*Fal.* I am as poor as Job, my lord; but not so patient: your lordship may minister the potion of imprisonment to me, in respect of poverty; but how I should be your patient to follow your prescriptions, the wise may make some dram of a scruple, or, indeed, a scruple itself.

*Ch. Just.* I sent for you, when there were matters against you for your life, to come speak with me.

*Fal.* As I was then advised by my learned counsel in the laws of this land-service, I did not come.

*Ch. Just.* Well, the truth is, sir John, you live in great infamy.

*Fal.* He that buckles him in my belt, cannot live in less.

*Ch. Just.* Your means are very slender, and your waste is great.

*Fal.* I would it were otherwise; I would my means were greater, and my waist slenderer.

*Ch. Just.* You have misled the youthful prince.

*Fal.* The youthful prince hath misled me: I am the fellow with the great belly, and he my dog.

*Ch. Just.* Well, I am loath to gall a new-healed wound; your day's service at Shrewsbury hath a little glided over your night's exploit on Gads-hill: you may thank the unquiet time for your quiet o'er-posting that action.

*Fal.* My lord?

*Ch. Just.* But since all is well, keep it so: wake not a sleeping wolf.

*Fal.* To wake a wolf, is as bad as to smell a fox.

*Ch. Just.* What! you are as a candle, the better part burnt out.

*Fal.* A wassel\* candle, my lord; all tallow:

if I did say of wax, my growth would approve the truth.

*Ch. Just.* There is not a white hair on your face, but should have his effect of gravity!

*Fal.* His effect of gravity, gravity, gravity.

*Ch. Just.* You follow the young prince up and down, like his ill angel.

*Fal.* Not so, my lord; your ill angel† is light; but, I hope, he that looks upon me, will take me without weighing: and yet, in some respects, I grant, I cannot go, I cannot tell: Virtue is of so little regard in these costermonger times, that true valour is turned bear-herd: Pregnancy‡ is made a tapster, and hath his quick wit wasted in giving reckonings: all the other gifts appertinent to man, as the malice of this age shapes them, are not worth a gooseberry. You, that are old, consider not the capacities of us that are young: you measure the heat of our livers with the bitterness of your galls: and we that are in the vaward|| of our youth, I must confess, are wags too.

*Ch. Just.* Do you set down your name in the scroll of youth, that are written down old with all the characters of age? Have you not a moist eye? a dry hand? a yellow cheek? a white beard? a decreasing leg? an increasing belly? Is not your voice broken? your wind short? your chin double? your wit single¶? and every part about you blasted with antiquity\*\*? and will you yet call yourself young? Fie, fie, fie, sir John!

*Fal.* My lord, I was born about three of the clock in the afternoon, with a white head, and something a round belly. For my voice,—I have lost it with hollaing, and singing of anthems. To approve my youth further, I will not: the truth is, I am only old in judgment and understanding; and he that will caper with me for a thousand marks, let him lend me the money, and have at him. For the box o'the ear that the prince gave you,—he gave it like a rude prince, and you took it like a sensible lord. I have checked him for it; and the young lion repents: marry, not in ashes, and sack-cloth; but in new silk, and old sack.

*Ch. Just.* Well, heaven send the prince a better companion!

*Fal.* Heaven send the companion a better prince! I cannot rid my hands of him.

*Ch. Just.* Well, the king hath severed you and prince Harry: I hear, you are going with lord John of Lancaster, against the archbishop and the earl of Northumberland.

*Fal.* Yea; I thank your pretty sweet wit for it. But look you pray, all you that kiss my lady peace at home, that our armies join not in a hot day! for, by the Lord, I take but two shirts out with me, and I mean not to sweat extraordinarily: if it be a hot day, an I brandish any thing but my bottle, I would I might never spit white again. There is not a dangerous action can peep out his head, but I am thrust upon it: Well, I cannot last ever: But it was

\* A large candle for a feast.

† The coin called an angel.

‡ Pass current.

§ Readiness.

|| Forepart.

¶ Small.

\*\* Old age.

always yet the trick of our English nation, if they have a good thing, to make it too common. If you will needs say, I am an old man, you should give me rest. I would to God, my name were not so terrible to the enemy as it is. I were better to be eaten to death with rust, than to be scoured to nothing with perpetual motion.

*Ch. Just.* Well, be honest, be honest; And God bless your expedition!

*Fal.* Will your lordship lend me a thousand pound, to furnish me forth?

*Ch. Just.* Not a penny, not a penny; you are too impatient to bear crosses. Fare you well: Commend me to my cousin Westmoreland.

[*Exeunt Chief Justice and Attendant.*]

*Fal.* If I do, fillip me with a three-man beetle\*.—A man can no more separate age and covetousness, than he can part young limbs and lechery: but the gout galls the one, and the pox pinches the other; and so both the degrees prevent† my curses.—Boy!—

*Page.* Sir?

*Fal.* What money is in my purse?

*Page.* Seven groats and two-pence.

*Fal.* I can get no remedy against this consumption of the purse: borrowing only lingers and lingers it out, but the disease is incurable.—Go, bear this letter to my lord of Lancaster; this to the prince; this to the earl of Westmoreland; and this to old mistress Ursula, whom I have weekly sworn to marry since I perceived the first white hair on my chin: About it; you know where to find me. [*Exit Page.*] A pox of this gout! or, a gout of this pox! for the one, or the other, plays the rogue with my great toe. It is no matter, if I do halt; I have the wars for my colour, and my pension shall seem the more reasonable: A good wit will make use of any thing; I will turn diseases to commodity‡. [*Exit.*]

SCENE III. York. *A Room in the Archbishop's Palace.*

*Enter the Archbishop of York, the Lords HASTINGS, MOWBRAY, and BARDOLPH.*

*Arch.* Thus have you heard our cause, and know our means;

And, my most noble friends, I pray you all, Speak plainly your opinions of our hopes:—And first, lord marshal, what say you to it?

*Mowb.* I well allow the occasion of our But gladly would be better satisfied, [arms; How, in our means, we should advance ourselves,

To look with forehead bold and big enough, Upon the power and puissance of the king.

*Hast.* Our present musters grow upon the file

To five and twenty thousand men of choice; And our supplies live largely in the hope Of great Northumberland, whose bosom burns With an incensed fire of injuries.

*Bard.* The question then, lord Hastings, standeth thus;

Whether our present five and twenty thousand May hold up head without Northumberland.

*Hast.* With him, we may.

*Bard.* Ay, marry, there's the point: But if without him we be thought too feeble, My judgment is, we should not step too far Till we had his assistance by the hand: For, in a theme so bloody-faced as this, Conjecture, expectation, and surmise Of aids uncertain, should not be admitted.

*Arch.* 'Tis very true, lord Bardolph; for, indeed,

It was young Hotspur's case at Shrewsbury.

*Bard.* It was my, lord; who lined himself with hope,

Eating the air on promise of supply, Flattering himself with project of a power Much smaller than the smallest of his thoughts: And so, with great imagination, Proper to madmen, led his powers to death, And, winking, leap'd into destruction. [*Hurt*]

*Hast.* But, by your leave, it never yet did To lay down likelihoods, and forms of hope. *Bard.* Yes, in this present quality of war;— Indeed the instant action, (a cause on foot,) Lives so in hope, as in an early spring [fruit, We see the appearing buds; which, to prove Hope gives not so much warrant, as despair, That frosts will bite them. When we mean to build,

We first survey the plot, then draw the model; And, when we see the figure of the house, Then must we rate the cost of the erection: Which if we find outweighs ability, What do we then, but draw anew the model In fewer offices; or, at least, desist To build at all? Much more, in this great work, (Which is, almost, to pluck a kingdom down, And set another up,) should we survey The plot of situation, and the model; Consent‡ upon a sure foundation;

Question surveyors; know our own estate, How able such a work to undergo, To weigh against his opposite; or else, We fortify in paper, and in figures, Using the names of men, instead of men: Like one, that draws the model of a house Beyond his power to build it; who, halting through, Gives o'er, and leaves his part-created cost A naked subject to the weeping clouds, And waste for churlish winter's tyranny.

*Hast.* Grant, that our hopes (yet likely for fair birth,) Should be still born, and that we now possess'd

The utmost man of expectation; I think, we are a body strong enough, Even as we are, to equal with the king.

*Bard.* What! is the king but five and twenty thousand?

*Hast.* To us, no more; nay, not so much lord Bardolph.

For his divisions, as the times do brawl,

\* A large wooden hammer so heavy as to require three men to wield it.

† Anticipate.

‡ Profit.

§ Agree.

Are in three heads: one power against the French,  
And one against Glendower; perforce, a third  
Must take up us: So is the unfirm king  
In three divided; and his coffers sound  
With hollow poverty and emptiness.

*Arch.* That he should draw his several  
strengths together,  
And come against us in full puissance,  
Need not be dreaded.

*Hast.* If he should do so,  
He leaves his back unarm'd, the French and  
Welsh

Baying him at the heels: never fear that.

*Bard.* Who, is it like, should lead his forces  
hither? [moreland:]

*Hast.* The duke of Lancaster, and West-  
Against the Welsh, himself, and Harry Mon-  
mouth:

But who is substituted 'gainst the French,  
I have no certain notice.

*Arch.* Let us on;  
And publish the occasion of our arms.  
The commonwealth is sick of their own choice,  
Their over-greedy love hath surfeited:—  
An habitation giddy and unsure

Hath he, that buildeth on the vulgar heart.

O thou fond many \* I with what loud appearance  
Didst thou beat heaven with blessing Boling-  
broke, [be:]

Before he was what thou wouldst have him  
And being now trimm'd† in thine own desires,  
Thou, beastly feeder, art so full of him,  
That thou provokest thyself to cast him up.

So, so, thou common dog, didst thou disgorge  
Thy glutton bosom of the royal Richard;  
And now thou wouldst eat thy dead vomit up,  
And howl'st to find it. What trust is in these  
times? [him die,

They that, when Richard lived, would have  
Are now become enamour'd on his grave:

Thou, that threw'st dust upon his goodly head,  
When through proud London he came sighing  
After the admired heels of Bolingbroke, [on  
Cry'st now, O earth, yield us that king  
again, [accurst I

And take thou this! O, thoughts of men  
Past, and to come, seem best; things present,  
worst. [set on:]

*Mowb.* Shall we go draw our numbers, and  
*Hast.* We are time's subjects, and time bids  
be gone. [Exeunt.]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. London. A Street.

*Enter Hostess; FANG, and his Boy, with  
her; and SNARE following.*

*Host.* Master Fang, have you entered the  
action?

*Fang.* It is entered.

*Host.* Where is your yeoman‡? Is it a  
lusty yeoman? will a' stand to't?

*Fang.* Sirrah, where's Snare?

*Host.* O lord, ay: good master Snare.

*Snare.* Here, here.

*Fang.* Snare, we must arrest sir John Fal-  
staff.

*Host.* Yea, good master Snare; I have  
entered him and all.

*Snare.* It may chance cost some of us our  
lives, for he will stab.

*Host.* Alas the day! take heed of him; he  
stabbed me in mine own house, and that most  
beastly: in good faith, a' cares not what mis-  
chief he doth, if his weapon be out: he will  
foin§ like any devil; he will spare neither  
man, woman, nor child.

*Fang.* If I can close with him, I care not  
for his thrust.

*Host.* No, nor I neither: I'll be at your  
elbow.

*Fang.* An I but fist him once; an a' come  
but within my vice||;—

*Host.* I am undone by his going; I warrant  
you, he's an infinitive thing upon my score:—  
Good master Fang, hold him sure;—good  
master Snare, let him not 'scape. He comes  
continuantly to Pie-corner, (saving your hand-

hoods,) to buy a saddle; and he's indited to  
dinner to the lubbar's head in Lumbert-street,  
to master Smooth's the silkman: I pray ye,  
since my exion is entered, and my case so  
openly known to the world, let him be brought  
in to his answer. A hundred mark is a long  
loan for a poor lone woman to bear: and I  
have borne, and borne, and borne; and have  
been fubbed off, and fubbed off, and fubbed  
off, from this day to that day, that it is a shame  
to be thought on. There is no honesty in such  
dealing; unless a woman should be made  
an ass, and a beast, to bear every knave's  
wrong.—

*Enter Sir JOHN FALSTAFF, Page, and BAR-  
DOLPH.*

Yonder he comes; and that arrant malmsey-  
nose knave, Bardolph, with him. Do your  
offices, do your offices, master Fang, and  
master Snare; do me, do me, do me your  
offices.

*Fal.* How now? whose mare's dead? what's  
the matter?

*Fang.* Sir John, I arrest you at the suit of  
mistress Quickly.

*Fal.* Away, varlets!—Draw, Bardolph;  
cut me off the villain's head; throw the quean  
in the channel.

*Host.* Throw me in the channel? I'll throw  
thee in the channel. Wilt thou? wilt thou?  
thou bastards rogue!—Murder, murder! O  
thou honey-suckle¶ villain! wilt thou kill  
God's officers, and the king's? O thou honey  
seed \*\* rogue! thou art a honey-seed; a mar-  
queller, and a woman-queller.

\* Multitude.

† Dressed.

‡ A bailiff's follower.

§ Thrust.

|| Grasp.

¶ Homicidal.

\*\* Homicide.



*Fal.* Keep them off, Bardolph.

*Fang.* A rescue! a rescue!

*Host.* Good people, bring a rescue or two.  
—Thou wo't, wo't thou? thou wo't, wo't thou? do, do, thou rogue! do, thou hemp-seed!

*Fal.* Away, you scullion! you rampallian! you fustilarian! I'll tickle your catastrophe.

*Enter the Lord Chief Justice, attended.*

*Ch. Just.* What's the matter? keep the peace here, ho!

*Host.* Good my lord, be good to me! I beseech you, stand to me!

*Ch. Just.* How now, sir John? what, are you brawling here? [business?]

Doth this become your place, your time, and You should have been well on your way to York.— [thou on him?]

Stand from him, fellow; Wherefore hang'st

*Host.* O my most worshipful lord, an't please your grace, I am a poor widow of Eastcheap, and he is arrested at my suit.

*Ch. Just.* For what sum?

*Host.* It is more than for some, my lord; it is for all, all I have: he hath eaten me out of house and home; he hath put all my substance into that fat belly of his:—but I will have some of it out again, or I'll ride thee o' nights, like the mare.

*Fal.* I think, I am as like to ride the mare, if I have any vantage of ground to get up.

*Ch. Just.* How comes this, sir John? Fie! what man of good temper would endure this tempest of exclamation? Are you not ashamed, to enforce a poor widow to so rough a course to come by her own?

*Fal.* What is the gross sum that I owe thee?

*Host.* Marry, if thou wert an honest man, thyself, and the money too. Thou didst swear to me upon a parcel-gilt\* goblet, sitting in my Dolphin-chamber, at the round-table, by a sea-coal fire, upon Wednesday in Whitsun-week, when the prince broke thy head for liking his father to a singing-man of Windsor; thou didst swear to me then, as I was washing thy wound, to marry me, and make me my lady, thy wife. Canst thou deny it? Did not goodwife Keech, the butcher's wife, come in then, and call me gossip Quickly? coming in to borrow a mess of vinegar; telling us, she had a good dish of prawns; whereby thou didst desire to eat some; whereby I told thee, they were ill for a green wound? And didst thou not, when she was gone down stairs, desire me to be no more so familiarity with such poor people; saying, that ere long they should call me madam? And didst thou not kiss me, and bid me fetch thee thirty shillings? I put thee now to thy book-oath; deny it, if thou canst.

*Fal.* My lord, this is a poor mad soul; and she says, up and down the town, that her eldest son is like you: she hath been in good case, and, the truth is, poverty hath distracted her. Put for these foolish officers, I beseech you, I may have redress against them.

*Ch. Jus.* Sir John, sir John, I am well ac-

quainted with your manner of wrenching the true cause the false way. It is not a confident brow, nor the throng of words that come with such more than impudent sauciness from you, can thrust me from a level consideration; you have, as it appears to me, practised upon the easy-yielding spirit of this woman, and made her serve your uses both in purse and person.

*Host.* Yea, in troth, my lord.

*Ch. Jus.* Pi'ythee, peace:—Pay her the debt you owe her, and repay the villany you have done with her; the one you may do with sterling money, and the other with current repentance.

*Fal.* My lord, I will not undergo this sneap† without reply. You call honourable boldness. impudent sauciness: if a man will make court'sy, and say nothing, he is virtuous: No, my lord, my humble duty remembered, I will not be your suitor; I say to you, I do desire deliverance from these officers, being upon hasty employment in the king's affairs.

*Ch. Just.* You speak as having power to do wrong: but answer in the effect of your reputation‡, and satisfy the poor woman.

*Fal.* Come hither, hostess. [Taking her aside.]

*Enter GOWER.*

*Ch. Just.* Now, master Gower; What news?

*Gow.* The king, my lord, and Harry prince of Wales

Are near at hand: the rest the paper tells.

*Fal.* As I am a gentleman;—

*Host.* Nay, you said so before.

*Fal.* As I am a gentleman;—Come, no more words of it.

*Host.* By this heavenly ground I tread on, I must be fain to pawn both my plate, and the tapestry of my dining-chambers.

*Fal.* Glasses, glasses, is the only drinking: and for thy walls,—a pretty slight drollery, or the story of the prodigal, or the German hunting in water-work, is worth a thousand of these bed-hangings, and these fly-bitten tapestries. Let it be ten pound, if thou canst. Come, an it were not for thy humours, there is not a better wench in England. Go, wash thy face, and draw§ thy action: Come, thou must not be in this humour with me; dost not know me? Come, come, I know thou wast set on to this.

*Host.* Pray thee, sir John, let it be but twenty nobles; if with I am loath to pawn my plate, in good earnest, la.

*Fal.* Let it alone; I'll make other shift: you'll be a fool still!

*Host.* Well, you shall have it, though I pawn my gown. I hope, you'll come to supper: You'll pay me all together?

*Fal.* Will I live?—Go, with her, with her; [To BARDOLPH.] hook on, hook on.

*Host.* Will you have Doll Tear-sheet meet you at supper?

*Fal.* No more words; let's have her.

[Exit Hostess, BARDOLPH, Officers, and Page.]

*Ch. Just.* I have heard better news.

*Fal.* What's the news, my good lord?

\* Party gilt.

† Snut, check.

‡ Suitable to your character.

§ Withdraw.

*Ch. Just.* Where lay the king last night?

*Gow.* At Basingstoke, my lord.

*Fal.* I hope, my lord, all's well: What's the news, my lord.

*Ch. Just.* Come all his forces back?

*Gow.* No; fifteen hundred foot, five hundred horse,

Are march'd up to my lord of Lancaster, Against Northumberland, and the archbishop.

*Fal.* Comes the king back from Wales, my noble lord?

*Ch. Just.* You shall have letters of me presently: Come, go along with me, good master Gower.

*Fal.* My lord!

*Ch. Just.* What's the matter?

*Fal.* Master Gower, shall I entreat you with me to dinner?

*Gow.* I must wait upon my good lord here: I thank you, good sir John.

*Ch. Just.* Sir John, you loiter here too long, being you are to take soldiers up in counties as you go.

*Fal.* Will you sup with me, master Gower?

*Ch. Just.* What foolish master taught you these manners, sir John?

*Fal.* Master Gower, if they become me not, he was a fool that taught them me.—This is the right fencing grace, my lord; tap for tap, and so part fair.

*Ch. Just.* Now the Lord lighten thee! thou art a great fool. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. The same. Another Street.

Enter Prince HENRY and POINS.

*P. Hen.* Trust me, I am exceeding weary.

*Poins.* Is it come to that? I had thought weariness durst not have attached one of so high blood.

*P. Hen.* Faith, it does me; though it discolors the complexion of my greatness to acknowledge it. Doth it not show vilely in me, to desire small beer?

*Poins.* Why, a prince should not be so loosely studied, as to remember so weak a composition.

*P. Hen.* Belike then, my appetite was not princely got; for, by my troth, I do now remember the poor creature, small beer. But, indeed, these humble considerations make me out of love with my greatness. What a disgrace is it to me, to remember thy name! or to know thy face to-morrow! or to take note how many pair of silk stockings thou hast; viz., these, and those that were the peach-colour'd ones! or to bear the inventory of thy shirts; as, one for superfluity, and one other for use!—but that the tennis-court-keeper knows better than I; for it is a low ebb of linen with thee, when thou keepest not racket there; as thou hast not done a great while, because the rest of thy low-countries have made a shift to eat up thy holland: and God knows, whether those that bawl out the ruins of thy linen\*, shall inherit his kingdom: but the midwives say, the children are not in the fault; whereupon the

world increases, and kindreds are mightily strengthened.

*Poins.* How ill it follows, after you have laboured so hard, you should talk so idly? Tell me, how many good young princes would do so, their fathers being so sick as yours at this time is.

*P. Hen.* Shall I tell thee one thing, Poins?

*Poins.* Yes; and let it be an excellent good thing.

*P. Hen.* It shall serve among wits of no higher breeding than thine.

*Poins.* Go to; I stand the push of your one thing that you will tell.

*P. Hen.* Why, I tell thee,—it is not meet that I should be sad, now my father is sick: albeit I could tell to thee, (as to one it pleases me, for fault of a better, to call my friend,) I could be sad, and sad indeed too.

*Poins.* Very hardly, upon such a subject.

*P. Hen.* By this hand, thou think'st me as far in the devil's book, as thou, and Falstaff, for obduracy and persistency: Let the end try the man. But I tell thee,—my heart bleeds inwardly, that my father is so sick: and keeping such vile company as thou art, hath in reason taken from me all ostentation of sorrow.

*Poins.* The reason?

*P. Hen.* What wouldst thou think of me, if I should weep!

*Poins.* I would think thee a most princely hypocrite.

*P. Hen.* It would be every man's thought: and thou art a blessed fellow, to think as every man thinks; never a man's thoughts in the world keep the road-way better than thine: every man would think me an hypocrite indeed. And what accites your most worshipful thought to think so?

*Poins.* Why, because you have been so lewd, and so much engrafted to Falstaff.

*P. Hen.* And to thee.

*Poins.* By this light, I am well spoken of, I can hear it with my own ears: the worst that they can say of me is, that I am a second brother, and that I am a proper fellow of my hands; and those two things, I confess, I cannot help. By the mass, here comes Bardolph.

*P. Hen.* And the boy that I gave Falstaff: he had him from me christian; and look, if the fat villain have not transformed him ape.

Enter BARDOLPH and Page.

*Bard.* 'Save your grace!

*P. Hen.* And yours, most noble Bardolph!

*Bard.* Come, you virtuous ass, [To the Page,] you bashful fool, must you be blushing! wherefore blush you now? What a maidenly man at arms are you become? Is it such a matter, to get a pottle-pot's maidenhead?

*Page.* He called me even now, my lord, through a red lattice†, and I could discern no part of his face from the window: at last, I spied his eyes; and, methought, he had made two holes in the ale-wife's new petticoat, and peeped through.

\* Children wrapt up in his old shirts.

† An alehouse window.

*P. Hen.* Hath not the boy profited?

*Bard.* Away, you whoreson upright rabbit, away!

*Page.* Away, you rascally Althea's dream, away!

*P. Hen.* Instruct us, boy: What dream, boy?

*Page.* Marry, my lord, Althea dreamed she was delivered of a fire-brand; and therefore I call him her dream.

*P. Hen.* A crown's worth of good interpretation.—There it is, boy. [*Gives him money.*]

*Poins.* O, that this good blossom could be kept from cankers!—Well, there is sixpence to preserve thee.

*Bard.* An you do not make him be hanged among you, the gallows shall have wrong.

*P. Hen.* And how doth thy master, Bardolph?

*Bard.* Well, my lord. He heard of your grace's coming to town; there's a letter for you.

*Poins.* Delivered with good respect.—And how doth the martlemas\*, your master?

*Bard.* In bodily health, sir.

*Poins.* Marry, the immortal part needs a physician: but that moves not him; though that be sick, it dies not.

*P. Hen.* I do allow this went to be as familiar with me as my dog: and he holds his place; for, look you, how he writes.

*Poins.* [*Reads.*] John Falstaff, knight,—Every man must know that, as oft as he has occasion to name himself. Even like those that are kin to the king; for they never prick their finger, but they say, *There is some of the king's blood spilt: How comes that?* says he, that takes upon him not to conceive: the answer is as ready as a borrower's cap; *I am the king's poor cousin, sir.*

*P. Hen.* Nay, they will be kin to us, or they will fetch it from Japhet. But the letter:—

*Poins.* Sir John Falstaff, knight, to the son of the king, nearest his father, Harry Prince of Wales, greeting.—Why, this is a certificate.

*P. Hen.* Peace!

*Poins.* I will imitate the honourable Roman in brevity:—he sure means brevity in breath; short-winded.—*I commend me to thee, I commend thee, and I leave thee. Be not too familiar with Poins; for he misuses thy favours so much, that he swears thou art to marry his sister Nell. Repent at idle times as thou may'st, and so farewell.*

*Thine, by yea and no, (which is as much as to say, as thou usest him,) Jack Falstaff, with my familiars; John, with my brothers and sisters; and sir John with all Europe.*

My lord, I will steep this letter in sack, and make him eat it.

*P. Hen.* That's to make him eat twenty of his words. But do you use me thus, Ned? must I marry your sister?

*Poins.* May the wench have no worse fortune! but I never said so.

*P. Hen.* Well, thus we play the fools with the time; and the spirits of the wise sit in the clouds, and mock us.—Is your master here in London?

*Bard.* Yes, my lord.

*P. Hen.* Where sups he? doth the old boar feed in the old frank?

*Bard.* At the old place, my lord; in Eastcheap.

*P. Hen.* What company?

*Page.* Ephesians, my lord; of the old church.

*P. Hen.* Sup any women with him?

*Page.* None, my lord, but old mistress Quickly, and mistress Doll Tear-sheet.

*P. Hen.* What pagan may that be?

*Page.* A proper gentlewoman, sir, and a kinswoman of my master's.

*P. Hen.* Even such kin as the parish heifers are to the town bull.—Shall we steal upon them, Ned, at supper?

*Poins.* I am your shadow, my lord; I'll follow you.

*P. Hen.* Sirrah, you boy,—and Bardolph;—no word to your master, that I am yet come to town: There's for your silence.

*Bard.* I have no tongue, sir.

*Page.* And for mine, sir,—I will govern it.

*P. Hen.* Fare ye well; go. [*Exeunt BARDOLPH and PAGE.*]—This Doll Tear-sheet should be some road.

*Poins.* I warrant you, as common as the way between Saint Alban's and London.

*P. Hen.* How might we see Falstaff bestow himself to-night in his true colours, and not ourselves be seen?

*Poins.* Put on two leather jerkins, and aprons, and wait upon him at his table as drawers.

*P. Hen.* From a god to a bull? a heavy descension! it was Jove's case. From a prince to a prentice? a low transformation! that shall be mine: for, in every thing, the purpose must weigh with the folly. Follow me, Ned.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. Warkworth. *Before the Castle.*

*Enter* NORTHUMBERLAND, Lady NORTHUMBERLAND, and Lady PERCY

*North.* I pray thee, loving wife, and gentle daughter,

Give even way unto my rough affairs:

Put not you on the visage of the times, And be, like them, to Percy troublesome.

*Lady N.* I have given over, I will speak no more:

Do what you will; your wisdom be your guide.

*North.* Alas, sweet wife, my honour is at pawn;

And, but my going, nothing can redeem it.

*Lady P.* O yet, for God's sake, go not to these wars!

The time was, father, that you broke your word When you were more endear'd to it than now, When your own Percy, when my heart's dear

Harry, [*father*]  
Threw many a northward look, to see his

\* Martinmas, St. Martin's day is Nov. 11.

† Swoln excrescence.

‡ Sty.



Bring up his powers; but he did long in vain.  
Who then persuaded you to stay at home?  
There were two honours lost; yours, and your  
son's.

For yours,—may heavenly glory brighten it!  
For his,—it stuck upon him, as the sun  
In the grey vault of heaven: and, by his light,  
Did all the chivalry of England move  
To do brave acts; he was, indeed, the glass  
Wherein the noble youth did dress themselves.  
He had no legs that practised not his gait:  
And speaking thick, which nature made his  
blemish,

Became the accents of the valiant;  
For those that could speak low, and tardily,  
Would turn their own perfection to abuse,  
To seem like him: So that, in speech, in gait,  
In diet, in affections of delight,  
In military rules, humours of blood,  
He was the mark and glass, copy and book,  
That fashioned others. And him—O won-  
drous him!

O miracle of men!—him did you leave,  
(Second to none, unseconded by you,)  
To look upon the hideous god of war  
In disadvantage; to abide a field, <sup>name</sup>  
Where nothing but the sound of Hotspur's  
Did seem defensible:—so you left him:  
Never, O never, do his ghost the wrong,  
To hold your honour more precise and nice  
With others, than with him; let them alone;  
The marshal, and the archbishop, are strong:  
Had my sweet Harry had but half their  
numbers,

To-day might I, hanging on Hotspur's neck,  
Have talk'd of Moumouth's grave.

*North.* Beshrew\* your heart,  
Fair daughter! you do draw my spirits from me,  
With new lamenting ancient oversights.  
But I must go, and meet with danger there;  
Or it will seek me in another place,  
And find me worse provided.

*Lady N.* O, fly to Scotland,  
Fill that the nobles, and the armed commons,  
Have of their puissance made a little taste.

*Lady P.* If they get ground and vantage of  
the king,  
Then join you with them, like a rib of steel,  
To make strength stronger; but, for all our  
loves,

First let them try themselves: So did your son;  
He was so suffer'd; so came I a widow;  
And never shall have length of life enough,  
To rain upon remembrance with mine eyes,  
That it may grow and sprout as high as heaven,  
For recordation to my noble husband.

*North.* Come, come, go in with me: 'tis  
with my mind,  
As with the tide swell'd up unto its height,  
That makes a still-stand, running neither way.  
Pain would I go to meet the archbishop,  
But many thousand reasons hold me back:—  
I will resolve for Scotland; there am I,

Till time and vantage crave my company.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. London. *A Room in the Bear's  
Head Tavern, in Eastcheap.*

*Enter Two Drawers.*

*1 Draw.* What the devil hast thou brought  
there? apple Johns? thou know'st sir John  
cannot endure an apple-John.

*2 Draw.* Mass, thou sayest true: The prince  
once set a dish of apple-Johns before him,  
and told him, there were five more sir Johns:  
and, putting off his hat, said, *I will now take  
my leave of these six dry round, old with-  
ered knights.* It angered him to the heart:  
but he hath forgot that.

*1 Draw.* Why then, cover, and set them  
down: And see if thou canst find out Sneak's  
noise†; mistress Tear-sheet would fain hear  
some music. Despatch:—The room where  
they supped, is too hot; they'll come in  
straight.

*2 Draw.* Sirrah, here will be the prince,  
and master Poin anon: and they will put on  
two of our jerkins, and aprons; and sir John  
must not know of it: Bardolph hath brought  
word.

*1 Draw.* By the mass, here will be old  
utis§: It will be an excellent stratagem.

*2 Draw.* I'll see if I can find out Sneak.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter Hostess and DOLL TEAR-SHEET.*

*Host.* Prait, sweet heart, methinks now  
you are in an excellent good temperality: your  
pulsidge beats as extraordinarily as heart would  
desire; and your colour, I warrant you, is as  
red as any rose: But, if faith, you have drunk  
too much canaries; and that's a marvellous  
searching wine, and it perfumes the blood ere  
one can say,—What's this? How do you  
now?

*Dol.* Better than I was. Hem.

*Host.* Why, that's well said; a good heart's  
worth gold. Look, here comes sir John.

*Enter FALSTAFF, singing.*

*Fal.* *When Arthur first in court*—Empty  
the jordan.—*And was a worthy king:* [*Exit  
Drawer.*] How now, mistress Doll?

*Host.* Sick of a calm; yea, good sooth.

*Fal.* So is all her sect; an they be once in  
a calm, they are sick.

*Dol.* You muddy rascal, is that all the com-  
fort you give me?

*Fal.* You make fat rascals, mistress Doll.

*Dol.* I make them! gluttony and diseases  
make them; I make them not.

*Fal.* If the cook help to make the gluttony  
you help to make the diseases, Doll: we  
catch of you, Doll, we catch of you; grant  
that, my poor virtue, grant that.

*Dol.* Ay, marry; our chains, and our jewels.

*Fal.* *Your brooches, pearls, and owches*—  
for to serve bravely, is to come aialing off,

\* Ill-betide.

† An apple that will keep two years.

‡ Sneak was a street minstrel: a noise of musicians anciently signified a concert.

§ Merry doings.

you know: To come off the breach with his pike bent bravely, and to surgery bravely; to venture upon the charged chambers\* bravely:——

*Dol.* Hang yourself, you muddy conger, hang yourself!

*Host.* By my troth, this is the old fashion; you two never meet, but you fall to some discord: you are both, in good troth, as rheumatic as two dry toasts; you cannot one bear with another's confirmities. What the good-year! one must bear, and that must be you: [To *DOLL*.] you are the weaker vessel, as they say, the emptier vessel.

*Dol.* Can a weak empty vessel bear such a huge fall hog'shead? There's a whole merchant's venture of Bourdeaux stuff in him; you have not seen a hulk better stuffed in the hold.—Come, I'll be friends with thee, Jack: thou art going to the wars; and whether I shall ever see thee again, or no, there is nobody cares.

*Re-enter Drawer.*

*Draw.* Sir, ancient† Pistol's below, and would speak with you.

*Dol.* Hang him, swaggering rascal! let him not come hither: it is the foul mouth'dst rogue in England.

*Host.* If he swagger, let him not come here: no, by my faith; I must live amongst my neighbours; I'll no swaggerers: I am in good name and fame with the very best:—Shut the door;—there comes no swaggerers here: I have not lived all this while, to have swaggering now:—shut the door, I pray you.

*Fal.* Dost thou hear, hostess?—

*Host.* Pray you, pacify yourself, sir John; there comes no swaggerers‡ here.

*Fal.* Dost thou hear? it is mine ancient.

*Host.* Tilly-fally, sir John, never tell me; your ancient swaggerer comes not in my doors. I was before master Tisick, the deputy, the other day; and, as he said to me,—it was no longer ago than Wednesday last,—*Neighbour Quickly*, says he;—master Dumb, our minister, was by then;—*Neighbour Quickly*, says he, *receive those that are civil*; for, saith he, *you are in an ill name*;—now he said so, I can tell whereupon; for, says he, *you are an honest woman, and well thought on*; therefore take heed what guests you receive: Receive, says he, *no swaggering companions*.—There comes none here;—you would bless you to hear what he said: no, I'll no swaggerers.

*Fal.* He's no swaggerer, hostess; a tame cheater¶, he; you may stroke him as gently as a puppy greyhound: he will not swagger with a Barbary hen, if her feathers turn back in any show of resistance.—Call him up, drawer.

*Host.* Cheater, call you him? I will bar no honest man my house, nor no cheater: But I

do not love swaggering; by my troth, I am the worse, when one says—swagger: feel, masters, how I shake; look you, I warrant you.

*Dol.* So you do, hostess.

*Host.* Do I? yea, in very truth, do I, an'twere an aspen leaf: I cannot abide swaggerers.

*Enter PISTOL, BARDOLPH, and Page.*

*Pist.* 'Save you, sir John!

*Fal.* Welcome, ancient Pistol. Here, Pistol, I charge you with a cup of sack: do you discharge upon mine hostess.

*Pist.* I will discharge upon her, sir John, with two bullets.

*Fal.* She is pistol-proof, sir; you shall hardly offend her.

*Host.* Come, I'll drink no proofs, nor no bullets: I'll drink no more than will do me good, for no man's pleasure, I.

*Pist.* Then to you, mistress Dorothy; I will charge you.

*Dol.* Charge me? I scorn you, scurvy companion. What! you poor, base, rascally, cheating, lackline mate! Away, you mouldy rogue, away! I am meat for your master.

*Pist.* I know you, mistress Dorothy.

*Dol.* Away, you cut-purse rascal! you filthy bugg, away! by this wine, I'll thrust my knife in your mouldy chaps, an you play the saucy cuttle with me. Away you bottle-ale rascal! you basket-hilt stale juggler, you—Since when, I pray you, sir?—What, with your two points¶ on your shoulders? much\*\*!

*Pist.* I will murder your ruff for this.

*Fal.* No more, Pistol; I would not have you go off here: discharge yourself of our company, Pistol.

*Host.* No, good captain Pistol; not here, sweet captain.

*Dol.* Captain! thou abominable damned cheater, art thou not ashamed to be called—captain? If captains were of my mind, they would truncheon you out, for taking their names upon you before you have earned them. You a captain, you slave! for what? for tearing a poor whore's ruff in a bawdy-house?—He a captain! Hang him, rogue! He lives upon mouldy stewed prunes, and dried cakes. A captain! these villains will make the word captain as odious as the word occupy; which was an excellent good word before it was mis-sorted: therefore captains had need look to it.

*Bard.* Pray thee, go down, good ancient.

*Fal.* Hark thee hither, mistress Doll.

*Pist.* Not I: tell thee what, corporal Bardolph;—I could tear her:—I'll be revenged on her.

*Page.* Pray thee, go down.

*Pist.* I'll see her damned first;—to Pluto's damned lake, to the infernal deep, with Erebus and tortures vile also. Hold hook and line, say I. Down! down, dogs! down! factious††! Have we not Hiren here‡‡?

\* Small pieces of ordnance. † Mrs. Quickly's blunder for *goujere*, i. e., *pox*.

‡ Ensign.

§ A blustering, fighting fellow.

¶ Gamester.

‡ Laces, marks of his commission.

\*\* An expression of disdain.

† Traitors, rascals.

†† A quotation from a play of G. Peele's.

*Host.* Good captain Peesel, be quiet; it is very late, I'faith: I beseech you now, aggravate your choler.

*Pist.* These be good humours, indeed! Shall packhorses,

And hollow pamper'd jades of Asia,  
Which cannot go but thirty miles a day,  
Compare with Cæsars, and with Cannibals\*,  
And Trojan Greeks? nay, rather damn them  
King Cerberus; and let the welkin roar. [with  
Shall we fall foul for toys?

*Host.* By my troth, captain, these are very bitter words.

*Bard.* Be gone, good ancient: this will grow to a brawl anon.

*Pist.* Die men, like dogs; give crowns like pins: Have we not Hiren here?

*Host.* O' my word, captain, there's none such here. What the good-year! do you think, I would deny her? for God's sake, be quiet.

*Pist.* Then, feed, and be fat, my fair Calipolis†: Come, give's some sack.

*Si fortuna me tormenta, sperato me contenta.*—

Fear we broadsides? no, let the fiend give fire: Give me some sack;—and, sweetheart, lie thou there. [Laying down his sword.  
Come we to full points here; and are *et cetera's* nothing?

*Fal.* Pistol, I would be quiet.

*Pist.* Sweet knight, I kiss thy neif‡: What! we have seen the seven stars.

*Dol.* Thrust him down stairs; I cannot endure such a fustian rascal.

*Pist.* Thrust him down stairs! know we not Galloway nags§?

*Fal.* Quoit|| him down, Bardolph, like a shove-groat shilling: nay, if he do nothing but speak nothing, he shall be nothing here.

*Bard.* Come, get you down stairs.

*Pist.* What! shall we have incision? shall we imbrue? [Snatching up his sword.  
Then death rock me asleep, abridge my doleful days¶!

Why then, let grievous, ghastly, gaping wounds Untwine the sisters three! Come, Atropos, I

*Host.* Here's goodly stuff toward! [say!

*Fal.* Give me my rapier, boy.

*Dol.* I pray thee, Jack, I pray thee, do not

*Fal.* Get you down stairs. [draw.

[Drawing, and driving PISTOL out.

*Host.* Here's a goodly tumult! I'll forswear keeping house, afore I'll be in these tirrits and frights. So; murder, I warrant now.— Alas, alas! put up your naked weapons, put up your naked weapons.

[Event PISTOL and BARDOLPH.

*Dol.* I pray thee, Jack, be quiet; the rascal is gone. Ah, you whoreson little valiant villain, you.

*Host.* Are you not hurt i'the groin? me- thought, he made a shrewd thrust at your belly.

*Re-entrer BARDOLPH.*

*Fal.* Have you turned him out of doors?

*Bard.* Yes, sir. The rascal's drunk: you have hurt him, sir, in the shoulder.

*Fal.* A rascal to brave me!

*Dol.* Ah, you sweet little rogne, you! Alas, poor ape, how thou sweat'st! Come, let me wipe thy face;—come on, you whoreson chops:—Ah, rogne I'faith, I love thee. Thou art as valorous as Hector of Troy, worth five of Agamemnon, and ten times better than the nine worthies. Ah, villain!

*Fal.* A rascally slave! I will toss the rogue in a blanket.

*Dol.* Do, if thou darest for thy heart: if thou dost, I'll canvass thee between a pair of sheets.

*Enter Music.*

*Page.* The music is come, sir.

*Fal.* Let them play;—Play, sirs.—Sit on my knee, Doll. A rascal bragging slave! the rogne fled from me like quicksilver.

*Dol.* I'faith, and thou followedst him like a church. Thou whoreson little tidy Bartholomew boar-pig, when wilt thou leave fighting o'days, and foining\*\* o' nights, and begin to patch up thine old body for heaven?

*Enter behind Prince HENRY and POINS, disguised like Drawers.*

*Fal.* Peace, good Doll! do not speak like a death's head: do not bid me remember mine end.

*Dol.* Sirrah, what humour is the prince of?

*Fal.* A good shallow young fellow: he would have made a good pantler, he would have chipped bread well.

*Dol.* They say, Poins has a good wit.

*Fal.* He a good wit? hang him, baboon! his wit is as thick as Tewksbury mustard; there is no more conceit in him, than is in a mallet.

*Dol.* Why does the prince love him so then?

*Fal.* Because their legs are both of a bigness: and he plays at quoits well; and eats conger and fennel; and drinks off candles' ends for flap-dragons; and rides the wild mare with the boys; and jumps upon joint-stools; and swears with a good grace; and wears his boot very smooth, like unto the sign of the leg; and breeds no bate with telling of discreet stories; and such other gambol faculties he hath, that show a weak mind and an able body, for the which the prince admits him: for the prince himself is such another; the weight of a hair will turn the scales between their avoidpoups.

*P. Hen.* Would not this nave of a wheel have his ears cut off?

*Poins.* Let's beat him before his whore.

*P. Hen.* Look, if the withered elder hath not his poll clawed like a parrot.

*Poins.* Is it not strange, that desire should so many years outlive performance?

*Fal.* Kiss me, Doll.

*P. Hen.* Saturn and Venns this year in conjunction! what says the almanac to that?

*Poins.* And, look, whether the fiery Trigon††

\* Blunder for Hannibal.

† Parody of a line in the Battle of Alcasar, an old play.

‡ Fist.

Common hackneys.

|| Throw.

¶ Part of an ancient song.

\*\* Thrusting.

†† An astronomical term.



his man, be not lipping to his master's old tables; his note-book, his counsel-keeper.

*Fal.* Thou dost give me flattering busses.

*Dol.* Nay, truly; I kiss thee with a most constant heart.

*Fal.* I am old, I am old.

*Dol.* I love thee better than I love e'er a scurvy young boy of them all.

*Fal.* What stuff wilt thou have a kirtle\* of? I shall receive money on Thursday: thou shalt have a cap to-morrow. A merry song, come; it grows late, we'll to bed. Thou'lt forget me, when I am gone.

*Dol.* By my troth thou'lt set me a weeping, an thou sayest so: prove that ever I dress myself handsome till thy return.—Well, hearken the end.

*Fal.* Some sack, Francis.

*P. Hen.* *Poins.* Anon, anon, sir.

*Fal.* Ha! a bastard son of the king's?—  
And art not thou *Poins* his brother?

*P. Hen.* Why, thou globe of sinful continents, what a life dost thou lead?

*Fal.* A better than thou; I am a gentleman, thou art a drawer.

*P. Hen.* Very true, sir; and I come to draw you out by the ears.

*Host.* O, the Lord preserve thy good grace! by my troth, welcome to London.—Now the Lord bless that sweet face of thine! O Jesu, are you come from Wales?

*Fal.* Thou whoreson mad compound of majesty,—by this light flesh and corrupt blood, thou art welcome.

[*Leaning his hand upon Doll.*]

*Dol.* How! you fat fool, I scorn you.

*Poins.* My lord, he will drive you out of your revenge, and turn all to a merriment, if you take not the heat.

*P. Hen.* You whoreson candle-mine, you, how vilely did you speak of me even now, before this honest, virtuous, civil gentlewoman!

*Host.* 'Blessing o' your good heart! and so she is, by my troth.

*Fal.* Didst thou hear me?

*P. Hen.* Yes; and you knew me, as you did when you ran away by Gads-hill: you knew I was at your back; and spoke it on purpose, to try my patience.

*Fal.* No, no, no; not so; I did not think thou wast within hearing.

*P. Hen.* I shall drive you then to confess the wilful abuse; and then I know how to handle you.

*Fal.* No abuse, Hal, on mine honour; no abuse.

*P. Hen.* Not? to dispraise me; and call me—pantler, and bread-chipper, and I know not what?

*Fal.* No abuse, Hal.

*Poins.* No abuse!

*Fal.* No abuse, Ned, in the world; honest Ned, none. I dispraised him before the wicked, that the wicked might not fall in love with him:—in which doing, I have done the part of

a careful friend, and a true subject, and thy father is to give me thanks for it. No abuse, Hal; none, Ned, none; no, boys, none.

*P. Hen.* See now, whether pure fear, and entire cowardice, doth not make thee wrong this virtuous gentlewoman to close with us! Is she of the wicked? Is thine hostess here of the wicked? Or is the boy of the wicked? Or honest Bardolph, whose zeal burns in his nose, of the wicked?

*Poins.* Answer, thou dead elm, answer.

*Fal.* The fiend hath pricked down Bardolph irrecoverable; and his face is Lucifer's privy-kitchen, where he doth nothing but roast malt-worms. For the boy,—there is a good angel about him; but the devil outbids him too.

*P. Hen.* For the women,——

*Fal.* For one of them she is in hell already, and burns poor soul! For the other,—I owe her money; and whether she be damned for that, I know not.

*Host.* No, I warrant you.

*Fal.* No, I think thou art not; I think thou art quit for that: Marry, there is another indictment upon thee, for suffering flesh to be eaten in thy house, contrary to the law; for the which, I think, thou wilt howl.

*Host.* All victuallers do so; What's a joint of mutton or two in the whole Lent?

*P. Hen.* You, gentlewoman,——

*Dol.* What says your grace?

*Fal.* His grace says that which his flesh rebels against.

*Host.* Who knocks so loud at door? look to the door there, Francis.

*Enter PETO.*

*P. Hen.* Peto, how now? what news?

*Peto.* The king your father is at Westminster, And there are twenty weak and wearied posts, Come from the north: and, as I came along, I met, and overtook, a dozen captains, [verns, Bare-headed, sweating, knocking at the ta- And asking every one for sir John Falstaff.

*P. Hen.* By heaven, *Poins*, I feel me much So idly to profane the precious time; [to blame, When tempest of commotion, like the south Borne with black vapour, doth begin to melt, And drop upon our bare unarmed heads.

Give me my sword, and cloak:—Falstaff, good night. [*Exeunt Prince HEN., POINS,*

*PETO, and BARDOLPH.*]

*Fal.* Now comes in the sweetest morsel of the night, and we must hence, and leave it unpicked. [*Knocking heard.*] More knocking at the door?

*Re-enter BARDOLPH.*

How now? what's the matter?

*Bard.* You must away to court, sir, presently; a dozen captains stay at door for you.

*Fal.* Pay the musicians, sirrah. [*To the Page.*—Farewell, hostess;—farewell, Doll.—You see, my good wenches, how men of merit are sought after: the undeserver may sleep, when the man of action is called on. Farewell, good wenches: if I be not sent away post, I will see you again ere I go.

*Dol.* I cannot speak;—If my heart be not ready to burst:—Well, sweet Jack, have a care of thyself.

*Fal.* Farewell, farewell.

[*Exeunt FALSTAFF and BARDOLPH.*]

*Host.* Well, fare thee well: I have known thee these twenty-nine years, come peas-cod

time; but an honest, and truer-hearted man,—Well, fare thee well.

*Bard.* [*Within.*] Mistress Tear-sheet,—

*Host.* What's the matter?

*Bard.* [*Within.*] Bid mistress Tear-sheet come to my master.

*Host.* O run, Doll, run; run, good Doll.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter King HENRY in his Nightgown, with a Page.*

*K. Hen.* Go, call the earls of Surrey and of Warwick;

But, ere they come, bid them o'er-read these And well consider of them: Make good speed.—

[*Exit Page.*]

How many thousand of my poorest subjects Are at this hour asleep!—Sleep, gentle sleep, Nature's soft nurse, how have I frighted thee, That thou no more wilt weigh my eye-lids down, And steep my senses in forgetfulness?

Why rather, sleep, liest thou in smoky cribs, Upon uneasy pallets stretching thee, [ber; And hush'd with buzzing night-flies to thy slumber Than in the perfumed chambers of the great, Under the canopies of costly state, And lull'd with sounds of sweetest melody? O thou dull god, why liest thou with the vile, In loathsome beds; and leav'st the kingly couch,

A watch-case, or a common 'larum bell? Wilt thou upon the high and giddy mast Seal up the ship-boy's eyes, and rock his brains In cradle of the rude imperious surge; And in the visitation of the winds, Who take the ruffian billows by the top, Curling their monstrous heads, and hanging them

With deaf'ning clamours in the slippery clouds, That, with the hurly \*, death itself awakes? Can'st thou, O partial sleep! give thy repose To the wet sea-boy in an hour so rude; And, in the calmest and most stillest night, With all appliances and means to boot, Deny it to a king? Then, happy low, lie down! Uneasy lies the head that wears a crown.

[*Enter WARWICK and SURREY.*]

*War.* Many good morrows to your majesty!

*K. Hen.* Is it good morrow, lords?

*War.* 'Tis one o'clock, and past. [my lords.]

*K. Hen.* Why then, good morrow to you all, Have you read o'er the letters that I sent you?

*War.* We have, my liege. [kingdom]

*K. Hen.* Then you perceive, the body of our How foul it is; what rank diseases grow, And with what danger, near the heart of it.

*War.* It is but as a body, yet distemper'd; Which to his former strength may be restored, With good advice, and little medicine:—My lord Northumberland will soon be cool'd.

*K. Hen.* O heaven! that one might read the book of fate,

And see the revolution of the times Make mountains level, and the continent (Weary of solid firmness), melt itself Into the sea! and, other times, to see

The bechy girdle of the ocean Too wide for Neptune's hips; how chances And changes fill the cup of alteration [mock, With divers liquors! O, if this were seen, The happiest youth,—viewing his progress through,

What perils past, what crosses to ensue,— Would shut the book, and sit him down and die.

'Tis not ten years gone, [friends, Since Richard, and Northumberland, great Did feast together, and, in two years after, Were they at wars: It is but eight years, since This Percy was the man nearest my soul; Who like a brother toil'd in my affairs, And laid his love and life under my foot; Yea, for my sake, even to the eyes of Richard, Gave him defiance. But which of you was by, (You, cousin Nevil, as I may remember),

[*To WARWICK.*]

When Richard,—with his eye brimful of tears, Then check'd and rated by Northumberland,— Did speak these words, now proved a prophecy?

*Northumberland, thou ladder, by the which My cousin Bolingbroke ascends my throne; Though then, heaven knows, I had no such in- But that necessity so low'd the state, [tent; That I and greatness were compell'd to kiss:— The time shall come, thus did he follow it, The time will come, that foul sin, gathering head,*

*Shall break into corruption*—so went on, Foretelling this same time's condition, And the division of our amity.

*War.* There is a history in all men's lives, Figuring the nature of the times deceased. The which observed, a man may prophesy, With a near aim, of the main chance of things As yet not come to life; which in their seeds, And weak beginnings, lie entreaured. [time; Such things become the hatch and brood of And, by the necessary form of this, King Richard might create a perfect guess, That great Northumberland, then false to him, Would, of that seed, grow to a greater falseness; Which should not find a ground to root upon, Unless on you.

*K. Hen.* Are these things then necessities? Then let us meet them like necessities:— And that same word even now cries out on us; They say, the bishop and Northumberland

\* Noise.

† Those in lowly situations.

Are fifty thousand strong.

*War.* It cannot be, my lord ; Rumour doth double, like the voice and echo, The numbers of the fear'd :—Please it your To go to bed ; upon my life, my lord, [grace, The powers that you already have sent forth, Shall bring this prize in very easily.

To comfort you the more, I have received A certain instance, that Glendower is dead. Your majesty hath been this fortnight ill ; And these unseason'd hours, perforce, must add Unto your sickness.

*K. Hen.* I will take your counsel : And, were these inward wars once out of hand, We would, dear lords, unto the Holy Land.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *Court before Justice Shallow's House in Gloucestershire.*

*Enter SHALLOW and SILENCE, meeting ; MOULDY, SHADOW, WART, FEEBLE, BULL-CALF, and Servants, behind.*

*Shal.* Come on, come on, come on ; give me your hand, sir, give me your hand, sir : an early stirrer, by the rood \*. And how doth my good cousin Silence ?

*Sil.* Good morrow, good cousin Shallow.

*Shal.* And how doth my cousin, your bed-fellow ? and your fairest daughter, and mine, my god-daughter Ellen ?

*Sil.* Alas ! a black ouzel, cousin Shallow.

*Shal.* By yea and nay, sir, I dare say my cousin William is become a good scholar : He is at Oxford, still, is he not ?

*Sil.* Indeed, sir ; to my cost.

*Shal.* He must then to the inns of court shortly : I was once of Clement's-inn ; where, I think, they will talk of mad Shallow yet.

*Sil.* You were called—lusty Shallow, then, cousin.

*Shal.* By the mass, I was called any thing ; and I would have done any thing, indeed, and roundly too. There was I, and little John Doit of Staffordshire, and black George Bare, and Francis Pickbone, and Will Squele a Cotswold man,—you had not four such swinge-bucklers † in all the inns of court again : and, I may say to you, we knew where the bonarobas ‡ were ; and had the best of them all at commandment. Then was Jack Falstaff, now sir John, a boy ; and page to Thomas Mowbray, duke of Norfolk.

*Sil.* This sir John, cousin, that comes hither anon about soldiers ?

*Shal.* The same sir John, the very same. I saw him break Skogan's head at the court gate, when he was a crack §, not thus high : and the very same day did I fight with one Sampson Stockfish, a fruiterer, behind Gray's-inn. O, the mad days that I have spent ! and to see how many of mine old acquaintance are dead !

*Sil.* We shall all follow, cousin.

*Shal.* Certain, 'tis certain ; very sure, very sure : death, as the Psalmist saith, is certain

to all ; all shall die. How good a yoke of bullocks at Stamford fair ?

*Sil.* Truly, cousin, I was not there.

*Shal.* Death is certain.—Is old Double of your town living yet ?

*Sil.* Dead, sir.

*Shal.* Dead !—See, see !—he drew a good bow ;—And dead !—he shot a fine shoot :—John of Gaunt loved him well, and betted much money on his head. Dead !—he would have clapped ¶ the clout at twelve score || ; and carried you a forehand shaft a fourteen and fourteen and a half, that it would have done a man's heart good to see.—How a score of ewes now ?

*Sil.* Thereafter as they be : a score of good ewes may be worth ten pounds.

*Shal.* And is old Double dead !

*Enter BARDOLPH, and one with him.*

*Sil.* Here come two of sir John Falstaff's men as I think.

*Bard.* Good morrow, honest gentlemen : I beseech you, which is justice Shallow ?

*Shal.* I am Robert Shallow, sir ; a poor esquire of this county, and one of the king's justices of the peace : What is your good pleasure with me ?

*Bard.* My captain, sir, commends him to you : my captain, sir John Falstaff : a tall ¶ gentleman, by heaven, and a most gallant leader.

*Shal.* He greets me well, sir ; I knew him a good backsword man : How doth the good knight ? may I ask, how my lady his wife doth ?

*Bard.* Sir, pardon ; a soldier is better accommodated, than with a wife.

*Shal.* It it well said, in faith, sir ; and it is well said in deed too. Better accommodated !—it is good ; yea, indeed, it is : good phrases are surely, and ever were, very commendable. Accommodated !—it comes from *accommodo*. very good : a good phrase.

*Bard.* Pardon me, sir ; I have heard the word. Phrase, call you it ? By this good day, I know not the phrase : but I will maintain the word with my sword, to be a soldier-like word, and a word of exceeding good command. Accommodated ; That is, when a man is, as they say, accommodated : or, when a man is,—being,—whereby,—he may be thought to be accommodated ; which is an excellent thing.

*Enter FALSTAFF.*

*Shal.* It is very just :—Look, here comes good sir John.—Give me your good hand : give me your worship's good hand : By my troth, you look well, and bear your years very well : welcome, good sir John.

*Fal.* I am glad to see you well, good master Robert Shallow :—Master Sure-card, as I think.

*Shal.* No, sir John ; it is my cousin Silence, in commission with me.

*Fal.* Good master Silence, it well befits you should be of the peace.

Cross.

† Rakes or rioters.

‡ Ladies of pleasure

§ Boy.

|| Hit the

white mark at twelve score yards.

¶ Brave.



*Sh.* Your good worship is welcome.

*Fal.* Fie! this is hot weather.—Gentlemen, have you provided me here half a dozen sufficient men?

*Sil.* Marry, have we, sir. Will you sit?

*Fal.* Let me see them, I beseech you.

*Shal.* Where's the roll? where's the roll? where's the roll?—Let me see, let me see. So, so, so, so: Yea, marry, sir:—Ralph Mouldy:—let them appear as I call; let them do so, let them do so.—Let me see; Where is Mouldy?

*Moul.* Here, an't please you.

*Shal.* What think you, sir John? a good-climbed fellow: young, strong, and of good friends.

*Fal.* Is thy name Mouldy?

*Moul.* Yea, an't please you.

*Fal.* 'Tis the more time thou wert used.

*Shal.* Ha, ha, ha! most excellent, i'faith! things, that are mouldy, lack use: Very singular good!—In faith, well said, sir John; very well said.

*Fal.* Prick him. [To SHALLOW.

*Moul.* I was pricked well enough before, an' <sup>an</sup> could have let me alone: my old dame will be undone now, for one to do her husbandry, and her drudgery: you need not to have pricked me; there are other men fitter to go out than I.

*Fal.* Go to; peace, Mouldy, you shall go. Mouldy, it is time you were spent.

*Moul.* Spent!

*Shal.* Peace, fellow, peace; stand aside; Know you where you are?—For the other, sir John:—let me see;—Simon Shadow!

*Fal.* Ay marry, let me have him to sit under: he's like to be a cold soldier.

*Shal.* Where's Shadow?

*Shad.* Here, sir.

*Fal.* Shadow, whose son art thou?

*Shad.* My mother's son, sir.

*Fal.* Thy mother's son! like enough; and thy father's shadow: so the son of the female is the shadow of the male: It is often so, indeed; but not much of the father's substance.

*Shal.* Do you like him, sir John?

*Fal.* Shadow will serve for summer,—prick him;—for we have a number of shadows to fill up the muster-book.

*Shal.* Thomas Wart!

*Fal.* Where's he?

*Wart.* Here, sir.

*Fal.* Is thy name Wart?

*Wart.* Yea, sir.

*Fal.* Thou art a very ragged wart.

*Shal.* Shall I prick him, sir John?

*Fal.* It were superfluous; for his apparel is quilt upon his back, and the whole frame stands upon pins: prick him no more.

*Shal.* Ha, ha, ha!—you can do it, sir; you can do it. I commend you well.—Francis Feeble.

*Fee.* Here, sir.

*Fal.* What trade art thou, Feeble?

*Fee.* A woman's tailor, sir.

*Shal.* Shall I prick him, sir?

*Fal.* You may: but if he had been a

man's tailor, he would have pricked you.—Wilt thou make as many holes in an enemy's battle, as thou hast done in a woman's petticoat?

*Fee.* I will do my good will, sir; you can have no more.

*Fal.* Well said, good woman's tailor! well said, courageous Feeble! Thou wilt be as valiant as the wrathful dove, or most magnanimous mouse.—Prick the woman's tailor well, master Shallow; deep, master Shallow.

*Fee.* I would Wart might have gone, sir.

*Fal.* I would thou wert a man's tailor; that thou might'st mend him, and make him fit to go. I cannot put him to a private soldier, that is the leader of so many thousands: Let that suffice, most forcible Feeble.

*Fee.* It shall suffice, sir.

*Fal.* I am bound to thee, reverend Feeble.

Who is next?

*Shal.* Peter Bull-calf of the green!

*Fal.* Yea, marry, let us see Bull-calf.

*Bull.* Here, sir.

*Fal.* 'Fore God, a likely fellow!—Come, prick me Bull-calf till he roar again.

*Bull.* O lord! good my lord captain!

*Fal.* What, dost thou roar before thou art pricked?

*Bull.* O lord, sir! I am a diseased man.

*Fal.* What disease hast thou?

*Bull.* A whoreson cold, sir; a cough, sir; which I caught with ringing in the king's affairs, upon his coronation-day, sir.

*Fal.* Come, thou shalt go to the wars in a gown; we will have away thy cold; and I will take such order, that thy friends shall ring for thee.—Is here all?

*Shal.* Here is two more called than your number; you must have but four here, sir;—and so, I pray you, go in with me to dinner.

*Fal.* Come, I will go drink with you, but I cannot tarry dinner. I am glad to see you, in good troth, master Shallow.

*Shal.* O, sir John, do you remember since we lay all night in the windmill in Saint George's fields.

*Fal.* No more of that, good master Shallow, no more of that.

*Shal.* Ha, it was a merry night. And is Jane Night-work alive?

*Fal.* She lives, master Shallow.

*Shal.* She never could away with me.

*Fal.* Never, never: she would always say, she could not abide master Shallow.

*Shal.* By the mass, I could anger her to the heart. She was then a bona-roba. Doth she hold her own well?

*Fal.* Old, old, master Shallow.

*Shal.* Nay, she must be old; she cannot choose but be old; certain she's old; and had Robin Night-work by old Night-work, before I came to Clement's-inn.

*Sil.* That's fifty-five year ago.

*Shal.* Ha, cousin Silence, that thou hadst seen that that this knight and I have seen!—Ha, sir John, said I well.

*Fal.* We have heard the chimes at midnight, master Shallow.

*Shal.* That we have, that we have, that we have; in faith, sir John, we have; our watchword was, *Hem, boys!*—Come, let's to dinner; come, let's to dinner:—O, the days that we have seen!—Come, come.

[*Exeunt FALSTAFF, SHALLOW, and SILENCE.*]

*Bull.* Good master corporate Bardolph, stand my friend; and here is four Harry ten shillings in French crowns for you. In very truth, sir, I had as lief be hanged, sir, as go: and yet, for mine own part, sir, I do not care; but, rather, because I am unwilling, and, for mine own part, have a desire to stay with my friends; else, sir, I did not care, for mine own part, so much.

*Bard.* Go to; stand aside.

*Moul.* And good master corporal captain, for my old dame's sake, stand my friend: she has nobody to do any thing about her, when I am gone: and she is old, and cannot help herself: you shall have forty, sir.

*Bard.* Go to; stand aside.

*Fee.* By my troth I care not; a man can die but once;—we owe God a death;—I'll ne'er bear a base mind:—an't be my destiny, so; an't be not, so: No man's too good to serve his prince; and, let it go which way it will, he that dies this year is quit for the next.

*Bard.* Well said; thou'rt a good fellow.

*Fee.* 'Faith, I'll bear no base mind.

[*Re-enter FALSTAFF and JUSTICES.*]

*Fal.* Come, sir, which men shall I have?

*Shal.* Four, of which you please.

*Bard.* Sir, a word with you:—I have three pound to free Mouldy and Bull-calf.

*Fal.* Go to; well.

*Shal.* Come, sir John, which four will you have?

*Fal.* Do you choose for me.

*Shal.* Marry then,—Mouldy, Bull-calf, Feeble, and Shadow.

*Fal.* Mouldy and Bull-calf:—For you, Mouldy, stay at home still, you are past service:—and, for your part, Bull-calf,—grow till you come unto it; I will none of you.

*Shal.* Sir John, sir John, do not yourself wrong: they are your likeliest men, and I would have you served with the best.

*Fal.* Will you tell me, master Shallow, how to choose a man? Care I for the limb, the thewes, the stature, bulk, and big assemblance of a man! Give me the spirit, master Shallow.—Here's Wart;—you see what a ragged appearance it is: he shall charge you, and discharge you, with the motion of a pewterer's hammer; come off, and on, swifter than he that gibbets-on the brewer's bucket. And this same half-faced fellow, Shadow,—give me this man; he presents no mark to the enemy; the foeman may with as great aim level at the edge of a penknife: And, for a retreat, now swiftly will this Feeble, the woman's tail r, run off! O, give me the spare men, and

spare me the great ones. Put me a caliver† into Wart's hand, Bardolph.

*Bard.* Hold, Wart, traverse; thus, thus, thus.

*Fal.* Come, manage me your caliver. So:—very well:—go to:—very good:—exceeding good.—O, give me always a little, lean, old, chapped, bald shot\$.—Well said, i'faith, Wart; thou'rt a good scab: hold, there's a tester for thee.

*Shal.* He is not his craft's-master, he doth not do it right. I remember at Mile-end green, (when I lay at Clement's inn,—I was then sir Dagonet in Arthur's show||,) there was a little quiver fellow, and 'a would manage you his piece thus: and 'a would about, and about, and come you in, and come you in: *rah, tah, tah*, would 'a say; *bounce*, would 'a say; and away again would 'a go, and again would 'a come:—I shall never see such a fellow.

*Fal.* These fellows will do well, master Shallow.—God keep you, master Silence; I will not use many words with you:—Fare you well, gentlemen both: I thank you: I must a dozen mile to night.—Bardolph, give the soldiers coats.

*Shal.* Sir John, heaven bless you, and prosper your affairs, and send us peace! As you return, visit my house; let our old acquaintance be renewed: peradventure, I will wita you to the court.

*Fal.* I would you would, master Shallow.

*Shal.* Go to; I have spoke, at a word. Fare you well.

[*Exeunt SHALLOW and SILENCE.*]

*Fal.* Fare you well, gentle gentlemen. On, Bardolph; lead the men away. [*Exeunt BARDOLPH, Recruits, &c.*] As I return, I will fetch off these justices. I do see the bottom of justice Shallow. Lord, lord, how subject we old men are to this vice of lying! This same starved justice hath done nothing but prate to me of the wildness of his youth, and the feats he hath done about Turnbull-street¶; and every third word a lie, duer paid to the hearer than the Turk's tribute. I do remember him at Clement's inn, like a man made after supper of a cheese-paring: when he was naked, he was, for all the world, like a forked radish, with a head fantastically carved upon it with a knife: he was so forlorn, that his dimensions to any thick sight were invisible: he was the very Genius of famine, yet lecherous as a monkey, and the whores called him—mandrake: he came ever in the rearward of the fashion; and sung those tunes to the over-scuted husswives that he heard the carmen whistle, and swear—they were his fancies, or his good-nights\*\*. And now is this Vice's dagger† become a squire; and talks as familiarly of John of Gaunt, as if he had been sworn brother to him: and I'll be sworn he never saw him but once in the Tilt-yard; and then he burst‡ his head for crowding among the marshal's men. I saw

\* Enemy.

† Gun.

‡ March.

§ Shooter.

|| An exhibition of archery.

¶ In Clerkenwell.

\*\* Titles of little poems.

†† A wooden dagger, like that used by the modern Harlequin.

‡‡ Broke.

t, and told John of Gaunt, he beat his own name \*: for you might have truss'd him, and all his apparel, into an eel-skin; the case of a treble haut-boy was a mansion for him, a court; and now has he land and beeves. Well; I will be acquainted with him, if I re-

turn: and it shall go hard, but I will make him a philosopher's two stones to me: If the young dace be a bait for the old pike, I see no reason, in the law of nature, but I may snap at him. Let time shape, and there an end.

[Exit.

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. A Forest in Yorkshire.

Enter the Archbishop of York, Mowbray, Hastings, and Others.

Arch. What is this forest call'd?

Hast. 'Tis Gualtree forest, an't shall please your grace. [covers forth,

Arch. Here stand, my lords; and send disco To know the numbers of our enemies.

Hast. We have sent forth already.

Arch. 'Tis well done.

My friends, and brethren in these great affairs, I must acquaint you that I have received New-dated letters from Northumberland; Their cold intent, tenour, and substance, thus:— Here doth he wish his person, with such powers As might hold sortance† with his quality, The which he could not levy; whereupon He is retired, to ripe his growing fortunes, To Scotland: and concludes in hearty prayers, That your attempts may overlive the hazard, And fearful meeting of their opposite.

Mowb. Thus do the hopes we have in him touch ground,

And dash themselves to pieces.

Enter a Messenger.

Hast. Now, what news?

Mess. West of this forest, scarcely off a In goodly form comes on the enemy: [mile, And, by the ground they hide, I judge their number

Upon, or near, the rate of thirty thousand.

Mowb. The just proportion that we gave them out.

Let us sway on, and face them in the field.

Enter WESTMORELAND.

Arch. What well-appointed‡ leader fronts us here? [land.

Mowb. I think it is my lord of Westmore- West. Health and fair greeting from our general,

The prince, lord John and duke of Lancaster.

Arch. Say on, my lord of Westmoreland, What doth concern your coming? [in peace;

West. Then, my lord, Unto your grace do I in chief address

The substance of my speech. If that rebellion came like itself, in base and abject routs, Led on by bloody youth, guarded with rage, And countenanced by boys, and beggary;

I say, if damn'd commotion so appear'd, In his true, native, and most proper shape, You, reverend father, and these noble lords, Had not been here, to dress the ugly form Of base and bloody insurrection With your fair honours. You, lord archbishop,

Whose see is by a civil peace maintain'd; Whose beard the silver hand of peace hath touch'd;

[tutor'd;

Whose learning and good letters peace hath Whose white investments figure innocence,

The dove and very blessed spirit of peace,— Wherefore do you so ill translate yourself,

Out of the speech of peace, that bears such grace, Into the harsh and boist'rous tongue of war?

Turning your books to graves, your ink to blood, Your pens to lances; and your tongue divine

To a loud trumpet, and a point of war?

Arch. Wherefore do I this?—so the question stands.

Briefly to this end:—We are all diseased; And, with our surfeiting, and wanton hours,

Have brought ourselves into a burning fever, And we must bleed for it: of which disease

Our late king, Richard, being infected, died. But, my most noble lord of Westmoreland,

I take not on me here as a physician; Nor do I, as an enemy to peace,

Troop in the throngs of military men: But rather, show awhile like fearful war,

To diet rank minds, sick of happiness; And purge the obstructions, which begin to stop

Our very veins of life. Hear me more plainly. I have in equal balance justly weigh'd

What wrongs our arms may do, what wrongs we suffer,

And find our griefs§ heavier than our offences. We see which way the stream of time doth run;

And are enforced from our most quiet sphere, By the rough torrent of occasion:

And have the summary of all our griefs, When time shall serve, to show in articles;

Which, long ere this, we offer'd to the king, And might by no suit gain our audience:

When we are wrong'd, and would unfold our We are denied access unto his person, [griefs

Even by those men that most have done us wrong.

The dangers of the days but newly gone, (Whose memory is yet written on the earth

With yet-appearing blood,) and the examples Of every minute's instance, (present now,)

Have put us in these ill-beseeming arms: Not to break peace, or any branch of it;

But to establish here a peace indeed, Concurring both in name and quality.

West. Whenever yet was your appeal denied?

Wherein have you been galled by the king? What peer has been suborn'd to grate on you?

That you should seal this lawless bloody book On forged rebellion with a seal divine,

\* Gaunt is thin, slender.

† Be suitable.

‡ Completely accounted.

§ Grievances



And consecrate commotion's bitter edge?

*Arch.* My brother general, the common-wealth,

To brother born an household cruelty,  
I make my quarrel in particular.

*West.* There is no need of any such redress;  
Or, if there were, it not belongs to you. [all,

*Mowb.* Why not to him, in part; and to us  
That feel the bruises of the days before;  
And suffer the condition of these times  
To lay a heavy and unequal hand  
Upon our honours?

*West.* O my good lord Mowbray,  
Construe the times to their necessities,  
And you shall say indeed,—it is the time  
And not the king, that doth you injuries.  
Yet, for your part, it not appears to me,  
Either from the king, or in the present time,  
That you should have an inch of any ground  
To build a grief on: Were you not restored  
To all the duke of Norfolk's signiories,  
Your noble and right-well-remember'd fa-  
ther's? [ther lost,

*Mowb.* What thing, in honour, had my fa-  
ther that need to be revived, and breathed in me?  
The king, that loved him, as the state stood  
then,

Was, for cease perforce, compell'd to banish him:  
And then when Harry Bolingbroke, and he,—  
Being mounted, and both roused in their seats,  
Their neighing coursers daring of the spur,  
Their armed staves \* in charge, their beaverst  
down, [steel,

Their eyes of fire sparkling through sights † of  
And the loud trumpet blowing them together;  
Then, then, when there was nothing could have  
stay'd

My father from the breast of Bolingbroke,  
O, when the king did throw his warder § down,  
His own life hung upon the staff he threw:  
Then threw he down himself; and all their  
lives,

That, by indictment, and by dint of sword,  
Have since miscarried under Bolingbroke.

*West.* You speak, lord Mowbray, now you  
know not what:

The earl of Hereford was reputed then  
In England the most valiant gentleman;  
Who knows, on whom fortune would then  
have smiled?

But, if your father had been victor there,  
He ne'er had borne it out of Coventry:  
For all the country, in a general voice,  
Cried hate upon him; and all their prayers,  
and love,

Were set on Hereford, whom they doted on,  
And bless'd, and graced indeed, more than  
the king.

But this is mine digression from my purpose.  
Here come I from our princely general,  
To know your griefs; to tell you from his grace  
That he will give you audience: and wherein  
It shall appear that your demands are just,

You shall enjoy them; every thing set off,  
That might so much as think you enemies.

*Mowb.* But he hath forced us to compel this  
And it proceeds from policy, not love. [offer;

*West.* Mowbray, you overween ‖, to take  
it so;

This offer comes from mercy, not from fear:  
For lo! within a ken ¶, our army lies;  
Upon mine honour, all too confident  
To give admittance to a thought of fear.  
Our battle is more full of names than yours,  
Our men more perfect in the use of arms,  
Our armour all as strong, our cause the best;  
Then reason wills our hearts should be as good:  
Say you not, then, our offer is compell'd.

*Mowb.* Well, by my will, we shall admit no  
parley. [fence.

*West.* That argues but the shame of your or  
A rotten case abides no handling.

*Hast.* Hath the prince John a full commission,  
In very ample virtue of his father,  
To hear, and absolutely to determine  
Of what conditions we shall stand upon?

*West.* That is intended \*\* in the general's  
I muse †, you make so slight a question. [name

*Arch.* Then take, my lord of Westmoreland,  
this schedule ‡;

For this contains our general grievances:  
Each several article herein redress'd;  
All members of our cause, both here and hence,  
That are insinew'd to this action,  
Acquitted by a true substantial form;  
And present execution of our wills  
To us, and to our purposes, consign'd;  
We come within our awful banks §§ again,  
And knit our powers to the arm of peace.

*West.* This will I show the general. Please  
you, lords,

In sight of both our battles we may meet:  
And either end in peace, which heaven so  
frame!

Or to the place of difference call the swords  
Which must decide it.

*Arch.* My lord, we will do so.  
[Exit WEST.

*Mowb.* There is a thing within my bosom,  
tells me,  
That no conditions of our peace can stand.

*Hast.* Fear you not that: if we can make  
our peace

Upon such large terms, and so absolute,  
As our conditions shall consist upon, [tains.

*Mowb.* Ay, but our valuation shall be such,  
That every slight and false-derived cause,  
Yea, every idle, nice ¶¶, and wanton reason,  
Shall, to the king, taste of this action:  
That, were our royal faiths ¶¶ martyrs in love,  
We shall be winnow'd with so rough a wind.  
That even our corn shall seem as light as chaff,  
And good from bad find no partition.

*Arch.* No, no, my lord; Note this,—the  
king is weary

\* Lances. † Helmets. ‡ The eye-holes of helmets.

¶ Think too highly. ¶ Sight. \*\* Understood.

‡ Inventory.

§ Proper limits of reverence.

¶ The faith due to a king.

§ Truncheon.

¶ Wonder.

¶ Trivial

Of dainty and such picking \* grievances :  
 For he hath found, to end one doubt by death,  
 Revives two greater in the heirs of life.  
 And therefore will he wipe his tables † clean ;  
 And keep no tell-tale to his memory,  
 That may repeat and history his loss  
 To new remembrance : For full well he knows,  
 He cannot so precisely weed this land,  
 As his misdoubts present occasion :  
 His foes are so enrooted with his friends,  
 That, plucking to unfix an enemy,  
 He doth unfasten so, and shake a friend.  
 So that this land, like an offensive wife,  
 That hath enraged him on to offer strokes,  
 As he is striking, holds his infant up,  
 And hangs resolved correction in the arm  
 That was uprear'd to execution. [rods

*Hast.* Besides, the king hath wasted all his  
 On late offenders, that he now doth lack  
 The very instruments of chastisement :  
 So that his power, like to a fangless lion,  
 May offer, but not hold.

*Arch.* 'Tis very true ;—  
 And therefore be assured, my good lord marshal,  
 If we do now make our atonement well,  
 Our peace will, like a broken limb united,  
 Grow stronger for the breaking.

*Mowb.* Be it so.  
 Here is return'd my lord of Westmoreland.

*Re-enter WESTMORELAND.*

*West.* The prince is here at hand : Pleaseth  
 your lordship, [armies ?  
 To meet his grace just distance 'tween our  
*Mowb.* Your grace of York, in God's name  
 then set forward.

*Arch.* Before, and greet his grace :—my  
 lord, we come. [Exeunt.

## SCENE II. Another Part of the Forest.

*Enter, from one side, MOWBRAY, the Arch-  
 bishop, HASTINGS, and Others: from the  
 other side, Prince JOHN of Lancaster,  
 WESTMORELAND, Officers, and Attendants.*

*P. John.* You are well encounter'd here,  
 my cousin Mowbray :—  
 Good day to you, gentle lord archbishop ;—  
 And so to you, lord Hastings,—and to all.—  
 My lord of York, it better show'd with you,  
 When that your flock, assembled by the bell,  
 Encircled you, to hear with reverence  
 Your exposition on the holy text ;  
 Than now to see you here an iron man †,  
 Sheering a rout of rebels with your drum,  
 Turning the word to sword, and life to death.  
 That man that sits within a monarch's heart,  
 And ripens in the sunshine of his favour,  
 Would he abuse the countenance of the king,  
 Alack, what mischiefs might he set abroad,  
 In shadow of such greatness ! With you, lord  
 bishop,  
 It is even so :—Who hath not heard it spoken,  
 How deep you were within the books of God ?  
 To us, the speaker in his parliament ;  
 To us, the imagined voice of God himself ;

The very opener, and intelligencer,  
 Between the grace, the sanctities of heaven,  
 And our dull workings ‡ : O, who shall believe  
 But you misuse the reverence of your place ;  
 Employ the countenance and grace of heaven,  
 As a false favourite doth his prince's name,  
 In deeds dishonourable ? You have taken up ||,  
 Under the counterfeited zeal of God,  
 The subjects of his substitute, my father ;  
 And, both against the peace of heaven and him,  
 Have here up-swarm'd them.

*Arch.* Good my lord of Lancaster,  
 I am not here against your father's peace :  
 But, as I told my lord of Westmoreland,  
 The time misorder'd doth, in common sense,  
 Crowd us, and crush us, to this monstrous form,  
 To hold our safety up. I sent your grace  
 The parcels and particulars of our grief ;  
 The which hath been with scorn shov'd from  
 the court,

Whereon this Hydra son of war is born :  
 Whose dangerous eyes may well be charm'd  
 asleep,

With grant of our most just and right desires ;  
 And true obedience of this madness cured,  
 Stoop tamely to the foot of majesty.

*Mowb.* If not, we ready are to try our fortunes  
 To the last man.

*Hast.* And though we here fall down  
 We have supplies to second our attempt ;  
 If they miscarry, theirs shall second them :  
 And so, success ¶ of mischief shall be born ;  
 And heir from heir shall hold this quarrel up,  
 Whiles England shall have generation.

*P. John.* You are too shallow, Hastings,  
 much too shallow,  
 To sound the bottom of the after-times.

*West.* Pleaseth your grace, to answer them  
 directly,  
 How far-forth you do like their articles ?

*P. John.* I like them all, and do allow \*\*  
 them well :

And swear here by the honour of my blood,  
 My father's purposes have been unstook ;  
 And some about him have too lavishly  
 Wrested his meaning, and authority.—

My lord, these griefs shall be with speed re-  
 dress'd. [you,

Upon my soul, they shall. If this may please  
 Discharge your powers †† unto their several  
 counties,

As we will ours : and here, between the armies,  
 Let's drink together friendly, and embrace ;  
 That all their eyes may bear those tokens home,  
 Of our restored love, and amity.

*Arch.* I take your princely word for these  
 redresses.

*P. John.* I give it you, and will maintain my  
 word :

And thereupon I drink unto your grace.  
*Hast.* Go, captain, [To an Officer,] and de-  
 liver to the army [part :

This news of peace ; let them have pay, and  
 I know it will please them ; Hie thee, captain.  
 [Exit Officer

\* Piddling, insignificant.

† Book for memorandums.

‡ Clad in armour.

§ Labours of thought.

|| Raised in arms.

¶ Succession.

\*\* Approve.

†† Forces

*Arch.* To you, my noble lord of Westmoreland.

*West.* I pledge your grace: And, if you I have bestow'd, to breed this present peace, You would drink freely: but my love to you Shall show itself more openly hereafter.

*Arch.* I do not doubt you.

*West.* I am glad of it.—

Health to my lord, and gentle cousin, Mowbray.

*Mowb.* You wish me health in very happy For I am, on the sudden, something ill.

*Arch.* Against ill chances, men are ever merry;

But heaviness foreruns the good event.

*West.* Therefore be merry, coz; since sudden sorrow

Serves to say thus,—Some good thing comes to—

*Arch.* Believe me, I am passing light in spirit.

*Mowb.* So much the worse, if your own rule be true.

*P. John.* The word of peace is render'd; Hark, how they shout!

*Mowb.* This had been cheerful, after victory.

*Arch.* A peace is of the nature of a conquest; For then both parties nobly are subdued, And neither party loser.

*P. John.* Go, my lord,

And let our army be discharged too.—

[*Exit WESTMORELAND.*]

And, good my ord, so please you, let our trains \* March by us; that we may peruse the men We should have coped withal.

*Arch.* Go, good lord Hastings,

And, ere they be dismiss'd, let them march by.

[*Exit HASTINGS.*]

*P. John.* I trust, my lords, we shall lie tonight together.—

*Re-enter WESTMORELAND.*

Now, cousin, wherefore stands our army still?

*West.* The leaders, having charge from you to stand,

Will not go off until they hear you speak.

*P. John.* They know their duties.

*Re-enter HASTINGS.*

*Hast.* My lord, our army is dispersed already: Like youthful steers † unyoked, they take their courses

East, west, north, south; or, like a school broke Each hurries toward his home, and sporting place.

[*the which*]

*West.* Good tidings, my lord Hastings; for I do arrest thee, traitor, of high treason:—

And you, lord archbishop,—and you, lord Mowbray,

Of capital treason I attach you both.

[*able?*]

*Mowb.* Is this proceeding just and honour—

*West.* Is your assembly so?

*Arch.* Will you thus break your faith?

*P. John.* I pawn'd thee none:

I promised you redress of these same grievances, Whereof you did complain; which, by nine

honour,

I will perform with a most christian care.

But, for you, rebels,—look to taste the due

Meet for rebellion, and such arts as yours.

Most shallowly did you these arms commence, Fondly ‡ brought here, and foolishly sent hence. Strike up our drums, pursue the scatter'd

stray; Heaven, and not we, hath safely fought to— Some guard these traitors to the block of death, Treason's true bed, and yielder up of breath.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *Another Part of the Forest.*

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter FALSTAFF and COLEVILE, meeting.*

*Fal.* What's your name, sir? of what condition are you and of what place, I pray?

*Cole.* I am a knight, sir; and my name is— Colevile of the dale.

*Fal.* Well then, Colevile is your name; a knight is your degree; and your place, the dale: Colevile shall still be your name; a traitor your degree; and the dungeon your place,—a place deep enough; so shall you still be Colevile of the dale.

*Cole.* Are not you sir John Falstaff?

*Fal.* As good a man as he, sir, whoe'er I am. Do ye yield, sir? or shall I sweat for you? If I do sweat, they are drops of thy lovers, and they weep for thy death: therefore rouse up fear and trembling, and do observance to my mercy.

*Cole.* I think you are sir John Falstaff; and, in that thought, yield me.

*Fal.* I have a whole school of tongues in this belly of mine; and not a tongue of them all speaks any other word but my name. An I had but a belly of any indifferency, I were simply the most active fellow in Europe: My womb, my womb, my womb undoes me.—Here comes our general.

*Enter Prince JOHN of Lancaster, WESTMORELAND, and Others.*

*P. John.* The heat is past, follow no further now;—

Call in the powers, good cousin Westmoreland,

[*Exit WEST.*]

Now, Falstaff, where have you been all this while?

When every thing is ended, then you come: These tardy tricks of yours will, on my life, One time or other break some gallows' back.

*Fa.* I would be sorry, my lord, but it should be thus; I never knew yet, but rebuke and check was the reward of valour. Do you think me a swallow, an arrow, or a bullet? have I, in my poor and old motion, the expedition of thought? I have speeded hither with the very extremest inch of possibility; I have founded nine-score and odd posts: and here, travel-tainted as I am, have, in my pure and immaculate valour, taken sir John Colevile of the dale, a most furious knight, and valorous enemy: But what of that? he saw me, and yielded: that I may justly say with the hook-nosed fellow of Rome's, —I came, saw, and overcame.

*P. John.* It was more of his courtesy than your deserving.

*Fal.* I know not; here he is, and here I



yield him : and I beseech your grace, let it be booked with the rest of this day's deeds ; or, by the Lord, I will have it in a particular ballad else, with mine own picture on the top of it, Coleville kissing my foot : To the which course if I be enforced, if you do not all show like gilt two-pences to me ; and I, in the clear sky of fame, o'ershine you as much as the full moon doth the cinders of the element, which show like pin's heads to her, believe not the word of the noble : Therefore let me have right, and let desert mount.

*P. John.* Thine's too heavy to mount.

*Fal.* Let it shine then.

*P. John.* Thine's too thick to shine.

*Fal.* Let it do something, my good lord, that may do me good, and call it what you will.

*P. John.* Is thy name Coleville ?

*Cole.* It is, my lord.

*P. John.* A famous rebel art thou, Coleville.

*Fal.* And a famous true subject took him.

*Cole.* I am, my lord, but as my betters are, That led me hither : had they been ruled by me, You should have won them dearer than you have.

*Fal.* I know not how they sold themselves : but thou, like a kind fellow, gavest thyself away ; and I thank thee for thee.

*Re-enter WESTMORELAND.*

*P. John.* Now, have you left pursuit ?

*West.* Retreat is made, and execution stay'd.

*P. John.* Send Coleville, with his confederate To York, to present execution :— [rates, Blunt, lead him hence ; and see you guard him sure. [Exit some with COLEVILLE.

And now despatch we toward the court, my I hear the king my father is sore sick : [lords ; Our news shall go before us to his majesty,— Which, cousin, you shall bear, to comfort him ; And we with sober speed will follow you.

*Fal.* My lord, I beseech you, give me leave to go through Gloucestershire : and, when you come to court, stand my good lord\*, 'pray, in your good report.

*P. John.* Fare you well, Falstaff : I, in my condition †, Shall better speak of you than you deserve. [Exit.

*Fal.* I would you had but the wit ; 'twere better than your dukedom.—Good faith, this same young sober-blooded boy doth not love me ; nor a man cannot make him laugh ;—but that's no marvel, he drinks no wine. There's never any of these demure boys come to any proof : for thin drink doth so over-cool their blood, and making many fish-meats, that they fall into a kind of male green-sickness ; and then, when they marry, they get wenches : they are generally fools and cowards ;—which some of us should be too, but for inflammation. A good sherris-sack hath a two-fold operation in it. It ascends me into the brain ; dries me there all the foolish, and dull, and crudy va-

pours which environ it : makes it apprehensive, quick, forgetive, full of nimble, fiery and delectable shapes ; which delivered o'er to the voice, (the tongue,) which is the birth, becomes excellent wit.—The second property of your excellent sherris is,—the warming of the blood ; which, before cold and settled, left the liver white and pale, which is the badge of pusillanimity and cowardice : but the sherris warms it, and makes it course from the inwards to the parts extreme. It illumineth the face ; which, as a beacon, gives warning to all the rest of this little kingdom, man, to arm : and then the vital commoners, and inland petty spirits, muster me all to their captain, the heart ; who, great, and puffed up with this retinue, doth any deed of courage ; and this valour comes of sherris : So that skill in the weapon is nothing, without sack ; for that sets it a-work : and learning, a mere hoard of gold kept by a devil ; till sack commences it, and sets it in act and use. Hereof comes it, that prince Harry is valiant : for the cold blood he did naturally inherit of his father, he hath, like lean, sterile, and bare land, manured, husbanded, and tilled, with excellent endeavour of drinking good, and good store of fertile sherris ; that he is become very hot, and valiant. If I had a thousand sons, the first human principle I would teach them, should be—to forswear thin potations, and addict themselves to sack.

*Enter BARDOLPH.*

How now, Bardolph ?

*Bard.* The army is discharged all, and gone.

*Fal.* Let them go. I'll through Gloucestershire ; and there will I visit master Robert Shallow, esquire : I have him already tempering between my finger and my thumb, and shortly will I seal with him. Come away. [Exit.

SCENE IV. Westminster. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter King HENRY, CLARENCE, Prince HUMPHREY, WARWICK, and Others.*

*K. Hen.* Now, lords, if heaven doth give successful end

To this debate that bleedeth at our doors, We will our youth lead on to higher fields, And draw no swords but what are sanctified. Our navy is address'd, our power collected, Our substitutes in absence well invested, And every thing lies level to our wish : Only, we want a little personal strength ; And pause us, till these rebels, now afoot, Come underneath the yoke of government.

*War.* Both which, we doubt not, but your Shall soon enjoy. [majesty

*K. Hen.* Humphrey, my son of Gloucester, Where is the prince your brother ?

*P. Humph.* I think he's gone to hunt, my lord, at Windsor.

*K. Hen.* And how accompanied ?

*P. Humph.* I do not know, my lord

\* Stand my good friend.

† In my present temper.

‡ Inventive.

§ Brings i

into action. ¶ An allusion to the old use of sealing with soft wax. ¶ Ready, prepared.

*K. Hen.* Is not his brother, Thomas of Clarence, with him? [presence here.]

*P. Humph.* No, my good lord; he is in *Cla.* What would my lord and father?

*K. Hen.* Nothing but well to thee, Thomas of Clarence. [brother?]

How chance thou art not with the prince thy He loves thee, and thou dost neglect him, Thomas;

Thou hast a better place in his affection, Than all thy brothers: cherish it, my boy; And noble offices thou may'st effect Of mediation, after I am dead, Between his greatness and thy other brethren: Therefore, omit him not; blunt not his love: Nor lose the good advantage of his grace, By seeming cold, or careless of his will.

For he is gracious, if he be observed \*; He hath a tear for pity, and a hand Open as day for melting charity:

Yet notwithstanding, being incensed, he's flint; As humorous as winter, and as sudden As flaws congealed in the spring of day.

His temper, therefore, must be well observed: Chide him for faults, and do it reverently, When you perceive his blood inclined to mirth: But, being moody, give him line and scope: Till that his passions, like a whale on ground, Confound themselves with working. Learn this Thomas,

And thou shalt prove a shelter to thy friends; A hoop of gold, to bind thy brothers in; That the united vessel of their blood, Mingled with venom of suggestion, (As, force perforce, the age will pour it in,) Shall never leak, though it do work as strong As aconitum †, or rash gunpowder. [love.]

*Cla.* I shall observe him with all care and

*K. Hen.* Why art thou not at Windsor with him, Thomas? [London.]

*Cla.* He is not there to-day; he dines in

*K. Hen.* And how accompanied? can'st thou tell that?

*Cla.* With Poins, and other his continual followers. [weeds;]

*K. Hen.* Most subject is the fattest soil to And he, the noble image of my youth, Is overspread with them: Therefore my grief Stretches itself beyond the hour of death; The blood weeps from my heart, when I do shape,

In forms imaginary, the unguided days, And rotten times, that you shall look upon When I am sleeping with my ancestors. For when his headstrong riot hath no curb, When rage and hot blood are his counsellors, When means and lavish manners meet together, O with what wings shall his affections fly Towards fronting peril and opposed decay!

*War.* My gracious lord, you look beyond him quite:

The prince but studies his companions, Like a strange tongue: wherein, to gain the language,

'Tis needful that the most immodest word

Be look'd upon, and learn'd: which once attain'd,

Your highness knows, comes to no further use But to be known, and hated. So, like gross terms,

The prince will, in the perfectness of time, Cast off his followers: and their memory Shall as a pattern or a measure live, By which his grace must mete the lives of Turning past evils to advantages. [others;]

*K. Hen.* 'Tis seldom, when the bee doth leave her comb [land?]

In the dead carrion.—Who's here, Westmore

*Enter WESTMORELAND.*

*West.* Health to my sovereign! and new Added to that that I am to deliver! [happiness] Prince John, your son, doth kiss your grace's hand:

Mowbray, the bishop Scroop, Hastings, and all, Are brought to the correction of your law; There is not now a rebel's sword unsheath'd, But peace puts forth her olive every where. The manner how this action hath been borne, Here at more leisure may your highness read; With every course, in his particular †.

*K. Hen.* O Westmoreland, thou art a summer bird,

Which ever in the haunch of winter sings The lifting up of day. Look! here's more news.

*Enter HARCOURT.*

*Har.* From enemies heaven keep your majesty; [fall]

And, when they stand against you, may they As those that I am come to tell you of!

The earl Northumberland, and the lord Bardolph,

With a great body of English, and of Scots, Are by the sheriff of Yorkshire overthrown: The manner and true order of the fight, This packet, please it you, contains at large.

*K. Hen.* And wherefore should these good news make me sick?

Will fortune never come with both hands full, But write her fair words still in foulest letters?

She either gives a stomach, and no food,— Such are the poor, in health; or else a feast,

And takes away the stomach,—such are the That have abundance, and enjoy it not. [rich,]

I should rejoice now at this happy news; And now my sight fails, and my brain is giddy:

O me! come near me, now I am much ill. [Swoons.]

*P. Humph.* Comfort, your majesty!

*Cla.* O my royal father!

*West.* My sovereign lord, cheer up yourself, look up. [these fits]

*War.* Be patient, princes; you do know, Are with his highness very ordinary.

Stand from him, give him air; he'll straight be well. [pangs:]

*Cla.* No, no; he cannot long hold out these The incessant care and labour of his mind

Hath wrought the mure ‡, that should confine it in, [out.]

So thin, that life looks through, and will break

\* Has an attention shown him.

† Wolf's bane, a poisonous herb.

‡ The detail con-

tained in Prince John's letter.

§ Worked the wall.

*P. Humph.* The people fear me\*; for they do observe

Unfather'd heirs†, and loathly birds of nature:  
The seasons change their manners, as the year‡  
Had found some months asleep, and leap'd  
them over. [between§:

*Cla.* The river bath thrice flow'd, no ebb  
And the old folk, time's doting chronicles,  
Say, it did so a little time before  
That our great grandsire, Edward, sick'd and  
died. [covers.

*War.* Speak lower, princes, for the king re-

*P. Humph.* This apoplex will, certain, be  
his end. [me hence

*K. Hen.* I pray you, take me up, and bear  
Into some other chamber: softly, pray.

[They convey the King into an inner  
part of the room, and place him on  
a Bed.

Let there be no noise made, my gentle friends;  
Unless some dull|| and favourable hand  
Will whisper music to my weary spirit.

*War.* Call for the music in the other room.

*K. Hen.* Set me the crown upon my pillow  
here.

*Cla.* His eye is hollow, and he changes much.

*War.* Less noise, less noise.

*Enter Prince HENRY.*

*P. Hen.* Who saw the duke of Clarence?

*Cla.* I am here, brother, full of heaviness.

*P. Hen.* How now! rain within doors, and  
How doth the king? [none abroad!

*P. Humph.* Exceeding ill.

*P. Hen.* Heard he the good news yet?  
Tell it him.

*P. Humph.* He altered much upon the hear-

*P. Hen.* If he be sick [ing it.

With joy, he will recover without physic.

*War.* Not so much noise, my lords:—sweet  
prince, speak low;

The king, your father, is disposed to sleep.

*Cla.* Let us withdraw into the other room.

*War.* Will't please your grace to go along  
with us?

*P. Hen.* No: I will sit and watch here by  
the king. [Exeunt all but P. HENRY.

Why doth the crown lie there upon his pillow,  
Being so troublesome a bedfellow?

O polish'd perturbation! golden care!

That keep'st the ports¶ of slumber open wide  
To many a watchful night!—sleep with it now!

Yet not so sound, and half so deeply sweet,  
As he, whose brow, with homely biggin\*\*bound,

Snores out the watch of night. O majesty!  
When thou dost pinch thy bearer, thou dost sit

Like a rich armour worn in heat of day,  
That scalds with safety. By his gates of breath,

There lies a downy feather, which stirs not:  
Did he suspire, that light and weightless down

Perforce must move—My gracious lord! my  
father!—

This sleep is sound indeed; this is a sleep,  
That from this golden rigol†† hath divorced

So many English kings. Thy due, from me,

Is tears, and heavy sorrows of the blood;  
Which nature, love, and filial tenderness,  
Shall, O dear father, pay thee plenteously:  
My due, from thee, is this imperial crown;  
Which, as immediate from thy place and blood  
Derives itself to me. Lo, here it sits,—

[Putting it on his head.

Which heaven shall guard: And put the  
world's whole strength

Into one giant arm, it shall not force

This lineal honour from me: This from thee

Will I to mine leave, as 'tis left to me. [Exit

*K. Hen.* Warwick! Gloster! Clarence!

*Re-enter WARWICK, and the rest.*

*Cla.* Doth the king call?

*War.* What would your majesty? How  
fares your grace? [my lords'

*K. Hen.* Why did you leave me here alone,

*Cla.* We left the prince my brother here  
my liege,

Who undertook to sit and watch by you.

*K. Hen.* The prince of Wales? Where is  
he? let me see him:

He is not here.

*War.* This door is open; he is gone this way.

*P. Humph.* He came not through the cham-  
ber where we stay'd. [from my pillow.

*K. Hen.* Where is the crown? Who took it

*War.* When we withdrew, my liege, we  
left it here. [go, seek him out,

*K. Hen.* The prince hath ta'en it hence:—

Is he so hasty, that he doth suppose

My sleep my death?—

Find him, my lord of Warwick; chide him  
hither. [Exit WARWICK.

This part of his conjoins with my disease,  
And helps to end me.—See, sons, what things

How quickly nature falls into revolt, [you are!  
When gold becomes her object!

For this the foolish over-careful fathers  
Have broke their sleep with thoughts, their

Their bones with industry. [brains with care,  
For this they have engross'd and piled up

The canker'd heaps of strange-achieved gold;  
For this they have been thoughtful to invest

Their sons with arts, and martial exercises:  
When, like the bee, tolling‡‡ from every flower

The virtuous sweets; [honey,  
Our thighs packed with wax, our mouths with

We bring it to the hive; and, like the bees,  
Are murder'd for our pains. This bitter taste

Yield his engrossments.§ to the ending father.—  
*Re-enter WARWICK.*

Now, where is he that will not stay so long  
Till his friend sickness hath determined||| me?

*War.* My lord, I found the prince in the  
next room,

Washing with kindly tears his gentle cheeks;  
With such a deep demeanour in great sorrow

That tyranny, which never quaff'd but blood,  
Would, by beholding him, have wash'd his knife

With gentle eye-drops. He is coming hither.

*K. Hen.* But wherefore did he take away the  
crown?

\* Make me afraid.  
on Oct. 12, 1411.

†† Circle.

† Monsters.

|| Melancholy, soothing.

‡‡ Taking toll.

‡ As if the year.

§§ Accumulations.

§ An historical fact

¶ Gates.

\*\* Cap

||| Ended.



*Re-enter Prince HENRY.*

*L.* where he comes.—Come hither to me,  
Harry:—

Depart the chamber, leave us here alone.

[*Exit CLARENCE, Prince HUMPHREY,  
Lords, &c.*]

*P. Hen.* I never thought to hear you speak again.

*K. Hen.* Thy wish was father, Harry, to that I stay too long by thee, I weary thee.

Dost thou so hunger for my empty chair,  
That thou wilt needs invest thee with mine honours

Before thy hour be ripe? O foolish youth!  
Thou seek'st the greatness that will overwhelm  
Stay but a little; for my cloud of dignity [thee.  
Is held from falling with so weak a wind,  
That it will quickly drop; my day is dim. [hours,  
Thou hast stolen that, which, after some few  
Were thine without offence; and, at my death,  
Thou hast seal'd up my expectation\*:  
Thy life did manifest thou lov'd'st me not,  
And thou wilt have me die assured of it.  
Thou hid'st a thousand daggers in thy thoughts;  
Which thou hast whetted on thy stony heart,  
To stab at half an hour of my life.

What! canst thou not forbear me half an hour?  
Then get thee gone, and dig my grave thyself;

And bid the merry bells ring to thine ear,  
That thou art crown'd, not that I am dead.

Let all the tears that should bedew my hearse,  
Be drops of balm, to sanctify thy head:

Only compound me with forgotten dust;  
Give that which gave thee life unto the worms;

Pluck down my officers, break my decrees;  
For now a time is come to mock at form,

Harry the fifth is crown'd:—Up, vanity!  
Down, royal state! all you sage counsellors,

And to the English court assemble now, [hence!  
From every region, apes of idleness!

Now, neighbour confines, purge you of your  
scum: [dance,

Have you a ruffian, that will swear, drink,  
Revel the night, rob, murder and commit

The oldest sins the newest kind of ways?  
Be happy, he will trouble you no more!

England shall double gild his treble guilt;  
England shall give him office, honour, might:

For the fifth Harry from curb'd license plucks  
The muzzle of restraint, and the wild dog

Shall flesh his tooth in every innocent.  
O my poor kingdom, sick with civil blows!

When that my care could not withhold thy  
riots,

What wilt thou do when riot is thy care?  
O thou wilt be a wilderness again,

Peopled with wolves, thy old inhabitants!

*P. Hen.* O, pardon me, my liege! but for  
my tears, [kneeling.

The moist impediments unto my speech,  
I had forestall'd this dear and deep rebuke,

Ere you with grief had spoke, and I had heard  
The course of it so far. There is your crown;

And He that wears the crown immortally,

Long guard it yours! If I affect it more,  
Than as your honour, and as your renown,  
Let me no more from this obedience rise,  
(Which my most true and inward-dutious spirit  
Teacheth), this prostrate and exterior bending!  
Heaven witness with me, when I here came in,  
And found no course of breath within your  
majesty,

How cold it struck my heart! If I do feign,  
O, let me in my present wildness die;  
And never live to show the incredulous world  
The noble change that I have purposed!  
Coming to look on you, thinking you dead,  
(And dead almost, my liege, to think you were,)  
I spake unto the crown, as having sense,  
And thus upbraided it. *The care on thee  
depending,*

*Hath fid upon the body of my father;  
Therefore, thou, best of gold, art worst of  
gold,*

*Other, less fine in carat†, is more precious,  
Preserving life in medicine potble:†:  
But thou, most fine, most honour'd, most  
renown'd, [liege,*

*Hast cut thy bearer up.* Thus, my most royal  
Accusing it, I put it on my head;

To try with it,—as with an enemy,  
That had before my face murder'd my father,—

The quarrel of a true inheritor.  
But if it did infect my blood with joy,

Or swell my thoughts to any strain of pride;  
If any rebel or vain spirit of mine

Did, with the least affection of a welcome  
Give entertainment to the might of it,

Let God for ever keep it from my head,  
And make me as the poorest vassal is,

That doth with awe and terror kneel to it!

*K. Hen.* O my son!  
Heaven put it in thy mind, to take it hence,

That thou might'st win the more thy father's  
Pleading so wisely in excuse of it. [lov.

Come hither, Harry, sit thou by my bed;  
And hear, I think, the very latest counsel [sor,

That ever I shall breathe. Heaven knows, m  
By what by-paths, and indirect crook'd ways,  
I met this crown; and I myself know well,

How troublesome it sat upon my head:  
To thee it shall descend with better quiet,

Better opinion, better confirmation;  
For all the soil of the achievement goes

With me into the earth. It seem'd in me,  
But as an honour snatch'd with boisterous

And I had many living, to upbraid [hand;  
My gain of it by their assistances;

Which daily grew to quarrel, and to bloodshed,  
Wounding supposed peace: all these bold

Thou see'st, with peril I have answer'd [fears],  
For all my reign hath been but as a scene

Acting that argument; and now my death  
Changes the mode: for what in me was pur-

Falls upon thee in a more fairer sort; [chased\*\*,  
So thou the garland wear'st successively.

Yet, though thou stand'st more sure than I  
could do,

\* Confirmed my opinion.

† Weight.

‡ To be taken.

§ Spot, dirt.

Frights.

¶ State of things.

\*\* Purchase, in Shakspeare, frequently means  
stolen goods.

Thou art not firm enough, since griefs are green;  
 And all thy friends, which thou must make thy  
     friends, [out;  
 Have but their stings and teeth newly ta'en  
 By whose fell working I was first advanced,  
 And by whose power I well might lodge a fear  
 To be again displaced: which to avoid,  
 I cut them off; and had a purpose now  
 To lead out many to the Holy Land;  
 Lest rest, and lying still, might make them look  
 Too near unto my state. Therefore, my Harry,  
 Be it thy course to busy giddy minds [out,  
 With foreign quarrels; that action, hence borne  
 May waste the memory of the former days.  
 More would I, but my lungs are wasted so,  
 That strength of speech is utterly denied me.  
 How I came by the crown, O God, forgive!  
 And grant it may with thee in true peace live!  
*P. Hen.* My gracious liege,  
 You won it, wore it, kept it, gave it me;  
 Then plain, and right, must my possession be:  
 Which I, with more than with a common pain,  
 Gainst all the world will rightfully maintain.

*Enter Prince JOHN of LANCASTER, WARWICK, Lords, and Others.*

*K. Hen.* Look, look, here comes my John of Lancaster. [royal father!

*P. John.* Health, peace, and happiness to my

*K. Hen.* Thou bring'st me happiness, and peace, son John;

But health, alack, with youthful wings is flown  
 From this bare, wither'd trunk: upon thy sight,  
 My worldly business makes a period.—

Where is my lord of Warwick?

*P. Hen.* My lord of Warwick!

*K. Hen.* Doth any name particular belong  
 Unto the lodging where I first did swoon?

*War.* 'Tis call'd Jerusalem, my noble lord.

*K. Hen.* Laud be to God!—even there my  
 life must end.

It hath been prophesied to me many years,  
 I should not die but in Jerusalem;  
 Which vainly I supposed, the Holy Land:—  
 But, bear me to that chamber; there I'll lie;  
 In that Jerusalem shall Harry die.

[*Exeunt*

## ACT V.

SCENE I. Glostershire. A Hall in Shallow's House.

*Enter SHALLOW, FALSTAFF, BARDOLPH, and Page.*

*Shal.* By cock and pye, sir, you shall not  
 away to-night.—What, Davy, I say!

*Fal.* You must excuse me, master Robert  
 Shallow.

*Shal.* I will not excuse you; you shall not  
 be excused; excuses shall not be admitted;  
 there is no excuse shall serve; you shall not be  
 excused.—Why, Davy!

*Enter DAVY.*

*Davy.* Here, sir.

*Shal.* Davy, Davy, Davy,—let me see,  
 Davy; let me see:—yea, marry, William cook,  
 bid him come hither.—Sir John, you shall not  
 be excused.

*Davy.* Marry, sir, thus:—those precepts \*  
 cannot be served: and again, sir,—Shall we  
 sow the headland with wheat?

*Shal.* With red wheat, Davy. But for Wil-  
 liam cook:—Are there no young pigeons?

*Davy.* Yes, sir.—Here is now the smith's  
 note, for shoeing, and plough-irons.

*Shal.* Let it be cast, and paid:—sir John,  
 you shall not be excused.

*Davy.* Now, sir, a new link to the bucket  
 must needs be had:—And, sir, do you mean to  
 stop any of William's wages, about the sack he  
 lost the other day at Hinckley fair?

*Shal.* He shall answer it:—Some pigeons,  
 Davy; a couple of short-legged hens; a joint  
 of mutton; and any pretty little tiny kick-  
 shaws, tell William cook.

*Davy.* Doth the man of war stay all night,  
 sir?

*Shal.* Yes, Davy. I will use him well; A

friend i'the court is better than a penny in  
 purse. Use his men well, Davy; for they are  
 arrant knaves, and will backbite.

*Davy.* No worse than they are back-bitten,  
 sir; for they have marvellous foul linen.

*Shal.* Well conceited, Davy. About thy  
 business, Davy.

*Davy.* I beseech you, sir, to countenance  
 William Visor of Wincot against Clement  
 Perkes of the hill.

*Shal.* There are many complaints, Davy,  
 against that Visor; that Visor is an arrant  
 knave, on my knowledge.

*Davy.* I grant your worship, that he is a  
 knave, sir; but yet, God forbid, sir, but a  
 knave should have some countenance at his  
 friend's request. An honest man, sir, is able  
 to speak for himself, when a knave is not. I  
 have served your worship truly, sir, this eight  
 years; and if I cannot once or twice in a  
 quarter bear out a knave against an honest  
 man, I have but a very little credit with your  
 worship. The knave is mine honest friend,  
 sir; therefore, I beseech your worship, let him  
 be countenanced.

*Shal.* Go to; I say, he shall have no wrong.  
 Look about, Davy. [*Exit DAVY.*] Where are  
 you, sir John? Come, off with your boots.—  
 Give me your hand, master Bardolph.

*Bard.* I am glad to see your worship.

*Shal.* I thank thee with all my heart, kind  
 master Bardolph:—and welcome, my tall  
 fellow. [*To the Page.*] Come, sir John.

[*Exit SHALLOW.*

*Fal.* I'll follow you; good master Robert  
 Shallow. Bardolph, look to our horses.  
 [*Exeunt BARDOLPH and Page.*] If I were  
 sawed into quantities, I should make four  
 dozen of such bearded hermit's staves as mas-

ter Shallow. It is a wonderful thing, to see the semblable coherence of his men's spirits and his: They, by observing him, do bear themselves like foolish justices; he, by conversing with them, is turned into a justice-like serving-man; their spirits are so married in conjunction with the participation of society, that they flock together in consent, like so many wild-geese. If I had a suit to master Shallow, I would humour his men, with the imputation of being near their master: if to his men, I would curry with Master Shallow, that no man could better command his servants. It is certain, that either wise bearing, or ignorant carriage, is caught, as men take diseases, one of another: therefore, let men take heed of their company. I will devise matter enough out of this Shallow, to keep prince Harry in continual laughter, the wearing-out of six fashions, (which is four terms, or two actions), and he shall laugh without *intervallums*. O, it is much, that a lie, with a slight oath, and a jest, with a sad brow\*, will do with a fellow that never had the ache in his shoulders! O, you shall see him laugh, till his face be like a wet cloak ill laid up.

Shal. [*Within.*] Sir John!

Fal. I come, master Shallow; I come, master Shallow. [*Exit FALSTAFF.*]

SCENE II. Westminster. A Room in the Palace.

Enter WARWICK, and the Lord Chief Justice.

War. How now, my lord chief justice? whither away?

Ch. Just. How doth the king?

War. Exceeding well; his cares are now

Ch. Just. I hope, not dead. [*all ended.*]

War. He's walk'd the way of nature; And, to our purposes, he lives no more.

Ch. Just. I would, his majesty had call'd me with him:

The service that I truly did his life, Hath left me open to all injuries. [*you not.*]

War. Indeed, I think, the young king loves

Ch. Just. I know, he doth not; and do arm myself,

To welcome the condition of the time;

Which cannot look more hideously upon me Than I have drawn it in my fantasy.

Enter Prince JOHN, Prince HUMPHREY, CLARENCE, WESTMORELAND, and Others.

War. Here come the heavy issue of dead Harry:

O, that the living Harry had the temper Of him, the worst of these three gentlemen! How many nobles then should hold their places, That must strike sail to spirits of vile sort!

Ch. Just. Alas! I fear, all will be overturn'd.

P. John. Good morrow, cousin Warwick.

P. Humph. Cla. Good morrow, cousin.

P. John. We meet like men that had forgot to speak.

War. We do remember; but our argument is all too heavy to admit much talk.

P. John. Well, peace be with him that hath made us heavy!

Ch. Just. Peace be with us, lest we be heavier! [*a friend, indeed:*]

P. Humph. O, good my lord, you have lost And I dare swear, you borrow not that face Of seeming sorrow; it is, sure, your own.

P. John. Though no man be assured what grace to find,

You stand in coldest expectation:

I am the sorrier; 'would, 'twere otherwise.

Cla. Well, you must now speak sir John Falstaff fair;

Which swims against your stream of quality.

Ch. Just. Sweet princes, what I did, I did in honour,

Led by the impartial conduct of my soul; And never shall you see, that I will beg

A ragged and forestall'd remission.—

If truth and upright innocence fail me,

I'll to the king my master that is dead,

And tell him who hath sent me after him.

War. Here comes the prince.

Enter King HENRY V.

Ch. Just. Good morrow; and heaven save your majesty! [*majesty,*]

King. This new and gorgeous garment, Sits not so easy on me as you think.— [*fear;*]

Brothers, you mix your sadness with some This is the English, not the Turkish court;

Not Amurath an Amurath† succeeds, But Harry Harry: Yet be sad, good brothers,

For, to speak truth, it very well becomes you; Sorrow so royally in you appears,

That I will deeply put the fashion on, And wear it in my heart. Why then, be sad:

But entertain no more of it, good brothers, Than a joint burden laid upon us all.

For me, by heaven, I bid you be assured, I'll be your father and your brother too;

Let me but bear your love, I'll bear your cares. Yet weep, that Harry's dead; and so will I:

But Harry lives, that shall convert those tears, By number, into hours of happiness.

P. John, &c. We hope no other from your majesty.

King. You all look strangely on me:—and you most; [*To the Chief Justice.*]

You are, I think, assured I love you not. Ch. Just. I am assured, if I be measured

rightly, Your majesty hath no just cause to hate me.

King. No! How might a prince of my great hopes forget

So great indignities you laid upon me? What! rate, rebuke, and roughly send to

prison [*easy?*] The immediate heir of England! Was this

May this be wash'd in Lethe, and forgotten? Ch. Just. I then did use the person of your

father; The inage of his power lay then in me:

And, in the administration of his law, Whiles I was busy for the commonwealth,

Your highness pleased to forget my place, The majesty and power of law and justice,

\* A serious face.

† Full of wrinkles.

‡ Emperor of the Turks, died in 1593; his son, which succeeded him, had all his brothers strangled.



The image of the king whom I presented,  
And struck me in my very seat of judgment;  
Whereon, as an offender to your father,  
I gave bold way to my authority,  
And did commit you. If the deed were ill,  
Be you contented, wearing now the garland\*,  
To have a son set your decrees at nought;  
To pluck down justice from your awful bench;  
To trip the course of law, and blunt the sword  
That guards the peace and safety of your  
person: [image,  
Nay, more; to spurn at your most royal  
And mock your workings in a second body†.  
Question your royal thoughts, make the case  
Be now the father, and propose a son: [yours;  
Hear your own dignity so much profaned,  
See your most dreadful laws so loosely slighted,  
Behold yourself so by a son disdain'd;  
And then imagine me taking your part,  
And, in your power, soft silencing your son:  
After this cold consideration, sentence me;  
And, as you are a king, speak in your state‡,  
What I have done, that misbecame my place,  
My person, or my liege's sovereignty.

*King.* You are right, justice, and you weigh  
this well;

Therefore still bear the balance, and the sword:  
And I do wish your honours may increase,  
Till you do live to see a son of mine  
Offend you, and obey you, as I did.  
So shall I live to speak my father's words;—  
*Happy am I that have a man so bold,  
That dares do justice on my proper son:  
And not less happy, having such a son,  
That would deliver up his greatness so  
Into the hands of justice.*—You did commit  
For which, I do commit into your hand [me:  
The unstained sword that you have used to  
bear; [same

With this remembrance,—that you use the  
With the like bold, just, and impartial spirit,  
As you have done 'gainst me. There is my hand;  
You shall be as a father to my youth: [ear;  
My voice shall sound as you do prompt mine  
And I will stoop and humble my intents  
To your well-practised, wise directions.—  
And, princes all, believe me, I beseech you;—  
My father is gone wild into his grave,  
For in his tomb lie my affections;  
And with his spirit sadly I survive,  
To mock the expectation of the world;  
To frustrate prophecies; and to raze out  
Rotten opinion, who hath writ me down  
After my seeming. The tide of blood in me  
Hath proudly flow'd in vanity, till now:  
Now doth it turn, and ebb back to the sea;  
Where it shall mingle with the state of floods,  
And flow henceforth in formal majesty.  
Now call we our high court of parliament:  
And let us choose such limbs of noble counsel,  
That the great body of our state may go  
In equal rank with the best-govern'd nation;  
That war, or peace, or both at once, may be  
As things acquainted and familiar to us;—

In which you, father, shall have foremost  
hand.— [To the Lord Chief Justice.  
Our coronation done, we will accite||,  
As I before remember'd, all our state:  
And (God consigning to my good intents,)  
No prince, nor peer, shall have just cause to  
say,—  
Heaven shorten Harry's happy life one day.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. Glostershire. The Garden  
of Shallow's House.

*Enter FALSTAFF, SHALLOW, SILENCE,  
BARDOLPH, the Page, and DAVY.*

*Shal.* Nay, you shall see mine orchard:  
where, in an arbour, we will eat a last year's  
pippin of my own grafting, with a dish of  
caraways, and so forth: come, cousin Sil-  
ence;—and then to bed.

*Fal.* 'Fore God, you have here a goodly  
dwelling, and a rich.

*Shal.* Barren, barren, barren; beggars all,  
beggars all, sir John:—marry, good air.—  
Spread, Davy; spread, Davy; well said, Davy.

*Fal.* This Davy serves you for good uses;  
he is your serving man, and your husbandman.

*Shal.* A good varlet, a good varlet, a very  
good varlet, sir John.—By the mass, I have  
drunk too much sack at supper:—A good  
varlet. Now sit down, now sit down:—come,  
cousin.

*Sil.* Ah, sirrah! quoth-a, we shall  
Do nothing but eat, and make good cheer,  
[Singing.

*And praise heaven for the merry year;  
When flesh is cheap and females dear,  
And lusty lads roam here and there,*

*So merrily,*

*And ever among so merrily.*

*Fal.* There's a merry heart!—Good master  
Silence, I'll give you a health for that anon.

*Shal.* Give master Bardolph some wine,  
Davy.

*Davy.* Sweet sir, sit; [*Seating BARDOLPH  
and the Page at another table.*] I'll be with  
you anon:—most sweet sir, sit.—Master  
page, good master page, sit: proface¶! What  
you want in meat, we'll have in drink. But  
you must bear; The heart's all. [*Exit.*

*Shal.* Be merry, master Bardolph; and my  
little soldier there, be merry.

*Sil.* Be merry, be merry, my wife's as  
all\*\*; [Singing.

*For women are shrews, both short and tall:  
'Tis merry in hall, when beards wag all,  
And welcome merry shrove-tide.*

*Be merry, be merry, &c.*

*Fal.* I did not think, master Silence had  
been a man of this mettle.

*Sil.* Who I? I have been merry twice and  
once, ere now.

*Re-enter DAVY.*

*Davy.* There is a dish of leather-coats†† for  
you. [*Setting them before BARDOLPH*

\* Crown.

† Treat with contempt your acts executed by a representative.

‡ In your regal character and office.

§ Gravely.

|| Summons.

¶ Italian, much good

may it do you.

\*\* As all women are.

†† Apples commonly called russetines.

*Shal.* Davy,—

*Davy.* Your worship?—I'll be with you straight. [To *BARD.*]—A cup of wine, sir?

*Sil.* A cup of wine, that's brisk and fine,  
And drink unto the leman \* mine;

[Singing.

*And a merry heart lives long-a.*

*Fal.* Well said, master Silence.

*Sil.* And we shall be merry;—now comes in the sweet of the night.

*Fal.* Health and long life to you, master Silence.

*Sil.* Fill the cup, and let it come;

I'll pledge you a mile to the bottom.

*Shal.* Honest Bardolph, welcome: If thou wantest any thing, and wilt not call, beshrew thy heart.—Welcome, my little tiny thief; [To the Page.] and welcome, indeed, too.—I'll drink to master Bardolph, and to all the cavaleroes† about London.

*Davy.* I hope to see London once ere I die.

*Bard.* An I might see you there, Davy.—

*Shal.* By the mass, you'll crack a quart together. Ha? will you not, master Bardolph?

*Bard.* Yes, sir, in a pottle pot.

*Shal.* I thank thee:—The knave will stick by thee, I can assure thee that: he will not out; he is true bred.

*Bard.* And I'll stick by him, sir.

*Shal.* Why, there spoke a king. Lack nothing: be merry. [Knocking heard.] Look who's at door there: Ho! who knocks?

[Exit *DAVY.*

*Fal.* Why, now you have done me right.

[To *SILENCE, who drinks a bumper.*

*Sil.* Do me right, [Singing.

And dub me knight‡:

*Samingo* §,

Is't not so?

*Fal.* 'Tis so.

*Sil.* Is't so? Why, then say, an old man can do somewhat.

*Re-enter DAVY.*

*Davy.* An it please your worship, there's one Pistol come from the court with news.

*Fal.* From the court, let him come in.—

*Enter PISTOL.*

How now, Pistol?

*Pist.* God save you, sir John!

*Fal.* What wind blew you hither, Pistol?

*Pist.* Not the ill wind which blows no man to good—Sweet knight, thou art now one of the greatest men in the realm.

*Sil.* By'r lady, I think 'a be; but goodman Puff of Barson.

*Pist.* Puff?

Puff in thy teeth, most recreant coward base!

Sir John, I am thy Pistol, and thy friend, And helter-skelter have I rode to thee:

And tidings do I bring, and lucky joys, And golden times, and happy news of price.

*Fal.* I prythee now, deliver them like a man of this world. [base!

*Pist.* A fountra for the world, and worldlings

I speak of Africa, and golden joys.

*Fal.* O base Assyrian knight, what is thy news?

Let king Cophetua know the truth thereof.

*Sil.* And Robin Hood, Scarlet, and John.

[Sings.

*Pist.* Shall dunghill curs confront the He- And shall good news be baffled? [licons?

Then, Pistol, lay thy head in Furies' lap.

*Shal.* Honest gentlemaa, I know not your breeding.

*Pist.* Why, then, lament therefore.

*Shal.* Give me pardon, sir;—If, sir, you come with news from the court, I take it, there is but two ways: either to utter them, or to conceal them. I am, sir, under the king, in some authority.

*Pist.* Under which king, Bezonian? speak,

*Shal.* Under king Harry. [or die.

*Pist.* Harry the fourth? or fifth?

*Shal.* Harry the fourth.

*Pist.* A fountra for thine office!—

Sir John, thy tender lambkin now is king;

Harry the fifth's the man. I speak the truth:

When Pistol lies, do this; and fig me, like

The bragging Spaniard.

*Fal.* What! is the old king dead?

*Pist.* As nail in door: the things I speak, are just.

*Fal.* Away, Bardolph; saddle my horse.—Master Robert Shallow, choose what office thou wilt in the land, 'tis thine.—Pistol, I will double-charge thee with dignities.

*Bard.* O joyful day!—I would not take a knighthood for my fortune.

*Pist.* What? I do bring good news?

*Fal.* Carry master Silence to bed.—Master Shallow, my lord Shallow, be what thou wilt, I am fortune's steward. Get on thy boots; we'll ride all night:—O, sweet Pistol:—Away, Bardolph. [Exit *BARD.*]—Come, Pistol, utter more to me; and, withal, devise something, to do thyself good.—Boot, boot, master Shallow; I know the young king is sick for me. Let us take any man's horses; the laws of England are at my commandment. Happy are they which have been my friends; and woe to my lord chief justice!

*Pist.* Let vultures vile seize on his lungs also! Where is the life that late I led, say they: Why, here it is; Welcome these pleasant days. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV. London. A Street.

*Enter Beadles, dragging in Hostess QUICKLY and DOLL TEAR-SHEET.*

*Host.* No, thou arrant knave; I would I might die, that I might have thee hanged: thou hast drawn my shoulder out of joint.

*1 Bead.* The constables have delivered her over to me; and she shall have whipping cheer enough, I warrant her: There hath been a man or two lately killed about her.

*Doll.* Nut-hook, nut-hook §, you lie. Come

\* Sweet heart. † Gay fellows. ‡ He who drank a bumper on his knees to the health of his mistress was dubb'd a knight for the evening. § It should be Domingo; it is part of a song in one of Nashe's plays. § A term of reproach for a catchpoll.

an; I'll tell thee what, thou damned tripe-visaged rascal; an the child I now go with, do miscarry, thou hadst better thou hadst struck thy mother, thou paper-faced villain.

*Host.* O the Lord, that sir John were come! he would make this a bloody day to somebody. But I pray God the fruit of her womb miscarry!

*I Bead.* If it do, you shall have a dozen of cushions\* again: you have but eleven now. Come, I charge you both go with me; for the man is dead, that you and Pistol beat among you.

*Dol.* I'll tell thee what, thou thin man in a censer! I will have you as soundly swunged for this, you blue-bottle rogue†! you filthy famished correctioner! if you be not swunged, I'll forswear half-kirtles‡.

*I Bead.* Come, come, you she knight-errant, come.

*Host.* O, that right should thus overcome might! Well; of sufferance comes ease.

*Dol.* Come, you rogue, come; bring me to a justice.

*Host.* Ay; come, you starved blood-hound.

*Dol.* Goodman death! goodman bones!

*Host.* Thou atomy thou!

*Dol.* Come, you thin thing; come, you rascal!

*I Bead.* Very well. [Exeunt.]

# SCENE V. A Public Place near Westminster Abbey.

*Enter Two Grooms, strewing Rushes.*

*1 Groom.* More rushes, more rushes.

*2 Groom.* The trumpets have sounded twice.

*1 Groom.* It will be two o'clock ere they come from the coronation: Despatch, despatch. [Exeunt Grooms.]

*Enter FALSTAFF, SHALLOW, PISTOL, BARDOLPH, and the Page.*

*Fal.* Stand here by me, master Robert Shallow; I will make the king do you grace: I will leer upon him, as 'a comes by; and do but mark the countenance that he will give me.

*Pist.* God bless thy lungs, good knight.

*Fal.* Come here, Pistol; stand behind me—O, if I had had time to have made new liveries, I would have bestowed the thousand pound I borrowed of you. [To SHALLOW.] But 'tis no matter; this poor show doth better: this doth infer the zeal I had to see him.

*Shal.* It doth so.

*Fal.* It shows my earnestness of affection.

*Shal.* It doth so.

*Fal.* My devotion.

*Shal.* It doth, it doth, it doth.

*Fal.* As it were, to ride day and night; and not to deliberate, not to remember, not to have patience to shift me.

*Shal.* It is most certain.

*Fal.* But to stand stained with travel, and sweating with desire to see him: thinking of nothing else; putting all affairs else in oblivion; as if there were nothing else to be done, but to see him.

*Pist.* 'Tis *semper idem*, for *abscque hoc nihil est* §: 'Tis all in every part.

*Shal.* 'Tis so, indeed.

[liver,

*Pist.* My knight, I will inflame thy noble And make thee rage.

Thy Doll, and Helen of thy noble thoughts, Is in base durance, and contagious prison; Haul'd thither

By most mechanical and dirty hand:—

Rouse up revenge from ebon den with fell

Alecto's snake,

For Doll is in; Pistol speaks nought but truth.

*Fal.* I will deliver her.

[Shouts within, and the Trumpets sound.

*Pist.* There roar'd the sea, and trumpet-clangor sounds.

*Enter the King and his Train, the Chief Justice among them.*

*Fal.* God save thy grace, king Hal! my royal Hal!

*Pist.* The heavens thee guard and keep, most royal imp|| of fame!

*Fal.* God save thee, my sweet boy!

*King.* My lord chief justice, speak to that vain man. [what 'tis you speak?

*Ch. Just.* Have you your wits? know you

*Fal.* My king! my Jove! I speak to thee, my heart! [thy prayers;

*King.* I know thee not, old man: Fall to! How ill white hairs become a fool, and jester! I have long dream'd of such a kind of man, So surfeit-swell'd, so old, and so profane; But, being awake, I do despise my dream.

Make less thy body, hence ¶, and more thy grace; [gape

Leave gormandizing; know, the grave doth Reply not to me with a fool-born jest;—

Presume not, that I am the thing I was:

For heaven doth know, so shall the world perceive,

That I have turn'd away my former self; So will I those that kept me company.

When thou dost hear I am as I have been, Approach me; and thou shalt be as thou wast

The tutor and the feeder of my riots:

Till then, I banish thee, on pain of death,—

As I have done the rest of my misleaders,—

Not to come near our person by ten mile.

For competence of life, I will allow you,

That lack of means enforce you not to evil:

And, as we hear you do reform yourselves,

We will,—according to your strength, and qualities,— [my lord,

Give you advancement.—Be it your charge, To see perform'd the tenor of our word.—

Set on. [Exeunt King, and his Train.

*Fal.* Master Shallow, I owe you a thousand pound.

*Shal.* Ay, marry, sir John; which I beseech you to let me have home with me.

*Fal.* That can hardly be, master Shallow. Do not you grieve at this; I shall be sent for in private to him: look you, he must seem thus

to the world. Fear not your advancement; I

To stuff her out to counterfeit pregnancy. † Beadles usually wore a blue livery. ‡ Short cloaks. § 'Tis all in all, and all in every part. || Child, offspring. ¶ Henceforward.



will be the man yet, that shall make you great.

*Shal.* I cannot perceive how; unless you give me your doublet, and stuff me out with straw. I beseech you, good sir John, let me have five hundred of my thousand.

*Fal.* Sir, I will be as good as my word: this that you heard, was but a colour.

*Shal.* A colour, I fear, that you will die in, sir John.

*Fal.* Fear no colours; go with me to dinner. Come, lieutenant Pistol;—come, Bardolph;—I shall be sent for soon at night.

*Re-enter Prince JOHN, the Chief Justice, Officers, &c.*

*Ch. Just.* Go, carry sir John Falstaff to the Take all his company along with him. [Fleet;

*Fal.* My lord, my lord,——

*Ch. Just.* I cannot now speak: I will hear Take them away. [you soon.

*Pist.* *Si fortuna me tormenta, spero me contenta.* [Exeunt *FAL*, *SHAL*, *PIST*, *BARD*, Page, and Officers.

*P. John.* I like this fair proceeding of the He hath intent, his wonted followers [king's: Shall all be very well provided for; But all are banish'd, till their conversations Appear more wise and modest to the world.

*Ch. Just.* And so they are. [ment, my lord.

*P. John.* The king hath call'd his parlia-

*Ch. Just.* He hath. [expire,

*P. John.* I will lay odds, —that, ere this year We bear our civil swords, and native fire,

As far as France: I heard a bird so sing, Whose music, to my thinking, pleased the king

Come, will you hence? [Exeunt

### EPILOGUE SPOKEN BY A DANCER.

First, my fear; then, my court'sy: last, my speech. My fear is, your displeasure, my court'sy, my duty; and my speech, to beg your pardons. If you look for a good speech now, you undo me: for what I have to say, is of mine own making; and what, indeed, I should say, will, I doubt, prove mine own marring. But to the purpose, and so to the venture. —Be it known to you, (as it is very well,) I was lately here in the end of a displeasing play, to pray your patience for it, and to promise you a better. I did mean, indeed, to pay you with this: which, if, like an ill venture, it come unluckily home, I break, and you, my gentle creditors, lose. Here, I promised you, I would be, and here I commit my body to your mercies: bate me some, and I will pay you some, and, as most debtors do, promise you infinitely.

If my tongue cannot entreat you to acquit me, will you command me to use my legs? and yet that were but light payment, —to dance out of your debt. But a good conscience will make any possible satisfaction; and so will I. All the gentlewomen here have forgiven me; if the gentlemen will not, then the gentlemen do not agree with the gentlewomen, which was never seen before in such an assembly.

One word more, I beseech you. If you be not too much cloyed with fat meat, our humble author will continue the story, with Sir John in it, and made you merry with fair Catharine of France: where, for any thing I know, Falstaff shall die of a sweat, unless already he be killed with your hard opinions; for Oldcastle died a martyr, and this is not the man. My tongue is weary; when my legs are too, I will bid you good night: and so kneel down before you; —but, indeed, to pray for the queen\*.

\* Most of the ancient interludes conclude with a prayer for the King or Queen. Hence, perhaps, the *Vivant Rex et Regina*, at the bottom of our modern play-bills.

I fancy every reader, when he ends this play, cries out with Desdemona, "O most lame and impotent conclusion!" As this play was not, to our knowledge, divided into Acts by the author, I could be content to conclude it with the death of Henry the Fourth:

"In that Jerusalem shall Harry die."

These scenes, which now make the fifth Act of *Henry the Fourth*, might then be the first of *Henry the Fifth*; but the truth is, that they do not unite very commodiously to either play. When these plays were represented, I believe they ended as they are now ended in the books; but Shakspeare seems to have designed that the whole series of action, from the beginning of *Richard the Second*, to the end of *Henry the Fifth*, should be considered by the reader as one work upon one plan, only broken into parts by the necessity of exhibition.

Mr. Upton thinks these two plays improperly called the *First and Second Parts of Henry the Fourth*. The first play ends, he says, with the peaceful settlement of Henry in the kingdom by the defeat of the rebels. This is hardly true; for the rebels are not yet finally suppressed. The second, he tells us, shows *Henry the Fifth* in the various lights of a good-natured rake, till, on his father's death, he assumes a more manly character. This is true; but this representation gives us no idea of a dramatic action. These two plays will appear to every reader, who shall peruse them without ambition of critical discoveries, to be so connected, that the second is merely a sequel to the first; to be two only because they are too long to be one. —JOHNSON.

# KING HENRY V.

## Persons represented.

**KING HENRY the FIFTH.**  
 Duke of GLOSTER, } *brothers to the King.*  
 Duke of BEDFORD, }  
 Duke of EXETER, *uncle to the King.*  
 Duke of YORK, *cousin to the King.*  
 Earls of Salisbury, Westmoreland, and Warwick.  
 Archbishop of Canterbury.  
 Bishop of Ely.  
 Earl of CAMBRIDGE, } *conspirators against*  
 Lord SCROOP, } *the King.*  
 Sir THOMAS GREY, }  
 Sir THOMAS ERPINGHAM, GOWER, FLUELLEN, MACMORRIS, JAMY, *officers in King Henry's army.*  
 BATES, COURT, WILLIAMS, *soldiers in the same.*  
 NYM, BARDOLPH, PISTOL, *formerly servants to Falstaff, now soldiers in the same.*  
 Boy, *servant to them.* A Herald. Chorus.

**CHARLES the SIXTH, King of France.**  
 LEWIS, *the Dauphin.*  
 Dukes of Burgundy, Orleans, and Bourbon.  
 The Constable of France.  
 RAMBURES and GRANDPRET, *French Lords.*  
 Governor of Harfleur. MONTJOY, *a French Herald.*  
 Ambassadors to the King of England.  
 ISABEL, *Queen of France.*  
 KATHARINE, *daughter of Charles and Isabel.*  
 ALICE, *a lady attending on the Princess Katharine.*  
 QUICKLY, *Pistol's wife, an hostess.*  
 Lords, Ladies, Officers, French and English Soldiers, Messengers, and Attendants.  
*The Scene, at the beginning of the Play, lies in England; but afterwards, wholly in France.*

## Enter CHORUS.

O, for a muse of fire, that would ascend  
 The brightest heaven of invention!  
 A kingdom for a stage, princes to act,  
 And monarchs to behold the swelling scene!  
 Then should the warlike Harry, like himself,  
 Assume the port of Mars; and, at his heels,  
 Leash'd in like hounds, should famine, sword,  
 and fire, [all,  
 Crouch for employment. But pardon, gentles  
 The flat unraised spirit, that hath dared,  
 On this unworthy scaffold, to bring forth  
 So great an object: Can this cockpit hold  
 The vasty fields of France? or may we cram  
 Within this wooden O\*, the very casques†,  
 That did affright the air at Agincourt?  
 O, pardon! since a crooked figure may  
 Attest, in little place, a million;  
 And let us, ciphers to this great accompt,

On your imaginary forces‡ work:  
 Suppose, within the girdle of these walls  
 Are now confined two mighty monarchies,  
 Whose high upreared and abutting fronts  
 The perilous, narrow ocean parts asunder.  
 Piece out our imperfections with your thoughts;  
 Into a thousand parts divide one man,  
 And make imaginary puissance:  
 Think, when we talk of horses, that you see them  
 Printing their proud hoofs i' the receiving earth:  
 For 'tis your thoughts that now must deck our  
 kings,  
 Carry them here and there; jumping o'er times;  
 Turning the accomplishment of many years  
 Into an hour glass. For the which supply,  
 Admit me chorus to this history; [pray  
 Who, prologue-like, your humble patience  
 Gently to hear, kindly to judge, our play.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. London. *An Ante-chamber in the King's Palace.*

*Enter the Archbishop of Canterbury, and Bishop of Ely.*

**Can.** My lord, I'll tell you,—that self bill is urged, [reign  
 Which, in the eleventh year o' the last king's

Was like, and had indeed against us pass'd,  
 But that the scrambling and unquiet time  
 Did push it out of further question§.

**Ely.** But how, my lord, shall we resist it now? [against us

**Can.** It must be thought on. If it pass  
 We lose the better half of our possession:  
 For all the temporal lands, which men devout

\* An allusion to the circular form of the theatre.

† Helmets.

‡ Powers of fancy.

§ Debate.

By testament have given to the church,  
Would they strip from us; being valued thus,—  
As much as would maintain to the king's  
honour,

Full fifteen earls, and fifteen hundred knights;  
Six thousand and two hundred good esquires;  
And, to relief of lazars, and weak age,  
Of indigent faint souls, past corporal toil,  
A hundred alms-houses, right well supplied;  
And to the coffers of the king beside,  
A thousand pounds by the year: Thus runs  
the bill.

*Ely.* This would drink deen.

*Cant.* 'Twould drink the cup and all.

*Ely.* But what prevention? [gard.

*Cant.* The king is full of grace, and fair re-  
*Ely.* And a true lover of the holy church.

*Cant.* The courses of his youth promised it  
not.

The breath no sooner left his father's body,  
But that his wildness, mortified in him,  
Seem'd to die too: yea, at that very moment,  
Consideration like an angel came,  
And whipp'd the offending Adam out of him;  
Leaving his body as a paradise,  
To envelop and contain celestial spirits.  
Never was such a sudden scholar made:  
Never came reformation in a flood,  
With such a heady current, scouring faults;  
Nor never Hydra-headed wilfulness  
So soon did lose his seat, and all at once,  
As in this king.

*Ely.* We are blessed in the change.

*Cant.* Hear him but reason in divinity,  
And, all-admiring, with an inward wish [late:  
You would desire, the king were made a pre-  
Hear him debate of commonwealth affairs,  
You would say,—it hath been all-in-all his  
study:

List\* his discourse of war, and you shall hear  
A fearful battle render'd you in music:  
Turn him to any cause of policy,  
The Gordian knot of it he will unloose,  
Familiar as his garter; that, when he speaks,  
The air, a charter'd libertine, is still,  
And the mute wonder lurketh in men's ears,  
To steal his sweet and honeyed sentences;  
So that the art and practice part of life  
Must be the mistress to this theoretic;  
Which is a wonder, how his grace should  
glean it,

Since his addiction to courses vain:  
His companies† unletter'd, rude, and shallow;  
His hours fill'd up with riots, banquets, sports;  
And never noted in him any study,  
Any retirement, any sequestration  
From open haunts and popularity. [nettle;

*Ely.* The strawberry grows underneath the  
And wholesome berries thrive and ripen best,  
Neighbour'd by fruit of baser quality;  
And so the prince obscured his contemplation  
Under the veil of wildness; which, no doubt,  
Grew like the summer grass, fastest by night,  
Unseen, yet crescent§ in his faculty.

*Cant.* It must be so: for miracles are ceased;

And therefore we must needs admit the means,  
How things are perfected.

*Ely.* But, my good lord  
How now for mitigation of this bill  
Urged by the commons? Doth his majesty  
Incline to it, or no?

*Cant.* He seems indifferent,  
Or, rather, swaying more upon our part,  
Than cherishing the exhibitors against us:  
For I have made an offer to his majesty,—  
Upon our spiritual convocation;  
And in regard of causes now in hand,  
Which I have open'd to his grace at large,  
As touching France,—to give a greater sum  
Than ever at one time the clergy yet  
Did to his predecessors part withal. [lord?

*Ely.* How did this offer seem received, my

*Cant.* With good acceptance of his majesty;  
Save, that there was not time enough to hear  
(As, I perceived, his grace would fain have  
The severals, and unhidden passages, [done,  
Of his true titles to some certain dukedoms;  
And, generally, to the crown and seat of  
France,

Derived from Edward, his great grandfather.

*Ely.* What was the impediment that broke  
this off? [instant

*Cant.* The French ambassador, upon that  
Craved audience: and the hour, I think, is  
come,

To give him hearing: Is it four o'clock?

*Ely.* It is

*Cant.* Then go we in, to know his embassy  
Which I could, with a ready guess, declare,  
Before the Frenchman speak a word of it.

*Ely.* I'll wait upon you; and I long to hear it.  
[Exeunt.

## SCENE II. The same. A Room of State in the same.

Enter King HENRY, GLOSTER, BEDFORD,  
EXETER, WARWICK, WESTMORELAND,  
and Attendants.

*K. Hen.* Where is my gracious lord of Can-  
terbury. Not here in presence. [terbury †

*K. Hen.* Send for him, good uncle.

*West.* Shall we call in the ambassador, my  
liege? [resolved,

*K. Hen.* Not yet, my cousin; we would be  
Before we hear him, of some things of weight,  
That task our thoughts, concerning us and  
France.

Enter the Archbishop of Canterbury and  
Bishop of Ely.

*Cant.* God, and his angels, guard your sa-  
cred throne,

And make you long become it!

*K. Hen.* Sure, we thank you.  
My learned lord, we pray you to proceed;  
And justly and religiously unfold,  
Why the law Salique, that they have in France,  
Or should, or should not, bar us in our claim.  
And God forbid, my dear and faithful lord,  
That you should fashion, wrest, or bow your  
reading,

\* Listen to.

† Theory.

‡ Companions.

§ Increasing.



Or nicely charge your understanding soul  
With opening titles miscreate\*, whose right  
Suits not in native colours with the truth;  
For God doth know, how many, now in health,  
Shall drop their blood in approbation  
Of what your reverence shall incite us to: [son,  
Therefore take heed how you impawn our per-  
How you awake the sleeping sword of war;  
We charge you in the name of God, take heed:  
For never two such kingdoms did contend,  
Without much fall of blood; whose guiltless  
Are every one a woe, a sore complaint, [drops  
'Gainst him, whose wrongs give edge unto the  
swords

That make such waste in brief mortality.  
Under this conjuration, speak, my lord:  
And we will hear, note, and believe in heart,  
That what you speak is in your conscience  
As pure as sin with baptism. [wash'd

*Cant.* Then hear me, gracious sovereign,—  
and you peers,

That owe your lives, your faith, and services,  
To this imperial throne;—There is no bar  
To make against your highness' claim to France,  
But this, which they produce from Pharamond,—

*In terram Salicam mulieres nō succedant,  
No woman shall succeed in Salique land:*  
Which Salique land the French unjustly glozet,  
To be the realm of France, and Pharamond  
The founder of this law and female bar.

Yet their own authors faithfully affirm,  
That the land Salique lies in Germany,  
Between the floods of Sala and of Elbe:  
Where Charles the great, having subdued the  
Saxons,

There left behind and settled certain French;  
Who, holding in disdain the German women,  
For some dishonest manners of their life,  
Establish'd there this law,—to wit, no female  
Should be inheritor in Salique land;

Which Salique, as I said, 'twixt Elbe and Sala,  
Is at this day in Germany call'd—Meisen.  
Thus doth it well appear, the Salique law  
Was not devised for the realm of France:

Nor did the French possess the Salique land  
Until four hundred one and twenty years  
After defunction of king Pharamond,  
Idly supposed the founder of this law;  
Who died within the year of our redemption  
Four hundred twenty-six; and Charles the great  
Subdued the Saxons, and did seat the French  
Beyond the river Sala, in the year

Eight hundred five. Besides, their writers say,  
King Pepin, which deposed Childerick,  
Did, as heir general, being descended [thair,  
Of Blithild, which was daughter to king Clo-  
Make claim and title to the crown of France.  
Hugh Capet also,—that usurper the crown  
Of Charles the duke of Lorain, sole heir male  
Of the true line and stock of Charles the great,—  
To fine† his title with some show of truth,  
(Though, in pure truth, it was corrupt and  
naught),

Convey'd‡ himself as heir to the lady Lingare,

Daughter to Charlemain, who was the son  
To Lewis the emperor, and Lewis the son  
Of Charles the great. Also king Lewis the tenth  
Who was sole heir to the usurper Capet,  
Could not keep quiet in his conscience,  
Wearing the crown of France, till satisfied  
That fair queen Isabel, his grandmother,  
Was lineal of the lady Ermengare,  
Daughter to Charles the foresaid duke of  
Lorain: [great

By the which marriage, the line of Charles the  
Was re-united to the crown of France.

So that, as clear as is the summer's sun,  
King Pepin's title, and Hugh Capet's claim,  
King Lewis his satisfaction, all appear  
To hold in right and title of the female:  
So do the kings of France unto this day;  
Howbeit they would hold up this Salique law,  
To bar your highness claiming from the female;  
And rather choose to hide them in a net,  
Than amply to imbare|| their crooked titles  
Usurped from you and your progenitors.

*K. Hen.* May I, with right and conscience,  
make this claim? [reign!

*Cant.* The sin upon my head, dread sove-  
For in the book of Numbers is it writ,—  
When the son dies, let the inheritance  
Descend unto the daughter. Gracious lord,

Stand for your own; unwind your bloody flag;  
Look back unto your mighty ancestors: [tomb,  
Go, my dread lord, to your great grandsire's  
From whom you claim; invoke his warlike  
spirit, [prince;

And your great uncle's, Edward the black  
Who on the French ground play'd a tragedy,  
Making defeat on the full power of France;  
Whiles his most mighty father on a hill  
Stood smiling; to behold his lion's whelp  
Forage in blood of French nobility ¶.

O noble English, that could entertain  
With half their forces the full pride of France;  
And let another half stand laughing by,  
All out of work, and cold for action! [dead,

*E/y.* Awake remembrance of these valiant  
And with your puissant arm renew their feats:  
You are their heir, you sit upon their throne;  
The blood and courage, that renowned them,  
Runs in your veins; and my thrice-puissant  
Is in the very May-morn of his youth, [liege  
Ripe for exploits and mighty enterprises.

*Exe.* Your brother kings and monarchs of  
the earth

Do all expect that you should rouse yourself,  
As did the former lions of your blood.

*West.* They know, your grace hath cause,  
and means, and might;

So hath your highness; never king of England  
Had nobles richer, and more loyal subjects;  
Whose hearts have left their bodies here in Eng-  
And lie pavilion'd in the fields of France. [land,

*Cant.* O, let their bodies follow, my dear  
liege, [right

With blood, and sword, and fire, to win you  
In aid whereof, we of the spirituality  
Will raise your highness such a mighty sum,

\* Spurious.

† Explain.

‡ Make showy or specious.

§ Derived his title.

|| Lay open.

¶ At the battle of Cressy.

As never did the clergy at one time  
Bring in to any of your ancestors. [French;  
*K. Hen.* We must not only arm to invade the  
But lay down our proportions to defend  
Against the Scot, who will make road upon us  
With all advantages.

*Cant.* They of those marches\*, gracious so-  
shall be a wall sufficient to defend [vèreign,  
Our inland from the pilfering borderers.

*K. Hen.* We do not mean the coursing  
snatchers only,  
But fear the main intendment of the Scot,  
Who hath been still a giddy neighbour to us;  
For you shall read, that my great grandfather  
Never went with his forces into France,  
But that the Scot on his unfurnish'd kingdom  
Came pouring, like the tide into a breach,  
With ample and brim fulness of his force;  
Galling the gleaned land with hot essays;  
Girding with grievous siege, castles and towns;  
That England, being empty of defence,  
Hath shook, and trembled at the ill neighbour-  
hood. [harm'd, my liege :

*Cant.* She hath been then more fear'd† than  
For hear her but exempl'd by herself,—  
When all her chivalry hath been in France,  
And she a mourning widow of her nobles,  
She hath herself not only well defended,  
But taken, and impounded as a stray, [France,  
The king of Scots; whom she did send to  
To fill king Edward's fame with prisoner kings;  
And make your chronicle as rich with praise,  
As is the ooze and bottom of the sea  
With sunken wreck and sunless treasuries.

*West.* But there's a saying, very old and  
true,—

*If that you will France win,  
Then with Scotland first begin:*

For once the eagle England being in prey,  
To her unguard'd nest the weasel Scot  
Comes sneaking, and so sucks her princely eggs;  
Playing the mouse, in absence of the cat,  
To spoil and havoc more than she can eat.

*Etc.* It follows then, the cat must stay at  
Yet that is but a cursed necessity; [home :  
Since we have locks to safeguard necessities,  
And pretty traps to catch the petty thieves.  
While that the armed hand doth fight abroad,  
The advised head defends itself at home:  
For government, though high, and low, and  
lower,

Put into parts, doth keep in one concent;‡  
Congruing|| in a full and natural close,  
Like music.

*Cant.* True: therefore doth heaven divide  
The state of man in divers functions,  
Setting endeavour in continual motion;  
To which is fixed, as an aim or butt,  
Obedience: for so work the honey bees;  
Creatures, that, by a rule in nature, teach  
The act of order to a peopled kingdom.  
They have a king, and officers of sorts;‡  
Where some like magistrates, correct at home;  
Others, like merchants, venture trade abroad;

Others, like soldiers, armed in their stings,  
Make boot upon the summer's velvet buds;  
Which pillage they with merry march bring  
To the tent-royal of their emperor: [home  
Who busied in his majesty, surveys  
The singing masons building roofs of gold;  
The civil\*\* citizens kneading up the honey;  
The poor mechanic porters crowding in  
Their heavy burdens at his narrow gate;  
The sad eyed justice, with his surly hum,  
Delivering o'er to executors†† pale  
The lazy yawning drone. I this infer,—  
That many things, having full reference  
To one concent, may work contrariously;  
As many arrows, loosed several ways,  
Fly to one mark;  
As many several ways meet in one town;  
As many fresh streams run in one self sea;  
As many lines close in the dial's centre;  
So may a thousand actions once affect  
End in one purpose, and be all well borne  
Without defeat. Therefore to France, my liege.  
Divide your happy England into four;  
Whereof take you one quarter into France,  
And you withal shall make all Gallia shake.  
If we, with thrice that power left at home,  
Cannot defend our own door from the dog,  
Let us be worried, and our nation lose  
The name of hardiness, and policy.

*K. Hen.* Call in the messengers sent from  
the Dauphin.

[Exit an Attendant. *The King as-  
cends his Throne.*

Now are we well resolved: and,—by God's  
help;

And yours, the noble sinews of our power,—  
France being ours, we'll bend it to our awe,  
Or break it all to pieces: Or there we'll sit,  
Ruling, in large and ample empery‡‡,  
O'er France, and all her almost kingly duke—  
Or lay these bones in an unworthy urn, [doms;  
Tombless, with no remembrance over them:  
Either our history shall, with full mouth,  
Speak freely of our acts; or else our grave,  
Like Turkish mute, shall have a tongueless  
Not worshipping'd with a waxen epitaph. [mouth,  
*Enter Ambassadors of France.*

Now are we well prepared to know the plea-  
Of our fair cousin Dauphin; for, we hear, [sure  
Your greeting is from him, not from the king.

*Amb.* May it please your majesty, to give  
us leave

Freely to render what we have in charge;  
Or shall we sparingly show you far off  
The Dauphin's meaning, and our embassy?

*K. Hen.* We are no tyrant, but a Christian  
king;

Unto whose grace our passion is as subject,  
As are our wretches fetter'd in our prisons:  
Therefore with frank and with uncurbed plain  
Tell us the Dauphin's mind. [ness

*Amb.* Thus then, in few.  
Your highness, lately sending into France,  
Did claim some certain dukedoms, in the right

\* The borders of England and Scotland.

‡ Harmony.

|| Agreeing.

‡‡ Executioners.

+ General disposition.

† Different degrees.

‡‡ Dominion.

† Frightened.

\*\* Sober, grave.

Of your great predecessor, king Edward the third. [master.

In answer of which claim, the prince our says,—that you savour too much of your youth; And bids you be advised, there's nought in France,

That can be with a nimble galliard\* won; You cannot revel into dukedoms there: He therefore sends you, meeter for your spirit, This tun of treasure; and, in lieu of this, Desires you let the dukedoms, that you claim, Hear no more of you. This the Dauphin

*K. Hen.* What treasure, uncle? [speaks. *Ere.* Tennis-balls, my liege.

*K. Hen.* We are glad the Dauphin is so pleasant with us;

His present, and your pains, we thank you for: When we have matched our rackets to these balls,

We will, in France, by God's grace, play a set, Shall strike his father's crown into the hazard: Tell him he hath made a match with such a wrangler,

That all the courts of France will be disturb'd With chaces†. And we understand him well, How he comes o'er us with our wilder days, Not measuring what use we made of them. We never valued this poor seat‡ of England; And therefore, living hence||, did give ourself To barbarous license; as 'tis ever common, That men are merriest when they are from home.

But tell the Dauphin I will keep my state, Be like a king, and show my sail of greatness, When I do rouse me in my throne of France: For that I have laid by my majesty, And plodded like a man for working days; But I will rise there with so full a glory,

That I will dazzle all the eyes of France, Yea, strike the Dauphin blind to look on us. And tell the pleasant prince,—this mock of his Hath turn'd his balls to gun-stones; and his soul Shall stand sore charged for the wasteful vengeance [widows

That shall fly with them: for many a thousand Shall this his mock mock out of their dear husbands; [down;

Mock mothers from their sons, mock castles And some are yet unborn, and unborn, That shall have cause to curse the Dauphin's

But this lies all within the will of God, [scorn. To whom I do appeal; and in whose name, Tell you the Dauphin, I am coming on,

To venge me as I may, and to put forth My rightful hand in a well-hallowed cause.

So, get you hence in peace; and tell the Dauphin His jest will savour but of shallow wit, [phin, When thousands weep more than did laugh at it.—

Convey them with safe conduct.—Fare you well. [Exeunt Ambassadors.

*Ere.* This was a merry message.

*K. Hen.* We hope to make the sender blush at it. [Descends from his Throne.

Therefore, my lords, omit no happy hour, That may give furtherance to our expedition: For we have now no thought in us but France; Save those to God, that run before our business.

I therefore, let our proportions for these wars Be soon collected; and all things thought upon, That may, with reasonable swiftness, add More feathers to our wings; for, God before, We'll chide this Dauphin at his father's door. Therefore, let every man now task his thought, That this fair action may on foot be brought. [Exeunt.

## ACT II.

*Enter CHORUS.*

*Chor.* Now all the youth of England are on And silken dalliance in the wardrobe lies; [fire, Now thrive the armourers, and honour's thought

Reigns solely in the breast of every man: They sell the pasture now, to buy the horse; Following the mirror of all Christian kings, With winged heels, as English Mercuries.

For now sits expectation in the air; And hides a sword, from hilts unto the point, With crowns imperial, crowns, and coronets, Promised to Harry, and his followers.

The French, advised by good intelligence, Of this most dreadful preparation, Shake in their fear; and with pale policy Seek to divert the English purposes.

O England!—model to thy inward greatness, Like little body with a mighty heart,— [do. What might'st thou do, that honour would thee Were all thy children kind and natural! [out But see thy fault! France hath in thee found

A nest of hollow bosoms, which he¶ fills With numerous crowns: and three corrupted men,— [cond,

One, Richard earl of Cambridge; and the second, Henry lord Scroop of Masham; and the third, Sir Thomas Grey knight of Northumberland,—

Have, for the gilt\*\* of France, (O guilt indeed!) Confirm'd conspiracy with fearful France; And by their hands this grace of kings must (If hell and treason hold their promises) [die, Ere he take ship for France, and in Southampton.

Linger your patience on; and well digest, The abuse of distance, while we force a play. The sum is paid; the traitors are agreed; The king is set from London; and the scene Is now transported, gentles, to Southampton: There is the playhouse now, there must you sit: And thence to France shall we convey you safe, And bring you back, charming the narrow seas To give you gentle pass; for, if we may, We'll not offend one stomach with our play.

An ancient dance. † A place in the tennis-court into which the ball is sometimes struck.

‡ A term at tennis. § The throne.

¶ Withdrawing from the court.

‡ i. e., The king of France.

\*\* Golden money.



But till the king come forth, and not till then,  
Unto Southampton do we shift our scene.

[Exit.]

SCENE I. *The same.* Eastcheap.

Enter NYM and BARDOLPH.

Bard. Well met, corporal Nym.

Nym. Good morrow, lieutenant Bardolph.

Bard. What, are ancient Pistol and you friends yet?

Nym. For my part, I care not: I say little: but when time shall serve, there shall be smiles;—but that shall be as it may. I dare not fight; but I will wink, and hold out mine iron: It is a simple one; but what though? it will toast cheese; and it will endure cold as another man's sword will: and there's the humour of it.

Bard. I will bestow a breakfast, to make you friends; and we'll be all three sworn brothers to France; let it be so, good corporal Nym.

Nym. Faith, I will live so long as I may, that's the certain of it; and when I cannot live any longer, I will do as I may; that is my rest\*, that is the rendezvous of it.

Bard. It is certain, corporal, that he is married to Nell Quickly: and, certainly, she did you wrong; for you were troth-plight to her.

Nym. I cannot tell; things must be as they may: men may sleep, and they may have their throats about them at that time; and, some say, knives have edges. It must be as it may: though patience be a tired mare, yet she will plod. There must be conclusions. Well, I cannot tell.

Enter PISTOL and Mrs. QUICKLY.

Bard. Here comes ancient Pistol, and his wife:—good corporal, be patient here. How now, mine host Pistol?

Pist. Base tike†, calf'st thou me—host? Now, by this hand I swear, I scorn the term; Nor shall my Nell keep lodgers.

Quick. No, by my troth, not long; for we cannot lodge and board a dozen or fourteen gentlewomen, that live honestly by the prick of their needles, but it will be thought we keep a bawdy-house straight. [Nym draws his sword.] O well-a-day, Lady, if he be not drawn now! O Lord! here's corporal Nym's—now shall we have wilful adultery and murder committed. Good lieutenant Bardolph,—good corporal, offer nothing here.

Nym. Pish!

Pist. Pish for thee, Iceland dog! thou prick-eared cur of Iceland!

Quick. Good corporal Nym, show the valour of a man, and put up thy sword.

Nym. Will you shog off? I would have you *solus*. [Sheathing his sword.]

Pist. *Solus*, egreious dog! O viper vile! The *solus* in thy most marvellous face;

The *solus* in thy teeth, and in thy throat, [perdy ‡: And in thy hateful lungs, yea, in thy maw,

And, which is worse, within thy nasty mouth! I do retort the *solus* in thy bowels:

For I can take, and Pistol's cock is up,  
And flashing fire will follow.

Nym. I am not Barbason§; you cannot conjure me. I have an humour to knock you indifferently well: If you grow foul with me, Pistol, I will scour you with my rapier, as I may, in fair terms: if you would walk off, I would prick your guts a little, in good terms, as I may; and that's the humour of it.

Pist. O braggard vile, and damned furious wight!

The grave doth gape, and doting death is Therefore exhale||. [Pistol and Nym draw.]

Bard. Hear me, hear me what I say:—he that strikes the first stroke, I'll run him up to the hilts, as I am a soldier. [Draws.]

Pist. An oath of mickle might; and fury shall abate.

Give me thy fist, thy fore-foot to me give;

Thy spirits are most tall.

Nym. I will cut thy throat, one time or other in fair terms; that is the humour of it.

Pist. *Coup le gorge*, that's the word!—I thee defy again. [to get?]

O hound of Crete¶, think'st thou my spouse No; to the spital\*\* go,

And from the powdering tub of infamy Fetch forth the lazar kite of Cressid's kind††, Doll Tear-sheet she by name, and her response: I have, and I will hold, the *quondam*‡‡ Quickly For the only she; and—*Pauca*, there's enough.

Enter the Boy.

Boy. Mine host Pistol, you must come to my master,—and you, hostess;—he is very sick, and would to bed.—Good Bardolph, put thy nose between his sheets, and do the office of a warming-pan: 'faith, he's very ill.

Bard. Away, you rogue.

Quick. By my troth, he'll yield the crow a pudding one of these days: the king has killed his heart.—Good husband, come home presently. [Exit Mrs. QUICKLY and Boy.]

Bard. Come, shall I make you two friends? We must to France together; Why, the devil, should we keep knives to cut one another's throats?

Pist. Let floods o'erswell, and fiends for food howl on!

Nym. You'll pay me the eight shillings I won of you at betting?

Pist. Base is the slave that pays.

Nym. That now I will have; that's the humour of it.

Pist. As manhood shall compound; Push home.

Bard. By this sword, he that makes the first thrust, I'll kill him; by this sword I will.

Pist. Sword is an oath, and oaths must have their course.

Bard. Corporal Nym, an thou wilt be friends, be friends: an thou wilt not, why then be enemies with me too. Prythee, put up.

\* What I am resolved on.

† Clown.

‡ *Par Dieu!*

§ Name of a demon.

|| Breathe your last.

¶ Blood hound.

\*\* Hospital.

†† Of Cressida's nature; see the play of Troilus and Cressida.

‡‡ Formerly.

*Nym.* I shall have my eight shillings, I won of you at betting!

*Pist.* A noble\* shalt thou have, and present And liquor likewise will I give to thee, [pay; And friendship shall combine, and brotherhood:

[me;—  
I'll live by Nym, and Nym shall live by Is not this just?—for I shall sutler be Unto the camp, and profits will accrue. Give me thy hand.

*Nym.* I shall have my noble?

*Pist.* In cash most justly paid.

*Nym.* Well, then, that's the humour of it.

*Re-enter Mrs. QUICKLY.*

*Quick.* As ever you came of women, come in quickly to sir John: Ah, poor heart! he is so shaken of a burning quotidian tertian, that it is most lamentable to behold. Sweet men, come to him.

*Nym.* The king hath run bad humours on the knight, that's the even of it.

*Pist.* Nym, thou hast spoke the right; His heart is fractured and corroborate.

*Nym.* The king is a good king: but it must be as it may; he passes some humours, and careers.

*Pist.* Let us condole the knight: for, lambkins, we will live. [Exeunt.

SCENE II. Southampton. A Council Chamber.

*Enter EXETER, BEDFORD, and WESTMORELAND.*

*Bed.* 'Fore God, his grace is bold to trust these traitors.

*Exe.* They shall be apprehended by and by.

*West.* How smooth and even they do bear themselves!

As if allegiance in their bosoms sat, Crowned with faith, and constant loyalty.

*Bed.* The king hath note of all that they intend,

By interception which they dream not of.

*Exe.* Nay, but the man that was his bed-fellow,

Whom he hath cloy'd and graced with princely That he should, for a foreign purse, so sell His sovereign's life to death and treachery!

*Trumpet sounds.* *Enter* King HENRY, SCROOP, CAMBRIDGE, GREY, Lords, and Attendants.

*K. Hen.* Now sits the wind fair, and we will aboard. [Masham,

My lord of Cambridge,—and my kind lord of And you, my gentle knight,—give me your thoughts: [us,

Think you not, that the powers we bear with Will cut their passage through the force of Doing the execution, and the act, [France; For which we have in head + assembled them?

*Scroop.* No doubt, my liege, if each man do his best.

*K. Hen.* I doubt not that: since we are well persuaded,

We carry not a heart with us from hence,

That grows not in a fair consent with ours; Nor leave not one behind, that doth not wish Success and conquest to attend on us.

*Cam.* Never was monarch better fear'd, and loved, [subject,

Than is your majesty; there's not, I think, a That sits in heart-grief and uneasiness

Under the sweet shade of your government.

*Grey.* Even those that were your father's enemies, [you

Have steep'd their galls in honey; and do serve With hearts create of duty and of zeal.

*K. Hen.* We therefore have great cause of thankfulness;

And shall forget the office of our hand,

Sooner than quittance of desert and merit, According to the weight and worthiness.

*Scroop.* So service shall with steeled sinews toil;

And labour shall refresh itself with hope, To do your grace incessant services.

*K. Hen.* We judge no less.—Uncle of Exeter, Enlarge the man committed yesterday,

That rail'd against our person: we consider

It was excess of wine that set him on;

And, on his more advice, we pardon him.

*Scroop.* That's mercy, but too much security: Let him be punish'd, sovereign; lest example

Breed, by his sufferance, more of such a kind.

*K. Hen.* O, let us yet be merciful.

*Cam.* So may your highness, and yet punish too.

*Grey.* Sir, you show great mercy, if you give him life,

After the taste of much correction. [of me

*K. Hen.* Alas, your too much love and care Are heavy orisons 'gainst this poor wretch.

If little faults, proceeding on distemper, Shall not be wink'd at, how shall we stretch

our eye, [digested,

When capital crimes, chew'd, swallow'd, and Appear before us?—We'll yet enlarge that

man, [their dear care,

Though Cambridge, Scroop, and Grey,—in And tender preservation of our person,—

Would have him punish'd. And now to our French causes;

Who are the late \*\* commissioners?

*Cam.* I one, my lord;

Your highness bade me ask for it to-day.

*Scroop.* So did you me, my liege.

*Grey.* And me, my royal sovereign.

*K. Hen.* Then, Richard, Earl of Cambridge there is yours;— [sir knight,

There yours, lord Scroop of Masham;—and, Grey of Northumberland, this same is yours:—

Read them; and know I know your worthiness.— [ter,—

My lord of Westmoreland,—and uncle Exe- We will aboard to-night.—Why, how now, gentlemen?

What see you in those papers, that you lose So much complexion?—look ye, how they

change! [you there,

Their cheeks are paper.—Why, what read

A coin, value six shillings and eight-pence. Recompense. || Better information.

+ Force.

¶ Prayers.

† Compounded

\*\* Lately appointed

2 U 3

That hath so cowarded and chased your blood  
Out of appearance?

*Cam.* I do confess my fault;  
And do submit me to your highness' mercy.

*Grey. Scroop.* To which we all appeal.

*K. Hen.* The mercy, that was quick \* in us  
but late,

By your own counsel is suppress'd and kill'd:  
You must not dare, for shame, to talk of mercy;  
For your own reasons turn into your bosoms,  
As dogs upon their masters, worrying them.—  
See you, my princes, and my noble peers,  
These English monsters! My lord of Cam-  
bridge here,—

You know how apt our love was, to accord  
To furnish him with all appertinents  
Belonging to his honour; and this man  
Hath, for a few light crowns, lightly conspired,  
And sworn unto the practices of France,  
To kill us here in Hampton: to the which,  
This knight, no less for bounty bound to us  
Than Cambridge is,—hath likewise sworn—  
But O!

[*crnel*]  
What shall I say to thee, lord Scroop: thou  
Ingrateful, savage, and inhuman creature!  
Thou, that didst bear the key of all my counsels,  
That knew'st the very bottom of my soul,  
That almost might'st have coin'd me into gold,  
Wouldst thou have practised on me for thy use?  
May it be possible, that foreign hire  
Could out of thee extract one spark of evil,  
That might annoy my finger? 'tis so strange,  
That, though the truth of it stands off as gross  
As black from white, my eye will scarcely see it.  
Treason, and murder, ever kept together,  
As two yoke-devils sworn to either's purpose,  
Working so grossly in a natural cause,  
That admiration did not whoop at them: [in  
But thou, 'gainst all proportion, didst bring  
Wonder, to wait on treason, and on murder:  
And whatsoever cunning fiend it was,  
That wrought upon thee so preposterously,  
H'ath got the voice in hell for excellence:  
And other devils, that suggest by treasons,  
Do botch and bungle up damnation [fetch'd  
With patches, colours, and with forms being  
From glistering semblances of piety;  
But he, that temper'd † thee, bade thee stand  
up, [*treason*]  
Gave thee no instance why thou shouldst do  
Unless to dub thee with the name of traitor.  
If that some daemon, that hath gul'd thee thus,  
Should with his lion gait ‡ walk the whole  
world,

He might return to vasty Tartar § back,  
And tell the legions—I can never win  
A soul so easy as that Englishman's.  
O, how hast thou with jealousy infected  
The sweetness of affiance! Show men dutiful?  
Why, so didst thou: Seem they grave and  
learned? [*family*?]  
Why, so didst thou: Come they of noble  
Why, so didst thou: Seem they religious?  
Why, so didst thou: Or are they spare in diet;  
Free from gross passion, or of mirth, or anger;

Constant in spirit, not swerving with the blood;  
Garnish'd and deck'd in modest complement ||;  
Not working with the eye, without the ear,  
And, but in purged judgement, trusting neither?  
Such, and so finely bolted ¶, didst thou seem:  
And thus thy fall hath left a kind of blot,  
To mark the full-fraught man, and best indued \*\*  
With some suspicion. I will weep for thee;  
For this revolt of thine, methinks, is like  
Another fall of man.—Their faults are open,  
Arrest them to the answer of the law;—  
And God acquit them of their practices!

*Ere.* I arrest thee of high treason, by the  
name of Richard earl of Cambridge.

I arrest thee of high treason, by the name  
of Henry lord Scroop of Masham.

I arrest thee of high treason, by the name of  
Thomas Grey, knight of Northumberland.

*Scroop.* Our purposes God justly hath dis-  
cover'd;

And I repent my fault more than my death;  
Which I beseech your highness to forgive,  
Although my body pay the price of it.

*Cam.* For me,—the gold of France did not  
Although I did admit it as a motive, [*seduce*];  
The sooner to effect what I intended:  
But God be thanked for prevention;  
Which I in sufferance heartily will rejoice,  
Beseeching God, and you, to pardon me.

*Grey.* Never did faithful subject more  
rejoice

At the discovery of most dangerous treason,  
Than I do at this hour joy o'er myself,  
Prevented from a damned enterprise:  
My fault, but not my body, pardon, sovereign.

*K. Hen.* God quit you in his mercy! Hear  
your sentence.

You have conspired against our royal person,  
Join'd with an enemy proclaim'd, and from his  
coffers

Received the golden earnest of our death;  
Wherein you would have sold your king to  
slaughter,

His princes and his peers to servitude,  
His subjects to oppression and contempt,  
And his whole kingdom unto desolation.

Touching our person, seek we no revenge;  
But we our kingdom's safety must so tender,  
Whose ruin you three sought, that to her laws  
We do deliver you. Get you, therefore, hence,  
Poor miserable wretches, to your death:  
The taste whereof, God, of his mercy, give you  
Patience to endure, and true repentance  
Of all your dead offences!—Bear them hence.

[*Exeunt* Conspirators, guarded.  
Now, lords, for France; the enterprise whereof  
Shall be to you, as us, like glorious.

We doubt not of a fare and lucky war;  
Since God so graciously hath brought to light  
This dangerous treason, lurking in our way,  
To hinder our beginnings, we doubt not now,  
But every rub is smoothened on our way.  
Then, forth, dear countrymen; let us deliver  
Our puissance into the hand of God,  
Putting it straight in expedition

• Living.

† Rendered thee pliable.

‡ Pace, step.

§ Tartarus

|| Accomplishment.

¶ Sifted.

\*\* Endowed.



Cheerly to sea; the signs of war advance:  
No king of England, if not king of France.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. London. Mrs. QUICKLY'S  
House in Eastcheap.

*Enter* PISTOL, Mrs. QUICKLY, NYM,  
BARDOLPH, and Boy.

*Quick.* Pr'ythee, honey-sweet husband, let me bring \* thee to Staines.

*Pist.* No; for my manly heart doth yearn †. Bardolph, be blithe;—Nym, rouse thy vaunting veins; [dead,

Boy, bristle thy courage up; for Falstaff he is And we must yearn therefore.

*Bard.* 'Would, I were with him, where-some'er he is, either in heaven, or in hell!

*Quick.* Nay, sure, he's not in hell; he is in Arthur's bosom, if ever man went to Arthur's bosom. 'A made a finer end, and went away, an it had been any christom ‡ child; 'a parted even just between twelve and one, e'en at turning of the tide: for after I saw him fumble with the sheets, and play with flowers, and smile upon his fingers' ends, I knew there was but one way; for his nose was as sharp as a pen, and 'a babbled of green fields. How now, sir John? quoth I: what, man! be of good cheer. So 'a cried out—God, God, God! three or four times: now I, to comfort him, bid him, 'a should not think of God; I hoped, there was no need to trouble himself with any such thoughts yet: so 'a bade me lay more clothes on his feet: I put my hand into the bed, and felt them, and they were as cold as any stone; then I felt to his knees, and so upward, and upward, and all was as cold as any stone.

*Nym.* They say, he cried out of sack.

*Quick.* Ay, that 'a did

*Bard.* And of women.

*Quick.* Nay, that 'a did not.

*Boy.* Yes, that 'a did; and said, they were devils incarnate.

*Quick.* 'A could never abide carnation; 'twas a colour he never liked.

*Boy.* 'A said once, the devil would have him about women.

*Quick.* 'A did in some sort, indeed, handle women: but then he was rheumatic §; and talked of the whore of Babylon.

*Boy.* Do you not remember, 'a saw a flea stick upon Bardolph's nose; and 'a said, it was a black soul burning in hell-fire?

*Bard.* Well, the fuel is gone, that maintained that fire: that's all the riches I got in his service.

*Nym.* Shall we shog off? the king will be gone from Southampton.

*Pist.* Come, let's away.—My love, give me thy lips.

Look to my chattels, and my moveables:  
Let senses rule; the word is, *Pitch and Pay*;  
Trust none; [cakes,  
For oaths are straws, men's faiths are wafers,  
And hold-fast is the only dog, my duck;

Therefore, *cave to*, be thy counsellor.

Go, clear thy crystals ||—Yoke-fellows in arms,  
Let us to France! like horse-leeches, my boys;  
To suck, to suck, the very blood to suck!

*Boy.* And that is but unwholesome food, they say.

*Pist.* Touch her soft mouth, and march.

*Bard.* Farewell, hostess. [*Kissing her.*]

*Nym.* I cannot kiss, that is the humour of it; but adieu.

*Pist.* Let housewifery appear; keep close, I thee command.

*Quick.* Farewell; adieu. [*Exeunt*]

SCENE IV. France. A Room in the French  
King's Palace.

*Enter the French King attended; the Dauphin, the Duke of Burgundy, the Constable, and Others.*

*Fr. King.* Thus come the English with full power upon us;

And more than carefully it us concerns,

To answer royally in our defences.

Therefore the dukes of Berry, and of Bretagne,  
Of Brabant, and of Orleans, shall make forth,—  
And you, prince Dauphin,—with all swift despatch,

To-line, and new repair, our towns of war,  
With men of courage, and with means def-  
fendant:

For England his approaches makes as fierce  
As waters to the sucking of a gulf.

It fits us, then, to be as provident

As fear may teach us, out of late examples

Left by the fatal and neglected English

Upon our fields.

*Daup.* My most redoubted father  
It is most meet we arm us 'gainst the foe:

For peace itself should not so dull ¶ a kingdom,  
(Though war, nor no known quarrel, were in  
question

But that defences, musters, preparations,  
Should be maintained, assembled, and col-  
As were a war in expectation. [*lected,*

Therefore, I say, 'tis meet we all go forth,

To view the sick and feeble parts of France:

And let us do it with no show of fear; [land

No, with no more, than if we heard that Eng-

Were busied with a Whitsun morris-dance:

For, my good liege, she is so idly king'd,

Her sceptre so fantastically borne

By a vain, giddy, shallow, humorous youth,

That fear attends her not.

*Con.* O peace, prince Dauphin!

You are too much mistaken in this king:

Question, your grace, the late ambassadors,—

With what great state he heard their embassy

How well supplied with noble counsellors,

How modest in exception \*\*, and, withal,

How terrible in constant resolution,—

And you shall find, his vanities fore-spent ††

Were but the outside of the Roman Brutus,

Covering discretion with a coat of folly;

As gardeners do with ordure hide those roots

\* Attend.

† Grieve.

‡ A child not more than a month old.

§ Mrs. Quickly means lunatic.

|| Dry thy eyes.

¶ Render it callous, insensible.

\*\* In making objections.

†† Wasted, exhausted.

That shall first spring, and be most delicate.

*Dau.* Well, 'tis not so, my lord high constable,

But though we think it so, it is no matter :  
In cases of defence, 'tis best to weigh  
The enemy more mighty than he seems,  
So the proportions of defence are fill'd ;  
Which, of a weak and niggardly projection,  
Doth, like a miser, spoil his coat with scanting  
A little cloth.

*Fr. King.* Think we King Harry strong ;  
And, princes, look, you strongly arm to meet him.

The kindred of him hath been flesh'd upon us ;  
And he is bred out of that bloody strain \*,  
That haunted us in our familiar paths :  
Witness our too much memorable shame,  
When Cressy battle fatally was struck,  
And all our princes captived, by the hand  
Of that black name, Edward black prince of  
Wales ; [standing,

Whiles that his mountain sire,—on mountain  
Up in the air, crown'd with the golden sun,—  
Saw his heroidal seed, and smiled to see him  
Mangle the work of nature, and deface  
The patterns that by God and by French fathers  
Had twenty years been made. This is a stem  
Of that victorious stock ; and let us fear  
The native mightiness and fate of him.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Ambassadors from Henry King of  
England

Do crave admittance to your majesty.

*Fr. King.* We'll give them present audience. Go, and bring them.

[*Exeunt Mess. and certain Lords.*]

You see, this chase is hotly follow'd, friends.

*Dau.* Turn head, and stop pursuit : for  
coward dogs [to threaten,

Most spend their mouths, when what they seem  
Runs far before them. Good my sovereign,  
Take up the English short ; and let them know  
Of what a monarchy you are the head :  
Self-love, my liege, is not so vile a sin  
As self-neglecting.

*Re-enter Lords, with EXETER and Train.*

*Fr. King.* From our brother England ?

*Exe.* From him ; and thus he greets your  
majesty.

He wills you, in the name of God Almighty,  
That you divest yourself, and lay apart  
The borrow'd glories, that, by gift of heaven,  
By law of nature, and of nations, 'long  
To him, and to his heirs ; namely, the crown,  
And all wide-stretched honours that pertain,  
By custom and the ordinance of times, [know,  
Unto the crown of France. That you may  
Tis no sinister, nor no awkward claim,  
Pick'd from the worm-holes of long-vanish'd  
Nor from the dust of old oblivion raked, [days,  
He sends you this most memorable line,

[*Gives a paper.*]

In every branch truly demonstrative ;

Whiling you, overlook this pedigree :

And, when you find him evenly derived  
From his most famed of famous ancestors,  
Edward the Third, he bids you then resign  
Your crown and kingdom, indirectly held  
From him the native and true challenger.

*Fr. King.* Or else what follows ? [crown

*Ere.* Bloody constraint ; for if you hide the  
Even in your hearts, there will he rake for it :  
And therefore in fierce tempest is he coming,  
In thunder, and in earthquake, like a Jove ;  
(That, if requiring fail, he will compel ;  
And bids you, in the bowels of the Lord,  
Deliver up the crown ; and to take mercy  
On the poor souls, for whom this hungry war  
Opens his vasty jaws : and on your head  
Turns he the widows' tears, the orphans' cries,  
The dead men's blood, the pining maidens'  
groans,

For husbands, fathers, and betrothed lovers,  
That shall be swallow'd in this controversy.  
This is his claim, his threat'ning, and my mea-  
Unless the Dauphin be in presence here, [sage ;  
To whom expressly I bring greeting too.

*Fr. K.* For us, we will consider of this far-  
To-morrow shall you bear our full intent [ther :  
Back to our brother England.

*Dau.* For the Dauphin,  
I stand here for him ; What to him from Eng-  
land ? [contempt.

*Ere.* Scorn, and defiance ; slight regard,  
And any thing that may not misbecome  
The mighty sender, doth he prize you at.  
Thus says my king : and, if your father's high-  
Do not, in grant of all demands at large, [ness  
Sweeten the bitter mock you sent his majesty,  
He'll call you to so hot an answer for it,  
That caves and wombly vaultages of France  
Shall chide† your trespass, and return you  
In second accent of his ordnance. [mock

*Dau.* Say, if my father render fair reply,  
It is against my will : for I desire  
Nothing but odds with England ; to that end,  
As matching to his youth and vanity,  
I did present him with those Paris balls. [it,

*Ere.* He'll make your Paris Louvre shake for  
Were it the mistress court of mighty Europe :  
And, be assured, you'll find a difference,  
(As we, his subjects, have in wonder found),  
Between the promise of his greener days,  
And these he masters now ; now he weighs time,  
Even to the utmost grain ; which you shall read  
In your own losses, if he stay in France.

*Fr. King.* To-morrow shall you know our  
mind at full. [king

*Ere.* Despatch us with all speed, lest that our  
Come here himself to question our delay ;  
For he is footed in this land already.

*Fr. King.* You shall be soon despatch'd, with  
fair conditions :

A night is but small breath, and little pause,  
To answer matters of this consequence.

[*Exeunt*]

\* Lineage.

† Reason'd, echo.

## ACT III.

*Enter CHORUS.*

*Cho.* Thus, with imagined wing, our swift scene flies,

In motion of no less celerity [seen  
Than that of thought. Suppose, that you have  
The well-appointed king at Hampton pier  
Embark his royalty; and his brave fleet [sing.  
With silken streamers the young Phœbus fan-  
Play with your fancies; and in them behold,  
Upon the hempen tackle, ship-boys climbing:  
Hear the shrill whistle, which doth order give  
To sounds confused: behold the threaden sails,  
Borne with the invisible and creeping wind,  
Draw the huge bottoms through the furrow'd  
Breasting the lofty surge: O, do but think, [sea,  
You stand upon the rivage\*, and behold  
A city on the inconstant billows dancing;

For so appears this fleet majestical, low!  
Holding due course to Harfleur. Follow, fol-  
Grapple your minds to sternage† of this navy;  
And leave your England as dead midnight  
still, [men,

Gnarded with grandsires, babies, and old wo-  
Either past, or not arrived to, pith and puis-  
sance:

For who is he, whose chin is but enrich'd  
With one appearing hair, that will not follow  
These cull'd and choice-drawn cavaliers to  
France? [a siege:

Work, work, your thoughts, and therein see  
Behold the ordnance on their carriages,  
With fatal mouths gaping on girded Harfleur.  
Suppose, the ambassador from the French  
comes back;

Tells Harry—that the king doth offer him  
Katharine his daughter; and with her, to dowry,  
Some petty and unprofitable dukedoms.

The offer likes not: and the nimble gunner  
With linstock‡ now the devilish cannon  
touches, [Alarum; and chambers§ go off.

And down goes all before them. Still be kind,  
And eke out our performance with your mind.  
[Exit.

SCENE I. *The same. Before Harfleur.*

*Alarums. Enter* KING HENRY, EXETER,  
BEDFORD, GLOSTER, and Soldiers, with  
*Scaling Ladders.*

*K. Hen.* Once more unto the breach, dear  
friends, once more;

Or close the wall up with our English dead!  
In peace, there's nothing so becomes a man,  
As modest stillness, and humility:

But when the blast of war blows in our ears,  
Then imitate the action of the tiger;

Stiffen the sinews, summon up the blood,  
Disguise fair nature with hard-favour'd rage:

Then lend the eye a terrible aspect;  
Let it pry through the portage of the head, [it,  
Like the brass cannon; let the brow o'erwhelm

As fearfully, as doth a galled rock  
O'erhand and jutty || his confounded ¶ base,  
Swill'd with the wild and wasteful ocean.

Now set the teeth, and stretch the nostril wide;  
Hold hard the breath, and bend up every spirit  
To his full height!—On, on, you noblest  
English,

Whose blood is fet\*\* from fathers of war-proof  
Fathers, that like so many Alexanders,  
Have, in these parts, from morn till even  
fought, [ment †;

And sheath'd their swords for lack of argu-  
Dishonour not your mothers; now attest,  
That those, whom you call'd fathers, did beget  
Be copy now to men of grosser blood, [you!  
And teach them how to war!—And you, good  
yeomen, [here

Whose limbs were made in England, show us  
The mettle of your pasture; let us swear  
That you are worth your breeding: which I  
doubt not;

For there is none of you so mean and base,  
That hath not noble lustre in your eyes.

I see you stand like greyhounds in the slips,  
Straining upon the start. The game's afoot;  
Follow your spirit: and, upon this charge,  
Cry—God for Harry! England! and Saint  
George! [Exeunt. Alarum, and  
Chambers go off.

SCENE II. *The same.*

*Forces pass over; then enter* NYM, BAR-  
DOLPH, PISTOL, and Boy.

*Bard.* On, on, on, on, on! to the breach, to  
the breach!

*Nym.* 'Pray thee, corporal, stay; the knocks  
are too hot; and, for mine own part, I have  
not a case of lives: the humour of it is too hot,  
that is the very plain-song of it.

*Pist.* The plain song is most just; for hu-  
mours do abound; [die;

Knocks go and come; God's vassals drop and  
And sword and shield,  
In bloody field,

Doth win immortal fame.

*Boy.* 'Would I were in an alehouse in Lon-  
don! I would give all my fame for a pot of  
ale, and safety.

*Pist.* And I:

If wishes would prevail with me,  
My purpose should not fail with me,  
But thither would I hie.

*Boy.* As duly, but not as truly, as bird doth  
sing on bough.

*Enter* FLUELLEN.

*Flu.* Got's blood!—Up to the preaches, you  
rascals! will you not up to the preaches?

[Driving them forward.

*Pist.* Be merciful, great duke‡, to men of  
mould§§!

\* Bank or shore.  
† firing cannon.  
‡ ment of the tide.

† Sterns of the ships.  
§ Small pieces of ordnance.

¶ Worn, wasted.

‡‡ Commander.

‡ The staff which holds the match used in  
|| A mole to withstand the encroach-  
\*\* Fetched.  
†† Matter, subject.  
§§ Earth.



Abate thy rage, abate thy manly rage!

Abate thy rage, great duke! [chuck]

Good bawcock, bate thy rage! use lenity, sweet

Nym. These be good humours!—your honour wins bad humours.

[*Exeunt NYM, PISTOL, and BARDOLPH, followed by FLUELLEN.*]

Boy. As young as I am, I have observed these three washers. I am boy to them all three; but all they three, though they would serve me, could not be man to me; for, indeed, three such antics do not amount to a man. For Bardolph,—he is white-livered, and red-faced; by the means whereof, 'a faces it out, but fights not. For Pistol,—he hath a killing tongue, and a quiet sword; by the means whereof, 'a breaks words, and keeps whole weapons. For Nym,—he hath heard, that men of few words are the best men; and therefore he scorns to say his prayers, lest 'a should be thought a coward: but his few bad words are match'd with as few good deeds; for 'a never broke any man's head but his own, and that was against a post, when he was drunk. They will steal any thing, and call it—purchase. Bardolph stole a lute-case; bore it twelve leagues, and sold it for three halfpence. Nym, and Bardolph, are sworn brothers in filching; and in Calais they stole a fire-shovel: I knew, by that piece of service, the men would carry coalst. They would have me as familiar with men's pockets, as their gloves or their handkerchiefs: which makes much against my manhood, if I should take from another's pocket, to put into mine; for it is plain pocketing up of wrongs. I must leave them, and seek some better service: their villany goes against my weak stomach, and therefore I must cast it up. [*Exit Boy.*]

*Re-enter FLUELLEN, GOWER following.*

Gow. Captain Fluellen, you must come presently to the mines; the duke of Gloster would speak with you.

Flu. To the mines! tell you the duke, it is not so good to come to the mines: For, look you, the mines is not according to the disciplines of the war; the concavities of it is not sufficient: for, look you, th' athversary (you may discuss unto the duke, look you,) is dight himself four yards under the countermines: by Cheshu, I think, 'a will plow up all, if there is not better directions.

Gow. The duke of Gloster, to whom the order of the siege is given, is altogether directed by an Irishman; a very valiant gentleman, if I falsh.

Flu. It is captain Macmorris, is it not?

Gow. I think it be.

Flu. By Cheshu, he is an ass, as in the world: I will verify as much in his beard: he has no more directions in the true disciplines of the wars, look you, of the Roman disciplines, than is a puppy-dog.

*Enter MACMORRIS and JAMY, at a distance.*

Gow. Here 'a comes; and the Scots captain, captain Jamy, with him.

Flu. Captain Jamy is a marvellous falorous gentleman, that is certain; and of great expedition, and knowledge, in the ancient wars, upon my particular knowledge of his directions; by Cheshu, he will maintain his argument, as well as any military man in the world, in the disciplines of the pristine wars of the Romans.

Jamy. I say, gud-day, captain Fluellen.

Flu. God-den to your worship, goot captain Jamy.

Gow. How, now, captain Macmorris? have you quit the mines? have the pioneers given o'er?

Mac. By Chrish la, tish ill done: the work ish give over, the trumpet sound the retreat. By my hand, I swear, and by my father's soul, the work ish ill done; it ish give over: I would have blowed up the town, so Chrish save me, la, in an hour. O, tish ill done, tish ill done; by my hand, tish ill done!

Flu. Captain Macmorris, I peseech you now, will you vouchsafe me, look you, a few disputations with you, as partly touching or concerning the disciplines of the war, the Roman wars. in the way of argument, look you, and friendly communication; partly, to satisfy my opinion, and partly, for the satisfaction, look you, of my mind, as touching the direction of the military discipline; that is the point.

Jamy. It sall be very gud, gud feith, gud captains bath: and I sall quit you with gud leve, as I may pick occasion; that sall I, marry.

Mac. It is no time to discourse, so Chrish save me, the day is hot, and the weather, and the wars, and the king, and the dukes; it is no time to discourse. The town is beseeched, and the trumpet calls us to the breach; and we talk, and, by Chrish, do nothing; 'tis shame for us all: so God sa' me, 'tis shame to stand still; it is shame, by my hand: and there is throats to be cut, and works to be done; and there ish nothing done, so Chrish sa' me, la.

Jamy. By the mess, ere these eyes of mine take themselves to slumber, aile do gude service, or aile ligge i' the grund for it; ay, or go to death; and aile pay it as valorously as I may, that sall I surely do, that is the breff and the long: Marry, I wad full fain heard some question 'tween you tway.

Flu. Captain Macmorris, I think, look you, under your correction, there is not many of your nation—

Mac. Of my nation? What ish my nation? ish a villain, and a bastard, and a knave, and a rascal? What ish my nation? Who talks of my nation?

Flu. Look you, if you take the matter otherwise than is meant, captain Macmorris, peradventure, I shall think you do not use me with that affability as in discretion you ought to use me, look you; being as goot a man as yourself, both in the disciplines of wars, and in the derivation of my birth, and in other particularities.

*Mac.* I do not know you so good a man as myself: so Chrish save me, I will cut off your head.

*Gow.* Gentlemen both, you will mistake each other.

*Jamy.* Au! that's a foul fault.

[*A Parley sounded.*]

*Gow.* The town sounds a parley.

*Flu.* Captain Macmorris, when there is more better opportunity to be required, look you, I will be so bold as to tell you I know the disciplines of war; and there is an end.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. Before the gates of Harfleur.*

*The Governor and some Citizens on the Walls; the English Forces below. Enter King HENRY and his Train.*

*K. Hen.* How yet resolves the governor of the town?

This is the latest parle we will admit:

Therefore, to our best mercy give yourselves; Or, like to men proud of destruction,

Defy us to our worst: for, as I am a soldier, (A name that, in my thoughts, becomes me If I begin the battery once again, [best,])

I will not leave the half-achieved Harfleur, Till in her ashes she lie buried.

The gates of mercy shall be all shut up; And the flesh'd soldier,—rough and hard of

In liberty of bloody hand, shall range [heart,— With conscience wide as hell; mowing like grass

Your fresh-fair virgins, and your flowering in- What is it then to me, if impious war,—

Array'd in flames, like to the prince of fiends,— Do, with his smirch'd\* complexion, all fell+

Enlink'd to waste and desolation? [feats What is't to me, when you yourselves are

If your pure maidens fall into the hand [cause, Of hot and forcing violation?

What rein can hold licentious wickedness, When down the hill he holds his fierce career?

We may as bootless† spend our vain command Upon the enraged soldiers in their spoil,

As send precepts to the leviathan [fleur, To come ashore. Therefore, you men of Har-

Take pity of your town and of your people, Whiles yet my soldiers are in my command;

Whiles yet the cool and temperate wind of grace

O'erblows the filthy and contagious clouds Of deadly murder, spoil, and villany.

If not, why, in a moment look to see The blind and bloody soldier with foul hand

Defile the locks of your shrill-shrieking daugh- Your fathers taken by the silver beards, [ters,

And their most reverend heads dash'd to the walls:

Your naked infants spitted upon pikes; Whiles the mad mothers with their howls con-

fused Do break the clouds, as did the wives of Jewry At Herod's bloody-hunting slaughtermen.

What say you? will you yield, and this avoid?

Or, guilty in defence, be thus destroy'd?

*Gov.* Our expectation hath this day an end: The Dauphin, whom of succour we entreated,

Returns us—that his powers are not yet ready To raise so great a siege. Therefore, dread

king, We yield our town, and lives to thy soft mercy:

Enter our gates; dispose of us, and ours; For we no longer are defensible. [Ex ter,

*K. Hen.* Open your gates.—Come, uncle Go you and enter Harfleur; there remain,

And fortify it strongly 'gainst the French: Use mercy to them all. For us, dear uncle,—

The winter coming on, and sickness growing Upon our soldiers,—we'll retire to Calais.

To-night in Harfleur will we be your guest; To-morrow for the march are we address'd.

*Flourish.* The King, &c., enter the French.

SCENE IV. Rouen. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter KATHERINE and ALICE.*

*Kath. Alice, tu as esté en Angleterre, et tu parles bien le langage.*

*Alice. Un peu, madame.*

*Kath. Je te prie, m'enseigneux; il faut que j'apprenne à parler. Comment appelez vous la main, en Anglois?*

*Alice. La main? elle est appelée, de hand.*

*Kath. De hand. Et les doigts?*

*Alice. Les doigts? may foy, je oublie les doigts; mais je me souviendray. Les doigts?*

*je pense, qu'ils sont appelée de fingres; ouy, de fingres.*

*Kath. La main, de hand; les doigts, de fingres. Je pense, que je suis le bon escolier.*

*J'ay gagné deux mots d'Anglois vistement. Comment appelez vous les ongles?*

*Alice. Les ongles? les appellons, de nails.*

*Kath. De nails. Escoutez; dites moy, si je parle bien: de hand, de fingres; de nails.*

*Alice. C'est bien dit, madame; il est fort bon Anglois.*

*Kath. Dites moy en Anglois, le bras.*

*Alice. De arm, madame.*

*Kath. Et le coude.*

*Alice. De elbow.*

*Kath. De elbow. Je m'en faitz la repetition de tous les mots, que vous m'avez appris dès à present.*

*Alice. Il est trop difficile, madame, comme je pense.*

*Kath. Excusez moy, Alice; escoutez: De hand, de fingre, de nails, de arm, de bilbow.*

*Alice. De elbow, madame.*

*Kath. O Seigneur Dieu! je m'en oublie;*

*De elbow. Comment appelez vous le col?*

*Alice. De neck, madame.*

*Kath. De neck: Et le menton?*

*Alice. De chin.*

*Kath. De sin. Le col, de neck; le menton, de sin.*

*Alice. Ouy. Sauf vostre honneur; en verité, vous prononcez les mots aussi droict que les natifs d'Angleterre.*

*Kath. Je n'ai doute point d'apprendre par la grace de Dieu; et en peu de temps.*

Alice. *N'avez vous pas déjà oublié ce que je vous ay enseignée?*

Kath. *Non, je reciteray à vous promptement. De hand, de fingre, de mails,—*

Alice. *De nails, madame.*

Kath. *De nails, de arme, de ilbow.*

Alice. *Sauf vostre honneur, de elbow.*

Kath. *Ainsi dis je; de elbow, de neck, et de sin: Comment appelez vous le pieds et la robe?*

Alice. *De foot, madame; et de con.*

Kath. *De foot, et de con? O Seigneur Dieu! ces sont mots de son mauvais, corruptible, grosse, et impudique, et non pour les dames d'honneur d'user: Je ne voudrois prononcer ces mots devant les Seigneurs de France, pour tout le monde. Il faut de foot, & de con, neant moins. Je reciterai une autre fois ma leçon ensemble: De hand, de fingre, de nails, de arm, de elbow, de neck, de sin, de foot, de con.*

Alice. *Excellent, madame!*

Kath. *C'est assez pour une fois; allons nous à dîner.* [Exeunt.]

SCENE V. *The same. Another Room in the same.*

*Enter the French King, the Dauphin, Duke of BOURBON, the Constable of France, and Others.*

Fr. King. 'Tis certain, he hath passed the river Some.

Con. And if he be not fought withal, my lord, Let us not live in France; let us quit all, And give our vineyards to a barbarous people.

Dau. *O Dieu vivant!* shall a few sprays of The emptying of our fathers' luxury\* [us,— Our scions, put in wild and savage stock, Spirit up so suddenly into the clouds, And overlook their grafters? [man bastards!]

Bour. Normans, but bastard Normans, Nor *Mort de ma vie!* if they march along Unfought withal, but I will sell my dukedom, To buy a robbery and a dirty farm In that nook-shotten† isle of Albion.

Con. *Dieu de batailles!* where have they this mettle?

Is not their climate foggy, raw, and dull?

On whom, as in despite, the sun looks pale, Killing their fruit with frowns? Can sodden water, [broth,

A drench for sur-reined‡ jades, their barley Decoct their cold blood to such valiant heat? And shall our quick blood, spirited with wine, Seem frosty? O, for honour of our land, Let us not hang like roping icicles [people Upon our houses' thatch, whiles a more frosty Sweat drops of gallant youth in our rich fields; Poor—we may call them, in their native lords.

Dau. By faith and honour, Our madams mock at us; and plainly say, Our mettle is bred out; and they will give Their bodies to the lust of English youth, T new store France with bastard warriors.

Bour. They bid us—to the English dancing-schools,

And teach lavoltas§ high, and swift corantos, Saying, our grace is only in our heels, And that we are most lofty runaways.

Fr. King. Where is Montjoy, the herald? speed him hence; [ance.—

Let him greet England with our sharp defiance, princes; and, with spirit of honour edged, More sharper than your swords, hie to the field: Charles De-la-bret, high constable of France; You dukes of Orleans, Bourbon, and of Berry, Alençon, Brabant, Bar, and Burgundy; Jaques Chatillion, Rambures, Vaudemont, Beaumont, Grandpré, Roussi, and Fauconberg, Foix, Lestrale, Boueignalt, and Charolois; High dukes, great princes, barons, lords, and knights, [shames.

For your great seats, now quit you of great Bar Harry England, that sweeps through our land [fleur:

With pennons|| painted in the blood of Har Rush on his host, as doth the melted snow Upon the valleys; whose low vassal seat The Alps doth spit and void his rheum upon: Go down upon him, you have power enough, And in a captive chariot, into Rouën Bring him our prisoner.

Con. This becomes the great.

Sorry am I his numbers are so few, His soldiers sick, and famish'd in their march; For, I am sure, when he shall see our army, He'll drop his heart into the sink of fear, And, for achievement, offer us his ransom.

Fr. King. Therefore, lord constable, haste on Montjoy:

And let him say to England, that we send To know what willing ransom he will give. Prince Dauphin, you shall stay with us in Rouën

Dau. Not so, I do beseech your majesty.

Fr. King. Be patient, for you shall remain with us.

Now, forth, lord constable, and princes all; And quickly bring us word of England's fall. [Exeunt.]

SCENE VI. *The English Camp in Picardy.*

*Enter GOWER and FLUELLEN.*

Gow. How now, captain Fluellen? come you from the bridge?

Flu. I assure you, there is very excellent service committed at the pridge.

Gow. Is the duke of Exeter safe?

Flu. The duke of Exeter is as magnanimous as Agamemnon; and a man that I love and honour with my soul, and my heart, and my duty, and my life, and my livings, and my uttermost powers: he is not (God be praised, and plessed!) any hurt in the world; but keeps the pridge most valiantly, with excellent discipline. There is an ensign there at the pridge,—I think, in my very conscience, he is as valiant as Mark Antony; and he is a man

\* Lnst.

† Projected.

‡ Over-strained.

§ Dances.

|| Pendants, small flags.



of no estimation in the world; but I did see him do gallant service.

*Gow.* What do you call him?

*Flu.* He is called—ancient Pistol.

*Gow.* I know him not.

*Enter Pistol.*

*Flu.* Do you not know him? Here comes the man.

*Pist.* Captain, I thee beseech to do me favours: The duke of Exeter doth love thee well.

*Flu.* Ay, I praise Got; and I have merited some love at his hands.

*Pist.* Bardolph, a soldier, firm and sound of heart,

Of buxom valour\*, hath,—by cruel fate,  
And giddy fortune's furious fickle wheel,  
That goddess blind,

That stands upon the rolling restless stone.—

*Flu.* By your patience, ancient Pistol. Fortune is painted blind, with a muffler† before her eyes, to signify to you that fortune is blind: And she is painted also with a wheel, to signify to you, which is the moral of it, that she is turning, and inconstant, and variations, and mutabilities: and her foot, look you, is fixed upon a spherical stone, which rolls, and rolls, and rolls:—In good truth, the poet is make a most excellent description of fortune: fortune, look you, is an excellent moral.

*Pist.* Fortune is Bardolph's foe, and frowns on him;

For he hath stol'n a *pix*, and halged must 'a be. A damned death!

Let gallows gape for dog, let man go free,

And let not hemp his wind-pipe suffocate:

But Exeter hath given the doom of death,  
For *pix*‡ of little price. [voice;

Therefore, go speak, the duke will hear thy  
And let not Bardolph's vital thread be cut

With edge of penny cord, and vile reproach:  
Speak, captain, for his life, and I will thee requite.

*Flu.* Ancient Pistol, I do partly understand your meaning.

*Pist.* Why then rejoice therefore.

*Flu.* Certainly, ancient, it is not a thing to rejoice at: for if, look you, he were my brother, I would desire the duke to use his good pleasure, and put him to executions; for disciplines ought to be used.

*Pist.* Die and be damned; and *figo*§ for  
*Flu.* It is well. [thy friendship!

*Pist.* The fig of Spain! [Exit Pistol.

*Flu.* Very good.

*Gow.* Why, this is an arrant counterfeit rascal; I remember him now; a bawd; a cutpurse.

*Flu.* I'll assure you, 'a uttered as prave words at the bridge, as you shall see in a summer's day: But it is very well; what he has spoke to me, that is well, I warrant you, when time is serve.

*Gow.* Why, 'tis a gull, a fool, a rogue; that now and then goes to the wars, to grace him-

self, at his return into London, under the form of a soldier. And such fellows are perfect in great commanders' names: and they will learn you by rote, where services were done;—at such and such a sconce||, at such a breach, at such a convoy; who came off bravely, who was shot, who disgraced, what terms the enemy stood on; and this they can perfectly in the phrase of war, which they trick up with new-tuned oaths: And what a beard of the general's cut, and a horrid snit of the camp, will do among foaming bottles, and ale-washed wits, is wonderful to be thought on! but you must learn to know such slanders of the age, or else you may be marvellous inistook.

*Flu.* I tell you what, captain Gower;—I do perceive, he is not the man that he would gladly make show to the world he is; if I find a hole in his coat, I will tell him my mind. [Drum heard.] Hark you, the king is coming; and I must speak with him from the pridge.

*Enter King HENRY, GLOSTER, and Soldiers.*

*Flu.* Got pless your majesty!

*K. Hen.* How now, Fluellen? camest thou from the bridge?

*Flu.* Ay, so please your majesty. The duke of Exeter has very gallantly maintained the pridge: the French is gone off, look you; and there is gallant and most prave passages: Marry, th'athversary was have possession of the pridge; but he is enforced to retire, and the duke of Exeter is master of the pridge: I can tell your majesty, the duke is a prave man.

*K. Hen.* What men have you lost, Fluellen?

*Flu.* The perdition of th'athversary hath been very great, very reasonable great: marry, for my part, I think the duke hath lost never a man, but one that is like to be executed for robbing a church, one Bardolph, if your majesty know the man: his face is all bubukles, and wheelks, and knobs, and flames of fire; and his lips plows at his nose, and it is like a coal of fire, sometimes plue, and sometimes red; but his nose is executed, and his fire's out.

*K. Hen.* We would have all such offenders so cut off:—and we give express charge, that in our marches through the country, there be nothing compelled from the villages, nothing taken but paid for; none of the French upbraided, or abused in disdainful language: For when lenity and cruelty play for a kingdom, the gentler gamester is the soonest winner.

*Tucket sounds. Enter MONTJOY.*

*Mont.* You know me by my habit¶.

*K. Hen.* Well then, I know thee; What shall I know of thee?

*Mont.* My master's mind.

*K. Hen.* Unfold it.

*Mont.* Thus says my king: Say thou to Harry of England, Though we seemed dead, we did but sleep: Advantage is a better soldier

\* Valour under good command.

† A fold of linen which partially covered the face.

A small box in which were kept the consecrated wafers.

§ An allusion to the custom in

Spain and Italy of giving poisoned figs.

|| An trenchment hastily thrown up.

¶ i. e., By his herald's coat.

than rashness. Tell him, we could have rebuked him at Harfleur; but that we thought not good to bruise an injury, till it were full ripe:—now we speak upon our cue\*, and our voice is imperial: England shall repent his folly, see his weakness, and admire our sufferance. Bid him, therefore, consider of his ransom; which must proportion the losses we have borne, the subjects we have lost, the disgrace we have digested; which, in weight to re-answer, his pettiness would bow under. For our losses, his exchequer is too poor; for the effusion of our blood, the muster of his kingdom too faint a number; and for our disgrace, his own person, kneeling at our feet, but a weak and worthless satisfaction. To this add—defiance: and tell him, for conclusion, he hath betrayed his followers, whose condemnation is pronounced. So far my king and master; so much my office.

*K. Hen.* What is thy name? I know thy Mont. Montjoy. [quality.

*K. Hen.* Thou dost thy office fairly. Turn thee back,

And tell thy king,—I do not seek him now; But could be willing to march on to Calais Without impeachment†: for, to say the sooth, (Though 'tis no wisdom to confess so much Unto an enemy of craft and vantage.)

My people are with sickness much enfeebled; My numbers lessen'd; and those few I have, Almost no better than so many French; Who when they were in health, I tell thee, herald,

I thought, upon one pair of English legs Did march three Frenchmen.—Yet, forgive me, God,

That I do brag thus!—this your air of France Hath blown that vice in me; I must repent. Go, therefore, tell thy master, here I am; My ransom, is this frail and worthless trunk; My army, but a weak and sickly guard; Yet, God before‡, tell him we will come on, Though France himself, and such another neighbour, [Montjoy,

Stand in our way. There's for thy labour, Go, bid thy master well advise himself:

If we may pass, we will; if we be hinder'd, We shall your tawny ground with your red blood

Discolour: and so, Montjoy, fare you well.

The sum of all our answer is but this:

We would not seek a battle, as we are;

Nor, as we are, we say, we will not shun it; So tell your master.

*Mont.* I shall deliver so. Thanks to your highness. [Exit MONTJOY.

*Glo.* I hope they will not come upon us now.

*K. Hen.* We are in God's hand, brother, not in theirs.

March to the bridge; it now draws toward night:—

Beyond the river we'll encamp ourselves;

And on to-morrow bid them march away.

[Exit.

# SCENE VII. The French Camp, near Agincourt.

*Enter the Constable of France, the Lord RAMBURES, the Duke of Orleans, Dauphin, and Others.*

*Con.* Tut! I have the best armour of the world.—'Would it were day!

*Orl.* You have an excellent armour; but let my horse have his due.

*Con.* It is the best horse of Europe.

*Orl.* Will it never be morning?

*Dau.* My lord of Orleans, and my lord High Constable, you talk of horse and armour,—

*Orl.* You are as well provided of both, as any prince in the world.

*Dau.* What a long night is this!—I will not change my horse with any that treads but on four pasterns. *Ca, ha!* He bounds from the earth, as if his entrails were hairs; *le cheval volant*, the Pegasus, *qui a les narines de feu!* When I bestride him, I soar, I am a hawk: he trots the air; the earth sings when he touches it; the basest horn of his hoof is more musical than the pipe of Hermes.

*Orl.* He's of the colour of the nutmeg.

*Dau.* And of the heat of the ginger. It is a beast for Perseus: he is pure air and fire; and the dull elements of earth and water never appear in him, but only in patient stillness, while his rider mounts him: he is, indeed, a horse; and all other jades you may call—beasts.

*Con.* Indeed, my lord, it is a most absolute and excellent horse.

*Dau.* It is the prince of palfreys; his neigh is like the bidding of a monarch, and his countenance enforces homage.

*Orl.* No more, cousin.

*Dau.* Nay, the man hath no wit, that can not, from the rising of the lark to the lodging of the lamb, vary deserved praise on my palfrey: it is a theme as fluent as the sea; turn the sands into eloquent tongues, and my horse is argument for them all: 'tis a subject for a sovereign to reason on, and for a sovereign's sovereign to ride on; and for the world (familiar to us, and unknown) to lay apart their particular functions, and wonder at him. I once writ a sonnet in his praise, and began thus: *Wonder of nature*,—

*Orl.* I have heard a sonnet begin so to one's mistress.

*Dau.* Then did they imitate that which I composed to my courser; for my horse is my mistress.

*Orl.* Your mistress bears well.

*Dau.* Me well; which is the prescript praise and perfection of a good and particular mistress.

*Con.* *Ma fuy!* the other day, methought your mistress shrewdly shook your back.

*Dau.* So, perhaps, did yours.

*Con.* Mine was not bridled.

*Dau.* O! then, belike, she was old and

\* In our turn.

† Hinderance.

‡ Then used "for God being my guide."

§ Alluding to the bounding of tennis balls, which were stuffed with hair.

gentle; and you rode, like a Kerne\* of Ireland, your French hose off, and in your strait trossers†.

*Con.* You have good judgment in horsemanship.

*Dau.* Be warned by me then: they that ride so, and ride not warily, fall into foul bogs; I had rather have my horse to my mistress.

*Con.* I had as lief have my mistress a jade.

*Dau.* I tell thee, Constable, my mistress wears her own hair.

*Con.* I could make as true a boast as that, if I had a sow to my mistress.

*Dau.* *Le chien est retourné à son propre vomissement, et la truie lavée au boubrier*: thou makest use of any thing.

*Con.* Yet do I not use my horse for my mistress; or any such proverb, so little kin to the purpose.

*Ram.* My lord Constable, the armour that I saw in your tent to-night, are those stars, or suns, upon it?

*Con.* Stars, my lord.

*Dau.* Some of them will fall to-morrow, I hope.

*Con.* And yet my sky shall not want.

*Dau.* That may be, for you bear a many superfluously; and 'twere more honour some were away.

*Con.* Even as your horse bears your praises; who would trot as well, were some of your brags dismounted.

*Dau.* 'Would I were able to load him with his desert! Will it never be day? I will trot to-morrow a mile, and my way shall be paved with English faces.

*Con.* I will not say so, for fear I should be faced out of my way: But I would it were morning, for I would fain be about the ears of the English.

*Ram.* Who will go to hazard with me for twenty English prisoners?

*Con.* You must first go yourself to hazard, ere you have them.

*Dau.* 'Tis midnight, I'll go arm myself.

[Exit.

*Orl.* The Dauphin longs for morning.

*Ram.* He longs to eat the English.

*Con.* I think he will eat all he kills.

*Orl.* By the white hand of my lady, he's a gallant prince.

*Con.* Swear by her foot, that she may tread out the oath.

*Orl.* He is, simply, the most active gentleman of France.

*Con.* Doing is activity: and he will still be doing.

*Orl.* He never did harm, that I heard of.

*Con.* Nor will do none to-morrow; he will keep that good name still.

*Orl.* I know him to be valiant.

*Con.* I was told that, by one that knows him better than you.

*Orl.* What's he?

*Con.* Marry, he told me so himself; and he said, he cared not who knew it.

*Orl.* He needs not, it is no hidden virtue in him.

*Con.* By my faith, sir, but it is; never any body saw it, but his lackey: 'tis a hooded valour; and, when it appears, it will bate‡.

*Orl.* Ill will never said well.

*Con.* I will cap that proverb with—There is flattery in friendship.

*Orl.* And I will take up that with—Give the devil his due.

*Con.* Well placed: there stands your friend for the devil: have at the very eye of that proverb, with—A pox of the devil.

*Orl.* You are the better at proverbs, by how much—A fool's bolt is soon shot.

*Con.* You have shot over.

*Orl.* 'Tis not the first time you were over-shot.

Enter a Messenger.

*Mess.* My lord High Constable, the English lie within fifteen hundred paces of your tent.

*Con.* Who hath measured the ground?

*Mess.* The lord Grandpré.

*Con.* A valiant and most expert gentleman.—Would it were day!—Alas, poor Harry of England!—he longs not for the dawning, as we do.

*Orl.* What a wretched and peevish§ fellow is this king of England, to mope with his fat-brained followers so far out of his knowledge!

*Con.* If the English had any apprehension, they would run away.

*Orl.* That they lack; for if their heads had any intellectual armour, they could never wear such heavy head-pieces.

*Ram.* That island of England breeds very valiant creatures; their mastiffs are of unmatchable courage.

*Orl.* Foolish curs! that run winking into the mouth of a Russian bear, and have their heads crushed like rotten apples: You may as well say,—that's a valiant flea, that dare eat his breakfast on the lip of a lion.

*Con.* Just, just; and the men do sympathize with the mastiffs, in robustious and rough coming on, leaving their wits with their wives: and then give them great meals of beef, and iron and steel, they will eat like wolves, and fight like devils.

*Orl.* Ay, but these English are shrewdly out of beef.

*Con.* Then we shall find to-morrow—they have only stomachs to eat, and none to fight. Now is it time to arm: Come, shall we about it?

*Orl.* It is now two o'clock: but, let me see,—by ten,

We shall have each an hundred Englishmen.

[Exeunt.

Soldier. † Trowsers.

his valour is hid from every body but his lackey, and when it appears it will fall out.

§ Foolish.



## ACT IV.

*Enter CHORUS.*

*Cho.* Now entertain conjecture of a time,  
When creeping murmur, and the poring dark,  
Fills the wide vessel of the universe.  
From camp to camp, through the foul womb  
of night,

The hum of either army stilly \* sounds,  
That the fix'd sentinels almost receive  
The secret whispers of each other's watch:  
Fire answers fire; and through their paly flames  
Each battle sees the other's umber'd † face:  
Steed threatens steed, in high and boastful  
neighs

Piercing the night's dull ear; and from the tents,  
The armourers, accomplishing the knights,  
With busy hammers closing rivets up,  
Give dreadful note of preparation.

The country cocks do crow, the clocks do toll,  
And the third hour of drowsy morning name.  
Proud of their numbers, and secure in soul,  
The confident and over-lusty ‡ French  
Do the low-rated English play at dice;  
And chide the cripple tardy gaited night,  
Who, like a foul and ugly witch, doth limp  
So tediously away. The poor condemned  
English,

Like sacrifices, by their watchful fires  
Sit patiently, and inly ruminate  
The morning's danger; and their gesture sad,  
Investing bank-lean cheeks, and war-worn coats,  
Presenteth them unto the gazing moon  
So many horrid ghosts. O, now, who will  
behold

The royal captain of this ruin'd band,  
Walking from watch to watch, from tent to  
tent,

Let him cry—Praise and glory on his head!  
For forth he goes, and visits all his host;  
Bids them good-morrow, with a modest smile;  
And calls them—brothers, friends, and coun-  
trymen.

Upon his royal face there is no note,  
How dread an army hath enrounded him;  
Nor doth he dedicate one jot of colour  
Unto the weary and all-watched night:  
But freshly looks, and over-bears attaint  
With cheerful semblance, and sweet ma-  
jesty;

That every wretch, pining and pale before,  
Beholding him, plucks comfort from his looks:  
A largess universal, like the sun,  
His liberal eye doth give to every one,  
Thawing cold fear. Then, mean and gentle all,  
Behold, as may unworthiness define,  
A little touch of Harry in the night:  
And so our scene must to the battle fly;  
Where (O for pity!) we shall much disgrace,  
With four or five most vile and ragged foils  
Right ill, disposed, in brawl ridiculous,

The name of Agincourt: Yet sit and see;  
Minding † true things, by what their mockeries  
be. *[Exit]*

SCENE I. *The English Camp at Agincourt*

*Enter King HENRY, BEDFORD, and  
GLOSTER.*

*K. Hen.* Gloster, 'tis true that we are in  
great danger;

The greater therefore should our courage be.—  
Good morrow, brother Bedford.—God Al-  
mighty!

There is some soul of goodness in things evil,  
Would men observingly distil it out;  
For our bad neighbour makes us early stirrers,  
Which is both healthful, and good husbandry;  
Besides, they are our outward consciences,  
And preachers to us all; admonishing,  
That we should dress us fairly for our end.  
Thus may we gather honey from the weed,  
And make a moral of the devil himself.

*Enter ERPINGHAM.*

Good morrow, old sir Thomas Erpingham:  
A good soft pillow for that good white head  
Were better than a churlish turf of France.

*Erp.* Not so, my liege; this lodging likes  
me better,

Since I may say—now lie I like a king.

*K. Hen.* 'Tis good for men to love their  
present pains,

Upon example; so the spirit is eased:  
And, when the mind is quicken'd, out of doubt  
The organs, though defunct and dead before,  
Break up their drowsy grave, and newly move  
With casted slough † and fresh legerity ‡. [both,  
Lend me thy cloak, sir Thomas.—Brothers  
Commend me to the princes in our camp;  
Do my good-morrow to them; and, anon,  
Desire them all to my pavilion.

*Glo.* We shall, my liege.

*[Exeunt GLOSTER and BEDFORD.]*

*Erp.* Shall I attend your grace?

*K. Hen.* No, my good knight;  
Go with my brothers to my lords of England:  
I and my bosom must debate a while,  
And then I would no other company.

*Erp.* The Lord in heaven bless thee, noble  
Harry! *[Exit ERPINGHAM.]*

*K. Hen.* God-a-mercy, old heart! thou  
speakest cheerfully.

*Enter PISTOL.*

*Pist.* Qui va là?

*K. Hen.* A friend.

*Pist.* Discuss unto me; Art thou officer;  
Or art thou base, common, and popular?

*K. Hen.* I am a gentleman of a company

*Pist.* Trailest thou the puissant pike?

*K. Hen.* Even so: What art thou?

*Pist.* As good a gentleman as the emperor

\* Gently, lowly.

† Discoloured by the gleam of the fires.

‡ Over-scurvy.

§ Calling to remembrance.

|| Slough is the skin which serpents annually throw off.

‡ Lightness, nimbleness.

*K. Hen.* Then you are a better than the king. [gold,

*Pist.* The king's a bawcock, and a heart of  
A lad of life, an imp\* of fame;

Of parents good, of fist most valiant:

I kiss his dirty shoe, and from my heart-strings  
I love the lovely bully. What's thy name?

*K. Hen.* Harry le Roy.

*Pist.* Le Roy! a Cornish name: art thou  
of Cornish crew?

*K. Hen.* No, I am a Welshman.

*Pist.* Knowest thou Fluellen?

*K. Hen.* Yes.

*Pist.* Tell him, I'll knock his leek about his  
Upon Saint Davy's Day. [pate,

*K. Hen.* Do not you wear your dagger in  
your cap that day, lest he knock that about  
yours.

*Pist.* Art thou his friend?

*K. Hen.* And his kinsman too.

*Pist.* The figo for thee then!

*K. Hen.* I thank you: God be with you!

*Pist.* My name is Pistol called. [Exit.

*K. Hen.* It sorts† well with your fierceness.

Enter FLUELLEN and GOWER, severally.

*Gow.* Captain Fluellen!

*Flu.* So! in the name of Cheshu Christ,  
speak lower. It is the greatest admiration in  
the universal 'orld, when the true and auncient  
prerogatives and laws of the wars is not kept:  
if you would take the pains but to examine the  
wars of Pompey the Great, you shall find, I  
warrant you, that there is no tiddle taddle, or  
pibble pabble, in Pompey's camp; I warrant  
you, you shall find the ceremonies of the wars,  
and the cares of it, and the forms of it, and the  
sobriety of it, and the modesty of it, to be  
otherwise.

*Gow.* Why, the enemy is loud; you heard  
him all night.

*Flu.* If the enemy is an ass and a fool, and  
a prating coxcomb, is it meet, think you, that  
we should also, look you, be an ass, and a  
fool, and a prating coxcomb; in your own  
conscience now?

*Gow.* I will speak lower.

*Flu.* I pray you, and beseech you, that you  
will. [Exit GOWER and FLUELLEN.

*K. Hen.* Though it appear a little out of  
fashion, [man,

There is much care and valour in this Welsh-  
Enter BATES, COURT, and WILLIAMS.

*Court.* Brother John Bates, is not that the  
morning which breaks yonder?

*Bates.* I think it be: but we have no great  
cause to desire the approach of day.

*Will.* We see yonder the beginning of the  
day, but, I think, we shall never see the end  
of it.—Who goes there?

*K. Hen.* A friend.

*Will.* Under what captain serve you?

*K. Hen.* Under sir Thomas Erpingham.

*Will.* A good old commander, and a most  
kind gentleman: I pray you, what thinks he  
of our estate?

*K. Hen.* Even as men wrecked upon a  
sand, that look to be washed off the next tide.

*Bates.* He hath not told his thought to the  
king!

*K. Hen.* No; nor it is not meet he should.  
For, though I speak it to you, I think the  
king is but a man, as I am: the violent smells  
to him, as it doth to me; the element shows  
to him, as it doth to me; all his senses have  
but human conditions‡: his ceremonies laid  
by, in his nakedness he appears but a man;  
and though his affections are higher mounted  
than ours, yet, when they stoop, they stoop  
with the like wing; therefore when he sees  
reason of fears, as we do, his fears, out of  
doubt, be of the same relish as ours are: Yet,  
in reason, no man should possess him with any  
appearance of fear, lest he, by showing it,  
should dishearten his army.

*Bates.* He may show what outward courage  
he will: but, I believe, as cold a night as 'tis,  
he could wish himself in the Thames up to the  
neck; and so I would he were, and I by him,  
at all adventures, so we were quit here.

*K. Hen.* By my troth, I will speak my con-  
science of the king; I think he would not wish  
himself any where but where he is.

*Bates.* Then, would he were here alone;  
so should he be sure to be ransomed, and a  
many poor men's lives saved.

*K. Hen.* I dare say you love him not so ill,  
to wish him here alone; howsoever, you speak  
this, to feel other men's minds: Methinks, I  
could not die any where so contented, as in the  
king's company; his cause being just, and his  
quarrel honourable.

*Will.* That's more than we know.

*Bates.* Ay, or more than we should seek  
after; for we know enough, if we know we  
are the king's subjects; if his cause be wrong,  
our obedience to the king wipes the crime of  
it out of us.

*Will.* But, if the cause be not good, the king  
himself hath a heavy reckoning to make; when  
all those legs, and arms, and heads, chopped off  
in a battle, shall join together at the latter day§,  
and cry all—We died at such a place; some,  
swearing; some, crying for a surgeon; some,  
upon their wives left poor behind them; some,  
upon the debts they owe; some, upon their  
children rawly|| left. I am afraid there are  
few die well, that die in battle; for how can  
they charitably dispose of any thing, when  
blood is their argument? Now, if these men  
do not die well, it will be a black matter for  
the king that led them to it; whom to disobey,  
were against all proportion of subjection.

*K. Hen.* So, if a son, that is by his father  
sent about merchandise, do sinfully miscarry  
upon the sea, the imputation of his wickedness,  
by your rule, should be imposed upon his father  
that sent him: or if a servant, under his master's  
command, transporting a sum of money, be  
assailed by robbers, and die in many irrecon-  
ciled iniquities, you may call the business of th

\* Son.

† Agrees.

‡ Qualities.

§ The last day, the day of judgment.

|| Suddenly.

master the author of the servant's damnation:— But this is not so: the king is not bound to answer the particular endings of his soldiers, the father of his son, nor the master of his servant; for they purpose not their death, when they purpose their services. Besides, there is no king, be his cause never so spotless, if it come to the arbitrement of swords, can try it out with all unspotted soldiers. Some, peradventure, have on them the guilt of premeditated and contrived murder; some, of beguiling virgins with the broken seals of perjury; some, making the wars their bulwark, that have before gored the gentle bosom of peace with pillage and robbery. Now, if these men have defeated the law, and outrun native punishment\*, though they can outstrip men, they have no wings to fly from God: war is his beadle, war is his vengeance; so that here men are punished for before-breach of the king's laws, in now the king's quarrel: where they feared the death, they have borne life away; and where they would be safe, they perish: Then if they die unprovided, no more is the king guilty of their damnation, than he was before guilty of those impieties for the which they are now visited. Every subject's duty is the king's; but every subject's soul is his own. Therefore should every soldier in the wars do as every sick man in his bed, wash every mote out of his conscience: and dying so, death is to him advantage; or not dying, the time was blessedly lost, wherein such preparation was gained: and, in him that escapes, it were not sin to think, that making God so free an offer, he let him outlive that day to see his greatness, and to teach others how they should prepare.

*Will.* 'Tis certain, every man that dies ill, the ill is upon his own head, the king is not to answer for it.

*Bates.* I do not desire he should answer for me; and yet I determine to fight lustily for him.

*K. Hen.* I myself heard the king say, he would not be ransomed.

*Will.* Ay, he said so, to make us fight cheerfully: but, when our throats are cut, he may be ransomed, and we ne'er the wiser.

*K. Hen.* If I live to see it, I will never trust his word after.

*Will.* 'Mass, you'll pay† him, then! That's a perilous shot out of an elder gun, that a poor and private displeasure can do against a monarch! you may as well go about to turn the sun to ice, with fanning in his face with a peacock's feather. You'll never trust his word after! come, 'tis a foolish saying.

*K. Hen.* Your reproof is something too round; I should be angry with you, if the time were convenient.

*Will.* Let it be a quarrel between us, if you live.

*K. Hen.* I embrace it.

*Will.* How shall I know thee again?

*K. Hen.* Give me any gage of thine, and I

will wear it in my bonnet: then, if ever thou darest acknowledge it, I will make it my quarrel.

*Will.* Here's my glove; give me another of thine.

*K. Hen.* There.

*Will.* This will I also wear in my cap: if ever thou come to me and say, after to-morrow, *This is my glove*, by this hand, I will take thee a box on the ear.

*K. Hen.* If ever I live to see it, I will challenge it.

*Will.* Thou darest as well be hanged.

*K. Hen.* Well, I will do it, though I take thee in the king's company.

*Will.* Keep thy word: fare thee well.

*Bates.* Be friends, you English fools, be friends; we have French quarrels enough, if you could tell how to reckon.

*K. Hen.* Indeed, the French may lay twenty French crowns to one they will beat us; for they bear them on their shoulders: But it is no English treason to cut French crowns; and, to-morrow, the king himself will be a clipper.

[*Exeunt Soldiers.*]

Upon the king! let us our lives, our souls, Our debts, our careful wives, our children, and Our sins, lay on the king;—we must bear all. O hard condition! twin born with greatness, Subjected to the breath of every fool, Whose sense no more can feel but his own wringing!

What infinite heart's ease must kings neglect, That private men enjoy? [too,

And what have kings, that privates have not Save ceremony, save general ceremony?

And what art thou, thou idol ceremony? What kind of god art thou, that suffer'st more Of mortal griefs, than do thy worshippers?

What are thy rents? what are thy comings in? O ceremony, show me but thy worth!

What is the soul of adoration? Art thouught else but place, degree, and form, Creating awe and fear in other men?

Wherein thou art less happy being fear'd Than they in fearing. [sweet,

What drink'st thou oft, instead of homage But poison'd flattery? O, be sick, great great-

And bid thy ceremony give thee cure! [ness Think'st thou, the fiery fever will go out

With titles blown from adulation? Will it give place to flexure and low bending?

Canst thou, when thou command'st the beggar's knee,

[dream, Command the health of it? No, thou proud That play'st so subtly with a king's repose;

I am a king that find thee; and I know, 'Tis not the balm, the sceptre, and the ball,

The sword, the mace, the crown imperial, The intertissued robe of gold and pearl,

The fardel'd title running 'fore the king, The throne he sits on, nor the tide of pomp

That beats upon the high shore of this world, No, not all these, thrice-gorgeous ceremony,

\* *i. e.*, Punishment in their native country.

† Too rough. ‡ "What is the real worth and intrinsic value of adoration?"

§ Fardel is stuffed. The tumid puffy title with which a king's name is introduced.



Not all these, laid in bed majestical,  
Can sleep so soundly as the wretched slave;  
ho, with a body fill'd, and vacant mind,  
Gets into to rest, cramm'd with distressful  
bread;

Never sees horrid night, the child of hell;  
But, like a lackey, from the rise to set,  
Sweats in the eye of Phœbus, and all night  
Sleeps in Elysium; next day, after dawn,  
Doth rise, and help Hyperion\* to his horse;  
And follows so the ever-running year  
With profitable labour to his grave:  
And, but for ceremony, such a wretch, [sleep,  
Winding up days with toil, and nights with  
Had the fore-hand and vantage of a king.  
The slave, a member of the country's peace,  
Enjoys it; but in gross brain little wots,  
What watch the king keeps to maintain the  
peace,

Whose hours the peasant best advantages.

*Enter ERPINGHAM.*

*Erp.* My lord, your nobles, jealous of your  
absence,

Seek through your camp to find you.

*K. Hen.* Good old knight,  
Collect them all together at my tent:  
I'll be before thee.

*E p.* I shall do't, my lord. [*Exit.*

*K. Hen.* O God of battles! steel my sol-  
diers' hearts! [now

Possess them not with fear: take from them  
The sense of reckoning, if the opposed numbers  
Pluck their hearts from them!—Not to-day,  
O not to-day, think not upon the fault [O Lord,  
My father made in compassing the crown!  
I Richard's body have interred new:

And on it have bestow'd more contrite tears,  
Than from it issued forced drops of blood.

Five hundred poor I have in yearly pay,  
Who twice a day their wither'd hands hold  
up [built

Toward heaven, to pardon blood; and I have  
Two chantries, where the sad and solemn priests  
Sing still for Richard's soul. More will I do:  
Though all that I can do is nothing worth;  
Since that my penitence comes after all,  
Imploping pardon.

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* My liege!

*K. Hen.* My brother Gloster's voice?—Ay;  
I know thy errand, I will go with thee:  
The day, my friends, and all things stay for  
me. [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II. The French Camp.

*Enter Dauphin, ORLEANS, RAMBURES, and  
Others.*

*Orl.* The sun doth gild our armour; up, my  
lords. [*lacquay! ha;*

*Dau.* *Montez à cheval*:—My horse! *valet!*

*Orl.* O brave spirit!

*Dau.* *Via!*—*les eaux et la terre*——

*Orl.* *Rien puis? Vair et le feu*——

*Dau.* *Ciel!* cousin Orleans.——

*Enter Constable.*

Now, my lord Constable! [vice neigh.

*Con.* Hark, how our steeds for present ser-  
*Dau.* Mount them, and make incision in  
their hides;

That their hot blood may spin in English eyes,  
And dout† them with superfluous courage;  
Ha! [horses' blood?

*Ram.* What, wilt thou have them weep our  
How shall we then behold their natural tears?

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* The English are embattled, you  
French peers. [to horse!

*Con.* To horse, you gallant princes! straight  
Do but behold you poor and starved band,  
And your fair show shall suck away their souls,  
Leaving them but the shales and husks of men.  
There is not work enough for all our hands;  
Scarce blood enough in all their sickly veins,  
To give each naked curtle-axe a stain,  
That our French gallants shall to-day draw out,  
And sheath for lack of sport: let us but blow  
on them,

The vapour of our valour will o'erturn them.

'Tis positive† against all exceptions, lords,  
That our superfluous lackeys, and our peasants,  
Who, in unnecessary action, swarm

About our squares of battle,—were enough

To purge this field of such a hilding‡ toe;

Though we, upon this mountain's basis by,

Took stand for idle speculation:

But that our honours must not. What's to say?

A very little little let us do,

And all is done. Then let the trumpets sound

The tucket-souance||, and the note to mount:

For our approach shall so much dare the field,

That England shall couch down in fear, and  
yield.

*E ter GRANDPRE.*

*Grand.* Why do you stay so long, my lords  
of France?

You island carrions, desperate of their bones,  
Ill-favour'dly become the morning field:

Their ragged curtains¶ poorly are let loose,

And our air shakes them passing scornfully.

Big Mars seems bankrupt in their beggar'd  
host,

And faintly through a rusty beaver peeps.

Their horsemen sit like fixed candlesticks,

With torch-staves in their hand: and their  
poor jades [hips;

Lob down their heads, dropping the hides and

The gun down-roping from their pale dead  
eyes; [bit

And in their pale dull mouths the gimball\*\*

Lies foul with chew'd grass, still and motion-  
less;

And their executors, the knavish crows,

Fly o'er them all, impatient for their hour.

Description cannot suit itself in words,

To demonstrate the life of such a battle

In life so lifeless as it shows itself.

*Con.* They have said their prayers, and they  
stay for death.

\* The sun. † An old encouraging exclamation. ‡ Do them out, extinguish them.

§ Mean, despicable. || The name of an introductory flourish on the trumpet.

¶ Colours. \*\* Ring.

*Dau.* Shall we go send them dinners, and fresh suits,  
And give their fasting horses provender,  
And after fight with them? [field:  
*Con.* I stay but for my guard; On, to the  
I will the banner from a trumpet take,  
And use it for my haste. Come, come away!  
The sun is high, and we outwear the day.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The English Camp.*

*Enter* the English Host; GLOSTER, BEDFORD, EXETER, SALISBURY, and WESTMORELAND.

*Glo.* Where is the king?

*Bed.* The king himself is rode to view their battle. [score thousand.

*West.* Of fighting men they have full three-

*Ete.* There's five to one; besides, they all are fresh. [ful odds.

*Sal.* God's arm strike with us! 'tis a fear-God be wi' you, princes all; I'll to my charge. If we no more meet, till we meet in heaven, Then, joyfully, my noble lord of Bedford,—My dear lord Gloster,—and my good lord Exeter,—

And my kind kinsman,—warriors all, adieu!

*Bed.* Farewell, good Salisbury; and good luck go with thee! [to-day:

*Ete.* Farewell, kind lord; fight valiantly And yet I do thee wrong, to mind thee of it, For thou art framed of the firm truth of valour. [*Exit* SALISBURY.

*Bed.* He is as full of valour as of kindness; Princely in both.

*West.* O that we now had here

*Enter* King HENRY.

But one ten thousand of those men in Eng-That do no work to-day! [land,

*K. Hen.* What's he, that wishes so? My cousin Westmoreland?—No, my fair cou-If we are mark'd to die, we are enough [sin: To do our country loss; and if to live, The fewer men the greater share of honour. God's will! I pray thee, wish not one man more.

By Jove, I am not covetous for gold;  
Nor care I who doth feed upon my cost;  
It yearns\* me not, if men my garments wear;  
Such outward things dwell not in my desires:  
But, if it be a sin to covet honour,  
I am the most offending soul alive.

No faith, my coz, wish not a man from Eng-land: [honour,

God's peace! I would not lose so great an As one man more, methinks, would share from me, [one more:

For the best hope I have. O, do not wish Rather proclaim it, Westmoreland, through my host,

That he which hath no stomach to this fight,  
Let him depart! his passport shall be made,  
And crowns for convoy put into his purse:  
We would not die in that man's company,  
That fears his fellowship to die with us.

This day is call'd—the feast of Crispian:  
He that outlives this day, and comes safe home,  
Will stand a tip-toe when this day is named,  
And rouse him at the name of Crispian.

He that shall live this day, and see old age,  
Will yearly on the vigil feast his friends,  
And say—to-morrow is Saint Crispian:  
Then will he strip his sleeve, and show his scars,  
And say, these wounds I had on Crispian's day.—  
Old men forget; yet all shall be forgot,  
But he'll remember, with advantages,  
What feats he did that day: Then shall our

names,  
Familiar in their mouths as household words,—  
Harry the king, Bedford, and Exeter,  
Warwick and Talbot, Salisbury and Gloster,—  
Be in their flowing cups freshly remember'd:  
This story shall the good man teach his son;  
And Crispin Crispian shall ne'er go by,  
From this day to the ending of the world,  
But we in it shall be remembered:  
We few, we happy few, we band of brothers;  
For he to-day that sheds his blood with me,  
Shall be my brother; be he ne'er so vile,  
This day shall gentle his condition†:  
And gentlemen in England, now a-bed,  
Shall think themselves accursed they were

not here; [speaks,  
And hold their manhoods cheap, while any  
That fought with us upon Saint Crispian's day.

*Enter* SALISBURY.

*Sal.* My sovereign lord, bestow yourself with speed:

The French are bravely‡ in their battles set,  
And will with all expedience§ charge on us.

*K. Hen.* All things are ready, if our minds be so. [ward now!

*West.* Perish the man, whose mind is back!

*K. Hen.* Thou dost not wish more help from England, cousin? [I alone,

*West.* God's will, my liege, 'would you and Without more help, might fight this battle out!

*K. Hen.* Why, now thou hast unwish'd five thousand men;

Which likes me better, than to wish us one.—  
You know your places: God be with you all

*Tucket.* *Enter* MONTJOY.

*Mont.* Once more I come to know of thee, king Harry,

If for thy ransom thou wilt now compound,  
Before thy most assured overthrow:

For, certainly, thou art so near the gulf,  
Thou needs must be englutied. Besides, in

mercy,  
The Constable desires thee—thou wilt mind||  
Thy followers of repentance; that their souls  
May make a peaceful and a sweet retire  
From off these fields, where (wretches) their  
Must lie and fester. [poor bodies

*K. Hen.* Who hath sent thee now?

*Mont.* The Constable of France. [back;

*K. Hen.* I pray thee, bear my former answer  
Bid them achieve me, and then sell my bones.

Good God! why should they mock poor fel-lows thus?

\* Grieves. † i. e., This day shall advance him to the rank of a gentleman.

‡ Gallantly.

§ Expedition.

|| Remind.

The man, that once did sell the lion's skin  
While the beast lived, was killed with hunting  
A many of our bodies shall no doubt, [him.  
Find native graves; upon the which, I trust,  
Shall witness live in brass\* of this day's work:  
And those that leave their valiant bones in  
France, [hills,

Dying like men, though buried in your dung:  
They shall be famed; for there the sun shall  
greet them,

And draw their honours reeking up to heaven;  
Leaving their earthly parts to choke your clime,  
The smell whereof shall breed a plague in  
France.

Mark then a bounding valour in our English;  
That, being dead, like to the bullet's grazing,  
Break out into a second course of mischief,  
killing in relapse of mortality.

Let me speak proudly:—Tell the Constable,  
We are but warriors for the working day †:  
Our gayness, and our gilt ‡, are all besmirch'd §  
With rainy marching in the painful field;  
There's not a piece of feather in our host,  
{Good argument, I hope, we shall not fly,}

And time hath worn us into slovenry:  
But, by the mass, our hearts are in the trim:  
And my poor soldiers tell me—yet ere night  
They'll be in fresher robes; or they will pluck  
The gay new coats o'er the French soldiers'  
heads, [this,

And turn them out of service. If they do  
(As, if God please, they shall,) my ransom  
then [labour;  
Will soon be levied. Herald, save thou thy  
Come thou no more for ransom, gentle he-  
rald; [joints:

They shall have none, I swear, but these my  
Which if they have as I will leave 'em to them,  
Shall yield them little, tell the Constable.

Mont. I shall, king Harry. And so fare  
thee well:

Thou never shalt hear herald any more. [Exit.  
K. Hen. I fear, thou'lt once more come  
again for ransom.

Enter the Duke of York.

York. My lord, most humbly on my knee  
The leading of the vaward [I beg

K. Hen. Take it, brave York.—Now, sol-  
diers, march away:—

And how thou pleasest, God, dispose the day!  
[Exeunt.

#### SCENE IV. The Field of Battle.

Alarums. Excursions. Enter French Sol-  
dier, PISTOL, and Boy.

Pist. Yield, cur.

Fr. Sol. *Je pense, que vous estes le gen-  
tilhomme de bonne qualité.*

Pist. Quality, call you me?—Construe me,  
art thou a gentleman? What is thy name?  
discuss.

Fr. Sol. *O seigneur Dieu!*

Pist. O, signieur Dew should be a gentle-

man:—Perpend my words, O signieur Dew,  
and mark;—

O signieur Dew, thou diest on point of fox ¶,  
Except, O signieur, thou do give to me  
Egregious ransome.

Fr. Sol. *O, prenez misericorde! ayez  
pitié de moy!* [moys;

Pist. Moy shall not serve, I will have for'y  
For I will fetch thy rim\*\* out at thy throat,  
In drops of crimson blood.

Fr. Sol. *Est il impossible d'eschapper la  
force de ton bras?*

Pist. Brass, cur!

Thou damned and luxurious †† mountain goat,  
Offer'st me brass?

Fr. Sol. *O pardonnez moy?*

Pist. Say'st thou me so? is that a ton of  
moys ‡‡?—

Come hither, boy; Ask me this slave in French,  
What is his name.

Boy. *Escoutez; Comment estes vous ap-  
pellé?*

Fr. Sol. *Monsieur le Fer.*

Boy. He says, his name is—master Fer.

Pist. Master Fer! I'll fer him, and firke §§  
him, and ferret him:—discuss the same in  
French unto him.

Boy. I do not know the French for fer,  
and ferret, and firke.

Pist. Bid him prepare, for I will cut his  
throat.

Fr. Sol. *Que dit-il, monsieur?*

Boy. *Il me commande de vous dire que  
vous faites vous prest; car ce soldat ici  
est disposé tout à cette heure de couper  
vostre gorge.*

Pist. Ouy, couper gorge, par ma foy, pesant,  
Unless thou give me crowns, brave crowns;  
Or mangled shalt thou be by this my sword.

Fr. Sol. *O, je vous supplie pour l'amour  
de Dieu, me pardonner! Je suis gentil-  
homme de bonne maison: gardez ma vie, et  
je vous donneray deux cents escus.*

Pist. What are his words?

Boy. He prays you to save his life: he is  
a gentleman of a good house; and, for his ran-  
some, he will give you two hundred crowns.

Pist. Tell him,—my fury shall abate, and I  
The crowns will take.

Fr. Sol. *Petit monsieur, que dit-il?*

Boy. *Encore qu'il est contre son jure-  
ment, de pardonner aucun prisonnier;  
neantmoins, pour les escus que vous l'avez  
promis, il est content de vous donner la li-  
berté, le franchisement.*

Fr. Sol. *Sur mes genoux, je vous donne  
mille remerciemens: et je m'estime heureux  
que je suis tombé entre les mains d'un che-  
valier, je pense, le plus brave, vaillant, et  
tres distingué seigneur d'Angleterre.*

Piss. Expound unto me, boy.

Boy. He gives you, upon his knees, a thou-  
sand thanks: and he esteems himself happy

\* i. e., In brazen plates anciently let into tomb-stones.

† We are soldiers but coarsely

tressed. † Golden show, superficial gilding.

§ Soiled.

|| Vanguard.

¶ An old cant word for a sword, so called from a famous sword-cutler of the name of Fox.

\*\* The diaphragm.

†† Lascivious.

‡‡ Pieces of money.

§§ Chastise.



that he hath fallen into the hands of (as he thinks) the most brave, valorous, and thrice-worthy signieur of England.

*Pist.* As I suck blood, I will some mercy show.—

Follow me, cur.

[*Exit* *PISTOL.*]

*Boy.* *Suivez vous le grand capitaine.*

[*Exit* French Soldier.]

I did never know so full a voice issue from so empty a heart: but the saying is true,—The empty vessel makes the greatest sound. *Bar-dolph*, and *Nym*, had ten times more valour than this roaring devil i'the old play, that every one may pare his nails with a wooden dagger; and they are both hanged; and so would this be, if he durst steal any thing adventurously. I must stay with the lackeys, with the luggage of our camp: the French might have a good prey of us, if he knew of it; for there is none to guard it, but boys. [*Exit.*]

SCENE V. *Another Part of the Field of Battle.*

*Alarums.* Enter *Dauphin*, *ORLEANS*, *BOURBON*, *Constable*, *RAMBURES*, and *Others.*

*Con.* *O diable!*

*Orl.* *O seigneur! —le jour est perdu, tout est perdu!*

*Dau.* *Mort de ma vie!* all is confounded, Reproach and everlasting shame [all!]  
Sits mocking in our plumes.—*O meschante fortune!*

Do not run away. [A short *Alarum.*]

*Con.* Why, all our ranks are broke.

*Dau.* *O perdurable\* shame!* let's stab ourselves. [for!]

Be these the wretches that we play'd at dice  
*Orl.* Is this the king we sent for his ransom? [but shame!]

*Bour.* Shame, and eternal shame, nothing Let us die instant: Once more back again; And he that will not follow *Bourbon* now, Let him go hence, and, with his cap in hand, Like a base pander, hold the chamber-door, Whilst by a slave, no gentler than my dog†, His fairest daughter is contaminate. [us now!]

*Con.* Disorder, that hath spoiled us, friend Let us, in heaps, go offer up our lives Unto these English, or else die with fame.

*Orl.* We are enough, yet living in the field, To smother up the English in our throngs, If any order might be thought upon.

*Bour.* The devil take order now! I'll to the throng;

Let life be short—else shame will be too long. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *Another Part of the Field.*

*Alarums.* Enter King *HENRY* and *Forces*; *EXETER*, and *Others.*

*K. Hen.* Well have we done, thrice valiant countrymen: field.

But all's not done, yet keep the French the  
*Exe.* The duke of York commends him to your majesty. [within this hour,

*K. Hen.* Lives he, good uncle? thrice,

I saw him down; thrice up again, and fighting: From helmet to the spur, all blood he was

*Exe.* In which array, (brave soldier,) doth he lie,

Larding the plain: and by his bloody side, (Yoke-fellow to his honour-owing wounds,) The noble earl of Suffolk also lies.

Suffolk first died, and York, all haggled over Comes to him, where in gore he lay insteep'd, And takes him by the beard; kisses the gashes, That bloodily did yawn upon his face;

And cries aloud,—*Turky, dear cousin Suffolk! My soul shall thine keep company to heaven: Turky, sweet soul, for mine, then fly a-breast, As, in this glorious and well-foughten field, We kept together in our chivalry!*

Upon these words I came, and cheer'd him up: He smiled me in the face, caught† me his hand, And, with a feeble gripe, says,—*Dear my lord, Commend my service to my sovereign.*

So did he turn, and over Suffolk's neck He threw his wounded arm, and kiss'd his lips; And so, espoused to death, with blood he seal'd A testament of noble-ending love

The pretty and sweet manner of it forced Those waters from me, which I would have stopp'd;

But I had not so much of man in me, But all my mother came into mine eyes, And gave me up to tears.

*K. Hen.* I blame you not; For, hearing this, I must perforce compound With mistful eyes, or they will issue too.—

[*Alarum.*]

But, hark! what new alarm is this same?— The French have reinforced their scatter'd men: Then every soldier kill his prisoners; Give the word through. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII. *Another Part of the Field.*

*Alarums.* Enter *FLUELLEN* and *GOWER.*

*Flu.* Kill the poys and the luggage! 'tis expressly against the law of arms: 'tis as arrant a piece of knavery, mark you now, as can be offered, in the world: In your conscience now is it not?

*Gow.* 'Tis certain, there's not a boy left alive and the cowardly rascals, that ran from the battle, have done this slaughter: besides, they have burned and carried away all that was in the king's tent: wherefore the king, most worthily, hath caused every soldier to cut his prisoner's throat. O, 'tis a gallant king!

*Flu.* Ay, he was born at Monmouth, captain *Gower*: What call you the town's name, where Alexander the pig was born?

*Gow.* Alexander the great.

*Flu.* Why, I pray you, is not pig, great? The pig, or the great, or the mighty, or the huge, or the magnanimous, are all one reckonings, save the phrase is a little variations.

*Gow.* I think Alexander the great was born in Macedon; his father was called—*Philip* of Macedon, as I take it.

*Flu.* I think, it is in Macedon, where Alexander is born. I tell you, captain,—If you

\* Lasting.

† i. e., Who has no more gentility.

‡ Reached.

look in the maps of the 'orld, I warrant you shall find, in the comparisons between Macedonia and Monmouth, that the situations, look you, is both alike. There is a river in Macedonia; and there is also moreover a river at Monmouth: it is called Wye, at Monmouth: but it is out of my prains, what is the name of the other river; but 'tis all one, 'tis so like as my fingers is to my fingers, and there is salmons in both. If you mark Alexander's life well, Harry of Monmouth's life is come after it indifferent well; for there is figures in all things. Alexander (God knows, and you know) in his rages, and his furies, and his wraths, and his cholers, and his moods, and his displeasures, and his indignations, and also being a little intoxicates in his prains, did, in his ales and his angers, look you, kill his pest friend, Clytus.

*Gov.* Our king is not like him in that; he never killed any of his friends.

*Flu.* It is not well done, mark you now, to take tales out of my mouth, ere it is make an end and finished. I speak but in the figures and comparisons of it: As Alexander is kill his friend Clytus, being in his ales and his cups; so also Harry Monmouth, being in right wits and his good judgments, is turn away the fat knight with the great pelly-doublet: he was full of jests, and gipes, and knaveries, and mocks; I am forget his name.

*Gov.* Sir John Falstaff.

*Flu.* That is he: I can tell you, there is good men born at Monmouth.

*Gov.* Here comes his majesty.

*Alarum.* Enter King HENRY, with a Part of the English Forces; WARWICK, GLOSTER, EXETER, and Others. [France

*K. Hen.* I was not angry since I came to Until this instant.—Take a trumpet, herald; Ride thou unto the horsemen on yon hill; If they will fight with us, bid them come down, Or void the field; they do offend our sight: If they'll do neither, we will come to them; And make them skirr\* away, as swift as stones Enforced from the old Assyrian slings: Besides, we'll cut the throats of those we have; And not a man of them, that we shall take, Shall taste our mercy:—Go, and tell them so.

Enter MONTJOY.

*Exe.* Here comes the herald of the French, my liege. [to be.

*Glo.* His eyes are humbler than they used

*K. Hen.* How now, what means this, herald? know'st thou not, [some?

That I have fined these bones of mine for ransom? Comest thou again for ransom?

*Mont.* No, great king:

I come to thee for charitable license, That we may wander o'er this bloody field, To book our dead, and then to bury them; To sort our nobles from our common men; For many of our princes (woe the while!) Lie drown'd and soak'd in mercenary blood; (So do our vulgar drench their peasant limbs In blood of princes;) and their wounded steeds Fret fetlock deep in gore, and, with wild rage,

Yerk out their armed heels at their dead masters, [king, Killing them twice. O, give us leave, great To view the field in safety, and dispose [king, Of their dead bodies.

*K. Hen.* I tell thee truly, herald, I know not if the day be ours, or no; For yet a many of your horsemen peer, And gallop o'er the field.

*Mont.* The day is yours.

*K. Hen.* Praised be God, and not our strength, for it!—

What is this castle call'd, that stands hard by? *Mont.* They call it—Agincourt.

*K. Hen.* Then call we this—the field of Agincourt,

Fought on the day of Crispin Crispianus.

*Flu.* Your grandfather of famous memory, an't please your majesty, and your great-uncle Edward the plack prince of Wales, as I have read in the chronicles, fought a most prave battle here in France.

*K. Hen.* They did, Fluellen.

*Flu.* Your majesty says very true: If your majesties is remembered of it, the Welshman did goot service in a garden where leeks did grow, wearing leeks in their Monmouth caps; which, your majesty knows, to this hour, is an honourable padge of the service; and I do believe, your majesty takes no scorn to wear the leek upon St. Tavy's day.

*K. Hen.* I wear it for a memorable honour: For I am Welsh, you know, good countryman.

*Flu.* All the water in Wye cannot wash your majesty's Welsh plood out of your pody, I can tell you that: Got pless it and preserve it, as long as it pleases his grace, and his majesty too!

*K. Hen.* Thanks, good my countryman.

*Flu.* By Cheshu, I am your majesty's countryman, I care not who know it; I will confess it to all the 'orld: I need not to be ashamed of your majesty, praised be God, so long as your majesty is an honest man. [with him;

*K. Hen.* God keep me so!—Our heralds go Bring me just notice of the numbers dead On both our parts.—Call yonder fellow hither.

[Points to WILLIAMS. *Exeunt* MONTJOY and Others.

*Exe.* Soldier, you must come to the king.

*K. Hen.* Soldier, why wear'st thou that glove in thy cap?

*Will.* An't please your majesty, 'tis the gage of one that I should fight withal, if he be alive.

*K. Hen.* An Englishman?

*Will.* An't please your majesty, a rascal, that swaggered with me last night: who, if 'a live, and ever dare to challenge this glove, I have sworn to take him a box o'the ear: or, if I can see my glove in his cap, (which he swore, as he was a soldier, he would wear, if alive,) I will strike it out soundly.

*K. Hen.* What think you, captain Fluellen? is it fit this soldier keep his oath?

*Flu.* He is a craven† and a villain else, an't please your majesty, in my conscience.

*K. Hen.* It may be, his enemy is a gentle-

man of great sort\*, quite from the answer of his degree.

*Flu.* Though he be as good a gentleman as the devil is, as Lucifer and Belzebub himself, it is necessary, look your grace, that he keep his vow and his oath: if he be perjured, see you now, his reputation is as arrant a villain, and a Jack's-sauce†, as ever his plack shoe trod upon Gt.'s ground and his earth, in my conscience, la.

*K. Hen.* Then keep thy vow, sirrah, when thou meet'st the fellow.

*Will.* So I will, my liege, as I live.

*K. Hen.* Who servest thou under?

*Will.* Under Captain Gower, my liege.

*Flu.* Gower is a good captain; and is good knowledge and literature in the wars.

*K. Hen.* Call him hither to me, soldier.

*Will.* I will, my liege. [Exit.]

*K. Hen.* Here, Fluellen; wear thou this favour for me, and stick it in thy cap: When Alençon and myself were down together, I plucked this glove from his helm: if any man challenge this, he is a friend to Alençon and an enemy to our person; if thou encounter any such, apprehend him, an thou dost love me.

*Flu.* Your grace does me as great honours as can be desired in the hearts of his subjects: I would fain see the man, that has but two legs, that shall find himself agrieved at this glove, that is all; but I would fain see it once; an please Got of his grace, that I might see it.

*K. Hen.* Knowest thou Gower?

*Flu.* He is my dear friend, an please you.

*K. Hen.* Pray thee, go seek him, and bring him to my tent.

*Flu.* I will fetch him. [Exit.]

*K. Hen.* My lord of Warwick,—and my brother Gloster,

Follow Fluellen closely at the heels:

The glove, which I have given him for a favour,

May, haply, purchase him a box o' the ear;

It is the soldier's; I, by bargain, should [wink:

Wear it myself. Follow, good cousin War-

If that the soldier strike him, (as, I judge

By his blunt bearing, he will keep his word,)

Some sudden mischief may arise of it;

For I do know Fluellen valiant,

And, touch'd with choler, hot as gunpowder,

And quickly will return an injury: [them,—

Follow, and see there be no harm between

Go you with me, uncle of Exeter. [Exeunt.]

SCENE VIII. Before King Henry's Pavilion.

Enter GOWER and WILLIAMS.

*Will.* I warrant, it is to knight you, captain.

Enter FLUELLEN.

*Flu.* Got's will and his pleasure, captain, I peseech you now, come apace to the king: there is more good toward you, peradventure, than is in your knowledge to dream of.

*Will.* Sir, know you this glove?

*Flu.* Know the glove? I know, the glove is a glove.

*Will.* I know this; and thus I challenge it.

[Strikes him.]

*Flu.* 'Sblud, an arrant traitor, as any's in the universal world, or in France, or in England.

*Gow.* How now, sir? you villain!

*Will.* Do you think I'll be forsworn?

*Flu.* Stand away, captain Gower; I will give treason his payment into plows, I warrant you.

*Will.* I am no traitor.

*Flu.* That's a lie in thy throat.—I charge you in his majesty's name, apprehend him: he's a friend of the duke Alençon's.

Enter WARWICK and GLOSTER.

*War.* How now, how now! what's the matter?

*Flu.* My lord of Warwick, here is (praised be Got for it!) a most contagious treason come to light, look you, as you shall desire in a summer's day. —Here is his majesty.

Enter KING HENRY and EXETER.

*K. Hen.* How now! what's the matter?

*Flu.* My liege, here is a villain, and a traitor that, look your grace, has struck the glove which your majesty is take out of the helmet of Alençon.

*Will.* My liege, this was my glove; here is the fellow of it: and he that I gave it to in change, promised to wear it in his cap; I promised to strike him, if he did: I met this man with my glove in his cap, and I have been as good as my word.

*Flu.* Your majesty hear now, (saving your majesty's manhood,) what an arrant, rascally, beggarly, lousy, knave it is: I hope, your majesty is plear me testimony, and witness, and avouchments, that this is the glove of Alençon, that your majesty is give me, in your conscience now.

*K. Hen.* Give me thy glove, soldier; Look, here is the fellow of it. 'Twas I, indeed, thou promisedst to strike; and thou hast given me most bitter terms.

*Flu.* An please your majesty, let his neck answer for it, if there is any martial law in the world.

*K. Hen.* How canst thou make me satisfaction?

*Will.* All offences, my liege, come from the heart: never came any from mine, that might offend your majesty.

*K. Hen.* It was ourself thou didst abuse.

*Will.* Your majesty came not like yourself: you appeared to me but as a common man; witness the night, your garments, your lowliness; and what your highness suffered under that shape, I beseech you, take it for your own fault, and not mine: for had you been as I took you for, I made no offence; therefore, I beseech your highness, pardon me.

*K. Hen.* Here, uncle Exeter, fill this glove with crowns,

And give it to this fellow.—Keep it, fellow; And wear it for an honour in thy cap, Till I do challenge it.—Give him the crowns:—And, captain, you must needs be friends with him.

*Flu.* By this day and this light, the fellow has mettle enough in his pelly:—Hold, there is

\* High rank.

† For sancy Jack.



twelve pence for you, and I pray you to serve God, and keep you out of prawls, and prabbles, and quarrels, and dissensions, and I warrant you, it is the petter for you.

*Will.* I will none of your money.

*Flu.* It is with a goot will; I can tell you, it will serve you to mend your shoes: Come, wherefore should you be so pashful? your shoes is not so goot: 'tis a goot silling, I warrant you, or I will change it.

*Enter an English Herald.*

*K. Hen.* Now, herald; are the dead numbered?

*Her.* Here is the number of the slaughter'd French. [*Delivers a Paper.*]

*K. Hen.* What prisoners of good sort are taken, uncle? [*the king;*]

*Eve.* Charles duke of Orleans, nephew to John duke of Bourbon, and lord Bouciquart: Of other lords, and barons, knights, and 'squires,

Full fifteen hundred, besides common men.

*K. Hen.* This note doth tell me of ten thousand French, [*number,*

That in the field lie slain: of princes in this And nobles bearing banners, there lie dead

One hundred twenty-six: added to these, Of knights, esquires, and gallant gentlemen,

Eight thousand and four hundred; of the which, [*knights:*

Five hundred were but yesterday dubb'd So that, in these ten thousand they have lost,

There are but sixteen hundred mercenaries; The rest are—princes, barons, lords, knights,

'squires, And gentlemen of blood and quality.

The names of those their nobles that lie dead,— Charles De-la-bret, his constable of France;

Jaques of Chatillon, admiral of France;

The master of the cross-bows, lord Rambures; Great-master of France, the brave sir Guis-chard Dauphin;

John duke of Alençon; Antony duke of Brabant, The brother to the duke of Burgundy; And Edward duke of Bar: of lusty earls, Grandpré, and Roussi, Fauconberg, and Foix, Beaumont, and Marle, Vaudemont, and Les-trale,

Here was a royal fellowship of death!—

Where is the number of our English dead?

[*Herald presents another Paper.*]

Edward the duke of York, the earl of Suffolk, Sir Richard Ketley, Davy Gam, esquire:

None else of name; and, of all other men, But five and twenty. O God, thy arm was here,

And not to us, but to thy arm alone, Ascribe we all.—When, without stratagem,

But in plain shock, and even play of battle, Was ever known so great and little loss,

On one part and on the other?—Take it, God, For it is only thine!

*Eve.*

'Tis wonderful!

*K. Hen.* Come, go we in procession to the village:

And be it death proclaimed through our host, To boast of this, or take that praise from God,

Which is his only.

*Flu.* Is it not lawful, an please your majesty, to tell how many is killed?

*K. Hen.* Yes, captain; but with this acknowledgment, That God fought for us. [*knowledge,*

*Flu.* Yes, my conscience, he did us great

*K. Hen.* Do we all holy rites; [*goot.* Let there be sung *Non nobis*, and *Te Deum*.

The dead with charity enclosed in clay, We'll then to Calais; and to England then;

Where ne'er from France arrived more happy men. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

*Enter CHORUS.*

*Cho.* Vouchsafe to those who have not read the story,

That I may prompt them: and of such as have, I humbly pray them to admit the excuse

Of time, of numbers, and due course of things, Which cannot in their huge and proper life

Be here presented. Now we bear the king Toward Calais: grant him there; there seen,

Heave him away upon your winged thoughts, Athwart the sea: Behold, the English beach

Pales in the flood with men, with wives, and boys, [*mouth'd sea,*

Whose shouts and claps out-voice the deep Which, like a mighty whiffier\*, fore the king,

Seems to prepare his way: so let him land; And, solemnly, see him set on to London.

So swift a pace hath thought, that even now You may imagine him upon Blackheath:

Where that his lords desire him, to have borne His bruised helmet, and his bended sword,

Before him, through the city: he forbids it, Being free from vainness and self-glorious

pride; Giving full trophy, signal, and ostent,

Quite from himself, to God. But now behold, In the quick forge and working-house of thought,

How London doth pour out her citizens! The mayor, and all his brethren, in best sort,—

Like to the senators of the antique Rome, With the plebeians swarming at their heels,—

Go forth, and fetch their conquering Caesar in: As, by a lower but by loving likelihood,

Were now the general of our gracious em-press || [*coming*

(As, in good time, he may,) from Ireland Bringing rebellion broadc'd ¶ on his sword,

How many would the peaceful city quit, To welcome him? much more, and much more

cause, [*him;* Did they this Harry. Now in London place

(As yet the lamentation of the French

\* An officer who walks first in processions.

+ i. e., To order it to be borne.

¶ Transferring all the honours of conquest from himself to God.

§ Similitude.

|| The earl of Essex in the reign of Elizabeth.

¶ Spitted, transfixed.

Invites the king of England's stay at home :  
The emperor's coming in behalf of France,  
To order peace between them;) and omit  
All the occurrences, whatever chanced,  
Till Harry's back return again to France;  
There must we bring him; and myself have  
play'd

The interim, by remembering you—'tis past.  
Then brook abridgment; and your eyes advance

After your thoughts, straight back again to France. [Exit.]

SCENE I. France. An English Court of Guard.

Enter FLUELLEN and GOWER.

Gow. Nay, that's right; but why wear you your leek to day? Saint Davy's day is past.

Flu. There is occasions and causes why and wherefore in all things: I will tell you, as my friend, captain Gower. The rascally, scald, beggarly, lousy, praggling knave, Pistol,—which you and yourself, and all the world, know to be no better than a fellow, look you now, of no merits,—he is come to me, and prings me pread and salt yesterday, look you and bid me eat my leek: it was in a place where I could not breed no contentions with him; but I will be so bold as to wear it in my cap till I see him once again, and then I will tell him a little piece of my desires.

Enter PISTOL.

Gow. Why, here he comes, swelling like a turkey-cock.

Flu. 'Tis no matter for his swellings, nor his turkey-cocks.—Got pless you, ancient Pistol! you scurvy, lousy knave, Got pless you!

Pist. Ha! art thou Bedlam? dost thou thirst, base Trojan,

To have me fold up Parca's fatal web \*?  
Hence! I am qualmish at the smell of leek.

Flu. I pescech you heartily, scurvy, lousy knave, at my desires, and my requests, and my petitions, to eat, look you, this leek; because, look you, you do not love it, nor your affections, and your appetites, and your digestions, does not agree with it, I would desire you to eat it.

Pist. Not for Cadwallader, and all his goats.

Flu. There is one goat for you. [Strikes him.] Will you be so good, scald knave, as eat it?

Pist. Base Trojan, thou shalt die.

Flu. You say very true, scald knave, when Got's will is: I will desire you to live in the mean time, and eat your victuals; come, there is sauce for it. [Striking him again.] You called me yesterday, mountain-squire; but I will make you to-day a squire of low degree. I pray you, fall to; if you can mock a leek, you can eat a leek.

Gow. Enough, captain; you have astonish'd him.

Flu. I say, I will make him eat some part of my leek, or I will peat his pate four days:—

Pite, I pray you; it is goot for your green wound, and your ploody coxcomb.

Pist. Must I bite?

Flu. Yes, certainly; and out of doubt, and out of questions too, and ambiguities.

Pist. By this leek, I will most horribly revenge; I eat, and eke I swear—

Flu. Eat, I pray you: Will you have some more sauce to your leek? there is not enough leek to swear by.

Pist. Quiet thy cudgel; thou dost see, I eat.

Flu. Much goot do you, scald knave, heartily. Nay, pray you, throw none away; the skin is goot for your broken coxcomb. When you take occasions to see leeks hereafter, I pray you, mock at them; that is all.

Pist. Good.

Flu. Ay, leeks is goot:—Hold you, there is a groat to heal your pate.

Pist. Me a groat.

Flu. Yes, verily, and in truth, you shall take it; or I have another leak in my pocket, which you shall eat.

Pist. I take thy groat, in earnest of revenge.

Flu. If I owe you any thing, I will pay you in cudgels; you shall be a woodmonger, and buy nothing of me but cudgels. God be wi' you, and keep you, and heal your pate. [Exit.]

Pist. All hell shall stir for this.

Gow. Go, go; you are a counterfeit cowardly knave. Will you mock at an ancient tradition,—began upon an honourable respect, and worn as a memorable trophy of predeceased valour,—and dare not avouch in your deeds any of your words? I have seen you gleeking and galling at this gentleman twice or thrice. You thought, because he could not speak English in the native garb, he could not therefore handle an English cudgel: you find it otherwise; and, henceforth, let a Welsh correction teach you a good English condition. Fare ye well. [Exit.]

Pist. Doth fortune play the huswife with me now?

News have I, that my Nell is dead i'the spital of malady of France;  
And there my rendezvous is quite cut off.  
Old I do wax; and from my weary limbs Honour is cudgell'd. Well, bawd will I turn, And something lean to cutpurse of quick hand. To England will I steal, and there I'll steal: And patches will I get unto these scars, And swear, I got them in the Gallia wars. [Exit.]

SCENE II. Troyes in Champagne.

An Apartment in the French king's Palace  
Enter, at one door, King HENRY, BEDFORD, GLOSTER, EXETER, WARWICK, WESTMORELAND, and other Lords; at another, the French King, Queen ISABEL, the Princess KATHARINE, Lords, Ladies, &c., the Duke of Burgundy, and his Train.

K. Hen. Peace to this meeting, wherefore we are met!

\* "Dost thou desire to have me put thee to death?"

‡ Scoffing, sneering.

§ Temper.

|| For jilt.

† Stunned.

¶ Hospital.

Unto our brother France,—and to our sister,  
Health and fair time of day:—joy and good  
wishes [rine ;

To our most fair and princely cousin Katha-  
And (as a branch and member of this royalty,  
By whom this great assembly is contrived),  
We do salute you, duke of Burgundy;— [all !  
And, princes French, and peers, health to you  
*Fr. King.* Right joyous are we to behold  
your face,

Most worthy brother England; fairly met:—  
So are you, princes English, every one.

*Q. Isa.* So happy be the issue, brother Eng-  
land,

Of this good day, and of this gracious meeting,  
As we are now glad to behold your eyes;  
Your eyes, which hitherto have borne in them  
Against the French, that met them in their bent,  
The fatal balls of murdering basilisks:  
The venom of such looks, we fairly hope,  
Have lost their quality; and that this day  
Shall change all griefs, and quarrels, into love.

*K. Hen.* To cry amen to that, thus we ap-  
pear. [you.

*Q. Isa.* You English princes all, I do salute  
*Bur.* My duty to you both, on equal love,  
Great kings of France and England! That I  
have labour'd [deavours,

With all my wits, my pains, and strong en-  
To bring your most imperial majesties  
Unto this bar\* and royal interview,  
Your mightiness on both parts best can witness.  
Since then my office hath so far prevail'd,  
That, face to face, and royal eye to eye,  
You have congregated; let it not disgrace me,  
If I demand, before this royal view,  
What rub, or what impediment, there is,  
Why that the naked, poor, and mangled peace,  
Dear nurse of arts, plenty, and joyful births,  
Should not, in this best garden of the world,  
Our fertile France, put up her lovely visage?  
Alas! she hath from France too long been  
chased;

And all her husbandry doth lie on heaps,  
Corrupting in its own fertility.  
Her vine, the merry cheerer of the heart,  
Unpruned dies: her hedges even-pleached,—  
Like prisoners wildly over-grown with hair,  
Put forth disorder'd twigs: her fallow leas  
The daniel, hemlock, and rank fumitory,  
Doth root upon; while that the coulter† rusts,  
That should deracinate‡ such savagery:  
The even mead, that erst brought sweetly forth  
The freckled cowslip, burnet, and green clover,  
Wanting the scythe, all uncorrected, rank,  
Conceives by idleness; and nothing teems,  
But hateful docks, rough thistles, kecksies, burs,  
Losing both beauty and utility. [hedges,  
And as our vineyards, fallows, meads, and  
Defective in their natures, grow to wildness;  
Even so our houses, and ourselves, and children,  
Have lost, or do not learn, for want of time,  
The sciences that should become our country;  
But grow, like savages,—as soldiers will,  
That nothing do but meditate on blood,—

To swearing and stern looks, diffused § attire,  
And every thing that seems unnatural.

Which to reduce into our former favour ||,  
You are assembled: and my speech entreats,  
That I may know the let ¶, why gentle peace  
Should not expel these inconveniencies,  
And bless us with her former qualities.

*K. Hen.* If, duke of Burgundy, you would  
the peace

Whose want gives growth to the imperfections  
Which you have cited, you must buy that peace  
With full accord to all our just demands;

Whose tenours and particular effects

You have, unscheduled briefly, in your hands,

*Bur.* The king hath heard them; to the  
There is no answer made. [which, as yet,

*K. Hen.* Well then, the peace,

Which you before so urged lies in his answer.

*Fr. King.* I have but with a cursory eye  
O'er-glanced the articles: please eth your grace  
To appoint some of your council presently  
To sit with us once more, with better heed  
To re-survey them, we will, suddenly,  
Pass our accept, and peremptory answer.

*K. Hen.* Brother, we shall.—Go, uncle  
Exeter,— [Gloster,—

And brother Clarence,—and you, brother  
Warwick—and Huntingdon,—go with the  
And take with you free power, to ratify, [king:  
Augment, or alter, as your wisdoms best  
Shall see advantageous for our dignity,  
Any thing in, or out of, our demands; [sister,  
And we'll consign thereto.—Will you, fair  
Go with the princes, or stay here with us?

*Q. Isa.* Our gracious brother, I will go with  
them;

Haply, a woman's voice may do some good,  
When articles, too nicely urged, be stood on.

*K. Hen.* Yet leave our cousin Katharine  
here with us,

She is our capital demand, comprised  
Within the fore-rank of our articles.

*Q. Isa.* She hath good leave.

[*Exeunt all but HENRY, KATHA-  
RINE, and her Gentlewoman.*

*K. Hen.* Fair Katharine, and most fair!  
Will you vouchsafe to teach a soldier terms,  
Such as will enter at a lady's ear,  
And plead his love-suit to her gentle heart?

*Kath.* Your majesty shall mock at me; I  
cannot speak your English.

*K. Hen.* O fair Katharine, if you will love  
me soundly with your French heart, I will be  
glad to hear you confess it brokenly with your  
English tongue. Do you like me, Kate?

*Kath.* *Pardonnez moy*, I cannot tell vat is  
—like me.

*K. Hen.* An angel is like you, Kate; and  
you are like an angel.

*Kath.* *Que dit-il? que je suis semblable à  
les anges?*

*Alice.* *Ouy, vrayment, (sauf vostre grace)  
ainsi dit-il.*

*K. Hen.* I said so, dear Katharine; and I  
must not blush to affirm it.

\* Barrier. † Plowshare.  
Extravagant.

‡ To deracinate is to force up the roots.  
|| Appearance. ¶ Hinderance.



Kath. *O bon Dieu! les langues des hommes sont pleines des tromperies.*

K. Hen. What says she, fair one? that the tongues of men are full of deceits?

Alice. *Ouy*; dat de tongues of de mans is be full of deceits: dat is de princess.

K. Hen. The princess is the better English-woman. I'faith, Kate, my wooing is fit for thy understanding: I am glad thou canst speak no better English; for, if thou couldst, thou wouldst find me such a plain king, that thou wouldst think I had sold my farm to buy my crown. I know no ways to mince it in love, but directly to say—I love you: then, if you urge me further than to say—Do you in faith? I wear out my suit. Give me your answer; I'faith, do; and so clap hands and a bargain: How say you, lady?

Kath. *Sauf vostre honneur*, me understand well.

K. Hen. Marry, if you would put me to verses, or to dance for your sake, Kate, why you undid me: for the one, I have neither words nor measure; and for the other, I have no strength in measure\*, yet a reasonable measure in strength. If I could win a lady at leap-frog, or by vaulting into my saddle with my armour on my back, under the correction of bragging be it spoken, I should quickly leap into a wife. Or, if I might buffet for my love, or bound my horse for her favours, I could lay on like a butcher, and sit like a jack-anapes, never off: but, before God, I cannot look greenly†, nor gasp out my eloquence; nor I have no cunning in protestation; only downright oaths, which I never use till urged, nor never break for urging. If thou canst love a fellow of this temper, Kate, whose face is not worth sun-burning, that never looks in his glass for love of any thing he sees there, let thine eye be thy cook. I speak to thee plain soldier: If thou canst love me for this, take me: if not, to say to thee—that I shall die, is true; but—for thy love, by the Lord, no; yet I love thee too. And while thou livest, dear Kate, take a fellow of plain and uncoined constancy; for he perforce must do thee right, because he hath not the gift to woo in other places: for these fellows of infinite tongue, that can rhyme themselves into ladies' favours,—they do always reason themselves out again. What! a speaker is but a prater; a rhyme is but a ballad. A good leg will fall‡; a straight back will stoop; a black beard will turn white; a curled pate will grow bald; a fair face will wither; a full eye will wax hollow: but a good heart, Kate, is the sun and moon; or, rather, the sun, and not the moon; for it shines bright, and never changes, but keeps his course truly. If thou would have such a one, take me: And take me, take a soldier; take a soldier, take a king: And what sayest thou then to my love? speak, my fair, and fairly, I pray thee.

Kath. Is it possible dat I should love de enemy of France?

K. Hen. No; it is not possible, you should love the enemy of France, Kate: but, in loving me, you should love the friend of France; for I love France so well, that I will not part with a village of it; I will have it all mine: and, Kate, when France is mine, and I am yours, then yours is France, and you are mine.

Kath. I cannot tell vat is dat.

K. Hen. No, Kate? I will tell thee in French; which, I am sure, will hang upon my tongue like a new-married wife about her husband's neck, hardly to be shook off. *Quand j'ay la possession de France, et quand vous avez la possession de moi*, (let me see, what then? Saint Dennis be my speed!)—*donc vostre est France, et vous estes mienne*. It is as easy for me, Kate, to conquer the kingdom, as to speak so much more French: I shall never move thee in French, unless it be to laugh at me.

Kath. *Sauf vostre honneur, le François que vous parlez, est meilleur que l'Anglois lequel je parle*.

K. Hen. No, 'faith, 'tis not, Kate: but thy speaking of my tongue, and I thine, most truly falsely, must needs be granted to be much at one. But, Kate, dost thou understand thus much English? Canst thou love me?

Kath. I cannot tell.

K. Hen. Can any of your neighbours tell, Kate? I'll ask them. Come, I know, thou lovest me: and at night when you come into your closet, you'll question this gentlewoman about me; and I know, Kate, you will, to her, dispraise those parts in me, that you love with your heart: but, good Kate, mock me mercifully; the rather, gentle princess, because I love thee cruelly. If ever thou be'st mine, Kate, (as I have a saving faith within me, tells me,—thou shalt,) I get thee with scrambling, and thou must therefore needs prove a good soldier-breeder: Shall not thou and I, between Saint Dennis and Saint George, compound a boy, half French, half English, that shall go to Constantinople, and take the Turk by the beard? shall we not? what sayest thou, my fair flower-de-luce?

Kath. I do not know dat.

K. Hen. No; 'tis hereafter to know, but now to promise; do but now promise, Kate, you will endeavour for your French part of such a boy; and, for my English moiety, take the word of a king and a bachelor. How answer you, *la plus belle Katharine du monde, mon tres chere et divine deesse*?

Kath. Your majesté 'ave fausse French enough to deceive de most sage demoiselle dat is en France.

K. Hen. Now, fie upon my false French! By mine honour, in true English, I love thee, Kate: by which honour I dare not swear, thou lovest me; yet my blood begins to flatter

\* In dancing.

† i. e., Like a young lover, awkwardly.

‡ He means, resembling a plain piece of metal, which has not yet received any impression.

§ Fall away.

me that thou dost, notwithstanding the poor and untempering effect of my visage\*. Now beshrew my father's ambition! he was thinking of civil wars when he got me; therefore was I created with a stubborn outside, with an aspect of iron, that, when I come to woo ladies, I fright them. But, in faith, Kate, the elder I wax, the better I shall appear: my comfort is, that old age, that ill layer-up of beauty, can do no more spoil upon my face: thou hast me, if thou hast me, at the worst; and thou shalt wear me, if thou wear me, better and better: And therefore tell me, most fair Katharine, will you have me? Put off your maiden blushes; avouch the thoughts of your heart with the looks of an empress; take me by the hand, and say—Harry of England, I am thine: which word thou shalt no sooner bless mine ear withal, but I will tell thee aloud—England is thine, Ireland is thine, France is thine, and Henry Plantagenet is thine; who, though I speak it before his face, if he be not fellow with the best king, thou shalt find the best king of good fellows. Come, your answer in broken music; for thy voice is music, and thy English broken: therefore, queen of all, Katharine, break thy mind to me in broken English.—Wilt thou have me?

*Koth.* Dat is as it shall please de roy mon pere.

*K. Hen.* Nay, it will please him well, Kate; it shall please him, Kate.

*Kath.* Den it shall also content me.

*K. Hen.* Upon that I will kiss your hand, and I call you—my queen.

*Kath.* *Laissez, mon seigneur, laissez, laissez: ma foy, je ne veux point que vous abaissez vostre grandeur, en baisant la main d'une vostre indigne serviteure; excusez moy, je vous supplie, mon tres puissant seigneur.*

*K. Hen.* Then I will kiss your lips, Kate.

*Kath.* *Les dames, et damoielles, pour estre baisees devant leur nopces, il n'est pas le coutume de France.* [she?]

*K. Hen.* Madam my interpreter, what says *Alice*. Dat it is not be de fashion pour les ladies of France,—I cannot tell what is, *baiser*, en English.

*K. Hen.* To kiss.

*Alice.* Your majesty entendre better que moy.

*K. Hen.* It is not the fashion for the maids in France to kiss before they are married, would she say?

*Alice.* *Ouy, vrayment.*

*K. Hen.* O, Kate, nice customs curt'sy to great kings. Dear Kate, you and I cannot be confined within the weak list of a country's fashion: we are the makers of manners, Kate; and the liberty that follows our places, stops the mouths of all findfaults; as I will do yours, for upholding the nice fashion of your country, in denying me a kiss: therefore, patiently, and yielding. [Kissing her.] You

have witchcraft in your lips, Kate: there is more eloquence in a sugar-touch of them, than in the tongues of the French council; and they should sooner persuade Harry of England, than a general petition of monarchs. Here comes your father.

*Enter the French King and Queen, BURGUNDY, BEDFORD, GLOSTER, EXETER, WESTMORELAND, and other French and English Lords.*

*Bur.* God save your majesty! my royal cousin, teach you our princess English?

*K. Hen.* I would have her learn, my fair cousin, how perfectly I love her; and that is good English.

*Bur.* Is she not apt?

*K. Hen.* Our tongue is rough, coz; and my condition† is not smooth: so that, having neither the voice nor the heart of flattery about me, I cannot so conjure up the spirit of love in her, that he will appear in his true likeness.

*Bur.* Pardon the frankness of my mirth, if I answer you for that. If you would conjure in her you must make a circle: if conjure up love in her in his true likeness, he must appear naked, and blind: Can you blame her then, being a maid yet rosed over with the virgin crimson of modesty, if she deny the appearance of a naked blind boy in her naked seeing self? It were, my lord, a hard condition for a maid to consign to.

*K. Hen.* Yet they do wink, and yield; as love is blind, and enforces.

*Bur.* They are then excused, my lord, when they see not what they do.

*K. Hen.* Then, good my lord, teach your cousin to consent to winking.

*Bur.* I will wink on her to consent, my lord, if you will teach her to know my meaning: for maids, well summered and warm kept, are like flies at Bartholomew-tide, blind, though they have their eyes; and then they will endure handling, which before would not abide looking on.

*K. Hen.* This moral‡ ties me over to time, and a hot summer; and so I will catch the fly, your cousin, in the latter end, and she must be blind too.

*Bur.* As love is, my lord, before it loves.

*K. Hen.* It is so: and you may, some of you, thank love for my blindness; who cannot see many a fair French city, for one fair French maid that stands in my way.

*Fr. King.* Yes, my lord, you see them respectively, the cities turned into a maid; for they are all girdled with maiden walls, that war hath never entered.

*K. Hen.* Shall Kate be my wife?

*Fr. King.* So please you.

*K. Hen.* I am content; so the maiden cities you talk of, may wait on her: so the maid, that stood in the way of my wish, shall shew me the way to my will.

*Fr. King.* We have consented to all terms of reason.

\* i. e., Though my face has no power to soften you.

† Slight barrier.

‡ Temper.

§ Application.

*K. Hen.* Is't so, my lords of England?

*West.* The king hath granted every article: His daughter, first; and then, in sequel, all, According to their firm proposed natures.

*Eze.* Only, he hath not yet subscribed this:—Where your majesty demands,—That the king of France, having any occasion to write for matter of grant, shall name your highness in this form, and with this addition, in French,—*Notre tres cher filz Henry roy d'Angleterre, heretier de France*; and thus in Latin,—*Præclarissimus filius noster Henricus, rex Angliæ, et hæres Franciæ*.

*Fr. King.* Nor this I have not, brother, so denied,

But your request shall make me let it pass.

*K. Hen.* I pray you then, in love and dear alliance,

Let that one article rank with the rest:

And, thereupon, give me your daughter.

*Fr. King.* Take her, fair son; and from her blood raise up

Issue to me: that the contending kingdoms Of France and England, whose very shores look pale

With envy of each other's happiness, May cease their hatred; and this dear conjunction

Plant neighbourhood and christian-like accord In their sweet bosoms, that never war advance His bleeding sword 'twixt England and fair  
*All. Amen.* [France.]

*K. Hen.* Now welcome, Kate:—and bear me witness all,

That here I kiss her as my sovereign queen.  
[Flourish.]

*Q. Isa.* God, the best maker of all marriages

Combine your hearts in one, your realms in one!

As man and wife, being two, are one in love So be there 'twixt your kingdoms such a spotsal,

That never may ill office, or fell jealousy, Which troubles oft the bed of blessed marriage,  
[doms.]

Thrust in between the paction of these kingdoms To make divorce of their incorporate league; That English may as French, French Englishmen,

Receive each other!—God speak this Amen!

*All. Amen!* [which day,

*K. Hen.* Prepare we for our marriage:—on My lord of Burgundy, we'll take your oath, And all the peers', for surety of our leagues.— Then shall I swear to Kate, and you to me; And may our oaths well kept and prosp'rous be!  
[Exeunt]

*Enter CHORUS.*

Thus far, with rough, and all unable pen, Our bending\* author hath pursued the story; In little room confining mighty men,

Mangling by starts the full course of their glory.  
[live]

Small time, but, in that small, most greatly This star of England: fortune made his sword;

By which the world's best garden † he achieved. And of it left his son imperial lord.

Henry the sixth, in infant bands crown'd king Of France and England did this king succeed;

Whose state so many had the managing, That they lost France, and made his England

bleed: [sake, Which oft our stage hath shewn; and, for their

In your fair minds let this acceptance take.  
[Exit]

\* i. e., Unequal to the weight of the subject.

† France.

This play has many scenes of high dignity, and many of easy merriment. The character of the king is well supported, except in his courtship, where he has neither the vivacity of Hal, nor the grandeur of Henry. The humour of Pistol is very happily continued: his character has perhaps been the model of all the bullies that have yet appeared on the English stage.

The lines given to the Chorus have many admirers; but the truth is, that in them a little may be praised, and much must be forgiven: nor can it be easily discovered why the intelligence given by the Chorus is more necessary in this play than in many others where it is omitted. The great defect of this play is the emptiness and narrowness of the last Act, which a very little diligence might have easily avoided.—JOHNSON



# FIRST PART OF KING HENRY VI.

## Persons represented.

KING HENRY the SIXTH.  
Duke of GLOSTER, *uncle to the King, and Protector.*  
Duke of BEDFORD, *uncle to the King, and Regent of France.*  
THOMAS BEAUFORT, *Duke of Exeter, great uncle to the King.*  
HENRY BEAUFORT, *great uncle to the King, Bishop of Winchester, and afterwards Cardinal.*  
JOHN BEAUFORT, *Earl of Somerset; afterwards Duke.*  
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, *eldest son of Richard, late Earl of Cambridge; afterwards Duke of York.*  
Earl of WARWICK. Earl of SALISBURY.  
Earl of SUFFOLK.  
Lord TALBOT, *afterwards Earl of Shrewsbury.*  
JOHN TALBOT, *his son.*  
EDMUND MORTIMER, *Earl of March.*  
Mortimer's Keeper, *and a Lawyer.*  
SIR JOHN FASTOLFE. SIR WILLIAM LUCY.  
SIR WILLIAM GLANSDALE. SIR THOMAS GARGRAVE.  
Mayor of London. WOODVILLE, *Lieut. of the Tower.*

VERNON, *of the White Rose, or York faction.*  
BASSET, *of the Red Rose, or Lancaster faction.*  
CHARLES, *Dauphin, and afterwards King of France.*  
REIGNIER, *Duke of Anjou, and titular King of Naples.*  
Duke of BURGUNDY. Duke of ALENÇON.  
Governor of Paris. Bastard of Orleans.  
Master-Gunner of Orleans, and his Son.  
General of the French forces in Bourdeaux.  
A French Sergeant. A Porter.  
An old Shepherd, *father to Joan la Pucelle.*  
MARGARET, *daughter to Reignier; afterwards married to King Henry.*  
Countess of AUVERGNE.  
JOAN LA PUCELLE, *commonly called Joan of Arc.*  
*Fiends appearing to La Pucelle, Lords, Warders of the Tower, Heralds, Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and several Attendants both on the English and French.*  
*Scene, partly in England, and partly in France.*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. *Westminster Abbey.*

*Dead March. Corpse of King Henry the Fifth discovered, lying in state; attended on by the Dukes of BEDFORD, GLOSTER, and EXETER; the Earl of WARWICK, the Bishop of Winchester, Heralds, &c.*

*Bed.* Hung be the heavens with black\*,  
yield day to night!

Comets, importing change of times and states,  
Brandish your crystal tresses in the sky;  
And with them scourge the bad revolting stars,  
That have consented unto Henry's death!  
Henry the fifth, too famous to live long!  
England ne'er lost a king of so much worth.

*Glo.* England ne'er had a king, until his time.

Virtue he had, deserving to command:  
His brandish'd sword did blind men with his beams;

His arms spread wider than a dragon's wings;  
His sparkling eyes replete with wrathful fire,  
More dazzled and drove back his enemies,  
Than mid-day sun, fierce bent against their faces.

What should I say? his deeds exceed all speech:  
He ne'er lift up his hand, but conquered.

*Eze.* We mourn in black; why mourn we not in blood?

Henry is dead, and never shall revive:  
Upon a wooden coffin we attend;  
And death's dishonourable victory,  
We with our stately presence glorify,  
Like captives bound to a triumphant car.  
What! shall we curse the planets of mishap,  
That plotted thus our glory's overthrow?  
Or shall we think the subtle-witted French  
Conjurers and sorcerers, that, afraid of him,  
By magic verses† have contrived his end?

*Win.* He was a king bless'd of the King of kings!

Unto the French the dreadful judgment-day  
So dreadful will not be, as was his sight.  
The battles of the Lord of hosts he fought:  
The church's prayers made him so prosperous.

*Glo.* The church! where is it? Had not churchmen pray'd,  
His thread of life had not so soon decay'd:  
None do you like but an effeminate prince,  
Whom, like a school-boy, you may over-awe

\* Alluding to our ancient stage practice when a tragedy was to be acted.

† There was a notion long prevalent, that life might be taken away by metrical charms

*Win.* Gloster, whate'er we like, thou art protector;  
And lookest to command the prince, and realm.  
Thy wife is proud; she holdeth thee in awe,  
More than God, or religious churchmen may.

*Glo.* Name not religion, for thou lovest the flesh;  
And ne'er throughout the year to church thou  
Except it be to pray against thy foes.

*Bed.* Cease, cease, these jars, and rest your minds in peace!

Let's to the altar:—Heralds, wait on us:—  
Instead of gold, we'll offer up our arms;  
Since arms avail not, now that Henry's dead.  
Posterity, await for wretched years,  
When at their mothers' moist eyes babes  
shall suck;

Our Isle be made a nourish\* of salt tears,  
And none but women left to wail the dead.—  
Henry the fifth! thy ghost I invoke;  
Prosper this realm, keep it from civil broils!  
Combat with adverse planets in the heavens!  
A far more glorious star thy soul will make,  
Than Julius Cæsar, or bright——

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My honourable lords, health to you  
Sad tidings bring I to you out of France, [all]  
Of loss, of slaughter, and discomfiture:  
Guinne, Champagne, Rheims, Orleans,  
Paris, Guysors, Poitiers, are all quite lost.

*Bed.* What say'st thou, man, before dead  
Henry's corse?

Speak softly; or the loss of those great towns  
Will make him burst his lead, and rise from  
death.

*Glo.* Is Paris lost? is Rouën yielded up?  
If Henry were reca I'd to life again,  
These news would cause him once more yield  
the ghost.

*Exe.* How were they lost? what treachery

*Mess.* No treachery; but want of men and  
Among the soldiers this is muttered,— [money,  
That here you maintain several factions;  
And, whilst a field should be despatched and  
You are disputing of your generals. [fought,  
One would have ling'ring wars, with little cost;  
Another would fly swift, but wanteth wings;  
A third man thinks, without expense at all,  
By guileful fair words peace may be obtain'd.  
Awake, awake, English nobility!

Let not sloth dim your honours, new-begot:  
Cropp'd are the flower-de-luces in your arms;  
Of England's coat one half is cut away!

*Exe.* Were our tears wanting to this funeral,  
These tidings would call forth her flowing  
tides †.

*Bed.* Me they concern; regent I am of  
Give me my steely coat, I'll fight for France.  
Away with these disgraceful wailing robes!  
Wounds I will lend the French, instead of eyes,  
To weep their intermissive miseries ‡.

*Enter another Messenger.*

2 *Mess.* Lords, view these letters, full of  
bad mischance;  
France is revolted from the English quite,

Except some petty towns of no import:  
The Dauphin, Charles, is crowned king in  
Rheims;

The bastard of Orleans with him is join'd;  
Reignier, duke of Anjou, doth take his part;  
The duke of Alençon flieth to his side. [him]

*Exe.* The Dauphin crowned king! all fly to  
O, whither shall we fly from this reproach?

*Glo.* We will not fly, but to our enemies'  
throats:

Bedford, if thou be slack, I'll fight it out.

*Bed.* Gloster, why doubt'st thou of my for-  
wardness?

An army have I muster'd in my thoughts,  
Wherewith already France is over-run.

*Enter a third Messenger.*

3 *Mess.* My gracious lords,—to add to your  
laments, [hear-e,—

Wherewith you now bedew king Henry's  
I must inform you of a dismal fight,  
Betwixt the stout lord Talbot and the French.

*Win.* What! wherein Talbot overcame? is't  
so?

3 *Mess.* O, no; wherein lord Talbot was  
o'erthrown:

The circumstance I'll tell you more at large.

The tenth of August last, this dreadful lord,  
Retiring from the siege of Orleans,

Having full scarce six thousand in his troop,  
By three and twenty thousand of the French

Was round encompassed and set upon:

No leisure had he to enrank his men;

He wanted pikes to set before his archers;

Instead whereof, sharp stakes, pluck'd out of  
hedges,

They pitched in the ground confusedly,

To keep the horsemen off from breaking in.

More than three hours the fight continued;

Where valiant Talbot, above human thought,

Enacted wonders with his sword and lance.

Hundreds he sent to hell, and none durst stand  
him;

Here, there, and every where, enraged he slew:

The French exclaim'd, The devil was in arms;

All the whole army stood amazed on him:

His soldiers, spying his undaunted spirit,

A Talbot! a Talbot! cried out amain,

And rush'd into the bowels of the battle.

Here had the conquest fully been seal'd up,

If sir John Fastolfe had not played the coward;

He being in the vaward, (placed behind,

With purpose to relieve and follow them,) <sup>†</sup>

Cowardly fled, not having struck one stroke.

Hence grew the general wreck and massacre;

Enclosed were they with their enemies:

A base Walloon, to win the Dauphin's grace,

Thrust Talbot with a spear into the back,

Whom all France, with their chief assembled  
strength,

Durst not presume to look once in the face.

*Bed.* Is Talbot slain? then I will slay myself.

For living idly here, in pomp and ease,

Whilst such a worthy leader, wanting aid,

Unto his dastard foe-men is betray'd.

3 *Mess.* O no, he lives; but is took prisoner

\* Nurse was anciently so spelt.

† Her, i. e., England's.

‡ i. e. Their miseries, which have had only a short intermission.

And lord Scales with him, and lord Hungerford : [wise.]

Most of the rest slaughtered, or took like—  
*Bed.* His ransome there is none but I shall pay :

I'll hale the Dauphin headlong from his throne,  
His crown shall be the ransome of my friend ;  
Four of their lords I'll change for one of ours.—  
Farewell, my masters ; to my task will I ;  
Bonfires in France forthwith I am to make,  
To keep our great St. George's feast withal :  
Ten thousand soldiers with me I will take,  
Whose bloody deeds shall make all Europe quake. [besieged ;]

*3 Mess.* So you had need ; for Orleans is  
The English army is grown weak and faint ;  
The earl of Salisbury craveth quick supply,  
And hardly keeps his men from mutiny.  
Since they, so few, watch such a multitude.

*Eze.* Remember, lords, your oaths to Henry  
Either to quell the Dauphin utterly, [sworn ;]  
Or bring him in obedience to your yoke.

*Bed.* I do remember it ; and here take leave,  
To go about my preparation. [Exit.]

*Glo.* I'll to the Tower, with all the haste I  
To view the artillery and munition ; [can,  
And then I will proclaim young Henry king. [Exit.]

*Eze.* To Eltham will I, where the young king  
Being ordain'd his special governor ; [is,  
And for his safety there I'll best devise. [Exit.]

*Win.* Each hath his place and function to attend :

I am left out ; for me nothing remains.  
But long I will not be Jack-out-of-office ;  
The king from Eltham I intend to send,  
And sit at chiefest stern of public weal.  
[Exit. Scene closes.]

SCENE II: France. Before Orleans.

Enter CHARLES, with his Forces ; ALENÇON, REIGNIER, and Others.

*Char.* Mars his true moving, even as in the heavens,

So in the earth, to this day is not known :  
Late did he shine upon the English side ;  
Now we are victors upon us he smiles.  
What towns of any moment, but we have ?

At pleasure here we lie, near Orleans :  
Otherwhiles, the famish'd English, like pale  
Faintly besiege us, one hour in a month. [ghosts,  
*Alen.* They want their porridge, and their fat bull-beeves :

Either they must be dieted like mules,  
And have their provender tied to their mouths,  
Or piteous they will look, like drowned mice.

*Reig.* Let's raise the siege ; Why live we idly  
Talbot is taken, whom we wot to fear : [here ?  
Remaineth none but mad-brain'd Salisbury ;  
And he may well in fretting spend his gall,  
Nor men, nor money, hath he to make war.

*Char.* Sound, sound alarm ; we will rush on them.

Now for the honour of the forlorn French :—

Him I forgive my death, that killeth me,  
When he sees me go back one foot, or fly.

[Exeunt.  
*Alarums ; Excursions ; afterwards a Retreat.*

Re-enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, REIGNIER, and Others.

*Char.* Who ever saw the like ? what men have I ?— [fled,  
Dogs ! cowards ! dastards !—I would ne'er have  
But that they left me 'midst my enemies.

*Reig.* Salisbury is a desperate homicide ;  
He fighteth as one weary of his life.

The other lords, like lions wanting food,  
Do rush upon us as their hungry prey \*.

*Alen.* Froissard, a countryman of ours, re  
England all Olivers and Rowlands bred, [cords  
During the time Edward the third did reign.  
More truly now may this be verified ;  
For none but Hamsons, and Goliasses,  
It sendeth forth to skirmish. One to ten !  
Lean raw-boned rascals ! who would e'er sap  
They had such courage and audacity ? [pose

*Char.* Let's leave this town ; for they are  
hair-brain'd slaves, [leager :  
And hunger will enforce them to be more  
Of old I know them ; rather with their teeth  
The walls they'll tear down, than forsake the  
siege. [device,

*Reig.* I think, by some odd gimmals +  
Their arms are set, like clocks, still to strike on ;  
Else ne'er could they hold out so as they do.  
By my consent, we'll e'en let them alone.

*Alen.* Be it so.

Enter the Bastard of Orleans.

*Bast.* Where's the prince Dauphin, I have  
news for him ? [to us.

*Char.* Bastard † of Orleans, thrice welcome  
*Bast.* Methinks, your looks are sad, your  
cheer ‡ appall'd ;

Hath the late overthrow wrought this offence  
Be not dismay'd, for succour is at hand :  
A holy maid hither with me I bring,  
Which, by a vision sent to her from heaven,  
Ordained is to raise this tedious siege,  
And drive the English forth the bounds of  
The spirit of deep prophecy she hath, [France.  
Exceeding the nine sibyls of old Rome ; [sery.  
What's past, and what's to come, she can de-  
Speak, shall I call her in ? Believe my words  
For they are certain and unfallible.

*Char.* Go, call her in : [Exit Bastard.] But,  
first, to try her skill,  
Reignier, stand thou as Dauphin in my place ;  
Question her proudly, let thy looks be stern :—  
By this means shall we sound what skill she  
hath. [Retires.]

Enter LA PUCELLE, Bastard of Orleans, and Others.

*Reig.* Fair maid, is't thou wilt do these  
wondrous feats ? [guile me ?—

*Puc.* Reignier, is't thou that thinkest to be  
Where is the Dauphin ?—come, come from  
behind ;

\* i. e., The prey for which they are hungry.

+ A gimnal is a piece of jointed work where one piece moves within another ; here it is taken at large for an engine.

† This was not in former times a term of reproach.

‡ Countenance.



I know thee well, though never seen before.  
Be not amazed, there's nothing hid from me :  
In private will I talk with thee apart :—  
Stand back, you lords, and give us leave a  
while. [dash.]

*Reig.* She takes upon her bravely at first

*Puc.* Dauphin, I am by birth a shepherd's  
My wit untrain'd in any kind of art. [daughter,  
Heaven, and our Lady gracious, hath it pleased  
To shine on my contemptible estate :

Lo, whilst I waited on my tender lambs,  
And to sun's parching heat display'd my cheeks,  
God's mother deigned to appear to me ;

And, in a vision full of majesty,  
Will'd me to leave my base vocation,  
And free my country from calamity :

Her aid she promised, and assured success :

In complete glory she reveal'd herself ;

And, whereas I was black and swart before,  
With those clear rays which she infused on me,  
That beauty am I bless'd with which you see.

Ask me what question thou canst possible,  
And I will answer unpremeditated :

My conage try by combat, if thou dar'st,

And thou shalt find that I exceed my sex.

Resolve on this\* : Thou shalt be fortunate,  
If thou receive me for thy warlike mate.

*Char.* Thou hast astonish'd me with thy high  
terms ;

Only this proof I'll of thy valour make,—

In single combat thou shalt buckle with me ;

And, if thou vanquishest, thy words are true ;  
Otherwise, I renounce all confidence. [sword,

*Puc.* I am prepared : here is my keen-edged  
Deck'd with five flower-de-luces on each side ;  
The which at Touraine, in Saint Katharine's  
church-yard,

Out of a deal of old iron I chose forth. [man.

*Char.* Then come o'God's name, I fear no wo-

*Puc.* And, while I live, I'll ne'er fly from  
a man. [They fight.

*Char.* Stay, stay thy hands ; thou art an  
Amazon,

And fightest with the sword of Deborah.

*Puc.* Christ's mother helps me, else I were  
too weak. [help me :

*Char.* Whoe'er helps thee, 'tis thou that must  
Impatiently I burn with thy desire ;

My heart and hands thou hast at once subdued.

Excellent Pucelle, if thy name be so,

I let me thy servant, and not sovereign, be ;

'Tis the French Dauphin sueth to thee thus.

*Puc.* I must not yield to any rites of love,

For my profession's sacred from above :

When I have chased all thy foes from hence,

Then will I think upon a recompense.

*Char.* Mean time, look gracious on thy prostrate  
thrall. [talk.

*Reig.* My lord, methinks, is very long in

*Alen.* Doubtless he shrives this woman to  
her snook ;

Else ne'er could he so long protract his speech

*Reig.* Shall we disturb him, since he keeps  
no mean ? [do know :

*Alen.* He may mean more than we poor men

These women are shrewd tempters with their  
tongues. [you on ?

*Reig.* My lord, where are you ? what devise  
Shall we give over Orleans, or no ?

*Puc.* Why, no, I say, distrustful recreants !  
Fight till the last gasp ; I will be your guard.

*Char.* What she says I'll confirm ; we'll  
fight it out.

*Puc.* Assign'd am I to be the English scourge.  
This night the siege assuredly I'll raise :

Expect Saint Martin's summer†, halcyon days,

Since I have enter'd into these wars.

Glory is like a circle in the water,

Which never ceaseth to enlarge itself,

Till, by broad spreading, it disperse to nought.

With Henry's death, the English circle ends ;

Dispersed are the glories it included.

Now am I like that proud insulting ship,

Which Cæsar and his fortune bare at once.

*Char.* Was Mahomet inspired with a dove  
Thou with an eagle art inspired then.

Helen, the mother of great Constantine,

Nor yet Saint Philip's daughters‡, were like  
thee.

Bright star of Venus, fall'n down on the earth  
How may I reverently worship thee enough†

*Alen.* Leave off delays, and let us raise the  
siege. [honours :

*Reig.* Woman, do what thou canst to save our  
Drive them from Orleans, and be immortalized

*Char.* Presently we'll try :—Come let's  
away about it :

No prophet will I trust, if she prove false.

[Exeunt.

### SCENE III. London. Hill before the Tower.

*Enter, at the Gates, the Duke of Gloster,  
with his Serving-men, in blue Coats.*

*Glo.* I am come to survey the Tower this  
day ; [ancey.—

Since Henry's death, I fear, there is convey-  
Where be these warders, that they wait not

Open the gates ; Gloster it is that calls. [here ?  
[Servants knock.

1 *Ward.* [Within.] Who is there that knocks  
so imperiously ?

1 *Serv.* It is the noble duke of Gloster.

2 *Ward.* [Within.] Whoe'er he be, you may  
not be let in. [villains ?

1 *Serv.* Answer you so the lord protector,

1 *Ward.* [Within.] The Lord protect him !  
so we answer him :

We do no otherwise than we are will'd.

*Glo.* Who will'd you ? or whose will stands,  
but mine ?

There's none protector of the realm but I !

Break up || the gates, I'll be your warrantize :  
Shall I be flouted thus by dunghill grooms ?

*Servants rush at the Tower Gates. Enter,  
to the Gates, WOODVILLE, the  
Lieutenant.*

*Wood.* [Within.] What noise is this ? what  
traitors have we here ?

\* Be firmly persuaded of it.

† Expect prosperity after misfortune.

‡ Meaning the

four daughters of Philip mentioned, in Acts xxi. 9.

§ Then.

|| Break open.

*Glo.* Lieutenant, is it you, whose voice I hear? [enter.]

Open the gates; here's Gloster, that would  
*Wood.* [Within:] Have patience, noble duke: I may not open;

The cardinal of Winchester forbids:  
From him I have express commandment,  
That thou, nor none of thine, shall be let in.

*Glo.* Faint-hearted Woodville, prizest him  
fore me?

Arrogant Winchester! that haughty prelate,  
Whom Henry, our late sovereign, ne'er could  
brook?

Thou art no friend to God, or to the king:  
Open the gates, or I'll shut thee out shortly.

*I Serr.* Open the gates unto the lord protector;  
[not quickly.]

Or we'll burst them open, if that you come  
*Enter WINCHESTER, attended by a train  
of Servants in tawny coats.*

*Win.* How now, ambitious Humphry? what means this?

*Glo.* Piel'd priest\*, dost thou command me  
to be shut out?

*Win.* I do, thou most usurping proditor †,  
And not protector of the king or realm.

*Glo.* stand back, thou manifest conspirator;  
Thou, that contriv'dst to murder our dead lord;  
Thou, that giv'st whores indulgences to sin;  
I'll canvass ‡ thee in thy broad cardinal's hat,  
If thou proceed in this thy insolence.

*Win.* Nay, stand thou back, I will not budge  
This be Damascus, be thou cursed Cain, [a foot;  
To slay thy brother Abel, if thou wilt.

*Glo.* I will not slay thee, but I'll drive thee  
back:

Thy scarlet robes, as a child's bearing-cloth  
I'll use, to carry thee out of this place.

*Win.* Do what thou darest; I beard thee to  
thy face. [face?—]

*Glo.* What! am I dared and bearded to my  
Draw, men, for all this privileged place;  
Blue-coats to tawny-coats. Priest, beware  
your beard;

[GLOSTER and his Men attack the Bishop.  
I mean to tug it, and to cuff you soundly:  
Under my feet I stamp thy cardinal's hat;  
In spite of pope or dignities of church,  
Here by the cheeks I'll drag thee up and down.

*Win.* Gloster, thou'lt answer this before the  
pope. [rope!—]

*Glo.* Winchester goose §, I cry—a rope! a  
Now beat them hence! Why do you let them  
stay?— [array.—]

Thee I'll chase hence, thou wolf in sheep's  
Out, tawny coats!—out, scarlet || hypocrite!

[Here a great tumult. In the midst of it,  
*Enter the Mayor of London, and  
Officers.*

*May.* Fie, lords! that you, being supreme  
magistrates,

Thus contumeliously should break the peace!

*Glo.* Peace, mayor; thou know'st little of  
my wrongs:

Here's Beaufort, that regards nor God nor king,  
Hath here distrain'd the Tower to his use.

*Win.* Here's Gloster too, a foe to citizens;  
One that still motions war, and never peace;  
O'ercharging your free purses with large fines;  
That seeks to overthrow religion,  
Because he is protector of the realm;  
And would have armour here out of the Tower,  
To crown himself king, and suppress the prince.

*Glo.* I will not answer thee with words, but  
blows. [Here they skirmish again.]

*May.* Nought rests for me, in this tumultu-  
ous strife,

But to make open proclamation:—

Come, officer; as loud as e'er thou canst.

*Off.* All manner of men, assembled here  
in arms this day, against God's peace and  
the king's, we charge and command you,  
in his highness's name, to repair to your  
several dwelling-places; and not to wear,  
handle, or use, any sword, weapon, or dag-  
ger, henceforward, upon pain of death.

*Glo.* Cardinal, I'll be no breaker of the law:  
But we shall meet, and break our minds at  
large. [be sure:]

*Win.* Gloster, we'll meet; to thy dear cost,  
Thy heart-blood I will have, for this day's work.

*May.* I'll call for clubs ¶, if you will not  
away:—

This cardinal is more haughty than the devil.

*Glo.* Mayor, farewell: thou dost but what  
thou may'st.

*Win.* Abominable Gloster! gnard thy head;  
For I intend to have it, ere long. [Exeunt.]

*May.* See the coast clear'd, and then we will  
depart.— [bear!]

Good God! that nobles should such stomachs\*\*  
I myself fight not once in forty year. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE IV. France. Before Orleans.

*Enter, on the Walls, the Master-Gunner  
and his Son.*

*M. Gun.* Sirrah, thou know'st how Orleans  
is besieged;

And how the English have the suburbs won.

*Son.* Father, I know; and oft have shot at  
How'er, unfortunate, I miss'd my aim. [them.]

*M. Gun.* But now thou shalt not. Be thou  
ruled by me:

Chief master-gunner am I of this town;  
Something I must do to procure me grace ††:  
The prince's espials ‡‡ have inform'd me,  
How the English, in the suburbs close in-  
trench'd,

Wont, through a secret gate of iron bars  
In yonder tower, to overpeer the city;  
And thence discover how with most advantage  
They may vex us, with shot, or with assault.  
To intercept this inconvenience,  
A piece of ordnance 'gainst it I have placed;  
And fully even these three days have I watch'd,  
If I could see them. Now, boy, do thou watch,  
For I can stay no longer.

If thou spy'st any, run and bring me word;

\* Alluding to his shaven crown.

† Traitor.

‡ Sift.

§ A strumpet.

|| An allusion to the Bishop's habit.  
or staves.

\*\* Pride.

†† Favour.

‡‡ That is, for peace-officers armed with clubs

‡‡ Spies.

And thou shalt find me at the governor's. *[Exit.*

*Son,* Father, I warrant you; take you no ill never trouble you, if I may spy them. *[care; Enter, in an upper Chamber of a Tower, the Lords SALISBURY and TALBOT, Sir WILLIAM GLANSDALE, Sir THOMAS GARGRAVE, and Others.*

*Sal.* Talbot, my life, my joy, again return'd! How wert thou handled, being prisoner? Or by what means got'st thou to be released? Discourse, I pry thee, on this turret's top.

*Tal.* The duke of Bedford had a prisoner, Called—the brave lord Ponton de Santraillies; For him I was exchanged and ransomed. But with a baser man of arms, by far, [me: Once, in contempt, they would have barter'd Which I, disdainingly, scorn'd; and craved death Rather than I would be so piled esteem'd\*. In fine, redeem'd I was as I desired. *[heart! But, O! the treacherous Fastolfe wounds my Whom with my bare fists I would execute, If I now had him brought into my power.*

*Sal.* Yet tell'st thou not, how thou wert entertained. *[ious taunts.*

*Tal.* With scoffs, and scorns, and contumelies. In open market-place produced they me, To be a public spectacle to all; Here, said they, is the terror of the French, The scare-crow that affrights our children so. Then broke I from the officers that led me; And with my nails digg'd stones out of the To hurl at the beholders of my shame. *[ground, My grisly countenance made others fly; None durst come near for fear of sudden death. In iron walls they deem'd me not secure; So great fear of my name 'mongst them was spread,*

That they supposed I could rend bars of steel, And spin in pieces posts of adamant: Wherefore a guard of chosen shot I had, That walk'd about me every minute-while; And if I did but stir out of my bed, Ready they were to shoot me to the heart.

*Sal.* I grieve to hear what torments you endure; But we will be revenged sufficiently. *[dured; Now it is supper-time in Orleans: [one, Here, through this grate, I can count every*

And view the Frenchmen how they fortify; Let us look in, the sight will much delight thee. Sir Thomas Gargrave, and sir William Glansdale, let me have your express opinions, *[dale, Where is best place to make our battery next.*

*Gar.* I think, at the north gate; for there stand lords. *[bridge.*

*Glan.* And I, here, at the bulwark of the *Tal.* For ought I see, this city must be fall Or with light skirmishes enfeebled. *[mish'd, [Shout from the Town. SALISBURY and Sir JHN. GARGRAVE fall.*

*Sal.* O Lord, have mercy on us, wretched sinners! *[man!*

*Gar.* O Lord, have mercy on me, woful *Tal.* What chance is this, that suddenly hath cross'd us!—

Speak, Salisbury; at least, if thou canst speak;

How farest thou, mirror of all martial men! One of thy eyes, and thy cheek's side struck Accurs'd tower! accurs'd fatal hand, [off!— That hath contrived this woful tragedy! In thirteen battles Salisbury o'ercame; Henry the fifth he first train'd to the wars; [up, Whilst any trumpet did sound, or drum struck His sword did ne'er leave striking in the field. Yet livest thou, Salisbury? though thy speech doth fail,

One eye thou hast, to look to heaven for grace: The sun with one eye vieweth all the world.— Heaven be thou gracious to none alive, If Salisbury wants mercy at thy hands!— Bear hence his body, I will help to bury it.— Sir Thomas Gargrave, hast thou any life? Speak unto Talbot; nay, look up to him. Salisbury, cheer thy spirit with this comfort; Thou shalt not die, whilst—

He beckons with his hand, and smiles on me; As who should say, *When I am dead and gone, Remember to avenge me on the French.*— Plantagenet, I will; and Nero-like, Play on the lute, beholding the towns burn; Wretched shall France be only in my name.

*[Thunder heard; afterwards an Alarum. What stir is this? What tumults in the heavens?*

Whence cometh this alarum, and the noise?

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, my lord, the French have gather'd head:

The dauphin, with one Joan la Pucelle join'd A holy prophetess, new risen up, Is come with a great power to raise the siege. *[SALISBURY groans.*

*Tal.* Hear, hear, how dying Salisbury doth groan!

It irks his heart, he cannot be revenged.— Frenchmen, I'll be a Salisbury to you:— Pucelle or puzzlet, dolphin or dogfish, [heels, Your hearts I'll stamp out with my horse's And make a quagmire of your mingled hoarse. Convey me Salisbury into his tent, [men dare. And then we'll try what these dastard French— *[Exit, bearing out the Bodies.*

SCENE V. *The same. Before one of the Gates.*

*Alarum. Skirmishings. TALBOT pursueth the Dauphin, and driveth him in: then enter JOAN LA PUCELLE, driving Englishmen before her. Then enter TALBOT.*

*Tal.* Where is my strength, my valour, and my force?

Our English troops retire, I cannot stay them; A woman, clad in armour, chaseth them.

*Enter LA PUCELLE.*

Here, here she comes:—I'll have a bout with Devil, or devil's dam, I'll conjure thee: [thee; Blo d will I draw on thee; thou art a witch, And straightway give thy soul to him thou servest.

*Puc.* Come, come, 'tis only I that must disgrace thee! *[They fight.*

\* So stripped of honours.

† A dirty wench.

‡ The superstition of those

times taught, that he who could draw a witch's blood was free from her power.



*Tal.* Heavens, can you suffer hell so to prevail? [rage,

My breast I'll burst with straining of my coat;  
And from my shoulders crack my arms asunder,

But I will chastise this high-minded strumpet.

*Puc.* Talbot, farewell; thy hour is not yet  
I must go victual Orleans forthwith. [come:

O'ertake me if thou canst; I scorn thy strength.  
Go, go, cheer up thy hunger-starved men;

Help Salisbury to make his testament:

This day is ours, as many more shall be.

[*PUCELLE enters the Town with Soldiers.*

*Tal.* My thoughts are whirled like a potter's wheel;

I know not where I am, nor what I do:

A witch, by fear, not force, like Hannibal,

Drives back our troops, and conquers as she lists: [stench,

So bees with smoke, and doves with noisome  
Are from their hives, and houses, driven away.

They call'd us, for our fierceness, English dogs;  
Now, like to whelps, we crying run away.

[*A short Alarm.*

Hark, countrymen! either renew the fight,

Or tear the lions out of England's coat;

Renounce your soil, give sheep in lion's stead:

Sheep run not half so timorous from the wolf,  
Or horse, or oxen from the leopard,

As you fly from your oft-subdued slaves.

[*Alarm. Another Skirmish.*

It will not be:—Retire into your trenches:

You all consented unto Salisbury's death,

For none would strike a stroke in his revenge.

Pucelle is enter'd into Orleans,

In spite of us, or aught that we could do.

O, would I were to die with Salisbury!

The shame hereof will make me hide my head.

[*Alarm. Retreat. Exeunt TALBOT and his Forces, &c.*

## SCENE VI. *The same.*

*Enter, on the Walls, PUCELLE, CHARLES REIGNIER, ALENÇON, and Soldiers.*

*Puc.* Advance our waving colours on the walls;

Rescued is Orleans from the English wolves:—  
Thus Joan la Pucelle hath perform'd her word.

*Char.* Divinest creature, bright Astræa's daughter,

How shall I honour thee for this success?

Thy promises are like Adonis' gardens, [next.  
That one day bloom'd, and fruitful were the

France, triumph in thy glorious prophetic!—  
Recover'd is the town of Orleans:

More blessed hap did ne'er befall our state.

*Reig.* Why ring not out the bells throughout the town?

Dauphin, command the citizens make bonfires,  
And feast and banquet in the open streets,

To celebrate the joy that God hath given us.

*Alen.* All France will be replete with mirth and joy, [men.

When they shall hear how we have play'd the  
*Char.* 'Tis Joan, not we, by whom the day

is won;

For which, I will divide my crown with her:

And all the priests and friars in my realm

Shall, in procession, sing her endless praise.

A statelier pyramid to her I'll rear,

Than Rhodope's, or Memphis', ever was:

In memory of her, when she is dead,

Her ashes, in an urn more precious

Than the rich-jewell'd coffer of Darius,

Transported shall be at high festivals

Before the kings and queens of France.

No longer on Saint Dennis will we cry,

But Joan la Pucelle shall be France's saint.

Come in; and let us banquet royally,

After this golden day of victory.

[*Flourish. Exeunt.*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter to the Gates, a French Sergeant, and Two Sentinels.*

*Serg.* Sirs, take your places, and be vigilant: If any noise, or soldier, you perceive, [lant:

Near to the walls, by some apparent sign,  
Let us have knowledge at the court of guard\*.

*1 Sent.* Sergeant, you shall. [*Exit Sergeant.*

Thus are poor servitors  
(When others sleep upon their quiet beds) [cold.

Constrain'd to watch in darkness, rain, and  
*Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, and*

*Forces, with scaling Ladders; their Drums beating a dead March.*

*Tal.* Lord regent,—and redoubt'd Burgandy,

By whose approach, the regions of Artois,  
Walloon, and Picardy, are friends to us,—

This happy night the Frenchmen are secure,  
Having all day caroused and banqueted:

Embrace we then this opportunity;

As fitting best to quittance their deceit,

Contrived by art, and baleful sorcery.

*Bed.* Coward of France!—how much he wrongs his fame,

Despairing of his own arm's fortitude,

To join with witches, and the help of hell.

*Bur.* Traitors have never other company.—

But what's that Pucelle, whom they term so

*Tal.* A maid, they say. [pure?

*Bed.* A maid! and be so martial

*Bur.* Pray God, she prove not masculine ere long;

If underneath the standard of the French,

She carry armour, as she hath begun.

*Tal.* Well, let them practise and converse with spirits: [name,

God is our fortress; in whose conquering  
Let us resolve to scale their flinty bulwarks.

*Bed.* Ascend, brave Talbot; we will follow thee.

\* The same as guard-room.

*Tal.* Not all together: better far, I guess,  
That we do make our entrance several ways;  
That, if it chance the one of us do fail,  
The other yet may rise against their force.

*Bed.* Agreed; I'll to yon corner.

*Bur.* And I to this.

*Tal.* And here will Talbot mount, or make  
his grave.—

Now, Salisbury! for thee, and for the right  
Of English Henry, shall this night appear  
How much in duty I am bound to both.

[*The English scale the Walls, crying St.*  
*George! a Talbot! and all enter by*  
*the Town.*

*Sent.* [*Within.*] Arm, arm! the enemy  
doth make assault!

[*The French leap over the Walls in their*  
*Shirts. Enter, several ways, BASTARD,*  
*ALENÇON REIGNIER, half ready, and*  
*half unready.*

*Alen.* How now, my lords? what, all un-  
ready \* so? well.

*Bast.* Unready? ay, and glad we've scaped so

*Reig.* 'Twas time, I trow, to wake and  
leave our beds,

Hearing alarms at our chamber doors. [*arms,*  
*Alen.* Of all exploits, since first I follow'd  
Ne'er heard I of a warlike enterprise

More venturesome, or desperate than this.

*Bast.* I think this Talbot be a fiend of hell.

*Reig.* If not of hell, the heavens, sure, fa-  
vour him. [*he sped.*

*Alen.* Here cometh Charles; I marvel how  
*Enter CHARLES and LA PUCELLE.*

*Bast.* Tut! holy Joan was his defensive  
guard. [*dame?*

*Char.* Is this thy cunning, thou deceitful  
Didst thou at first, to flatter us withal,  
Make us partakers of a little gain,

That now our loss might be ten times so much?

*Puc.* Wherefore is Charles impatient with  
his friend?

At all times will you have my power alike?  
Sleeping, or waking, must I still prevail,  
Or will you blame and lay the fault on me?—  
Improvident soldiers! had your watch been  
good,

This sudden mischief never could have fall'n.

*Char.* Duke of Alençon, this was your de-  
fault;

That, being captain of the watch to-night,  
Did look no better to that weighty charge.

*Alen.* Had all your quarters been as safely  
As that whereof I had the government, [*kept,*  
We had not been thus shamefully surpris'd.

*Bast.* Mine was secure.

*Reig.* And so was mine, my lord. [*night,*

*Char.* And, for myself, most part of all this  
Within her quarter, and mine own precinct,  
I was employ'd in passing to and fro,

About relieving of the sentinels: [*break in?*  
Then how, or which way, should they first

*Puc.* Question, my lords, no further of the  
case, [*some place*

How, or which way; 'tis sure, they found  
But weakly guarded, where the breach was made.

And now there rests no other shift but this,—

To gather our soldiers, scatter'd and dispersed,  
And lay new platforms † to endamage them.

*Alarm.* Enter an English Soldier, crying  
a Talbot! a Talbot! They fly, leaving  
their Clothes behind.

*Sold.* I'll be so bold to take what they have  
The cry of Talbot serves me for a sword; [*left.*  
For I have loaden me with many spoils,  
Using no other weapon but his name. [*Exit.*

SCENE II. Orleans. Within the Town.

Enter TALBOT, BEDFORD, BURGUNDY, a  
Captain, and Others.

*Bed.* The day begins to break, and night is  
fled,

Whose pitchy mantle over-veil'd the earth.  
Here sound retreat, and cease our hot pursuit.  
[*Retreat sounded.*

*Tal.* Bring forth the body of old Salisbury;  
And here advance it in the market-place,  
The middle centre of this cursed town.—

Now have I paid my vow unto his soul:  
For every drop of blood was drawn from him,

There hath at least five Frenchmen died to-  
And, that hereafter ages may behold [*night.*  
What ruin happen'd in revenge of him,

Within their chiefest temple I'll erect  
A tomb, wherein his corpse shall be interr'd:

Upon the which, that every one may read,  
Shall be engraved the sack of Orleans;

The treacherous manner of his mournful death.  
And what a terror he had been to France.

But, lords, in all our bloody massacre,  
I muse †, we met not with the Dauphin's grace;

His new-come champion, virtuous Joan of Arc;  
Nor any of his false confederates. [*began,*

*Bed.* 'Tis thought, lord Talbot, when the fight  
Roused on the sudden from their drowsy beds,

They did, amongst the troops of armed men,  
Leap o'er the walls for refuge in the field.

*Bur.* Myself (as far as I could well discern,  
For smoke, and dusky vapours of the night)

Am sure, I scared the Dauphin, and his trull;  
When arm in arm they both came swiftly

Like to a pair of loving turtle-doves, [*running,*  
That could not live asunder day or night.

After that things are set in order here,  
We'll follow them with all the power we have.

Enter a Messenger.

*Mess.* All hail, my lords! which of this  
princely train

Call ye the warlike Talbot, for his acts  
So much applauded through the realm of

France? [*with him?*

*Tal.* Here is the Talbot; who would speak

*Mess.* The virtuous lady, countess of Au-  
With modesty admiring thy renown, [*vergne,*

By me entreats, good lord, thou wouldst  
vouchsafe

To visit her poor castle where she lies ‡;  
That she may boast she hath beheld the man

Whose glory fills the world with loud report.  
*Bur.* Is it even so? Nay, then, I see our

Will turn into a peaceful comic sport, [*swars*  
When ladies crave to be encounter'd with.—

\* Undressed.

† Plans, schemes.

‡ Wonder.

§ i. e., Where she dwells.

You may not, my lord, despise her gentle suit.

*Tal.* Ne'er trust me then; for, when a world of men

Could not prevail with all their ora'tory,  
Yet hath a woman's kindness over-ruled:—  
And therefore tell her, I return great thanks;  
And in submission will attend on her.—  
Will not your honours bear me company?

*Bed.* No, truly; it is more than manners will:

And I have heard it said,—Unbidden guests  
Are often welcomest when they are gone.

*Tal.* Well then, alone, since there's no  
I mean to prove this lady's courtesy. [remedy,  
Come hither, captain. [*Whispers.*—] You perceive my mind.

*Capt.* I do, my lord; and mean accordingly.  
[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. Auvergne. Court of the Castle.

*Enter the Countess and her Porter.*

*Count.* Porter, remember what I gave in charge; [to me.

And, when you have done so, bring the keys  
*Port.* Madam, I will. [*Exit.*

*Count.* The plot is laid: if all things fall  
I shall as famous be by this exploit, [out right,  
As Scythian Thomyris by Cyrus' death.  
Great is the rumour of this dreadful knight,  
And his achievements of no less account:  
Fain would mine eyes be witness with mine ears,

To give their censure \* of these rare reports.

*Enter Messenger and TALBOT.*

*Mess.* Madam,

According as your ladyship desired,  
By message craved, so is lord Talbot come.

*Count.* And he is welcome. What! is this  
*Mess.* Madam, it is. [the man?

*Count.* Is this the scourge of France?

Is this the Talbot, so much fear'd abroad,  
That with his name the mothers still their  
I see, report is fabulous and false: [babes?  
I thought I should have seen some Hercules,  
A second Hector, for his grim aspect,  
And large proportion of his strong-knit limbs.  
Alas! this is a child, a silly dwarf:  
It cannot be, this weak and writhled † shrimp  
Should strike such terror to his enemies.

*Tal.* Madam, I have been bold to trouble you:

But, since your ladyship is not at leisure,  
I'll sort some other time to visit you.

*Count.* What means he now?—Go ask him,  
whither he goes. [*craves*

*Mess.* Stay, my lord Talbot; for my lady  
To know the cause of your abrupt departure.

*Tal.* Murry, for that she's in a wrong belief,  
I go to certify her, Talbot's here.

*Re-enter Porter, with Keys.*

*Count.* If thou be he, then art thou prisoner.  
*Tal.* Prisoner! to whom?

*Count.* To me, blood-thirsty lord;

And for that cause I train'd thee to my house.  
Long time thy shadow hath been thrall to me,  
For in my gallery thy picture hangs:

But now the substance shall endure the like;  
And I will chain these legs and arms of thine,  
That hast by tyranny, these many years,  
Wasted our country, slain our citizens,  
And sent our sons and husbands captivate.

*Tal.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Count.* Laughest thou, wretch? thy mirth  
shall turn to moan.

*Tal.* I lugh to see your ladyship so fond ‡,  
To think that you have aught but Talbot's shadow  
Whereon to practise your severity. [dow,

*Count.* Why, art not thou the man?  
*Tal.* I am indeed.

*Count.* Then have I substance too.

*Tal.* No, no, I am but shadow of myself:  
You are deceived, my substance is not here;  
For what you see, is but the smallest part  
And least proportion of humanity:  
I tell you, madam, were the whole frame here,  
It is of such a spacious lofty pitch,  
Your roof were not sufficient to contain it.

*Count.* This is a riddling merchant for the  
nonce §;

He will be here, and yet he is not here:  
How can these contrarieties agree?

*Tal.* That will I show you presently.

*He winds a Horn. Drums heard; then a  
Peal of Ordnance. The Gates being  
forced, enter Soldiers.*

How say you, madam? are you now persuaded,  
That Talbot is but shadow of himself?  
These are his substance, sinews, arms, and  
strength,

With which he yoketh your rebellious necks,  
Razeth your cities, and subverts your towns,  
And in a moment makes them desolate.

*Count.* Victorious Talbot! pardon my abuse:  
I find, thou art no less than fame hath bruited ¶,  
And more than may be gather'd by thy shape.  
Let my presumption not provoke thy wrath;  
For I am sorry that with reverence

I did not entertain thee as thou art. [*construe*  
*Tal.* Be not dismay'd, fair lady; nor mis-  
The mind of Talbot, as you did mistake  
The outward composition of his body.

What you have done hath not offended me  
No other satisfaction do I crave,  
But only (with your patience) that we may  
Taste of your wine, and see what cates you  
have;

For soldiers' stomachs always serve them well.

*Count.* With all my heart: and think me  
honoured

To feast so great a warrior in my house.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV. London. The Temple Garden.

*Enter the Earls of SOMERSET, SUFFOLK,  
and WARWICK; RICHARD PLANTA-  
GENET, VERNON, and another Lawyer.*

*Plan.* Great lords, and gentlemen, what  
means this silence?

Dare no man answer in a case of truth?

*Suff.* Within the Temple hall we were too  
loud;

The garden here is more convenient.

\* For opinion. † Wrinkled. ‡ Foolish.

§ For a purpose. ¶ Announced loudly.



*Plan.* Then say at once, If I maintain d the truth ;

Or, else, was wrangling Somerset in the error ?  
*Suff.* Faith, I have been a truant in the law ;  
 And never yet could frame my will to it ;  
 And, therefore, frame the law unto my will.

*Som.* Judge you, my lord of Warwick, then between us. [higher pitch,

*War.* Between two hawks, which flies the  
 Between two dogs, which hath the deeper  
 mouth, [temper,

Between two blades, which bears the better  
 Between two horses, which doth bear him  
 best \*, [eye,

Between two girls, which hath the merriest  
 I have, perhaps, some shallow spirit of judgment :

But in these nice sharp quillets of the law,  
 Good faith, I am no wiser than a daw.

*Plan.* Tut, tut, here is a mannerly forbearance :

The truth appears so naked on my side,  
 That any purblind eye may find it out.

*Som.* And on my side it is so well apparell'd,  
 So clear, so shining, and so evident,  
 That it will glimmer through a blind man's eye.

*Plan.* Since you are tongue-ty'd, and so loath to speak,

In dumb significants proclaim your thoughts :  
 Let him that is a true-born gentleman,  
 And stands upon the honour of his birth,  
 If he suppose that I have pleaded truth,  
 From off this brier pluck a white rose with me.

*Som.* Let him that is no coward nor no flatterer,

But dare maintain the party of the truth,  
 Pluck a red rose from off this thorn with me.

*War.* I love no colours † ; and, without all  
 Of base insinuating flattery, [colour  
 I pluck this white rose, with Plantagenet.

*Suff.* I pluck this red rose, with young  
 Somerset ;

And say withal, I think he held the right.

*Ver.* Say, lords, and gentlemen : and pluck  
 no more,

Till you conclude—that he, upon whose side  
 The fewest roses are cropp'd from the tree,  
 Shall yield the other in the right opinion.

*Som.* Good master Vernon, it is well objected ‡ ;

If I have fewest, I subscribe in silence.

*Plan.* And I. [the case,

*Ver.* Then, for the truth and plainness of  
 I pluck this pale, and maiden blossom here,  
 Giving my verdict on the white rose side.

*Som.* Prick not your finger as you pluck it  
 off ;

Lost, bleeding, you do paint the white rose red,  
 And fall on my side so against your will.

*Ver.* If I, my lord, for my opinion bleed,  
 Opinion shall be surgeon to my hurt,

And keep me on the side where still I am.

*Som.* Well, well, come on : Who else ?

*Law.* Unless my study and my books be  
 false,

The argument you held was wrong in you ;  
 [To SOMERSET.  
 In sign whereof, I pluck a white rose too.

*Plan.* Now, Somerset, where is your argument ? [that

*Som.* Here, in my scabbard ; meditating  
 Shall die your white rose in a bloody red.

*Plan.* Mean time, your cheeks do counter-  
 feit our roses ;

For pale they look with fear, as witnessing  
 The truth on our side.

*Som.* No, Plantagenet,  
 'Tis not for fear, but anger,—that thy cheeks  
 Blush for pure shame, to counterfeit our roses ;  
 And yet thy tongue will not confess thy error.

*Plan.* Hath not thy rose a canker, Somerset ?

*Som.* Hath not thy rose a thorn, Plantagenet ? [his truth ;

*Plan.* Ay, sharp and piercing, to maintain  
 Whiles thy consuming canker eats his falsehood.  
 [bleeding roses,

*Som.* Well, I'll find friends to wear my  
 That shall maintain what I have said is true,  
 Where false Plantagenet dare not be seen.

*Plan.* Now, by this maiden blossom in my  
 hand,

I scorn thee and thy fashion, peevish boy.

*Suff.* Turn not thy scorn this way, Plantagenet. [him and thee.

*Plan.* Proud Poole, I will ; and scorn both

*Suff.* I'll turn my part thereof into thy  
 throat. [Poole !

*Som.* Away, away, good William De-la-  
 We grace the yeoman, by conversing with him.

*War.* Now, by God's will, thou wrong'st  
 him Somerset ;

His grandfather was Lionel, duke of Clarence,  
 Third son to the third Edward king of England ;  
 Spring crestless yeomen † from so deep a root ?

*Plan.* He bears him on the place's privilege ‡,

Or durst not, for his craven heart, say thus.

*Som.* By Him that made me I'll maintain  
 my words,

On any plot of ground in Christendom :

Was not thy father, Richard, earl of Cambridge,

For treason executed in our late king's days ?

And, by his treason, stand'st not thou attainted,  
 Corrupted, and exempt ¶ from ancient gentry ?

His trespass yet lives guilty in thy blood ;

And, till thou be restored, thou art a yeoman.

*Plan.* My father was attached, not attainted ;  
 Condemn'd to die for treason, but no traitor ;

And that I'll prove on better men than  
 Somerset,

Were growing time once ripen'd to my will.

For your partaker \*\*, Poole, and you yourself,  
 I'll note you in my book of memory,

To scourge you for this apprehension †† :

Look to it well ; and say you are well warn'd.

\* *i. e.*, Reuben ate his motion most adroitly.

† Justly proposed.

‡ *i. e.*, Those who have no right to arms.

¶ The temple, being a religious house, was a sanctuary.

¶ Excluded.

\*\* Confederate.

†† Opinion.

*Som.* Ay, thou shalt find us ready for thee still:

And know us, by these colours, for thy foes;  
For these my friends, in spite of thee, shall wear.

*Plan.* And, by my soul, this pale and angry  
As cognizance of my blood-drinking hate,  
Will I for ever, and my faction, wear;  
Until it wither with me to my grave,  
Or flourish to the height of my degree.

*Suff.* Go forward, and be choked with thy ambition!

And so farewell, until I meet thee next. [*Exit.*  
*Som.* Have with thee, Poole.—Farewell,  
ambitious Richard. [*Exit.*

*Plan.* How I am braved, and must perforce endure it!

*War.* This blot, that they object against  
Shall be wiped out in the next parliament,  
Call'd for the truce of Winchester and Gloster:  
And, if thou be not then created York,  
I will not live to be accounted Warwick.

Mean time, in signal of my love to thee,  
Against proud Somerset, and William Poole,  
Will I upon thy party wear this rose:

And here I prophesy,—This brawl to-day,  
Grown to this faction, in the Temple garden,  
Shall send, between the red rose and the white,  
A thousand souls to death and deadly night.

*Plan.* Good master Vernon, I am bound to you,

That you on my behalf would pluck a flower.

*Vern.* In your behalf still will I wear the

*Law.* And so will I. [*same.*

*Plan.* Thanks, gentle sir.

Come, let us four to dinner: I dare say,  
This quarrel will drink blood another day.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. *The same.* A Room in the Tower.

*Enter* MORTIMER, brought in a Chair by Two Keepers.

*Mor.* Kind keepers of my weak decaying  
Let dying Mortimer here rest himself.— [*age,*  
Even like a man new haled from the rack,  
So fare my limbs with long imprisonment:  
And these gray locks, the pursuivants of death\*,  
Nestor-like aged, in an age of care,  
Argue the end of Edmund Mortimer. [*spent,*  
These eyes—like lamps whose wasting oil is  
Wax dim, as drawing to their exigent†:  
Weak shoulders, overborne with burd'ning  
grief,

And pithless arms, like to a wither'd vine  
That droops his sapless branches to the ground:  
Yet are these feet—whose strengthless stay is  
numb,

Unable to support this lump of clay,—  
Sw ft-winged with desire to get a grave,  
As telling I no other comfort have.—

But wit me, keeper, will my nephew come?

1 *Keep.* Richard Plantagenet, my lord, will come:

We sent unto the Temple, to his chamber;  
And answer was return'd that he will come.

*Mor.* Enough; my soul shall then be satisfied.—

Poor gentleman! his wrong doth equal mine.  
Since Henry Moonmouth first began to reign,  
(Before whose glory I was great in arms,) This loathsome sequestration have I had;  
And even since then hath Richard been obscured,

Deprived of honour and inheritance:  
But now, the arbitrator of despairs,  
Just death, kind umpire‡ of men's miseries,  
With sweet enlargement doth dismiss me hence;

I would his troubles likewise were expired,  
That so he might recover what was lost.

*Enter* RICHARD PLANTAGENET.

1 *Keep.* My lord, your loving nephew now is come. [*he come?*

*Mor.* Richard Plantagenet, my friend? Is

*Plan.* Ay, noble uncle, thus ignobly used,  
Your nephew, late-despised§ Richard, comes.

*Mor.* Direct mine arms, I may embrace his neck,

And in his bosom spend my latter gasp:

O, tell me, when my lips do touch his cheeks,  
That I may kindly give one fainting kiss.—  
And now declare, sweet stem from York's great stock,

Why did'st thou say of late thou wert despised?

*Plan.* First, lean thine aged back against mine arm;

And, in that ease, I'll tell thee my disease||. This day, in argument upon a case, [*me:*  
Some words there grew 'twixt Somerset and Among which terms he used his lavish tongue,  
And did upbraid me with my father's death;

Which obloquy set bars before my tongue,  
Else with the like I had requited him:

Therefore, good uncle,—for my father's sake,  
In honour of a true Plantagenet,

And for alliance' sake,—declare the cause

My father, earl of Cambridge, lost his head.

*Mor.* That cause, fair nephew, that imprisonment'd me,

And hath detain'd me, all my flow'ring youth,  
Within a loathsome dungeon, there to pine,  
Was cursed instrument of his decease.

*Plan.* Discover more at large what cause that was;

For I am ignorant, and cannot guess.

*Mor.* I will, if that my fading breath permit,  
And death approach not ere my tale be done.  
Henry the fourth, grandfather to this king,  
Deposed his nephew Richard, Edward's son,  
The first-begotten, and the lawful heir  
Of Edward king, the third of that descent:  
During whose reign, the Percies of the north,  
Finding his usurpation most unjust,  
Endeavour'd my advancement to the throne:  
The reason moved these warlike lords to this,  
Was—for that (young king Richard thus re-  
Leaving no heir begotten of his body) [*moved,*

\* The heralds that, fore-running death, proclaim its approach.

† End.

‡ i. e., He who terminates or concludes misery.

§ Lately despised.

|| Uneasiness, discontent.

I was the next by birth and parentage ;  
 For by my mother I derived am  
 From Lionel duke of Clarence, the third son  
 To king Edward the third, whereas he,  
 From John of Gaunt doth bring his pedigree,  
 Being but fourth of that heroic line.  
 But mark, as in this haughty\* great attempt,  
 They laboured to plant the rightful heir,  
 I lost my liberty, and they their lives.  
 Long after this, when Henry the fifth,—  
 Succeeding his father Bolingbroke,—did reign,  
 Thy father, earl of Cambridge,—then derived  
 From famous Edmund Langley, duke of  
 York,—

Marrying my sister, that thy mother was,  
 Again, in pity of my hard distress,  
 Levied an army; weening † to redeem,  
 And have install'd me in the diadem :  
 But, as the rest, so fell that noble earl,  
 And was beheaded. Thus the Mortimers,  
 In whom the title rested, were suppress'd.

*Plan.* Of which, my lord, your honour is  
 the last. [have ;

*Mor.* True ; and thou seest, that I no issue  
 And that my fainting words do warrant death :  
 Thou art my heir ; the rest I wish thee gather :  
 But yet be wary in thy studious care.

*Plan.* Thy grave admonishments prevail  
 with me :

But yet, methinks, my father's execution  
 Was nothing less than bloody tyranny.

*Mor.* With silence, nephew, be thou poli-  
 Strong-fixed is the house of Lancaster, [tic ;

And, like a mountain, not to be removed.  
 But now thy uncle is removing hence ;  
 As princes do their courts, when they are  
 cloy'd  
 With long continuance in a settled place.

*Plan.* O, uncle, 'would some part of my  
 young years

Might but redeem the passage of your age !

*Mor.* Thou dost then wrong me ; as the  
 slaughterer doth, [kill.

Which giveth many wounds, when one will  
 Mourn not, except thou sorrow for my good ;  
 Only give order for my funeral ;  
 And so farewell ‡ ; and fair be all thy hopes !  
 And prosperous be thy life, in peace, and war !

[Dies.

*Plan.* And peace, no war, befall thy parting  
 In prison hast thou spent a pilgrimage, [soul  
 And like a hermit overpass'd thy days.—

Well, I will lock his counsel in my breast ;  
 And what I do imagine, let that rest.—

Keepers, convey him hence : and I myself  
 Will see his burial better than his life.—

[Exit Keepers, bearing out MORTIMER.

Here dies the dusky torch of Mortimer,  
 Choked with ambition of the meaner sort :—  
 And for those wrongs, those bitter injuries,  
 Which Somerset hath offer'd to my house,  
 I doubt not but with honour to redress :  
 And therefore haste I to the parliament ;  
 Either to be restored to my blood,  
 Or make my ill § the advantage of my good.

[Exit.

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. *The same. The Parliament House.*

*Flourish.* Enter KING HENRY, EXETER,  
 GLOSTER, WARWICK, SOMERSET, and  
 SUFFOLK ; the Bishop of Winchester,  
 RICHARD PLANTAGENET, and Others.  
 GLOSTER offers to put up a Bill, Win-  
 chester snatches it, and tears it.

*Win.* Com'st thou with deep premeditated  
 lines,

With written pamphlets studiously devised,  
 Humphrey of Gloster ? If thou canst accuse,  
 Or ought intend'st to lay unto my charge,  
 Do it without invention suddenly ;  
 As I with sudden and extemporal speech  
 Purpose to answer what thou canst object.

*Glo.* Presumptuous priest ! this place com-  
 mands my patience,

Or thou shouldst find thou hast dishonour'd  
 me.

Think not, although in writing I prefer'd  
 The manner of thy vile outrageous crimes,  
 That therefore I have forged, or am not able  
*Verbatim* to rehearse the method of my pen :  
 No, prelate ; such is thy audacious wickedness,  
 Thy lewd, pestiferous, and dissentious pranks,  
 As very infants prattle of thy pride.

Thou art a most pernicious usurer ;  
 Froward by nature, enemy to peace ;  
 Lascivious, wanton, more than well beseems  
 A man of thy profession, and degree ;  
 And for thy treachery, what's more manifest ?  
 In that thou laid'st a trap to take my life,  
 As well at London bridge, as at the Tower ?  
 Beside, I fear me, if thy thoughts were sifted,  
 The king, thy sovereign, is not quite exempt  
 From envious malice of thy swelling heart.

*Win.* Gloster, I do defy thee.— Lords,  
 vouchsafe

To give me hearing what I shall reply.  
 If I were covetous, ambitious, or perverse,  
 As he will have me, how am I so poor ?  
 Or how haps it, I seek not to advance  
 Or raise myself, but keep my wonted calling ?  
 And for dissention, who preferreth peace  
 More than I do,—except I be provoked ?  
 No, my good lords, it is not that offends ;  
 It is not that, that hath incensed the duke :  
 It is, because no one should sway but he ;  
 No one, but he, should be about the king ;  
 And that engenders thunder in his breast,  
 And makes him roar these accusations forth.  
 But he shall know I am as good—

*Glo.* As good ?  
 Thou bastard of my grandfather !—

High. † Thinking.

‡ Lucky, prosperous.  
 § i. e., Articles of accusation.

§ My ill, is, my ill usage.



*Win.* Ay, lordly sir; For what are you, I  
But one imperious in another's throne? [pray,  
*Glo.* Am I not the protector, saucy priest?

*Win.* And am I not a prelate of the church?

*Glo.* Yes, as an outlaw in a castle keeps,  
And useth it to patronage his theft.

*Win.* Unreverent Gloster!

*Glo.* Thou art reverent  
Touching thy spiritual function, not thy life.

*Win.* This Rome shall remedy.

*War.* Roam thither then.

*Som.* My lord, it were your duty to forbear.

*War.* Ay, see the bishop be not overborne.

*Som.* Methinks, my lord should be religious,  
And know the office that belongs to such.

*War.* Methinks, his 'ordship should be  
humbler;

It fitteth not a prelate so to plead. [near.

*Som.* Yes, when his holy state is touch'd so

*War.* State holy, or unhallow'd, what of  
Is not his grace protector to the king? [that?

*Plan.* Plantagenet, I see must hold his  
tongue;

Lest it be said, *Speak, sirrah, when you  
should;* [lords?

*Must your bold verdict enter talk with  
Else would I have a fling at Winchester.*

[*Aside.*

*K. Hen.* Uncles of Gloster, and of Win-  
chester,

The special watchmen of our English weal;  
I would prevail, if prayers might prevail,

To join your hearts in love and amity.

O, what a scandal is it to our crown,

That two such noble peers as ye should jar!

Believe me, lords, my tender years can tel,

Civil dissension is a viperous worm,

That gnaws the bowels of the commonwealth.—

[*A noise within;* Down with the tawny  
coats!]

What tumult's this?

*War.* An uproar, I dare warrant,  
Begun through malice of the bishop's men.

[*A noise again;* Stones! Stones!

*Enter the Mayor of London, attended.*

*May.* O, my good lords,—and virtuous

Pity the city of London, pity us! [Henry,—

The bishop and the duke of Gloster's men,

Forbidden late to carry any weapon,

Have filled their pockets full of pebble-stones;

And, banding themselves in contrary parts,

Do pelt so fast at one another's pates,

That many have their giddy brains knock'd out:

Our windows are broke down in every street,

And we, for fear, compell'd to shut our shops.

*Enter, skirmishing, the Retainers of Glos-*

*ter and Winchester, with bloody pates.*

*K. Hen.* We charge you, on allegiance to  
ourselves, [peace.

To hold your slaught'ring hands, and keep the  
Pray, uncle Gloster, mitigate this strife.

*1 Serv.* Nay, if we be  
Forbidden stones, we'll fall to it with our teeth.

*2 Serv.* Do what ye dare, we are as resolute.  
[*Skirmish again.*

*Glo.* Yon of my household, lea a this  
peevish broil,

And set this unaccustomed \* fight aside.

*3 Serv.* My lord, we know your grace to be  
a man

Just and upright; and, for your royal birth,

Inferior to none, but his majesty:

And ere that we will suffer such a prince,

So kind a father of the commonweal,

To be disgraced by an inkhorn mate,

We, and our wives, and children, all will fight,

And have our bodies slaughter'd by thy foes.

*1 Serv.* Ay, and the very parings of our nails  
Shall pitch a field when we are dead.

[*Skirmish again.*

*Glo.* Stay, stay, I say!

And, if you love me, as you say you do,

Let me persuade you to forbear a while.

*K. Hen.* O, how this discord doth afflict  
my soul!—

Can you, my lord of Winchester, behold

My sighs and tears, and will not once relent?

Who should be pitiful, if you be not?

Or who should study to prefer a peace,

If holy churchmen take delight in broils?

*War.* My lord protector, yield;—yield,  
Winchester;—

Except you mean, with obstinate repulse,

To slay your sovereign, and destroy the realm.

You see what mischief, and what murder too,

Hath been enacted through your enmity;

Then be at peace, except ye thirst for blood.

*Win.* He shall submit, or I will never yield.

*Glo.* Compassion on the king commands  
me stoop;

Or I would see his heart out, ere the priest

Should ever get that privilege of me.

*War.* Behold, my lord of Winchester, the

Hath banish'd moody discontented fury, [duke

As by his smoothed brows it doth appear:

Why look you still so stern and tragical?

*Glo.* Here, Winchester, I offer thee my hand.

*K. Hen.* Fie, uncle Beaufort! I have heard  
you preach,

That malice was a great and grievous sin:

And will not you maintain the thing you teach,

But prove a chief offender in the same?

*War.* Sweet king!—the bishop hath a  
kindly gird;

For shame, my lord of Winchester! relent;

What shall a child instruct you what to do?

*Win.* Well, duke of Gloster, I will yield to  
thee;

Love for thy love, and hand for hand I give.

*Glo.* Ay; but, I fear me, with a hollow  
heart.—

See here, my friends, and loving countrymen;

This token serveth for a flag of truce,

Betwixt ourselves, and all our followers:

So help me God, as I dissemble not!

*Win.* So help me God, as I intend it not!

[*Aside.*

*K. Hen.* O loving uncle, kind duke or  
Gloster,

How joyful am I made by this contract!—

Unseemly, indecent. + This was a term of reproach toward men of learning.

† Feels an emotion of kind remorse.

Away, my masters! trouble us no more:  
But join in friendship, as your lords have done.

1 *Serv.* Content; I'll to the surgeon's.

2 *Serv.* And so will I.

3 *Serv.* And I will see what physic the tavern affords.

[*Exeunt Servants, Mayor, &c.*]

*War.* Accept this scroll, most gracious sovereign;

Which in the right of Richard Plantagenet,  
We do exhibit to your majesty.

*G.o.* Well urged, my lord of Warwick;—  
for, sweet prince,

An if your grace mark every circumstance,  
You have great reason to do Richard right:  
Especially, for those occasions

At Eltham-place I told your majesty. [*force:*]

*K. Hen.* And those occasions, uncle, were of  
Therefore, my loving lords, our pleasure is,  
That Richard be restored to his blood.

*War.* Let Richard be restored to his blood;  
So shall his father's wrongs be recompensed.

*Win.* As will the rest, so willett Winchester.

*K. Hen.* If Richard will be true, not that  
But all the whole inheritance I give, [alone,  
That doth belong unto the house of York,  
From whence you spring by lineal descent.

*Plan.* Thy humble servant vows obedience,  
And humble service, till the point of death.

*K. Hen.* Stoop then, and set your knee  
against my foot;

And, in requerdon\* of that duty done,  
I girt thee with the valiant sword of York:  
Rise, Richard, like a true Plantagenet;  
And rise created princely duke of York.

*Plan.* And so thrive Richard, as thy foes  
may fall!

And as my duty springs, so perish they  
That grudge one thought against your majesty!

*All.* Welcome, high prince, the mighty duke  
of York!

*Som.* Perish, base prince, ignoble duke of  
York! [*Aside.*]

*Glo.* Now will it best avail your majesty,  
To cross the seas, and to be crown'd in France:  
The presence of a king engenders love  
Amongst his subjects, and his loyal friends;

As it disanimates his enemies. [*Henry goes;*  
*K. Hen.* When Gloster says the word, king  
For friendly counsel cuts off many foes.

*Glo.* Your ships already are in readiness.

[*Exeunt all but EXETER.*]

*Eve.* Ay, we may march in England, or in  
Not seeing what is likely to ensue: [France,  
This late dissension grown betwixt the peers,  
Burns under feigned ashes of forged love,  
And will at last break out into a flame:

As fester'd members rot but by degrees,  
Till bones, and flesh, and sinews, fall away,  
So will this base and envious discord breed.  
And now I fear that fatal prophecy,  
Which, in the time of Henry named the fifth,  
Was in the mouth of every sucking babe,—  
That Henry, born at Monmouth, should win all;  
And Henry, born at Windsor, should lose all:

Which is so plain that Exeter doth wish  
His days may finish ere that hapless time. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II. France. Before Roüen.

*Enter LA PUCELLE disguised, and Soldiers  
dressed like Countrymen, with Sacks  
upon their Backs.*

*Puc.* These are the city gates, the gates of  
Roüen,

Through which our policy must make a breach:  
Take heed, be wary how you place your words;  
Talk like the vulgar sort of market-men,  
That come to gather money for their corn.  
If we have entrance, (as, I hope, we shall,)  
And that we find the slothful watch but weak,  
I'll by a sign give notice to our friends,  
That Charles the Dauphin may encounter  
them. [the city,

1 *Sold.* Our sacks shall be a mean to sack  
And we be lords and rulers over Roüen;  
Therefore we'll knock. [*Knocks.*]

*Guard.* [Within.] *Qui est là?*

*Puc.* *Paisans, pauvres gens de France:*  
Poor market-folks, that come to sell their corn.

*Guard.* Enter, go in; the market-bell is  
rung. [*Opens the Gates.*]

*Puc.* Now, Roüen, I'll shake thy bulwarks  
to the ground.

[*PUCELLE, &c., enter the City.*  
*Enter CHARLES, Bastard of Orleans, ALEN-  
CON, and Forces.*

*Char.* Saint Dennis bless this happy strata-  
gem!

And once again we'll sleep secure in Roüen.

*Bast.* Here enter'd Pucelle, and her prac-  
tisants+;

Now she is there, how will she specify  
Where is the best and safest passage in?

*Alen.* By thrusting out a torch from yon-  
der tower; [ing is,—

Which, once discern'd, shows, that her mean-  
No way to that, for weakness, which she  
enter'd.

*Enter LA PUCELLE on a Battlement: hold-  
ing out a Torch burning.*

*Puc.* Behold, this is the happy wedding  
torch,

That joineth Roüen unto her countrymen:  
But burning fatal to the Talbotites. [*friend,*

*Bast.* See, noble Charles! the beacon of our  
The burning torch in yonder turret stands.

*Char.* Now shine it like a comet of revenge,  
A prophet to the fall of all our foes! [ons ends;

*Alen.* Defer no time, Delays have danger-  
Enter, and cry—*The Dauphin!*—presently,  
And then do execution on the watch.

[*They enter.*]

*Alarums.* *Enter TALBOT, and certain  
English.*

*Tal.* France, thou shalt rue this treason with  
If Talbot but survive thy treachery. [thy tears,  
Pucelle, that witch, that damned sorceress,  
Hath wrought this hellish mischief unawares,  
That hardly we escaped the pride of France.

[*Exeunt to the Town.*]

Recompense.

+ Confederates in stratagems.

‡ i. e., No way equal to that.

§ Haughty power.

*Alarum: Excursions. Enter from the Town*  
BEDFORD, brought in sick in a Chair, with  
TALBOT, BURGUNDY, and the English  
Forces. Then, enter on the Walls, LA  
PUCELLE, CHARLES, Bastard, ALENÇON,  
and Others.

*Puc.* Good morrow, gallants! want ye  
corn for bread?

I think the duke of Burgundy will fast,  
Before he'll buy again at such a rate:  
'Twas full of darnel; do you like the taste?

*Bur.* Scoff on, vile fiend, and shameless  
courtezan!

I trust, ere long, to choke thee with thine own,  
And make thee curse the harvest of that corn.

*Char.* Your grace may starve, perhaps, be-  
fore that time. [this treason!

*Bed.* O, let no words, but deeds, revenge

*Puc.* What will you do, good grey-beard?  
break a lance,

And run a tilt at death within a chair?

*Tal.* Foul fiend of France, and hag of all  
despite,

Encompass'd with thy lustful paramours!  
Becomes it thee to taunt his valiant age,  
And twit with cowardice a man half-dad?  
Damsel, I'll have a bout with you again,  
Or else let Talbot perish with this shame.

*Puc.* Are you so hot, sir?—Yet, Pucelle,  
hold thy peace;

If Talbot do but thunder, rain will follow.—

[TALBOT, and the rest, consult together.  
God speed the parliament! who shall be the  
speaker? [field?

*Tal.* Dare ye come forth, and meet us in the

*Puc.* Belike, your lordship takes us then  
for fools,

To try if that our own be ours or no.

*Tal.* I speak not to that railing Hecate,  
But unto thee, ALENÇON, and the rest;

Will ye, like soldiers, come and fight it out?

*Alen.* Signior, no. [France!

*Tal.* Signior, hang!—base muleteers of  
Like peasant foot-boys do they keep the walls,  
And dare not take up arms like gentlemen.

*Puc.* Captains, away: let's get us from the  
walls;

For Talbot means no goodness, by his looks.—  
God be wi' you, my lord! we came, sir, but  
that we are here. [to tell you

[*Exeunt* LA PUCELLE, &c., from the Walls.

*Tal.* And there will we be too, ere it be long,  
Or else reproach be Talbot's greatest fame!—  
Vow, Burgundy, by honour of thy house,  
(Prick'd on by public wrongs, sustain'd in  
France.)

Either to get the town again, or die:

And I,—as sure as English Henry lives,

And as his father here was conqueror;

As sure as in this late-betrayed town

Great Cœur-de-lion's heart was buried;

So sure I swear, to get the town, or die.

*Bur.* My vows are equal partners with thy  
vows. [prince,

*Tal.* But, ere we go, regard this dying  
The valiant duke of Bedford:—Come, my lord,

We will bestow you in some better place,  
Fitter for sickness, and for crazy age.

*Bed.* Lord Talbot, do not so dishonour me:  
Here will I sit before the walls of Roüen,  
And will be partner of your weal, or woe.

*Bur.* Courageous Bedford, let us now per-  
suade you. [I read,

*Bed.* Not to be gone from hence; for once  
That stout Pendragon, in his litter, sick,  
Came to the field, and vanquished his foes:  
Methinks, I should revive the soldiers' hearts,  
Because I ever found them as myself.

*Tal.* Undaunted spirit in a dying breast!—  
Then be it so:—Heavens keep old Bedford  
safe!—

And now no more ado, brave Burgundy,  
But gather we our forces out of hand,  
And set upon our boasting enemy.

[*Exeunt* BURGUNDY, TALBOT, and Forces  
leaving BEDFORD, and Others.

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter* Sir JOHN  
FASTOLFE, and a Captain.

*Cap.* Whither away, sir John Fastolfe, in  
such haste? [flight,

*Fast.* Whither away? to save myself by  
We are like to have the overthrow again.

*Cap.* What! will you fly; and leave lord  
Talbot?

*Fast.* Ay,  
All the Talbots in the world to save my life.

*Cap.* Cowardly knight! ill fortune follow  
thee! [Exit.

*Retreat: Excursions. Enter from the Town,*  
LA PUCELLE, ALENÇON, CHARLES, &c.,  
and *Exeunt, flying.*

*Bed.* Now, quiet soul, depart when heaven  
please;

For I have seen our enemies' overthrow.  
What is the trust or strength of foolish man?

They, that of late were daring with their scoffs  
Are glad and fain by flight to save themselves.

[Dies, and is carried off in his Chair.  
*Alarum: Enter* TALBOT, BURGUNDY, and  
Others.

*Tal.* Lost, and recover'd in a day again!  
This is a double honour, Burgundy:

Yet, heavens have glory for this victory!  
*Bur.* Warlike and martial Talbot, Burgundy

Enshrines thee in his heart; and there erects  
Thy noble deeds, as valour's monument.

*Tal.* Thanks, gentle duke. But where is  
Pucelle now?

I think her old familiar is asleep:  
Now where's the bastard's braves, and Charles

his gleeks\*? [for grief,

What, all a-mort†? Roüen hangs her head  
That such a valiant company are fled.

Now will we take some order‡ in the town,  
Placing therein some expert officers;

And then depart to Paris, to the king;  
For there young Harry, with his nobles, lies.

*Bur.* What wills lord Talbot, pleaseth Bur-  
gundy.

*Tal.* But yet, before we go, let's not forget  
The noble duke of Bedford, late deceased,

\* Scoffs.

† Quite dispirited.

‡ Make some necessary dispositions.



But see his exequies\* fulfill'd in Rouen;  
A braver soldier never conched lance;  
A gentler heart did never sway in court:  
But kings and mightiest potentates must die;  
For that's the end of human misery.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. The Plains near the City.*

*Enter CHARLES, the Bastard, ALENCON, LA PUCELLE, and Forces.*

*Puc.* Dismay not, princes, at this accident,  
Nor grieve that Rouen is so recovered:  
Care is no cure, but rather corrosive,  
For things that are not to be remedied.  
Let frantic Talbot triumph for a while,  
And like a peacock sweep along his tail;  
We'll pull his plumes, and take away his train,  
If Dauphin, and the rest, will be but ruled.

*Char.* We have been guided by thee hitherto,  
And of thy cunning had no diffidence;  
One sudden foil shall never breed distrust.

*Bast.* Search out thy wit for secret policies,  
And we will make thee famous through the world.

*Alen.* We'll set thy statue in some holy  
And have thee reverenced like a blessed saint;  
Employ thee then, sweet virgin, for our good.

*Puc.* Then thus it must be; this doth Joan  
devise:

By fair persuasions, mix'd with sugar'd words,  
We will entice the duke of Burgundy  
To leave the Talbot, and to follow us.

*Char.* Ay, marry, sweeting, if we could do  
that,

France were no place for Henry's warriors;  
Nor should that nation boast it so with us,  
But be extirpated from our provinces.

*Alen.* For ever should they be expelled†  
from France,

And not have title to an earldom here.

*Puc.* Your honours shall perceive how I  
will work,

To bring this matter to the wished end.

[*Drums heard.*]

Hark! by the sound of drum, you may perceive  
Their powers are marching unto Paris-ward.

*An English March. Enter, and pass over at a distance, TALBOT and his Forces.*

There goes the Talbot, with his colours spread;  
And all the troops of English after him.

*A French March. Enter the Duke of Burgundy and Forces.*

Now, in the rearward, comes the duke, and  
his;

Fortune, in favour, makes him lag behind.

Summon a parley, we will talk with him.

[*A Parley sounded.*]

*Char.* A parley with the duke of Burgundy.

*Bur.* Who craves a parley with the Bur-  
gundy?

*Puc.* The princely Charles of France, thy

*Bur.* What say'st thou, Charles? for I am  
marching hence.

*Char.* Speak, Pucelle; and enchant him  
with thy words.

*Puc.* Brave Burgundy, undoubted hope of  
France!

Stay, let thy humble handmaid speak to thee.

*Bur.* Speak on; but be not over-tedious.

*Puc.* Look on thy country, look on fertile  
France,

And see the cities and the towns defaced  
By wasting ruin of the cruel foe!

As looks the mother on her lowly babe,  
When death doth close his tender dying eyes,  
See, see, the pining malady of France;

Behold the wounds, the most unnatural wounds,  
Which thou thyself hast given her woful  
O, turn thy edged sword another way; [breast!  
Strike those that hurt, and hurt not those that  
help!]

One drop of blood, drawn from thy country's  
Should grieve thee more than streams of foreign  
gore;

Return thee, therefore, with a flood of tears,  
And wash away thy country's stained spots!

*Bur.* Either she hath bewitch'd me with  
her words,

Or nature makes me suddenly relent.

*Puc.* Besides, all French and France ex-  
claims on thee,

Doubting thy birth and lawful progeny.

Who join'st thou with, but with a lordly nation,  
That will not trust thee, but for profit's sake?

When Talbot hath set footing once in France,  
And fashion'd thee that instrument of ill,

Who then, but English Henry, will be lord,  
And thou be thrust out, like a fugitive?

Call we to mind,—and mark but this, for  
proof;—

Was not the duke of Orleans thy foe?

And was he not in England prisoner?

But, when they heard he was thine enemy,  
They set him free, without his ransom paid,

In spite of Burgundy, and all his friends.  
See then! thou fight'st against thy countrymen,

And join'st with them will be thy slaughter-  
men.

Come, come, return; return, thou wand'ring  
Charles, and the rest, will take thee in their  
arms.

*Bur.* I am vanquished; these haughty §  
words of hers

Have batter'd me like roaring cannon-shot,  
And made me almost yield upon my knees.—

Forgive me, country, and sweet countrymen!  
And, lords, accept this hearty kind embrace:

My forces and my power of men are yours;—  
So, farewell, Talbot: I'll no longer trust thee.

*Puc.* Done like a Frenchman, turn, and turn  
again!

*Char.* Welcome, brave duke! thy friend-  
ship makes us fresh.

*Bast.* And doth beget new courage in our  
breasts.

*Alen.* Pucelle hath bravely played her part  
And doth deserve a coronet of gold.

*Char.* Now let us on, my lords, and join  
our powers;

And seek how we may prejudice the foe.

[*Exeunt*]

\* Funeral rites.

† Rooted out.

‡ Expelled.

§ Elevated.

SCENE IV. Paris. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter King HENRY, GLOSTER, and other Lords, VERNON, BASSET, &c. To them TALBOT, and some of his Officers.*

*Tal.* My gracious prince,—and honourable Hearing of your arrival in this realm, [peers,— I have a while given truce unto my wars, To do my duty to my sovereign: In sign whereof, this arm—that hath reclaim'd To your obedience fifty fortresses, [strength, Twelve cities, and seven walled towns of Besides five hundred prisoners of esteem,— Lets fall his sword before your highness' feet; And, with submissive loyalty of heart, Ascribes the glory of his conquest got, First to my God, and next unto your grace.

*K. Hen.* Is this the lord Talbot, uncle Gloster,

That hath so long been resident in France?

*Glo.* Yes, if it please your majesty, my liege.

*K. Hen.* Welcome, brave captain, and victorious lord!

When I was young, (as yet I am not old,) I do remember how my father said, A stouter champion never handled sword. Long since we were resolved \* of your truth, Your faithful service, and your toil in war; Yet never have you tasted our reward, Or been requerdon'd † with so much as thanks, Because till now we never saw your face:

Therefore, stand up; and, for these good deserts,

We here create you earl of Shrewsbury; And in our coronation take your place.

[*Exeunt King HENRY, GLOSTER, TALBOT, and Nobles.*

*Ver.* Now, sir, to you, that were so hot at Disgracing of these colours that I wear {sea, In honour of my noble lord of York.— Dar'st thou maintain the former words thou spak'st?

*Bas.* Yes, sir; as well as you dare patronage The envious barking of your sancy tongue Against my lord the duke of Somerset.

*Ver.* Sirrah, thy lord I honour as he is.

*Bas.* Why, what is he? as good a man as York.

*Ver.* Hark ye; not so: in witness, take ye that. [*Strikes him.*

*Bas.* Villain, thou know'st, the law of arms is such,

That, whoso draws a sword, 'tis present death; Or else this blow should broach thy dearest But I'll unto his majesty, and crave {blood. I may have liberty to vengeance this wrong; When thou shalt see, I'll meet thee to thy cost.

*Ver.* Well, miscreant, I'll be there as soon as you;

And, after, meet you sooner than you would.

[*Exeunt*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The same. A Room of State.*

*Enter King HENRY, GLOSTER, EXETER, YORK, SUFFOLK, SOMERSET, WINCHESTER, WARWICK, TALBOT, the Governor of Paris, and Others.*

*Glo.* Lord bishop, set the crown upon his head. [the sixth!

*Win.* God save king Henry, of that name

*Glo.* Now, governor of Paris, take your oath,— [Governor kneels.

That you elect no other king but him: Esteem none friends, but such as are his friends;

And none your foes, but such as shall pretend; Malicious practices against his state:

This shall ye do, so help you righteous God! [*Exeunt Gov. and his Train.*

*Enter Sir JOHN FALSTOFE.*

*Fast.* My gracious sovereign, as I rode from To haste unto your coronation, [Calais, A letter was deliver'd to my hands,

Write to your grace from the duke of Burgundy.

*Tal.* Shame to the duke of Burgundy, and thee! [next,

I vow'd, base knight, when I did meet thee To tear the garter from the craven's leg, [Plucking it off.

(Which I have done) because unworthily Thou wast installed in that high degree.—

Pardon me, princely Henry, and the rest:

This dastard, at the battle of Patay, When but in all I was six thousand strong, And that the French were almost ten to one,— Before we met, or that a stroke was given, Like to a trusty 'squire, did run away; In which assault we lost twelve hundred men; Myself, and divers gentlemen beside, Were there surprised, and taken prisoners. Then judge, great lords, if I have done amiss; Or whether that such cowards ought to wear This ornament of knighthood, yea, or no.

*Glo.* To say the truth, this fact was infamous, And ill beseeeming any common man; Much more a knight, a captain, and a leader.

*Tal.* When first this order was ordain'd, my lords,

Knights of the garter were of noble birth; Valiant, and virtuous, full of haughty courage, Such as were grown to credit by the wars; Not fearing death, nor shrinking for distress, But always resolute in most extremes.

He then, that is not furnish'd in this sort, Doth but usurp the sacred name of knight, Profaning this most honourable order; And should (if I were worthy to be judge,) Be quite degraded, like a hedge-born swain That doth presume to boast of gentle blood.

*K. Hen.* Stain to thy countrymen! thou hear'st thy doom:

Be packing therefore, thou that wast a knight;

\* Confirmed in opinion.

† Mean, dastardly.      ‡ High.

† Rewarded.

‡ Design.

¶ i. e., In greatest extremities.

Henceforth we banish thee, on pain of death.—

[Exit FASTOLFE.]

And now, my lord protector, view the letter  
Sent from our uncle duke of Burgundy.

*Glos.* What means his grace, that he hath  
changed his style? [Viewing the super-  
scription.]

No more but, plain and bluntly,—To the king?  
Hath he forgot, he is his sovereign?

Or doth this churlish superscription

Pretend\* some alteration in good will?

What's here?—*I have, upon especial cause,—*  
[Reads.]

*Moved with compassion of my country's  
ureck,*

*Together with the pitiful complaints*

*Of such as your oppression feeds upon,—*

*Forsaken your pernicious faction,*

*And join'd with Charles, the rightful king  
of France.*

O monstrous treachery! Can this be so;

That in alliance, amity, and oaths,

There should be found such false dissembling  
guile? [revolt?]

*K. Hen.* What! doth my uncle Burgundy  
*Glos.* He doth, my lord; and is become your  
toe. [contain?]

*K. Hen.* Is that the worst this letter doth.  
*Glos.* It is the worst, and all, my lord, he  
writes. [talk with him,

*K. Hen.* Why then, lord Talbot there shall  
and give him chastisement for this abuse:—

My lord, how say you? are you not content?

*Tal.* Content, my liege? Yes; but that I am  
prevented†,

I should have begg'd I might have been em-  
ploy'd. [unto him: straight:

*K. Hen.* Then gather strength, and march  
Let him perceive, how ill we brook his treason;  
And what offence it is, to flout his friends.

*Tal.* I go, my lord; in heart desiring still,  
You may behold confusion of your foes. [Exit.]

Enter VERNON and BASSET.

*Ver.* Grant me the combat, gracious sove-  
reign! [too!

*Bas.* And me, my lord, grant me the combat  
*York.* This is my servant; Hear him, noble  
prince! [him!

*Som.* And this is mine; Sweet Henry, favour

*K. Hen.* Be patient, lords; and give them  
leave to speak.—

†ay, gentlemen, What makes you thus exclaim?  
And wherefore crave you combat? or with  
whom? [me wrong.

*Ver.* With him, my lord; for he hath done

*Bas.* And I with him; for he hath done me  
wrong. [both complain?

*K. Hen.* What is that wrong whereof you  
First let me know, and then I'll answer you.

*Bas.* Crossing the sea from England into  
France,

This fellow here, with envions carping tongue,  
Upbraided me about the rose I wear;

Saying—the sanguine colour of the leaves

Did represent my master's blushing cheeks,

When stubbornly he did repugn† the truth,

About a certain question in the law,  
Argued betwixt the duke of York and him;  
With other vile and ignominious terms:  
In confutation of which rude reproach,  
And in defence of my lord's worthiness,  
I crave the benefit of law of arms.

*Ver.* And that is my petition, noble lord:  
For though he seem, with forged, quaint coin-  
To set a gloss upon his bold intent, [ceit,  
Yet know, my lord, I was provoked by him;  
And he first took exceptions at this badge,  
Pronouncing—that the paleness of this flower  
Bewray'd the faintness of my master's heart.

*York.* Will not this malice, Somerset, be  
left? [will out,

*Som.* Your private grudge, my lord of York,  
Though ne'er so cunningly you smother it.

*K. Hen.* Good lord! what madness rules in  
brain-sick men;

When, for so slight and frivolous a cause,  
Such factions emulations shall arise!—

Good cousins both, of York and Somerset,  
Quiet yourselves, I pray, and be at peace. [fight,

*York.* Let this dissension first be tried by  
And then your highness shall command a peace.

*Som.* The quarrel toucheth none but us alone;  
Betwixt ourselves let us decide it then. [set.

*York.* There is my pledge; accept it, *Somer-*  
*Ver.* Nay, let it rest where it began at first.

*Bas.* Confirm it so, mine honourable lord.  
*Glo.* Confirm it so? Confounded be your strife!

And perish ye, with your audacious prate!  
Presumptuous vassals! are you not ashamed,

With this immodest clamorous outrage  
To trouble and disturb the king and us?

And you, my lords,—methinks you do not well,  
To bear with their perverse objections;

Much less, to take occasion for their months  
To raise a mutiny betwixt yourselves;

Let me persuade you take a better course.  
*Etc.* It grieves his highness:—Good, my  
lords; be friends. [combatants:

*K. Hen.* Come hither, you that would be  
Henceforth, I charge you, as you love our  
favour,

Quite to forget this quarrel, and the cause.—

And you, my lords,—remember where we are;  
In France; amongst a fickle wavering nation:

If they perceive dissension in our looks,  
And that within ourselves we disagree,

How will their grudging stomachs be provoked  
To wilful disobedience, and rebel?

Beside, what infamy will there arise,  
When foreign princes shall be certified,

That, for a toy, a thing of no regard,  
King Henry's peers, and chief nobility, [France?]

Destroy'd themselves, and lost the realm of  
O, think upon the conquest of my father,

My tender years; and let us not forego  
That for a trifle, that was bought with blood

Let me be umpire in this doubtful strife.  
I see no reason, if I wear this rose,

[Putting on a red Rose  
That any one should therefore be suspicious  
I more incline to Somerset, than York:

Both are my kinsmen, and I love them both



As well they may upbraid me with my crown,  
Because, forsooth, the king of Scots is crown'd.  
But your discretions better can persuade,  
Than I am able to instruct or teach:

And therefore, as we hither came in peace,  
So let us still continue peace and love.—  
Cousin of York, we institute your grace  
To be our regent in these parts of France:—  
And good my lord of Somerset, unite  
Your troops of horsemen with his bands of  
foot;— [nitors,

And, like true subjects, sons of your proge-  
Go cheerfully together, and digest  
Your angry choler on your enemies.  
Ourself, my lord protector, and the rest,  
After some respite, will return to Calais;  
From thence to England; where I hope ere  
To be presented, by your victories, [long  
With Charles, Alençon, and that traitorous  
rout.

[*Flourish. Exeunt* KING HENRY, GLO.,  
SOM., WIN., SUF., and BASSET.

War. My lord of York, I promise you the  
king  
Prettyly, methought, did play the orator.  
York. And so he did; but yet I like it not,  
In that he wears the badge of Somerset.

War. Tush! that was but his fancy, blame  
him not; [harm.

I dare presume, sweet prince, he thought no  
York. And, if I wist, he did.—But let it rest;  
Other affairs must now be managed.

[*Exeunt* YORK, WARWICK, and VERNON.  
Exe. Well didst thou, Richard, to suppress  
thy voice:

For, had the passions of thy heart burst out,  
I fear we should have seen decipher'd there  
More rancorous spite, more furious raging  
broils,

Than yet can be imagined or supposed.  
But howsoe'er, no simple man that sees  
This jarring discord of nobility,  
This should'ring of each other in the court,  
This factious bandying of their favourites,  
But that it doth presage some ill event.

'Tis much \*, when sceptres are in children's  
hands; [sion;

But more when envy † breeds unkind ‡ divi-  
There comes the ruin, there begins confusion.

[*Exit.*

## SCENE II. France. Before Bourdeaux.

*Enter* TALBOT, with his Forces.

Tal. Go to the gates of Bourdeaux, trum-  
Summon their general unto the wall. [peter,  
*Trumpet sounds a Parley. Enter, on the  
Walls, the General of the French Forces,  
and Others.*

English John Talbot, captains, calls you forth,  
Servant in arms to Harry, king of England;  
And thus he would,—Open your city gates,  
Be humble to us; call my sovereign yours,  
And do him homage as obedient subjects,  
And I'll withdraw me and my bloody power:  
But, if you frown upon this proffer'd peace,

You tempt the fury of my three attend'ngs,  
Lean famine, quartering steel, and climbing  
fire;

Who, in a moment, even with the earth  
Shall lay your stately and air-braving towers  
If you forsake the offer of their love.

Gen. Thou ominous and fearful owl of death,  
Our nation's terror, and their bloody scourge  
The period of thy tyranny approacheth.  
On us thou canst not enter, but by death:  
For, I protest, we are well fortified,  
And strong enough to issue out and fight:  
If thou retire, the Dauphin, well appointed,  
Stands with the snares of war to tangle thee:  
On either hand thee there are squadrons  
pitch'd,

To wall thee from the liberty of flight;  
And no way canst thou turn thee for redress,  
But death doth front thee with apparent spoil,  
And pale destruction meets thee in the face.  
Ten thousand French have ta'en the sacrament,  
To rive their dangerous artillery  
Upon no Christian soul but English Talbot.  
Lo! there thou stand'st, a breathing valiant  
Of an invincible unconquer'd spirit: [man,  
This is the latest glory of thy praise,  
That I, thy enemy, due ‡ thee withal;  
For ere the glass, that now begins to run,  
Finish the process of his sandy hour,  
These eyes, that see thee now well coloured,  
Shall see thee wither'd, bloody, pale, and dead.

[*Drum afar off.*

Hark! hark! the Dauphin's drum, a warning  
bell,

Sings heavy music to thy timorous soul;  
And mine shall ring thy dire departure out.

[*Exeunt* General, &c., from the Walls

Tal. He fables not, I hear the enemy;  
Out, some light horsemen, and peruse their  
wings.—

O, negligent and heedless discipline!  
How are we park'd, and bounded in a pale;  
A little herd of England's timorous deer,  
Mazed with a yelping kennel of French curs!  
If we be English deer, be then in blood †:  
Not rascal-like ‡, to fall down with a pinch;  
But rather moody-mad, and desperate stags,  
Turn on the bloody hounds with heads of steel,  
And make the cowards stand aloof at bay:  
Sell every man his life as dear as mine,  
And they shall find dear deer of us, my  
friends.— [land's right!

God, and Saint George! Talbot, and Eng-  
Prosper our colours in this dangerous fight!

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE III. Plains in Gascony.

*Enter* YORK, with Forces; to him a  
Messenger.

York. Are not the speedy scouts return'd  
again,

That dogg'd the mighty army of the Dauphin?

Mess. They are return'd, my lord; and give  
it out, [power,

That he is march'd to Bourdeaux with his

\* 'Tis strange, or wonderful.

† Enmity.

‡ Unnatural.

§ Endue, honour.

|| In high spirits.

¶ A rascal deer as the term of chase for lean poor deer.

To fight with Talbot: As he march'd along,  
By your espials \* were discovered  
Two mightier troops than that the Dauphin led:  
Which join'd with him, and made their march  
for Bourdeaux.

*York.* A plague upon that villain Somerset;  
That thus delays my promised supply  
Of horsemen, that were levied for this siege!  
Renowned Talbot doth expect my aid;  
And I am louted † by a traitor villain,  
And cannot help the noble chevalier:  
God comfort him in this necessity!  
If he misse irry, farewell wars in France.

*Enter Sir WILLIAM LUCY.*

*Lucy.* Thou princely leader of our English  
strength,

Never so needful on the earth of France,  
Spur to the rescue of the noble Talbot;  
Who now is girdled with a waist of iron,  
And hemm'd about with grim destruction:  
To Bourdeaux, warlike duke! to Bourdeaux,  
York! [honour.]

Else, farewell Talbot, France, and England's  
*York.* O God! that Somerset—who in proud  
heart

Doth stop my cornets—were in Talbot's place!  
So should we save a valiant gentleman,  
By forfeiting a traitor and a coward.

Mad ire, and wrathful fury, makes me weep,  
That thus we die, while remiss traitors sleep.  
*Lucy.* O, send some succour to the dis-  
tress'd lord! [like word:]

*York.* He dies, we lose; I break my war-  
We mourn, France smiles; we lose, they daily  
All 'long of this vile traitor Somerset. [get;

*Lucy.* Then, God take mercy on brave  
Talbot's soul! [hours since,

And on his son, young John; whom, two  
I met in travel toward his warlike father!  
This seven years did not Talbot see his son;  
And now they meet where both their lives are  
done ‡. [have,

*York.* Alas! what joy shall noble Talbot  
To bid his young son welcome to his grave?  
Away! vexation almost stops my breath,  
That sunder'd friends greet in the hour of death.

*Lucy.* farewell: no more my fortune can,  
But curse the age I cannot aid the man.—  
Maine, Blois, Poitiers, and Tours, are won  
away,

\* Long all of Somerset, and his delay. [Exit.

*Lucy.* Thus, while the vulture † of sedition  
Feeds in the bosom of such great commanders,  
Sleeping neglect doth betray to loss  
The conquest of our scarce-cold conqueror,  
That ever-living man of memory,  
Henry the fifth:—While they each other cross,  
Lives, honours, lands, and all, hurry to loss.  
[Exit.

#### SCENE IV. Other Plains of Gascony.

*Enter SOMERSET, with his Forces; and an  
Officer of TALBOT'S with him.*

*Som.* It is too late; I cannot send them now:

This expedition was by York, and Talbot,  
Too rashly plotted; all our general force  
Might with a sally of the very town  
Be buckled with: the over-daring Talbot  
Hath sullied all his gloss of former honour,  
By this unheeded, desperate wild adventure:  
York set him on to fight, and die in shame,  
That, Talbot dead, great York might bear the  
name.

*Off.* Here is sir William Lucy, who with me  
Set from our o'er match'd forces for aid.

*Enter Sir WILLIAM LUCY,*

*Som.* How now, sir William? whither were  
you sent? [sold lord Talbot;]

*Lucy.* Whither, my lord? from bought and  
Who, ring'd about † with bold adversity,  
Cries out for noble York and Somerset,  
To beat assailing death from his weak legions.  
And whiles the honourable captain there  
Drops bloody sweat from his war-wearied  
limbs,

And, in advantage ling'ring, looks for rescue,  
You, his false hopes, the trust of England's  
honour,

Keep off aloof with worthless emulation.  
Let not your private discord keep away  
The levied succours that should lend him aid,  
While he, renowned noble gentleman,  
Yields up his life unto a world of odds:  
Orleans the Bastard, Charles, and Burgundy,  
Alençon, Reignier, compass him about,  
And Talbot perisheth by your default.

*Som.* York set him on, York should have  
sent him aid. [exclaims;

*Lucy.* And York as fast upon your grace  
Swearing that you withhold his levied host,  
Collected for this expedition.

*Som.* York lies; he might have sent and  
had the horse:

I owe him little duty, and less love; [ing.  
And take foul scorn, to fawn on him by send.

*Lucy.* The fraud of England, not the force  
of France,

Hath now entrapp'd the noble-minded Talbot:  
Never to England shall he bear his life;  
But dies, betrayed to fortune by your strife.

*Som.* Come, go; I will despatch the horse-  
men straight:

Within six hours they will be at his aid.

*Lucy.* Too late comes rescue; he is ta'en  
or slain:

For fly he could not, if he would have fled;  
And fly would Talbot never, though he might.

*Som.* If he be dead, brave Talbot then adieu!

*Lucy.* His fame lives in the world, his shame  
in you. [Exit.

#### SCENE V. The English Camp, near Bour- deaux.

*Enter TALBOT and JOHN his Son.*

*Tal.* O young John Talbot! I did send for  
To tutor thee in stratagems of war; [thee,  
That Talbot's name might be in thee revived,  
When sapless age, and weak unable limbs,

\* Spies. † Vanquished, baffled. ‡ Expended, consumed. § Alluding to the tale of  
Prometheus. || i. e. From one utterly ruined by the treacherous practices of others.

¶ Encircled

Should bring thy father to his drooping chair.  
But,—O malignant and ill-boding stars!—  
Now thou art come unto a feast of death\*,  
A terrible and unavoided† danger: [horse;  
Therefore, dear boy, mount on my swiftest  
And I'll direct thee how thou shalt escape  
By sudden flight: come, dally not, begone. [son?

*John.* Is my name Talbot? and am I your  
And shall I fly? O, if you love my mother,  
Dishonour not her honourable name,  
To make a bastard, and a slave of me:  
The world will say—He is not Talbot's blood,  
Tha' basely fled, when noble Talbot stood.

*Tal.* Fly, to revenge my death, if I be slain.  
*John.* He, that flies so, will ne'er return  
again.

*Tal.* If we both stay, we both are sure to die.  
*John.* Then let me stay; and, father, do  
you fly:

Your loss is great, so your regard‡ should be;  
My worth unknown, no loss is known in me.  
Upon my death the French can little boast;  
In yours, they will, in you all hopes are lost.  
Flight cannot stain the honour you have won;  
But mine it will, that no exploit have done:  
You fled for vantage every one will swear;  
But, if I bow, they'll say—it was for fear.  
There is no hope that ever I will stay,  
If, the first hour, I shrink, and run away.  
Here, on my knee, I beg mortality,  
Rather than life preserved with infamy.

*Tal.* Shall all thy mother's hopes lie in one  
tomb! [mother's womb.

*John.* Ay, rather than I'll shame my  
*Tal.* Upon my blessing I command thee go.

*John.* To fight I will, but not to fly the foe.  
*Tal.* Part of thy father may be saved in thee.

*John.* No part of him, but will be shame in  
me. [not lose it.

*Tal.* Thou never hadst renown, nor canst  
*John.* Yes, your renowned name; Shall  
flight abuse it? [from that stain.

*Tal.* Thy father's charge shall clear thee  
*John.* You cannot witness for me, being  
If death be so apparent, then both fly. [slain.

*Tal.* And leave my followers here, to fight,  
and die?  
My age was never tainted with such shame.

*John.* And shall my youth be guilty of such  
blame?

No more can I be severed from your side,  
Than can yourself in twain divide:  
Stay, go, do what you will, the like do I;  
For live I will not, if my father die.

*Tal.* Then here I take my leave of thee, fair  
Born to eclipse thy life this afternoon. [son,  
Come, side by side together live and die;  
And soul with soul from France to heaven fly.  
[Exeunt.

#### SCENE VI. A Field of Battle.

*Alarm:* Excursions, wherein TALBOT'S Son  
is hemmed about, and TALBOT rescues him.

*Tal.* Saint George and victory! fight, sol-  
diers, fight:

The regent hath with Talbot broke his word,  
And left us to the rage of France his sword.  
Where is John Talbot? pause, and take thy  
breath;

I gave thee life, and rescued thee from death.  
*John.* O twice my father! twice am I thy  
son: [done;

The life, thou gavest me first, was lost and  
Till with thy warlike sword, despite of fate,  
To my determined § time thou gav'st new date.

*Tal.* When from the Dauphin's crest thy  
sword struck fire,

It warm'd thy father's heart with proud desire  
Of bold-faced victory. Then leaden age,  
Quickened with youthful spleen, and warlike  
rage,

Beat down Alençon, Orleans, Burgundy,  
And from the pride of Gallia rescued thee.  
The ireful bastard Orleans—that drew blood  
From thee, my boy; and had the maidenhood  
Of thy first fight—I soon encountered;  
And, interchanging blows, I quickly shed  
Some of his bastard blood; and, in disgrace,  
Bespoke him thus: *Contaminated, base,  
Ana misbegotten blood I spill of thine,  
Mean and right poor; for that pure blood  
of mine* [brave boy:—

*Which thou didst force from Talbot, my  
Here, purposing the Bastard to destroy,  
Came in strong rescue. Speak, thy father's  
care;* [fare?

Art not thou weary, John? How dost thou  
Wilt thou yet leave the battle, boy, and fly,  
Now thou art seal'd the son of chivalry?

Fly, to revenge my death, when I am dead;  
The help of one stands me in little stead.  
O, too much folly is it, well I wot,

To hazard all our lives in one small boat.  
If I to-day die not with Frenchmen's rage:  
To-morrow I shall die with nickle age:

By me they nothing gain, an if I stay,  
'Tis but the short'ning of my life one day:

In thee thy mother dies, our household's name,  
My death's revenge, thy youth, and England's  
fame:

All these, and more, we hazard by thy stay;  
All these are saved, if thou wilt fly away.

*John.* The sword of Orleans hath not made  
me smart, [heart:

These words of yours draw life-blood from my  
On that advantage, bought with such a shame,  
(To save a paltry life, and slay bright fame),

Before young Talbot from old Talbot fly,  
The coward horse, that bears me, fall and die:

And like|| me to the peasant boys of France;  
To be shame's scorn, and subject of mischance!

Surely, by all the glory you have won,  
As if I fly, I am not Talbot's son:

Then talk no more of flight, it is no boot;  
If son to Talbot, die at Talbot's foot.

*Tal.* Then follow thou thy desperate sire of  
Thou Icarus; thy life to me is sweet: [Crete,  
If thou wilt fight, fight by thy father's side;  
And, commendable proved, let's die in pride.  
[Exeunt.

\* To a field where death will be feasted with slaughter.

† For unavoidable.

Your care of your own safety. § Ended.

|| Like me, reduce me to a level with.



SCENE VII. *Another Part of the same.*

*Alarum: Excursions. Enter TALBOT wounded, supported by a Servant.*

*Tal.* Where is my other life?—mine own is gone;—  
[John?]

O, where's young Talbot? where is valiant  
Triumphant death, smear'd with captivity \*!  
Young Talbot's valour makes me smile at thee:  
When he perceived me shrink, and on my knee,  
His bloody sword he brandish'd over me,  
And, like a hungry lion, did commence  
Rough deeds of rage, and stern impatience;  
But when my angry guardant stood alone,  
Tend'ring my ruin, and assail'd of none,  
Dizzy-eyed fury, and great rage of heart,  
Suddenly made him from my side to start  
Into the clust'ring battle of the French:  
And in that sea of blood my boy did drench  
His overmounting spirit; and there died  
My Icarus, my blossom, in his pride.

*Enter Soldiers bearing the Body of JOHN TALBOT.*

*Serv.* O my dear lord! lo, where your son is borne!  
[here to scorn,

*Tal.* Thou antic death, which laugh'st us anon, from thy insulting tyranny,  
Coupled in bonds of perpetuity,  
Two Talbots, winged through the lither † sky.  
In thy despite shall 'scape mortality.—[death,  
O thou whose wounds become hard-favoured  
Speak to thy father, ere thou yield thy breath:  
Brave death by speaking, whether he wil, or  
Imagine him a Frenchman, and thy foe.—[no;  
Poor boy! he smiles, methinks; as who should say—  
[to-day.

Had death been French, then death had died  
Come, come, and lay him in his father's arms;  
My spirit can no longer bear these harms.  
Soldiers, adieu! I have what I would have,  
Now my old arms are young John Talbot's grave.  
[Dies.

*Alarums. Excunt Soldiers and Servant leaving the two Bodies. Enter CHARLES, ALENÇON, BURGUNDY, Bastard, LA PUCELLE, and Forces.*

*Char.* Had York and Somerset brought rescue in,

We should have found a bloody day of this.

*Bast.* How the young whelp of Talbot's, raging-wood ‡,

Did flesh his puny sword in Frenchmen's blood!  
*Puc.* Once I encounter'd him, and thus I said,  
[mad:

*Thou maiden youth, be vanquish'd by a But—with a proud, majestical high scorn,—*  
He answered thus; *Young Talbot was not To be the pillage of a giglot ¶ wench:* [born  
So, rushing in the bowels of the French,  
He left me proudly, as unworthy fight.

*Bur.* Doubtless, he would have made a noble knight:

See, where he lies inersed in the arms  
Of the most bloody nurser of his harms.

*Bast.* Hew them to pieces, hack their bones asunder;

Whose life was England's glory, Gallia's wonder.  
[have fled

*Char.* O, no; forbear: for that which we During the life, let us not wrong it dead.

*Enter Sir WILLIAM LUCY, attended; a French Herald preceding.*

*Lucy.* Herald,  
Conduct me to the Dauphin's tent; to know  
Who hath obtain'd the glory of the day.

*Char.* On what submissive message art thou sent?  
[French word?

*Lucy.* Submission, Dauphin? 'tis a mere  
We English warriors wot not what it means.  
I come to know what prisoners thou hast ta'en,  
And to survey the bodies of the dead.

*Char.* For prisoners ask'st thou? hell on! But tell me whom thou seek'st.  
[prison is.

*Lucy.* Where is the great Alcides of the field,  
Valiant lord Talbot, earl of Shrewsbury?  
Created, for his rare success in arms, [lence;  
Great earl of Washford, Waterford, and Val-  
Lord Talbot of Goodrig and Urchinfeld,  
Lord Strange of Blackniere, lord Verdun of Alton,  
[Sheffield,

Lord Cromwell of Wingfield, lord Furnival of  
The thrice victorious lord of Falconbridge;  
Knight of the noble order of Saint George,  
Worthy Saint Michael, and the golden fleece;  
Great marshal to Henry the sixth,  
Of all his wars within the realm of France

*Puc.* Here is a silly stately style indeed!  
The Turk, that two and fifty kingdoms hath,  
Writes not so tedious a style as this.—  
Him, that thou magnifiest with all these titles  
Stinking, and fly-blown, lies here at our feet.

*Lucy.* Is Talbot slain; the Frenchmen's only scourge,

Your kingdom's terror and black Nemesis?  
O, were mine eye-balls into bullets turn'd,  
That I, in rage, might shoot them at your faces!  
O, that I could but call these dead to life!

It were enough to fright the realm of France  
Were but his picture left among you here,  
It would amaze ¶ the proudest of you all.  
Give me their bodies; that I may bear them hence,

And give them burial as beseems their worth.

*Puc.* I think, this upstart is old Talbot's ghost,  
[spirit.

He speaks with such a proud commanding  
For God's sake, let him have 'em; to keep them here,

They would but stink, and putrefy the air.

*Char.* Go, take their bodies hence.

*Lucy.* I'll bear them hence;  
But from their ashes shall be rear'd  
A phoenix that shall make all France afraid.

*Char.* So we be rid of them, do with 'em what then wilt.

And now to Paris in this conquering vein;  
All will be ours, now bloody Talbot's slain.

[Excunt

\* Death stain'd and dishonoured with captivity.  
my fall." ‡ Flexible, yielding.

† "Watching me with tenderness in  
¶ Wanton. ¶ Confound

§ Raving mad.

## ACT V.

SCENE I. London. *A Room in the Palace.**Enter King HENRY, GLOSTER, and EXETER.**K. Hen.* Have you perused the letters from the pope?

The emperor, and the earl of Armagnac?

*Glo.* I have, my lord; and their intent is this, They humbly sue unto your excellence, To have a godly peace concluded of, Between the realms of England and of France.*K. Hen.* How doth your grace affect their motion? [means]*Glo.* Well, my good lord; and as the only To stop effusion of our Christian blood, And 'stablish quietness on every side.*K. Hen.* Ay, marry, uncle; for I always It was both impious and unnatural, [thought, That such immanity \* and bloody strife Should reign among professors of one faith.*Glo.* Beside, my lord,—the sooner to effect, And surer bind, this knot of amity,— The earl of Armagnac—near knit to Charles, A man of great authority in France,— Proffers his only daughter to your grace In marriage, with a large and sumptuous dowry. [are young;*K. Hen.* Marriage, uncle! alas! my years And fitter is my study and my books, Than wanton dalliance with a paramour. Yet, call the ambassadors; and, as you please, So let them have their answers every one: I shall be well content with any choice, Tends to God's glory, and my country's weal.*Enter a Legate, and Two Ambassadors, with WINCHESTER, in a Cardinal's Habit.**Ece.* What! is my lord of Winchester in- And call'd unto a cardinal's degree! [stall'd, Then, I perceive, that will be verified, Henry the fifth did sometime prophesy,— If once he come to be a cardinal, He'll make his cap co-equal with the crown.*K. Hen.* My lords ambassadors, your several Have been considered and debated on. [suits Your purpose is both good and reasonable: And, therefore, are we certainly resolved To draw conditions of a friendly peace; Which, by my lord of Winchester, we mean Shall be transported presently to France.*Glo.* And for the proffer of my lord your master,—

I have inform'd his highness so at large As—liking of the lady's virtuous gifts, Her beauty, and the value of her dower,— He doth intend she shall be England's queen.

*K. Hen.* In argument and proof of which contract, [my affection,

Bear her this jewel, [To the Amb.] pledge of And so, my lord protector, see them guarded, And safely brought to Dover; where, in- Commit them to the fortune of the sea. [shipp'd,

*[Exeunt King HENRY and Train; GLOSTER, EXETER, and Ambassadors.**Win.* Stay, my lord legate; you shall first The sum of money, which I promised [receive Should be deliver'd to his holiness For clothing me in these grave ornaments.*Leg.* I will attend upon your lordship's leisure. [trow,*Win.* Now, Winchester will not submit, I Or be inferior to the proudest peer. Humphrey of Gloster, thou shalt well perceive, That, neither in birth, or for authority, The bishop will be overborne by thee: I'll either make thee stoop, and bend thy knee, Or sack this country with a mining. [Exeunt.SCENE II. France. *Plains in Anjou.**Enter CHARLES, BURGUNDY, ALENÇON, LA PUCELLE, and Forces, marching.**Char.* These news, my lords, may cheer our drooping spirits:

'Tis said, the stout Parisians do revolt, And turn again unto the warlike French.

*Alen.* Then march to Paris, royal Charles of France, And keep not back your powers in dalliance.*Puc.* Peace be amongst them, if they turn- Else, ruin combat with their palaces! [to us;*Enter a Messenger.**Mess.* Success unto our valiant general, And happiness to his accomplices!*Char.* What tidings send our scouts? I pry'thee speak.*Mess.* The English army, that divided was Into two parts, is now conjoin'd in one; And means to give you battle presently.*Char.* Somewhat too sudden, sirs, the warn- ing is;

But we will presently provide for them.

*Bur.* I trust, the ghost of Talbot is not there; Now he is gone, my lord, you need not fear.*Puc.* Of all base passions, fear is most ac- cused:— [thine;

Command the conquest, Charles, it shall be Let Henry fret, and all the world repine.

*Char.* Then on, my lords; and France be fortunate! [Exeunt.SCENE III. *The same. Before Angiers.**Alarums; Excursions. Enter LA PUCELLE.**Puc.* The regent conquers, and the French- men fly.—

Now help, ye charming spells, and periapts †; And ye choice spirits that admonish me. And give me signs of future accidents! [Thunder.

You speedy helpers, that are substitutes Under the lordly monarch of the north ‡, Appear, and aid me in this enterprise!

*Enter Fiends.*

This speedy quick appearance argues proof Or your accustomed diligence to me.

Now, ye familiar spirits, that are cull'd

\* Barbarity, savageness.

† Charms sewed up.

‡ The north was supposed to be th  
particular habitation of bad spirits.

Out of the powerful regions under earth,  
Help me this once, that France may get the  
field.

[*They walk about, and speak not.*]

O, hold me not with silence over-long!  
Where I was wont to feed you with my blood,  
I'll lop a member off, and give it you,  
In earnest of a further benefit;  
So you do condescend to help me now.

[*They hang their heads.*]

No hope to have redress!—My body shall  
Pay recompense, if you will grant my suit.

[*They shake their heads.*]

Cannot my body, nor blood-sacrifice,  
Entreat you to your wonted furtherance?  
Then take my soul; my body, soul, and all,  
Before that England give the French the foil.

[*They depart.*]

See! they forsake me. Now the time is come.  
That France must vail \* her lofty-plumed crest,  
And let her head fall into England's lap.  
My ancient incantations are too weak,  
And hell too strong for me to buckle with:  
Now, France, thy glory droopeth to the dust.

[*Exit.*]

*Alarums: Enter French and English, fighting. LA PUCELLE and YORK fight hand to hand. LA PUCELLE is taken. The French fly.*

York. Damsel of France, I think I have  
you fast:

Unchain your spirits now with spelling charms,  
And try if they can gain your liberty.—  
A goodly prize, fit for the devil's grace!

See, how the ugly witch doth bend her brows,  
As if, with Circe, she would change my shape.

Puc. Changed to a worser shape thou canst  
not be. [man;

York. O, Charles the Dauphin is a proper  
No shape but his can please your dainty eye.

Puc. A plaguing mischief light on Charles,  
and thee!

And may ye both be suddenly surprised  
By bloody hands, in sleeping on your beds!

York. Fell, banning † hag! enchantress, hold  
thy tongue. [while.

Puc. I prythee, give me leave to curse a

York. Curse, miscreant, when thou comest  
to the stake. [Exit.

*Alarums. Enter SUFFOLK, leading in  
Lady MARGARET.*

Suf. Be what thou wilt, thou art my priso-  
ner. [Gazes on her.

O fairest beauty, do not fear, nor fly;  
For I will touch thee but with reverent hands,  
And lay them gently on thy tender side.

I kiss these fingers [*Kisses her hand.*] for  
eternal peace:

Who art thou? say, that I may honour thee.

Mar. Margaret my name; and daughter  
to a king,

The king of Naples, whosoe'er thou art.

Suf. An earl I am, and Suffolk am I call'd.  
Be not offended, nature's miracle,  
Thou art allotted to be taken by me:

So doth the swan her downy cygnets save.  
Keeping them prisoners underneath her wings.  
Yet, if this servile usage once offend,  
Go, and be free again as Suffolk's friend.

[*She turns away as going.*]

O, stay!—I have no power to let her pass;  
My hand would free her, but my heart says—  
As plays the sun upon the glassy streams, [no.  
Twinkling another counterfeited beam,  
So seems this gorgeous beauty to mine eyes.  
Fain would I woo her, yet I dare not speak:  
I'll call for pen and ink, and write my mind:  
Pie, de la Poole! disable not thyself;  
Hast not a tongue? is she not here thy  
prisoner?

Wilt thou be daunted at a woman's sight?  
Ay; beauty's princely majesty is such,  
Confounds the tongue, and makes the senses  
rough. [so,—

Mar. Say, earl of Suffolk,—if thy name be  
What ransome must I pay before I pass?  
For, I perceive, I am thy prisoner. [snit,

Suf. How canst thou tell, she will deny thy  
Before thou make a trial of her love? [Aside.

Mar. Why speak'st thou not? what ransome  
must I pay? [wood'd

Suf. She's beautiful; and therefore to be  
She is a woman; therefore to be won. [Aside.

Mar. Wilt thou accept of ransome, yea, or  
no? [a wife;

Suf. Fond man! remember, that thou hast  
Then how can Margaret be thy paramour?

[Aside.

Mar. I were best leave him, for he will not  
hear. [card.

Suf. There all is marr'd; there lies a cooling  
Mar. He talks at random; sure, the man is  
mad.

Suf. And yet a dispensation may be had.

Mar. And yet I would that you would  
answer me.

Suf. I'll win this lady Margaret. For whom?  
Why, for my king: Tush! that's a wooden  
thing. [penter.

Mar. He talks of wood: It is some car-  
Suf. Yet so my fancy || may be satisfied,

And peace established between these realms.  
But there remains a scruple in that too:

For though her father be the king of Naples,  
Duke of Anjou and Maine, yet is he poor,  
And our nobility will scorn the match.

[Aside.

Mar. Hear ye, captain? Are you not at  
leisure? [much:

Suf. It shall be so, disdain they ne'er so  
Henry is youthful, and will quickly yield.—

Madam, I have a secret to reveal. [a knight,

Mar. What though I be inthrall'd? he seems  
And will not any way dishonour me. [Aside.

Suf. Lady, vouchsafe to listen what I say.

Mar. Perhaps, I shall be rescued by the  
French;

And then I need not crave his courtesy. [Aside.  
Suf. Sweet madam, give me hearing in a  
cause—

\* Lower.

† To ban is to curse.

‡ "Do not represent thyself so weak"

§ An awkward business, an undertaking not likely to succeed.

|| Love.



*Mar.* Tush! women have been captivate ere now. [*Aside.*]

*Suf.* Lady, wherefore talk you so?

*Mar.* I cry you mercy, 'tis but *quid* for *quo*.

*Suf.* Say, gentle princess, would you not suppose

Your bondage happy, to be made a queen?

*Mar.* To be a queen in bondage, is more vile,  
Than is a slave in base servility;  
For princes should be free.

*Suf.* And so shall you,  
If happy England's royal king be free. [me?]

*Mar.* Why, what concerns his freedom unto

*Suf.* I'll undertake to make thee Henry's  
To put a golden sceptre in thy hand, [queen;  
And set a precious crown upon thy head,  
If thou wilt condescend to be my—

*Mar.* What?

*Suf.* His love.

*Mar.* I am unworthy to be Henry's wife.

*Suf.* No, gentle madam; I unworthy am  
To woo so fair a dame to be his wife,  
And have no portion in the choice myself.  
How say you, madam; are you so content?

*Mar.* An if my father please, I am content.

*Suf.* Then call our captains, and our colours,  
forth:

And, madam, at your father's castle walls  
We'll crave a parley, to confer with him.

[*Troops come forward.*]

A Parley sounded. Enter REIGNIER, on  
the Walls.

*Suf.* See, Reignier, see, thy daughter

*Reig.* To whom? [prisoner.

*Suf.* To me.

*Reig.* Suffolk, what remedy?

I am a soldier; and unapt to weep,  
Or to exclaim on fortune's fickleness.

*Suf.* Yes, there is remedy enough, my lord:  
Consent, (and, for thy honour, give consent,) thy daughter shall be wedded to my king;  
Whom I with pain have woo'd and won  
And this her easy-held imprisonment [thereto;  
Hath gain'd thy daughter princely liberty.

*Reig.* Speaks Suffolk as he thinks?

*Suf.* Fair Margaret knows,  
That Suffolk doth not flatter, face\*, or feign.

*Reig.* Upon thy princely warrant, I descend,  
To give thee answer of thy just demand.

[*Exit. from the Walls.*]

*Suf.* And here I will expect thy coming.

Trumpets sounded. Enter REIGNIER,  
below.

*Reig.* Welcome, brave earl, into our territories;

Commend in Anjou what your honour pleases.

*Suf.* Thanks, Reignier, happy for so sweet a child,

Fit to be made companion with a king:  
What answer makes your grace unto my snit?

*Reig.* Since thou dost deign to woo her little worth,

To be the princely bride of such a lord;  
Upon condition I may quietly [Anjou,  
Enjoy mine own, the county Maine, and

Free from oppression, or the stroke of war,  
My daughter shall be Henry's, if he please.

*Suf.* That is her ransom, I deliver her;  
And those two counties, I will undertake,  
Your grace shall well and quietly enjoy.

*Reig.* And I again,—in Henry's royal name,  
As deputy unto that gracious king,  
Give thee her hand, for sign of plighted faith.

*Suf.* Reignier of France, I give thee kindly  
Because this is in traffic of a king: [thanks,  
And yet, methinks, I could be well content  
To be mine own attorney in this case. [*Aside.*  
I'll over then to England with this news,  
And make this marriage to be solemnized;  
So, farewell, Reignier! Set this diamond safe  
In golden palaces, as it becomes.

*Reig.* I do embrace thee, as I would embrace  
The Christian prince, king Henry, were he  
here. [praise, and prayers,

*Mar.* Farewell, my lord! Good wishes,  
Shall Suffolk ever have of Margaret. [*Going.*

*Suf.* Farewell, sweet madam! But hark you,  
Margaret;

No princely commendations to my king?

*Mar.* Such commendations as become a  
A virgin, and his servant, say to him. [maid,  
*Suf.* Words sweetly placed, and modestly  
directed.

But, madam, I must trouble you again,—

No loving token to his majesty? [heart,

*Mar.* Yes, my good lord; a pure unspotted  
Never yet taint with love, I send the king.

*Suf.* And this withal. [*Kisses her.*

*Mar.* That for thyself;—I will not so pre-  
To send such peevish tokens to a king. [sume,

[*Exeunt REIGNIER and MARGARET.*]  
*Suf.* O, wert thou for myself!—But, Suffolk, stay;

Thou may'st not wander in that labyrinth;  
There Minotaurs, and ugly treasons, lurk.  
Solicit Henry with her wondrous praise:  
Bethink thee on her virtues that surmount;  
Mad\*, natural graces that extinguish art;  
Repeat their semblance often on the seas,  
That, when thou com'st to kneel at Henry's  
feet, [wonder.

Thou may'st bereave him of his wits with  
[*Exit.*

SCENE IV. Camp of the Duke of York,  
in Anjou.

Enter YORK, WARWICK, and Others.

*York.* Bring forth that sorceress, condemn'd  
to burn.

Enter LA PUCELLE, guarded, and a Shepherd.

*Shep.* Ah, Joan! this kills thy father's heart  
outright!

Have I sought every country far and near,  
And, now it is my chance to find thee out,

Must I behold thy timeless cruel death?

Ah, Joan, sweet daughter Joan, I'll die with  
thee?  
*Puc.* Decrepit miser!! base ignoble wretch  
I am descended of a gentler blood;

\* Play the hypocrite.

† Childish.

‡ Wild.

§ Untimely.

|| Miser here simply means a miserable creature.

Thou art no father, nor no friend, of mine.

*Shep.* Out, out!—My lords, an please you,  
'tis not so;

I did beget her, all the parish knows:

Her mother liveth yet, can testify,

She was the first fruit of my bachelorship.

*War.* Graceless! wilt thou deny thy parentage?

*York.* This argues what her kind of life hath  
Wicked and vile; and so her death concludes.

*Shep.* Fie, Joan! that thou wilt be so obstacle\*!

God knows, thou art a collop of my flesh;

And for thy sake have I shed many a tear;

Deny me not, I pry thee, gentle Joan.

*Puc.* Peasant, avaunt!—You have suborn'd  
this man,

Of purpose to obscure my noble birth.

*Shep.* 'Tis true, I gave a noble to the priest,  
The morn that I was wedded to her mother.—  
Kneel down and take my blessing, good my girl.

Wilt thou not stoop? Now curs'd be the time  
Of thy nativity! I would, the milk [breast,

Thy mother gave thee, when thou suck'dst her  
Had been a little ratsbane for thy sake!

Or else, when thou didst keep my lambs a-field  
I wish some ravenous wolf had eaten thee!

Dost thou deny thy father, curs'd drab?  
O, burn her, burn her; hanging is too good.

[*Exit.*

*York.* Take her away; for she hath lived  
too long,

To fill the world with vicious qualities.

*Puc.* First, let me tell you whom you have  
condemn'd:

Not me begotten of a shepherd swain,

But issued from the progeny of kings;

Virtuous, and holy; chosen from above,

By inspiration of celestial grace,

To work exceeding miracles on earth.

I never had to do with wicked spirits:

But you,—that are polluted with your lusts,  
Stain'd with the guiltless blood of innocents,

Corrupt and tainted with a thousand vices,—

Because you want the grace that others have,  
You judge it straight a thing impossible

To compass wonders, but by help of devils.

No, misconceived! Joan of Arc hath been

A virgin from her tender infancy,

Chaste and immaculate in very thought;

Whose maiden blood, thus rigorously effused,  
Will cry for vengeance at the gates of heaven.

*York.* Ay, ay;—away with her to execution.

*War.* And hark ye, sirs; because she is a  
maid,

Spare for no fagots, let there be enough:

Place barrels of pitch upon the fatal stake,

That so her torture may be shortened.

*Puc.* Will nothing turn your unrelenting  
hearts?—

Then, Joan, discover thine infirmity;

That warranteth by law to be thy privilege.—

I am with child, ye bloody homicides:

Murder not then the fruit within my womb,

Although ye hale me to a violent death.

*York.* Now heaven forefend! the holy maid  
with child? [wrought:

*War.* The greatest miracle that e'er ye  
Is all your strict preciseness come to this?

*York.* She and the Dauphin have been  
juggling:

I did imagine what would be her refuge.

*War.* Well, go to; we will have no bastards

Especially, since Charles must father it. [live;

*Puc.* You are deceived; my child is none  
of his;

It was Alençon, that enjoy'd my love.

*York.* Alençon! that notorious Machiavell!  
It dies, an if it had a thousand lives.

*Puc.* O, give me leave, I have deluded you;  
'Twas neither Charles, nor yet the duke I

named,  
But Reignier, king of Naples, that prevail'd.

*War.* A married man! that's most intoler-  
able. [knows not well.

*York.* Why, here's a girl! I think, she  
There were so many, whom she may accuse.

*War.* It's sign, she hath been liberal and  
free. [pure.—

*York.* And, yet, forsooth, she is a virgin  
Strumpet, thy words condemn thy brat, and

Use no entreaty, for it is in vain. [thee.

*Puc.* Then lead me hence; with whom I  
leave my curse:

May never glorious sun reflex his beams  
Upon the country where you make abode!

But darkness and the gloomy shade of death  
Environ you; till mischief, and despair,

Drive you to break your necks, or hang your-  
selves! [*Exit, guarded.*

*York.* Break thou in pieces, and consume  
to ashes,

Thou foul accurs'd minister of hell!

*Enter Cardinal BEAUFORT, attended.*  
*Car.* Lord regent, I do greet your excellence

With letters of commission from the king.  
For know, my lords, the states of Christendom,

Moved with remorse of these outrageous  
broils,

Have earnestly implored a general peace  
Betwixt our nation and the aspiring French;

And here at hand the Dauphin, and his train,  
Approacheth, to confer about some matter.

*York.* Is all our travail turn'd to this effect?  
After the slaughter of so many peers,

So many captains, gentlemen, and soldiers,  
That in this quarrel have been overthrow'n,

And sold their bodies for their country's  
benefit,

Shall we at last conclude effeminate peace?  
Have we not lost most part of all the towns,

By treason falsehood, and by treachery.  
Our great progenitors had conquered?—

O, Warwick, Warwick! I foresee with grief  
The utter loss of all the realm of France.

*War.* Be patient, York: if we conclude a  
peace, [quants,

It shall be with such strict and severe cove-  
As little shall the Frenchmen gain thereby.

A corruption of obstinate.  
qualities."

† "No, ye misconceivers, ye who mistake me and my  
† Compassion.

*Enter CHARLES, attended; ALENÇON, Bastard, REIGNIER, and Others.*

*Char.* Since, lords of England, it is thus agreed.

That peaceful truce shall be proclaim'd in France,

We come to be informed by yourselves

What the conditions of that league must be.

*York.* Speak, Winchester; for boiling choler chokes

The hollow passage of my poison'd voice,  
By sight of these our baleful \* enemies.

*Win.* Charles, and the rest, it is enacted thus:  
That—in regard king Henry gives consent,  
Of mere compassion, and of lenity,

To ease your country of distressful war,

And suffer you to breathe in fruitful peace,—

You shall become true liegemen to his crown:

And, Charles, upon condition thou wilt swear

To pay him tribute, and submit thyself,

Thou shalt be placed as viceroy under him,

And still enjoy thy regal dignity.

*Alen.* Must he be then a shadow of himself?

Adorn his temples with a coronet†;

And yet, in substance and authority,

Retain but privilege of a private man?

This proffer is absurd and reasonless. [*sess'd*]

*Char.* 'Tis known, already that I am pos-

With more than half the Gallian territories,

And therein revered for their lawful king:

Shall I, for lucre of the rest unvanquish'd,

Detract so much from that prerogative,

As to be call'd but viceroy of the whole?

No, lord ambassador; I'll rather keep

That which I have, than, coveting for more,

Be cast from possibility of all. [*means*]

*York.* Insulting Charles! hast thou by secret

Used intercession to obtain a league;

And, now the matter grows to compromise,

Stand'st thou aloof upon comparison?

Either accept the title thou usurp'st,

Of benefit‡ proceeding from our king,

And not of any challenge of desert,

Or we will plague thee with incessant wars.

*Reig.* My lord, you do not well in obstinacy

To cavil in the course of this contract:

If once it be neglected, ten to one,

We shall not find like opportunity.

*Alen.* To say the truth, it is your policy,

To save your subjects from such massacre,

And ruthless slaughters, as are daily seen

By our proceeding in hostility:

And therefore take this compact of a truce,

Although you break it when your pleasure

serves. [*Aside, to CHARLES.*]

*War.* How say'st thou, Charles? shall our

*Char.* It shall: [condition stand?]

Only reserved, you claim no interest

In any of our towns of garrison.

*York.* Then swear allegiance to his majesty;

As thou art knight, never to disobey,

Nor be rebellious to the crown of England,

Thou, nor thy nobles, to the crown of England.

[*CHARLES and the rest give tokens of fealty.*]

So, now dismiss your army when ye please;

Hang up your ensigns, let your drums be still,  
For here we entertain a solemn peace.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. London. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter King HENRY, in conference with SUFFOLK; GLOSTER and EXETER following.*

*K. Hen.* Your wondrous rare description,  
noble earl,

Of beauteous Margaret hath astonish'd me:

Her virtues, graced with external gifts,

Do breed love's settled passions in my heart:

And like as rigour in tempestuous gusts

Provokes the mightiest hulk against the tide;

So am I driven, by breath of her renown,

Either to suffer shipwreck, or arrive

Where I may have fruition of her love.

*Suf.* Tush! my good lord! this superficial

Is but a preface of her worthy praise: [tale

The chief perfections of that lovely dame,

(Had I sufficient skill to utter them,)

Would make a volume of enticing lines,

Able to ravish any dull conceit.

And, which is more, she is not so divine,

So full replete with choice of all delights,

But, with as humble lowliness of mind,

She is content to be at your command:

Command, I mean, of virtuous chaste intents,

To love and honour Henry as her lord. [sume.

*K. Hen.* And otherwise will Henry ne'er pre-

Therefore, my lord protector, give consent,

That Margaret may be England's royal queen.

*Glo.* So should I give consent to flatter sin.

You know, my lord, your highness is betroth'd

Unto another lady of esteem;

How shall we then dispense with that contract,

And not deface your honour with reproach?

*Suf.* As doth a ruler with unlawful oaths;

Or one, that, at a triumph‡, having vow'd

To try his strength, forsaketh yet the lists

By reason of his adversary's odds:

A poor earl's daughter is unequal odds,

And therefore may be broke without offence.

*Glo.* Why, what, I pray, is Margaret more

than that?

Her father is no better than an earl,

Although in glorious titles he excel.

*Suf.* Yes, my good lord, her father is a king,

The king of Naples, and Jerusalem;

And of such great authority in France,

As his alliance will confirm our peace,

And keep the Frenchmen in allegiance.

*Glo.* And so the earl of Armagnac may do,

Because he is near kinsman unto Charles.

*Exc.* Beside, his wealth doth warrant libe-

ral dower;

While Reignier sooner will receive, than give.

*Suf.* A dower, my lords! disgrace not so

your king,

That he should be so abject, base, and poor,

To choose for wealth, and not for perfect love.

Henry is able to enrich his queen,

And not to seek a queen to make him rich:

So worthless peasants bargain for their wives

\* Baneful. † Coronet is here used for crown.

‡ "Be content to live as the beneficiary of our king." § A triumph then signified a public exhibition; such as a mask, or revel.



As market-men for oxen, sheep, or horse.  
 Marriage is a matter of more worth,  
 Than to be dealt in by attorneyship \*;  
 Not whom we will, but whom his grace affects,  
 Must be companion of his nuptial bed:  
 And therefore, lords, since he affects her most,  
 It most of all these reasons bindeth us.  
 In our opinions she should be preferr'd.  
 For what is wedlock forced, but a hell,  
 An age of discord and continual strife?  
 Whereas the contrary bringeth forth bliss,  
 And is a pattern of celestial peace. [a king,  
 Whom should we match with Henry, being  
 But Margaret, that is daughter to a king?  
 Her peerless feature, joined with her birth,  
 Approves her fit for none, but for a king:  
 Her valiant courage, and undaunted spirit  
 (More than in women commonly is seen,)  
 Will answer our hope in issue of a king;  
 For Henry, son unto a conqueror,  
 Is likely to beget more conquerors,  
 If with a lady of so high resolve,  
 As is fair Margaret, he be link'd in love.  
 Then yield, my lords, and here conclude with  
 me, [she.  
 That Margaret shall be queen, and none but  
 K. Hen. Whether it be through force of  
 your report,  
 My noble lord of Suffolk; or for that  
 My tender youth was never yet attain

With any passion of inflaming love,  
 I cannot tell; but this I am assured,  
 I feel such sharp dissension in my breast,  
 Such fierce alarms both of hope and fear,  
 As I am sick with working of my thoughts.  
 Take, therefore, shipping; post, my lord, to  
 France;

Agree to any covenants: and procure  
 That lady Margaret do vouchsafe to come  
 To cross the seas to England, and be crown'd  
 King Henry's faithful and anointed queen:  
 For your expenses and sufficient charge,  
 Among the people gather up a tenth.  
 Be gone, I say; for, till you do return,  
 I rest perplexed with a thousand cares.—  
 And you, good uncle, barish all offence:  
 If you do censure † me by what you were,  
 Not what you are, I know it will excuse  
 This sudden execution of my will.  
 And so conduct me, where from company,  
 I may revolve and ruminate my grief. [Exit.

Glo. Ay, grief, I fear me, both at first and  
 last. [Exit GLOSTER and EXETER.

Suf. Thus Suffolk hath prevail'd: and thus  
 he goes,

As did the youthful Paris once to Greece;  
 With hope to find the like event in love,  
 But prosper better than the Trojan did.  
 Margaret shall now be queen, and rule the king;  
 But I will rule both her, the king, and realm.  
 [Exit

\* By the discretional agency of another.

† Judge.

Of this play there is no copy earlier than that of the folio in 1623, though the two succeeding parts are extant in two editions in quarto. That the second and third parts were published without the first, may be admitted as no weak proof that the copies were surreptitiously obtained, and that the printers of that time gave the public those plays, not such as the author designed, but such as they could get them. That this play was written before the two others is indubitably collected from the series of events; that it was written and played before HENRY the FIFTH is apparent, because in the epilogue there is mention made of this play, and not of the other parts:

"Henry the Sixth in swaddling bands crown'd king,

"Whose state so many had the managing,

"That they lost France, and made his England bleed:

"Which oft our stage hath shown."

RANCE IS LOST in this play. The two following contain, as the old title imports, the contention of the houses of York and Lancaster.

The second and third parts of HENRY VI. were printed in 1600. When HENRY V. was written we know not; but it was printed likewise in 1600, and therefore before the publication of the first and second parts. The first part of Henry VI. had been often shown on the stage, and would certainly have appeared in its place had the author been the publisher.—JOHNSON.

## SECOND PART OF KING HENRY VI.

\* \* \* "The Contention of the two famous Houses of Yorke and Lancaster," in two parts was published in quarto, in 1600; and the first part was entered on the Stationers' books, (as Mr. Steevens has observed,) March 12, 1593-4. On these two plays, which I believe to have been written by some preceding author, before the year 1590, Shakspeare formed, as I conceive, this and the following drama; altering, retrenching, or amplifying, as he thought proper. The reasons on which this hypothesis is founded, I shall subjoin at large at the end of the third part of King Henry VI\*. At present, it is only necessary to apprise the reader of the method observed in the printing of these plays. All the lines printed in the usual manner, are found in the original quarto plays (or at least with such minute variations as are not worth noticing): and those, I conceive, Shakspeare adopted as he found them. The lines to which inverted commas are prefixed, were, if my hypothesis be well founded, retouched, and greatly improved by him; and those with asterisks were his own original production; the embroidery with which he ornamented the coarse stuff that had been awkwardly made up for the stage by some of his contemporaries. The speeches which he new-modelled, he improved, sometimes by amplification, and sometimes by retrenchment.—MALONE.

### Persons represented.

King HENRY the SIXTH.  
HUMPHREY, *Duke of Gloster, his uncle.*  
Cardinal BEAUFORT, *Bishop of Winchester, great uncle to the King.*  
RICHARD PLANTAGENET, *duke of York.*  
EDWARD and RICHARD, *his sons.*  
Duke of SOMERSET,  
Duke of SUFFOLK,  
Duke of BUCKINGHAM, } *of the King's party.*  
Lord CLIFFORD,  
Young CLIFFORD, *his son,*  
Earl of SALISBURY, } *of the York faction.*  
Earl of WARWICK, }  
Lord SCALES, *Governor of the Tower.*  
Lord SAY.  
Sir HUMPHREY STAFFORD, *and his Brother,*  
Sir JOHN STANLEY.  
A Sea-captain, Master, and Master's Mate,  
and WALTER WHITMORE.  
Two Gentlemen, *prisoners with Suffolk.*  
A Herald. VAUX.  
HUME and SOUTHWELL, *two Priests.*

BOLINGBROKE, *a conjurer. A Spirit raised by him.*  
THOMAS HORNER, *an armourer. PETER, his man.*  
Clerk of Chatham. Mayor of St. Alban's.  
SIMPCOX, *an impostor. Two Murderers.*  
JACK CADE, *a rebel.*  
GEORGE, JOHN, DICK, SMITH, *the weaver,*  
MICHAEL, &c., *his followers.*  
ALEXANDER IDEN, *a Kentish gentleman.*

MARGARET, *Queen to King Henry.*  
ELEANOR, *Duchess of Gloster.*  
MARGERY JOURDAIN, *a witch. Wife to SIMPCOX.*  
  
Lords, Ladies, and Attendants; Petitioners, Aldermen, a Beadle, Sheriff, and Officers; Citizens, Prentices, Falconers, Guards, Soldiers, Messengers, &c.  
  
*Scene, dispersedly in various parts of England.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. London. A Room of State in the Palace.

*Flourish of Trumpets: then Hautboys. Enter, on one side, King HENRY, Duke of Gloster, SALISBURY, WARWICK, and Cardinal BEAUFORT; on the other, Queen MARGARET, led in by SUFFOLK; YORK, SOMERSET, BUCKINGHAM, and Others, following.*

*Suf.* As by your high imperial majesty I had in charge at my depart for France, As procurator to your excellence,

To marry princess Margaret for your grace;  
So, in the famous ancient city, Tours,—  
In presence of the kings of France and Sicil,  
The dukes of Orleans, Calaber, Bretagne, and  
Alençon, [bishops,—  
Seven earls, twelve barons, twenty reverend  
I have perform'd my task, and was espoused:  
And humbly now upon my bended knee,  
In sight of England and her lordly peers,  
Deliver up my title in the queen  
To your most gracious hands, that are the sub-  
Of that great shadow I did represent; [stance  
The happiest gift that ever marquess gave,

The fairest queen that ever king received.

*K. Hen.* Suffolk, arise.—Welcome, queen Margaret:

I can express no kinder sign of love, [life,  
Than this kind kiss.—O Lord, that lends me  
Lend me a heart replete with thankfulness!  
For thou hast given me, in this beauteous face,  
'A world of earthly blessings to my soul,  
'If sympathy of love unite our thoughts.

*Q. Mar.* Great king of England, and my gracious lord;

The mutual conference that my mind hath had \*.— [dreams;

'By day, by night; waking, and in my  
'In courtly company, or at my beads,—

'With you, mine alder-liest† sovereign,  
'Makes me the bolder to salute my king

'With ruder terms; such as my wit affords,  
'And over-joy of heart doth minister.

*K. Hen.* Her sight did ravish: but her grace in speech,

'Her words y-clad with wisdom's majesty,  
'Makes me from wondering fall to weeping joys;

'Such is the fulness of my heart's content.—  
'Lords, with one cheerful voice welcome my love. [happiness!

*All.* Long live queen Margaret, England's

*Q. Mar.* We thank you all. [Flourish.

*Suf.* My lord protector, so it please your grace,

Here are the articles of contracted peace,  
Between our sovereign and the French king Charles,

'For eighteen months concluded by consent.

*Glo.* [Reads.] Imprimis, *It is agreed between the French king, Charles, and William de la Poole, marquess of Suffolk, ambassador for Henry king of England,—that the said Henry shall espouse the lady Margaret, daughter unto Reigner king of Naples, Sicilia, and Jerusalem; and crown her queen of England, ere the thirtieth of May next ensuing.*——Item—*That the duchy of Anjou and the county of Maine, shall be released and delivered to the king her father*——

*K. Hen.* Uncle, how now?

*Glo.* Pardon me, gracious lord;  
Some sudden qualm hath struck me at the heart, [further.

And dimm'd mine eyes that I can read no

*K. Hen.* Uncle of Winchester, I pray, read on.

*Win. Item,—It is further agreed between them,—that the Duchies of Anjou and Maine shall be released and delivered over to the king her father; and she sent over of the king of England's own proper cost and charges, without having dowry.*

*K. Hen.* They please us well.—Lord marquess, kneel down;

We here create thee the first duke of Suffolk,  
And girt thee with the sword.—

Cousin of York, we here discharge your grace  
From being regent in the parts of France,  
Till term of eighteen months be full expired.—  
Thanks, uncle Winchester, Gloster, York, and Buckingham,

Somerset, Salisbury, and Warwick;  
We thank you all for this great favour done,  
In entertainment to my princely queen.

Come, let us in; and with all speed provide  
To see her coronation be perform'd.

[*Exeunt. King, Queen, and SUFFOLK.*

*Glo.* Brave peers of England, pillars of the state, [grief,

'To you duke Humphrey must unload his  
'Your grief, the common grief of all the land.

'What! did my brother Henry spend his youth,

'His valour, coin, and people, in the wars?

'Did he so often lodge in open field,

'In winter's cold, and summer's parching heat

'To conquer France, his true inheritance?

'And did my brother Bedford toil his wits,

'To keep by policy what Henry got?

'Have you yourselves, Somerset, Buckingham

'Brave York, Salisbury, and victorious Warwick,

'Received deep scars in France and Norman

'Or hath my uncle Beaufort, and myself, [died?

'With all the learned council of the realm,

'Studied so long, sat in the council-house,

'Early and late, debating to and fro [awe?

'How France and Frenchmen might be kept in

'And hath his highness in his infancy

'Been crown'd in Paris, in despite of foes?

'And shall these labours, and these honours, die?

'Shall Henry's conquest, Bedford's vigilance,

'Your deeds of war, and all our counsel, die?

'O peers of England, shameful is this league!

'Fatal this marriage, cancelling your fame:

'Blotting your names from books of memory:

'Razing the characters of your renown;

'Defacing monuments of conquer'd France;

'Undoing all, as all had never been!

*Car.* Nephew, what means this passionate discourse?

'This peroration with such circumstance?†

'For France, 'tis ours, and we will keep it still.

\* *Glo.* Ay, uncle, we will keep it if we can;

\* But now it is impossible we should:

Suffolk, the new-made duke that rules the roast,

\* Hath given the duchies of Anjou and Maine

\* Unto the poor king Reigner, whose large style

\* Agrees not with the leanness of his purse.

\* *Sal.* Now, by the death of Him that died for all,

\* These counties were the keys of Normandy:—  
But wherefore weeps Warwick, my valiant son? [very:

'*War.* For grief, that they are past recovery,  
'For, were there hope to conquer them again.

'My sword should shed hot blood, mine  
no tears.

\* I am the bolder to address you, having already familiarized you to my imagination—  
† Beloved above all things.

‡ This speech crowded with so many circumstances of aggravation.



\* Anjou and Maine! myself did win them both;  
 \* Those provinces these arms of mine did conquer:

\* And are the cities, that I got with wounds,  
 \* Deliver'd up again with peaceful words?

\* Mort Dieu! [focate,

\* *York.* For Suffolk's duke—may he be suf-

\* That dims the honour of this warlike isle!

\* France should have torn and rent my very heart,

\* Before I would have yielded to this league.

\* I never read but England's kings have had

\* Large sums of gold, and dowries, with their wives:

\* And our king Henry gives away his own,

\* To match with her that brings no vantages.

\* *Glo.* A proper jest, and never heard before,

\* That Suffolk should demand a whole fifteenth,

\* For costs and charges in transporting her!

\* She should have staid in France, and starved

\* Before— [in France,

\* *Cur.* My lord of Gloster, now you grow too hot;

\* It was the pleasure of my lord the king.

\* *Glo.* My lord of Winchester, I know your mind;

\* 'Tis not my speeches that you do mislike,

\* But 'tis my presence that doth trouble you.

\* Rancour will out: Proud prelate, in thy face,

\* I see thy fury: if I longer stay,

\* We shall begin our ancient bickerings\*.—

\* Lordings, farewell; and say, when I am gone,  
 I prophesied—France will be lost ere long.

[Exit.

\* *Cur.* So, there goes our protector in a rage.

\* 'Tis known to you, he is mine enemy:

\* Nay, more, an enemy unto you all;

\* And no great friend, I fear me, to the king.

\* Consider, lords, he is the next of blood,

\* And heir apparent to the English crown;

\* Had Henry got an empire by his marriage,

\* And all the wealthy kingdoms of the west,

\* There's reason he should be displeased at it.

\* Look to it, lords; let not his smoothing words

\* Bewitch your hearts; be wise, and circumspect.

\* What though the common people favour him,

\* Caching him—*Humphrey, the good duke of Gloster;* [voice—

\* Clapping their hands, and crying with loud

\* *Jesu maintain your royal excellence!*

\* With—*God preserve the good duke Humphrey!*

\* I fear me, lords, for all this flattering gloss,  
 He will be found a dangerous protector.

\* *Buck.* Why should he then protect our sovereign,

\* He being of age to govern of himself?—

\* Cousin of Somerset, join you with me,

\* And all together—with the duke of Suffolk,—

\* We'll quickly hoise duke Humphrey from his seat. [delay;

\* *Cur.* This weighty business will not brook

\* I'll to the duke of Suffolk presently.

[Exit.

\* *Som.* Cousin of Buckingham, though Humphrey's pride,

\* And greatness of his place be grief to us,

\* Yet let us watch the haughty cardinal;

\* His insolence is more intolerable

\* Than all the princes in the land beside;

\* If Gloster be displaced, he'll be protector.

\* *Buck.* Or thou, or I, Somerset, will be protector,

\* Despight duke Humphrey, or the cardinal.

[*Exeunt BUCKINGHAM and SOMERSET.*

\* *Sal.* Pride went before, ambition follows him. [ment,

\* While these do labour for their own prefer-

\* Behoves it us to labour for the realm.

\* I never saw but Humphrey duke of Gloster

\* Did bear him like a noble gentleman.

\* Oft have I seen the haughty cardinal—

\* More like a soldier, than a man o'the church,

\* As stout, and proud, as he were lord of all,—

\* Swear like a ruffian, and demean himself

\* Unlike the ruler of a common-weal.—

\* Warwick, my son, the comfort of my age!

\* Thy deeds, thy plainness, and thy house-keeping, [trous,

\* Hath won the greatest favour of the com-

\* Excepting none but good duke Humphrey.—

\* And, brother York, thy acts in Ireland,

\* In bringing them to civil discipline;

\* Thy late exploits done in the heart of France,

\* When thou wert regent for our sovereign,

\* Have made thee fear'd, and honour'd, of the people:—

\* Join we together for the public good;

\* In what we can to bridle and suppress

\* The pride of Suffolk, and the cardinal,

\* With Somerset's and Buckingham's ambition; [deeds,

\* And, as we may, cherish duke Humphrey's

\* While they do tend the profit of the land.

\* *War.* So God help Warwick, as he loves the land,

\* And common profit of his country!

\* *York.* And so says York, for he hath greatest cause. [unto the main.

\* *Sal.* Then let's make haste away, and look

\* *War.* Unto the main! O, father, Maine is lost; [did win,

\* That Maine, which by main force Warwick

\* And would have kept, so long as breath did last: [Maine;

\* Main chance, father, you meant; but I meant Which I will win from France, or else be slain.

[*Exeunt WARWICK and SALISBURY.*

\* *York.* Anjou and Maine are given to the French;

\* Paris is lost; the state of Normandy

\* Stands on a tickle point, now they are gone:

\* Suffolk concluded on the articles;

\* The peers agreed; and Henry was well pleased, [daughter.

\* To change two dukedoms for a duke's fair

\* I cannot blame them all; What is't to them?

\* 'Tis thine they give away, and not their own.

\* Pirates may make cheap pennyworths of their pillage,

3 B

\* Skirmishings.

+ For ticklish.

- \* And purchase friends, and give to courtezans,
- \* Still reveling, like lords, till all be gone:
- \* While as the silly owner of the goods
- \* Weeps over them, and wrings his hapless hands, [aloof,
- \* And shakes his head, and trembling stands
- \* While all is shared, and all is borne away;
- \* Ready to starve, and dare not touch his own.
- \* So York must sit, and fret, and bite his tongue, [sold.
- \* While his own lands are bargain'd for, and
- \* Methinks, the realms of England, France,
- and Ireland,

- \* Bear that proportion to my flesh and blood,
- \* As did the fatal brand Althea burn'd,
- \* Unto the prince's heart of Calydon\*.

Anjou and Maine, both given unto the French!  
Cold news for me: for I had hope of France,  
Even as I have of fertile England's soil.  
A day will come, when York shall claim his own;

And therefore I will take the Nevils' parts,  
And make a show of love to proud duke Humphrey,

And, when I spy advantage, claim the crown,  
For that's the golden mark I seek to hit:  
Nor shall proud Lancaster usurp my right,  
Nor hold his sceptre in his childish fist.

Nor wear the diadem upon his head,  
Whose church-like humours fit not for a crown.  
Then, York, be still awhile, till time do serve:  
Watch thou, and wake, when others be asleep,  
To pry into the secrets of the state;  
Till Henry, surfeiting in joys of love,  
With his new bride, and England's dear-bought queen, [jars:

And Humphrey with the peers be fall'n at  
Then will I raise aloft the milk-white rose,  
With whose sweet smell the air shall be perfumed;

And in my standard bear the arms of York,  
To grapple with the house of Lancaster;  
And, force perforce, I'll make him yield the crown,

Whose bookish rule hath pull'd fair England down. [Exit.

SCENE II. *The same. A Room in the Duke of Gloster's House.*

*Enter GLOSTER and the Duchess.*

*Duch.* Why droops my lord, like over-ripen'd corn,

Hanging the head at Ceres' plenteous load?

\* Why doth the great duke Humphrey knit his brows,

\* As frowning at the favours of the world?

\* Why are thine eyes fix'd to the sullen earth,

\* Gazing on that which seems to dim thy sight?

\* What seest thou there? king Henry's diadem,

\* Enchased with all the honours of the world?

\* If so, gaze on, and grovel on thy face,

\* Until thy head be circled with the same.

Put forth thy hand, reach at the glorious gold:—

\* What, is't too short? I'll lengthen it with mine:

\* And, having both together heaved it up,

\* We'll both together lift our heads to heaven

\* And never more abase our sight so low,

\* As to vouchsafe one glance unto the ground.

*Glo.* O Nell, sweet Nell, if thou dost love thy lord,

\* Banish the canker of ambitious thoughts:

\* And may that thought, when I imagine ill

\* Against my king and nephew, virtuous Henry,

\* Be my last breathing in this mortal world!

\* My troublesome dream this night doth make me sad. [I'll requite it.

*Duch.* What dream'd my lord? tell me, and

\* With sweet rehearsal of my morning's dream.

*Glo.* Methought this staff, mine office-badge in court,

\* Was broke in twain, by whom, I have forgot,

\* But, as I think, it was by the cardinal;

\* And on the pieces of the broken wand

\* Were placed the heads of Edmond duke of Somerset,

\* And William de la Poole, first duke of Suffolk. [knows.

\* This was my dream; what it doth bode, God

*Duch.* Tut, this was nothing but an argument,

That he that breaks a stick of Gloster's grove,  
\* Shall lose his head for his presumption.

\* But list to me, my Humphrey, my sweet

Methought, I sat in seat of majesty, [duke:

In the cathedral church of Westminster,

And in that chair where kings and queens are crowned; [me,

Where Henry, and dame Margaret, kneeled to

\* And on my head did set the diadem. [right:

*Glo.* Nay, Eleanor, then must I chide out

\* Presumptuous dame, ill-nurtured † Eleanor!

Art thou not second woman in the realm;

And the protector's wife; beloved of him?

\* Hast thou not worldly pleasure at command,

\* Above the reach or compass of thy thought?

And wilt thou still be hammering treachery,

\* To tumble down thy husband, and thyself,

\* From top of honour to disgrace's feet?

Away from me, and let me hear no more.

*Duch.* What, what, my lord! are you so choleric

\* With Eleanor, for telling but her dream?

\* Next time, I'll keep my dreams unto myself,

\* And not be checked. [again.

*Glo.* Nay, be not angry, I am pleased

*Enter a Messenger.*

\* *Mess.* My lord protector, 'tis his highness' pleasure,

\* You do prepare to ride unto Saint Albans,

\* Whereas the king and queen do mean to hawk. [us?

*Glo.* I go.—Come, Nell, thou wilt ride with

\* *Duch.* Yes, good my lord, I'll follow presently.

[*Exeunt GLOSTER and Messenger*

\* Follow I must, I cannot go before, [mind.

\* While Gloster bears this base and humble

\* Meleager; whose life was to continue only so long as a certain firebrand should last. His mother Althea having thrown it into the fire, he expired in torment.

† Ill-educated

‡ For where.

\* Were I a man, a duke, and next of blood,  
 \* I would remove these tedious stumbling  
   blocks, [necks:  
 \* And smooth my way upon their headless  
 \* And, being a woman, I will not be slack  
 \* To play my part in fortune's pageant.  
 \* Where are you there? Sir John \*! nay, fear  
   not, man,

We are alone; here's none but thee, and I.

Enter HUME.

Hume. Jesu preserve your royal majesty!

\* Duch. What say'st thou, majesty! I am  
   but grace. [advice,

Hume. But, by the grace of God, and Hume's

\* Your grace's title shall be multiplied.

Duch. What sayest thou, man? hast thou as  
   yet confer'd

With Margery Jourdain, the cunning witch;

And Roger Bolingbroke, the conjurer?

And will they undertake to do me good?

\* Hume. This they have promised,—to show  
   your highness

A spirit raised from depth of under ground,

\* That shall make answer to such questions,

\* As by your grace shall be propounded him.

\* Duch. It is enough; I'll think upon the  
   questions:

\* When from St. Albans we do make return,

\* We'll see these things effected to the full.

\* Here, Hume, take this reward; make merry,  
   man,

\* With thy confederates in this weighty cause.

[Exit Duchess.

\* Hume. Hume must make merry with the  
   duchess' gold; [Hume?

\* Marry, and shall. But how now, Sir John

\* Seal up your lips, and give no words but—

\* The business asketh silent secrecy. [mum!

\* Dame Eleanor gives gold, to bring the witch:

\* Gold cannot come amiss, were she a devil.

\* Yet have I gold, flies from another coast:

\* I dare not say, from the rich cardinal,

\* And from the great and new-made duke of  
   Suffolk;

\* Yet I do find it so: for, to be plain, [mour,

\* They, knowing dame Eleanor's aspiring hu-

\* Have hired me to undermine the duchess,

\* And buz these conjurations in her brain.

\* They say, A crafty knave does need no  
   broker;

\* Yet am I Suffolk and the cardinal's broker.

\* Hume, if you take not heed, you shall go  
   near

\* To call them both—a pair of crafty knaves.

\* Well, so it stands: And thus, I fear, at last,

\* Hume's knavery will be the duchess's wreck;

\* And her attainture will be Humphrey's fall:

\* Sort how it will, I shall have gold for all.

[Exit.

SCENE III. The same. A Room in the  
   Palace.

Enter PETER, and Others, with Petitions.

\* 1 Pet. My masters, let's stand close; my  
   lord protector will come this way by and by,

\* and then we may deliver our supplications  
   in the quill.

\* 2 Pet. Marry, the Lord protect him, for  
   he's a good man! Jesu bless him!

Enter SUFFOLK, and Queen MARGARET.

\* 1 Pet. Here 'a comes, methinks, and the  
   queen with him: I'll be the first, sure.

\* 2 Pet. Come back, fool; this is the duke  
   of Suffolk, and not my lord protector.

\* Suff. How now, fellow? wouldst any  
   thing with me?

\* 1 Pet. I pray, my lord, pardon me! I  
   took ye for my lord protector.

\* Q. Mar. [Reading the superscription] To  
   my lord protector! are your supplications  
   to his lordship? Let me see them: What  
   is this?

\* 1 Pet. Mine is, an't please your grace,  
   against John Goodman, my lord cardinal's  
   man, for keeping my house, and lands, and  
   wife and all, from me.

Suff. Thy wife too? that is some wrong, in-  
   deed.—What's your's?—What's here! [Reads.  
   Against the duke of Suffolk, for enclosing  
   the commons of Meljord.—How now, sir  
   knave?

2 Pet. Alas, sir, I am but a poor petitioner  
   of our whole township.

Peter. [Presenting his petition.] Against  
   my master, Thomas Horner, for saying, That  
   the duke of York was rightful heir to the crown.

\* Q. Mar. What say'st thou? Did the duke  
   of York say, he was rightful heir to the  
   crown?

\* Peter. That my master was? No, for-  
   sooth: my master said, 'that he was; and  
   that the king was an usurper.

Suff. Who is there? [Enter Servants.]  
   Take this fellow in, and send for his master  
   with a pursuivant presently:—we'll hear more  
   of your matter before the king.

[Exeunt Servants, with PETER.

\* Q. Mar. And as for you, that love to be  
   protected

\* Under the wings of our protector's grace,

\* Begin your suits anew, and sue to him.

[Tears the petition.

\* Away, base collions!—Suffolk, let them go.

\* All. Come, let's be gone.

[Exeunt Petitioners.

\* Q. Mar. My lord of Suffolk, say, is this  
   the guise,

\* Is this the fashion in the court of England?

\* Is this the government of Britain's isle,

\* And this the royalty of Albion's king?

\* What, shall king Henry be a pupil still,

\* Under the surly Gloster's governance?

\* Am I a queen in title and in style,

\* And must be made a subject to a duke?

\* I tell thee, Poole, when in the city I ours

\* Thou ran'st a tilt in honour of my love,

\* And stol'st away the ladies' hearts of France;

\* I thought king Henry had resembled thee,

\* In courage, courtship, and proportion:

\* But all his mind is bent to holiness,

\* A title frequently bestowed on the clergy.

+ Let the issue be what it will.

‡ With great exactness and observance of form.

§ Scoundrels.



\* To number *Ave-Maries* on his beads :  
 \* His champions are—the prophets and apostles;  
 \* His weapons, holy saws \* of sacred writ ;  
 \* His study in his tilt-yard, and his loves  
 \* Are brazen images of canonized saints.  
 \* I would, the college of cardinals [Rome,  
 \* Would choose him pope, and carry him to  
 \* And set the triple crown upon his head ;  
 \* That were a state fit for his holiness.  
 \* *Suf.* Madam, be patient : as I was cause  
 \* Your highness came to England, so will I  
 \* In England work your grace's full content.  
 \* *Q. Mar.* Beside the haught protector, have  
 we Beaufort, [ingham,  
 \* The imperious churchman ; Somerset, Buck-  
 \* And grumbling York : and not the least of  
 these,  
 \* But can do more in England than the king.  
 \* *Suf.* And he of these, that can do most of  
 all, [vils :  
 Cannot do more in England than the Ne-  
 Salisbury, and Warwick, are no simple peers.  
 \* *Q. Mar.* Not all these lords do vex me  
 half so much,  
 \* As that proud dame, the lord protector's wife.  
 \* She sweeps it through the court with troops  
 of ladies, [wife ;  
 \* More like an empress than duke Humphrey's  
 Strangers in court do take her for the queen :  
 \* She bears a duke's revenues on her back,  
 \* And in her heart she scorns her poverty ;  
 \* Shall I not live to be avenged on her ?  
 \* Contemptions base-born callat as she is,  
 \* She vaunted 'mongst her minions' otherday,  
 The very train of her worst wearing-gown  
 Was better worth than all my father's lands,  
 \* Till Suffolk gave two dukedoms for his  
 daughter. [for her ;  
 \* *Suf.* Madam, myself have limed a bush  
 \* And placed a quire of such enticing birds,  
 \* That she will light to listen to the lays,  
 \* And never mount to trouble you again.  
 \* So, let her rest : And, madam, list to me ;  
 \* For I am bold to counsel you in this.  
 \* Although we fancy not the cardinal,  
 \* Yet must we join with him, and with the  
 lords, [disgrace.  
 \* Till we have brought duke Humphrey in  
 \* As for the duke of York,—this late com-  
 \* Will make but little for his benefit : [plaint ;  
 \* So, one by one, we'll weed them all at last.  
 \* And you yourself shall steer the happy helm.  
*Enter King HENRY, YORK, and SOMERSET,*  
*conversing with him ; Duke and Duchess*  
*of GLOSTER, Cardinal BEAUFORT, BUCK-*  
*INGHAM, SALISBURY, and WARWICK.*  
*K. Hen.* For my part, noble lords, I care  
 not which ;  
 Or Somerset, or York, all's one to me.  
*York.* If York have ill demean'd himself in  
 France,  
 Then let him be deny'd § the regentship.  
 \* *Som.* If Somerset be unworthy of the place,  
 Let York be regent, I will yield to him.

*War.* Whether your grace be worthy, yea,  
 Dispute not that : York is the worthier. [or no,  
*Car.* Ambitions Warwick, let thy better  
 speak. [field.  
*War.* The cardinal's not my better in the  
*Buck.* All in this presence are thy better,  
 Warwick. [all.  
*War.* Warwick may live to be the best of  
 \* *Sal.* Peace, son ;— and show some reason,  
 Buckingham,  
 \* Why Somerset should be preferr'd in this.  
 \* *Q. Mar.* Because the king, forsooth, will  
 have it so.  
 \* *Glo.* Madam, the king is old enough himself  
 \* To give his censure : these are no women's  
 matters. [your grace  
*Q. Mar.* If he be old enough, what needs  
 \* To be protector of his excellence ?  
 \* *Glo.* Madam, I am protector of the realm ;  
 \* And, at his pleasure, will resign my place.  
*Suf.* Resign it then and leave thine insol-  
 lence. [thou ! ?  
 \* Since thou wert king, (as who is king, but)  
 \* The commonwealth hath daily run to wreck :  
 \* The Dauphin hath prevail'd beyond the seas ;  
 \* And all the peers and nobles of the realm  
 \* Have been as bondmen to thy sovereignty.  
 \* *Car.* The commons hast thou rack'd ; the  
 clergy's bags  
 \* Are lank and lean with thy extortions.  
 \* *Som.* Thy sumptuous buildings, and thy  
 wife's attire,  
 \* Have cost a mass of public treasury.  
 \* *Buck.* Thy cruelty in execution,  
 \* Upon offenders, hath exceeded law,  
 \* And left thee to the mercy of the law.  
 \* *Q. Mar.* Thy sale of offices, and towns in  
 France,—  
 \* If they were known, as the suspect is great.—  
 \* Would make thee quickly hop without thy  
 head. [*Exit GLOSTER. The Queen*  
*drops her Fan.*  
 \* Give me my fan : What, minion ! can you not ?  
 [Gives the Duchess a box on the ear.  
 \* I cry you mercy, madam ; Was it you ?  
 \* *Duch.* Was't I ? yea, I it was, prond  
 Frenchwoman :  
 \* Could I come near your beauty with my nails,  
 I'd set my ten commandments in your face.  
*K. Hen.* Sweet aunt, be quiet ; 'twas against  
 her will. [to't in time ;  
 \* *Duch.* Against her will ! Good king, look  
 \* She'll hamper thee, and dandle thee like a  
 baby : [breeches,  
 \* Though in this place most master wear no  
 She shall not strike dame Eleanor unrevenged.  
 [Exit Duchess.  
 \* *Buck.* Lord cardinal, I will follow Eleanor,  
 \* And listen after Humphrey, how he proceeds :  
 \* She's tickled now ; her fume can need no  
 spurs,  
 \* She'll gallop fast enough to her destruction.  
 [Exit BUCKINGHAM.  
*Re-enter GLOSTER.* [blown,  
 \* *Glo.* Now, lords, my choler being over-

\* Sayings. † Drab, trull. ‡ i. e., The complaint of Peter the armourer's man against  
 his master. § Deny is frequently used instead of deny among the old writers. ¶ Cer-  
 sure here means simply judgment or opinion. ¶ The marks of her fingers and thumbs.

• With walking once about the quadrangle,  
 • I come to talk of commonwealth affairs.  
 • As for your spiteful false objections,  
 • Prove them, and I lie open to the law:  
 • But God in mercy so deal with my soul,  
 • As I in duty love my king and country!  
 • But, to the matter that we have in hand:—  
 • I say, my sovereign, York is meetest man  
 • To be your regent in the realm of France.

\* *Suf.* Before we make election, give me  
 • To show some reason, of no little force, [leave  
 • That York is most unmeet of any man.

\* *York.* I'll tell thee, Suffolk, why I am un-  
 • First, for I cannot flatter thee in pride: [meet,  
 • Next, if I be appointed for the place,  
 • My lord of Somerset will keep me here,  
 • Without discharge, money, or furniture,  
 • Till France be won into the Dauphin's hands.  
 • Last time, I danced attendance on his will,  
 • Till Paris was besieged, famish'd, and lost.  
 • \* *War.* That I can witness; and a fouler fact  
 • Did never traitor in the land commit.

\* *Suf.* Peace, head-strong Warwick! [peace?  
 • *War.* Image of pride, why should I hold my  
 • Enter Servants of SUFFOLK, bringing in  
 • HORNER and PETER.

\* *Suf.* Because here is a man accused of treason:  
 • Pray God, the duke of York excuse himself!

\* *York.* Doth any one accuse York for a  
 • traitor? [me: What are these?

\* *K. Hen.* What mean'st thou, Suffolk? tell

\* *Suf.* Please it your majesty, this is the man  
 • That doth accense his master of high treason:  
 • His words were these;—that Richard, duke  
 • of York,

\* Was rightful heir unto the English crown;  
 • And that your majesty was an usurper.

\* *K. Hen.* Say, man, were these thy words?

\* *Hor.* An't shall please your majesty, I never  
 • said nor thought any such matter: God is my  
 • witness, I am falsely accused by the villain.

\* *Pet.* By these ten bones, my lords, [Hold-  
 • ing up his hands,] he did speak them to me  
 • in the garret one night, as we were scouring  
 • my lord of York's armour. [cal.

\* *York.* Base dunghill villain, and mechani.  
 • I'll have thy head for this thy traitor's  
 • speech:—

\* I do beseech your royal majesty,  
 • Let him have all the rigour of the law.

\* *Hor.* Alas, my lord, hang me, if ever I  
 • spake the words. My accuser is my prentice;  
 • and when I did correct him for his fault the  
 • other day, he did vow upon his knees he would  
 • be even with me: I have good witness of  
 • this; therefore, I beseech your majesty, do  
 • not cast away an honest man for a villain's  
 • accusation. [law?

\* *K. Hen.* Uncle, what shall we say to this in

\* *Glo.* This doom, my lord, if I may judge.

\* Let Somerset be regent o'er the French,  
 • Because in York this breeds suspicion;

\* And let these have a day appointed them

\* For single combat in convenient place:

\* For he hath witness of his servant's malice:

\* This is the law, and this duke Humphrey's  
 • doom. [set,

\* *K. Hen.* Then be it so. My lord of Somers-  
 • We make your grace lord regent o'er the  
 • French.

\* *Som.* I humbly thank your royal majesty.

\* *Hor.* And I accept the combat willingly.

\* *Pet.* Alas, my lord, I cannot fight; for

\* God's sake, pity my case! the spite of man

\* prevailleth against me. O Lord, have mercy

\* upon me! I shall never be able to fight a

\* blow: O Lord, my heart!

\* *Glo.* Sirrah, or you must fight, or else be  
 • hang'd. [the day

\* *K. Hen.* Away with them to prison: and

\* Of combat shall be the last of the next month.

\* Come, Somerset, we'll see thee stay away.  
 • [Exeunt.

#### SCENE IV. The same. The Duke of Gloster's Garden.

Enter MARGERY JOURDAIN, HUME, SOUTH-  
 WELL, and BOLINGROKE.

\* *Hume.* Come, my masters: the duchess,  
 • I tell you, expects performance of your  
 • promises.

\* *Boling.* Master Hume, we are therefore  
 • provided: will her ladyship behold and  
 • hear our exorcisms\*?

\* *Hume.* Ay; what else? fear you not her  
 • courage.

\* *Boling.* I have heard her reported to be  
 • a woman of an invincible spirit: But it shall  
 • be convenient, master Hume, that you be  
 • by her aloft, while we be busy below; and so, I  
 • pray you, go in God's name, and leave us.  
 • [Exit HUME.] Mother Jourdain, be you  
 • prostrate, and grovel on the earth:—\* John  
 • Southwell, read you; and let us to our work.

Enter Duchess, above.

\* *Duch.* Well said, my masters; and wel-  
 • come all. To this gear; the sooner the  
 • better. [know their times:

\* *Boling.* Patience, good lady; wizards  
 • Deep night, dark night, the silent of the night,  
 • The time of night when Troy was set on fire;  
 • The time when screech-owls cry, and ban-  
 • dogs † howl, [graves,

\* And spirits walk, and ghosts break up their

\* That time best fits the work we have in hand.

\* Madam, sit you and fear not; whom we raise,  
 • We will make fast within a hallow'd verge.

[Here they perform the Ceremonies apper-  
 • taining, and make the Circle; BOLING-  
 • BROKE or SOUTHWELL reads, Conjurote,  
 • &c. It thunders and lightens terribly,  
 • then the Spirit riseth.

\* *Spir.* Adsum.

\* *M. Jour.* Asmath,

\* By the eternal God, whose name and power

\* Thou tremblest at, answer that I shall ask;

\* For, till thou speak, thou shalt not pass from  
 • hence.

\* *Spir.* Ask what thou wilt:—That I had said  
 • and done!

\* By exorcise Shakspeare invariably means to raise spirits, and not to lay them.

† Matter or business.

‡ Village-dogs.

- Boling. *First of the king. What shall of him become?*  
 [Reading out of a Paper.]  
*Spir.* The duke yet lives, that Henry shall depose;  
 But him outlive, and die a violent death.  
*[As the Spirit speaks, SOUTHWELL writes the answer.]*  
 Boling. *What fate awaits the duke of Suffolk?* [end.]  
*Spir.* By water shall he die, and take his Boling. *What shall befall the duke of Somerset?* Let him shun castles; [mreset?]  
 Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains Than where castles mounted stand.  
 'Have done, for more I hardly can endure,  
 Boling. Descend to darkness, and the burn-  
 'False fiend, avoid! [ing lake:]  
*[Thunder and Lightning. Spirit descends.]*  
*Enter YORK and BUCKINGHAM hastily, with their Guards, and Others.*  
 'York. Lay hands upon these traitors, and their trash.  
 'Beldame, I think, we watch'd you at an inch.  
 'What madam, are you there? the king and commonweal  
 'Are deeply indebted for this piece of pains;  
 'My lord protector will, I doubt it not,  
 'See you well guerdon'd\* for these good deserts. [land's king,  
 \*Duch. Not half so bad as thine to Eng-  
 'Injurious duke; that threat'st where is no cause. [call you this?  
 \*Buck. True, madam, none at all. What *[Showing her the papers.]*  
 'Away with them; let them be clapp'd up close, [us:  
 'And kept asunder:—You, madam, shall with  
 'Stafford, take her to thee.—  
*[Exit Duchess from above.]*  
 'We'll see your trinkets here all forth-coming;  
 'All,—Away!  
*[Exeunt Guards, with SOUTH., BOL., &c.]*  
 \*York. Lord Buckingham, methinks you watch'd her well:  
 'A pretty plot, well chosen to build upon!  
 Now, pray, my lord, let's see the devil's writ.  
 What have we here? *[Reads.]*  
*The duke yet lives, that Henry shall depose;*  
*But him outlive, and die a violent death.*  
 \*Why, this is just.  
 \*Aio te *Æacida, Romanos vincere posse.*  
 Well, to the rest: *[Jolk?]*  
*Tell me, what fate awaits the duke of Suffolk?*  
*By water shall he die, and take his end.—*  
*What shall betide the duke of Somerset?*  
*Let him shun castles;*  
*Safer shall he be upon the sandy plains,*  
*Than where castles mounted stand.*  
 \*Come, come, my lords;  
 \*These oracles are hardly attain'd  
 \*And hardly understood. *[Alban's,*  
 'The king is now in progress toward Saint  
 'With him, the husband of this lovely lady:  
 'Thither go these news, as fast as horse can carry them;  
 'A sorry breakfast for my lord protector.  
 'Buck. Your grace shall give me leave, my lord of York,  
 'To be the post, in hope of his reward.  
 'York. At your pleasure, my good lord,—  
 'Who's within there, ho!  
*Enter a Servant.*  
 'Invite my lords of Salisbury, and Warwick,  
 'To sup with me to-morrow night.—Away!  
*[Exeunt]*

## ACT II.

## SCENE I. Saint Alban's.

*Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, GLOSTER, Cardinal, and SUFFOLK, with Falconers hollaing.*

'Q. Mur. Believe me, lords, for flying at the brook†,

I saw not better sport these seven years' day:  
 Yet, by your leave, the wind was very high;  
 And, ten to one, old Joan had not gone out.

'K. Hen. But what a point, my lord, your falcon made,

'And what a pitch she flew above the rest!—  
 'To see how God in all his creatures works!

\*Yea, man and birds, are fain† of climbing high.

*Suf.* No marvel, an it like your majesty,  
 My lord protector's hawks do tower so well;  
 They know their master loves to be aloft,

\*And bears his thoughts above his falcon's pitch.

'Glo. My lord, 'tis but a base ignoble mind  
 That mounts no higher than a bird can soar.

'Car. I thought as much; he'd be above the clouds. *[you by that?]*

'Glo. Ay, my lord cardinal; How think  
 Were it not good, your grace could fly to  
 heaven?

\*K. Hen. The treasury of everlasting joy!

'Car. Thy heaven is on earth; thine eyes  
 and thoughts

'Beat on a crown‡, the treasure of thy heart  
 Pernicious protector, dangerous peer,  
 That smooth'st it so with king and common-  
 weal! *[grown peremptory?]*

'Glo. What, cardinal, is your priesthood  
 \*Tantane animis celestibus ira?

'Churchmen so hot? good uncle, hide such  
 malice;

'With such holiness can you do it?

'Suf. No malice, sir; no more than well  
 becomes

'So good a quarrel, and so bad a peer.

*Glo.* As who, my lord?

*Suf.* Why, as you, my lord;  
 An't like your lordly lord-protectorship.

\* Rewarded.

† The falconer's term for hawking at water-fowl.

‡ Poud.

§ i. e., Thy mind is working on a crown.





*Glo.* What's his name?

*Simp.* I know not.

*Glo.* Nor his?

*Simp.* No, indeed, master.

*Glo.* What's thine own name?

*Simp.* Saunder Simpcox, an if it please you, master.

*Glo.* Then, Saunder, sit thou there, the lyingest knave [blind]  
In Christendom. If thou hadst been born  
Thou might'st as well have known our names,  
as thus

To name the several colours we do wear.

Sight may distinguish of colours; but suddenly  
To nominate them all, 's impossible. —

y lords, Saint Alban here hath done a miracle;

nd would ye not think that cunning to be  
nat could restore this cripple to his legs?

*Simp.* O, master, that you could!

*Glo.* My masters of Saint Alban's, have you  
not beadles in your town, and things called  
whips?

*May.* Yes, my lord, if it please your grace.

*Glo.* Then send for one presently.

*May.* Sirrah, go fetch the beadle hither  
straight. [Exit an Attendant.]

*Glo.* Now fetch me a stool hither by and  
by. [A Stool brought out.] Now, sirrah, if  
you mean to save yourself from whipping, leap  
me over this stool, and run away.

*Simp.* Alas, master, I am not able to stand  
You go about to torture me in vain. [alone:  
Re-enter Attendant, with the Beadle.]

*Glo.* Well, sir, we must have you find your  
legs. Sirrah beadle, whip him till he leap  
over that same stool.

*Bead.* I will, my lord. — Come on, sirrah;  
off with your doublet quickly.

*Simp.* Alas, master, what shall I do? I am  
not able to stand.

[After the Beadle hath hit him once, he  
leaps over the stool, and runs away;  
and the People follow, and cry, A  
Miracle!

• *K. Hen.* O God, see'st thou this, and  
bear'st so long? [villain run..]

• *Q. Mar.* It made me laugh, to see the

• *Glo.* Follow the knave; and take this  
drab away.

• *Wife.* Alas, sir, we did it for pure need.

*Glo.* Let them be whipped through every  
market town, till they come to Berwick,  
whence they came.

[Exit Mayor, Beadle, Wife, &c.]

• *Car.* Duke Humphrey has done a miracle  
to-day.

• *Suf.* True; made the lame to leap, and fly  
away. [than I;

• *Glo.* But you have done more miracles

• You made, in a day, my lord, whole towns  
to fly.

Enter BUCKINGHAM.

• *K. Hen.* What tidings with our cousin  
Buckingham? [unfold.

*Buck.* Such as my heart doth tremble to

• A sort \* of naughty persons, lewdly + bent, —

• Under the countenance and confederacy

• Of lady Eleanor, the protector's wife,

• The ringleader and head of all this rout, —

• Have practised dangerously against your  
state,

• Dealing with witches; and with conjurers:

• Whom we have apprehended in the fact;

• Raising up wicked spirits from under ground,

• Demanding of king Henry's life and death,

• And other of your highness' privy council,

• As more at large your grace shall understand

• *Car.* And so, my lord protector, by this  
means

• Your lady is forthcoming † yet at London.

• This news, I think, hath turn'd your weapon's  
edge; [hour.

• 'Tis like, my lord, you will not keep your  
[Aside to GLOSTER.

• *Glo.* Ambitious churchman, leave to afflict  
my heart! [powers:

• Sorrow and grief have vanquish'd all my

• And, vanquish'd as I am, I yield to thee,

• Or to the meanest groom.

• *K. Hen.* O God, what mischiefs work the  
wicked ones; [by!

• Heaping confusion on their own heads there-  
• *Q. Mar.* Gloster, see here the tainture of  
thy nest;

• And, look, thyself be faultless, thou wert  
best. [appal,

• *Glo.* Madam, for myself, to heaven I do

• How I have loved my king, and common-  
weal:

• And, for my wife, I know not how it stands;

• Sorry I am to hear what I have heard:

• Noble she is; but if she have forgot

• Honour, and virtue, and conversed with such

• As, like to pitch, defile nobility,

• I banish her, my bed, and company;

• And give her, as a prey, to law, and shame.

• That hath dishonour'd Gloster's honest name.

• *K. Hen.* Well, for this night, we will re-  
pose us here:

• To-morrow, toward London, back again,

• To look into this business thoroughly,

• And call these foul offenders to their answers;

• And poise ‡ the cause in justice's equal scales,

• Whose beam stands sure, whose rightful cause  
prevails. [Flourish. Exit

SCENE II. London. The Duke of York's  
Garden.

Enter YORK, SALISBURY, and WARWICK.

• *York.* Now, my good lords of Salisbury  
and Warwick,

• Our simple supper ended, give me leave,

• In this close walk, to satisfy myself,

• In craving your opinion of my title,

• Which is infallible to England's crown.

• *Sal.* My lord, I long to hear it at full.

• *War.* Sweet York, begin: and if thy claim  
be good,

The Nevils are thy subjects to command.

*York.* Then thus:

• Edward the Third, my lords, had seven sons;

• A company.

† Wickedly.

‡ i. e., Your lady is in custody.

§ Weigh.

The first, Edward, the Black Prince, prince of Wales; [third,  
The second, William of Hatfield; and the  
Lionel, duke of Clarence; next to whom,  
Was John of Gaunt, the duke of Lancaster:  
The fifth, was Edmund Langley, duke of  
York; [of Gloster;  
The sixth, was Thomas of Woodstock, duke  
William of Windsor was the seventh, and  
last. [father;  
'Edward, the Black Prince, died before his  
'And left behind him Richard, his only son.  
'Who, after Edward the Third's death,  
reign'd as king;  
'Till Henry Bolingbroke, duke of Lancaster,  
'The eldest son and heir of John of Gaunt.  
'Crown'd by the name of Henry the Fourth,  
'Seized on the realm; deposed the rightful  
king; [she came,  
'Sent his poor queen to France, from whence  
'And him to Pomfret; where, as all you  
know, [ly.  
'Harmless Richard was murder'd traitorous-  
'*War.* Father, the duke hath told the truth;  
'Thus got the house of Lancaster the crown.  
'*York.* Which now they hold by force, and  
not by right;  
'For Richard, the first son's heir being dead,  
'The issue of the next son should have reign'd.  
'*Sal.* But William of Hatfield died with-  
out an heir. [(from whose line  
'*York.* The third son, duke of Clarence,  
'I claim the crown,) had issue—Philippe, a  
daughter, [March,  
'Who married Edmund Mortimer, earl of  
'Edmund had issue—Roger, earl of March:  
'Roger had issue—Edmund, Annie, and Elea-  
nor. [broke,  
'*Sal.* This Edmund in the reign, of Boling-  
'As I have read, laid claim unto the crown;  
'And, but for Owen Glendower, had been king,  
'Who kept him in captivity, till he died.  
'But, to the rest.  
'*York.* His eldest sister, Anne,  
'My mother being heir unto the crown, [son  
'Married Richard, earl of Cambridge; who was  
'To Edmund Langley, Edward the third's fifth  
son.  
'By her I claim the kingdom: she was heir  
'To Roger, earl of March; who was the son  
'Of Edmund Mortimer; who married Philippe,  
'Sole daughter unto Lionel, duke of Clarence:  
So, if the issue of the elder son  
Succeed before the younger, I am king.  
'*War.* What plain proceedings are more  
plain than this? [Gaunt,  
Henry doth claim the crown from John of  
The fourth son; York claims it from the third.  
Till Lionel's issue fails, his should not reign:  
It fails not yet; but flourishes in thee,  
And in thy sons, fair slips of such a stock.—  
Then, father Salisbury, kneel we both to-  
gether;  
And, in this private plot\*, be we the first,  
That shall salute our rightful sovereign  
With honour of his birthright to the crown.

\* Sequestered spot.

† i. e., Sorrow requires solace, and age requires ease.

*Both.* Long live our sovereign Richard,  
England's king! [your king  
'*York.* We thank you, lords. But I am not  
'Till I be crown'd; and that my sword be stain'd  
'With heart-blood of the house of Lancaster.  
'And that's not suddenly to be perform'd;  
'But with advice, and silent secrecy.  
'Do you, as I do, in these dangerous days,  
'Wink at the duke of Suffolk's insolence,  
'At Beaufort's pride, at Somerset's ambition,  
'At Buckingham, and all the crew of them,  
'Till they have snared the shepherd of the  
flock, [phrey:  
'That virtuous prince, the good duke Hum-  
'Tis that they seek; and they, in seeking that,  
'Shall find their deaths, if York can prophesy.  
'*Sal.* My lord, break we off; we know  
your mind at full. [Warwick  
'*War.* My heart assures me, that the earl of  
'Shall one day make the duke of York a king.  
'*York.* And, Nevil, this I do assure myself,  
'Richard shall live to make the earl of War-  
wick  
'The greatest man in England but the king.  
[Exeunt.]

### SCENE III. The same. A Hall of Justice.

*Trumpets sounded. Enter King HENRY,  
Queen MARGARET, GLOSTER, YORK, SUFFOLK,  
and SALISBURY; the Duchess of  
Gloster, MARGERY JOURDAIN, SOUTH  
WELL, HUME, and BOLINGBROKE, under  
guard.*

'*K. Hen.* Stand forth, dame Eleanor Cob-  
ham, Gloster's wife:  
'In sight of God, and us, your guilt is great;  
'Receive the sentence of the law, for sins  
'Such as by God's book are adjudged to death.  
'You four, from hence to prison back again;  
[To JOURD. &c.  
'From thence, unto the place of execution:  
'The witch in Smithfield shall be burn'd to  
ashes, [lows.—  
'And you three shall be strangled on the gal-  
'You, madam, for you are more nobly born,  
'Despoiled of your honour in your life,  
'Shall, after three days' open penance done,  
'Live in your country here, in banishment,  
'With Sir John Stanley, in the isle of Man.  
'*Duch.* Welcome is banishment, welcome  
were my death. [judged thee;  
'*Glo.* Eleanor, the law, thou seest, hath  
'I cannot justify whom the law condemns.—  
[Exeunt the Duchess, and the other  
prisoners, guarded.  
'Mine eyes are full of tears, my heart of grief.  
'Ah, Humphrey, this dishonour in thine age  
'Will bring thy head with sorrow to the  
ground!—  
'I beseech your majesty, give me leave to go  
'Sorrow would solace, and mine age would  
ease. [ere thou go,  
'*K. Hen.* Stay, Humphrey duke of Gloster;  
'Give up thy staff; Henry will to himself  
'Protector be: and God shall be my hope.  
'My stay, my guide, and lantern to my feet;



And go in peace, Humphrey ; no less beloved,  
 Than when thou wert protector to thy king.

\* *Q. Mar.* I see no reason why a king of  
 \* Should be to be protected like a child.—[years  
 God and king Henry govern England's helm :  
 Give up your staff, sir, and the king his realm.

\* *Glo.* My staff?—here, noble Henry, is my  
 As willingly do I the same resign, [staff :  
 As e'er thy father Henry made it mine ;  
 And even as willingly at thy feet I leave it,  
 As others would ambitiously receive it. [gone,  
 Farewell, good king : When I am dead and  
 May honourable peace attend thy throne!

[Exit.

\* *Q. Mar.* Why, now is Henry king, and  
 Margaret queen ; [self,

\* And Humphrey, duke of Gloster, scarce him-  
 \* That bears so shrewd a maim ; two pulls at  
 \* His lady banish'd, and a limb lopp'd off ; [once,  
 \* This staff of honour raught \* :—' There let it  
 stand,

\* Where it best fits to be, in Henry's hand.

\* *Suf.* Thus droops this lofty pine, and  
 hangs his sprays ; [days,

\* Thus Eleanor's pride dies in her youngest  
 \* *York.* Lords, let him go.—Please it your  
 majesty,

\* This is the day appointed for the combat ;

\* And ready are the appellat and defendant,

\* The armourer and his man, to enter the lists,

\* So please your highness to behold the fight.

\* *Q. Mar.* Ay, good my lord ; for purposely  
 therefore

\* Left I the court, to see this quarrel tried,

\* *K. Hen.* O' God's name see the lists and all  
 things fit ; [right!

\* Here let them end it, and God defend the

\* *York.* I never saw a fellow worse bested †,

\* Or more afraid to fight, than is the appellat,

\* The servant of this armourer, my lords.

*Enter on one side, HORNER, and his neigh-  
 bours, drinking to him so much that he is  
 drunk ; and he enters bearing his staff  
 with a sand-bag fastened to it ; a drum  
 before him ; at the other side, PETER, with  
 a drum and a similar staff ; accompanied  
 by Prentices drinking to him.*

1 *Neigh.* Here, neighbour Horner, I drink  
 to you in a cup of sack ; And fear not, neigh-  
 bour, you shall do well enough.

2 *Neigh.* And here, neighbour, here's a cup  
 of charneco ‡.

3 *Neigh.* And here's a pot of good double  
 beer, neighbour : drink, and fear not your man.

*Hor.* Let it come, i' faith, and I'll pledge you  
 all ; And a fig for Peter!

1 *Pren.* Here, Peter, I drink to thee ; and  
 be not afraid.

2 *Pren.* Be merry, Peter, and fear not thy  
 master ; fight for credit of the prentices.

*Peter.* I thank you all : \* drink, and pray  
 \* for me, I pray you ; for, I think, I have taken  
 \* my last draught in this world. —Here, Robin,  
 an if I die, I give thee my apron ; and, Will,

thou shalt have my hammer :—and here, Tom,  
 take all the money that I have.—O Lord, bless  
 me, I pray God ! for I am never able to deal  
 with my master, he hath learnt so much fence  
 already.

*Sal.* Come, leave your drinking, and fall to  
 blows.—Sirrah, what's thy name?

*Peter.* Peter, forsooth.

*Sal.* Peter ! what more?

*Peter.* Thump.

*Sel.* Thump ! then see thou thump thy master  
 well.

*Hor.* Masters, I am come hither, as it were,  
 upon my man's instigation, to prove him a  
 knave, and myself an honest man : \* and touch-  
 \* ing the duke of York,—will take my death, I  
 never meant him any ill, nor the king nor the  
 queen : \* And, therefore, Peter, have at thee  
 with a downright blow, as Bevis of Southamp-  
 ton fell upon Ascapart. [gins to double.

\* *York.* Despatch :—this knave's tongue be-  
 \* Sound trumpets, alarum to the combatants.

[*Alarum.* They fight, and PETER strikes  
 down his master.

*Hor.* Hold, Peter, hold ! I confess, I confess  
 treason. [Dies.

\* *York.* Take away his weapon :—Fellow,  
 \* Thank God, and the good wine in thy mas-  
 ter's way.

\* *Peter.* O God ! have I overcome mine ene-  
 \* mies in this presence ? O Peter, thou hast pre-  
 \* vailed in right !

\* *K. Hen.* Go, take hence that traitor from  
 our sight ;

For, by his death, we do perceive his guilt § :  
 And God, in justice, hath reveal'd to us

The truth and innocence of this poor fellow,  
 Which he had thought to have murder'd wrong-  
 fully.—

Come, fellow, follow us for thy reward.

[*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE IV. The same. A Street.

*Enter GLOSTER and Servants, in mourn-  
 ing Cloaks.*

\* *Glo.* Thus, sometimes, hath the brightest  
 day a cloud ;

\* And, after summer, evermore succeeds [cold :

\* Barren winter, with his wrathful nipping

\* So cares and joys abound, as seasons fleet ¶.

Sirs, what's o'clock ?

*Serv.* Ten, my lord.

\* Ten is the hour that was appointed me,

\* To watch the coming of my punish'd duchess :

\* 'Unearth ¶ may she endure the flinty streets,

\* To tread them with her tender-feeling feet.

Sweet Nell, ill can thy noble mind brook

The abject people, gazing on thy face, [shame-

With envious \*\* looks, still laughing at thy

That erst did follow thy proud chariot wheels

When thou didst ride in triumph through the

streets. [prepare

\* But, soft ! I think she comes ; and I'll

\* My tear stain'd eyes to see her miseries.

\* Reached. † In a worse plight. ‡ A sort of sweet wine.

§ The death of the vanquished person was always regarded as certain evidence of his guilt.

|| Change.

¶ Not easily.

\*\* Malicious.

*Enter the Duchess of Gloster, in a white sheet, with papers pinned upon her back, her feet bare, and a taper burning in her hand; Sir JOHN STANLEY, a Sheriff, and Officers.*

*Serv.* So please your grace, we'll take her from the sheriff. [pass by.]

*Glo.* No, stir not for your lives; let her *Duch.* Come you, my lord, to see my open shame? [gaze!]

Now thou dost penance too. Look how they see, how the giddy multitude do point,

And nod their heads, and throw their eyes on thee! [looks:]

'Ah, Gloster, hide thee from their hateful  
'And in thy closet pent up, rue my shame,  
'And ban\* thine enemies, both mine and thine.

*Glo.* Be patient, gentle Nell; forget this grief. [self:]

*Duch.* Ah, Gloster, teach me to forget myself, whilst I think I am thy married wife,

And, thou a prince, protector of this land,  
'Methinks, I should not thus be led along,

Mail'd up in shame†, with papers on my back;  
\* And followed with a rabble, that rejoice

\* To see my tears, and hear my deep fet†  
groans.

The ruthless flint doth cut my tender feet;  
And, when I start, the envious people laugh,

And bid me be advised how I tread.  
'Ah, Humphrey, can I bear this shameful yoke?

\* Trow'st thou, that e'er I'll look upon the world;

\* Or count them happy, that enjoy the sun?  
\* No; dark shall be my light, and night my day;

\* To think upon my pomp, shall be my hell.  
Sometime I'll say, I am duke Humphrey's

And he a prince, and ruler of the land : [wife;  
Yet so he ruled, and such a prince he was,

As he stood by, whilst I, his forlorn duchess,  
\* Was made a wonder, and a pointing-stock,

To every idle rascal follower.  
But be thou mild, and blush not at my shame;

Nor stir at nothing, till the axe of death  
Hang over thee, as, sure, it shortly will.

For Suffolk,—he that can do all in all  
With her, that hateth thee, and hates us all,—

And York, and impious Beaufort, that false priest,  
Have all limbed bushes to betray thy wings,

And, fly thou how thou canst, they'll tangle thee:

\* But fear not thou, until thy foot be snared,  
\* Nor never seek prevention of thy foes.

\* *Glo.* Ah, Nell, forbear; thou aimest all  
\* I must offend, before I be attained : [awry;

\* And had I twenty times so many foes,  
\* And each of them had twenty times their power,

\* All these could not procure me any scathe\$,  
\* So long as I am loyal, true, and crimeless.

\* Wouldst have me rescue thee from this reproach?

' Why, yet thy scandal were not wiped away  
' But I in danger for the breach of law.

' Thy greatest help is quiet, gentle Nell :  
' I pray thee, sort thy heart to patience;

' These few days' wonder will be quickly worn.  
*Enter a Herald.*

*Her.* I summon your grace to his majesty's parliament, holden at Bury the first of this next month. [fore I]

*Glo.* And my consent ne'er ask'd herein be.  
This is close dealing.—Well, I will be there.

[Exit Herald.]  
My Nell, I take my leave :—and master she-

riff, [mission.  
Let not her penance exceed the king's com-

\* *Sher.* An't please your grace, here my commission stays :

' And Sir John Stanley is appointed now  
' To take her with him to the isle of Man.

\* *Glo.* Must you, Sir John, protect my lady here? [your grace.

\* *Stan.* So am I given in charge, may't please  
*Glo.* Entreat her not the worse, in that I pray

You use her well; the world may laugh again ||;  
And I may live to do you kindness, if

You do it her. And so, sir John, farewell.  
*Duch.* What gone, my lord; and bid me

not farewell? [speak.  
\* *Glo.* Witness my tears, I cannot stay to

[Exeunt GLOSTER and SERVANTS.]  
\* *Duch.* Art thou gone too? \* All comfort

go with thee!  
\* For none abides with me : my joy is—death;

\* Death, at whose name I oft have been afraid,  
\* Because I wish'd this world's eternity.—

\* Stanley, I prythee, go, and take me hence;  
\* I care not whither, for I beg no favour,

\* Only convey me where thou art commanded.  
\* *Stan.* Why, madam, that is to the isle of

Man;  
\* There to be used according to your state.

\* *Duch.* That's bad enough, for I am but  
reproach :

\* And shall I then be used reproachfully?  
\* *Stan.* Like to a duchess and duke Hum-

phrey's lady,  
\* According to that state you shall be used.

\* *Duch.* Sheriff, farewell, and better than  
I fare; [shame!

\* Although thou hast been conduct† of my  
\* *Sher.* It is my office; and, madam, pardon me.

\* *Duch.* Ay, ay, farewell; thy office is dis-  
charged.—

\* Come, Stanley, shall we go?  
\* *Stan.* Madam, your penance done, throw

off this sheet,  
\* And go we to attire you for our journey.

\* *Duch.* My shame will not be shifted with  
my sheet :

\* No, it will hang upon my richest robes,  
\* And shew itself, attire me how I can.

\* Go, lead the way; I long to see my prison,  
[Exeunt.]

\* Curse.

† Wrapped up in disgrace; alluding to the sheet of penance.

‡ Deep-fetched  
on me.

\$ Harm, mischief.

¶ For conductor.

|| i. e., The world may look again favourably

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *The Abbey at Bury.*

*Enter to the Parliament, King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, Cardinal BEAUFORT, SUFFOLK, YORK, BUCKINGHAM, and Others.*

*K. Hen.* I muse\*, my lord of Gloster is not come:

'Tis not his wont to be the hindmost man, Whate'er occasion keeps him from us now.

*Q. Mar.* Can you not see? or will you not observe

'The strangeness of his alter'd countenance?  
'With what a majesty he bears himself;  
'How insolent of late he is become,  
'How proud, peremptory, and unlike himself?  
'We know the time, since he was mild and affable;

'And, if we did but glance a far-off look,  
'Immediately he was upon his knee,  
'That all the court admired him for submission:  
'But meet him now, and, be it in the morn,  
'When every one will give the time of day,  
'He knits his brow, and shews an angry eye,  
'And passeth by with stiff unbowed knee,  
'Disdaining duty that to us belongs.

'Small curs are not regarded, when they grin:  
'But great men tremble when the lion roars;  
'And Humphrey is no little man in England.  
'First, note, that he is near you in descent;  
'And should you fall, he is the next will mount.  
'Me seemeth, then, it is no policy,—

'Respecting what a rancorous mind he bears,  
'And his advantage following your decease,—  
'That he should come about your royal person,  
'Or be admitted to your highness' council.  
'By flattery hath he won the commons' hearts;  
'And when he please to make commotion,  
'Tis to be fear'd, they all will follow him.

'Now 'tis the spring, and weeds are shallow-rooted;

[garden,  
'Suffer them now, and they'll o'ergrow the  
'And choke the herbs for war of husbandry.  
'The reverent care, I bear unto my lord,  
'Made me collect these dangers in the duke.  
'If it be found, call it a woman's fear;  
'Which fear if better reasons can supplant,  
'I will subscribe and say—I wrong'd the duke.  
'My lord of Suffolk,—Buckingham,—and  
'Reprove my allegation, if you can; [York,—  
'Or else conclude my words effectual.

*Suf.* Well hath your highness seen into this duke;

'And, had I first been put to speak my mind,  
I think, I should have told your grace's tale.  
'The duchess, by his subornation,  
Upon my life, began her devilish practices:  
'Or if he were not privy to those faults,  
'Yet, by repute of his high descent\$,  
'(As next the king, he was successive heir,)  
'And such high vaunts of his nobility,  
'Did instigate the bedlam brain-sick duchess,

\* By wicked means to frame our sovereign's fall. [deep;

Smooth runs the water, where the brook is  
\* And in his simple show he harbours treason.  
The fox barks not, when he would steal the  
No, no, my sovereign; Gloster is a man [lamb.  
Unsounded yet, and full of deep deceit.

*Car.* Did he not, contrary to form of law,  
\* Devise strange deaths for small offences done?

*York.* And did he not, in his protectorship,  
\* Levy great sums of money through the realm,  
\* For soldiers' pay in France, and never sent it?  
\* By means whereof, the towns each day re-  
volved. [unknown,

*Buck.* Tut! these are petty faults to faults  
\* Which time will bring to light in smooth  
duke Humphrey. [have of us,

*K. Hen.* My lords, at once: The care you  
\* To mow down thorns that would annoy our  
foot, [science?

\* Is worthy praise: But shall I speak my con-  
\* Our kinsman Gloster is as innocent

\* From meaning treason to our royal person,  
\* As is the sucking lamb, or harmless dove:

\* The duke is virtuous, mild; and too well  
given,

\* To dream on evil, or to work my downfall.  
\* *Q. Mar.* Ah, what's more dangerous than  
this fond affiance! [row'd,

\* Seems he a dove? his feathers are but bor-  
\* For he's disposed as the hateful raven.

\* Is he a lamb? his skin is surely lent him,  
\* For he's inclined as are the ravenous wolves.

\* Who cannot steal a shape, that means deceit?  
\* Take heed, my lord; the welfare of us all

\* Hangs on the cutting short that fraudulent man.  
*Enter SOMERSET.*

\* *Som.* All health unto my gracious sove-  
reign! [news from France?

*K. Hen.* Welcome, lord Somerset. What  
\* *Som.* That all your interest in those terri-  
Is utterly bereft you; all is lost. [tories

*K. Hen.* Cold news, lord Somerset: But  
God's will be done! [France

*York.* Cold news for me; for I had hope of  
As firmly as I hope for fertile England.

\* Thus are my blossoms blasted in the bud,  
\* And caterpillars eat my leaves away:

\* But I will remedy this gear ere long,  
\* Or sell my title for a glorious grave. [Aside.

*Enter GLOSTER.*

\* *Glo.* All happiness unto my lord the king!  
Pardon, my liege, that I have staid so long.

*Suf.* Nay, Gloster, know, that thou art  
come too soon,

'Unless thou wert more loyal than thou art:  
I do arrest thee of high treason here.

*Glo.* Well, Suffolk, yet thou shalt not see  
me blush,

Nor change my countenance for this arrest;  
\* A heart unspotted is not easily daunted.

\* The purest spring is not so free from mud,

\* Wonder. † *i. e.*, Assembly by observation. ‡ Foolish. § *i. e.*, Valuing  
himself on his high descent. || Gear was a general word for things or matters.



\* As I am clear from treason to my sovereign :  
Who can accuse me ? wherein am I guilty ?

*York.* 'Tis thought, my lord, that you took  
bribes of France,

And, being protector, stayed the soldiers' pay ;  
By means whereof, his highness hath lost  
France. [that think it ?

*Glo.* Is it but thought so ? What are they  
I never robb'd the soldiers of their pay,  
Nor ever had one penny bribe from France.  
So help me God, as I have watch'd the  
night, — [England !

\* Ay, night by night, — in studying good for  
That doth that e'er I wrested from the king,  
Or any groat I hoarded to my use,  
Be brought against me at my trial day !

\* No ! many a pound of mine own proper store,  
Because I would not tax the needy commons,  
Have I disbursed to the garrisons,  
And never ask'd for restitution. [so much.

\* *Car.* It serves you well, my lord, to say  
\* *Glo.* I say no more than truth, so help me  
God !

*York.* In your protectorship, you did devise  
Strange tortures for offenders, never heard of,  
That Henry was defamed by tyranny.

*Glo.* Why, 'tis well known, that whiles I  
was protector,

Pity was all the fault that was in me ;

\* For I should melt at an offender's tears.  
\* And lowly words were ransom for their  
\* Unless it were a bloody murderer, [fault.  
\* Or foul felonious thief that fleeced poor pas-  
sengers,

\* I never gave them condign punishment :  
\* Murder, indeed, that bloody sin, I tortured  
\* Above the felon, or what trespass else.

*Suf.* My lord, these faults are easy \*, quickly  
answer'd :

\* But mightier crimes are laid unto your charge,  
\* Whereof you cannot easily purge yourself.

\* I do arrest you in his highness' name ;  
\* And here commit you to my lord cardinal  
\* To keep, until your further time of trial.

\* *K. Hen.* My lord of Gloster, 'tis my spe-  
cial hope,

\* That you will clear yourself from all suspects ;  
My conscience tells me, you are innocent.

*Glo.* Ah, gracious lord, these days are dan-  
\* Virtue is choked with foul ambition, [gerous ;  
\* And charity chased hence by rancour's hand ;  
\* Foul subornation is predominant,  
\* And equity exiled your highness' land.

\* I know, their plot is to have my life ;  
\* And, if my death might make this island hap-  
\* And prove the period of their tyranny, [py  
\* I would expend it with all willingness :

\* But mine is made the prologue to their play ;  
\* For thousands more, that yet suspect no peril,  
\* Will not conclude their plotted tragedy.

\* Beaufort's red sparkling eyes blab his heart's  
malice,

\* And Suffolk's cloudy brow his stormy hate ;  
\* Sharp Buckingham unburdens with his tongue

\* The envious load that lies upon his heart ;  
\* And dogged York, that reaches at the moon,

\* For easily.

† For accusation.

‡ Dearest.

2 C

\* Whose overweening arm I have pluck'd back,

\* By false accuse † doth level at my life : —

\* And you, my sovereign lady, with the rest,

\* Censureless have laid disgraces on my head,

\* And, with your best endeavour, have stirr'd up

\* My life ‡ I liege to be mine enemy : —

\* Ay, all of you have laid your heads together,

\* Myself had notice of your conventicles,

\* I shall not want false witness to condemn me,

\* Nor store of treasons to augment my guilt ;

\* The ancient proverb will be well affected, —

A staff is quickly found to beat a dog.

\* *Car.* My liege, his railing is intolerable :

\* If those that care to keep your royal person

\* From treason's secret knife, and traitors' rage,

\* Be thus upbraided, chid, and rated at,

\* And the offender granted scope of speech,

\* 'Twill make them cool in zeal unto your grace :

*Suf.* Hath he not twit our sovereign lady  
here, [couch'd,

\* With ignominious words, though clerksly

\* As if she had suborned some to swear

\* False allegations to o'erthrow his state ?

\* *Q. Mar.* But I can give the loser leave to  
chide. [indeed ; —

*Glo.* Far truer spoke, than meant : I lose  
Beshrew the winners, for they play'd me

false ! [speak.

\* And well such losers may have leave to  
*Buck.* He'll wrest the sense, and hold us

here all day : —

\* Lord cardinal, he is your prisoner.

\* *Car.* Sirs, take away the duke, and guard  
him sure. [crutch,

*Glo.* Ah, thus king Henry throws away his  
Before his legs be firm to bear his body :

\* Thus is the shepherd beaten from thy side,

\* And wolves are quarling who shall gnaw thee  
first.

\* Ah, that my fear were false ! ah, that it were !

\* For, good king Henry, thy decay I fear.

[*Exeunt Attendants, with GLOSTER.*

*K. Hen.* My lords, what to your wisdoms  
seemeth best,

Do, or undo, as if ourself were here.

\* *Q. Mar.* What, will your highness leave the  
parliament ? [with grief,

*K. Hen.* Ay, Margaret ; my heart is drown'd

\* Whose flood begins to flow within mine eyes ;

\* My body round engirt with misery ;

\* For what's more miserable than discontent ?

\* Ah, uncle Humphrey ! in thy face I see

\* The map of honour, truth, and loyalty ;

\* And yet, good Humphrey, is the hour to  
come, [faith,

\* That e'er I proved thee false, or fear'd thy

\* What low'ring star now envies thy estate.

\* That these great lords, and Margaret our  
queen,

\* Do seek subversion of thy harmless life ?

\* Thou never didst them wrong, nor no man  
wrong ;

\* And as the butcher takes away the calf,

\* And binds the wretch, and beats it when it  
strays,

\* Bearing it to the bloody slaughter-house ;

- \* Even so, remorseless, have they borne him hence.
- \* And as the dam runs lowing up and down,
- \* Looking the way her harmless young one went, [loss;
- \* And can do nought but wail her darling's
- \* Even so myself bewails good Gloster's case,
- \* With sad unhelpful tears; and with dimm'd eyes
- \* Look after him, and cannot do him good;
- \* So mighty are his vowed enemies. [groan,
- \* His fortunes I will weep; and, 'twixt each
- \* Say—*Who's a traitor*, Gloster *he is none*.

[Exit.

- \* *Q. Mar.* Free lords, cold snow melts with the sun's hot beams.
- \* Henry my lord is cold in great affairs,
- \* Too full of foolish pity; and Gloster's show
- \* Beguiles him, as the mournful crocodile
- \* With sorrow snares relenting passengers;
- \* Or as the snake, roll'd in a flowering bank\*,
- \* With shining checker'd slough†, doth sting a
- \* That, for the beauty, thinks it excellent. [child,
- \* Believe me, lords, were none more wise than I, [good,)
- \* (And yet, herein, I judge mine own wit
- \* 'This Gloster should be quickly rid the world,
- \* 'To rid us from the fear we have of him.

- \* *Car.* That he should die, is worthy policy;
- \* But yet we want a colour for his death:
- \* 'Tis meet, he be condemn'd by course of law.
- \* *Suf.* But, in my mind, that were no policy:
- \* The king will labour still to save his life;
- \* The commons haply‡ rise to save his life;
- \* And yet we have but trivial argument,
- \* More than mistrust, that shows him worthy death. [him die.

- \* *York.* So that, by this, you would not have
- \* *Suf.* Ah, York, no man alive so fair as I.
- \* *York.* 'Tis York that hath more reason for his death.— [Suffolk,—
- \* But, my lord cardinal, and you, my lord of
- \* Say as you think, and speak it from your souls,
- \* Wer't not all one, an empty eagle were set
- \* To guard the chicken from a hungry kite,
- \* As place duke Humphrey for the king's protector? [of death.

- \* *Q. Mar.* So the poor chicken should be sure
- \* *Suf.* Madam, 'tis true: And wer't not madness then

- \* 'To make the fox surveyor of the fold?
- \* Who being accused a crafty murderer,
- \* His guilt should be but idly posted over,
- \* Because his purpose is not executed.
- \* No; let him die, in that he is a fox,
- \* By nature proved an enemy to the flock,
- \* Before his chaps be stain'd with crimson blood;
- \* As Humphrey, proved by reasons, to my liege.
- \* And do not stand on quilllets, how to slay him:
- \* Be it by gins, by snares, by subtilty,
- \* Sleeping or waking, 'tis no matter how,
- \* So he be dead; for that is good deceit
- \* Which makes‡ him first, that first intends
- \* Deceit.

- \* *Q. Mar.* Thrice noble Suffolk, 'tis resolutely spoke. [done;

- \* *Suf.* Not resolute, except so much were
- \* For things are often spoke, and seldom
- \* meant: [tongue,—

- \* But, that my heart accordeth with my
- \* Seeing the deed is meritorious,
- \* And to preserve my sovereign from his foe,—
- \* Say but the word, and I will be his priest.

- \* *Car.* But I would have him dead, my lord of Suffolk,

- \* Ere you can take due orders for a priest:
- \* Say, you consent, and censure well the deed
- \* And I'll provide his executioner,

- \* I tender so the safety of my liege. [doing.
- \* *Suf.* Here is my hand, the deed is worthy

- \* *Q. Mar.* And so say I. [spoke it,

- \* *York.* And I: and now we three have
- \* It skills not greatly|| who impugns our doom.

Enter a Messenger. [again.

- \* *Mess.* Great lords, from Ireland am I come
- \* 'To signify—that rebels there are up,

- \* And put the Englishmen unto the sword:

- \* Send succours, lords, and stop the rage
- \* betime,

- \* Before the wound do grow incurable;

- \* For, being green, there is great hope of help.

- \* *Car.* A breach, that craves a quick expedient ¶ stop!

- \* What counsel give you in this weighty cause?

- \* *York.* That Somerset be sent as regent
- \* thither:

- \* 'Tis meet, that lucky ruler be employ'd;

- \* Witness the fortune he hath had in France.

- \* *Som.* If York, with all his far-fet \*\* policy,

- \* Had been the regent there instead of me,

- \* He never would have staid in France so long.

- \* *York.* No, not to lose it all, as thou hast
- \* done:

- \* I rather would have lost my life betimes,

- \* Than bring a burden of dishonour home,

- \* By staying there so long, till all were lost.

- \* Show me one scar character'd on thy skin:

- \* Men's flesh preserved so whole, do seldom
- \* win. [a raging fire,

- \* *Q. Mar.* Nay then, this spark will prove

- \* If wind and fuel be brought to feed it
- \* with:— [still:—

- \* No more, good York;—sweet Somerset, be

- \* Thy fortune, York, hadst thou been regent
- \* there, [his.

- \* Might happily have proved far worse than

- \* *York.* What, worse than naught? nay, then

- \* a shame take all! [est shame I

- \* *Som.* And, in the number, thee, that wish-

- \* *Car.* My lord of York, try what your fortune
- \* is,

- \* The uncivil Kernes of Ireland are in arms,

- \* And temper clay with blood of Englishmen:

- \* To Ireland will you lead a band of men,

- \* Collected choicely, from each county some,

- \* And try your hap against the Irishmen?

- \* *York.* I will, my lord, so please his majes-

- \* *Suf.* Why, our authority is his consent; [ty

- \* And, what we do establish, he confirms:

\* *i. e.* In the flowers growing on a bank.

† It is of no importance.

‡ Skin.

¶ Expeditions.

‡ Perhaps.

§ Confounds.

\*\* Far-fetched.

Then, noble York, take thou this task in hand.

*York.* I am content: Provide me soldiers, lords,

Whiles I take order for mine own affairs.

*Suf.* A charge, lord York, that I will see perform'd. [phrey.

But now return we to the false duke Hum-

*Car.* No more of him; for I will deal with him;

That, henceforth, he shall trouble us no more.

And so break off; the day is almost spent:

Lord Suffolk, you and I must talk of that event. [days,

*York.* My lord of Suffolk, within fourteen

At Bristol I expect my soldiers;

For there I'll ship them all for Ireland.

*Suf.* I'll see it truly done, my lord of York.

[*Exeunt all but YORK.*

*York.* Now, York, or never, steel thy fearful thoughts,

And change misdoubt to resolution:

\* Be that thou hopest to be; or what thou art

\* Resign to death, it is not worth the enjoying:

\* Let pale-faced fear keep with the mean-born

\* And find no harbour in a royal heart. [man,

\* Faster than spring-time showers, comes thought on thought:

\* And not a thought, but thinks on dignity. [der,

\* My brain, more busy than the labouring spi-

\* Weaves tedious snares to trap mine enemies.

\* Well, nobles, well, 'tis politically done,

\* To send me packing with an host of men:

\* I fear me, you but warm the starved snake,

\* Who, cherish'd in your breasts, will sting your hearts. [me:

\* 'Twas men I lack'd, and you will give them

\* I take it kindly; yet, be well assured

\* You put sharp weapons in a madman's hands,

\* Whiles I in Ireland nourish a mighty band,

\* I will stir up in England some black storm,

\* Shall blow ten thousand souls to heaven, or hell:

\* And this fell tempest shall not cease to rage

\* Until the golden circuit on my head,

\* Like to the glorious sun's transparent beams,

\* Do calm the fury of this mad-bred flaw\*.

\* And, for a minister of my intent,

\* I have seduced a head strong Kentishman,

\* John Cade of Ashford,

\* To make commotion, as full well he can,

\* Under the title of John Mortimer.

\* In Ireland have I seen this stubborn Cade

\* Oppose himself against a troop of Kenes†;

\* And fought so long, till that his thighs with darts

\* Were almost like a sharp †ed porcupine:

\* And, in the end being †ed, I have seen

\* Caper upright like a wild Morisco†, [him

\* Shaking the bloody darts, as he his bells.

\* Full often, like a shag-haired crafty Kerne,

\* Hath he conversed with the enemy;

\* And undiscovered come to me again,

\* And given me notice of their villanies.

\* This devil here shall be my substitute;

\* For that John Mortimer, which now is dead,

\* In face, in gait, in speech, he doth resemble:

\* By this I shall perceive the commons' mind,

\* How they affect the horse and chain of York.

\* Say, he be taken, rack'd, and tortured:

\* I know, no pain, they can inflict upon him,

\* Will make him say—I moved him to those arms.

\* Say, that he thrive, (as 'tis great like he will),

\* Why, then from Ireland come I with my strength, [sow'd:

\* And reap the harvest which that rascal

\* For, Humphrey being dead, as he shall be,

\* And Henry put apart, the next for me. [*Exit.*

SCENE II. Bury. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter certain Murderers, hastily.*

1 *Mur.* Run to my lord of Suffolk; let him know,

\* We have despatched the duke, as he com-

2 *Mur.* O, that it were to do!—What have we done?

\* Didst ever hear a man so penitent?

*Enter SUFFOLK.*

1 *Mur.* Here comes my lord.

*Suf.* Now, sirs, have you

Despatch'd this thing?

1 *Mur.* Ay, my good lord, he's dead.

*Suf.* Why, that's well said. Go, get you to my house;

\* I will reward you for this venturous deed.

\* The king and all the peers are here at hand:—

\* Have you laid fair the bed? are all things well,

\* According as I gave directions?

1 *Mur.* 'Tis, my good lord.

*Suf.* Away, be gone! [*Exeunt Murderers.*

*Enter KING HENRY, QUEEN MARGARET, Cardinal BEAUFORT, SOMERSET, Lords, and Others.*

*K. Hen.* Go, call our uncle to our presence straight:

\* Say, we intend to try his grace to-day,

\* If he be guilty, as 'tis published.

*Suf.* I'll call him presently, my noble lord. [*Exit.*

*K. Hen.* Lords, take your places;—And, I pray you all,

\* Proceed no straiter 'gainst our uncle Gloster,

\* Than from true evidence, of good esteem,

\* He be approved in practice culpable.

\* *Q. Mar.* God forbid any malice should prevail,

\* That faultless may condemn a nobleman!

\* Pray God, he may acquit him of suspicion!

\* *K. Hen.* I thank thee, Margaret; these words content me much.—

*Re-enter SUFFOLK.*

\* How now? why look'st thou pale? why tremblest thou? [*Suffolk?*

\* Where is our uncle? what is the matter,

*Suf.* Dead in his bed, my lord; Gloster is

\* *Q. Mar.* Marry, God forefend! [*Dead.*

\* *Car.* God's secret judgment:—I did dream to-night, [*a word.*

\* The duke was dumb, and could not speak

[*The King swoons.*

\* A violent gust of wind.

† Irish foot-soldiers, light-armed.

‡ A Moor in a morris dance.



- \* *Q. Mar.* How fares my lord?—Help,  
lords! the king is dead. [noise.]
- \* *Som.* Rear up his body; wring him by the
- \* *Q. Mar.* Run, go, help, help!—O, Henry,  
ope thine eyes! [patient.]
- Suf.* He doth revive again;—Madam, be
- \* *K. Hen.* O heavenly God!
- \* *Q. Mar.* How fares my gracious lord?
- Suf.* Comfort, my sovereign! gracious  
Henry, comfort! [comfort me?]
- K. Hen.* What, doth my lord of Suffolk  
Came he right now \* to sing a raven's note,  
\* Whose dismal tune bereft my vital powers;  
And thinks he, that the chirping of a wren,  
\* By crying comfort from a hollow breast,  
\* Can chase away the first-conceived sound?  
\* Hide not thy poison with such sugar'd words,  
\* Lay not thy hands on me; forbear, I say;  
\* Their touch affrights me, as a serpent's sting.  
Thou baleful messenger, out of my sight!  
\* Upon thy eye-balls murderous tyranny  
\* Sits in grim majesty, to fright the world.  
\* Look not upon me, for thine eyes are wound-  
ing:—
- \* Yet do not go away;—Come, basilisk,  
\* And kill the innocent gazer with thy sight:  
\* For in the shade of death I shall find joy;  
\* In life, but double death, now Gloster's dead.
- Q. Mar.* Why do you rate my lord of Suf-  
folk thus?
- \* Although the duke was enemy to him,  
\* Yet he, most christian-like, laments his death:  
\* And for myself,—foe as he was to me,  
\* Might liquid tears, or heart-offending groans,  
\* Or blood-consuming sighs recall his life,  
\* I would be blind with weeping, sick with  
groans, [sighs.]
- \* Look pale as primrose, with blood-drinking  
\* And all to have the noble duke alive. [me?]
- \* What know I how the world may deem of  
\* For it is known, we were but hollow friends;  
\* It may be judged, I made the duke away:  
\* So shall my name with slander's tongue be  
wounded, [proach.]
- \* And princes' courts be fill'd with my re-  
\* This get I by his death: Ah me, unhappy!  
\* To be a queen, and crown'd with infamy!
- \* *K. Hen.* Ah, woe is me for Gloster,  
wretched man!
- Q. Mar.* Be woe for me t, more wretched  
than he is.
- What dost thou turn away, and hide thy face?  
I am no loathsome leper, look on me.
- \* What, art thou, like the adder, waxen deaf?  
\* Be poisonous too, and kill thy forlorn queen.
- \* Is all thy comfort shut in Gloster's tomb?  
\* Why, then dame Margaret was ne'er thy joy:  
\* Erect his statue then, and worship it,  
\* And make my image but an alehouse sign,  
Was I, for this, nigh wrecked upon the sea;  
\* And twice by awkward wind from Eng-  
land's bank
- \* Drove back again unto my native clime?  
What boded this, but well-forewarning wind  
Did seem to say,—Seek not a scorpion's nest,  
\* Nor set no footing on this unkind shore?
- \* What did I then, but cursed the gentle gusts,  
\* And he that loosed them from their brazen  
caves; [blessed shore,]
- \* And bid them blow towards England's  
\* Or turn our stern upon a dreadful rock?
- \* Yet Æolus would not be a murderer,  
\* But left that hateful office unto thee:
- \* The pretty vaulting sea refused to drown me;  
\* Knowing, that thou wouldst have me drown'd  
on shore, [ness:]
- \* With tears as salt as sea through thy unkind-  
\* The splitting rocks cow'rd in the sinking  
sands, [sides;]
- \* And would not dash me with their ragged  
\* Because thy flinty heart, more hard than  
\* Might in thy palace perish Margaret. [they,]
- \* As far as I could ken thy chalky cliffs,  
\* When from the shore the tempest beat us  
back,
- \* I stood upon the hatches in the storm:  
\* And when the dusky sky began to rob  
\* My earnest-gaping sight of thy land's view,  
\* I took a costly jewel from my neck,—  
\* A heart it was, bound in with diamonds,—  
\* And threw it towards thy land;—the sea  
received it;
- \* And so, I wished, thy body might my heart:  
\* And even with this, I lost fair England's  
view, [heart;]
- \* And bid mine eyes be packing with my  
\* And called them blind and dusky spectacles,  
\* For losing ken of Albion's wished coast.
- \* How often have I tempted Suffolk's tongue  
\* (The agent of thy foul inconstancy,)  
\* To sit and witch me, as Ascanius did,  
\* When he to madding Dido, would unfold  
\* His father's acts, commenced in burning  
Troy? [like him?]
- \* Am not I witch'd like her? or thou not false  
\* Ah me, I can no more! Die, Margaret!
- \* For Henry weeps, that thou dost live so long.
- Noise within. Enter WARWICK and SALISBURY. The Commons press to the door.*
- \* *War.* It is reported, mighty sovereign,  
\* That good duke Humphrey traitorously is  
murdered
- \* By Suffolk and the cardinal Beaufort's means.
- \* The commons, like an angry hive of bees,  
\* That want their leader, scatter up and down,  
\* And care not who they sting in his revenge.  
\* Myself have calm'd their spleenful mutiny,  
\* Until they hear the order of his death.
- \* *K. Hen.* That he is dead, good Warwick,  
'tis too true;
- But how he died, God knows, not Henry:
- \* Enter his chamber, view his breathless  
corpse,
- \* And comment then upon his sudden death.
- War.* That I shall do, my liege:—Stay  
Salisbury,
- With the rude multitude, till I return.
- [WARWICK goes into an inner Room  
and SALISBURY retires.]
- \* *K. Hen.* O Thou that judgest all things, stay  
my thoughts:
- \* My thoughts, that labour to persuade my soul

Some violent hands were laid on Humphrey's life!

- \* If my suspect be false, forgive me, God;
- \* For judgment only doth belong to thee!
- \* Fain would I go to chafe his paly lips
- \* With twenty thousand kisses, and to drain
- \* Upon his face an ocean of salt tears;
- \* To tell my love unto his dumb deaf trunk,
- \* And with my fingers feel his hand unfeeling;
- \* But all in vain are these mean obsequies;
- \* And, to survey his dead and earthy image,
- \* What were it but to make my sorrow greater?

*The jolding Doors of an inner Chamber are thrown open, and GLOSTER is discovered dead in his Bed; WARWICK and Others standing by it.*

- \* *War.* Come hither, gracious sovereign, view this body. [is made:]
- \* *K. Hen.* That is to see how deep my grave
- \* For, with his soul, fled all my worldly solace;
- \* For seeing him, I see my life in death.\*
- \* *War.* As surely as my soul intends to live
- \* With that dread King that took our state upon him

- \* To free us from his Father's wrathful curse,
- \* I do believe that violent hands were laid
- \* Upon the life of this thrice-famed duke.

*Suf.* A dreadful oath, sworn with a solemn tongue! [vow?]

- \* What instance gives lord Warwick for his

*War.* See how the blood is settled in his  
Of late have I seen a timely-parted ghost, [face:]  
Of ashy semblance, meagre, pale, and bloodless,

- \* Being all descended to the labouring heart;
- \* Who, in the conflict that it holds with death,
- \* Attracts the same for aidance 'gainst the enemy; [returneth]

Which with the heart there cools and ne'er  
To blush and beautify the cheek again.

- \* But, see, his face is black, and full of blood;
- \* His eye-balls further out than when he lived,
- \* Staring full ghastly like a strangled man:
- \* His hair uprear'd, his nostrils stretch'd with struggling; [grasp'd]

His hands abroad display'd, as one that  
And tugg'd for life, and was by strength subdued. [ing;]

- \* Look on the sheets, his hair, you see, is stick-
- \* His well-proportioned beard made rough and rugged,

Like to the summer's corn by tempest lodged.  
It cannot be, but he was murder'd here;

- \* The least of all these signs were probable.
- \* *Suf.* Why, Warwick, who should do the duke to death?

Myself, and Beaufort, had him in protection;  
And we, I hope, sir, are no murderers.

- \* *War.* But both of you were vow'd duke Humphrey's foes; [keep:]

And you, forsooth, had the good duke to  
'Tis like, you would not feast him like a  
And 'tis well seen he found an enemy. [friend;]

- \* *Q. Mar.* Then you, belike, suspect these noblemen

As guilty of duke Humphrey's timeless death.

*War.* Who finds the heiter dead, and bleeding fresh,  
And sees fast by a butcher with an axe,  
But will suspect, 'twas he that made the slaughter?

Who finds the partridge in the puttock's nest,  
But may imagine how the bird was dead,  
Although the kite soar with unbloodied beak?  
Even so suspicious is this tragedy.

- \* *Q. Mar.* Are you the butcher, Suffolk; where's your knife? lons?

*Is Beaufort term'd a kite? where are his t-*  
*Suf.* I wear no knife, to slaughter sleeping men;

But here's a vengeful sword, rusted with ease,  
That shall be scoured in his rancorous heart,  
That slanders me with murder's crimson badge.  
Say, if thou darest, proud lord of Warwickshire,  
That I am faulty in duke Humphrey's death.

[*Exeunt Cardinal, Som., and Others.*]

*War.* What dares not Warwick, if false  
Suffolk dare him? [spirit,]

*Q. Mar.* He dares not calm his continual  
Nor cease to be an arrogant controller,  
Though Suffolk dare him twenty thousand times, [I say;]

*War.* Madam, be still; with reverence may  
For every word you speak in his behalf,  
Is slander to your royal dignity.

*Suf.* Blunt-witted lord, ignoble in demean-  
If ever lady wrong'd her lord so much, [our!]  
Thy mother took into her blameful bed  
Some stern untutor'd churl, and noble stock  
Was graft with crab tree slip; whose fruit thou  
And never of the Nevils' noble race. [art,]

*War.* But that the guilt of murder bucklers thee,

And I should rob the deathsman of his fee,  
Quitting thee thereby of ten thousand shames,  
And that my sovereign's presence makes me mild,

I would, false murderous coward, on thy knee  
Make thee beg pardon for thy passed speech,  
And say it was thy mother that thou meant'st,  
That thou thyself wast born in bastardy:  
And, after all this fearful homage done,  
Give thee thy hire, and send thy soul to hell,  
Pernicious bloodsucker of sleeping men!

*Suf.* Thou shalt be waking, while I shed thy blood,

If from this presence thou darest go with me.

*War.* Away even now, or I will drag thee hence; [thee,]

- \* Unworthy though thou art, I'll cope with
- \* And do some service to duke Humphrey's ghost.

[*Exeunt SUFFOLK and WARWICK.*]

- \* *K. Hen.* What stronger breast-plate than a heart untainted?

Thrice is he arm'd, that hath his quarrel just;  
And he but naked, though lock'd up in steel,  
Whose conscience with injustice is corrupted.

[*A noise within.*]  
*Q. Mar.* What noise is this?

\* i. e., I see my life destroyed or endangered by his death. + A body become inanimate in the common course of nature, to which violence has not brought a timeless end.

*Re-enter SUFFOLK and WARWICK, with their Weapons drawn.*

*K. Hen.* Why, how now, lords! your wrathful weapons drawn

Here in our presence? dare you be so bold? Why, what tumultuous clamour have we here?

*Suf.* The traitorous Warwick, with the men Set all upon me, mighty sovereign. [of Bury, Noise of a Crowd within. *Re-enter SALISBURY.*

*Sal.* Sirs, stand apart; the king shall know your mind.—

[*Speaking to those within.*

Dread lord, the commons send you word by me, Unless false Suffolk straight be done to death, Or banish'd fair England's territories,

'They will by violence tear him from your palace, [death,

\* And torture him with grievous ling'ring  
They say by him the good duke Humphrey died; [death;

'They say in him they fear your highness'

'And mere instinct of love, and loyalty,—

'Free from a stubborn opposite intent,

'As being thought to contradict your liking,—

'Makes them thus forward in his banishment.

\* They say, in care of your most royal person,

\* That if your highness should intend to sleep,

\* And charge that no man should disturb your

\* In pain of your dislike, or pain of death; [rest,

\* Yet notwithstanding such a strait edict,

\* Were there a serpent seen, with forked

\* That silyglided toward your majesty, [tongue,

\* It were but necessary you were waked;

\* Lest, being suffer'd in that harmful slumber,

\* The mortal worm \* might make the sleep eternal:

\* And therefore do they cry, though you forbid,

\* That they will guard you, whe'r you will, or

\* From such fell serpents as false Suffolk is; [no,

\* With whose envenomed and fatal sting,

\* Your loving uncle, twenty times his worth,

\* They say, is shamefully bereft of life.

Commons. [*Within.*] An answer from the king, my lord of Salisbury. [hinds,

*Suf.* 'Tis like, the commons, rude unpolish'd Could send such message to their sovereign:

But you, my lord, were glad to be employ'd,

To show how quaint an orator you are:

But all the honour Salisbury hath won,

Is—that he was the lord ambassador,

Sent from a sort of tinkers to the king.

Commons. [*Within.*] An answer from the king, or we'll all break in. [from me,

*K. Hen.* Go, Salisbury, and tell them all

'I thank them for their tender loving care:

'And had I not been 'cited so by them,

'Yet did I purpose as they do entreat;

'For sure, my thoughts do hourly prophesy

Mischance unto my state by Suffolk's means.

'And therefore,—by His majesty I swear,

Whose far unworthy deputy I am,—

He shall not breathe infection in this air;

But three days longer, on the pain of death.

[*Exit SALISBURY.*

*Q. Mar.* O Henry, let me plead for gentle Suffolk! [gentle Suffolk.

*K. Hen.* Ungentle queen, to call him

'No more, I say; if thou dost plead for him,

'Thou wilt but add increase unto my wrath.

'Had I but said, I would have kept my word;

'But, when I swear, it is irrevocable:—

\* If, after three days' space, thou here be'st

\* On any ground that I am ruler of, [found

\* The world shall not be ransom for thy life.

'Come Warwick, come good Warwick, go with me;

'I have great matters to impart to thee.

[*Exit King HENRY, WARWICK, Lords, &c.*

*Q. Mar.* Mischance, and sorrow, go along with you!

'Heart's discontent, and sour affliction,

'Be playfellows to keep you company!

'There's two of you; the devil make a third!

'And threefold vengeance tend upon your steps!

\* *Suf.* Cease, gentle queen, these execrations,

\* And let thy Suffolk take his heavy leave.

*Q. Mar.* Fie, coward woman, and soft-hearted wretch!

'Hast thou not spirit to curse thine enemies?

*Suf.* A plague upon them! wherefore should I curse them? [groan,

Would curses kill, as doth the mandrake's

'I would invent as bitter-searching terms,

'As curst, as harsh, and horrible to hear,

'Deliver'd strongly through my fixed teeth,

'With full as many signs of deadly hate,

'As lean-faced envy in her loathsome cave:

My tongue should stumble in mine earnest words:

Mine eye- should sparkle like the beaten flint;

My hair be fix'd on end, as one distract;

Ay, every joint should seem to cense and ban;

And even now my burden'd heart would break.

Should I not curse them. Poison be their drink! [taste!

Gall, worse than gall, the daintiest that they

Their sweetest shade, a grove of cypress trees!

Their chiefest prospect, murdering basilisks!

Their softest touch as smart as lizards' stings!

Their music, frightful as the serpent's hiss;

And boding screech-owls make the concert

All the foul terrors in dark-seated hell— [tull.

*Q. Mar.* Enough, sweet Suffolk; thou torment'st thyself; [glass,

\* And these dread curses—like the sun 'gains

\* Or like an overcharged gun,—recoil,

\* And turn the force of them upon thyself.

*Suf.* You bade me ban, and will you bid me leave?

Now, by the ground that I am banish'd from

Well could I curse away a winter's night,

Though standing naked on a mountain top,

Where biting cold would never let grass grow

And think it but a minute spent in sport.

\* *Q. Mar.* O, let me entreat thee, cease Give me thy hand,

\* That I may dew it with my mournful tears

\* Deadly serpent.

+ Dexterous.

‡ A company.

§ *i. e.*, He shall not contaminate this air with his infected breath.

|| Curse.



\* Nor let the rain of heaven wet this place,  
 \* To wash away my woful monuments.  
 O, could this kiss be printed in thy hand;  
     *[Kisses his hand.]*  
 \* That thou mightst think upon these by the  
     seal,                      *[for thee!]*  
 \* Through whom a thousand sighs are breathed  
 \* So, get thee gone, that I may know my grief;  
 \* 'Tis but surmised whilst thou art standing by,  
 \* As one that surfeits thinking on a want.  
 \* I will repeat thee, or, be well assured,  
 \* Adventure to be banished myself;  
 \* And banished I am, if but from thee.  
 \* Go, speak not to me; even now be gone.—  
 \* O, go not yet!—Even thus two friends con-  
     demn'd                      *[leaves,*  
 \* Embrace, and kiss, and take ten thousand  
 \* Loather a hundred times to part than die.  
 \* Yet now farewell; and farewell life with thee!  
*Suf.* Thus is poor Suffolk ten times banish'd,  
 Once by the king, and three times thrice by thee.  
 \* 'Tis not the land I care for, wert thou hence;  
 \* A wilderness is populous enough,  
 \* So Suffolk had thy heavenly company:  
 \* For where thou art, there is the world itself,  
 \* With every several pleasure in the world;  
 \* And where thou art not, desolation.  
 \* I can no more:—Live thou to joy thy life;  
 \* Myself no joy in nought, but that thou liv'st.  
     *Enter VAUX.*  
 \* *Q. Mar.* Whither goes Vaux so fast? what  
     news, I pry'thee?  
 \* *Vaux.* To signify unto his majesty,  
 That cardinal Beaufort is at point of death:  
 \* For suddenl'ya grievous sickness took him;*[air,*  
 \* That makes him gasp and stare, and catch the  
 \* Blaspheming God, and cursing men on earth.  
 \* Sometime he talks as if duke Humphrey's  
     ghost                      *[king.]*  
 \* Were by his side; sometime he calls the  
 And whispers to his pillow, as to him,  
 \* The secrets of his overcharged soul:  
 \* And I am sent to tell his majesty,  
 \* That even now he cries aloud for him.  
 \* *Q. Mar.* Go, tell this heavy message to the  
     king.                      *[Exit VAUX.]*  
 Ah me! what is this world? what news are  
     these?  
 \* But wherefore grieve I at an hour's poor loss,  
 \* Omitting Suffolk's exile, my soul's treasure?  
 \* Why only, Suffolk, mourn I not for thee,  
 \* And with the southern clouds contend in tears;  
 \* Theirs for the earth's increase, mine for my  
     sorrows?                      *[is coming;]*  
 \* Now, get thee hence: The king, thou know'st,  
 \* If thou be found by me, thou art but dead.  
 \* *Suf.* If I depart from thee, I cannot live:  
 \* And in thy sight to die, what were it else,  
 \* But like a pleasant slumber in thy lap?  
 \* Here could I breathe my soul into the air,  
 \* As mild and gentle as the cradle-babe,  
 \* Dying with mother's dug between its lips:  
 \* Where\*, from thy sight I should be raging mad,  
 \* And cry out for thee to close up mine eyes,  
 \* To have thee with thy lips to stop my mouth;  
 \* So shouldst thou either turn my flying soul,

\* Or I should breathe it so into thy body,  
 And then it lived in sweet Elysium.  
 To die by thee, were but to die in jest;  
 From thee to die, were torture more than death.  
 O, let me stay, befall what may befall.  
 \* *Q. Mar.* Away, though parting be a fretful  
 \* It is applied to a deathful wound. *[corrosive,*  
 \* To France, sweet Suffolk: Let me hear from  
     thee;  
 \* For wheresoe'er thou art in this world's globe,  
 I'll have an Iris† that shall find thee out.  
*Suf.* I go.  
*Q. Mar.* And take my heart with thee.  
*Suf.* A jewel, lock'd into the woful'st cask  
 That ever did contain a thing of worth.  
 Even as a splitted bark, so sunder we;  
 This way fall I to death.

*Q. Mar.*                      This way for me.  
                                     *[Exeunt severally.]*

SCENE III. London. Cardinal Beaufort's  
 Bed-chamber.

*Enter King HENRY, SALISBURY, WAR-  
 WICK, and Others. The Cardinal in bed;  
 Attendants with him.*

\* *K. Hen.* How fares my lord? speak,  
 Beaufort, to thy sovereign.

\* *Car.* If thou be'st death, I'll give thee  
 England's treasure,

\* Enough to purchase such another island,  
 \* So thou wilt let me live, and feel no pain.

\* *K. Hen.* Ah, what a sign it is of evil life  
 \* When death's approach is seen so terrible!

\* *War.* Beaufort, it is thy sovereign speaks  
     to thee.                      *[will.]*

\* *Car.* Bring me unto my trial when you  
 \* Died he not in his bed? where should he die?  
 \* Can I make men live, wh'er they will or no?—

\* O! torture me no more, I will confess.—  
 \* Alive again? then show me where he is;

\* I'll give a thousand pound to look upon him.  
 \* He hath no eyes, the dust hath blinded them.

\* Comb down his hair; look! look! it stands  
     upright,

\* Like lime-twigs set to catch my winged soul!  
 \* Give me some drink; and bid the apothecary

\* Bring the strong poison that I bought of him.  
     *[bliss.]*

\* *K. Hen.* O thou eternal Mover of the hea-  
 \* Look with a gentle eye upon this wretch! *[vems,*

\* O, beat away the busy meddling fiend,  
 \* That lays strong siege unto this wretch's soul.

\* And from his bosom purge this black despair!  
 \* *War.* See, how the pangs of death do make  
     him grin.                      *[ably.]*

\* *Sal.* Disturb him not, let him pass peace.  
 \* *K. Hen.* Peace to his soul, if God's good  
     pleasure be!                      *[bliss,*

\* Lord cardinal, if thou think'st on heaven's  
 \* Hold up thy hand, make signa' of thy hope.—

\* He dies, and makes no sign; O God, forgive  
     him!                      *[life.]*

\* *War.* So bad a death argues a monstrous  
 \* *K. Hen.* Forbear to judge, for we are sin-  
     ners all.—

\* Close up his eyes, and draw the curtain close;  
 \* And let us all to meditation.                      *[Exeunt.]*

\* For wheresoe'er.

† The messenger of Juno.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. Kent. *The Sea-shore near Dover.*

*Firin: heard at Sea. Then enter from a Boat, a Captain, a Master, a Master's-Mate, WALTER WHITMORE, and Others; with them SUFFOLK, and other Gentlemen, prisoners.*

\* *Cap.* The gaudy, blabbing, and remorse—  
Is crept into the bosom of the sea; [ful \* day  
\* And now loud-howling wolves arouse the  
jades

\* That drag the tragic melancholy night;  
\* Who with their drowsy, slow, and flagging  
wings [jaws

\* Clip dead men's graves, and from their misty  
\* Breathe foul contagious darkness in the air.  
\* Therefore, bring forth the soldiers of our  
prize; [Downs,

\* For, whilst our pinnace anchors in the  
\* Here shall they make their ransom on the  
sand, [shore.—

\* Or with their blood stain this discolour'd  
\* Master, this prisoner freely give I thee;—  
\* And thou that art his mate, make boot of this;  
The other, [*Ponting to SUFFOLK,*] Walter  
Whitmore, is thy share.

\* *1 Gent.* What is my ransome, master? let  
me know. [your head.

\* *Master.* A thousand crowns, or else lay down  
\* *Mate.* And so much shall you give, or off  
goes yours. [thousand crowns,

\* *Cap.* What, think you much to pay two  
\* And bear the name and port of gentlemen?—  
\* Cut both the villains' throats;—for die you  
shall; [fight,

\* The lives of those which we have lost in  
\* Cannot be counterpoised with such a petty  
sum. [my life.

\* *1 Gent.* I'll give it, sir; and therefore spare  
\* *2 Gent.* And so will I, and write home for  
it straight. [aboard,

\* *Whit.* I lost mine eye in laying the prize  
\* And therefore, to revenge it, shalt thou die;  
[To SUFF.

\* And so should these, if I might have my will.  
\* *Cap.* Be not so rash; take ransome, let  
him live. [man;

\* *Suff.* Look on my George, I am a gentle-  
\* Rate me at what thou wilt, thou shalt be paid.  
\* *Whit.* And so am I; my name is—Walter  
Whitmore. [death affright?

\* How now? why start'st thou? what, doth  
\* *Suff.* Thy name affrights me, in whose sound  
is death.

\* A cunning man did calculate my birth,  
\* And told me—that by *Water* I should die;  
\* Yet let not this make thee be bloody minded;  
\* Thy name is—*Gualtier*, being rightly  
sounded. [care not;

\* *Whit.* *Gualtier*, or *Walter*, which it is, I  
\* Ne'er yet did base dishonour blur our name,  
\* But with our sword we wiped away the blot;

\* Therefore, when merchant-like I sell revenge—  
\* Broke be my sword, my arms torn and de-  
faced, [world!

\* And I proclaim'd a coward through the  
[Lays hold on SUFFOLK.

\* *Suff.* Stay, Whitmore; for thy prisoner is  
a prince,

The duke of Suffolk, William de la Pole.

\* *Whit.* The duke of Suffolk, muffled up in  
rags! [duke;

\* *Suff.* Ay, but these rags are no part of the  
Jove sometime went disguised, And why not I?

\* *Cap.* But Jove was never slain, as thou shalt  
be. [Henry's blood,

\* *Suff.* Obscure and lowly swain, king  
The honourable blood of Lancaster,

\* Must not be shed by such a jaded groom†.  
Hast thou not kiss'd thy hand, and held my  
stirrup?

\* Bare-headed plodded by my foot-cloth mule,  
\* And thought thee happy when I shook my  
head?

\* How often hast thou waited at my cup,  
\* Fed from my trencher, kneel'd down at the  
board,

\* When I have feasted with queen Margaret?  
\* Remember it, and let it make thee crest-  
fallen;

\* Ay, and allay this thy abortive pride‡:  
\* How in our voiding lobby hast thou stood,

\* And duly waited for my coming forth?  
\* This hand of mine hath writ in thy behalf,

\* And therefore shall it charm thy riotous  
tongue. [loren swain!

\* *Whit.* Speak, captain, shall I stab the for  
\* *Cap.* First let my words stab him, as he  
hath me. [so art thou.

\* *Suff.* Base slave! thy words are blunt, and  
\* *Cap.* Convey him hence, and on our long  
Strike off his head. [boat's side.

\* *Suff.* Thou dar'st not for thy own  
\* *Cap.* Yes, Poole.

\* *Suff.* Poole?  
\* *Cap.* Poole? Sir Poole? lord?

\* Ay, kennel, puddle, sink; whose filth and  
dirt [drinks.

\* Troubles the silver spring where England  
\* Now will I dam up this thy yawning mouth,

\* For swallowing the treasure of the realm:  
\* Thy lips, that kiss'd the queen, shall sweep  
the ground;

\* And thou, that smil'd'st at good duke Hum-  
phrey's death,

\* Against the senseless winds shalt grin in vain,  
\* Who, in contempt, shall hiss at thee again;

\* And wedded be thou to the hags of hell,  
\* For daring to defy a mighty lord

\* Unto the daughter of a worthless king,  
\* Having neither subject, wealth, nor diadem.

\* By devilish policy art thou grown great,  
\* And, like ambitious Sylla, overgorged

\* With gobbets of thy mother's bleeding heart.

\* Pitiful.

† A low fellow.

‡ Pride that has had birth too soon.

§ To betroth in marriage.

\* By thee, Anjou and Maine were sold to France :  
 \* The false revolting Normans, thorough thee,  
 \* Disdain to call us lord ; and Picardy  
 \* Hath slain their governors, surprised our forts,  
 \* And sent the ragged soldiers wounded home.  
 \* The princely Warwick, and the Nevils all,—  
 \* Whose dreadful swords were never drawn in  
 \* As hating thee, are rising up in arms : [vain,—  
 \* And now the house of York—thrust from the crown,  
 \* By shameful murder of a guiltless king,  
 \* And lofty proud encroaching tyranny,—  
 \* Burns with revenging fire ; whose hopeful colours  
 \* Advance our half-faced sun, striving to shine,  
 \* Under the which is writ—*Invitis nubibus*.  
 \* The commons here in Kent are up in arms :  
 \* And, to conclude, reproach, and beggary,  
 \* Is crept into the palace of our king,  
 \* And all by thee :—Away ! convey him hence.  
 \* *Suf.* O that I were a god, to shoot forth thunder  
 \* Upon these paltry, servile, abject drudges !  
 \* Small things make base men proud : ' this villain here,  
 \* Being captain of a pinnace \*, threatens more  
 \* Than Barchinæ the strong Illyrian pirate.  
 \* Drones suck not eagles' blood, but rob bees.  
 \* It is impossible, that I should die [hives.  
 \* By such a lowly vassal as thyself. [me :  
 \* Thy words move rage, and not remorse, in  
 \* I go of message from the queen to France ;  
 \* I charge thee, waft me safely cross the  
 \* *Cap.* Walter, — [channel.  
 \* *Whit.* Come, Suffolk, I must waft thee to thy death. [thee I fear.  
 \* *Suf.* *Gelidus timor occupat artus* :—'tis  
 \* *Whit.* Thou shalt have cause to fear, before I leave thee. [stoop ?  
 \* What, are ye daunted now ? now will ye  
 \* *I Gent.* My gracious lord, entreat him, speak him fair. [rough,  
 \* *Suf.* Suffolk's imperial tongue is stern and  
 \* Used to command, untaught to plead for favour.  
 \* Far be it, we should honour such as these  
 \* With humble suit : no, rather let my head  
 \* Stoop to the block, than these knees bow to any,  
 \* Save to the God of heaven, and to my king ;  
 \* And sooner dance upon a bloody pole,  
 \* Than stand uncover'd to the vulgar groom.  
 \* True nobility is exempt from fear :—  
 \* More can I bear, than you dare execute.  
 \* *Cap.* Hail him away, and let him talk no more. [can,  
 \* *Suf.* Come, soldiers, show what cruelty ye  
 \* That this my death may never be forgot !—  
 \* Great men oft die by vile bezonians † :  
 \* A Rom in sword and banditto slave,  
 \* Murder'd sweet Tully ; Brutus' bastard hand  
 \* Stab'd Julius Cæsar ; savage islanders,  
 \* Pompey the Great : and Suffolk dies by pirates.  
 \* [Exit *Suf.* with *Whit.* and Others.]

*Cap.* And as for these whose ransome we have set,  
 It is our pleasure, one of them depart :—  
 Therefore come you with us, and let him go.  
 [Exit all but the first Gentleman.  
 Re-enter *Whitmore*, with *Suffolk's*  
*B dy.*  
 ' *Whit.* There let his head and lifeless body lie,  
 ' Until the queen his mistress bury it. [Exit.  
 ' *I Gent.* O barbarous and bloody spectacle !  
 ' His body will I bear unto the king :  
 ' If he revenge it not, yet will his friends ;  
 ' So will the queen, that living held him dear.  
 [Exit with the Body.]

## SCENE II. Blackheath,

Enter *George Bevis* and *John Holland*.

' *Geo.* Come, and get thee a sword, though made of a lath ; they have been up these two days.

' *John.* They have the more need to sleep now then.

' *Geo.* I tell thee, Jack Cade, the clothier, means to dress the commonwealth, and turn it, and set a new nap upon it.

*John.* So he had need, for 'tis threadbare. Well, I say, it was never merry world in England, since gentlemen came up.

\* *Geo.* O miserable age ! Virtue is not regarded in handicrafts-men.

' *John.* The nobility think scorn to go in leather aprons.

\* *Geo.* Nay more, the king's council are no good workmen.

\* *John.* True ; And yet it is said—Labour in thy vocation : which is as much to say, as,—let the magistrates be labouring men ; and therefore should we be magistrates.

\* *Geo.* Thou hast hit it : for there's no better sign of a brave mind, than a hard hand.

\* *John.* I see them ! I see them ! There's Best's son, the tanner of Wingham ;—

\* *Geo.* He shall have the skins of our enemies, to make dog's leather of.

*John.* And Dick, the butcher,—

\* *Geo.* Then is sin struck down like an ox, and iniquity's throat cut like a calf.

\* *John.* And Smith, the weaver :—

\* *Geo.* Argo, their thread of life is spinn.

\* *John.* Come, come, let's fall in with them.

*Drum.* Enter *Cade*, *Dick*, the Butcher, *Smith*, the Weaver, and Others in great number.

' *Cade.* We John Cade, so termed of our supposed father,—

*Dick.* Or rather, of stealing a cade of her rings ‡. [Aside]

' *Cade.* — for our enemies shall fall before us, inspired with the spirit of putting down kings and princes,—Command silence.

*Dick.* Silence !

*Cade.* My father was a Mortimer,—

*Dick.* He was an honest man, and a good bricklayer. [Aside]

' *Cade.* My mother a Plantagenet,—

\* A pinnace then signified a ship of small burthen.

† Low men. ‡ A barrel of herrings



' *Dick*. I knew ner well, she was a mid-  
' wife. [Aside.]

' *Cade*. My wife descended of the Lacies.—  
*Dick*. She was, indeed, a pedlar's daughter,  
and sold many laces. [Aside.]

' *Smith*. But, now of late, not able to travel  
' with her furred pack, she washes bucks here  
' at home. [Aside.]

' *Cade*. Therefore am I of an honourable  
' house.

*Dick*. Ay, by my faith, the field is honour-  
able; and there was he born, under a hedge;  
for his father had never a house, but the cage.  
[Aside.]

\* *Cade*. Valiant I am.

\* *Smith*. A must needs; for beggary is va-  
' liant. [Aside.]

*Cade*. I am able to endure much.

*Dick*. No question of that; for I have seen him  
whipped three market-days together. [Aside.]

*Cade*. I fear neither sword nor fire.

*Smith*. He need not fear the sword, for his  
coat is of proof. [Aside.]

*Dick*. But, methinks, he should stand in fear  
of fire, being burnt i' the hand for stealing of  
sheep. [Aside.]

*Cade*. Be brave then; for your captain is  
brave, and vows reformation. There shall be,  
in England, seven half penny loaves sold for  
a penny: the three-hooped pot shall have ten  
hoops; and I will make it felony to drink  
small beer: all the realm shall be in common,  
and in Cheap-side shall my palfrey go to grass.  
And, when I am king, (as king I will be)—

All. God save your majesty!

' *Cade*. I thank you, good people:—there  
' shall be no money; all shall eat and drink  
' on my score; and I will apparel them all in  
' one livery, that they may agree like brothers,  
' and worship me their lord.

' *Dick*. The first thing we do, let's kill all  
' the lawyers.

*Cade*. Nay, that I mean to do. Is not this  
a lamentable thing, that of the skin of an inno-  
cent lamb should be made parchment? that  
parchment, being scribbled o'er, should undo  
a man? Some say, the bee stings; but I say,  
'tis the bees' wax; for I did but seal once to a  
thing, and I was never mine own man since.  
How now; who's there?

*Enter some, bringing in the Clerk of  
Chatham.*

*Smith*. The clerk of Chatham: he can write  
and read, and cast account.

*Cade*. O monstrous!

*Smith*. We took him setting of boys' copies.

*Cade*. Here's a villain!

*Smith*. H'as a book in his pocket, with red  
letters in't.

*Cade*. Nay, then he is a conjurer.

*Dick*. Nay, he can make obligations, and  
write court-hand.

' *Cade*. I am sorry for't: the man is a proper  
man, on mine honour; unless I find him  
guilty, he shall not die.—Come hither, sirrah,  
I must examine thee: What is thy name?

*Clerk*. Emmanuel.

*Dick*. They use to write it on the top of  
letters;—"Twill go hard with you.

' *Cade*. Let me alone:—Dost thou use to  
' write thy name? or hast thou a mark to thy-  
' self, like an honest plain-dealing man?

*Clerk*. Sir, I thank God, I have been so  
well brought up, that I can write my name.

' All. He hath confessed: away with him;  
' he's a villain, and a traitor.

' *Cade*. Away with him, I say: hang him  
' with his pen and inkhorn about his neck.

[*Exit some with the Clerk*

*Enter MICHAEL.*

' *Mich*. Where's our general?

' *Cade*. Here I am, thou particular fellow.

' *Mich*. Fly, fly, fly! sir Humphrey Stafford  
' and his brother are hard by, with the king's  
' forces.

' *Cade*. Stand, villain, stand, or I'll fell thee  
' down: He shall be encountered with a man  
' as good as himself: He is but a knight, is 'a f

' *Mich*. No.

' *Cade*. To equal him, I will make myself a  
' knight presently; Rise up, sir John Mortim-  
' er. Now have at him.

*Enter SIR HUMPHREY STAFFORD and  
WILLIAM his Brother, with Drum and  
Forces.*

\* *Staff*. Rebellious hinds, the filth and scum  
of Kent, [down,

\* Mark'd for the gallows, lay your weapons

\* Home to your cottages, forsake this groom;

\* The King is merciful, if you revolt.

\* *W. Staff*. But angry, wrathful, and in-  
clined to blood,

\* If you go forward: therefore, yield or die.

*Cade*. As for these silken coated slaves, I  
pass not \*;

It is to you, good people, that I speak,

\* O'er whom, in time to come, I hope to reign;

\* For I am rightful heir unto the crown.

' *Staff*. Villain, thy father was a plasterer;

' And thou thyself, a sheerman, art thou not?

*Cade*. And Adam was a gardener.

' *W. Staff*. And what of that?

*Cade*. Marry, this:—Edmund Mortimer,  
earl of March, [he not?

Married the duke of Clarence' daughter; Did  
' *Staff*. Ay, sir. [birth,

*Cade*. By her, he had two children at one

*W. Staff*. That's false. [tis true:

' *Cade*. Ay, there's the question; but, I say,

' The elder of them, being put to nurse,

' Was by a beggar-woman stol'n away;

' And, ignorant of his birth and parentage,

' Became a bricklayer, when he came to age:

' His son am I; deny it, if you can.

*Dick*. Nay, 'tis too true; therefore he shall  
be king.

*Smith*. Sir, he made a chimney in my fa-  
ther's house, and the bricks are alive at this  
day to testify it; therefore, deny it not.

\* *Staff*. And will you credit this base  
drudge's words,

\* That speaks he knows not what?

\* I pay them no regard.

\* *All.* Ay, marry, will we; therefore get ye gone.

*W. Staf.* Jack Cade, the duke of York hath taught you this.

\* *Cade.* He lies, for I invented it myself.

[*Aside.*—Go to, sirrah, Tell the king from me, that—for his father's sake, Henry the fifth, in whose time boys went to span-counter for French crowns,—I am content he shall reign; but I'll be protector over him.

\* *Dick.* And, furthermore, we'll have the lord Say's head, for selling the dukedom of Maine.

\* *Cade.* And good reason; for thereby is England maimed, and fain to go with a staff, but that my puissance holds it up. Fellow kings, I tell you, that that lord Say hath gelded the commonwealth, and made it an emmich: and more than that, he can speak French, and therefore he is a traitor.

\* *Staf.* O gross and miserable ignorance!

\* *Cade.* Nay, answer, if you can: The Frenchmen are our enemies: go to then, I ask but this; Can he that speaks with the tongue of an enemy, be a good counsellor, or no?

\* *All.* No, no; and therefore we'll have his head.

[not prevail,

\* *W. Staf.* Well, seeing gentle words will not prevail, with the army of the king.

\* *Staf.* Herald away: and, throughout every town,

Proclaim them traitors that are up with Cade; That those which fly before the battle ends, May, even in their wives' and children's sight,

Be hang'd up for example at their doors:—

And you, that be the king's friends, follow me.

[*Exeunt the two STAFFORDS, and Forces.*

\* *Cade.* And you, that love the commons, follow me.—

Now show yourselves men, 'tis for liberty.

\* We will not leave one lord, one gentleman;

Spare none, but such as go in clouted shoon\*;

For they are thrifty honest men, and such

As would (but that they dare not) take our parts.

[toward us.

\* *Dick.* They are all in order, and march

\* *Cade.* But then are we in order, when we

are most out of order. Come, march forward.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. Another Part of Blackheath.

*Alarums. The two Parties enter and fight, and both the STAFFORDS are slain.*

\* *Cade.* Where's Dick, the butcher of Ashford?

\* *Dick.* Here, sir.

\* *Cade.* They tell before thee like sheep and oxen, and thou behavedst thyself as if thou hadst been in thine own slaughter-house: therefore thus will I reward thee,—The Lent shall be as long again as it is; and thou shalt have a license to kill for a hundred lacking one.

\* *Dick.* I desire no more.

\* *Cade.* And, to speak truth, thou deservest no less. This monument of the victory will I bear; and the bodies shall be dragged at my horse's heels, till I do come to London, where we will have the mayor's sword borne before us.

\* *Dick.* If we mean to thrive and do good, break open the gaols, and let out the prisoners.

\* *Cade.* Fear not that, I warrant thee. Come, let's march towards London. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV. London. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter King HENRY, reading a Supplication; the Duke of Buckingham, and Lord SAY with him: at a distance, Queen MARGARET, mourning over Suffolk's head.*

\* *Q. Mar.* Oft have I heard—that grief softens the mind,

\* And makes it fearful and degenerate;

\* Think therefore on revenge, and cease to weep. [this?

\* But who can cease to weep, and look on

\* Here may his head lie on my throbbing breast:

\* But where's the body that I should embrace?

\* *Buck.* What answer makes your grace to the rebels' supplication?

\* *K. Hen.* I'll send some holy bishop to entreat:

\* For God forbid, so many simple souls

\* Should perish by the sword! And I myself,

\* Rather than bloody war shall cut them short,

\* Will parley with Jack Cade their general.—

\* But stay, I'll read it over—once again.

\* *Q. Mar.* Ah, barbarous villains! hath this lovely face

\* Ruled, like a wandering planet †, over me;

\* And could it not enforce them to relent,

\* That were unworthy to behold the same?

\* *K. Hen.* Lord Say, Jack Cade hath sworn

to have thy head. [have his.

\* *Say.* Ay, but I hope, your highness shall

*K. Hen.* How now, Madam? Still

Lamenting, and mourning for Suffolk's death;

I fear, my love, if that I had been dead,

Thou wouldst not have mourn'd so much for me.

[but die for thee.

*Q. Mar.* No, my love, I should not mourn,

*Enter a Messenger.*

\* *K. Hen.* How now! what news? why comest thou in such haste?

\* *Mess.* The rebels are in Southwark; Fly, my lord!

\* Jack Cade proclaims himself lord Mortimer,

\* Descended from the Duke of Clarence's house;

\* And calls your grace usurper, openly,

\* And vows to crown himself in Westminster.

\* His army is a ragged multitude

\* Of hinds and peasants, rude and merciless;

\* Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother's death

[ceed: to pro-

\* Hath given them heart and courage to pro-

\* All scholars, lawyers, courtiers, gentlemen,

Shoes.

† Predominated irresistibly over my passions; as the planets over those born under their influence.

They call—false caterpillars, and intend their death. [what they do.

\* *K. Hen.* O graceless men! they know not

\* *Buck.* My gracious lord, retire to Kenelworth,

Until a power be raised to put them down.

\* *Q. Mar.* Ah! were the duke of Suffolk now alive, [peased.

\* These Kentish rebels would be soon ap-

\* *K. Hen.* Lord Say, the traitors hate thee, Therefore away with us to Kenelworth.

\* *Say.* So might your grace's person be in danger;

\* The sight of me is odious in their eyes:

\* And therefore in this city will I stay,

\* And live alone as secret as I may.

*Enter another Messenger.*

\* 2 *Mess.* Jack Cade hath gotten London-bridge; the citizens

\* Fly and forsake their houses:

\* The rascal people, thirsting after prey,

\* Join with the traitor; and they jointly swear, To spoil the city, and your royal court.

\* *Buck.* Then linger not, my lord; away, take horse. [will succour us.

\* *K. Hen.* Come, Margaret; God, our hope,

\* *Q. Mar.* My hope is gone, now Suffolk is deceased.

\* *K. Hen.* Farewell, my lord; [To Lord SAY] trust not the Kentish rebels.

\* *Buck.* Trust nobody, for fear you be betray'd.

\* *Say.* The trust I have is in mine innocence, And therefore am I bold and resolute.

[*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE V. *The same. The Tower.*

*Enter Lord SCALES, and Others, on the Walls. Then enter certain Citizens, below.*

*SCALES.* How now? is Jack Cade slain?

1 *Cit.* No, my lord, nor likely to be slain; for they have won the bridge, killing all those that withstand them: The lord mayor craves aid of your honour from the Tower, to defend the city from the rebels.

*SCALES.* Such aid as I can spare, you shall command;

But I am troubled here with them myself, The rebels have assay'd to win the Tower. But get you to Smithfield, and gather head, And thither I will send you Matthew Gough: Fight for your king, your country, and your lives;

And so farewell, for I must hence again. [*Ex.*

#### SCENE VI. *The same. Cannon Street.*

*Enter JACK CADE, and his Followers. He strikes his Staff on London-stone.*

*CADE.* Now is Mortimer lord of this city. And here, sitting upon London-stone, I charge and command, that of the city's cost, the pissing conduit run nothing but claret wine this first year of our reign. And now, henceforward, it shall be treason for any that calls me other than—lord Mortimer.

*Enter a Soldier, running.*

*Sol.* Jack Cade! Jack Cade!

*Cade.* Knock him down there.

[*They kill him.*

\* *Smith.* If this fellow be wise, he'll never

\* call you Jack Cade more; I think, he hath a very fair warning.

\* *Dick.* My lord, there's an army gathered together in Smithfield.

*Cade.* Come then, let's go fight with them. But, first, go and set London-bridge on fire;

and, if you can, burn down the Tower too. Come, let's away. [*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE VII. *The same. Smithfield.*

*Alarum. Enter, on one side, CADE and his Company; on the other, Citizens, and the King's Forces, headed by MATTHEW GOUGH. They fight: the Citizens are routed, and MATTHEW GOUGH is slain.*

*Cade.* So, sirs:—Now go some and pull down the Savoy; others to the inns of court; down with them all.

*Dick.* I have a suit unto your lordship.

*Cade.* Be it a lordship, thou shalt have it for that word.

\* *Dick.* Only, that the laws of England may come out of your mouth.

\* *John.* Mass, 'twill be sore law then; for he was thrust in the mouth with a spear, and 'tis not whole yet. [*Aside.*

\* *Smith.* Nay, John, it will be stinking law; for his breath stinks with eating roasted cheese. [*Aside.*

\* *Cade.* I have thought upon it, it shall be so. Away, burn all the records of the realm; my mouth shall be the parliament of England.

\* *John.* Then we are like to have biting statutes, unless his teeth be pulled out. [*Aside.*

\* *Cade.* And henceforward all things shall be in common.

*Enter a Messenger.*

\* *Mess.* My lord, a prize, a prize! here's the lord Say, which sold the towns in France;

\* he that made us pay one and twenty fifteens,\* and one shilling to the pound, the last subsidy.

*Enter GEORGE BEVIS, with the Lord SAY.*

\* *Cade.* Well, he shall be beheaded for it ten times.—Ah, thou say'st, thou seest, nay, thou

\* buckram lord! now art thou within point-blank of our jurisdiction regal. What canst

\* thou answer to my majesty, for giving up of Normandy unto monsieur Basineen, the

\* dauphin of France? Be it known unto thee by these presence, even the presence of lord

\* Mortimer, that I am the besom that must sweep the court clean of such filth as thou art.

\* Thou hast most traitorously corrupted the youth of the realm, in erecting a grammar-school: and where is, before, our fore-fathers

\* had no other books but the score and the tally, thou hast caused printing to be used;

\* and, contrary to the king, his crown, and dignity, thou hast built a paper-mill. It will

\* be proved to thy face, that thou hast men

\* A fifteen was the fifteenth part of all the moveables, or personal property, of each subject  
† Lay was a kind of serge.



'about thee, that usually talk of a noun, and  
'a verb; and such abominable words, as no  
'Christian ear can endure to hear. Thou hast  
'appointed justices of peace, to call poor men  
'before them about matters they were not  
'able to answer. Moreover, thou hast put  
'them in prison; and because they could not  
'read, thou hast hanged them\*; when, indeed,  
'only for that cause they have been most  
'worthily to live. Thou dost ride on a foot-  
'cloth†, dost thou not?

*Say.* What of that?

*Cade.* Marry, thou oughtest not to let thy  
horse wear a cloak, when honest men than  
thou go in their hose and doublets.

\* *Dick.* And work in their shirt too; as  
myself, for example, that am a butcher.

*Say.* You men of Kent,—

*Dick.* What say you of Kent?

'*Say.* Nothing but this: 'Tis *bona terra*,  
*mala gens*.

'*Cade.* Away with him, away with him!  
'he speaks Latin. [where you will.]

\* *Say.* Hear me but speak, and bear me  
'Kent, in the commentaries Cæsar writ,  
'Is term'd the civil<sup>st</sup> place of all this isle:  
'Sweet is the country, because full of riches;  
'The people liberal, valiant, active, wealthy;  
'Which makes me hope you are not void of  
pity.

'I sold not Maine, I lost not Normandy;  
'Yet, to recover them, would lose my life.  
'Justice with favour have I always done;  
'Prayers and tears have moved me, gifts  
could never.

\* When have I aught exacted at your hands,  
'Kent to maintain the king, the realm, and you?  
'Large gifts have I bestow'd on learned clerks,  
'Because my book preferr'd me to the king:  
'And—seeing ignorance is the curse of God,  
'Knowledge the wing wherewith we fly to  
heaven,—

\* Unless you be possess'd with devilish spirits,  
'You cannot but forbear to murder me.  
'This tongue hath parley'd unto foreign kings  
'For your behoof,—

\* *Cade.* Tut! when struck'st thou one blow  
in the field! [have I struck]

\* *Say.* Great men have reach'd hands: oft  
those that I never saw, and struck them dead.

\* *Geo.* O monstrous coward! what, to come  
behind! folks? [for your good.]

\* *Say.* These cheeks are pale for † watching  
\* *Cade.* Give him a box o'the ear, and that  
will make 'em red again. [causes]

\* *Say.* Long sitting to determine poor men's  
Hath made me full of sickness and diseases.

\* *Cade.* Ye shall have a hempen caudle  
then, and the pap of a hatchet.

'*Dick.* Why dost thou quiver, man? [me.]

'*Say.* The palsy, and not fear, provoketh  
'*Cade.* Nay, he nods at us; as who should  
'say, I'll be even with you. I'll see if his head

'will stand steadier on a pole, or no: Take  
'him away, and behead him. [most?]

\* *Say.* Tell me, wherein I have offended

\* Have I affected wealth, or honour; speak?

\* Are my chests fill'd up with extorted gold?

\* Is my apparel sumptuous to behold?

\* Whom have I injured, that ye seek my death?

\* These hands are free from guiltless blood-  
shedding‡, [thoughts.]

\* This breast from harbouring foul deceitful  
\* O, let me live!

\* *Cade.* I feel remorse in myself with his  
words: but I'll bridle it; he shall die, an it

\* be but for pleading so well for his life. Away  
\* with him! he has a familiar|| under his tongue;

\* he speaks not o'God's name. 'Go, take him

'away, I say, and strike off his head presently;

'and then break into his son-in-law's house, sir

'James Cromer, and strike off his head, and  
'bring them both upon two poles hither.

\* *All.* It shall be done. [your prayers,

\* *Say.* Ah, countrymen! if when you make

\* God should be so obdurate as yourselves,

\* How would it fare with your departed souls?

\* And therefore yet relent, and save my life.

\* *Cade.* Away with him, and do as I com-  
mand ye. [Exeunt some, with Lord SAY.]

'The proudest peer in the realm shall not wear  
'a head on his shoulders, unless he pay me tri-  
bute; these shall not a maid be married, but

'she shall pay to me her maidenhead ere they  
'have it: Men shall hold of me *in capite*; and

'we charge and command, that their wives be  
as free as heart can wish, or tongue can tell.

'*Dick.* My lord, when shall we go to Cheap-  
side, and take up commodities upon our bills?

\* *Cade.* Marry, presently.

\* *All.* O brave!

*Re-enter Rebels, with the Heads of Lord  
SAY and his Son-in-law.*

\* *Cade.* But is not this braver?—Let them  
'kiss one another, for they loved well, when

'they were alive. Now part them again, lest  
'they consult about the giving up of some

'more towns in France. Soldiers, defer the  
spoil of the city until night: for with these

'borne before us, instead of maces, will we  
ride through the streets; and at every corner

'have them kiss.—Away! [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE VIII. Southwark.

*Alarum. Enter CADE, and all his Rab-  
blement.*

\* *Cade.* Up Fish-street! down Saint Mag-  
nus' corner! kill and knock down! throw

\* them into Thames!— [A Parley sounded,  
\* then a Retreat.] What noise is this I hear?

\* Dare any be so bold to sound retreat or  
parley, when I command them kill?

*Enter BUCKINGHAM, and Old CLIFFORD,  
with Forces.*

*Luck.* Ay, here they be that dare and will  
disturb thee:

\* i. e., They were hanged because they could not claim the benefit of clergy. † A foot-  
cloth was a kind of housing, which covered the body of the horse. ‡ In consequence of  
§ i. e., These hands are free from shedding guiltless or innocent blood. || A demon who  
was supposed to attend at call.

Know, Cade, we come ambassadors from the king

'Unto the commons whom thou hast misled;  
'And here pronounce free pardon to them all,  
'That will forsake thee, and go home in peace.

'*Clif.* What say ye, countrymen? will ye relent,

'And yield to mercy, whilst 'tis offered you;  
'Or let a rabble lead you to your deaths?

'Who loves the king, and will embrace his pardon,

'Fling up his cap, and say—God save his majesty!  
'Who hateth him, and honours not his father,

'Heary the fifth, that made all France to quake,  
'Shake he his weapon at us, and pass by.

'*All.* God save the king! God save the king!

'*Cade.* What, Buckingham, and Clifford,  
'are ye so brave?—And you, base peasants, do

'ye believe him? will you needs be hanged  
'with your pardons about your necks? Hath my

'sword therefore broke through London Gates,  
'that you should leave me at the White Hart

'in Southwark? I thought ye would never  
'have given out these arms, till you had re-

'covered your ancient freedom: but you are  
'all recreants, and dastards; and delight to

'live in slavery to the nobility. Let them  
'break your backs with burdens, take your

'houses over your heads, ravish your wives  
'and daughters before your faces: For me, I

'will make shift for one; and so—God's curse  
'light upon you all!

'*All.* We'll follow Cade, we'll follow Cade.

'*Clif.* Is Cade the son of Henry the fifth,  
'That thus you do exclaim—you'll go with him?

'Will he conduct you through the heart of  
France,

'And make the meanest of you earls and  
'Alas, he hath no home, no place to fly to:

'Nor knows he how to live, but by the spoil,  
'Unless by robbing of your friends, and us.

'Wer't not a shame, that whilst you live at jar,  
'The fearful French, whom you late van-

'quished,

'Should make a start o'er seas, and vanquish  
'Methinks, already, in this civil broil,

'I see them lording it in London streets,  
'Crying—*Villageois!* unto all they meet.

'Better ten thousand base-born Cades mis-  
cary,

'Than you should stoop unto a Frenchman's  
To France, to France, and get what you have

'lost;  
'Spare England, for it is your native coast:

'Henry hath money, you are strong and manly;  
'God on our side, doubt not of victory.

'*All.* A Clifford! a Clifford! we'll follow  
the king and Clifford.

'*Cade.* Was ever feather so lightly blown  
'to and fro, as this multitude? the name of

'Henry the fifth hales them to an hundred mis-  
chiefs, and makes them leave me desolate.

'I see them lay their heads together, to sur-  
prise me: my sword make way for me, for

'here is no staying.—In despite of the devils  
and hell, have through the very midst of you!

'and heavens and honour be witness, that  
'no want of resolution in me, but only my  
'followers' base and ignominious treasons,  
'makes me betake me to my heels. [*Exit.*

'*Buck.* What, is he fled? go some, and  
follow him;

'And he, that brings his head unto the king,  
'Shall have a thousand crowns for his reward.

[*Exeunt some of them.*]  
'Follow me, soldiers; we'll devise a mean

'To reconcile you all unto the king. [*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE IX. Kenelworth Castle.

*Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, and  
SOMERSET, on the Terrace of the Castle.*

\* *K. Hen.* Was ever king that 'joy'd an  
earthly throne,

\* And could command no more content than I?

\* No sooner was I crept out of my cradle,

\* But I was made a king, at nine months old:

\* Was never subject long'd to be a king,

\* As I do long and wish to be a subject.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM and CLIFFORD.*

\* *Buck.* Health, and glad tidings, to your  
majesty!

\* *K. Hen.* Why, Buckingham, is the traitor,  
Cade, surprised?

\* Or is he but retired to make him strong?

*Enter, below, a great number of CADE'S  
Followers, with Halters about their  
Necks.* [*do yield*]

'*Clif.* He's fled, my lord, and all his powers

'And humbly thus, with halters on their necks,

'Expect your highness' doom of life, or death.

\* *K. Hen.* Then, heaven, set ope thy ever-  
lasting gates,

'To entertain my vows of thanks and praise!—  
'Soldiers, this day have you redeem'd your

'lives, [*and country:*  
'And show'd how well you love your prince

'Continue still in this so good a mind,

'And Henry, though he be unfortunate,

'Assure yourselves, will never be unkind:

'And so, with thanks, and pardon to you all,  
'I do dismiss you to your several countries.

*All.* God save the king! God save the king  
*Enter a Messenger.*

\* *Mess.* Please it your grace to be advertised,  
'The duke of York is newly come from Ire-

'land:

\* And with a puissant and a mighty power,  
'Of Gallowglasses, and stout Kernes\*,

\* Is marching hitherward in proud array;

\* And still proclaimeth, as he comes along,  
'His arms are only to remove from thee

'The duke of Somerset, whom he terms a  
traitor. [*and York distress'd*]

\* *K. Hen.* Thus stands my state, 'twixt Cade  
'Like to a ship, that, having 'scaped a tempest,

\* Is straightway calm'd and boarded with a  
pirate: [*persen*]

\* But now + is Cade driven back, his men dis-  
satisfied

\* And now is York in arms to second him.—  
'I pray thee, Buckingham, go forth and meet  
him;

\* Two orders of foot-soldiers among the Irish.

+ Only just now.

\* And ask him, what's the reason of these arms.  
\* Tell him, I'll send duke Edmund to the Tower;—

\* And, Somerset, we will commit thee thither,  
\* Until his army be dismiss'd from him.

\* *Som.* My lord,

\* I'll yield myself to prison willingly,

\* Or unto death, to do my country good.

\* *K. Hen.* In any case, be not too rough in terms; [guage.

\* For he is fierce, and cannot brook hard lan-  
\* *Buck.* I will, my lord; and doubt not so to deal,

\* As all things shall redound unto your good.

\* *K. Hen.* Come, wife, let's in, and learn to govern better;

\* For yet may England curse my wretched reign. [Exeunt.

# SCENE X. Kent. Iden's Garden.

*Enter CADR.*

\* *Cade.* Fie on ambition! fie on myself;  
\* that have a sword, and yet am ready to  
\* famish! These five days have I hid me in  
\* these woods; and durst not peep out, for all  
\* the country is lay'd for me; but now am I  
\* so hungry, that if I might have a lease of my  
\* life for a thousand years, I could stay no  
\* longer. Wherefore, on a brick-wall have I  
\* climbed into this garden; to see if I can eat  
\* grass, or pick a sallet another while, which  
\* is not amiss to cool a man's stomach this hot  
\* weather. And, I think, this word sallet was  
\* born to do me good: for, many a time, but  
\* for a sallet\*, my brain-pan had been cleft  
\* with a brown bill; and, many a time, when  
\* I have been dry, and bravely marching, it  
\* hath served me instead of a quart-pot to drink  
\* in; and now the word sallet must serve me  
\* to feed on.

*Enter IDEN, with Servants.*

\* *Iden.* Lord, who would live turmoiled in  
the court,

\* And may enjoy such quiet walks as these? .

\* This small inheritance, my father left me,

\* Contenteth me, and is worth a monarchy.

\* I seek not to wax great by others' waning;

\* Or gather wealth, I care not with what envy;

\* Sufficeth, that I have maintains my state,

\* And sends the poor well pleased from my  
gate.

\* *Cade.* Here's the lord of the soil come to  
seize me for a stray, for entering his fee-  
simple without leave. Ah, villain, thou wilt  
betray me, and get a thousand crowns of the  
king for carrying my head to him; but I'll  
make thee eat iron like an ostrich, and swal-  
low my sword like a great pin, ere thou and  
I part.

\* *Iden.* Why, rude companion, whatsoe'er  
thou be, [thee?

\* I know thee not; Why then should I betray

\* Is't not enough, to break into my garden,

\* And, like a thief, to come to rob my grounds,

\* Climbing thy walls in spite of me the owner,  
\* But thou wilt brave me with these sauncy  
terms?

\* *Cade.* Brave thee? ay, by the best blood  
that ever was broached, and heard thee too.  
Look on me well: I have eat no meat these  
five days; yet, come thou and thy five men,  
and if I do not leave you all as dead as a door  
nail, I pray God, I may never eat grass more.

\* *Iden.* Nay, it shall ne'er be said, while  
England stands,

\* That Alexander Iden, an esquire of Kent,  
Took odds to combat a poor famish'd man.

\* Oppose thy steadfast-gazing eyes to mine,

\* See if thou canst outface me with thy looks.

\* Set limb to limb, and thou art far the lesser;

\* Thy hand is but a finger to my fist; [eon;

\* Thy leg a stick, compared with this trun-  
chion;

\* My foot shall fight with all the strength thou  
hast;

\* And if mine arm be heaved in the air,

\* Thy grave is digg'd already in the earth.

\* As for more words, whose greatness answers  
words, [bears.

\* Let this my sword report what speech for-

\* *Cade.* By my valour, the most complete

\* champion that ever I heard.—' Steel, if thou

\* turn the edge, or cut not out the burly-boned

\* clown in chins of beef ere thou sleep in thy

\* sheath, I beseech God on my knees, thou

\* mayst be turned to hobnails. [They fight.

\* *Cade falls.]* O, I am slain! famine, and no

\* other, hath slain me: let ten thousand devils

\* come against me, and give me but the ten

\* meals I have lost, and I'd defy them all.

\* Wither, garden; and be henceforth a bury-

\* ing-place to all that do dwell in this house,

\* because the unconquered soul of Cade is  
fled.

\* *Iden.* Is't Cade that I have slain, that mon-  
strous traitor?

\* Sword, I will hallow thee for this thy deed,

\* And hang thee o'er my tomb, when I am dead:

\* Ne'er shall this blood be wiped from thy  
point;

\* But thou shalt wear it as a herald's coat,

\* To emblaze the honour that thy master got.

\* *Cade.* Iden, farewell; and be proud of thy

\* victory: Tell Kent for me, she hath lost her

\* best man, and exhort all the world to be

\* cowards; for I, that never feared any, am

\* vanquished by famine, not by valour. [Dies.

\* *Iden.* How much thou wrong'st met,  
heaven be my judge.

\* Die, damned wretch, the curse of her that  
bare thee!

\* And as I thrust thy body in with my sword,

\* So wish I, I might thrust thy soul to hell.

\* Hence will I drag thee headlong by the heels

\* Unto a dunghill, which shall be thy grave,

\* And there cut off thy most ungracious head;

\* Which I will bear in triumph to the king,

\* Leaving thy trunk for crows to feed upon.

[Exit, dragging out the Body

\* A kind of helmet.

† i.e., In supposing that I am proud of my victory.



## ACT V.

SCENE I. *The same. Fields between Dartford and Blackheath.*

*The King's Camp on one side On the other, enter YORK alone, with Drum and Colours: his Forces at some distance.*

'York. From Ireland thus comes York, to claim his right, [head :  
'And pluck the crown from feeble Henry's  
'Ring, bells, aloud; burn, bonfires, clear and bright,  
'To entertain great England's lawful king.  
Ah, *sancta majestas!* who would not buy thee dear?

'Let them obey, that know not how to rule;  
'This hand was made to handle nought but  
'I cannot give due action to my words, [gold :  
'Except a sword, or sceptre, balance it\*.  
'A sceptre shall it have, have I a soul;  
'On which I'll toss the flower-de-luce of France.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

'Whom have we here? Buckingham, to disturb me? [semble.

'The king hath sent him, sure: I must dis-  
'Buck. York, if thou meanest well, I greet thee well. [thy greeting.

'York. Humphrey of Buckingham, I accept  
'Art thou a messenger, or come of pleasure?

'Buck. A messenger from Henry, our dread liege,

To know the reason of these arms in peace;  
'Or why, thou—being a subject as I am,—  
'Against thy oath and true allegiance sworn,  
'Shouldst raise so great a power without his leave,

'Or dare to bring thy force so near the court.

'York. Scarce can I speak, my choler is so great. [with flint,  
'O, I could hew up rocks, and fight  
'I am so angry at these abject terms;  
'And now, like Ajax Telamonius,  
'On sheep or oxen could I spend my tury!

'I am far better born than is the king;  
'More like a king, more kingly in my thoughts: [while,  
'But I must make fair weather yet a  
'Till Henry be more weak, and I more strong.—

'O Buckingham, I pry'thee, pardon me,  
'That I have given no answer all this while;  
'My mind was troubled with deep melancholy.  
'The cause why I have brought this army hither,

'Is—to remove proud Somerset from the king,  
'Seditions to his grace, and to the state.

'Buck. That is too much presumption on thy part:

'But if thy arms be to no other end,  
'The king hath yielded unto thy demand;  
'The duke of Somerset is in the tower.

York. Upon thine honour, is he prisoner?

Buck. Upon mine honour, he is prisoner.

'York. Then, Buckingham, I do dismiss my powers.— [solv s;

'Soldiers, I thank you all: disperse your-  
'Meet me to-morrow in Saint George's field,  
'You shall have pay, and every thing you wish.

'And let my sovereign, virtuous Henry,  
'Command my eldest son,—nay, all my sons,  
'As pledges of my fealty and love,  
'I'll send them all as willing as I live;  
'Lands, goods, horse, armour, any thing I  
'Is his to use, so Somerset may die. [have

'Buck. York, I commend this kind submission:

'We twain will go into his highness' tent.

*Enter King HENRY, attended.*

'K. Hen. Buckingham, doth York intend no harm to us,

'That thus he marcheth with thee arm in arm?  
'York. In all submission and humility,

'York doth present himself unto your highness. [thou dost bring?

'K. Hen. Then what intend these forces  
'York. To heave the traitor Somerset from hence;

'And fight against that monstrous rebel, Cade,  
'Who since I heard to be discomfited.

*Enter IDEN, with CADE'S Head.*

'Iden. If one so rude, and of so mean con-  
'May pass into the presence of a king, [dition,

'I, I present your grace a traitor's head,  
'The head of Cade, whom I in combat slew.

'K. Hen. The head of Cade?—Great God,  
how just art thou!

'O, let me view his visage being dead,  
'That living wrought me such exceeding trouble. [slew him?

'Tell me, my friend, art thou the man that  
'Iden. I was, an't like your majesty.

'K. Hen. How art thou call'd? and what  
is thy degree?

'Iden. Alexander Iden, that's my name;  
'A poor esquire of Kent, that loves his king.

'Buck. So please it you, my lord, 'twere  
not amiss

'He were created knight for his good service.  
'K. Hen. Iden, kneel down; [He kneels.]

Rise up a knight.

'We give thee for reward a thousand marks;  
'And will, that thou henceforth attend on us.

'Iden. May Iden live to merit such a bound,  
'And never live but true unto his liege! [ty,

'K. Hen. See, Buckingham! Somerset comes with the queen;

'Go, bid her hide him quickly from the duke.  
*Enter Queen MARGARIT and SOMERSET.*

'Q. Mar. For thousand Yorks he shall no  
hide his head,

'But boldly stand, and front him to his face.  
'York. How now! Is Somerset at liberty?

'Then, York, unloose thy long-imprison'd  
thoughts,

And let thy tongue be equal with thy heart.  
 Shall I endure the sight of Somerset?—[me,  
 False king! why hast thou broken faith with  
 \* Knowing how hardly I can brook abuse?  
 \* King did I call thee? no, thou art not king;  
 \* Not fit to govern and rule multitudes, [tor.  
 \* Which darest not, no, nor canst not rule a trait-  
 \* That head of thine doth not become a crown,  
 \* Thy hand is made to grasp a palmer's staff,  
 \* And not to grace an awful princely sceptre.  
 \* That gold must round engirt these brows of  
 mine,

\* Whose smile and frown, like to Achilles' spear,  
 \* Is able with the change to kill and cure.  
 \* Here is a hand to hold a sceptre up,  
 \* And with the same to act controlling laws.  
 \* Give place; by heaven, thou shalt rule no  
 more

\* O'er him whom heaven created for thy ruler!  
 \* *Som.* O monstrous traitor!—I arrest thee,  
 York,

Of capital treason 'gainst the king and crown:  
 \* Obey, audacious traitor; kneel for grace.  
 \* *York.* Wouldst have me kneel? first let  
 me ask of these,

\* If they can brook I bow a knee to man.—  
 \* Sirrah, call in my sons to be my bail;  
 [Exit an Attendant.

\* I know, ere they will have me go to ward\*,  
 \* They'll pawn their swords for my enfranchise-  
 ment. [come again,

\* *Q. Mar.* Call hither Clifford; bid him  
 \* To say, if that the bastard boys of York  
 \* Shall be the surety for their traitor father.

\* *York.* O blood-bespotted Neapolitan,  
 \* Outcast of Naples, England's bloody scourge!  
 \* The sons of York, thy betters in their birth,  
 \* Shall be their father's bail; and bane to those  
 \* That for my surety will refuse the boys.

*Enter EDWARD and RICHARD PLANTAGENET, with Forces, at one side; at the other, with Forces also, old CLIFFORD and his Son.*

\* See, where they come; I'll warrant they'll  
 make it good. [their bail.

\* *Q. Mar.* And here comes Clifford, to deny  
 \* *Clif.* Health and all happiness to my lord  
 the king! [Kneels.

\* *York.* I thank thee, Clifford: Say, what  
 news with thee?

\* Nay, do not fright us with an angry look;  
 \* We are thy sovereign, Clifford, kneel again;  
 \* For thy mistaking so, we pardon thee. [take;  
 \* *Clif.* This is my king, York, I do not mis-  
 \* But thou mistak'st me much, to think I do:—

\* To Bedlam with him! is the man grown mad?  
 \* *K. Hen.* Ay, Clifford; a bedlam and am-  
 bitious humour

\* Makes him oppose himself against his king.  
 \* *Clif.* He is a traitor; let him to the  
 Tower,

\* And chop away that factions pate of his.  
 \* *Q. Mar.* He is arrested, but will not obey;  
 \* His sons, he says, shall give their words for  
 \* *York.* Will you not, sons? [him.

*Edw.* Ay, noble father, if our words will  
 serve. [weapons shall.

\* *Rich.* And if words will not, then our  
 \* *Clif.* Why, what a brood of traitors have  
 we here! [so;

\* *York.* Look in a glass, and call thy image  
 \* I am thy king, and thou a false-hearted traitor.  
 \* Call hither to the stake my two brave bearst,  
 \* That, with the very shaking of their chains,  
 \* They may astonish these fell-lurking curs;  
 \* Bid Salisbury, and Warwick, come to me.  
*Drums. Enter WARWICK and SALISBURY, with Forces.*

\* *Clif.* Are these thy bears? we'll bait thy  
 bears to death,

\* And manacle the bear-ward † in their chains.  
 If thou darest bring them to the baiting-place.

\* *Rich.* Oft have I seen a hot o'erweening cur  
 \* Run back and bite, because he was withheld;  
 \* Who, being suffer'd with the bear's fell paw,  
 \* Hath clapp'd his tail between his legs, and  
 cry'd:

\* And such a piece of service will you do,  
 \* If you oppose yourselves to match lord War-  
 wick. [gested lump,

\* *Clif.* Hence, heap of wrath, foul indi-  
 \* As crooked in thy manners as thy shape!

\* *York.* Nay, we shall heat you thoroughly  
 anon. [burn yourselves.

\* *Clif.* Take heed, lest by your heat you  
 \* *K. Hen.* Why, Warwick, hath thy knee  
 forgot to bow?—

\* Old Salisbury,—shame to thy silver hair.  
 \* Thou mad misleader of thy brain-sick son!—  
 \* What wilt thou on thy death-bed play the  
 ruffian,

\* And seek for sorrow with thy spectacles?  
 \* O, where is faith? O, where is loyalty?  
 \* If it be banish'd from the frosty head,

\* Where shall it find a harbour in the earth?—  
 \* Wilt thou go dig a grave to find out war,  
 \* And shame thine honourable age with blood?

\* Why art thou old, and want'st experience?  
 \* Or wherefore dost abuse it, if thou hast it?  
 \* For shame! in duty bend thy knee to me,

\* That bows unto the grave with mickle age.  
 \* *Sat.* My lord, I have consider'd with my-

\* The title of this most renowned duke; [self  
 \* And in my conscience do repute his grace  
 \* The rightful heir to England's royal seat.

\* *K. Hen.* Hast thou not sworn allegi-  
 \* *Sat.* I have. [ance unto me again?

\* *K. Hen.* Canst thou dispense with heaven  
 for such an oath?

\* *Sat.* It is great sin, to swear unto a sin;  
 \* But greater sin, to keep a sinful oath.

\* Who can be bound by any solemn vow  
 \* To do a murderous deed, to rob a man,

\* To force a spotless virgin's chastity,  
 \* To reave the orphan of his patrimony,

\* To wring the widow from her customary right;  
 \* And have no other reason for this wrong,

\* But that he was bound by a solemn oath?  
 \* *Q. Mar.* A subtle traitor needs no sophis-  
 ter.

\* Custody, confinement.

+ The Nevils, earls of Warwick had a bear and ragged staff  
 for their crest.

† Bear-keeper.

' *K. Hen.* Call Buckingham, and bid him arm himself. [thou hast,

' *York.* Call Buckingham, and all the friends I am resolved for death, or dignity.

' *Clif.* The first I warrant thee, if dreams prove true. [dream again,

' *War.* You were best to go to bed, and To keep thee from the tempest of the field.

' *Clif.* I am resolved to bear a greater storm Than any thou canst conjure up to-day; And that I'll write upon thy burgeton \*, Might I but know thee by thy household badge.

' *War.* Now, by my father's badge, old Nevil's crest,

The rampant bear chain'd to the ragged staff, This day I'll wear aloft my burgeton, (As on a mountain-top the cedar shows, That keeps his leaves in spite of any storm,) Even to affright thee with the view thereof.

' *Clif.* And from thy burgeton I'll rend thy bear,

And tread it under foot with all contempt, ' Despight the bear-ward that protects the bear.

' *Y. Clif.* And so to arms, victorious father, ' To quell the rebels, and their 'complices.

' *Rich.* Fie! charity, for shame! speak not in spite,

For you shall sup with *Jesu Christ* to-night.

' *Y. Clif.* Foul stigmatist, that's more than thou canst tell.

' *Rich.* If not in heaven, you'll surely sup in hell. [Exit severally.

## SCENE II. Saint Albans.

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter WARWICK.*

' *War.* Clifford of Cumberland, 'tis Warwick calls!

And if thou dost not hide thee from the bear, Now,—when the angry trumpet sounds alarm, And dead men's cries do fill the empty air,— Clifford, I say, come forth and fight with me! Proud northern lord, Clifford of Cumberlând, Warwick is hoarse with calling thee to arms.

*Enter YORK.*

' How now, my noble lord? what, all a-foot?

' *York.* The deadly-handed Clifford slew my steed;

' But match to match I have encounter'd him,

' And made a prey for carrion kites and crows

' Even of the bonny beast he loved so well.

*Enter CLIFFORD.*

' *War.* Of one or both of us the time is come.

' *York.* Hohl, Warwick, seek thee out some other chase,

For I myself must hunt this deer to death.

' *War.* Then, nobly, York; 'tis for a crown thou fight'st.—

As I intend, Clifford, to thrive to-day, t grieves my soul to leave thee unassail'd.

[Exit WARWICK

' *Clif.* What seest thou in me, York? why dost thou pause? [in love,

' *York.* With thy brave bearing should I be But that thou art so fast mine enemy.

' *Clif.* Nor should thy prowess want praise and esteem,

' But that 'tis shown ignobly, and in treason.

' *York.* So let it help me now against thy sword,

' As I in justice and true right express it!

' *Clif.* My soul and body on the action both!

' *York.* A dreadful lay †!—address thee instantly.

[They fight, and CLIFFORD falls.

' *Clif.* *La fin couronne les ouvres.* [Dies.

' *York.* Thus war hath given thee peace, for thou art still.

' Peace with his soul, heaven, if it be thy will! [Exit.

*Enter Young CLIFFORD.*

' *Y. Clif.* Shame and confusion! all is on the rout;

' Fear frames disorder, and disorder wounds

' Where it should guard. O war, thou son of hell,

' Whom angry heavens do make their minister,

' Throw in the frozen bosoms of our part

' Hot coals of vengeance!—Let no soldier fly:

' He that is truly dedicate to war,

' Hath no self-love; nor he that loves himself

' Hath not essentially, but by circumstance,

' The name of valour.—O, let the vile world end, [Seeing his Father dead.

' And the premised § flames of the last day

' Knit earth and heaven together!

' Now let the general trumpet blow his blast,

' Particularities and petty sounds

' To cease ||!—Wast thou ordain'd, dear father,

' To lose thy youth in peace, and to achieve ¶

' The silver livery of advised \*\* age; [thus

' And in thy reverence, and thy chair-days,

' To die in ruffian battle?—Even at this sight,

' My heart is turn'd to stone: and, while 'tis mine,

' It shall be stony. York not our old men spares;

' No more will I their babes: tears virginal

' Shall be to me even as the dew to fire;

' And beauty, that the tyrant oft reclaims,

' Shall to my flaming wrath be oil and flax.

' Henceforth, I will not have to do with pity:

' Meet I an infant of the house of York,

' Into as many gobbets will I cut it,

' As wild Medea young Absyrtus did:

' In cruelty will I seek out my fame.

' Come, thou new ruin of old Clifford's house; [Taking up the Body.

' As did Æneas old Anchises bear,

' So bear I thee upon my manly shoulders;

' But then Æneas bare a living load,

' Nothing so heavy as these woes of mine. [Exit

*Enter RICHARD PLANTAGENET and SOMERSET*  
*Set fighting, and SOMERSET is killed.*

' *Rich.* So, lie thou there;

' For, underneath an alehouse' paltry sign,

The castle in Saint Albans, Somerset

Hath made the wizard famous in his death.—

\* Helmet.

† One on whom nature has set a mark of deformity, a stigma.

‡ A dreadful wager; a tremendous stake.

§ Sent before their time.

|| Stop.

¶ Obtain.

\*\* Considerate.



\* Sword, hold thy temper; heart, be wrathful still:

\* Priests, pray for enemies, but princes, kill.  
[Exit.]

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, and Others, retreating.*

\* Q. Mar. Away, my lord! you are slow; for shame, away!

\* K. Hen. Can we outrun the heavens? good Margaret, stay. [not fight, nor fly:]

\* Q. Mar. What are you made of? you'll

\* Now is it manhood, wisdom, and defence,

\* To give the enemy way: and to secure us

\* By what we can, which can no more but fly.  
[Alarum afar off.]

\* If you be ta'en, we then should see the bottom

\* Of all our fortunes: but if we haply 'scape,

\* (As well we may, if not through our neglect,)

\* We shall to London get, where you are loved; [made,

\* And where this breach, now in our fortunes

\* May readily be stopp'd.

*Enter young CLIFFORD.*

\* Y. Cliff. But that my heart's on future mischief set,

\* I would speak blasphemy ere bid you fly;

\* But fly you must; incurable discomfit

\* Reigns in the hearts of all our present parts\*.

\* Away, for your relief! and we will live

\* To see their day, and them our fortune give:

\* Away, my lord, away! [Exeunt.]

SCENE III. *Fields near Saint Albans.*

*Alarum: Retreat. Flourish; then enter*

*YORK, RICHARD PLANTAGENET, WARWICK, and Soldiers with Drum and Colours.*

\* York. Of Salisbury, who can report of

\* For parties. † i. e., The gradual detrition of time. † i. e., The height of youth:

the brow of a hill is its summit. § i. e., We have not secured that which we have acquired.

i. e., Being enemies that are likely so soon to rally and recover themselves from this defeat.

\* That winter lion, who, in rage forgets

\* Aged contusions and all brush of time†;

\* And like a gallant in the brow of youth‡,

\* Repairs him with occasion? This happy day

\* Is not itself, nor have we won one foot,

\* If Salisbury be lost.

\* Rich. My noble father,

\* Three times to-day I help him to his horse,

\* Three times bestrid him, thrice I led him off,

\* Persuaded him from any further act: [him;

\* But still, where danger was, still there I met

\* And like rich hangings in a homely house,

\* So was his will in his old feeble body.

\* But, noble as he is, look where he comes.

*Enter SALISBURY.*

\* Sal. Now, by my sword, well hast thou fought to-day; [Richard:

\* By the mass, so did we all.—I thank you,

\* God knows how long it is I have to live; day

\* And it hath pleased him, that three times to-

\* You have defended me from imminent death.

\* Well, lords, we have not got that which we have§:

\* 'Tis not enough our foes are this time fled,

\* Being opposites of such repairing nature||.

\* York. I know our safety's to follow them;

\* For, as I hear, the king is fled to London,

\* To call a present court of parliament.

\* Let us pursue him, ere the writs go forth:—

\* What says lord Warwick? shall we after them? [can.

\* War. After them! nay, before them, if we

\* Now, by my faith, lords, 'twas a glorious day:

\* Saint Albans' battle, won by famous York,

\* Shall be eternized in all age to come.—

\* Sound, drums and trumpets: and to London

\* And more such days as these to us befall! [all:

[Exeunt.]

### THIRD PART OF

## KING HENRY VI.

### Persons represented.

King HENRY the SIXTH.  
 EDWARD, *Prince of Wales, his son.*  
 LOUIS XI., *King of France.*  
 Duke of SOMERSET,  
 Duke of EXETER,  
 Earl of OXFORD,  
 Earl of NORTHUMBERLAND,  
 Earl of WESTMORELAND,  
 Lord CLIFFORD,  
 RICHARD PLANTAGENET, *Duke of York.*  
 EDWARD, *Earl of March, afterwards King Edward IV.*  
 EDMUND, *Earl of Rutland.*  
 GEORGE, *afterwards Duke of Clarence,*  
 RICHARD, *afterwards Duke of Gloucester.*  
 Duke of NORFOLK,  
 Marquis of MONTAGUE,  
 Earl of WARWICK,  
 Earl of PEMERKE,  
 Lord HASTINGS,  
 Lord STAFFORD,

*lords on King Henry's side.*

*his sons.*

*of the Duke of York's party.*

Sir JOHN MORTIMER, } *uncles to the Duke*  
 Sir HUGH MORTIMER, } *of York.*  
 HENRY, *Earl of Richmond, a youth.*  
 Lord RIVERS, *brother to Lady Grey.* Sir  
 WILLIAM STANLEY, Sir JOHN MONT  
 GOMERY. Sir JOHN SOMERVILLE. Tu-  
 tor to Rutland. Mayor of York. Lie-  
 tenant of the Tower. A Nobleman. Two  
 Keepers. A Huntsman. A Son that has  
 killed his father. A Father that has killed  
 his son.

Queen MARGARET.  
 Lady GREY, *afterwards Queen to Edward IV*  
 BONA, *sister to the French Queen.*

*Soldiers, and other Attendants on King  
 Henry and King Edward, Messengers,  
 Watchmen, &c.*

*Scene, during part of the third act, in  
 France; during all the rest of the play  
 in England.*

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I. London. The Parliament- House.

*Drums. Some Soldiers of York's party  
 break in. Then Enter the Duke of YORK,  
 EDWARD, RICHARD, NORFOLK, MONTA-  
 GUE, WARWICK, and others, with white  
 Roses in their Hats.*

*War.* I wonder how the king escaped our  
 hands. [north]

*York.* While we pursued the horsemen of the  
 He slyly stole away, and left his men:

Whereat the great lord of Northumberland,  
 Whose warlike ears could never brook re-  
 treat, [self]

‘Cheered up the drooping army; and him-  
 ‘Lord Clifford, and lord Stafford, all a-breast,

‘Charged our main battle’s front, and break-  
 ing in, [slain]

‘Were by the swords of common soldiers  
*Edw.* Lord Stafford’s father, duke of Buck-  
 ingham,

‘Is either slain, or wounded dangerous:

I cleft his beaver with a downright blow;

‘That this is true, father, behold his blood.

[*Showing his bloody Sword.*]

*Mont.* And, brother, here’s the earl of  
 Wiltshire’s blood,

[*To YORK, showing his.*]

Whom I encounter’d as the battles join’d.

*Rich.* Speak thou for me, and tell them  
 what I did.

[*Throwing down the Duke of SOMERSET’S  
 Head.*]

• *York.* Richard hath best deserved of all  
 my sons.— [set]

What, is your grace dead, my lord of Som-  
*Norfol.* Such hope have all the line of John  
 of Gaunt!

*Rich.* Thus do I hope to shake king Henry’s  
 head. [York]

*War.* And so do I.—Victorious prince art  
 Before I see thee seated in that throne

Which now the house of Lancaster usurps,  
 I vow by heaven, these eyes shall never close.

This is the palace of the fearful king,  
 ‘And this the regal seat: possess it, York

For this is thine, and not king Henry’s heirs.

*York.* Assist me then, sweet Warwick,  
 and I will;

‘For hither we have broken in by force.

*Norfol.* We’ll all assist you; he, that flies,  
 shall die. [my lords:—]

*York.* Thanks, gentle Norfolk.—Stay by me,  
 ‘And, soldiers, stay, and lodge by me this  
 night. [no violence]

*War.* And, when the king comes, offer him  
 ‘Unless he seek to thrust you out by force.

[*They retire.*]

• *York.* The queen, this day, here holds her  
 parliament,

• But little thinks we shall be of her council:

• By words, or blows, here let us win our  
 right.

*Rich.* Armed as we are, let's stay within this house. [called]

*War.* The bloody parliament shall this be Unless Plantagenet, duke of York, be king: And bashful Henry deposed, whose cowardice Hath made us by-words to our enemies.

*York.* Then leave me not, my lords; be resolute;

I mean to take possession of my right. [best, *War.* Neither the king, nor he that loves him

*The proudest he that holds up Lancaster, Dares stir a wing, if Warwick shake his bells\*.*

*I'll plant Plantagenet, root him up who dares:—* [crown.

Resolve thee, Richard; claim the English [Warwick leads YORK to the Throne, who seats himself.

*Flourish.* Enter KING HENRY, CLIFFORD, NORTHUMBERLAND, WESTMORELAND, EXETER, and Others, with red Roses in their Hats.

*K. Hen.* My lords, look where the sturdy rebel sits,

Even in the chair of state! Belike he means, (Backed by the power of Warwick, that false peer,)

To aspire unto the crown, and reign as king.— Earl of Northumberland, he slew thy father;—

And thine, lord Clifford; and you both have vowed revenge

On him, his sons, his favourites, and his friends. *North.* If I be not, heavens, be revenged on me! [in steel

*Clif.* The hope thereof makes Clifford mourn

*West.* What, shall we suffer this, let's pluck him down:

*My heart for anger burns, I cannot brook it. K. Hen.* Be patient, gentle earl of Westmoreland. [he;

*Clif.* Patience is for poltroons, and such as He durst not sit there had your father lived.

My gracious lord, here in the parliament

Let us assail the family of York. [it so.

*North.* Well hast thou spoken, cousin; be *K. Hen.* Ah, know you not, the city favours them, [beck?

And they have troops of soldiers at their *Exe.* But when the duke is slain, they'll quickly fly.

*K. Hen.* Far be the thought of this from Henry's heart,

To make a shambles of the parliament-house! Cousin of Exeter frowns, words, and threats,

Shall be the war that Henry means to use.— [They advance to the Duke.

Thou factions duke of York, descend my throne, And kneel for grace and mercy at my feet;

I am thy sovereign gn. *York.* Thou art deceived, I am thine.

*Ete.* For shame, come down; he made thee duke of York. [was

*York.* 'Twas my inheritance, as the earldom *Exe.* Thy father was a traitor to the crown.

*War.* Exeter, thou art a traitor to the crown, In following this usurping Henry.

*Clif.* Whom should he follow, but his natural king? [duke of York.

*War.* True, Clifford; and that's Richard, *K. Hen.* And shall I stand, and thou sit in my throne? [thyself.

*York.* It must and shall be so. Content *West.* Be duke of Lancaster, let him be king.

*West.* He is both king and duke of Lancaster: And that the lord of Westmoreland shall maintain. *War.* And Warwick shall disprove it. You forget, [field,

That we are those, which chased you from the And slew your fathers, and with colours spread March'd through the city to the palace gates.

*North.* Yes, Warwick, I remember it to my grief; [rue it.

And, by his soul, thou and thy house shall *West.* Plantagenet, of thee, and these thy sons, [lives,

Thy kinsmen, and thy friends, I'll have more Than drops of blood were in my father's veins.

*Clif.* Urge it no more; lest that, instead of words,

I send thee, Warwick, such a messenger, As shall revenge his death, before I stir.

*War.* Poor Clifford! how I scorn his worthless threats! [crown?

*York.* Will you we show our title to the If not, our swords shall plead it in the field.

*K. Hen.* What title hast thou, traitor, to the crown?

Thy father was, as thou art, duke of York; Thy grandfather, Roger Mortimer, earl of I am the son of Henry the fifth, [March:

Who made the Dauphin and the French to stoop, And seized upon their towns and provinces.

*War.* Talk not of France, sith thou hast lost it all. [not I;

*K. Hen.* The lord protector lost it, and When I was crown'd, I was but nine months old. [methinks, you lose:—

*Rich.* You are old enough now, and yet, Father, tear the crown from the usurper's head.

*Edw.* Sweet father, do so; set it on your head, [lov'st and honour'st arms,

*Mont.* Good brother, [To York] as thou Let's fight it out, and not stand cavilling thus.

*Rich.* Sound drums and trumpets, and the *York.* Sons, peace! [king will fly.

*K. Hen.* Peace thou! and give king Henry leave to speak [him, lords;

*War.* Plantagenet shall speak first;—hear And be you silent and attentive too,

For he, that interrupts him, shall not live. *K. Hen.* Think'st thou, that I will leave my kingly throne,

Wherein my grandsire, and my father, sat? No: first shall war unpeople this my realm;

*Ay,* and their colours—often borne in France: And now in England, to our heart's great sorrow,—

Shall be my winding sheet.—Why faint ye lords?

*Clif.* Whom should he follow, but his natural king? [duke of York.

*War.* True, Clifford; and that's Richard, *K. Hen.* And shall I stand, and thou sit in my throne? [thyself.

*York.* It must and shall be so. Content *West.* Be duke of Lancaster, let him be king.

*West.* He is both king and duke of Lancaster: And that the lord of Westmoreland shall maintain.

*War.* And Warwick shall disprove it. You forget, [field,

That we are those, which chased you from the And slew your fathers, and with colours spread March'd through the city to the palace gates.

*North.* Yes, Warwick, I remember it to my grief; [rue it.

And, by his soul, thou and thy house shall *West.* Plantagenet, of thee, and these thy sons, [lives,

Thy kinsmen, and thy friends, I'll have more Than drops of blood were in my father's veins.

*Clif.* Urge it no more; lest that, instead of words,

I send thee, Warwick, such a messenger, As shall revenge his death, before I stir.

*War.* Poor Clifford! how I scorn his worthless threats! [crown?

*York.* Will you we show our title to the If not, our swords shall plead it in the field.

*K. Hen.* What title hast thou, traitor, to the crown?

Thy father was, as thou art, duke of York; Thy grandfather, Roger Mortimer, earl of I am the son of Henry the fifth, [March:

Who made the Dauphin and the French to stoop, And seized upon their towns and provinces.

*War.* Talk not of France, sith thou hast lost it all. [not I;

*K. Hen.* The lord protector lost it, and When I was crown'd, I was but nine months old. [methinks, you lose:—

*Rich.* You are old enough now, and yet, Father, tear the crown from the usurper's head.

*Edw.* Sweet father, do so; set it on your head, [lov'st and honour'st arms,

*Mont.* Good brother, [To York] as thou Let's fight it out, and not stand cavilling thus.

*Rich.* Sound drums and trumpets, and the *York.* Sons, peace! [king will fly.

*K. Hen.* Peace thou! and give king Henry leave to speak [him, lords;

*War.* Plantagenet shall speak first;—hear And be you silent and attentive too,

For he, that interrupts him, shall not live. *K. Hen.* Think'st thou, that I will leave my kingly throne,

Wherein my grandsire, and my father, sat? No: first shall war unpeople this my realm;

*Ay,* and their colours—often borne in France: And now in England, to our heart's great sorrow,—

Shall be my winding sheet.—Why faint ye lords?

*Hawks* had sometimes little bells hung on them, perhaps to dare the birds; that is, to try

them from rising.

† Since.



' My title's good, and better far than his.

*War.* But prove it, Henry, and thou shalt be king. [the crown.

*K. Hen.* Henry the fourth by conquest got York. 'Twas by rebellion against his king.

*K. Hen.* I know not what to say; my title's weak.

Tell me, may not a king adopt an heir?

*York.* What then? [king:

' *K. Hen.* An if he may, then am I lawful

' For Richard, in the view of many lords,  
Resign'd the crown to Henry the fourth;  
Whose heir my father was, and I am his.

*York.* He rose against him, being his sovereign,

And made him to resign his crown perforce.

*War.* Suppose, my lords, he did it unconstrain'd,

Think you, 'twere prejudicial to his crown\*?

*Ere.* No; for he could not so resign his crown, [reign.

But that the next heir should succeed and

*K. Hen.* Art thou against us, duke of Exeter? [don me.

*Ere.* His is the right, and therefore par-

\* *York.* Why whisper you, my lords, and answer not? [king.

*Ere.* My conscience tells me he is lawful

*K. Hen.* All will revolt from me, and turn to him. [lay'st,

*North.* Plantagenet, for all the claim thou

Think not, that Henry shall be so deposed.

' *War.* Deposed he shall be, in despite of all. [southern power,

*North.* Thou art deceived: 'tis not thy

' Of Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk, nor of Kent,—

Which makes thee thus presumptuous and proud.—

Can set the duke up, in despite of me.

*Clif.* King Henry, be thy title right or wrong,

Lord Clifford vows to fight in thy defence:

May that ground gape, and swallow me alive,

' Where I shall kneel to him that slew my father! [my heart!

' *K. Hen.* O Clifford, how thy words revive

*York.* Henry of Lancaster, resign thy crown:

What matter you, or what conspire you, lords?

*War.* Do right unto this princely duke of York;

Or I will fill the house with armed men,

And, o'er the chair of state, where now he sits,

Write up his title with usurping blood.

[He stamps, and the Soldiers show themselves.

' *K. Hen.* My lord of Warwick, hear me but one word;—

' Let me, for this my life-time, reign as king.

*York.* Confirm the crown to me, and to mine heirs,

And thou shalt reign in quiet while thou liv'st.

*K. Hen.* I am content: Richard Plantagenet,

Enjoy the kingdom after my decease.

*Clif.* What wrong is this unto the prince your son? [himself?

*War.* What good is this to England, and

*West.* Base, fearful, and despairing Henry!

' *Clif.* How hast thou injured both thyself and us!

*West.* I cannot stay to hear these articles.

*North.* Nor I.

*Clif.* Come, cousin, let us tell the queen these news. [rate king,

\* *West.* Farewell, faint-hearted and degenerate

\* In whose cold blood no spark of honour bides. [York,

*North.* Be thou a prey unto the house of

' And die in bands for this unmanly deed!

*Clif.* In dreadful war may'st thou be overcome!

Or live in peace, abandoned and despised!

[*Exeunt NORTH., CLIF., and WEST*

\* *War.* Turn this way, Henry, and regard them not. [not yield.

*Ere.* They seek revenge, and therefore will

*K. Hen.* Ah, Exeter!

*War.* Why should you sigh, my lord?

*K. Hen.* Not for myself, lord Warwick, but my son,

Whom I unnaturally shall disinherit.

But, be it as it may:—I here entail [ever;

The crown to thee and to thine heirs for

Conditionally, that here thou take an oath

To cease this civil war, and, whilst I live,

To honour me as thy king and sovereign;

\* And neither by treason, nor hostility,

\* To seek to put me down, and reign thyself.

*York.* This oath I willingly take, and will perform. [*Coming from the Throne.*

*War.* Long live king Henry!—Plantagenet, embrace him. [forward sons!

' *K. Hen.* And long live thou, and these thy

*York.* Now York and Lancaster are reconciled. [them foes.

*Ere.* Accursed be he that seeks to make

[*Senet. The Lords come forward.*

' *York.* Farewell, my gracious lord; I'll to my castle. [diert.

*War.* And I'll keep London, with my soldiers.

*Norf.* And I to Norfolk, with my followers. [came.

*Mont.* And I unto the sea, from whence I

[*Exeunt YORK, and his Sons, WARWICK, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE, Soldiers, and Attendants.*

\* *K. Hen.* And I, with grief and sorrow, to the court.

*Enter Queen MARGARET and the Prince of Wales.*

*Ere.* Here comes the queen, whose looks I'll steal away. [bewray + her anger:

*K. Hen.* Exeter, so will I. [*Going.*

' *Q. Mar.* Nay, go not from me, I will follow thee. [will stay.

*K. Hen.* Be patient, gentle queen, and I

' *Q. Mar.* Who can be patient in such extremes? [maid,

\* Ah, wretched man! would I had died

\* And never seen thee, never borne thee son,

\* Seeing thou hast proved so unnatural a father!

\* Hath he deserved to lose his birthright thus?

\* Hadst thou but loved him half so well as I;

\* i. e., Detrimental to the general rights of hereditary royalty. † Betray, discover.

- Or felt that pain which I did for him once;
- Or nourish'd him, as I did with my blood;
- Thou wouldest have left thy dearest heart-blood there, [heir,
- Rather than made that savage duke thine
- And disinherited thine only son.

- \* *Prince.* Father, you cannot disinherit me:
- If you be king, why should not I succeed?
- \* *K. Hen.* Pardon me, Margaret;—pardon me, sweet son;— [me.
- The earl of Warwick, and the duke, enforced
- Q. Mar.* Enforced thee! art thou king, and wilt be forced? [wretch!

- I shame to hear thee speak. Ah, timorous
- Thou hast undone thyself, thy son, and me;
- And given unto the house of York such head,
- As thou shalt reign but by their sufferance.
- To entail him and his heirs unto the crown,
- What is it, but to make thy sepulchre,
- And creep into it far before thy time?

- Warwick is chancellor, and the lord of Calais; [seas;

Stern Faulconbridge commands the narrow  
The duke is made protector of the realm;

- And yet shalt thou be safe? \* such safety finds
- The trembling lamb, environed with wolves.
- Had I been there, which am a silly woman,
- The soldiers should have toss'd me on their pikes,

- Before I would have granted to that act.
- But thou prefer'st thy life before thine honour:

- And seeing thou dost, I here divorce myself,
- Both from thy table, Henry, and thy bed,
- Until that act of parliament be repeal'd,
- Whereby my son is disinherited.

The northern lords, that have forsworn thy  
colours, [spread:

- Will follow mine, if once they see them
- And spread they shall be, to thy foul disgrace,
- And utter ruin of the house of York.

- Thus do I leave thee:—Come, son, let's away;
- Our army's ready; come, we'll after them.

- K. Hen.* Stay, gentle Margaret, and hear me speak. [get thee gone.

- Q. Mar.* Thou hast spoke too much already;
- K. Hen.* Gentle son Edward, thou wilt stay with me?

- Q. Mar.* Ay, to be murder'd by his enemies.

- Prince.* When I return with victory from the field,

- I'll see your grace: till then, I'll follow her.

- Q. Mar.* Come, son, away; we may not linger thus.

[*Exeunt Queen MARGARET, and the Prince.*

- *K. Hen.* Poor queen! how love to me, and to her son,

- Hath made her break out into terms of rage!
- Revenged may she be on that hateful duke;

- Whose haughty spirit, winged with desire,
- Will cost my crown, and, like an empty eagle,

- Tire \* on the flesh of me, and of my son!
- The loss of those three lords torments my heart: [fair:—

- I'll write unto them, and entreat them
- Come, cousin, you shall be the messenger.

- \* *Eve.* And I, I hope, shall reconcile them all. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. A Room in Sandal Castle, near Wakefield, in Yorkshire.

*Enter EDWARD, RICHARD, and MONTAGUE.*

- *Rich.* Brother, though I be youngest, give me leave.

*Edw.* No, I can better play the orator.

*Mont.* But I have reasons strong and forcible.

*Enter York.*

- *York.* Why, how now, sons and brother, at a strife?

- What is your quarrel? how began it first?

*Edw.* No quarrel, but a slight contention.

*York.* About what? [grace, and us;

- *Rich.* About that which concerns your
- The crown of England, father, which is yours.

- *York.* Mine, boy? not till king Henry be dead. [for death.

\* *Rich.* Your right depends not on his life,

\* *Edw.* Now you are heir, therefore enjoy it now: [breathe,

- By giving the house of Lancaster leave to
- It will outrun you, father, in the end. [reign.

*York.* I took an oath, that he should quietly

*Edw.* But, for a kingdom, any oath may be broken:

- I'd break a thousand oaths to reign one year.

*Rich.* No; God forbid, your grace should be forsworn.

*York.* I shall be, if I claim by open war.

*Rich.* I'll prove the contrary if you'll hear me speak.

*York.* Thou canst not, son; it is impossible.

- *Rich.* An oath is of no moment, being not
- Before a true and lawful magistrate, [took

• That hath authority over him that swears:

• Henry had none, but did usurp the place;

• Then, seeing 'twas he that made you to depose,

• Your oath, my lord, is vain and frivolous.

• Therefore, to arms. \* And, father, do but think,

\* How sweet a thing it is to wear a crown;

\* Within whose circuit is Elysium,

\* And all that poets feign of bliss and joy.

\* Why do we linger thus? I cannot rest,

\* Until the white rose, that I wear, be dyed

\* Even in the lukewarm blood of Henry's heart.

• *York.* Richard, enough; I will be king, or die.—

• Brother, thou shalt to London presently,

• And whet on Warwick to this enterprise.—

• Thou, Richard, shalt unto the duke of Norfolk,

• And tell him privily of our intent.—

• You, Edward, shall unto my lord Cobham,

With whom the Kentishmen will willingly rise:

• In them I trust; for they are soldiers,

• Witty, and courteous, liberal, full of spirit.—

• While you are thus employ'd, what resteth

But that I seek occasion how to rise; [more,

• And yet the king not privy to my drift,

Nor any of the house of Lancaster?

*Enter a Messenger.*

- But, stay; What news? Why comest thou in such post?

*Mess.* The queen, with all the northern earls and lords,

Intend here to besiege you in your castle;

She is hard by with twenty thousand men;

And therefore fortify your hold, my lord.

*York.* Ay, with my sword. What! think'st thou that we fear them?—

Edward and Richard, you shall stay with me;

My brother Montague shall post to London:

Let noble Warwick, Cobham, and the rest,

Whom we have left protectors of the king,

With powerful policy strengthen themselves,

And trust not simple Henry, nor his oaths.

*Mont.* Brother, I go; I'll win them, fear I not:

And thus most humbly I do take my leave.

[Exit.

Enter Sir JOHN and Sir HUGH MORTIMER.

*York.* Sir John, and Sir Hugh Mortimer, mine uncles!

You are come to Sandal in a happy hour;

The army of the queen mean to besiege us.

*Sir John.* She shall not need, we'll meet her in the field.

*York.* What, with five thousand men?

*Rich.* Ay, with five hundred, father, for a need.

A woman's general! What should we fear?

[A March afar off.

*Edw.* I hear their drums; let's set our men in order;

And issue forth, and bid them battle straight.

*York.* Five men to twenty!—though the odds be great,

I doubt not, uncle, of our victory.

Many a battle have I won in France,

Whenas the enemy hath been ten to one;

Why should I not now have the like success?

[Alarum. Exeunt.

SCENE III. Plains near Sandal Castle.

Alarums: Excursions. Enter RUTLAND, and his Tutor.

*Rut.* Ah, whither shall I fly to 'scape their hands!

Ah, Tutor, look, where bloody Clifford comes!

Enter CLIFFORD and Soldiers.

*Clif.* Chaplain, away! thy priesthood saves thy life.

As for the brat of this accursed duke,

Whose father slew my father,—he shall die.

*Tut.* And I, my lord, will bear him company.

*Clif.* Soldiers, away with him. [cent child,

*Tut.* Ah, Clifford! murder not this innocent: Lest thou be hated both of God and man.

[Exit, forced off by Soldiers.

*Clif.* How now! is he dead already? Or, is it fear,

That makes him close his eyes?—I'll open

*Rut.* So looks the pent-up lion o'er the wretch

That trembles under his devouring paws:

And so he walks, insulting o'er his prey;

And so he comes to rend his limbs asunder.—

Ah, gentle Clifford, kill me with thy sword, And not with such a cruel threatening look.

Sweet Clifford, hear me speak before I die;— I am too mean a subject for thy wrath,

Be thou revenged on men, and let me live.

*Clif.* In vain thou speak'st, poor boy; my father's blood

Hath stopp'd the passage where thy words

*Rut.* Then let my father's blood open it again;

He is a man, and, Clifford, cope with him.

*Clif.* Had I thy brethren here, their lives,

Were not revenge sufficient for me; [an] thine,

No, if I digg'd up thy forefathers' graves,

And hung their rotten coffins up in chains,

It could not slake mine ire, nor ease my heart.

The sight of any of the house of York

Is as a fury to torment my soul;

And till I root out their accursed line,

And leave not one alive, I live in hell.

Therefore— [Lifting his Hand.

*Rut.* O, let me pray before I take my death:

To thee I pray, Sweet Clifford, pity me!

*Clif.* Such pity as my rapier's point affords.

*Rut.* I never did thee harm, Why wilt thou slay me?

*Clif.* Thy father hath.

*Rut.* But 'twas ere I was born.

Thou hast one son, for his sake pity me;

Lest, in revenge thereof,—sith \* God is just,—

He be as miserably slain as I.

Ah, let me live in prison all my days;

And when I give occasion of offence,

Then let me die, for now thou hast no cause.

*Clif.* No cause?

Thy father slew my father; therefore, die.

[CLIFFORD slabs him.

*Rut.* *Dii faciant, laudis summa sit ista tua!*†

*Clif.* Plantagenet! I come, Plantagenet!

And this thy son's blood cleaving to my blade,

Shall rust upon my weapon, till thy blood,

Congeal'd with this, do make me wipe off

both. [Exit.

SCENE IV. The same.

Alarum. Enter YORK.

*York.* The army of the queen hath got the field:

My uncles both are slain in rescuing me;

And all my followers to the eager foe

Turn back, and fly, like ships before the wind,

Or lambs pursued by hunger-starved wolves.

My sons—God knows what hath bechanced

them: [selves

But this I know,—they have demean'd them

Like men born to renown, by life, or death.

Three times did Richard make a lane to me,

And thrice cried,—*Courage, father! fight it!*

And full as oft came Edward to my side, [out]

With purple fatchion, painted to the hilt

In blood of those that had encounter'd him:

And when the hardest warriors did retire,

Richard cried,—*Charge! and give no foot of*

ground! [tomb]

And cried,—*A crown, or else a glorious*

*A sceptre, or an earthly sepulchre!*

With this, we charged again: but out, alas!

\* Since.

† Heaven grant this may be your greatest boast.—Ovid. Epist.



\* We boded \* again; as I have seen a swan  
 With bootless labour swim against the tide,  
 And spend her strength with over-matching  
 waves. [A short Alarum within.]

\* Ah, hark! the fatal followers do pursue;  
 \* And I am faint, and cannot fly their fury:  
 \* And were I strong I would not shun their fury:  
 \* The sands are number'd, that make up my  
 life;

\* Here must I stay, and here my life must end.  
*Enter Queen MARGARET, CLIFFORD,*  
*NORTHUMBERLAND, and Soldiers.*

\* Come, bloody Clifford,—rough Northumber-  
 land,—

I dare your quenchless fury to more rage;  
 \* I am your butt, and I abide your shot.

*North.* Yield to our mercy, proud Plan-  
 tagenet.

*Clif.* Ay, to such mercy, as his ruthless arm,  
 With downright payment, show'd unto my  
 father.

Now Phaëton hath tumbled from his car,  
 And made an evening at the noontide prick†.

*York.* My ashes, as the Phoenix, may bring  
 forth

\* A bird that will revenge upon you all:  
 \* And, in that hope, I throw mine eyes to  
 heaven,

Scorning what'er you can afflict me with.  
 \* Why come you not? what! multitudes, and  
 fear? [no further;

*Clif.* So cowards fight, when they can fly  
 \* So doves do peck the falcon's piercing tal-  
 ons;

So desperate thieves, all hopeless of their lives,  
 Breathe out invectives 'gainst the officers.

*York.* O, Clifford, but bethink thee once  
 again,

\* And in thy thought o'er-run my former time:  
 \* And, if thou canst for blushing, view this  
 face; [cowardice,

And bite thy tongue, that slanders him with  
 \* Whose frown hath made thee faint and fly  
 ere this. [word;

*Clif.* I will not bandy with thee word for  
 But buckle with the blows, twice two for one.

[Draws.]

*Q. Mar.* Hold, valiant Clifford! for a thou-  
 sand causes,

I would prolong awhile the traitor's life:—  
 Wrath makes him deaf: speak thou, Northum-  
 berland. [so much,

*North.* Hold, Clifford; do not honour him  
 To prick thy finger, though to wound his heart:

What valour were it, when a cur doth grin,  
 For one to thrust his hand between his teeth,

When he might spurn him with his foot away?  
 It is war's prize to take all vantages;

\* And ten to one is no impeach of valour.  
 [They lay hands on YORK, who struggles.]

*Clif.* Ay, ay, so strives the woodcock with  
 the gin.

*North.* So doth the coney struggle in the net.  
 [YORK is taken prisoner.]

*York.* So triumph thieves upon their con-  
 quer'd booty; [match'd.

So true men† yield, with robbers so o'er-  
 North. What would your grace have done  
 unto him now? [Northumberland,

*Q. Mar.* Brave warriors, Clifford, and  
 Come make him stand upon this molehill here;  
 \* That raught‡ at mountains with outstretched  
 arms,

Yet parted but the shadow with his hand.—  
 \* What! was it you, that would be England's  
 king?

Was't you that revell'd in our parliament,  
 And made a preachment of your high descent?  
 Where are your mess of sons to back you now?  
 The wanton Edward, and the lusty George?  
 \* And where's that valiant crook-back prodigy,  
 Dicky your boy, that, with his grumbling  
 voice,

Was wont to cheer his dad in mutinies?  
 Or, with the rest, where is your darling Rut-  
 land? [blood

Look, York; I stain'd this napkin|| with the  
 That valiant Clifford, with his rapier's point,  
 Made issue from the bosom of the boy:  
 And, if thine eyes can water at his death,  
 I give thee this to dry thy cheeks withal.

\* Alas, poor York! but that I hate thee deadly,  
 I should lament thy miserable state.  
 I pry'thee, grieve, to make me merry, York;  
 Stamp, rave, and fret, that I may sing and  
 dance. [trails,

What, hath thy fiery heart so parch'd thine en-  
 That not a tear can fall for Rutland's death?

\* Why art thou patient, man? thou shouldst  
 be mad; [thes.

\* And I, to make thee mad, do mock thee  
 Thou would'st be feed'd, I see, to make me  
 sport;

York cannot speak, unless he wear a crown.  
 A crown for York;—and, lords, bow low to  
 him.—

Hold up his hands, whilst I do set it on.—  
 [Putting a paper Crown on his Head,

Ay, marry, sir, now looks he like a king!  
 Ay, this is he that took king Henry's chair;  
 And this is he was his adopted heir.—  
 But how is it that great Plantagenet  
 Is crown'd so soon, and broke his solemn oath?  
 As I bethink me, you should not be king,  
 Till our king Henry had shook hands with  
 death.

And will you pale¶ your head in Henry's glory  
 And rob his temples of the diadem,  
 Now in his life, against your holy oath?  
 O, 'tis a fault too too unpardonable!—  
 Off with the crown; and, with the crown,  
 his head; [dead\*\*

And, whilst we breathe, take time to do him  
 Clif. That is my office, for my father's sake  
 Q. Mar. Nay, stay; let's hear the orisons  
 he makes.

York. She-wolf of France, but worse tha  
 wolves of France,

\* i. e., We boggled, made bad, or bungling work of our attempt to rally.

† Noontide point on the dial.

‡ Honest men.

§ Reached.

Handkerchief.

¶ Impale, encircle with a crown.

\*\* Kill him

Whose tongue more poisons than the adder's  
How ill-beseeming is it in thy sex, [tooth!  
To triumph like an Amazonian trull,  
' Upon their woes, whom fortune captivates?  
But thy face is, visor like, unchanging,  
Made impudent with use of evil deeds,  
I would assay, proud queen, to make thee blush:  
To tell thee whence thou camest, of whom de-  
rived, [not shameless.  
Were shame enough to shame thee, wert thou  
Thy father bears the type \* of king of Naples,  
Of both the Sicils, and Jerusalem;  
Yet not so wealthy as an English yeoman.  
Hath that poor monarch taught thee to insult?  
It needs not, nor it boots thee not, proud  
queen;

Unless the adage must be verified,—  
That beggars, mounted, run their horse to  
death.

'Tis beauty, that doth oft make women proud;  
But, God he knows, thy share thereof is small;  
'Tis virtue, that doth make them most admired;  
The contrary doth make thee wonder'd at:  
'Tis government† that makes them seem di-  
vine; .

The want thereof makes thee abominable:  
Thou art as opposite to every good,  
As the Antipodes are unto us,  
Or as the south to the septentrion‡.  
O, tiger's heart, wrapp'd in a woman's hide!  
How could'st thou drain the life-blood of the  
To bid the father wipe his eyes withal, [child,  
And yet be seen to bear a woman's face?  
Women are soft, mild, pitiful, and flexible;  
'Thou stern, obdurate, flinty, rough, remorse-  
less. [wish:

' Bid'st thou me rage? why, now thou hast thy  
' Would'st have me weep? why, now thou  
hast thy will:

' For raging wind blows up incessant showers,  
And, when the rage allays, the rain begins.  
These tears are my sweet Rutland's obsequies;  
' And every drop cries vengeance for his  
death,— [French-woman.

' 'Gainst thee, fell Clifford,—and thee, false

North. Beshrew me, but his passions § move  
me so,

That hardly can I check my eyes from tears.

York. That face of his the hungry cannibals  
Would not have touch'd, would not have  
stain'd with blood:

But you are more inhuman, more inexorable,  
O, ten times more,—than tigers of Hyrcania.  
See, ruthless queen, a hapless father's tears:  
This cloth thou dipp'dst in blood of my sweet  
boy,

And I with tears do wash the blood away.

Keep thou the napkin, and go boast of this:

[Hegives back the Handkerchief.

And, if thou tell'st the heavy story right,  
Upon my soul, the hearers will shed tears;  
Yea, even my foes will shed fast-falling tears,  
And say,—Alas, it was a piteous deed!—  
There, take the crown, and, with the crown

my curse;

And, in thy need, such comfort come to thee,  
As now I reap at thy too cruel hand!—

Hard-hearted Clifford, take me from the  
world;

My soul to heaven, my blood upon your heads!

North. Had he been slaughter-man to all  
my kin,

' I should not for my life but weep with him,  
To see how inly sorrow gripes his soul.

Q. Mar. What, weeping-ripe, my lord  
Northumberland?

Think but upon the wrong he did us all,  
And that will quickly dry thy melting tears.

Clif. Here's for my oath, here's for my fa-  
ther's death. [Stabbing him.

Q. Mar. And here's to right our gentle-  
hearted king. [Stabbing him

York. Open thy gate of mercy, gracious  
God!

' My soul flies through these wounds to seek  
out thee. [Dies.

Q. Mar. Off with his head, and set it on  
York gates;

So York may overlook the town of York.  
[Exeunt.

## ACT II.

SCENE I. A Plain near Mortimer's Cross  
in Herefordshire.

Drums. Enter EDWARD and RICHARD,  
with their Forces, marching.

Edw. I wonder, how our princely father  
'scaped;

\* Or whether he be 'scaped away, or no,

\* From Clifford's and Northumberland's pur-  
suit; [the news;

\* Had he been ta'en, we should have heard  
Had he been slain, we should have heard the  
news; [have heard

\* Or, had he 'scaped, methinks, we should

\* The happy tidings of his good escape.—

' How fares my brother? why is he so sad?

Rich. I cannot joy, until I be resolved  
Where our right valiant father is become.

' I saw him in the battle range about;

' And watch'd him, how he singled Clifford  
forth, [troop

' Methought, he bore him ||, in the thickest  
As doth a lion in a herd of neat ¶;

\* Or as a bear, encompass'd round with dogs;

\* Who having pinch'd a few, and made them  
cry,

' The rest stand all aloof, and bark at him.

\* So far'd our father with his enemies;

' So fled his enemies my warlike father;

' Methinks, 'tis prize enough to be his son

\* The distinguishing mark. † Government, in the language of the time, signified evenness  
of temper, and decency of manners. ‡ The north. § Sufferings.

¶ Deceived himself.

¶ Neat cattle, cows, oxen, &c.

See, how the morning opes her golden gates,  
And takes her farewell of the glorious sun\*!

\* How well resembles it the prime of youth,  
\* Trimm'd like a younker, prancing to his love!

*Edw.* Dazzle mine eyes, or do I see three  
*Rich.* Three glorious suns, each one a perfect sun;

Not separated with the racking clouds†,  
But severed in a pale clear-shining sky. [kiss,  
See, see! they join, embrace, and seem to  
As if they vow'd some league inviolable:  
Now are they but one lamp, one light, one  
In this the heaven figures some event. [sun.

\* *Edw.* 'Tis wondrous strange, the like yet  
never heard of.

I think, it cites us, brother, to the field;  
That we, the sons of brave Plantagenet,  
Each one already blazing by our meeds‡,  
Should, notwithstanding, join our lights together,

And over-shine the earth, as this the world.  
\* Whate'er it bodes, henceforward will I bear  
Upon my target three fair shining suns.

\* *Rich.* Nay, bear three daughters;—by  
your leave I speak it.

\* You love the breeder better than the male.

*Enter a Messenger.*

But what art thou, whose heavy looks foretel  
Some dreadful story hanging on thy tongue?

*Mess.* Ah, one that was a woful looker on,  
When as the noble duke of York was slain,

\* Your princely father, and my loving lord.

\* *Edw.* O, speak no more! for I have heard  
too much. [all.

\* *Rich.* Say how he died, for I will hear it

\* *Mess.* Environed he was with many foes;

\* And stood against them as the hope of Troy;

\* Against the Greeks, that would have entered  
Troy.

\* But Hercules himself must yield to odds;

\* And many strokes, though with a little axe,

\* Hew down and fell the hardest timber'd oak.

\* By many hands your father was subdued;

\* But only slaughter'd by the ireful arm

\* Of unrelenting Clifford, and the queen:

\* Who crown'd the gracious duke in high des-  
pise; [wept,

\* Laugh'd in his face; and, when with grief he

\* The ruthless queen gave him, to dry his  
cheeks,

A napkin steeped in the harmless blood,

\* Of sweet young Rutland, by rough Clifford  
slain:

\* And, after many scorns, many foul taunts,

\* They took his head, and on the gates of York

\* They set the same; and there it doth remain,

\* The saddest spectacle that e'er I view'd.

*Edw.* Sweet duke of York, our prop to lean  
upon;

\* Now thou art gone, we have no staff, no  
stay!— [slain

\* O Clifford, boist'rous Clifford, thou hast

\* The flower of Europe for his chivalry;

\* And treacherously hast thou vanquish'd him,

For, hand to hand, he would have vanquish'd  
thee!—

Now my soul's palace is become a prison:

Ah, would she break from hence! that this  
my body

\* Might in the ground be closed up in rest:

\* For never henceforth shall I joy again,

\* Never, O never, shall I see more joy.

\* *Rich.* I cannot weep; for all my body's  
moisture [heart:

Scarce serves to quench my furnace-burning

\* Nor can my tongue unload my heart's great  
burden; [withal,

\* For self-same wind, that I should speak

\* Is kindling coals, that fire all my breast,

\* And burn me up with flames, that tears  
would quench.

\* To weep, is to make less the depth of grief:

\* Tears, then, for babes; blows, and revenge  
for me!—

\* Richard, I bear thy name, I'll venge thy death  
Or die renowned by attempting it.

*Edw.* His name that valiant duke hath left  
with thee;

\* His dukedom and his chair with me is left.

*Rich.* Nay, if thou be that princely eagle's  
bird,

Show thy descent by gazing 'gainst the sun:

For chair and dukedom, throne and kingdom  
say;

Either that is thine, or else thou wert not his.

*March.* *Enter WARWICK and MONTAGUE,*  
*with Forces.*

*War.* How now, fair lords? What fare?  
what news abroad? [recount

\* *Rich.* Great lord of Warwick, if we should  
Our baleful news, and, at each word's deliver-  
ance,

Stab poniards in our flesh till all were told,  
The words would add more anguish than the  
wounds.

O valiant lord, the duke of York is slain.

*Edw.* O Warwick! Warwick! that Plan-  
tagenet, [tion,

Which held thee dearly, as his soul's redemp-  
Is by the stern lord Clifford done to death||.

*War.* Ten days ago I drown'd these news  
in tears:

And now, to add more measure to your woes,  
I come to tell you things since then befall'n.

After the bloody fray at Wakefield fought,  
Where your brave father breathed his latest

gasp,

Tidings, as swiftly as the posts could run,  
Were brought me of your loss, and his depart.

I then in London, keeper of the king,  
Must'rd my soldiers, gather'd flocks of friends

And very well appointed, as I thought,

March'd towards Saint Alban's to intercept  
the queen,

Bearing the king in my behalf along:

For by my scouts I was advis'd,

That she was coming with a full intent

To dash our late decree in parliament,

\* Aurora takes for a time her farewell of the sun, when she dismisses him to his diurnal course  
† i. e., The clouds in rapid tumultuary motion. ‡ Merit. § Hector. || Killed.



Touching king Henry's oath, and your succession.

Short tale to make,—we at Saint Alban's met,  
Our battles join'd, and both sides fiercely fought:

But, whether 'twas the coldness of the king,  
Who look'd full gently on his warlike queen,  
That robb'd my soldiers of their hated spleen;  
Or whether 'twas report of her success;  
Or more than common fear of Clifford's rigour,  
'Who thunders to his captives—blood and death  
I cannot judge: but, to conclude with truth  
Their weapons like to lightning came and went;  
Our soldiers—like the night-owl's lazy flight,  
'Or like a lazy thrasher with a flail,—  
Fell gently down, as if they struck their friends.

I cheered them up with justice of our cause,  
With promise of high pay, and great rewards:  
But all in vain; they had no heart to fight,  
And we, in them, no hope to win the day,  
So that we fled; the king, unto the queen;  
Lord George your brother, Norfolk, and myself,  
In haste, post-haste, are come to join with you;  
For in the marches here, we heard, you were,  
Making another head to fight again.

'*Edw.* Where is the duke of Norfolk, gentle Warwick? [England?]

And when came George from Burgundy to  
'*War.* Some six miles off the duke is with the soldiers:

And for your brother,—he was lately sent  
From your kind aunt, duchess of Burgundy,  
'With aid of soldiers to this needful war.

*Rich.* 'Twas odds, belike, when valiant Warwick fled:

Oft have I heard his praises in pursuit,  
But ne'er, till now, his scandal of retire.

*War.* Nor now my scandal, Richard, dost thou hear: [mine]

For thou shalt know, this strong right hand of  
Can pluck the diadem from faint Henry's head,  
And wring the awful sceptre from his fist;  
Were he as famous and as bold in war,  
As he is famed for mildness, peace, and prayer.

*Rich.* I know it well, lord Warwick; blame me not;

'Tis love, I bear thy glories, makes me speak.  
But, in this troublous time, what's to be done?  
Shall we go throw away our coats of steel,  
And wrap our bodies in black mourning gowns,  
Numbering our Ave-Maries with our beads?  
Or shall we on the helmets of our foes  
Tell our devotion with revengeful arms?  
If for the last, say—Ay, and to it, lords.

*War.* Why, therefore Warwick came to seek you out;

And therefore comes my brother Montague.  
Attend me, lords. The proud insulting queen,  
With Clifford, and the haught \* Northumberland,

And of their feather, many more proud birds,  
Have wrought the easy-melting king like wax.  
He swore consent to your succession,  
His oath enrolled in the parliament;  
And now to London all the crew are gone,

To frustrate both his oath, and what beside  
May make against the house of Lancaster.

'Their power, I think, is thirty thousand strong:

Now, if the help of Norfolk, and myself,  
With all the friends that thou, brave earl of March,

Amongst the loving Welshmen canst procure,  
'Will but amount to five and twenty thousand,  
Why, *Via!* to London will we march again;  
And once again bestride our foaming steeds,  
'And once again cry—Charge upon our foes;  
But never once again turn back, and fly.

*Rich.* Ay, now, methinks, I hear great Warwick speak:

Ne'er may he live to see a sunshine day,  
'That cries—Retire, if Warwick bid him stay.

*Edw.* Lord Warwick, on thy shoulder will I lean; [hour!]

'And when thou fall'st, (as God forbid the  
Must Edward fall, which peril heaven fore-  
fend! [York:]

*War.* No longer earl of March, but duke of  
'The next degree is, England's royal throne:  
For king of England shalt thou be proclaim'd  
In every borough as we pass along;

And he that throws not up his cap for joy,  
'Shall for the fault make forfeit of his head.

King Edward, valiant Richard, Montague,  
Stay we no longer dreaming of renown,  
'But sound the trumpets, and about our task.

\* *Rich.* Then, Clifford, were thy heart as hard as steel,

\* (As thou hast shewn it flinty by thy deeds)

\* I come to pierce it, or to give thee mine.

\* *Edw.* Then strike up, drums;—God, and Saint George, for us!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*War.* How now? what news? [by me,  
*Mess.* The duke of Norfolk sends you word

The queen is coming with a puissant host;  
And craves your company for speedy counsel.

'*War.* Why then it sorts†, brave warriors:  
Let's away. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. Before York.

*Enter King HENRY, Queen MARGARET, the Prince of WALES, CLIFFORD, and NORTHUMBERLAND, with Forces.*

*Q. Mar.* Welcome, my lord, to this brave town of York.

Yonder's the head of that arch-enemy,  
That sought to be encompass'd with your crown: [lord?]

'Doth not the object cheer your heart, my  
'*K. Hen.* Ay, as the rocks cheer them that fear their wreck;—

To see this sight, it irks my very soul.—  
Withhold revenge, dear God! 'tis not my fault,  
Not wittingly have I infringed my vow.

*Clif.* My gracious liege, this too much lenity  
And harmful pity, must be laid aside.  
To whom do lions cast their gentle look?†  
Not to the beast that would usurp their den.  
Whose hand is that the forest bear doth lick?  
Not his, that spoils her young before her face.

\* Lofty.

† Why then things are as they should be.

‡ Foolishly.

Who 'scapes the lurking serpent's mortal sting?  
Not he, that sets his foot upon her back.

The smallest worm will turn, being trodden on;  
[brood.

And doves will peck, in safeguard of their  
Ambitious York did level at thy crown,  
Thou smiling, while he knit his angry brows:  
He, but a duke, would have his son a king,  
And raise his issue, like a loving sire;  
Thou, being a king, bless'd with a goodly son,  
Didst yield consent to disinherit him,  
' Which argued thee a most unloving father.  
Unreasonable creatures feed their young:  
And though man's face be fearful to their eyes,  
Yet, in protection of their tender ones,  
Who hath not seen them (even with those  
wings [flight,

Which sometime they have used with fearful  
Make war with him that climb'd unto their  
nest, [fence?

Offering their own lives in their young's de-  
For shame, my liege, make them your prece-  
Were it not pity that this goodly boy [dent!  
Should lose his birthright by his father's fault;  
And long hereafter say unto his child,—  
*What my great-grandfather and grandsire  
My careless father fondly\* gave away?* [got,  
Ah, what a shame were this! Look on the boy;  
And let his manly face, which promiseth  
Successful fortune, steel thy melting heart,  
To hold thine own, and leave thine own with  
him. [orator,

*K. Hen.* Full well hath Clifford play'd the  
Infering arguments of mighty force. [hear,—  
' But, Clifford, tell me, didst thou never  
That things ill got had ever bad success?

And happy always was it for that son,  
Whose father for his hoarding went to hell?  
I'll leave my son my virtuous deeds behind;  
And 'would, my father had left me no more!  
For all the rest is held at such a rate,

' As brings a thousand-fold more care to keep,  
' Than in possession any jot of pleasure. [know,  
Ah, cousin York! 'would thy best friends did  
' How it doth grieve me that thy head is here!

*Q. Mar.* My lord, cheer up your spirits;  
our foes are nigh, [faint.

' And this soft courage makes your followers  
' You promised knighthood to our forward son;  
' Unsheath your sword, and dub him pre-  
rently.—Edward, kneel down.

*K. Hen.* Edward Plantagenet, arise a knight;  
And learn this lesson,—Draw thy sword in  
right. [leave,

*Prince.* My gracious father, by your kingly  
I'll draw it as apparent to the crown,  
And in that quarrel use it to the death. [prince,

*Clif.* Why, that is spoken like a toward  
*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Royal commanders, be in readiness:  
' For, with a band of thirty thousand men,  
Comes Warwick, backing of the duke of  
York;

And, in the towns as they do march along,  
Proclaims him king, and many fly to him:  
Darraign your battlet, for they are at hand.

*Clif.* I would, your highness would depart  
the field; [sent.

The queen hath best success when you are ab-  
*Q. Mar.* Ay, good my lord, and leave us to  
our fortune. [fore I'll stay.

*K. Hen.* Why, that's my fortune too; there-  
*North.* Be it with resolution then to fight.

*Prince.* My royal father, cheer these noble  
lords,

And hearten those that fight in your defence:  
Unsheath your sword, good father; cry, *Saint  
George!*

*March.* *Enter* EDWARD, GEORGE, RICH-  
ARD, WARWICK, NORFOLK, MONTAGUE,  
and Soldiers.

*Edw.* Now, perjured Henry! wilt thou kneel  
' And set thy diadem upon my head; [for grace,  
' Or bid the mortal fortune of the field?

*Q. Mar.* Go, rate thy minions, proud in-  
sulting boy!

' Becomes it thee to be thus bold in terms,  
' Before thy sovereign, and thy lawful king?

*Edw.* I am his king, and he should bow his  
I was adopted heir by his consent: [knee;  
Since when, his oath is broke; for, as I hear,  
You—that are king, though he do wear the  
crown,—

Have caused him, by new act of parliament,  
' To blot out me, and put his own son in.

*Clif.* And reason too;  
Who should succeed the father, but the son?

' *Rich.* Are you there, butcher?—O, I can-  
not speak! [swer thee,

' *Clif.* Ay, crook-back; here I stand, to an-  
' Or any he the proudest of thy sort.

*Rich.* 'Twas you that kill'd young Rutland,  
was it not? [fied.

*Clif.* Ay, and old York, and yet not satis-  
*Rich.* For God's sake, lords, give signal to  
the fight. [yield the crown?

*War.* What say'st thou, Henry, wilt thou  
*Q. Mar.* Why, how now, long-tongued  
Warwick? dare you speak?

When you and I met at Saint Alban's last,  
Your legs did better service than your hands.

*War.* Then 'twas my turn to fly, and now  
'tis thine. [yon fled.

*Clif.* You said so much before, and yet  
*War.* 'Twas not your valour, Clifford, drove  
me thence. [make you stay.

' *North.* No, nor your manhood, that durst  
*Rich.* Northumberland, I hold thee re-  
verently;—

Break off the parle; for scarce I can refrain  
The execution of my big-sworn heart  
Upon that Clifford, that cruel child-killer.

*Clif.* I slew thy father: Call'st thou him a  
child? [coward,

*Rich.* Ay, like a dastard, and a treacherous  
As thou didst kill our tender brother Rutland;  
But, ere sun-set, I'll make thee curse the deed.

*K. Hen.* Have done with words, my lords,  
and hear me speak. [thy lips.

*Q. Mar.* Defy them then, or else hold close  
*K. Hen.* I pr'ythee, give no limits to my  
tongue.

\* Foolishly.

† i. e., Arrange your host, put your host in order.

I am a king, and privileged to speak.

*Clif.* My liege, the wound, that bred this  
meeting here,

Cannot be cured by words; therefore be still.

*Rich.* Then, executioner, unsheath thy sword:  
By Him that made us all, I am resolved\*,

'That Clifford's manhood lies upon his tongue.

*Edu.* Say, Henry, shall I have my right,  
or no?

A thousand men have broke their fasts to-day,  
That ne'er shall dine, unless thou yield the  
crown. [head;

*War.* If thou deny, their blood upon thy  
For York in justice puts his armour on.

*Prince.* If that be right, which Warwick  
says is right,

There is no wrong, but every thing is right.

*Rich.* Whoever got thee, there thy mother  
stands;

For, well I wot, thou hast thy mother's tongue.

*Q. Mar.* But thou art neither like thy sire,  
But like a foul misshapen stigmatic, [nor dam;  
Mark'd by the destinies† to be avoided,  
'As venom toads, or lizards' dreadful stings.

*Rich.* Iron of Naples, hid with English gilt ‡,  
Whose father bears the title of a king,  
(As if a channel; should be call'd the sea,)

'Shamest thou not, knowing whence thou art  
extraught,

'To let thy tongue detect thy base-born heart ||?

*Edu.* A wisp of straw were worth a thou-  
sand crowns,

To make this shameless callet¶ know herself.—

\* Helen of Greece was fairer far than thou,

\* Although thy husband may be Menelaus\*\*;

\* And ne'er was Agamemnon's brother  
wrong'd

\* By that false woman, as this king by thee.

'His father revell'd in the heart of France,  
And tamed the king, and made the Dauphin  
stoop;

And, had he match'd according to his state,  
He might have kept that glory to this day:

But, when he took a beggar to his bed,  
And graced thy poor sire with his bridal day;

'Even then that sunshine brew'd a shower for  
him [France,

'That wash'd his father's fortunes forth of  
And heap'd sedition on his crown at home.

'For what hath broach'd this tumult, but thy  
pride?

Hadst thou been meek, our title still had slept;  
And we, in pity of the gentle king.

Had slipp'd our claim until another age.

'Gen. But, when we saw our sunshine made  
thy spring;

'And that thy summer bred us no increase,  
We set the axe to thy usurping root: [selves,

And though the edge hath something hit our—  
'Yet, know thou, since we have begun to strike,

'We'll never leave, till we have hewn thee  
down,

Or bathed thy growing with our heated bloods.

*Edu.* And, in this resolution, I defy thee;

Not willing any longer conference,  
Since thou deny'st the gentle king to speak.—  
Sound trumpets!—let our bloody colours wave!  
And either victory, or else a grave.

*Q. Mar.* Stay, Edward. [longer stay:

*Edu.* No, wrangling woman; we'll no  
These words will cost ten thousand lives to-  
day.. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. A Field of Battle between  
Towton and Saxton in Yorkshire.

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter WARWICK.*

'War. Forspent with toil, as runners with a  
I lay me down a little while to breathe: [race  
For strokes received, and many blows repaid,  
Have robb'd my strong-knit sinews of their  
strength,

'And, spite of spite, needs must I rest awhile.

*Enter EDWARD, running.*

*Edu.* Smile, gentle heaven! or strike, un-  
gentle death! [clouded.

'For this world frowns, and Edward's sun is

*War.* How now, my lord? what hap? what  
hope of good?

*Enter GEORGE.*

\* Geo. Our hap is loss, our hope but sad  
despair;

'Our ranks are broke, and ruin follows us:

'What counsel give you, whither shall we fly?

*Edu.* Bootless is flight, they follow us  
with wings;

'And weak we are, and cannot shun pursuit.

*Enter RICHARD.*

'Rich. Ah, Warwick, why hast thou with-  
drawn thyself? [drunk,

'Thy brother's blood the thirsty earth hath

'Broach'd with the steely point of Clifford's  
lance:

'And, in the very pangs of death, he cried,—

'Like to a dismal clangor heard from far,—

'Warwick, revenge! brother, revenge my  
death!

'So underneath the belly of their steeds,

'That stain'd their fetlocks in his smoking  
blood,

'The noble gentleman gave up the ghost.

'War. Then let the earth be drunken with  
our blood:

I'll kill my horse, because I will not fly.

\* Why stand we like soft-hearted women here,

\* Wailing our losses, whilst the foe doth rage;

\* And look upon't, as if the tragedy [tors?

\* Were play'd in jest by counterfeiting ac-

'Here on my knee I vow to God above.

'I'll never pause again, never stand still, [mine,

'Till either death hath closed these eyes of

'Or fortune given me measure of revenge.

*Edu.* O Warwick, I do bend my knee with  
thine;

'And, in this vow, do chain my soul to thine.—

\* And, ere my knee rise from the earth's cold  
face, [Thee,

\* I throw my hands, mine eyes, my heart to

Thou setter up and plucker down of kings!

\* It is my firm persuasion. † One branded by nature. ‡ Gilt is a superficial covering  
of gold. § Kennel was then pronounced channel. || To show thy meanness of birth by  
thy indecent railing. ¶ Drab. \*\* i. e., A cuckold. †† And are mere spectators.



' I beseech thee,—if with thy will it stands,  
' That to my toes this body must be prey,—  
' Yet that thy brazen gates of heaven may ope,  
' And give sweet passage to my sinful soul!—  
' Now, lords, take leave until we meet again,  
' Where-e'er it be, in heaven, or on earth.

' *Rich.* Brother, give me thy hand;—and,  
gentle Warwick,

' Let me embrace thee in my weary arms:—  
' I, that did never weep, now melt with woe,  
' That winter should cut off our spring-time so.

' *War.* Away, away! Once more, sweet  
lords, farewell.

' *Geo.* Yet let us all together to our troops,  
' And give them leave to fly that will not stay;  
' And call them pillars, that will stand to us;  
' And, if they thrive, promise them such re-  
wards

' As victors wear at the Olympian games:  
' This may plant courage in their quailing\*  
breasts;

' For yet is hope of life, and victory.—  
' Fore-slow† no longer, make we hence again.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *The same. Another Part of  
the Field.*

*Excursions. Enter RICHARD and CLIF-  
FORD.*

' *Rich.* Now, Clifford, I have singled thee  
alone:

' Suppose, this arm is for the duke of York,  
' And this for Rutland; both bound to re-  
venge,

' Wert thou environ'd with a brazen wall.

' *Clif.* Now, Richard, I am with thee here  
alone:

This is the hand, that stabb'd thy father York;  
And this the hand that slew thy brother Rut-  
land;

And here's the heart, that triumphs in their  
And cheers these hands, that slew thy sire and  
To execute the like upon thyself; [brother,  
And so, have at thee.

[*They fight. WARWICK enters;  
CLIFFORD flies.*]

' *Rich.* Nay, Warwick, single out some  
other chase;

' For I myself will hunt this wolf to death.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *Another Part of the Field.  
Alarum. Enter King HENRY.*

\* *K. Hen.* This battle fares like to the  
morning's war, [light;

\* When dying clouds contend with growing

\* What time the shepherd, blowing of his nails,  
Can neither call it perfect day, nor night.

\* Now sways it this way, like a mighty sea,

\* Forced by the tide to combat with the wind;  
Now sways it that way, like the self-same sea

\* Forced to retire by fury of the wind: [wind;  
Sometime, the flood prevails; and then the

\* Now, one the better; then, another best;  
Both tugging to be victors, breast to breast,

Yet neither conqueror, nor conquered:

\* Sinking into dejection.

† To fore-slow is to be dilatory, to loiter.

' So is the equal poise of this fell war.

\* Here on this molehill will I sit me down.

\* To whom God will, there be the victory!

\* For Margaret my queen, and Clifford too,

\* Have chid me from the battle; swearing both,

\* They prosper best of all when I am thence.

\* 'Would I were dead! if God's good will  
were so:

\* For what is in this world, but grief and woe

\* O God! methinks, it were a happy life,

\* To be no better than a homely swain;

\* To sit upon a hill, as I do now,

\* To carve out dials quaintly, point by point,

\* Thereby to see the minutes how they run:

\* How many make the hour full complete,

\* How many hours bring about the day,

\* How many days will finish up the year,

\* How many years a mortal man may live.

\* When this is known, then to divide the times:

\* So many hours must I tend my flock;

\* So many hours must I take my rest;

\* So many hours must I contemplate;

\* So many hours must I sport myself;

\* So many days my ewes have been with  
young;

\* So many weeks ere the poor fools will yeau;

\* So many years ere I shall shear the fleece:

\* So minutes, hours, days, weeks, months, and  
years,

\* Pass'd over to the end they were created,

\* Would bring white hairs unto a quiet grave.

\* Ah, what a life were this! how sweet! how  
lovely!

\* Gives not the hawthorn bush a sweeter shade

\* To shepherds, looking on their silly sheep,

\* Than doth a rich embroider'd canopy

\* To kings, that fear their subjects' treachery?

\* O, yes it doth; a thousand fold it doth.

\* Add to conclude,—the shepherd's homely  
curds,

\* His cold thin drink out of his leather bottle,

\* His wonted sleep under a fresh tree's shade,

\* All which secure and sweetly he enjoys,

\* Is far beyond a prince's delicates,

\* His viands sparkling in a golden cup,

\* His body couched in a curious bed, [him.

\* When care, mistrust, and treason wait on  
*Alarum. Enter a Son that has killed his*

*Father, dragging in the dead Body.*

*Son.* Ill blows the wind, that profits no-  
body:—

\* This man, whom hand to hand I slew in fight,

\* May be possessed with some store of crowns:

\* And I, that haply take them from him now

\* May yet ere night yield both my life and them

\* To some man else, as this dead man doth me.

\* Who's this?—O God! it is my father's face,

\* Whom in this conflict I unware have kill'd.

\* O heavy times, begetting such events!

\* From London by the king was I press'd forth;

\* My father, being the earl of Warwick's man,

\* Came on the part of York, press'd by his  
master;

\* And I, who at his hands received my life,

\* Have by my hands of life bereaved him.—

\* Pardon me, God, I knew not what I did!—

And pardon, father, for I knew not thee!—

\* My tears shall wipe away these bloody marks; [they fill.

\* And no more words, till they have flow'd  
*K. Hen.* O piteous spectacle! O bloody times!

Whilst lions war, and battle for their dens,

\* Poor harmless lambs abide their enmity.—

\* Weep, wretched man, I'll aid thee tear for tear;

\* And let our hearts, and eyes, like civil war,

\* Be blind with tears, and break o'ercharged with grief.

*Enter a Father, who has killed his Son, with the Body in his Arms.*

\* *Fath.* Thou that so stoutly hast resisted me,

\* Give me thy gold, if thou hast any gold;

\* For I have bought it with an hundred blows.

\* But let me see:—is this our foreman's face?

\* Ah, no, no, no, it is mine only son!—

\* Ah, boy, if any life be left in thee, [arise,

\* Throw up thine eye; see, see, what showers

\* Blown with the windy tempest of my heart,

\* Upon thy wounds, that kill mine eye and heart!—

\* O, pity, God, this miserable age!—

\* What stratagems\*, how fell, how butcherly,

\* Erroneous, mutinous, and unnatural,

\* This deadly quarrel daily doth beget!—

\* O boy, thy father gave thee life too soon,

\* And hath bereft thee of thy life too late!

*K. Hen.* Woe above woe! grief more than common grief! [deeds!—

\* O, that my death would stay these ruthless

\* O pity, pity, gentle heaven, pity!—

The red rose and the white are on his face,

The fatal colours of our striving houses:

\* The one, his purple blood right well resembles; [sent:

\* The other, his pale cheeks, methinks, pre-

\* With'er one rose, and let the other flourish!

\* If you contend, a thousand lives must wither.

*Son.* How will my mother, for a father's death,

Take on with me, and ne'er be satisfied?

*Fath.* How will my wife, for slaughter of my son,

\* Shed seas of tears, and ne'er be satisfied?

\* *K. Hen.* How will the country, for these woful chances,

\* Misthink† the king, and not be satisfied?

\* *Son.* Was ever son, so rued a father's death?

\* *Fath.* Was ever father, so bemoan'd a son?

\* *K. Hen.* Was ever king, so grieved for subjects' woe? [much,

\* Much is your sorrow; mine, ten times so

\* *Son.* I'll bear thee hence, where I may weep my fill. [Exit, with the Body.

\* *Fath.* These arms of mine shall be thy winding-sheet;

\* My heart, sweet boy, shall be thy sepulchre;

\* For from my heart thine image ne'er shall go.

\* My sighing breast shall be thy funeral bell;

\* And so obsequious‡ will thy father be,

\* Sad for the loss of thee, having no more,  
 \* As Priam was for all his valiant sons. [will,  
 I'll bear thee hence; and let them fight that  
 For I have murdered where I should not kill.  
 [Exit, with the Body.

\* *K. Hen.* Sad-hearted men, much overgone with care,

\* Here sits a king more woful than you are.

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter Queen MARGARET, Prince of Wales, and EXETER.*

\* *Prince.* Fly, father, fly! for all your friends are fled,

\* And Warwick rages like a chafed bull:

\* Away! for death doth hold us in pursuit.

\* *Q. Mar.* Mount you, my lord, towards Berwick post again: [hounds

\* Edward and Richard, like a brace of grey-

\* Having the fearful flying hare in sight,

\* With fiery eyes, sparkling for very wrath,

\* And bloody steel grasp'd in their ireful hands,

\* Are at our backs; and therefore hence away!

\* *Exe.* Away! for vengeance comes along with them:

\* Nay, stay not to expostulate, make speed;

Or else come after, I'll away before.

\* *K. Hen.* Nay, take me with thee, good sweet Exeter;

\* Not that I fear to stay, but love to go

\* Whither the queen intends. Forward: [Exit.

#### SCENE VI. The same.

*A loud Alarum. Enter CLIFFORD, wounded.*

\* *Clif.* Here burns my candle out, ay, here it dies,

Which, while it lasted, gave king Henry light.

O, Lancaster! I fear thy overthrow.

More than my body's parting with my soul.

My love, and fear, glew'd many friends to thee;

\* And, now I fall, thy tough commixtures melt.

Impairing Henry, strength'ning mis-proud York,

The common people swarm like summer flies:

And whither fly the gnats, but to the sun?

And who shines now but Henry's enemies?

O Phœbus! hadst thou never given consent

That Phæton should check thy fiery steeds,

Thy burning car never had scorch'd the earth:

And, Henry, hadst thou sway'd as kings should

Or as thy father, and his father, did, [do,

Giving no ground unto the house of York,

\* They never then had sprung like summer flies;

\* I, and ten thousand in this luckless realm,

Had left no mourning widows for our death,

And thou this day hadst kept thy chair in peace.

For what doth cherish weeds but gentle air?

\* And what makes robbers bold, but too much lenity? [wounds;

Bootless are complaints, and careless are my

\* No way to fly, nor strength to hold out flight:

The foe is merciless, and will not pity;

For, at their hands, I have deserved no pity.

\* The air hath got into my deadly wounds,

\* This word here means dreadful events.

† Think unfavourably of.

‡ Careful of obsequies, or funeral rites.

And much effuse of blood doth make me faint:— [rest;

Come, York, and Richard, Warwick, and the I stab'd your father's bosoms, split my breast. [H. faints.

*Alarum and Retreat. Enter EDWARD, GEORGE, RICHARD, MONTAGUE, WARWICK, and Soldiers.*

'*Edw.* Now breathe we, lords; good fortune bids us pause,

'And smooth the frowns of war with peaceful looks.—

'Some troops pursue the bloody-minded queen;— [king,

'That led calm Henry, though he were a As doth a sail, fill'd with a fretting gust,

'Command an argosy to stem the waves. [them? But think you, lords, that Clifford fled with

*War.* No, 'tis impossible he should escape: For, though before his face I speak the words, Your brother Richard mark'd him for the grave:

'And, whereso'er he is, he's surely dead. [CLIFFORD groans, and dies.

*Edw.* Whose soul is that which takes her heavy leave? [departing\*.

*Rich.* A deadly groan, like life and death's *Edw.* See who it is: and now the battle's ended,

If friend, or foe, let him be gently used.

'*R.ch.* Revoke that doom of mercy, for 'tis Clifford;

'Who not contented that he lopp'd the branch In hewing Rutland when his leaves put forth,

'Put set his murdering knife unto the root From whence that tender spray did sweetly spring,

'I mean our princely father, duke of York. *War.* From off the gates of York fetch down the head, [there:

Your father's head, which Clifford placed Instead whereof let this supply the room;

Measure for measure must be answered. *Edw.* Bring forth that fatal screech-owl to our house,

'That nothing sung but death to us and ours: Now death shall stop his dismal threatening sound,

'And his ill-boding tongue no more shall speak. [Attendants bring the Body forward.

*War.* I think his understanding is bereft:— Speak, Clifford, dost thou know who speaks to thee?— [life,

Dark cloudy death o'ershades his beams of And he nor sees, nor hears us what we say.

*Rich.* O, 'would he did! and so, perhaps, he loth;

'Tis but his policy to counterfeit,

'Because he would avoid such bitter taunts, Which in the time of death he gave our father. [words†.

*Geo.* If so thou think'st, vex him with eager *Rich.* Clifford, ask mercy, and obtain no grace†.

*Edw.* Clifford, repent in bootless penitence. *War.* Clifford, devise excuses for thy faults.

*Geo.* While we devise fell tortures for thy faults. [to York.

'*Rich.* Thou didst love York, and I am son *Edw.* Thou pitied'st Rutland, I will pity thee. [you now?

*Geo.* Where's Captain Margaret, to fence *War.* They mock thee, Clifford! swear as thou wast wont.

'*Rich.* What, not an oath? nay, then the world goes hard, [oath:—

'When Clifford cannot spare his friends as I know by that he's dead; And, by my soul,

'If this right hand would buy two hours' life, That I in all despite might rail at him,

'This hand should chop it off; and with the issuing blood

Stifle the villain, whose unstanch'd thirst York and young Rutland could not satisfy.

*War.* Ay, but he's dead: off with the traitor's head,

And rear it in the place your father's stands.— And now to London with triumphant march,

There to be crowned England's royal king. From whence shall Warwick cut the sea to France,

And ask the lady Bona for thy queen: So shalt thou sinew both these lands together;

'And, having France thy friend, thou shalt not dread

The scatter'd foe, that hopes to rise again; For though they cannot greatly sting to hurt,

Yet look to have them buz, to offend thine First, will I see the coronation; [ears.

'And then to Brittany I'll cross the sea, To effect this marriage, so it please my lord.

*Edw.* Even as thou wilt, sweet Warwick, let it be:

\* For on thy shoulder do I build my seat;

\* And never will I undertake the thing,

\* Wherein thy counsel and consent is wanting.

'Richard, I will create thee duke of Gloster;

'And George, of Clarence;— Warwick, as himself,

'Shall do, and undo, as him pleaseth best. *Rich.* Let me be duke of Clarence; George, of Gloster;

For Gloster's dukedom is too ominous. *War.* Tut, that's a foolish observation:

Richard, be duke of Gloster: now to London To see these honours in possession. [Exeunt

\* For separation.

† Sour words; words of asperity.

‡ Favour



## ACT III.

SCENE I. *A Chase in the North of England.*

*Enter Two Keepers, with Cross-bows in their Hands.*

\* 1 *Keep.* Under this thick grown brake\*  
we'll shroud ourselves; [come;  
\* For through this laund + anon the deer will  
\* And in this covert will we make our stand,  
\* Culling the principal of all the deer.

\* 2 *Keep.* I'll stay above the hill, so both  
may shoot. [cross-bow

\* 1 *Keep.* That cannot be; the noise of thy  
\* Will scare the herd, and so my shoot is lost.  
\* Here stand we both, and aim we at the best;  
\* And, for the time shall not seem tedious,  
\* I'll tell thee what befel me on a day;  
\* In this self-place where now we mean to  
stand. [he be past.

\* 2 *Keep.* Here comes a man, let's stay till  
*Enter King HENRY, disguised, with a Prayer-book.*

*K. Hen.* From Scotland am I stol'n, even  
of pure love, [sight.

\* To greet mine own land with my wishful  
\* No, Harry, Harry, 'tis no land of thine;

\* Thy place is fill'd, thy sceptre wrung from  
thee, [anoined:

\* Thy balm wash'd off, wherewith thou wast  
No bending knee will call thee Cæsar now,  
\* No humble suitors press to speak for right,  
\* No, not a man comes for redress of thee;  
For how can I help them, and not myself?

\* 1 *Keep.* Ay, here's a deer whose skin's a  
keeper's fee:

\* This is the *quondam* king; let's seize upon  
him. [versities;

\* *K. Hen.* Let me embrace these sour ad-  
\* For wise men say, it is the wisest course.

\* 2 *Keep.* Why linger we? let us lay hands  
upon him.

\* 1 *Keep.* Forbear a while; we'll hear a  
little more.

*K. Hen.* My queen, and son, are gone to  
France for aid; [wick

And, as I hear, the great commanding War-  
\* Is thither gone, to crave the French king's  
sister

\* To wife for Edward: If this news be true,  
\* Poor queen, and son, your labour is but lost;

\* For Warwick is a subtle orator,  
\* And Lewis a prince soon won with moving  
words. [him;

\* By this account, then, Margaret may win  
\* For she's a woman to be pitied much:

\* Her sighs will make a battery in his breast;  
\* Her tears will pierce into a marble heart;

\* The tiger will be mild, while she doth mourn;  
\* And Nero will be tainted with remorse,

\* To hear, and see, her plaints, her British  
tears. [give:

\* Ay, but she's come to beg; Warwick, to  
\* He, on his left side, craving aid for Henry;

He, on his right, asking a wife for Edward.  
She weeps, and says—her Henry is deposed;

He smiles, and says—his Edward is install'd;

\* That she, poor wretch, for grief can speak  
no more: [wrong,

\* Whiles Warwick tells his title, smooths the  
\* Inferreth arguments of mighty strength;

\* And, in conclusion, wins the king from her,  
\* With promise of his sister, and what else,

\* To strengthen and support king Edward's  
place. [soul,

\* O Margaret, thus 'twill be; and thou, poor  
\* Art then forsaken, as thou went'st forlorn.

2 *Keep.* Say, what art thou, that talk'st of  
kings and queens? [I was born to:

\* *K. Hen.* More than I seem, and less than  
\* A man at least, for less I should not be;

And men may talk of kings, and why not I?

\* 2 *Keep.* Ay, but thou talk'st as if thou  
wert a king. [that's enough.

*K. Hen.* Why, so I am, in mind; and  
2 *Keep.* But, if thou be a king, where is  
thy crown? [my head,

*K. Hen.* My crown is in my heart, not on  
\* Not deck'd with diamonds, and Indian  
stones, [tent;

\* Nor to be seen: 'my crown is call'd con-  
\* A crown it is, that seldom kings enjoy.

\* 2 *Keep.* Well, if you be a king crown'd  
with content, [tenteo

Your crown content, and you, must be con-  
\* To go along with us: for, as we think,

\* You are the king, king Edward hath deposed;  
\* And we his subjects, sworn in all allegiance,

\* Will apprehend you as his enemy.

\* *K. Hen.* But did you never swear, and  
break an oath? [swear now.

\* 2 *Keep.* No, never such an oath, nor will  
\* *K. Hen.* Where did you dwell, when I  
was king of England?

\* 2 *Keep.* Here in this country, where we  
now remain. [months old;

\* *K. Hen.* I was anointed king at nine  
\* My father and my grandfather, were kings;

\* And you were sworn true subjects unto me?

\* And, tell me then, have you not broke your  
\* 1 *Keep.* No; [oaths?

For we were subjects, but while you were  
king. [a man?

\* *K. Hen.* Why, am I dead? do I not breathe  
\* Ah, simple men, you know not what you  
swear.

\* Look, as blow this feather from my face,  
\* And as the air blows it to me again,

\* Obeying with my wind when I do blow,  
\* And yielding to another when it blows,

\* Commanded always by the greater gust;  
\* Such is the lightness of you common men.

\* But do not break your oaths; for, of that sin  
\* My mild entreaty shall not make you guilty.

\* Go where you will, the king shall be com-  
manded;

\* And be you kings; command, and I'll obey.

\* Thicket.

+ A plain extended between woods

- \* *1 Keep.* We are true subjects to the king, king Edward.  
 \* *K. Hen.* So would you be again to Henry, if he were seated as king Edward is.  
*1 Keep.* We charge you, in God's name, and in the king's,  
 To go with us unto the officers.  
 \* *K. Hen.* In God's name, lead; your king's name be obey'd:  
 \* And what God will, then let your king per-  
 [form;  
 \* And what he will, I humbly yield unto.  
 [Exeunt.

SCENE II. London. A Room in the Palace.  
 Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, CLARENCE, and Lady GREY.

- \* *K. Edw.* Brother of Gloster, at Saint Albans' field  
 ' This lady's husband, sir John Grey, was slain, His lands then seized on by the conqueror: Her suit is now, to repossess those lands;  
 ' Which we in justice cannot well deny, Because in quarrel of the house of York  
 ' The worthy gentleman did lose his life.  
*Glo.* Your highness shall do well, to grant her suit;  
 \* It were dishonour, to deny it her.  
*K. Edw.* It were no less; but yet I'll make  
 ' *Glo.* Yea! is it so? [a pause.  
 I see, the lady hath a thing to grant,  
 Before the king will grant her humble suit.  
*Cl.* He knows the game; How true he keeps the wind? [Aside.  
*Glo.* Silence! [Aside.  
 \* *K. Edw.* Widow, we will consider of your suit;  
 [mind.  
 ' And come some other time, to know our  
 \* *L. Grey.* Right gracious lord, I cannot brook delay: [now;  
 May it please your highness to resolve me And what your pleasure is, shall satisfy me.  
 ' *Glo.* [Aside.] Ay, widow? then I'll warrant you all your lands,  
 ' And if what pleases him, shall pleasure you, Fight closer, or, good faith, you'll catch a blow.  
 \* *Cl.* I fear her not, unless she chance to fall. [Aside.  
 \* *Glo.* God forbid that! for he'll take vantages. [Aside.  
 \* *K. Edw.* How many children hast thou, widow? tell me.  
*Cl.* I think, he means to beg a child of her. [Aside.  
*Glo.* Nay, whip me then; he'll rather give her two. [Aside.  
*L. Grey.* Three, my most gracious lord.  
*Glo.* You shall have four, if you'll be ruled by him. [Aside.  
*K. Edw.* 'Twere pity they should lose their father's land. [then.  
*L. Grey.* Be pitiful, dread lord, and grant it  
*K. Edw.* Lords, give us leave; I'll try this widow's wit. [have leave,  
*Glo.* Ay good leave \* have you; for you will

' Till youth take leave, and leave you to the crutch.

[GLOSTER and CLARENCE retire to the other side.

- \* *K. Edw.* Now tell me, ma'am, do you love your children? [sen.  
 \* *L. Grey.* Ay, full as dearly as I love myself.  
 \* *K. Edw.* And would you not do much, to do them good? [tain some harm.  
 \* *L. Grey.* To do them good, I would not.  
 \* *K. Edw.* Then get your husband's lands, to do them good. [jealy.  
 \* *L. Grey.* Therefore I came unto your ma-  
 \* *K. Edw.* I'll tell you how these lands are to be got. [highness' service.  
 \* *L. Grey.* So shall you bind me to your  
 \* *K. Edw.* What service wilt thou do me, if I give them? [in me to do.  
 \* *L. Grey.* What you command, that rests  
 \* *K. Edw.* But you will take exceptions to my boon.  
 \* *L. Grey.* No, gracious lord, except I cannot do it.  
 \* *K. Edw.* Ay but thou canst do what I mean to ask. [grace commands,  
 \* *L. Grey.* Why, then I will do what your  
 \* *Glo.* He plies her hard; and much rain wears the marble. [Aside.  
 \* *Cl.* As red as fire! nay, then her wax must melt. [Aside.  
*L. Grey.* Why stops my lord? shall I not hear my task?  
*K. Edw.* An easy task; 'tis but to love a king.  
*L. Grey.* That's soon perform'd, because I am a subject. [freely give thee.  
*K. Edw.* Why then, thy husband's lands I  
*L. Grey.* I take my leave with many thousand thanks. [court'sy.  
*Glo.* The match is made; she seals it with a  
 \* *K. Edw.* But stay thee, 'tis the fruits of love I mean. [loving liege.  
 \* *L. Grey.* The fruits of love I mean, my  
 \* *K. Edw.* Ay, but, I fear me, in another sense.  
 What love, think'st thou, I sue so much to get?  
 \* *L. Grey.* My love till death, my humble thanks, my prayers; [grants.  
 ' That love, which virtue begs, and virtue  
*K. Edw.* No, by my troth, I did not mean such love. [thought you did.  
 \* *L. Grey.* Why, then you mean not as I  
 \* *K. Edw.* But now you partly may perceive my mind. [I perceive  
 \* *L. Grey.* My mind will never grant what  
 \* Your highness aims at, if I aim aright.  
*K. Edw.* To tell thee plain, I aim to lie with thee. [in prison.  
 \* *L. Grey.* To tell you plain, I had rather lie  
*K. Edw.* Why, then thou shalt not have thy husband's lands. [my dower;  
*L. Grey.* Why, then mine honesty shall be  
 For by that loss I will not purchase them.  
 \* *K. Edw.* Therein thou wrong'st thy children mightily. [them and me.  
*L. Grey.* Herein your highness wrongs both  
 But, mighty lord, this merry inclination

Accords not with the sadness \* of my suit ;  
Please you dismiss me, either with ay, or no.

*K. Edw.* Ay ; if thou wilt say ay, to my request :

No ; if thou dost say no, to my demand.

*L. Grey.* Then, no, my lord. My suit is at an end.

\* *Glo.* The widow likes him not, she knits her brows. [*Aside.*]

*Cla.* He is the bluntest wooer in Christendom. [*Aside.*]

\* *K. Edw.* [*Aside.*] Her looks do argue her replete with modesty ;

\* Her words do show her wit incomparable ;

\* All her perfections challenge sovereignty :

One way, or other, she is for a king :

And she shall be my love, or else my queen.—

Say, that king Edward take thee for his queen ?

*L. Grey.* 'Tis better said than done, my gracious lord :

I am a subject fit to jest withal.

But far unfit to be a sovereign.

*K. Edw.* Sweet widow, by my state I swear to thee,

I speak no more than what my soul intends ;

And that is, to enjoy thee for my love.

*L. Grey.* And that is more than I will yield unto :

\* I know, I am too mean to be your queen ;

And yet too good to be your concubine.

*K. Edw.* You cavil, widow ; I did mean, my queen.

*L. Grey.* 'Twill grieve your grace, my sons should call you—father.

*K. Edw.* No inore, than when thy daughters call thee mother.

Thou art a widow, and thou hast some children ;

And, by God's mother, I, being but a bachelor,

Have other some : why, 'tis a happy thing

To be the father unto many sons.

\* Answer no more, for thou shalt be my queen.

*Glo.* The ghostly father now hath done his shrift. [*Aside.*]

*Cla.* When he was made a shriver, 'twas for shift. [*Aside.*]

*K. Edw.* Brothers, you muse what chat we two have had.

\* *Glo.* The widow likes it not, for she looks sad. [*marry her.*]

*K. Edw.* You'd think it strange if I should

*Cla.* To whom, my lord ?

*K. Edw.* Why, Clarence, to myself.

*Glo.* That would be ten days' wonder, at the least.

*Cla.* That's a day longer than a wonder lasts.

\* *Glo.* By so much is the wonder in extremes.

*K. Edw.* Well, jest on, brothers : I can tell you both,

Her suit is granted for her husband's lands.

*Enter a Nobleman.*

*Nob.* My gracious lord, Henry your foe is taken,

And brought your prisoner to your palace gate. [*Tower :—*]

*K. Edw.* See, that he be convey'd unto the  
And go we brothers, to the man that took him.

\* To question of his apprehension.—

\* Widow, go you along ;—Lords, use her honourable.

[*Exeunt King EDWARD, Lady GREY, CLARENCE, and Lord.*]

*Glos.* Ay, Edward will use women honourably.

\* Would he were wasted, marrow, bones, and all, [*spring,*]

\* That from his loins no hopeful branch may

\* To cross me from the golden time I look for !

\* And yet, between my soul's desire, and me ;

\* (The lustful Edward's title buried,) [*ward,*]

\* Is Clarence, Henry, and his son young Ed—

\* And all the unlook'd-for issue of their bodies,

\* To take their rooms, ere I can place myself :

A cold premeditation for my purpose !

\* Why, then I do but dream on sovereignty ;

\* Like one that stands upon a promontory,

\* And spies a far-off shore where he would tread,

\* Wishing his foot were equal with his eye ;

\* And chides the sea that sunder him from thence,

\* Saying—he'll lade it dry to have his way :

\* So do I wish the crown, being so far off ;

\* And so I chide the means that keep me from it ;

\* And so I say—I'll cut the causes off,

\* Flattering me with impossibilities.—

\* My eyes too quick, my heart o'erween's too much, [*them.*]

\* Unless my hand and strength could equal

\* Well, say there is no kingdom then for Richard ;

\* What other pleasure can the world afford ?

\* I'll make my heaven in a lady's lap,

\* And deck my body in gay ornaments, [*looks,*]

\* And witch sweet ladies with my words and

\* O miserable thought ! and more unlikely,

\* Than to accomplish twenty golden crowns !

Why, love foreswore me in my mother's womb :

\* And, for I should not deal in her soft laws

\* She did corrupt frail nature with some bribe

\* To shrink mine arm up like a wither'd shrub

\* To make an envious mountain on my back,

Where sits deformity to mock my body ;

\* To shape my legs of an unequal size ;

\* To disproportion me in every part,

\* Like to a chaos, or an unlick'd bear-whelp,

\* That carries no impression like the dam.

And am I then a man to be beloved ?

\* O, monstrous fault, to harbour such a thought

\* Then, since this earth affords no joy to me,

\* But to command, to check, to o'erbear such

\* As are of better person than myself,

\* I'll make my heaven—to dream upon the crown ; [*hell,*]

\* And, whiles I live, to account this world but

\* Until my misshap'd trunk that bears this head,

\* Be round impaled with a glorious crown.

\* And yet I know not how to get the crown,

\* For many lives stand between me and home

\* And I,—like one lost in a thorny wood,



That rents the thorns, and is rent with the thorns;

- \* Seeking a way, and straying from the way;
- \* Not knowing how to find the open air,
- \* But toiling desperately to find it out,—
- \* Torment myself to catch the English crown;
- \* And from that torment I will free myself,
- \* Or hew my way out with a bloody axe.

Why, I can smile, and murder while I smile;  
And cry content to that which grieves my heart;

- \* And wet my cheeks with artificial tears,
- \* And frame my face to all occasions. [shall;
- \* I'll drown more sailors than the mermaid
- \* I'll slay more gazers than the basilisk;
- \* I'll play the orator as well as Nestor,
- \* Deceive more slyly than Ulysses could,
- \* And, like a Sinon, take another Troy:
- I can add colours to the cameleon;
- \* Change shapes, with Proteus, for advantages,
- \* And set the murderous Machiavel to school.

Can I do this, and cannot get a crown?

Tut! were it further off, I'll pluck it down.

[Exit.

SCENE III. France. A Room in the Palace.

*Flourish. Enter LEWIS the French King, and Lady BONA, attended; the King takes his State. Then enter Queen MARGARET, Prince EDWARD her son, and the Earl of OXFORD.*

\* *K. Lew.* Fair queen of England, worthy Margaret, [Rising.

\* Sit down with us; it ill befits thy state,  
And birth, that thou shouldst stand, while Lewis doth sit. [Margaret

\* *Q. Mar.* No, mighty king of France; now must strike her sail, and learn a while to serve, [fess,

- \* Where kings command. I was, I must con-
- \* Great Albion's queen in former golden days:
- \* But now mischance hath trod my title down,
- \* And with dishonour laid me on the ground;
- \* Where I must take like seat unto my fortune,
- \* And to my humble seat conform myself.

\* *K. Lew.* Why, say, fair queen, whence springs this deep despair?

\* *Q. Mar.* From such a cause as fills mine eyes with tears, [in cares.

\* And stops my tongue, while heart is drown'd

\* *K. Lew.* Whate'er it be, be thou still like thyself,

\* And sit thee by our side: yield not thy neck  
[Seats her by him.

\* To fortune's yoke, but let thy dauntless mind  
\* Still ride in triumph over all mischance.

\* Be plain, queen Margaret, and tell thy grief;  
\* It shall be eased, if France can yield relief.

\* *Q. Mar.* Those gracious words revive my drooping thoughts, [speak.

\* And give my tongue-tied sorrows leave to  
\* Now, therefore, be it known to noble Lewis,

\* That Henry, sole possessor of my love,  
\* Is, of a king, become a banish'd man,

\* And forced to live in Scotland a forlorn;

\* While proud ambitious Edward, duke of  
\* Usurps the regal title, and the seat [York,

\* Of England's true-anointed lawful king.

\* This is the cause that I, poor Margaret,—

\* With this my son, prince Edward, Henry's heir,—

\* Am come to crave thy just and lawful aid;

\* And, if thou fail us, all our hope is done:

\* Scotland hath will to help, but cannot help;

\* Our people and our peers are both misled;

\* Our treasure seized, our soldiers put to flight,

\* And, as thou seest, ourselves in heavy plight.

\* *K. Lew.* Renowned queen, with patience calm the storm,

\* While we bethink a means to break it off.

\* *Q. Mar.* The more we stay, the stronger grows our foe. [succour thee.

\* *K. Lew.* The more I stay, the more I'll

\* *Q. Mar.* O, but impatience waiteth on true sorrow: [sorrow:

\* And see, where comes the breeder of my  
*Enter WARWICK, attended.*

\* *K. Lew.* What's he, approacheth boldly to our presence? [greatest friend.

\* *Q. Mar.* Our earl of Warwick, Edward's  
\* *K. Lew.* Welcome, brave Warwick! What brings thee to France?

[Descending from his State, Queen MARGARET rises.

\* *Q. Mar.* Ay, now begins a second storm to rise;

\* For this is he that moves both wind and tide.

\* *War.* From worthy Edward, king of Albion,

My lord and sovereign, and thy vowed friend,  
I come, in kindness and unfeigned love,

First, to do greetings to thy royal person;

And, then, to crave a league of amity;

And, lastly, to confirm that amity

With nuptial knot, if thou vouchsafe to grant  
That virtuous lady Bona, thy fair sister,

To England's king in lawful marriage.

\* *Q. Mar.* If that go forward, Henry's hope is done. [in our king's behalf,

\* *War.* And, gracious madam, [To BONA.]

\* I am commanded, with your leave and favour,  
Humbly to kiss your hand, and with my tongue

To tell the passion of my sovereign's heart;  
Where fame late entering at his heedful ears,

Hath placed thy beauty's image, and thy virtue.

\* *Q. Mar.* King Lewis, and lady Bona, hear me speak,

\* Before you answer Warwick. His demand  
\* Springs not from Edward's well-meant honest

\* But from deceit, bred by necessity; [love,

\* For how can tyrants safely govern home,  
\* Unless abroad they purchase great alliance?

\* To prove him tyrant, this reason may suffice,—

\* That Henry liveth still: but were he dead,  
\* Yet here prince Edward stands, king Hen-

\* ry's son. [and marriage

\* Look therefore, Lewis, that by this league  
\* Thou draw not on thy danger and dishonour

\* For though usurpers sway the rule a while,  
\* Yet heavens are just and time suppresseth

\* *War.* Injurious Margaret! [wrongs.  
\* *Prince.* And why not queen!

\* *War.* Because thy father Henry did usurp,  
And thou no more art prince than she is queen.

*Oxf.* Then Warwick disannuls great John of Gaunt,  
Which did subdue the greatest part of Spain;  
And, after John of Gaunt, Henry the fourth,  
' Whose wisdom was a mirror to the wisest;  
And, after that wise prince, Henry the fifth,  
Who by his prowess conquered all France:  
From these our Henry lineally descends.

*War.* Oxford, how haps it, in this smooth discourse,

You told not, how Henry the sixth hath lost  
All that which Henry the fifth had gotten?  
Methinks, these peers of France should smile  
But for the rest,—you tell a pedigree [at that,  
Of threescore and two years; a silly time  
To make prescription for a kingdom's worth.

*Oxf.* Why, Warwick, canst thou speak  
against thy liege,

' Whom thou obeydest thirty and six years,  
And not bewray thy treason with a blush?

*War.* Can Oxford, that did ever fence the  
Now buckler falsehood with a pedigree [right,  
For shame, leave Henry, and call Edward king.

*Oxf.* Call him my king, by whose injurious  
doom

' My elder brother, the lord Aubrey Vere,  
Was done to death; and more than so, my  
father,

Even in the downfall of his mellow'd years,  
' When nature brought him to the door of death?  
No, Warwick, no; while life upholds this arm,  
This arm upholds the house of Lancaster.

*War.* And I the house of York.

*K. Lew.* Queen Margaret, prince Edward,  
and Oxford,

' Vouchsafe, at our request, to stand aside,

' While I use further conference with Warwick,  
' *Q. Mar.* Heaven grant that Warwick's  
words bewitch him not!

[Retiring with the Prince and Oxford.

' *K. Lew.* Now, Warwick, tell me, even  
upon thy conscience,

' Is Edward your true king? for I were loath,  
' To link with him that were not lawful chosen.

*War.* Thereon I pawn my credit and mine  
honour.

*K. Lew.* But is he gracious in the people's  
eye? [tunate.

*War.* The more, that Henry was unfor-  
*K. Lew.* Then further,—all dissembling set  
aside,—

' Tell me for truth the measure of his love  
' Unto our sister Bona.

*War.* Such it seems,  
As may beseem a monarch like himself.  
Myself have often heard him say, and swear,  
That this his love was an eternal plant;  
Whereof the root was fix'd in virtue's ground.  
The leaves and fruit maintain'd with beauty's  
sun;

Exempt from envy \*, but not from disdain,  
Unless the lady Bona quit his pain. [resolve.

*K. Lew.* Now, sister, let us hear your firm  
*Bona.* Your grant, or your denial shall be  
mine:— [day,

Yet I confess, [To WAR.] that often ere this

When I have heard your king's desert recount—  
Mine ear hath tempted judgment to desire [ed

\* *K. Lew.* Then, Warwick, thus,—Our sister  
shall be Edward's;

\* And now forthwith shall articles be drawn  
\* Touching the jointure that your king must  
make [poise! :—

\* Which with her dowry shall be counter-  
Draw near, queen Margaret, and be a witness,  
That Bona shall be wife to the English king.

*Prince.* To Edward, but not to the English  
king. [device

\* *Q. Mar.* Deceitful Warwick! it was thy  
\* By this alliance to make void my suit;

\* Before thy coming, Lewis was Henry's friend.  
\* *A. Lew.* And still is friend to him and  
Margaret:

\* But if your title to the crown be weak,—  
\* As may appear by Edward's good success,—  
\* Then 'tis but reason that I be released

\* From giving aid, which late I promised.  
\* Yet shall you have all kindness at my hand,  
\* That your estate requires, and mine can  
yield. [ease;

*War.* Henry now lives in Scotland, at his  
Where having nothing, nothing he can lose.

And as for you yourself, our *quondam* queen,  
You have a father able to maintain you;  
And better 'twere, you troubled him than  
France. [Warwick, peace;

\* *Q. Mar.* Peace, impudent and shameless  
\* Proud setter up and puller-down of kings!  
\* I will not hence, till with my talk and tears,  
\* Both full of truth, I make king Lewis behold  
\* Thy sly conveyancet, and thy lord's false  
love; [ther.

\* For both of you are birds of self-same fea-  
[A Horn sounded within.

*K. Lew.* Warwick, this is some post to us,  
or thee.

*Enter a Messenger.*  
*Mess.* My lord ambassador, these letters are  
for you;

Sent from your brother, marquis Montague.  
These from our king unto your majesty.—  
And, madam, these for you; from whom I  
know not.

[To MARGARET. They all read their  
Letters.

*Oxf.* I like it well that our fair queen and  
mistress [his.

Smiles at her news, while Warwick frowns at  
*Prince.* Nay, mark, how Lewis stamps as  
\* I hope, all's for the best. [he were nettled:

\* *K. Lew.* Warwick, what are thy news?  
and yours, fair queen? [unhoped joys.

\* *Q. Mar.* Mine, such as fill my heart with  
*War.* Mine, full of sorrow and heart's dis-  
content. [lady Grey?

\* *K. Lew.* What has your king married the  
' And now, to sooth your forgery and his,  
' Sends me a paper to persuade me patience?

' Is this the alliance that he seeks with France?  
' Dare he presume to scorn us in this manner?

\* *Q. Mar.* I told your majesty as much  
before:

This proveth Edward's love, and Warwick's honesty. [of heaven,

*War.* King Lewis, I here protest,—in sight And by the hope I have of heavenly bliss,— That I am clear from this misdeed of Edward's, No more my king, for he dishonours me; But most himself, if he could see his shame.— Did I forget that by the house of York My father came untimely to his death? Did I let pass the abuse done to my niece? Did I impale him with the regal crown?

Did I put Henry from his native right; And am I guerdon'd\* at the last with stame? \* Shame on himself! for my desert is honour.

\* And, to repair my honour lost for him, \* I here renounce him, and return to Henry: \* My noble queen, let former grudges pass, And henceforth I am thy true servitor; I will revenge his wrong to lady Bona, And replant Henry in his former state.

\* *Q. Mar.* Warwick, these words have turn'd my hate to love; \* And I forgive and quite forget old faults, \* And joy that thou becomest king Henry's friend. [friend,

*War.* So much his friendship, ay, his unfeign'd I bat, if king Lewis vouchsafe to furnish us With some few bands of chosen soldiers, I'll undertake to land them on our coast, And force the tyrant from his seat by war.

'Tis not his new-made bride shall succour him: \* And as for Clarence,—as my letters tell me, \* He's very likely now to fall from him; \* For watching more for wanton lust than honour, [try.

\* Or than for strength and safety of our conn- \* *Bona.* Dear brother, how shall Bona be revenged,

But by thy help to this distressed queen? \* *Q. Mar.* Renowned prince, how shall poor Henry live,

\* Unless thou rescue him from foul despair? \* *Bona.* My quarrel, and this English queen's are one. [with yours.

\* *War.* And mine, fair lady Bona, joins \* *K. Lew.* And mine with hers, and thine, and Margaret's;

Therefore, at last, I firmly am resolved You shall have aid.

\* *Q. Mar.* Let me give humble thanks for all at once. [in post;

*K. Lew.* Then England's messenger, return

And tell false Edward, thy supposed king, That Lewis of France is sending over maskers To reveal it with him and his new bride: [withal. \* Thou seest what's past, go fear'thy king *Bona.* Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower shortly, I'll wear the willow garland for his sake.

*Q. Mar.* Tell him, my mourning weeds are And I am ready to put armour on. [laid aside.

*War.* Tell him from me, that he hath done me wrong;

And therefore I'll uncrown him ere't be long. There's thy reward; be gone. [Exit Mess.

*K. Lew.* But, Warwick, thou, And Oxford, with five thousand men, [battle: Shall cross the seas, and bid false Edward \* And, as occasion serves, this noble queen

\* And prince shall follow with a fresh supply. \* Yet, ere thou go, but answer me one doubt; \* What pledge have we of thy firm loyalty?

*War.* This shall assure my constant loyalty: That if our queen and this young prince agree, I'll join mine eldest daughter, and my joy, To him forthwith in holy wedlock bands.

\* *Q. Mar.* Yes, I agree, and thank you for your motion:—

\* Son Edward, she is fair and virtuous, [wick; \* Therefore delay not, give thy hand to War- \* And, with thy hand, thy faith irrevocable, \* That only Warwick's daughter shall be thine.

\* *Prince.* Yes, I accept her, for she well deserves it;

\* And here, to pledge my vow, I give my hand. [He gives his hand to WARWICK.

\* *K. Lew.* Why stay we now? These soldiers shall be levied,

\* And thou, lord Bourbon, our high admiral, \* Shall waft them over with our royal fleet.—

\* I long till Edward fall by war's mischance, \* For mocking marriage with a dame of France. [Exeunt all but WARWICK.

*War.* I came from Edward as ambassador, But I return his sworn and mortal foe: Matter of marriage was the charge he gave me, But dreadful war shall answer his demand.

Had he none else to make a stale‡, but me? Then none but I shall turn his jest to sorrow.

I was the chief that raised him to the crown, And I'll be chief to bring him down again:

Not that I pity Henry's misery. But seek revenge on Edward's mockery. [Exit.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. London. A Room in the Palace.

Enter GLOSTER, CLARENCE, SOMERSET, MONTAGUE, and Others.

\* *Glo.* Now, tell me, brother Clarence, what think you

\* Of this new marriage with the lady Grey?

\* Hath not our brother made a worthy choice?

\* *Cl.* Alas, you know, 'tis far from hence to France;

\* How could he stay till Warwick made return? \* *Som.* My lords, forbear this talk; here comes the king.

*Flourish.* Enter King EDWARD, attended; Lady GREY, as Queen; PEMBROKE, STAFFORD, HASTINGS, and Others,

\* *Glo.* And his well-chosen bride.

\* *Clar.* I mind to tell him plainly what I think. [like you our choicer

\* *K. Edw.* Now, brother of Clarence, how

\* Rewarded.

† Fright.

‡ A stalking horse, a pretence.



That you stand pensive, as half malcontent ?  
*Clar.* As well as Lewis of France, or the earl of Warwick ; [ment,  
 Which are so weak of courage, and in judgment,  
 That they'll take no offence at our abuse.  
*K. Edw.* Suppose they take offence without a cause, [ward,  
 They are but Lewis and Warwick ; I am Edward.  
 Your king and Warwick's, and must have my will. [our king :  
*Glo.* And you shall have your will, because  
 Yet hasty marriage seldom proveth well.  
*K. Edw.* Yea, brother Richard, are you offended too ?  
*Glo.* Not I : [sended too ?  
 No ; God forbid, that I should wish them sever'd [twere pity,  
 Whom God hath join'd together : ay, and  
 To sunder them that yoke so well together.  
*K. Edw.* Setting your scorns, and your mislike, aside,  
 Tell me some reason, why the lady Grey  
 Should not become my wife, and England's queen :—  
 And you too, Somerset, and Montague,  
 Speak freely what you think. [Lewis  
*Clar.* Then this is my opinion,—that king  
 Becomes your enemy, for mocking him  
 About the marriage of the lady Bona. [charge,  
*Glo.* And Warwick, doing what you gave in  
 Is now dishonoured by this new marriage.  
*K. Edw.* What, if both Lewis and Warwick be appeased,  
 By such invention as I can device ?  
*Mont.* Yet to have join'd with France in such alliance, [monwealth  
 Would more have strengthen'd this our commonwealth  
 Against foreign storms, than any home-bred marriage. [itself  
*Hast.* Why, knows not Montague, that of  
 England is safe, if true within itself ?  
*Mont.* Yes ; but the safer, when 'tis back'd with France. [ing France :  
*Hast.* 'Tis better using France, than trusting  
 Let us be back'd with God, and with the seas ;  
 Which he hath given for fence impregnable,  
 And with their helps only defend themselves ;  
 In them, and in ourselves, our safety lies.  
*Clar.* For this one speech, lord Hastings well deserves  
 To have the heir of the lord Hungerford.  
*K. Edw.* Ay, what of that ? it was my will and grant ; [law.  
 And, for this once, my will shall stand for  
*Glo.* And yet, methinks, your grace hath not done well,  
 To give the heir and daughter of lord Scales  
 Unto the brother of your loving bride ;  
 She better would have fitted me or Clarence :  
 But in your bride you bury brotherhood.  
*Clar.* Or else you would not have bestow'd the heir  
 Of the lord Bonville on your new wife's son,  
 And leave your brothers to go speed elsewhere.

*K. Edw.* Alas, poor Clarence ! is it for a wife  
 That thou art malcontent ? I will provide thee  
*Clar.* In choosing for yourself, you show'd your judgment ;  
 Which, being shallow, you shall give me leave  
 To play the broker in mine own behalf ;  
 And, to that end, I shortly mind to leave you.  
*K. Edw.* Leave me, or tarry, Edward will be king,  
 And not be tied unto his brother's will.  
*Q. Eliz.* My lords, before it pleased his majesty  
 To raise my state to title of a queen, [jesty  
 Do me but right, and you must all confess  
 That I was not ignoble of descent, [une,  
 And meaner than myself have had like fortune,  
 But as this title honours me and mine, [ing,  
 So your dislikes, to whom I would e pleased  
 Do cloud my joys with danger and sorrow. [their frowns :  
*K. Edw.* My love, forbear to fawn upon  
 What danger ; or what sorrow can befall thee,  
 So long as Edward is thy constant friend,  
 And their true sovereign whom they must obey ? [too,  
 Nay, whom they shall obey, and love thee  
 Unless they seek for hatred at my hands :  
 Which if they do, yet will I keep thee safe,  
 And they shall feel the vengeance of my wrath.  
*Glo.* I hear, yet say not much, but think the more. [Aside.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*K. Edw.* Now, messenger, what letters, or From France ? [what news,  
*Mess.* My sovereign liege, no letters ; and few words,  
 But such as I, without your special pardon, Dare not relate.  
*K. Edw.* Go to, we pardon thee : therefore, in brief, [guess them.  
 Tell me their words, as near as thou canst  
 What answer, makes king Lewis unto our letters ? [words ;  
*Mess.* At my depart, these were his very  
*Go tell false Edward, thy supposed king,—*  
*That Lewis of France is sending over maskers*  
*To revel it with him and his new bride.*  
*K. Edw.* Is Lewis so brave ? belike, he thinks me Henry.  
 But what said lady Bona to my marriage ?  
*Mess.* These were her words, utter'd with mild disdain ; [shortly,  
*Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower*  
*I'll wear the willow garland for his sake.*  
*K. Edw.* I blame not her, she could say little less ; [queen ?  
 She had the wrong. But what said Henry's  
 For I have heard that she was there in place.  
*Mess.* Tell him, quoth she, my mourning weeds are done,  
*And I am ready to put armour on*  
*K. Edw.* Belike, she minds to play the Amazon,  
 But what said Warwick to these injuries ? [zen,

\* This has been the advice of every man who in any age understood and favoured the interest of England. † The heiresses of great estates were in the wardship of the king, who matched them to his favourites. ‡ Present. § Thrown off.

\* *Mess.* He, more incensed against your majesty [words;]  
Than all the rest, discharged me with these  
*Tell him from me, that he hath done me wrong,* [long.  
And therefore I'll uncrown him, ere't be  
*K. Edw.* Ha! durst the traitor breathe out so proud words?

Well, I will arm me, being thus forewarn'd :  
\* They shall have wars, and pay for their presumption.

\* But say, is Warwick friends with Margaret?  
*Mess.* Ay, gracious sovereign ; they are so link'd in friendship, [wick's daughter.  
\* That young prince Edward marries War-  
*Clar.* Belike, the elder ; Clarence will have the younger.

\* Now, brother king, farewell, and sit you fast,  
\* For I will henceto Warwick's other daughter;  
\* That, though I want a kingdom, yet in mar-  
\* I may not prove inferior to yourself.—[riage  
You, that love me and Warwick, follow me.  
[Exit CLARENCE, and SOMERSET follows.

\* *Glo.* Not I :  
\* My thoughts aim at a further matter ; I  
\* Stay not for love of Edward, but the crown,  
[Aside.  
*K. Edw.* Clarence and Somerset both gone to Warwick! [pen ;

\* Yet am I arm'd against the worst can hap-  
\* And haste is needful in this desperate case.—  
Pembroke, and Stafford, you in our behalf  
Go levy men, and make prepare for war ;  
They are already, or quickly will be landed ;  
Myself in person will straight follow you.

[Exit PEMBROKE and STAFFORD.  
But, ere I go, Hastings,—and Montague,—  
Resolve my doubt. You twain of all the rest,  
Are near to Warwick, by blood, and by alliance :

Tell me, if you love Warwick more than me ?  
If it be so, then both depart to him ;  
I rather wish you foes, than hollow friends ;  
But if you mind to hold your true obedience,  
Give me assurance with some friendly vow,  
That I may never have you in suspect.

*Mont.* So God help Montague, as he proves true! [cause I

*Hast.* And Hastings, as he favours Edward's  
*K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, will you stand by us ? [stand you.

*Glo.* Ay, in despite of all that shall with-  
*K. Edw.* Why so ; then am I sure of victory. [hour.

\* Now therefore let us hence, and lose no  
\* Till we meet Warwick with his foreign power.  
[Exit.

#### SCENE II. A Plain in Warwickshire.

Enter WARWICK and OXFORD, with French and other Forces.

*War.* Trust me, my lord, all hitherto goes well ;

The common people by numbers swarm to us.  
*Enter CLARENCE and SOMERSET.*

But, see, where Somerset and Clarence come.  
Speak, suddenly, my lords, are we all friends ?

*Clar.* Fear not that, my lord.

*War.* Then, gentle Clarence, welcome unto Warwick?

And welcome, Somerset :—I hold it cowardice  
To rest mistrustful where a noble heart  
Hath pawn'd an open hand in sign of love ;  
Else might I think that Clarence, Edward's brother,

Were but a feigned friend to our proceedings ;  
But welcome, Clarence ; my daughter shall be thine.

And now what rests, but, in night's coverture,  
Thy brother being carelessly encamp'd,  
His soldiers lurking in the towns about,  
And but attended by a simple guard,  
We may surprise and take him at our plea-  
sure? [easy :

Our scouts have found the adventure very  
\* That as Ulysses, and stout Diomedes, [tents,  
\* With sleight and manhood stole to Rhesus?  
\* And brought from thence the Thracian fatal steeds ;  
\* So we, well cover'd with the night's black mantle,

\* At unawares may beat down Edward's guard,  
\* And seize himself ; I say not—slaughter him,  
\* For I intend but only to surprise him.—  
\* You, that will follow me to this attempt,  
\* Applaud the name of Henry, with your leader.  
[They all cry, Henry!

Why, then, let's on our way in silent sort :  
For Warwick and his friends, God and Saint George ! [Exit.

#### SCENE III. Edward's Camp, near Warwick.

Enter certain Watchmen, to guard the King's Tent.

\* *1 Watch.* Come on, my masters, each man take his stand ;

\* The king, by this, is set him down to sleep.  
\* *2 Watch.* What, will he not to-bed ?

\* *1 Watch.* Why, no : for he hath made a solemn vow

\* Never to lie and take his natural rest,  
\* Till Warwick, or himself, be quite suppress'd. [the day,

\* *2 Watch.* To-morrow then, belike, shall be  
\* If Warwick be so near as men report.

\* *3 Watch.* But say, I pray, what nobleman is that,

\* That with the king here resteth in his tent ?  
\* *1 Watch.* 'Tis the lord Hastings, the king's chiefest friend.

\* *3 Watch.* O, is it so ? But why commands the king,

\* That his chief followers lodge in towns about him,

\* While he himself keepeth in the cold field ?  
\* *2 Watch.* 'Tis the more honour, because more dangerous. [quietness,

\* *3 Watch.* Ay ; but give me worship and  
\* I like it better than a dangerous honour.

\* If Warwick knew in what estate he stands,  
\* 'Tis to be doubted, he would waken him.

\* *1 Watch.* Unless our halberds did shut up his passage. [his royal tent

\* *2 Watch.* Ay ; wherefore else guard we  
\* But to defend his person from night foes ?

Enter WARWICK, CLARENCE, OXFORD, SOMERSET, and Forces.

\* War. This is his tent; and see, where stand his guard.

\* Courage, my masters: honour now, or never!

\* But follow me, and Edward shall be ours.

1 Watch. Who goes there?

2 Watch. Stay, or thou diest.

WARWICK, and the rest, cry all—Warwick! Warwick! and set upon the Guard; who fly, crying—Arm! Arm! WARWICK, and the rest, following them.

The Drum beating, and Trumpets sounding. Re-enter WARWICK, and the rest, bringing the King out in a Gown, sitting in a Chair; GLOSTER and HASTINGS fly.

\* Som. What are they that fly there?

\* War. Richard and Hastings: let them go, here's the duke.

K. Edw. The duke! why, Warwick, when we parted last,

Thou call'dst me king?

War. Ay, but the case is alter'd:

\* When you disgraced me in my embassy,

\* Then I degraded you from being king,

And come now to create you duke of York.

Alas! how should you govern any kingdom,

That know not how to use ambassadors;

Nor how to be contented with one wife;

Nor how to use your brothers brotherly;

\* Nor how to study for the people's welfare;

Nor how to shrowd yourself from enemies?

\* K. Edw. Yea, brother of Clarence, art thou here too?

\* Nay, then I see, that Edward needs must down.—

\* Yet, Warwick, in despite of all mischance,

\* Of thee thyself, and all thy complices,

Edward will always bear himself as king:

\* Though fortune's malice overthrow my state,

\* My mind exceeds the compass of her wheel.

War. Then, for his mind \* be Edward England's king: [Takes off his Crown.

But Henry now shall wear the English crown,

\* And be true king indeed; thou but the shadow.—

\* My lord of Somerset, at my request,

\* See that forthwith duke Edward be convey'd

\* Unto my brother, archbishop of York.

\* When I have fought with Pembroke and his fellows,

\* I'll follow you, and tell what answer

\* Lewis, and the lady Bona, send to him:—

Now, for a while, farewell, good duke of York.

\* K. Edw. What fates impose, that men must needs abide;

\* It boots not to resist both wind and tide.

[Exit King EDWARD, led out; SOMERSET with him.

Oxf. What now remains, my lords, for us to

\* But march to London with our soldiers?—No,

War. Ay, that's the first thing that we have to do;

To free king Henry from imprisonment,

And see him seated in the regal throne.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV. London. A Room in the Palace.

Enter Queen ELIZABETH and RIVERS.

\* Riv. Madam, what makes you in this sudden change? [to learn,

\* Q. Eliz. Why, brother Rivers, are you yet

\* What late misfortune is befall'n king Edward?

Riv. What, loss of some pitched battle against Warwick? [person.

\* Q. Eliz. No, but the loss of his own royal

\* Riv. Then is my sovereign slain!

\* Q. Eliz. Ay, almost slain, for he is taken prisoner;

\* Either betray'd by falsehood of his guard,

\* Or by his foe surprised at unawares:

\* And, as I further have to understand,

\* Is new committed to the bishop of York,

\* Fell Warwick's brother, and by that our foe.

\* Riv. These news, I must confess, are full of grief:

\* Yet, gracious madam, bear it as you may:

\* Warwick may lose, that now hath won the day. [life's decay.

\* Q. Eliz. Till then, fair hope must hinder

\* And I the rather wean me from despair,

\* For love of Edward's offspring in my womb:

\* This is it that makes me bridle passion,

\* And bear with mildness my misfortune's cross;

\* Ay, ay, for this I draw in many a tear,

\* And stop the rising of blood-sucking sighs,

\* Lest with my sighs or tears I blast or drown

\* King Edward's fruit, true heir to the English crown. [become?

\* Riv. But, madam, where is Warwick then?

\* Q. Eliz. I am informed, that he comes to wards London,

\* To set the crown once more on Henry's head:

\* Guess thou the rest; king Edward's friends must down.

\* But, to prevent the tyrant's violence, [faith,

\* (For trust not him that hath once broken

\* I'll hence forthwith unto the sanctuary,

\* To save at least the heir of Edward's right;

\* There shall I rest secure from force and fraud. [fly;

\* Come therefore, let us fly, while we may

\* If Warwick take us, we are sure to die.

[Exeunt.

SCENE V. A Park near Middleham Castle in Yorkshire.

Enter GLOSTER, HASTINGS, Sir WILLIAM STANLEY, and Others.

\* Glo. Now, my lord Hastings, and sir William Stanley,

\* Leave off to wonder why I drew you hither,

\* Into this chiefest thicket of the park.

\* Thus stands the case: You know, our king, my brother,

\* Is prisoner to the bishop here, at whose hands

\* He hath good usage and great liberty;

\* And often, but attended with weak guard.

\* Comes hunting this way to disport himself.

\* I have diverted him by secret means,

\* That if about this hour, he make this way,

\* i. e., In his mind; as far as his own mind goes.



Under the colour of his usual game, [men,  
He shall here find his friends, with horse and  
To set him free from his captivity.

*Enter King EDWARD, and a Huntsman.*

*Hunt.* This way, my lord; for this way  
lies the game. [the huntsmen stand.—

*K. Edw.* Nay, this way, man; see, where  
Now, brother of Gloster, lord Hastings, and  
the rest, [deer?

Stand you thus close, to steal the bishop's  
*Glo.* Brother, the time and case requireth  
haste;

Your horse stands ready at the park corner.  
*K. Edw.* But whither shall we then?

*Hast.* To Lynn, my lord; and ship from  
thence to Flanders. [was my meaning.

*Glo.* Well guess'd, believe me; for that  
*K. Edw.* Stanley, I will requite thy for-  
wardness. [to talk.

*Glo.* But wherefore stay we? 'tis no time  
*K. Edw.* Huntsman, what say'st thou?

wilt thou go along? [hang'd.

*Hunt.* Better do so, than tarry and be  
*Glo.* Come then, away; let's have no more  
ado. [from Warwick's frown;

*K. Edw.* Bishop, farewell: shield thee  
And pray that I may repossess the crown.

[*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE VI. A Room in the Tower.

*Enter King HENRY, CLARENCE, WARWICK,  
SOMERSET, young RICHMOND, OXFORD,  
MONTAGUE, Lieutenant of the Tower, and  
Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* Master lieutenant, now that God  
and friends

• Have shaken Edward from the regal seat;  
• And turn'd my captive state to liberty,

• My fear to hope, my sorrows unto joys;  
• At our enlargement what are thy due fees?

*Lieu.* Subjects may challenge nothing of  
their sovereigns;

• But, if an humble prayer may prevail,  
• I then crave pardon of your majesty.

*K. Hen.* For what, lieutenant? for well  
using me? [ness,

• Nay, be thou sure, I'll well requite thy kind-  
• For that it made my imprisonment a pleasure:

• Ay, such a pleasure as incaged birds  
• Conceive, when, after many moody thoughts,

• At last, by notes of household harmony,  
• They quite forget their loss of liberty.—

• But, Warwick, after God, thou set'st me free,  
• And chiefly, therefore, I thank God, and thee;

• He was the author, thou the instrument.  
• Therefore, that I may conquer fortune's spite,

• By living low, where fortune cannot hurt me;  
• And that the people of this blessed land

• May not be punish'd with my thwarting stars;  
Warwick, although my head still wear the

I here resign my government to thee, [crown,  
For thou art fortunate in all thy deeds.

*War.* Your grace hath still been famed for  
virtuous;

And now may seem as wise as virtuous,  
By spying, and avoiding, fortune's malice,

\* For few men rightly temper with the stars\*:

\* Yet in this one thing let me blame your grace,

\* For choosing me, when Clarence is in place†.

\* *Clar.* No, Warwick, thou art worthy of  
the sway,

\* To whom the heavens, in thy nativity,  
\* Adjudged an olive branch, and laurel crown,

\* As likely to be blest in peace and war;

\* And therefore I yield thee my free consent.

\* *War.* And I choose Clarence only for pro-  
tector. [both your hands;

\* *K. Hen.* Warwick, and Clarence, give me  
Now join your hands, and with your hands,

your hearts,

\* That no dissension hinder government:

\* I make you both protectors of this land;

\* While I myself will lead a private life,

\* And in devotion spend my latter days,

To sin's rebuke, and my Creator's praise.

*War.* What answers Clarence to his sove-  
reign's will? [consent;

\* *Clar.* That he consents, if Warwick yield

\* For on thy fortune I repose myself.

\* *War.* Why then, though loath, yet must I  
be content;

\* We'll yoke together, like a double shadow

\* To Henry's body, and supply his place;

\* I mean, in bearing weight of government,

\* While he enjoys the honour, and his ease.

\* And, Clarence, now then it is more than  
needful, [traitor,

\* Forthwith that Edward be pronounced a

\* And all his lands and goods be confiscate.

*Clar.* What else? and that succession be de-  
termined. [his part.

\* *War.* Ay, therein Clarence shall not want

\* *K. Hen.* But, with the first of all your  
chief affairs,

\* Let me entreat, (for I command no more,)

\* That Margaret your queen, and my son Ed-  
ward, [speed:

\* Be sent for, to return from France with

\* For, till I see them here, by doubtful fear

\* My joy of liberty is half eclipsed. [all speed.

*Clar.* It shall be done, my sovereign, with

\* *K. Hen.* My lord of Somerset, what youth  
is that,

\* Of whom you seem to have so tender care?

\* *Som.* My liege, it is young Henry, earl of  
Richmond. [secret powers

\* *K. Hen.* Come hither, England's hope: I  
[Lays his Hand on his Head

\* Suggest but truth to my divining thoughts,

\* This pretty lad will prove our country's

\* His looks are full of peaceful majesty; [bliss.

\* His head by nature framed to wear a crown,

\* His hand to wield a sceptre; and himself

\* Likely, in time, to bless a regal throne.

Make much of him, my lords; for this is he,

\* Must help you more than you are hurt by me.

*Enter a Messenger.*

\* *War.* What news, my friend? [brother,

\* *Mess.* That Edward is escaped from your

\* And fled, as he hears since, to Burgundy.

\* *War.* Unsavoury news: But how made  
he escape?

\* Few men conform their temper to their destiny. † Present. ‡ Afterward Henry VII.

- \* *Mess.* He was convey'd by Richard duke of Gloster,  
 • And the lord Hastings, who attended \* him  
 • In secret ambush on the forest side,  
 • And from the bishop's huntsmen rescued him;  
 • For hunting was his daily exercise. [charge.—  
 • \* *Har.* My brother was too careless of his  
 • But let us hence, my sovereign, to provide  
 • A salve for any sore that may betide.  
 [Exit King HENRY, WAR., CLAR.,  
 Lieut., and Attendants.  
 • \* *Som.* My lord, I like not of this flight of  
 Edward's: [help;  
 • For, doubtless, Burgundy will yield him  
 • And we shall have more wars, before't be  
 • As Henry's late presaging prophecy [long.  
 • Did glad my heart, with hope of this young  
 Richmond; [flirts  
 • So doth my heart misgive me, in these coun-  
 • What may befall him, to his harm, and ours:  
 • Therefore, lord Oxford, to prevent the worst,  
 • Forthwith we'll send him hence to Britany,  
 • Till storms be past of civil enmity. [crown,  
 • \* *Oxf.* Ay; for, if Edward repossess the  
 • 'Tis like, that Richmond with the rest shall  
 down.  
 • \* *Som.* It shall be so; he shall to Britany.  
 • Come, therefore, let's about it speedily.  
 [Exit.

## SCENE VII. Before York.

Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, HASTINGS,  
 and Forces.

- \* *K. Edw.* Now, brother Richard, lord  
 Hastings, and the rest;  
 • Yet thus far fortune maketh us amends,  
 • And says—that once more I shall interchange  
 • My waned state for Henry's regal crown.  
 • We'll have we pass'd, and now repass'd the  
 seas,  
 • And brought desired help from Burgundy:  
 • What then remains, we being thus arrived  
 • From Ravenspurgh haven before the gates of  
 York,  
 • But that we enter, as into our dukedom?  
 • \* *Glo.* The gates made fast!—Brother, I like  
 not this; [hold,  
 • For many men, that stumble at the thresh-  
 • Are well foretold—that danger lurks within.  
 • \* *K. Edw.* Tush, man! abodeinments must  
 not now affright us:  
 • By fair or foul means we must enter in,  
 • For hither will our friends repair to us.  
 • \* *Hast.* My liege, I'll knock once more, to  
 summon them.

Enter, on the Walls, the Mayor of York,  
 and his Brethren.

- \* *May.* My lords, we were forewarned of  
 your coming,  
 And shut the gates for safety of ourselves;  
 For now we owe allegiance unto Henry.  
 • \* *K. Edw.* But, master mayor, if Henry be  
 your king,  
 • Yet Edward, at the least, is duke of York.  
 • \* *May.* True, my good lord; I know you  
 for no less.

- \* *K. Edw.* Why, and I challenge nothing  
 but my dukedom;  
 • As being well content with that alone.  
 • \* *Glo.* But, when the fox hath once got in  
 his nose  
 • He'll soon find means to make the body  
 follow. [Aside  
 • \* *Hast.* Why, master mayor, why stand  
 you in a doubt?  
 Open the gates, we are king Henry's friends  
 • \* *May.* Ay, say you so? the gates shall then  
 be open'd. [Exit from above.  
 • \* *Glo.* A wise stout captain, and persuaded  
 soon! [all were well,  
 • \* *Hast.* The good old man would fain that  
 • So 'twere not long of him†: but, being  
 enter'd,  
 • I doubt not, I, but we shall soon persuade  
 • Both him, and all his brothers, unto reason.  
 Re-enter the Mayor and Two Aldermen,  
 below.  
 • \* *K. Edw.* So, master mayor, these gates  
 must not be shut,  
 • But in the night, or in the time of war.  
 • What! fear not, man, but yield me up the  
 keys; [Takes his Keys  
 • For Edward will defend the town, and these  
 • And all those friends that deign to follow me  
 Drum. Enter MONTGOMERY, and Forces  
 marching.  
 • \* *Glo.* Brother, this is sir John Montgomery.  
 Our trusty friend, unless I be deceived.  
 • \* *K. Edw.* Welcome, sir John! but why  
 come you in arms? [storm.  
 • \* *Mont.* To help king Edward in his time of  
 As every loyal subject ought to do.  
 • \* *K. Edw.* Thanks, good Montgomery: But  
 we now forget  
 • Our title to the crown; and only claim  
 • Our dukedom, till God please to send the  
 rest. [again;  
 • \* *Mont.* Then fare you well, for I will hence  
 I came to serve a king, and not a duke.—  
 • Drummer, strike up, and let us march away.  
 [A March begun.  
 • \* *K. Edw.* Nay, stay, sir John, a while;  
 and we'll debate, [cover'd.  
 • By what safe means the crown may be re-  
 • \* *Mont.* What talk you of debating? In few  
 words, [king,  
 • If you'll not here proclaim yourself our  
 • I'll leave you to your fortune; and be gone,  
 To keep them back that come to succour you:  
 Why should we fight, if you pretend no title?  
 • \* *Glo.* Why, brother, wherefore stand you  
 on nice points?  
 • \* *K. Edw.* When we grow stronger, then  
 we'll make our claim: [ing.  
 • Till then, 'tis wisdom to conceal our mean-  
 • \* *Hast.* Away with scrupulous wit! now  
 arms must rule. [unto crowns.  
 • \* *Glo.* And fearless minds climb soonest  
 • Prother, we will proclaim you out of hand;  
 • The bruit thereof will bring you many  
 friends!

\* i. e., Waited for him.

† The mayor is willing we should enter, so he may not be blamed.

‡ Noise, report.

\* *K. Edw.* Then be it as you will; for 'tis my right,

And Henry but usurps the diadem.

*Mont.* Ay, now my sovereign speaketh like himself;

And now will I be Edward's champion.

*Hast.* Sound, trumpet; Edward shall be here proclaim'd:—

Come, fellow soldier, make thou proclamation.  
[*Gives him a Paper. Flourish.*]

Sold. [Reads.] Edward the fourth, by the grace of God, king of England and France, and lord of Ireland, &c.

*Mont.* And whoso'er gainsays king Edward's right,

By this I challenge him to single fight.

[*Throws down his Gauntlet.*]  
*All.* Long live Edward the fourth!

\* *K. Edw.* Thanks, brave Montgomery;—and thanks unto you all.

\* If fortune serve me, I'll requite this kindness.

\* Now, for this night, let's harbour here in York:

\* And, when the morning sun shall raise his above the border of this horizon,

\* We'll forward towards Warwick, and his mates;

For well I wot\*, that Henry is no soldier.—

\* Ah, forward Clarence!—how evil it beseems thee,

\* To flatter Henry, and forsake thy brother!

\* Yet, as we may, we'll meet both thee and Warwick.—

\* Come on, brave soldiers; doubt not of the

\* And, that once gotten, doubt not of large pay.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VIII. London. A Room in the Palace.

Enter King HENRY, WARWICK, CLARENCE, MONTAGUE, EXETER, and OXFORD.

*War.* What counsel, lords? Edward from

Belgia,

With hasty Germans, and blunt Hollanders, Hath pass'd in safety through the narrow seas, And with his troops doth march amain to London;

\* And many giddy people flock to him.

\* *Oxf.* Let's levy men, and beat him back again.

*Clar.* A little fire is quickly trodden out; Which, being suffer'd, rivers cannot quench.

*War.* In Warwickshire I have true-hearted friends,

Not mutinous in peace, yet bold in war;

Those will I muster up:—and thou, son Clarence,

Shalt stir, in Suffolk, Norfolk, and in Kent,

\* The knights and gentlemen to come with thee:

\* Thou, brother Montague, in Buckingham,

\* Northampton, and in Leicestershire, shalt find

Men well inclined to hear what thou com'st:—

And thou, brave Oxford, wondrous well beloved,

In Oxfordshire shall muster up thy friends. My sovereign, with the loving citizens—

\* Like to his island, girt in with the ocean,

\* Or modest Dian, circled with her nymphs, Shall rest in London, till we come to him.

Fair lords, take leave, and stand not to reply.

Farewell, my sovereign.

\* *K. Hen.* Farewell, my Hector, and my Troy's true hope.

\* *Clar.* In sign of truth I kiss your high-

\* *K. Hen.* Well-minded Clarence, be thou fortunate!

\* *Mont.* Comfort, my lord;—and so I take

\* *Oxf.* And thus [*Kissing HENRY's hand*] I seal my truth, and bid adieu.

\* *K. Hen.* Sweet Oxford, and my loving Montague,

\* And all at once, once more a kind

*War.* Farewell, sweet lords; let's meet at Coventry.

[*Exeunt WAR., CLAR., OXF., and MONT.*]

\* *K. Hen.* Here at the palace will I rest a while.

\* Cousin of Exeter, what thinks your lordship?

\* Methinks, the power, that Edward hath in

\* Should not be able to encounter mine.

\* *Exe.* The doubt is, that he will seduce the rest.

\* *K. Hen.* That's not my fear, my meed't hath got me fame.

\* I have not stopp'd mine ears to their demands,

\* Nor posted off their suits with slow de-

\* My pity hath been helm to heal their wounds,

\* My mildness hath allay'd their swelling griefs,

\* My mercy dry'd their water-flowing tears:

\* I have not been desirous of their wealth,

\* Nor much oppress'd them with great subsidies;

\* Nor forward of revenge, though they much

\* Then why should they love Edward more than me?

\* No, Exeter, these graces challenge grace:

\* And, when the lion fawns upon the lamb,

\* The lamb will never cease to follow him.

[*Shout within.* A Lancaster! A Lancaster!

*Exe.* Hark, hark, my lord! what shouts are these?

Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, and Soldiers.

\* *K. Edw.* Seize on the shame-faced Henry, bear him hence,

\* And once again proclaim us king of England.—

\* You are the fount, that makes small brooks to flow;

\* Now stops thy spring, my sea shall suck them dry,

\* And swell so much the higher by their

\* Hence with him to the Tower; let him not speak.  
[*Exeunt some with King HENRY*]

\* And, lords, towards Coventry bend we our course,

\* Whose peremptory Warwick now remains

\* Know.

+ Merit



The sun shines hot, and if we use delay,  
Cold biting winter mars our hoped-for hay \*.

\* *Glo.* Away betimes, before his forces join,

\* And take the great-grown traitor unawares  
\* Brave warriors, march amain towards Coventry. [Exeunt]

## ACT V

### SCENE I. Coventry.

*Enter, upon the Walls, WARWICK, the Mayor of Coventry, Two Messengers, and Others.*

*War.* Where is the post, that came from valiant Oxford? low?

How far hence is thy lord, mine honest fellow?  
\* *1 Mess.* By this at Dunsmore, marching hitherward. [gave?]

*War.* How far off is our brother Montague? Where is the post that came from Montague?

\* *2 Mess.* By this at Daintry, with a puissant troop.

*Enter Sir JOHN SOMERVILLE.*

\* *War.* Say, Somerville, what says my loving son? [now?]

And, by the guess, how nigh is Clarence?  
\* *Som.* At Southam I did leave him with his forces,

And do expect him here some two hours hence. [Drum heard.]

\* *War.* Then Clarence is at hand, I hear his drum. [lies:]

\* *Som.* It is not his, my lord; here Southam

\* The drum your honour hears, marcheth from Warwick. [look'd for friends.]

\* *War.* Who should that be? belike, un-

\* They are at hand, and you shall quickly know.

*Drums. Enter King EDWARD, GLOSTER, and Forces, marching.*

\* *K. Edw.* Go, trumpet, to the walls, and sound a parle. [the wall.]

\* *Glo.* See, how the snrly Warwick mans

*War.* O, unbild spite! is sportful Edward come? [duced,

Where slept our scouts, or how are they set? That we could hear no news of his repair?

\* *K. Edw.* Now, Warwick, wilt thou ope the city gates, [knee?—

\* Speak gentle words, and humbly bend thy

\* Call Edward—king, and at his hands beg mercy,

\* And he shall pardon thee these outrages.

\* *War.* Rather, wilt thou draw thy forces hence, [down?—

Confess who set thee up, and plucked thee Call Warwick—patron, and be penitent, And thou shalt still remain the duke of York.

*Glo.* I thought, at least, he would have said—the king;

Or did he make the jest against his will?

\* *War.* Is not a dukedom, sir, a goodly gift?

\* *Glo.* Ay, by my faith, for a poor earl to

\* I'll do thee service for so good a gift +. [give:]

\* *War.* 'Twas I, that gave the kingdom to thy brother. [Warwick's gift.

*K. Edw.* Why, then 'tis mine, if but by

\* *War.* Thou art an Atlas for so great a weight:

And, weakling, Warwick takes his gift again; And Henry is my king, Warwick his subject.

\* *K. Edw.* But Warwick's king is Edward's prisoner:

\* And, gallant Warwick, do but answer this,—What is the body, when the head is off?

\* *Glo.* Alas, that Warwick had no more forecast,

But, whiles he thought to steal the single ten, The king was slyly fingered from the deck!

You left poor Henry at the bishop's palace.

And, ten to one, you'll meet him in the Tower

\* *K. Edw.* 'Tis even so; yet you are Warwick still. [down, kneel down]

\* *Glo.* Come, Warwick, take the time, kneel

\* Nay, when? strike now, or else the iron cool

\* *War.* I had rather chop this hand off at

\* And with the other fling it at thy face, [blow,

\* Than bear so low a sail, to strike to thee.

\* *K. Edw.* Sail how thou canst, have wind and tide thy friend; [halt.

\* This hand, fast wound about thy coal-black

\* Shall, whiles the head is warm, and new cut off, [blood,—

\* Write in the dust this sentence with thy

\* *Wind-changing Warwick now can change no more.*

*Enter OXFORD, with Drums and Colours.*

\* *War.* O cheerful colours! see, where Oxford comes!

*Oxf.* Oxford, Oxford, for Lancaster!

[OXFORD and his Forces enter the City.]

\* *Glo.* The gates are open, let us enter too.

\* *K. Edw.* So other foes may set upon our backs.

\* Stand we in good array; for they, no doubt,

\* Will issue out again, and bid us battle:

\* If not, the city, being but of small defence,

\* We'll quickly rouse the traitors in the same.

*War.* O, welcome, Oxford! for we want thy help.

*Enter MONTAGUE, with Drum and Colours.*

*Mont.* Montague, Montague, for Lancaster!

[He and his Forces enter the City.]

\* *Glo.* Thou and thy brother both shall buy this treason

\* Even with the dearest blood your bodies bear.

\* *K. Edw.* The harder matched, the greater victory;

\* My mind presageth happy gain, and conquest

*Enter SOMERSET, with Drum and Colours.*

*Som.* Somerset, Somerset, for Lancaster!

[He and his Forces enter the City]

*Glo.* Two of thy name, both dukes of Somerset,

Have sold their lives unto the house of York;

\* The allusion is to the proverb, "Make hay while the sun shines" + i. e., Enroll myself among thy dependants.

+ A pack of cards was anciently termed a deck of Cards

And thou shalt be the third, if this sword hold.

*Enter CLARENCE, with Drum and Colours.*

*War.* And lo, where George of Clarence sweeps along,

Of force enough to bid his brother battle;

\* With whom an upright zeal to right prevails,

\* More than the nature of a brother's love:

\* Come, Clarence, come; thou wilt, if Warwick calls. [this means?]

*Clar.* Father of Warwick, know you what

[*Taking the red Rose out of his Cap.*

Look here, I throw my infancy at thee:

I will not ruinate my father's house, [gether,

Who gave his blood to lime \* the stones to-

\* And set up Lancaster. Why, trow'st thou, Warwick,

\* That Clarence is so harsh, so blunt †, unnatu-

\* To bend the fatal instruments of war [ral,

\* Against his brother, and his lawful king?

\* Perhaps thou wilt object my holy oath:

\* To keep that oath, were more impiety [ter.

\* Than Jephtha's, when he sacrificed his daugh-

\* I am so sorry for my trespass made,

\* That, to deserve well at my brother's hands,

\* I here proclaim myself thy mortal foe;

\* With resolution, wheresoe'er I meet thee,

\* (As I will meet thee, if thou stir abroad,)

\* To plague thee for thy foul misleading me.

And so, proud-hearted Warwick, I defy thee,

And to my brother turn my blushing cheeks.—

\* Pardon me, Edward, I will make amends;

\* And, Richard, do not trown upon my faults,

\* For I will henceforth be no more unconstant.

\* *K. Edw.* Now welcome more, and ten times more beloved,

Than if you never hadst deserved our hate.

\* *Glo.* Welcome, good Clarence; this is brother-like. [just!

*War.* O passing † traitor, perjured, and un-

\* *K. Edw.* What, Warwick, wilt thou leave

the town, and fight?

Or shall we beat the stones about thine ears?

\* *War.* Alas, I am not coop'd here for de-

\* will away towards Barnet presently, [fence:

And bid thee battle, Edward, if thou darest.

\* *K. Edw.* Yes, Warwick, Edward dares,

and leads the way:—

Lords to the field; Saint George and victory.

[*Murch. Exeunt.*

SCENE II. A Field of Battle near Barnet.

*Alarums, and Excursions. Enter King*

*EDWARD, bringing in WARWICK wounded.*

\* *K. Edw.* So, lie thou there: die thou, and

die our fear;

\* For Warwick was a bug ‡, that feared ‖ us all.

\* Now, Montague, sit fast; I seek for thee,

\* That Warwick's bones may keep thine company. [Exit.

*War.* Ah, who is nigh? come to me, friend

or foe,

And tell me, who is victor, York or Warwick?

\* Why ask I that? my mangled body shows,

My blood, my want of strength, my sick

heart shows,

That I must yield my body to the earth,

And, by my fall, the conquest to my foe.

Thus yields the cedar to the axe's edge,

Whose arms gave shelter to the princely eagle

Under whose shade the ramping lion slept;

Whose top-branch overpeared Jove's spreading

tree, [wind.

\* And kept low shrubs from winter's powerful

\* These eyes, that now are dimmed with death's

black veil,

\* Have been as piercing as the mid-day sun,

\* To search the secret treasons of the world:

The wrinkles in my brows, now filled with

Were liken'd oft to kingly sepulchres; [blood,

For who lived king, but I could dig his grave?

And who durst smile when Warwick bent his

brow?

Lo, now my glory, s near'd in dust and blood!

My parks, my walks, my manors that I had,

Even now forsake me; and, of all my lands,

Is nothing left me, but my body's length!

Why, what is pomp rule, reign, but earth and

dust?

And, live we how we can, yet die we must.

*Enter OXFORD and SOMERSET.*

\* *Som.* Ah, Warwick, Warwick I wert thou

as we are,

\* We might recover all our loss again!

\* The queen from France hath brought a puis-

sant power; [thou fly!

\* Even now we heard the news: Ah, couldst

\* *War.* Why, then I would not fly.—Ah,

Montagne, [hand,

\* If thou be there, sweet brother, take my

\* And with thy lips keep in my soul a while!

\* Thou lovest me not; for, brother, if thou

didst, [blood,

\* Thy tears would wash this cold congealed

\* That glews my lips, and will not let me

speak.

\* Come quickly, Montagne, or I am dead.

\* *Sam.* Ah, Warwick, Montague hath breathed

his last; [wick,

\* And to the latest gasp, cried out for War-

\* And said—Commend me to my valiant brother. [spoke,

\* And more he would have said; and more he

\* Which sounded like a cannon in a vault,

\* That might not be distinguish'd; but, at last,

\* I well might hear delivered with a groan,—

\* O, farewell, Warwick!

*War.* Sweet rest to his soul!—

Fly, lords, and save yourselves; for Warwick

bids

You all farewell, to meet again in heaven.

[*Dies*

*Oxf.* Away, away, to meet the queen's grea-

power!

[*Exeunt, bearing off WARWICK'S Body*

SCENE III. Another Part of the Field.

*Flourish. Enter King EDWARD in triumph*

*with CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and the rest.*

\* *K. Edw.* Thus far our fortune keeps an

upward course,

‡ *et.*, To cement.

† Stupid, insensible of paternal fondness.

‡ Engbear.

‡ Eminent, egregious

|| Terrified.

And we are graced with wreaths of victory.  
 \* But, in the midst of this bright-shining day,  
 I spy a black, suspicious, threat'ning cloud,  
 That will encounter with our glorious sun,  
 \* Ere he attain his easel western bed:  
 \* I mean, my lords,—those powers, that the  
 queen

\* Hath raised in Gallia, have arrived our coast,  
 \* And, as we hear, march on to fight with us.

\* *Clar.* A little gale will soon disperse that  
 cloud, [came:]

And blow it to the source from whence it  
 Thy very beams will dry those vapours up;  
 For every cloud engenders not a storm.

\* *Glo.* The queen is valued thirty thousand  
 strong,

And Somerset, with Oxford, fled to her;  
 If she have time to breathe, be well assured  
 Her faction will be full as strong as ours.

\* *K. Edm.* We are advertised by our loving  
 friends, [bury:]

That they do hold their course toward Tewks-  
 We having now the best at Barnet field,

We'll thither straight. For willingness rides  
 way; [augmented]

\* And, as we march, our strength will be  
 In every county as we go along.—

Strike up the drum; cry—Courage! and away  
 [Exeunt]

#### SCENE IV. Plains near Tewksbury

*March. Enter Queen MARGARET, Prince  
 EDWARD, SOMERSET, OXFORD, and Sol-  
 diers.*

\* *Q. Mar.* Great lords, wise men ne'er sit  
 and wait their loss,

\* But cheerly seek how to redress their harms.  
 \* What though the mast be now blown over-  
 board,

\* The cable broke, the holding anchor lost,  
 \* And half our sailors swallow'd in the flood,  
 \* Yet lives our pilot still! Is't meet, that he

\* Should leave the helm, and, like a fearful lad,  
 \* With tearful eyes add water to the sea,

\* And give more strength to that which hath  
 too much; [rock,

\* Whiles, in his moan, the ship splits on the  
 \* Which industry and courage might have  
 saved? [this]

\* Ah, what a shame! ah, what a fault were  
 \* Say, Warwick was our anchor; What of that?

\* And Montague our top-mast; What of him?  
 \* Our slaughter'd friends the tackles; What  
 of these?

\* Why, is not Oxford here another anchor?  
 \* And Somerset another goodly mast? [lings?]

\* The friends of France our shrouds and tack  
 \* And, though unskilful, why not Ned and I  
 \* For once allow'd the skilful pilot's charge?

\* We will not from the helm, to sit and weep;  
 \* But keep our course, though the rough wind  
 say—no, [wreck,

\* From shelves and rocks that threaten us with  
 \* As good to chide the waves, as speak them

\* And what is Edward, but a ruthless sea? [fair;  
 \* What Clarence, but a quicksand of deceit?

\* And Richard, but a ragged fatal rock?

\* All these the enemies to our poor bark.

\* Say, you can swim; alas, 'tis but a while:  
 \* Tread on the sand; why, there you quickl  
 sink:

\* Bestride the rock; the tide will wash you off,  
 \* Or else you famish, that's a threefold death.

\* This speak I, lords, to let you understand,  
 \* In case some one of you would fly from us,  
 \* That there's no hoped-for mercy with the  
 brothers, [and rocks,

\* More than with ruthless waves, with sands,  
 \* Why, courage, then, what cannot be avoided,

\* 'Twere childish weakness to lament, or fear.  
 \* *Prince.* Methinks, a woman of this va-  
 liant spirit [words,

\* Should, if a coward heard her speak these  
 \* Infuse his breast with magnanimity,  
 \* And make him, naked, foil a man at arms.

\* I speak not this, as doubting any here:  
 \* For, did I but suspect a fearful man,  
 \* He should have leave to go away betimes;

\* Lest, in our need, he might infect another,  
 \* And make him of like spirit to himself.  
 \* If any such be here, as God forbid!

\* Let him depart, before we need his help.  
 \* *Oxf.* Women and children of so high a  
 courage! [shame.—

And warriors faint! why, 'twere perpetual  
 \* O, brave young prince! thy famous grand-  
 father [live,

Doth live again in thee: Long may'st thou  
 To bear his image, and renew his glories!

\* *Som.* And be, that will not fight for such a  
 hope,

\* Go home to bed, and, like the owl by day,  
 \* If he arise, be mocked and wonder'd at.

\* *Q. Mar.* Thanks, gentle Somerset;—sweet  
 Oxford, thanks.

\* *Prince.* And take his thanks, that yet hath  
 nothing else.

*Enter a Messenger.*  
 \* *Mess.* Prepare you, lords, for Edward is  
 at hand,

\* Ready to fight; therefore be resolute.  
 \* *Oxf.* I thought no less: it is his policy,  
 \* To haste thus fast, to find us unprovided.

\* *Som.* But he's deceived, we are in readiness.  
 \* *Q. Mar.* This cheers my heart, to see your  
 forwardness. [not budge.

\* *Oxf.* Here pitch our battle, hence we will  
*March. Enter, at a distance, King ED-  
 ward, CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and Forces.*

\* *K. Edw.* Brave followers, yonder stands  
 the thorny wood, [strength,

\* Which, by the heavens' assistance, and your  
 \* Must by the roots be hewn up yet ere night.

\* I need not add more fuel to your fire.  
 \* For, well I wot \*, ye blaze to burn them out

\* Give signal to the fight, and to it, lords.  
 \* *Q. Mar.* Lords, knights, and gentlemen  
 what I should say,

\* My tears gainsay;† for every word I speak  
 \* Ye see, I drink the water of mine eyes.

\* Therefore, no more but this:—Henry, your  
 sovereign,

\* Know.

† Unsay, deny.



Is prisoner to the foe; his state usurp'd,  
His realm a slaughterhouse, his subjects slain,  
His statutes cancell'd, and his treasure spent;  
And yonder is the wolf, that makes this spoil.  
You fight in justice: then, in God's name,  
Be valiant, and give signal to the fight. [Lords,  
[*Exeunt both Armies.*

SCENE V. Another part of the same.

*Alarums: Excursions: and afterwards a Retreat. Then enter King EDWARD, CLARENCE, GLOSTER, and Forces; with Queen MARGARET, OXFORD, and SOMERSET, Prisoners.*

\* *K. Edw.* Now, here a period of tumultuous broils. [straight:

Away with Oxford to Hammes' castle\*  
For Somerset, off with his guilty head. [speak.

\* *Go*, bear them hence; I will not hear them  
*Os.* For my part, I'll not trouble thee with words. [fortune.

\* *Som.* Nor I, but stoop with patience to my  
[*Exeunt OXFORD and SOMERSET, guarded.*

\* *Q. Mar.* So part we sadly in this troublous  
To meet with joy in sweet Jerusalem. [world,

\* *K. Edw.* Is proclamation made,—that,  
who finds Edward,

\* Shall have a high reward, and he his life?  
\* *Glo.* It is: and, lo, where youthful Edward comes.

*Enter Soldiers, with Prince EDWARD.*

*K. Edw.* Bring forth the gallant, let us hear him speak:

\* What! can so young a thorn begin to prick?  
\* Edward, what satisfaction canst thou make,

\* For bearing arms, for stirring up my subjects,  
\* And all the trouble thou hast turn'd me to?

*Prince.* Speak like a subject, proud ambitious York!

Suppose, that I am now my father's mouth;  
Resign thy chair, and where I stand, kneel thou,  
Whilst I propose the selfsame words to thee,  
Which, traitor, thou wouldst have me answer to. [solved!

*Q. Mar.* Ah, that thy father had been so re-  
\* *Glo.* That you might still have worn the petticoat, [caster.

And ne'er have stolen the breech from Lan-  
*Prince.* Let Æsop† fable in a winter's night;  
His curish riddles sort not with this place.

*Glo.* By heaven, brat, I'll plague you for that word. [to men.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, thou wast born to be a plague  
*Glo.* For God's sake, take away this captive scold. [back rather.

*Prince.* Nay, take away this scolding crook-  
\* *K. Edw.* Peace, wilful boy, or I will charm† your tongue.

*Clar.* Untutor'd lad, thou art too malapert.  
*Prince.* I know my duty, you are all undutiful:

Lascivious Edward, and thou perjured George,  
And thou misshapen Dick,—I tell ye all,

an: your better, traitors as ye are;—

\* And thou usurp'st my father's right and mine.

*K. Edw.* Take that the likeness of this railer here. [Stabs him.

\* *Glo.* Sprawl'st thou? take that to end thy agony. [Glo. stabs him.

\* *Clar.* And there's for twitting me with perjury. [CLAR. stabs him.

*Q. Mar.* O, kill me too!

*Glo.* Marry, and shall. [Offers to kill her.

\* *K. Edw.* Hold, Richard, hold for we have done too much. [with words?]

*Glo.* Why should she live, to fill the world  
\* *K. Edw.* What! doth she swoon? use means for her recovery. [brother:

*Glo.* Clarence, excuse me to the king, my  
I'll hence to London on a serious matter:

\* Ereye come there, be sure to hear some news.  
*Clar.* What? what?

\* *Glo.* The Tower, the Tower! [Exit.

\* *Q. Mar.* O, Ned, sweet Ned! speak to thy mother, boy!

\* Canst thou not speak? O traitors! murderers!

They, that stabb'd Cæsar, shed no blood at all,  
Did not offend, nor were not worthy blame,

\* If this foul deed were by to equal it.  
\* He was a man; this, in respect, a child;

And men ne'er spend their fury on a child.  
\* What's worse than murderer, that I may name it?

\* No, no; my heart will burst, an if I speak:—  
\* And I will speak, that so my heart may burst.

\* Butchers and villains, bloody cannibals!  
\* How sweet a plant have you untimely cropp'd!

\* You have no children, butchers! if you had,  
\* The thought of them would have stirr'd up remorse!

\* But, if you ever chance to have a child,  
Look in his youth to have him so cut off,

\* As, deathsmen! you have rid this sweet young prince! [perforce.

*K. Edw.* Away with her; go, bear her hence  
*Q. Mar.* Nay, never bear me hence, despatch me here; [death:

Here sheath thy sword, I'll pardon thee my  
What! wilt thou not?—then, Clarence, do it thou. [ease.

*Clar.* By heaven, I will not do thee so much  
*Q. Mar.* Good Clarence, do, sweet Clarence, do thou do it. [not do it.

*Clar.* Didst thou not hear me swear, I would  
*Q. Mar.* Ay, but thou usest to forswear thy-  
Twas sin before||, but now 'tis charity. [self;

\* What! wilt thou not? where is that devil's butcher, [thou?

Hard-favour'd Richard? Richard, where art  
Thou art not here: Murder is thy alms-deed;

Petitioners for blood thou ne'er putt'st back.  
\* *K. Edw.* Away, I say; I charge ye, bear her hence

*Q. Mar.* So come to you, and yours, as to this prince! [Exit, led out forcibly.

*K. Edw.* Where's Richard gone? [guess,

\* *Clar.* To London, all in post; and, as I

\* A castle in Picardy.

† The Prince calls Richard, for his crookedness, Æsop.

‡ i. e., I will compel you to be as silent as if you were deprived of speech by enchantment.

§ Dispute, contention.

|| She alludes to the desertion of Clarence.

To make a bloody supper in the Tower.

*K. Edw.* He's sudden, if a thing comes in his head. [sort]

'Now march we hence: discharge the common

'With pay and thanks, and let's away to London,

'And see our gentle queen how well she fares;

'By this, I hope, she hath a son for me.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE VI. London. *A Room in the Tower.*

King *HENRY* is discovered sitting with a Look in his Face, the Lieutenant attending. Enter *GLOSTER*.

*Glo.* Good day, my lord! What, at your book so hard? [should say rather;

*K. Hen.* Ay, my good lord: My lord, I

'Tis sin to flatter, good was little better:

Good *Gloster*, and good devil, were alike, [lord.

\* And both preposterous; therefore, not good

\* *Glo.* Sirrah, leave us to ourselves: we must confer. [*Exit* Lieutenant.

\* *K. Hen.* So flies the reckless\* shepherd from the wolf: [fleece,

\* So first the harmless sheep doth yield his

\* And next his throat unto the butcher's knife.

What scene of death hath *Roscus* now to act?

*Glo.* Suspicion always haunts the guilty

The thief doth fear each bush an officer. [mind;

\* *K. Hen.* The bird that hath been limed in a bush, [bush:

\* With trembling wings misdoubteth† every

And I, the hapless male to one sweet bird,

Have now the fatal object in my eye,

Where my poor young was limed, was caught, and kill'd. [of Crete,

\* *Glo.* Why, what a peevish† fool was that

\* That taught his son the office of a fowl?

\* And yet, for all his wings, the fool was drown'd.

\* *K. Hen.* I, *Dædalus*; my poor boy, *Icarus*;

Thy father, *Minos*, that denied our course; [boy,

\* The sun, that sear'd the wings of my sweet

\* Thy brother *Edward*; and thyself, the sea,

\* Whose envious gulf did swallow up his life.

\* Ah, kill me with thy weapon, not with words!

\* My breast can better brook thy dagger's point,

Than can my ears that tragic history.— [life?]

\* But wherefore dost thou come? is't for my

\* *Glo.* Think'st thou I am an executioner?

\* *K. Hen.* A persecutor, I am sure, thou art;

\* If murdering innocents be executing,

\* Why, then thou art an executioner.

\* *Glo.* Thy son I kill'd for his presumption.

\* *K. Hen.* Hadst thou been kill'd, when first thou didst presume,

Thou hadst not lived to kill a son of mine.

\* And thus I prophesy,—that many a thousand,

\* Which now mistrust no parcel§ of my fear;

And many an old man's sigh, and many a

widow's,

\* And many an orphan's water-standing eye,—

\* Men for their sons, wives for their husbands'

tate,

\* And orphans for their parents' timeless death,

\* Careless. † To misdoubt is to suspect danger, to fear. ‡ Childish. § No part of what

my fears presage. ¶ To rook, signified, to squat down or lodge on any thing. ¶ Select.

'Shall rue the hour that ever thou wast born.

The owl shriek'd at thy birth, an evil sign;

'The night crow cried, aboding luckless time

Dogs howl'd, and hideous tempests shook down trees;

The raven rook'd|| her on the chimney's top,

And chattering pies in dismal discords sung.

Thy mother felt more than a mother's pain,

And yet brought forth less than a mother's hope;

'To wit, an indigest deformed lump,

Not like the fruit of such a goodly tree. [born,

Teeth hadst thou in thy head, when thou wast

To signify,—thou camest to bite the world:

And, if the rest be true which I have heard,

'Thou camest—

*Glo.* I'll hear no more;—Die, prophet, in thy speech! [*Stabs him.*

For this, amongst the rest, was I ordain'd.

\* *K. Hen.* Ay, and for much more slaughter after this.

O God! forgive my sins, and pardon thee! [*Dies.*

*Glo.* What, will the aspiring blood of Lancaster

Sink in the ground? I thought it would have

See, how my sword weeps for the poor king's

death!

'O, may such purple tears be always shed

'From those that wish the downfall of our

'If any spark of life be yet remaining, [house!—

Down, down to hell; and say—I sent thee thither, [*Stabs him again.*

I, that have neither pity, love, nor fear.—

Indeed, 'tis true, that *Henry* told me of;

For I have often heard my mother say,

I came into the world with my legs forward:

Had I not reason, think ye, to make haste,

'And seek their ruin that usurp'd our right?

The midwife wonder'd; and the women cried

*O, Jesus bless us, he is born with teeth!*

'And so I was; which plainly signified—

That I should snarl, and bite, and play the dog

'Then, since the heavens have shaped my body

Let hell make crook'd my mind to answer it. [so,

I have no brother, I am like no brother:

'And this word—love, which grey beards call

Be resident in men like one another, [divine,

And not in me; I am myself alone.— [light;

Clarence, beware; thou keep'st me from life:

But I will sort¶ a pitchy day for thee:

For I will buz abroad such prophecies,

'That *Edward* shall be fearful of his life;

And then, to purge his fear, I'll be thy death.

'King *Henry*, and the prince, his son, are gone:

'Clarence, thy turn is next, and then the rest;

Counting myself but bad, till I be best.—

'I'll throw thy body in another room,

And triumph, *Henry*, in thy day of doom.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE VII. *The same. A Room in the Palace.*

King *EDWARD* is discovered sitting on his throne; Queen *ELIZABETH* with the infant Prince, *CLARENCE*, *GLOSTER*, *HASTINGS*, and others, near him. [royal throne,

*K. Edw.* Once more we sit in England's

Re-purchased with the blood of enemies.  
What valiant foe-men, like to autumn's corn,  
Have we mow'd down, in tops of all their  
pride?

Three dukes of Somerset, threefold renown'd  
For hardy and undoubted champions:  
Two Cliffords, as the father and the son:

And two Northumberland; two braver men  
Ne'er spurr'd their coursers at the trumpet's  
sound: [and Montague,

' With them, the two brave bears, Warwick  
That in their chains fetter'd the kingly lion,  
And ma'ie the forest tremble when they roar'd.  
Thus have we swept suspicion from our seat,  
And made our footstool of security.—

Come hither, Bess, and let me kiss my boy:—  
Young Ned, for thee, thine uncle, and myself,  
Have in our armours watch'd the winter's night,  
' Went all a foot in summer's scalding heat,  
That thou might'st possess the crown in peace;  
And of our labours thou shalt reap the gain.

*Glo.* I'll blast his harvest, if your head were  
For yet I am not look'd on in the world. [laid;  
This shoulder was ordain'd so thick, to heave;  
And heave it shall, some weight, or break my  
back:—

Work thou the way,—and thou shalt execute.

[*Aside.*

*K. Edw.* Clarence, and Gloster, love my  
lovely queen;

And kiss your princely nephew, brothers both.  
*Clar.* The duty, that I owe unto your ma-  
jesty,

I seal upon the lips of this sweet babe.

*K. Edw.* Thanks, noble Clarence; worthy  
brother, thanks. [thou sprang'st,

' *Glo.* And, that I love the tree from whence

' Witness the loving kiss I give the fruit:—

To say the truth, so Judas kiss'd his  
master; [meant—all harm. *Aside.*

' And cried—all hail! when as he

*K. Edw.* Now am I seated as my soul de-  
lights,

Having my country's peace, and brothers'  
loves. [with Margaret?

*Clar.* What will your grace have done  
Reignier, her father, to the king of France

Hath pawn'd the Sicils and Jerusalem,  
And hither have they sent it for her ransome.

*K. Edw.* Away with her, and waft her  
hence to France. [time,

And now what rests, but that we spend the  
With stately triumphs\*, mirthful comic  
shows,

Such as befit the pleasures of the court?—

Souds, drums and trumpets!—farewell, sour  
annoy!

For here, I hope, begins our lasting joy.

[*Exeunt.*

\* Public shows.

The three parts of King HENRY VI. are suspected, by Mr. Theobald, of being supposititious, and are declared, by Dr. Warburton, to be certainly not Shakspeare's. Mr. Theobald's suspicion arises from some obsolete words: but the phraseology is like the rest of our author's style, and single words, of which however I do not observe more than two, can conclude little.

Dr. Warburton gives no reason, but I suppose him to judge upon deeper principles and more comprehensive views, and to draw his opinion from the general effect and spirit of the composition, which he thinks inferior to the other historical plays.

From mere inferiority nothing can be inferred; in the productions of wit there will be inequality. Sometimes judgment will err, and sometimes the matter itself will defeat the artist. Of every author's works one will be the best, and one will be the worst. The colours are not equally pleasing, nor the attitudes equally graceful, in all the pictures of Titian or Reynolds.

Dissimilitude of style and heterogeneity of sentiment, may sufficiently show that a work does not really belong to the reputed author. But in these plays no such marks of spuriousness are found. The diction, the versification, and the figures, are Shakspeare's. These plays, considered, without regard to characters and incidents, merely as narratives in verse, are more happily conceived, and more accurately finished than those of King JOHN, RICHARD II. or the tragic scenes of King HENRY IV. and V. If we take these plays from Shakspeare, to whom shall they be given? What author, of that age, had the same easiness of expression and fluency of numbers?

Of these three plays I think the second the best. The truth is, that they have not sufficient variety of action, for the incidents are too often of the same kind; yet many of the characters are well discriminated. King Henry, and his Queen, King Edward, the Duke of Gloster and the Earl of Warwick, are very strongly and distinctly painted.—JOHNSON.



# LIFE AND DEATH OF KING RICHARD III.

## Persons represented.

King EDWARD the FOURTH.  
EDWARD, *Prince of Wales, afterwards King Edward V.*  
RICHARD, *duke of York.*  
GEORGE, *duke of Clarence,*  
RICHARD, *duke of Gloster, afterwards King Richard III.*  
A Young SON of CLARENCE.  
HENRY, *earl of Richmond, afterwards King Henry VII.*  
Cardinal BOUCHIER, *Archbishop of Canterbury.*  
THOMAS ROTHERAM, *Archbishop of York.*  
JOHN MORTON, *Bishop of Ely.*  
Duke of BUCKINGHAM.  
Duke of NORFOLK; Earl of SURREY, *his son.*  
Earl RIVERS, *brother to king Edward's queen.*  
Marquis of DORSET, and Lord GREY, *her*  
Earl of OXFORD. Lord HASTINGS. Lord STANLEY. Lord LOVELL.  
Sir THOMAS VAUGHAN. Sir RICHARD RATCLIFF.

Sir WILLIAM CATESBY. Sir JAMES TYRRELL.  
Sir JAMES BLOUNT. Sir WALTER HERBERT.  
Sir ROBERT BRAKENBURY, *lieutenant of the Tower.*  
CHRISTOPHER URSWICK, *a priest. Another Priest.*  
Lord Mayor of London. Sheriff of Wiltshire.

ELIZABETH, *queen of king Edward IV.*  
MARGARET, *widow of king Henry VI.*  
Duchess of YORK, *mother to king Edward IV., Clarence, and Gloster.*  
Lady ANNE, *widow of Edward, prince of Wales, son to king Henry VI.; afterwards married to the duke of Gloster.*  
A Young Daughter of CLARENCE.

Lords, and other Attendants; two Gentle men, a Pursuivant, Scrivener, Citizens, Murderers, Messengers, Ghosts, Soldiers, &c.

*Scene,—England*

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. London. A Street.

#### *Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glos.* Now is the winter of our discontent  
Made glorious summer by this sun of York;  
And all the clouds, that lower'd upon our house,  
In the deep bosom of the ocean buried.  
Now are our brows bound with victorious  
wreaths;

Our bruised arms hung up for monuments;  
Our stern alarms changed to merry meetings,  
Our dreadful marches to delightful measures.\*  
Grim-visaged war hath smooth'd his wrinkled  
front;

And now,—instead of mounting barbed steeds,  
To fright the souls of fearful adversaries,—  
He capers nimbly in a lady's chamber,  
To the lascivious pleasing of a lute.

But I,—that am not shap'd for sportive tricks,  
Nor made to court an amorous looking-glass;  
I, that am rudely stamp'd, and want love's mas-  
jesty,

To strut before a wanton ambling nymph;  
I, that am curtail'd of this fair proportion,  
Cheated of feature by dissembling nature,  
Deform'd, unfinish'd, sent before my time  
Into this breathing world, scarce half made up,  
And that so lamely and unfashionable,  
That dogs bark at me, as I halt by them;—  
Why I, in this weak piping time of peace,

Have no delight to pass away the time;  
Unless to spy my shadow in the sun,  
And descant on mine own deformity;  
And therefore,—since I cannot prove a lover  
To entertain these fair well-spoken days,  
I am determin'd to prove a villain,  
And hate the idle pleasures of these days.  
Plots have I laid, inductions dangerous,  
By drunken prophecies, libels, and dream  
To set my brother Clarence, and the king,  
In deadly hate the one against the other;  
And, if king Edward be as true and just,  
As I am subtle, false, and treacherous,  
This day should Clarence closely be mew'd up,  
About a prophecy, which says—that G  
Of Edward's heirs the murderer shall be.  
Dive, thoughts, down to my soul! here Cla-  
rence comes.

*Enter CLARENCE, guarded, and BRAKENBURY.*

Brother, good day: What means this armed  
That waits upon your grace? [*guarded,*

*Clar.* His majesty,  
Tendering my person's safety, hath appointed  
This conduct to convey me to the Tower.

*Glo.* Upon what cause?

*Clar.* Because my name is—George.

*Glo.* Alack, my lord, that fault is none of  
yours;

He should, for that, commit your godfathers'

\* Dances.

+ Armed.

Preparations for mischief

O, but his majesty hath some intent,  
That he will be new christen'd in the Tower.  
But what's the matter, Clarence? may I know?

*Clar.* Nay, Richard, when I know; for, I  
As yet I do not; But, as I can learn, [protest,  
He hears of other prophecies, and dreams;  
And from the cross-row plucks the letter G,  
And says,—a wizard told him, that by G  
His issue should be inherit'd should be;  
And, for my sake of George begins with G,  
It follows in his thought that I am he:  
These, as I learn, and such like toys \* as these,  
Have moved his highness to commit me now.

*Glo.* Why, this it is, when men are ruled by  
women;—

'Tis not the king that sends you to the Tower;  
My lady Grey, his wife, Clarence, 'tis she  
That tempers him to this extremity.  
Was it not she, and that good man of worship,  
Antony Woodville, her brother there,  
That made him send lord Hastings to the Tower;  
From whence this present day he is deliver'd?  
We are not safe, Clarence, we are not safe.

*Clar.* By heaven, I think there is no man  
secure, [heralds  
But the queen's kindred, and right-walking  
That trudge betwixt the king and mistress  
Shore.

Heard you not what an humble suppliant  
Lord Hastings was to her for his delivery?

*Glo.* Humbly complaining to her deity,  
Got my lord chamberlain his liberty.  
I'll tell you what,—I think it is our way,  
If we will keep in favour with the king,  
To be her men, and wear her livery:

The jealous o'er-worn widow, and herself †,  
Since that our brother dubb'd them gentlewo-  
Are mighty gossips in this monarchy. [men,

*Brak.* I beseech your graces both to pardon  
His majesty hath straitly given in charge, [me;  
That no man shall have private conference,  
Of what decree so ever, with his brother.

*Glo.* Even so? an please your worship,  
Brakenbury,

You may partake of any thing we say: [king  
We speak no treason, man!—We say, the  
Is wise, and virtuous; and his noble queen  
Well struck in years; fair, and not jealous:  
We say, that Shore's wife hath a pretty foot,  
A cherry lip,  
A bonny eye, a passing pleasing tongue;  
And the queen's kindred are made gentlefolks:  
How say you, sir? can you deny all this?

*Brak.* With this, my lord, myself have  
nought to do. [I tell thee, fellow,

*Glo.* Naught to do with mistress Shore?  
He that doth naught with her, excepting one,  
Were best to do it secretly, alone.

*Brak.* What one, my lord?

*Glo.* Her husband, knave:—Would'st thou  
betray me? [and, withal,

*Brak.* I beseech your grace to pardon me;  
Forbear your conference with the noble duke.

*Clar.* We know thy charge, Brakenbury,  
and will obey. [obey.

*Glo.* We are the queen's subjects ‡, and must

Brother, farewell: I will unto the king;  
And whatsoever you will employ me in,—  
Were it to call king Edward's widow—sister,  
I will perform it to enfranchise you.

Mean time, this deep disgrace in brotherhood,  
Touches me deeper than you can imagine.

*Clar.* I know it pleaseth neither of us well.  
*Glo.* Well, your imprisonment shall not be  
I will deliver you, or else lie for you: [long;  
Mean time, have patience.

*Clar.* I must perforce; farewell.  
[*Exeunt CLARENCE, BRAKENBURY,  
and Guard.*

*Glo.* Go, tread the path that thou shalt ne'er  
return,

Simple, plain Clarence!—I do love thee so,  
That I will shortly send thy soul to heaven,  
If heaven will take the present at our hands.  
But who comes here? the new-deliver'd Hast-  
ings?

*Enter HASTINGS.*

*Hast.* Good time of day unto my gracious  
lord! [lain!

*Glo.* As much unto my good lord chamber-  
Well are you welcome to this open air.

How hath your lordship brook'd imprison-  
ment? [soners must:

*Hast.* With patience, noble lord, as pri-  
But I shall live, my lord, to give them thanks,  
That were the cause of my imprisonment.

*Glo.* No doubt, no doubt; and so shall Cla-  
rence too;

For they, that were your enemies, are his,  
And have prevail'd as much on him, as you.

*Hast.* More pity that the eagle should be  
mew'd §,

While kites and buzzards prey at liberty.

*Glo.* What news abroad? [home;—

*Hast.* No news so bad abroad as this at  
The king is sickly, weak, and melancholy,  
And his physicians fear him mightily. [indeed.

*Glo.* Now, by Saint Paul, this news is bad  
O, he hath kept an evil diet long,  
And over-much consumed his royal person,

'Tis very grievous to be thought upon.  
What, is he in his bed?

*Hast.* He is.  
*Glo.* Go you before, and I will follow you.

[*Exit HASTINGS.*

He cannot live, I hope; and must not die,  
Till George be pack'd with posthorse up to  
heaven.

I'll in, to urge his hatred more to Clarence,  
With lies well steel'd with weighty arguments;  
And, if I fail not in my deep intent,  
Clarence hath not another day to live:

Which done, God take king Edward to his  
mercy,

And leave the world for me to bustle in!  
For then I'll marry Warwick's youngest  
daughter: [father?

What though I kill'd her husband, and her  
The readiest way to make the wench amends,  
Is—to become her husband, and her father:

The which will I; not all so much for love,  
As for another secret close intent,

\* Fancies.

† The Queen and Shore.

‡ Lowest of subjects.

§ Confined.

By marrying her, which I must reach unto.  
But yet I run before my horse to market :  
Clarence still breathes : Edward still lives, and  
reigns ;  
When they are gone, then must I count my  
gains. [Exit.]

SCENE II. *The same. Another Street.*

*Enter the corpse of King HENRY the Sixth,  
borne in an open coffin, Gentlemen bearing  
halberds, to guard it ; and Lady ANNE  
as mourner.*

*Anne.* Set down, set down your honourable  
load,—

If honour may be shrouded in a hearse,—  
Whilst I a while obsequiously\* lament  
The untimely fall of virtuous Lancaster.  
Poor key-cold figure of a holy king !  
Pale ashes of the house of Lancaster !  
Thou bloodless remnant of that royal blood !  
Be it lawful that I invoke thy ghost,  
To hear the lamentations of poor Anne,  
Wife to thy Edward, to thy slaughter'd son,  
Stabb'd by the self-same hand that made these  
wounds !

Lo, in these windows, that let forth thy life,  
I pour the helpless balm of my poor eyes :—  
O, cursed be the hand that made these holes !  
Cursed the heart, that had the heart to do it !  
Cursed the blood, that let this blood from hence !  
More direful hap betide that hated wretch,  
That makes us wretched by the death of thee,  
Than I can wish to adders, spiders, toads,  
Or any creeping venom'd thing that lives !  
If ever he have child, abortive be it,  
Prodigions, and untimely brought to light,  
Whose ugly and unnatural aspect  
May fright the hopeful mother at the view ;  
And that be heir to his unhappiness !  
If ever he have wife, let her be made  
More miserable by the death of him,  
Than I am made by my young lord, and  
thee !— [load,

Come, now toward Chertsey with your holy  
Taken from Paul's to be interred there ;  
And, still as you are weary of the weight,  
Rest you, whilst I lament king Henry's corse.

[*The bearers take up the corpse, and  
advance.*

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Stay you, that bear the corse, and set  
it down. [fiend,

*Anne.* What black magician conjures up this  
To stop devoted charitable deeds ?

*Glo.* Villains, set down the corse ; or, by  
Saint Paul,

I'll make a corse of him that disobeys.

*1 Gent.* My lord, stand back, and let the  
coffin pass. [command :

*Glo.* Unmanner'd dog ! stand thou when I  
Advance thy halberd higher than my breast,  
Or, by Saint Paul, I'll strike thee to my foot,  
And spurn upon thee, beggar, for thy boldness.

[*The bearers set down the coffin.*

*Anne.* What, do you tremble ? are you all  
afraid ?

Alas, I blame you not ; for you are mortal,  
And mortal eyes cannot endure the devil.—  
Avant, thou dreadful minister of hell !  
Thou halst but power over his mortal body,  
His soul thou canst not have ; therefore be gone.  
*Glo.* Sweet saint, for charity, be not so curst.  
*Anne.* Foul devil, for God's sake, hence,  
and trouble us not ;

For thou hast made the happy earth thy hell,  
Fill'd it with cursing cries, and deep exclams.  
If thou delight to view thy heinous deeds,  
Behold this pattern† of thy butcheries :  
O, gentlemen, see, see ! dead Henry's wounds  
Open their congeal'd mouths, and bleed afresh !  
Blush, blush, thou lump of foul deformity ;  
For 'tis thy presence that exhales this blood  
From cold and empty veins, where no blood  
Thy deed, inhuman and unnatural. [dwells ;  
Provokes this deluge most unnatural  
O God, which this blood mad'st, revenge his  
death ! [his death !  
O earth, which this blood drink'st, revenge  
Either, heaven, with lightning strike the mur-  
derer dead,

Or, earth, gape open wide, and eat him quick ;  
As thou dost swallow up this good king's blood,  
Whi h his hell-govern'd arm hath butcher'd !

*Glo.* Lady, you know no rules of charity,  
Which renders good for bad, blessings for  
curses. [nor man ;

*Anne.* Villain, thou know'st no law of God  
No beast so fierce, but knows some touch of  
pity. [no beast.

*Glo.* But I know none, and therefore am  
*Anne.* O wonderful, when devils tell the  
truth ! [angry.—

*Glo.* More wonderful, when angels are so  
Vouchsafe, divine perfection of a woman,  
Of these supposed evils, to give me leave,  
By circumstance, but to acquit myself.

*Anne.* Vouchsafe, diffus'd infection of a man,  
For these known evils, but to give me leave,  
By circumstance, to curse thy cursed self

*Glo.* Fairer than tongue can name thee, let  
me have

Some patient leisure to excuse myself.

*Anne.* Foulter than heart can think thee,  
thou canst make

No excuse current, but to hang thyself.

*Glo.* By such despair, I should accuse myself.

*Anne.* And, by despairing, shalt thou stand  
excused ;

For doing worthy vengeance on thyself,  
That didst unworthy slaughter upon others.

*Glo.* Say, that I slew them not ?

*Anne.* Why then, they are not dead :  
But dead they are, and, devilish slave, by thee.

*Glo.* I did not kill your husband.

*Anne.* Why, then he is alive.  
*Glo.* Nay, he is dead ; and slain by Edward's  
hand. [Margaret saw

*Anne.* In thy soul's throat thou liest ; queen  
Thy murderous talchion smoking in his blood ;  
The which thou once didst bend against her  
breast,

But that thy brothers beat aside the point.

\* Funeral.

† Example.



*Glo.* I was provoked by her slanderous tongue, [ders.  
That laid their guilt upon my guiltless shoul-  
*Anne.* Thou wast provoked by thy bloody mind,

That never dreamt on aught but butcheries:  
Didst thou not kill this king?

*Glo.* I grant ye.

*Anne.* Dost grant me, hedge-hog? then, God grant me too,  
Thou may'st be damned for that wicked deed!  
O, he was gentle, mild, and virtuous.

*Glo.* The fitter for the King of heaven that hath him. [never come.

*Anne.* He is in heaven, where thou shalt

*Glo.* Let him thank me, that help to send him thither;

For he was fitter for that place than earth.

*Anne.* And thou unfit for any place but hell.

*Glo.* Yes, one place else, if you will hear

*Anne.* Some dungeon. [me name it.

*Glo.* Your bed-chamber.

*Anne.* Ill rest betide the chamber where thou liest!

*Glo.* So will it, madam, till I lie with you.

*Anne.* I hope so.

*Glo.* I know so.—But, gentle lady Anne,

To leave this keen encounter of our wits,

And fall somewhat into a slower method;—

Is not the cause of the timeless deaths

Of these Plantagenets, Henry, and Edward,

As blameful as the executioner?

*Anne.* Thou wast the cause, and most accursed effect. [effect;

*Glo.* Your beauty was the cause of that

Your beauty, which did haunt me in my sleep,

To undertake the death of all the world,

So I might live one hour in your sweet bosom.

*Anne.* If I thought that, I tell thee, homicide, [my cheeks.

These nails should rend that beauty from

*Glo.* These eyes could not endure that beauty's wreck;

You should not blemish it, if I stood by:

As all the world is cheered by the sun,  
So I by that; it is my day, my life.

*Anne.* Flick night o'ershade thy day, and death thy life!

*Glo.* Curse not thyself, fair creature: thou art both.

*Anne.* I would I were, to be revenged on

*Glo.* It is a quarrel most unnatural, [thee.  
To be revenged on him that loveth thee.

*Anne.* It is a quarrel just and reasonable,  
To be revenged on him that kill'd my husband. [husband.

*Glo.* He that bereft thee, lady, of thy  
Did it to help thee to a better husband.

*Anne.* His better doth not breathe upon the earth. [he could.

*Glo.* He lives, that loves you better than

*Anne.* Name him.

*Glo.* Plantagenet.

*Anne.* Why, that was he.

*Glo.* The self-same name, but one of better

*Anne.* Where is he? [nature.

*Glo.* Here! [*She spits at him.*

Why dost thou spit at me? [sake!

*Anne.* Would it were mortal poison for thy  
*Glo.* Never came poison from so sweet a place.

*Anne.* Never hung poison on a fouler toad.  
Out of my sight! thou dost infect mine eyes.

*Glo.* Thine eyes, sweet lady, have infected mine. [thee dead!

*Anne.* Would they were basilisks, to strike

*Glo.* I would they were, that I might die at once;

For now they kill me with a living death.

Those eyes of thine from mine have drawn salt tears, [drops:

Shamed their aspects with store of chiding

These eyes, which never shed remorseful \* tear,

Not, when my father York and Edward wept,

To hear the piteous moan that Rutland made,

When black-faced Clifford shook his sword at him:

Nor when thy warlike father, like a child,

Told the sad story of my father's death;

And twenty times made pause, to sob, and weep,

That all the standers-by had wet their cheeks,

Like trees bedash'd with rain: in that sad time,

My manly eyes did scorn an humble tear;

And what these sorrows could not thence ex-  
hale, [weeping.

Thy beauty hath, and made them blind with

I never sued to friend, nor enemy; [word;

My tongue could never learn sweet soothing

But now thy beauty is proposed my fee,

My proud heart sues, and prompts my tongue

to speak. [*She looks scornfully at him.*

Teach not thy lip such scorn; for it was made

For kissing, lady, not for such contempt.

If thy reverend heart cannot forgive,

Lo! here I lend thee this sharp-pointed sword;

Which if thou please to hide in this true breast,

And let the soul forth that adareth thee,

I lay it naked to the deadly stroke,

And humbly beg the death upon my knee.

[*He lays his breast open; she offers at it with his sword.*

Nay, do not pause; for I did kill king Henry;

But 'twas thy beauty that provoked me.

Nay, now despatch; 'twas I that stabb'd young Edward!—

[*She again offers at his breast.*

But 'twas thy heavenly face that set me on.

[*She lets fall the sword.*

Take up the sword again, or take up me.

*Anne.* Arise, dissembler: though I wish thy

I will not be thy executioner. [death.

*Glo.* Then bid me kill myself, and I will do

*Anne.* I have already. [it.

*Glo.* That was in thy rage:

Speak it again, and, even with the word,

This hand, which, for thy love, did kill thy love

Shall, for thy love, kill a far truer love;

To both their deaths shalt thou be accessory.

*Anne.* I would I knew thy heart.

*Glo.* 'Tis figured in my tongue.

*Anne.* I fear me, both are false.

*Glo.* Then man was never true.

*Anne.* Well, well, put up your sword.

*Glo.* Say then, my peace is made.

*Anne.* That shall you know hereafter.

*Glo.* But shall I live in hope?

*Anne.* All men, I hope, live so.

*Glo.* Vouchsafe to wear this ring.

*Anne.* To take is not to give.

[*She puts on the ring.*]

*Glo.* Look, how this ring encompasseth thy finger,

Even so thy breast encloseth my poor heart;  
Wear both of them, for both of them are thine.  
And if thy poor devoted servant may  
But beg one favour at thy gracious hand,  
Thou dost confirm his happiness for ever.

*Anne.* What is it? [*designs*]

*Glo.* That it may please you leave these sad  
To him that hath more cause to be a mourner,  
And presently repair to Crosby-place\*:  
Where—after I have solemnly interr'd,  
At Chertsey monast'ry this noble king,  
And wet his grave with my repentant tears,—  
I will with all expedient duty see you:

For divers unknown reasons, I beseech you,  
Grant me this boon. [*me too,*]

*Anne.* With all my heart; and much it joys  
To see you are become so penitent.—

Tressel, and Berkley, go along with me.

*Glo.* Bid me farewell. [*serve:*]

*Anne.* 'Tis more than you de-  
But, since you teach me how to flatter you,  
Imagine I have said farewell already.

[*Exeunt* Lady ANNE, TRESSSEL, and  
BERKLEY.

*Glo.* Take up the corse, sirs.

*Gen.* Towards Chertsey, noble lord?

*Glo.* No, to White-Friars; there attend my  
coming.

[*Exeunt the rest, with the corse.*]

Was ever woman in this humour woo'd?

Was ever woman in this humour won?

I'll have her,—but I will not keep her long.

What! I, that kill'd her husband, and his father,

To take her in her heart's extremest hate;

With curses in her mouth, tears in her eyes,

The bleeding witness of her hatred by;

With God, her conscience, and these bars  
against me,

And I no friends to back my suit withal,  
But the plain devil, and dissembling looks,  
And yet to win her,—all the world to nothing!  
Ha!

Hath she forgot already that brave prince,  
Edward, her lord, whom I some three months  
since,

Stabb'd, in my angry mood at Tewksbury?

A sweeter and a lovelier gentleman,—

Framed in the prodigality of nature, [royal,—

Young, valiant, wise, and, no doubt, right

The spacious world cannot again afford:

And will she yet abase her eyes on me,

That cropp'd the golden prime of this sweet

And made her widow to a woful bed? [prince,

On me, whose all not equals Edward's moiety?

On me, that halt, and am misshapen thus?

My dukedom to a beggarly denier†,  
I do mistake my person all this while:  
Upon my life, she finds, although I cannot,  
Myself to be a marvellous proper man.  
I'll be at charges for a looking-glass;  
And entertain a score or two of tailors,  
To study fashions to adorn my body:  
Since I am crept in favour with myself,  
I will maintain it with some little cost.  
But, first, I'll turn yon' fellow in his grave;  
And then return lamenting to my love.—  
Shine out, fair sun, till I have bought a glass,  
That I may see my shadow as I pass. [*Exit.*]

SCENE III. *The same. A Room in the  
Palace.*

*Enter* Queen ELIZABETH, Lord RIVERS, and  
Lord GREY.

*Riv.* Have patience, madam; there's no  
doubt his majesty

Will soon recover his accustom'd health.

*Grey.* In that you brook it ill, it makes him  
worse: [*fort,*]

Therefore, for God's sake entertain good com-  
And cheer his grace with quick and merry  
words. [*of me!*]

*Q. Eliz.* If he were dead, what would betide

*Grey.* No other harm, but loss of such a lord.

*Q. Eliz.* The loss of such a lord includes all  
harms. [*goodly son,*]

*Grey.* The heavens have bless'd you with a  
To be your comforter, when he is gone.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, he is young; and his minority  
Is put unto the trust of Richard Gloster,

A man that loves not me, nor none of you.

*Riv.* Is it concluded he shall be protector?

*Q. Eliz.* It is determined, not concluded yet:  
But so it must be, if the king miscarry.

*Enter* BUCKINGHAM and STANLEY.

*Grey.* Here come the lords of Buckingham  
and Stanley, [*grace!*]

*Buck.* Good time of day unto your royal

*Stan.* God make your majesty joyful as you  
have been! [*lord of Stanley,*]

*Q. Eliz.* The countess Richmond, good my  
To your good prayer, will scarcely say—amen.  
Yet, Stanley, notwithstanding she's your wife,  
And loves not me, be you, good lord, assured,  
I hate not you for her proud arrogance.

*Stan.* I do beseech you, either not believe  
The envious slanders of her false accusers;

Or, if she be accused on true report, [*ceeds*]  
Bear with her weakness, which, I think, pro-  
From wayward sickness, and no grounded  
malice. [*of Stanley?*]

*Q. Eliz.* Saw you the king to-day, my lord

*Stan.* But now, the duke of Buckingham,  
Are come from visiting his majesty. [*and I,*]

*Q. Eliz.* What likelihood of his amend-  
ment, lords? [*cheerfully.*]

*Buck.* Madam, good hope; his grace speaks

*Q. Eliz.* God grant him health! Did you  
confer with him? [*ment*]

*Buck.* Ay, madam, he desires to make atone-  
Between the duke of Gloster and your brothers,  
And between them and my lord chamberlain;

\* In Bishopsgate-street.

† A small French coin.

And sent to warn\* them to his royal presence.

*Q. Eliz.* 'Would all were well!—But that will never be;—

I fear, our happiness is at the height.

*Enter GLOSTER, HASTINGS, and DORSET.*

*Glo.* They do me wrong, and I will not endure it:—

Who are they, that complain unto the king,  
That I, forsooth, am stern, and love them not?  
By holy Paul, they love his grace but lightly,  
That fill his ears with such dissentious rumours.  
Because I cannot flatter, and speak fair,  
Smile in men's faces, smooth, deceive, and cog,  
Duck with French nods and apish courtesy,  
I must be held a rancorous enemy.

Cannot a plain man live, and think no harm,  
But thus his simple truth must be abused  
By silken, sly, insinuating Jacks?

*Grey.* To whom in all this presence speaks your grace?

*Glo.* To thee, that hast nor honesty, nor grace. [wrong?—

When have I injured thee? when done thee  
Or thee?—or thee?—or any of your faction?

A plague upon you all! His royal grace,—  
Whom God preserve better than you would wish!—

Cannot be quiet scarce a breathing-while,  
But you must trouble him with lewd† complaints. [the matter:

*Q. Eliz.* Brother of Gloster, you mistake  
The king, of his own royal disposition,  
And not provoked by any suitor else;  
Aiming, belike, at your interior hatred,  
That in your outward action shows itself,  
Against my children, brothers, and myself,  
Makes him to send; that thereby he may gather  
The ground of your ill-will, and so remove it.

*Glo.* I cannot tell;—The world is grown so bad, [perch:

That wrens may prey where eagles dare not  
Since every Jack‡ became a gentleman,  
There's many a gentle person made a Jack.

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, we know your meaning, brother Gloster;

You envy my advancement, and my friends;  
God grant, we never may have need of you!

*Glo.* Meantime, God grants that we have need of you:

Our brother is imprison'd by your means,  
Myself disgraced, and the nobility  
Held in contempt; while great promotions  
Are daily given, to ennoble those

That scarce, some two days since, were worth  
a noble\$. [ful height

*Q. Eliz.* By Him, that raised me to this care—  
From that contented hap which I enjoy'd,  
I never did incense his majesty

Against the duke of Clarence, but have been  
An earnest advocate to plead for him.

My lord, you do me shameful injury,  
Falsely to draw me in these vile suspects.

*Glo.* You may deny that you were not the cause

Of my lord Hastings' late imprisonment.

*Riv.* She may, my lord; for—

*Glo.* She may, lord Rivers?—why, who knows not so?

She may do more, sir, than denying that;  
She may help you to many fair preferences;  
And then deny her aiding hand therein,  
And lay those honours on your high desert.

What may she not? She may,—ay, marry, may  
*Riv.* What, marry, may she? [she,—

*Glo.* What, marry, may she? marry with a  
A bachelor, a handsome stripling to: [king,  
I wis||, your grandam had a worser match.

*Q. Eliz.* My lord of Gloster, I have too long borne

Your blunt upbraidings, and your bitter scoffs:  
By heaven, I will acquaint his majesty,  
Of those gross taunts I often have endured.

I had rather be a country servant-maid,  
Than a great queen, with this condition—  
To be so baited, scorn'd, and stormed at:  
Small joy have I in being England's queen.

*Enter Queen MARGARET, behind.*

*Q. Mar.* And lessen'd be that small, God, I beseech thee!

Thy honour, state, and seat, is due to me.

*Glo.* What? threat you me with telling of the king?

Tell him, and spare not: look, what I have said  
I will avouch, in presence of the king:

I dare adventure to be sent to the Tower,  
'Tis time to speak, my pains|| are quite forgot.

*Q. Mar.* Out, devil! I remember them too well:

Thou kill'dst my husband Henry in the Tower,  
And Edward, my poor son, at Tewksbury.

*Glo.* Ere you were queen, ay, or your husband king,

I was a pack-horse in his great affairs;  
A weeder-out of his proud adversaries,  
A liberal rewarder of his friends;

To royalize\*\* his blood, I spilt mine own.

*Q. Mar.* Ay, and much better blood than his, or thine. [band Grey,

*Glo.* In all which time, you and your husband  
Were factions for the house of Lancaster;—

And, Rivers, so were you:—Was not your husband

In Margaret's battle at Saint Alban's slain?

Let me put in your minds, if you forget, [are;  
What you have been ere now, and what you  
Withal, what I have been, and what I am.

*Q. Mar.* A murderous villain, and so still, thou art. [Warwick,

*Glo.* Poor Clarence did forsake his father  
Ay, and forswore himself,—Which Jesu par-

*Q. Mar.* Which God revenge! [don!—

*Glo.* To fight on Edward's party, for the crown; [up:

And, for his meed††, poor lord, he is mew'd‡‡  
I would to God, my heart were flint like Edward's,

Or Edward's soft and pitiful, like mine;  
I am too childish-foolish for this world.

*Q. Mar.* Hie thee to hell for shame, and leave this world,

\* Summon.

† Rude, ignorant.

‡ Low fellow.

§ A coin rated at 6s. 8d

|| Think.

¶ Labours.

\*\* Make royal.

†† Reward.

‡‡ Continued.



Thou cacodæmon\*! there thy kingdom is.

*Riv.* My lord of Gloster, in those busy days,  
Which here you urge, to prove us enemies,  
We follow'd then our lord, our lawful king;  
So should we you, if you should be our king.

*Glo.* If I should be?—I had rather be a  
pedlar:

Far be it from my heart, the thought thereof!

*Q. Eliz.* As little joy, my lord, as you suppose  
You should enjoy, were you this country's king;  
As little joy you may suppose in me,  
That I enjoy, being the queen thereof.

*Q. Mar.* A little joy enjoys the queen there-  
For I am she, and altogether joyless. [of;  
I can no longer hold me patient.—[*Advancing.*  
Here me, you wrangling pirates, that fall out  
In sharing that which you have pill'd from me:  
Which of you trembles not, that looks on me?  
If not, that I, being queen, you bow like sub-  
jects; [rebels?—

Yet that, by you deposed, you quake like  
Ah, gentle villain, do not turn away!

*Glo.* Foul wrinkled witch, what mak'st thou  
in my sight? [marry'd;

*Q. Mar.* But repetition of what thou hast  
That will I make, before I let thee go.

*Glo.* Wert thou not banished on pain of death?

*Q. Mar.* I was; but I do find more pain in  
banishment,

Than death can yield me here by my abode.

A husband, and a son, thou owest to me.—

And thou, a kingdom;—all of you, allegiance:  
This sorrow that I have, by right is yours;  
And all the pleasures you usurp are mine.

*Glo.* The curse my noble father laid on thee,—  
When thou didst crown his warlike brows with  
paper, [eyes;

And with thy scorns drew'st rivers from his  
And then, to dry them, gavest the duke a clout,  
Steep'd in the faultless blood of pretty Rut-  
His curses, then from bitterness of soul [land;—  
Denounced against thee, are all fall'n upon thee;  
And God, not we, hath plagued thy bloody  
deed. [cent.

*Q. Eliz.* So just is God, to right the inno-  
*Hast.* O, 'twas the foulest deed to slay that  
babe,

And the most merciless, that e'er was heard of.  
*Riv.* Tyrants themselves wept when it was  
reported. [it.

*Dors.* No man but prophesied revenge for  
*Buck.* Northumberland, then present, wept  
to see it. [I came,

*Q. Mar.* What! were you snarling all, before  
Ready to catch each other by the throat,  
And turn you all your hatred now on me?  
Did York's dread curse prevail so much with  
heaven,

That Henry's death, my lovely Edward's death,  
Their kingdom's loss, my woful banishment,  
Could all but answer for that peevish brat?  
Can curses pierce the clouds, and enter hea-  
ven?— [curses!—

Why, then give way, dull clouds, to my quick  
Though not by war, by surfeit die your king,  
As ours by murder, to make him a king!

Edward, thy son, that now is prince of Wales  
For Edward, my son, that was prince of Wales  
Die in his youth, by like untimely violence!  
Thyself a queen, for me that was a queen,  
Outlive thy glory, like my wretched self!

Long may'st thou live, to wait thy chil ren  
And see another, as I see thee now, [loss  
Deck'd in thy rights, as thou art stall'd in mine  
Long die thy happy days before thy death;  
And, after many lengthen'd hours of grief,  
Die neither mother, wife, nor England's queen  
Rivers,—and Dorset,—you were standers by.  
And so wast thou, lord Hastings,—when my  
son [him

Was stabb'd with bloody daggers; God, I pray  
That none of you may live your natural age,  
But by some unlook'd accident cut off!

*Glo.* Have done thy charm, thou hateful  
wither'd hag. [thou shalt hear me

*Q. Mar.* And leave out thee? stay, dog, for  
If heaven have any grievous plague in store,  
Exceeding those that I can wish upon thee,  
O, let them keep it, till thy sins be ripe,  
And then hurl down their indignation  
On thee, the troubler of the poor world's peace  
The worm of conscience still begnaw thy soul  
Thy friends suspect for traitors while thou  
livest,

And take deep traitors for thy dearest friends  
No sleep close up that deadly eye of thine,  
Unless it be while some tormenting dream  
Affrights thee with a hell of ugly devils!  
Thou elvish-mark'd, abortive, rooting hog!  
Thou that wast seal'd in thy nativity  
The slave of nature, and the son of hell!  
Thou slander of thy mother's heavy womb!  
Thou loathed issue of thy father's loins!

Thou rag of honour! thou detested—

*Glo.* Margaret.

*Q. Mar.* Richard!

*Glo.* Ha?

*Q. Mar.* I call thee no

*Glo.* I cry thee mercy then; for I did think  
That thou hadst call'd me all these bitter names

*Q. Mar.* Why, so I did; but look'd for no  
reply.

O, let me make the period to my curse. [aret

*Glo.* 'Tis done by me and ends in—Mar

*Q. Eliz.* Thus have you breathed your curse  
against yourself. [of my fortune!

*Q. Mar.* Poor painted queen, vain flourish  
Why strew'st thou sugar on that bottled spider?

Whose deadly web insnareth thee about?

Fool, fool! thou whet'st a knife to kill thyself.  
The day will come, that thou shalt wish for me  
To help thee curse this poisonous bunch-back'd  
toad. [curse;

*Hast.* False-boding woman, end thy frantic  
Lest, to thy harm, thou move our patience.

*Q. Mar.* Foul shame upon you! you have  
all moved mine.

*Riv.* Were you well served, you would be  
taught your duty. [do me duty,

*Q. Mar.* To serve me well, you all should  
Teach me to be your queen, and you my sub-  
jects:

\* Corrupt devil.

† Pillaged.

‡ Alluding to Gloster's form and venom.

O, serve me well, and teach yourselves that duty.

*Dor.* Dispute not with her, she is lunatic.

*Q. Mar.* Peace, master marquiss, you are malapert :

Your fire-new stamp of honour is scarce cur'd, that your young nobility could judge, What 'twere to lose it, and be miserable!

They that's and high, have many blasts to shake them;

And, if they fall, they dash themselves to  
*Glo.* Good counsel, marry;—learn it, learn it, marquiss.

*Dor.* It touches you, my lord, as much as  
*Glo.* Ay, and much more: But I was born Our airy† buildeth in the cedar's top, [so high, And dallies with the wind, and scorns the sun.

*Q. Mar.* And turns the sun to shade;—alas! alas!—

Witness my son, now in the shade of death; Whose bright out-shining beams thy cloudy Hath in eternal darkness folded up.

Your airy buildeth in our airy's nest:—  
O God, that see'st it, do not suffer it;

As it was won with blood, lost be it so. [charity.

*Buck.* Peace, peace, for shame, if not for  
*Q. Mar.* Urge neither charity nor shame to

Uncharitably with me have you dealt, [me; And shamefully by you my hopes are butcher'd.

My charity is outrage, like my shame,—  
And in my shame still live my sorrow's rage!

*Buck.* Have done, have done. [hand,  
*Q. Mar.* O princely Buckingham, I kiss thy

In sign of league and amity with thee:  
Now fair betel thee, and thy noble house!

Thy garments are not spotted with our blood,  
Nor thou within the compass of my curse.

*Buck.* Nor no one here; for curses never  
pass

The lips of those that breathe them in the air.  
*Q. Mar.* I'll not believe but they ascend

the sky,  
And there awake God's gentle-sleeping peace.

O Buckingham, beware of yonder dog; [bites,  
Look, when he fawns, he bites; and, when he

His venom tooth will rankle to the death:  
Have not to do with him, beware of him; [him;

Sin, death, and hell have set their marks on  
And all their ministers attend on him. [ingham?

*Glo.* What doth she say, my lord of Buck-  
*Buck.* Nothing that I respect, my gracious

lord. [gentle counsel?  
*Q. Mar.* What, dost thou scorn me for my

And sooth the devil that I warn thee from?  
O, but remember this another day,

When he shall split thy very heart with sorrow;  
And say, poor Margaret was a prophetess.—

Live each of you the subjects to his hate,  
And he to yours, and all of you to God's! [Exit.

*Hast.* My hair doth stand on end to hear  
her curses. [at liberty.

*Riv.* And so doth mine; I muse†, why she's  
*Glo.* I cannot blame her, by God's holy

mother;  
She hath had too much wrong, and I repent

My part thereof, that I have done to her.

*Q. Eliz.* I never did her any, to my know-  
ledge. [wrong,

*Glo.* Yet you have all the vantage§ of her  
I was too hot to do some body good,

That is too cold in thinking of it now.  
Marry, as for Clarence, he is well repaid;

He is frank'd|| up to fattening for his pains;—  
God pardon them that are the cause thereof!

*Riv.* A virtuous and a christian-like con-  
clusion,

To pray for them that have done scath¶ to us.  
*Glo.* So do I ever, being well advised;—

For had I cursed now, I had cursed myself.  
[Aside.

Enter CATESBY.

*Cates.* Madam, his majesty doth call for you,  
And for your grace,—and you, my noble lords.

*Q. Eliz.* Catesby, I come:—Lords, will  
you go with me?

*Riv.* Madam, we will attend upon your  
grace. [Exeunt all but GLOSTER.

*Glo.* I do the wrong, and first begin to brawl.  
The secret mischiefs that I set abroad,

I lay unto the grievous charge of others.  
Clarence,—whom I, indeed, have laid in dark

I do beweepe to many simple gulls; [ness,—  
Namely, to Stanley, Hastings, Buckingham

And tell them—'tis the queen and her allies.  
That stir the king against the duke my brother

Now they believe it; and withal whet me  
To be revenged on Rivers, Vaughan, Grey:

But then I sigh, and, with a piece of scripture,  
Tell them—that God bids us do good for evil;

And thus I clothe my naked villany  
With old odd ends, stol'n forth of holy writ:

And seem a saint, when most I play the devil.  
Enter Two Murderers.

But soft, here come my executioners.—  
How now, my hardy, stout resolved mates?

Are you now going to despatch this thing?  
I *Murd.* We are, my lord; and come to

have the warrant,  
That we may be admitted where he is.

*Glo.* Well thought upon, I have it here  
about me: [Gives the Warrant.

When you have done, repair to Crosby-place.  
But, sirs, be sudden in the execution,

Withal obdurate, do not hear him plead;  
For Clarence is well spoken, and, perhaps

May move your hearts to pity, if you mark him.  
I *Murd.* Tut, tut, my lord, we will not

stand to prate,  
Talkers are no good doers; be assured,

We go to use our hands, and not our tongues.  
*Glo.* Your eyes drop mill-stones, when fools'

eyes drop tears:  
I like you, lads;—about your business straight;

Go, go, despatch.  
I *Murd.* We will, my noble lord. [Ex.

SCENE IV. The same. A Room in the  
Tower.

Enter CLARENCE and BRAKENBURY.

*Brak.* Why looks your grace so heavily  
to-day?

† Nest.      † Wonder.      § Advantage.

|| Put in a sty.      ¶ Harm.

He was just created marquiss of Dorset.

|| Put in a sty.

*Clar.* O, I have passed a miserable night,  
So full of fearful dreams, of ugly sights,  
That, as I am a christian faithful man,  
I would not spend another such a night,  
Though 'twere to buy a world of happy days;  
So full of dismal terror was the time.

*Brak.* What was your dream, my lord? I  
pray you, tell me. [the Tower]

*Cla.* Methought, that I had broken from  
And was embark'd to cross to Burgundy;  
And, in my company, my brother Gloster,  
Who from my cabin tempted me to walk  
Upon the hatches: thence we look'd toward  
England,

And cited up a thousand heavy times,  
During the wars of York and Lancaster  
That had befall'n us. As we paced along  
Upon the giddy footing of the hatches,  
Methought, that Gloster stumbled; and, in  
falling,

Struck me, that thought to stay him, over-  
Into the tumbling billows of the main. [board,  
O Lord! methought, what pain it was to drown!  
What dreadful noise of water in mine ears!  
What sights of ugly death within mine eyes!  
Methought, I saw a thousand fearful wrecks;  
A thousand men, that fishes gnaw'd upon;  
Wedges of gold, great anchors, heaps of pearl,  
Inestimable stones, unvalued jewels,  
All scatter'd in the bottom of the sea, [holes  
Some lay in dead men's skulls; and, in those  
Where eyes did once inhabit, there were crept  
(As 'twere in scorn of eyes,) reflecting gems,  
That woo'd the slimy bottom of the deep, [by,  
And mock'd the dead bones that lay scatter'd

*Brak.* Had you such leisure in the time of  
To gaze upon these secrets of the deep? [death,  
*Clar.* Methought, I had; and often did I  
strive

To yield the ghost: but still the envious flood  
Kept in my soul, and would not let it forth  
To seek the empty, vast, and wand'ring air;  
But smother'd it within my panting bulk\*,  
Which almost burst to belch it in the sea.

*Brak.* Awaked you not with this sore agony?

*Clar.* O, no, my dream was lengthen'd after  
O, then began the tempest to my soul! [life;  
I pass'd, methought, the melancholy flood,  
With that grim ferryman which poets write of,  
Unto the kingdom of perpetual night.

The first that there did greet my stranger soul,  
Was my great father-in-law, renowned War-  
wick,

Who cry'd aloud.—*What scourge for perjury  
Can this dark monarchy afford false Cla-  
rence?*

And so he vanish'd: Then came wand'ring by  
A shadow like an angel, with bright hair  
Dabbled in blood; and he shriek'd out aloud,  
*Clarence is come,—false, fleeting, perjured  
Clarence,—*

*That stabb'd me in the field by Tewksbury;  
Seize on him, juries, take him to your tor-  
ments!*

With that, methought, a legion of foul fiends  
Environ'd me, and howl'd in mine ears

Such hideous cries, that, with the very noise  
I trembling waked, and, for a season after,  
Could not believe but that I was in hell;  
Such terrible impression made my dream.

*Brak.* No marvel, lord, though it a frighted  
you!

I am afraid, methinks, to hear you tell it.

*Clar.* O, Brakenbury, I have done these  
things—

That now give evidence against my soul,—  
For Edward's sake; and, see, how he requites  
me!— [thee.

O God! if my deep prayers cannot appease  
But thou wilt be avenged on my misdeeds,  
Yet execute thy wrath on me alone: [dren!—  
O, spare my guiltless wife, and my poor chil  
I pray thee, gentle keeper, stay by me;  
My soul is heavy, and I fain would sleep.

*Brak.* I will, my lord; God give your grace  
good rest!—

[*CLARENCE reposes himself on a Chair.*

Sorrow breaks seasons, and reposing hours,  
Makes the night morning, and the noon-tide  
night.

Princes have but their titles for their glories,  
An outward honour for an inward toil;  
And, for unfelt imaginations,  
They often feel a world of restless cares:  
So that, between their titles, and low name,  
There's nothing differs but the outward fame.

*Enter the Two Murderers.*

1 *Murd.* Ho! who's here?

*Brak.* What wouldst thou, fellow? and  
how camest thou hither?

1 *Murd.* I would speak with Clarence, and  
I came hither on my legs.

*Brak.* What, so brief? [tedious:—

2 *Murd.* O, sir, 'tis better to be brief than  
Let him see our commission; talk no more.

[*A Paper is delivered to BRAKEN-  
BURY, who reads it.*

*Brak.* I am, in this, commanded to deliver  
The noble duke of Clarence to your hands:—  
I will not reason what is meant hereby,  
Because I will be guiltless of the meaning.  
Here are the keys; there sits the duke asleep.  
I'll to the king; and signify to him,  
That thus I have resign'd to you my charge.

1 *Murd.* You may, sir; 'tis a point of wis-  
dom: Fare you well. [*Exit BRAKENBURY.*

2 *Murd.* What, shall we stab him as he  
sleeps?

1 *Murd.* No; he'll say, 'twas done cowardly,  
when he wakes.

2 *Murd.* When he wakes! why, fool, he shall  
never wake until the great judgment day.

1 *Murd.* Why, then he'll say, we stabb'd  
him sleeping.

2 *Murd.* The urging of that word, judg-  
ment, hath bred a kind of remorse in me.

1 *Murd.* What! art thou afraid?

2 *Murd.* Not to kill him, having a warrant  
for it; but to be damn'd for killing him, from  
the which no warrant can defend me.

1 *Murd.* I thought, thou hadst been resolute.

2 *Murd.* So I am, to let him live.



1 *Murd.* I'll back to the duke of Gloster, and tell him so.

2 *Murd.* Nay, I pr'y'hee, stay a little: I hope, this holy humour of mine will change; it was wont to hold me but while one would tell twenty.

1 *Murd.* How dost thou feel thyself now?

2 *Murd.* 'Faith some certain dregs of conscience are yet within me.

1 *Murd.* Remember our reward, when the deed's done.

2 *Murd.* Come, he dies; I had forgot the reward.

1 *Murd.* Where's thy conscience now?

2 *Murd.* In the duke of Gloster's purse.

1 *Murd.* So when he opens his purse to give us our reward, thy conscience flies out.

2 *Murd.* 'Tis no matter; let it go; there's few, or none, will entertain it.

1 *Murd.* What, if it come to thee again?

2 *Murd.* I'll not meddle with it. it is a dangerous thing, it makes a man a coward; a man cannot steal, but it accenseth him; a man cannot swear, but it checks him; a man cannot lie with his neighbour's wife, but it detects him: 'Tis a blushing shame-faced spirit, that mutinies in a man's bosom; it fills one full of obstacles: it made me once restore a purse of gold, that by chance I found; it beggars any man that keeps it: it is turned out of all towns and cities for a dangerous thing; and every man, that meanz to live well, endeavours to trust to himself, and live without it.

1 *Murd.* 'Zounds, it is even now at my elbow, persuading me not to kill the duke.

2 *Murd.* Take the devil in thy mind, and believe him not; he would insinuate with thee, but to make thee sigh.

1 *Murd.* I am strong-framed, he cannot prevail with me.

2 *Murd.* Spoke like a tall\* fellow, that respects his reputation. Come, shall we fall to work?

1 *Murd.* Take him over the costard† with the hilts of thy sword, and then throw him into the maltsey-batt, in the next room.

2 *Murd.* O excellent device! and make a sop of him.

1 *Murd.* Soft! he wakes.

2 *Murd.* Strike.

1 *Murd.* No, we'll reason with him.

*Clar.* Where art thou, keeper? give me a cup of wine. [lord, anon.

1 *Murd.* You shall have wine enough, my

*Clar.* In God's name, what art thou?

1 *Murd.* A man, as you are.

*Clar.* But not, as I am, royal.

1 *Murd.* Nor you, as we are, loyal.

*Clar.* Thy voice is thunder, but thy looks are humble. [looks mine own.

1 *Murd.* My voice is now the king's, my

*Clar.* How darkly, and how deadly dost thou speak!

Your eyes do menace me: Why look you pale? Who sent you hither? Wherefore do you come?

Both *Murd.* To, to, to,—

*Clar.* To murder me?

Both *Murd.* Ay, ay. [me so,

*Clar.* You scarcely have the hearts to tell And therefore cannot have the hearts to do it. Wherein, my friends, have I offended you?

1 *Murd.* Offended us you have not, but the king.

*Clar.* I shall be reconciled to him again.

2 *Murd.* Never, my lord; therefore prepare to die. [of men,

*Clar.* Are you call'd forth from out a world To slay the innocent? What is my offence?

Where is the evidence that doth accuse me? What lawful quest? have given their verdict up

Unto the frowning judge? or who pronounced The bitter sentence of poor Clarence' death?

Before I be convict by course of law, To threaten me with death is most unlawful.

I charge you, as you hope for any goodness, By Christ's dear blood shed for our grievous

sins, That you depart, and lay no hands on me;

The deed you undertake is damnable.

1 *Murd.* What we will do, we do upon command. [our king.

2 *Murd.* And he, that hath commanded, is

*Clar.* Erroneous vassal! the great King of kings

Hath in the table of his law commanded, That thou shalt do no murder; Wilt thou then

Spurn at his edict, and fulfil a man's?

Take heed; for he holds vengeance in his hand, To hurl upon their heads that break his law.

2 *Murd.* And that same vengeance doth he hurl on thee,

For false forswearing, and for murder too:

Thou didst receive the sacrament, to fight In quarrel of the house of Lancaster.

1 *Murd.* And, like a traitor to the name of God, [ous blade,

Didst break that vow; and, with thy treacher- Unrip'dst the bowels of thy sovereign's son.

2 *Murd.* Whom thou wast sworn to cherish and defend. [ful law to us,

1 *Murd.* How canst thou urge God's dread- When thou hast broke it in such dear degree?

*Clar.* Alas! for whose sake did I that ill deed?

For Edward, for my brother, for his sake: He sends you not to murder me for this;

For in that sin he is as deep as I. If God will be avenged for the deed,

O, know you, that he doth it publicly; Take not the quarrel from his powerful arm;

He needs no indirect nor lawless course, To cut off those that have offended him.

1 *Murd.* Who made thee then a bloody minister,

When gallant-springing, brave Plantagenet, That princely novice, was struck dead by thee?

*Clar.* My brother's love, the devil, and my rage. [thy fault,

1 *Murd.* Thy brother's love, our duty, and Provoke us hither now to slaughter thee.

*Clar.* If you do love my brother, hate not I am his brother, and I love him well. [me

If you are hired for meed \*, go back again,  
And I will send you to my brother Gloster;  
Who shall reward you better for my lie,  
Than Edward will for tidings of my death.

2 *Murd.* You are deceived, your brother  
Gloster hates you.

*Clar.* O, no; he loves me, and he holds me  
Go you to him from me. [clear:]

*Both Murd.* Ay, so we will.

*Clar.* Tell him, when that our princely  
father York

Bless'd his three sons with his victorious arm,  
And charge us from his soul to love each other,  
He hath thought of this divided friendship:  
Bid Gloster think on this, and he will weep.

1 *Murd.* Ay, mill-stones; as he lesson'd us  
to weep.

*Clar.* O, do not slander him, for he is kind.

1 *Murd.* Right, as snow in harvest.—Come,  
you deceive yourself;

'Tis he that sends us to destroy you here.

*Clar.* It cannot be; for he bewept my fortune, [sobs,  
And hugg'd me in his arms, and swore, with  
That he would labour my delivery. [you]

1 *Murd.* Why, so he doth, when he delivers  
From this earth's thralldom to the joys of  
heaven. [must die, my lord.]

2 *Murd.* Make peace with God, for you

*Clar.* Hast thou that holy feeling in thy soul,  
To counsel me to make my peace with God,  
And art thou yet to thy own soul so blind,  
That thou wilt war with God, by murdering  
Ah, sirs, consider, he, that set you on [me?—  
To do this deed, will hate you for the deed.

2 *Murd.* What shall we do?

*Clar.* Relent, and save your souls.  
1 *Murd.* Relent! 'tis cowardly, and wo-  
manish. [devilish.—

*Clar.* Not to relent, is beastly, savage,  
Which of you, if you were a prince's son,  
Being pent† from liberty, as I am now,—  
If two such murderers as yourselves came to  
Would not entreat for life?— [you,—

My friend, I spy some pity in thy looks;  
O, if thine eye be not a flatterer,  
Come thou on my side, and entreat for me,  
As you would beg, were you in my distress.  
A begging prince what beggar pities not?

2 *Murd.* Look behind you, my lord.

1 *Murd.* Take that, and that; if all this will  
not do, [Stabs him.  
I'll drown you in the malmsey-butt within.

[Exit, with the body.]

2 *Murd.* A bloody deed, and desperately  
despatch'd!

How fain, like Pilate, would I wash my hands  
Of this most grievous guilty murder done!

*Re-enter first Murderer.*

1 *Murd.* How now? what mean'st thou,  
that thou help'st me not?

By heaven, the duke shall know how slack  
you have been. [his brother!]

2 *Murd.* I would he knew, that I had saved  
Take thou the fee, and tell him what I say;

For I repent me that the duke is slain. [Exit.]

1 *Murd.* So do not I; go, coward, as thou  
Well, I'll go hide the body in some hole [art.  
Till that the duke give order for his burial:

And when I have my meed, I will away;  
For this will out, and then I must not stay.  
[Exit.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *The same. A Room in the  
Palace.*

*Enter King EDWARD, (led in sick,) Queen  
ELIZABETH, DORSET, RIVERS, HASTINGS,  
BUCKINGHAM, GREY, and Others.*

*K. Edw.* Why, so:—now have I done a  
good day's work;—

You peers, continue this united league:

I every day expect an embassy

From my Redeemer to redeem me hence;

And more in peace my soul shall part to  
heaven. [earth.]

Since I have made my friends at peace on  
Rivers and Hastings, take each other's hand;  
Dissemble not your hatred, swear your love.

*Riv.* By heaven, my soul is purged from  
grudging hate;

And with my hand I seal my true heart's love.

*Hast.* So thrive I, as I truly swear the like!

*K. Edw.* Take heed, you dally not before  
your king;

Let he, that is the supreme King of kings,  
Confound your hidden falsehood, and award  
Either of you to be the other's end.

*Hast.* So prosper I, as I swear perfect love!

*Riv.* And I, at I love Hastings with my  
heart! [in this,—

*K. Edw.* Madam, yourself are not exempt  
Nor your son Dorset,—Buckingham, nor you;  
You have been factions one against the other.

Wife, love lord Hastings, let him kiss your  
And what you do, do it unfeignedly. [hand;

*Q. Eliz.* There, Hastings;—I will never  
more remember

Our former hatred, So thrive I, and mine!

*K. Edw.* Dorset, embrace him,—Hastings,  
love lord marquis. [test,

*Dor.* This interchange of love, I here pro-  
Upon my part shall be inviolable.

*Hast.* And so swear I. [Embraces DORSET.]

*K. Edw.* Now, princely Buckingham, seal  
thou this league

With thy embracements to my wife's allies,  
And make me happy in your unity. [his hate

*Buck.* Whenever Buckingham doth turn  
Upon your grace, [To the Queen.] but with all  
duteous love

Doth cherish you, and yours, God punish me  
With hate in those where I expect most love!  
When I have most need to employ a friend,  
And most assured that he is a friend,

Deep, hollow, treacherous, and full of guile,  
Be he unto me! this do I beg of heaven,  
When I am cold in love, to you, or yours.

[*Embracing RIVERS, &c.*

*K. Edw.* A pleasing cordid, princely Buckingham,

Is this thy vow unto my sickly heart.

There waiteth now our brother Gloster here,  
To make the blessed period of this peace.

*Buck.* And, in good time, here comes the noble duke.

*Enter GLOSTER*

*Glo.* Good-morrow to my sovereign king,  
and queen;

And, princely peers, a happy time of day!

*K. Edw.* Happy, indeed, as we have spent  
the day:—

Brother, we have done deeds of charity;  
Mide peace of enmity, fair love of hate,  
Between these swelling wrong-incensed peers.

*Glo.* A blessed labour, my most sovereign  
liege.—

Among this princely heap, if any here,  
By false intelligence, or wrong surmise,  
Hold me a foe;

If I unwittingly, or in my rage,  
Have aught committed that is hardly borne

By any in this presence, I desire

To reconcile me to his friendly peace:

'Tis death to me, to be at enmity;

I hate it, and desire all good men's love.—

First, madam, I entreat true peace of you,  
Which I will purchase with my duteous  
service;—

Of you, my noble cousin Buckingham,  
If ever any grudge were lodged between us;—

Of you, lord Rivers,—and, lord Grey, of you,—  
That all without desert have frown'd on me;—

Dukes, earls, lords, gentlemen; indeed, of all.  
I do not know that Englishman alive,

With whom my soul is any jot at odds,  
More than the infant that is born to-night;

I thank my God for my humility. [alter.—

*Q. Eliz.* A holy-day shall this be kept here.—  
I would to God, all strifes were well com-  
pounded.—

My sovereign lord, I do beseech your highness  
To take our brother Clarence to your grace.

*Glo.* Why, madam, have I offer'd love for  
To be so flouted in this royal presence? [this,

Who knows not, that the gentle duke is dead?  
[*They all start.*

You do him injury to scorn his corse.

*K. Edw.* Who knows not he is dead! who  
knows he is? [this!

*Q. Eliz.* All-seeing heaven, what a world is  
*Buck.* Look I so pale, lord Dorset, as the  
rest? [presence,

*Dor.* Ay, my good lord; and no man in the  
But his red colour hath forsook his cheeks.

*K. Edw.* Is Clarence dead? the order was  
reversed. [died,

*Glo.* But he, poor man, by your first order  
And that a winged Mercury did bear;

Some tardy cripple bore him the countermand,  
That came too lag to see him buried:—

God grant, that some, less noble, and less loyal,  
Nearer in bloody thoughts, and not in blood,

Deserve not worse than wretched Clarence did,  
And yet go current from suspicion.

*Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* A boon my sovereign, for my service  
done! [of sorrow,

*K. Edw.* I pry'thee, peace; my soul is full  
*Stan.* I will not rise, unless your highness  
hear me. [request'st.

*K. Edw.* Then say at once, what is it thou  
*Stan.* The forfeit, sovereign, of my servant's

Who slew to-day a riotous gentleman, [life;  
Lately attendant on the duke of Norfolk.

*K. Edw.* Have I a tongue to doom my  
brother's death,

And shall that tongue give pardon to a slave?  
My brother kill'd no man, his fault was thought,

And yet his punishment was bitter death,  
Who sued to me for him? who, in my wrath,

Kneel'd at my feet, and bade me be advised?  
Who spoke of brotherhood? who spoke of

love?  
Who told me, how the poor soul did forsake

The mighty Warwick, and did fight for me?  
Who told me, in the field at Tewksbury,

When Oxford had me down, he rescued me,  
And said, *Dear brother, live, and be a king?*

Who told me, when we both lay in the field,  
Frozen almost to death, how he did lap me

Even in his garments; and did give himself,  
All thin and naked, to the numb-cold night!

All this from my remembrance brutish wrath  
Sinfully pluck'd, and not a man of you

Had so much grace to put it in my mind.  
But when your carters, or your waiting vassals,

Have done a drunken slaughter, and defaced  
The precious image of our dear Redeemer,

You straight are on your knees for pardon,  
pardon;

And I, unjustly too, must grant it you:—  
But for my brother, not a man would speak,

Nor I (ungracious) speak unto myself  
For him, poor soul.—The proudest of you all

Have been beholden to him in his life;  
Yet none of you would once plead for his life.

O God! I fear, thy justice will take hold  
On me, and you, and mine, and yours, for this

Come, Hastings, help me to my closet. O,  
Poor Clarence!

[*Exit King, Queen, HASTINGS,  
RIVERS, DORSET, and GREY.*

*Glo.* This is the fruit of rashness!—Marked  
you not,

How that the guilty kindred of the queen  
Looked pale, when they did hear of Clarence's

death?  
O! they did urge it still unto the king:

God will revenge it. Come, lords; will you go,  
To comfort Edward with our company?

*Buck.* We wait upon your grace. [*Exit.*

## SCENE II. *The same.*

*Enter the Duchess of York, with a Son and  
Daughter of Clarence.*

*Son.* Good grandam, tell us, is our father  
*Duch.* No, boy. [dead?

*Daugh.* Why do you weep so oft? and beat  
your breast;

And cry—O Clarence, my unhappy son!



*Son.* Why do you look on us, and shake your head,

And call us—orphans, wretches, cast-aways,  
If that our noble father be alive? [both;

*Duch.* My pretty consins, you mistake me  
I do lament the sickness of the king,  
As loath to lose him, not your father's death;  
It were lost sorrow, to wail one that's lost.

*Son.* Then, grandam, you conclude that he is dead.

The king my uncle is to blame for this:  
God will revenge it; whom I will importune  
With earnest prayers all to that effect.

*Daugh.* And so will I.

*Duch.* Peace, children, peace! the king doth love you well:

Incapable\* and shallow innocents,  
You cannot guess who caused your father's death. [Gloster

*Son.* Grandam, we can: for my good uncle  
Told me, the king, provoked to't by the queen,  
Devised impeachments to imprison him:  
And when my uncle told me so, he wept,  
And pitied me, and kindly kiss'd my cheek;  
Bade me rely on him, as on my father,  
And he would love me dearly as his child.

*Duch.* Ah, that deceit should steal such gentle shapes,

And with a virtuous visor hide deep vice!  
He is my son, ay, and therein my shame,  
Yet from my dugs he drew not this deceit.

*Son.* Think you, my uncle did dissemble,

*Duch.* Ay, boy. [grandam?

*Son.* I cannot think it. Hark! what noise is this?

*Enter Queen ELIZABETH distractedly;  
RIVERS, and DORSET, following her.*

*Q. Eliz.* Ah! who shall hinder me to wail and weep?

To chide my fortune, and torment myself?  
I'll join with black despair against my soul,  
And to myself become an enemy. [patience?

*Duch.* What means this scene of rude im-

*Q. Eliz.* To make an act of tragic violence:  
Edward, my lord, thy son, our king, is dead.  
Why grow the branches, when the root is gone?  
Why, wither not the leaves, that want their sap?—

If you will live, lament; if die, be brief;  
That our swift-winged souls may catch the  
Or, like obedient subjects, follow him [king's;  
To his new kingdom of perpetual rest.

*Duch.* Ah, so much interest have I in thy sorrow,

As I had title in thy noble husband!  
I have bewept a worthy husband's death,  
And lived by looking on his images: [blance.  
But now two mirrors of his princely sem-  
Are crack'd in pieces by malignant death;  
And I for comfort have but one false glass,  
That grieves me when I see my shame in him.  
Thou art a widow; yet thou art a mother,  
And hast the comfort of thy children left thee:  
But death hath snatch'd my husband from my arms, [hands,

And pluck'd two crutches from my feeble

Clarence, and Edward. O, what cause have I  
(Thine being but a moiety of my griefs.)

To over-go thy plaints, and drown thy cries!

*Son.* Ah, aunt! you wept not for our father's death;

How can we aid you with our kindred tears?

*Daugh.* Our fatherless distress was left unmoan'd,

Your widow-dolour likewise be unwept!

*Q. Eliz.* Give me no help in lamentation,  
I am not barren to bring forth laments:

All springs reduce their currents to mine eyes,  
That I, being govern'd by the wat'ry moon,  
May send forth plenteous tears to drown the world!

Ah, for my husband, for my dear lord Edward!

*Chil.* Ah, for our father, for our dear lord Clarence! [and Clarence!

*Duch.* Alas, for both, both mine, Edward

*Q. Eliz.* What stay had I, but Edward? and he's gone. [he's gone.

*Chil.* What stay had we, but Clarence? and

*Duch.* What stays had I, but they? and they are gone. [loss.

*Q. Eliz.* Was never widow had so dear a

*Chil.* Were never orphans, had so dear a loss.

*Duch.* Was never mother had so dear a loss.

Alas! I am the mother of these griefs;

Their woes are parcell'd†, mine are general.

She for an Edward weeps, and so do I;

I for a Clarence weep, so doth not she:

These babes for Clarence weep, and so do I:

I for an Edward weep, so do not they:—

Alas! you three, on me, threefold distress'd,

Pour all your tears, I am your sorrow's nurse,

And I will pamper it with lamentations.

*Dor.* Comfort, dear mother; God is much displeased,

That you take with unthankfulness his doing;  
In common worldly things, 'tis call'd—un-

grateful,

With dull unwillingness to repay a debt,

Which with a bounteous hand was kindly lent;

Much more to be thus opposite with heaven,

For it requires the royal debt it lent you.

*Riv.* Madam, bethink you, like a careful mother, [for him,

Of the young prince your son: send straight

Let him be crown'd; in him your comfort lives

Drown desperate sorrow in dead Edward's grave,

And plant your joys in living Edward's throne.

*Enter GLOSTER, BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY  
HASTINGS, RATCLIFF, and others.*

*Glo.* Sister, have comfort: all of us have  
To wail the dimming of our shining star; [cause

But none can cure their harms by wailing them.

Madam, my mother, I do cry you mercy,

I did not see your grace:—Humbly on my knee

I crave your blessing. [thy breast,

*Duch.* God bless thee; and put meekness in  
Love, charity, obedience, and true duty! [man!

*Glo.* Amen; and make me die a good old  
That is the butt-end of a mother's blessing; [Aside.

I marvel, that her grace did leave it out.

*Buck.* You cloudy princes, and heart-sorrowing peers,

That bear this mutual heavy load of moan,  
Now cheer each other in each other's love:  
Though we have spent our harvest of this king,  
We are to reap the harvest of his son.

The broken rancour of your high-swollen hearts,  
But lately splinted, knit, and join'd together,  
Must gently be preserved, cherish'd, and kept:  
Me seemeth good, that, with some little train,  
Forthwith from Ludlow the young prince be  
fetch'd

Hither to London, to be crown'd our king.

*Riv.* Why with some little train, my lord of Buckingham?

*Buck.* Marry, my lord, lest by a multitude,  
The new-heal'd wound of malice should break  
out;

Which would be so much the more dangerous,  
By how much the estate is green, and yet un-  
govern'd:

Where every horse bears his commanding rein,  
And may direct his course as please himself,  
As well the fear of harm, as harm apparent,  
In my opinion, ought to be prevented. [of us;

*Glo.* I hope the king made peace with all  
And the compact is firm, and true, in me.

*Riv.* And so in me; and so, I think, in all:  
Yet, since it is but green, it should be put  
To no apparent likelihood of breach, [urged:  
Which, haply, by much company might be  
Therefore I say, with noble Buckingham,  
That it is meet so few should fetch the prince.

*Hast.* And so say I.

*Glo.* Then be it so; and go we to determine  
Who they shall be that straight shall post to  
Ludlow.

Madam,—and you, my mother,—will you go  
To give your censures\* in this weighty business?

[*Exeunt all but BUCKINGHAM and GLOSTER.* [prince,

*Buck.* My lord, whoever journeys to the  
For God's sake, let not us two stay at home:  
For, by the way, I'll sort occasion,  
As index† to the story we late talk'd of, [prince.  
To part the queen's proud kindred from the

*Glo.* My other self, my counsel's consistory,  
My oracle, my prophet!—My dear cousin,  
I, as a child, will go by thy direction.

Towards Ludlow then, for we'll not stay be-  
hind. [*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III. The same. A Street.

*Enter two Citizens, meeting.*

1 *Cit.* Good morrow, neighbour: Whither  
away so fast? [self:

2 *Cit.* I promise you, I scarcely know my-  
Hear you the news abroad?

1 *Cit.* Yes; the king's dead.

2 *Cit.* Ill news, by'r lady; seldom comes the  
better:

fear, I fear, 'twill prove a giddy world.

*Enter another Citizen.*

3 *Cit.* Neighbours, God speed!

1 *Cit.* Give you good morrow, sir.

3 *Cit.* Doth the news hold of good king Ed-  
ward's death?

2 *Cit.* Ay, sir, it is too true; God help, the  
while!

3 *Cit.* Then, masters, look to see a troublous  
world. [shall reign.

1 *Cit.* No, no; by God's good grace, his son

3 *Cit.* Woe to that land, that's govern'd by  
a child!

2 *Cit.* In him there is a hope of government;  
That, in his nonage‡, council under him,  
And, in his full and ripen'd years, himself,  
No doubt, shall then, and till then, govern well.

1 *Cit.* So stood the state, when Henry the  
sixth

Was crown'd in Paris but at nine months old.

3 *Cit.* Stood the state so? no, no, good  
friends, God wot§;

For then this land was famously enrich'd  
With politic grave counsel; then the king  
Had virtuous uncles to protect his grace.

1 *Cit.* Why, so hath this, both by his father  
and mother. [father;

3 *Cit.* Better it were they all came by his  
Or, by his father, there were none at all:  
For emulation now, who shall be nearest,  
Will touch us all too near, if God prevent not.  
O, full of danger is the Duke of Gloster;  
And the queen's sons, and brothers, haught and  
proud:

And were they to be ruled, and not to rule,  
This sickly land might solace as before.

1 *Cit.* Come, come, we fear the worst; all  
will be well. [on their cloaks;

3 *Cit.* When clouds are seen wise men put  
When great leaves fall, then winter is at hand;  
When the sun sets, who doth not look for night?  
Untimely storms make men expect a dearth:  
All may be well; but, if God sort it so,

'Tis more than we deserve, or I expect. [fear:

2 *Cit.* Truly, the hearts of men are full of  
You cannot reason|| almost with a man  
That looks not heavily, and full of dread. [so:

3 *Cit.* Before the days of change, still is it  
By a divine instinct, men's minds mistrust  
Ensuing danger; as, by proof, we see  
The water swell before a boist'rous storm.

But leave it all to God! Whither away?

2 *Cit.* Marry, we were sent for to the justices.

3 *Cit.* And so was I; I'll bear you company.  
[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE IV. The same. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter the Archbishop of York, the young  
Duke of York, Queen ELIZABETH, and the  
Duchess of York.*

*Arch.* Last night, I heard, they lay at Stony-  
Stratford;

And at Northampton they do rest to-night:  
To-morrow, or next day, they will be here.

*Duch.* I long with all my heart to see the  
prince;

I hope, he is much grown since last I saw him.  
*Q. Eliz.* But I hear, no; they say, my son of  
Hath almost overtaken him in his growth. [York

*York.* Ay, mother, but I would not have it so.

*Duch.* Why, my young cousin; it is good to  
grow.

\* Opinion.

† Preparatory.

‡ Minority.

§ Knows.

|| Converse.

*York.* Grandam, one night, as we did sit at supper,  
My uncle Rivers talk' how I did grow  
More than my brother; *Ay*, quoth my uncle  
Gloster,

*Small herbs have grace, great weeds do grow*  
And since, methinks, I would not grow so fast,  
Because sweet flowers are slow, and weeds  
make haste. [did not hold]

*Duch.* Good faith, good faith, the saying  
In him that did object the same to thee:  
He was the wretched'st thing, when he was  
So long a growing, and so leisnrely, [young,  
That, if his rule were true, he should be gra-  
cious. [madam.]

*Arch.* And so, no doubt he is, my gracious

*Duch.* I hope he is; but yet let mothers  
doubt. [member'd,

*York.* Now, by my troth, if I had been re-  
I could have given my uncle's grace a flout,  
To touch his growth, nearer than he touch'd  
mine. [me hear it.]

*Duch.* How, my young York? I pry thee let  
*York.* Marry, they say, my uncle grew so  
fast,

That he could gnaw a crust at two hours old;  
Twas full two years ere I could get a tooth.  
Grandam, this would have been a biting jest.

*Duch.* I pry thee, pretty York, who told  
*York.* Grandam, his nurse. [thee this?

*Duch.* His miset! why, she was dead ere  
thou wast born. [told me.]

*York.* If 'twere not she, I cannot tell who  
*Q. Eliz.* A parlous\* boy: Go to, you are  
too shrewd. [child.]

*Arch.* Good madam, be not angry with the  
*Q. Eliz.* Pitchers have ears.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Arch.* Here comes a messenger:

What news?

*Mess.* Such news, my lord,  
As grieves me to unfold.

*Q. Eliz.* How doth the prince?

*Mess.* Well, madam, and in health.

*Duch.* What is thy news?

*Mess.* Lord Rivers, and lord Grey, are sent  
to Pon fret,

With them sir **Thomas Vaghan**, prisoners.

*Duch.* Who hath committed them?

*Mess.* The mighty dukes  
Gloster and Buckingham.

*Q. Eliz.* For what offence?

*Mess.* The sum of all I can, I have disclosed.  
Why, or for what, the nobles were committed,  
Is all unknown to me, my gracious lady.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah me, I see the ruin of my house!

The tiger now hath seized the gentle hind;

Insulting tyranny begins to jut

Upon the innocent and aweless throne;—

Welcome, destruction, blood, and massacre!

I see, as in a map, the end of all.

*Duch.* Accursed and unquiet wrangling days,

How many of you have mine eyes beheld!

My husband lost his life to get the crown;

And often up and down my sons were tost;

For me to joy and weep their gain and loss;

And being seated, and domestic broils

Clean over-blown, themselves, the conquerors,

Make war upon themselves; brother to brother,

Blood to blood, self 'gainst self:—O prepo-  
terous

And frantic courage, end thy damned spleen;

Or let me die, to look on death no more!

*Q. Eliz.* Come, come, my boy, we will to  
sanctuary.—

Madam, farewell.

*Duch.* Stay, I will go with you.

*Q. Eliz.* You have no cause.

*Arch.* My gracious lady, go.

[To the Queen.]

And thither bear your treasure and your goods.

For my part, I'll resign unto your grace

I the seal I keep; and so betide to me,

As well I tender you, and all of yours!

Come, I'll conduct you to the sanctuary.

[Exeunt.]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. *The same. A Street.*

*The trumpets sound. Enter the Prince of  
Wales, GLOSTER, BUCKINGHAM, Cardinal  
BOUCHIER, and Others.*

*Buck.* Welcome, sweet prince, to London,  
to your chamber. [sovereign:]

*Glo.* Welcome, dear cousin, my thoughts'

The weary way hath made you melancholy. [way]

*Prince.* No, uncle; but our crosses on the  
Have made it tedious, wearisome, and heavy:  
I want more uncles here to welcome me.

*Glo.* Sweet prince, the untainted virtue of  
your years

Hath not yet dived into the world's deceit:

No more can you distinguish of a man, [knows,

Than of his outward show; which, God he

Seldom, or never, jumpeth with the heart.

Those uncles, which you want, were dangerous;

Your grace attended to the sugar'd words,  
But look'd not on the poison of their hearts:  
God keep you from them, and from such false  
friends! [they were none.]

*Prince.* God keep me from false friends! but

*Glo.* My lord, the mayor of London comes  
to greet you.

*Enter the Lord Mayor, and his Train.*

*May.* God bless your grace with health and  
happy days!

*Prince.* I thank you, good my lord; and  
thank you all. [Exeunt Mayor, &c.]

I thought my mother, and my brother York,  
Would long ere this have met us on the way:

Fie, what a slug is Hastings! that he comes not  
To tell us whether they would come, or no.

*Enter HASTINGS.*

*Buck.* And in good time, here comes the  
sweating lord.

\* Perilous, dangerous.



*Prince.* Welcome, my lord: What, will our mother come? [not I,

*Hast.* On what occasion, God he knows, The queen your mother, and your brother York, Have taken sanctuary: the tender prince Would fain have come with me to meet your grace,

But by his mother was perforce withheld.

*Buck.* Fiel what an indirect and peevish course

Is this of hers? Lord cardinal, will your grace Persuade the king to send the duke of York Unto his princely brother presently?

If she deny,—lord Hastings, go with him, And from her jealous arms pluck him perforce.

*Card.* My lord of Buckingham, if my weak oratory

Can from his mother win the duke of York, Anon expect him here: But if she be obdurate To mild entreaties, God in heaven forbid We should infringe the holy privilege Of blessed sanctuary! not for all this land, Would I be guilty of so deep a sin.

*Buck.* You are too senseless-obstinate, my Too ceremonious, and traditional: [lord, Weigh it but with the grossness of this age, You break not sanctuary in seizing him.

The benefit thereof is always granted [place, To those whose dealings have deserved the And those who have the wit to claim the place: This prince hath neither claim'd it, nor deserved it;

And therefore, in mine opinion, cannot have it: Then taking him from thence, that is not there, You break no privilege nor charter there.

Oft have I heard of sanctuary men; But sanctuary children ne'er till now. [for once.

*Card.* My lord, you shall o'er-rule my mind Come on, lord Hastings, will you go with me?

*Hast.* I go, my lord.

*Prince.* Good lords, make all the speedy haste you may.

[*Exeunt Cardinal and HASTINGS.*

Say, uncle Gloucester, if our brother come, Where shall we sojourn till our coronation?

*Glo.* Where it seems best unto your royal If I may counsel you, some day, or two, [self. Your highness shall repose you at the Tower: Then where you please, and shall be thought most fit

For your best health and recreation. [place:

*Prince.* I do not like the Tower, of any Did Julius Cæsar build that place, my lord?

*Glo.* He did, my gracious lord, begin that place;

Which, since, succeeding ages have re-edified.

*Prince.* Is it upon record, or else reported Successfully from age to age he built it?

*Buck.* Upon record, my gracious lord.

*Prince.* But say, my lord, it were not register'd; [age,

Methinks, the truth should live from age to As 'twere retail'd to all posterity, Even to the general all-ending day.

*Glo.* So wise so young, they say, do ne'er live long. [Aside.

*Prince.* What say you, uncle?

*Glo.* I say, without characters, fame lives long.

Thus, like the formal \* vice, Iniquity, } I moralize two meanings in one word. } *Aside.*

*Prince.* That Julius Cæsar was a famous With what his valour did enrich his wit, [man; His wit set down to make his valour live: Death makes no conquest of this conqueror; For now he lives in fame, though not in life. I'll tell you what, my cousin Buckingham.—

*Buck.* What, my gracious lord?

*Prince.* An if I live until I be a man I'll win our ancient right in France again, Or die a soldier, as I lived a king.

*Glo.* Short summers lightly† have a forward spring. [Aside.

*Enter YORK, HASTINGS, and the Cardinal.*

*Buck.* Now, in good time, here comes the duke of York. [loving brother?

*Prince.* Richard of York! how fares our York? Well, my dread lord; so I must call you now. [yours:

*Prince.* Ay, brother, to our grief, as it is Too late‡ he died, that might have kept that title,

Which by his death hath lost much majesty.

*Glo.* How fares our cousin, noble lord of York? [lord,

*York.* I thank you, gentle uncle. O, my You said, that idle weeds are fast in growth: The prince my brother hath outgrown me far.

*Glo.* He hath, my lord.

*York.* And therefore is he idle?

*Glo.* O, my fair cousin, I must not say so.

*York.* Then is he more beholden to you than I.

*Glo.* He may command me as my sovereign; But you have power in me, as in a kinsman.

*York.* I pray you, uncle, then, give me this dagger. [heart.

*Glo.* My dagger, little cousin? with all my *Prince.* A beggar, brother? [give;

*York.* Of my kind uncle, that I know will And, being but a toy, which is no grief to give.

*Glo.* A greater gift than that I'll give my cousin. [it?

*York.* A greater gift! O, that's the sword to *Glo.* Ay, gentle cousin, were it light enough.

*York.* O then, I see, you'll part but with light gifts;

In weightier things you'll say a beggar, nay.

*Glo.* It is too weighty for your grace to wear.

*York.* I weigh it lightly were it heavier.

*Glo.* What, would you have my weapon, little lord? [you call me.

*York.* I would, that I might thank you as *Glo.* How?

*York.* Little. 'talk;—

*Prince.* My lord of York will still be cross in Uncle, your grace knows how to bear with him.

*York.* You mean to bear me, not to bear with me:—

Uncle, my brother mocks both you and me; Because that I am little, like an ape, [shoulders He thinks that you should bear me on you

*Buck.* With what a sharp-provided wit he reasons!

To mitigate the scorn he gives his uncle,  
He prettily and aptly taunts himself:  
So cunning, and so young, is wonderful.

*Glo.* My gracious lord, will't please you pass along?

Myself, and my good cousin Buckingham,  
Will to your mother, to entreat of her

To meet you at the Tower, and welcome you.

*York.* What, will you go unto the Tower, my lord? [it so.

*Prince.* My lord protector needs will have *York*, I shall not sleep in quiet at the Tower.

*Glo.* Why, sir, what should you fear?

*York.* Marry, my uncle Clarence' angry ghost;

My grandam told me he was murder'd there.

*Prince.* I fear no uncles dead.

*Glo.* Nor none that live, I hope.

*Prince.* And if they live, I hope I need not fear.

But come, my lord, and, with a heavy heart,  
Thinking on them, go I unto the Tower.

[*Exeunt Prince, YORK, HASTINGS, Cardinal, and Attendants.*

*Buck.* Think you, my lord, this little prating was not incensed\* by his subtle mother, [York To taunt and scorn you thus opprobriously?

*Glo.* No doubt, no doubt: O, 'tis a parlous Bold, quick, ingenious, forward, capable! [boy; He's all the mother's, from the top to toe.

*Buck.* Well, let them rest.—

Come hither, gentle Catesby; thou art sworn As deeply to effect what we intend,

As closely to conceal what we impart:

Thou know'st our reasons urged upon the way;  
What think'st thou? is it not an easy matter

To make William lord Hastings of our mind,  
For the instalment of this noble duke

In the seat royal of this famous isle? [prince,  
*Cate.* He for his father's sake so loves the

That he will not be won to aught against him.

*Buck.* What think'st thou then of Stanley? will not he?

*Cate.* He will do all in all as Hastings doth.

*Buck.* Well then, no more but this: Go, gentle Catesby, [ings,

And, as it were far off, sound thou lord Hastings how he doth stand affected to our purpose;

And summon him to-morrow to the Tower,

To sit about the coronation.

If thou dost find him tractable to us,  
Encourage him, and tell him all our reasons:

If he be leaden, icy, cold, unwilling,

Be thou so to; and so break off the talk,

And give us notice of his inclination:

For we to-morrow hold divided† councils,

Wherein thyself shalt highly be employed.

*Glo.* Commend me to lord William: tell him, Catesby,

His ancient knot of dangerous adversaries

To-morrow are let blood at Pomfret-castle;

And bid my friend, for joy of this good news,

Give mistress Shore one gentle kiss the more.

*Buck.* Good Catesby, go, effect this business soundly. [I can.

*Cate.* My good lords both, with all the heed

*Glo.* Shall we hear from you, Catesby, ere

*Cate.* You shall, my lord. [we sleep?

*Glo.* At Crosby-place, there shall you find us both. [Exit CATESBY.

*Buck.* Now, my lord, what shall we do, if we perceive

Lord Hastings will not yield to our complots?

*Glo.* Chop off his head, man;—somewhat we will do:—

And, look, when I am king, claim thou of me The earldom of Hereford, and all the moveables

Whereof the king my brother was possessed.

*Buck.* I'll claim that promise at your grace's hand. [kindness.

*Glo.* And look to have it yielded with all Come, let us sup betimes; that afterwards

We may digest our complots in some form. [Exeunt.

## SCENE II. Before Lord Hastings' House.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* My lord, my lord! [Knocking]

*Hast.* [Within.] Who knocks?

*Mess.* One from lord Stanley.

*Hast.* [Within.] What is't o'clock?

*Mess.* Upon the stroke of four.

*Enter HASTINGS.*

*Hast.* Cannot thy master sleep the tedious nights? [say

*Mess.* So it should seem, by that I have to First, he commends him to your noble lord—

*Hast.* And then,— [ship.

*Mess.* And then he sends you word, he dreamt To-night the boar had raised off his helm:

Besides, he says, there are two councils held; And that may be determined at the one,

Which may make you and him to rue at the other. [pleasure,—

Therefore he sends to know your lordship's If presently you will take horse with him,

And with all speed post with him toward the north,

To shun the danger that his soul divines.

*Hast.* Go, fellow, go, return unto thy lord;

Bid him not fear the separated councils:

His honour, and myself, are at the one;

And, at the other, is my good friend Catesby;

Where nothing can proceed, that toucheth us,

Whereof I shall not have intelligence.

Tell him, his fears are shallow, wanting instance‡:

And for his dreams—I wonder he's so fond ||

To trust the mockery of unquiet slumbers:

To fly the boar, before the boar pursues,

Were to incense the boar to follow us, [chase.

And make pursuit, where he did mean no

Go, bid thy master rise and come to me;

And we will both together to the Tower,

Where, he shall see, the boar¶ will use us kindly. [you say.

*Mess.* I'll go, my lord, and tell him what? [Exit

\* Incited.

† Intelligent.

‡ Separate.

§ Example

|| Weak.

¶ i. e., Gloucester, who had a boar for his arms.

*Enter CATESBY.*

*Cate.* Many good morrows to my noble lord!

*Hast.* Good morrow, Catesby; you are early stirring: [state?

What news, what news, in this our tottering  
*Cate.* It is a reeling world, indeed, my lord;  
And, I believe, will never stand upright,  
Till Richard wear the garland of the realm.

*Hast.* How! wear the garland? dost thou

*Cate.* Ay, my good lord. [mean the crown?

*Hast.* I'll have this crown of mine cut from my shoulders,

Before I'll see the crown so foul misplaced.  
But canst thou guess that he doth aim at it?

*Cate.* Ay, on my life; and hopes to find you forward

Upon his party, for the gain thereof: [news,—  
And, thereupon, he sends you this good  
That, this same very day, your enemies,  
The kindred of the queen, must die at Pomfret.

*Hast.* Indeed, I am no mourner for that news,

Because they have been still my adversaries:  
But, that I'll give my voice on Richard's side,  
To bar my master's heirs in true descent,  
God knows, I will not do it, to the death.

*Cate.* God keep your lordship in that gracious mind! [month hence,

*Hast.* But I shall laugh at this a twelve-  
That they, who brought me in my master's hate,  
I live to look upon their tragedy.

Well, Catesby, ere a fortnight make me older,  
I'll send some packing, that yet think not on't.

*Cate.* 'Tis a vile thing to die, my gracious lord,

When men are unprepared, and look not for it.

*Hast.* O monstrous, monstrous! and so falls it out [do

With Rivers, Vaughan, and Grey: and so 'twill  
With some men else, who think themselves as safe

As thou and I; who, as thou know'st, are dear  
To princely Richard, and to Buckingham.

*Cate.* The princes both make high account of you,—

For they account his head upon the bridge.

[*Aside.*

*Hast.* I know they do; and I have well deserved it.

*Enter STANLEY.*

Come on, come on, where is your boar-spear, man?

Fear you the boar, and go so unprovided?

*Stan.* My lord, good-morrow; and good-morrow, Catesby:—

You may jest on, but, by the holy rood\*,  
I do not like these several councils, I.

*Hast.* My lord, I hold my life as dear as  
And never, in my life, I do protest, [yours;  
Was it more precious to me than 'tis now:

Think you, but that I know our state secure,  
I would be so triumphant as I am?

*Stan.* The lords at Pomfret, when they rode from London, [sure,

Were jocund, and supposed their states were  
And they, indeed, had no cause to mistrust;

But yet, you see, how soon the day o'er-cast.

This sudden stab of rancour I misdoubt;

Pray God, I say, I prove a needless coward!

What, shall we toward the Tower? the day is spent. [you what, my lord?

*Hast.* Come, come, have with you.—Wot'st  
To-day, the lords you talk of are beheaded.

*Stan.* They, for their truth, might better wear their heads,

Than some, that have accused them, wear their  
But come, my lord, let's away. [hats.

*Enter a Pursuivant.*

*Hast.* Go on before, I'll talk to this good fellow. [*Exit* STAN. and CATESBY.

How now, sirrah? how goes the world with thee? [to ask.

*Purs.* The better, that your lordship please

*Hast.* I tell thee, man, 'tis better with me now, [meet:

Than when thou met'st me last where now we  
Then I was going prisoner to the Tower;

By the suggestion of the queen's allies;  
But now I tell thee, (keep it to thyself,)

This day those enemies are put to death,  
And I in better state than e'er I was. [content!

*Purs.* God hold it, to your honour's good

*Hast.* Gramercy, fellow! There, drink that for me. [*Throwing him his purse.*

*Purs.* I thank your honour.

[*Exit Pursuivant.*

*Enter a Priest.*

*Pr.* Well met, my lord; I am glad to see your honour. [my heart.

*Hast.* I thank thee, good sir John, with all  
I am in your debt for your last exercise;

Come the next Sabbath, and I will content you.  
*Enter BUCKINGHAM.*

*Buck.* What, talking with a priest, lord chamberlain! [priest;

Your friends at Pomfret, they do need the  
Your honour hath no shriving† work in hand.

*Hast.* Good faith, and when I met this holy man,

The men you talk of came into my mind.  
What, go you toward the Tower? [there:

*Buck.* I do, my lord; but long I cannot stay  
I shall return before your lordship thence.

*Hast.* Nay, like enough, for I stay dinner there.

*Buck.* And supper too, although thou know'st it not. [*Aside.*

Come, will you go?

*Hast.* I'll wait upon your lordship. [*Exit.*

SCENE III. Pomfret. *Before the Castle.*

*Enter RATCLIFF, with a guard, conducting RIVERS, GREY, and VAUGHAN, to execution.*

*Rat.* Come, bring forth the prisoners.

*Riv.* Sir Richard Ratcliff, let me tell thee  
To-day shalt thou behold a subject die, [this,—

For truth, for duty, and for loyalty. [of you!

*Grey.* God keep the prince from all the pack  
A knot you are of damned blood-suckers.

\* Cross.

† Know.

‡ Confession.



*Vaugh.* You live, that shall cry woe for this hereafter. [out.]

*Rat.* Despatch; the limit of your lives is

*Riv.* O Pomfret, Pomfret! O thou bloody fatal and ominous to noble peers! [prison,

Within the guilty closure of thy walls,

Richard the second here was hack'd to death:

And, for more slander to thy dismal seat,

We give thee up our guiltless blood to drink.

*Grey.* Now Margaret's curse is fallen upon our heads,

When she exclaim'd on Hastings, you, and I, For standing by when Richard stabb'd her son.

*Riv.* Then cursed she Hastings, then cursed she Buckingham,

Then cursed she Richard:—O, remember, God,

To hear her prayers for them, as now for us!

And for my sister, and her princely sons,—

Be satisfied, dear God, with our true bloods,

Which, as thou know'st, unjustly must be spilt!

*Rat.* Make haste, the hour of death is expiate\*. [here embrace]

*Riv.* Come, Grey,—come, Vaughan,—let us Farewell, until we meet again in heaven:

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. London. *A Room in the Tower.*

BUCKINGHAM, STANLEY, HASTINGS, the Bishop of Ely, CATESBY, LOVEL, and Others, sitting at a Table: Officers of the Council attending.

*Hast.* Now, noble peers, the cause why we is to determine of the coronation: [are met

In God's name, speak, when is the royal day?

*Buck.* Are all things ready for that royal time?

*Stan.* They are; and wants but nomination.

*Ely.* To-morrow then I judge a happy day.

*Buck.* Who knows the lord protector's mind herein?

Who is most inward† with the noble duke?

*Ely.* Your grace, we think, should soonest know his mind. [hearts,—

*Buck.* We know each other's faces: for our He knows no more of mine, than I of yours;

Nor I of his, my lord, than you of mine:—

Lord Hastings, you and he are near in love.

*Hast.* I thank his grace, I know he loves me well;

But, for his purpose in the coronation, I have not sounded him, nor he deliver'd

His gracious pleasure any way therein:

But you, my noble lord, may name the time;

And in the duke's behalf I'll give my voice,

Which, I presume, he'll take in gentle part.

[*Enter GLOSTER.*]

*Ely.* In happy time, here comes the duke himself. [inorrow:

*Glo.* My noble lords and consins, all, good I have been long a sleeper; but, I trust,

My absence doth neglect no great design,

Which by my presence might have been concluded. [my lord,

*Buck.* Had you not come upon your cue, William lord Hastings had pronounced your part,—

I mean, your voice,—for crowning of the king.

*Glo.* Than my lord Hastings, no man might be bolder; [well.—

His lordship knows me well, and loves me My lord of Ely, when I was last in Holborn,

I saw good strawberries in your garden there;

I do beseech you send for some of them.

*Ely.* Marry, and will, my lord, with all my heart. [*Exit Ely.*]

*Glo.* Cousin of Buckingham, a word with you. [*Takes him aside.*]

Catesby hath sounded Hastings in our business, And finds the testy gentleman so hot,

That he will lose his head, ere give consent,

His master's child, as worshipfully he terms it:

Shall lose the royalty of England's throne.

*Buck.* Withdraw yourself awhile, I'll go with you.

[*Exeunt GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM.*]

*Stan.* We have not yet set down this day of triumph.

To-morrow, in my judgment, is too sudden; For I myself am not so well provided,

As else I would be, were the day prolong'd.

[*Re-enter Bishop of Ely.*]

*Ely.* Where is my lord protector? I have For these strawberries. [sent

*Hast.* His grace looks cheerfully and smooth this morning;

There's some conceit‡ or other likes him well, When he doth bid good morrow with such

spirit.

I think, there's ne'er a man in Christendom, Can lesser hide his love, or hate, than he;

For by his face straight shall ye know his heart. [his face,

*Stan.* What of his heart perceive you in By any likelihood he show'd to-day?

*Hast.* Marry, that with no man here he is offended;

For, were he, he had shown it in his looks.

[*Re-enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM.*]

*Glo.* I pray you all, tell me what they deserve,

That do conspire my death with devilish plots Of damned witchcraft; and that have pre-

vail'd

Upon my body with their hellish charms?

*Hast.* The tender love I bear your grace, my lord,

Makes me most forward in this noble presence To doom the offenders: Whosoe'er they be,

I say, my lord, they have deserved death.

*Glo.* Then be your eyes the witness of their evil,

Look how I am bewitch'd; behold mine arm Is, like a blasted sapling, wither'd up: [witch,

And this is Edward's wife, that monstrous Consorted with that harlot, strumpet Shore,

That by their witchcraft thus have marked me.

*Hast.* If they have done this deed, my noble lord,— [strumpet,

*Glo.* If! thou protector of this damned Talk'st thou to me of ifs?—Thou art a trait-

tor:— [swear,

Off with his head: now, by Saint Paul I

\* Expiated, completed.

† Intimate.

‡ Thought.

I will not dine until I see the same.—  
 Lovel, and Catesby, look that it be done;  
 The rest that love me, rise, and follow me.

[*Exeunt Council, with GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM.*]

*Hast.* Woe, woe, for England! not a whit for me;

For I, too fond \*, might have prevented this:  
 Stanley did dream the boar did raise his helm;  
 But I disdain'd it, and did scorn to fly.  
 Three times to-day my foot-cloth horse did stumble,

And started, when he look'd upon the Tower,  
 As loath to bear me to the slaughter-house.  
 O, now I want the priest that spake to me:  
 I now repent I told the pursuivant,  
 As too triumphing, how mine enemies,  
 To-day at Pontfret bloodily were butcher'd,  
 And I myself secure in grace and favour.  
 O, Margaret, Margaret, now thy heavy curse  
 Is lighted on poor Hastings' wretched head.

*Cate.* Despatch, my lord, the duke would be at dinner;

Make a short shrift, he longs to see your head.

*Hast.* O momentary grace of mortal men,  
 Which we more hunt for than the grace of God!

Who builds his hope in air of your fair looks,  
 Lives like a drunken sailor on a mast;  
 Ready, with every nod, to tumble down  
 Into the fatal bowels of the deep.

*Lov.* Come, come, despatch; 'tis bootless to exclaim. [laud!]

*Hast.* O bloody Richard!—miserable England prophesy the fearful'st time to thee,  
 That ever wretched age hath look'd upon.—  
 Come, lead me to the block, bear him my head;  
 They smile at me, who shortly shall be dead.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *The sam. The Tower-wall.*

*Enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM, in rusty armour, marvellous ill-favoured.*

*Glo.* Come, cousin, canst thou quake, and change thy colour?

Murder thy breath in middle of a word,—  
 And then again begin, and stop again,  
 As if thou wert distraught, and mad with terror?

[*gedian;*]

*Buck.* Tut, I can counterfeit the deep tra-  
 Speak, and look back, and pry on every side,  
 Tremble and start at wagging of a straw,  
 Intending deep suspicion: ghastly looks  
 Are at my service, like enforced smiles;  
 And both are ready in their offices,  
 At any time, to grace my stratagems.

But what, is Catesby gone? [along.]

*Glo.* He is; and see, he brings the mayor

*Enter the Lord Mayor and CATESBY.*

*Buck.* Let me alone to entertain him.—  
 Lord mayor,—

*Glo.* Look to the draw-bridge there.

*Buck.* Hark, hark! a drum.

*Glo.* Catesby, o'erlook the walls.

*Buck.* Lord mayor, the reason we have sent for you,——

*Glo.* Look back, defend thee, here are enemies.

*Euck.* God and our innocence defend and guard us!

*Enter LOVEL and RATCLIFF, with HASTINGS's head.*

*Glo.* Be patient, they are friends; Ratcliff, and Lovel.

*Lov.* Here is the head of that ignoble traitor,  
 The dangerous and unsuspected Hastings.

*Glo.* So dear I loved the man, that I must weep.

I took him for the plainest harmless't creature,  
 That breathed upon the earth a christian;  
 Made him my book, wherein my soul recorded  
 The history of all her secret thoughts:  
 So smooth he daub'd his vice with show of virtue,

That, his apparent open guilt omitted,—  
 I mean, his conversation with Shore's wife,—  
 He lived from all attainder or suspect.

*Buck.* Well, well, he was the covert'st shelter'd traitor

That ever lived.—Look you, my lord mayor,  
 Would you imagine, or almost believe,  
 (Wer't not, that by great preservation  
 We live to tell it you,) the subtle traitor  
 This day had, lotted in the council-house,  
 To murder me, and my good lord of Gloster?

*May.* What! had he so? [dels!]

*Glo.* What! think you we are Turks, or infidels?  
 Or that we would, against the form of law,  
 Proceed thus rashly in the villain's death;  
 But that the extreme peril of the case,  
 The peace of England, and our persons' safety,  
 Enforced us to this execution?

*May.* Now, fair befall you! he deserved his death:

And your good graces both have well pro-  
 To warn false traitors from the like attempts.  
 I never look'd for better at his hands,  
 After he once fell in with mistress Shore.

*Buck.* Yet had we not determined he should die,

Until your lordship came to see his end;  
 Which now the loving haste of these our friends,

Somewhat against our meaning, hath prevented:  
 Because, my lord, we would have had you heard

The traitor speak, and timorously confess  
 The manner and the purpose of his treasons;  
 That you might well have signified the same  
 Unto the citizens, who, haply, may  
 Misconstrue us in him, and wail his death.

*May.* But, my good lord, your grace's word shall serve,

As well as I had seen, and heard him speak:  
 And do not doubt, right noble princes both,  
 But I'll acquaint our dutious citizens  
 With all your just proceedings in this case.

*Glo.* And to that end we wish'd your lordship here,

To avoid the censures of the carping world.

*Buck.* But since you came too late of our intent,

\* Weak, foolish.

+ Pretending.

Yet witness what you hear we did intend :  
And so, my good lord mayor, we lid farewell.

[Exit Lord Mayor.]

*Glo.* Go after, after, cousin Buckingham.  
The mayor towards Guildhall hies him in all  
post :—

There, at your meetest vantage of the time,  
Infer the bastardy of Edward's children :  
Tell them, how Edward put to death a citizen,  
Only for saying—he would make his son  
Heir to the Crown, meaning, indeed, his house,  
Which, by the sign thereof was termed so.  
Moreover, urge his hateful luxury,  
And bestial appetite in change of lust ;  
Which stretch'd unto their servants, daughters,  
wives,

Even where his raging eye, or savage heart,  
Without control, list'd to make his prey.  
Nay, for a need, thus far come near my person :—

[child

Tell them, when that my mother went with  
Of that insatiate Edward, noble York,  
My princely father, then had wars in France ;  
And, by just computation of the time,  
Found, that the issue was not his begot ;  
Which well appeared in his lineaments,  
Being nothing like the noble duke my father :  
Yet touch this sparingly, as 'twere far off ;  
Because, my lord, you know, my mother lives.

*Buck.* Doubt not, my lord ; I'll play the  
orator,

s if the golden fee, for which I plead,  
Were for myself ; and so, my lord, adieu.

*Glo.* If you thrive well, bring them to Bay-  
nard's castle ;

Where you shall find me well accompanied,  
With reverend fathers, and well-learned  
bishops.

[o'clock,

*Buck.* I go ; and towards three or four  
Look for the news that the Guildhall affords.

[Exit BUCKINGHAM.]

*Glo.* Go, Lovel, with all speed to doctor  
Shaw,—

[both

Go thou [to CAT.] to friar Penker ;—bid them  
Meet me, within this hour, at Baynard's castle.

[Exit LOVEL and CATESBY.]

Now will I in, to take some privy order  
To draw the brats of Clarence out of sight ;  
And to give notice, that no manner of person  
Have, any time, recourse unto the princes.

[Exit.]

#### SCENE VI. A Street.

*Enter a Scrivener.*

*Scriv.* Here is the indictment of the good  
lord Hastings ;

Which in a set hand fairly is engross'd,  
That it may be to-day read o'er in Paul's.  
And mark how well the sequel hangs together :  
Eleven hours I have spent to write it over,  
For yesternight by Catesby was it sent me ;  
The precedent\* was full as long a doing :  
And yet within these five hours Hastings lived,  
Untainted, unexamined, free, at liberty.  
Here's a good world the while!—Who is so  
gross,

That cannot see this palpable device ?  
Yet who so bold, but says—he sees it not ?  
Bad is the world ; and all will come to nought,  
When such bad dealing must be seen in thought.  
[Exit.]

#### SCENE VII. The same. Court of Baynard's Castle.

*Enter GLOSTER and BUCKINGHAM, meeting.*

*Glo.* How now, how now ? what say the  
citizens ?

*Buck.* Now by the holy mother of our Lord,  
The citizens are mum, say not a word.

*Glo.* Touch'd you the bastardy of Edward's  
children ?

[Lucy.

*Buck.* I did ; with his contract with Lady  
And his contract by deputy in France :

The insatiate greediness of his desires,  
And his enforcement of the city wives ;  
His tyranny for trifles ; his own bastardy,—  
As being got, your father then in France ;  
And his resemblance, being not like the duke.  
Withal, I did infer your lineaments,—

Being the right idea of your father,  
Both in your form and nobleness of mind :  
Laid open all your victories in Scotland,  
Your discipline in war, wisdom in peace,  
Your bounty, virtue, fair humility ;  
Indeed, left nothing, fitting for your purpose,  
Untouch'd, or slightly handled, in discourse.

And, when my oratory grew to an end,  
I bade them, that did love their country's good,  
Cry—*God save Richard, England's royal*

*Glo.* And did they so ?

[king !

*Buck.* No, so God help me, they spake not  
a word ;

But, like dumb statuas, or breathless stones,  
Stared on each other, and look'd deadly pale.  
Which when I saw, I reprehended them ;  
And ask'd the mayor, what meant this wilful  
silence :

His answer was,—the people were not used  
To be spoke to, but by the Recorder.  
Then he was urged to tell my tale again :  
*Thus saith the duke, thus hath the duke*  
*inferred ;*

But nothing spoke in warrant from himself.  
When he had done, some followers of mine  
own,

At lower end o'the hall, hurl'd up their caps,  
And some ten voices cried, *God save king*  
*Richard !*

And thus I took the vantage of those few,—  
*Thanks, gentle citizens, and friends, quoth I ;*  
*This general applause, and cheerful shout,*  
*Argues your wisdom, and your love to*  
*Richard :*

And even here brake off and came away.

*Glo.* What tongueless blocks were they !  
Would they not speak ?

Will not the mayor then, and his brethren,  
come ?

*Buck.* The mayor is here at hand ; intend't  
some fear ;

Be not you spoke with, but by mighty suit :  
And look you get a prayer-book in your hand,



And stand between two churchmen, good my lord;

For on that ground I'll make a holy descendant:  
And be not easily won to our requests; [it.  
Play the maid's part, still answer nay, and take

*Glo.* I go; and if you plead as well for them,  
As I can say nay to thee for myself,  
No doubt we'll bring it to a happy issue.

*Buck.* Go, go, up to the leads; the lord  
mayor knocks. [Exit GLOSTER.

*Enter the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Citizens.*

Welcome, my lord; I dance attendance here;  
I think, the duke will not be spoke withal.—

*Enter, from the Castle, CATESBY.*  
Now, Catesby! what says your lord to my request?

[lord,  
*Cate.* He doth entreat your grace, my noble  
To visit him to-morrow, or next day:  
He is within, with two right reverend fathers,  
Divinely bent to meditation;

And in no worldly suit would he be moved,  
To draw him from his holy exercise. [duke;

*Buck.* Return, good Catesby, to the gracious  
Tell him, myself, the mayor and aldermen,  
In deep designs, in matter of great moment,  
No less importing than our general good,  
Are come to have some conference with his grace.

*Cate.* I'll signify so much unto him straight.  
[Exit.

*Buck.* Ah, ha, my lord, this prince is not an  
He is not looking on a lewd day-bed\*, [Edward!  
But on his knees at meditation;  
Not dallying with a brace of courtézans,  
But meditating with two deep divines;  
Not sleeping, to engross† his idle body,  
But praying, to enrich his watchful soul:  
Happy were England, would this virtuous  
Take on himself the sovereignty thereof: [prince  
But, sure, I fear, we shall ne'er win him to it.

*May.* Marry, God defend, his grace should  
say us nay! [again;—

*Buck.* I fear he will: Here Catesby comes  
*Re-enter CATESBY.*

Now, Catesby, what says his grace? [seemled  
*Cate.* He wonders to what end you have as-

Such troops of citizens to come to him,  
His grace not being warn'd thereof before,  
He fears, my lord, you mean no good to him.

*Buck.* Sorry I am, my noble cousin should  
Suspect me, that I mean no good to him:  
By heaven, we come to him in perfect love;  
And so once more return and tell his grace.

[Exit CATESBY.  
When holy and devout religious men

Are at their beads, 'tis hard to draw them  
So sweet is zealous contemplation. [thence;

*Enter GLOSTER, in a Gallery above, between Two Bishops. CATESBY returns.*

*May.* See, where his grace stands 'tween two  
clergyment! [prince,

*Buck.* Two props of virtue for a christian  
To stay him from the fall of vanity:  
And, see, a book of prayer in his hand;  
True ornaments to know a holy man.—

Famous Plantagenet, most gracious prince,  
Lend favourable ear to our requests;  
And pardon us the interruption  
Of thy devotion, and right christian zeal.

*Glo.* My lord, there needs no such apology;  
I rather do beseech you pardon me,  
Who, earnest in the service of my God,  
Neglect the visitation of my friends.

But, leaving this, what is your grace's pleasure?

*Buck.* Even that, I hope, which pleaseth  
God above,

And all good men of this ungovern'd isle.

*Glo.* I do suspect I have done some offence,  
That seems disgracious in the city's eye;  
And that you come to reprehend my ignorance.

*Buck.* You have, my lord; Would it might  
please your grace,

On our entreaties to amend your fault!

*Glo.* Else wherefore breathe I in a Christian  
land?

*Buck.* Know, then, it is your fault, that you  
resign

The supreme seat, the throne majestical,  
The sceptred office of your ancestors,  
Your state of fortune, and your due of birth,  
The lineal glory of your royal house,  
To the corruption of a blemish'd stock:  
Whilst, in the mildness of your sleepy thoughts,  
(Which here we waken to our country's good,)  
The noble isle doth want her proper limbs;  
Her face defaced with scars of infamy,  
Her royal stock grafted with ignoble plants,  
And almost shoulder'd‡ in the swallowing gulf  
Of dark forgetfulness and deep oblivion.

Which to recure§, we heartily solicit  
Your gracious self to take on you the charge

And kingly government of this your land:  
Not as protector, steward, substitute,  
Or lowly factor for another's gain:

But as successively, from blood to blood,  
Your right of birth, your empery||, your own.

For this, consorted with the citizens,  
Your very worshipful and loving friends,

And by their vehement instigation,  
In this just suit come I to move your grace.

*Glo.* I cannot tell, if to depart in silence,  
Or bitterly to speak in your reproof,

Best fitteth my degree, or your condition:  
If, not to answer,—you might haply think,  
Tongue-tied ambition, not replying, yielded

To bear the golden yoke of sovereignty,  
Which fondly you would here impose on me

If to reprove you for this suit of yours,  
So season'd with your faithful love to me,

Then, on the other side, I check'd my friends  
Therefore,—to speak, and to avoid the first;

And, then in speaking, not to incur the last,—  
Definitively thus I answer you.

Your love deserves my thanks; but my desert  
Unmeritable, shuns your high request.

First, if all obstacles were cut away,  
And that my path were even to the crown,

As the ripe revenue and due of birth;  
Yet so much is my poverty of spirit,

So mighty, and so many, my defects, [ness,—  
That I would rather hide me from my great

\* A couch.

† Fatten.

‡ Thrust into.

§ Recover.

|| Empire.

Being a bark to brook no mighty sea,—  
Than in my greatness covet to be hid,  
And in the vapour of my glory smother'd,  
But, God be thank'd, there is no need of me;  
(And much I need\* to help you, if need were;)  
The royal tree hath left us royal fruit,  
Which, mellow'd by the stealing hours of time,  
Will well become the seat of majesty,  
And make, no doubt, us happy by his reign.  
On him I lay what you would lay on me,  
The right and fortune of his happy stars,—  
Which, God defend, that I should wring from  
him! [your grace;

*Buck.* My lord, this argues conscience in  
But the respects thereof are nice and trivial,  
All circumstances well considered.  
You say that Edward is your brother's son;  
So say we too, but not by Edward's wife:  
For first he was contract to lady Lucy,  
Your mother lives a witness to his vow;  
And afterwards by substitute betroth'd  
To Bona, sister to the king of France.  
These both put by, a poor petitioner,  
A care-crazed mother to a many sons,  
A beauty-waning and distressed widow,  
Even in the afternoon of her best days,  
Made prize and purchase of his wanton eye,  
Seduced the pitch and height of all his thoughts  
To base declension and loath'd bigamy:  
By her, in his unlawful bed, he got [prince.  
This Edward, whom our manners call—the  
More bitterly could I expostulate,  
Save that, for reverence to some alive,  
I give a sparing limit to my tongue.  
Then, good my lord, take to your royal self  
This proffer'd benefit of dignity:  
If not to bless us and the land withal,  
Yet to draw forth your noble ancestry  
From the corruption of abusing time,  
Unto a lineal true-derived course. [treat you.

*May.* Do, good my lord; your citizens en-  
*Buck.* Refuse not, mighty lord, this proffer'd love. [ful suit.

*Cate.* O, make them joyful, grant their law-  
*Glo.* Alas, why would you heap those cares

I am unfit for state and majesty:— [on me?  
I do beseech you, take it not amiss;  
I cannot, nor I will not, yield to you.

*Buck.* If you refuse it,—as in love and zeal,  
Loath to depose the child, your brother's son;  
As well we know your tenderness of heart,  
And gentle, kind, effeminate remorse.  
Which we have noted in you to your kindred,  
And equally, indeed, to all estates.—  
Yet know, when you accept our suit or no,  
Your brother's son shall never reign our king;  
But we will plant some other in your throne,  
To the disgrace and downfall of your house.  
And, in this resolution, here we leave you;  
Come, citizens, we will entreat no more.

[*Exeunt BUCKINGHAM and Citizens.*

*Cate.* Call them again, sweet prince, accept  
their suit;

If you deny them, all the land will rue it.

*Glo.* Will you enforce me to a world of cares?  
Well, call them again; I am not made of stone,  
But penetrable to your kind entreaties,

[*Exit CATESBY.*

Albeit against my conscience and my soul.—

*Re-enter BUCKINGHAM and the Rest.*

Cousin of Buckingham,—and sage, grave men,  
Since you will buckle fortune on my back,  
To bear her burden, when I will or no,  
I must have patience to endure the load:  
But if black scandal, or foul-faced reproach,  
Attend the sequel of your imposition,  
Your mere enforcement shall acquittance me  
From all the impure blots and stains thereof;  
For God he knows, and you may partly see,  
How far I am from the desire of this.

*May.* God bless your grace! we see it, and  
will say it.

*Glo.* In saying so, you shall but say the truth.

*Buck.* Then I salute you with this royal  
title,— [king!

Long live king Richard, England's worthy  
All. Amen. [crowned?

*Buck.* To-morrow may it please you to be

*Glo.* Even when you please, since you will  
have it so. [grace;

*Buck.* To-morrow then we will attend your  
And so, most joyfully, we take our leave.

*Glo.* Come, let us to our holy work again.—

[*To the Bishops.*  
Farewell, good cousin;—farewell, gentle  
friends. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. Before the Tower.

*Enter on one side, Queen ELIZABETH,  
Duchess of YORK, and Marquis of DORSET;  
on the other, ANNE, Duchess of Gloster,  
leading Lady MARGARET PLANTAGENET,  
Clarence's young Daughter.*

*Duch.* Who meets us here?—my niece  
Plantagenet

Led in the hand of her kind aunt of Gloster?  
Now, for my life, she's wand'ring to the Tower,  
On pure heart's love, to greet the tender  
Daughter, well met. [prince.—

*Anne.* God give your graces both

A happy and a joyful time of day! [ther away?

*Q. Eliz.* As much to you, good sister! Whi-

*Anne.* No further than the Tower; and, as  
Upon the like devotion as yourselves, [I guess  
To gratulate the gentle princes there, [together:

*Q. Eliz.* Kind sister, thanks; we'll enter all  
*Enter BRAKENBURY.*

And, in good time, here the lieutenant comes.  
Master lieutenant, pray you, by your leave,  
How doth the prince, and my young son of  
York? [patience,

*Brak.* Right well, dear madam: By your  
I may not suffer you to visit them;  
The king hath strictly charged the contrary.

\* Want ability.

† Minute.

‡ Pity.

*Q. Eliz.* The king! who's that?

*Brak.* I mean, the lord protector.

*Q. Eliz.* The Lord protect him from that kingly title! [me?]

Hath he set bounds between their love and I am their mother, who shall bar me from them? [them.]

*Duch.* I am their father's mother, I will see

*Anne.* Their aunt I am in law, in love their mother: [blame,

Then bring me to their sights; I'll bear thy And take thy office from thee, on thy peril.

*Brak.* No, madam, no, I may not leave it so; I am bound by oath, and therefore pardon me.

[*Exit BRAKENBURY.*]

*Enter STANLEY.*

*Stan.* Let me but meet you, ladies, one hour hence,

And I'll salute your grace of York as mother, And reverend looker-on of two fair queens —

Come, madam, you must straight to Westminster. [*To the Duchess of GLOSTER.*]

There to be crowned Richard's royal queen.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, cut my face asunder! [beat, That my pent heart may have some scope to

Or else I swoon with this dead-killing news.

*Anne.* Unpleasant tidings! O unpleasant news! [fears your grace?]

*Dor.* Be of good cheer:—Mother, how

*Q. Eliz.* O Dostet, speak not to me, get thee gone,

Death and destruction dog thee at the heels; Thy mother's name is ominous to children:

If thou wilt outstrip death, go cross the seas, And live with Richmond, from the reach of hell.

Go, hie thee, hie thee, from this slaughter-house, Lest thou increase the number of the dead;

And make me die the thrall of Margaret's curse, Nor mother, wife, nor England's counted queen.

*Stan.* Full of wise care is this your counsel, madam:

Take all the swift advantage of the hours; You shall have letters from me to my son

In your behalf, to meet you on the way: Be not ta'en tardy by unwise delay.

*Duch.* O ill dispersing wind of misery! O my accursed womb, the bed of death;

A cockatrice\* hast thou hatch'd to the world, Whose unavowed eye is murderous! [was sent.

*Stan.* Come, madam, come; I in all haste

*Anne.* And I with all unwillingness will go. O, would to God, that the inclusive verge

Of golden metal†, that must round my brow, Were red-hot steel, to sear ‡ me to the brain!

Anointed let me be with deadly venom; And die, ere men can say—God save the queen!

*Q. Eliz.* Go, go, poor soul, I envy not thy glo- Po feed my humour, wish thyself no harm. [ry;

*Anne.* No! why?—When he, that is my husband now,

Came to me, as I follow'd Henry's corse; When scarce the blood was well wash'd from

his hands, Which issued from my other angel husband, And that dead saint which then I weeping fol-

low'd;

O when, I say, I look'd on Richard's face, This was my wish,—*Be thou, quoth I, ac-*

*cursed,*

*For making me, so young, so old a widow!*

*And, when thou wedd'st, let sorrow haunt thy*

*And be thy wife (if any be so mad)* [bed;

*More miserable by the life of thee,* [death!

*Than thou hast made me by my dear lord's*

*Lo, ere I can repeat this curse again,*

*Even in so short a space, my woman's heart*

*Grossly grew captive to his honey words,*

*And proved the subject of mine own soul's*

*curse,* [rest;

*Which ever since hath held mine eyes from*

*For never yet one hour in his bed*

*Did I enjoy the golden dew of sleep,*

*But with his timorous dreams was still awaked.*

*Besides, he hates me for my father Warwick*

*And will, no doubt, shortly be rid of me.*

*Q. Eliz.* Poor heart, adieu; I pity thy com- plaining [for yours.

*Anne.* No more than with my soul I mourn

*Dor.* Farewell, thou woeful welcomer of glory! [of it I

*Anne.* Adieu, poor soul, that takest thy leave

*Duch.* Go thou to Richmond, and good for- tune guide thee! [*To* ORS.T.

Go thou to Richard, and good angels tend thee! [*to ANNE.*

Go thou to sanctuary, and good thoughts pos- sess thee! [*To* Q. E. LIZ.BETH

I to my grave, where peace and rest lie with Eighty odd years of sorrow have I seen, [me!

And each hour's joy wreck'd with a week of teen§. [the tower.—

*Q. Eliz.* Stay yet; look back, with me, unto Pity, yon ancient stones, those tender bas- es,

Whom envy hath immured within your walls! Rough cradle for such little pretty ones!

Kude ragged nurse! old sullen play-fellow For tender princees, use my babies well!

So foolish sorrow bids your stones farewell. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *A Room of State in the Palace.*

*Flourish of Trumpets.* RICHARD, as King upon his Throne; BUCKINGHAM, CATES- BY, a Page, and others.

*K. Rich.* Stand all apart.—Cousin of Buck- ingham,—

*Buck.* My gracious sovereign. [thy advice

*K. Rich.* Give me thy hand. Thus high, by And thy assistance, is king Richard seated:— But shall we wear these glories for a day?

Or shall they last, and we rejoice in them?

*Buck.* Still live they, and for ever let them last! [the touch.

*K. Rich.* Ah, Buckingham, now do I play To try if thou be current gold indeed:—

Young Edward lives;—I think now what

*Buck.* Say on, my loving lord. [would speak.

*K. Rich.* Why, Buckingham, I say, I would be king. [hege.

*Buck.* Why, so you are, my thrice-renowned

*K. Rich.* Ha! am I king? 'Tis so: but Ed-

*Buck.* True, noble prince [dwell lives.

\* A serpent, supposed to originate from a cock's egg. † The crown.

§ Sorrow.

¶ Touchstone.

‡ Burn.



*K. Rich.* O bitter consequence,  
That Edward still should live,—true, noble  
prince!—

Cousin, thou wast not wont to be so dull :—  
Shall I be plain ? I wish the bastards dead ;  
And I would have it suddenly performed.  
What say'st thou now ? speak suddenly, be  
brief.

*Buck.* Your grace may do your pleasure.

*K. Rich.* Tut, tut, thou art all ice, thy kind-  
ness freezes :

Say, have I thy consent, that they shall die ?

*Buck.* Give me some breath, some little  
pause, dear lord,

Before I positively speak in this :

I will resolve your grace immediately.

[Exit BUCKINGHAM.]

*Cate.* The king is angry ; see, he gnaws his  
lip. [Aside.]

*K. Rich.* I will converse with iron-witted  
fools, [Descends from his Throne.]

And unrespective boys\* : none are for me,  
That look into me with considerate eyes ;—  
High-reaching Buckingham grows circum-  
boy, [spect.—]

*Page.* My lord. [rupting gold]

*K. Rich.* Know'st thou not any, whom cor-  
wood tempt unto a close exploit† of death ?

*Page.* I know a discontented gentleman,  
Whose humble means match not his haughty  
Gold were as good as twenty orators, [mind :]  
And will, no doubt, tempt him to any thing.

*K. Rich.* What is his name ?

*Page.* His name, my lord, is—Tyrrel.

*K. Rich.* I partly know the man ; Go, call  
him hither, boy.— [Exit Page.]

The deep-revolving witty‡ Buckingham  
No more shall be the neighbour to my conn-  
Hath he so long held out with me untired, [sels :]  
And stops he now for breath?—well, be it  
so.—

Enter STANLEY.

How now, lord Stanley ? what's the news ?

*Stan.* Know, my loving lord,  
The marquis Dorset, as I hear, is fled  
To Richmond, in the parts where he abides.

*K. Rich.* Come hither, Catesby : rumour it  
abroad,

That Anne, my wife, is very grievous sick ;  
I will take order for her keeping close.  
Inquire ine out some mean-born gentleman,  
Whom I will marry straight to Clarence's  
daughter :—

The boy is foolish, and I fear not him. [out,  
Look, how thou dream'st!—I say again, give  
That Anne my queen is sick, and like to die :  
About it ; for it stands me much upon §,  
To stop all hopes, whose growth may damage  
me.— [Exit CATESBY.]

I must be married to my brother's daughter,  
Or else my kingdom stands on brittle glass :—  
Murder her brothers, and then marry her !  
Uncertain way of gain ! But I am in  
So far in blood, that sin will pluck on sin.  
Fear-falling pity dwells not in this eye.—

Re-enter Page, with TYRREL.

Is thy name—Tyrrel ?

*Tyr.* James Tyrrel, and your most obedient

*K. Rich.* Art thou, indeed ? [subject.]

*Tyr.* Prove me, my gracious lord.

*K. Rich.* Darest thou resolve to kill a friend  
of mine ? [enemies.]

*Tr.* Please you ; but I had rather kill two

*K. Rich.* Why, then thou hast it ; two deep  
enemies, [ers.]

Foes to my rest, and my sweet sleep's disturb-  
Are they tha I would have thee deal || upon :

Tyrrel, I mean those bastards in the Tower.

*Tyr.* Let me have open means to come to  
them,

And soon I'll rid you from the fear of them.

*K. Rich.* Thou sing'st sweet music. Hark,  
come hither, Tyrrel ;

Go, by this token :—Rise, and lend thine ear :  
[Whisper.]

There is no more but so :—Say, it is done,  
And I will love thee, and prefer thee for it.

*Tyr.* I will despatch it straight. [Exit.]

Re-enter BUCKINGHAM.

*Buck.* My lord, I have consider'd in my mind  
The late demand that you did sound me in.

*K. Rich.* Well, let that rest. Dorset is fled  
to Richmond.

*Buck.* I hear the news, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Stanley, he is your wife's son :—  
Well, look to it. [promise.]

*Buck.* My lord, I claim the gift, my cue by  
For which your honour and your faith is  
pawn'd ;

The earldom of Hereford, and the moveables,  
Which you have promised I shall possess.

*K. Rich.* Stauley, look to your wife ; if she  
convey

Letters to Richmond, you shall answer it.

*Buck.* What says your highness to my just  
request ? [sixth]

*K. Rich.* I do remember me,—Henry the  
Did prophesy, that Richmond should be king,  
When Richmond was a little peevish ¶ boy.

A king!—perhaps—

*Buck.* My lord!

*K. Rich.* How chance, the prophet could  
not at that time, [him ?]

Have told me, I being by, that I should kill

*Buck.* My lord, your promise for the earl

dom ! [Exeter.]

*K. Rich.* Richmond !—When last I was at  
The mayor in courtesy showed me the castle,  
And call'd it—Rougemont : at which name, I  
started ;

Because a bard of Ireland told me once,  
I should not live long after I saw Richmond.

*Buck.* My lord!

*K. Rich.* Ay, what's o'clock ?

*Buck.* I am thus bold

To put your grace in mind of what you pro-  
mised me.

*K. Rich.* Well, but what is't o'clock ?

*Buck.* Upon the stroke

Of ten.

\* Inconsiderate.

† Secret act.

‡ Cunning.

§ It is of the utmost consequence to my designs.

|| Act.

¶ Foolish.

*K. Rich.* Well, let it strike.

*Buck.* Why let it strike?

*K. Rich.* Because that, like a Jack\*, thou keep'st the stroke

Between thy begging and my meditation.

I am not in the giving vein to-day.

*Buck.* Why, then resolve me whe'r you will or no. [the vein.]

*K. Rich.* Thou troublest me; I am not in [Exit King RICHARD, and Train.]

*Buck.* And is it thus? repays he my deep service [this?]

With such contempt? made I him king for O, let me think on Hastings; and be gone

To Brecknock†, while my fearful head is on. [Exit.]

### SCENE III. The same.

Enter TYRREL.

*Tyr.* The tyrannous and bloody act is done; The most arch deed of piteous massacre, That ever yet this land was guilty of. Dighton, and Forrest, whom I did suborn To do this piece of ruthless‡ butchery, Albeit they were flesh'd villains, bloody dogs, Melting with tenderness and mild compassion, Wept like two children, in their death's sad story.

O thus, quoth Dighton, lay the gentle babes,— Thus, thus, quoth Forrest, girlding one another Within their alabaster innocent arms:

Their lips were four red roses on a stalk, Which, in their summer beauty, kiss'd each A book of prayers on their pillow lay: [other. Which once, quoth Forrest, almost changed my mind;

But, O, the devil—there the villain stopp'd; When Dighton thus told on,—we smother'd The most replenished sweet work of nature, That, from the prime creation, e'er she framed.—

Hence both are gone with conscience and remorse, [both,

They could not speak; and so I left them To bear this tidings to the bloody king.

Enter King RICHARD.

And here he comes:—All health, my sovereign lord! [news?

*K. Rich.* Kind Tyrrel! am I happy in thy

*Tyr.* If to have done the thing you gave in Beget your happiness, be happy then, [charge For it is done.

*K. Rich.* But didst thou see them dead?

*Tyr.* I did, my lord.

*K. Rich.* And buried, gentle Tyrrel?

*Tyr.* The chaplain of the Tower hath buried them;

But where, to say the truth, I do not know.

*K. Rich.* Come to me, Tyrrel, soon, at after supper,

When thou shalt tell the process of their death. Mean time, but think how I may do thee good, And be inheritor of thy desire.

Farewell, till then!

*Tyr.* I humbly take my leave. [Exit.]

*K. Rich.* The sun of Clarence have I penn'd up close; [riage;

His daughter meanly have I match'd in marriage— The sons of Edward sleep in Abraham's bosom, And Anne my wife hath bid the world good night. [aims

Now, for I know the Bretagne§ Richmond At young Elizabeth, my brother's daughter,

And, by that knot, looks proudly on the crown, To her go I, a jolly thriving wooer.

Enter CATESBY.

*Cate.* My lord,— [in so bluntly?

*K. Rich.* Good news or bad, that thou comest

*Cate.* Bad news, my lord. Morton|| is fled to Richmond; [Welshinen,

And Buckingham, back'd with the hardy Is in the field, and still his power increaseth.

*K. Rich.* Ely with Richmond troubles me more near,

Than Buckingham, and his rash-levied strength.

Come,—I have learn'd, that fearful comment— Is leaden servitor to dull delay; [ing

Delay leads impotent and snail-paced beggary:

Then fiery expedition be my wing,

Jove's Mercury, and herald for a king!

Go, muster men: my counsel is my shield;

We must be brief when traitors brave the field. [Exit.]

### SCENE IV. The same. Before the Palace.

Enter Queen MARGARET.

*Q. Mar.* So, now prosperity begins to melt— And drop into the rotten mouth of death. [low,

Here in these confines slyly have I lurk'd, To watch the waning of mine enemies.

A dire induction¶ am I witness to,

And will to France; hoping the consequence

Will prove as bitter, black, and tragical.

Withdraw thee, wretched Margaret! who comes here?

Enter Queen ELIZABETH and the Duchess of York.

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, my poor princes! ah, my tender babes!

My unblown flowers, new-appearing sweets!

If yet your gentle souls fly in the air,

And be not fix'd in doom perpetual,

Hover about me with your airy wings,

And hear your mother's lamentation! [for right

*Q. Mar.* Hover about her; say, that right

Hath dimm'd your infant morn to aged night.

*Duch.* So many miseries have crazed my voice,

That my woe-wearied tongue is still and mute.

Edward Plantagenet, why art thou dead?

*Q. Mar.* Plantagenet doth quit Plantagenet,

Edward for Edward pays a dying debt.

*Q. Eliz.* Wilt thou, O God, fly from such gentle lambs,

And throw them in the entrails of the wolf?

When didst thou sleep when such a deed was done? [sweet son,

*Q. Mar.* When holy Harry died, and my

\* An image like those at St. Dunstan's church in Fleet-street. † His castle in Wales.

‡ Merciless.

§ The country in which Richmond had taken refuge.

|| Bishop of Ely.

¶ Introduction.

*Duch.* Dead life, blind sight, poor mortal-living ghost, [life usurp'd,  
Woe's scene, world's shame, grave's due by  
Brief abstract and record of tedious days,  
Rest thy unrest on England's lawful earth,

[*Sitting down.*]

Unlawfully made drunk with innocent blood!

*Q. Eliz.* Ah, that thou wouldst as soon afford  
As thou canst yield a melancholy seat; [a grave,  
Then would I hide my bones, not rest them  
here!

Ah, who hath any cause to mourn, but we?

[*Sitting down by her.*]

*Q. Mar.* If ancient sorrow be most reverent,  
Give mine the benefit of seniority\*,  
And let my griefs frown on the upper hand.  
If sorrow can admit society,

[*Sitting down with them.*]

Tell o'er your woes again by viewing mine:—  
I had an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him;  
I had a husband, till a Richard kill'd him:  
Thou hadst an Edward, till a Richard kill'd him;  
Thou hadst a Richard, till a Richard kill'd him.

*Duch.* I had a Richard too, and thou didst  
kill him;

I had a Rutland too, thou holp'st to kill him.

*Q. Mar.* Thou hadst a Clarence too, and  
Richard kill'd him.

From forth the kennel of thy womb hath crept  
A hell-hound, that doth hunt us all to death:  
That dog, that had his teeth before his eyes,  
To worry lambs, and lap their gentle blood;  
That foul defacer of God's handy-work;  
That excellent grand tyrant of the earth,  
That reigns in catted eyes of weeping souls,  
Thy womb let loose to chase us to our graves.  
O upright, just, and true-disposing God,  
How do I thank thee, that this carnal cur  
Preys on the issue of his mother's body,  
And makes her pew-fellow† with others' moan!

*Duch.* O, Harry's wife, triumph not in my  
woes;

God witness with me, I have wept for thine.

*Q. Mar.* Bear with me, I am hungry for re-  
And now I cloy me with beholding it. [venge,  
Thy Edward he is dead, that kill'd my Edward;  
Thy other Edward dead, to quit my Edward;  
Young York he is but boot‡, because both they  
Match not the high perfection of my loss.  
Thy Clarence he is dead, that stabb'd my Ed-  
And the beholders of this tragic play, [ward;  
The aulterate Hastings, Rivers, Vaughan,  
Grey,

Untime's smother'd in their dusky graves.

Rich'd yet lives, hell's black intelligencer;  
Only reserved their factor to buy souls,  
And send them thither: but at hand, at hand,  
Ensues his piteous and unpitied end:  
Earth gapes, hell burns, fiends roar, saints pray,  
To have him suddenly conveyed from hence:  
Cancel his bond of life, dear God, I pray,  
That I may live to say, the dog is dead!

*Q. Eliz.* O, thou didst prophesy, the time  
would come,

That I should wish for thee to help me curse

That bottled spider, that foul bunch-back'd toad.

*Q. Mar.* I call'd thee, then, vain flourish of  
my fortune;

I call'd thee, then, poor shadow, painted queen,  
The presentation of but what I was,  
The flattering index§ of a direful pageant,  
One heaved a-high, to be hurl'd down below:  
A mother only mock'd with two fair babes;  
A dream of what thou wast, a garish|| flag,  
To be the aim of every dangerous shot;  
A sign of dignity, a breath, a bubble;  
A queen in jest, only to fill the scene.

Where is thy husband now? where be thy  
brothers?

Where be thy two sons? wherein dost thou joy?  
Who sues, and kneels, and says, God save the  
queen?

Where be the bending peers that flatter'd thee?  
Where be the thronging troops that follow'd  
thee?

Decline all this, and see what now thou art.  
For happy wife, a most distressed widow;  
For joyful mother, one that wails the name;  
For one being sued to, one that humbly sues;  
For queen, a very caitiff crown'd with care:  
For one that scorn'd at me, now scorn'd of me,  
For one being fear'd of all, now fearing one;  
For one commanding all, obeyed of none.  
Thus hath the course of justice wheel'd about,  
And left thee but a very prey to time;  
Having no more but thought of what thou wert,  
To torture thee the more, being what thou art.  
Thou didst usurp my place, and dost thou not  
Usurp the just proportion of my sorrow? [yoke;  
Now thy proud neck bears half my burden'd  
From which even here I slip my wearied head,  
And leave the burden of it all on thee.

Farewell, York's wife, and queen of sad mis-  
chance; [France,

These English woes shall make me smile in  
*Q. Eliz.* O thou well skill'd in curses, stay  
a while,

And teach me how to curse mine enemies.

*Q. Mar.* Forbear to sleep the night, and  
fast the day;

Compare dead happiness with living woe;  
Think that thy babes were fairer than they  
And he that slew them, fouler than he is: [were,  
Bettering thy loss makes the bad causer worse;  
Revolving this will teach thee how to curse.

*Q. Eliz.* My words are dull, O, quicken  
them with thine! [and pierce like mine.

*Q. Mar.* Thy woes will make them sharp,  
[Exit *Q. MARGARET.*]

*Duch.* Why should calamity be full of words?

*Q. Eliz.* Windy attorneys to their client  
Airy succeders of intestate joys, [woes,  
Poor breathing orators of miseries! [in part  
Let them have scope: though what they do  
Help nothing else, yet do they ease the heart.

*Duch.* If so, then be not tongue-tied: go  
with me,

And in the breath of bitter words let's smother  
My damned son, that thy two sweet sons  
smother'd. [Drum within.

\* Seniority.

† Companion.

‡ Thrown in to boot.

Indexes were anciently placed at the beginning of books.

|| Flaring.



I hear the drum,—be copious in exclams.

*E t r* King RICHARD, and his Train,  
marchi. g.

*K. Rich.* Who intercepts me in my expedition? [thee,

*Duch.* O, she that might have intercepted  
By strangling thee in her accursed womb,  
From all the slaughters, wretch, that thou hast  
done. [golden crown,

*Q. Eliz.* Hidest thou that forehead with a  
Where should be branded, if that right were  
right, [crown,

The slaughter of the prince that owed\* that  
And the dire death of my poor sons and brothers?  
[dren?

Tell me, thou villain-slave, where are my children?  
*Duch.* Thou toad, thou toad, where is thy  
brother Clarence?

And little Ned Plantagenet, his son?

*Q. Eliz.* Where is the gentle Rivers, Vaugh-

*Duch.* Where is kind Hastings? [an, Grey?

*K. Rich.* A flourish, trumpets!—strike alarums, drums!

Let not the heavens hear these tell-tale women  
Rail on the Lord's anointed: Strike, I say.—  
[Flourish. Alarums.

Either be patient, and entreat me fair,  
Or with the clamorous report of war  
Thus will I drown your exclamations.

*Duch.* Art thou my son? [yourself.

*K. Rich.* Ay; I thank God, my father, and

*Duch.* Then patiently hear my impatience.

*K. Rich.* Madam, I have a touch of your  
condition,

That cannot brook the accent of reproof.

*Duch.* O, let me speak.

*K. Rich.* Do, then; but I'll not hear.

*Duch.* I will be mild and gentle in my words.

*K. Rich.* And brief, good mother; for I am  
in haste. [thee,

*Duch.* Art thou so hasty? I have staid for  
God knows, in torment and in agony. [you?

*K. Rich.* And came I not at last to comfort

*Duch.* No, by the holy rood†, thou know'st  
it well, [hell,

Thou camest on earth to make the earth my  
A grievous burden was thy birth to me;

Tetchy‡ and wayward was thy infancy;  
Thy school-days frightful, desperate, wild, and

furious; [turous;

Thy prime of manhood, daring, bold, and ven-

thy age confirm'd, proud, subtle, sly, and  
bloody, [hatred;

More mild, but yet more harmful, kind in  
What comfortable hour canst thou name,

That ever graced me in thy company?

*K. Rich.* Faith, none, but Humphrey Hour,  
that call'd your grace

To breakfast once, forth of my company.

If I be so disgracious in your sight,  
Let me march on, and not offend you, madam.

Strike up the drum.  
*Duch.* I pry'thee hear me speak.

*K. Rich.* You speak too bitterly.

*Duch.* Hear me a word;

For I shall never speak to thee again.

*K. Rich.* So. [ordinance,

*Duch.* Either thou wilt die by God's just

Ere from this war thou turn a conqueror;

Or I with grief and extreme age shall perish,  
And never look upon thy face again.

Therefore, take with thee my most heavy curse;

Which, in the day of battle, tire thee more,  
Than all the complete armour that thou wear'st!

My prayers on the adverse party fight;

And there the little souls of Edward's children  
Whisper the spirits of thine enemies,

And promise them success and victory.  
Bloody thou art, bloody will be thy end;

Shame serves thy life, and doth thy death  
attend. [Exit

*Q. Eliz.* Though far more cause, yet much  
less spirit to curse

Abides in me; I say amen to her. [Going

*K. Rich.* Stay, madam, I must speak a word  
with you. [blood

*Q. Eliz.* I have no more sons of the royal  
For thee to murder: for my daughters,

Richard,— [queens;

They shall be praying nuns, not weeping,  
And therefore level not to hit their lives.

*K. Rich.* You have a daughter call'd—  
Elizabeth,

Virtuous and fair, royal and gracious. [her live

*Q. Eliz.* And must she die for this? O, let

And I'll corrupt her manners, stain her beauty;  
Slander myself, as false to Edward's bed;

Throw over her the veil of infamy:  
So she may live unscar'd of bleeding slaughter,

I will confess she was not Edward's daughter.  
*K. Rich.* Wrong not her birth, she is of  
royal blood. [not so.

*Q. Eliz.* To save her life, I'll say—she is

*K. Rich.* Her life is safest only in her birth.

*Q. Eliz.* And only in that safety died her  
brothers. [opposite.

*K. Rich.* Lo, at their births good stars were

*Q. Eliz.* No, to their lives bad friends were  
contrary. [destiny.

*K. Rich.* All unavoided|| is the doom of

*Q. Eliz.* True, when avoided grace makes  
destiny:

My babes were destined to a fairer death,  
If grace had bless'd thee with a fairer life.

*K. Rich.* You speak as if that I had slain  
my consins. [cozen'd

*Q. Eliz.* Cousins, indeed; and by their uncle  
Of comfort, kingdom, kindred, freedom, life.

Whose hands soever lanced their tender hearts,  
Thy head, all indirectly, gave direction:

No doubt the murderous knife was dull and  
blunt,

Till it was whetted on thy stone-hard heart,  
To revel in the entrails of my lambs.

But that still use of grief makes wild grief  
tame, [boys,

My tongue should to thy ears not name my  
Till that my nails were anchor'd in thine eyes

And I, in such a desperate bay of death,  
Like a poor bark, of sails and tackling reft,

\* Owned.

† Disposition.

‡ Cross.

§ Touchy, fretful.

|| Unavoidable.

¶ Constant.

Rush all to pieces on thy rocky bosom. [prise,

*K. Rich.* Madam, so thrive I in my enter-  
And dangerous success of bloody wars,  
As I intend more good to you and yours,  
Than ever you or yours by me were harm'd !

*Q. Eliz.* What good is cover'd with the face  
of heaven,

To be discover'd, that can do me good ?

*K. Rich.* The advancement of your children,  
gentle lady. [their heads ?

*Q. Eliz.* Up to some scaffold, there to lose

*K. Rich.* No, to the dignity and height of  
fortune,

The high imperial type of this earth's glory \*.

*Q. Eliz.* Flatter my sorrows with report of it ;  
Tell me, what state, what dignity, what honour,  
Canst thou demise† to any child of mine ?

*K. Rich.* Even all I have ; ay, and myself  
Will I withal endow a child of thine ; [and all,  
So in the Lethe of thy angry soul [wrougs,  
Thou drown the sad remembrance of those  
Which thou supposet I have done to thee.

*Q. Eliz.* Be brief, lest that the process of  
thy kindness

Last longer telling than thy kindness' date.

*K. Rich.* Then know, that from my soul, I  
love thy daughter. [her soul.

*Q. Eliz.* My daughter's mother thinks it with

*K. Rich.* What do you think ?

*Q. Eliz.* That 'hou dost love my daughter,  
from thy soul : [brothers ;

So, from thy soul's love, didst thou love her  
And, from my heart's love, I do thank thee  
for it. [meaning :

*K. Rich.* Be not so hasty to confound my  
I mean, that with my soul I love thy daughter,  
And do intend to make her queen of England.

*Q. Eliz.* Well then, who dost thou mean  
shall be her king ?

*K. Rich.* Even he, that makes her queen :

*Q. Eliz.* What, then ? [Who else should be ?

*K. Rich.* Even so : What think you of  
it, madam ?

*Q. Eliz.* How canst thou woo her ?

*K. Rich.* That I would learn of you,  
As one being best acquainted with her humour.

*Q. Eliz.* And wilt thou learn of me ?

*K. Rich.* Madam, with all my heart.

*Q. Eliz.* Send to her, by the man that slew  
her brothers,

A pair of bleeding hearts ; thereon engrave,  
Edward, and York, then, haply‡, will she  
weep : [garet

Therefore present to her,—as sometime Mar-  
Did to thy father, steep'd in Rutland's blood,—  
A handkerchief ; which, say to her, did drain  
The purple sap from her sweet brother's body,  
And bid her wipe her weeping eyes withal.

If this inducement move her not to love,  
Send her a letter of thy noble deeds ;

Tell her, thou madest away her uncle Clarence,  
Her uncle Rivers ; ay, and, for her sake,

Madest quick conveyance with her good aunt  
Anne. [not the way

*K. Rich.* You mock me, madam ; this is  
To win your daughter.

*Q. Eliz.*

There is no other way ;  
Unless thou couldst put on some other shape,  
And not be Richard that hath done all this.

*K. Rich.* Say, that I did all this for love of  
her ? [but have thee,

*Q. Eliz.* Nay, then indeed, she cannot choose  
Having bought love with such a bloody spoil.

*K. Rich.* Look, what is done cannot be now  
amended :

Men shall deal unadvisedly sometimes,  
Which after-hours give leisure to repent.

If I did take the kingdom from your sons,  
To make amends, I'll give it to your daughter.

If I have kill'd the issue of your womb,  
To quicken your increase, I will beget

Mine issue of your blood upon your daughter.  
A grandam's name is little less in love,

Than is the doting title of a mother ;  
They are as children, but one step below,

Even of your mettle, of your very blood ;  
Of all one pain,—save for a night of groans

Endured of her, for whom you bid like sorrow.  
Your children were vexation to your youth,

But mine shall be a comfort to your age.  
The loss you have is but a son being king,

And, by that loss, your daughter is made queen  
I cannot make you what amends I would,

Therefore accept such kindness as I can.  
Dorset, your son, that, with a fearful soul,

Leads discontented steps in foreign soil,  
This fair alliance quickly shall call home

To high promotions and great dignity :  
The king, that calls your beauteous daughter,

wife,

Familiarly shall call thy Dorset—brother ;  
Again shall you be mother to a king,

And all the ruins of distressful times  
Repair'd with double riches of content.

What ! we have many goodly days to see :  
The liquid drops of tears that you have shed,

Shall come again, transform'd to orient pearl.  
Advantaging their loan, with interest

Of ten-times-double gain of happiness.  
Go then, my mother, to thy daughter go ;

Make bold her bashful years with your ex-  
perience ;

Prepare her ears to hear a wooer's tale ;  
Put in her tender heart the aspiring flame

Of golden sovereignty ; acquaint the princess  
With the sweet silent hours of marriage joys :

And when this arm of mine hath chastised  
The petty rebel, dull-brain'd Buckingham,

Bound with triumphant garlands will I come,  
And lead thy daughter to a conqueror's bed ;

To whom I will retail my conquest won,  
And she shall be sole victress, Cæsar's Cæsar.

*Q. Eliz.* What were I best to say ? her  
father's brother

Would be her lord ? Or shall I say, her uncle ?  
Or, he that slew her brothers, and her uncles ?

Under what title shall I woo for thee,  
That God, the law, my honour, and her love,

Can make seen pleasing to her tender years ?  
*K. Rich.* Infer fair England's peace by this

alliance. [lasting war.

*Q. Eliz.* Which she shall purchase with still

\* A crown.

† Bequeath.

‡ Perhaps.

*K. Rich.* Tell her, the king, that may command, entreats— [King forbids.]  
*Q. Eliz.* That at her hands, which the king's  
*K. Rich.* Say, she shall be a high and mighty queen.  
*Q. Eliz.* To wail the title, as her mother doth.  
*K. Rich.* Say, I will love her everlastingly.  
*Q. Eliz.* But how long shall that title, ever, last? [end.]  
*K. Rich.* Sweetly in force unto her fair life's  
*Q. Eliz.* But how long fairly shall her sweet life last? [lengthens it.]  
*K. Rich.* As long as heaven and nature  
*Q. Eliz.* As long as hell, and Richard, likes of it. [ject low.]  
*K. Rich.* Say, I, her sovereign, am her sub-  
*Q. Eliz.* But she, your subject, loaths such sovereignty.  
*K. Rich.* Be eloquent in my behalf to her.  
*Q. Eliz.* An honest tale speeds best, being plainly told. [loving tale.]  
*K. Rich.* Then, in plain terms tell her my  
*Q. Eliz.* Main, and not honest, is too harsh a style. [too quick.]  
*K. Rich.* Your reasons are too shallow and  
*Q. Eliz.* O, no, my reasons are too deep and dead;— [graves.]  
 Too deep and dead, poor infants, in their  
*K. Rich.* Harp not on that string, madam; that is past. [strings break.]  
*Q. Eliz.* Harp on it still shall I, till heart.  
*K. Rich.* Now, by my George, my garter, and my crown,— [third usurp'd.]  
*Q. Eliz.* Profaned, dishonour'd, and the  
*K. Rich.* I swear—  
*Q. Eliz.* By nothing; for this is no oath.  
 Thy George, profaned, hath lost his holy honour; [virtue:]  
 Thy garter, blemish'd, pawn'd his knightly  
 Thy crown, usurp'd, disgraced his kingly glory:  
 If something thou wouldst swear to be believed,  
 Swear then by something that thou hast not  
*K. Rich.* Now by the world,— [wrong'd.]  
*Q. Eliz.* 'Tis full of thy foul wrongs.  
*K. Rich.* My father's death,—  
*Q. Eliz.* Thy life hath that dishonour'd.  
*K. Rich.* Then, by myself,—  
*Q. Eliz.* Thyself is self-misused.  
*K. Rich.* Why then, by God,—  
*Q. Eliz.* God's wrong is most of all.  
 If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by him,  
 The unity the king thy brother made,  
 Had not been broken, nor my brother slain,  
 If thou hadst fear'd to break an oath by him,  
 'Tis imperial metal, circling now thy head,  
 Had graced the tender temples of my child;  
 And both the princes had been breathing here,  
 Which now, two tender bed-fellows for dust,  
 Thy broken faith hath made a prey for worms.  
 What canst thou swear by now?  
*K. Rich.* By the time to come.  
*Q. Eliz.* That thou hast wronged in the time o'er-past;  
 For I myself have many tears to wash  
 Hereafter time, for time past, wrong'd by thee.

The children live, whose parents thou has slaughter'd,—  
 Ungovern'd youth, to wail it in their age.  
 The parents live, whose children thou has butcher'd—  
 Old barren plants, to wail it with their age.  
 Swear not by time to come; for that thou has Misused ere used, by times ill-used o'er-past.  
*K. Rich.* As I intend to prosper, and repent,  
 So thrive I in my dangerous attempt  
 Of hostile arms; myself myself confound;  
 Heaven, and fortune, bar me happy hours;  
 Day, yield me not thy light; nor, night, thy  
 Be opposite all planets of good luck [rest];  
 To my proceeding, if, with pure heart's love,  
 Immaculate devotion, holy thoughts,  
 I tender not thy beauteous princely daughter!  
 In her consists my happiness, and thine;  
 Without her, follows to myself, and thee,  
 Herself, the land, and many a christian soul,  
 Death, desolation, ruin, and decay;  
 It cannot be avoided, but by this;  
 It will not be avoided, but by this.  
 Therefore, dear mother, (I must call you so,)  
 Be the attorney of my love to her.  
 Plead what I will be, not what I have been;  
 Not my deserts, but what I will deserve:  
 Urge the necessity and state of times,  
 And be not peevish † found in great designs.  
*Q. Eliz.* Shall I be tempted of the devil thus?  
*K. Rich.* Ay, if the devil tempt thee to do good.  
*Q. Eliz.* Shall I forget myself, to be myself?  
*K. Rich.* Ay, if your self's remembrance wrong yourself.  
*Q. Eliz.* But thou didst kill my children.  
*K. Rich.* But in your daughter's womb I bury them; [breed  
 Where, in that nest of spicery ‡, they shall  
 Selves of themselves, to your recomforture.  
*Q. Eliz.* Shall I go win my daughter to thy will? [deed.]  
*K. Rich.* And be a happy mother by the  
*Q. Eliz.* I go.—Write to me very shortly,  
 And you shall understand from me her mind.  
*K. Rich.* Bear her my true love's kiss, and so farewell.  
 [Kissing her. *Erit Q. ELIZABETH.*  
 Relenting fool, and shallow, changing woman!  
 How now? what news?  
*Enter RATCLIFF; CATESBY following.*  
*Rat.* Most mighty sovereign, on the western  
 Rideth a puissant navy; to the shore [coast  
 Throng many doubtful hollow-hearted friends,  
 Unarm'd, and unresolved to beat them back:  
 'Tis thought, that Richmond is their admiral;  
 And there they hulk, expecting but the aid  
 Of Buckingham, to welcome them ashore.  
*K. Rich.* Some light-foot friend post to the  
 duke of Norfolk:—  
 Ratcliff, thyself,—or Catesby; where is he?  
*Cate.* Here, my good lord.  
*K. Rich.* Catesby, fly to the duke.  
*Cate.* I will, my lord, with all convenient  
 haste.

\* In the Levitical Law, Chap. xviii. 14.  
 Polish.

† The ensigns of the Order of the Garter.  
 § The phoenix's nest.



*K. Rich.* Ratcliff, come hither: Post to Salisbury;  
 When thou comest thither,—Dull unmindful villain, [To CATESBY.  
 Why stay'st thou here, and go'st not to the duke? [ness' pleasure,  
*Cate.* First, mighty liege, tell me your high-what from your grace I shall deliver to him.  
*K. Rich.* O, true, good Catesby;—Bid him levy straight  
 The greatest strength and power he can make, And meet me suddenly at Salisbury.  
*Cate.* I go. [Exit.  
*Rat.* What, may it please you, shall I do at Salisbury? [before I go?  
*K. Rich.* Why, what wouldst thou do there,  
*Rat.* Your highness told me, I should post before.  
*Enter STANLEY.*  
*K. Rich.* My mind is changed.—Stanley, what news with you?  
*Stan.* None good, my liege, to please you with the hearing;  
 Nor none so bad, but well may be reported.  
*K. Rich.* Heyday, a riddle! neither good nor bad!  
 What need'st thou run so many miles about, When thou may'st tell thy tale the nearest way? Once more, what news?  
*Stan.* Richmond is on the seas.  
*K. Rich.* There let him sink, and be the seas on him!  
 White-liver'd runagate, what doth he there?  
*Stan.* I know not, mighty sovereign, but by  
*K. Rich.* Well, as you guess? [guess.  
*Stan.* Stirr'd up by Dorset, Buckingham, and Morton, [crown.  
 He makes for England, here to claim the  
*K. Rich.* Is the chair empty? is the sword unsway'd?  
 Is the king dead? the empire unpossess'd?  
 What heir of York is there alive, but we?  
 And who is England's king, but great York's heir?  
 Then, tell me, what makes he upon the seas?  
*Stan.* Unless for that, my liege, I cannot guess. [your liege,  
*K. Rich.* Unless for that he comes to be  
 You cannot guess wherefore the Welshman  
 Thon wilt revolt, and fly to him, I fear. [comes.  
*Stan.* No, mighty liege; therefore mistrust me not.  
*K. Rich.* Where is thy power then, to beat him back?  
 Where be thy tenants, and thy followers?  
 Are they not now upon the western shore,  
 Safe-conducting the rebels from their ships?  
*Stan.* No, my good lord, my friends are in the north. [in the north,  
*K. Rich.* Cold friends to me: what do they  
 When they should serve their sovereign in the west? [mighty king:  
*Stan.* They have not been commanded,  
 Pleaseth your majesty to give me leave,  
 I'll muster up my friends; and meet your grace,

Where, and what time, your majesty shall please.  
*K. Rich.* Ay, ay, thou wouldst begone to join with Richmond:  
 I will not trust you, sir.  
*Stan.* Most mighty sovereign,  
 You have no cause to hold my friendship doubtful;  
 I never was, nor never will be false.  
*K. Rich.* Well, go, muster men. But, hear you, leave behind [be firm,  
 Your son, George Stanley; look your heart  
 Or else his head's assurance is but frail.  
*Stan.* So deal with him, as I prove true to you. [Exit STANLEY.  
*Enter a Messenger.*  
*Mess.* My gracious sovereign, now in Devonshire,  
 As I by friends am well advertised,  
 Sir Edward Courtney, and the haughty prelate,  
 Bishop of Exeter, his elder brother,  
 With many more confederates, are in arms.  
*Enter another Messenger.*  
*2 Mess.* In Kent, my liege, the Guildfords are in arms;  
 And every hour more competitors\* [strong.  
 Flock to the rebels, and their power grows  
*Enter another Messenger.*  
*3 Mess.* My lord, the army of great Buckingham—  
*K. Rich.* Out on ye, owls! nothing but songs of death? [He strikes him.  
 There, take thou that, till thou bring better news. [jesty,  
*3 Mess.* The news I have to tell you is,—that, by sudden floods and fall of waters,  
 Buckingham's army is dispersed and scatter'd;  
 And he himself wander'd away alone,  
 No man knows whither.  
*K. Rich.* O, I cry you mercy:  
 There is my purse to cure that blow of thine.  
 Hath any well-advised friend proclaim'd  
 Reward to him that brings the traitor in?  
*3 Mess.* Such proclamation hath been made,  
 my liege.  
*Enter another Messenger.*  
*4 Mess.* Sir Thomas Lovel, and lord marquis Dorset,  
 'Tis said, my liege, in Yorkshire are in arms.  
 But this good comfort bring I to your highness,  
 The Bretagne navy is dispersed by tempest:  
 Richmond, in Dorsetshire, sent out a boat  
 Unto the shore, to ask those on the banks,  
 If they were his assistants, yea, or no;  
 Who answer'd him, they came from Buckingham  
 Upon his party: he, mistrusting them,  
 Hoised sail, and made his course again for  
 Bretagne. [up in arms;  
*K. Rich.* March on, march on, since we are  
 If not to fight with foreign enemies,  
 Yet to beat down these rebels here at home.  
*Enter CATESBY.*  
*Cate.* My liege, the duke of Buckingham is taken, [mond  
 That is the best news; That the earl of Rich-

Is with a mighty power\* landed at Milford,  
Is colder news, but yet they must be told.

*K. Rich.* Away towards Salisbury; while  
we reason here,

A royal battle might be won and lost :—  
Some one take order, Buckingham be brought  
To Salisbury;—the rest march on with me.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *A Room in Lord Stanley's House.*

*Enter STANLEY and Sir CHRISTOPHER URSWICK †.*

*Stan.* Sir Christopher, tell Richmond this  
from me :—

That, in the sty of this most bloody boar,  
My son George Stanley is frank'd ‡ up in hold;  
If I revolt, off goes young George's head;  
The fear of that withholds my present aid.  
But, tell me, where is princely Richmond  
now?

*Chris.* At Pembroke, or at Ha'rford west  
in Wales.

*Stan.* What men of name resort to him?

*Chris.* Sir Walter Herbert, a renowned  
soldier;

Sir Gilbert Talbert, sir William Stanley;  
Oxford, redoubt'd Pembroke, sir James  
Blunt,

And Rice ap Thomas, with a valiant crew;  
And many other of great fame and worth:  
And towards London do they bend their  
course,

If by the way they be not fought withal.

*Stan.* Well, hie thee to thy lord; commend  
me to him;

Tell him, the queen hath heartily consented  
He shall espouse Elizabeth her daughter.  
These letters will resolve him of my mind.  
Farewell.

[*Gives papers to Sir CHRISTOPHER.*  
[*Exeunt*

## ACT V.

SCENE I. Salisbury. *An open Place.*

*Enter the Sheriff, and Guard, with BUCKINGHAM, led to execution.*

*Buck.* Will not king Richard let me speak  
with him?

*Sher.* No, my good lord: therefore be pa-  
tient. [Rivers, Grey,

*Buck.* Hastings, and Edward's children,  
My king Henry, and thy fair son Edward,  
Voughan, and all that have miscarried  
By underhand corrupted foul injustice;  
If that your moody discontented souls  
Do through the clouds behold this present  
hour,

Then for revenge mock my destruction!

This is All-Souls' day, fellows, is it not?

*Sher.* It is, my lord. [doomsday.

*Buck.* Why, then All-Souls' day is my body's  
This is the day, which, in king Edward's time,  
I wish'd might fall on me, when I was found  
False to his children, or his wife's allies:

This is the day, wherein I wish'd to fall

By the false faith of him whom most I trusted;  
This, this All-Souls' day to my fearful soul,

Is the determined respite of my wrongs §.

That high All-seer which I dallied with,  
Hath turned my feigned prayer on my head,

And given in earnest what I begg'd in jest.

Thus doth he force the swords of wicked men  
To turn their own points on their masters'  
bosoms:

Thus Margaret's curse falls heavy on my neck,—  
When he, quoth she, shall split thy heart  
with sorrow,

Remember Margaret was a prophetess.—

Come, sirs, convey me to the block of shame:  
Wrong hath but wrong, and blame the due of  
blame.

[*Exeunt BUCKINGHAM, &c.*

SCENE II. *Plain near Tamworth.*

*Enter, with Drum and Colours, RICHMOND  
OXFORD, Sir JAMES BLUNT, Sir WALTER  
HERBERT, and Others, with Forces,  
marching.*

*Richm.* Fellows in arms, and my most loving  
friends,

Bruised underneath the yoke of tyranny,  
Thus far into the bowels of the land  
Have we march'd on without impediment;  
And here receive we from our father Stanley  
Lines of fair comfort and encouragement.  
The wretched, bloody, and usurping boar,  
That spoil'd your summer fields, and fruitful  
vines,

Swills your warm blood like wash, and makes  
his trough

In your embowell'd bosoms, this foul swine  
Lies now even in the centre of this isle,  
Near to the town of Leicester, as we learn:  
From Tamworth thither, is but one day's  
march.

In God's name, cheerly on, courageous friends,  
To reap the harvest of perpetual peace  
By this one bloody trial of sharp war.

*Oxf.* Every man's conscience is a thousand  
swords,

To fight against that bloody homicide.

*Herb.* I doubt not but his friends will turn  
to us.

*Blunt.* He hath no friends, but who are  
friends for fear;

Which, in his dearest need, will fly from  
him.

*Richm.* All for our vantage. Then, in God's  
name, march: [wings,

True hope is swift, and flies with swallow's  
Kings it makes gods, and meaner creatures  
kings. [Exeunt.

\* Force. † Chaplain to the countess of Richmond.

‡ A sty in which hogs are set apart for fattening. § Injurious practices.

SCENE III. Bosworth Field.

*Enter King RICHARD, and Forces; the Duke of NORFOLK, Earl of SURREY, and others.*

*K. Rich.* Here pitch our tents, even here in Bosworth field.—

*My lord of Surrey, why look you so sad?*

*Sur.* My heart is ten times lighter than my

*K. Rich.* My lord of Norfolk,— [looks.

*Nor.* Here, most gracious liege.

*K. Rich.* Norfolk, we must have knocks; Ha! must we not?

*Nor.* We must both give and take, my loving lord. [to-night;

*K. Rich.* Up with my tent: Here will I lie [Soldiers begin to set up the King's tent.

But where to-morrow?—Well, all's one for that.—

Who hath descried the number of the traitors?

*Nor.* Six or seven thousand is their utmost power. [count:

*K. Rich.* Why, our battalia trebles that besides, the king's name is a tower of strength, Which they upon the adverse faction want.

Up with the tent—Come, noble gentlemen, Let us survey the vantage of the ground;— Call for some men of sound direction:

Let's want no discipline, make no delay; For, lords, to-morrow is a busy day. [Exeunt.

*Enter, on the other side of the field, RICHMOND, Sir WILLIAM BRANDON, OXFORD, and other Lords. Some of the soldiers pitch RICHMOND's Tent.*

*Richm.* The weary sun hath made a golden And, by the bright track of his fiery car, [set, Gives token of a goodly day to-morrow. Sir William Brandon, you shall bear my standard.—

Give me some ink and paper in my tent;— I'll draw the form and model of our battle, Limit \* each leader to his several charge, And part in just proportion our small power. My lord of Oxford,—you, sir William Brandon,—

And you, sir Walter Herbert, stay with me: The earl of Pembroke keeps† his regiment;— Good captain Blunt, bear my good night to And by the second hour in the morning [him, Desire the earl to see me in my tent:—

Yet one thing more, good captain, do for me; Where is lord Stanley quarter'd, do you know? *Blunt.* Unless I have mista'en his colours much,

(Which, well I am assured, I have not done,) His regiment lies half a mile at least South from the mighty power of the king.

*Richm.* If without peril it be possible, Sweet Blunt, make some good means to speak with him,

And give him from me this most needful note.

*Blunt.* Upon my life, my lord, I'll undertake And so God give you quiet rest to-night! [it;

*Richm.* Good night, good captain Blunt.

Come, gentlemen,

Let us consult upon to-morrow's business! In to my tent, the air is raw and cold.

[*They withdraw into the Tent* Enter, to his Tent, King RICHARD, NORFOLK, RATCLIFF, and CATESBY.

*K. Rich.* What is't o'clock?

*Cate.* It's supper time, my lord It's nine o'clock.

*K. Rich.* I will not sup to-night. Give me some ink and paper.

What, is my beaver easier than it was?

And all my armour laid into my tent?

*Cate.* It is, my liege; and all things are in readiness. [charge;

*K. Rich.* Good Norfolk, hie thee to thy Use careful watch, choose trusty sentinels.

*Nor.* I go, my lord. [Norfolk.

*K. Rich.* Stir with the lark to-morrow, gentle

*Nor.* I warrant you, my lord. [Exit.

*K. Rich.* Ratcliff,—

*Rat.* My lord?

*K. Rich.* Send out a pursuivant at arms To Stanley's regiment; bid him bring his power Before sun-rising, lest his son George fall Into the blind cave of eternal night.—

Fill me a bowl of wine.—Give me a watch‡:— [To CATESBY.

Saddle white Surrey for the field to-morrow.— Look that my staves§ be sound, and not too

Ratcliff, — [heavy.

*Rat.* My lord? [Northumberland?

*K. Rich.* Saw'st thou the melancholy lord

*Rat.* Thomas the earl of Surrey, and himself, Much about cock-shut|| time, from troop to

troop, [diers. Went through the army, cheering up the sol-

*K. Rich.* I am satisfied. Give me a bowl of I have not that alacrity of spirit, [wine:

Nor cheer of mind, that I was wont to have. So, set it down.—Is ink and paper ready?

*Rat.* It is, my lord.

*K. Rich.* Bid my guard watch; leave me. About the mid of night, come to my tent, And help to arm me.—Leave me, I say.

[King RICHARD retires into his Tent. Exeunt RATCLIFF and CATESBY.

RICHMOND's Tent opens, and discovers him, and his officers, &c.

Enter STANLEY.

*Stan.* Fortune and victory sit on thy helm!

*Richm.* All comfort that the dark night can Be to thy person, noble father-in-law! [afford, Tell me, how fares our loving mother?

*Stan.* I, by attorney¶, bless thee from thy

mother, Who prays continually for Richmond's good!

So much for that.—The silent hours steal on, And flaky darkness breaks within the east.

In brief, for so the season bids us be, Prepare thy battle early in the morning;

And put thy fortune to the arbitrement Of bloody strokes, and mortal-staring war,

I, as I may, (that which I would I cannot,) With best advantage will deceive the time,

Appoint.

† Remains with.

‡ A watch-light.

§ Wood of the lances

|| Twilight.

¶ Deputation.



And aid thee in this doubtful shock of arms :  
But on thy side I may not be too forward,  
Lest, being seen, thy brother, tender George,  
Be executed in his father's sight!  
Farewell. The leisure and the fearful time  
Cuts off the ceremonious vows of love,  
And ample interchange of sweet discourse,  
Which so long sunder'd friends should dwell  
upon ;

God give us leisure for these rites of love!  
Once more, adieu :—Be valiant, and speed  
'well! [ment :

*Richm.* Good lords, conduct him to his regi-  
I'll strive with troubled thoughts to take a nap ;  
Lest leaden slumber peise\* me down to-mor-  
row,

When I should mount with wings of victory !  
Once more, good night, kind lords and gentle-  
men. [Exeunt Lords, &c., with STANLEY.  
O Thou! whose captain I account myself,  
Look on my forces with a gracious eye ;  
Put in their hands thy bruising-irons of wrath,  
That they may crush down with a heavy fall  
The usurping helmets of our adversaries!  
Make us thy ministers of chastisement,  
That we may praise thee in thy victory!  
To thee I do commend my watchful soul,  
Ere I let fall the windows of mine eyes ;  
Sleeping, and waking, O defend me still!  
[Sleeps.

*The Ghost of Prince EDWARD, son to HENRY  
the Sixth, rises between the two tents.*

*Ghost.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-  
morrow! [To King RICHARD.  
Think, how thou stabb'dst me in my prime of  
youth

At Tewksbury ; Despair therefore, and die!—  
Be cheerful, Richmond ; for the wronged souls  
Of butcher'd princes fight in thy behalf:  
King Henry's issue, Richmond, comforts thee.  
*The Ghost of King HENRY the Sixth rises.*

*Ghost.* When I was mortal, my anointed  
body [To King RICHARD.  
By thee was punched full of deadly holes :  
Think on the Tower, and me ; Despair and  
die ;

Harry the Sixth bids thee despair and die.—  
Virtuous and holy, be thou conqueror !  
[To RICHMOND.

Harry, that prophesy'd thou should'st be king,  
Doth comfort thee in thy sleep ; Live, and  
flourish !

*The Ghost of CLARENCE rises.*

*Ghost.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-  
morrow! [To King RICHARD.  
I, that was wash'd to death with fulsome wine,  
Poor Clarence, by thy guile betray'd to death!  
To-morrow in the battle think on me.

And fall thy edgeless sword ; Despair, and die!  
Thou offspring of the house of Lancaster,  
[To RICHMOND.

The wronged heirs of York do pray for thee ;  
Good angels guard thy battle! Live and  
flourish !

*The Ghosts of RIVERS, GREY, and  
VAUGHAN, rise.*

*Riv.* Let me sit heavy on thy soul to-mor-  
row, [To King RICHARD.

Rivers, that died at Pomfret! Despair and die!

*Grey.* Think upon Grey, and let thy soul  
despair! [To King RICHARD.

*Vaugh.* Think upon Vaughan ; and with  
guilty fear,

Let fall thy lance! Despair, and die!—  
[To King RICHARD.

*All.* Awake! and think our wrongs in  
Richard's bosom [To RICHMOND.

Will conquer him ;—awake, and win the day!

*The Ghost of HASTINGS rises.*

*Ghost.* Bloody and guilty, guiltily awake ;  
[To King RICHARD.

And in a bloody battle end thy days!  
Think on lord Hastings ; and despair, and die!

Quiet untroubled soul, awake, awake!  
[To RICHMOND.

Arm, fight, and conquer, for fair England's  
sake!

*The Ghosts of the two young Princes rise.*

*Ghosts.* Dream on thy cousins smother'd in  
the Tower ;

Let us be lead within thy bosom, Richard,  
And weigh thee down to ruin, shame, and  
death !

Thy nephews' souls bid thee despair, and die.  
Sleep, Richmond, sleep in peace, and wake  
in joy ;

Good angels guard thee from the boar's annoy !  
Live, and beget a happy race of kings!  
Edward's unhappy sons do bid thee flourish.

*The Ghost of Queen ANNE rises.*

*Ghost.* Richard, thy wife, that wretched  
Anne thy wife,

That never slept a quiet hour with thee,  
Now fills thy sleep with perturbations :  
To-morrow in the battle think on me,  
And fall thy edgeless sword ; Despair, and die!  
Thou, quiet soul, sleep thou a quiet sleep ;  
[To RICHMOND.

Dream of success and happy victory ;  
Thy adversary's wife doth pray for thee.

*The Ghost of BUCKINGHAM rises.*

*Ghost.* The first was I, that help'd thee to  
the crown ; [To King RICHARD.

The last was I that felt thy tyranny :  
O, in the battle think on Buckingham,  
And die in terror of thy guiltiness! [death.  
Dream on, dream on, of bloody deeds and  
Fainting, despair ; despairing, yield thy breath!  
I died for hope, ere I could lend thee aid :  
[To RICHMOND.

But cheer thy heart, and be thou not dis-  
may'd : [side ;

God, and good angels fight on Richmond's  
And Richard falls in height of all his pride.

[The Ghosts vanish. King RICHARD  
starts out of his dream. [my wounds,

*K. Rich.* Give me another horse,—bind up  
Have mercy, Jesu!—Soft ; I did but dream.

O coward conscience, how dost thou afflict me!

The lights burn blue.—It is now dead midnight.  
Cold fearful drops stand on my trembling flesh.

What do I fear? myself? there's none else by:  
Richard loves Richard; that is, I am I.  
Is there a murderer here? No;—Yes; I am:  
Then fly,—What, from myself? Great reason:  
Why?

Lest I revenge. What? Myself on myself?  
I love myself. Wherefore? for any good,  
That I myself have done unto myself?  
O, no: alas, I rather hate myself,  
For hateful deeds committed by myself.  
I am a villain: Yet I lie, I am not. [flatter.  
Fool, of thyself speak well:—Fool, do not  
My conscience hath a thousand several tongues,  
And every tongue brings in a several tale,  
And every tale condemns me for a villain.  
Perjury, perjury, in the highest degree;  
Murder, stern murder, in the direst degree;  
All several sins, all used in each degree,  
Throng to the bar, crying all,—Guilty! guilty!  
I shall despair. There is no creature loves me;  
And, if I die, no soul will pity me:— [self  
Nay, wherefore should they? since that I my-  
find in myself no pity to myself.  
Methought, the souls of all that I had murder'd  
Came to my tent: and every one did threat  
To-morrow's vengeance on the head of  
Richard.

Enter RATCLIFF.

Rat. My lord,—

K. Rich. Who's there?

Rat. Ratcliff, my lord; 'tis I. The early  
village cock

Hath twice done salutation to the morn;  
Your friends are up, and buckle on their ar-  
mour. [ful dream!

K. Rich. O, Ratcliff, I have dream'd a fear-  
What thinkest thou? will our friends prove all-  
Rat. No doubt, my lord. [true?

K. Rich. Ratcliff, I fear, I fear!

Rat. Nay, good my lord, be not afraid of  
shadows. [night

K. Rich. By the apostle Paul, shadows to-  
Have struck more terror to the soul of Richard,  
Than can the substance of ten thousand sol-  
diers, [mond.

Armed in proof, and led by shallow Rich-  
It is not yet near day. Come, go with me;  
Under our tents I'll play the eaves-dropper,  
To hear if any mean to shrink from me.

[Exeunt King RICHARD and RATCLIFF.

RICHMOND wakes. Enter OXFORD and  
Others.

Lords. Good morrow, Richmond.

Richm. 'Cry mercy, lords, and watchful  
gentlemen,

That you have ta'en a tardy sluggard here.

Lords. How have you slept, my lord?

Richm. The sweetest sleep, and fairest-  
boding dreams,

That ever enter'd in a drowsy head,  
Have I since your departure had, my lords.

Methought their souls, whose bodies Richard  
murder'd,

Came to my tent, and cried—On! victory!  
I promise you, my heart is very jocund  
In the remembrance of so fair a dream.

How far into the morning is it, lords?

Lords. Upon the stroke of four.

Richm. Why, then 'tis time to arm, and give  
direction. [He advances to the troops.

More than I have said, loving countrymen,  
The leisure and enforcement of the time  
Forbids to dwell on: Yet remember this,—  
God, and our good cause, fight upon our side;  
The prayers of holy saints, and wronged souls,  
Like high-rear'd bulwarks, stand before our  
faces;

Richard except, those whom we fight against  
Had rather have us win, than him they follow.  
For what is he they follow? truly, gentlemen,  
A bloody tyrant, and a homicide; [blish'd;  
One raised in blood, and one in blood esta-  
One that made means to come by what he  
hath, [help him;

And slaughtered those that were the means to  
A base foul stone, made precious by the foil  
Of England's chair\*, where he is falsely set;  
One that hath ever been God's enemy:

Then, if you fight against God's enemy,  
God will, in justice, ward you as his soldiers;  
If you do sweat to put a tyrant down,  
You sleep in peace, the tyrant being slain;  
If you do fight against your country's foes,  
Your country's fat shall pay your pains the hire;  
If you do fight in safeguard of your wives,  
Your wives shall welcome home the con-  
querors;

If you do free your children from the sword,  
Your children's children quit it in your age.  
Then, in the name of God, and all these rights,  
Advance your standards, draw your willing  
swords;

For me, the ransom of my bold attempt  
Shall be this cold corpse on the earth's cold  
But if I thrive, the gain of my attempt [face;  
The least of you shall share his part thereof.  
Sound, drums and trumpets, boldly and cheer-  
fully;

God, and Saint George! Richmond, and vic-  
tory! [Exeunt.

Re-enter King RICHARD, RATCLIFF, At-  
tendants, and Forces.

K. Rich. What said Northumberland, as  
touching Richmond?

Rat. That he was never trained up in arms

K. Rich. He said the truth: And what said  
Surrey then?

Rat. He smiled and said, the better for our  
purpose.

K. Rich. He was i'the right; and so, indeed,  
it is. [Clock strikes.

Tell the clock there.—Give me a calendar.—  
Who saw the sun to-day?

Rat. Not I, my lord.

K. Rich. Then he disdains to shine; for, by  
the book,  
He should have braved the east an hour ago.

\* Throne.

† Guard.

‡ Requite.

§ Made it splendid.

A black day will it be to somebody.

Ratcliffe, —

*Rat.* My lord?

*K. Rich.* The sun will not be seen to-day; The sky doth frown and lower upon our army: I would these angry tears were from the ground.

Not shine to-day! Why, what is that to me, More than to Richmond? for the self-same heaven,

That frowns on me, looks sadly upon him.

*Enter NORFOLK.*

*Nor.* Arm, arm, my lord; the foe vaunts in the field. [son my horse; —

*K. Rich.* Come, bustle, bustle; — Caparl- Call up lord Stanley, bid him bring his power: I will lead forth my soldiers to the plain, And thus my battle shall be ordered: — My forward shall be drawn out all in length, Consisting equally of horse and foot; Our archers shall be placed in the midst: John duke of Norfolk, Thomas earl of Surrey, Shall have the leading of this foot and horse. They thus directed, we ourself will follow In the main battle; whose puissance on either side

Shall be well-winged with our chiefest horse. This, and Saint George to boot! What think'st thou, Norfolk?

*Nor.* A good direction, warlike sovereign. This found I on my tent this morning.

[*Giving a scroll.*]

*K. Rich.* [reads.] *Jocky of Norfolk, be not too bold,*

*For Dickon\* thy master is bought and sold.* A thing devised by the enemy. —

Go, gentlemen, every man unto his charge: Let not our babbling dreams affright our souls; Conscience is but a word that cowards use, Devised at first to keep the strong in awe; Our strong arms be our conscience, swords our law.

March on, join bravely, let us to't pell-mell; If not to heaven, then hand in hand to hell. — What shall I say more than I have inferr'd? Remember whom you are to cope withal; — A sort of vagabonds, rascals, and run-aways, A scum of Bretagne, and base lackey peasants, Whom their o'er-cloyed country vomits forth To desperate ventures and assured destruction. You sleeping safe, they bring you to unrest; You having lands, and blessed with beauteous wives,

They would restrain the one, distain the other. And who doth lead them, but a paltry fellow, Long kept in Bretagne at our mother's cost? A milk-sop, one that never in his life Felt so much cold as over-shoes in snow? Let's whip these stragglers o'er the seas again; Lash hence these over-weening rags of France, These famish'd beggars, weary of their lives; Who, but for dreaming on this fond exploit, For want of means, poor rats, had hang'd themselves.

If we be conquer'd, let men conquer us, And not these bastard Bretagnes; whom our fathers [thump'd, Have in their own land beaten, bobb'd, and And, on record, left them the heirs of shame. Shall these enjoy our lands? lie with our wives? Ravish our daughters? — Hark, I hear their drum. [Drum afar off. Fight, gentlemen of England! fight, bold yeomen!

Draw, archers, draw your arrows to the head! Spur your proud horses hard, and ride in blood;

Amaze the welkin with your broken staves! ? *Enter a Messenger.*

What says lord Stanley? will he bring his power?

*Mess.* My lord, he doth deny to come.

*K. Rich.* Off instantly with his son George's head. [marsh;

*Nor.* My lord, the enemy is pass'd the After the battle let George Stanley die.

*K. Rich.* A thousand hearts are great within my bosom!

Advance our standards, set upon our foes; Our ancient word of courage, fair Saint George,

Inspire us with the spleen of fiery dragons! Upon them! Victory sits on our helms.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *Another part of the field.*

*Alarum: Excursions. Enter NORFOLK, and Forces; to him CATESBY.*

*Cate.* Rescue, my lord of Norfolk, rescue rescue!

The king enacts more wonders than a man, Daring an opposite to every danger; His horse is slain, and all on foot he fights, Seeking for Richmond in the throat of death. Rescue, fair lord, or else the day is lost!

*Alarum. Enter King RICHARD.*

*K. Rich.* A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse! [a horse.

*Cate.* Withdraw, my lord, I'll help you to *K. Richm.* Slave, I have set my life upon a And I will stand the hazard of the die! [cast, I think, there be six Richmonds in the field; Five have I slain to-day, instead of him: — A horse! a horse! my kingdom for a horse!

[*Exeunt.*]

*Alarums. Enter King RICHARD and RICHMOND; and exeunt fighting. Retreat, and flourish. Then enter RICHMOND, STANLEY, bearing the crown, with divers other Lords, and Forces.*

*Rich.* God, and your arms, be praised, victorious friends;

The day is ours, the bloody dog is dead.

*Stan.* Courageous Richmond, well hast thou acquit thee!

Lo, here, this long-usurped royalty, From the dead temples of this bloody wretch Have I pluck'd off, to grace thy brows withal. Wear it, enjoy it, and make much of it.

\* The ancient familiarization of Richard.

+ Company.

† Fight the skies with the shields of your lances.



*Richm.* Great God of heaven say, amen  
to all.  
But tell me first, is young George Stanley  
living? [town;  
*Stan.* He is, my lord, and safe in Leicester  
Whither, if it please you, we may now with-  
draw us. [either side?  
*Richm.* What men of name are slain on  
*Stan.* John duke of Norfolk, Walter lord  
Ferrers, [Brandon.  
Sir Robert Brakenbury, and sir William  
*Richm.* Inter their bodies as becomes their  
Proclaim a pardon to the soldiers fled, [births.  
That in submission will return to us;  
And then, as we have ta'en the sacrament,  
We will unite the white rose with the red:—  
Smile heaven upon this fair conjunction,  
That long hath frown'd upon their enmity!—  
What traitor hears me, and says not,—amen?  
England hath long been mad and scarr'd herself;  
The brother blindly shed the brother's blood,  
The father rashly slaughter'd his own son,  
The son, compeli'd, been butcher to the sire  
All this divided York and Lancaster,  
Divided, in their dire division.  
O, now, let Richmond and Elizabeth,  
The true succeeders of each royal house,  
By God's fair ordinance conjoin together!  
And let their heirs (God, if thy will be so)  
Enrich the time to come with smooth-faced  
peace,  
With smiling plenty, and fair prosperous days!  
Abate the edge of traitors, gracious Lord,  
That would reduce these bloody days again,  
And make poor England weep in streams of  
blood!  
Let them not live to taste this land's increase,  
That would with treason wound this fair land's  
peace! [again;  
Now civil wounds are stopp'd, peace lives  
That she may long live here, God say—Amen.  
[Exeunt.

---

This is the most celebrated of our author's performances; yet I know not whether it  
has not nay ~~as~~ to him as to others, to be praised most, when praise is not most deserved.  
That this p. has scenes noble in themselves, and very well contrived to strike in the exhi-  
bition, can not be denied. But some parts are trifling, others shocking, and some improbable  
—JOHNSON.

# KING HENRY VIII.

## Persons represented.

King HENRY the EIGHTH.  
 Cardinal WOLSEY. Cardinal CAMPEIUS.  
 CAPUCIUS, ambassador from the Emperor  
*Charles V.*  
 GRANMER, Archbishop of Canterbury.  
 Duke of NORFOLK. Duke of BUCKINGHAM.  
 Duke of SUFFOLK. Earl of SURREY.  
 Lord Chamberlain. Lord Chancellor.  
 GARDINER, Bishop of Winchester.  
 Bishop of Lincoln. Lord ABERGAVENNY.  
 Lord SANDS.  
 Sir HENRY GUILDFORD. Sir THOMAS LO-  
 VELL.  
 Sir ANTHONY DENNY. Sir NICHOLAS  
 VAUX.  
 Secretaries to Wolsey.  
 CROMWELL, servant to Wolsey.  
 GRIFFITH, gentleman-usher to Queen Ka-  
 tharine.  
 Three other Gentlemen.  
 Doctor BUTTS, physician to the King.

GARTER, king at arms.  
 Surveyor to the Duke of Buckingham.  
 BRANDON, and a Sergeant at Arms.  
 Door-keeper of the Council-chamber. Por-  
 ter, and his Man.  
 Page to Gardiner. A Crier.  
 Queen KATHARINE, wife to King Henry,  
*afterwards divorced.*  
 ANNE BULLEN, her maid of honour, after-  
 wards Queen.  
 An old Lady, friend to Anne Bullen.  
 PATIENCE, woman to Queen Katharine.  
 Several Lords and Ladies in the dumb  
 shows; Women attending upon the  
 Queen; Spirits which appear to her;  
 Scribes, Officers, Guards, and other  
 Attendants.  
 Scene,—chiefly in London and Westmin-  
 ster; once at Kimbolton.

## PROLOGUE.

I COME no more to make you laugh;  
 things now,  
 That bear a weighty and a serious brow,  
 Sad, high, and working, full of state and woe,  
 Such noble scenes as draw the eye to flow,  
 We now present. Those that can pity, here  
 May, if they think it well, let fall a tear;  
 The subject will deserve it. Such as give  
 Their money out of hope they may believe,  
 May here find truth too. Those that come to  
 see  
 Only a show or two, and so agree  
 The play may pass, if they be still, and willing,  
 I'll undertake, may see away their shilling  
 Richly in two short hours. Only they,  
 That come to hear a merry, bawdy play,  
 A noise of targets; or to see a fellow  
 In a long motley coat, guarded \* with yellow,

Will be deceived: for, gentle hearers, know,  
 To rank our chosen truth with such a show  
 As fool and fight is, beside forfeiting  
 Our own brains, and the opinion that we bring,  
 (To make that only true we now intend,)  
 Will leave us never an understanding friend.  
 Therefore, for goodness' sake, and as you are  
 known  
 The first and happiest hearers of the town,  
 Be sad as we would make ye: Think, ye see  
 The very persons of our noble history,  
 As they were living; think, you see them great,  
 And follow'd with the general throng, and  
 sweat  
 Of thousand friends; then, in a moment, see  
 How soon this mightiness meets misery!  
 And, if you can be merry then, I'll say,  
 A man may weep upon his wedding-day.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. London. *An Antechamber in  
 the Palace.*

*Enter the Duke of NORFOLK, at one door;  
 at the other, the Duke of BUCKINGHAM,  
 and the Lord ABERGAVENNY.*

Buck. Good morrow, and well met. How  
 Since last we saw in France? [have you done,  
 Nor. I thank your grace,  
 Healthful: as ever since a fresh admirer  
 Of what I saw there.

Buck. An untimely agree

Stay'd me a prisoner in my chamber, when  
 Those suns of glory, those two lights of men †,  
 Met in the vale of Arde.

Nor. 'Twixt Gaynes and Arde:  
 I was then present, saw them salute on horse-  
 back;  
 Beheld them, when they lighted, how they  
 In their embracement, as they grew together;  
 Which had they, what four throned ones could  
 Such a compounded one? [have weigh'd

Buck. All the whole time  
 I was my chamber's prisoner.

\* Laced.

† Pretend.

‡ Henry VIII and Francis I. king of France.

*Nor.* Then you lost  
The view of earthly glory : Men might say,  
Till this time, Pomp was single ; but now  
married

To one above itself. Each following day  
Became the next day's master, till the last  
Made former wonders its. To-day, the French,  
All clinquant \*, all in gold, like heathen gods,  
Shone down the English : and, to-morrow, they  
Made Britain, India ; every man that stood  
Show'd like a mine : their dwarfish pages  
As cherubims, all gilt : the madams too, [were  
Not used to toil, did almost sweat to bear  
The pride upon them, that their very labour  
Was to them as a painting. Now this mask  
Was cry'd incomparable ; and the ensuing  
night

Made it a fool, and beggar. The two kings  
Equal in lustre, were now best, now worst,  
As presence did present them ; him in eye,  
Still him in praise : and, being present both,  
'Twas said they saw but one ; and no discernor  
Durst wag his tongue in censure †. When these  
suns [challenged  
(For so they phrase them) by their heralds  
The noble spirits to arms, they did perform  
Beyond thought's compass ; that former fabu-  
lous story,  
Being now seen possible enough, got credit—  
That Bevis ‡ was believed.

*Buck.* O, you go far.  
*Nor.* As I belong to worship, and affect  
In honour honesty, the tract of every thing  
Would by a good discourser lose some life,  
Which action's self was tongue to. All was  
To the disposing of it nought rebell'd, [royal ;  
Order gave each thing view ; the office did  
Distinctly his full function.

*Buck.* Who did guide,  
I mean, who set the body and the limbs  
Of this great sport together, as you guess ?  
*Nor.* One, certes §, that promises no ele-  
in such a business. [ment ||

*Buck.* I pray you, who, my lord ?  
*Nor.* All this was order'd by the good dis-  
Of the right reverend cardinal of York. [cretion

*Buck.* The devil speed him ! no man's pie  
is freed  
From his ambitions finger. What had he  
To do in these fierce ¶ vanities ? I wonder  
That such a keech \*\* can with his very bulk  
Take up the rays o' the beneficial sun,  
And keep it from the earth.

*Nor.* Surely, sir,  
There's in him stuff that puts him to these ends :  
For, being not propp'd by ancestry, (whose  
grace  
Chalks successors their way,) nor call'd upon  
For high feats done to the crown ; neither al-  
to eminent assistants, but, spider-like, [lied  
Out of his self-drawing web, he gives us note  
The force of his own merit makes his way ;  
A gift that heaven gives for him, which buys

A place next to the king.

*Aber.* I cannot tell  
What heaven hath given him, let some grave  
Pierce into that ; but I can see his pride [eye  
Peep through each part of him : Whence has  
If not from hell, the devil is a niggard ; [he that ?  
Or has given all before, and he begins  
A new hell in himself.

*Buck.* Why the devil,  
Upon this French going-out, took he upon him.  
Without the privy o' the king, to appoint  
Who should attend on him ? He makes up  
the file ††

Of all the gentry ; for the most part such  
Too, whom as great a charge as little honour  
He meant to lay upon : and his own letter ‡‡,  
The honourable board of council out,  
Must fetch him in the papers.

*Aber.* I do know  
Kinsmen of mine, three at the least, that have  
By this so sicken'd their estates, that never  
They shall abound as formerly.

*Buck.* O, many [them  
Have broke their backs with laying manors on  
For this great journey. What did this vanity,  
But minister communication of  
A most poor issue ?

*Nor.* Grievingly I think, [values  
The peace between the French and us not  
The cost that did conclude it.

*Buck.* Every man,  
After the hideous storm that follow'd, was  
A thing inspired : and, not consulting, broke  
Into a general prophecy,—That this tempest,  
Dashing the garment of this peace, aboded  
The sudden breach on't.

*Nor.* Which is budded out ;  
For France hath flaw'd the league, and hath  
Our merchants' goods at Bourdeaux. [attach'd

*Aber.* Is it therefore  
The ambassador is silenced ?

*Nor.* Marry, is't.  
*Aber.* A proper title of a peace ; and pur  
At a superfluous rate ! [chased

*Buck.* Why, all this business  
Our reverend cardinal carried §§.

*Nor.* 'Like it your grace,  
The state takes notice of the private difference  
Betwixt you and the cardinal. I advise you,  
(And take it from a heart that wishes towards  
you

Honour and plenteous safety,) that you read  
The cardinal's malice, and his potency  
Together : to consider further, that  
What his high hatred would effect wants not  
A minister in his power : You know his nature,  
That he's revengeful ; and I know, his sword  
Hath a sharp edge : it's long, and, it may be  
said,

It reaches far ; and where 'twill not extend,  
Thither he darts it. Bosom up my counsel,  
You'll find it wholesome. Lo, where comes  
That I advise your shunning. [that rock

\* Glittering, shining.

† In opinion, which was most noble.

‡ Sir Bevis, an old romance.

§ Certainly.

|| Practice.

¶ Proud.

\*\* Lump of fat.

†† List.

‡‡ Sets down in his letter without consulting the council

§§ Conducted.



*Enter Cardinal WOLSEY, (the purse borne before him,) certain of the guard, and two Secretaries with papers. The Cardinal in his passage fixeth his eye on BUCKINGHAM, and BUCKINGHAM on him, both full of disdain.*

*Wol.* The duke of Buckingham's surveyor?  
Where's his examination? [ha?

*1 Secr.* Here, so please you.

*Wol.* Is he in person ready?

*1 Secr.* Ay, please your grace.

*Wol.* Well, we shall then know more; and shall lessen this big look. [Buckingham

[*Exeunt WOLSEY, and Train.*

*Buck.* This butcher's cur\* is venom-mouth'd, and I [best

Have not the power to muzzle him; therefore, Not wake him in his slumber. A beggar's Out-worths a noble's blood. [book

*Nor.* What, are you chafed?

Ask God for temperance; that's the appliance Which your disease requires. [only,

*Buck.* I read in his looks

Matter against me; and his eye reviled

Me, as his object: at this instant

He borest me with some trick: He's gone to I'll follow, and out-stare him. [the king;

*Nor.* Stay, my lord,

And let your reason with your choler question What 'tis you go about: To climb steep hills,

Requires slow pace at first: Anger is like

A full-hot horse; who being allow'd his way,

Self-mettle tires him. Not a man in England

Can advise me like you: be to yourself As you would to your friend.

*Buck.* I'll to the king;

And from a month of honour quite cry down This Ipswich fellow's insolence; or proclaim,

There's difference in no persons.

*Nor.* Be advised;

Heat not a furnace for your foe so hot

That it do singe yourself: We may outrun, By violent swiftness, that which we run at,

And lose by over-running. Know you not,

The fire that mounts the liquor till it run o'r,

In seeming to augment it, wastes it? Be ad-

I say again, there is no English soul [vised:

More stronger to direct you than yourself;

If with the sap of reason you would quench,

Or but allay, the fire of passion.

*Buck.* Sir,

I am thankful to you; and I'll go along [low,

By your prescription:—but this top-proud fel-

(Whom from the flow of gall I name not, but

From sincere motions,) by intelligence,

And proofs as clear as founts in July, when

We see each grain of gravel, I do know

To be corrupt and treasonous.

*Nor.* Say not treasonous.

*Buck.* To the king I'll say't; and make my vouch as strong

As shore of rock. Attend. This holy fox,

Or wolf, or both, (for he is equal ravenous,

As he is subtle; and as prone to mischief,

As able to perform it: his mind and place

Infecting one another, yea, reciprocally.)

Only to show his pomp as well in France As here at home, suggests; the king our master To this last costly treaty, the interview, [glass That swallow'd so much treasure, and like a Did break i' the rinsing.

*Nor.*

'Faith, and so it did.

*Buck.* Pray, give me favour, sir. This cunning cardinal

The articles o'the combination drew,

As himself pleased; and they were ratified,

As he cried, Thus let be: to as much end,

As give a crutch to the dead: But our count-cardinal [sey,

Has done this, and 'tis well; for worthy Wol-

Who cannot err, he did it. Now this follows,

(Which, as I take it, is a kind of puppy

To the old dam, treason,) Charles the emperor,

Under pretence to see the queen his aunt,

(For 'twas, indeed, his colour; but he came

To whisper Wolsey,) here makes visitation:

His fears were, that the interview betwixt

England and France might, through their

amity,

Breed him some prejudice; for from this league

Peep'd harms that menaced him: He privily

Deals with our cardinal; and, as I trow,

Which I do well—for, I am sure, the emperor

Paid ere he promised, whereby his suit was

granted

Ere it was ask'd; but when the way was made,

And paved with gold, the emperor thus desired;

That he would please to alter the king's course,

And break the foresaid peace. Let the king

know,

(As soon he shall by me,) that thus the cardinal

Does buy and sell his honour as he pleases,

And for his own advantage.

*Nor.*

I am sorry

To hear this of him; and could wish, he were

Something mistaken in't.

*Buck.*

No, not a syllable;

I do pronounce him in that very shape

He shall appear in proof.

*Enter BRANDON; a Sergeant at Arms before*

*him, and two or three of the Guard.*

*Bran.* Your office, sergeant; execute it.

*Serg.*

Sir,

My lord the duke of Buckingham, and earl

Of Hereford, Stafford, and Northampton, I

Arrest thee of high treason in the name

Of our most sovereign king.

*Buck.*

Lo you, my lord,

The net has fall'n upon me; I shall perish

Under device and practice.

*Bran.*

I am sorry

To see you ta'en from liberty, to look on

The business present: 'Tis his highness' pleasure

You shall to the Tower.

*Buck.*

It will help me nothing,

To plead mine innocence; for that dye is on me,

Which makes my whitest part black. The

will of heaven

Be done in this and all things!—I obey.—

O my lord Abergavenny, fare you well.

*Bran.* Nay, he must bear you company:—

The king

[*To ABERGAVENNY.*

\* Wolsey was the son of a butcher

Stabs.

† Excites

§ Unfair stratagem.

Is please I, you shall to the Tower, till you  
flow he determines further. [know]

*Aber.* As the duke said,  
The will of heaven be done, and the king's  
By me obey'd. [please]

*Bran.* Here is a warrant from [bodies  
The king, to attach lord Montacute; and the  
Of the duke's confessor, John de la Court,  
One Gilbert Peck, his chancellor,—

*Buck.* So, so;  
These are the limbs of the plot: no more, I

*Bran.* A monk o' the Chartreux. [hope.]

*Buck.* O, Nicholas Hopkins?

*Bran.* He.

*Buck.* My surveyor is false; the o'er-great  
cardinal [ready:]

Hath show'd him gold: my life is spann'd \* al-  
I am the shadow of poor Buckingham;  
Whose figure even this instant cloud puts on,  
By dark'ning my clear sun.—My lord, fare-  
well. [Ereunt.]

#### SCENE II. The Council-Chamber.

*Cornels.* Enter King HENRY, Cardinal  
WOLSEY, the Lords of the Council, Sir  
THOMAS LOVELL, Officers, and Atten-  
dants. The King enters, leaning on the  
Cardinal's shoulder.

*K. Hen.* My life itself, and the best heart  
of it, [level]

Thanks you for this great care: I stood i' the  
Of a full-charged confederacy, and give thanks  
To you that choked it.—Let be call'd before us  
That gentleman of Buckingham's: in person  
I'll hear him his confessions justify;  
And point by point the treasons of his master  
He shall again relate.

The King takes his state. The Lords of  
the Council take their several places.

The Cardinal places himself under the  
King's feet, on his right side.

A noise within, crying, Room for the Queen.  
Enter the Queen, ushered by the Dukes of  
NORFOLK and SUFFOLK: she kneels. The  
King riseth from his state, takes her up,  
kisses, and placeth her by him.

*Q. Kath.* Nay, we must longer kneel; I am  
a suitor. [Half your suit]

*K. Hen.* Arise, and take place by us:—  
Never name to us; you have half our power:  
The other moiety, ere you ask, is given;  
Repeat your will, and take it.

*Q. Kath.* Thank your majesty.  
That you would love yourself; and, in that  
Not unconsider'd leave your honour, nor [love,  
The dignity of your office, is the point  
Of my petition.

*K. Hen.* Lady mine, proceed.

*Q. Kath.* I am solicited, not by a few,  
And those of true condition, that your subjects  
Are in great grievance: there have been com-  
missions [heart  
Sent down among them, which hath flaw'd the  
Of all their loyalties:—wherein although,  
My good lord cardinal, they vent reproaches  
Most bitterly on you, as putter-on

Of these exactions, yet the king our master,  
(Whose honour heaven shield from soil!) even  
he escapes not

Language unmannerly, yea, such which breaks  
The sides of loyalty, and almost appears  
In loud rebellion.

*Nor.* Not almost appears,  
It doth appear; for, upon these taxations,  
The clothiers all, not able to maintain  
The many to them 'longing, have put off  
The spinsters, carders, fullers, weavers, who,  
Unfit for other life, compell'd by hunger  
And lack of other means, in desperate manner  
Daring the event to the teeth, are all in uproar,  
And danger serves among them.

*K. Hen.* Taxation!  
Wherein? and what taxation?—My lord car-  
You that are blamed for it alike with us, [dinal,  
Know you of this taxation?

*Wol.* Please you, sir,  
I know but of a single part, in aught  
Pertains to the state; and front but in that file †  
Where others tell steps with me.

*Q. Kath.* No, my lord,  
You know no more than others, but y u frame  
Things, that are known alike; which are not  
wholesome [must]

To those which would not know them, and yet  
Perforce be their acquaintance. These exac-  
tions, [are]

Whereof my sovereign would have note, they  
Most pestilent to the healing; and, to bear them,  
The back is sacrifice to the load. They say  
They are devised by you; or else you suffer  
Too hard an exclamation.

*K. Hen.* Still exaction!  
The nature of it? In what kind, let's know,  
Is this exaction?

*Q. Kath.* I am much too venturous  
In tempting of your patience; but am bolden'd  
Under your promised pardon. The subject's  
grief [from each]

Comes through commissions, which compel  
The sixth part of his substance, to be levied  
Without delay; and the pretence for this  
Is named, your wars in France: This makes  
bold months: [freeze]

Tongues spit their duties out, and cold hearts  
Allegiance in them; their curses now  
Live where their prayers did; and it's come  
That tractable obedience is a slave [to pass-  
To each incensed will. I would your highness  
Would give it quick consideration, for  
There is no primer business.

*K. Hen.* By my life,  
This is against our pleasure.

*Wol.* And for me  
I have no farther gone in this, than by  
A single voice; and that not pass'd me, but  
By learned approbation of the judges.  
If I am traduced by tongues, which neither  
My faculties, nor person, yet will be [know  
The chronicles of my doing,—let me say,  
'Tis but the fate of place, and the rough brake ‡  
That virtue must go through. We must not stint ¶

\* Measured.

† Chair.

‡ I am only one among the other counsellors.

§ Thicket of thorns.

¶ Retard.

Our necessary actions, in the fear  
To cope \* malicious censurers; which ever,  
As ravenous fishes, do a vessel follow  
That is new trimm'd; but benefit no further  
Than vainly longing. What we oft do best,  
By sick interpreters, once† weak ones, is  
Not ours, or not allow'd‡: what worst, as oft,  
Hitting a grosser quality, is cried up  
For our best act. If we shall stand still,  
In fear our motion will be mock'd or  
carp'd at,

We should take root here where we sit, or sit  
State statues only.

*K. Hen.* Things done well,  
And with a care, exempt themselves from fear;  
Things done without example, in their issue  
Are to be fear'd. Have you a precedent  
Of this commission? I believe, not any.  
We must not rend our subjects from our laws,  
And stick them in our will. Sixth part of each?  
A trembling contribution! Why, we take,  
From every tree, lop, bark, and part o' the  
timber; [hack'd,  
And, though we leave it with a root, thus  
The air will drink the sap. To every county,  
Where this is question'd, send our letters, with  
Free pardon to each man that has denied  
The force of this commission: Pray, look to't;  
I put it to your care.

*Wol.* A word with you.  
[To the Secretary.

Let there be letters writ to every shire,  
Of the king's grace and pardon. The griev'd  
commons

Hardly conceive of me: let it be noised,  
That, through our intercession, this revokement  
And pardon comes; I shall anon advise you  
Further in the proceeding. [Exit Secretary.

*Enter Surveyor.*

*Q. Kath.* I am sorry, that the duke of Buck-  
Is in your displeasure. [ingham

*K. Hen.* It grieves many:  
The gentleman is learn'd, and a most rare  
speaker, [such,

To nature none more bound; his training  
That he may furnish and instruct great teachers,  
And never seek for aid out of himself.

Yet see  
When these so noble benefits shall prove  
Not well disposed, the mind growing once  
corrupt, [ugly

They turn to vicious forms, ten times more  
Than ever they were fair. This man so com-  
plete, [when we,

Who was enroll'd 'mongst wonders, and  
Almost with ravish'd list'ning, could not find  
His hour of speech a minute; he, my lady,  
Hath into monstrous habits put the graces  
That once were his, and is become as black  
As if besnear'd in hell. Sit by us; you shall hear  
(This was his gentleman in trust,) of him  
'Things to strike honour sad.—Bid him recount  
The fore-recited practices; whereof  
We cannot feel too little, hear too much.

*Wol.* Stand forth; and with bold spirit  
relate what you,

Most like a careful subject, have collected  
Out of the Duke of Buckingham.

*K. Hen.*

Speak freely.

*Surv.* First, it was usual with him, every  
day

It would infect his speech, That if the king  
Should without issue die, he'd carry || it so  
To make the sceptre his: These very words  
I have heard him utter to his son-in-law,  
Lord Abergavny; to whom by oath he menaced  
Revenge upon the cardinal.

*Wol.*

Please your highness, note

This dangerous conception in this point.  
Not friended by his wish, to your high person  
His will is most malignant; and it stretches  
Beyond you, to your friends.

*Q. Kath.* My learn'd lord cardinal,  
Deliver all with clarity.

*K. Hen.*

Speak on:

How grounded he his title to the crown,  
Upon our fail? to this point hast thou heard  
At any time speak aught? [him

*Surv.*

He was brought to this

By a vain prophecy of Nicholas Hopkins.

*K. Hen.* What was that Hopkins?

*Surv.*

Sir, a Chartreux friar,

His confessor; who fed him every minute  
With words of sovereignty.

*K. Hen.*

How know'st thou this?

*Surv.* Not long before your highness sped  
to France,

The duke being at the Rose†, within the parish  
Saint Lawrence Poultney, did of me demand  
What was the speech amongst the Londoners  
Concerning the French journey: I replied,  
Men fear'd, the French would prove pernicious,  
To the king's danger. Presently the duke  
Said, 'Twas the fear, indeed; and that he  
doubted,

'Twould prove the verity of certain words  
Spoke by a holy monk; That oft, says he,  
Hath sent to me, wishing me to permit  
John de la Court, my chaplain, a choice hour  
To hear from him a matter of some moment;  
Whom after under the confession's seal  
He solemnly had sworn, that, what he spoke,  
My chaplain to no creature living, but  
To me, should utter, with demure confidence  
This pausing ensued,—Neither the king,  
nor his heirs, [strive  
(Tell you the duke) shall prosper: bid him  
To gain the love of the commonalty; the duke  
Shall govern England.

*Q. Kath.*

If I know you well,

You were the duke's surveyor, and lost your  
office [heed,

On the complaint o' the tenants: Take good  
You charge not in your spleen a noble person,  
And spoil your nobler soul! I say, take heed;  
Yes, heartily beseech you.

*K. Hen.*

Let him on:—

Go forward.

*Surv.*

On my soul, I'll speak but truth.  
I told my lord the duke, By the devil's influ-  
sions [dangerous for him  
The monk might be deceived; and that 'twas

\* Encounter. † Sometime. ‡ Approved. § Beyond. || Conduct, manage.  
Now Merchant Tailors' School.



To ruminate on this so far, until  
It forged him some design, which, being be-  
lieved,

It was much like to do: He answer'd, *Tush!*  
*It can do me no damage:* adding further,  
That, had the king in his last sickness fail'd,  
The cardinal's and sir Thomas Lovell's heads  
Should have gone off.

*K. Hen.* Hal what, so rank? Ah, hal  
There's mischief in this man:—Canst thou  
*Surv.* I can, my liege. [say further?

*K. Hen.* Proceed. Being at Greenwich,  
*Surv.* After your highness had reproved the duke  
About sir William Blomer,—

*K. Hen.* I remember,  
Of such a time:—Being my servant sworn,  
The duke retain'd him his.—But on;  
What hence? [committed,

*Surv.* If, quoth he, *I for this had been*  
*As to the Tower, I thought,—I would have*  
*play'd*

*The part my father meant to act upon*  
*The usurper Richard: who, being at Salis-*  
*bury,* [granted,  
*Made suit to come in his presence; which if*  
*As he made semblance of his duty, would*  
*Have put his knife into him.*

*K. Hen.* A giant traitor!  
*Wol.* Now, madam, may his highness live  
And this man out of prison? [in freedom.

*Q. Kath.* God mend all!

*K. Hen.* There's something more would out  
of thee; What say'st?

*Surv.* After—the duke his father,—with  
*the knife,*— [dagger,  
He stretch'd him, and, with one hand on his  
Another spread on his breast, mouting his  
eyes, [mour

He did discharge a horrible oath; whose te-  
was,—Were he evil used, he would out-go  
His father, by as much as a performance  
Does an irresolute purpose.

*K. Hen.* There's his period,  
To sheath his knife in us. He is attach'd;  
Call him to present trial: if he may  
Find mercy in the law, 'tis his; if none,  
Let him not seek't of us: By day and night,  
He's traitor to the height. [Exeunt.

### SCENE III. A Room in the Palace.

Enter the Lord Chamberlain and Lord  
SANDS.

*Cham.* Is it possible, the spells of France  
should juggle  
Men into such strange mysteries?

*Sands.* New customs,  
Though they be never so ridiculous,  
Nay, let them be unmanly, yet are follow'd.

*Cham.* As far as I see, all the good our English  
Have got by the late voyage, is but merely  
A fit\* or two o' the face; but they are shrewd  
ones; [directly,

For when they hold them, you would swear  
Their very noses had been counsellors  
To Pepin, or Clotharius, they keep state so.

*Sands.* They have all new legs, and lame  
ones; one would take it.

That never saw them pace before, the spavin,  
A springhalt† reigu'd among them.

*Cham.* Death! my lord,

Their clothes are after such a pagan cut too,  
That, sure, they have worn out christendom.  
What news, sir Thomas Lovell? [How now?

Enter Sir THOMAS LOVELL.

*Lov.* 'Faith, my lord,  
I hear of none, but the new proclamation  
That's clapp'd upon the court-gate.

*Cham.* What is't for?

*Lov.* The reformation of our travell'd gal-  
lants, [tailors.

That fill the court with quarrels, talk, and  
*Cham.* I am glad, 'tis there; now I would  
pray our monsieurs

To think an English courtier may be wise,  
And never see the Louvre‡.

*Lov.* They must either  
(For so run the conditions,) leave these rem-  
nants

Of fool, and feather, that they got in France,  
With all their honourable points of ignorance,  
Pertaining thereunto, (as fights, and fireworks;  
Abusing better men than they can be,  
Out of a foreign wisdom,) renouncing clean  
The faith they have in tennis, and tall stock-  
ings, [trave],

Short blister'd breeches, and those types of  
And understand again like honest men;  
Or pack to their old playfellows: there, I take  
They may, *cum privilegio*§, wear away [it,  
The lag end of their lewdness, and be laugh'd  
at. [diseases

*Sands.* 'Tis time to give them physic, their  
Are grown so catching.

*Cham.* What a loss our ladies  
Will have of these trim vanities!

*Lov.* Ay, marry, [son-  
There will be woe indeed, lords; the sly who-  
Have got a speeding trick to lay down ladies;  
A French song, and a fiddle, has no fellow.

*Sands.* The devil fiddle them! I am glad  
they're going;

(For, sure, there's no converting of them;) now  
An honest country lord, as I am, beaten  
A long time out of play, may bring his plain  
song,

And have an hour of hearing; and, by'r-lady,  
Held current music too.

*Cham.* Well said, lord Sands;  
Your colt's tooth is not cast yet.

*Sands.* No, my lord;  
Nor shall not, while I have a stump.

*Cham.* Sir Thomas,  
Whither were you a going?

*Lov.* To the cardinal's;  
Your lordship is a guest too.

*Cham.* O, 'tis true:  
This night he makes a supper, and a great one,  
To many lords and ladies; there will be  
The beauty of this kingdom, I'll assure you.

*Lov.* That churchman bears a bounteous  
mind indeed,

\* Grimace.

† Disease incident to horses.

‡ A palace at Paris.

§ With authority.

A hand as fruitful as the land that feeds us ;  
His dews fall every where.

*Cham.* No doubt, he's noble ;  
He had a black mouth, that said other of him.

*Sands.* He may, my lord, he has wherewith-  
al ; in him, [trine]

Sparing would show a worse sin than ill doc-  
Men of his way should be most liberal,  
They are set here for examples.

*Cham.* True, they are so ;  
But few now give so great ones. My barge  
stays \* ; [Thomas,

Your lordship shall along :—Come, good sir  
We shall be late else ; which I would not be,  
For I was spoke to, with sir Henry Guildford,  
This night to be comptrollers.

*Sands.* I am your lordship's.  
[Exeunt.]

SCENE IV. *The Presence-Chamber in  
York-Place.*

*Hautboys.* A small table under a state for  
the Cardinal, a longer table for the guests.  
*Enter at one door ANNE BULLEN, and  
divers Lords, Ladies, and Gentlewomen,  
as guests ; at another door, enter Sir  
HENRY GUILDFORD.*

*Guild.* Ladies, a general welcome from his  
Salutes ye all : This night he dedicates [grace  
To fair content, and you : none here, he hopes,  
In all this noble bevy †, has brought with her  
One care abroad ; he would have all as merry  
As first-good company, good wine, good wel-  
come, [are tardy ;  
Can make good people.—O, my lord, you  
*Enter Lord Chamberlain, Lord SANDS, and  
Sir THOMAS LOVELL.*

The very thought of this fair company  
Clapp'd wings to me.

*Cham.* You are young, sir Harry Guildford.

*Sand.* Sir Thomas Lovell, had the cardinal  
But half my lay-thoughts in him, some of  
these [ed.]

Should find a running banquet ere they rest-  
I think, would better please them : By my life,  
They are a sweet society of fair ones.

*Lov.* O, that your lordship were but now  
To one or two of these ! [confessor]

*Sands.* I would, I were ;  
They should find easy penance.

*Lov.* Faith, how easy ?

*Sands.* As easy as a down-bed would afford  
it. [Sir Harry,

*Cham.* Sweet ladies, will it please you sit ?  
Place you that side, I'll take the charge of this :  
His grace is entr'ing.—Nay, you must not  
freeze ; [ther :—

Two women placed together makes cold wea-  
My lord Sands, you are one will keep them  
Pray, sit between these ladies. [waking ;

*Sands.* By my faith,  
I ad thank your lordship.—By your leave,  
sweet ladies :

[Seats himself between ANNE BULLEN  
and another Lady.]

If I chance to talk a little wild, forgive me ;  
I had it from my father.

*Anne.* Was he mad, sir ? [too .  
*Sands.* O very mad, exceeding mad, in love  
But he would bite none ; just as I do now,  
He would kiss you twenty with a breath.

[Kisses her.  
*Cham.* Well said, my lord.—  
So, now you are fairly seated :—Gentlemen,  
The penance lies on you, if these fair ladies  
Pass away frowning.

*Sands.* For my little cure,  
Let me alone.

*Hautboys.* *Enter Cardinal WOLSEY, at-  
tended, and takes his state†.*

*Wol.* You are welcome, my fair guests ; that  
noble lady,

Or gentleman, that is not freely merry, [come ;  
Is not my friend : This, to confirm my wel-  
And to you all good health. [Drinks.]

*Sands.* Your grace is noble ;—  
Let me have such a bowl may hold my thanks,  
And save me so much talking.

*Wol.* My lord Sands,  
I am beholden to you : cheer your neighbours.—  
Ladies, you are not merry ;—Gentlemen,  
Whose fault is this ?

*Sands.* The red wine first must rise  
In their fair cheeks, my lord ; then we shall  
have them  
Talk us to silence.

*Anne.* You are a merry gamester  
My lord Sands.

*Sands.* Yes, if I make my play §.  
Here's to your ladyship ; and pledge it, madam,  
For 'tis to such a thing,—

*Anne.* You cannot show me. [anon.  
*Sands.* I told your grace, they would talk  
[Drum and Trumpets within : Cham-  
bers || discharged.]

*Wol.* What's that ?  
*Cham.* Look out there, some of you.

[Exit a Servant.]

*Wol.* What warlike voice ?  
And to what end is this ?—Nay, ladies, fear  
By all the laws of war you are privileged. [not ;  
*Re-enter Servant.*

*Cham.* How now ? what is't ?

*Serv.* A noble troop of strangers ;  
For so they seem : they have left their barge,  
and landed ;  
And hither make, as great ambassadors  
From foreign princes.

*Wol.* Good lord chamberlain,  
Go, give them welcome, you can speak the  
French tongue ; [them

And, pray, receive them nobly, and conduct  
Into our presence, where this heaven of beauty  
Shall shine at full upon them : Some attend him.

[Exit Chamberlain, attended. All arise,  
and Tables removed.]

You have now a broken banquet, but we'll  
mend it.

A good digestion to you all ; and, once more,  
I shower a welcome on you ;—Welcome all.

\* The speaker is at Bridewell, and the cardinal's house was at Whitehall.

† Chair.

§ Choose my gain.

|| Small cannon.

† Company

*Hautboys. Enter the King, and twelve Others, as Maskers, habited like Shepherds, with sixteen Torch-bearers; usher'd by the Lord Chamberlain. They pass directly before the Cardinal, and gracefully salute him.*

A noble company! what are their pleasures?

*Cham.* Because they speak no English, thus they pray'd

To tell your grace;—That, having heard by Of this so noble and so fair assembly, This night to meet here, they could do no less, Out of the great respect they bear to beauty, But leave their flocks; and, under your fair conduct,

Crave leave to view these ladies, and entreat An hour of revels with them.

*Wol.* Say, lord chamberlain, They have done my poor house grace; for which I pay them

A thousand thanks, and pray them take their pleasures.

*[Ladies chosen for the dance. The King chooses ANN BULLEN.]*

*K. Hen.* The fairest hand I ever touch'd! O, beauty,

Till now I never knew thee. *[Music. Dance.]*

*Wol.* My lord, —

*Cham.* Your grace?

*Wol.* Pray, tell them thus much from me: There should be one amongst them, by his person,

More worthy this place than myself; to whom, If I but knew him, with my love and duty I would surrender it.

*Cham.* I will, my lord.

*[Cham. goes to the company, and returns.]*

*Wol.* What say they?

*Cham.* Such a one, they all confess,

There is, indeed; which they would have Find out, and he will take it. *[your grace]*

*Wol.* Let me see then.—  
*[Come from his state.]*

By all your good leaves, gentlemen;—Here My royal choice. *[I'll make]*

*K. Hen.* You have found him, cardinal: *[Unmasking,]*

You hold a fair assembly; you do well, lord: You are a churchman, or, I'll tell you, cardinal I should judge now unhappily†.

*Wol.* I am glad,

Your grace is grown so pleasant.

*K. Hen.* My lord chamberlain, Pr'ythee, come hither: What fair lady's that?

*Cham.* An't please your grace, sir Thomas Bullen's daughter, *[women.]*

The viscount Rochford, one of her highness' *K. Hen.* By heaven, she is a dainty one.— Sweet-heart,

I were unmannerly, to take you out, And not to kiss you.—A health, gentlemen, Let it go round. *[ready]*

*Wol.* Sir Thomas Lovell, is the banquet P the privy chamber?

*Lov.* Yes, my lord.

*Wol.* Your grace,

I fear, with dancing is a little heated.

*K. Hen.* I fear, too much.

*Wol.* There's fresher air, my lord In the next chamber. *[Sweet partner]*

*K. Hen.* Lead in your ladies, every one.— I must not yet forsake you:—Let's be merry; Good my lord cardinal, I have half a dozen healths

To drink to these fair ladies, and a measure ‡ To lead them once again; and then let's dream Who's best in favour.—Let the music knock it.

*[Exeunt, with trumpets]*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. A Street.

*Enter two Gentlemen, meeting.*

1 *Gent.* Whither away so fast?

2 *Gent.* O,—God save you!

Even to the hall, to hear what shall become Of the great duke of Buckingham.

1 *Gent.* I'll save you That labour, sir. All's now done, but the ceremony of bringing back the prisoner. *[mony]*

2 *Gent.* Were you there?

1 *Gent.* Yes, indeed, was I.

2 *Gent.* Pray, speak, what has happen'd?

1 *Gent.* You may guess quickly what.

2 *Gent.* Is he found guilty?

1 *Gent.* Yes, truly is he, and condemn'd

2 *Gent.* I am sorry for't. *[upon it.]*

1 *Gent.* So are a number more.

2 *Gent.* But, pray, how pass'd it? *[duke]*

1 *Gent.* I'll tell you in a little. The great came to the bar; where, to his accusations, He pleaded still, not guilty, and alleged Many sharp reasons to defeat the law.

The king's attorney, on the contrary, Urged on the examinations, proofs, confessions Of divers witnesses; which the duke desired To him brought, *virâ voce*, to his face:

At which appear'd against him, his surveyor; Sir Gilbert Peck his chancellor; and John Court,

Confessor to him; with that devil-monk, Hopkins, that made this mischief.

2 *Gent.* That was he, That fed him with his prophecies?

1 *Gent.* The same.

All these accused him strongly; which he vain Would have shung from him, but, indeed, he could not:

And so his peers, upon this evidence, Have found him guilty of high treason. Much He spoke, and learnedly, for life: but all Was either pitied in him, or forgotten. *[self]*

2 *Gent.* After all this, how did he bear him?

1 *Gent.* When he was brought again to the bar,—to hear *[stirr'd]*

His knell rung out, his judgment,—he was

• The chief place.

† Mischievously.

‡ Dance.



With such an agony, he sweat extremely,  
And something spoke in choler, ill, and hasty :  
But he fell to himself again, and, sweetly,  
In all the rest show'd a most noble patience.

2 *Gent.* I do not think, he tears death.

1 *Gent.* Sure, he does not,  
He never was so womanish ; the cause  
He may a little grieve at.

2 *Gent.* Certainly,  
The cardinal is the end of this.

1 *Gent.* 'Tis likely,  
By all conjectures : First, Kildare's attainder,  
Then deputy of Ireland ; who removed,  
Earl Surrey was sent thither, and in haste too,  
Lest he should help his father.

2 *Gent.* That trick of state  
Was a deep envious one.

1 *Gent.* At his return,  
No doubt, he will requite it. This is noted,  
And generally ; whoever the king favours,  
The cardinal instantly will find employment,  
And far enough from court too.

2 *Gent.* All the commons  
Hate him perniciously, and, o' my conscience,  
Wish him ten fathom deep : this duke as much  
They love and dote on ; call him, bounteous  
The mirror of all courtesy ;— [Buckingham,

1 *Gent.* Stay there, sir,  
And see the noble ruin'd man you speak of.

*Enter BUCKINGHAM from his arraignment ;*  
*Tipstaves before him, the axe with the*  
*edge towards him ; halberds on each side :*  
*with him, Sir THOMAS LOVELL, Sir*  
*NICHOLAS VAUX, Sir WILLIAM SANDS,*  
*and common people.*

2 *Gent.* Let's stand close, and behold him.

*Buck.* All good people,  
You that thus far have come to pity me,  
Hear what I say, and then go home and lose me.  
I have this day received a traitor's judgment,  
And by that name must die ; Yet, heaven bear  
witness,

And, if I have a conscience, let it sink me,  
Even as the axe falls, if I be not faithful !  
The law I bear no malice for my death,  
It has done, upon the premises, but justice :  
But those, that sought it, I could wish more  
christians :

Be what they will, I heartily forgive them :  
Yet let them look they glory not in mischief,  
Nor build their evils on the graves of great men ;  
For then my guiltless blood must cry against  
For further life in this world I ne'er hope, [them.  
Nor will I sue, although the king have mer-  
cies [loved me,

More than I dare make faults. You few that  
And dare be bold to weep for Buckingham,  
His noble friends, and fellows, whom to leave  
Is only bitter to him, only dying,  
Go with me, like good angels, to my end ;  
And, as the long divorce of steel falls on me  
Make of your prayers one sweet sacrifice,  
And lift my soul to heaven.—Lead on, o' God's  
name.

*Lon.* I do beseech your grace, for charity,  
If ever any malice in your heart

Were hid against me, now to forgive me frankly.

*Buck.* Sir Thomas Lovell, I as free forgive  
As I would be forgiven : I forgive all ; [you,  
There cannot be those numberless offences

'Gainst me, I can't take peace with : no black  
envy [grace ;

Shall make\* my grave.—Commend me to his  
And, if he speak of Buckingham, pray, tell  
him, [prayers

You met him half in heaven : my vows and  
Yet are the king's ; and, till my soul forsake me,  
Shall cry for blessings on him : May he live  
Longer than I have time to tell his years !  
Ever beloved, and loving, may his rule be !

And, when old time shall lead him to his end,  
Goodness and he fill up one monument ! [grace ;

*Lon.* To the water side I must conduct your  
Then give my charge up to sir Nicholas Vaux,  
Who undertakes you to your end.

*Vaux.* Prepare there,  
The duke is coming : see, the barge be ready ;  
And fit it with such furniture, as suits  
The greatness of his person.

*Buck.* Nay, sir Nicholas,  
Let it alone ; my state now will but mock me.  
When I came hither, I was lord high constable,  
And duke of Buckingham ; now, poor Edward  
Yet I am richer than my base accusers, [Bohnn :  
That never knew what truth meant : I now  
seal it ; [groan for't.

And with that blood will make them one day  
My noble father, Henry of Buckingham,  
Who first raised head against usurping Richard,  
Flying for succour to his servant Banister,  
Being distress'd, was by that wretch betray'd,  
And without trial fell ; God's peace be with him !  
Henry the seventh succeeding, truly pitying  
My father's loss, like a most royal prince,  
Restored me to my honours, and, out of ruins,  
Made my name once more noble. Now his son,  
Henry the eighth, life, honour, name, and all  
That made me happy, at one stroke has taken  
For ever from the world. I had my trial, [me  
And, must needs say, a noble one ; which makes  
A little happier than my wretched father :

Yet thus far we are one in fortunes,—Both  
Fell by our servants, by those men we loved  
A most unnatural and faithless service ! [most ;  
Heaven has an end in all : Yet, you that hear  
This from a dying man receive as certain : [me,  
Where you are liberal of your loves, and  
counsels, [make friends,

Be sure, you be not loose ; for those you  
And give your hearts to, when they once per-  
The least rub in your fortunes, fall away [ceive  
Like water from ye, never found again [ple,  
But where they mean to sink ye. All good peo-  
Pray for me ! I must now forsake ye ; the last  
Of my long weary life is come upon me. [hour  
Farewell !

And when you would say something that is sad,  
Speak how I fell.—I have done ; and God for-  
give me ! [Exeunt BUCK. and TRAIN.

1 *Gent.* O, this is full of pity !—Sir, it calls  
I fear, too many curses on their heads,  
That were the authors.

2 *Gent.* If they be guiltless,  
'Tis full of woe: yet I can give you inkling  
Of an ensuing evil, if it fall,  
Greater than this.

1 *Gent.* Good angels keep it from us!  
Where may it be? You do not doubt my faith,  
sir? [quire]

2 *Gent.* This secret is so weighty, 'twill re-  
A strong faith \* to conceal it.

1 *Gent.* Let me have it;  
I do not talk much.

2 *Gent.* I am confident;  
You shall, sir: Did you not of late days hear  
A buzzing, of a separation  
Between the king and Katharine?

1 *Gent.* Yes, but it held not:  
For when the king once heard it, out of anger  
He sent command to the lord mayor, straight  
To stop the rumour, and allay those tongues  
That durst disperse it.

2 *Gent.* But that slander, sir,  
Is found a truth now: for it grows again  
Fresher than e'er it was; and held for certain,  
The king will venture at it. Either the cardinal,  
Or some about him near, have, out of malice  
To the good queen, possess'd him with a scruple  
That will undo her: To confirm this too,  
Cardinal Campeius is arrived, and lately;  
As all think, for this business.

1 *Gent.* 'Tis the cardinal;  
And merely to revenge him on the emperor,  
For not bestowing on him, at his asking,  
The archbishopric of Toledo, this is purposed.

2 *Gent.* I think, you have hit the mark:  
But is't not cruel,

That she should feel the smart of this? The  
cardinal

Will have his will, and she must fall.

1 *Gent.* 'Tis woful.  
We are too open here to argue this;

Let's think in private more. [Exeunt.]

## SCENE II. An Antechamber in the Palace.

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain, reading a Letter.*

*Cham.* My lord,—The horses your lord-  
ship sent for, with all the care I had, I saw  
well chosen, ridden, and furnished. They  
were young, and handsome; and of the best  
breed in the north. When they were ready to  
set out for London, a man of my lord cardi-  
nals, by commission, and main power, took  
'em from me; with this reason,—His master  
would be served before a subject, if not before  
the king: which stopped our mouths, sir.  
I fear, he will, indeed; Well, let him have  
He will have all, I think. [them:]

*Enter the Dukes of NORFOLK and SUFFOLK.*

*Nor.* Well met, my good  
Lord chamberlain.

*Cham.* Good day to both your graces.

*Suf.* How is the king employ'd?

*Cham.* I left him private,  
Full of sad thoughts and troubles.

*Nor.* What's the cause?

*Cham.* It seems, the marriage with his bro-  
Has crept too near his conscience. [ther's wife  
*Suf.* No, his conscience  
Has crept too near another lady.

*Nor.* 'Tis so;  
This is the cardinal's doing, the king-cardinal:  
That blind priest, like the eldest son of fortune,  
Turns what he lists. The king will know him  
one day. [himself else.]

*Suf.* Pray God, he do! he'll never know  
*Nor.* How holily he works in all his busi-  
ness! [the league]

And with what zeal; For, now he has crack'd  
Between us and the emperor, the queen's great  
nephew,

He dives into the king's soul; and there scatters  
Dangers, doubts, wringing of the conscience,  
Fears, and despairs, and all these for his mar  
And, out of all these, to restore the king, [riage  
He counsels a divorce: a loss of her,  
That, like a jewel, has hung twenty years  
About his neck, yet never lost her lustre;  
Of her, that loves him with that excellence  
That angels love good men with; even of her  
That, when the greatest stroke of fortune falls,  
Will bless the king: And is not this course  
pious? 'Tis most true,

*Cham.* Heaven keep me from such counsel  
These news are every where; every tongue  
speaks them,

And every true heart weeps for't: All, that dare  
Look into these affairs, see this main end, [open  
The French king's sister. Heaven will one day  
The king's eyes, that so long have slept upon  
This bold bad man.

*Suf.* And free us from his slavery.

*Nor.* We had need pray,  
And heartily for our deliverance;  
Or this imperious man will work us all  
From princes into pages: all men's honours  
Lie in one lump before him, to be fashion'd  
Into what pitch he please.

*Suf.* For me, my lords  
I love him not, nor fear him; there's my creed:  
As I am made without him, so I'll stand,  
If the king please; his curses and his blessings  
Touch me alike, they are breath I not believe in.  
I knew him, and I know him; so I leave him  
To him, that made him proud, the pope.

*Nor.* Let's in;  
And, with some other business, put the king  
From these sad thoughts, that work too much  
My lord, you'll bear us company? [upon him:]

*Cham.* Excuse me;  
The king hath sent me other-where: besides,  
You'll find a most unfit time to disturb him:  
Health to your lordships.

*Nor.* Thanks, my good lord chamberlain.  
[Exit Lord Chamberlain.]

*NORFOLK opens a folding-door. The King is  
discovered sitting, and reading pensively.*

*Suf.* How sad he looks! sure, he is much  
*K. Hen.* Who is there? ha? [afflicted.]

*Nor.* 'Pray God, he be not angry.

*K. Hen.* Who's there, I say? How dare you  
Into my private meditations? [thrust yourselves

Whom am I? na? [fences]

*Nor.* A gracious king, that pardons all of Malice ne'er meant: our breach of duty, this Is business of estate; in which we come [way, To know your royal pleasure.

*K. Hen.* You are too bold; Go to; I'll make ye know your times of business:

Is this an hour for temporal affairs? ha?—

*Enter WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS.*  
Who's there? my good lord cardinal?—O my The quiet of my wounded conscience, [Wolsey, Thou art a cure fit for a king.—You're welcome, [To CAMPEIUS.

Most learned reverend sir, into our kingdom; Use us, and it:—my good lord, have great care I be not found a talker. [To WOLSEY.

*Wol.* Sir, you cannot. I would, your grace would give us but an hour Of private conference.

*K. Hen.* We are busy; go. [To NORFOLK and SUFFOLK.

*Nor.* This priest has no pride in him?]

*Suf.* Not to speak of; I would not be so sick though \* for his place:

But this cannot continue. } *Aside.*

*Nor.* If it do,

I'll venture one heave at him.

*Suf.* I another. ]

[*Exeunt NORFOLK and SUFFOLK.*

*Wol.* Your grace has given a precedent of wisdom

Above all princes, in committing freely

Your scruple to the voice of Christendom:

Who can be angry now? what envy reach you?

The Spaniard, tied by blood and favour to her,

Must now confess, if they have any goodness,

The trial just and noble. All the clerks,

I mean the learned ones, in christian kingdoms,

Have their free voices; Rome, the nurse of judg-

Invited by your noble self, hath sent [ment,

One general tongue unto us, this good man

This just and learned priest, cardinal Campeius;

Whom, once more, I present unto your high-

ness. [bid him welcome,

*K. Hen.* And, once more, in mine arms I

And thank the holy conclave for their loves;

They have sent me such a man I would have

wish'd for. [strangers' loves,

*Cam.* Your grace must needs deserve all

You are so noble: To your highness' hand

I tender my commission: by whose virtue,

[The court of Rome commanding,]—you, my

lord [vant,

Cardinal of York, are join'd with me their ser-

in the impartial judging of this business.

*K. Hen.* Two equal men. The queen shall

be acquainted [diner?

Forthwith, for what you come:—Where's Gar-

*Wol.* I know your majesty has always loved

So dear in heart, not to deny her that [her

A woman of less place might ask by law,

Scholars, allow'd freely to argue for her.

*K. Hen.* Ay, and the best she shall have;

and my favour

To him that does best; God forbid else. Car-

dinal, [tary;

Pr'ythee call Gardiner to me, my new secre-

I find him a fit fellow. [Exit WOLSEY.

*Re-enter WOLSEY, with GARDINER.*

*Wol.* Give me your hand: much joy and

You are the king's now. [favour to you;

*Gard.* But to be commanded

For ever by your grace, whose hand has raised

me. [Aside.

*K. Hen.* Come hither, Gardiner. [They converse apart.

*Cam.* My lord of York, was not one doctor

In this man's place before him? [Face

*Wol.* Yes, he was.

*Cam.* Was he not held a learned man?

*Wol.* Yes, surely.

*Cam.* Believe me, there's an ill opinion

Even of yourself, lord cardinal. [spread then

*Wol.* How! of me?

*Cam.* They will not stick to say you envied

him;

And fearing he would rise, he was so virtuous,

Kept him a foreign man<sup>†</sup> still; which so

That he ran mad, and died. [grieved him,

*Wol.* Heaven's peace be with him!

That's christian's care enough: for living mur-

derers,

There's places of rebuke. He was a fool;

For he would needs be virtuous: That good

fellow,

If I command him, follows my appointment;

I will have none so near else. Learn this, bro-

ther,

We live not to be griped by meaner persons.

*K. Hen.* Deliver this with modesty to the

queen. [Exit GARDINER.

The most convenient place that I can think of,

For such receipt of learning, is Black-Friars;

There ye shall meet about this weighty busi-

My Wolsey, see it furnish'd.—O my lord, [ness:

Would it not grieve an able man, to leave

So sweet a bedfellow?—But, conscience, con-

science;

O, 'tis a tender place, and I must leave her.

[Exit.

### SCENE III. An Ante-chamber in the Queen's Apartments.

*Enter ANNE BULLEN, and an old Lady.*

*Anne.* Not for that neither;—Here's the

pang that pinches: [she

His highness having lived so long with her, and

So good a lady, that no tongue could ever

Pronounce dishonour of her,—by my life,

She never knew harm-doing:—O now, after

So many courses of the sun enthroned, [which

Still growing in a majesty and pomp,—the

To leave is a thousand-fold more bitter, than

'Tis sweet at first to acquire,—after this pro-

To give her the advantage! it is a pity [cess,

Would move a monster.

*Old L.* Hearts of most hard temper

Melt and lament for her.

*Anne.* O, God's will! much better

\* So sick as he is proud. † Out of the king's presence. A sentence of ejection.



She ne'er had known pomp: though it be tem-  
Yet if that quarrel \*, fortune, do divorce [poral,  
It from the bearer, 'tis a sufferance, panging  
As soul and body's severing.

*Old L.* Alas, poor lady!  
She's a stranger now again †.

*Anne.* So much the more  
Must pity drop upon her. Verily,  
I swear, 'tis better to be lowly born,  
And range with humble livers in content,  
Than to be perk'd up in a glistening grief,  
And wear a golden sorrow.

*Old L.* Our content  
Is our best having ‡.

*Anne.* By my troth and maidenhead,  
I would not be a queen.

*Old L.* Beshrew me, I would,  
And venture maidenhead for't; and so would  
For all this spice of your hypocrisy: {you,  
You, that have so fair parts of woman on you,  
Have too a woman's heart; which ever yet  
Affected eminence, wealth, sovereignty; [gifts  
Which, to say sooth §, are blessings: and which  
(Saving your mincing) the capacity [ceive,  
Of your soft cheveril || conscience would re-  
If you might please to stretch it.

*Anne.* Nay, good troth,—  
*Old L.* Yes, troth, and troth,—You would  
not be a queen?

*Anne.* No, not for all the riches under heaven.

*Old L.* 'Tis strange; a three-pence bow'd ¶  
would hire me,

Old as I am, to queen it: But, I pray you,  
What think you of a duchess? have you limbs  
To bear that load of title?

*Anne.* No, in truth.

*Old L.* Then you are weakly made: Pluck  
off a little;

I would not be a young count in your way,  
For more than blushing comes to: if your back  
Cannot vouchsafe this burden, 'tis too weak  
Ever to get a boy.

*Anne.* How you do talk!

I swear again, I would not be a queen  
For all the world.

*Old L.* In faith, for little England  
You'd venture an emballing: I myself 'long'd  
Would for Carnarvonshire, although there  
No more to the crown but that. Lo, who  
comes here!

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Cham.* Good morrow, ladies. What were't  
worth to know

The secret of your conference?

*Anne.* My good lord,  
Not your demand; it values not your asking:  
Our mistresses' sorrows we were pitying. [ing

*Cham.* It was a gentle business, and becom-  
The action of good women; there is hope  
All will be well.

*Anne.* Now I pray God, amen!

*Cham.* You bear a gentle mind, and hea-  
venly blessings [lady,  
Follow such creatures. That you may, fair  
Perceive I speak sincerely, and high note's

Ta'en of your many virtues, the king's majesty  
Commends his good opinion to you, and  
Does purpose honour to you no less flowing  
Than in archioness of Pembroke; to which title  
A thousand pound a year, annual support,  
Out of his grace he adds.

*Anne.* I do not know  
What kind of my obedience I should tender;  
More than my all is nothing: nor my prayers  
Are not words duly hallow'd, nor my wishes  
More worth than empty vanities; yet prayers  
and wishes,  
Are all I can return. 'Beseech your lordship,  
Vouchsafe to speak my thanks, and my obe-  
dience,  
As from a blushing handmaid, to his highness;  
Whose health, and royalty, I pray for.

*Cham.* Lady,  
I shall not fail to approve the fair conceit \*\*  
The king hath of you.—I have perused her  
well; [Aside.

Beauty and honour in her are so mingled,  
That they have caught the king: and who  
knows yet,  
But from this lady may proceed a gem,  
To lighten all this isle?—I'll to the king,  
And say, I spoke with you.

*Anne.* My honour'd lord.  
[Exit Lord Chamberlain.

*Old L.* Why, this it is; see, see!  
I have been begging sixteen years in court,  
(Am yet a courtier beggarly,) nor could  
Come pat betwixt too early and too late,  
For any suit of pounds: and you, (O fate!)  
A very fresh-fish here, (fie, fie upon  
This compell'd fortune!) have your mouth  
Before you open it. [fill'd up

*Anne.* This is strange to me.  
*Old L.* How tastes it? is it bitter? forty-  
pence, no.

There was a lady once, ('tis an old story,)  
That would not be a queen, that would she  
not, [it?

For all the mud in Egypt:—Have you heard  
*Anne.* Come, you are pleasant.

*Old L.* With your theme I could  
O'er mount the lark. The marchioness of Pem-  
broke!

A thousand pounds a year! for pure respect;  
No other obligation: By my life,  
That promises more thousands: Honour's train  
Is longer than his foreskirt. By this time,  
I know your back will bear a duchess.—Say,  
Are you not stronger than you were?

*Anne.* Good lady,  
Make yourself mirth with your particular  
fancy, [being,  
And leave me out on't. 'Would I had no  
If this salute my blood a jot; it faints me,  
To think what follows.  
The queen's comfortless, and we forgetful  
In our long absence: Pray, do not deliver  
What here you have heard to her.

*Old L.* What do you think me? [Exit.

\* Quarreller.

† No longer an Englishwoman.

‡ Possession.

§ Truth.

|| Kid-skin.

¶ Crooked.

\*\* Opinion.

SCENE IV. *A Hall in Blackfriars.*

*Tumpets, sennet \*, and cornets. Enter two Vergers, with short silver wands; next them, two Scribes, in the habits of doctors; after them, the Archbishop of Canterbury alone; after him, the Bishops of Lincoln, Ely, Rochester, and Saint Asaph; next them, with some small distance, follows a Gentleman bearing the purse, with the great seal, and a cardinal's hat; then two Priests, bearing each a silver cross; then a Gentleman-Usher bare-headed, accompanied with a Sergeant at Arms, bearing a silver mace; then two Gentlemen, bearing two great silver pillars†; after them, side by side, the two Cardinals WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS; two Noblemen with the sword and mace. Then enter the King and Queen, and their Trains. The King takes place under the cloth of state; the two Cardinals sit under him as judges. The Queen takes place at some distance from the King. The Bishops place themselves on each side the court, in manner of a consistory; between them, the Scribes. The Lords sit next the Bishops. The crier and the rest of the Attendants stand in convenient order about the stage.*

*Wol.* Whilst our commission from Rome is  
Let silence be commanded. [read,

*K. Hen.* What's the need?  
It hath already publicly been read,  
And on all sides the authority allow'd;  
You may then spare that time.

*Wol.* Be't so:—Proceed.  
*Scribe.* Say, Henry king of England, come  
into the court.

*Crier.* Henry king of England, &c.

*K. Hen.* Here.

*Scribe.* Say, Katharine queen of England,  
come into court.

*Crier.* Katharine queen of England, &c.

[*The Queen makes no answer, rises out of her chair, goes about the court, comes to the King, and kneels at his feet; then speaks.*]

*Q. Kath.* Sir, I desire you, do me right and  
And to bestow your pity on me: for [justice;  
I am a most poor woman, and a stranger,  
Born out of your dominions; having here  
No judge indifferent, nor no more assurance  
Of equal friendship and proceeding. Alas, sir,  
In what have I offended you? what cause  
Hath my behaviour given to your displeasure,  
That thus you should proceed to put me off,  
And take your good grace from me? Heaven  
witness,

I have been to you a true and humble wife,  
At all times to your will conformable:  
Ever in fear to kindle your dislike, [sorry,  
Yea, subject to your countenance; glad, or  
As I saw it inclined. When was the hour,  
I ever contradicted your desire? [friends  
Or made it not mine too? Or which of your

Have I not strove to love, although I knew  
He were mine enemy? what friend of mine  
That had to him derived your anger, did I  
Continue in my liking? nay, gave notice  
He was from thence discharged. Sir, call to  
mind

That I have been your wife, in this obedience,  
Upward of twenty years, and have been blest  
With many children by you: If, in the course  
And process of this time, you can report,  
And prove it too, against mine honour aught,  
My bond to wedlock, or my love and duty,  
Against your sacred person, in God's name,  
Turn me away, and let the foul'st contempt  
Shut door upon me, and so give me up  
To the sharpest kind of justice. Please you, sir  
The king your father, was reputed for  
A prince most prudent, of an excellent  
And unmatched wit and judgment: Ferdinand,  
My father, king of Spain, was reckon'd one  
The wisest prince, that there had reign'd by  
many

A year before: It is not to be question'd  
That they had gather'd a wise council to them  
Of every realm, that did debate this business,  
Who deem'd our marriage lawful: Wherefore  
I humbly  
Beseech you, sir, to spare me, till I may  
Be by my friends in Spain advis'd; whose  
counsel

I will implore: if not, i' the name of God,  
Your pleasure be fulfill'd!

*Wol.* You have here, lady,  
(And of your choice,) these reverend fathers;  
Of singular integrity and learning, [men  
Yea, the elect of the land, who are assembled  
To plead your cause: It shall be therefore  
bootless,

That longer you desire the court; as well  
For your own quiet, as to rectify  
What is unsettled in the king.

*Cam.* His grace  
Hath spoken well, and justly: Therefore, ma-  
It's fit this royal session do proceed; [dam,  
And that, without delay, their arguments  
Be now produced, and heard.

*Q. Kath.* Lord cardinal,—

To you I speak.

*Wol.* Your pleasure, madam?

*Q. Kath.* Sir,  
I am about to weep; but, thinking that  
We are a queen, (or long have dream'd so,)  
certain,

The daughter of a king, my drops of tears  
I'll turn to sparks of fire.

*Wol.* Be patient yet.

*Q. Kath.* I will when you are humble;  
nay, before,

Or God will punish me. I do believe,  
Induced by potent circumstances, that  
You are mine enemy; and make my challenge,  
You shall not be my judge: for it is you  
Have blown this coal betwixt my lord and  
me, [again

Which God's dew quench!—Therefore, I say

\* Flourish on cornets.

† Ensigns of dignity carried before cardinals.

‡ Useless.

I utterly abhor, yea, from my soul,  
Refuse you for my judge; whom, yet once  
more,  
I hold my most malicious foe, and think not  
At all a friend to truth.

*Hol.* I do profess  
You speak not like yourself; who ever yet  
Have stood to charity, and display'd the effects  
Of disposition gentle, and of wisdom  
O'eropping woman's power. Madam, you  
do me wrong;

I have no spleen against you; nor injustice  
For you, or any: how far I have proceeded,  
Or how far further shall, is warranted  
By a commission from the consistory,  
Yea, the whole consistory of Rome. You  
charge me,

That I have blown this coal: I do deny it:  
The king is present: if it be known to him  
That I gainsay\* my deed, how may he wound,  
And worthily, my falsehood; yea, as much  
As you have done my truth. But if he know  
That I am free of your report, he knows  
I am not of your wrong. Therefore in him  
It lies, to cure me: and the cure is, to  
Remove these thoughts from you. The which  
before

His highness shall speak in, I do beseech  
You, gracious madam, to unthink your speak:  
And to say so no more. [ing,

*Q. Kath.* My lord, my lord,  
I am a simple woman, much too weak  
To oppose your cunning. You are meek, and  
humble-mouth'd; [ingt,

You sign your place and calling, in full seem-  
With meekness and humility: but your heart  
Is cramm'd with arrogance, spleen, and pride.  
You have, by fortune, and his highness' fa-  
vours, [mounted

Gone slightly o'er low steps; and now are  
Where powers are your retainers: and your  
words,

Domestics to you, serve your will, as 't please  
Yourself pronounce their office. I must tell you,  
You tender more your person's honour, than  
Your high profession spiritual: That again  
I do refuse you for my judge; and here,  
Before you all, appeal unto the pope,  
To bring my whole cause 'fore his holiness,  
And to be judged by him.

[*She curtsies to the King, and offers  
to depart.*

*Cam.* The queen is obstinate,  
Stubborn to justice, apt to accuse it, and  
Disdainful to be try'd by it; 'tis not well.  
She's going away!

*K. Hen.* Call her again.

*Crier.* Katharine queen of England, come  
into the court.

*Grif.* Madam, you are call'd back.

*Q. Kath.* What need you note it? pray you,  
keep your way; [help,  
When you are call'd, return.—Now the Lord  
They vex me past my patience!—pray you,  
pass on:

I will not tarry: no, nor ever more,  
Upon this business, my appearance make  
In any of their courts.

[*Exeunt Queen, GRIFFITH, and her  
other Attendants.*

*K. Hen.* Go thy ways, Kate:  
That man i' the world, who shall report he has  
A better wife, let him in nought be trusted,  
For speaking false in that: Thou art, alone,  
(If thy rare qualities, sweet gentleness,  
Thy meekness saint-like, wife-like government,  
Obeying in commanding,—and thy parts  
Sovereign and pious else, could speak thee  
out;) [born;

The queen of earthly queens:—She is noble  
And, like her true nobility, she has  
Carried herself towards me.

*Wol.* Most gracious sir,  
In humblest manner I require your highness,  
That it shall please you to declare, in hearing  
Of all these ears, (for where I am robb'd and  
bound,

There must I be unloosed; although not there  
At once and fully satisfied,) whether ever I  
Did broach this business to your highness; or  
Laid any scruple in your way, which might  
Induce you to the question on't? or ever  
Have to you,—but with thanks to God for such  
A royal lady,—spake one the least word, might  
Be to the prejudice of her present state,  
Or touch of her good person?

*K. Hen.* My lord cardinal,  
I do excuse you; yea, upon mine honour,  
I free you from't. You are not to be taught  
That you have many enemies, that know not  
Why they are so, but, like to village curs,  
Bark when their fellows do: by some of these  
The queen is put in anger. You are excused:  
But will you be more justified? you ever  
Have wish'd the sleeping of this business;  
never

Desired it to be stirr'd; but oft have hindered  
The passages|| made toward it:—on my ho-  
nour,

I speak, my good lord cardinal, to this point,  
And thus far clear him. Now, what moved  
me to't,—

I will be bold with time, and your attention:—  
Then mark the inducement. Thus it came;—  
give heed to't:—

My conscience first received a tenderness,  
Scruple, and prick, on certain speeches utter'd  
By the bishop of Bayonne, then French am-  
bassador;

Who had been hither sent on the debating  
A marriage, 'twixt the duke of Orleans and  
Our daughter Mary: I the progress of this busi-  
Ere a determinate resolution, he [ness,  
(I mean, the bishop) did require a respite;  
Wherein he might the king his lord advertise  
Whether our daughter were legitimate,  
Respecting this our marriage with the dowager,  
Sometime our brother's wife. This respite  
shook

The bosom of my conscience, enter'd me,

\* Deny.

† Appearance.

‡ Speak out thy merits.

§ Immediately satisfied.

|| Closed, or fastened.



Yea, with a splitting power, and made to tremble [way,  
The region of my breast; which forced such  
That many mazed considerings did throng,  
And press'd in with this caution. First, in-  
thought,

I stood not in the smile of heaven; who had  
Commanded nature, that my lady's womb  
If not conceived a male child by me, should  
Do no more offices of life to't, than  
The grave does to the dead: for her male issue  
Or died where they were made, or shortly after  
This world had air'd them: Hence I took a  
thought, [dom,  
This was a judgment on me; that my king-  
Well worthy the best heir o'the world, should  
not

Be gladdened in't by me: Then follows, that  
I weigh'd the danger which my realm stood in  
By this my issue's fail; and that gave to me  
Many a groaning throe. Thus hulling\* in  
The wild sea of my conscience, I did steer  
Toward this remedy, whereupon we are  
Now present here together; that's to say,  
I meant to rectify my conscience,—which  
I then did feel full sick, and yet not well,—  
By all the reverend fathers of the land,  
And doctors learn'd,—First, I began in private  
With you, my lord of Lincoln; you remember  
How under my oppression I did reek†,  
When I first moved you.

Lin. Very well, my liege.

K. Hen. I have spoke long; be pleased your-  
How far you satisfied me. [self to say

Lin. So please your highness,

The question did at first so stagger me,—  
Bearing a state of mighty moment in't,  
And consequence of dread,—that I committed  
The daring'st counsel which I had to doubt;  
And did entreat your highness to this course,  
Which you are running here.

K. Hen. I then moved you,  
My lord of Canterbury; and got your leave  
To make this present summons:—Unsolicited  
I left no reverend person in this court;  
But by particular consent proceeded,  
Under your hands and seals. Therefore, go on.  
For no dislike i'the world against the person  
Of the good queen, but the sharp thorny points  
Of my alleged reasons, drive this forward:  
Prove but our marriage lawful, by my lie,  
And kingly dignity, we are contented

To wear our mortal state to come with her,  
Katharine our queen, before the primest crea-  
That's paragon'd‡ o'the world. [ture

Cam. So please your highness,  
The queen being absent, 'tis a needful fitness  
That we adjourn this court till further day:  
Mean while must be an earnest motion  
Made to the queen, to call back her appeal  
She intends unto his holiness.

[They rise to depart.

K. Hen. I may perceive [Aside.  
These cardinals trifle with me: I abhor  
This dilatory sloth, and tricks of Rome.  
My learn'd and well-beloved servant, Cranmer  
Pr'ythee return's! with thy approach, I know  
My comfort comes along. Break up the court  
I say, set on.

[Exeunt, in manner as they entered

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. Palace at Bridewell.

A Room in the Queen's Apartment. The  
Queen, and some of her women, at work.

Q. Kath. Take thy lute, wench: my soul  
grows sad with troubles; [working.  
Sing, and disperse them, if thou canst: leave

### SONG.

Orpheus with his lute made trees,  
And the mountain-tops, that freeze,  
Bow themselves, when he did sing:  
To his music, plants, and flowers,  
Ever sprung; as sun, and showers,  
There had been a lasting spring.

Every thing that heard him play,  
Even the billows of the sea,  
Hung their heads, and then lay by.  
In sweet music is such art;  
Killing care, and grief of heart,  
Full asleep, or, hearing, dic.

Enter a Gentleman.

Q. Kath. How now? [cardinals

Gent. An't please your grace, the two great  
Wait in the presence].

Q. Kath. Would they speak with me?

\* Floating without guidance.

† Waste, or wear away.

‡ Without compare.

§ An apostrophe to the absent bishop.

|| Presence Chamber.

¶ Professions.

Gent. They will'd me say so, madam.

Q. Kath. Pray their graces  
To come near. [Exit Gent.] What can be  
their business [your?

With me, a poor weak woman, fallen from fa-  
I do not like their coming, now I think on't.  
They should be good men; their affairs‡ ay  
But all hoods make not monks. [righteous:

Enter WOLSEY and CAMPEIUS.

Wol. Peace to your highness!  
Q. Kath. Your graces find me here part of a  
housewife;

I would be all, against the worst may happen.  
What are your pleasures with me, reverend  
lords? [withdraw

Wol. May it please you, noble madam, to  
Into your private chamber, we shall give you  
The full cause of our coming.

Q. Kath. Speak it here;  
There's nothing I have done yet, o' my con-  
science,

Deserves a corner: 'Would all other women  
Could speak this with as free a soul as I do!  
My lords, I care not (so much I am happy  
Above a number) if my actions [them  
Were tried by every tongue, every eye saw

Envy and base opinion set against them,  
I know my life so even: If your business  
Seek me out, and that way I am wife in,  
Out with it boldly; Truth loves open dealing.

*Wol. Tanta est erga te mentis integritas,  
regina serenissima,—*

*Q. Kath.* O, good my lord, no Latin;  
I am not such a truant since my coming.  
As not to know the language I have lived in:  
A strange tongue makes my cause more strange,  
suspicious; [thank you,  
Pray, speak in English: here are some will  
If you speak truth, for their poor mistress's sake;  
Believe me, she has had much wrong: Lord  
cardinal,

The willing'st sin I ever yet committed,  
May be absolved in English.

*Wol.* Noble lady,  
I am sorry my integrity should breed  
(And service to his majesty and you)  
So deep suspicion, where all faith was meant.  
We come not by the way of accusation,  
To taint that honour every good tongue blesses;  
Nor to betray you any way to sorrow;  
You have too much, good lady: but to know  
How you stand miuded in the weighty dif-  
ference

Between the king and you; and to deliver,  
Like free and honest men, our just opinions,  
And comforts to your cause.

*Cam.* Most honour'd madam,  
My lord of York,—out of his noble nature,  
Zeal, and obedience, he still bore your grace;  
Forgetting, like a good man, your late censure  
Both of his truth and him, (which was too  
Offers, as I do, in a sign of peace, [far,]—  
His service and his counsel.

*Q. Kath.* To betray me. [*Aside.*  
My lords, I thank you both for your good wills,  
Ye speak like honest men, (pray God, ye prove  
But how to make you suddenly an answer, [so!]  
In such a point of weight, so near mine honour,  
(More near my life, I fear,) with my weak wit,  
And to such men of gravity and learning,  
In truth, I know not. I was set at work  
Among my maids; full little, God knows, look-  
Either for such men, or such business. [ing  
For her sake that I have been, (for I feel  
The last fit of my greatness,) good your graces,  
Let me have time, and counsel, for my cause;  
Alas! I am a woman, friendless, hopeless.

*Wol.* Madam, you wrong the king's love  
with these fears;

Your hopes and friends are infinite.

*Q. Kath.* In England,  
But little for my profit: Can you think, lords,  
That any Englishman dare give me counsel?  
Or be a known friend, 'gainst his highness'  
pleasure, [honest,]  
(Though he be grown so desperate to be  
And live a snout? Nay, forsooth, my friends,  
They that must weigh\* out my afflictions,  
They that my trust must grow to, live not here;  
They are, as all my other comforts, far hence,  
n mine own country, lords.

*Cam.* I would your grace

Would leave your griefs, and take my counsel—

*Q. Kath.* Put your main cause into the king's  
How sir?

*Cam.* protection;  
He's loving, and most gracious; 'twill be much  
Both for your honour better, and your cause;  
For, if the trial of the law o'ertake you,  
You'll part away disgraced.

*Wol.* He tells you rightly.

*Q. Kath.* Ye tell me what ye wish for both,  
my ruin:

Is this your christian counsel? out upon ye!  
Heaven is above all yet; there sits a Judge,  
That no king can corrupt.

*Cam.* Your rage mistakes us.

*Q. Kath.* The more shame for ye; holy mea  
I thought ye,

Upon my soul, two reverend cardinal virtues:  
But cardinal sins, and hollow hearts, I fear ye:  
Mend them for shame, my lords. Is this your  
comfort?

The cordial that ye bring a wretched lady?  
A woman lost among ye, laugh'd at, scorn'd?  
I will not wish ye half my miseries,  
I have more charity: But say, I warn'd ye;  
Take heed, for heaven's sake, take heed, lest  
at once

The burden of my sorrows fall upon ye.

*Wol.* Madam, this is a mere distraction;  
You turn the good we offer into envy.

*Q. Kath.* Ye turn me into nothing: Woe  
upon ye, [me

And all such false professors! Would ye have  
(If you have any justice, any pity;  
If ye be any thing but churchmen's habits)  
Put my sick cause into his hands that hates me?  
Alas! he has banish'd me his bed already;  
His love, too, long ago: I am old, my lords,  
And all the fellowship I hold now with him  
Is only my obedience. What can happen  
To me, above this wretchedness? all your  
Make me a curse like this. [studies

*Cam.* Your fears are worse.

*Q. Kath.* Have I lived thus long—(let me  
speak myself, [one?  
Since virtue finds no friends,)—a wife, a true  
A woman (I dare say, without vain-glory)  
Never yet branded with suspicion?  
Have I with all my full affections  
Still met the king? loved him next heaven?  
obey'd him?

Been, out of fondness, superstitious to him?†  
Almost forgot my prayers to content him?  
And am I thus rewarded? 'tis not well, lords,  
Bring me a constant woman to her husband,  
One that ne'er dream'd a joy beyond his  
pleasure;

And to that woman, when she has done most,  
Yet will I add an honour,—a great patience.

*Wol.* Madam, you wander from the good  
we aim at. [so guilty,

*Q. Kath.* My lord, I dare not make myself  
To give up willingly that noble title  
Your master wed me to: nothing but death  
Shall e'er divorce my dignities.

*Wol.* \*Pray, hear me.

\* Outweigh.

† Served him with superstitious attention.

*Q. Kath.* 'Would I had never trod this English earth,  
Or felt the flatteries that grow upon it! [hearts.  
Ye have angels' faces, but heaven knows your  
What will become of me now, wretched lady?  
I am the most unhappy woman living.—  
Alas! poor wenches, where are now your fortunes?

[To her Women.

Shipwreck'd upon a kingdom, where no pity,  
No friends, no hope; no kindred weep for me,  
Almost, no grave allow'd me:—Like the lily,  
That once was mistress of the field, and flourish'd,  
I'll hang my head, and perish.

*Wol.*

If your grace

Could but be brought to know our ends are honest,  
[good lady,  
You'd feel more comfort: why should we,  
Upon what cause, wrong you? alas! our places,  
The way of our profession is against it;  
We are to cure such sorrows, not to sow them.  
For goodness's sake, consider what you do;  
How you may hurt yourself, ay, utterly  
Grow from the king's acquaintance, by this  
The hearts of princes kiss obedience, [carriage,  
So much they love it; but to stubborn spirits,  
They swell, and grow as terrible as storms.  
I know you have a gentle, noble temper,  
A soul as even as a calm; Pray think us  
Those we profess, peace-makers, friends, and servants.

[your virtues

*Can.* Madam, you'll find it so. You wrong  
With these weak women's fears. A noble  
As yours was put into you, ever casts [spirit,  
Such doubts, as false coin, from it. The king  
loves you;

Beware, you lose it not: For us, if you please  
To trust us in your business, we are ready  
To use our utmost studies in your service.

*Q. Kath.* Do what ye will, my lords: And  
pray forgive me,

If I have used\* myself unmannerly;  
You know I am a woman, lacking wit  
To make a seemly answer to such persons.  
Pray do my service to his majesty:

He has my heart yet; and shall have my  
prayers, [fathers,

While I shall have my life. Come, reverend  
Bestow your counsels on me: she now begs,  
That little thought, when she set footing here,  
She should have bought her dignities so dear.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II. *Antechamber to the King's  
Apartment.*

*Enter the Duke of NORFOLK, the Duke of  
SUFFOLK, the Earl of SURREY, and the  
Lord Chamberlain.*

*Nor.* If you will now unite in your complaints [dinal

And force† them with a constancy, the car-  
cannot stand under them: If you omit  
The offer of this time, I cannot promise,  
But that you shall sustain more new disgraces,  
With these you bear already.

*Sur.*

I am joyful

To meet the least occasion, that may give me

Remembrance of my father-in-law, the duke,  
To be revenged on him.

*Suf.*

Which of the peers  
Have uncontain'd gone by him, or at least  
Strangely neglected? when did he regard  
The stamp of nobleness in any person,  
Out of himself?

*Cham.* My lords, you speak your pleasures  
What he deserves of you and me I know;  
What we can do to him, (though now the time  
Gives way to us,) I much fear. If you cannot  
Bar his access to the king, never attempt.  
Any thing on him; for he hath a witchcraft  
Over the king in his tongue.

*Nor.*

O, fear him not;

His spell in that is out: the king hath found  
Matter against him, that for ever mars  
The honey of his language. No, he's settled.  
Not to come off, in his displeasure.

*Sur.*

Sir,

I should be glad to hear such news as this  
Once every hour.

*Nor.*

Believe it, this is true.

In the divorce, his contrary proceedings  
Are all unfolded; wherein he appears  
As I could wish mine enemy.

*Sur.*

How came

His practices to light?

*Suf.*

Most strangely.

*Sur.*

O, how, how?

*Suf.* The cardinal's letter to the pope mis-  
carried, [read,  
And came to the eye o'the king: wherein was  
How that the cardinal did entreat his holiness  
To stay the judgment o'the divorce: For if  
It did take place, I do, quoth he, perceive  
My king is tangled in affection to  
A creature of the queen's, lady Anne Bullen.

*Sur.* Has the king this?

*Suf.*

Believe it.

*Sur.*

Will this work?

*Cham.* The king in this perceives him, how  
he coasts,

And hedges, his own way. But in this point  
All his tricks founder, and he brings his physic  
After his patient's death; the king already  
Hath married the fair lady.

*Sur.*

'Would he had!

*Suf.* May you be happy in your wish, my  
For, I profess, you have it. [lord!

*Sur.*

Now all my joy

Trace† the conjunction!

*Suf.*

My amen to't!

*Nor.*

All men's.

*Suf.* There's order given for her coronation:  
Marry, this is yet but young §, and may be left  
To some ears unrecounted.—But, my lords,  
She is a gallant creature, and complete  
In mind and feature: I persuaded me, from her  
Will fall some blessing to this land, which shall  
In it be memorized||.

*Sur.*

But will the king

Digest this letter of the cardinal's?

The lord forbid!

*Nor.*

Marry, amen!

*Suf.*

No, no;

\* Believed.

† Enforce.

‡ Follow.

§ New.

|| Made memorable.



There be more wasps that buz about his nose,  
Will make this sting the sooner. Cardinal  
Campeius

Is stolen away to Rome; hath ta'en no leave;  
Has left the cause o'the king unhandled; and  
Is posted, as the agent of our cardinal,  
To second all his plot. I do assure you  
The king cry'd, ha! at this.

*Cham.* Now God incense him,  
And let him cry ha, louder!

*Nor.* But, my lord,  
When returns Cranmer?

*Suf.* He is return'd, in his opinions; which  
Have satisfied the king for his divorce,  
Together with all famous colleges  
Almost in Christendom: shortly, I believe,  
His second marriage shall be publish'd, and  
Her coronation. Katharine no more  
Shall be call'd queen; but princess dowager,  
And widow to prince Arthur.

*Nor.* This same Cranmer's  
A worthy fellow, and hath ta'en much pain  
In the king's business.

*Suf.* He has; and we shall see him  
For it an archbishop.

*Nor.* So I hear.

*Suf.* 'Tis so.  
The cardinal—

*Enter WOLSEY and CROMWELL.*

*Nor.* Observe, observe, he's moody.

*Wol.* The packet, Cromwell, gave it you  
the king?

*Crom.* To his own hand, in his bedchamber.

*Wol.* Look'd he o'the inside of the paper?

*Crom.* Presently

He did unseal them: and the first he view'd,  
He did it with a serious mind; a heed  
Was in his countenance: You he bade  
Attend him here this morning.

*Wol.* Is he ready  
To come abroad?

*Crom.* I think by this he is.

*Wol.* Leave me a while.—

*[Exit CROMWELL.]*

It shall be to the duchess of Alençon,  
The French king's sister: he shall marry her.  
Anne Bullen! No; I'll no Anne Bullens for  
him:

There is more in it than fair visage.—Bullen!  
No, we'll no Bullens.—Speedily I wish  
To hear from Rome.—The marchioness of

*Nor.* He's discontented. *[Pembroke!]*

*Suf.* May be, he hears the king  
Does whet his anger to him.

*Sur.* Sharp enough,  
Lord, for thy justice!

*Wol.* The late queen's gentlewoman; a  
knight's daughter,

To be her mistress! mistress! the queen's queen!  
This candle burns not clear: 'tis I must snuff  
it; *[virtuous,*

Then, out it goes.—What though I know her  
And well-deserving? yet I know her for  
A spleeny Lutheran; and not wholesome to  
Our cause, that she should lie i'the bosom of  
Our hard ruled king. Again, there is sprung up

An heretic, an arch one, Cranmer; one  
Hath crawl'd into the favour of the king,  
And is his oracle.

*Nor.* He is vex'd at something.

*Suf.* I would 'twere something that would  
The master-cord of his heart! *[treat the string,*  
*Enter the King, reading a Schedule \*; an'*

LOVELL.

*Suf.* The king, the king.

*K. Hen.* What piles of wealth hath he ac-  
cumulated *[hours]*

To his own portion! and what expense by the  
Seems to flow from him! How, i'the name of  
thrif!

Does he rake this together!—Now, my lords:  
Saw you the cardinal?

*Nor.* My lord, we have *[motion]*  
Stood here observing him: Some strange con-  
Is in his brain: he bites his lip, and starts;  
Stops on a sudden, looks upon the ground,  
Then, lays his finger on his temple; straight,  
Springs out into fast gait; then, stops again,  
Strikes his breast hard; and anon, he casts  
His eye against the moon: in most stran-  
We have seen him set himself. *[posture]*

*K. Hen.* It may well be;

There is a mutiny in his mind. This morning  
Papers of state he sent me to peruse,  
As I required; And, wot't you, what I found  
There; on my conscience, put unwittingly?  
Forsooth, an inventory, thus importing,—  
The several parcels of his plate, his treasure,  
Rich stuffs, and ornaments of household; which  
I find at such proud rate, that it out-speaks  
Possession of a subject.

*Nor.* It's heaven's will;  
Some spirit put this paper in the packet,  
To bless your eye withal.

*K. Hen.* If we did think  
His contemplation were above the earth,  
And fix'd on spiritual object, he should still  
Dwell in his musings; but, I am afraid,  
His thinkings are below the moon, not worth  
His serious considering.

*[He takes his seat, and whispers]*  
LOVELL, who goes to WOLSEY.

*Wol.* Heaven forgive me!  
Ever God bless your highness!

*K. Hen.* Good my lord,  
You are full of heavenly stuff, and bear the  
inventory

Of your best graces in your mind; the which  
You were now running o'er; you have scarce  
time

To steal from spiritual leisure a brief span,  
To keep your earthly audit: Sure, in that  
I deem you an ill husband; and am glad  
To have you therein my companion.

*Wol.* Sir,

For holy offices I have a time; a time  
To think upon the part of business, which  
I bear i'the state; and nature does require  
Her times of preservation, which, perforce,  
I her frail son, amongst my brethren mortal,  
Must give my tendance to.

*K. Hen.* You have said well.

\* An inventory.

† Steps.

‡ Know

*Wol.* And ever may your highness voke together,  
As I will lend you cause, my doing well  
With my well saying!

*K. Hen.* 'Tis well said again;  
And 'tis a kind of good deed to say well:  
And yet words are no deeds. My father loved you:

He said he did; and with his deed did crown  
His word upon you. Since I had my office,  
I have kept you next my heart; have not alone  
Employ'd you where high profits might come  
home,

But pared my present havings, to bestow  
My bounties upon you.

*Wol.* What should this mean?

*Sur.* The lord increase this business! [*Aside.*

*K. Hen.* Have I not made you  
The prime man of the state? I pray you, tell  
me, [true:

If what I now pronounce, you have found  
And, if you may confess it, say withal,

If you are bound to us, or no. What say you?

*Wol.* My sovereign, I confess, your royal  
graces, [could

Show'd on me daily, have been more than  
My studied purposes requite, which went  
Beyond all man's endeavours: my endeavours  
Have ever come too short of my desires,  
Yet, filed with my abilities: Mine own ends  
Have been mine so, that evermore they  
pointed

To the good of your most sacred person, and  
The profit of the state. For your great graces  
Heap'd upon me, poor undeserver, I  
Can nothing render but allegiant thanks;  
My prayers to heaven for you; my loyalty,  
Which ever has, and ever shall be growing,  
Till death, that winter, kill it.

*K. Hen.* Fairly answer'd;  
A loyal and obedient subject is  
Therein illustrated: The honour of it  
Does pay the act of it; as, i'the contrary,  
The foulness is the punishment. I presume  
That, as my hand has open'd bounty to you,  
My heart dropp'd love, my power rain'd  
honour, more

On you than any; so your hand, and heart,  
Your train, and every function of your power,  
Should, notwithstanding that your bond of  
As 'twere in love's particular, be more [duty,  
To me, your friend, than any.

*Wol.* I do profess,  
That for your highness' good I ever labour'd  
More than mine own; that am, have, and will  
be, [to you,  
Though all the world should crack their duty  
And throw it from their soul: though perils  
did [and

Abound, as thick as thought could make them,  
Appear in forms more horrid; yet my duty,  
As doth a rock against the chiding flood,  
Should the approach of this wild river break,  
And stand unshaken yours.

*K. Hen.* 'Tis nobly spoken:  
Take notice, lords, he has a loyal breast,

For you have seen him open't.—Read o'er  
this; [*Giving him papers.*

And, after, this: and then to breakfast, with  
What appetite you have.

[*Exit King, frowning upon Cardinal  
WOLSEY: the Nobles throng after  
him, smiling, and whispering.*

*Wol.* What should this mean? [it?

What sudden anger's this? how have I reap'd  
He parted frowning from me, as if ruin  
Leap'd from his eyes: So looks the chafed lion  
Upon the daring huntsman that has gall'd him;  
Then makes him nothing. I must read this  
paper;

I fear, the story of his anger.—'Tis so;  
This paper has undone me:—'Tis the account  
Of all that world of wealth I have drawn to-  
gether [dom,

For mine own ends; indeed, to gain the pope—  
And fee my friends in Rome. O negligence,  
Fit for a fool to fall by! What cross devil  
Made me put this main secret in the packet  
I sent the king? Is there no way to cure this?  
No new device to beat this from his brains?

I know 'twill stir him strongly: Yet I know  
A way, if it take right, in spite of fortune  
Will bring me off again. What's this—*To the  
Pope?*

The letter, as I live, with all the business  
I writ to his holiness. Nay then, farewell!  
I have touch'd the highest point of all my  
greatness;

And, from that full meridian of my glory,  
I haste now to my setting: I shall fall  
Like a bright exhalation in the evening,  
And no man see me more.

*Re-enter the Dukes of NORFOLK and SUR-  
FOLK, the Earl of SURREY, and the Lord  
Chamberlain.*

*Nor.* Hear the king's pleasure, cardinal,  
who commands you

To render up the great seal presently  
Into our hands; and to confine yourself  
To Asher-house\*, my lord of Winchester's,  
Till you hear further from his highness.

*Wol.* Stay, [not carry  
Where's your commission, lords? words can-  
Authority so weighty.

*Sur.* Who dare cross them, [pressly?  
Bearing the king's will from his mouth ex-

*Wol.* Till I find more than will, or words,  
to do it,

[I mean, your malice,] know, officious lords,  
I dare, and must deny it. Now I feel  
Of what coarse metal ye are moulded,—envy.  
How eagerly ye follow my disgraces,  
As if it fed ye! and how sleek and wanton  
Ye appear in every thing may bring my ruin!  
Follow your envious courses, men of malice;  
You have christian warrant for them, and, no  
doubt,

In time will find their fit rewards. That seal,  
You ask with such a violence, the king,  
(Mine, and your master,) with his own hand  
gave me:

Bade me enjoy it, with the place and honours,

\* Esher in Surrey.

During my life; and, to confirm his goodness,  
Tied it by letters patent: Now, who'll take it?

*Sur.* The king, that gave it.

*Vol.* It must be himself then.

*Sur.* Thou art a proud traitor, priest.

*Vol.* Proud lord, thou liest;

Within these forty hours Surrey durst better  
Have burnt that tongue, than said so.

*Sur.* Thy ambition,  
Thou scarlet sin, robb'd this bewailing land  
Of noble Buckingham, my father-in-law:

The heads of all thy brother cardinals,  
(With thee, and all thy best parts bound to-  
gether,) [policy!

Weigh'd not a hair of his. Plague of your  
You sent me deputy for Ireland;

Far from his succour, from the king, from all  
That might have mercy on the fault thou gavest  
him;

Whilst your great goodness, out of holy pity,  
Absolved him with an axe.

*Vol.* This, and all else  
This talking lord can lay upon my credit,  
I answer, is most false. The duke by law  
Found his deaerts: how innocent I was  
From any private malice in his end,  
His noble jury and foul cause can witness.  
If I loved many words, lord, I should tell you,  
You have as little honesty as honour;  
That I, in the way of loyalty and truth  
Toward the king, my ever royal master,  
Dare name \* a sounder man than Surrey can be,  
And all that love his follies.

*Sur.* By my soul,  
Your long coat, priest, protects you; thou  
should'st feel [lords,

My sword i'the life-blood of thee else.—My  
Can ye endure to hear this arrogance?

And from this fellow? If we live thus tamely,  
To be thus jaded† by a piece of scarlet,  
Farewell nobility; let his grace go forward,  
And dare us with his cap, like larks‡.

*Vol.* All goodness  
Is poison to thy stomach.

*Sur.* Yes, that goodness  
Of gleaming all the land's wealth into one,  
Into your own hands, cardinal, by extortion;  
The goodness of your intercepted packets,  
You writ to the pope, against the king: your  
goodness,  
Since you provoke me, shall be most notori-  
ous:—

My lord of Norfolk,—as you are truly noble,  
As you respect the common good, the state  
Of our despised nobility, our issues,  
Who, if he live, will scarce be gentlemen,—  
Produce the grand sum of his sins, the articles  
Collected from his life:—I'll startle you  
Worse than the scaring bell, when the brown  
wench

Lay kissing in your arms, lord cardinal.

*Vol.* How much, methinks, I could despise  
this man,

But that I am bound in charity against it!

*Nor.* Those articles, my lord, are in th  
king's hand:

But, thus much, they are foul ones.

*Vol.* So much fairer

And spotless, shall mine innocence arise,

When the king knows my truth.

*Sur.* This cannot save you:

I thank my memory, I yet remember

Some of these articles; and out they shall.

Now, if you can blush, and cry guilty, cardinal,  
You'll show a little honesty.

*Vol.* Speak on, sir:

I dare your worst objections: if I blush,  
It is, to see a nobleman want manners.

*Sur.* I'd rather want those, than my head  
Have at you. [ledge

First, that, without the king's assent, or know

You wrought to be a legate; by which power  
You main'd the jurisdiction of all bishops.

*Nor.* Then, that in all you writ to Rome  
or else

To foreign princes, *Ego et Rex meus*  
Was still inscribed; in which you brought the  
To be your servant. [king

*Suf.* Then, that, without the knowledge

Either of king or council, when you went  
Ambassador to the emperor, you made bold  
To carry into Flanders the great seal.

*Sur.* Item, you sent a large commission  
To Gregory de Cassalis, to conclude, [ance  
Without the king's will, or the state's allow  
A league between his highness and Ferrara.

*Suf.* That, out of mere ambition, you have  
caused

Your holy hat to be stamp'd on the king's coin.

*Sur.* Then, that you have sent innumerable  
substance, [science,

(By what means got, I leave to your own con

To furnish Rome, and to prepare the ways

You have for dignities; to the mere § undoing

Of all the kingdom. Many more there are;

Which, since they are of you, and odious,

I will not taint my mouth with.

*Cham.* O my lord

Press not a falling man too far; 'tis virtue:

His faults lie open to the laws; let them,

Not you, correct him. My heart weeps to see  
So little of his great self. [him

*Sur.* I forgive him.

*Suf.* Lord cardinal, the king's further plea-  
sure is,—

Because all those things you have done of late  
By your power legate || within this kingdom,

Fall into the compass of a *præmunire* ¶,—

That therefore such a writ be sued against you;

To forfeit all your goods, lauds, tenements,

Chattels, and whatsoever, and to be [charge.

Out of the king's protection:—This is my

*Nor.* And so we'll leave you to your medi-  
tations [swer,

How to live better. For your stubborn an-

About the giving back the great seal to us,

The king shall know it, and, no doubt, shall  
thank you.

\* Equal. † Ridden. ‡ A cardinal's hat is scarlet, and the method of daring larks i  
by small mirrors on scarlet cloth. § Absolute. || As the Pope's legate

¶ A writ incurring a penalty.



So fare you well, my little good lord cardinal.

[*Exeunt all but Wolsey.*]

'*Wol.* So farewell to the little good you bear me. Farewell, a long farewell, to all my greatness! This is the state of man; To-day he puts forth The tender leaves of hope, to-morrow blossoms, And bears his blushing honours thick upon him: The third day, comes a frost, a killing frost; And,—when he thinks, good easy man, full H's greatness is a ripening, nips his root, surely And then he falls as I do. I have ventured, Like little wanton boys that swim on bladders, This many summers in a sea of glory; But far beyond my depth: my high-blown pride

[me, At length broke under me; and now has left Weary, and old with service, to the mercy Of a rude stream, that must for ever hide me. Vain pomp, and glory of this world, I hate ye: I feel my heart new opened: O, how wretched Is that poor man, that hangs on princes' favours!

There is, betwixt that smile we would aspire to, That sweet aspect of princes, and their ruin, More pangs and fears than wars or women And when he falls, he falls like Lucifer, [have; Never to hope again!—

*Enter CROMWELL, amazedly.*

Why, how now, Cromwell?

*Crom.* I have no power to speak, sir.

*Wol.* What, amazed

At my misfortunes? can thy spirit wonder, A great man should decline? Nay, an you weep, I am fallen indeed.

*Crom.* How does your grace?

*Wol.* Why, well;

Never so truly happy, my good Cromwell. I know myself now; and I feel within me A peace above all earthly dignities, A still and quiet conscience. The king has cured me, [shoulders

I humbly thank his grace; and from these These ruined pillars, out of pity, taken A load would sink a navy, too much honour: O 'tis a burden, Cromwell, 'tis a burden, Too heavy for a man that hopes for heaven.

*Crom.* I am glad, your grace has made that right use of it. [thinks,

*Wol.* I hope I have: I am able now, me- (Out of a fortitude of soul I feel.)

To endure more miseries, and greater far, Than my weak-hearted enemies dare offer. What news abroad?

*Crom.* The heaviest, and the worst, Is your displeasure with the king.

*Wol.* God bless him!

*Crom.* The next is, that sir Thomas More is Lord-chancellor in your place. [chosen

*Wol.* That's somewhat sudden: But he's a learned man. May he continue Long in his highness' favour, and do justice For truth's sake, and his conscience; that his bones, [blessings,

When he has run his course, and sleeps in May have a tomb of orphan's tears\* wept on What more? [em!

*Crom.* That Cranmer is return'd with well-Install'd lord archbishop of Canterbury. [come, *Wol.* That's news indeed.

*Crom.* Last, that the lady Anne, Whom the king hath in secrecy long married, This day was viewed in open, as his queen, Going to chapel; and the voice is now Only about her coronation.

*Wol.* There was the weight that pull'd me down. O Cromwell,

The king has gone beyond me, all my glories In that one woman I have lost for ever: No sun shall ever usher forth mine honours, Or gild again the noble troops that waited Upon my smiles. Go, get thee from me, Cromwell;

I am a poor fallen man, unworthy now To be thy lord and master: Seek the king; That sun, I pray, may never set! I have told him [thee;

What, and how true thou art: he will advance Some little memory of me will stir him (I know his noble nature) not to let [well, Thy hopeful service perish too: Good Crom- Neglect him not; make use of now, and provide For thine own future safety.

*Crom.* O my lord, Must I then leave you? Must I needs forego So good, so noble, and so true a master? Bear witness, all that have not hearts of iron, With what a sorrow Cromwell leaves his lord. The king shall have my service; but my pray- For ever, and for ever, shall be yours. [ers

*Wol.* Cromwell, I did not think to shed a tear In all my miseries; but thou hast forced me, Out of thy honest truth, to play the woman. Let's dry our eyes: and thus far hear me, Cromwell;

And,—when I am forgotten, as I shall be, And sleep in dull cold marble, where no men- tion

Of me more must be heard of,—say, I taught thee,

Say, Wolsey,—that once trod the ways of glory, And sounded all the depths and shoals of hon- our,— [in;

Found thee a way, out of his wreck, to rise A sure and safe one, though thy master miss'd it. Mark but my fall, and that that ruin'd me.

Cromwell, I charge thee, fling away ambition; By that sin fell the angels, how can man then, The image of his Maker, hope to win by't? Love thyself last: cherish those hearts that hate thee;

Corruption wins not more than honesty. Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace, [not : To silence envious tongues. Be just, and fear Let all the ends thou aim'st at be thy country's, Thy God's, and truth's; then if thou fall'st, O Cromwell,

Thou fall'st a blessed martyr. Serve the king; And—Pr'ythee, lead me in: There take an inventory of all I have, To the last penny: 'tis the king's: my robe, And my integrity to heaven, is all [well, I dare now call mine own. O Cromwell, Crom-

\* The chancellor is the guardian of orphans.

+ Interest.

Had I but served my God with half the zeal  
I served my king, he would not in mine age  
Have left me naked to mine enemies.

*Crom.* Good sir, have patience.

*Wol.* So I have. Farewell!  
The hopes of court! my hopes in heaven do  
dwell. [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. A Street in Westminster.

*Enter Two Gentlemen, meeting.*

1 *Gent.* You are well met once again.

2 *Gent.* And so are you.

1 *Gent.* You come to take your stand here,  
and behold

The lady Anne pass from her coronation?

2 *Gent.* 'Tis all my business. At our last  
encounter,

The duke of Buckingham came from his trial.

1 *Gent.* 'Tis very true: but that time offer'd  
This, general joy. [sorrow;

2 *Gent.* 'Tis well: The citizens,  
I am sure, have shown at full their royal minds;  
As, let them have their rights, they are ever for-  
In celebration of this day with shows, [ward  
Pageants, and sights of honour.

1 *Gent.* Never greater,  
Nor, I'll assure you, better taken, sir. [tains,  
2 *Gent.* May I be bold to ask what that cou-  
That paper in your hand?

1 *Gent.* Yes; 'tis the list  
Of those, that claim their offices this day,  
By custom of the coronation.

The duke of Suffolk is the first, and claims  
To be high steward; next, the duke of Norfolk,  
He to be earl marshal; you may read the rest.

2 *Gent.* I thank you, sir; had I not known  
those customs,

I should have been beholden to your paper.  
But, I beseech you, what's become of Katha-  
rine,

The princess dowager! how goes her business?

1 *Gent.* That I can tell you too. The arch-  
bishop

Of Canterbury, accompanied with other  
Learned and reverend fathers of his order,  
Held a late court at Dunstable, six miles off  
From Amptill, where the princess lay; to  
which

She oft was cited by them, but appear'd not:  
And, to be short, for not appearance, and  
The king's late scruple, by the main assent  
Of all these learned men, she was divorced,  
And the late marriage\* made of none effect:  
Since which, she was removed to Kimbolton,  
Where she remains now, sick.

2 *Gent.* Alas, good lady!—  
[Trumpets.

The trumpets sound: stand close, the queen  
is coming.

#### THE ORDER OF THE PROCESSION.

A lively flourish of Trumpets; then enter

1. Two Judges.

2. Lord Chancellor, with the purse and  
mace before him.

3. Choristers singing. [Music.]

4. Mayor of London bearing the mace.  
Then Garter, in his coat of arms, and  
on his head, a gilt copper crown.

5. Marquis Dorset, bearing a sceptre of  
gold, on his head a demi-coronal of gold.  
With him, the earl of Surrey, bearing  
the rod of silver with the dove, crown'd  
with an earl's coronet. Collars of SS.

6. Duke of Suffolk, in his robe of estate, his  
coronet on his head, bearing a long  
white wand, as high steward. With him,  
the duke of Norfolk, with the rod of  
marshalship, a coronet on his head.  
Collars of SS.

7. A canopy borne by four of the Cinque-  
ports; under it, the Queen in her robe;  
in her hair richly adorned with pearl,  
crowned. On each side of her, the  
bishops of London and Winchester.

8. The old duchess of Norfolk, in a coronal  
of gold, wrought with flowers, bearing  
the Queen's train.

9. Certain Ladies or Countesses, with plain  
circlets of gold without flowers.

2 *Gent.* A royal train, believe me.—These  
Who's that that bears the sceptre? [I know;—

1 *Gent.* Marquis Dorset:  
And that the earl of Surrey, with the rod.

2 *Gent.* A bold brave gentleman: And that  
The duke of Suffolk. [should be

1 *Gent.* 'Tis the same; high-steward.  
2 *Gent.* And that my lord of Norfolk?

1 *Gent.* Yes.  
2 *Gent.* Heaven bless thee!

[Looking on the Queen.

Thou hast the sweetest face I ever look'd on.—  
Sir, as I have a soul, she is an angel;

Our king has all the Indies in his arms,  
And more, and richer, when he strains that  
I cannot blame his conscience. [lady:]

1 *Gent.* They, that bear  
The cloth of honour over her, are four barons  
Of the Cinque-ports. [all are near her.

2 *Gent.* Those men are happy; and so are  
I take it, she that carries up the train,  
Is that old noble lady, duchess of Norfolk.

1 *Gent.* It is; and all the rest are coun-  
tesses. [stars, indeed;

2 *Gent.* Their coronets say so. These are  
And, sometimes, falling ones.

1 *Gent.* No more of that.  
[Exit Procession, with a great flourish  
of Trumpets.

*Enter a third Gentleman.*

God save you, sir! Where have you been  
broiling? [a finger

3 *Gent.* Among the crowd i'the abbey; where

\* The marriage lately considered as valid.

Could not be wedged in more; and I am  
With the mere rankness of their joy. [stiffed

2 *Gent.* You saw  
The ceremony?

3 *Gent.* That I did.

1 *Gent.* How was it?

3 *Gent.* Well worth the seeing.

2 *Gent.* Good sir, speak it to us.

3 *Gent.* As well as I am able. The rich  
stream

Of lords, and ladies, having brought the queen  
To a prepared place in the choir, fell off

A distance from her; while her grace sat down  
To rest a while, some half an hour, or so,

In a rich chair of state, opposing freely  
The beauty of her person to the people.

Believe me, sir, she is the goodliest woman  
That ever lay by man: which when the people

Had the full view of, such a noise arose  
As the shrouds make at sea in a stiff tempest,

As loud, and to as many tunes: hats, cloaks,  
(Doublets, I think,) flew up; and had their  
faces [joy

Been loose, this day they had been lost. Such  
I never saw before. Great-bellied women,

That had not half a week to go, like rams  
In the old time of war, would shake the press,

And make them reel before them. No man  
living [woven

Could say, *This is my wife*, there; all were  
So strangely in one piece.

2 *Gent.* But, 'pray, what follow'd?

3 *Gent.* At length her grace rose, and with  
modest paces [saintlike,

Came to the altar; where she kneel'd, and,  
Cast her fair eyes to heaven, and pray'd de-

voutly,  
Then rose again, and bow'd her to the people:

When by the archbishop of Canterbury  
She had all the royal makings of a queen;

As holy oil, Edward Confessor's crown,  
The rod, and bird of peace, and all such em-

blems  
Laid nobly on her: which perform'd, the choir,

With all the choicest music of the kingdom,  
Together sung *Te Deum*. So she parted,

And with the same full state paced back again  
To York-place, where the feast is held.

1 *Gent.* Sir, you  
Must no more call it York-place, that is past:

For, since the cardinal fell, that title's lost;  
'Tis now the king's and call'd—Whitehall.

3 *Gent.* I know it;  
But 'tis so lately alter'd, that the old name

Is fresh about me.  
2 *Gent.* What two reverend bishops

Were those that went on each side of the queen?

3 *Gent.* Stokesly and Gardiner; the one of  
Winchester,

[Newly prefer'd from the king's secretary,]  
The other, London.

2 *Gent.* He of Winchester

Is held no great good lover of the archbishop's,  
The virtuous Cranmer.

3 *Gent.* All the land knows that:  
However, yet there's no great breach; when

it comes, [him.  
Cranmer will find a friend will not shrink from

2 *Gent.* Who may that be, I pray you?

3 *Gent.* Thomas Cromwell;  
A man in much esteem with the king, and truly

A worthy friend.—The king  
Has made him master o'the jewel-house,

And one already of the privy-council.  
2 *Gent.* He will deserve more.

3 *Gent.* Yes, without all doubt.  
Come, gentlemen, ye shall go my way, which

Is to the court, and there ye shall be my guests;  
Something I can command. As I walk thither,

I'll tell ye more.  
Both. You may command us, sir.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II\*. Kimbolton.

Enter KATHARINE, Dowager, sick; led be-  
tween GRIFFITH and PATIENCE.

Grif. How does your grace?

Kath. O, Griffith, sick to death:  
My legs, like loaden branches, bow to the earth,

Willing to leave their burden: Reach a chair;  
So,—now, methinks, I feel a little ease.

Didst thou not tell me, Griffith, as thou ledd'st  
me,

That the great child of honour, cardinal Wolsey,  
Was dead?

Grif. Yes, madam; but, I think, your grace,  
Out of the pain you suffer'd, gave no ear to't.

Kath. Prythee, good Griffith, tell me how  
he died:

If well, he stepp'd before me, happily †,  
For my example.

Grif. Well, the voice goes, madam:  
For after the stout earl Northumberland

Arrested him at York, and brought him forward  
(As a man sorely tainted,) to his answer,

He fell sick suddenly, and grew so ill,  
He could not sit his mule.

Kath. Alas! poor man!  
Grif. At last, with easy roads ‡, he came to

Leicester, [abbot,  
Lodged in the abbey; where the reverend

With all his convent, honourably received him;  
To whom he gave these words,—*O father*

abbot,  
*An old man, broken with the storms of state,*

*Is come to lay his weary bones among ye;  
Give him a little earth for charity!*

So went to bed: where eagerly his sickness  
Pursued him still; and, three nights after this,

About the hour of eight, (which he himself  
Foretold should be his last,) full of repentance

Continual meditations, tears, and sorrows,  
He gave his honours to the world again,

His blessed part to heaven, and slept in peace.

\* This scene is above any other part of Shakspeare's tragedies, and perhaps above any scene of any other poet, tender and pathetic, without gods, or furies, or poisons, or precipices, without the help of romantic circumstances, without improbable sallies of poetical lamentation and without any throes of tumultuous misery.—JOHNSON.

† Haply.

‡ By short stages.



*Kath.* So may he rest; his faults lie gently on him! [him,  
Yet thus far, Griffith, give me leave to speak  
And yet with charity,—He was a man  
Of an unbonded stomach \*, ever ranking  
Himself with princes; one, that by suggestion  
Tied all the kingdom: simony was fair play;  
His own opinion was his law: P'the presence †  
He would say untruths; and be ever double,  
Both in his words and meaning: He was never,  
But where he meant to ruin, pitiful:  
His promises were, as he then was, mighty;  
But his performance, as he is now, nothing.  
Of his own body he was ill, and gave  
The clergy ill example.

*Grif.* Noble madam,  
Men's evil manners live in brass; their virtues  
We write in water. May it please your high-  
To hear me speak his good now? [ness

*Kath.* Yes, good Griffith;  
I were malicious else.

*Grif.* This cardinal,  
Though from an humble stock, undoubtedly  
Was fashion'd to † much honour. From his  
cradle,

He was a scholar, and a ripe, and good one;  
Exceeding wise, fair spoken, and persuading;  
Lofty, and sour, to them that loved him not;  
But, to those men that sought him, sweet as  
summer.

And though he were unsatisfied in getting,  
(Which was a sin,) yet in bestowing, madam,  
He was most princely: Ever witness for him  
Those twins of learning, that he raised in you,  
Ipswich, and Oxford! one ‡ of which fell with  
Unwilling to outlive the good that did it; [him,  
The other, though unfinish'd, yet so famous,  
So excellent in art, and still so rising,  
That Christendom shall ever speak his virtue.  
His overthrow heap'd happiness upon him;  
For then, and not till then, he felt himself,  
And found the blessedness of being little:  
And, to add greater honours to his age  
Than man could give him, he died, fearing God.

*Kath.* After my death I wish no other herald,  
No other speaker of my living actions,  
To keep mine honour from corruption,  
But such an honest chronicler as Griffith.  
Whom I most hated living, thou hast made me,  
With thy religious truth, and modesty,  
Now in his ashes honour: Peace be with him!  
Patience, be near me still; and set me lower:  
I have not long to trouble thee.—Good Griffith,  
Cause the musicians play me that sad note  
I named my knell, whilst I sit meditating  
On that celestial harmony I go to.

*Sid and solemn music.*

*Grif.* She is asleep: Good wench, let's sit  
down quiet, [tience.  
For fear we wake her;—Softly, gentle Pa-  
*The Vision.* Enter, solemnly tripping one  
after another, six Personages, clad in  
white robes, wearing on their heads gar-  
lands of bays, and golden vizards on their  
faces; branches of bays, or palm, in their  
hands. They first congee unto her, then

dance; and, at certain changes, the first  
two hold a spare garland over her head,  
at which, the other four make reverend  
court'sies; then the two that held the  
garland, deliver the same to the other  
next two, who observe the same order in  
their changes, and holding the garland  
over her head: which done, they deliver  
the same garland to the last two, who  
likewise observe the same order: at which,  
(as it were by inspiration,) she makes in  
her sleep signs of rejoicing, and holdeth  
up her hands to heaven: and so in their  
dancing they vanish, carrying the garland  
with them. The music continues.

*Kath.* Spirits of peace, where are ye? Are  
ye all gone?

And leave me here in wretchedness behind ye?

*Grif.* Madam, we are here.

*Kath.* It is not you I call for:

Saw ye none enter, since I slept?

*Grif.* None, madam.

*Kath.* No? Saw you not, even now, a  
blessed troop

Invite me to a banquet; whose bright faces  
Cast thousand beams upon me, like the sun?  
They promised me eternal happiness;  
And brought me garlands, Griffith, which I feel  
I am not worthy yet to wear: I shall

Assuredly. [dreams

*Grif.* I am most joyful, madam, such good  
Possess your fancy.

*Kath.* Bid the music leave,  
They are harsh and heavy to me.

[Music ceases.

*Pat.* Do you note,  
How much her grace is alter'd on the sudden?  
How long her face is drawn? How pale she  
looks,

And of an earthy cold? Mark you her eyes?

*Grif.* She is going, wench; pray, pray.

*Pat.* Heaven comfort her!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* An't like your grace,—

*Kath.* You are a saucy fellow:  
Deserve we no more reverence?

*Grif.* You are to blame,  
Knowing she will not lose her wonted great-  
To use so rude behaviour: go to, kneel. [ness,

*Mess.* I humbly do entreat your highness'  
pardon; [ing

My haste made me unmannerly: There is stay-  
A gentleman, sent from the king, to see you.

*Kath.* Admit him entrance, Griffith: But  
Let me ne'er see again. [this fellow

[Exit Griffith and Messenger.

*Re-enter Griffith, with Capucius.*

If my sight fail not,  
You should be lord ambassador from the em-  
peror,

My royal nephew, and your name Capucius.

*Cap.* Madam, the same, your servant.

*Kath.* O my lord  
The times, and titles, now are alter'd strangely  
With me, since first you knew me. But, I pra  
What is your pleasure with me? [you

*Cap.* Noble lady,  
First, mine own service to your grace; the  
The king's request that I would visit you; [next,  
Who grieves much for your weakness, and by  
Sends you his princely commendations, [me  
And heartily entreats you take good comfort.

*Kath.* O my good lord, that comfort comes  
'Tis like a pardon after execution: [too late;  
That gentle physic, given in time, had cured  
me; [prayers.  
But now I am past all comforts here, but  
How does his highness?

*Cap.* Madam, in good health.  
*Kath.* So may he ever do! and ever flourish,  
When I shall dwell with worms, and my poor  
name

Banish'd the kingdom!—Patience, is that let-  
I caused you write, yet sent away? [ter,

*Pat.* No, madam.  
[Giving it to KATHARINE.

*Kath.* Sir, I most humbly pray you to de-  
This to my lord the king. [liver

*Cap.* Most willing, madam.

*Kath.* In which I have commended to his  
goodness

The model\* of our chaste loves, his young  
daughter†:— [her!—

The dews of heaven fall thick in blessings on  
Beseeching him to give her virtuous breeding;  
(She is young, and of a noble modest nature;  
I hope she will deserve well; and a little  
To love her for her mother's sake, that loved  
him, [tition

Heaven knows how dearly. My next poor pe-  
Is, that his noble grace would have some pity  
Upon my wretched women, that so long,  
Have follow'd both my fortunes faithfully:  
Of which there is not one, I dare avow,

(And now I should not lie,) but will deserve,  
For virtue, and true beauty of the soul,  
For honesty, and decent carriage,  
A right good husband, let him be† a noble;  
And, sure, those men are happy that shall have  
them.

The last is, for my men:—they are the poorest,  
But poverty could never draw them from  
me;— [them,

That they may have their wages duly paid  
And something over to remember me by;  
If heaven had pleased to have given me longer  
And able means, we had not parted thus. [life,  
These are the whole contents:—And, good my  
By that you love the dearest in this world, [lord,  
As you wish christian peace to souls departed,  
Stand these poor people's friend, and urge the  
To do me this last right. [king

*Cap.* By heaven, I will;  
Or let me lose the fashion of a man!

*Kath.* I thank you, honest lord. Remember  
In all humility unto his highness: [me

Say, his long trouble now is passing  
Out of this world: tell him, in death I bless'd  
him, [well,

For so I will.—Mine eyes grow dim.—Fare-  
My lord.—Griffith, farewell.—Nay, Patience,  
You must not leave me yet. I must to bed;  
Call in more women.—When I am dead, good  
wench,

Let me be used with honour; strew me over  
With maiden flowers, that all the world may  
know

I was a chaste wife to my grave: embalm me,  
Then lay me forth: although unqueen'd, yet  
A queen, and daughter to a king, inter me. [like  
I can no more.—

[Exeunt, leading KATHARINE.

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. A Gallery in the Palace.

Enter GARDINER, bishop of Winchester, a  
Page with a torch before him, met by Sir  
THOMAS LOVELL.

*Gar.* It's one o'clock, boy, is't not?  
*Boy.* It hath struck.

*Gar.* These should be hours for necessities,  
Not for delights; times to repair our nature  
With comforting repose, and not for us  
To waste these times.—Good hour of night, sir  
Whither so late? [Thomas]

*Lov.* Came you from the king, my lord?

*Gar.* I did, sir Thomas; and left him at pri-  
With the duke of Suffolk. [mero §

*Lov.* I must to him too,  
Before he go to bed. I'll take my leave.

*Gar.* Not yet, sir Thomas Lovell. What's  
the matter?

It seems you are in haste: an if there be  
No great offence belongs to't, give your friend  
Some touch|| of your late business: Affairs that  
walk

(As they say spirits do,) at midnight, have  
In them a wilder nature, than the business  
That seeks despatch by day.

*Lov.* My lord, I love you;  
And durst commend a secret to your ear  
Much weightier than this work. The queen's  
in labour,

They say, in great extremity; and fear'd,  
She'll with the labour end.

*Gar.* The fruit she goes with,  
I pray for heartily; that it may find  
Good time, and live: but for the stock, sir  
I wish it grubb'd up now. [Thomas]

*Lov.* Methinks, I could  
Cry the amen; and yet my conscience says  
She's a good creature, and, sweet lady, does  
Deserve our better wishes.

*Gar.* But, sir, sir,—  
Hear me, sir Thomas: You are a gentleman  
Of mine own way; I know you wise, religious;  
And, let me tell you, it will ne'er be well,—  
'Twill not, sir Thomas Lovell, take't of me, [she,  
Till Cranmer, Cromwell, her two hands, and

Image.

† Afterwards Queen Mary.

† Even if he should be.

§ A game at cards.

|| Hint.

Sleep in their graves.

*Lov.* Now, sir, you speak of two  
The most remark'd i'the kingdom. As for  
Cromwell,— [ster  
Beside that of the jewel-house, he's made mas-  
O'the rolls, and the king's secretary : further,  
sir, [ments,  
Stands in the gap and trade of more prefer-  
With which the time will load him : The arch-  
bishop [speak  
Is the king's hand and tongue ; and who dare  
One syllable against him ?

*Gar.* Yes, yes, sir Thomas,  
There are that dare ; and I myself have ven-  
tured [day,

To speak my mind of him : and, indeed, this  
Sir, (I may tell it you,) I think I have  
Incens'd\* the lords o'the council, that he is  
(For so I know he is, they know he is,)  
A most arch heretic, a pestilence [moved,  
That does infect the land : with which they  
Have broken† with the king ; who hath so far  
Given ear to our complaint, (of his great grace  
And princely care ; foreseeing those fell mis-  
chiefs [manded,

Our reasons laid before him,) he hath com-  
To-morrow morning to the council-board  
He be convented‡. He's a rank weed, sir  
Thomas,

And we must root him out. From your affairs  
I hinder you too long : good night, sir Thomas.

*Lov.* Many good nights, my lord ; I rest  
your servant.

[*Exeunt GARDINER and Page.*  
*As LOVELL is going out, enter the King, and  
the Duke of SUFFOLK.*

*K. Hen.* Charles, I will play no more to-  
night ;

My mind's not on't, you are too hard for me.

*Suf.* Sir, I did never win of you before.

*K. Hen.* But little, Charles ;

Nor shall not, when my fancy's on my play.—  
Now, Lovell, from the queen what is the news ?

*Lov.* I could not personally deliver to her  
What you commanded me, but by her woman  
I sent your message ; who return'd her thanks  
In the greatest humbleness, and desired your  
Most heartily to pray for her. [highness

*K. Hen.* What say'st thou ? ha !  
To pray for her ? what, is she crying out ?

*Lov.* So said her woman ; and that her suf-  
Almost each pang a death. [ferance made

*K. Hen.* Alas, good lady !

*Suf.* God safely quit her of her burden, and  
With gentle travail, to the gladding of  
Your highness with an heir !

*K. Hen.* 'Tis midnight, Charles,  
Pr'ythee, to bed ; and in thy prayers remember  
The estate of my poor queen. Leave me alone ;  
For I must think of that, which company  
Will not be friendly to.

*Suf.* I wish your highness  
quiet night, and my good mistress will  
remember in my prayers.

*K. Hen.* Charles, good night.  
[*Exit SUFFOLK.*

*Enter Sir ANTHONY DENNY.*

Well, sir, what follows ?

*Den.* Sir, I have brought my lord the arch-  
As you commanded me. [bishop

*K. Hen.* Ha ! Canterbury ?

*Den.* Ay, my good lord.

*K. Hen.* 'Tis true : Where is he, Denny ?

*Den.* He attends your highness' pleasure.

*K. Hen.* Bring him to us  
[*Exit DENNY.*

*Lov.* This is about that which the bishop  
spake ;

I am happily come nither. [Aside.

*Re-enter DENNY, with CRANMER.*

*K. Hen.* Avoid the gallery.

[*LOVELL seems to stay.*

Ha !—I have said.—Be gone.

What !— [*Exeunt LOVELL and DENNY.*

*Cran.* I am fearful :—Wherefore frowns he  
'Tis his aspect of terror. All's not well. [thus ?

*K. Hen.* How now, my lord ? You do de-  
Wherefore I sent for you. [sire to know

*Cran.* It is my duty

To attend your highness' pleasure.

*K. Hen.* Pray you, arise,  
My good and gracious lord of Canterbury.  
Come, you and I must walk a turn together ;  
I have news to tell you : Come, come, give me  
your hand.

Ah, my good lord, I grieve at what I speak,  
And am right sorry to repeat what follows :

I have, and most unwillingly, of late,  
Heard many grievous, I do say, my lord,  
Grievous complaints of you ; which, being con-  
sider'd,

Have moved us and our council, that you shall  
This morning come before us ; where, I know,  
You cannot with such freedom purge yourself,  
But that, till further trial, in those charges  
Which will require your answer, you must take  
Your patience to you, and be well contented  
To make your house our Tower : You a bro-  
ther of us §,

It fits we thus proceed, or else no witness  
Would come against you.

*Cran.* I humbly thank your highness ;  
And am right glad to catch this good occasion  
Most thoroughly to be winnow'd, where my  
And corn shall fly asunder : for, I know, [chaff  
There's none stands under more calumnious  
tongues,

Than I myself, poor man.

*K. Hen.* Stand up, good Canterbury  
Thy truth, and thy integrity, is rooted [up ;  
In us, thy friend : Give me thy hand, stand  
Pr'ythee, let's walk. Now, by my holy dame,  
What manner of man are you ? My lord, I  
look'd

You would have given me your petition, that  
I should have ta'en some pains to bring to  
gether [you

Yourself and your accusers ; and to have heard  
Without indurance further.

*Cran.* Most dread liege,  
The good I stand on is my truth, and honesty  
If they shall fail, I with mine enemies,

Set on

† Told their minds.

‡ Summoned.

§ One of the council.



Will triumph o'er my person; which I weigh\*  
not,

Being of those virtues vacant. I fear nothing  
What can be said against me.

*K. Hen.* Know you not how  
Your state stands i'the world, with the whole  
Your enemies [world?]  
Are many, and not small; their practices  
Must bear the same proportion; and not ever†  
The justice and the truth o'the question carries  
The due o'the verdict with it: At what ease  
Might corrupt minds procure knaves as corrupt  
To swear against you? such things have been  
done.

You are potently opposed; and with a malice  
Of as great size. Ween† you of better luck,  
I mean, in perjured witness, than your master,  
Whose minister you are, whilst here he lived  
Upon this naughty earth? Go to, go to  
You take a precipice for no leap of danger,  
And woo your own destruction.

*Cran.* God, and your majesty,  
Protect mine innocence, or I fall into  
The trap is laid for me!

*K. Hen.* Be of good cheer; [to.  
They shall no more prevail, than we give way  
Keep comfort to you; and this morning see  
You do appear before them; if they shall  
chance,

In charging you with matters, to commit you,  
The best persuasions to the contrary  
Fail not to use, and with what vehemency  
The occasion shall instruct you: if entreaties  
Will render you no remedy, this ring  
Deliver them, and your appeal to us  
There make before them.—Look, the good  
man weeps! [mother!

He's honest, on mine honour. God's blest  
I swear, he is true-hearted; and a soul  
None better in my kingdom.—Get you gone,  
And do as I have bid you.—[*Exit CRANMER.*]  
He has strangled

His language in his tears.

*Enter an old Lady.*

*Gent.* [Within.] Come back; What mean  
you? [I bring

*Lady.* I'll not come back: the tidings that  
Will make my boldness manners.—Now, good  
angels

Fly o'er thy royal head, and shade thy person  
Under their blessed wings!

*K. Hen.* Now, by thy looks  
I guess thy message. Is the queen deliver'd?  
Say ay; and of a boy.

*Lady.* Ay, ay, my liege;  
And of a lovely boy: The God of heaven  
Both now and ever bless her!—'tis a girl,  
Promises boys hereafter. Sir, your queen  
Desires your visitation, and to be  
Acquainted with this stranger; 'tis as like you,  
As cherry is to cherry.

*K. Hen.* Lovell,—

*Enter LOVELL.*

*Lov.* Sir,

*K. Hen.* Give her an hundred marks. I'll  
to the queen. [Exit King.]

*Lady.* An hundred marks! By this light,  
I'll have more:

An ordinary groom is for such payment;  
I will have more, or scold it out of him  
Said I for this, the girl is like to him?  
I will have more, or else ansay't; and now  
While it is hot, I'll put it to the issue.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. Lobby before the Council-Chamber.

*Enter CRANMER; Servants, Door-keeper,  
&c. attending.*

*Cran.* I hope I am not too late; and yet the  
gentleman, [me  
That was sent to me from the council, pray'd  
To make great haste. All fast? what means  
this?—Hoa!

Who waits there?—Sure, you know me?

*D. Keep.* Yes, my lord;  
But yet I cannot help you.

*Cran.* Why? [call'd for.

*D. Keep.* Your grace must wait, till you be  
*Enter Doctor BUTTS.*

*Cran.* So.  
*Butts.* This is a piece of malice. I am glad,  
I came this way so happily: The king  
Shall understand it presently. [Exit BUTTS.

*Cran.* [Aside.] 'Tis Butts,  
The king's physician; As he past along,  
How earnestly he cast his eyes upon me!  
Pray heaven, he sound not my disgrace! For  
certain,

This is of purpose laid, by some that hate me,  
(God turn their hearts! I never sought their  
malice.) [make me

To quench mine honour: they would shame to  
Wait else at door; a fellow counsellor,  
Among boys, grooms, and lackeys. But their  
pleasures

Must be fulfill'd, and I attend with patience.

*Enter at a window above, the King and  
BUTTS.*

*Butts.* I'll show your grace the strangest  
sight—

*K. Hen.* What's that, Butts?

*Butts.* I think your highness saw this morn'g

*K. Hen.* Body o'me, where is it? [a day

*Butts.* There, my lord:

The high promotion of his grace of Canter-  
bury; [vaults,

Who holds his state at door, 'mongst pursni-  
Pages, and footboys.

*K. Hen.* Ha! 'Tis he indeed:

Is this the honour they do one another?

'Tis well there's one above them yet. I had  
thought

They had parted so much honesty among them,  
(At least, good manners,) as not thus to suffer  
A man of his place, and so near our favour,  
To dance attendance on their lordships' plea-  
sures,

And at the door too, like a post with packets.  
By holy Mary, Butts, there's knavery:

Let them alone, and draw the curtain close,  
We shall hear more anon.— [*Exeunt.*]

## THE COUNCIL CHAMBER.

*Enter the Lord Chancellor, the Duke of Suffolk, Earl of Surrey, Lord Chamberlain, GARINER, and CROMWELL. The Chancellor places himself at the upper end of the table on the left hand; a seat being left void above him, as for the Archbishop of Canterbury. The rest seat themselves in order on each side. CROMWELL at the lower end, as secretary.*

*Chan.* Speak to the business, master secretary. Why are we met in council? [*tary:*

*Crom.* Please your honours,

The chief cause concerns his grace of Canterbury. Has he had knowledge of it? [*bury.*

*Crom.* Yes.

*Nor.* Who waits there?

*D. Keep.* Without, my noble lords?

*Gar.* Yes.

*D. Keep.* My lord archbishop;

And has done half an hour, to know your pleasure.

*Chan.* Let him come in. [*sures.*

*D. Keep.* Your grace may enter now.

[*CRANMER approaches the Council-table.*

*Chan.* My good lord archbishop, I am very

To sit here at this present, and behold [*sorry*

That chair stand empty: But we all are men,

In our own natures frail; and capable

Of our flesh, few are angels: out of which

frailty, [*teach us,*

And want of wisdom, you, that best should

Have misdeemean'd yourself, and not a little,

Toward the king first, then his laws, in filling

The whole realm, by your teaching, and your

chaplains,

(For so we are inform'd,) with new opinions,

Divers, and dangerous; which are heresies,

And, not reform'd, may prove pernicious.

*Gar.* Which reformation must be sudden too,

My noble lords: for those that tame wild

horses, [*gentle;*

Pace them not in their hands to make them

But stop their mouths with stubborn bits, and

spur them,

Till they obey the manage. If we suffer

(Out of our easiness, and childish pity

To one man's honour) this contagious sickness,

Farewell all physic: And what follows then?

Commotions, uproars, with a general taint

Of the whole state: as, of late days, our neigh-

The upper Germany can dearly witness, [*bours,*

Yet freshly pictured in our memories.

*Cran.* My good lords, hitherto, in all the

progress

Both of my life and office, I have labour'd,

And with no little study, that my teaching

And the strong course of my authority,

Might go one way, and safely; and the end

Was ever to do well: nor is there living

(I speak it with a single heart\*, my lords)

A man that more detests, more stirs against,

Both in his private conscience, and his place,

Defacers of a public peace, than I do.

\*Pray heaven, the king may never find a heart

With less allegiance in it! Men that make

Envy, and crooked malice nourishment,  
Dare bite the best. I do beseech your lordships  
That, in this case of justice, my accusers,  
Be what they will, may stand forth face to face,  
And freely urge against me.

*Suf.* Nay, my lord,  
That cannot be; you are a counsellor,  
And, by that virtue, no man dare accuse you.

*Gar.* My lord, because we have business of  
more moment, [*pleasure,*

We will be short with you. 'Tis his highness'

And our consent, for better trial of you,

From hence you be committed to the Tower;

Where, being but a private man again,

You shall know many dare accuse you boldly,

More than, I fear, you are provided for.

*Cran.* Ah, my good lord of Winchester, I

thank you, [*pass,*

You are always my good friend; if your will

I shall both find your lordship judge and juror,

You are so merciful: I see your end,

'Tis my undoing: Love, and meekness, lord,

Become a churchman better than ambition;

Win straying souls with modesty again,

Cast none away. That I shall clear myself,

Lay all the weight ye can upon my patience,

I make as little doubt, as you do conscience,

In doing daily wrongs. I could say more,

But reverence to your calling makes me modest.

*Gar.* My lord, my lord, you are a sectary,

That's the plain truth; your painted gloss discovers,

To men that understand you, words and weak [*nest.*

*Crom.* My lord of Winchester, you are a

little,

By your good favour, too sharp; men so noble,

However faulty, yet should find respect

For what they have been: 'tis a cruelty

To load a falling man.

*Gar.* Good master secretary,

I cry your honour mercy; you may, worst

Of all this table, say so.

*Crom.* Why, my lord?

*Gar.* Do not I know you for a favourer

Of this new sect? ye are not sound.

*Crom.* Not sound?

*Gar.* Not sound, I say.

*Crom.* 'Would you were half so honest!

Men's prayers then would seek you, not their

fears.

*Gar.* I shall remember this bold language.

*Crom.* Do.

Remember your bold life too.

*Chan.* This is too much;

Forbear, for shame, my lords.

*Gar.* I have done.

*Crom.* And I.

*Chan.* Then thus for you, my lord,—It stands

agreed,

I take it, by all voices, that forthwith

You be convey'd to the Tower a prisoner;

There to remain, till the king's further pleasure

Be known unto us: Are you all agreed, lords?

*All.* We are.

*Cran.* Is there no other way of mercy,  
But I must needs to the Tower, my lords?

*Gar.* What other  
Would you expect? You are strangely trouble-  
Let some o' the guard be ready there. [some!]  
*Enter Guard.*

*Cran.* For me?  
Must I go like a traitor thither?

*Gar.* Receive him,  
And see him safe i' the Tower.

*Cran.* Stay, good my lords,  
I have a little yet to say. Look there, my  
lords;

By virtue of that ring, I take my cause  
Out of the gripes of cruel men, and give it  
To a most noble judge, the king my master.

*Cham.* This is the king's ring.

*Suf.* 'Tis no counterfeit.  
*Suf.* 'Tis the right ring, by heaven: I told  
ye all, [rolling,

When we first put this dangerous stone a  
'Would fall upon ourselves.

*Nor.* Do you think, my lords,  
The king will suffer but the little finger  
Of this man to be vex'd?

*Cham.* 'Tis now too certain:  
How much more is his life in value with him?  
Would I were fairly out on't.

*Crom.* My mind gave me,  
In seeking tales and informations  
Against this man, (whose honesty the devil  
And his disciples only envy at,) [at ye.

Ye blew the fire that burns ye: Now have  
*Enter the King, frowning on them; takes  
his seat.*

*Gar.* Dread sovereign, how much are we  
bound to heaven

In daily thanks, that gave us such a prince;  
Not only good and wise, but most religious:  
One that, in all obedience, makes the church  
The chiefaim of his honour; and, to strengthen  
That holy duty, out of dear respect,  
His royal self in judgment comes to hear  
The cause betwixt her and this great offender.

*K. Hen.* You were ever good at sudden  
commendations,

Bishop of Winchester. But know, I come not  
To hear such flattery now, and in my pre-  
sence;

They are too thin and base to hide offences.  
To me you cannot reach; you play the spaniel,  
And think with wagging of your tongue to  
win me;

But whatso'er thou tak'st me for, I am sure,  
Thou hast a cruel nature, and a bloody.—  
Good man, [To CRANMER.] sit down. Now  
let me see the proudest

He that dares most, but wag his finger at thee:  
By all that's holy, he had better starve,  
Than but once think his place becomes thee

*Suf.* May it please your grace,— [not.

*K. Hen.* No, sir, it does not please me.  
I had thought I had had men of some under-  
standing

And wisdom, of my council; but I find none.  
Was it discretion, lords, to let this man,

this good man, (few of you deserve that  
title.)

This honest man, wait like a lousy footboy  
At chamber door? and one as great as you  
are? [mission

Why, what a shame was this? Did my com-  
Bid ye so far forget yourselves? I gave ye  
Power, as he was a counsellor, to try him,  
Not as a groom; There's some of ye, I see,  
More out of malice than integrity.

Would try him to the utmost, had ye mean;  
Which ye shall never have, while I live.

*Chan.* Thus far,  
My most dread sovereign, may it like your  
grace [posed

To let my tongue excuse all. What was pur-  
Concerning his imprisonment, was rather  
(If there be faith in men) meant for his trial,  
And fair purgation to the world, than malice,  
I am sure, in me.

*K. Hen.* Well, well, my lords, respect him;  
Take him, and use him well, he's worthy  
of it.

I will say thus much for him, If a prince

May be beholden to a subject, I

Am, for his love and service, so to him.

Make me no inore ado, but all embrace him;  
Be friends, for shame, my lords.—My lord of  
Canterbury,

I have a suit which you must not deny me;  
That is, a fair young maid that yet wants  
baptism,

You must be godfather, and answer for her.

*Cran.* The greatest monarch now alive may  
glory

In such an honour; How may I deserve it,  
That am a poor and humble subject to you?

*K. Hen.* Come, come, my lord, you'd spare  
your spoons\*; you shall have

Two noble partners with you; the old duchess  
of Norfolk, [you?

And lady marquis Dorset; Will these please  
Once more, my lord of Winchester, I charge  
Embrace, and love this man. [yon,

*Gar.* With a true heart,  
And brother-love, I do it.

*Cran.* And let heaven  
Witness, how dear I hold this confirmation.

*K. Hen.* Good man, those joyful tears show  
thy true heart.

The common voice, I see, is verified

Of thee, which says thus, *Do my lord of  
Canterbury* [ever.—

*A shrewd turn, and he's your friend for*  
Come, lords, we trifle time away; I long

To have this young one made a christian.

As I have made ye one, lords, one remain;

So I grow stronger, you more honour gain.

[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III. The Palace Yard.

*Noise and tumult within. Enter Porter  
and his Man.*

*Port.* You'll leave your noise anon, ye ras-  
cals: Do you take the court for Paris-garden?†  
ye rude slaves, leave your gaping‡.

\* It was an ancient custom for sponsors to present spoons to their god-children,

† The bear-garden on the bank side.

‡ Roaring.



[*Within.*] Good master porter, I belong to the larder.

*Port.* Belong to the gallows, and be hanged, you rogue: Is this a place to roar in?—Fetch me a dozen crab-tree staves, and strong ones; these are but switches to them.—I'll scratch your heads: You must beseege christenings? Do you look for ale and cakes here, you rude rascals?

*Man.* Pray, sir, be patient; 'tis as much impossible [cannons,]

(Unless we sweep them from the door with To scatter them, as 'tis to make them sleep On May-day morning; which will never be: We may as well push against Paul's, as stir them.

*Port.* How got they in, and be hang'd? [in?]

*Man.* Alas, I know not; How gets the tide As much as one sound cudgel of four foot (You see the poor remainder) could distribute, I made no spare, sir.

*Port.* You did nothing, sir.

*Man.* I am not Samson, nor Sir Guy, nor Colbrand\*, to mow them down before me: but, if I spared any that had a head to hit, either young or old, he or she, cuckold or cuckold-maker, let me never hope to see a chine again; and that I would not for a cow, God save her.

[*Within.*] Do you hear, master Porter?

*Port.* I shall be with you presently, good master puppy.—Keep the door close, sirrah.

*Man.* What would you have me do?

*Port.* What should you do, but knock them down by the dozens? Is this Moorfields to muster in? or have we some strange Indian with the great tool come to court, the women so besiege us? Bless me, what a fry of fornication is at door! On my christian conscience, this one christening will beget a thousand; here will be father, godfather, and all together.

*Man.* The spoons will be the bigger, sir. There is a fellow somewhat near the door, he should be a brazier by his face, for, o' my conscience, twenty of the dog-days now reign in's nose; all that stand about him are under the line, they need no other penance: That fire-drake did I hit three times on the head, and three times was his nose discharged against me; he stands there like a mortar-piece, to blow us. There was a haberdasher's wife of small wit near him, that railed upon me till her pink'd porringer† fell off her head, for kindling such a combustion in the state. I miss'd the meteor‡ once, and hit that woman, who cried out, *clubs!* when I might see from far some forty truncheoners draw to her succour, which were the hope of the Strand, where she was quartered. They fell on; I made good my place; at length they came to the broomstaff with me, I defied them still; when suddenly a file of boys behind them, loose shot, delivered such a shower of pebbles, that I was fain to draw mine honour in, and let them win the work: The devil was amongst them, I think, surely.

*Por.* These are the youths that thunder at a lay-house, and fight for bitten apples; that no

audience, but the Tribulation of Tower-hill, o the Limbs of Limehouse, their dear brothers, are able to endure. I have some of them in *Limbo Patrum*§, and there they are like to dance these three days; besides the running banquet of two beadles||, that is to come.

*Enter the Lord Chamberlain.*

*Cham.* Mercy o' me, what a multitude are here!

They grow still too, from all parts they are coming,

As if we kept a fair here! Where are these porters,

These lazy knaves!—Ye have made a fine hand, fellows,

There's a trim rabble let in: Are all these Your faithful friends o'the suburbs? We shall have [ladies,

Great store of room, no doubt, left for the When they pass back from the christening.

*Port.* An't please your honour, We are but men; and what so many may do, Not being torn a pieces, we have done: An army cannot rule them.

*Cham.* As I live, If the king blame me for't, I'll lay ye all By the heels, and suddenly; and on your heads Clap round fines, for neglect: You are lazy knaves;

And here ye lie baiting of bumbards¶, when Ye should do service. Hark, the trumpets sound;

They are come already from the christening: Go, break among the press, and find a way out To let the troop pass fairly; or I'll find A Marshalsea, shall hold you play these two months.

*Port.* Make way there for the princess.

*Man.* You great fellow, stand close up, or I'll make your head ache.

*Port.* You i' the camblet, get up o' the rail; I'll pick\*\* you o'er the pale's else.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE IV. The Palace ††.

*Enter Trumpets, sounding; then two Aldermen, Lord Mayor, Garter, CRANMER, Duke of NORFOLK, with his Marshal's Staff, Duke of SUFFOLK, two Noblemen bearing great standing bowls for the christening gifts; then four Noblemen bearing a canopy, under which the Duchess of NORFOLK, godmother, bearing the child richly habited in a mantle, &c. Train borne by a Lady; then follows the Marchioness of DORSET, the other godmother, and Ladies. The Troop pass once about the stage, and Garter speaks.*

*Gart.* Heaven, from thy endless goodness send prosperous life, long, and ever happy, the high and mighty princess of England, Elizabeth.

*Flourish. Enter King, and Train.*

*Cran.* [Kneeling]. And to your royal grace and the good queen,

\* Guy of Warwick, nor Colbrand the Danish giant.

† The brazier.

‡ Black leather vessels to hold beer.

§ Place of confinement.

\*\* Pitch.

† Pink'd cap.

|| A desert of whipping.

†† At Greenwich.

My noble partners, and myself, thus pray:—  
All comfort, joy, in this most gracious lady,  
Heaven ever lai'd up to make parents happy,  
May hourly fall upon ye! [bishop;

*K. Hen.* Thank you, good lord arch-  
What is her name?

*Cran.* Elizabeth.

*K. Hen.* Stand up, lord.—

[*The King kisses the Child.*

With this kiss take my blessing: God protect  
Into whose hands I give thy life. [thee,

*Cran.* Amen.

*K. Hen.* My noble gossips, ye have been  
too prodigal;

I thank ye heartily; so shall this lady,  
When she has so much English.

*Cran.* Let me speak, sir,

For heaven now bids me; and the words I utter  
Let none think flattery, for they'll find them  
truth. [her!]

This royal infant, (heaven still move about  
Though in her cradle, yet now promises

Upon this land a thousand thousand blessings,  
Which time shall bring to ripeness: She shall be

(But few now living can behold that goodness)  
A pattern to all princes living with her,

And all that shall succeed: Sheba was never  
More covetous of wisdom, and fair virtue,

Than this pure soul shall be: all princely graces  
That mould up such a mighty piece as this is,

With all the virtues that attend the good, [her;  
Shall still be doubled on her: truth shall nurse

Holy and heavenly thoughts still counsel her;  
She shall be loved, and feared: Her own shall

bless her:  
Her foes shake like a field of beaten corn,

And hang their heads with sorrow: Good  
grows with her:

In her days, every man shall eat in safety,  
Under his own vine, what he plants; and sing

The merry songs of peace to all his neighbours:  
God shall be truly known; and those about her

From her shall read the perfect ways of ho-  
nour, [blood,

And by those claim their greatness, not by  
[Nor \* shall this peace sleep with her: But as

when

The bird of wonder dies, the maiden phoenix,  
Her ashes new create another heir,  
As great in admiration as herself;  
So shall she leave her blessedness to one,  
(When heaven shall call her from this cloud of  
darkness,)

Who, from the sacred ashes of her honour,  
Shall star-like rise, as great in fame as she was,  
And so stand fix'd: Peace, plenty, love, truth,  
terror,

That were the servants to this chosen infant,  
Shall then be his, and like a vine grow to him;

Wherever the bright sun of heaven shall shine,  
His honour, and the greatness of his name

Shall be, and make new nations: He shall  
flourish,

And, like a mountain cedar, reach his branches  
To all the plains about him:—Our children's

Shall see this, and bless heaven. [children

*K. Hen.* Thou speakest wonders.

*Cran.* She shall be, to the happiness of  
England,

An aged princess; many days shall see her,  
And yet no day without a deed to crown it.

Would I had known no more! but she must  
die, [gin,

She must, the saints must have her; yet a vir-  
A most unspotted lily shall she pass [her.

To the ground, and all the world shall mourn  
*K. Hen.* O lord archbishop, [fore

Thou hast made me now a man; never, be-  
This happy child, did I get any thing:

This oracle of comfort has so pleased me,  
That, when I am in heaven, I shall desire

To see what this child does, and praise my  
Maker.—

I thank ye all,—To you, my good lord mayor,  
And your good brethren, I am much beholden:

I have received much honour by your pre-  
sence, [way, lords;—

And ye shall find me thankful. Lead the  
Ye must all see the queen, and she must thank

ye, [think  
She will be sick else. This day, no man

He has business at his house; for all shall stay,  
This little one shall make it holiday. [Exeunt.

### EPILOGUE.

'Tis ten to one, this play can never please  
All that are here: Some come to take their ease,

And sleep an act or two; but those, we fear,  
We have frighted with our trumpets; so, 'tis

clear  
They'll say, 'tis nought: others, to hear the city

Abused extremely, and to cry,—*that's witty!*  
Which we have not done neither: that, I fear,

All the expected good we are like to hear  
For this play at this time, is only in

The merciful construction of good women  
For such a one we showed them; If they

smile,  
And say, 'twill do, I know, within a while,

All the best men are ours; for 'tis ill hap,  
If they hold, when their ladies bid them clap.

This and the following seventeen lines were probably written by Ben Jonson, after the  
accession of K. James.

# TROILUS AND CRESSIDA.

## Persons represented.

PRIAM, *King of Troy.*

HECTOR,

TROILUS,

PARIS,

DEIPHOBUS,

HELENUS,

ÆNEAS,

ANTENOR,

CALCHAS, *a Trojan priest, taking part with the Greeks.*

PANDARUS, *Uncle to Cressida.*

MARGARELON, *a bastard son of Priam.*

AGAMEMNON, *the Grecian General.*

MENELAUS, *his brother.*

ACHILLES,

AJAX,

ULYSSES,

} *his sons.*

} *Trojan Commanders.*

} *Grecian Commanders.*

NESTOR,

DIOMEDES,

PATROCLUS,

THERSITES, *a deformed and scurrilous Grecian.*

ALEXANDER, *servant to Cressida.*

Servant to *Troilus*; Servant to *Paris*; Servant to *Diomedes*.

HELEN, *wife to Menelaus.*

ANDROMACHE, *wife to Hector.*

CASSANDRA, *daughter to Priam; a Prophetess.*

CRESSIDA, *daughter to Calchas.*

*Trojan and Greek Soldiers, and Attendants*

Scene—*Troy, and the Grecian Camp before it.*

## PROLOGUE.

In Troy, there lies the scene. From isles of Greece

The princes orgulous\*, their high blood chafed,  
Have to the port of Athens sent their ships,  
Fraught with the ministers and instruments  
Of cruel war: Sixty and nine, that wore  
Their crowns regal, from the Athenian bay  
Put forth toward Phrygia: and their vow is made,

To ransack Troy; within whose strong im-  
The ravish'd Helen, Menelaus' queen,  
With wanton Paris sleeps: And that's the  
To Tenedos they come: [quarrel.  
And the deep-drawing barks do there disgorge  
Their warlike fraughtage†: Now on Dardan  
plains

The fresh and yet unbruised Greeks do pitch  
Their brave pavilions: Priam's six-gated city

Dardan, and Tymbria, Ilias, Chetas, Trojan,  
And Antenorides, with massy staples,  
And corresponsive and fulfilling bolts,  
Sperr‡ up the sons of Troy.  
Now expectation, tickling skittish spirits,  
On one and other side, Trojan and Greek,  
Sets all on hazard:—And hither am I come  
A prologue arm'd,—but not in confidence  
Of author's pen, or actor's voice; but suited  
In like conditions as our argument,—  
To tell you, fair beholders, that our play  
Leaps o'er the vauit§ and firstlings of those  
broils,  
'Ginning in the middle; starting thence away  
To what may be digested in a play.  
Like, or find fault; do as your pleasures are:  
Now good, or bad, 'tis but the chance of war

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *Troy. Before Priam's Palace.*

*Enter TROILUS armed, and PANDARUS.*

Tro. Call here my varlet||, I'll unarm again:  
Why should I war without the walls of Troy,  
That find such cruel battle here within?  
Each Trojan, that is master of his heart,  
Let him to field; Troilus, alas! hath none.

Pan. Will this gear¶ ne'er be mended?

Tro. The Greeks are strong, and skilful to  
their strength, [valiant;  
Fierce to their skill, and to their fierceness  
But I am weaker than a woman's tear,

Tamer than sleep, fonder\*\* than ignorance;  
Less valiant than the virgin in the night,  
And skill-less as unpractised infancy.

Pan. Well, I have told you enough of this:  
for my part, I'll not meddle nor make no mat-  
ther. He that will have a cake out of the  
wheat, must tarry the grinding.

Tro. Have I not tarried?

Pan. Ay, the grinding; but you must tarry  
the bolting.

Tro. Have I not tarried?

Pan. Ay, the bolting; but you must tarry  
the leavening.

Tro. Still have I tarried.

\* Proud, disdainful.

† Freight.

|| A servant to a knight.

‡ Shut.

§ Habit.

Avant, what went before.

\*\* More foolish.



*Pan.* Ay, to the leavening: but here's yet in the word—hereafter, the kneading, the making of the cake, the heating of the oven, and the baking; nay, you must stay the cooling too, or you may chance to burn your lips.

*Tro.* Patience herself what goddess e'er she be,

Doth lesser blench \* at sufferance than I do.

At Priam's royal table do I sit;

And when fair Cressid comes into my thoughts, So, traitor! when she comes!—When is she thence?

*Pan.* Well, she looked yesternight fairer than ever I saw her look, or any woman else.

*Tro.* I was about to tell thee,—When my heart,

As wedged with a sigh, would rive† in twain; Lest Hector or my father should perceive me, I have (as when the sun doth light a storm) Buried this sigh in wrinkle of a smile: [ness, But sorrow, that is couched in seeming glad Is like that mirth fate turns to sudden sadness.

*Pan.* An her hair were not somewhat darker than Helen's, (well, go to,) there were no more comparison between the women—But, for my part, she is my kinswoman; I would not, as they term it, praise her—But I would somebody had heard her talk yesterday, as I did. I will not dispraise your sister Cassandra's wit; but—

*Tro.* O Pandarus! I tell thee, Pandarus,—When I do tell thee, There my hopes lie drowned,

Reply not in how many fathoms deep They lie indrenched. I tell thee, I am mad In Cressid's love: Thou answer'st, She is fair; Pourest in the open ulcer of my heart [voice; Her eyes, her hair, her cheek, her gait, her Handlest in thy discourse, O, that her hand, In whose comparison all whites are ink, Writing their own reproach; To whose soft seizure

The cygnet's down is harsh, and spirit of sense Hard as the palm of ploughmen! This thou tell'st me, [her;

As true thou tell'st me, when I say—I love But saying thus, instead of oil and balm, Thou layest in every gash that love hath given The knife that made it. [me

*Pan.* I speak no more than truth.

*Tro.* Thou dost not speak so much.

*Pan.* 'Faith, I'll not meddle in't. Let her be as she is: if she be fair, 'tis the better for her; an she be not, she has the mends in her own hands.

*Tro.* Good Pandarus! How now, Pandarus?

*Pan.* I have had my labour for my travel; ill thought on of her, and ill-thought on of you: gone between and between, but small thanks for my labour.

*Tro.* What, art thou angry, Pandarus? what, with me?

*Pan.* Because she is kin to me, therefore, she's not so fair as Helen: an she were not kin to me, she would be as fair on Friday, as Hel-

len is on Sunday. But what care I? I care not, an she were a black-a-moor; 'tis all one to me.

*Tro.* Say I she is not fair?

*Pan.* I do not care whether you do or no. She's a fool to stay behind her father; let her to the Greeks; and so I'll tell her the next time I see her: for my part, I'll meddle nor make no more in the matter.

*Tro.* Pandarus,—

*Pan.* Not I.

*Tro.* Sweet Pandarus,—

*Pan.* Pray you speak no more to me; I will leave all as I found it, and there an end.

[Exit PANDARUS. An Alarum.

*Tro.* Peace, you ungracious clamours! peace, rude sounds! [fair,

Fools on both sides! Helen must needs be When with your blood you daily paint her I cannot fight upon this argument; [thus. It is too starved a subject for my sword.

But Pandarus—O gods, how do you plague me! I cannot come to Cressid, but by Pandar;

And he's as tetchy to be woo'd to woo, As she is stubborn-chaste against all suit.

Tell me, Apollo, for thy Daphne's love, What Cressid is, what Pandar, and what we? Her bed is India; there she lies, a pearl: Between our Ilion, and where she resides, Let it be call'd the wild and wandering flood; Ourself, the merchant; and this sailing Pandar, Our doubtful hope, our convoy, and our bark.

Alarum. Enter ÆNEAS.

*Æne.* How now, prince Troilus? wherefore not afield? [swear sorts ‡,

*Tro.* Because not there; This woman's an- For womanish it is to be from thence.

What news, Æneas, from the field to-day?

*Æne.* That Paris is returned home, and hurt.

*Tro.* By whom, Æneas?

*Æne.* Troilus, by Menelaus.

*Tro.* Let Paris bleed: 'tis but a scar to scorn: Paris is gored with Menelaus' horn. [Alarum.

*Æne.* Hark! what good sport is out of tow to-day! [may.—

*Tro.* Better at home, if would I might were But to the sport abroad;—Are you bound

*Æne.* In all swift haste. [thither?

*Tro.* Come, go we then together. [Exit.

## SCENE II. The same. A Street.

Enter CRESSIDA and ALEXANDER.

*Cres.* Who were those went by?

*Alex.* Queen Hecuba, and Helen.

*Cres.* And whither go they?

*Alex.* Up to the eastern tower,

Whose height commands as subject all the vale,

To see the battle. Hector, whose patience Is as a virtue fix'd, to-day was moved:

He chid Andromache, and struck his armourer;

And, like as there were husbandry in war,

Before the sun rose, he was harness'd light,

And to the field goes he; where every flower

Did, as a prophet, weep what it foresaw

In Hector's wrath.

\* Shrink.

† Split.

‡ Suits.

3 N

*Cres.* What was his cause of anger?

*Alex.* The noise goes this: There is among the Greeks

A lord of Trojan blood, nephew to Hector;  
They call him, Ajax.

*Cres.* Good; And what of him?

*Alex.* They say he is a very man *per se*\*,  
And stands alone.

*Cres.* So do all men; unless they are drunk,  
sick, or have no legs.

*Alex.* This man, lady, hath robbed many  
beasts of their particular additions†; he is as  
valiant as the lion, churlish as the bear, slow as  
the elephant: a man into whom nature hath so  
crowded humours, that his valour is crushed‡  
into folly, his folly sauced with discretion:  
there is no man hath a virtue that he hath not  
a glimpse of; nor any man an attainment, but he  
carries some stain of it: he is melancholy with-  
out cause, and merry against the hair§: He  
hath the joints of every thing; but every thing  
so out of joint, that he is a gouty Briareus,  
many hands and no use; or purblind Argus, all  
eyes and no sight.

*Cres.* But how should this man, that makes  
me smile, make Hector angry?

*Alex.* They say he yesterday coped Hector  
in the battle, and struck him down; the dis-  
dain and shame whereof hath ever since kept  
Hector fasting and waking.

*Enter PANDARUS.*

*Cres.* Who comes here?

*Alex.* Madam, your uncle Pandarus.

*Cres.* Hector's a gallant man.

*Alex.* As may be in the world, lady.

*Pan.* What's that? what's that?

*Cres.* Good morrow, uncle Pandarus.

*Pan.* Good morrow, cousin Cressid: What  
do you talk of?—Good morrow, Alexander.—  
How do you, cousin? When were you at  
Ilium?

*Cres.* This morning, uncle.

*Pan.* What were you talking of, when I  
came? Was Hector armed, and gone, ere ye  
came to Ilium? Helen was not up, was she?

*Cres.* Hector was gone; but Helen was not  
up.

*Pan.* E'en so; Hector was stirring early.

*Cres.* That were we talking of, and of his  
anger.

*Pan.* Was he angry?

*Cres.* So he says here.

*Pan.* True, he was so; I know the cause  
too; he'll lay about him to-day, I can tell them  
that: and there is Troilus will not come far  
behind him; let them take heed of Troilus; I  
can tell them that too.

*Cres.* What, is he angry too?

*Pan.* Who, Troilus? Troilus is the better  
man of the two.

*Cres.* O, Jupiter! there's no comparison.

*Pan.* What, not between Troilus and Hec-  
tor? Do you know a man if you see him?

*Cres.* Ay; if ever I saw him before, and  
knew him.

*Pan.* Well, I say Troilus is Troilus.

*Cres.* Then you say as I say; for I am  
sure he is not Hector.

*Pan.* No, nor Hector is not Troilus, in  
some degree.

*Cres.* 'Tis just to each of them; he is himself.

*Pan.* Himself? Alas, poor Troilus! I would  
he were,—

*Cres.* So he is.

*Pan.* —'Condition, I had gone barefoot  
to India.

*Cres.* He is not Hector.

*Pan.* Himself? no, he's not himself.—  
Would 'a were himself! Well, the gods are  
above; Time must 'friend or end: Well,  
Troilus, well,—I would my heart were in her  
body!—No, Hector is not a better man than  
Troilus.

*Cres.* Excuse me.

*Pan.* He is elder.

*Cres.* Pardon me, pardon me.

*Pan.* The other's not come to't; you shall  
tell me another tale, when the other's come  
to't. Hector shall not have his wit this year.

*Cres.* He shall not need it, if he have his  
own.

*Pan.* Nor his qualities;—

*Cres.* No matter.

*Pan.* Nor his beauty.

*Cres.* 'Twould not become him, his own's  
better.

*Pan.* You have no judgment, niece: Helen  
herself swore the other day, that Troilus, for  
a brown favour, (for so 'tis, I must confess),—  
Not brown neither.

*Cres.* No, but brown.

*Pan.* 'Faith, to say truth, brown and not  
brown.

*Cres.* To say the truth, true and not true.

*Pan.* She praised his complexion above  
Paris.

*Cres.* Why, Paris hath colour enough.

*Pan.* So he has.

*Cres.* Then, Troilus should have too much:  
if she praised him above, his complexion is  
higher than his; he having colour enough, and  
the other higher, is too flaming a praise for a  
good complexion. I had as lief Helen's golden  
tongue had commended Troilus for a copper  
nose.

*Pan.* I swear to you, I think Helen loves  
him better than Paris.

*Cres.* Then she's a merry Greek, indeed.

*Pan.* Nay, I am sure she does. She came  
to him the other day into a compass'd win-  
dow,—and, you know, he has not past three  
or four hairs on his chin.

*Cres.* Indeed, a tapster's arithmetic may  
soon bring his particulars therein to a total.

*Pan.* Why, he is very young; and yet will  
he, within three pound, lift as much as his  
brother Hector.

*Cres.* Is he so young a man, and so old  
lifter¶?

*Pan.* But, to prove to you that Helen loves

\* By himself.

† Characters.  
‡ Bow.

§ Mingled.  
¶ Thier.

§ Grain.

him;—she came, and puts me her white hand to his cloven chin,——

*Cres.* Juno have mercy!—How came it cloven?

*Pan.* Why, you know, 'tis dimpled: I think his smiling becomes him better than any man in all Phrygia.

*Cres.* O, he smiles valiantly.

*Pan.* Does he not?

*Cres.* O yes, an 'twere a cloud in autumn.

*Pan.* Why, go to then:—But to prove to you that Helen loves Troilus,——

*Cres.* Troilus will stand to the proof, if you'll prove it so.

*Pan.* Troilus? why, he esteems her no more than I esteem an addle egg.

*Cres.* If you love an addle egg as well as you love an idle head, you would eat chickens i'the shell.

*Pan.* I cannot choose but laugh, to think how she tickled his chin;—Indeed, she has a marvellous white hand, I must needs confess.

*Cres.* Without the rack.

*Pan.* And she takes upon her to spy a white hair on his chin.

*Cres.* Alas, poor chin! many a wart is richer.

*Pan.* But, there was such laughing;—Queen Hecuba laughed, that her eyes ran o'er.

*Cres.* With mill-stones\*.

*Pan.* And Cassandra laughed.

*Cres.* But there was a more temperate fire under the pot of her eyes;—Did her eyes run o'er too?

*Pan.* And Hector laughed.

*Cres.* At what was all this laughing?

*Pan.* Marry, at the white hair that Helen spied on Troilus' chin.

*Cres.* An't had been a green hair, I should have laughed too.

*Pan.* They laughed not so much at the hair, as at his pretty answer.

*Cres.* What was his answer?

*Pan.* Quoth she, *Here's but one and fifty hairs on your chin, and one of them is white.*

*Cres.* This is her question.

*Pan.* That's true; make no question of that. *One and fifty hairs*, quoth he, *and one white: That white hair is my father, and all the rest are his sons.* Jupiter! quoth she, *which of these hairs is Paris my husband? The forked one*, quoth he; *pluck it out, and give it him.* But, there was such laughing! and Helen so blushed, and Paris so chafed, and all the rest so laughed, that it passed†.

*Cres.* So let it now; for it has been a great while going by.

*Pan.* Well, cousin, I told you a thing yesterday; think on't.

*Cres.* So I do.

*Pan.* I'll be sworn, 'tis true; he will weep you, an 'twere† a man born in April.

*Cres.* And I'll spring up in his tears, an 'twere a nettle against May.

[*A Retreat sounded.*]

*Pan.* Hark, they are coming from the field: Shall we stand up here, and see them, as they pass toward Ilium? good niece, do; sweet niece Cressida.

*Cres.* At your pleasure.

*Pan.* Here, here, here's an excellent place; here we may see most bravely; I'll tell you them all by their names, as they pass by; but mark Troilus above the rest.

*ÆNEAS passes over the stage.*

*Cres.* Speak not so loud.

*Pan.* That's Æneas; Is not that a brave man? he's one of the flowers of Troy, I can tell you; But mark Troilus; you shall see anon.

*Cres.* Who's that?

*ANTENOR passes over.*

*Pan.* That's Antenor; he has a shrewd wit, I can tell you; and he's a man good enough: he's one o'the soundest judgments in Troy, whosoever, and a proper man of person:—When comes Troilus!—I'll show you Troilus anon; if he see me, you shall see him nod at

*Cres.* Will he give you the nod? [me.

*Pan.* You shall see.

*Cres.* If he do, the rich shall have more.

*HECTOR passes over.*

*Pan.* That's Hector, that, that, look you, that; There's a fellow!—Go thy way, Hector!—There's a brave man, niece.—O brave Hector!—Look, how he looks! there's a countenance: Is't not a brave man?

*Cres.* O, a brave man!

*Pan.* Is 'a not? It does a man's heart good—Look you what hacks are on his helmet? look you yonder, do you see? look you there! There's no jesting: there's laying on; take't off who will, as they say: there be hacks!

*Cres.* Be those with swords?

*PARIS passes over.*

*Pan.* Swords? any thing, he cares not: an the devil come to him, it's all one: By god's lid, it does one's heart good:—Yonder comes Paris, yonder comes Paris: look ye yonder niece; Is't not a gallant man too, is't not?—Why, this is brave now.—Who said he came hurt home to-day? he's not hurt: why this will do Helen's heart good now. Ha! would I could see Troilus now!—you shall see Troilus anon.

*Cres.* Who's that?

*HELENUS passes over.*

*Pan.* That's Helenus,—I marvel where Troilus is!—That's Helenus;—I think he went not forth to-day:—That's Helenus.

*Cres.* Can Helenus fight, uncle?

*Pan.* Helenus? no;—yes, he'll fight indifferently well:—I marvel where Troilus is!—Hark! do you not hear the people cry, Troilus?—Helenus is a priest.

*Cres.* What sneaking fellow comes yonder?

*TROILUS passes over.*

*Pan.* Where? yonder? that's Deiphobus: 'Tis Troilus! there's a man, niece!—Hem!—brave Troilus! the prince of chivalry!

\* A proverbial saying.

† Went beyond bounds.

‡ As if 'twere.

§ A term in the game at cards called Noddy.



*Cres.* Peace, for shame, peace

*Pan.* Mark him: note him:—O brave Troilus!—look well upon him, niece; look you, how his sword is bloodied, and his helm\* more hack'd than Hector's; And how he looks, and how he goes!—O admirable youth! he ne'er saw three and twenty. Go thy way, Troilus, go thy way; had I a sister were a grace, or a daughter a goddess, he should take his choice. O admirable man! Paris†—Paris is dirt to him; and, I warrant, Helen, to change, would give an eye to boot.

*Forces pass over the stage.*

*Cres.* Here come more.

*Pan.* Asses, fools, dolts! chaff and bran, chaff and bran! porridge after meat! I could live and die i' the eyes of Troilus. Ne'er look, ne'er look: the eagles are gone; crows and daws, crows and daws! I had rather be such a man as Troilus than Agamemnon and all Greece.

*Cres.* There is among the Greeks, Achilles; a better man than Troilus.

*Pan.* Achilles? a drayman, a porter, a very camel.

*Cres.* Well, well.

*Pan.* Well, well?—Why, have you any discretion? have you any eyes? Do you know what a man is? Is not birth, beauty, good shape, discourse, manhood, learning, gentleness, virtue, youth, liberality, and such like, the spice and salt that season a man?

*Cres.* Ay, a minced man: and then to be baked with no date † in the pie,—for then the man's date is out.

*Pan.* You are such a woman! one knows not at what ward ‡ you lie.

*Cres.* Upon my back, to defend my belly; upon my wit, to defend my wiles; upon my secrecy, to defend mine honesty; my mask, to defend my beauty; and you, to defend all these: and at all these wards I lie, at a thousand watches.

*Pan.* Say one of your watches.

*Cres.* Nay, I'll watch you for that; and that's one of the chiefest of them too: if I cannot ward what I would not have hit, I can watch you for telling how I took the blow; unless it swell past hiding, and then it is past watching.

*Pan.* You are such another!

*Enter TROILUS' Boy.*

*Boy.* Sir, my lord would instantly speak with you.

*Pan.* Where?

*Boy.* At your own house; there he unarms him.

*Pan.* Good boy, tell him I come: [Exit Boy. I doubt, he be hurt.—Fare ye well, good niece.

*Cres.* Adieu, uncle.

*Pan.* I'll be with you, niece, by and by.

*Cres.* To bring, uncle,——

*Pan.* Ay, a token from Troilus.

*Cres.* By the same token—you are a bawd. [Exit PANDARUS.]

Words, vows, griefs, tears, and love's full sail. He offers in another's enterprise: [crifice, But more in Troilus thousand fold I see Than in the glass of Pandar's praise may be; Yet hold I off. Women are angels, wooing: Things won are done, joy's soul lies in the doing: [not this,—

That she beloved knows nought, that knows Men prize the thing ungain'd more than it is: That she was never yet, that ever knew Love got so sweet, as when desire did sue: Therefore this maxim out of love I teach,— Achievement is command; ungain'd, beseech: Then though my heart's content firm love doth bear,

Nothing of that shall from mine eyes appear [Exit

SCENE III. *The Grecian Camp. Before Agamemnon's Tent.*

*Trumpets. Enter AGAMEMNON, NESTOR, ULYSSES, MENELAUS, and Others.*

*Agam.* Princes, [cheeks? What grief hath set the jaundice on your The ample proposition, that hope makes In all designs begun on earth below, Fails in the promised largeness: checks and disasters

Grow in the veins of actions highest rear'd; As knots, by the conflux of meeting sap, Infect the sound pine, and divert his grain Tortive and errant § from his course of growth. Nor, princes, is it matter new to us, That we come short of our suppose so far, That, after seven years' siege, yet Troy walls stand;

Sith || every action that hath gone before, Whereof we have record, trial did draw Bias and thwart, not answering the aim, And that unbodied figure of the thought That gav'st surmised shape. Why then, you princes, [works; Do you with cheeks abash'd behold our And think them shames, which are, indeed, nought else

But the protractive trials of great Jove, To find persistive constancy in men? The fineness of which metal is not found In fortune's love: for then, the bold and coward,

The wise and fool, the artist and unread, The hard and soft, seem all affined ¶ and kin: But, in the wind and tempest of her frown, Distinction, with a broad and powerful fan, Puffing at all, winnows the light away; And what hath mass, or matter, by itself Lies, rich in virtue, and unmingled.

*Nest.* With due observance of thy godlike seat \*\*, Great Agamemnon, Nestor shall apply Thy latest words. In the reproof of chance Lies the true proof of men: The sea being smooth,

How many shallow banble boats dare sail Upon her patient breast, making their way

Helmet, † Dates were an ingredient in ancient pastry of almost every kind. ‡ Guard  
§ Twisted and rambling. || Since. ¶ Joined by affinity. \*\* The throne.

With those of nobler bulk.  
 But let the ruffian Boreas once enrage  
 The gentle Thetis\*, and, anon, behold  
 The strong-ribb'd bark through liquid moun-  
 tains cut,  
 Bounding between the two moist elements,  
 Like Perseus' horse: where's then the saucy  
 boat,  
 Whose weak untimber'd sides but even now  
 Co-rival'd greatness? either to harbour fled,  
 Or made a toast for Neptune. Even so  
 Doth valour's show, and valour's worth, di-  
 vide, [brightness,  
 In storms of fortune: For, in her ray and  
 The herd hath more annoyance by the brize†,  
 Than by the tiger: but when the splitting wind  
 Makes flexible the knees of knotted oaks,  
 And flies fled under shade, Why, then, the  
 thing of courage,  
 As roused with rage, with rage doth sympathize,  
 And with an accent turn'd in self-same key,  
 Returns to chiding fortune.

Ulyss.

Agamemnon,—

Thou great commander, nerve and bone of  
 Greece,  
 Heart of our numbers, soul and only spirit,  
 In whom the tempers and the minds of all  
 Should be shut up,—hear what Ulysses speaks.  
 Besides the applause and approbation  
 The which,—most mighty for thy place and  
 sway,— [To AGAMEMNON.

And thou most reverend for thy stretch'd-out  
 life,— [To NESTOR.

I give to both your speeches,—which were  
 such,

As Agamemnon and the hand of Greece  
 Should hold up high in brass; and such  
 again,

As venerable Nestor, hatch'd in silver,  
 Should with a bond of air (strong as the  
 axletree [ish ears  
 On which heaven rides) knit all the Greek-  
 To his experienced tongue,—yet let it please  
 both,—

Thou great,—and wise,—to hear Ulysses speak.  
 Agam. Speak, prince of Ithaca; and be't of  
 less expect†

That matter needless, of importless burden,  
 Divide thy lips; then we are confident,  
 When rank Thersites opes his mastiff jaws,  
 We shall hear music, wit, and oracle.

Ulyss. Troy, yet upon his basis, had been  
 down, [master,  
 And the great Hector's sword had lack'd a  
 But for these instances.

The speciality of rule§ hath been neglected:  
 And, look, how many Grecian tents do stand  
 Hollow upon this plain, so many hollow fac-  
 tions.

When that the general is not like the hive,  
 To whom the foragers shall all repair,  
 What honey is expected? Degree being  
 vizarded||,

The unworthiest shows as fairly in the mask.

The heavens themselves, the planets, and this  
 centre,

Observe d-degree, priority, and place,  
 Insisture¶, course, proportion, season, form,  
 Office, and custom, in all line of order:  
 And therefore is the glorious planet, Sol,  
 In noble eminence enthroned and sphered  
 Amidst the other; whose medicinal eye  
 Corrects the ill aspects of planets evil,  
 And posts, like the commandment of a king,  
 Sans\*\* check, to good and bad: but when the  
 In evil mixture, to disorder wander, [planets,  
 What plagues, and what portents! what muni-  
 tity:

What raging of the sea; shaking of earth;  
 Commotion in the winds; frights, changes, hor-  
 Divert and crack, rend and deracinate†† rors  
 The unity and married calm of states [shaked  
 Quite from their fixture? O, when degree is  
 Which is the ladder of all high designs, [nities,  
 The enterprise is sick! How could commu-  
 Degrees in schools, and brotherhoods‡‡ in cities,  
 Peaceful commerce from dividable§§ shores,  
 The primogenitive and due of birth,  
 Prerogative of age, crowns, sceptres, laurels,  
 But by degree, stand in authentic place?  
 Take but degree away, untune that string,  
 And, hark, what discord follows! each thing  
 meets

In mere||| oppugnancy: The bounded waters  
 Should lift their bosoms higher than the shores,  
 And make a sop of all this solid globe:  
 Strength should be lord of imbecility,  
 And the rude son should strike his father dead:  
 Force should be right; or, rather, right and  
 wrong

(Between whose endless jar justice resides)  
 Should lose their names, and so should justice  
 Then every thing includes itself in power, [too.  
 Power into will, will into appetite;  
 And appetite, an universal wolf,  
 So doubly seconded with will and power,  
 Must make perforce an universal prey,  
 And, last, eat up himself. Great Agamemnon,  
 This chaos, when degree is suffocate,  
 Follows the choking.

And this neglection of degree it is  
 That by a pace goes backward, with a purpose  
 It hath to climb. The general's disdain'd  
 By him one step below; he, by the next;  
 That next, by him beneath: so every step,  
 Exemplary by the first pace that is sick  
 Of his superior, grows to an envious fever  
 Of pale and bloodless emulation:  
 And 'tis this fever that keeps Troy on foot,  
 Not her own sinews. To end a tale of length,  
 Troy in our weakness stands, not in her  
 strength. [ver'd

Nest. Most wisely hath Ulysses here disco-  
 The fever whereof all our power¶¶ is sick.

Agam. The nature of the sickness found,  
 What is the remedy? [Ulysses,

Ulyss. The great Achilles,—whom opinion  
 crowns

\* The daughter of Neptune. † The gad-fly, that stings cattle. ‡ Expectation.

§ Rights of authority. || Masked. ¶ Constancy. \*\* Without.

†† Force up by the roots. ‡‡ Corporations, companies. §§ Divided. ||| Absolute.

¶¶ Army, force.

The sinew and the forehead of our host,—  
Having his ear full of his airy fame,  
Grows dainty of his worth, and in his tent  
Lies mocking our designs: With him, Patro-  
Upon a lazy bed the livelong day [clus,  
Breaks scurril jests;

And with ridiculous and awkward action  
(Which, slanderer, he imitation calls) [non,  
He pageants\* us. Sometime, great Agamem-  
Thy topless † deputation he puts on;  
And, like a strutting player, whose conceit  
Lies in his hamstring, and doth think it rich  
To hear the wooden dialogue and sound  
'Twixt his stretch'd footing and the scaffoldage‡,  
Such to-be-pitied and o'er-wrested § seeming  
He acts thy greatness in: and when he speaks,  
'Tis like a chime a mending; with terms un-  
squared||, [dropp'd,

Which, from the tongue of roaring Typhon  
Would seem hyperboles. At this fusty stuff,  
The large Achilles, on his press'd bed lolling,  
From his deep chest laughs out a loud applause;  
Cries—*Excellent!*—*'tis Agamemnon just.*—  
*Now play me Nestor;—hem, and stroke thy*  
*As he, being drest to some oration.* [beard,  
That's done;—as near as the extremest ends  
Of parallels; as like as Vulcan and his wife:  
Yet good Achilles still cries, *Excellent!*  
'Tis Nestor right! *Now play him me, Patro-*  
*Arming to answer in a night alarm.* [clus,  
And then, forsooth, the faint defects of age  
Must be the scene of mirth; to cough, and spit,  
And with a palsy-fumbling on his gorget,  
Shake in and out the rivet:—and at this sport,  
Sir Valour dies; cries, *O!—enough, Patroclus;*  
*Or give me ribs of steel! I shall split all*  
*In pleasure of my spleen.* And in this  
fashion,

All our abilities, gifts, natures, shapes,  
Severals and generals of grace exact,  
Achievements, plots, orders, preventions,  
Excitements to the field, or speech for truce,  
Success, or loss, what is, or is not, serves  
As stuff for these two to make paradoxes.

*Nest.* And in the imitation of these twain  
(Whom, as Ulysses says, opinion crowns  
With an imperial voice,) many are infect.  
Ajax is grown self-will'd; and bears his head  
In such a reign, in full as prond a place  
As broad Achilles: keeps his tent like him;  
Makes factious feasts; rails on our state of war,  
Bold as an oracle: and sets Thersites (mint,)  
(A slave, whose gall coins slanders like a  
To match us in comparisons with dirt;  
To weaken and discredit our exposure,  
How rank soever rounded in with danger.

*Ulys.* They tax our policy, and call it cow-  
ardice;

Count wisdom as no member of the war;  
Foretell prescience, and esteem no act  
But that of hand: the still and mental parts,—  
That do contrive how many hands shall strike,  
When fitness calls them on; and know, by  
measure  
Of their observant toil, the enemies' weight,—

Why, this hath not a finger's dignity:  
They call this—bed-work, mappery, closet-war  
So that the ram that batters down the wall,  
For the great swing and rudeness of h's poise  
They place before his hand that made the en-  
gine;

Or those that, with the fineness of their souls,  
By reason guide his execution. [horse

*Nest.* Let this be granted, and Achilles'  
Makes many Thetis' sons. [Trumpet sounds.

*Agam.* What trumpet? look, Menelaus.  
*Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Men.* From Troy.

*Agam.* What would you 'fore our tent?

*Æne.* Is this

Great Agamemnon's tent, I pray?

*Agam.* Even this.

*Æne.* May one, that is a herald, and a  
Do a fair message to his kingly ears? [prince,

*Agam.* With surety stronger than Achilles'  
arm [voice

'Fore all the Greekish heads, which with one  
Call Agamemnon head and general. [may

*Æne.* Fair leave, and large security. How  
A stranger to those most imperial looks

Know them from eyes of other mortals?  
*Agam.* How

*Æne.* Ay;

I ask, that I might waken reverence,  
And bid the cheek be ready with a blush  
Modest as morning when she coldly eyes  
The youthful Phœbus:

Which is that god in office, guiding men?

Which is the high and mighty Agamemnon?

*Agam.* This Trojan scorus us; or the mer  
Are ceremonious courtiers. [of Troy

*Æne.* Courtiers as free, as debonaire, unarm'd  
As bending angels; that's their fame in peace:  
But when they would seem soldiers, they have  
galls, [Jove's accord,

Good arms, strong joints, true swords; and,  
Nothing so full of heart. But peace, Æneas,  
Peace, Trojan; lay thy finger on thy lips!  
The worthiness of praise distains his worth,  
If that the praised himself bring the praise  
forth:

But what the repining enemy commends,  
That breath fame follows; that praise, sole  
pure, transcends. [Æneas!

*Agam.* Sir, you of Troy, call you yourself  
*Æne.* Ay, Greek, that is my name.

*Agam.* What's your affair, I pray you?

*Æne.* Sir, pardon; 'tis for Agamemnon's ears.

*Agam.* He hears nought privately, that  
comes from Troy.

*Æne.* Nor I from Troy come not to whis-  
per him:

I bring a trumpet to awake his ear;  
To set his sense on the attentive bent,  
And then to speak.

*Agam.* Speak frankly ¶ as the wind;  
It is not Agamemnon's sleeping hour:  
That thou shalt know, Trojan, he is awake,  
He tells thee so himself.

*Æne.* Trumpet, blow loud,

In modern language, *takes us off.*

§ Beyond the truth.

† Supreme.

¶ Unadapted.

‡ The galleries of the theatre

¶ Freely.



Send thy brass voice through all these lazy tents;—

And every Greek of mettle, let him know  
What Troy means fairly but he spoke aloud.

[Trumpet sounds.]

We have, great Agamemnon, here in Troy  
A prince called Hector, (Priam is his father,)   
Who in this dull and long-continued truce  
Is rusty grown; he bade me take a trumpet,  
And to this purpose speak. Kings, princes,  
lords!

If there be one, among the fairest of Greece,  
That holds his honour higher than his ease;  
That seeks his praise more than he fears his  
peril; [fear;

That knows his valour, and knows not his  
That loves his mistress more than in confes-  
sion,

(With truant vows to her own lips he loves,)   
And dare avow her beauty and her worth,  
In other arms than hers,—to him this challenge.

Hector, in view of Trojans and of Greeks,  
Shall make it good, or do his best to do it.  
He hath a lady, wiser, fairer, truer,

Than ever Greek did compass in his arms;  
And will to-morrow with his trumpet call,  
Midway between your tents and walls of Troy,

To touse a Grecian that is true in love:  
If any come, Hector shall honour him;

If none, he'll say in Troy, when he retires,  
The Grecian dames are sun-burned, and not  
worth

The splinter of a lance. Even so much.

Agam. This shall be told our lovers, lord  
Æneas.

If none of them have soul in such a kind,  
We left them all at home: But we are soldiers;  
And may that soldier a mere recreant prove,  
That means not, hath not, or is not in love!

If then one is, or hath, or means to be,  
That one meets Hector; if none else, I am he.

Nest. Tell him of Nestor, one that was a  
man [now;

When Hector's grandsire sucked: he is old  
But, if there be not in our Grecian host

One nobleman, that hath one spark of fire  
To answer for his love, tell him from me,—

I'll hide my silver beard in a gold beaver,  
And in my vantage\* put this wither'd brawn;

And, meeting him, will tell him, That my lady  
Was fairer than his grandam, and as chaste

As may be in the world: His youth in flood,  
I'll prove this truth with my three drops of

blood. [youth!  
Æne. Now heavens forbid such scarcity of

Ulyss. Amen. [hand;

Agam. Fair lord Æneas, let me touch your  
To our pavilion shall I lead you, sir.

Achilles shall have word of this intent;  
So shall each lord of Greece, from tent to tent:

Yourself shall feast with us before you go,  
And find the welcome of a noble foe.

[Exeunt all but ULYSSES and NESTOR.]

Ulyss. Nestor,—

Nest. What says Ulysses?

Ulyss. I have a young conception in my  
brain;

Be you my time to bring it to some shape.

Nest. What is't?

Ulyss. This 'tis:

Blunt wedges rive hard knots: The seeded  
That hath to this maturity blown up [pride  
In rank Achilles, must or now be cropped,  
Or, shedding, breed a nursery of like evil,  
To overbulk us all.

Nest.

Well, and how?

Ulyss. This challenge that the gallant Hec-  
tor sends,

However it is spread in general name,

Relates in purpose only to Achilles.

Nest. The purpose is perspicuous even as  
substance,

Whose grossness little characters sum up;

And, in the publication, make no strain't,

But that Achilles, were his brain as barren

As banks of Libya,—though, Apollo knows,

'Tis dry enough,—will with great speed of  
judgment,

Ay, with celerity, find Hector's purpose

Pointing on him.

Ulyss. And wake him to the answer, think [you?

Nest.

Yes,

It is most meet; Whom may you else oppose,

That can from Hector bring those honours off,

If not Achilles? Though't be a sportful combat

Yet in the trial much opinion dwells;

For here the Trojans taste our dear'st repute

With their fin'st palate: And trust to me,

Our imputation shall be oddly poised [Ulysses.

In this wild action: for the success,

Although particular, shall give a scantling †

Of good or bad unto the general;

And in such indexes, although small pricks §

To their subsequent volumes, there is seen

The baby figure of the giant mass

Of things to come at large. It is supposed,

He that meets Hector issues from our choice:

And choice, being mutual act of all our souls,

Makes merit her election; and doth boil,

As 'twere from forth us all, a man distilled

Out of our virtues; who miscarrying, [part,

What heart receives from hence a conquering

To steel a strong opinion to themselves?

Which entertained, limbs are his instruments,

In no less working, than are swords and bows

Directive by the limbs.

Ulyss. Give pardon to my speech;—

Therefore 'tis meet, Achilles meet not Hector.

Let us, like merchants, show our foulest wares,

And think, perchance, they'll sell; if not,

The lustre of the better shall exceed,

By showing the worse first. Do not consent,

That ever Hector and Achilles meet;

For both our honour and our shame, in this,

Are dogg'd with two strange followers.

Nest. I see them not with my old eyes; what

are they? [Hector

Ulyss. What glory our Achilles shares from

Were he not proud, we all should share with

But he already is too insolent; [him:

\* An armour for the arm.

† Difficulty.

‡ Size, measure

§ Small points compared with the volumes.

And we were better parch in Afric sun,  
 Than in the pride and salt scorn of his eyes,  
 Should he 'scape Hector fair: If he were foil'd,  
 Why, then we did our main opinion \* crush  
 In taint of our best man. No, make a lottery;  
 And, by device, let blockish Ajax draw  
 The sort † to fight with Hector: Among our-  
 selves,  
 Give him allowance for the better man,  
 For that will physic the great Myrmidon, [fall  
 Who broils in loud applause; and make him  
 His crest, that prouder than blue Iris bends.  
 If the dull brainless Ajax come safe off,

We'll dress him up in voices: If he fail,  
 Yet go we under our opinion ‡ still  
 That we have better men. But, hit or miss,  
 Our project's life this shape of sense assumes  
 Ajax, employed, plucks down Achilles' plume.  
*Nest.* Ulysses,  
 Now I begin to relish thy advice;  
 And I will give a taste of it forthwith  
 To Agamemnon: go we to him straight.  
 Two curs shall tame each other; Pride alone  
 Must tarre§ the mastiff's on, as 'twere the  
 bone. [Exeunt.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *Another part of the Grecian Camp.*

*Enter AJAX and THERSITES.*

*Ajax.* Thersites,—

*Ther.* Agamemnon—how if he had boils?  
 full, all over, generally?

*Ajax.* Thersites,—

*Ther.* And those boils did run?—Say so,—  
 did not the general run then? were not that a  
 botchy core?

*Ajax.* Dog,—

*Ther.* Then would come some matter from  
 him; I see none now.

*Ajax.* Thôn bitch-wolf's son, canst thou not  
 hear? Feel then. [Strikes him.]

*Ther.* The plague of Greece upon thee, thou  
 mongrel beef-witted lord!

*Ajax.* Speak then, thou unsalted leaven,  
 speak: I will beat thee into handsomeness.

*Ther.* I shall sooner rail thee into wit and  
 holiness: but, I think, thy horse will sooner  
 con an oration, than thou learn a prayer with-  
 out book. Thou canst strike, canst thou? a red  
 murrain o'thy jade's tricks!

*Ajax.* Toads-stool, learn me the proclama-  
 tion.

*Ther.* Dost thou think I have no sense, thou  
 strikest me thus?

*Ajax.* The proclamation,—

*Ther.* Thou art proclaimed a fool, I think.

*Ajax.* Do not, porcupine, do not; my fingers  
 itch.

*Ther.* I would thou didst itch from head to  
 foot, and I had the scratching of thee; I would  
 make thee the loathsome scab in Greece.  
 When thou art forth in the incursions, thou  
 strik'st as slow as another.

*Ajax.* I say, the proclamation,—

*Ther.* Thou grumblest and railest every hour  
 on Achilles; and thou art as full of envy at his  
 greatness, as Cerberus is at Proserpina's beauty,  
 ay, that thou barkest at him.

*Ajax.* Mistress Thersites!

*Ther.* Thou shouldst strike him.

*Ajax.* Cobloaf!

*Ther.* He would pun|| thee into shivers with  
 his fist, as a sailor breaks a biscuit.

*Ajax.* You whoreson cur! [Beating him.]

*Ther.* Do, do.

*Ajax.* Thou stool for a witch!

*Ther.* Ay, do, do; thou sodden-witted lord!  
 thou hast no more brain than I have in mine  
 elbows; an assinego¶ may tutor thee: Thou  
 scurvy valiant ass! thou art here put to thrash  
 Trojans; and thou art bought and sold among  
 those of any wit, like a Barbarian slave. I  
 thou use \*\* to beat me, I will begin at thy heel,  
 and tell what thou art by inches, thou thing o'  
 no bowels, thou!

*Ajax.* You dog!

*Ther.* You scurvy lord!

*Ajax.* You cur!

[Beating him.]

*Ther.* Mars his idiot! do, rudeness; do, ea-  
 mel; do, do.

*Enter Achilles and PATROCLUS.*

*Achil.* Why, how now, Ajax? wherefore do  
 you thus?

How now, Thersites? what's the matter, man?

*Ther.* You see him there, do you?

*Achil.* Ay; what's the matter?

*Ther.* Nay, look upon him.

*Achil.* So I do; What's the matter?

*Ther.* Nay, but regard him well.

*Achil.* Well, why I do so.

*Ther.* But yet you look not well upon him \*  
 for, whosoever you take him to be, he is Ajax.

*Achil.* I know that, fool.

*Ther.* Ay, but that fool knows not himself.

*Ajax.* Therefore I beat thee.

*Ther.* Lo, lo, lo, lo, what medicins of wit  
 he utters! his evasions have ears thus long. I  
 have bobbed his brain, more than he has beat  
 my bones: I will buy nine sparrows for a penny,  
 and his *pia mater* †† is not worth the ninth part  
 of a sparrow. This lord, Achilles, Ajax,—who  
 wears his wit in his belly, and his guts in his  
 head,—I'll tell you what I say of him.

*Achil.* What?

*Ther.* I say, this Ajax—

*Achil.* Nay, good Ajax.

[AJAX offers to strike him, ACHILLES  
 interposes.]

*Ther.* Has not so much wit—

*Achil.* Nay, I must hold you.

*Ther.* As will stop the eye of Helen's needle  
 for whom he comes to fight.

\* Estimation or character.

† Lot.

‡ Character.

§ Provoke.

|| Pound.

¶ Ass, a cant term for a foolish fellow.

Continue. †† The membrane that protects the brain

*Achil.* Peace, fool!

*Ther.* I would have peace and quietness, but the fool will not: he there; that he; look you there.

*Aj x.* O thou damned cur! I shall—

*Achil.* Will you set your wit to a fool's?

*Ther.* No, I warrant you; for a fool's will shame it.

*Patr.* Good words, Thersites.

*Achil.* What's the quarrel?

*Ajax.* I bade the vile owl, go learn me the tenour of the proclamation, and he rails upon me.

*Ther.* I serve thee not.

*Ajax.* Well, go to, go to.

*Ther.* I serve here voluntary\*.

*Achil.* Your last service was sufferance'twas not voluntary: no man is beaten voluntary; Ajax was here the voluntary, and you as under an impress.

*Ther.* Even so?—a great deal of your wit, too, lies in your sinews, or else there be liars. Hector shall have a great catch, if he knock out either of your brains; a' were as good crack a fusty nut with no kernel.

*Achil.* What, with me too, Thersites?

*Ther.* There's Ulysses, and old Nestor,—whose wit was mouldy ere your grandsires had nails on their toes,—yoke you like draught oxen, and make you plough up the wars.

*Achil.* What, what?

*Ther.* Yes, good sooth; To Achilles! to Ajax! to!

*Ajax.* I shall cut out your tongue.

*Ther.* 'Tis no matter; I shall speak as much as thou, afterwards.

*Patr.* No more words, Thersites; peace.

*Ther.* I will hold my peace when Achilles' brach + bids me, shall I?

*Achil.* There's for you, Patroclus.

*Ther.* I will see you hanged, like clotpoles, ere I come any more to your tents; I will keep where there is wit stirring, and leave the faction of fools. [Exit.

*Patr.* A good riddance. [all our host:

*Achil.* Marry, this, sir, is proclaimed through That Hector, by the first hour of the sun, Will, with a trumpet, 'twixt our tents and Troy, To-morrow morning call some knight to arms, That hath a stomach; and such a one, that dare Maintain—I know not what; 'tis trash: Farewell.

*Ajax.* Farewell. Who shall answer him?

*Achil.* I know not, it is put to lottery; otherwise he knew his man. [wise,

*Ajax.* O, meaning you:—I'll go learn more of it. [Exeunt.

## SCENE II. Troy. A Room in Priam's Palace.

Enter PRIAM, HECTOR, TROILUS, PARIS, and HELENUS.

*Pri.* After so many hours, lives, speeches spent,

Thus once again says Nestor from the Greeks; Deliver Helen, and all damage else—

As honour, loss of time, travel, expense, Wounds, friends, and what else dear that is consumed

In hot digestion of this cormorant war.— Shall be struck off:—Hector, what say you to't? [than I,

*Hect.* Though no man lesser fears the Greeks As far as toucheth my particular, yet,

Dread Priam,

There is no lady of more softer bowels,

More spongy to suck in the sense of fear,

More ready to cry out—Who knows what follows?

Than Hector is: The wound of peace is surety,

Surety secure; but modest doubt is call'd

The beacon of the wise, the tent that searches

To the bottom of the worst. Let Helen go:

Since the first sword was drawn about this

question, [dismis],

Every tithe soul, 'mongst many thousand

Hath been as dear as Helen; I mean of ours:

If we have lost so many tenths of ours,

To guard a thing not ours; not worth to us,

Had it our name, the value of one ten;

What merit's in that reason, which denies

The yielding of her up?

*Tro.*

Fie, fie, my brother!

Weigh you the worth and honour of a king,

So great as our dread father, in a scale [sum

Of common ounces? will you with counters

The past-proportion of his infinite?

And buckle-in a waist most fathomless,

With spans and inches so diminutive

As fears and reasons? fie, for godly shame!

*Hel.* No marvel, though you bite so sharp at reasons, [father

You are so empty of them. Should not our

Bear the great sway of his affairs with reasons,

Because your speech hath none, that tells him

so? [her priest,

*Tro.* You are for dreams and slumbers, bro-

You fur your gloves with reason. Here are your reasons:

You know an enemy intends you harm;

You know a sword employ'd is perilous,

And reason flies the object of all harm:

Who marvels then, when Helenus beholds

A Grecian and his sword, if he do set

The very wings of reason to his heels;

And fly like chidden Mercury from Jove,

Or like a star dis-orb'd?—Nay, if we talk of reason, [honour

Let's shut our gates, and sleep: Manhood and

Should have hare-hearts, would they but fat their thoughts

With this cramm'd reason: reason and respect? Make livers pale, and lustibood deject.

*Hect.* Brother, she is not worth what she The holding. [doth cost

*Tro.* What is aught, but as 'tis valued?

*Hect.* But value dwells not in particular

It holds his estimate and dignity [will;

As well wherein 'tis precious of itself

As in the prizer: 'tis mad idolatry,

To make the service greater than the god;

And the will dotes, that is attributive

\* Voluntarily.

+ Bitch, hound.

‡ Tenths.

§ Caution.



To what infection itself affects,  
Without some image of the affected merit.

*Tro.* I take to-day a wife, and my election  
Is led on in the conduct of my will;  
My will enkindled by mine eyes and ears,  
Two traded pilots 'twixt the dangerous shores  
Of will and judgment: How may I avoid,  
Although my will distaste what it elected,  
The wife I chose? there can be no evasion  
To blench\* from this, and to stand firm by  
honour:

We turn not back the silks upon the merchant,  
When we have soil'd them; nor the remainder  
viands

We do not throw in unrespective sieve†,  
Because we now are full. It was thought meet  
Paris should do some vengeance on the Greeks:  
Your breath with full consent bellied his sails;  
The seas and winds (old wranglers) took a truce,  
And did him service: he touch'd the ports de-  
sired;

And, for an old aunt‡, whom the Greeks held  
He brought a Grecian queen, whose youth and  
freshness

Wrinkles Apollo's, and makes pale the morn-  
Why keep we her? the Grecians keep our aunt:  
Is she worth keeping? why, she is a pearl,  
Whose price hath launch'd above a thousand  
And turn'd crown'd kings to merchants. [ships,  
If you'll avouch, 'twas wisdom Paris went,  
(As you must needs, for you all cry'd—Go, go,)  
If you'll confess, he brought home noble prize,  
(As you must needs, for you all clapp'd your  
hands,

And cry'd—*Inestimable!*) why do you now  
The issue of your proper wisdoms rate;  
And do a deed that fortune never did,  
Beggard the estimation which you prized  
Richer than sea and land? O theft most base;  
That we have stolen what we do fear to keep!  
But, thieves, unworthy of a thing so stolen,  
That in their country did them that disgrace,  
We fear to warrant in our native place!

*Cas.* [Within.] Cry, Trojans, cry!

*Pri.* What noise? what shriek is this?

*Tro.* 'Tis our mad sister, I do know her

*Cas.* [Within.] Cry, Trojans! [voice.

*Hect.* It is Cassandra.

*Enter CASSANDRA, raving.*

*Cas.* Cry, Trojans, cry! lend me ten thou-  
sand eyes,

And I will fill them with prophetic tears.

*Hect.* Peace, sister, peace. [elders,

*Cas.* Virgins and boys, mid-age and wrinkled  
Soft infancy, that nothing canst but cry,  
Add to my clamours! let us pay betimes  
A moiety of that mass of moan to come.

Cry, Trojans, cry! practise your eyes with tears!

Troy must not be, nor goodly Ilium stand;

Our firebrand brother, Paris, burns us all.

Cry, Trojans, cry! a Helen, and a woe:

Cry, cry! Troy burns, or else let Helen go.

[Exit.

*Hect.* Now, youthful Troilus, do not these  
Of divination in our sister work [high strains

Some touches of remorse? or is your blood  
So madly hot, that no discourse of reason,  
Nor fear of bad success in a bad cause,  
Can qualify the same?

*Tro.* Why, brother, Hector,  
We may not think the justness of each act  
Such and no other than event doth form it;  
Nor once deject the courage of our minds,  
Because Cassandra's mad: her brain-sick rap-  
tures

Cannot distaste§ the goodness of a quarrel,  
Which hath our several honours all engaged  
To make it gracious||. For my private part,  
I am no more touch'd than all Priam's sons: [us  
And Jove forbid, there shall be none amongst  
Such things as might offend the weakest spleen  
To fight for and maintain! [levity

*Par.* Else might the world convince¶ of  
As well my undertakings, as your counsels:  
But I attest the gods, your full consent  
Gave wings to my propension, and cut off  
All fears attending on so dire a project.  
For what, alas, can these my single arms?  
What propugnation\*\* is in one man's valour;  
To stand the push and enmity of those  
This quarrel would excite? Yet, I protest,  
Were I alone to pass the difficulties,  
And had as ample power as I have will,  
Paris should ne'er retract what he hath done,  
Nor faint in the pursuit.

*Pri.* Paris, you speak  
Like one besotted on your sweet delights:  
You have the honey still, but these the gall;  
So to be valiant is no praise at all.

*Par.* Sir, I propose not merely to myself  
The pleasure such a beauty brings with it;  
But I would have the soil of her fair rape  
Wiped off, in honourable keeping her.  
What treason were it to the ransack'd queen,  
Disgrace to your great worths, and shame to  
Now to deliver her possession up, [me,  
On terms of base compulsion? Can it be,  
That so degenerate a strain as this, [soms?  
Should once set footing in your generous bo-  
There's not the meanest spirit on our party,  
Without a heart to dare, or sword to draw,  
When Helen is defended; nor none so noble,  
Whose life were ill bestow'd, or death unfamed  
Where Helen is the subject: then, I say,  
Well may we fight for her, whom, we know  
The world's large spaces cannot parallel. [well

*Hect.* Paris, and Troilus, you have both said  
well:

And on the cause and question now in hand  
Have gloz'd ††,—but superficially; not much  
Unlike young men, whom Aristotle thought  
Unfit to hear moral philosophy;  
The reasons, you allege, do more conduce  
To the hot passion of distemper'd blood,  
Than to make up a free determination [venge  
'Twixt right and wrong: For pleasure, and re-  
Have ears more deaf than adds to the voice  
Of any true decision. Nature craves,  
All dues be render'd to their owners; Now  
What nearer debt in all humanity,

\* Shrink, or fly off. † Basket.

‡ To set it oil.

§ Priam's sister, Hesione.

¶ Convict. \*\* Defence.

§ Corrupt, change

†† Commented

than wife is to the husband? If this law  
Of nature be corrupted through affection;  
And that great minds, of\* partial indulgence  
To their benumbed wills, resist the same;  
There is a law in each well-order'd nation,  
To curb those raging appetites that are  
Most disobedient and refractory.  
If Helen then be wife to Sparta's king,—  
As it is known she is,—these moral laws  
Of nature, and of nations, speak aloud  
To have her back return'd: Thus to persist  
In doing wrong, extenuates not wrong, [union  
But makes it much more heavy. Hector's opi-  
Is this, in way of truth: yet, ne'ertheless,  
My spritely brethren, I propend† to you  
In resolution to keep Helen still;  
For 'tis a cause that hath no mean dependance  
Upon our joint and several dignities. [design:  
*Tro.* Why, there you touch'd the life of our  
Were it not glory that we more affected  
Than the performance of our heaving spleens,  
I would not wish a drop of Trojan blood  
Spent more in her defence. But, worthy Hec-  
She is a theme of honour and renown; [tor,  
A spur to valiant and magnanimous deeds;  
Whose present courage may beat down our foes,  
And fame, in time to come, canonize us: —  
For, I presume, brave Hector, would not lose  
So rich advantage of a promised glory,  
As smiles upon the forehead of this action,  
For the wide world's revenue.

*Hect.* I am yours,  
You valiant offspring of great Priamus.—  
I have a roisting† challenge sent amongst  
The dull and factious nobles of the Greeks,  
Will strike amazement to their drowsy spirits:  
I was advertised, their great general slept,  
Whilst emulation‡ in the army crept;  
This, I presume, will wake him. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. *The Grecian Camp. Before  
Achilles' Tent.*

*Enter THERSITES.*

*Ther.* How now, Thersites? what, lost in  
the labyrinth of thy fury? Shall the elephant  
Ajax carry it thus? he beats me, and I rail at  
him: O worthy satisfaction! 'would it were  
otherwise; that I could beat him, whilst he  
railed at me: 'Sfoot, I'll learn to conjure and  
raise devils, but I'll see some issue of my spite-  
ful execrations. Then there's Achilles,—a rare  
engineer. If Troy be not taken till these two  
undermine it, the walls will stand till they fall  
of themselves. O thou great thunder-darter of  
Olympus, forget that thou art Jove the king of  
Gods; and, Mercury, lose all the serpentine craft  
of thy *Caduceus*§; if ye take not that little  
little less-than-little wit from them that they  
have! which short-armed ignorance itself knows  
is so abundant scarce, it will not in circumpen-  
sion deliver a fly from a spider, without draw-  
ing their massy irons, and cutting the web.  
After this, the vengeance on the whole camp!  
s, rather, the bone-ach! for that, methinks,

is the curse dependant on those that war for a  
placket. I have said my prayers; and, devil  
Envy, say Amen. What, ho! my lord Achilles!

*Enter PATROCLUS.*

*Patr.* Who's there? Thersites? Good Ther-  
sites, come in and rail.

*Ther.* If I could have remembered a gilt  
counterfeit, thou wouldest not have slipped  
out of my contemplation: but it is no matter;  
Thyself upon thyself! The common curse of  
mankind, folly and ignorance, be thine in great  
revenue! heaven bless thee from a tutor, and  
discipline come not near thee! Let thy blood¶  
be thy direction till thy death! then if she, that  
lays thee out, says—thou art a fair corpse, I'll  
be sworn and sworn upon't, she never shrouded  
any but lazars\*\*. Amen.—Where's Achilles?

*Patr.* What, art thou devout? wast thou in  
prayer?

*Ther.* Ay; the heavens hear me!

*Enter ACHILLES.*

*Achil.* Who's there?

*Patr.* Thersites, my lord.

*Achil.* Where, where?—Art thou come.  
Why, my cheese, my digestion, why hast thou  
not served thyself into my table so many meals?  
Come; what's Agamemnon?

*Ther.* Thy commander, Achilles;—Then tell  
me, Patroclus, what's Achilles?

*Patr.* Thy lord, Thersites; Then tell me, I  
pray thee, what's thyself?

*Ther.* Thy knower, Patroclus; Then tell me,  
Patroclus, what art thou?

*Patr.* Thou mayest tell, that knowest.

*Achil.* O, tell, tell.

*Ther.* I'll decline the whole question. Aga-  
memnon commands Achilles; Achilles is my  
lord; I am Patroclus' knower; and Patroclus  
is a fool.

*Patr.* You rascal!

*Ther.* Peace, fool; I have not done.

*Achil.* He is a privileged man.—Proceed,  
Thersites.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool; Achilles is a  
fool; Thersites is a fool; and, as aforesaid,  
Patroclus is a fool.

*Achil.* Derive this; come.

*Ther.* Agamemnon is a fool to offer to com-  
mand Achilles; Achilles is a fool to be com-  
manded of Agamemnon; Thersites is a fool to  
serve such a fool; and Patroclus is a fool  
positive.

*Patr.* Why am I a fool?

*Ther.* Make that demand of the prover.—It  
suffices me, thou art. Look you, who comes  
here!

*Enter AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR,  
DIOMEDES, and AJAX.*

*Achil.* Patroclus, I'll speak with nobody:—  
Come in with me, Thersites. [Exit.

*Ther.* Here is such patchery, such juggling,  
and such knavery! all the argument is, a  
cuckold, and a whore; A good quarrel, to  
draw emulous†† factions, and bleed to death,

Through. † Incline to, as a question of honour.  
The wand of Mercury which is wreathed with serpents.

\*\* Leprous persons.

† Blustering. § Envy.

¶ Passions, natural propensities.

†† Envious.

pon. Now the dry *serpigo*\* on the subject!  
and war, and lechery, confound all! [Exit.

*Agam.* Where is Achilles?

*Patr.* Within his tent; but ill-disposed, my lord. [here.

*Agam.* Let it be known to him, that we are  
He silent† our messengers; and we lay by  
Our appertainments, visiting of him;

Let him be told so; lest, perchance, he think  
We dare not move the question of our place,  
Or know not what we are.

*Patr.* I shall say so to him. [Exit.

*Ulyss.* We saw him at the opening of his  
He is not sick. [tent;

*Ajax.* Yes, lion-sick, sick of proud heart:  
you may call it melancholy, if you will favour  
the man; but, by my head, 'tis pride: But  
why, why? let him show us a cause.—A word,  
my lord. [Takes AGAMEMNON aside.

*Nest.* What moves Ajax thus to bay at him?

*Ulyss.* Achilles hath inveigled his fool from

*Nest.* Who? Thersites. [him.

*Ulyss.* He.

*Nest.* Then will Ajax lack matter, if he  
have lost his arguments.

*Ulyss.* No, you see, he is his argument, that  
has his argument; Achilles.

*Nest.* All the better; their fraction is more  
our wish, than their faction: But it was a  
strong composure a fool could disunite.

*Ulyss.* The amity, that wisdom knits not,  
folly may easily untie. Here comes Patroclus.

Re-enter PATROCLUS.

*Nest.* No Achilles with him.

*Ulyss.* The elephant hath joints, but none  
for courtesy: his legs are legs for necessity,  
not for flexure.

*Patr.* Achilles bids me say—he is much  
sorry,

If any thing more than your sport and pleasure  
Did move your greatness, and this noble state,  
To call upon him; he hopes, it is no other,  
But, for your health and your digestion sake,  
An after-dinner's breath.]]

*Agam.* Hear you, Patroclus;—  
We are too well acquainted with these answers:  
But his evasion, wing'd thus swift with scorn,  
Cannot outfly our apprehensions.

Much attribute he hath; and much the reason  
Why we ascribe it to him: yet all his virtues,—  
Not virtuously on his own part beheld,—  
Do, in our eyes, begin to lose their gloss;  
Yea, like fair fruit in an unwholesome dish,  
Are like to rot untasted. Go and tell him,  
We come to speak with him: And you shall  
not sin,

If you do say—we think him over-proud,  
And under-honest; in self-assumption greater,  
Than in the note of judgment; and worthier  
than himself. [on;

Here tend† the savage strangeness\*\* he puts  
Disguise the holy strength of their command,  
And underwrite ‡ in an observing kind

His humorous predominance; yea, watch  
His pettish lunes †, his ebbs, his flows, as if  
The passage and whole carriage of this action  
Rode on this tide. Go, tell him this; and add,  
That, if he overhold his price so much,  
We'll none of him; but let him, like an engine  
Not portable, lie under this report—  
Bring action hither, this cannot go to war:  
A stirring dwarf we do allowance §§ give  
Before a sleeping giant:—Tell him so.

*Patr.* I shall; and bring his answer pre-  
sently. [Exit.

*Agam.* In second voice we'll not be satisfied,  
We come to speak with him.—Ulysses, enter.

[Exit ULYSSES.

*Ajax.* What is he more than another?

*Agam.* No more than what he thinks he is

*Ajax.* Is he so much? Do you not think, he  
thinks himself a better man than I am?

*Agam.* No question.

*Ajax.* Will you subscribe his thought, and  
say—he is?

*Agam.* No, noble Ajax; you are as strong,  
as valiant, as wise, no less noble, much more  
gentle, and altogether more tractable.

*Ajax.* Why should a man be proud? How  
doth pride grow? I know not what pride is.

*Agam.* Your mind's the clearer, Ajax, and  
your virtues the fairer. He that is proud, eats  
up himself: pride is his own glass, his own  
trumpet, his own chronicle; and whatever  
praises itself but in the deed, devours the deed  
in the praise.

*Ajax.* I do hate a proud man, as I hate the  
engendering of toads.

*Nest.* And yet he loves himself: Is it not  
strange? [Aside.

Re-enter ULYSSES.

*Ulyss.* Achilles will not to the field to-  
*Agam.* What's his excuse? [morrow

*Ulyss.* He doth rely on none  
But carries on the stream of his dispose,  
Without observance or respect of any,  
In will peculiar and in self-admission. [quest

*Agam.* Why will he not, upon our fair re-  
Untent his person, and share the air with us?

*Ulyss.* Things small as nothing, for request's  
sake only, [greatness

He makes important: Possess'd he is with  
And speaks not to himself, but with a pride  
That quarrels at self-breath: imagined worth  
Holds in his blood such swoln and hot dis-  
course,

That, 'twixt his mental and his active parts,  
Kingdom'd Achilles in commotion rages,  
And batters down himself: What should I  
say? [of

He is so plaguy proud, that the death tokens  
Cry—No recovery.

*Agam.* Let Ajax go to him.—  
Dear lord, go you and greet him in his tent;  
'Tis said, he holds you well; and will be led,  
At your request, a little from himself.

*Ulyss.* O Agamemnon, let it not be so!

\* Tetter, scab.

† Rebuked, rated.

‡ Appendage of rank or dignity.

§ Subject.

|| Exercise.

¶ Attend.

\*\* Shyness.

†† Subscribe, obey.

‡‡ Fits of lunacy.

§§ Approbation.



We'll consecrate the steps that Ajax makes  
When they go from Achilles: Shall the proud  
lord,

That bastes his arrogance with his own seam\*;  
And never suffers matter of the world  
Enter his thoughts, save such as do revolve  
And ruminate himself,—shall he be worshipping'd  
Of that we hold an idol more than he?

No, this thrice worthy and right valiant lord  
Must not so stale his palm, nobly acquired;  
Nor, by my will, assubjugate his merit,  
As amply titled as Achilles is,  
By going to Achilles:

That were to enlard his fat-already pride;  
And add more coals to Cancer†, when he  
With entertaining great Hyperion‡. [burns  
This lord go to him! Jupiter forbid;  
And say in thunder—*Achilles, go to him.*

*Nest.* O, this is well; he rubs the vein of  
him. [Aside.

*Dio.* And how his silence drinks up this ap-  
plause! [Aside.

*Ajax.* If I go to him, with my arm'd fist I'll  
Over the face. [push † him

*Agam.* O, no, you shall not go.

*Ajax.* An he be proud with me, I'll phreeze §  
Let me go to him. [his pride:

*Ulyss.* Not for the worth that hangs upon  
our quarrel.

*Ajax.* A paltry, insolent fellow,—

*Nest.* How he describes  
Himself? [Aside.

*Ajax.* Can he not be envious ¶

*Ulyss.* The raven  
Chides blackness. [Aside.

*Ajax.* I will let his humours blood.

*Agam.* He'll be physician, that should be the  
patient. [Aside.

*Ajax.* An all men.

Were o'my mind,—  
*Ulyss.* Wit would be out of fashion. [Aside.

*Ajax.* He should not bear it so, [it?

He should eat swords first: Shall pride carry  
*Nest.* An 'twould, you'd carry half. [Aside.

*Ulyss.* He'd have ten shares. [Aside.

*Ajax.* I'll knead him, I will make him sup-  
ple:— [him with praises:

*Nest.* He's not yet thorough warm: force ||  
Pour in, pour in; his ambition is dry. [Aside.

*Ulyss.* My lord, you feed too much on this  
dislike. [To AGAMEMNON.

*Nest.* O noble general, do not do so.

*Dio.* You must prepare to fight without  
Achilles. [him harm.

*Ulyss.* Why, 'tis this naming of him does  
Here is a man—But 'tis before his face;  
I will be silent.

*Nest.* Wherefore should you so?

He is not emulous ¶, as Achilles is.

*Ulyss.* Know the whole world, he is as va-  
liant. [thus with us I

*Ajax.* A whoreson dog, that shall palter \*\*  
I would, he were a Trojan!

*Nest.* What a vice

Were it in Ajax now—

*Ulyss.* If he were proud?

*Dio.* Or covetous of praise?

*Ulyss.* Ay, or surly borne?

*Dio.* Or strange, or self-affected?

*Ulyss.* Thank the heavens, lord, thou art  
of sweet composure; [suck:  
Praise him that got thee, she that gave thee  
Famed be thy tutor, and thy parts of nature  
Thrice-famed, beyond all erudition:

But he that disciplined thy arms to fight,  
Let Mars divide eternity in twain,  
And give him half: and, for thy vigour,  
Bull-bearing Milo his addition †† yield

I'o sinewy Ajax. I will not praise thy wisdom,  
Which, like a bonn ‡, a pale, a shore, confines  
Thy spacious and dilated parts: Here's Nestor,

Instructed by the antiquary times,  
He must, he is, he cannot but be wise;—

But pardon, father Nestor, were your days  
As green as Ajax', and your brain so temper'd,

You should not have the eminence of him,  
But be as Ajax.

*Ajax.* Shall I call you father?

*Nest.* Ay, my good son.

*Dio.* Be ruled by him, lord Ajax.

*Ulyss.* There is no tar, jing here; the hart  
Achilles

Keeps thicket. Please it our great general  
To call together all his state of war;

Fresh kings are come to Troy: To-morrow,  
We must with all our main of power stand fast:

And here's a lord,—come knights from east to  
west,

And cull their flower, Ajax shall cope the best.

*Agam.* Go we to council. Let Achilles sleep:  
Light boats sail swift, though greater hulks

draw deep. [Exeunt.

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. Troy. A Room in Priam's Palace.

*Enter PANDARUS and a Servant.*

*Pan.* Friend! you! pray you, a word: Do  
not you follow the young lord Paris?

*Serv.* Ay, sir, when he goes before me.

*Pan.* You do depend upon him, I mean?

*Serv.* Sir, I do depend upon the lord.

*Pan.* You do depend upon a noble gentle-  
man; I must needs praise him.

*Serv.* The lord be praised!

*Pan.* You know me, do you not?

*Serv.* 'Faith, sir, superficially.

*Pan.* Friend, know me better; I am the  
lord Pandarus.

*Serv.* I hope, I shall know your honour  
better.

\* Fat. † The sign in the zodiac into which the sun enters June 21. "And Cancer reddens  
with the solar blaze."—THOMSON. ‡ Strike. § Comb or curry.

|| Stuff. ¶ Envious. \*\* Trifle. †† Titles.

‡ Stream, rivule

*Pan.* I do desire it.

*Serv.* You are in the state of grace.

[*Music within.*]

*Pan.* Grace! not so, friend; honour and lordship are my titles:—What music is this?

*Serv.* I do but partly know, sir; it is music in parts.

*Pan.* Know you the musicians?

*Serv.* Wholly, sir.

*Pan.* Who play they to?

*Serv.* To the hearers, sir.

*Pan.* At whose pleasure, friend?

*Serv.* At mine, sir, and theirs that love music.

*Pan.* Command, I mean, friend.

*Serv.* Who shall I command, sir?

*Pan.* Friend, we understand not one another; I am too courtly, and thou art too cunning: At whose request do these men play?

*Serv.* That's to't, indeed, sir: Marry, sir, at the request of Paris my lord, who is there in person; with him, the mortal Venus, the heart-blood of beauty, love's invisible soul,—

*Pan.* Who, my cousin Cressida?

*Serv.* No, sir, Helen? Could you not find out that by her attributes?

*Pan.* It should seem, fellow, that thou hast not seen the lady Cressida. I come to speak with Paris from the prince Troilus: I will make a complimentary assault upon him, for my business seeths\*.

*Serv.* Sudden business! there's a stewed phrase, indeed.

*Enter PARIS and HELEN, attended.*

*Pan.* Fair-be to you, my lord, and to all this fair company! fair desires, in all fair measure, fairly guide them! especially to you, fair queen! fair thoughts be your fair pillow!

*Helen.* Dear lord, you are full of fair words.

*Pan.* You speak your fair pleasure, sweet queen.—

Fair prince, here is good broken music.

*Pan.* You have broke it, cousin: and, by my life, you shall make it whole again; you shall piece it out with a piece of your performance: Nell, he is full of harmony.

*Pan.* Truly, lady, no.

*Helen.* O, sir,—

*Pan.* Rude, in sooth; in good sooth, very rude.

*Pan.* Well said, my lord! well, you say so in fits†.

*Pan.* I have business to my lord, dear queen:—

My lord, will you vouchsafe me a word?

*Helen.* Nay, this shall not hedge us out: we'll hear you sing, certainly.

*Pan.* Well, sweet queen, you are pleasant with me.—But (marry) thus, my lord,—My dear lord, and most esteemed friend, your brother Troilus—

*Helen.* My lord, Pandarus; honey-sweet lord,—

*Pan.* Go to, sweet queen, go to:—commends himself most affectionately to you.

*Helen.* You shall not bob us out of our me-

lody; If you do, our melancholy upon your head!

*Pan.* Sweet queen, sweet queen; that's a sweet queen, i'faith.

*Helen.* And to make a sweet lady sad, is a sour offence.

*Pan.* Nay, that shall not serve your turn; that shall it not, in truth, la. Nay, I care not for such words; no, no.—And, my lord, he desires you, that if the king call for him at supper, you will make his excuse.

*Helen.* My lord Pandarus,—

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen,—my very very sweet queen?

*Par.* What exploit's in hand? where sups he to-night?

*Helen.* Nay, but my lord,—

*Pan.* What says my sweet queen?—My cousin will fall out with you. You must not know where he sups.

*Par.* I'll lay my life, with my disposer Cressida.

*Pan.* No, no, no such matter, you are wide‡; come, your disposer is sick.

*Par.* Well, I'll make excuse.

*Pan.* Ay, good my lord.—Why should you say—Cressida? no, your poor disposer's sick.

*Par.* I spy.

*Pan.* You spy! what do you spy?—Come, give me an instrument.—Now, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Why, this is kindly done.

*Pan.* My niece is horribly in love with a thing you have, sweet queen.

*Helen.* She shall have it, my lord, if it be not my lord Paris.

*Pan.* He! no, she'll none of him; they two are twain.

*Helen.* Falling in, after falling out, may make them three.

*Pan.* Come, come, I'll hear no more of this; I'll sing you a song now.

*Helen.* Ay, ay, pr'ythee now. By my troth, sweet lord, thou hast a fine forehead.

*Pan.* Ay, you may, you may.

*Helen.* Let thy song be love: this love will undo us all. O, Cupid, Cupid, Cupid!

*Pan.* Lovel' ay, that it shall, i'faith.

*Par.* Ay, good now, love, love, nothing but love.

*Pan.* In good troth, it begins so:

*Love, love, nothing but love, still more!*

*For, oh, love's bow*

*Shoots buck and doe:*

*The shaft confounds,*

*Not that it wounds*

*But tickles still the sore.*

*These lovers cry—Oh! oh! they die!*

*Yet that which seems the wound to kill,*

*Doth turn oh! oh! to ha! ha! he!*

*So dying love lives still:*

*Oh! oh! a while, but ha! ha! ha!*

*Oh! oh! groans out for ha! ha! ha!*

Hey ho!

\* Boils.

† Parts of a song.

‡ Wide of your mark.

*Helen.* In love, i'faith, to the very tip of the nose.

*Par.* He eats nothing but doves, love; and that breeds hot blood, and hot blood begets hot thoughts, and hot thoughts beget hot deeds, and hot deeds is love.

*Pan.* Is this the generation of love? hot blood, hot thoughts, and hot deeds?—Why, they are vipers: Is love a generation of vipers? Sweet lord, who's a-field to-day?

*Par.* Hector, Deiphobus, Helenus, Antenor, and all the gallantry of Troy: I would fain have armed to-night, but my Nell would not have it so. How chance my brother Troilus went not?

*Helen.* He hangs the lip at something;—you know all, lord Pandarus.

*Pan.* Not I, honey-sweet queen.—I long to hear how they sped to-day.—You'll remember your brother's excuse?

*Par.* To a hair.

*Pan.* Farewell, sweet queen.

*Helen.* Commend me to your niece.

*Pan.* I will, sweet queen. *[Exit.]*

*[A Retreat sounded.]*

*Par.* They are come from field: let us to Priam's hall, [woo you]

To greet the warriors. Sweet Helen, I must to help unarm our Hector: his stubborn buckles, [touch'd]

With these your white enchanting fingers Shall more obey, than to the edge of steel,

Or force of Greekish sinews; you shall do more Than all the island kings, disarm great Hector.

*Helen.* 'Twill make us proud to be his servant, Paris:

Yea, what he shall receive of us in duty, Give us more palm in beauty than we have; Yea, overshines ourself.

*Par.* Sweet, above thought I love thee. *[Event.]*

SCENE II. The same. Pandarus' Orchard.

*Enter PANDARUS and a Servant, meeting.*

*Pan.* How now? where's thy master? at my cousin Cressida's?

*Serv.* No, sir; he stays for you to conduct him thither.

*Enter TROILUS.*

*Pan.* O, here he comes.—How now, how now?

*Tro.* Sirrah, walk off. *[Exit Servant.]*

*Pan.* Have you seen my cousin?

*Tro.* No, Pandarus: I stalk about her door, Like a strange soul upon the Stygian banks Staying for waftage. O, be thou my Charon, And give me swift transporance to those fields, Where I may wallow in the lily beds Proposed for the deserver! O gentle Pandarus, From Cupid's shoulder pluck his painted wings, And fly with me to Cressid!

*Pan.* Walk here i' the orchard, I'll bring her straight. *[Exit PANDARUS.]*

*Tro.* I am giddy; expectation whirls me The imaginary relish is so sweet [ground. That it enchants my sense; What will it be,

When that the watery palate tastes indeed Love's thrice-reputed nectar? death, I fear me; Swooning destruction; or some joy too fine, Too subtle-potent, tuned too sharp in sweetness, For the capacity of my ruder powers: I fear it much; and I do fear besides, That I shall lose distinction in my joys; As doth a battle, when they charge on heaps The enemy flying.

*Re-enter PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* She's making her ready, she'll come straight: you must be witty now. She does so blush, and fetches her wind so short, as if she were frayed with a sprite: I'll fetch her. It is the prettiest villain;—she fetches her breath as short as a new-ta'en sparrow.

*[Exit PANDARUS.]*

*Tro.* Even such a passion doth embrace my bosom:

My heart beats thicker than a feverous pulse; And all my powers do their bestowing lose, Like vassalage at unawares encount'ring The eye of majesty.

*Enter PANDARUS and CRESSIDA.*

*Pan.* Come, come, what need you blush? shame's a baby.—Here she is now: swear the oaths now to her, that you have sworn to me.

—What, are you gone again? you must be watched ere you be made tame, must you? Come your ways, come your ways; and you draw backward, we'll put you i' the fills\*.—Why do you not speak to her?—Come, draw this curtain, and let's see your picture. Alas the day; how loath you are to offend daylight! an 'twere dark, you'd close sooner. So, so; rub on, and kiss the mistress t. How now, a kiss in fee-farm! build there, carpenter; the air is sweet. Nay, you shall fight your hearts out, ere I part you. The falcon as the tercel†, for all the ducks i' the river: go to, go to.

*Tro.* You have bereft me of all words, lady.

*Pan.* Words pay no debts, give her deeds: but she'll bereave you of the deeds to, if she call your activity in question. What, billing again? Here's—*In witness whereof the parties interchangeably*—Come in, come in; I'll go get a fire. *[Exit PANDARUS.]*

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord?

*Tro.* O Cressida, how often have I wished me thus?

*Cres.* Wished my lord?—The gods grant!—O my lord!

*Tro.* What should they grant? what makes this pretty abrupton? What too curious dreg espies my sweet lady in the fountain of our love?

*Cres.* More dregs than water, if my fears have eyes.

*Tro.* Fears make devils cherubins; they never see truly.

*Cres.* Blind fear, that seeing reason leads finds safer footing than blind reason stumbling without fear: To fear the worst, oft cures the worst.

*Tro.* O, let my lady apprehend no fear: in

Shafts of a carriage. † The allusion is to bowling; what is now called the jack was formerly termed the mistress. ‡ The tercel is the male and the falcon the female hawk



all Cupid's pageant there is presented no monster.

*Cres.* Nor nothing monstrous neither?

*Tro.* Nothing, but our undertakings; when we vow to weep seas, live in fire, eat rocks, tame tigers; thinking it harder for our mistress to devise imposition enough, than for us to undergo any difficulty imposed. This is the monstrousness in love, lady,—that the will is infinite, and the execution confined; that the desire is boundless, and the act a slave to limit.

*Cres.* They say, all lovers swear more performance than they are able, and yet reserve an ability that they never perform; vowing more than the perfection of ten, and discharging less than the tenth part of one. They that have the voice of lions, and the act of hares, are they not monsters?

*Tro.* Are there such? such are not we: Praise us as we are tasted, allow us as we prove; our head shall go bare, till merit crown it: no perfection in reversion shall have a praise in present: we will not name desert, before his birth; and, being born, his addition\* shall be humble. Few words to fair faith: Troilus shall be such to Cressid, as what envy can say worst, shall be a mock for his truth; and what truth can speak truest, not truer than Troilus.

*Cres.* Will you walk in, my lord?

*Re-enter PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* What, blushing still? have you not done talking yet?

*Cres.* Well, uncle, what folly I commit, I dedicate to you.

*Pan.* I thank you for that; if my lord get a boy of you, you'll give him me: Be true to my lord: if he flinch, chide me for it.

*Tro.* You know now your hostages; your uncle's word, and my firm faith.

*Pan.* Nay, I'll give my word for her too; our kindred, though they be long ere they are wooed, they are constant, being won: they are burs, I can tell you; they'll stick where they are thrown. [me heart:—

*Cres.* Boldness comes to me now, and brings Prince Troilus, I have loved you night and day For many weary months.

*Tro.* Why was my Cressid then so hard to win? [my lord,

*Cres.* Hard to seem won; but I was won, With the first glance that ever—Pardon me;— If I confess much, you will play the tyrant. I love you now; but not, till now, so much But I might master it:—in faith, I lie; [grown My thoughts were like unbridled children, Too headstrong for their mother: See we fools! Why have I blabb'd? who shall be true to us When we are so unsecret to ourselves?

But though I loved you well, I woo'd you not; And yet, good faith, I wish'd myself a man; Or that we women had men's privilege Of speaking first. Sweet, bid me hold my tongue;

For, in this rapture, I shall surely speak The thing I shall repent. See, see, your silence,

Cunning in dumbness, from my weakness draws My very soul of counsel: Stop my mouth.

*Tro.* And shall, albeit sweet music issues

*Pan.* Pretty, i'faith. [thence.

*Cres.* My lord, I do beseech you, pardon me; 'Twas not my purpose, thus to beg a kiss: I am ashamed;—O heavens! what have I done? For this time will I take my leave, my lord.

*Tro.* Your leave, sweet Cressid?

*Pan.* Leave! an you take leave till to-morrow morning,—

*Cres.* I pray you, content you.

*Tro.* What offends you, lady?

*Cres.* Sir, mine own company.

*Tro.* You cannot shun Yourself.

*Cres.* Let me go and try:

I have a kind of self resides with you; But an unkind self, that itself will leave, To be another's fool. I would be gone: Where is my wit? I know not what I speak.

*Tro.* Well know they what they speak, that speak so wisely. [craft than love;

*Cres.* Perchance, my lord, I show more And fell so roundly to a large confession, To angle for your thoughts: But you are wise; Or else you love not; For to be wise, and love, Exceeds man's might; that dwells with gods above. [woman,

*Tro.* O, that I thought it could be in a (As, if it can, I will presume in you,)

To feed for aye her lamp and flames of love; To keep her constancy in plight and youth, Outliving beauty's outward, with a mind That doth renew swifter than blood decays! Or, that persuasion could but thus convince me, That my integrity and truth to you Might be affronted; with the match and weight Of such a winnow'd purity in love; How were I then uplifted! but, alas, I am as true as truth's simplicity, And simpler than the infancy of truth

*Cres.* In that I'll war with you.

*Tro.* O virtuous fight, When right with right wars who shall be most right!

True swains in love shall, in the world to come, Approve their truths by Troilus: when their rhymes,

Full of protest, of oath, and big compare, §, Want smiles, truth tired with iteration,— As true as steel, as plantage to the moon, As sun to day, as turtle to her mate, As iron to adamant, as earth to the centre,— Yet, after all comparisons of truth, As truth's authentic author to be cited, As true as Troilus shall crown up || the verse, And sanctify the numbers.

*Cres.* Prophet may you be If I be false, or swerve a hair from truth, When time is old and hath forgot itself, When water-drops have worn the stones > And blind oblivion swallow'd cities up, [Troy And mighty states characterless are grated To dusty nothing; yet let memory, From false to false, among false maids in love

\* Titles. † Ever. ‡ Met with and equalled. § Comparison. || Conclude it.

Upbraid my falsehood! when they have said—  
as false

As air, as water, wind, or sandy earth,  
As fox to lamb, as wolf to heifer's calf,  
Pard to the hind, or stepdame to her son;  
Yea, let them say, to stick the heart of false-  
As false as Cressid. [hood,

*Pan.* Go to, a bargain made: seal it, seal it; I'll be the witness.—Here I hold your hand; here, my cousin's. If ever you prove false one to another, since I have taken such pains to bring you together, let all pitiful goers-between be called to the world's end after my name, call them all—Pandars; let all constant men be Troiluses all false women Cressids, and all brokers-between Pandars! say, amen.

*Tro.* Amen.

*Cres.* Amen.

*Pan.* Amen. Whereupon I will show you a chamber and a bed, which bed, because it shall not speak of your pretty encounters, press it to death: away.

And Cupid grant all tongue-tied maidens here,  
Bed, chamber, Pandar, to provide this gear!

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III. The Grecian Camp.

*Enter AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, DIOMEDES, NESTOR, AJAX, MENELAUS, and CALCHAS.*

*Cal.* Now, princes, for the service I have done you,

The advantage of the time prompts me aloud  
To call for recompense. Appear it to your mind,

[*Jove*]  
That, through the sight I bear in things, to I have abandoned Troy, left my possession, Incur'd a traitor's name; exposed myself, From certain and possessed conveniences, To doubtful fortunes; sequestering from me all

[*tion,*]  
That time, acquaintance, custom, and condi- Made tame and most familiar to my nature; And here, to do you service, am become As new into the world, strange, unacquainted: I do beseech you, as in way of taste, To give me now a little benefit, Out of those many registered in promise, Which, you say, live to come in my behalf.

*Agam.* What wouldst thou of us, Trojan? make demand.

[*tenor,*]  
*Cal.* You have a Trojan prisoner, called Ant- Yesterday took; Troy holds him very dear. O! have you, (often have you thanks, there- fore.)

Desired my Cressid in right great exchange, Whom Troy hath still denied: But this Ant- I know, is such a wrest\* in their affairs, [nor, That their negotiations all must slack, Wanting his manage; and they will almost Give us a prince of blood, a son of Priam, in change of him: let him be sent, great princes,

[*sence*]  
And he shall buy my daughter; and her pre- Shall quite strike off all service I have done, in most accepted pain.

*Agam.* Let Diomedes bear him,

And bring us Cressid hither; Calchas shall have

What he requests of us.—Good Diomed, Furnish you fairly for this interchange:

Withal, bring word—if Hector will to-morrow Be answer'd in his challenge: Ajax is ready.

*Dio.* This shall I undertake; and 'tis a bur- Which I am proud to bear.

[*den*]  
*Exeunt DIOMEDES and CALCHAS.*

*Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS, before their Tent.*

*Ulyss.* Achilles stands i'the entrance of his tent:—

Please it our general to pass strangely† by him, As if he were forgot; and, princes all,

Lay negligent and loose regard upon him: I will come last: 'Tis like, he'll question me,

Why such unplausible eyes are bent, why turn'd If so, I have derision med'cinable, [on him:]

To use between our strangeness and his pride, Which his own will shall have desire to drink;

It may do good: pride hath no other glass To show itself, but pride; for supple knees

Feed arrogance, and are the proud man's fees. *Agam.* We'll execute your purpose, and

put on A form of strangeness as we pass along;—

So do each lord; and either greet him not, Or else disdainfully, which shall shake him

more Than if not looked on. I will lead the way.

*Achil.* What, comes the general to speak with me? [Troy.]

You know my mind, I'll fight no more 'gainst *Agam.* What says Achilles? would he ought

with us? [general?]  
*Nest.* Would you, my lord, aught with the

*Achil.* No.  
*Nest.* Nothing, my lord.

*Agam.* 'Tis better.  
[*Exeunt AGAMEMNON and NESTOR.*]

*Achil.* Good day, good day.  
*Men.* How do you? how do you?

[*Exit MENELAUS.*]  
*Achil.* What, does the cuckold scorn me?

*Ajax.* How now, Patroclus?  
*Achil.* Good morrow, Ajax.

*Ajax.* Ha?  
*Achil.* Good morrow.

*Ajax.* Ay, and good next day too.  
[*Exit AJAX.*]

*Achil.* What mean these fellows? Know they not Achilles?

[*used to bend,*]  
*Patr.* They pass by strangely: they were To send their smiles before them to Achilles;

To come as humbly, as they used to creep To holy altars.

*Achil.* What, am I poor of late? 'Tis certain, greatness, once fallen out with

fortune, [clined is, Must fall out with men too: What the de-

He shall as soon read in the eyes of others, As feel in his own fall: for men, like butter-

flies, [mer; Show not their mealy wings, but to the sun- And not a man, for being simply man,

\* An instrument for tuning harps, &c.

† Shyly.

Hath any honour; but honour for those hours  
 That are without him, as place, riches, fa-  
 Prizes of accident as oft as merit :  
 Which when they fall, as being slippery stand-  
 The love that lean'd on them as slippery too,  
 Do one pluck down another, and together  
 Die in the fall. But 'tis not so with me :  
 Fortune and I are friends; I do enjoy  
 At ample point all that I did possess,  
 Save these men's looks; who do, methinks, find  
 Something not worth in me such rich beholding  
 As they have often given. Here is Ulysses;  
 I'll interrupt his reading.—  
 How now, Ulysses?

*Ulyss.* Now, great Thetis' son?

*Achil.* What are you reading?

*Ulyss.* A strange fellow here  
 Writes me, That man—how dearly ever parted\*,  
 How much in having, or without, or in,—  
 Cannot make boast to have that which he hath,  
 Nor feels not what he owes, but by reflection;  
 As when his virtues shining upon others  
 Heat them, and they retort that heat again  
 To the first giver.

*Achil.* This is not strange, Ulysses.  
 The beauty that is borne here in the face  
 The bearer knows not, but commends itself  
 To others' eyes: nor doth the eye itself  
 (That most pure spirit of sense,) behold itself,  
 Not going from itself; but eye to eye opposed  
 Salutes each other with each other's form.  
 For speculation turns not to itself,  
 Till it hath travelled, and is married there [all.

Where it may see itself: this is not strange at

*Ulyss.* I do not strain at the position,  
 It is familiar; but at the author's drift:  
 Who, in his circumstance†, expressly proves—  
 That no man is the lord of any thing,  
 (Though in and of him there be much con-  
 sisting,)

Till he communicate his parts to others:  
 Nor doth he of himself know them for aught  
 Till he behold them formed in the applause  
 Where they are extended; which, like an arch,  
 reverberates

The voice again; or like a gate of steel  
 Fronting the sun, receives and renders back  
 His figure and his heat. I was much rapt in  
 And apprehended here immediately [this;  
 The unknown Ajax.

Heavens, what a man is there! a very horse;  
 That has he knows not what. Nature, what  
 things there are,

Most abject in regard, and dear in use!  
 What things again most dear in the esteem,  
 And poor in worth! Now shall we see to-  
 morrow,

An act that very chance doth throw upon him,  
 Ajax renowned. O heavens, what some men  
 While some men leave to do!

How some men creep in skittish fortune's hall,  
 Whiles others play the idiots in her eyes!  
 How one man eats into another's pride,  
 While pride is fasting in his wantonness! [ready  
 To see these Grecian lords!—why, even al-

They clasp the lubber Ajax on the shoulder;  
 As if his foot were on brave Hector's breast,  
 And great Troy shrinking.

*Achil.* I do believe it: for they passed by me  
 As misers do by beggars: neither gave to me  
 Good word, nor look: What, are my deeds  
 forgot?

*Ulyss.* Time hath, my lord, a wallet at his  
 Wherein he puts alms for oblivion,  
 A great-sized monster of ingratitude:  
 Those scraps are good deeds past: which are  
 devoured

As fast as they are made, forgot as soon  
 As done: Perseverance, dear my lord,  
 Keeps honour bright: To have done, is to  
 Unite out of fashion, like a rusty mail [hang  
 In monumental mockery. Take the instant  
 way;

For honour travels in a strait so narrow,  
 Where one but goes abreast: keep then the  
 For emulation hath a thousand sons, [path;  
 That one by one pursue: If you give way,  
 Or hedge aside from the direct forthright,  
 Like to an enter'd tide, they all rush by,  
 And leave you hindmost;—

Or, like a gallant horse fallen in first rank,  
 Lie there for pavement to the abject rear,  
 O'er-run and trampled on: Then what they do  
 in present,

Though less than yours in past, must o'ertop  
 For time is like a fashionable host,  
 That slightly shakes his parting guest by the  
 hand;

[fly,  
 And with his arms out-stretch'd, as he would  
 Grasp in the corner: Welcome ever smiles,  
 And farewell goes out sighing. O let not vir-  
 Remuneration for the thing it was; [tue seek  
 For beauty, wit,

High birth, vigour of bone, desert in service,  
 Love, friendship, charity, are subjects all  
 To envions and calumniating time.

One touch of nature makes the whole world  
 kin,—

[gawds †,  
 That all, with one consent, praise new-born  
 Though they are made and moulded of things  
 And give to dust, that is a little gilt, [past;  
 More laud than gilt o'er-dusted.

The present eye praises the present object:  
 Then marvel not, thou great and complete man,  
 That all the Greeks begin to worship Ajax;  
 Since things in motion sooner catch the eye,  
 Than what not stirs. The cry went once on  
 thee,

And still it might; and yet it may again,  
 If thou wouldst not entomb thyself alive,  
 And case thy reputation in thy tent;  
 Whose glorious deeds, but in these fields of  
 late,

[themselves,  
 Made emulous missions § 'mongst the gods  
 And drove great Mars to faction.

*Achil.* Of this my privacy  
 I have strong reasons.

*Ulyss.* But 'gainst your privacy  
 The reasons are more potent and heroic:  
 'Tis known, Achilles, that you are in love  
 With one of Priam's daughters ||.

\* Excellently endowed.

† Detail of argument.

‡ New fashioned toys.

§ The descent of the deities to combat on either side.

|| Polyxena.



*Achil.*

Ha! known?

*Ulyss.* Is that a wonder?

The providence that's in a watchful state,  
Knows almost every grain of Plutus' gold;  
Finds bottom in the uncomprehensive deeps;  
Keeps place with thought, and almost, like  
the gods,

Does thoughts unveil in their dumb cradles.

There is a mystery (with whom relation  
Durst never meddle) in the soul of state;  
Which hath an operation more divine,  
Than breath, or pen can give expressure to:  
All the commerce that you have had with Troy,  
As perfectly is ours, as your's, my lord;  
And better would it fit Achilles much,  
To throw down Hector, than Polyxena:

But it must grieve young Pyrrhus now at home,

When Fame shall in our islands sound her  
And all the Greekish girls shall tripping sing,—  
*Great Hector's sister did Achilles win;*

*But our great Ajax bravely beat down him.*  
Farewell, my lord: I as your lover\* speak;  
The fool slides o'er the ice that you should  
break. [Exit.]

*Patr.* To this effect, Achilles, have I moved you:

A woman impudent and mannish grown  
Is not more loathed than an effeminate man  
In time of action. I stand condemn'd for this;  
They think, my little stomach to the war,  
And your great love to me, restrains you thus:  
Sweet, rouse yourself; and the weak wauton  
Cupid

Shall from your neck unloose his amorous fold,  
And, like a dew-drop from the lion's mane,  
Be snook to air.

*Achil.* Shall Ajax fight with Hector?*Patr.* Ay; and, perhaps, receive much honour by him.

*Achil.* I see, my reputation is at stake;  
My fame is shrewdly gored.

*Patr.* O, then beware;

Those wounds heal ill, that men do give them—  
Omission to do what is necessary [selves:  
Seals a commission to a blank of danger;  
And danger, like an ague, subtly taints  
Even then when we sit idly in the sun.

*Achil.* Go call Thersites hither, sweet Patroclus:

I'll send the fool to Ajax, and desire him  
To invite the Trojan lords, after the combat,  
To see us here unarm'd: I have a woman's  
longing,

An appetite that I am sick withal,  
To see great Hector in his weeds of peace;  
To talk with him, and to behold his visage,  
Even to my full view. A labour saved!

*Enter* THERSITES.*Ther.* A wonder!*Achil.* What?*Ther.* Ajax goes up and down the field, asking for himself.*Achil.* How so?*Ther.* He must fight singly to-morrow with Hector; and is so prophetically proud of an

heroical cudgelling, that he raves in saying nothing.

*Achil.* How can that be?

*Ther.* Why, he stalks up and down like a peacock, a stride, and a stand: ruminates, like an hostess, that hath no arithmetic but her brain to set down her reckoning: bites his lip with a politic regard, as who should say—there were wit in this head, an 'twould out; and so there is; but it lies as coldly in him as fire in a flint which will not show with knocking. The man's undone for ever; for if Hector break not his neck i' the combat, he'll break it himself in vain-glory. He knows not me: I said, *Good morrow*, Ajax; and he replies, *Thanks*, Agamemnon. What think you of this man, that takes me for the general? He is grown a very land-fish, languageless, a monster. A plague of opinion! a man may wear it on both sides, like a leather jerkin.

*Achil.* Thou must be my ambassador to him, Thersites.

*Ther.* Who, I? why, he'll answer nobody; he professes not answering; speaking is for beggars; he wears his tongue in his arms. I will put on his presence; let Patroclus make demands to me, you shall see the pageant of Ajax.

*Achil.* To him, Patroclus: Tell him—I humbly desire the valiant Ajax, to invite the most valorous Hector to come unarmed to my tent: and to procure safe conduct for his person, of the magnanimous, and most illustrious, six-or-seven-times-honoured captain-general of the Grecian army, Agamemnon. Do this.

*Patr.* Jove bless great Ajax.*Ther.* Humph!*Patr.* I come from the worthy Achilles,—*Ther.* Ha!*Patr.* Who most humbly desires you, to invite Hector to his tent!—*Thir.* Humph!*Patr.* And to procure safe conduct from Agamemnon.*Ther.* Agamemnon?*Patr.* Ay, my lord.*Ther.* Ha!*Patr.* What say you to't?*Ther.* God be wi' you, with all my heart.*Patr.* Your answer, sir.

*Ther.* If to-morrow be a fair day, by eleven o'clock it will go one way or other; howsoever, he shall pay for me ere he has me.

*Patr.* Your answer, sir.*Ther.* Fare you well, with all my heart.*Achil.* Why, but he is not in this tune, is he?

*Ther.* No, but he's out o'tune thus. What music will be in him when Hector has knocked out his brains, I know not: But, I am sure, none; unless the fiddler Apollo get his sinews to make catlings† on.

*Achil.* Come, thou shalt bear a letter to him straight.

\* Friend.

† Lute-strings made of catgut.

*Ther.* Let me bear another to his horse;  
for that's the more capable\* creature. [stirr'd;  
*Achil.* My mind is troubled, like a fountain  
And I myself see not the bottom of it.  
[*Exeunt* ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.]

*Ther.* 'Would the fountain of your mind  
were clear again, that I might water an ass at  
it! I had rather be a tick in a sheep, than  
such a valiant ignorance.

[*Exit.*

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. Troy. A Street.

*Enter, at one side, ÆNEAS and Servant,  
with a Torch; at the other, PARIS, DEI-  
PHOBUS, ANTENOR, DIOMEDES, and  
Others, with torches.*

*Par.* See, ho! who's that there?

*Dei.* 'Tis the lord Æneas.

*Æne.* Is the prince there in person?  
Had I so good occasion to lie long, [business  
As you, prince Paris, nothing but heavenly  
Should rob my bed-mate of my company.

*Dio.* That's my mind too.—Good morrow,  
lord Æneas.

*Par.* A valiant Greek, Æneas; take his hand:  
Witness the process of your speech, wherein  
You told—how Diomed, a whole week by  
Did haunt you in the field. [days,

*Æne.* Health to you, valiant sir,  
During all question of the gentle truce:  
But when I meet you arm'd, as black defiance,  
As heart can think, or courage execute.

*Dio.* The one and other Diomed embraces.  
Our bloods are now in calm; and, so long,  
health:

But when contention and occasion meet,  
By Jove, I'll play the hunter for thy life,  
With all my force, pursuit, and policy.

*Æne.* And thou shalt hunt a lion, that will  
fly [ness,

With his face backward. In humane gentle-  
Welcome to Troy! now, by Anchises' life,  
Welcome, indeed! By Venus' hand I swear,  
No man alive can love, in such a sort,  
The thing he means to kill more excellently.

*Dio.* We sympathize:—Jove, let Æneas live,  
If to my sword his fate be not the glory,  
A thousand complete courses of the sun!  
But in mine emulous honour, let him die,  
With every joint a wound; and that to-morrow!  
*Æne.* We know each other well.

*Dio.* We do; and long to know each other  
worse. [ing,

*Par.* This is the most spiteful gentle greet-  
The noblest hateful love, that e'er I heard of.—  
What business, lord, so early?

*Æne.* I was sent for to the king; but why,  
I know not. [bring this Greek

*Par.* His purpose meets you; 'Twas to  
To Calchas' house; and there to render him,  
For the enfréed Antenor, the fair Cressid:  
Let's have your company; or, if you please,  
Haste there before us: I constantly do think,  
(Or, rather, call my thought a certain know-  
ledge.)

My brother Troilus lodges there to-night;  
Rouse him, and give him note of our approach,

With the whole quality wherefore: I fear,  
We shall be much unwelcome.

*Æne.* That I assure you;  
Troilus had rather Troy were borne to Greece,  
Than Cressid borne from Troy.

*Par.* There is no help;  
The bitter disposition of the time

Will have it so. On, lord; we'll follow you.

*Æne.* Good morrow, all. [*Exit.*

*Par.* And tell me, noble Diomed; 'faith,  
tell me true,

Even in the soul of sound good-fellowship,—  
Who, in your thoughts, merits fair Helen best,  
Myself, or Menelaus?

*Dio.* Both alike:  
He merits well to have her, that doth seek her  
(Not making any scruple of her soileure,)

With such a hell of pain, and world of charge,  
And you as well to keep her, that defend her  
(Not palating the taste of her dishonour,)

With such a costly loss of wealth and friends.  
He, like a puling cuckold, would drink up

The lees and dregs of a flat tamed piece;  
You, like a lecher, out of whorish loins  
Are pleased to breed out your inheritors:

Both merits poised, each weighs nor less nor  
But he as he, the heavier for a whore. [more;

*Par.* You are too bitter to your country-  
woman. [Paris,—

*Dio.* She's bitter to her country: Hear me,  
For every false drop in her bawdy veins  
A Grecian's life hath sunk; for every scruple  
Of her contaminated carrion weight, [speak,  
A Trojan hath been slain: since she could  
She hath not given so many good words breath,  
As for her Greeks and Trojans suffer'd death.

*Par.* Fair Diomed, you do as chapmen do,  
Dispraise the thing that you desire to buy:  
But we in silence hold this virtue well,—  
We'll not commend what we intend to sell.  
Here lies our way. [*Exeunt.*

### SCENE II. The same. Court before the House of Pandarus.

*Enter* TROILUS and CRESSIDA.

*Tro.* Dear, trouble not yourself; the morn-  
is cold. [uncle down;

*Cres.* Then, sweet my lord, I'll call mine  
He shall unbolt the gates.

*Tro.* Trouble him not;  
To bed, to bed: Sleep kill those pretty eyes,  
And give as soft attachment to thy senses  
As infants', empty of all thought

*Cres.* Good morrow then—

*Tro.* 'Pr'ythee now, to bed.

*Cres.* Are you aware of me?

*Tro.* O Cressida! but that the busy day,

\* Intelligent.

† Conversation.

Waked by the lark, hath roused the ribald \*  
crows, [longer,  
And dreaming night will hide our joys no  
I would not from thee.

*Cres.* Night hath been too brief.  
*Tro.* Beshrew the witch! with venomous  
wights she stays,

As tediously as hell; but flies the grasp of love,  
With wings more momentary-swift than  
You will catch cold, and curse me. [thought.

*Cres.* Pr'ythee, tarry;—  
You men will never tarry.—  
O foolish Cressid!—I might have still held off,  
And then you would have tarried. Hark!  
there's one up.

*Pan.* [Within.] What, are all the doors open  
here?

*Tro.* It is your uncle.

*Enter PANDARUS.*

*Cres.* A pestilence on him! now will he be  
I shall have such a life, — [mocking:]

*Pan.* How now, how now? how go maiden-  
heads?—Here, you maid! where's my cousin  
Cressid?

*Cres.* Go hang yourself, you naughty mock-  
ing uncle! [too.]

You bring me to do, and then you flout me

*Pan.* To do what? to do what?—let her say  
what: what have I brought you to do?

*Cres.* Come, come; beshrew† your heart!  
Nor suffer others. [you'll ne'er be good,

*Pan.* Ha, ha! Alas, poor wretch! a poor  
capocchia‡—hast not slept to-night? would  
he not, a naughty man, let it sleep? a bugbear  
take him! [Knocking.]

*Cres.* Did I not tell you?—'would he were  
knock'd o'the head!—

Who's that at door? good uncle, go and see.—  
My lord, come you again into my chamber:

You smile, and mock me, as if I meant  
*Tro.* Ha, ha! [naughtily.]

*Cres.* Come, you are deceived, I think of no  
such thing — [Knocking.]

How earnestly they knock!—pray you, come  
in;

I would not for half Troy have you seen here.

[*Exeunt TROILUS and CRESSIDA.*

*Pan.* [Going to the door.] Who's there?  
what's the matter? will you beat down the  
door? How now? what's the matter?

*Enter ÆNEAS.*

*Æne.* Good morrow, lord, good morrow.

*Pan.* Who's there? my lord Æneas? By  
my troth, I knew you not: what news with  
you so early?

*Æne.* Is not prince Troilus here?

*Pan.* Here! what should he do here?

*Æne.* Come, he is here, my lord, do not  
deny him;

It doth import him much to speak with me.

*Pan.* Is he here, say you? 'tis more than I  
know, [late:]

I'll be sworn:—For my own part, I came in  
What should he do here?

*Æne.* Who!—nay, then:—

Come, come, you'll do him wrong ere you are  
'ware:

You'll be so true to him, to be false to him:  
Do not you know of him, yet go fetch him  
Go. [hither;]

*As PANDARUS is going out, enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* How now? what's the matter? [you,

*Æne.* My lord, I scarce have leisure to salute  
My matter is so rash: There is at hand  
Paris your brother, and Deiphobus,  
The Grecian Diomed, and our Antenor  
Deliver'd to us; and for him forthwith,  
Ere the first sacrifice, within this hour,  
We must give up to Diomedes' hand  
The lady Cressida.

*Tro.* Is it so concluded?

*Æne.* By Priam, and the general state of  
Troy;

They are at hand, and ready to effect it.

*Tro.* How my achievements mock me!

I will go meet them: and, my lord Æneas,  
We met by chance; you did not find me here.

*Æne.* Good, good, my lord; the secrets of  
Have not more gift in taciturnity. [nature]

[*Exeunt TROILUS and ÆNEAS.*

*Pan.* Is't possible? no sooner got, but lost?  
The devil take Antenor! the young prince will  
go mad. A plague upon Antenor, I would  
they had broke's neck!

*Enter CRESSIDA.*

*Cres.* How now? What is the matter? Who

*Pan.* Ah, ah! [was here?

*Cres.* Why sigh you so profoundly? where's  
my lord gone?

Tell me, sweet uncle, what's the matter?

*Pan.* 'Would I were as deep under the earth  
as I am above!

*Cres.* O the gods!—what's the matter?

*Pan.* Pr'ythee, get thee in; 'Would thou  
had'st ne'er been born! I knew thou wouldst  
be his death:—O poor gentleman!—A plague  
upon Antenor!

*Cres.* Good uncle, I beseech you on my  
knees, I beseech you, what's the matter?

*Pan.* Thou must be gone, wench, thou must  
be gone; thou art changed for Antenor: thou  
must to thy father, and begone from Troilus;  
'twill be his death; 'twill be his bane; he cannot  
bear it.

*Cres.* O you immortal gods!—I will not go.

*Pan.* Thou must. [father;]

*Cres.* I will not, uncle: I have forgot my  
I know no touch¶ of consanguinity;

No kin, no love, no blood, no soul so near me,  
As the sweet Troilus.—O you gods divine!

Make Cressid's name the very crown of false  
hood, [death]

If ever she leave Troilus! Time, force, and  
Do to this body what extremes you can;

But the strong base and building of my love  
Is as the very centre of the earth,

Drawing all things to it.—I'll go in, and weep;

*Pan.* Do, do.

*Cres.* Tear my bright hair, and scratch my  
praised cheeks,

\* Lewd, noisy.

† To do is here used in a wanton sense.

‡ Ill betide.

An Italian word for poor fool!

¶ Hasty.

¶ Sense or feeling of relationship.



Crack my clear voice with sobs, and break my heart [Troy.]

With sounding Troilus. I will not go from [Exit.]

SCENE III. *The same. Before Pandarus' House.*

*Enter PARIS, TROILUS, ÆNEAS, DEIPHOBUS, ANTENOR, and DIOMEDES.*

*Par.* It is great morning; and the hour pre-Of her delivery to this valiant Greek [fix'd Comes fast upon:—Good my brother Troilus, Tell you the lady what she is to do, And haste her to the purpose.

*Tro.* Walk in to her house; I'll bring her to the Grecian presently: And to his hand when I deliver her, Think it an altar; and thy brother Troilus A priest, there offering to it his own heart. [Exit.]

*Par.* I know what 'tis to love; And would, as I shall pity, I could help!—Please you, walk in, my lords. [Exit.]

SCENE IV. *The same. A Room in Pandarus' House.*

*Enter PANDARUS and CRESSIDA.*

*Pan.* Be moderate, be moderate.

*Cres.* Why tell you me of moderation? The grief is fine, full, perfect, that I taste, And violenteth in a sense as strong [it? As that which causeth it: How can I moderate If I could temporize with my affection, Or brew it to a weak and colder palate, The like allayment could I give my grief: My love admits no qualifying dross: No more my grief, in such a precious loss.

*Enter TROILUS.*

*Pan.* Here, here, here he comes.—Ah sweet ducks!

*Cres.* O Troilus! Troilus! [Embracing him.]

*Pan.* What a pair of spectacles is here! Let me embrace too: *O heart*,—as the goodly saying is,—

—*O heart, O heavy heart,*

*Why sigh'st thou without breaking?* where he answers again,

*Because thou canst not ease thy smart, By friendship, nor by speaking.*

There never was a truer rhyme. Let us cast away nothing, for we may live to have need of such a verse; we see it, we see it.—How now, lambs? [purity]

*Tro.* Cressid, I love thee in so strain'd a That the blest gods—as angry with my fancy, More bright in zeal than the devotion which Cold lips blow to their deities,—take thee from

*Cres.* Have the gods envy? [ine.]

*Pan.* Ay, ay, ay, ay; 'tis too plain a case.

*Cres.* And is it true, that I must go from *Tro.* A hateful truth. [Troy?]

*Cres.* What, and from Troilus too?

*Tro.* From Troy, and Troilus.

*Cres.* Is it possible?

*Tro.* And suddenly; where injury of chance Puts back leave-taking, justles roughly by

All time of pause, rudely beguiles our lips Of all rejoindure, forcibly prevents Our lock'd embasures, strangles our dear vows Even in the birth of our own labouring breath: We two, that with so many thousand sighs Did buy each other, must poorly sell ourselves With the rude brevity and discharge of one. Injurious time now, with a robber's haste, Crams his rich thievery up, he knows not how: As many farewell as be stars in heaven, With distinct breath and consign'd\* kisses to He fumbles up into a loose adieu; [them, And scants us with a single fanish'd kiss, Distasted with the salt of broken† tears.

*Æne.* [Within.] My lord! is the lady ready?

*Tro.* Hark! you are call'd: Some say th Genius so

Cries, *Come!* to him that instantly must die.—Bid them have patience; she shall come anon.

*Pan.* Where are my tears? rain, to lay this wind, or my heart will be blown up by the root! [Exit PANDARUS.]

*Cres.* I must then to the Greeks?

*Tro.* No remedy.

*Cres.* A woeful Cressid 'mongst the merry When shall we see again? [Greeks?]

*Tro.* Hear me, my love: Be thou but true of heart,— [deem? is this?]

*Cres.* I true! how now? what wicked

*Tro.* Nay, we must use expostulation kindly, For it is parting from us:

I speak not, *be thou true*, as fearing thee; For I will throw my glove to death himself, That there's no maculation§ in thy heart:

But *be thou true*, say I, to fashion in My sequent|| protestation; be thou true, And I will see thee. [dangers]

*Cres.* O, you shall be exposed, my lord, to As infinite as imminent! but, I'll be true.

*Tro.* And I'll grow friend with danger. Wear this sleeve. [you?]

*Cres.* And you this glove. When shall I see

*Tro.* I will corrupt the Grecian sentinels, To give thee nightly visitation.

But yet, be true!

*Cres.* O heavens!—be true again?

*Tro.* Hear why I speak it, love;

The Grecian youths are full of quality†; They're loving, well composed, with gifts o' nature flowing,

And swelling o'er with arts and exercise; How novelty may move, and parts with person Alas, a kind of godly jealousy (Which, I beseech you, call a virtuous sin) Makes me afraid.

*Cres.* O heavens! you love me not

*Tro.* Die I a villain, then!

In this I do not call your faith in question, So mainly as my merit: I cannot sing, Nor heel the high lavolt\*\*, nor sweeten talk, Nor play at subtle games: fair virtues all, To which the Grecians are most prompt and pregnant:

But I can tell, that in each grace of these There lurks a still and dumb-discoursive devil

\* Sealed.

† Interrupted.

‡ Surmise.

§ Spot.

|| Following.

¶ Highly accomplished.

\*\* A dance.

That tempts most cunningly: but be not  
*Cres.* Do you think I will? [tempted.]

*Tro.* No.

But something may be done that we will not:  
 And sometimes we are devils to ourselves,  
 When we will tempt the frailty of our powers,  
 Presuming on their changeable potency.

*Æne.* [Within.] Nay, my good lord,—

*Tro.* Come, kiss; and let us part.

*Par.* [Within.] Brother Troilus!

*Tro.* Good brother, come you hither;  
 And bring Æneas, and the Grecian, with you.

*Cres.* My lord, will you be true?

*Tro.* Who I? alas, it is my vice, my fault:  
 While others fish with craft for great opinion,  
 I with great truth catch mere simplicity;  
 Whilst some with cunning gild their copper  
 crowns,

With truth and plainness I do wear mine bare.  
 Fear not my truth; the moral of my wit  
 Is—plain and true,—there's all the reach of it.

*Enter ÆNEAS, PARIS, ANTENOR, DEIPHOBUS, and DIOMEDES.*

Welcome, sir Diomed! here is the lady,  
 Which for Antenor we deliver you.

At the port\*, lord, I'll give her to thy hand;  
 And, by the way, possess† thee what she is.  
 Entreat her fair; and, by my soul, fair Greek,  
 If e'er thou stand at mercy of my sword,  
 Name Cressid, and thy life shall be as safe  
 As Priam is in Ilium.

*Dio.* Fair lady Cressid, [pects;  
 So please you, save the thanks this prince ex-  
 The lustre in your eye, heaven in your cheek,  
 Pleads your fair usage; and to Diomed  
 You shall be mistress, and command him  
 wholly. [ously,

*Tro.* Grecian, thou dost not use me courte-  
 To shame the zeal of my petition to thee,  
 In praising her: I tell thee, lord of Greece,  
 She is at far high-soaring o'er thy praises,  
 As thou unworthy to be call'd her servant.  
 I charge thee, use her well, even for my charge;  
 For, by the dreadful Pluto, if thou dost not,  
 Though the great bulk Achilles be thy guard,  
 I'll cut thy throat.

*Dio.* O, be not moved, prince Troilus:  
 Let me be privileged by my place, and message,  
 To be a speaker free; when I am hence,  
 I'll answer to my lust†: And know you, lord,  
 I'll nothing do on charge: To her own worth  
 She shall be prized; but that you say—be't so,  
 I'll speak it in my spirit and honour,—no.

*Tro.* Come, to the port.—I'll tell thee, Dio-  
 med, [head.—  
 This brave shall oft make thee to hide thy  
 Lady, give me your hand; and, as we walk,  
 To our own selves bend we our needful talk.

[*Exeunt TROILUS, CRESSIDA, and  
 DIOMEDES.* [Trumpet heard.]

*Par.* Hark! Hector's trumpet.

*Æne.* How have we spent this morning!  
 The prince must think me tardy and remiss,  
 That swore to ride before him to the field.

*Par.* 'Tis Troilus' fault: Come come, to field  
 with him.

*Dei.* Let us make ready straight. [ty,

*Æne.* Yea, with a bridegroom's fresh alacri-  
 Let us address to tend on Hector's heels:  
 The glory of our Troy doth this day lie  
 On his fair worth and single chivalry.

SCENE V. *The Grecian Camp. Lists set out.*

*Enter AJAX armed; AGAMEMNON, ACHIL-  
 LES, PATROCLUS, MENELAUS, ULYSSES,  
 NESTOR, and Others.*

*Agam.* Here art thou in appointment‡ fresh  
 and fair,

Anticipating time with starting courage.  
 Give with thy trumpet a loud note to Troy,  
 Thou dreadful Ajax; that the appalled air  
 May pierce the head of the great combatant,  
 And hale him hither.

*Ajax.* Thou trumpet, there's my purse.  
 Now crack thy lungs, and split thy brazen pipe:  
 Blow, villain, till thy sphered bias cheek  
 Out-swell the colic of puff'd Aquilon: [blood;  
 Come, stretch thy chest, and let thy eyes spout  
 Thou blow'st for Hector. [Trumpet sounds.]

*Ulyss.* No trumpet answers.

*Achil.*

'Tis but early days.

*Agam.* Is not yon Diomed, with Calchas'  
 daughter?

*Ulyss.* 'Tis he, I ken the manner of his gait  
 He rises on the toe: that spirit of his  
 In aspiration lifts him from the earth.

*Enter DIOMEDES, with CRESSIDA.*

*Agam.* Is this the lady Cressid?

*Dio.*

Even she.

*Agam.* Most dearly welcome to the Greeks,  
 sweet lady. [kiss.]

*Nest.* Our general doth salute you with a  
*Ulyss.* Yet is the kindness but particular;

'Twere better she were kiss'd in general.

*Nest.* And very courtly counsel: I'll begin.  
 So much for Nestor. [fair lady:]

*Achil.* I'll take that winter from your lips,  
 Achilles bids you welcome.

*Men.* I had good argument for kissing once.

*Patr.* But that's no argument for kissing  
 For thus popp'd Paris in his hardiment; [now:  
 And parted thus you and your argument.

*Ulyss.* O deadly gall, and theme of all our  
 scorns!

For which we lose our heads, to gild his horns.

*Patr.* The first was Menelaus' kiss;—this,  
 Patroclus kisses you. [mine:]

*Men.* O, this is trim!

*Patr.* Paris, and I, kiss evermore for him.

*Men.* I'll have my kiss, sir:—Lady, by your  
 leave.

*Cres.* In kissing, do you render, or receive?

*Patr.* Both take, and give.

*Cres.* I'll make my match to live,

The kiss you take is better than you give;  
 Therefore no kiss. [for one.]

*Men.* I'll give you boot, I'll give you three

*Cres.* You're an odd man; give even, or  
 give none.

*Men.* An odd man, lady? every man is odd.

*Cres.* No, Paris is not; for, you know, 'tis  
 That you are odd, and he is even with you. [true,

\* Gate.

† Inform.

‡ Treasure, will.

Preparation.

*Men.* You fillip me o' the head.

*Cres.* No, I'll be sworn.

*Ulyss.* There was no match, your nail against May I, sweet lady, beg a kiss of you? [his horn.

*Cres.* You may.

*Ulyss.* I do desire it.

*Cres.* Why, beg then.

*Ulyss.* Why then, for Venus' sake, give me When Helen is a maid again, and his. [a kiss,

*Cres.* I am your debtor, claim it when 'tis due. [you.

*Ulyss.* Never's my day, and then a kiss of

*Di.* Lady, a word;—I'll bring you to your father. [DIOMED leans out CRESSIDA.

*Nest.* A woman of quick sense.

*Ulyss.* Fie, fie upon her!

There's language in her eye, her cheek, her lip,  
Nay, her foot speaks; her wanton spirits look  
At every joint and motive \* of her body. [out  
O, these encounters, so glib of tongue,  
That give a coasting welcome ere it comes,  
And wide unclasp the tables of their thoughts  
To every ticklish reader! set them down  
For sluttish spoils of opportunity,  
And daughters of the game. [Trumpet within.

*All.* The Trojans' trumpet.

*Agam.* Yonder comes the troop.

*Enter* HECTOR, armed; ÆNEAS, TROILUS,  
and other Trojans, with Attendants.

*Æne.* Hail, all the state of Greece! what shall be done [purpose

To him that victory commands? Or do you  
A victor shall be known? will you, the knights  
Shall to the edge of all extremity  
Pursue each other, or shall they be divided  
By any voice or order of the field?  
Hector bade ask.

*Agam.* Which way would Hector have it?

*Æne.* He cares not, he'll obey conditions.

*Achil.* 'Tis done like Hector; but securely done,

A little proudly, and great deal misprizing  
The knight opposed.

*Æne.* If not Achilles, sir,

What is your name?

*Achil.* If not Achilles, nothing.

*Æne.* Therefore Achilles: But, whate'er, know this,—

In the extremity of great and little,  
Valour and pride excel themselves in Hector;  
The one almost as infinite as all,  
The other blank as nothing. Weigh him well,  
And that which looks like pride is courtesy.  
This Ajax is half made of Hector's blood:

In love whereof, half Hector stays at home;  
Half heart, half hand, half Hector comes to seek [Greek.

This blended knight, half Trojan, and half  
*Achil.* A maiden battle then!—O, I perceive you.

*Re-enter* DIOMED.

*Agam.* Here is sir Diomed:—Go, gentle knight,

Stand by our Ajax: as you and lord Æneas

Consent upon the order of their fight,  
So be it; either to the uttermost,  
Or else a breath †: the combatants being kin,  
Half stints ‡ their strife before their strokes begin.

[AJAX and HECTOR enter the lists.

*Ulyss.* They are opposed already.

*Agam.* What Trojan is that same that looks so heavy? [knight;

*Ulyss.* The youngest son of Priam, a true  
Not yet mature, yet matchless; firm of word;  
Speaking in deeds, and deedless in his tongue;  
Not soon provoked, nor, being provoked, soon calm'd:

His heart and hand both open, and both free,  
For what he has he gives, what thinks he shews;

Yet gives he not till judgment guide his bounty,  
Nor dignifies an impair'd thought with breath:  
Manly as Hector, but more dangerous;

For Hector, in his blaze of wrath, subscribes ¶  
To tender objects, but he, in heat of action,  
Is more vindictive than jealous love:  
They call him Troilus; and on him erect  
A second hope, as fairly built as Hector.

Thus says Æneas; one that knows the youth  
Even to his inches, and, with private soul,  
Did in great Ilium thus translate \*\* him to me.

[ALARUM. HECTOR and AJAX fight.

*Agam.* They are in action.

*Nest.* Now, Ajax, hold thine own!

*Tro.* Hector, thou sleep'st;  
Awake thee. [Ajax!

*Agam.* His blows are well disposed:—there,  
*Di.* You must no more. [Trumpet cease.

*Æne.* Princes, enough, so please you.

*Ajax.* I am not warm yet, let us fight again

*Di.* As Hector pleases.

*Hect.* Why, then, will I no more:—  
Thou art, great lord, my father's sister's son,  
A cousin-german to great Priam's seed:  
The obligation of our blood forbids  
A gory † emulation 'twixt us twain:  
Were thy commixtion Greek and Trojan so,  
That thou couldst say—*This hand is Gre-*  
*cian all,*

*And this is Trojan; the sinews of this leg*  
*All Greek, and this all Troy; my mother's*  
*blood* [ter §§

*Runs on the dexter ¶ cheek, and this sinis-*  
*Bounds in my father's; by Jove multipotent,*  
Thou shouldst not bear from me a Greekish member

Wherein my sword had not impressure made  
Of our rank feud: But the just gods gainsay  
That any drop thou borrow'st from thy mother,  
My sacred aunt, should by my mortal sword  
Be drain'd! Let me embrace thee, Ajax:  
By him that thunders, thou hast lusty arms;  
Hector would have them fall upon him thus:  
Cousin, all honour to thee!

*Ajax.* I thank thee, Hector:

Thou art too gentle, and too free a man:  
I came to kill thee, cousin, and bear hence

\* Motion.

† Breathing, exercise

‡ Stops.

§ No booster.

Unsuitable to his character.

¶ Yields, gives way.

\*\* Explain his character.

†† Bloody

‡‡ Right.

§§ Left.



A great addition\* earned in thy death.

*Hect.* Not Neoptolemus† so mirable [O yes (On whose bright crest Fame with her loud'st Cries, *This is he*,) could promise to himself A thought of added honour torn from Hector.

*Aene.* There is expectation here from both What further you will do. [the sides,

*Hect.* We'll answer it; The issue is embracement:—Ajax, farewell.

*Ajax.* If I might in entreaties find success, (As sold† I have the chance,) I would desire My famous cousin to our Grecian tents.

*Dio.* 'Tis Agamemnon's wish: and great Achilles

Doth long to see unarm'd the valiant Hector.

*Hect.* Aeneas, call my brother Troilus to And signify this loving interview [me:

To the expecters of our Trojan part; [consin; Desire them home.—Give me thy hand, my I will go eat with thee, and see your knights.

*Ajax.* Great Agamemnon comes to meet us here. [by name;

*Hect.* The worthiest of them tell me name But for Achilles, my own searching eyes Shall find him by his large and portly size.

*Agam.* Worthy of arms! as welcome as to That would be rid of such an enemy; [one But that's no welcome: Understand more clear, [with husks

What's past, and what's to come, is strew'd And formless ruin of oblivion;

But in this extant moment, faith and troth, Strain'd purely from all hollow bias-drawing,

Bids thee, with most divine integrity, From heart of very heart, great Hector, welcome. [memnon.

*Hect.* I thank thee, most imperious‡ Aga-  
*Agam.* My well-famed lord of Troy, no less to you. [To TROILUS.

*Men.* Let me confirm my princely brother's greeting:—

You brace of warlike brothers, welcome hi-  
*Hect.* Whom must we answer? [ther.

*Men.* The noble Menelaus.  
*Hect.* O you, my lord? by Mars his gaunt-  
let, thanks!

Mock not, that I affect the untraded|| oath;  
Your *quondam*¶ wife swears still by Venus' glove: [to you.

She's well, but bade me not commend her  
*Men.* Name her not now, sir; she's a deadly theme.

*Hect.* O pardon; I offend. [oft,

*Nest.* I have, thou gallant Trojan, seen thee Labouring for destiny, make cruel way Through ranks of Greekish youth: and I have seen thee,

As hot as Perseus, spur thy Phrygian steed, Despising many forfeits and subduements,

When thou hast hung thy advanced sword i' the air,  
Not letting it decline on the declined\*\*;

That I have said to some my standers-by,  
*Lo, Jupiter is yonder, dealing life!*

And I have seen thee pause, and take thy breath,

When that a ring of Greeks have hemm'd thee in,

Like an Olympian wrestling: This have I seen; But this thy countenance, still lock'd in steel, I never saw till now. I knew thy grandsire†, And once fought with him: he was a soldier good;

But, by great Mars, the captain of us all, Never like thee: Let an old man embrace thee; And, worthy warrior, welcome to our tents.

*Aene.* 'Tis the old Nestor.  
*Hect.* Let me embrace thee, good old chronicle, [time:—

That hast so long walk'd hand in hand with Most reverend Nestor, I am glad to clasp thee.

*Nest.* I would, my arms could match thee in contention,

As they contend with thee in courtesy.  
*Hect.* I would they could.

*Nest.* Hal  
By this white beard, I'd fight with thee to-morrow. [time—

Well, welcome, welcome! I have seen the  
*Ulyss.* I wonder now how yonder city stands, When we have here her base and pillar by us.

*Hect.* I know your favour, lord Ulysses well. Ah, sir, there's many a Greek and Trojan dead, Since first I saw yourself and Diomed

In Ilion, on your Greekish embassy. [ensue:  
*Ulyss.* Sir, I foretold you then what would My prophecy is but half his journey yet;

For yonder walls, that pertly front your town, Yon towers, whose wanton tops do buss the

Must kiss their own feet. [clouds,  
*Hect.* I must not believe you: There they stand yet; and modestly I think,

The fall of every Phrygian stone will cost A drop of Grecian blood: The end crowns all; And that old common arbitrator, time,

Will one day end it.  
*Ulyss.* So to him we leave it.

Most gentle, and most valiant Hector, wel- After the general, I beseech you next [come:

To feast with me, and see me at my tent.  
*Achil.* I shall forestall thee, lord Ulysses, thou!—

Now, Hector, I have fed mine eyes on thee; I have with exact view perused thee, Hector, And quoted‡ joint by joint.

*Hect.* Is this Achilles?  
*Achil.* I am Achilles.

*Hect.* Stand fair, I pray thee: let me look  
*Achil.* Behold thy fill. [ou thee.

*Hect.* Nay, I have done already.  
*Achil.* Thou art too brief; I will the second time,

As I would buy thee, view thee limb by limb.  
*Hect.* O, like a book of sport thou'lt read me o'er;

But there's more in me than thou understand'st. Why dost thou so oppress me with thine eye?

*Achil.* Tell me, you heavens, in which part of his body [there?

Shall I destroy him? whether there, there, or That I may give the local wound a name;

\* Title.

+ Achilles.

† Seldom.

‡ Imperial.

|| Singular, not common.

¶ Heretofore.

\*\* Fallen.

†† Laomedon.

‡‡ Observed.

And make distinct the very breach whereout  
Hector's great spirit flew: Answer me, hea-  
vens! [proud man,

*Hect.* It would discredit the bless'd gods,  
To answer such a question: Stand again:  
Think'st thou to catch my life so pleasantly,  
As to prenominate\* in nice conjecture,  
Where thou wilt hit me dead?

*Achil.* I tell thee, yea.

*Hect.* Wert thou an oracle to tell me so,  
I'd not believe thee. Henceforth guard thee  
well.

For I'll not kill thee there, nor there, nor there;  
I'll by the forge that studded † Mars his helm,  
I'll kill thee every where, yea, o'er and o'er.—  
You wisest Grecians, pardon me this brag,  
His insolence draws folly from my lips;  
But I'll endeavour deeds to match these words,  
Or may I never—

*Agam.* Do not chafe thee, consin;—

And you, Achilles, let these threats alone,  
Till accident or purpose, bring you to't:  
You may have every day enough of Hector,  
If you have stomach; the general state, I fear,  
Can scarce entreat you to be odd with him.

*Hect.* I pray you, let us see you in the field;  
We have had peeing wars, since you refused  
The Grecians' cause.

*Achil.* Dost thou entreat me, Hector?  
To-morrow, do I meet thee, fell as death;  
To-night, all friends.

*Hect.* Thy hand upon that match.  
*Agam.* First, all you peers of Greece, go to  
my tent;

There in the full convive|| we: afterwards,  
As Hector's leisure and your bounties shall  
Concur together, severally entreat him.—  
Beat loud the tabourines†, let the trumpets  
blow,

That this great soldier may his welcome know.

[*Exeunt all but TROILUS and ULYSSES.*

*Tro.* My lord Ulysses, tell me, I beseech  
you,

In what place of the field doth Calchas keep?  
*Ulyss.* At Menelans' tent, most princely  
Troilus:

There Diomed doth feast with him to-night;  
Who neither looks upon the heaven, nor earth.  
But gives all gaze and bent of amorous view  
On the fair Cressid. [much,

*Troi.* Shall I, sweet lord, be bound to you so  
After we part from Agamemnon's tent,  
To bring me thither?

*Ulyss.* You shall command me, sir.

As gentle tell me, of what honour was  
This Cressida in Troy? Had she no lover there  
That waits her absence? [scars,

*Tro.* O, sir, to such as boasting show their  
A mock is due. Will you walk on, my lord?  
She was beloved, she loved; she is, and doth:  
But still, sweet love is food for fortune's tooth.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. *The Grecian Camp. Before Achilles' Tent.*

*Enter ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.*

*Achil.* I'll heat his blood with Greekish wine  
to-night,

Which with my scimitar I'll cool to-morrow.—  
*Patroclus.* let us feast him to the height.

*Patr.* Here comes Thersites.

*Enter THERSITES.*

*Achil.* How now, thou core of envy?  
Thou crusty batch of nature, what's the news?

*Ther.* Why, thou picture of what thou seemest,  
and idol of idiot-worshippers, here's a letter  
for thee.

*Achil.* From whence, fragment?

*Ther.* Why, thou full dish of fool, from Troy.

*Patr.* Who keeps the tent now?

*Ther.* The surgeon's box, or the patient's  
wound.

*Patr.* Well said, Adversity\*\*! and what  
need these tricks?

*Ther.* Pr'ythee be silent, boy; I profit not  
by thy talk: thou art thought to be Achilles'  
male varlet†.

*Patr.* Male varlet, you rogue! what's that?

*Ther.* Why, his masculine whore. Now  
the rotten diseases of the south, the guts-griping,  
ruptures, catarrhs, loads o' gravel i'the back,  
lethargies, cold palsies, raw eyes, dirt-rotten

livers, wheezing lungs, bladders full of impos-  
hume, sciaticas, lime-kilns i'the palm, incur-  
able bone-ach, and the rivelled fee-simple of  
the tetter, take and take again such prepo-  
terous discoveries!

*Patr.* Why thou damnable box of envy  
thou, what meanest thou to curse thus?

*Ther.* Do I curse thee?

*Patr.* Why, no, you ruinous butt; you  
whoreson indistinguishable cur, no.

*Ther.* No? why art thou then exasperate,  
thou idle immaterial skein of sleivett silk, thou  
green sarcenet flap for a sore eye, thou tassel  
of a prodigal's purse, thou? Ah, how the poor  
world is pestered with such water-flies; dimi-  
natives of nature!

*Patr.* Ont, gall!

*Ther.* Finch egg!

[quite

*Achil.* My sweet Patroclus, I am thwarted  
From my great purpose in to-morrow's battle.  
Here is a letter from queen Hecuba;  
A token from her daughter, my fair love;  
Both taxing me, and gaging me to keep  
An oath that I have sworn. I will not break it:  
Fall, Greeks; fall, fame; honour, or go, or stay,  
My major vow lies here, this I'll obey.—  
Come, come, Thersites, help to trim my tent.  
This night in banquetting must all be spent.

Away, Patroclus.

[*Exeunt ACHILLES and PATROCLUS.*

\* Forename.

† Stithy, is a smith's shop.

‡ Inclination.

§ Petty.

|| Feast.

¶ Small drums.

\*\* Contrariety.

†† Coarse, unthought.

*Ther.* With too much blood, and too little brain, these two may run mad; but if with too much brain, and too little blood, they do, I'll be a curer of madmen. Here's Agamemnon,—an honest fellow enough, and one that loves quails\*; but he has not so much brain as ear-wax: And the goodly transformation of Jupiter there, his brother, the bull,—the primitive statue, and oblique memorial of cuckoldst; a thrifty shoeing-horn in a chain, hanging at his brother's leg,—to what form, but that he is, should wit larded with malice, and malice forced† with wit, turn him to? To an ass, were nothing: he is both ass and ox: to an ox were nothing; he is both ox and ass. To be a dog, a mule, a cat, a fitchew‡, a toad, a lizard, an owl, a puttock, or a herring without a roe, I would not care: but to be Menelaus,—I would conspire against destiny. Ask me not what I would be, if I were not Thersites; for I care not to be the louse of a lazar||, so I were not Menelaus.—Hey-day! spirits and fires!

*Enter* HECTOR, TROILUS, AJAX, AGAMEMNON, ULYSSES, NESTOR, MENELAUS, and DIOMEDES, with Lights.

*Agam.* We go wrong, we go wrong.

*Ajax.* No, yonder 'tis; There, where we see the lights.

*Hect.* I trouble you.

*Ajax.* No, not a whit.

*Ulyss.* Here comes himself to guide you.

*Enter* ACHILLES.

*Achil.* Welcome, brave Hector; welcome, princes all. [good night.

*Agam.* So now, fair prince of Troy, I bid Ajax command the guard to tend on you.

*Hect.* Thanks, and good night, to the Greeks'

*Men.* Good night, my lord. [general.

*Hect.* Good night, sweet Menelaus.

*Ther.* Sweet draught¶: Sweet, quoth 'a! sweet sink, sweet sewer.

*Achil.* Good night, And welcome, both to those that go, or tarry.

*Agam.* Good night.

[*Exeunt* AGAMEMNON and MENELAUS.

*Achil.* Old Nestor tarries; and yon too, Diomed. Hector company an hour or two. [med,

*Hect.* I cannot, lord; I have important business, [Hector.

The tide whereof is now.—Good night, great

*Hect.* Give me your hand.

*Ulyss.* Follow his torch, he goes To Calchas' tent; I'll keep you company.

[*Aside* to TROILUS.

*Tro.* Sweet sir, you honour me.

*Hect.* And so good night.

[*Exit* DIOMEDES; ULYSSES and TROILUS following.

*Achil.* Come, come, enter my tent.

[*Exeunt* ACHILLES, HECTOR, AJAX, and NESTOR.

*Ther.* That same Diomed's a false-hearted rogue, a most unjust knave; I will no more trust him when he leers, than I will a serpent when he hisses: he will spend his mouth, and

promise, like Brabler the hound; but when he performs, astronomers foretell it; it is prodigious\*\*, there will come some change; the sun borrows of the moon, when Diomed keeps his word. I will rather leave to see Hector, than not to dog him: they say, he keeps a Trojan drab, and uses the traitor Calchas' tent: I'll after.—Nothing but lechery! all incontinent varlets! [*Exit.*

SCENE II. The same. Before Calchas' Tent.

*Enter* DIOMEDES.

*Dio.* What are you up here, ho? speak.

*Cal.* [Within.] Who calls?

*Dio.* Diomed.—Calchas, I think.—Where's your daughter?

*Cal.* [Within.] She comes to you.

*Enter* TROILUS and ULYSSES, at a distance; after them THERSITES.

*Ulyss.* Stand where the torch may not discover us.

*Enter* CRESSIDA.

*Tro.* Cressid come forth to him!

*Dio.* How now, my charge?

*Cres.* Now, my sweet guardian!—Hark! a word with you. [*Whispers.*

*Tro.* Yea, so familiar!

*Ulyss.* She will sing any man at first sight.

*Ther.* And any man may sing her, if he can take her cliff††; she's noted.

*Dio.* Will you remember?

*Cres.* Remember? yes.

*Dio.* Nay, but do then; And let your mind be coupled with your words.

*Tro.* What should she remember?

*Ulyss.* List! [inore to folly.

*Cres.* Sweet honey Greek, tempt me no

*Ther.* Roguery!

*Dio.* Nay, then.—

*Cres.* I'll tell you what:

*Dio.* Pho! pho! come, tell a pin: You are forsworn.— [have me do?

*Cres.* In faith, I cannot: What would you

*Ther.* A juggling trick, to be—secretly open.

*Dio.* What did you swear you would bestow on me? [oath;

*Cres.* I prythee, do not hold me to mine Bid me do any thing but that, sweet Greek.

*Dio.* Good night.

*Tro.* Hold, patience!

*Ulyss.* How now, Trojan?

*Cres.* Diomed,—

*Dio.* No, no, good night: I'll be your fool

*Tro.* Thy better must. [no more.

*Cres.* Hark! one word in your ear.

*Tro.* O plague and madness!

*Ulyss.* You are moved, prince; let us depart, I pray you, Lest your displeasure should enlarge itself

To wrathful terms: this place is dangerous; The time right deadly; I beseech you, go.

*Tro.* Behold, I pray you!

*Ulyss.* Now, good my lord, go off: You flow to great destruction; come, my lord.

*Tro.* I prythee, stay.

*Ulyss.* You have not patience; come.

\* Harlots.

† Menelaus.

‡ Stuffed.

§ Polecat.

|| A diseased beggar.

¶ Privy.

\*\* Portentous ominous.

†† Kev.



*Tro.* I pray you, stay; by hell, and all hell's  
I will not speak a word. [torments,

*Dio.* And so, good night.

*Cres.* Nay, but you part in anger.

*Tro.* Doth that grieve thee?

O wither'd truth!

*Ulyss.* Why, how now, lord?

*Tro.* By Jove,

I will be patient.

*Cres.* Guardian!—why, Greek!

*Dio.* Pho, pho! adieu; you palter\*.

*Cres.* In faith, I do not; come hither once  
again. [will you go?

*Ulyss.* You shake, my lord, at something;  
You will break out.

*Tro.* She strokes his cheek!

*Ulyss.* Come, come.

*Tro.* Nay, stay; by Jove, I will not speak  
a word:

There is between my will and all offences

A guard of patience:—stay a little while.

*Ther.* How the devil luxury, with his fat  
rump, and potatoe finger, tickles these toge-  
ther! Fry, lechery, fry!

*Dio.* But will you then? [else.

*Cres.* In faith, I will, la; never trust me

*Dio.* Give me some token for the surety of it.

*Cres.* I'll fetch you one. [Exit.

*Ulyss.* You have sworn patience.

*Tro.* Fear me not, my lord;

I will not be myself, nor have cognition†

Of what I feel; I am all patience.

*Re-enter CRESSIDA.*

*Ther.* Now the pledge; now, now, now!

*Cres.* Here, Diomed, keep this sleeve,

*Tro.* O beauty! where's thy faith?

*Ulyss.* My lord,—

*Tro.* I will be patient; outwardly I will.

*Cres.* You look upon that sleeve; Behold it  
well.— [again.

He loved me—O false wench!—Giv't me

*Dio.* Who was't?

*Cres.* No matter, now I hav't again.

I will not meet with you to-morrow night:

I pry'tice, Diomed, visit me no more.

*Ther.* Now she sharpens;—Well said, whet-

*Dio.* I shall have it. [stone.

*Cres.* What this?

*Dio.* Ay that.

*Cres.* O, all you Gods!—O pretty pretty  
pledge!

Thy master now lies thinking in his bed

Of thee, and me; and sighs, and takes my  
And gives memorial dainty kisses to it, [glove,

As I kiss thee.—Nay, do not snatch it from me;  
He that takes that must take my heart withal.

*Dio.* I had your heart before, this follows it.

*Tro.* I did swear patience. [you shall not;

*Cres.* You shall not have it, Diomed; 'faith  
I'll give you something else.

*Dio.* I will have this; Whose was it?

*Cres.* 'Tis no matter.

*Dio.* Come, tell me whose it was. [you will.

*Cres.* 'Twas one's that loved me better than  
But, now you have it, take it.

*Dio.* Whose was it?

*Cres.* By all Diana's waiting-women yon-  
And by herself, I will not tell you whose. [der]

*Dio.* To-morrow will I wear it on my helm;  
And grieve his spirit that dares not challenge it.

*Tro.* Wert thou the devil, and worst it on  
It should be challenged. [thy horn,

*Cres.* Well, well, 'tis done, 'tis past,—And  
I will not keep my word. [yet it is not;

*Dio.* Why then, farewell;

Thou never shalt mock Diomed again.

*Cres.* You shall not go:—One cannot speak  
But it straight starts you. [a word,

*Dio.* I do not like this fooling.

*Ther.* Nor I, by Pluto: but that that likes  
not you, pleases me best.

*Dio.* What, shall I come? the hour?

*Cres.* Ay, come:—O Jove!—

Do come:—I shall be plagued.

*Dio.* Farewell till then.

*Cres.* Good night. I pry'thee, come.—

[Exit DIOMEDES.

Troilus, farewell! one eye yet looks on thee;  
But with my heart the other eye doth see.

Ah! poor our sex! this fault in us I find,  
The error of our eye directs our mind;

What error leads, must err; O then conclude,  
Minds, sway'd by eyes, are full of turpitude.

[Exit CRESSIDA.

*Ther.* A proof of strength she could not  
publish more, [whore.

Unless she said, My mind is now turn'd

*Ulyss.* All's done, my lord.

*Tro.* It is.

*Ulyss.* Why stay we then?

*Tro.* To make a recordation§ to my soul

Of every syllable that here was spoke.

But, if I tell how these two did co-act

Shall I not lie in publishing a truth?

Sith|| yet there is a credence¶ in my heart,  
An esperance\*\* so obstinately strong,

That doth invert the attest†† of eyes and ears;  
As if those organs had deceptions functions,

Created only to calumniate.

Was Cressid here?

*Ulyss.* I cannot conjure, Trojan.

*Tro.* She was not sure.

*Ulyss.* Most sure she was.

*Tro.* Why, my negation‡‡ hath no taste o.  
madness. [but now.

*Ulyss.* Nor mine, my lord: Cressid was here

*Tro.* Let it not be believed for womanhood§§!

Think, we had mothers, do not give advantage  
To stubborn critics|||—apt, without a theme,

For depravation,—to square the general sex  
By Cressid's rule: rather think this not Cressid.

*Ulyss.* What hath she done, prince, that can  
soil our mothers? [she.

*Tro.* Nothing at all, unless that this were

*Ther.* Will he swagger himself out on's own  
eyes? [sida:

*Tro.* This she? no, this is Diomed's Cres-  
id beauty have a soul, this is not she;

If souls guide vows, if vows be sanctimony,  
If sanctimony be the gods' delight,

\* Shuffle. + Knowledge. † The stars. § Remembrance. || Since. ¶ Belief  
\*\* Hope. †† Testimony. ‡‡ Denial. §§ For the sake of. ||| Cynics.

If there be rule in unity itself.

This was not she. O madness of discourse,  
That cause sets up with and against itself!  
Bi-fold authority! where reason can revolt  
Without perdition, and loss assume all reason  
Without revolt; this is, and is not, Cressid!  
Within my soul there doth commence a fight  
Of this strange nature, that a thing inseparate  
Divides more wider than the sky and earth;  
And yet the spacious breadth of this division  
Admits no orifice for a point, as subtle  
As is Arachne's broken woof, to enter.  
Instance, O instance! strong as Pluto's gates;  
Cressid is mine, tied with the bonds of heaven;  
Instance, O instance! strong as heaven itself;  
The bonds of heaven are slipp'd, dissolved,  
and loosed;

And with another knot, five-finger-tied,  
The fractions of her faith, orts of her love,  
The fragments, scraps, the bits, and greasy reliques

Of her o'er-eaten faith, are bound to Diomed.

Ulyss. May worthy Troilus be half attached  
With that which here his passion doth express?

Tro. Ay, Greek; and that shall be divulged  
In characters as red as Mars his heart [well  
Inflamed with Venus: never did young man  
With so eternal and so fixed a soul. [fancy\*  
Hark, Greek;—As much as I do Cressid love,  
So much by weight hate I her Diomed:

That sleeve is mine, that he'll bear on his helm;  
Were it a casque composed by Vulcan's skill,  
My sword should bite it: not the dreadful  
Which shipmen do the hurricano call [spout,  
Constringed† in mass by the almighty sun,  
Shall dizzy with more clamour Neptune's ear  
In his descent, than shall my prompted sword  
Falling on Diomed.

Ther. He'll tickle it for his concupy §.

Tro. O Cressid! O false Cressid! false, false,  
false!

Let all untruths stand by thy stained name,  
And they'll seem glorious.

Ulyss. O, contain yourself;  
Your passion draws ears hither.

Enter ÆNEAS.

Æne. I have been seeking you this hour, my  
Hector, by this, is arming him in Troy; [lord:  
Ajax, your guard, stays to conduct you home.

Tro. Have with you, prince!—My courteous lord, adieu:

Farewell, revolted fair!—and, Diomed,  
Stand fast, and wear a castle on thy head!

Ulyss. I'll bring you to the gates.

Tro. Accept distracted thanks.

[Exit TROILUS, ÆNEAS, and ULYSSES.

Ther. 'Would, I could meet that rogue Diomed!  
I would croak like a raven; I would bode,  
I would bode. Patroclus will give me  
any thing for the intelligence of this where:  
the parrot will not do more for an almond,  
than he for a commodious drab. Lechery,  
lechery; still, wars and lechery; nothing else  
holds fashion: A burning devil take them!

[Exit.

SCENE III. Troy. Before Priam's Palace.

Enter HECTOR and ANDROMACHE.

And. When was my lord so much ungently  
temper'd,

To stop his ears against admonishment?  
Unarm, unarm, and do not fight to-day.

Hect. You train me to offend you; get you  
By all the everlasting gods, I'll go. [in:

And. My dreams will, sure, prove ominous:

Hect. No more, I say. [to the day.

Enter CASSANDRA.

Cas. Where is my brother Hector?

And. Here, sister; armed, and bloody in  
intent:

Consort with me in loud and dear petition,  
Pursue we him on knees; for I have dream'd  
Of bloody turbulence, and this whole night  
Hath nothing been but shapes and forms of  
Cas. O, it is true. [slaughter.

Hect. Ho! bid my trumpet sound!

Cas. No notes of sally, for the heavens  
sweet brother. [me swear.

Hect. Begone, I say: the gods have heard

Cas. The gods are deaf to hot and peevish  
vows;

They are polluted offerings, more abhorred  
Than spotted livers in the sacrifice.

And. O! be persuaded: Do not count it  
To hurt by being just: it is as lawful, [holly  
For we would give much, to use violent thefts,  
And rob in the behalf of charity.

Cas. It is the purpose that makes strong the  
vow;

But vows, to every purpose, must not hold:  
Unarm, sweet Hector.

Hect. Hold you still, I say;

Mine honour keeps the weather of my fate:  
Life every man holds dear; but the dear man  
Holds honour far more precious dear than life.

Enter TROILUS.

How now, young man? mean'st thou to fight  
to-day?

And. Cassandra, call my father to persuade.  
[Exit CASSANDRA.

Hect. No, 'faith, young Troilus; doff\*\* thy  
harness, youth,

I am to-day i'the vein of chivalry:

Let grow thy sinews till their knots be strong,  
And tempt not yet the brushes of the war.

Unarm thee, go; and doubt thou not, brave  
boy,

I'll stand, to-day, for thee, and me, and Troy.

Tro. Brother, you have a vice of mercy in  
Which better fits a lion, than a man. [you.

Hect. What vice is that, good Troilus? chide  
me for it. [cians fall,

Tro. When many times the captive Gre-  
Even in the fan and wind of your fair sword,  
You bid them rise, and live.

Hect. O, 'tis fair play.

Tro. Fool's play, by heaven, Hector.

Hect. How now? how now?

Tro. For the love of all the gods,

Let's leave the hermit pity with our mother;

\* Love.

† Helmet.

‡ Compressed.

§ Concupiscence.

|| Foolish.

¶ Valuable.

\*\* Put off.

And when we have our armours buckled on,  
The venom'd vengeance ride upon our  
swords; [ruth f.]

Spur them to ruthless \* work, rein them from  
*Hect.* Fie, savage, fie!

*Tro.* Hector, then 'tis wars.

*Hect.* Troilus, I would not have you fight

*Tro.* Who should withhold me? [to-day.]

Not fate, obedience, nor the hand of Mars,  
Beckoning with fiery truncheon my retire;  
Not Priamus and Hecuba on knees,  
Their eyes o'ergalled with recourse of tears;  
Nor you, my brother, with your true sword  
drawn,

Opposed to hinder me, should stop my way,  
But by my ruin.

*Re-enter CASSANDRA, with PRIAM.*

*Cas.* Lay hold upon him, Priam, hold him  
fast:

He is thy crutch; now if thou lose thy stay,  
Thou on him leaning, and all Troy on thee,  
Fall all together.

*Pri.* Come, Hector, come, go back:  
Thy wife hath dreined; thy mother hath had  
visions;

Cassandra doth foresee; and I myself  
Am like a prophet suddenly enrapt,  
To tell thee—that this day is ominous:  
Therefore, come back.

*Hect.* Æneas is a-field;  
And I do stand engaged to many Greeks,  
Even in the faith of valour, to appear  
This morning to them.

*Pri.* But thou shalt not go.

*Hect.* I must not break my faith.

You know me dutiful; therefore, dear sir,  
Let me not shame respect; but give me leave  
To take that course by your consent and voice,  
Which you do here forbid me, royal Priam.

*Cas.* O Priam, yield not to him.

*And.* Do not, dear father.

*Hect.* Andromache, I am offended with you:  
Upon the love you bear me, get you in.

[*Exit ANDROMACHE.*]

*Tro.* This foolish, dreaming, superstitious  
Makes all these bodements. [girl]

*Cas.* O farewell, dear Hector.  
Look, how thou diest! look, how thy eye  
turns pale!

Look, how thy wounds do bleed at many vents!  
Hark, how Troy roars! how Hecuba cries out!  
How poor Andromache shrills her dolours  
forth!

Behold, destruction, frenzy, and amazement,  
Like witless antics, one another meet,  
And all cry—Hector! Hector's dead! O *Hect.*

*Tro.* Away!—Away! [tor!]

*Cas.* Farewell.—Yet, soft:—Hector, I take  
my leave:

Thou dost thyself and all our Troy deceive.

[*Exit.*]

*Hect.* You are amazed, my liege, at her ex-  
claim: [sight;  
Go in, and cheer the town: we'll forth and  
Do deeds worth praise, and tell you them at  
night.

*Pri.* Farewell: the gods with safety stand  
about thee!

[*Exeunt severally PRIAM and HECTOR.*  
*Alarums.*

*Tro.* They are at it; hark! Proud Diomed,  
believe,

I come to lose my arm, or win my sleeve.

As *TROILUS* is going out, enter, from the  
other side, *PANDARUS.*

*Pan.* Do you hear, my lord? do you hear?

*Tro.* What now?

*Pan.* Here's a letter from yon' poor girl.

*Tro.* Let me read.

*Pan.* A whoreson ptisic, a whoreson ras-  
cally ptisic so troubles me, and the foolish  
fortune of this girl; and what one thing, what  
another, that I shall leave you one o'these  
days: And I have a rheum in mine eyes too;  
and such an ache in my bones, that, unless a  
man were curs'd, I cannot tell what to think  
on't.—What says she there?

*Tro.* Words words, mere words, no mat-  
ter from the heart; [*Tearing the letter.*  
The effect doth operate another way.—

Go, wind, to wind, there turn and change to-  
gether.—

My love with words and errors still she feeds;  
But edifies another with her deeds.

[*Exeunt severally.*]

SCENE IV. *Between Troy and the Grecian  
Camp.*

*Alarums: Excursions. Enter THERSITES.*

*Ther.* Now they are clapper-clawing one  
another; I'll go look on. That dissembling  
abominable varlet, Diomed, has got that same  
scurvy doting foolish young knave's sleeve of  
Troy there, in his helm: I would fain see  
them meet; that that same young Trojan ass,  
that loves the whore there, might send that  
Greekish whoremasterly villain, with the  
sleeve, back to the dissembling luxurrious drab,  
on a sleeveless errand. O' the other side, the  
policy of those crafty swearing rascals,—that  
stale old mouse-eaten dry cheese. Nestor; and  
that same dog fox, Ulysses,—is not proved  
worth a black-berry: They set me up, in po-  
licy, that mongrel cur, Ajax, against that dog  
of as bad a kind, Achilles; and now is the cur  
Ajax prouder than the cur Achilles, and will  
not arm to-day: whereupon the Grecians be-  
gin to proclaim barbarism, and policy grows  
into an ill opinion. Soft! here come sleeve,  
and t'other.

*Enter DIOMEDES, TROILUS following.*

*Tro.* Fly not; for shouldst thou take the  
river Styx,

I would swim after.

*Dio.* Thou dost miscall retire:  
I do not fly; but advantageous care  
Withdrew me from the odds of multitude:  
Have at thee!

*Ther.* Hold thy whore, Grecian! now for  
thy whore, Trojan!—now the sleeve, now th  
sleeve!

[*Exeunt TROILUS and DIOMEDES, fighting.*]

\* Rueful, woful.

† Mercy.



*Enter HECTOR.*

*Hect.* What art thou, Greek? art thou for Arttliou of blood, and honour? [*Hector's match?*]

*Ther.* No, no:—I am a rascal; a scurvy railing knave; a very filthy rogue.

*Hect.* I do believe thee;—live. [*Exit.*]

*Ther.* God-a-mercy, that thou wilt believe me; but a plague break thy neck, for frighting me! What's become of the wenching rogues? I think they have swallowed one another: I would laugh at that miracle. Yet, in a sort, lechery eats itself. I'll seek them. [*Exit.*]

SCENE V. *The same.**Enter DIOMEDES and a Servant.*

*Dio.* Go, go, my servant, take thou Troilus! Present the fair steed to my lady Cressid: [horse; Fellow, commend my service to her beauty; Tell her, I have chastised the amorous Trojan, And am her knight by proof.

*Serv.* I go, my lord. [*Exit Servant.*]

*Enter AGAMEMNON.*

*Agam.* Renew, renew! The fierce Polydamus

Hath beat down Menon: bastard Margarelon Hath Dorens prisoner:

And stands colossus-wise, waving his beam\*,

Upon the pashed† corse of the kings

Epistrophus and Cedius: Polixenes is slain;

Amphimachus, and Thoas, deadly hurt;

Patroclus ta'en, or slain; and Palamedes

Sore hurt and bruised: the dreadful Sagittary

Appals our numbers; haste we, Diomed,

To reinforcement, or we perish all.

*Enter NESTOR.*

*Nest.* Go, bear Patroclus' body to Achilles;

And bid the snail paced Ajax arm for shame.

There is a thousand Hectors in the field:

Now here he fights on Galathea his horse,

And there lacks work; anon, he's there afoot,

And there they fly, or die, like scaled sculls‡

Before the belching whale; then is he yonder,

And there the strawy Greeks, ripe for his edge,

Fall down before him, like the mower's swath:

Here, there, and every where, he leaves, and

Dexterity so obeying appetite, [takes;

That what he will, he does; and does so much,

That proof is call'd impossibility.

*Enter ULYSSES.*

*Ulyss.* O, courage, courage, princes! great

Achilles [geance;

Is arming, weeping, cursing, vowing ven-

Patroclus' wounds have roused his drowsy

Together with his man, led Myrmidons, [blood,

That noseless, handless, hack'd and chipp'd,

come to him,

Crying on Hector. Ajax hath lost a friend,

And foams at mouth, and he is arm'd and at it,

Roaring for Troilus; who hath done to-day

Mad and fantastic execution;

Engaging and redeeming of himself,

With such a careless force, and forceless care,

As if that luck, in very spite of cunning,

Bade him win all.

\* Lance.

† Bruised, crushed.

Not be a looker-on.

‡ Lying.

*Enter AJAX.*

*Ajax.* Troilus! thou coward Troilus! [*Exit*

*Dio.* Ay, there, there.

*Nest.* So, so, we draw together.

*Enter ACHILLES.*

*Achil.* Where is this Hector?

Come, come, thou boy-queller, show thy face;

Know what it is to meet Achilles angry.

*Hector!* where's Hector? I will none but

Hector. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. *Another part of the Field.**Enter AJAX.*

*Ajax.* Troilus, thou coward Troilus, show thy head!

*Enter DIOMEDES.*

*Dio.* Troilus, I say! where's Troilus?

*Ajax.* What wouldst thou?

*Dio.* I would correct him.

*Ajax.* Were I the general, thou shouldst have my office, [*Troilus!*

Ere that correction:—Troilus, I say! what, [*Enter TROILUS.*]

*Tro.* O, traitor, Diomed!—turn thy false face, thou traitor,

And pay thy life thou owest me for my horse!

*Dio.* Ha! art thou there? [*med.*

*Ajax.* I'll fight with him alone: stand, Dio

*Dio.* He is my prize, I will not look upon||

*Tro.* Come both, you cogging¶ Greeks

have at you both. [*Exeunt, fighting*

*Enter HECTOR.*

*Hect.* Yea, Troilus? O, well fought, my youngest brother!

*Enter ACHILLES.*

*Achil.* Now do I see thee: Ha!—Have at

*Hect.* Pause, if thou wilt. [*thee, Hector*

*Achil.* I do disdain thy courtesy, prone

Behappy, that my arms are out of use: [Trojan.

My rest and negligence befriended thee now,

But thou anon shalt hear of me again;

Till when, go seek thy fortune. [*Exit.*

*Hect.* Fare thee well:—

I would have been much more a fresher man,

Had I expected thee.—How now, my brother?

*Re-enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* Ajax hath ta'en Æneas; shall it be?

No, by the flame of yonder glorious heaven,

He shall not carry\*\* him; I'll be taken too,

Or bring him off:—Fate, hear me what I say

I reck't† not though I end my life to-day. [*Exit.*

*Enter one in sumptuous Armour.*

*Hect.* Stand, stand, thou Greek; thou art a

goodly mark:—

No? wilt thou not?—I like thy armour well;

I'll crush‡ it, and unlock the rivets all,

But I'll be master of it:—Wilt thou not, beast,

abide?

Why then, fly on, I'll hunt thee for thy hide. [*Exeunt*

SCENE VII. *The same.**Enter ACHILLES, with Myrmidons.*

*Achil.* Come here about me, you my Myr-

midons;

† Shoal of fish.

§ Killer.

\*\* Prevail over.

†† Care.

‡ Burst

Mark what I say.—Attend me where I wheel;  
Strike not a stroke, but keep yourselves in  
breath;

And when I have the bloody Hector found,  
Empale him with your weapons round about;  
In fellest manner execute\* your arms.  
Follow me, sirs, and my proceedings eye:  
It is decreed—Hector the great must die.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE VIII. *The same.*

*Enter MENELAUS and PARIS, fighting: then  
THERSITES.*

*Ther.* The cuckold, and the cuckold maker,  
are at it. Now, bull! now, dog! 'Loo, Paris,  
'loo! now my doubled-henned sparrow! 'loo,  
Paris, 'loo! The bull has the game:—'ware  
horns, ho! [*Exeunt PARIS and MENELAUS.*]

*Enter MARGARELON.*

*Mar.* Turn, slave, and fight.

*Ther.* What art thou?

*Mar.* A bastard son of Priam's.

*Ther.* I am a bastard too; I love bastards:  
I am a bastard begot, bastard instructed, bastard  
in mind, bastard in valour, in every thing  
illegitimate. One bear will not bite another,  
and wherefore should one bastard? Take  
heed, the quarrel's most ominous to us: if the  
son of a whore fight for a whore, he tempts  
judgment. Farewell, bastard.

*Mar.* The devil take thee, coward! [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IX. *Another part of the Field.*

*Enter HECTOR.*

*Hect.* Most putrefied core, so fair without,  
Thy goodly armour thus hath cost thy life.  
Now is my day's work done; I'll take good  
breath: [*death!*]

Rest, sword; thou hast thy fill of blood and  
[*Puts off his helmet, and hangs his  
shield behind him.*]

*Enter ACHILLES and Myrmidons.*

*Achil.* Look, Hector, how the sun begins to  
set;

How ugly night comes breathing at his heels:  
Even with the vail and dark'ning of the sun,  
To close the day up, Hector's life is done. [*Greek.*]

*Hec.* I am unarm'd; forego this vantage†,  
*Achil.* Strike, fellows, strike; this is the  
man I seek. [*HECTOR falls.*]

So Ilium, fall thou next! now, Troy, sink  
down;

Here lies thy heart, thy sinews, and thy bone.  
On Myrmidons; and cry you all ainain,  
*Achilles hath the mighty Hector slain.*

[*A Retreat sounded.*]

Hark! a retreat upon our Grecian part.

*Myr.* The Trojan trumpets sound the like,  
my lord. [*the earth.*]

*Achil.* The dragon wing of night o'erspreads  
And, stickler‡ like, the armies separates.  
My half-snapp'd sword, that frankly§ would  
have fed,

Pleased with this dainty bit, thus goes to bed.  
[*Sheathes his sword.*]

Come, tie his body to my horse's tail;  
Along the field, I will the Trojan trail.

[*Exeunt*]

### SCENE X. *The same.*

*Enter AGAMEMNON, AJAX, MENELAUS,  
NESTOR, DIOMEDES, and Others, march-  
ing. Shouts within.*

*Agam.* Hark! hark! what shout is that?

*Nest.* Peace, drums.

[*Within.*] *Achilles!*

*Achilles!* Hector's slain! *Achilles!*

*Dio.* The bruit|| is—Hector's slain, and by  
*Achilles.*

*Ajax.* If it be so, yet bragless let it be;

Great Hector was as good a man as he.

*Agam.* March patiently along:—Let one be  
To pray *Achilles* see us at our tent.—[*sent,*  
If in his death the gods have us befriended,  
Great Troy is ours, and our sharp wars are  
ended. [*Exeunt, marching*]

### SCENE XI. *Another part of the Field.*

*Enter ÆNEAS and Trojans.*

*Æne.* Stand, ho! yet are we masters of the  
field:

Never go home; here starve we out the night.

*Enter TROILUS.*

*Tro.* Hector is slain.

*All.* Hector?—the gods forbid.

*Tro.* He's dead; and at the murderer's  
horse's tail, [*field.*—

In beastly sort, dragg'd through the shameful  
Frown on, you heavens, effect your rage with  
speed! [*Troy!*]

Sit, gods, upon your thrones, and smile at  
I say, at once let your brief plagues be mercy  
And linger not our sure destructions on!

*Æne.* My lord, you do discomfort all the  
host. [*so:*]

*Tro.* You understand me not, that tell me  
I do not speak of flight, of fear, of death;  
But dare all imminence, that gods and men,  
Address their dangers in. Hector is gone!

Who shall tell Priam\*, or Hecuba?

Let him, that will a screech-owl eye¶ be call'd,

Go in to Troy, and say there—Hector's dead:

There is a word will Priam turn to stone;

Make wells and Niobes of the maids and wives,

Cold statues of the youth; and, in a word,

Scare Troy out of itself. But, march, away!

Hector is dead; there is no more to say.

Stay yet;—you vile abominable tents,

Thus proudly pight\*\* upon our Phrygian

Let Titan rise as early as he dare, [*plains.*]

I'll through and through you!—And thou,

great-sized coward!

No space of earth shall sunder our two hates;

I'll haunt thee like a wicked conscience still,

That moulders goblins swift as frenzy thoughts.

Strike a free march to Troy!—with comfort  
go:

Hope of revenge shall hide our inward woe.

[*Exeunt ÆNEAS and Trojans*]

\* Employ. † Take not this advantage.

‡ Fattening.

|| Noise, rumour.

¶ An arbitrator at athletic games.

\*\* Ever.

¶ Pitched, fixed.

As TROILUS is going out, enter from the other side, PANDARUS.

*Pan.* But hear you, hear you! [shame]

*Tro.* Hence, broker lackey! ignomy\* and Pursue thy life, and live aye† with thy name!

[Exit TROILUS.]

*Pan.* A goodly med'cine for my aching bones!—O world! world! world! thus is the poor agent despised! O traitors and bawds, how earnestly are you set a' work, and how ill requited! Why should our endeavour be so loved, and the performance so loathed? what verse for it? what instance for it?—Let me see:—

Full merrily the humble-bee doth sing,  
Till he hath lost his honey, and his sting:

\* Ignominy.

† Ever.

‡ Canvass hangings for rooms, painted with emblems and mottos.

And being once subdued in armed tail,  
Sweet honey and sweet note together fail.

Good traders in the flesh, set this in your painted cloths‡.

As many as be here of pander's hall,  
Your eyes, half out, weep out at Pandar's fall:  
Or, if you cannot weep, yet give some groans  
Though not for me, yet for your aching bones,  
Brethren, and sisters, of the hold-door trade,  
Some two months hence my will shall here be made:

It should be now, but that my fear is this,—  
Some galled goose of Winchester would hiss:  
Till then I'll sweat, and seek about for eases,  
And, at that time, bequeath you my diseases.

[Exit.]

This play is more correctly written than most of Shakspeare's compositions, but it is not one of those in which either the extent of his views or elevation of his fancy is fully displayed. As the story abounded with materials, he has exerted little invention; but he has diversified his characters with great variety, and preserved them with great exactness. His vicious characters disgust, but cannot corrupt, for both Cressida and Pandarus are detested and condemned. The comic characters seem to have been the favourites of the writer; they are of the superficial kind, and exhibit more of manners, than nature; but they are copiously filled and powerfully impressed. Shakspeare has in his story followed, for the greater part, the old book of Caxton, which was then very popular; but the character of Thersites, of which it makes no mention, is a proof that this play was written after Chapman had published his version of Homer.—JOHNSON.



# TIMON OF ATHENS

## Persons represented.

TIMON, a noble Athenian.

LUCIUS, } lords, and flatterers of  
LUCULLUS, } Timon.  
SEMPRONIUS, }

VENTIDIUS, one of Timon's false friends.

APPMANTUS, a churlish philosopher.

ALCIBIADES, an Athenian general.

FLAVIUS, steward to Timon.

FLAMINIUS, LUCILIUS, SERVILIUS, Timon's servants.

CAPHIS, PHILOTUS, TITUS, LUCIUS, HORTENSIVS, servants to Timon's Creditors.

Two Servants of Varro, and the Servant of Isidore. Two of Timon's Creditors. Cupid and Maskers. Three Strangers. Poet, Painter, Jeweller, and Merchant. An old Athenian. A Page. A Fool.

PHRYNIA, } mistresses to Alcibiades.  
TIMANDRA, }

Other Lords, Senators, Officers, Soldiers Thieves, and Attendants.

Scene,—Athens; and the Woods adjoining.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. Athens. A Hall in Timon's House.

Enter Poet, Painter, Jeweller, Merchant, and Others, at several Doors.

Poet. Good day, sir.

Pain. I am glad you are well.

Poet. I have not seen you long; how goes

Poet. It wears, sir, as it grows. [the world?]

Poet. Ay, that's well known:

But what particular rarity? what strange, Which manifold record not matches? See, Magic of bounty! all these spirits thy power Hath conjured to attend. I know the merchant. [ler.]

Pain. I know them both; t'other's a jewel.

Mer. O, 'tis a worthy lord!

Jew. Nay, that's most fix'd.

Mer. A most incomparable man; breathed\*, as it were,

To an unmirable and continueate † goodness: He passes ‡.

Jew. I have a jewel here.

Mer. O, pray, let's see't: For the lord Timon, sir? [for that—]

Jew. If he will touch the estimate; but,

Poet. When we for recompense have praised the vile,

It stains the glory in that happy verse Which aptly sings the good.

Mer. 'Tis a good form. [Looking at the Jewel.]

Jew. And rich: here is a water, look you.

Pain. You are rapt, sir, in some work, some To the great lord. [dedication]

Poet. A thing slipp'd idly from me. Our poesy is as a gum, which oozes [slint] From whence 'tis nourished. The fire i'the Shows not, till it be struck; our gentle flame Provokes itself, and, like the current, flies

Each bound it chafes. What have you there? Pain. A picture, sir.—And when comes your book forth?

Poet. Upon the heels of my presentment §, Let's see your piece. [sir.]

Pain. 'Tis a good piece.

Poet. So 'tis: this comes off well and ex-

Pain. Indifferent. [cellent.]

Poet. Admirable: How this grace Speaks his own standing! what a mental power

This eye shoots forth! how big imagination Moves in this lip! to the dumbness of the gesture one might interpret. [ture]

Pain. It is a pretty mocking of the life.

Here is a touch; is't good?

Poet. I'll say of it, It tutor's nature: artificial strife Lives in these touches, livelier than life.

Enter certain Senators, and pass over.

Pain. How this lord's follow'd!

Poet. The senators of Athens:—Happy

Pain. Look more! [men!]

Poet. You see this confluence, this great flood of visitors.

I have, in this rough work, shaped out a man, Whom this beneath world doth embrace and hug

With amplest entertainment: My free drift Halts not particularly ¶, but moves itself

\* Inured by constant practice.

† For continual.

‡ i. e., Exceeds, goes beyond common bounds. presented to Timon.

§ As soon as my book has been

¶ i. e., The contest of art with nature.

¶ My design does not stop at any particular character.

In a wide sea of wax: no levell'd malice  
Infects one comma in the course I hold:  
But flies an eagle flight, bold, and forth on,  
Leaving no tract behind.

*Pain.* How shall I understand you?

*Poet.* I'll unbolt \* to you.

You see how all conditions, how all minds  
(As well of glib and slippery creatures, as  
Of grave and austere quality) tender down  
Their services to lord Timon: his large fortune,  
Upon his good and gracious nature hanging,  
Subdues and properties to his love and tend-  
ance [flatterer +  
All sorts of hearts; yea, from the glass-faced  
To Apenantus, that few things loves better  
Than to abhor himself; even he drops down  
The knee before him, and returns in peace  
Most rich in Timon's nod.

*Pain.* I saw them speak together.

*Poet.* Sir, I have upon a high and pleasant  
hill, [mount  
Feign'd Fortune to be throned: The base o'the  
Is rank'd with all deserts, all kind of natures,  
That labour on the bosom of this sphere  
To propagate their states: amongst them all,  
Whose eyes are on this sovereign lady fix'd,  
One do I personate of lord Timon's frame, [her:  
Whom Fortune with her ivory hand waits to  
Whose present grace to present slaves and  
Translates his rivals. [servants

*Pain.* 'Tis conceived to scope.  
This throne, this Fortune, and this hill, me-  
thinks,

With one man beckon'd from the rest below,  
Bowing his head against the steepy mount  
To climb his happiness, would be well ex-  
In our condition. [press'd

*Poet.* Nay, sir, but hear me on:  
All those which were his fellows but of late,  
(Some better than his value,) on the moment  
Follow his strides, his lobbies fill with tend-  
Rain sacrificial whisperings; in his ear, [ance,  
Make sacred even his stirrup, and through  
Drink || the free air. [him

*Pain.* Ay, marry, what of these?

*Poet.* When Fortune, in her shift and  
change of mood, [ants,  
Spurns down her late beloved, all his depend-  
Which labour'd after him to the mountain's top,  
Even on their knees and hands, let him slip  
down,

Not one accompanying his declining foot.

*Pain.* 'Tis common:

A thousand moral paintings I can show [tune  
That shall demonstrate these quick blows of for-  
More pregnant than words. Yet you do well,  
To show lord Timon, that mean eyes I have  
The foot above the head. [seen

*Trumpets sound.* Enter TIMON, attended;  
The Servant of VENTIDIUS talking with  
him.

*Tim.* Imprison'd is he, say you?

*Ven. Serv.* Ay, my good lord: five talents  
is his debt;

His means most short, his creditors most  
strait:

Your honourable letter he desires [him,  
To those have shut him up; which failing to  
Periods his comfort.

*Tim.* Noble Ventidius! Well;  
I am not of that feather, to shake off [him  
My friend when he must need me. I do know  
A gentleman, that well deserves a help,  
Which he shall have: I'll pay the debt, and  
free him.

*Ven. Serv.* Your lordship ever binds him.

*Tim.* Commend me to him: I will send his  
ransome;

And, being enfranchised, bid him come to me:  
'Tis not enough to help the feeble up,

But to support him after.—Fare you well.

*Ven. Serv.* All happiness to your honour!  
[Exit.

Enter an old Athenian.

*Old Ath.* Lord Timon, hear me speak.

*Tim.* Freely, good father.

*Old Ath.* Thou hast a servant named Luci-

*Tim.* I have so: What of him? [lius.

*Old Ath.* Most noble Timon, call the man  
before thee.

*Tim.* Attends he here, or no?—Lucilius!

Enter LUCILIUS.

*Luc.* Here, at your lordship's service.

*Old Ath.* This fellow here, lord Timon, this  
thy creature,

By night frequents my house. I am a man  
That from my first have been inclined to thrift  
And my estate deserves a heir more raised,  
Than one which holds a trencher.

*Tim.* Well; what further?

*Old Ath.* One only daughter have I, no  
kin else,

On whom I may confer what I have got:  
The maid is fair, o' the youngest for a bride,  
And I have bred her at my dearest cost,  
In qualities of the best. This man of thine  
Attempts her love: I pry thee, noble lord,  
Join with me to forbid him her resort;  
Myself have spoke in vain.

*Tim.* The man is honest.

*Old Ath.* Therefore he will be, Timon:

His honesty rewards him in itself,  
It must not bear my daughter.

*Tim.* Does she love him?

*Old Ath.* She is young and apt:

Our own precedent passions do instruct us  
What levity's in youth.

*Tim.* [To LUCILIUS.] Love you the maid?

*Luc.* Ay, my good lord, and she accepts of  
it. [missing,

*Old Ath.* If in her marriage my consent be  
I call the gods to witness, I will choose  
Mine heir from forth the beggars of the world  
And dispossess her all.

*Tim.* How shall she be endowed,  
If she be mated with an equal husband?

*Old Ath.* Three talents, on the present; in  
future, all.

\* Open, explain. † One who shows by reflection the looks of his patron.

‡ To advance their conditions of life. § Whisperings of officious servility. || Inhale.

¶ i. e., Interior spectators.

*Tim.* This gentleman of mine hath served me long ;

To build his fortune, I will strain a little,  
For 'tis a bond in men. Give him thy daughter :

What you bestow, in him I'll counterpoise,  
And make him weigh with her.

*Ola Ath.* Most noble lord,  
Pawn me to this your honour, she is his.

*Tim.* My hand to thee ; mine honour on my promise. [may

*Luc.* Humbly I thank your lordship : Never  
That state or fortune fall into my keeping,  
Which is not owed to you !

[*Exeunt LUCILIUS and old Athenian.*  
*Poet.* Vouchsafe my labour, and long live your lordship ! [anon :

*Tim.* I thank you ; you shall hear from me  
Go not away.—What have you there, my friend ? [seech

*Pain.* A piece of painting, which I do be-  
Your lordship to accept.

*Tim.* Painting is welcome.  
The painting is almost the natural man ;  
For since dishonour traffics with man's nature,  
He is but outside : These pencill'd figures are  
Even such as they give out \*. I like your work ;  
And you shall find I like it : wait attendance  
Till you hear further from me.

*Pain.* The gods preserve you !  
*Tim.* Well fare you, gentlemen : Give me your hand ;

We must needs dine together.—Sir, your jewel  
Hath suffer'd under praise.

*Jew.* What, my lord ? dispraise ?  
*Tim.* A mere satiety of commendations.  
If I should pay you for't as 'tis extoll'd,  
It would unclew † me quite.

*Jew.* My lord, 'tis rated  
As those which sell would give : But you well know,

Things of like value, differing in the owners,  
Are prized by their masters : believe't, dear  
You mend the jewel by wearing it. [lord,  
*Tim.* Well mock'd.

*Mer.* No, my good lord ; he speaks the  
common tongue,  
Which all men speak with him.

*Tim.* Look, who comes here. Will you be  
chid ?

[*Enter APEMANTUS.*  
*Jew.* We will bear, with your lordship.

*Mer.* He'll spare none.  
*Tim.* Good morrow to thee, gentle Ape-  
mantus !

*Apem.* Till I be gentle, stay for thy good  
morrow ;

When thou art Timon's dog, and these knaves  
honest. [know'st them not.

*Tim.* Why dost thou call them knaves ? thou  
*Apem.* Are they not Athenians ?

*Tim.* Yes.

*Apem.* Then I repent not.

*Jew.* You know me, Apemantus.

*Apem.* Thou knowest I do ; I call'd thee  
by thy name.

*Tim.* Thou art proud, Apemantus.

*Apem.* Of nothing so much, as that I am  
not like Timon.

*Tim.* Whither art going ?

*Apem.* To knock out an honest Athenian's  
brains.

*Tim.* That's a deed thou'lt die for.

*Apem.* Right, if doing nothing be death by  
the law. [tus ?

*Tim.* How likest thou this picture, Apeman-  
*Apem.* The best, for the innocence.

*Tim.* Wrought he not well that painted it ?

*Apem.* He wrought better, that made the  
painter ; and yet he's but a filthy piece of  
work.

*Pain.* You are a dog.

*Apem.* Thy mother's of my generation ;  
What's she, if I be a dog ?

*Tim.* Wilt dine with me, Apemantus ?

*Apem.* No ; I eat not lords.

*Tim.* An thou should'st, thou'dst anger ladies.

*Apem.* O, they eat lords ; so they come by  
great bellies.

*Tim.* That's a lascivious apprehension.

*Apem.* So thou apprehend'st it : Take it  
for thy labour.

*Tim.* How dost thou like this jewel, Ape-  
mantus ?

*Apem.* Not so well as plain dealing ‡, which  
will not cost a man a doit.

*Tim.* What dost thou think 'tis worth ?

*Apem.* Not worth my thinking.—How now,  
poet ?

*Poet.* How now, philosopher ?

*Apem.* Thou liest.

*Poet.* Art not one ?

*Apem.* Yes.

*Poet.* Then I lie not.

*Apem.* Art not a poet ?

*Poet.* Yes.

*Apem.* Then thou liest : look in thy last  
work, where thou hast feign'd him a worthy  
fellow.

*Poet.* That's not feign'd, he is so.

*Apem.* Yes, he is worthy of thee, and to  
pay thee for thy labour : He that loves to be  
flatter'd, is worthy o' the flatterer. Heavens,  
that I were a lord !

*Tim.* What wouldst do then, Apemantus ?

*Apem.* Even as Apemantus does now, hate  
a lord with my heart.

*Tim.* What, thyself ?

*Apem.* Ay.

*Tim.* Wherefore ?

*Apem.* That I had no angry wit to be a  
lord.—Art not thou a merchant ?

*Mer.* Ay, Apemantus.

*Apem.* Traffic confound thee, if the gods  
will not !

*Mer.* If traffic do it, the gods do it.

*Apem.* Traffic's thy god, and thy god con-  
found thee !

\* Pictures have no hypocrisy ; they are what they profess to be.

† To unclew a man is, to draw out the whole mass of his fortunes.

‡ Alluding to the proverb : plain-dealing is a jewel, but they who use it beggars.



*Trumpets sound. Enter a Servant.*

*Tim.* What trumpet's that?

*Serv.* 'Tis Alcibiades, and some twenty horse, all of companionship.

*Tim.* Pray, entertain them; give them guide to us.—*[Exeunt some Attendants.]*

You must needs dine with me:—Go not you hence,  
Till I have thank'd you; and, when dinner's Show me this piece.—I am joyful of your sights.—

*Enter ALCIBIADES, with his Company.*

Most welcome, sir!  
*[They salute.]*

*Apem.* So, so; there!

Aches contract and starve your supple joints! That there should be small love 'mongst these sweet knaves,  
*[faint]*

And all this court'ry! The strain of man's bred into baboon and monkey\*.  
*[faint]*

*Alcib.* Sir, you have saved my longing, and I most hungrily on your sight.

*Tim.* Right welcome, sir; Ere we depart, we'll share a bounteous time in different pleasures. Pray you, let us in.  
*[Exeunt all but APEMANTUS.]*

*Enter two Lords.*

1 *Lord.* What time a day is't, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Time to be honest.

1 *Lord.* That time serves still. *[omitt'st it.]*

*Apem.* The most accused thou, that still

2 *Lord.* Thou art going to lord Timon's feast.

*Apem.* Ay; to see meat fill knaves, and wine heat fools.

2 *Lord.* Fare thee well, fare thee well.

*Apem.* Thou art a fool, to bid me farewell

2 *Lord.* Why, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Shouldst have kept one to thyself, for I mean to give thee none.

1 *Lord.* Hang thyself.

*Apem.* No, I will do nothing at thy bidding; make thy requests to thy friend.

2 *Lord.* Away, unpeaceable dog, or I'll spurn thee hence.

*Apem.* I will fly, like a dog, the heels of the ass.  
*[Exit.]*

1 *Lord.* He's opposite to humanity. Come, shall we in,

And taste lord Timon's bounty? he outgoes The very heart of kindness.  
*[gold.]*

2 *Lord.* He pours it out; Plutus, the god of

Is but his steward: no need't, but he repays Sevenfold above itself; no gift to him,

But breeds the giver a return exceeding All use of quittance†.

1 *Lord.* The noblest mind he carries That ever govern'd man.  
*[we in?]*

2 *Lord.* Long may he live in fortunes! Shall

1 *Lord.* I'll keep you company.  
*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II. *The same. A Room of State in Timon's House.*

*Huntboys playing loud music. A great banquet served in; FLAVIUS and others*

*attending; then enter TIMON, ALCIBIADES, LUCIUS, LUCULLUS, SEMPRONIUS, and other Athenian Senators, with VENTIDIUS, and Attendants. Then comes, dropping after all, APEMANTUS, discontentedly.*

*Ven.* Most honour'd Timon, 't hath pleased the gods remember

My father's age, and call him to long peace.

He is gone happy, and has left me rich:

Then, as in grateful virtue I am bound

To your free heart, I do return those talents,

Doubled, with thanks, and service, from whose

I derived liberty.  
*[help]*

*Tim.* O, by no means,

Honest Ventidius: you mistake my love;

I gave it freely ever; and there's none

Can truly say he gives if he receives: *[dare]*

If our betters play at that game, we must not

To imitate them; Faults that are rich are fair.

*Ven.* A noble spirit.

*[They all stand ceremoniously looking on TIMON.]*

*Tim.* Nay, my lords, ceremony

Was but devised at first, to set a gloss

On faint deeds, hollow welcomes,

Recanting goodness, sorry ere 'tis shown;

But where there is true friendship, there needs none.  
*[tunes,]*

Pray, sit; more welcome are ye to my forthan my fortunes to me.  
*[They sit.]*

1 *Lord.* My lord, we always have confess'd it.  
*[you not?]*

*Apem.* Ho, ho, confess'd it? hang'd it, have

*Tim.* O, Apemantus!—you are welcome.

*Apem.* No,

You shall not make me welcome:

I come to have thee thrust me out of doors.

*Tim.* Fie, thou art a churl; you have got a humour there

Does not become a man, 'tis much to blame:

They say, my lords, that *ira furor brevis est* §, But yond' man's ever angry.

Go, let him have a table by himself;

For he does neither affect company, Nor is he fit for it, indeed.  
*[Timon;]*

*Apem.* Let me stay at thine own peril, I come to observe; I give thee warning on't.

*Tim.* I take no heed of thee; thou art an Athenian; therefore welcome: I myself would

have no power: prythee, let my meat make thee silent.

*Apem.* I scorn thy meat; 'twould choke me, for I should

Ne'er flatter thee.—O you gods! what a un-Of men eat Timon, and he sees them not!

It grieves me, to see so many dip their meat In one man's blood; and all the madness is,

He cheers them up too||.

I wonder men dare trust themselves with men: Methinks they should invite them without

knives;

\* Man is degenerated; his strain or lineage is worn down into a monkey. † Meed here means desert.

‡ i. e., All the customary returns made in discharge of obligations.

§ Anger is a short madness. || The allusion is to a pack of hounds trained to pursuit, by being gratified with the blood of an animal which they kill; and the wonder is, that the animal, on which they are feeding, cheers them to the chase.

Good for their meat, and safer for their lives.  
There's much example for't; the fellow that  
Sits next him now, parts bread with him, and  
pledges

The breath of him in a divided draught,  
Is the readiest man to kill him: it has been  
if I [proved.]

Were a huge man, I should fear to drink at  
meals; [notes:]

Lest they should spy my windpipe's dangerous  
Great men should drink with harness\* on their  
throats. [go round.]

Tim. My lord, in heart†; and let the health  
2 Lord. Let it flow this way, my good lord.

Apem. Flow this way! [look ill.]  
A brave fellow!—he keeps his tides well.

Timon, [look ill.]  
Those healths will make thee and thy state  
Here's that which is too weak to be a sinner,  
Honest water, which ne'er left man i'the mire:  
This, and my food, are equals; there's no odds.  
Feasts are too proud to give thanks to the gods.

APEMANTUS'S GRACE.

*Immortal gods, I crave no pelf;  
I pray for no man, but myself:  
Grant I may never prove so fond†,  
To trust man on his oath or bond;  
Or a harlot, for her weeping;  
Or a dog, that seems a sleeping;  
Or a keeper with my freedom;  
Or my friends, if I should need 'em.  
Amen. So fall to't:  
Rich men sin, and I eat root.*

[Eats and drinks.]

Much good dich thy good heart, Apemantus!  
Tim. Captain Alcibiades, your heart's in  
the field now.

Alcib. My heart is ever at your service, my  
lord.

Tim. You had rather be at a breakfast of  
enemies, than a dinner of friends.

Alcib. So they were bleeding-new, my lord,  
there's no meat like them; I could wish my  
best friend at such a feast.

Apem. 'Would all those flatterers were thine  
enemies then; that then thou might'st kill  
'em, and bid me to 'em.

1 Lord. Might we but have that happiness,  
my lord, that you would once use our hearts,  
whereby we might express some part of our  
zeals, we should think ourselves for ever per-  
fect.

Tim. O, no doubt, my good friends, but the  
gods themselves have provided that I shall have  
much help from you: How had you been my  
friends else? why have you that charitable  
title from thousands, did you not chiefly be-  
long to my heart? I have told more of you to  
myself, than you can with modesty speak in  
your own behalf; and thus far I confirm you.  
O, you gods, think I, what need we have any  
friends, if we should never have need of them?  
they were the most needless creatures living,  
should we ne'er have use for them: and would  
most resemble sweet instruments hung up in  
cases, that keep their sounds to themselves.

Why, I have often wished myself poorer, that  
I might come nearer to you. We are born  
to do benefits: and what better or properer  
can we call our own, than the riches of our  
friends? O, what a precious comfort 'tis, to  
have so many, like brothers, commanding one  
another's fortunes! O joy, e'en made away ere  
it can be born! Mine eyes cannot hold out  
water, methinks: to forget their faults, I drink  
to you.

Apem. Thou weepest to make them drink,  
Timon. [eyes,]

2 Lord. Joy had the like conception in our  
And, at that instant, like a babe sprung up.

Apem. Ho, ho! I laugh to think that babe  
a bastard. [me much.]

3 Lord. I promise you, my lord, you moved  
Apem. Much! [Tucket sounded.]

Tim. What means that trumpet?—How now?  
Enter a Servant.

Serv. Please you, my lord, there are certain  
ladies most desirous of admittance.

Tim. Ladies? what are their wills?

Serv. There comes with them a forerunner,  
my lord, which bears that office, to signify  
their pleasures.

Tim. I pray, let them be admitted.  
Enter CUPID.

Cup. Hail to thee, worthy Timon; and to all  
That of his bounties taste!—The five best senses  
Acknowledge thee their patron; and come  
freely

To gratulate thy plenteous bosom: The ear,  
Taste, touch, smell, all pleased from thy table  
rise;

They only now come but to feast thine eyes.

Tim. They are welcome all; let them have  
kind admittance:

Music, make their welcome. [Exit CUPID.]

1 Lord. You see, my lord, how ample you  
are beloved.

Music. Re-enter CUPID, with a masque of  
Ladies as Amazons, with lutes in their  
hands, dancing, and playing.

Apem. Hey day, what a sweep of vanity  
comes this way!

They dance! they are mad women.  
Like madness is the glory of this life,  
As this pomp shows to a little oil and root.

We make ourselves fools, to disport ourselves  
An I spend our flatteries, to drink those men,  
Upon whose age we void it up again,

With poisonous spite and envy. Who lives  
that's not

Depraved, or depraves? who dies, that hears  
Not one spurn to their graves of their friends  
gift? [now]

I should fear those that dance before me  
Would one day stamp upon me. It has been  
done;

Men shut their doors against a setting sun.

[The Lords rise from table, with much ador-  
ing of TIMON; and, to show their loves  
each singles out an Amazon, and all  
dance, men with women, a lofty strain or  
two to the hunt boys, and cease.]

\* Arronour. † With sincerity. ‡ Foolish. § i. e., Arrived at the perfection of happiness.  
¶ Endearing. ¶ Much, was formerly an expression of contemptuous admiration.

*Tim.* You have done our pleasures much grace, fair ladies,  
Set a fair fashion on our entertainment,  
Which was not half so beautiful and kind;  
You have added worth unto't, and lively lustre,  
And entertained me with mine own device;  
I am to thank you for it. [best.]

*1 Lady.* My lord, you take us even at the *Apem.* Faith, for the worst is filthy; and would not hold taking, I doubt me.

*Tim.* Ladies, there is an idle banquet attends you: Please you to dispose yourselves.

*All Lad.* Most thankfully, my lord.

[*Exeunt CUPID and Ladies.*]

*Tim.* Flavins,—

*Flav.* My lord.

*Tim.* The little casket bring me hither.

*Flav.* Yes, my lord.—More jewels yet! There is no crossing him in his humour;

[*Aside.*]  
Else I should tell him,—Well,—i'faith, I should, [could.]

When all's spent, he'd be crossed \* then, an he 'Tis pity, bounty had not eyes behind;  
That man might ne'er be wretched for his mind †.

[*Exit, and returns with the casket.*]

*1 Lord.* Where be our men?

*Serv.* Here, my lord, in readiness.

*2 Lord.* Our horses.

*Tim.* O my friends, I have one word to say to you:—Look you, my good lord, I entreat you, honour me so much, as to [must] Advance this jewel:

Accept, and wear it, kind my lord.

*1 Lord.* I am so far already in your gifts,—

*All.* So are we all.

[*Enter a Servant.*]

*Serv.* My lord, there are certain nobles of the senate

Newly alighted, and come to visit you.

*Tim.* They are fairly welcome.

*Flav.* I beseech your honour, Vouchsafe me a word; it does concern you near. [thee:]

*Tim.* Near? why then another time I'll hear I prythee, let us be provided

To show them entertainment.

*Flav.* I scarce know how. [*Aside.*]

[*Enter another Servant.*]

*2 Serv.* May it please your honour, the lord

Lucius,

Out of his free love, hath presented to you

Four milk-white horses, trapped in silver.

*Tim.* I shall accept them fairly: let the presents

[*Enter a third Servant.*]

Be worthily entertain'd.—How now, what news?

*3 Serv.* Please you, my lord, that honourable gentleman, lord Lucullus, entreats your company to-morrow to hunt with him; and

has sent your honour two brace of greyhounds.

*Tim.* I'll hunt with him; And let them be Not without fair reward. [received,]

*Flav.* [*Aside.*] What will this come to? He commands us to provide, and give great

And all out of an empty coffer.— [gifts,]

Nor will he know his purse; or yield me this,

To show him what a beggar his heart is,

Being of no power to make his wishes good;

His promises fly so beyond his state,

That what he speaks is all in debt, he owes

For every word; he is so kind, that he now

Pays interest for't; his lands put to their books.

Well, 'would I were gently put out of office, Before I were forced out!

Happier is he that has no friend to feed,

Than such as do even enemies exceed,

I bleed inwardly for my lord. [*Exit.*]

*Tim.* You do yourselves

Much wrong, you bate too much of your own merits:—

Here, my lord, a trifle of our love.

*2 Lord.* With more than common thanks I will receive it.

*3 Lord.* O, he is the very soul of bounty!

*Tim.* And now I remember me, my lord, you gave

Good words the other day of a bay courser

I rode on: it is yours, because you liked it.

*2 Lord.* I beseech you, pardon me, my lord, in that. [know, no man]

*Tim.* You may take my word, my lord; I

Can justly praise, but what he does affect:

I weigh my friend's affection with mine own;

I'll tell you true. I'll call on you.

*All Lords.* None so welcome.

*Tim.* I take all and your several visitations So kind to heart, 'tis not enough to give;

Methinks, I could deal † kingdoms to my And ne'er be weary.—Alcibiades, [friends,]

Thou art a soldier, therefore seldom rich,

It comes in charity to thee: for all thy living Is 'mongst the dead; and all the lands thou

Lie in a pitch'd field. [hast]

*Alcib.* Ay, defiled land, my lord.

*1 Lord.* We are so virtuously bound,—

*Tim.* And so

Am I to you.

*2 Lord.* So infinitely endear'd,—

*Tim.* All to you §.—Lights, more lights.

*1 Lord.* The best of happiness,

Honour, and fortunes, keep with you, lord

*Tim.* Ready for his friends. [Timon!]

[*Exeunt ALCIBIADES, Lords, &c.*]

*Apem.* What a coil's here?

Serving of becks ||, and jutting out of bums! I doubt whether their legs be worth the sums

That are given for 'em. Friendship's full of dregs:

Methinks, false hearts should never have sound legs.

\* Shakspeare plays on the word crossed: alluding to the piece of silver money called a cross.

† For his nobleness of soul. ‡ i. e., Could dispense them on every side with an ungrudging distribution, like that with which I could deal out cards.

§ i. e., All happiness to you.

|| Offering salutations.



Thus honest fools lay out their wealth on court'sies. [sullen,

*Tim.* Now, Apemantus, if thou wert not I'd be good to thee.

*Apem.* No, I'll nothing: for, If I should be bribed too, there would be none left [sin the faster.

To rail upon thee; and then thou wouldst Thou givest so long, Timon, I fear me, thou Wilt give away thyself in paper \* shortly :

What need these feasts, pomps, and vain glories? *Tim.* Nay, [ries?

Am you begin to rail on society once, I am sworn, not to give regard to you.

*Apem.* Farewell; and come with better music. [Exit.

Thou'lt not hear me now,—thou shalt not then, I'll lock [should be

Thy heaven† from thee. O, that men's ears To counsel deaf, but not to flattery! [Exit.

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *The same. A Room in a Senator's House.*

*Enter a Senator, with papers in his hand.*

*Sen.* And late, five thousand to Varro; and to Isidore

He owes nine thousand; besides my former sum, [motion

Which makes it five and twenty.—Still in Of raging waste? It cannot hold; it will not.

If I want gold, steal but a beggar's dog, And give it Timon, why, the dog coins gold :

If I would sell my horse, and buy twenty more [mon,

Better than he, why, give my horse to Timon. Ask nothing, give it him, it foals me straight

And able horses: No porter at his gate; But rather one that smiles, and still invites

All that pass by. It cannot hold; no reason Can found his state in safety. Caphis, ho!

Caphis, I say! *Enter CAPHIS.*

*Caph.* Here, sir? What is your pleasure? *Sen.* Get on your cloak, and haste you to lord Timon;

Importune him for my monies; be not ceased† With slight denial; nor then silenced, when—

*Commend me to your master*—and the cap Plays in the right-hand, thus:—but tell him, sirrah,

My uses cry to me, I must serve my turn Out of mine own; his days and times are past,

And my reliances on his fracted dates Have smit my credit: I love, and honour him;

But must not break my back to heal his finger: Immediate are my needs; and my relief

Must not be toss'd and turn'd to me in words, But find supply immediate. Get you gone :

Put on a most importunate aspect, A visage of demand; for, I do fear,

When every feather sticks in his own wing, Lord Timon will be left a naked gull,

Which flashes now a phoenix. Get you gone. *Caph.* I go, sir. [you,

*Sen.* I go, sir?—take the bonds along with And have the dates in compt.

*Caph.* I will, sir. *Go.*

*Sen.* [Exit.

SCENE II. *The same. A Hall in Timon's House.*

*Enter FLAVIUS, with many bills in his hand.*

*Flav.* No care, no stop! so senseless of expense, [it

That he will neither know how to maintain Nor cease his flow of riot: Takes no account

How things go from him; nor resumes no care Of what is to continue; Never mind

Was to be so unwise, to be so kind. [feel : What shall be done? He will not hear, till

I must be round with him now he comes from Fle, fie, fie, fie! [hunting.

*Enter CAPHIS, and the Servants of ISIDORE and VARRO.*

*Caph.* Good even‡, Varro: What, You come for money?

*Var. Serv.* Is't not your business too? *Caph.* It is;—And yours too, Isidore?

*Isid. Serv.* It is so. *Caph.* 'Would we were all discharged!

*Var. Serv.* I fear it. *Caph.* Here comes the lord.

*Enter TIMON, ALCIBIADES, and Lords, &c.* *Tim.* So soon as dinner's done, we'll forth again||, [will?

My Alcibiades.—With me? What's your *Caph.* My lord, here is a note of certain

*Tim.* Dues? Whence are you? [dues. *Caph.* Of Athens here, my lord

*Tim.* Go to my steward. [me off *Caph.* Please it your lordship, he hath put

To the succession of new days this month: My master is awaked by great occasion,

To call upon his own; and humbly prays you That with your other noble parts you'll suit,

In giving him his right. *Tim.* Mine honest friend,

I pry thee but repair to me next morning. *Caph.* Nay, good my lord,—

*Tim.* Contain thyself, good friend *Var. Serv.* One Varro's servant, my good lord.

*Isid. Serv.* From Isidore; He humbly prays your speedy payment,—

*Caph.* If you did know, my lord, my master's wants,— [lord, six weeks,

*Var. Serv.* 'Twas due on forfeiture, my And past,—

\* *i. e.*, Be ruined by his securities entered into. † By his heaven, he means good advice; the only thing by which he could be saved. ‡ Stopped. § Good even was the usual salutation from noon. || *i. e.*, To hunting; in our author's time, it was the custom to hunt as well after dinner as before.

*Isid. Serv.* Your steward puts me off, my lord;

And I am sent expressly to your lordship.

*Tim.* Give me breath:—

I do beseech you, good my lords, keep on:

[*Exeunt ALCEBIADES and Lords.*]

I'll wait upon you instantly.—Come hither, pray you. [*To FLAVIUS.*]

How goes the world, that I am thus encounter'd

With clamorous demands of date-broke bonds.

And the detention of long-since-due debts,

Against my honour?

*Flav.* Please you, gentlemen,

The time is unagreeable to this business:

Your importunity cease, till after dinner;

That I may make his lordship understand

Wherefore you are not paid.

*Tim.* Do so, my friends:

See them well entertain'd. [*Exit TIMON.*]

*Flav.* I pray, draw near

[*Exit FLAVIUS.*]

*Enter APEMANTUS and a Fool.*

*Caph.* Stay, stay, here comes the fool with

Apemantus; let's have some sport with 'em.

*Var. Serv.* Hang him, he'll abuse us.

*Isid. Serv.* A plague upon him, dog!

*Var. Serv.* How dost, fool?

*Apem.* Dost dialogue with thy shadow?

*Var. Serv.* I speak not to thee.

*Apem.* No; 'tis to thyself,—Come away.

[*To the Fool.*]

*Isid. Serv.* [*To VAR. SERV.*] There's the

fool hangs on your back already.

*Apem.* No, thou stand'st single, thou art

not on him yet.

*Caph.* Where's the fool now?

*Apem.* He last asked the question.—Poor

rogues, and usurers' men! bawds between gold

and want!

*All Serv.* What are we, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Asses.

*All Serv.* Why?

*Apem.* That you ask me what you are, and

do not know yourselves.—Speak to 'em,

fool.

*Fool.* How do you, gentlemen?

*All Serv.* Gramercies, good fool: How

does your mistress?

*Fool.* She's e'en setting on water to scald

such chickens as you are. 'Would we could

see you at Corinth.

*Apem.* Good! gramercy.

*Enter Page.*

*Fool.* Look you, here comes my mistress'

page.

*Page.* [*To the Fool.*] Why, how now,

captain? what do you in this wise company?

—How dost 'hou, Apemantus?

*Apem.* 'Would I had a rod in my mouth,

that I might answer thee profitably.

*Page.* Pr'ythee, Apemantus, read me the

superscription of these letters; I know not

which is which.

*Apem.* Canst not read?

*Page.* No.

*Apem.* There will little learning die then,

that day thou art hang'd. This is to lord

Timon; this to Alcibiades. Go; thou wast

boin a bastard, and thou'lt die a bawd.

*Page.* Thou wast whelp'd a dog; and thou

shalt famish, a dog's death. Answer not, I am

gone. [*Exit Page.*]

*Apem.* Even so thou out-runn'st grace. Fool,

I will go with you to lord Timon's.

*Fool.* Will you leave me there?

*Apem.* If Timon stay at home.—You three

serve three usurers?

*All Serv.* Ay; 'would they served us!

*Apem.* So would I,—as good a trick as ever

haugman served thief.

*Fool.* Are you three usurers' men?

*All Serv.* Ay, fool.

*Fool.* I think, no usurer but has a fool to his

servant: My mistress is one, and I am her fool.

When men come to borrow of your masters,

they approach sadly, and go away, merry; but

they enter my mistress' house merrily, and go

away sadly: The reason of this?

*Var. Serv.* I could render one.

*Apem.* Do it then, that we may account thee

a whoremaster, and a knave; which notwithstanding,

thou shalt be no less esteemed.

*Var. Serv.* What is a whoremaster, fool?

*Fool.* A fool in good clothes, and something

like thee. 'Tis a spirit: sometime, it appears

like a lord; sometime, like a lawyer; some-

time, like a philosopher, with two stones more

than his artificial one: He is very often like

a knight; and, generally in all shapes, that

man goes up and down in, from fourscore to

thirteen, this spirit walks in.

*Var. Serv.* Thou art not altogether a

fool.

*Fool.* Nor thou altogether a wise man: as

much foolery as I have, so much wit thou

lackest.

*Apem.* That answer might have become

Apemantus.

*All Serv.* Aside, aside; here comes lord

Timon.

*Re-enter TIMON and FLAVIUS.*

*Apem.* Come with me, fool, come.

*Fool.* I do not always follow lover, elder

brother, and woman; sometime, the philoso-

pher. [*Exeunt APEMANTUS and Fool.*]

*Flav.* 'Pray you, walk near; I'll speak with

you anon. [*Exeunt SERV.*]

*Tim.* You make me marvel: Wherefore, ere

this time,

Had you not fully laid my state before me;

That I might so have rated my expense,

As I had leave of means?

*Flav.* You would not hear me,

At many leisures I proposed.

*Tim.* Go to:

Perchance, some single vantages you took,

When my indisposition put you back;

And that unaptness made you minister,

Thus to excuse yourself.

*Flav.* O my good lord!

At many times I brought in my accounts, [off,

Laid them before you; you would throw them

And say, you found them in mine honesty.

When, for some trifling present, you have bid

me

Return so much\*, I have shook my head, and wept; [you]

Yea, 'gainst the authority of manners, pray'd To hold your hand more close: I did endure Not seldom, nor no slight checks; when I have Prompted you, in the ebb of your estate, And your great flow of debts. My dear-loved lord, [time,

Though you hear now, (too late!) yet now's a The greatest of your having lacks a half To pay your present debts.

*Tim.* Let all my land be sold.

*Flav.* 'Tis all engaged, some forfeited and gone;

And what remains will hardly stop the month Of present dues; the future comes apace:

What shall defend the interim? and at length How goes our reckoning?

*Tim.* To Lacedæmon did my land extend.

*Flav.* O my good lord, the world is but a Were it all yours to give it in a breath, [wordt; How quickly were it gone?

*Tim.* You tell me true.

*Flav.* If you suspect my husbandry, or false- Call me before the exactest auditors, [hood, And set me on the proof. So the gods bless me, When all our offices have been oppress'd [wept With riotous feeders; when our vaults have With drunken spilt of wine; when every room Hath blazed with lights, and bray'd with mirth I have retired me to a wasteful cocky, [strelsy; And set mine eyes at flow.

*Tim.* Pr'ythee, no more.

*Flav.* Heavens, have I said, the bounty of this lord! [sants

How many prodigal bits have slaves and pea- This night englutted! Who is not Timon's?

What heart, head, sword, force, means, but is lord Timon's?

Great Timon, noble, worthy, royal Timon? Ah! when the means are gone, that buy this praise,

The breath is gone whereof this praise is made: Feast-won, fast-lost; one cloud of winter show- These flies are couch'd. [ers,

*Tim.* Come, sermon me no further: No villanous bounty yet hath pass'd my heart; Unwisely, not ignobly, have I given. [lack, Why dost thou weep? Canst thou the conscience To think I shall lack friends? Secure thy heart; If I would broach the vessels of my love, And try the argument of hearts by borrowing, Men, and men's fortunes, could I frankly use, As I can bid thee speak.

*Flav.* Assurance bless your thoughts!

*Tim.* And, in some sort, these wants of mine are crown'd,†

That I account them blessings; for by these Shall I try friends: You shall perceive, how you

Mistake my fortunes; I am wealthy in my friends.

Within there, ho!—*Flaminius! Servilius!*  
*Enter FLAMINIUS, SERVILIUS, and other Servants.*

*Serv.* My lord, my lord,— [lord Lucius;—  
*Tim.* I will despatch you severally.— You, to To lord Lucullus you; I hunted with his Honour to-day;— You, to Sempronius; [say, Commend me to their loves; and, I am proud, That my occasions have found time to use them Toward a supply of money: let the request Be fifty talents.

*Flam.* As you have said, my lord.

*Flav.* Lord Lucius, and Lord Lucullus? humph! [Aside.

*Tim.* Go you, sir, [To another Serv.] to the senators,

(Of whom, even to the state's best health, I have Deserved this hearing,) bid 'em send o'the in- A thousand talents to me. [stant

*Flav.* I have been bold For that I knew it the most general way)

To them to use your signet, and your name; But they do shake their heads, and I am here No richer in return.

*Tim.* Is't true? can it be?

*Flav.* They answer, in a joint and corporate voice, [not

That now they are at fall\*\*, want treasure, can- Do what they would; are sorry—you are ho- nourable,— [not—but

But yet they could have wish'd—they know Something hath been amiss—a noble nature

May catch a wretch—would all were well— 'tis pity—

And so, intending†† other serious matters, After distasteful looks, and these hard frac- tions††,

With certain half-caps§§, and cold-moving nods, They froze me into silence.

*Tim.* You gods, reward them!— I pr'ythee, man, look cheerly; These old fel- lows

Have their ingratitude in them hereditary: Their blood is caked, 'tis cold, it seldom flows;

'Tis lack of kindly warmth they are not kind; And nature, as it grows again toward earth,

Is fashion'd for the journey, dull and heavy.— Go to Ventidius,— [To a Serv.] 'Pr'ythee, [To

FLAVIUS,] be not sad,

Thou art true, and honest; ingeniously!!! I speak No blame belongs to thee:— [To Serv.] Ven-

tidius lately

Buried his father; by whose death he stepp'd

Into a great estate: when he was poor, Imprison'd, and in scarcity of friends, [me;

I clear'd him with five talents; Greet him from Bid him suppose, some good necessity [ber'd

Touches his friend, which craves to be remem-

\* He does not mean, so great a sum, but a certain sum. † i. e., As the world itself may be comprised in a word, you might give it away in a breath. ‡ The apartments allotted to culinary offices, &c.

§ A pipe with a turning stopple running to waste. || If I would, [says Timon,] by borrowing try of what men's hearts are composed, what they have in them, &c.

¶ Dignified, made respectable. \*\* i. e., At an ebb. †† Intending, had anciently the same meaning as attending.

‡‡ Broken hints, abrupt remarks. §§ A half-cap is a cap slightly moved, not put off. |||| For ingeniously.



With those five talents :—that had,—[To FLA.]  
 give it these fellows  
 To whom 'tis instant due. Ne'er speak, or  
 think,  
 That Timon's fortunes 'mong his friends can

Flav. I would I could not think it; That  
 thought is bounty's foe;  
 Being free \* itself, it thinks all others so.  
 [Exit.

## ACT III.

SCENE I. *The same. A Room in Lucullus's House.*

FLAMINIUS waiting. Enter a Servant to him.

Serv. I have told my lord of you, he is coming down to you.

Flam. I thank you, sir.

Enter LUCULLUS.

Serv. Here's my lord.

Lucul. [Aside.] One of lord Timon's men? a gift, I warrant. Why, this hits right; I dreamt of a silver bason and ewer to-night. Flaminius, honest Flaminius; you are very respectfully welcome, sir.—Fill me some wine. [Exit Servant.] And how does that honourable complete, free-hearted gentleman of Athens, thy very bountiful good lord and master?

Flam. His health is well, sir.

Lucul. I am right glad that his health is well, sir: And what hast thou there under thy cloak, pretty Flaminius?

Flam. 'Faith, nothing but an empty box, sir; which, in my lord's behalf, I come to entreat your honour to supply; who, having great and instant occasion to use fifty talents, hath sent to your lordship to furnish him; nothing doubting your present assistance therein.

Lucul. La, la, la, la,—nothing doubting, says he? alas, good lord! a noble gentleman 'tis, if he would not keep so good a house. Many a time and often I have dined with him, and told him on't; and come again to supper to him, of purpose to have him spend less: and yet he would embrace no counsel, take no warning by my coming. Every man has his fault, and honesty† is his; I have told him on't, but I could never get him from it.

Re-enter Servant, with wine.

Serv. Please your lordship, here is the wine.

Lucul. Flaminius, I have noted thee always wise. Here's to thee.

Flam. Your lordship speaks your pleasure.

Lucul. I have observed thee always for a towardly prompt spirit,—give thee thy due,—and one that knows what belongs to reason: and canst use the time well, if the time use thee well: good parts in thee.—Get you gone, sirrah. [To the Servant, who goes out.]—Draw nearer, honest Flaminius. Thy lord's a bountiful gentleman: but thou art wise; and thou knowest well enough, although thou comest to me, that this is no time to lend money; especially upon bare friendship, without security. Here's three solidares for thee; good boy, wink at me, and say, thou saw'st me not. Fare thee well.

Flam. Is't possible, the world should so much differ; [ness,  
 And we alive that lived? Fly, damned base-  
 To him that worships thee.

[Throwing the money away.

Lucul. Ha! Now I see, thou art a fool, and fit for thy master. [Exit LUCULLUS.

Flam. May these add to the number that may let molten coin be thy damnation, [scald thee! Thon disease of a friend, and not himself! Has friendship such a faint and milky heart, It turns in less than two nights? O you gods, I feel my master's passion!! This slave Unto his honour, has my lord's meat in him: Why should it thrive, and turn to nutriment, When he is turn'd to poison? O, may diseases only work upon't! [of nature And, when he is sick to death, let not that part Which my lord paid for, be of any power To expel sickness, but prolong his hour!]

[Exit.

SCENE II. *The same. A public place.*

Enter LUCIUS, with three Strangers.

Luc. Who, the lord Timon? he is my very good friend, and an honourable gentleman.

1 Stran. We know\*\* him for no less, though we are but strangers to him. But I can tell you one thing, my lord, and which I hear from common rumours; now lord Timon's happy hours are done† and past, and his estate shrinks from him.

Luc. Fie, no, do not believe it; he cannot want for money.

2 Stran. But believe you this, my lord, that, not long ago, one of his men was with the lord Lucullus, to borrow so many talents; nay, urged extremely for't, and showed what necessity belonged to't, and yet was denied.

Luc. How?

2 Stran. I tell you, denied, my lord.

Luc. What a strange case was that! now, before the gods, I am ashamed on't. Denied that honourable man? there was very little honour showed in't. For my own part, I must needs confess, I have received some small kindnesses from him, as money, plate, jewels, and such-like trifles, nothing comparing to his; yet, had he mistook him, and sent to me, I should ne'er have denied his occasion so many talents.

Enter SERVILIUS.

Serv. See, by good hap, yonder's my lord; I have sweat to see his honour.—My honoured lord,— [To LUCIUS

Luc. Servilius! you are kindly met, sir

\* Liberal, not parsimonious. † For respectfully. ‡ Honesty here means liberality.  
 § i. e., And we who were alive then, alive now. || Suffering; "By his bloody cross and passion." Liturgy. ¶ i. e., His life. \*\* Acknowledg'd. † Consumed.

Fare thee well:—Commend me to thy honourable-virtuous lord, my very exquisite friend.

*Ser.* May it please your honour, my lord hath sent—

*Luc.* Ha! what has he sent? I am so much endeared to that lord; he's ever sending: How shall I thank him, thinkest thou? And what has he sent now?

*Ser.* He has only sent his present occasion now, my lord; requesting your lordship to supply his instant use with so many talents.

*Luc.* I know his lordship is but inerry with me; He cannot want fifty-five hundred talents.

*Ser.* But in the mean time he wants less, my lord. If his occasion were not virtuous\*, [lord. I should not urge it half so faithfully.

*Luc.* Dost thou speak seriously, Servilius?

*Ser.* Upon my soul, 'tis true, sir.

*Luc.* What a wicked beast was I, to disfigure myself against such a good time, when I might have shown myself honourable! how un luckily it happened, that I should purchase the day before for a little part, and undo a great deal of honour!—Servilius, now before the gods, I am not able to do't; the more beast, I say:—I was sending to use lord Timon myself, these gentlemen can witness; but I would not, for the wealth of Athens, I had done it now. Commend me bountifully to his good lordship; and I hope his honour will conceive the fairest of me, because I have no power to be kind: And tell him this from me, I count it one of my greatest afflictions, say, that I cannot pleasure such an honourable gentleman. Good Servilius, will you befriend me so far, as to use mine own words to him?

*Ser.* Yes, sir, I shall.

*Luc.* I will look you out a good turn, Servilius.— [Exit SERVILIUS.  
True, as you said, Timon is shrunk, indeed; And he, that's once denied, will hardly speed.

[Exit LUCIUS.

1 *Stran.* Do you observe this, Hostilius?

2 *Stran.* Ay, too well.

1 *Stran.* Why this

Is the world's soul; and just of the same piece Is every flatterer's spirit. Who can call him His friend, that dips in the same dish? for, in My knowing, Timon hath been this lord's fa- And kept his credit with his purse; [ther, Supported his estate; nay, Timon's money Has paid his men their wages: He ne'er drinks, But Timon's silver treads upon his lip; And yet, (O, see the monstrosity of man, When he looks out in an ungrateful shape!) He does deny him, in respect of his, What charitable men afford to beggars.

3 *Stran.* Religion groans at it.

1 *Stran.* For mine own part,

I never tasted Timon in my life, Nor came any of his bounties over me, To mark me for his friend; yet, I protest, For his right noble mind, illustrious virtue, And honourable carriage, Had his necessity made use of me,

I would have put my wealth into donation†, And the best half should have return'd to him, So much I love his heart: But, I perceive, Men must learn now with pity to dispense: For policy sits above conscience. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. *The same. A Room in Sempronius's House.*

*Enter SEMPRONIUS, and a Servant of Timon's.*

*Sem.* Must he needs trouble me in't?

Humph! 'Bove all others?

He might have tried lord Lucius, or Lucullus And now Ventidius is wealthy too, [three Whom he redeem'd from prison: All these Owe their estates unto him.

*Serv.* O my lord,

They have all been touch'd‡, and found base They have all denied him! [metal; for

*Sem.* How! have they denied him?

Has Ventidius and Lucullus denied him? And does he send to me? Three! humph!— It shows but little love or judgement in him.

Must I be his last refuge? His friends, like physicians, [upon me

Thrive, give him over: Must I take the cure He has much disgraced me in't; I am angry at him, [sense for't,

That might have known my place: I see no But his occasions might have woo'd me first; For, in my conscience, I was the first man That e'er received gift from him:

And does he think so backwardly of me now, That I'll requite at last? No: So it may prove An argument of laughter to the rest, And I amongst the lords be thought a fool.

I had rather than the worth of thrice the sum, He had sent to me first, but for my mind's sake; [now return,

I had such a courage§ to do him good. But And with their faint reply this answer join; Who bates mine honour, shall not know my coin. [Exit.

*Serv.* Excellent! Your lordship's a goodly villain. The devil knew not what he did, when he made man politic; he crossed himself by't: and I cannot think, but, in the end, the villanies of man will set him clear. How fairly this lord strives to appear fool! takes virtuous copies to be wicked; like those that, under hot ardent zeal, would set whole realms on fire. Of such a nature is his politic love. This was my lord's best hope; now all are fled, Save the gods only: Now his friends are dead, Doors, that were ne'er acquainted with their wards

Many a bounteous year, must be employ'd

Now to guard sure their master.

And this is all a liberal course allows;

Who cannot keep his wealth, must keep his house||. [Exit.

SCENE IV. *The same. A Hall in Timon's House.*

*Enter two Servants of VARRO, and the Servant of LUCIUS, meeting TITUS, HORTEN-*

\* "If he did not want it for a good use." † This means, to put his wealth down in account as a donation. ‡ Tried. § Ardour, eager desire. || i. e., Keep within doors for fear of duns.

*Sius, and other Servants to TIMON'S Creditors, waiting his coming out.*

*Var. Serv.* Well met; good-morrow, Titus and Hortensius.

*Tit.* The like to you, kind Varro.

*Hor.* *Lucius?*

What, do we meet together?

*Luc. Serv.* Ay, and I think

One business does command us all; for mine is money.

*Tit.* So is theirs and ours.

*Enter PHILOTUS.*

*Luc. Serv.* And, sir, Philotus too!

*Phi.* Good day at once.

*Luc. Serv.* Welcome, good brother.

What do you think the hour?

*Phi.* Labouring for nine.

*Luc. Serv.* So much?

*Phi.* Is not my lord seen yet?

*Luc. Serv.* Not yet.

*Phi.* I wonder on't; he was wont to shine at seven. *[shorter with him:]*

*Luc. Serv.* Ay, but the days are waxed. You must consider that a prodigal course is like the sun's\*; but not, like his, recover-  
I fear, *[able.]*

'Tis deepest winter in lord Timon's purse; That is, one may reach deep enough, and yet find little.

*Phi.* I am of your fear for that. *[event.]*

*Tit.* I'll show you how to observe a strange. Your lord sends now for money.

*Hor.* Most true, he does.

*Tit.* And he wears jewels now of Timon's. For which I wait for money. *[gift.]*

*Hor.* It is against my heart.

*Luc. Serv.* Mark, how strange it shows, Timon in this should pay more than he owes; And e'en as if your lord should wear rich And send for money for 'em. *[jewels.]*

*Hor.* I am weary of this charge†, the gods can witness:

I know, my lord hath spent of Timon's wealth, And now ingratitude makes it worse than stealth. *[crowns:]* What's yours?

*1 Var. Serv.* Yes, mine's three thousand

*Luc. Serv.* Five thousand mine.

*1 Var. Serv.* 'Tis much deep: and it should seem by the sun,

Your master's confidence was above mine; Else, surely, his had equal'd.

*Enter FLAMINIUS.*

*Tit.* One of lord Timon's men.

*Luc. Ser.* Flaminius! sir, a word: 'Pray, is my lord ready to come forth?

*Flam.* No, indeed, he is not.

*Tit.* We attend his lordship; 'pray, signify so much.

*Flam.* I need not tell him that; he knows, you are too diligent. *[Exit FLAMINIUS.]*

*Enter FLAVIUS, in a cloak, muffled.*

*Luc. Serv.* Hal is not that his steward muffled so?

He goes away in a cloud: call him, call him.

*Tit.* Do you hear, sir?

*1 Var. Ser.* By your leave, sir,—

*Fla.* What do you ask of me, my friend?

*Tit.* We wait for certain money here, sir.

*Fla.* Ay,

If money were as certain as your waiting, 'Twere sure enough. Why then preferr'd you not *[eat]*

Your sums and bills, when your false masters Of my lord's meat? Then they could smile, and fawn

Upon his debts, and take down th' interest Into their gluttonous maws. You do yourselves but wrong,

To stir me up; let me pass quietly:

Believe't, my lord and I have made an end; I have no more to reckon, he to spend.

*Luc. Serv.* Ay, but this answer will not

*Flav.* If 'twill not, *[serve.]*

'Tis not so base as you; for you serve knaves. *[Exit.]*

*1 Var. Serv.* How! what does his cashier'd worship mutter?

*2 Var. Serv.* No matter what; he's poor, and that's revenge enough. Who can speak broader than he that has no house to put his head in? such may rail against great buildings.

*Enter SERVILIUS.*

*Tit.* O, here's Servilius; now we shall know some answer.

*Serv.* If I might beseech you, gentlemen, To repair some other hour, I should much

Derive from it: for, take it on my soul, My lord leans wondrously to discontent.

His comfortable temper has forsook him: He is much out of health, and keeps his chamber. *[are not sick:]*

*Luc. Serv.* Many do keep their chambers And, if it be so far beyond his health, Methinks, he should the sooner pay his debts, And make a clear way to the gods.

*Serv.* Good gods!

*Tit.* We cannot take this for an answer, sir. *Flam. [Within:]* Servilius, help!—my lord! my lord!—

*Enter TIMON, in a rage; FLAMINIUS following.*

*Tim.* What, are my doors opposed against my passage?

Have I been ever free, and must my house Be my retentive enemy, my gaol? The place, which I have feasted, does it now, Like all mankind, show me an iron heart?

*Luc. Serv.* Put in now, Titus.

*Tit.* My lord, here is my bill.

*Luc. Serv.* Here's mine.

*Hor. Serv.* And mine, my lord.

*Both Var. Serv.* And our's, my lord.

*Phi.* All our bills.

*Tim.* Knock me down with 'em: cleave me to the girdle.

*Luc. Serv.* Alas! my lord,—

*Tim.* Cut my heart in sums.

*Tit.* Mine, fifty taleuts.

*Tim.* Tell out my blood.

\* *i. e.*, Like him in blaze and splendour. † Commission, employment. ‡ Timon quibbles. They present their written bills; he catches at the word, and alludes to bills or battle-axes.



*Luc. Serv.* Five thousand crowns, my lord.

*Tim.* Five thousand drops pay that.—

What yours?—and yours?

*1 Var. Serv.* My lord,—

*2 Var. Serv.* My lord,—

*Tim.* Tear me, take me, and the gods fall upon you! [Exit.]

*Hor.* Faith, I perceive our masters may throw their caps at their money; these debts may well be called desperate ones, for a madman owes 'em. [Exeunt.]

Re-enter TIMON and FLAVIUS.

*Tim.* They have e'en put my breath for Creditors!—devils. [me, the slaves.]

*Flav.* My dear lord,—

*Tim.* What if it should be so?

*Flav.* My lord,—

*Tim.* I'll have it so:—My steward!

*Flav.* Here, my lord.

*Tim.* So fitly? Go, bid all my friends again, Lucius, Lucullus, and Sempronius; all: I'll once more feast the rascals.

*Flav.* O my lord, You only speak from your distracted soul; There is not so much left, to furnish out A moderate table.

*Tim.* Be't not in thy care; go, I charge thee; invite them all: let in the tide Of knaves once more; my cook and I'll provide. [Exeunt.]

SCENE V. The same. The Senate-House.

The Senate sitting. Enter ALCIBIADES, attended.

*1 Sen.* My lord, you have my voice to it; the fault's

Bloody; 'tis necessary he should die:

Nothing emboldens sin so much as mercy.

*2 Sen.* Most true; the law shall bruise him.

*Alcib.* Honour, health, and compassion to

*1 Sen.* Now, cap ain? [the senate!]

*Alcib.* I am an humble snitor to your virtues;

For pity is the virtue of the law,

And none but tyrants use it cruelly.

It pleases time and fortune to lie heavy

Upon a friend of mine, who, in hot blood,

Hath stepp'd into the law, which is past depth

To those that, without heed, do plunge into it.

He is a man, setting his fate aside\*,

Of comely virtues:

Nor did he soil the fact with cowardice;

(An honour in him which bays out his fault,)

But, with a noble fury, and fair spirit,

Seeing his reputation touch'd to death,

He did oppose his foe:

And with such sober and unnoted passion†

He did behave; in his anger, ere 'twas spent,

As if he had but proved an argument.

*1 Sen.* You undergo too strict a paradox‡,

Striving to make an ugly deed look fair:

Your words have took such pains, as if they labour'd

To bring manslaughter into form, set quarrelling

Upon the head of valour; which, indeed,

Is valour misbegot, and came into the world

When sects and factions were newly born:

He's truly valiant that can wisely suffer

The worst that man can breathe; and make his wrongs

His outsidings; wear them like his raiment,

And ne'er prefer his injuries to his heart,

To bring it into danger.

If wrongs be evils, and enforce us kill,

What folly 'tis, to hazard life for ill?

*Alcib.* My lord,— [clear;

*1 Sen.* You cannot make gross sins look

To revenge is no valour, but to bear.

*Alcib.* My lords, then, under favour, pardon

If I speak like a captain.— [me]

Why do fond men expose themselves to battle,

And not endure all threatnings? Sleep upon it,

And let the foes quietly cut their throats,

Without repugnancy? but if there be

Such valour in the bearing, what make we

Abroad? why then, women are more valiant,

That stay at home, if bearing carry it;

And th' ass, more captain than the lion; the felon,

Loaden with irons, wiser than the judge,

If wisdom be in suffering. O, my lords,

As you are great, be pitifully good:

Who cannot condemn rashness in cold blood?

To kill, I grant, is sin's extremest gust;

But, in defence, by mercy, 'tis most just\*\*.

To be in anger, is impiety;

But who is man, that is not angry?

Weigh but the crime with this.

*2 Sen.* You breathe in vain.

*Alcib.* In vain? his service done

At Lacedæmon, and Byzantium.

Were a sufficient briber for his life.

*1 Sen.* What's that? [service

*Alcib.* Why, I say, my lords, h'as done fair

And slain in fight many of your enemies:

How full of valour did he bear himself

In the last conflict, and made piteous

wounds? [em, he

*2 Sen.* He has made too much plenty with

Is a sworn rioter: h'as a sin that often

Drowns him, and takes his valour prisoner:

If there were no foes, that were enough alone

To overcome him: in that beastly fury

He has been known to commit outrages,

And cherish factions: 'Tis infer'd to us,

His days are foul, and his drink dangerous.

*1 Sen.* He dies. [war.

*Alcib.* Hard fate! he might have died in

My lords, if not for any parts in him,

(Though his right arm might purchase his own time, [you,

And be in debt to none,) yet, more to move

Take my deserts to his, and join them both:

And, for I know, your reverend ages love

\* i. e., Putting this action of his, which was predetermined by fate, out of the question.

† i. e., Passion so subdued that no spectator could note its operation. ‡ Manage, govern.

§ You undertake a paradox too hard.

|| What have we to do in the field?

¶ For aggravation.

\*\* "Homicide, in our own defence, by a merciful interpretation of the law, is considered justifiable."

Security, I'll pawn my victories, all  
My honour to you, upon his good returns.  
If by this crime he owes the law his life,  
Why, let the war receive't in valiant gore;  
For law is strict, and war is nothing more.

1 *Sen.* We are for law, he dies; urge it no more,

On height of our displeasure: Friend, or  
He forfeits his own blood, that spills another.

*Alcib.* Must it be so? it must not be. My  
I do beseech you, know me.

2 *Sen.* How?

*Alcib.* Call me to your remembrances.

3 *Sen.* What?

*Alcib.* I cannot think, but your age has for-  
It could not else be, I should prove so base\*  
To sue, and be denied such common grace:  
My wounds ache at you.

1 *Sen.* Do you dare our anger?  
'Tis in few words, but spacious in effect;

We banish thee for ever.

*Alcib.* Banish me?

Banish your doctage; banish usury,  
That makes the senate ugly.

1 *Sen.* If, after two days' shine, Athens con-  
Attend our weightier judgment. And, not to  
swell our spirit†,

He shall be executed presently.

[*Exeunt Senators.*]

*Alcib.* Now the gods keep you old enough;  
that you may live

Only in bone, that none may look on you!  
I am worse than mad: I have kept back  
their foes,

While they have told their money, and let out  
Their coin upon large interest; I myself

Rich only in large hurts;—All those for this?  
Is this the balsam that the usuring senate

Pour into captains' wounds? ha! banishment?  
It comes not ill; I hate not to be banish'd;

It is a cause worthy my spleen and fury,  
That I may strike at Athens. I'll cheer up

My discontented troops, and lay for hearts‡.  
'Tis honour, with most lands to be at odds;

Soldiers should brook as little wrongs as gods.  
[*Exit.*]

SCENE VI. A magnificent Room in Timon's House.

*Music.* Tables set out: Servants attending.

*Enter divers Lords, at several doors.*

1 *Lord.* The good time of day to you, sir.

2 *Lord.* I also wish it to you. I think this  
honourable lord did but try us this other day.

1 *Lord.* Upon that were my thoughts tir-  
ing§, when we encountered: I hope it is not  
so low with him, as he made it seem in the  
trial of his several friends.

2 *Lord.* It should not be, by the persuasion  
of his new feasting.

1 *Lord.* I should think so: He hath sent me  
an earnest inviting, which many my near oc-  
casions did urge me to put off; but he hath

conjured me beyond them, and I must needs  
appear.

2 *Lord.* In like manner was I in debt to my  
unfortunate business, but he would not hear  
my excuse. I am sorry, when he sent to bor-  
row of me, that my provision was out.

1 *Lord.* I am sick of that grief too, as I un-  
derstand how all things go.

2 *Lord.* Every man here's so. What would  
he have borrowed of you?

1 *Lord.* A thousand pieces.

2 *Lord.* A thousand pieces!

1 *Lord.* What of you?

3 *Lord.* He sent to me sir,—Here he  
comes.

*Enter TIMON, and Attendants.*

*Tim.* With all my heart, gentlemen both:—  
And how fare you?

1 *Lord.* Ever at the best, hearing well of  
your lordship.

2 *Lord.* The swallow follows not summer  
more willing, than we your lordship.

*Tim.* [*Aside.*] Nor more willingly leaves  
winter; such summer-birds are men.—Gentle  
men, our dinner will not recompense this long  
stay: feast your ears with the music awhile,  
if they will fare so harshly on the trumpet's  
sound: we shall to't presently.

1 *Lord.* I hope, it remains not unkindly  
with your lordship, that I returned you an  
empty messenger.

*Tim.* O, sir, let it not trouble you.

2 *Lord.* My noble lord,—

*Tim.* Ay, my good friend! what cheer?

[*The banquet brought in.*]

2 *Lord.* My most honourable lord, I am  
e'en sick of shame, that, when your lordship  
this other day sent to me, I was so unfortunate  
a beggar.

*Tim.* Think not on't, sir.

2 *Lord.* If you had sent but two hours  
before,—

*Tim.* Let it not cumber your better remem-  
brance||.—Come, bring in all together.

2 *Lord.* All covered dishes!

1 *Lord.* Royal cheer, I warrant you.

3 *Lord.* Doubt not that, if money, and the  
season can yield it.

1 *Lord.* How do you? what's the news?

3 *Lord.* Alcibiades is banished: Hear you  
of it?

1 & 2 *Lords.* Alcibiades banished!

3 *Lord.* 'Tis so, be sure of it.

1 *Lord.* How? how?

2 *Lord.* I pray you, upon what?

*Tim.* My worthy friends, will you draw  
near?

3 *Lord.* I'll tell you more anon. Here's a  
noble feast toward.

2 *Lord.* This is the old man stul.

3 *Lord.* Will't hold? will't hold?

2 *Lord.* It does: but time will—and so—

3 *Lord.* I do conceive.

*Tim.* Each man to his stool, with that spur

\* For dishonoured.

† *i. e.*, Not to put ourselves in any tumour of rage.

‡ We should now say—to lay out for hearts, *i. e.*, the affection of the people.

§ To tire on a thing, meant to be idly employed on it.

|| *i. e.*, Your good memory

as he would to the lip of his mistress: your diet shall be in all places alike. Make not a city feast of it, to let the meat cool ere we can agree upon the first place: Sit, sit. The gods require our thanks.

*You great benefactors, sprinkle our society with thankfulness. For your own gifts, make yourselves praised: but reserve still to give, lest your deities be despised. Lend to each man enough, that one need not lend to another: for, were your god-heads to borrow of men, men would forsake the gods. Make the meat be beloved, more than the man that gives it. Let no assembly of twenty be without a score of villains: If there sit twelve women at the table, let a dozen of them be—as they are.—The rest of your jees, O gods,—the senators of Athens, together with the common lag\* of people,—what is amiss in them, you gods make suitable for destruction. For these my present friends,—as they are to me no thing, so in nothing bless them, and to no thing they are welcome.*

Uncover, dogs, and lap.

*[The dishes uncovered, are full of warm water.]*

*Some speak.* What does his lordship mean?

*Some other.* I know not.

*Tim.* May you a better feast never behold, You knot of month-friends! smoke, and luke-warm water

is your perfection. This is Timon's last; Who stuck and spangled you with flatteries, Washes it off, and sprinkles in your faces

*[Throwing water in their faces.]*

You reeking villany. Live loath'd and long, Most smiling, smooth, detested parasites, Courteous destroyers, affable wolves, meek bears,

You fools of fortune, trencher-friends, time's Cap and knee slaves, vapours, and minute-jacks!

Of man and beast, the infinite malady Crust you quite o'er;—what, dost thou go? Soft, take thy physic first—thou too,—and thou;—

*[Throws the dishes at them, and drives them out.]*

Stay, I will lend thee money, borrow none.—What, all in motion? Henceforth be no feast, Whereat a villain's not a welcome guest. [be Burn, house; sink, Athens! henceforth hated Of Timon, man, and all humanity! *[Exit. Re-enter the Lords, with other Lords and Senators.]*

1 Lord. How now, my lords?

2 Lord. Know you the quality of Lord Timon's fury?

3 Lord. Pish! did you see my cap?

4 Lord. I have lost my gown.

3 Lord. He's but a mad lord, and nought but humour sways him. He gave me a jewel the other day, and now he has beat it out of my hat:—did you see my jewel?

4 Lord. Did you see my cap?

2 Lord. Here 'tis.

4 Lord. Here lies my gown.

1 Lord. Let's make no stay.

2 Lord. Lord Timon's mad.

3 Lord. I feel't upon my bones.

4 Lord. One day he gives us diamonds, next day stones. *[Exeunt.]*

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. Without the walls of Athens.

*Enter TIMON.*

*Tim.* Let me look back upon thee, O thou wall, [earth, That girdest in those wolves!—dive in the And fence not Athens! Matrons, turn incontinent!

Obedience fail in children! slaves, and fools, Pluck the grave wrinkled senate from the bench,

And minister in their steads! to general filth; Convert o'the instant green virginity! [fast; Do't in your parents' eyes! bankrupts, hold Rather than render back, out with your knives, And cut your trusters' throats! bound servants, steal!

Large-handed robbers your grave masters are, And pill by law! maid, to thy master's bed; Thy mistress is o' the brothel! son of sixteen, Pluck the lined crutch from the old limping sire,

With it beat out his brains! piety, and fear, Religion to the gods, peace, justice, truth, Domestic awe, night-rest, and neighbourhood, Instruction, manners, mysteries, and trades, Degrees, observances, customs, and laws, Decline to your confounding contraries, And yet confusion live!—Plagues, incident to men,

Your potent and infectious fevers heap On Athens, ripe for stroke! thou cold sciatica, Cripple our senators, that their limbs may halt As lamely as their manners! lust and liberty Creep in the minds and marrow of our youth; That 'gainst the stream of virtue they may strive,

And drown themselves in riot! itches, blains, Sow all the Athenian bosoms; and their crop Be general leprosy! breath infect breath; That their society, as their friendship, may Be merely poison! Nothing I'll bear from thee, But nakedness, thou detestable town! Take thou that too, with multiplying bans\*\*!

\* The lowest.

† Flies of a season.

Jacks of the clock; like those at St. Dunstan's church in Fleet-street. ‡ Common sewers.

|| i.e., Contraries, whose nature it is to waste or destroy each other.

¶ For libertinism.

\*\* Accumulated curses



Timon will to the woods; where he shall find  
The unkindest beast more kinder than mankind. [all]

The gods confound (hear me, ye good gods  
The Athenians both within and out that wall!  
And grant, as Timon grows, his hate may grow  
To the whole race of mankind, high and low!  
Amen. [Exit.]

SCENE II. Athens. A Room in Timon's House.

Enter FLAVIUS, with two or three Servants.

1 Serv. Here you, master steward, where's our master?

Are we undone? cast off? nothing remaining?

Flav. Alack, my fellows, what should I say to you?

Let me be recorded by the righteous gods,  
I am as poor as you.

1 Serv. Such a house broke!  
So noble a master fallen! All gone! and not  
One friend to take his fortune by the arm,  
And go along with him!

2 Serv. As we do turn our backs  
From our companion, thrown into his grave;  
So his familiars to his buried fortunes  
Slink all away; leave their false vows with him,  
Like empty purses pick'd: and his poor self,  
A dedicated beggar to the air,  
With his disease of all-shunn'd poverty,  
Walks, like contempt, alone.—More of our fellows.

Enter other Servants.

Flav. All broken implements of a ruin'd house. [livery]

3 Serv. Yet do our hearts wear Timon's  
That see I by our faces; we are fellows still,  
Serving alike in sorrow: Leak'd is our bark;  
And we, poor mates, stand on the dying deck,  
Hearing the surges threat: we must all part  
Into this sea of air.

Flav. Good fellows all,  
The latest of my wealth I'll share amongst you.  
Wherever we shall meet, for Timon's sake,  
Let's yet be fellows; let's shake our heads, and say,

As 'twere a knell unto our master's fortunes,  
We have seen better days. Let each take some; [Giving them money.]

Nay, put out all your hands. Not one word more:

Thus part we rich in sorrow, parting poor.

[Exit Servants.]  
O, the fierce \* wretchedness that glory brings us!

Who would not wish to be from wealth ex-  
Since riches point to misery and contempt?  
Who'd be so mock'd with glory! or to live  
But in a dream of friendship? [pounds,  
To have his pomp, and all what state com-  
But only painted, like his varnish'd friends?  
Poor honest lord, brought low by his own  
honest;

Undone by goodness! Strange, unusual blood t.

When man's worst sin is, he does too much good!

Who then dares to be half so kind again?

For bounty, that makes gods, does still mar men.

My dearest lord,—bless'd, to be most accursed,  
Rich only to be wretched;—thy great fortunes  
Are made thy chief afflictions. Alas, kind lord!  
He's flung in rage from this ungrateful seat  
Of monstrous friends: nor has he with him to  
Supply his life, or that which can command it.  
I'll follow, and inquire him out:  
I'll serve his mind with my best will;  
Whilst I have gold, I'll be his steward still. [Exit.]

SCENE III. The Woods.

Enter TIMON.

Tim. O blessed breeding sun, draw from the earth

Rotten humidity; below thy sister's orb †  
Infect the air! I winn'd brothers of one womb,  
Whose procreation, residence, and birth,  
Scarce is dividant,—touch them with several fortunes;

The greater scorns the lesser: Not nature,  
To whom all sores lay siege, can bear great  
But by § contempt of nature. [fortune]  
Raise me this beggar, and denude that lord;  
The senator shall bear contempt hereditary,  
The beggar native honour.

It is the pasture lards the brother's sides,  
The want that makes him lean. Who dares,  
who dares,

In purity of manhood stand upright,  
And say, *This man's a flatterer?* if one be,  
So are they all; for every grize of fortune  
Is smooth'd by that below: the learned pate  
Ducks to the golden fool: all is oblique;  
There's nothing level in our cursed natures  
But direct villany. Therefore, be abhorr'd  
All feasts, societies, and throngs of men!  
His semblable, yea, himself, Timon disdains:  
Destruction fang || mankind!—Earth, yield me roots!

[Digging.]  
Who seeks for better of thee, sance his palate  
With thy most operant poison! What is here?  
Gold? yellow, glittering, precious gold? No,  
gods, [vans]

I am no idle votarist. ¶ Roots, you clear hea-  
Thus much of this, will make black, white;  
foul, fair; [ard, valiant.]

Wrong, right; base, noble; old, young; cow-  
Ha, you gods: why this? What this, you gods?  
Why this [sides;

Will lug your priests and servants from your  
Pluck stout men's pillows from below their  
heads:

This yellow slave  
Will knit and break religions; bless the ac-  
cursed;

Make the hear leprosy adored; place thieves,  
And give them title, knee, and approbation,  
With senators on the bench: this is it,

Hasty, precipitate. † Propensity, disposition. ‡ i. e., The moon's, this sublunary world

§ But by, is here used for without. || Seize, gripe.

¶ No insincere or inconstant supplicant. Gold will not serve me instead of roots.

That makes the wappen'd\* widow wed again;  
She, whom the spital-house, and ulcerous sores  
Would cast the gorge at, this embalmis and  
spices

To the April day again †. Come, damned earth,  
Thou common whore of mankind, that putt'st  
odds

Among the rout of nations, I will make thee  
Do thy right nature.—[*March afar off.*]—Ha!  
a drum!—Thou'rt quick,

But yet I'll bury thee: Thou'lt go, strong thief,  
When gouty keepers of thee cannot stand:—  
Nay, stay thou out for earnest.

[*Keeping some gold.*]

*Enter* ALCIBIADES, *with drum and pipe, in  
warlike manner*; PHRYNIA and TIMAN-  
DRA.

*Alcib.* What art thou there?  
*Speak.* [thy heart,

*Tim.* A beast, as thou art. The canker gnaw  
For showing me again the eyes of man!

*Alcib.* What is thy name? Is man so  
hateful to thee,

That art thyself a man? [kind.

*Tim.* I am *misanthropos*, and hate man-  
For thy part, I do wish thou wert a dog,  
That I might love thee something.

*Alcib.* I know thee well;  
But in thy fortunes am unlearn'd and strange.

*Tim.* I know thee too; and more, than that  
I know thee,

I not desire to know. Follow thy drum;  
With man's blood paint the ground, gules, gules:  
Religious canons, civil laws are cruel; [thine  
Then what should war be? This fell whore of  
Hath in her more destruction than thy sword,  
For all her cherubin look.

*Phr.* Thy lips rot off!  
*Tim.* I will not kiss thee; then the rot re-  
To thine own lips again. [turns

*Alcib.* How came this noble Timon to this  
change? [give:

*Tim.* As the moon does, by wanting light to  
But then renew I could not, like the moon;  
There were no suns to borrow of.

*Alcib.* Noble Timon,  
What friendship may I do thee?

*Tim.* None, but to  
Maintain my opinion.

*Alcib.* What is it, Timon?  
*Tim.* Promise me friendship, but perform  
none: If [for

Thou wilt not promise, the gods plague thee,  
Thou art a man! if thou dost perform, con-  
found thee,

For thou'rt a man!

*Alcib.* I have heard in some sort of thy mi-  
series. [rity.

*Tim.* Thou saw'st them, when I had prosper-  
*Alcib.* I see them now; then was a blessed  
time.

*Tim.* As thine is now, held with a brace of  
harlots.

*Timon.* Is this the Athenian minion, whom  
Voiced so regardfully? [the world

*Tim.* Art thou Timandra? Yes.

*Timon.* Be a whore still! they love thee not,  
that use thee;

Give them diseases, leaving with thee their lust.  
Make use of thy salt hours: season the slaves  
For tubs and baths; bring down rose-  
cheeked youth

To the tub-fast, and the diet †.

*Timon.* Hang thee, monster!

*Alcib.* Pardon him, sweet Timandra; for  
his wits

Are drown'd and lost in his calamities.—

I have but little gold of late, brave Timon,

The want whereof doth daily make revolt

In my penurious band: I have heard, and  
grieved,

How cursed Athens, mindless of thy worth,  
Forgetting thy great deeds, when neighbour  
states, [them.—

But for thy sword and fortune, trod upon  
*Tim.* I prythee beat thy drum, and get  
thee gone. [Timon.

*Alcib.* I am thy friend, and pity thee, dear

*Tim.* How dost thou pity him whom thou

I had rather be alone. [dost trouble?

*Alcib.* Why, fare thee well:

Here's some gold for thee.

*Tim.* Keep't, I cannot eat it.

*Alcib.* When I have laid proud Athens on a  
heap,—

*Tim.* Warr'st thou 'gainst Athens?

*Alcib.* Ay, Timon, and have cause.

*Tim.* The gods confound them all i'thy con-  
quest; and

Thee after, when thou hast conquer'd!

*Alcib.* Why me, Timon?

*Tim.* That,

My killing villains, thou wast born to conquer

My country. [on;

Put up thy gold; Go on,—here's gold,—go

Be as a planetary plague, when Jove

Will o'er some high-vict city hang his poison

In the sick air: Let not thy sword skip one:

Pity not honour'd age for his white beard,

He's an usurer: Strike me the counterfeit mal-

ice is her habit only that is honest, [tron;

Herself's a bawd: Let not the virgin's cheek

Make soft thy trenchant sword; for those

milk-paps, [eyes,

That through the widow-bars bore at men's

Are not within the leaf of pity writ, [eyes

Set them down horrible traitors: Spare not

the babe,

Whose dimpled smiles from fools exhaust their

mercy;

Think it a bastard ||, whom the oracle [cut

Hath doubtfully pronounced thy throat shall

And mince it sans remorse ¶: Swear againsts

objects\*\*;

Put armour on thine ears, and on thine eyes

\* Sorrowful. † i. e., Gold restores her to all the sweetness and freshness of youth.

‡ Alluding to the cure for the *lues venerea* then in practice. § Cutting.

|| An allusion to the tale of *Edipus*. ¶ Without pity.

\*\* i. e., Against objects of charity and compassion.

Whose proof, nor yells of mothers, maids, nor babes,  
Nor sight of priests in holy vestments bleeding,  
Shall pierce a jot. There's gold to pay thy soldiers:

Make large confusion; and, thy fury spent,  
Confounded be thyself! Speak not, be gone.  
*Alcib.* Hast thou gold yet? I'll take the  
Not all thy counsel. [gold thou givest me,

*Tim.* Dost thou, or dost thou not, heaven's  
curse upon thee!

*Phr. & Timan.* Give us some gold, good  
Timon: Hast thou more?

*Tim.* Enough to make a whore foreswear  
her trade, [sluts,

And to make whores, a bawd. Hold up, you  
Your aprons mountant: You are not oathable,  
Although I know you'll swear, terribly swear,  
Into strong shudders, and to heavenly agues,  
The immortal gods that hear you,—spare your  
oaths,

I'll trust to your conditions\*: Be whores still;  
And he whose pious breath seeks to convert  
you,

Be strong in whore, allure him, burn him up;  
Let your close fire predominate his smoke,  
And be no turncoats: Yet may your pains  
six months [roofs

Be quite contrary: And thatch your poor thin  
With burdens of the dead;—some that were  
hang'd, [whore still;

No matter:—wear them, betray with them:  
Paint till a horse may mire upon your face:  
A pox of wrinkles! [then!—

*Phr. & Timan.* Well, more gold;—What  
Believe't, that we'll do any thing for gold.

*Tim.* Consumptions sow [shins,  
In hollow bones of man; strike their sharp  
And mar men's spurring. Crack the lawyer's  
voice,

That he may never more false title plead,  
Nor sound his quilllets† shrilly: hoar the fla-  
That scolds against the quality of flesh, [men,  
And not believes himself: down with the nose,  
Down with it flat; take the bridge quite away  
Of him, that his particular to foresee,  
Smells from the general weal: make curl'd-  
pate ruffians bald;

And let the unscarred braggarts of the war  
Derive some pain from you: Plague all;  
That your activity may defeat and quell  
The source of all erection.—There's more gold:  
Do you damn others, and let this damn you,  
And ditches grave† you all!

*Phr. & Timan.* More counsel with more  
money, bounteous Timon.

*Tim.* More whore, more mischief first; I  
have given you earnest.

*Alcib.* Strike up the drum towards Athens.  
Farewell, Timon;

thrive well, I'll visit thee again.

*Tim.* If I hope well, I'll never see thee more.  
*Alcib.* I never did thee harm.

*Tim.* Yes, thou spokest well of me.

*Alcib.*

Call'st thou that harm?  
*Tim.* Men daily find it such. Get thee away.  
And take thy beagles with thee.

*Alcib.* We but offend him.—  
Strike. [Drum beats. *Exeunt* ALCIBI-  
ADES, PHRYNIA, TIMANDRA.

*Tim.* That nature, being sick of man's un-  
kindness,

Should yet be hungry!—Common mother,  
thou, [Digging.

Whose womb unmeasurable, and infinite  
breast §,

Teems, and feeds all; whose self-same mettle,  
Whereof thy proud child, arrogant man, is  
puff'd,

Engenders the black toad, and adder blue,  
The gilded newt, and eyeless venom'd worm ||,

With all the abhorred births below crack §  
heaven [shine;

Whereon Hyperion's quickening fire doth  
Yield him, who all thy human sons doth hate,

From forth thy plenteous bosom one poor root!  
Ensear thy fertile and conception womb,

Let it no more bring out ingrateful man!  
Go great with tigers, dragons, wolves, and  
bears; [face

Teem with new monsters, whom thy upward  
Hath to the marbled mansion all above

Never presented!—O, a root,—Dear thanks!  
Dry up thy marrows, vines, and plough-torn  
leas; [dran\_hts,

Whereof ingrateful man, with liquorish  
And morsels unctuous, greases his pure mind,

That from it all consideration slips!

*Enter* APENANTUS.

More man? Plague! plague!

*Apem.* I was directed hither: Men report,  
Thou dost affect my manners, and dost use  
them. [a dog

*Tim.* 'Tis, then, because thou dost not keep  
Whom I would imitate: Consumption catch  
thee!

*Apem.* This is in thee a nature but affected;  
A poor unmanly melancholy, sprung  
From change of fortune. Why this spade? this  
place?

This slave-like habit? and these looks of care?  
Thy flatterers yet wear silk, drink wine, lie soft;  
Hug their diseased perfumes\*\*, and have forgot  
That ever Timon was. Shame not these woods,  
By putting on the cunning of a carper ††.  
Be thou a flatterer now, and seek to thrive  
By that which has undone thee: hinge thy  
knee,

And let his very breath, whom thou'lt observe,  
Blow off thy cap; praise his most vicious  
strain,

And call it excellent: Thou was told thus;  
Thou gavest thine ears, like tapsters, that bid  
welcome

To knaves and all approachers: 'Tis most just  
That thou turn rascal; hadst thou wealth again,  
Rascals should hav't. Do not assume my like-  
ness.

\* Vocations. † Subtilties. ‡ Entomb. § Boundless surface.

|| The serpent called the blind worm. ¶ Bent. \*\* i. e., Their diseased perfumed mistresses.

†† i. e., Shame not these woods by fudging fault.



*Tim.* Were I like thee, I'd throw away myself. [like thyself;

*Apem.* Thou hast cast away thyself, being A madman so long, now a fool: What, think'st That the bleak air, thy boisterous chamberlain, Will put thy shirt on warm? Will these moss'd trees,

That have outlived the eagle, page thy heels, And skip when thou point'st out? Will the cold brook,

Candied with ice, caudle thy morning taste, To cure thy o'er night's surfeit? call the creatures,—

Whose naked natures live in all the spite Of wreakful heaven: whose bare unhoused To the conflicting elements exposed, [trunks, Answer mere nature,—bid them flatter thee; O! thou shalt find —

*Tim.* A fool of thee: Depart.

*Apem.* I love thee better now than e'er I did.

*Tim.* I hate thee worse.

*Apem.* Why?

*Tim.* Thou flatter'st misery.

*Apem.* I flatter not; but say, thou art a cai-

*Tim.* Why dost thou seek me out? [tiff.

*Apem.* To vex thee.

*Tim.* Always a villain's office, or a fool's.

Dost please thyself in't?

*Apem.* Ay.

*Tim.* What! a knave too?

*Apem.* If thou didst put this sour cold habit on

To castigate thy pride, 'twere well: but thou Dost it enforcedly; thou'dst courtier be again, Wert thou not beggar. Willing misery

Outlives uncertain pomp, is crown'd before\*: The one is filling still, never complete; [less, The other, at high wish: Best state, content Hath a distracted and most wretched being, Worse than the worst, content.

Thou shouldst desire to die, being miserable.

*Tim.* Not by his breath† that is more miserable.

Thou art a slave, whom Fortune's tender arm With favour never clasp'd; but bred a dog. Hadst thou, like us, from our first swath‡, proceeded

The sweet degrees that this brief world affords To such as may the passive drugs of it Freely command, thou wouldst have plunged thyself

In general riot; melted down thy youth In different beds of lust; and never learn'd The icy precepts of respect§, but follow'd The sugar'd game before thee. But myself, Who had the world as my confectionary; The months, the tongues, the eyes, and hearts of men

At duty, more than I could frame employment; That numberless upon me stuck, as leaves Do on the oak, have with one winter's brush Fell from their boughs, and left me open, bare For every storm that blows;—I, to bear this, That never knew but better, is some burden:

Thy nature did commence in sufferance, time Hath made thee hard in't. Why shouldst thou hate men? [given?

They never flatter'd thee: What hast thou If thou wilt curse,—thy father, that poor rag, Must be thy subject; who, in spite, put stuff To some she-beggar, and compounded thee, Poor rogue hereditary. Hence! be gone! If thou hadst not been born the worst of men, Thou hadst been a knave, and flatterer.

*Apem.* Art thou proud yet?

*Tim.* Ay, that I am not thee.

*Apem.* I, that I was No prodigal.

*Tim.* I, that I am one now;

Were all the wealth I have shut up in thee, I'd give thee leave to hang it. Get thee gone. That the whole life of Athens were in this! Thus would I eat it. [Exiting a root.

*Apem.* Here; I will mend thy feast.

[Offering him something.  
*Tim.* First mend my company, take away thyself. [lack of thine.

*Apem.* So I shall mend mine own, by the

*Tim.* 'Tis not well mended so, it is but If not, I would it were. [botch'd?

*Apem.* What wouldst thou have to Athens?

*Tim.* Thee thither in a whirlwind. If thou wilt,

Tell them there I have gold; look, so I have.

*Apem.* Here is no use for gold.

*Tim.* The best, and truest: For here it sleeps, and does no hired harm.

*Apem.* Where ly'st o' nights, Timon?

*Tim.* Under that's above me

Where feed'st thou o' days, Apemantus?

*Apem.* Where my stomach finds meat; or rather, where I eat it.

*Tim.* Would poison were obedient, and knew my mind!

*Apem.* Where wouldst thou send it?

*Tim.* To sauce thy dishes.

*Apem.* The middle of humanity thou never knewest, but the extremity of both ends: When thou wast in thy gilt, and thy perfume, they mocked thee for too much curiosity¶; in thy rags thou knowest none, but art despised for the contrary. There's a medal for thee, eat it.

*Tim.* On what I hate I feed not.

*Apem.* Dost hate a medal?

*Tim.* Ay, though it look like thee.

*Apem.* An thou hadst hated meddlers sooner, thou shouldst have loved thyself better now. What man didst thou ever know unthrift, that was beloved after his means?

*Tim.* Who, without those means thou talkest of, didst thou ever know beloved?

*Apem.* Myself.

*Tim.* I understand thee; thou hadst some means to keep a dog.

*Apem.* What things in the world canst thou nearest compare to thy flatterers?

*Tim.* Women nearest; but men, men are

\* i. e., Arrives sooner at the completion of its wishes.

† By his voice, sentence.

‡ From infancy.

§ The cold admonitions of cautious prudence.

¶ For too much finical delicacy.

he things themselves. What wouldst thou do with the world, Apemantus, if it lay in thy power?

*Apem.* Give it the beasts, to be rid of the men.

*Tim.* Wouldst thou have thyself fall in the confusion of men, and remain a beast with the beasts?

*Apem.* Ay, Timon.

*Tim.* A beastly ambition, which the gods grant thee to attain to! If thou wert the lion, the fox would beguile thee: if thou wert the lamb, the fox would eat thee: if thou wert the fox, the lion would suspect thee, when, peradventure, thou wert accused by the ass: if thou wert the ass, thy dulness would torment thee; and still thou livedst but as a breakfast to the wolf: if thou wert the wolf, thy greediness would afflict thee, and oft thou shouldst hazard thy life for thy dinner: wert thou the unicorn, pride and wrath would confound thee, and make thine own self the conquest of thy fury: wert thou a bear, thou wouldst be killed by the horse; wert thou a horse, thou wouldst be seized by the leopard; wert thou a leopard, thou wert german to the lion, and the spots of thy kindred were jurors on thy life: all thy safety were remotion\*; and thy defence, absence. What beast couldst thou be, that wert not subject to a beast? and what a beast art thou already, that seest not thy loss in transformation?

*Apem.* If thou couldst please me with speaking to me, thou might'st have hit upon it here. The commonwealth of Athens is become a forest of beasts.

*Tim.* How has the ass broke the wall, that thou art out of the city?

*Apem.* Yonder come a poet and a painter: the plague of company light upon thee! I will fear to catch it, and give way. When I know not what else to do, I'll see thee again.

*Tim.* When there is nothing living but thee, thou shalt be welcome. I had rather be a beggar's dog than Apemantus.

*Apem.* Thou art the cap† of all the fools alive.

*Tim.* Would thou wert clean enough to spit upon. [curse.]

*Apem.* A plague on thee, thou art too bad to

*Tim.* All villains that do stand by thee are pure. [speak'st.]

*Apem.* There is no leprosy but what thou

*Tim.* If I name thee.—

I'll beat thee,—but I should infect my hands.

*Apem.* I would my tongue could rot them

*Tim.* Away, thou issue of a niangy dog! [off!] Cholera does kill me, that thou art alive; I swoon to see thee.

*Apem.* Would thou wouldst burst!

*Tim.* Away

Thou tedious rogue! I am sorry I shall lose a stone by thee. [Throws a stone at him.]

*Apem.* Beast!

*Tim.* Slave!

*Apem.* Toad!

*Tim.*

Rogue, rogue, rogue!

[*APEMANTUS retreats backward, as going.* I am sick of this false world; and will love But even the mere necessities upon it. [nought] Then, Timon, presently prepare thy grave; Lie where the light foam of the sea may beat Thy grave-stone daily: make thine epitaph, That death in me at others' lives may laugh. O thou sweet king-killer, and dear divorcee

[*Looking on the gold.*

Twixt natural son and sire! thou bright defiler Of Hymen's purest bed! thou valiant Mars! Thou ever young, fresh, loved, and delicate wooer,

Whose blush doth thaw the consecrated snow That lies on Dian's lap! thou visible god, That solder'st close impossibilities, [tongue, And makest them kiss; that speak'st with every To every purpose! O thou touch† of hearts! Think, thy slave man rebels; and by thy virtue Set them into confounding odds, that beasts May have the world in empire!]

*Apem.* Would 'twere so;— But not till I am dead!—I'll say thou hast Thou will be throng'd to shortly. [gold:]

*Tim.* Throng'd to?

*Apem.* Ay

*Tim.* Thy back, I prythee.

*Apem.* Live, and love thy misery

*Tim.* Long live so, and so die!—I am quit.

[*Exit APEMANTUS*

More things like men?—Eat Timon, and abhor them.

*Enter Thieves.*

1 *Thief.* Where should he have this gold It is some poor fragment, some slender ort of his remainder. The mere want of gold, and the falling-from of his friends, drove him into this melancholy.

2 *Thief.* It is noised he hath a mass of treasure.

3 *Thief.* Let us make the assay upon him; if he care not for't, he will supply us easily; if he covetously reserve it, how shall's get it?

2 *Thief.* True; for he bears it not about him, 'tis hid.

1 *Thief.* Is not this he?

*Thieves.* Where?

2 *Thief.* 'Tis his description.

3 *Thief.* He; I know him.

*Thieves.* Save thee, Timon.

*Tim.* Now, thieves.

*Thieves.* Soldiers, not thieves.

*Tim.* Both too; and women's sons.

*Thieves.* We are not thieves, but men that much do want. [of meat.]

*Tim.* Your greatest want is, you want much Why should you want? Behold, the earth hath roots;

Within this mile break forth a hundred springs The oaks bear mast, the briers scarlet hips; The bounteous house-wife, nature, on each bush Lays her full mess before you. Want? why want? [water]

1 *Thief.* We cannot live on grass on berries

\* Remoteness, the being placed at a distance from the lion.

† The top, the principal.

‡ For touchstone

As beasts, and birds, and fishes.

*Tim.* Nor on the beasts themselves, the birds, and fishes;  
You must eat men. Yet thanks I must you con,  
That you are thieves profess'd; that you work not

In holier shapes: for there is boundless theft  
In limited\* professions. Rascal thieves, [grape,  
Here's gold. Go, suck the subtle blood of the  
Till the high fever seeth your blood to froth,  
And so 'scape hanging: trust not the physician;  
His antidotes are poison, and he slays  
More than you rob: take wealth and lives  
together;

Do, villany, do, since you profess to do't,  
Like workmen. I'll example you with  
thievery:

The sun's a thief, and with his great attraction  
Robs the vast sea: the moon's an arrant thief,  
And her pale fire she snatches from the sun:  
The sea's a thief, whose liquid surge resolves  
The moon into salt tears: the earth's a thief,  
That feeds and breeds by a composture† stolen  
From general excrement: each thing's a thief;  
The laws, your curb and whip, in their rough  
power [away;

Have uncheck'd theft. Love not yourselves:  
Rob one another. There's more gold: Cut  
throats;

All that you meet are thieves: To Athens, go,  
Break open shops; nothing can you steal,  
But thieves do lose it: Steal not less, for this  
I give you; and gold confound you howsoever!  
Amen. [*TIMON retires to his Cave.*]

*3 Thief.* He has almost charin'd me from  
my profession, by persuading me to it.

*1 Thief.* 'Tis in the malice of mankind that  
he thus advises us; not to have us thrive in our  
mystery.

*2 Thief.* I'll believe him as an enemy, and  
give over my trade.

*1 Thief.* Let us first see peace in Athens:  
there is no time so miserable, but a man may  
be true. [*Exeunt Thieves.*]

*Enter FLAVIUS.*

*Flav.* O you gods!

Is you despised and ruinous man my lord?  
Full of decay and failing? O monument  
And wonder of good deeds evilly bestow'd!  
What an alteration of honour‡ has  
Desperate want made!

What viler thing upon the earth, than friends,  
Who can bring noblest minds to basest ends!  
How rarely§ does it meet with this time's guise,  
When man was wish'd|| to love his enemies:  
Grant, I may ever love, and rather woo  
Those that would mischief me, than those  
that do!

He has caught me in his eye; I will present  
My honest grief unto him; and, as my lord,  
Still serve him with my life.—My dearest  
master!

*TIMON comes forward from his Cave.*

*Tim.* Away! what art thou?

*Flav.* Have you forgot me, sir?

*Tim.* Why dost ask that? I have forgot all  
men; [got thee.

Then, if thou grant'st thou'rt man, I have for  
*Flav.* An honest poor servant of yours.

*Tim.* Then

I know thee not: I ne'er had honest man  
About me, I; all that I kept were knaves,  
To serve in meat to villains.

*Flav.* The gods are witness,  
Ne'er did poor steward wear a truer grief

For his undone lord, than mine eyes for you.

*Tim.* What, dost thou weep?—Come  
nearer;—then I love thee,

Because thou art a woman, and disclaim'st  
Flinty mankind; whose eyes do never give  
But thorough lust and laughter. Pity's sleep-  
ing: [with weeping!

Strange times, that weep with laughing, not  
*Flav.* I beg of you to know me, good my  
lord, [lasts,

To accept my grief, and whilst this poor wealth  
To entertain me as your steward still.

*Tim.* Had I a steward so true, so just, and  
So comfortable? It almost turns [now  
My dangerous nature wild. Let me be old  
Thy face.—Surely this man was born of wo  
man.—

Forgive my general and exceptless rashness,  
Perpetual-sober gods! I do proclaim

One honest man,—mistake me not,—but one;  
No more, I pray,—and he is a steward.—

How fain would I have hated all mankind,  
And thou redeem'st thyself: But all, save thee,  
I fell with curses. [wise;

Methinks thou art more honest now, than  
For by oppressing and betraying me,

Thou might'st have sooner got another service:  
For many so arrive at second masters,

Upon their first lord's neck. But tell me true,  
(For I must ever doubt, though ne'er so sure,)

Is not thy kindness subtle, covetous,  
If not a usuring kindness; and as rich men

Expecting in return twenty for one? [deal gifts  
*Flav.* No, my most worthy master, in whose  
breast

Doubt and suspect, alas, are placed too late:  
You should have fear'd false times when you  
did feast:

Suspect still comes where an estate is least.  
That which I show, heaven knows, is merely

Duty, and zeal to your unmatched mind, [love,  
Care of your food and living: and, believe it,

My most honour'd lord,  
For any benefit that points to me,

Either in hope, or present, I'd exchange  
For this one wish, that you had power and

To requite me, by making rich yourself. [wealth  
*Tim.* Look thee, 'tis so!—Thou singly  
honest man,

Here take:—the gods, out of my misery,  
Have sent thee treasure. Go, live rich and  
happy: [men ¶;

But thus condition'd, thou shalt build from

\* For legal. † Compost, manure.

‡ An alteration of honour is an alteration

§ How happily. || Recommended.

¶ Away from human habitation.



Hate all, curse all: show charity to none;  
But let the famish'd flesh slide from the bone,  
Ere thou relieve the beggar: give to dogs  
What thou deny'st to men; let prisons swallow them,  
[woods,  
Debts wither them: Be men like blasted  
And may diseases lick up their false bloods!  
And so, farewell, and thrive.

*Flaz.* O, let me stay,  
And comfort you, my master.  
*Tim.* If thou hatest  
Curses, stay not; fly, whilst thou'rt bless'd  
and free:  
Ne'er see thou man, and let me ne'er see thee.  
[*Ereunt severally.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *The same. Before Timon's Cave.*

*Enter Poet and Painter; TIMON behind unseen.*

*Pain.* As I took note of the place, it cannot be far where he abides.

*Poet.* What's to be thought of him? Does the rumour hold for true, that he is so full of gold?

*Pain.* Certain: Alcibiades reports it; Phrynia and Timandra had gold of him: he likewise enriched poor straggling soldiers with great quantity: 'Tis said, he gave unto his steward a mighty sum.

*Poet.* Then this breaking of his has been but a try for his friends.

*Pain.* Nothing else: you shall see him a palm in Athens again, and flourish with the highest. Therefore, 'tis not amiss we tender our loves to him, in this supposed distress of his: it will show honestly in us; and is very likely to load our purposes with what they travel for, if it be a just and true report that goes of his having.

*Poet.* What have you now to present unto him?

*Pain.* Nothing at this time but my visitation: only I will promise him an excellent piece.

*Poet.* I must serve him so too; tell him of an intent that's coming toward him.

*Pain.* Good as the best. Promising is the very air of the time: it opens the eyes of expectation: performance is ever the duller for his act; and, but in the plainer and simpler kind of people, the deed of saying\* is quite out of use. To promise is most courtly and fashionable: performance is a kind of will or testament, which argues a great sickness in his judgment that makes it.

*Tim.* Excellent workman! Thou canst not paint a man so bad as is thyself.

*Poet.* I am thinking what I shall say I have provided for him: It must be a personating of himself: a satire against the softness of prosperity; with a discovery of the infinite flatteries that follow youth and opulency.

*Tim.* Must thou needs stand for a villain in thine own work? Wilt thou whip thine own faults in other men? Do so, I have gold for thee.

*Poet.* Nay, let's seek him:  
Then do we sin against our own estate,  
When we may profit meet, and come too late.

*Pain.* True;

When the day serves, before black-corner'd night,  
Find what thou want'st by free and offer'd Come. [light.

*Tim.* I'll meet you at the turn. What a god's gold,

That he is worshipp'd in a baser temple

Than where swine feed! [the foam;

'Tis thou that rigg'st the bark, and plough'st  
Settlest admired reverence in a slave:

To thee be worship! and thy saints for aye  
Be crown'd with plagues, that thee alone obey!  
'Fit I do meet them. [Advancing.

*Poet.* Hail, worthy Timon!

*Pain.* Our late noble master.

*Tim.* Have I once lived to see two honest

*Poet.* Sir, [men?

Having often of your open bounty tasted, [off,  
Hearing you were retired, your friends fall'n  
Whose thankless natures—O abhorred spirits!  
Not all the whips of heaven are large enough—  
What! to you, [finence

Whose star-like nobleness gave life and in-  
To their whole being! I'm rapt, and cannot  
The monstrous bulk of this ingratitude [cover  
With any size of words. [better:

*Tim.* Let it go naked, men may see't the  
You, that are honest, by being what you are,  
Make them best seen and known.

*Pain.* He, and myself,  
Have travell'd in the great shower of your  
And sweetly felt it. [gifts,

*Tim.* Ay, you are honest men.

*Pain.* We are hither come to offer you our  
service. [I requite you?

*Tim.* Most honest men! Why, how shall  
Can you eat roots, and drink cold water? no.

*Both.* What we can do, we'll do, to do you  
service. [that I have gold;

*Tim.* You are honest men: You have heard  
I am sure you have: speak truth: you are  
honest men. [therefore

*Pain.* So it is said, my noble lord: but  
Came not my friend, nor I. [counterfeit

*Tim.* Good honest men:—Thou draw'st a  
Best in all Athens: thou art, indeed, the best;  
Thou counterfeit'st most lively.

*Pain.* So, so, my lord.

*Tim.* Even so, sir, as I say:—And, for thy  
fiction, [To the Poet.

Why thy verse swells with stuff so fine and  
smooth,

That thou art even natural in thine art.—

But, for all this, my honest-natured friends,

\* The doing of that we said we would do.

† A portrait was so called.

I must needs say, you have a little fault: II  
Marry, 'tis not monstrous in you; neither wish  
You take much pains to mend.

*Both.* Beseech your honour,  
To make it known to us.

*T. m.* You'll take it ill.

*Both.* Most thankfully, my lord.

*Tim.* Will you, indeed?

*Both.* Doubt it not, worthy lord.

*Tim.* There's ne'er a one of you but trusts  
That mightily deceives you. [a knave,

*Both.* Do we, my lord?

*Tim.* Ay, and you hear him cog, see him  
dissemble,

Know his gross patchery, love him, feed him,  
Keep in your bosom: yet remain assured

That he's a made-up villain\*.

*Pam.* I know none such, my lord.

*Poet.* Nor I.

*Tim.* Look you, I love you well; I'll give  
you gold,

Rid me these villains from your companies:  
Hang them, or stab them, drown them in a  
draught. [me.

Confound them by some course, and come to  
I'll give you gold enough.

*Both.* Name them, my lord, let's know  
them. [in company:—

*Tim.* You that way, and you this, but two  
Each man apart, all single and alone,  
Yet an arch-villain keeps him company.

If, where thou art, two villans shall not be,  
[To the Painter.

Come not near him.—If thou would'st not re-  
side [To the Poet.

But where one villain is, then him abandon.—  
Hence! pack! there's gold, ye came for gold,

ye slaves: [Hence!

You have done work for me, there's payment:

You are an alchymist, make gold of that:—  
Out, rascal dogs!

[Exit, beating and driving them out.

## SCENE II. The Same.

Enter FLAVIUS, and two Senators.

*Flav.* It is in vain that you would speak  
For he is set so only to himself, [with Timon;  
That nothing but himself, which looks like  
Is friendly with him. [man,

1 *Sen.* Bring us to his cave:  
It is our part, and promise to the Athenians,  
To speak with Timon.

2 *Sen.* At all times alike  
Men are not still the same: 'Twas time, and  
griefs, [hand,  
That framed him thus: time, with his fairer  
Offering the fortunes of his former days, [him,  
The former man may make him: Bring us to  
And chance it as it may.

*Flav.* Here is his cave.—  
Peace and content be here! Lord Timon!  
Timon! [nians,

Look out, and speak to friends: The Athe-  
By two of their most reverend senate, greet  
Speak to them, noble Timon. [thee;

Enter TIMON.

*Tim.* Thou son, that comfort'st, burn I—  
Speak, and be hang'd:

For each true word, a blister! and each false  
Be as a caut'ring to the root o'the tongue,  
Consuming it with speaking!

1 *Sen.* Worthy Timon—

*Tim.* Of none but such as you, and you of  
Timon. [Timon.

2 *Sen.* The senators of Athens greet thee,

*Tim.* I thank them; and would send them  
back the plague,

Could I but catch it for them.

1 *Sen.* O, forget

What we are sorry for ourselves in thee.

The senators, with one consent of love,

Entreat thee back to Athens; who have  
On special dignities, which vacant lie [thought

For thy best use and wearing.

2 *Sen.* They confess

Toward thee, forgetfulness too general, gross:  
Which now the public body,—which doth sel-

Play the recanter,—feeling in itself [doom  
A lack of Timon's aid, hath sense withal

Of its own fall, restraining aid to Timon;  
And send forth us, to make their sorrowed

renders,

Together with a recompense more fruitful  
Than their offence can weigh down by the dram;

Ay, even such heaps and sums of love and  
wealth, [theirs

As shall to thee blot out what wrongs were  
And write in thee the figures of their love,

Ever to read them thine.

*Tim.* You witch me in it;

Surprise me to the very brink of tears:

Lend me a fool's heart, and a woman's eyes,  
And I'll bewep these comforts, worthy sena-

tors. [with us,

1 *Sen.* Therefore, so please thee to return  
And of our Athens (thine and ours) to take

The captainship, thou shalt be met with thanks,  
Allow'd|| with absolute power, and thy good

name [back

Live with authority:—so soon we shall drive  
Of Alcibiades the approaches wild;

Who, like a boar too savage, doth root up  
His country's peace—

2 *Sen.* And shakes his threat'ning sword  
Against the walls of Athens.

1 *Sen.* Therefore, Timon,—

*T. m.* Well, sir, I will; therefore I will, sir;  
If Alcibiades kill my countrymen, [Thus,—

Let Alcibiades know this of Timon, [Athens,  
That—Timon cares not. But if he sack fair

And take our goodly aged men by the beards  
Giving our holy virgins to the stain

Of contumelious, beastly, mad-brain'd war;  
Then let him know,—and tell him Timon

In pity of our aged and our youth, [speaks it,  
I cannot choose but tell him, that—I care not,

And let him take't at worst; for their knives  
care not,

While you have throats to answer: 'or myself,  
There's not a whistle% in the unruly camp,

\* A complete, a finished villain.

‡ Confession.

† In 2 jokes.

|| Licensed, uncontrolled.

‡ With one united voice of affection

% A clasp knife.

But I do prize it at my love, before [you  
The reverend'st throat in Athens. So I leave  
To the protection of the prosperous gods\*,  
As thieves to keepers.

*Flav.* Stay not, all's in vain.

*Tim.* Why, I was writing of my epitaph,  
It will be seen to-morrow; My long sickness  
Of health†, and living, now begins to mend,  
And nothing brings me all things. Go, live  
Be Alcibiades your plague, you his, [still;  
And last so long enough!

*1 Sen.* We speak in vain.

*Tim.* But yet I love my country; and am not  
One that rejoices in the common wreck,  
As common bruit‡ doth put it.

*1 Sen.* That's well spoke.

*Tim.* Commend me to my loving country-  
men,— [pass through them.

*1 Sen.* These words become your lips as they

*2 Sen.* And enter in our ears like great tri-  
umphs in their applauding gates.

*Tim.* Commend me to them;  
And tell them, that to ease them of their griefs,  
Their fears of hostile strokes, their aches, losses,  
Their pangs of love, with other incident throes  
That nature's fragile vessel doth sustain  
In life's uncertain voyage, I will some kindness  
do them: [wrath.

I'll teach them to prevent wild Alcibiades'

*2 Sen.* I like this well, he will return again.

*Tim.* I have a tree, which grows here in my  
close,

That mine own use invites me to cut down,  
And shortly must I fell it; Tell my friends,  
Tell Athens, in the sequence of degrees,  
From high to low throughout, that whoso please  
To stop affliction, let him take his haste,  
Come hither, ere my tree hath felt the axe,  
And hang himself:—I pray you do my greeting.

*Flav.* Trouble him no further, thus you still  
shall find him. [Athens,

*Tim.* Come not to me again: but say to  
Timon hath made his everlasting mansion  
Upon the beached verge of the salt flood;  
Which once a day with his embossed froth ||  
The turbulent surge shall cover; thither come,  
And let my grave-stone be your oracle.—  
Lips, let sour words go by, and language end:  
What is amiss, plague and infection mend!  
Graves only be men's works; and death their  
gain!

Sun, hide thy beams! Timon hath done his  
reign. [Exit TIMON.

*Sen.* His discontents are unremovably  
coupled to nature. [turn,

*2 Sen.* Our hope in him is dead: let us re-  
And strain what other means are left unto us  
In our dear¶ peril.

*2 Sen.* It requires swift foot. [Exeunt.

### SCENE III. The Walls of Athens.

Enter Two Senators, and a Messenger.

*1 Sen.* Thou hast painfully discover'd; are  
As full as thy report? [his files

*Mess.* I have spoke the least:

Besides, his expedition promises

Present approach.

[not Timon

*2 Sen.* We stand much hazard, if they bring  
*Mess.* I met a courier, one mine ancient  
friend; [posed,

Whom, though in general part we were op-  
Yet our old love made a particular force,  
And made us speak like friends:—this man was  
From Alcibiades to Timon's cave, [riding  
With letters of entreaty, which imported  
His fellowship in the cause against your city,  
In part for his sake moved.

Enter Senators from TIMON.

*1 Sen.* Here come our brothers.

*3 Sen.* No talk of Timon, nothing of him  
expect.— [ing

The enemies' drum is heard, and fearful scour-  
Doth choke the air with dust: in and prepare;  
Ours is the fall, I fear; our foes, the snare.

[Exeunt.

### SCENE IV. The Woods. Timon's Cave, and a tomb-stone seen.

Enter a Soldier, seeking Timon.

*Sol.* By all description, this should be the  
place [is this?

Who's here? speak, ho!—No answer?—What  
Timon is dead, who hath outstretch'd his span:  
Some beast rear'd this; there does not live a  
Dead, sure; and this his grave.— [man.  
What's on this tomb I cannot read; the cha-  
P'll take with wax. [racter

Our captain hath in every figure skill;  
An aged interpreter, though young in days;  
Before proud Athens he's set down by this,  
Whose fall the mark of his ambition is. [Exit.

### SCENE V. Before the Walls of Athens.

Trumpets sound. Enter ALCIBIADES, and  
Forces.

*Alcib.* Sound to this coward and lascivious  
town

Our terrible approach. [A parley sounded.

Enter Senators on the Walls.

Till now you have gone on, and fill'd the time  
With all licentious measure, making your wills  
The scope of justice; till now, myself, and such  
As slept within the shadow of your power,  
Have wander'd with our traversed arms\*\*, and  
breath'd

Our sufferance vainly: Now the time is flush ††  
When crouching marrow, in the bearer strong,  
Cries, of itself, No more: now breathless  
wrong

Shall sit and pant in your great chairs of ease;  
And palsy insolence shall break his wind,  
With fear and horrid flight.

*1 Sen.* Noble and young,  
When thy first griefs were but a mere conceit,  
Ere thou hadst power, or we had cause of fear,  
We sent to thee; to give thy rages balm,  
To wipe out our ingratitude with loves  
Above their quantity.

\* i. e., The gods, who are the authors of the prosperity of mankind.

† He means—the

disease of life begins to promise me a period.

‡ Report, rumour.

§ Methodically, from

highest to lowest.

|| Swollen froth.

¶ Dreadful.

\*\* Arms across.

†† Mature



2 *Sen.* So did we woo  
Transformed Timon to our city's love,  
By humble mess'ge, and by promised means\*;  
We were not all unkin', nor all deserve  
The common stroke of war.

1 *Sen.* These walls of ours  
Were not erected by their hands from whom  
You have received your griefs; nor are they  
such, [should fall]  
That these great towers, trophies, and schools  
For private faults in them.

2 *Sen.* Nor are they living  
Who were the motives that you first went out;  
Shame, that they wanted cunning in excess  
Hath broke their hearts. March, noble lord,  
Into our city with thy banners spread:  
By defecution, and a thirsted death,  
(If thy revenges hunger for that food, [tenth;  
Which nature loathes,) take thou the destined  
And by the hazard of the spotted die,  
Let die the spotted.

1 *Sen.* All have not offended;  
For those that were, it is not square† to take  
On those that are revenges; crimes, like lands,  
Are not inherited. Then, dear countryman,  
Bring in thy ranks, but leave without thy rage:  
Spare thy Athenian cradle, and those kin,  
Which in the bluster of thy wrath, must fall  
With those that have offended: like a shepherd,  
Approach the fold, and cull the infected forth,  
But kill not altogether.

2 *Sen.* What thou wilt,  
Thou rather shalt enforce it with thy smile,  
Than hew to't with thy sword.

1 *Sen.* Set but thy foot  
Against our rampired gates, and they shall ope;  
So thou wilt send thy gentle heart before,  
To say, thou'lt enter friendly.

2 *Sen.* Throw thy glove;  
Or any token of thy honour else,  
That thou wilt use the wars as thy redress,  
And not as our confusion: all thy powers  
Shall make their harbour in our town, till we

Have seal'd thy fall desire.

*Alcib.* Then there's my glove;  
Descend, and open your uncharged ports‡;  
Those enemies of Timon's, and mine own,  
Whom you yourselves shall set out for reproof,  
Fall, and no more; and,—to atone§ your fears  
With my more noble meaning,—not a man  
Shall pass his quarter, or offend the stream  
Of regular justice in your city's bounds,  
But shall be remedied, to your public laws  
At heaviest answer.

*Both.* 'Tis most nobly spoken.

*Alcib.* Descend, and keep your words.

[The Senators descend, and open the Gates.]

*Enter a Soldier.*

*Sold.* My noble general, Timon is dead;  
Entomb'd upon the very hem o'the sea:  
And on his grave-stone this insculpture; which  
With wax I brought away, whose soft impress  
Interprets for my poor ignorance. [sior.]

*Alcib.* [Reads.] Here lies a wretched  
corse, of wretched soul bereft:

Seek not my name: A plague consume you  
wicked catiffs left!

Here lie I Timon; who, alive, all living  
men did hate:

Pass by, and curse thy fill; but pass, and  
stay not here thy gait

These well express in thee thy latter spirits:  
Though thou abhor'dst in us our human griefs,  
Scorn'dst our brains flow||, and those our  
droplets which

From niggard nature fall, yet rich conceit  
Taught thee to make vast Neptune weep for  
aye

On thy low grave, on faults forgiven. Dead  
Is noble Timon; of whose memory  
Hereafter more—Bring me into your city,  
And I will use the olive with my sword:  
Make war breed peace; make peace stint¶  
war; make each

Prescribe to other, as each other's leech\*\*.  
Let our drums strike. [Exeunt.]

\* *i. e.*, By promising him a competent subsistence. † Not regular, not equitable.

‡ Unattacked gates. § Reconcile. || *i. e.*, Our tears. ¶ Stop. \*\* Physician.

The play of TIMON is a domestic tragedy, and therefore strongly fastens on the attention of the reader. In the plot there is not much art, but the incidents are natural, and the characters various and exact. The catastrophe affords a very powerful warning against ostentatious liberality, which scatters bounty, but confers no benefits, and buys flattery, but not friendship.

In this tragedy, are many passages perplexed, obscure, and probably corrupt, which I have endeavoured to rectify, or explain with due diligence; but having only one copy, cannot promise myself that my endeavours shall be much applauded.—JOHNSON

# CORIOLAN

## Persons represented.

CAIUS MARCIUS CORIOLANUS, a noble Roman.

TITUS LARTIUS, } generals against the Vol-  
COMINIUS, } scians.

MENENIUS AGRIPPA, friend to Coriolanus.

SICINIUS VELUTUS, } tribunes of the peo-  
JUNIUS BRUTUS, } ple.

Young MARCIUS, son to Coriolanus.

A Roman Herald.

TULLUS AUFIDIUS, general of the Vol-  
scians.

Lieutenant to Aufidius.

Conspirators with Aufidius.

A Citizen of Antium.

Two Volscian Guards.

VOLUMNIA, mother to Coriolanus.

VIRGILIA, wife to Coriolanus.

VALERIA, friend to Virgilia.

Gentlewoman, attending Virgilia.

Roman and Volscian Senators, Potricians,  
Ædiles, Lictors, Soldiers, Citizens,  
Messengers, Servants to Aufidius, and  
other Attendants.

Scene,—partly in Rome; and partly in the  
Territories of the Volscians and An-  
tiates.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. Rome. A Street.

*Enter a Company of mutinous Citizens, with  
Staves, Clubs, and other Weapons.*

1 *Cit.* Before we proceed any further, hear  
me speak.

*Cit.* Speak, speak.

[*Several speaking at once.*]

1 *Cit.* You are all resolved rather to die  
than to famish?

*Cit.* Resolved, resolved.

1 *Cit.* First you know, Caius Marcius is  
chief enemy to the people.

*Cit.* We know't, we know't.

1 *Cit.* Let us kill him, and we'll have corn  
at our own price. Is't a verdict?

*Cit.* No more talking on't; let it be done:  
away, away.

2 *Cit.* One word, good citizens.

1 *Cit.* We are accounted poor citizens; the  
patricians, good\*: What authority surfeits on  
would relieve us; If they would yield us but  
the superfluity, while it were wholesome, we  
might guess, they relieved us humanely; but  
they think we are too dear: the leanness that  
afflicts us, the object of our misery, is as an in-  
ventory to particularize their abundance; our  
sufferance is a gain to them.—Let us revenge  
this with our pikes, ere we become rakes†: for  
the gods know, I speak this in hunger for  
bread, not in thirst for revenge.

2 *Cit.* Would you proceed especially against  
Caius Marcius?

*Cit.* Against him first; he's a very dog to  
\* the commonalty.

2 *Cit.* Consider you what services he has  
done for his country?

1 *Cit.* Very well; and could be content to  
give him good report for't, but that he pays  
himself with being proud.

2 *Cit.* Nay, but speak not maliciously.

1 *Cit.* I say unto you, what he hath done  
famously, he did it to that end: though soft-  
conscienced men can be content to say, it was  
for his country, he did it to please his mother,  
and to be partly proud; which he is, even to  
the altitude of his virtue.

2 *Cit.* What he cannot help in his nature,  
you account a vice in him: You must in no  
way say he is covetous.

1 *Cit.* If I must not, I need not be barren of  
accusations; he hath faults, with surplus, to  
tire in repetition. [*Shouts within.*] What  
shouts are these? The other side o'the city  
risen: Why stay we prating here? to the  
Capitol.

*Cit.* Come, come.

1 *Cit.* Soft; who comes here?

*Enter MENENIUS AGRIPPA.*

2 *Cit.* Worthy Menenius Agrippa; one that  
hath always loved the people.

1 *Cit.* He's one honest enough; Would all  
the rest were so!

*Men.* What work 's, my countrymen, in  
hand? Where go you [*praying you.*]  
With bats and clubs? The matter? Speak, I

1 *Cit.* Our business is not unknown to the  
senate; they have had inkling, this fortnight,  
what we intend to do, which now we'll show  
'em in deeds. They say, poor sniters have  
strong breaths; they shall know, we have  
strong arms too.

*Men.* Why, masters, my good friends,  
mine honest neighbours,

\* Rich.

† Thin at raker.

Will you undo yourselves?

1 *Cit.* We cannot, sir, we are undone already?

*Men.* I tell you, friends, most charitable care Have the patricians of you. For your wants, Your suffering in this dearth, you may as well Strike at the heaven with your staves, as lift them

[on  
Against the Roman state; whose course will The way it takes, cracking ten thousand curbs Of more strong link asunder, than can ever Appear in your impediment: For the dearth, The gods, not the patricians, make it; and Your knees to them, not arms, must help. You are transported by calamity [Alack, Thither where more attends you; and you slander [fathers, The helms o' the state, who care for you like When you curse them as enemies.

1 *Cit.* Care for us!—True, indeed!—They ne'er cared for us yet. Suffer us to famish, and their store-houses crammed with grain; inake edicts for usury, to support usurers: repeal daily any wholesome act established against the rich; and provide more piercing statutes daily, to chain up and restrain the poor. If the wars eat us not up, they will; and there's all the love they bear us.

*Men.* Either you must Confess yourselves wondrous malicious, Or be accused of folly. I shall tell you A pretty tale; it may be, you have heard it; But, since it serves my purpose, I will venture To scale't\* a little more.

1 *Cit.* Well, I'll hear it, sir: yet you must not think to fob off our disgrace† with a tale: but, an't please you, deliver.

*Men.* There was a time, when all the body's members

Rebell'd against the belly; thus accused it:— That only like a gulf it did remain I' the midst o' the body, idle and inactive, Still cupboarding the viand, never bearing Like labour with the rest; where‡ the other instruments

Did see, and hear, devise, instruct, walk, feel, And, mutually participate, did minister Unto the appetite and affection common Of the whole body. The belly answered,—

1 *Cit.* Well, sir, what answer made the belly?

*Men.* Sir, I shall tell you.—With a kind of smile,

[thus, Which ne'er came from the lungs, but even [For, look you, I may make the belly smile As well as speak,] it tauntingly replied [parts To the discontented members, the mutinous That envied his receipt; even so most fitly § As you malign our senators, for that They are not such as you.

1 *Cit.* Your belly's answer: What! The kingly-crowned head, the vigilant eye, The counsellor heart, the arm our soldier, Our steed the leg, the tongue our trumpeter, With other muniments and petty helps In this our fabric, if that they—

*Men.*

What then?—  
'Fore me, this fellow speaks!—what then? what then? [strain'd,

1 *Cit.* Should by the cormorant belly be re- Who is the sink o' the body,—

*Men.*

Well, what then? 1 *Cit.* The former agents, if they did com- What could the belly answer? [plain,

*Men.*

I will tell you; If you'll bestow a small (of what you have little) [swer.

Patience, a while, you'll hear the belly's an- 1 *Cit.* You are long about it.

*Men.*

Note me this, good friend; Your most grave belly was deliberate, Not rash like his accusers, and thus answer'd: *True is it, my incorporate friends, quoth he, That I receive the general food at first, Which you do live upon: and fit it is; Because I am the store-house, and the shop Of the whole body: But if you do remember: I send it through the rivers of your blood, Even to the court, the heart,—to the seat o' the brain;*

*And, through the cranks || and offices of man, The strongest nerves, and small inferior veins,*

*From me receive that natural competency Whereby they live: And though that all at once,* [mark me,—

You, my good friends, (this says the belly,) 1 *Cit.* Ay, sir; well, well.

*Men.*

Though all at once cannot See what I do deliver out to each;

*Yet I can make my audit up, that all From me do back receive the flour of all, And leave me but the bran.* What say you to't? [this?

1 *Cit.* It was an answer: How apply you

*Men.* The senators of Rome are this good belly,

And you the mutinous members: For examine Their counsels, and their cares; digest things rightly, [find,

Touching the weal o' the common; you shall No public benefit which you receive,

But it proceeds, or comes, from them to you, And no way from yourselves.—What do you

You the great toe of this assembly? [think?

1 *Cit.* I the great toe? Why the great toe?

*Men.* For that being one o' the lowest, basest, poorest, [most:

Of this most wise rebellion, thou go'st fore- Thou rascal, that art worst in blood, to run Lead'st first to win some vantage.—

But make you ready your stiff bats and clubs; Rome and her rats are at the point of battle, The one side must have bale¶. Hail, noble

Marcus!

*Enter CAIUS MARCIUS.*

*Mar.* Thanks.—What's the matter, you dis- sentious rogues,

That rubbing the poor itch of your opinion, Make yourselves scabs?

1 *Cit.* We have ever your good word.

\* Spread it.

§ Exactly.

† Hardship.

|| Windings.

‡ Whereas.

¶ Bane.



*Mar.* He that will give good words to thee  
will flatter [you ears,  
Beneath abhorring.—What would you have,  
That like nor peace, nor war? the one affrights  
you, [you,  
The other makes you proud. He that trusts  
Where he should find you lions, finds you  
hares;

Where foxes, geese: You are no surer, no,  
Thau is the coal of fire upon the ice,  
Or hailstone in the sun. Your virtue is,  
To make him worthy, whose offence subdues  
him, [greatness,

And curse that justice did it. Who deserves  
Deserves your hate: and your affections are  
A sick man's appetite, who desires most that  
Which would increase his evil. He that de-  
pends

Upon your favours, swims with fins of lead,  
And hews down oaks with rushes. Hang ye!  
Trust ye?

With every minute you do change a mind;  
And call him noble, that was now your hate,  
Him vile, that was your garland. What's the  
matter,

That in these several places of the city  
You cry against the noble senate, who,  
Under the gods, keep you in awe, which else  
Would feed on one another?—What's their  
seeking? [they say,

*Men.* For corn at their own rates; whereof,  
The city is well stored.

*Mar.* Hang 'em! they say?  
They'll sit by the fire, and presume to know  
What's done i' the Capitol: who's like to rise,  
Who thrives, and who declines: side factions,  
and give out

Conjectural marriages; making parties strong,  
And feeling such as stand not in their liking,  
Below their cobbled shoes. They say, there's  
grain enough?

Would the nobility lay aside their ruth\*,  
And let me use my sword, I'd make a quarry†  
With thousands of these quarter'd slaves, as  
As I could pick† my lance. [high

*Men.* Nay, these are almost thoroughly  
persuaded;

For though abundantly they lack discretion,  
Yet are they passing cowardly. But I beseech  
What says the other troop? [you,

*Mar.* They are dissolved: Hang 'em!  
They said, they were an hungry; sigh'd forth  
proverbs;— [traust eat;

That hunger broke stone walls; that dogs  
That meat was made for mouths; that the gods  
sent not

Corn for the rich men only:—With these shreds  
They vented their complainings; which being  
answer'd,

And a petition granted them, a strange one,  
(To break the heart of generosity, [their caps  
And make bold power look pale,) they threw  
As they would hang them on the horns o'the  
Shouting their emulation‡. [moon,

*Men.* What is granted them  
*Mar.* Five tribunes to defend their vulgar  
wisdoms,

Of their own choice: One's Junius Brutus,  
Sicinius Velutus, and I know not—'Sdeath!  
The rabble should have first unroof'd the city,  
Ere so prevail'd with me: it will in time  
Win upon power, and throw forth greater  
For insurrection's arguing. [thems

*Men.* This is strange.

*Mar.* Go, get you home, you fragments!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mes.* Where's Caius Marcius?

*Mar.* Here: What's the matter?

*Mes.* The news is, sir, the Volces are in arms.

*Mar.* I am glad on't; then we shall have  
means to vent

Our musty superfluity:—See, our best elders.

*Enter COMINIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, and other  
Senators; JUNIUS BRUTUS, and SICINIUS  
VELUTUS.*

*1 Sen.* Marcius, 'tis true that you have lately  
The Volces are in arms. [told us;

*Mar.* They have a leader,

Tullus Aufidius, that will put you to't.

I sin in envying his nobility:

And were I any thing but what I am

I would wish me only he.

*Com.* You have fought together.

*Mar.* Were half to halt the world by the  
ears, and he

Upon my party, I'd revolt, to make

Only my wars with him: he is a lion

That I am proud to hunt.

*1 Sen.* Then, worthy Marcius,

Attend upon Cominius to these wars.

*Com.* It is your former promise.

*Mar.* Sir, it is;

And I am constant—Titus Lartius, thou  
Shalt see me once more strike at Tullus' face:  
What, art thou stiff? stand'st out?

*Tit.* No, Caius Marcius;

I'll lean upon one crutch, and fight with the  
Ere stay behind this business. [other,

*Men.* O, true bred!

*1 Sen.* Your company to the Capitol; where,  
Our greatest friends attend us. [I know,

*Tit.* Lead you on:

Follow, Cominius; we must follow you;

Right worthy you priority¶.

*Com.* Noble Lartius!

*1 Sen.* Hence! To your homes, be gone.

[To the Citizens.

*Mar.* Nay, let them follow:  
The Volces have much corn; take these rats  
thither, [neers,

To gnaw their garners\*:—Worshipful muti-  
Your valour puts† well forth: pray, follow.

[*Exeunt Senators, COM. MAR. TIT. and*

*MENEN. Citizens steal away.*

*Sic.* Was ever man so proud as is this

*Bru.* He has no equal. [Marcius?

*Sic.* When we were chosen tribunes for the

*Bru.* Mark'd you his lip, and eyes? [people

\* Pity, compassion. † Heap of dead.

‡ For insurgents to debate upon.

¶ Shows itself.

§ Faction.

¶ Right worthy of precedence.

† Shows itself.

*Sic.* Nay, but his taunts.

*Bru.* Being moved, he will not spare to gird\* the gods.

*Sic.* Be-mock the modest moon.

*Bru.* The present wars devour him: he is too proud to be so valiant. [*grow'n*]

*Sic.* Such a nature, Ticked with good success, disdains the shadow Which he treads on at noon: But I do wonder His insolence can brook to be commanded Under Cominius.

*Bru.* Fame, at the which he aims,—In whom already he is well graced,—cannot Better be held, nor more attain'd, than by A place below the first: for what miscarries Shall be the general's fault, though he perform To the utmost of a man; and giddy censure Will then cry out of Marcius, *O, if he Had borne the business!*

*Sic.* Besides, if things go well, Opinion, that so sticks on Marcius, shall Of his demerits† rob Cominius.

*Bru.* Come: Half all Cominius' honours are to Marcius, Though Marcius earn'd them not; and all his faults

To Marcius shall be honours, though, indeed, In aught he merit not.

*Sic.* Let's hence, and hear How the despatch is made; and in what More than in singularity, he goes [*fashion,* Upon his present action.

*Bru.* Let's along. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II. Corioli. The Senate-House.

*Enter TULLUS AUFIDIUS, and certain Senators.*

*1 Sen.* So, your opinion is, Aufidius, That they of Rome are enter'd in our counsels, And know how we proceed.

*Auf.* Is it not yours? What ever hath been thought on in this state, That could be brought to bodily act ere Rome Had circumvention‡! 'Tis not four days gone, Since I heard thence; these are the words: I think

I have the letter here; yes, here it is: [*Reads.* *They have press'd a power, but it is not known* [*great;*

*Whether for east, or west: the dearth is The people mutinous: and it is rumour'd,* Cominius, Marcius, your old enemy, *(Who is of Rome worse hated than of you,)* And Titus Lartius, a most valiant Roman, *These three lead on this preparation* *Whither 'tis bent: most likely, 'tis for you: Consider of it.*

*1 Sen.* Our army's in the field: We never yet made doubt but Rome was ready To answer us.

*Auf.* Nor did you think it folly, To keep your great pretences veil'd, till when They needs must show themselves; which in the hatching,

It seem'd, appear'd to Rome. By the discovery We shall be shorten'd in our aim; which was To take in § many towns, ere, almost, Rome Should know we were afoot.

*2 Sen.* Noble Aufidius, Take your commission; hie you to your bands: Let us alone to guard Corioli:

If they set down before us, for the remove Bring up your army; but, I think, you'll find They have not prepared for us.

*Auf.* O, doubt not that, I speak from certainties. Nay, more. Some parcels of their powers are forth already, And only hitherward. I leave your honours. If we and Caius Marcius chance to meet, 'Tis sworn between us, we shall never strike Till one can do no more.

*All.* The gods assist you!

*Auf.* And keep your honours safe!

*1 Sen.* Farewell.

*2 Sen.* Farewell.

*All.* Farewell. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III. An Apartment in Marcius House.

*Enter VOLUMNIA and VIRGILIA: They sit down on two low stools, and sew.*

*Vol.* I pray you, daughter, sing; or express yourself in a more comfortable sort: If my son were my husband, I should freelier rejoice in that absence wherein he won honour, than in the embracements of his bed, where he would show most love. When yet he was but tender bodied, and the only son of my womb; when youth with comeliness plucked all gaze his way||; when, for a day of kings' entreaties, a mother should not sell him an hour from her beholding; I,—considering how honour would become such a person; that it was no better than picture-like to hang by the wall, if renown made it not stir,—was pleased to let him seek danger where he was like to find fame. To a cruel war I sent him; from whence he returned, his brows bound with oak. I tell thee, daughter,—I sprang not more in joy at first hearing he was a man-child, than now in first seeing he had proved himself a man.

*Vir.* But had he died in the business, madam, how then?

*Vol.* Then his good report should have been my son; I therein would have found issue. Hear me profess sincerely: Had I a dozen sons—each in my love alike, and none less dear than thine and my good Marcius,—I had rather had eleven die nobly for their country, than one voluptuously surfeit out of action.

*Enter a Gentlewoman.*

*Gent.* Madam, the lady Valeria is come to visit you. [*myself*]

*Vir.* Beseech you, give me leave to retire.‡

*Vol.* Indeed, you shall not.

Methinks, I hear hither your husband's drum. See him pluck Aufidius down by the hair; As children from a bear, the Voices shunning him:

\* Sneer.

† Pre-occupation.

‡ Demerits and merits had anciently the same meaning.

§ To subdue.

|| Attracted attention.

‡ Withdraw.

Methinks, I see him stamp thus and call thus,  
*Come on, you cowards, you were got in fear,*  
*Though you were born in Rome:* His bloody  
 brow [goes;  
 With his mail'd hand then wiping, forth he  
 Like to a harvest-man, that's task'd to mow  
 Or all, or lose his hire.

*Vir.* His bloody brow! O, Jupiter, no blood!

*Vol.* Away, you fool! It more becomes a man,  
 Than gilt his trophy: The breasts of Hecuba,  
 When she did suckle Hector, look'd not lovelier  
 Than Hector's forehead, when it spit forth blood  
 At Grecian swords contending.—Tell Valeria,  
 We are fit to bid her welcome. [*Exit Gent.*]

*Vir.* Heavens bless my lord from fell Aufi-  
 dius! [knee,

*Vol.* He'll beat Aufidius' head below his  
 And tread upon his neck.

*Re-enter Gentlewoman, with VALERIA and  
 her Usher.*

*Val.* My ladies both, good day to you.

*Vol.* Sweet madam,—

*Vir.* I am glad to see your ladyship.

*Val.* How do you both? you are manifest  
 housekeepers. What, are you sewing here!  
 A fine spot\*, in good faith.—How does your  
 little son?

*Vir.* I thank your ladyship; well, good  
 madam.

*Vol.* He had rather see the swords, and hear  
 a drum, than look upon his school-master.

*Val.* O' my word, the father's son: I'll swear,  
 'tis a very pretty boy. O' my troth, I looked  
 upon him o' Wednesday half an hour together:  
 he has such a confirmed countenance. I saw  
 him run after a gilded butterfly; and when he  
 caught it, he let it go again; and after it again;  
 and over and over he comes, and up again;  
 catch'd it again: or whether his fall enraged  
 him, or how 'twas, he did so set his teeth, and  
 tear it; O, I warrant, how he mammock'd it!

*Vol.* One of his father's moods.

*Val.* Indeed, 'tis a noble child.

*Vir.* A crack!, madam.

*Val.* Come lay aside your stitchery; I must  
 have you play the idle huswife with me this  
 afternoon.

*Vir.* No, good madam; I will not out of  
 doors.

*Val.* Not out of doors!

*Vol.* She shall, she shall.

*Vir.* Indeed, no, by your patience: I will  
 not over the threshold, till my lord return from  
 the wars.

*Val.* Fie, you confine yourself most unrea-  
 sonably; Come, you must go visit the good  
 lady that lies in.

*Vir.* I will wish her speedy strength, and  
 visit her with my prayers; but I cannot go  
 thither.

*Vol.* Why, I pray you?

*Vir.* 'Tis not to save labour, nor that I want  
 love.

*Vol.* You would be another Penelope; yet,  
 'they say, all the yarn she spun in Ulysses' ab-  
 sence, did but fill Ithaca full of moths. Come;

I would your cambric were sensible as your  
 finger, that you might leave pricking it for pity.  
 Come, you shall go with us.

*Vir.* No, good madam, pardon me; indeed,  
 I will not so.

*Vol.* In truth, 'tis true; I heard a senator  
 say you excel'd news of your husband.

*Vir.* O, good madam, there can be none yet.

*Vol.* Verily, I do not jest with you; there  
 came news from him last night.

*Vir.* Indeed, madam!

*Vol.* In earnest, 'tis true; I heard a senator  
 speak it. Thus it is:—The Volscs have an army  
 forth; a'inst whom Cominius the general is  
 gone, with one part of our Roman power; your  
 lord, and Titus Lartius, are set down before  
 their city Corioli; they nothing doubt, re-  
 vail-  
 ing, and to make it brief, wars. This is true,  
 on mine honour; and so, I pray go with us.

*Vir.* Give me excuse, good madam; I will  
 obey you in every thing hereafter.

*Vol.* Let her alone, lady; as she is now, she  
 will but disease our better mirth.

*Mal.* In troth, I think she would:—Fare you  
 well, then.—Come, good sweet lady.—Pr'y-  
 thee, Virgilia, turn thy solemnness out o' door,  
 and go along with us.

*Vir.* No: at a word, madam; indeed, I must  
 not. I wish you much mirth.

*Vol.* Well, then farewell. [*Excunt.*]

#### SCENE IV. Before Corioli.

*Enter, with Drum and Colours, MARCIUS,  
 TITUS LARTIUS, Officers and Soldiers. To  
 them a Messenger.*

*Mar.* Yonder comes news:—A wager, they

*Lart.* My horse to yours, no. [*Have met.*]

*Mar.* 'Tis done.

*Lart.* Agreed.

*Mar.* Say, has our general met the enemy?  
*Mess.* They lie in view; but have not spoke  
 as yet.

*Lart.* So, the good horse is mine.

*Mar.* I'll buy him of you.

*Lart.* No, I'll nor sell, nor give him: lend  
 you him, I will,

For half a hundred years.—Summon the town.

*Mar.* How far off lie these armies?

*Mess.* Within this mile and half.

*Mar.* Then shall we hear their 'larum, and  
 they ours.

Now, Mars, I pr'y thee make us quick in work;  
 That we with smoking swords may march from  
 hence. [*blast.*]

To help our fielded friends!—Come, blow thy  
 horn! They sound a parley. *Enter, on the walls,  
 some Senators, and Others.*

Tullus Aufidius, is he within your walls? [*he.*]

*Sen.* No, nor a man that fears you less than  
 That's lesser than a little. Hark, our drums

[*Alarums afar off.*]

Are bringing forth our youth: We'll break our  
 walls,

Rather than they shall pound us up: our gates  
 Which yet seem shut, we have but pinn'd with  
 rushes;

Of work. † Tore. ‡ Boy. § Short. ¶ In the field of battle.



They'll open of themselves. Hark you, far off;  
[*Other Alarums.*]  
There is Aufidius; list, what work he makes  
Amongst your cloven army.

*Mar.* O, they are at it!

*Lart.* Their noise be our instruction.—Ladders, ho!

*The Volces enter and pass over the Stage.*

*Mar.* They fear us not, but issue forth their city.

Now put your shields before your hearts, and  
With hearts more proof than shields.—Advance, brave Titus:

They do disdain us much beyond our thoughts,  
Which makes me sweat with wrath.—Come, on, my fellows;

He that retires, I'll take him for a Volce,  
And he shall feel mine edge.

*Alarum, and exeunt Romans and Volces, fighting. The Romans, are beaten back to their trenches. Re-enter MARTIUS.*

*Mar.* All the contagion of the south light on you,

You shames of Rome! you herd of—Boils and  
Plaster you o'er; that you may be abhor'd  
Further than seen, and one infect another  
Against the wind a mile! You souls of geese,  
That bear the shapes of men, how have you run

From slaves that apes would beat? Pluto and  
All hurt behind; backs red, and faces pale  
With flight and agued fear! Mend, and charge home,

Or by the fires of heaven, I'll leave the foe, [on;  
And make my wars on you: look to't: Come  
If you'll stand fast, we'll beat them to their  
As they us to our trenches followed. [*wives,*  
*Another Alarum. The Volces and Romans re-enter, and the fight is renewed. The Volces retire into Corioli, and MARCIUS follows them to the gates.*

So, now the gates are ope:—Now prove good seconds:

'Tis for the followers fortune widens them,  
Not for the fliers: mark me, and do the like.

[*He enters the gates and is shut in.*

*1 Sol.* Fool hardness; not I.

*2 Sol.* See, they

*3 Sol.* See, they  
Have shut him in. [*Alarum continues.*

*All.* To the pot, I warrant him.

*Enter TITUS LARTIUS.*

*Lart.* What is become of Marcius?

*All.* Slain, sir, doubtless.

*1 Sol.* Following the fliers at the very heels,  
With them he enters: who, upon the sudden,  
Clapp'd to their gates; he is himself alone  
To answer all the city.

*Lart.* O noble fellow!

Who, sensible\*, outdares his senseless sword,  
And, when it bows†, stands up! Thou art left,  
A carbuncle entire, as big as thou art, [Marcius:  
Were not so rich a jewel. Thou wast a soldier  
Even to Cato's wish, not fierce and terrible  
Only in strokes; but, with thy grim looks, and  
The thunder-like percussion of thy sounds,

Thou madest thine enemies shake, as if the  
Were feverous and did tremble. [*world*  
*Re-enter MARCIUS bleeding, assaulted by the enemy.*

*1 Sol.* Look, sir,

*Lart.* 'Tis Marcius  
Let's fetch him off, or make remain alike.

[*They fight, and all enter the city.*

SCENE V. *Within the town. A Street.*

*Enter certain Romans, with spoils.*

*1 Rom.* This will I carry to Rome.

*2 Rom.* And I this.

*3 Rom.* A murrain on't! I took this for silver.

[*Alarum continues still afar off.*

*Enter MARCIUS, and TITUS LARTIUS, with a trumpet.*

*Mar.* See here these movers, that do prize  
their hours

At a crack'd drachm! Cushions, leaden spoons,  
Irons of a doit, doublets that hangmen would  
Bury with those that wore them, these base  
slaves,

Ere yet the fight be done, pack up:—Down  
And hark, what noise the general makes!—To him:—

There is the man of my soul's hate, Aufidius,  
Piercing our Romans: Then, valiant Titus, take  
Convenient numbers to make good the city;  
Whilst I, with those that have the spirit, will  
To help Cominius.

*Lart.* Worthy sir, thou bleed'st;

Thy exercise hath been too violent for  
A second course of fight.

*Mar.* Sir, praise me not:  
My work hath yet not warm'd me: Fare you  
The blood I drop is rather physical [well.  
Than dangerous to me: To Aufidius thus  
I will appear, and fight.

*Lart.* Now the fair goddess, Fortune,  
Fall deep in love with thee; and her great  
charms [man,  
Misguide thy opposer's swords! Bold gentle-  
Prosperity be thy page!

*Mar.* Thy friend no less

Than those she placeth highest! So farewell.

*Lart.* Thou worthiest Marcius!

[*Exit MARCIUS.*

Go, sound thy trumpet in the market-place;

Call thither all the officers of the town;

Where they shall know our mind. Away.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI. *Near the Camp of Cominius.*

*Enter COMINIUS and Forces, retreating.*

*Com.* Breathe you, my friends; well fought,  
we are come off

Like Romans, neither foolish in our stands,  
Nor cowardly in retire: believe me, sirs,  
We shall be charged again. Whiles we have  
struck,

By interims, and conveying gusts, we have  
The charges of our friends:—The Roman gods,  
Lead their successes as we wish our own;  
That both our powers, with smiling fronts en-  
countering,

\* Having sensation, feeling.

† When it is bent.

‡ A Roman coin.

*Enter a Messenger.*

May give you thankful sacrifice!—Thy news?

*Mess.* The citizens of Corioli have issued,  
And given to Lartius and to Marcius battle:  
I saw our party to their trenches driven,  
And then I came away.

*Com.* Though thou speak'st truth,  
Methinks, thou speak'st not well. How long  
is't since?

*Mess.* Above an hour, my lord. [drums;

*Com.* 'Tis not a mile; briefly we heard their  
How could'st thou in a mile confound \* an hour,  
And bring thy news so late?

*Mess.* Spies of the Voices  
Held me in chase, that I was forced to wheel  
Three or four miles about; else had I, sir,  
Half an hour since brought my report.

*Enter MARCIUS.*

*Com.* Who's yonder,  
That does appear as he were flay'd? O gods,  
He has the stamp of Marcius; and I have  
Before-time seen him thus.

*Mar.* Come I too late?

*Com.* The shepherd knows not thunder from  
a tabor,  
More than I know the sound of Marcius' tongue  
From every meaner man's.

*Mar.* Come I too late?

*Com.* Ay, if you come not in the blood of  
But mantled in your own. [others,

*Mar.* O! let me clip you  
In arms as plain as when I woo'd; in heart  
As merry as when our nuptial day was done,  
And tapers burn'd to bedward.

*Com.* Flower of warriors,  
How is't with Titus Lartius?

*Mar.* As with a man busied about decrees:  
Condemning some to death, and some to exile;  
Ransoming him, or pitying, threat'ning the  
Holding Corioli in the name of Rome, [other;  
Even like a fawning greyhound in the leash,  
To let him slip at will.

*Com.* Where is that slave  
Which told me they had beat you to your  
Where is he? Call him hither. [trenches?

*Mar.* Let him alone,  
He did inform the truth: But for our gentle-  
men, [them!]

The common file, (A plague!—Tribunes for  
The mouse ne'er shunn'd the cat, as they did  
From rascals worse than they. [budge

*Com.* But how prevail'd you?  
*Mar.* Will the time serve to tell? I do not  
think— [field?]

Where is the enemy? Are you lords o'the  
If not, why cease you till you are so?

*Com.* Marcius,  
We have at disadvantage fought, and did  
Retire, to win our purpose.

*Mar.* How lies their battle? Know you on  
which side

They have placed their men of trust?

*Com.* As I guess, Marcius,  
Their bands in the vaward † are the Antiates ‡,  
Of their best trust: o'er them Aufidius,

Their very heart of hope.

*Mar.* I do beseech you,  
By all the battles wherein we have fought,  
By the blood we have shed together, by the  
vows [rectly]

We have made to endure friends, that you di-  
Set me against Aufidius and his Antiates:  
And that you not delay the present †; but,  
Filling the air with swords advanced, and darts,  
We prove this very hour.

*Com.* Though I could wish  
You were conducted to a gentle bath,  
And balms applied to you, yet dare I never  
Deny your asking; take your choice of those  
That best can aid your action.

*Mar.* Those are they  
That most are willing:—If any such be here,  
(As it were sin to doubt,) that love this painting  
Wherein you see me smear'd; if any fear  
Lesser his person than an ill report;

If any think brave death outweighs bad life,  
And that his country's dearer than himself;  
Let him, alone, or so many, so minded,  
Wave thus, [Waving his hand] to express his  
And follow Marcius. [disposition,

[They all shout, and wave their swords,  
take him up in their arms, and cast up  
their caps.

O me, alone! Make you a sword of me?  
If these shows be not outward, which of you  
But is four Voices? None of you but is  
Able to bear against the great Aufidius  
A shield as hard as his. A certain number,  
Though thanks to all, must I select: the rest  
Shall bear the business in some other fight,  
As cause will be obey'd. Please you to march;  
And four shall quickly draw out my command,  
Which men are best inclined.

*Com.* March on, my fellows:  
Make good this ostentation, and you shall  
Divide in all with us. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE VII. The Gates of Corioli.

TITUS LARTIUS, having set a guard upon  
Corioli, going with a drum and trumpet  
toward Cominius and Caius Marcius, enters  
with a Lieutenant, a party of Soldiers,  
and a Scout.

*Lart.* So, let the ports † be guarded: keep  
your duties [spatch  
As I have set them down. If I do send, de-  
Those centuries ‡ to our aid; the rest will serve  
For a short holding: If we lose the field,  
We cannot keep the town.

*Lieu.* Fear not our care, sir.

*Lart.* Hence, and shut your gates upon us.  
Our guider, come; to the Roman camp con-  
duct us. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE VIII. A field of battle between the Roman and the Volcian Camps.

ALARUM. *Enter MARCIUS and AUFIDIUS.*

*Mar.* I'll fight with none but thee; for I do  
Worse than a promise-breaker, [hate thee  
Auf. We hate alike,

\* Expend. † Front. ‡ Soldiers of Antium. § Present time. || Gates.  
¶ Companies of a hundred men.

Not Afric owns a serpent, I abhor

More than thy fame and envy: Fix thy foot.

*Mar.* Let the first budger \* die the other's  
And the gods doom him after! [slave,

*Auf.* If I fly, Marcius,  
Hahoo me like a hare.

*Mar.* Within these three hours, Tullus,  
Alone I fought in your Corioli walls, [blood  
And made what work I pleased; 'Tis not my  
Wherein thou seest me mask'd; for thy re-  
Wrench up thy power to the highest. [venge,

*Auf.* Wert thou the Hector,  
Thou shouldst not 'scape me here.—

[*They fight, and certain Voices come to  
the aid of Antidius.*

Officious, and not vallant—you have shamed  
In your condemned seconds †. [me

[*Exeunt fighting, driven in by Marcius.*

### SCENE IX. The Roman Camp.

*Alarum. A Retreat is sounded. Flourish.*

*Enter at one side, COMINIUS, and Ro-  
mans; at the other side, MARCIUS, with  
his arm in a scarf, and other Romans.*

*Com.* If I should tell thee o'er this thy day's  
work, [it,

Thon'lt not believe thy deeds: but I'll report  
Where senators shall mingle tears with smiles;  
Where great patricians shall attend, and shrug  
I' the end, admire; where ladies shall be  
trighted, [dull Tribunes,

And, gladly quaked §, hear more; where the  
That, with the fusty plebeians, hate thine ho-  
nours, [gods,

Shall say, against their hearts—*We thank the  
Our Rome hath such a soldier!*—

Yet camest thou to a morsel of this feast,  
Having fully dined before.

*Enter TITUS LARTIUS, with his power §,  
from the pursuit.*

*Lart.* O general,

Here is the steed, we the caparison:  
Hadst thou beheld—

*Mar.* Pray now, no more: my mother,  
Who has a charter ¶ to extol her blood, [done  
When she does praise me, grieves me. I have  
As you have done; that's what I can; induced  
As you have been; that's for my country:  
He, that has but effected his good will,  
Hath overta'en mine act.

*Com.* You shall not be  
The grave of your deserving; Rome must know  
The value of her own: 'twere a concealment  
Worse than a theft, no less than a tradument,  
To hide your doings; and to silence that,  
Which to the spire and top of praises vouch'd,  
Would seem but modest: Therefore, I be-  
seen you,

(In sign of what you are, not to reward  
What you have done,) before our army hear  
me. [they smart

*Mar.* I have some wounds upon me, and  
To hear themselves remember'd.

*Com.* Should they not,  
Well might they fester 'gainst ingratitude,  
And tent themselves with death. Or all the  
horses, [of all

(Whereof we have ta'en good, and good store,)  
The treasure, in this field achieved, and city,  
We render you the tenth; to be ta'en forth,  
Before the common distribution, at  
Your only choice.

*Mar.* I thank you, general;  
But cannot make my heart consent to take  
A bribe to pay my sword: I do refuse it;  
And stand upon my common part with those  
That have beheld the doing.

[*A long flourish. They all cry, Marcius!  
Marcius! cast up their caps and lances.*

*COMINIUS and LARTIUS stand bare.*

*Mar.* May these same instruments, which  
you profan [shall  
Never sound more! When drums and trumpets  
I' the field prove flatterers, let courts and cities  
be [grows

Made all of false-faced soothing: When steel  
Soft as the parasite's silk, let him be made  
An overture for the wars! No more, I say;  
For that I have not wash'd my nose that bled  
Or foil'd some debile \*\* wretch,—which, with  
out note, [forth

Here's many else have done,—you shout me  
In acclamations hyperbolical;  
As if I loved my little should be dieted  
In praises sauced with lies.

*Com.* Too modest are you;  
More cruel to your good report, than grateful  
To us that give you truly: by your patience,  
If 'gainst yourself you be incensed, we'll put  
you [manacles

(Like one that means his proper †† harm,) in  
Then reason safely with you.—Therefore, be  
it known,

As to us, to all the world, that Caius Marcius  
Wears this war's garland: in token of the  
which [him,

My noble steed, known to the camp, I give  
With all his trim belonging; and, from this  
For what he did before Corioli, call him, [time.  
With all the applause and clamour of the host,  
CAIUS MARCIUS CORIOLANUS.—  
Bear the addition nobly ever!

[*Flourish. Trumpets sound, and Drums.*

*All.* Caius Marcius Coriolanus!

*Cor.* I will go wash;  
And when my face is fair, you shall perceive  
Whether I blush or no: Howbeit, I thank  
you:— [times,

I mean to stride your steed; and, at all  
To undercrest ‡ your good addition,  
To the fairness of my power.

*Com.* So, to our tent:  
Where, ere we do repose us, we will write  
To Rome of our success.—You, Titus Lartius,  
Must to Corioli back: send us to Rome  
The best §§, with whom we may articulate |||,  
For their own good, and ours.

\* Stirrer. † Boast, crack. ‡ In sending such help. § Trown into grateful trepidation.  
¶ Forces. ¶ Privilege. \*\* Weak, feeble. †† Own. ‡‡ Add more by doing his best.  
§§ Chief men. ||| Enter into articles.



*Lart.*

I shall, my lord.

*Cor.* The gods begin to mock me. I that now  
Refused most princely gifts, am bound to beg  
Of my lord general.

*Com.* Take it: 'tis yours.—What is't?

*Cor.* I sometime lay, here in Corioli,  
At a poor man's house; he used me kindly:  
He cried to me; I saw him prisoner;  
But then Aufidius was within my view, [you  
And wrath o'erwhelm'd my pity: I request  
To give my poor host freedom.

*Com.* O, well begg'd!

Were he the butcher of my son, he should  
Be free as is the wind. Deliver him, Titus.

*Lart.* Marcins, his name?

*Cor.* By Jupiter, forgot:—

I am weary; yea, my memory is tired.—

Have we no wine here?

*Com.* Go we to our tent:

The blood upon your visage dries: 'tis time  
It should be look'd to: come. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE X. *The Camp of the Volces.*

*A Flourish. Cornets. Enter TULLUS AUFIDIUS, bloody, with two or three soldiers.*

*Auf.* The town is ta'en! [*Edunt.*

*1 Sol.* 'Twill be deliver'd back on good con-

*Auf.* Condition?—

I would I were a Roman; for I cannot,

Being a Volce, be that I am.—Condition!

What good condition can a treaty find

I' the part that is at mercy? Five times, Mar-

cius,

I have fought with thee; so often hast thou  
beat me;

And wouldst do so, I think, should we encount  
As often as we eat.—By the elements, [tes  
If e'er again I meet him beard to beard,  
He is mine, or I am his: Mine emulation  
Hath not that honour in't it had; for where \*  
I thought to crush him in an equal force,  
(True sword to sword,) I'll potch † at him some  
Or wrath, or craft, may get him. [way

*1 Sol.* He's the devil!

*Auf.* Bolder, though not so subtle: My va  
lour's poison'd

With only suffering stain by him; for him  
Shall fly out of itself: nor sleep, nor sanctuary,  
Being naked, sick: nor fane, nor Capitol,  
The prayers of priests, nor times of sacrifice;  
Embarkments all of fury, shall lift up  
Their rotten privilege and custom 'gainst  
My hate to Marcins: where I find him, were it  
At home, upon my brother's guard ‡, even there  
Against the hospitable canon, would I [the city;  
Wash my fierce hand in his heart. Go you to  
Learn how 'tis held; and what they are, that  
Be hostages for Rome. [must

*1 Sol.* Will not you go?

*Auf.* I am attended § at the cypress grove:  
I pray you, [thither  
(Is south the city mills,) bring me word  
How the world goes; that to the pace of it  
I may spur on my journey.

*1 Sol.* I shall, sir.

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *Rome. A Public Place.*

*Enter MENENIUS, SICINIUS, and BRUTUS.*

*Men.* The augurer tells me, we shall have  
news to-night.

*Bru.* Good or bad?

*Men.* Not according to the prayer of the  
people, for they love not Marcins.

*Sic.* Nature teaches beasts to know their  
friends.

*Men.* Pray you, who does the wolf love?

*Sic.* The lamb.

*Men.* Ay, to devour him; as the hungry  
plebeians would the noble Marcins.

*Bru.* He's a lamb, indeed, that baes like a  
bear.

*Men.* He's a bear, indeed, that lives like a  
lamb. You two are old men; tell me one thing  
that I shall ask you.

*Both Trib.* Well, sir.

*Men.* In what enormity is Marcins poor,  
that you two have not in abundance?

*Bru.* He's poor in no one fault, but stored  
with all.

*Sic.* Especially in pride.

*Bru.* And topping all others in boasting.

*Men.* This is strange now: Do you two know

how you are censured here in the city, I mean  
of us of the right hand file? Do you?

*Both Trib.* Why, how are we censured?

*Men.* Because you talk of pride now.—Will  
you not be angry?

*Both Trib.* Well, well, sir, well.

*Men.* Why 'tis no great matter; for a very  
little thief of occasion will rob you of a great  
deal of patience: give your disposition the  
reins, and be angry at your pleasures; at the  
least, if you take it as a pleasure to you, in  
being so. You blame Marcins for being proud?

*Bru.* We do it not alone, sir.

*Men.* I know, you can do very little alone;  
for your helps are many; or else your actions  
would grow wondrous single: your abilities  
are too infant-like, for doing much alone. You  
talk of pride: O, that you could turn your eyes  
towards the napes || of your necks, and make  
but an interior survey of your good selves! O  
that you could!

*Bru.* What then, sir?

*Men.* Why, then you should discover a brace  
of unmeriting, proud, violent, testy magis-  
trates, (alias fools) as any in Rome.

*Sic.* Menenius, you are known well enough  
too.

\* Whereas. † Poke, push. ‡ My brother posted to protect him. § Waited for  
|| Back.

*Men.* I am known to be a humorous patrician, and one that loves a cup of hot wine with not a drop of allaying \* Tyber in't; said to be something imperfect, in favouring the first complaint: hasty, and tinder-like, upon upon too trivial motion: one that converses more with the buttock of the night, than with the forehead of the morning. What I think, I utter; and spend my malice in my breath: Meeting two such weals-men† as you are, (I cannot call you Lycurguses) if the drink you gave me, touch my palate adversely, I make a crooked face at it. I cannot say, your worshipps have delivered the matter well, when I find the ass in compound with the major part of your syllables: and though I must be content to bear with those that say you are reverend grave men, yet they lie deadly that tell you, you have good faces. If you see this in the map of my mycrocosm‡, follows it, that I am known well enough too? What harm can your bisson § consecutivities glean out of this character, if I be known well enough too?

*Bru.* Come, sir, come, we know you well enough.

*Men.* You know neither me, yourselves, nor any thing. You are ambitious for poor knaves' caps and legs ||; you wear out a good wholesome forenoon, in hearing a cause between an orange-wife and a fosset-seller; and then rejourne the controversy of three-pence to a second day of audience.—When you are hearing a matter between party and party, if you chance to be pinched with the cholic, you make faces like nummers; set up the bloody flag against all patience; and, in roaring for a chamber-pot, dismiss the controversy bleeding, the more entangled by your hearing: all the peace you make in their cause, is calling both the parties knaves: You are a pair of strange ones.

*Bru.* Come, come, you are well understood to be a perfecter giber for the table, than a necessary bencher in the Capitol.

*Men.* Our very priests must become mockers, if they shall encounter such ridiculous subjects as you are. When you speak best unto the purpose, it is not worth the wagging of your beards; and your beards deserve not so honourable a grave, as to stuff a botcher's cushion, or to be entombed in an ass's pack-saddle. Yet you must be saying, Marcus is proud; who, in a cheap estimation, is worth all your predecessors, since Deucalion; though, peradventure, some of the best of them were hereditary hangmen. Good e'en to your worshipps; more of your conversation would infect my brain, being the herdsmen of the beastly plebeians: I will be bold to take my leave of you.

[*BRU. and SIC. retire to the back of the Scene.*]

*Enter VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, and VALENTIA, &c.*

How now, my as fair as noble ladies, (and the

moon, were she earthly, no nobler,) whither do you follow your eyes so fast?

*Vol.* Honourable Menenius, my boy Marcus approaches; for the love of Juno, let's go.

*Men.* Ha! Marcus coming home?

*Vol.* Ay, worthy Menenius; and with most prosperous approbation.

*Men.* Take my cap, Jupiter, and I thank thee:—Hoo! Marcus coming home?

*Two Ladies.* Nay, 'tis true.

*Vol.* Look, here's a letter from him: the state hath another, his wife another; and, I think, there's one at home for you.

*Men.* I will make my very house reel to-night:—A letter for me?

*Vir.* Yes, certain, there's a letter for you; I saw it.

*Men.* A letter for me? It gives me an estate of seven years' health; in which time I will make a lip at the physician: the most sovereign prescription in Galen is but empiric tick, and, to this preservative, of no better report than a horse-drench. Is he not wounded? he was wont to come home wounded.

*Vir.* O, no, no, no.

*Vol.* O, he is wounded, I thank the gods for't.

*Men.* So do I too, if it be not too much:—Brings 'a victory in his pocket?—The wounds become him.

*Vol.* On's brows, Menenius: he comes the third time home with the oaken garland.

*Men.* Has he disciplined Aufidius soundly?

*Vol.* Titus Lartius writes,—they fought together, but Aufidius got off.

*Men.* And 'twas time for him too, I'll warrant him that: an he had staid by him, I would not have been so fidious for all the chests in Corioli, and the gold that's in them. Is the senate possessed ¶ of this?

*Vol.* Good ladies, let's go:—Yes, yes, yes: the senate has letters from the general, wherein he gives my son the whole name of the war: he hath in this action outdone his former deeds doubly.

*Val.* In troth, there's wondrous things spoke of him.

*Men.* Wondrous? ay, I warrant you, and not without his true purchasing.

*Vir.* The gods grant them true!

*Vol.* True? pow, wow.

*Men.* True? I'll be sworn they are true:—Where is he wounded?—God save your good worshipps! [*To the Tribunes, who come forward.*] Marcus is coming home: he has more cause to be proud.—Where is he wounded?

*Vol.* I' the shoullder, and i' the left arm: There will be large cicatrices to show the people, when he shall stand for his place. He received, in the repulse of Tarquin, seven hurts i' the body.

*Men.* One in the neck, and two in the thigh,—there's nine that I know.

*Vol.* He had, before this last expedition, twenty-five wounds upon him.

*Men.* Now it's twenty-seven: every gash was

\* Water of the Tiber.

† Statesmen.

‡ Whole man.

§ Blind.

|| Obeisance.

¶ Fully informed.

an enemy's grave : [A Shout and Flourish.]  
Hark ? the trumpets.

*Vol.* These are the ushers of Marcius : before him [tears ;  
He carries noise, and behind him he leaves  
Death, that dark spirit, in's nerry arm doth  
lie ; [men die.

Which being advanced, declines ! and then  
A Sennet \*. Trumpets sound. Enter COM-  
INIUS and TITUS LARTIUS ; between them,  
CORIOLANUS, crowned with an oaken  
Garland ; with Captains, Soldiers, and a  
Herald.

*Her.* Know, Rome, that all alone Marcius  
did light

Within Corioli' gates : where he hath won,  
With fame, a name to Cains Marcius ; these  
In honour follows, Coriolanus :

Welcome to Rome, renowned Coriolanus !

[Flourish.

*All.* Welcome to Rome, renowned Corio-  
lanus ! [heart ;

*Cor.* No more of this, it does offend my  
Pray now, no more.

*Com.* Look, sir, your mother,——  
*Cor.* O !

You have, I know, petition'd all the gods  
For my prosperity. [Kneels.

*Vol.* Nay, my good soldier, up ;  
My gentle Marcius, worthy Caius, and  
By deed-achieving honour newly named—  
What is it ? Coriolanus, must I call thee ?  
But O, thy wife.——

*Cor.* My gracious † silence, hail !  
Wouldst thou have laugh'd, had I come coffin'd  
home,

That weep'st to see me triumph ? Ah, my dear,  
Such eyes the widows in Corioli wear,  
And mothers that lack sons.

*Men.* Now the gods crown thee !

*Cor.* And live you yet ?—O my sweet lady,  
pardon. [To VALERIA.

*Vol.* I know not where to turn :—O wel-  
come home ; [come all.

And welcome, general ;—And you are wel-

*Men.* A hundred thousand welcomes : I  
could weep, [Welcome !

And I could laugh ; I am light, and heavy :  
A curse begin at very root of his heart,

That is not glad to see thee !—You are three,  
That Rome should dote on : yet, by the faith

of men, [that will not

We have some old crab-trees here at home,  
Be grafted to your relish. Yet welcome, war-

We call a nettle but a nettle ; and [riors :  
The faults of fools but folly.

*Com.* Ever right.

*Cor.* Menenius, ever, ever.

*Her.* Give way there, and go on.

*Cor.* Your hand, and yours :  
[To his Wife and Mother.

Ere in our own house I do shade my head,

The good patricians must be visited ;

From whom I have received not only greetings,

But with them change of honours.

*Vol.*

I have lived

To see inherited my very wishes,  
And the buildings of my fancy : only there  
Is one thing wanting, which I doubt not but  
Our Rome will cast upon thee.

*Cor.* Know, good mother,  
I had rather be their servant in my way,  
Than sway with them in theirs.

*Com.* On, to the capitol.

[Flourish. Cornets. *Exeunt in state, as  
before. The Tribunes remain.*

*Bru.* All tongues speak of him, and the  
bleared sights [nurse

Are spectacled to see him : Your prattling  
Into a rapture † lets her baby cry, [pins

While she chats him : the kitchen malkin §  
Her richest lockram ¶ 'bout her reechy ¶ neck,

Clambering the walls to eye him : stalls, bulks,  
windows,

Are smother'd up, leads fill'd, and ridges horsed  
With variable complexions ; all agreeing

In earnestness to see him : seld\*\*shown fla-  
menst†

Do press among the popular throngs, and puff  
To win a vulgar station ‡ : our veil'd dames

Commit the war of white and damask, in [spoil  
Their nicely-gawded §§ cheeks, to the wanton

Of Phœbus' burning kisses : such a pother,  
As if that whatsoever god who leads him,

Were slyly crept into his human powers,  
And gave him graceful posture.

*Sic.* On the sudden,  
I warrant him consul.

*Bru.* Then our office may,  
During his power, go sleep. [honours

*Sic.* He cannot temperately transport his  
From where he should begin, and end ; but

Lose those that he hath won. [will

*Bru.* In that there's comfort.  
*Sic.* Doubt not, the commoners, for whom

we stand,  
But they, upon their ancient malice, will

Forget, with the least cause, these his new ho-  
nours ; [question

Which that he'll give them, make as little  
As he is proud to do't.

*Bru.* I heard him swear,  
Were he to stand for consul, never would he

Appear i'the market-place, nor on him put  
The napless||| vesture of humility ;

Nor, showing (as the manner is) his wounds  
To the people, beg their stinking breaths.

*Sic.* 'Tis right.

*Bru.* It was his word : O, he would miss it,  
rather [him,

Than carry it, but by the suit o'the gentry to  
And the desire of the nobles.

*Sic.* I wish no better,  
Than have him hold that purpose, and to put it

In execution.  
*Bru.* 'Tis most like he will. [wills ;

*Sic.* It shall be to him then, as our good  
A sure destruction.

\* Flourish on cornets. † Graceful.

¶ Soiled with sweat and smoke.

‡ Common standing-place.

† Fit.

§ Maid.

|| Best linen.

\*\* Seldom.

†† Priests.

§§ Adorned.

||| Thread-bare.



*Bru.* So it must fall out  
To him, or our authorities. For an end, [tired  
We must suggest\* the people in what ha-  
He still hath held them; that, to his power, he  
would [and  
Have made them mules, silenced their pleaders,  
Dispropertied their freedoms: holding them,  
In human action and capacity,  
Of no more soul, nor fitness for the world,  
Than camels in their war; who have their  
provaud †  
Only for bearing burdens, and sore blows  
For sinking under them.

*Sic.* This, as you say, suggested  
At some time when his soaring insolence  
Shall teach the people, (which time shall not  
want,  
If he be put upon't; and that's as easy,  
As to set dogs on sheep,) will be his fire  
To kindle their dry stubble; and their blaze  
Shall darken him for ever.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Bru.* What's the matter?  
*Mess.* You are sent for to the Capitol. 'Tis  
thought,  
That Marcius shall be consul: I have seen  
The dumb men throng to see him, and the  
blind [gloves,  
To hear him speak: The matrons flung their  
Ladies and maids their scarfs and handker-  
chiefs,  
Upon him as he pass'd: the nobles bended,  
As to Jove's statue; and the commons made  
A shower, and thunder, with their caps, and  
I never saw the like. [shouts:  
*Bru.* Let's to the Capitol;  
And carry with us ears and eyes for the time,  
But hearts for the event.

*Sic.* Have with you. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The same. The Capitol.*

*Enter two Officers, to lay Cushions.*

1 *Off.* Come, come, they are almost here:  
How many stand for consulships?

2 *Off.* Three, they say: but 'tis thought of  
every one, Coriolanus will carry it.

1 *Off.* That's a brave fellow; but he's  
vengeance proud, and loves not the common  
people.

2 *Off.* 'Faith, there have been many great  
men that have flatter'd the people, who ne'er  
loved them; and there be many that they have  
loved, they know not whereto: so that, if  
they love they know not why, they hate upon  
no better a ground: Therefore, for Coriolanus  
neither to care whether they love or hate him,  
manifests the true knowledge he has in their  
disposition; and, out of his noble careless-  
ness, let's them plainly see't.

1 *Off.* If he did not care whether he had  
their love or no, he waded indifferently 'twixt  
doing them neither good nor harm; but he  
seeks their hate with greater devotion than  
they can render it him; and leaves nothing  
undone, that may fully discover him their op-  
posite‡. Now, to seem to affect the malice

and displeasure of the people, is as bad as that  
which he dislikes, to flatter them for their  
love.

1 *Off.* He hath deserved worthily of his  
country: And his ascent is not by such easy  
degrees as those, who, having been supple and  
contempts to the people, bonnetted§, without  
any further deed to heave them at all into  
their estimation and report; but he hath so  
planted his honours in their eyes, and his ac-  
tions in their hearts, that for their tongues to  
be silent, and not confess so much, were a  
kind of ingrateful injury; to report other-  
wise were a malice, that, giving itself the lie,  
would pluck reproof and rebuke from every  
ear that heard it.

1 *Off.* No more of him; he is a worthy man:  
Make way, they are coming.

A *Sennet. Enter, with Lictors before them,*  
COMINIUS, the Consul, MENENIUS, CORI-  
OLANUS, many other Senators, SICI-  
NIUS and BRUTUS. *The Senators take their  
places; the Tribunes take theirs also by  
themselves.*

*Men.* Having determined of the Voices, and  
To send for Titus Lartius, it remains,  
As the main point of this our after-meeting,  
To gratify his noble service that  
Hath thus stood for his country: Therefore  
please you,

Most reverend and grave elders, to desire  
The present consul, and last general  
In our well-found successes, to report  
A little of that worthy work perform'd  
By Caius Marcius Coriolanus; whom  
We meet here, both to thank, and to rememb  
With honours like himself.

1 *Sen.* Speak, good Cominius:  
Leave nothing out for length, and make w  
think,

Rather our state's defective for requital,  
Than we to stretch it out. Masters o' the people  
We do request your kindest ears: and, after  
Your loving motion toward the common body,  
To yield what passes here.

*Sic.* We are converted  
Upon a pleasing treaty; and have hearts  
Inclinable to honour and advance  
The theme of our assembly.

*Bru.* Which the rather  
We shall be bless'd to do, if he remember  
A kinder value of the people, than  
He hath hereto prized them at.

*Men.* That's off, that's off||,  
I would you rather had been silent: Please  
To hear Cominius speak? [you

*Bru.* Most willingly:  
But yet my caution was more pertinent,  
Than the rebuke you give it.

*Men.* He loves your people;  
But tie him not to be their bedfellow.—[place.  
Worthy Cominius, speak.—Nay, keep your  
[CORIOLANUS rises, and offers to go away

1 *Sen.* Sit, Coriolanus: never shame to  
What you have nobly done. [hear

*Cor.* Your honours' pardon

\* Inform. † Provender. ‡ Adversary.

§ Take off caps. || Nothing to the purpose

I had rather have my wounds to heal again,  
Than hear say how I got them.

*Bru.* Sir, I hope

My words distench'd you not.

*Cor.* No, sir: yet oft,  
When blows have made me stay, I fled from  
words. [your people,

You south'd not, therefore hurt not: But  
I love them as they weigh.

*Men.* Pray now, sit down.

*Cor.* I had rather have one scratch my  
head i'the sun,

When the alarm were struck\*, than idly sit  
To hear my nothings monster'd. [*E. it Cor.*

*Men.* Masters o'the people,  
Your multiplying spawn how can he flatter,  
(That's thousand to one good one,) when you  
now see

He had rather venture all hislimbs for honour,  
Than one of his ears to hear it?—Proceed, Co-  
minius. [lanus

*Com.* I shall lack voice: the deeds of Corio-  
Should not be utter'd feebly.—It is held,  
That valour is the chiefeſt virtue, and  
Meſt dignifies the haver†: if it be,  
The man I ſpeak of cannot in the world  
Be ſingly counterpois'd. At ſixteen years,  
When Tarquin made a head for Rome, he  
fought

Beyond the mark of others: our then dictator,  
Whom with all praiſe I point at, ſaw him fight,  
When with his Amazonian chin ‡ he drove  
The bristled ſlips before him: he beſtrid  
An o'er-pretend'd Roman, and i' the conſul's view  
Slew three oppoſers: Tarquin's ſelf he met,  
And ſtruck him on his knee: in that day's feats,  
When he might act the woman in the ſcene||,  
He proved beſt man i'the field, and for his  
need¶

Was brow-bound with the oak. His pupil age  
Man-enter'd thus, he waxed like a ſea;  
And, in the brunt of ſeventeen battles ſince,  
He lurch'd\*\* all ſwords o'the garland. For this  
Before and in Corioli, let me ſay [laſt,  
I cannot ſpeak him home: He ſtopp'd the  
ſtiers;

And, by his rare example, made the coward  
Turn terror into ſport: as waves before  
A veſſel under ſail, ſo men obey'd, [ſtamp)  
And fell below his ſtem: his ſword (death's)  
Where it did mark, it took; from face to foot  
He was a thing of blood, whoſe every mo-  
tion††

Was tim'd‡‡ with dying cries: alone he enter'd  
The mortal gate o'the city, which he painted  
With ſhunn'd deſtiny, aidleſs came off,  
And with a ſudden re-enforcement ſtruck  
Corioli, like a planet: now all's his:  
When by and by the din of war 'gan pierce  
His ready ſenſe; then ſtraight his doubled ſpirit  
Re-quicken'd what in fleſh was fatigat§§,  
And to the battle came he; where he did  
Run reeking o'er the lives of men, as if  
'Twere a perpetual ſpoil: and, till we call'd

Both field and city ours, he never ſtood  
To caſe his breſt with panting.

*Men.* Worthy man!  
1 *Sen.* He cannot but with meſure fit the  
Which we deviſe him. [honours

*Com.* Our ſpoils he kick'd at;  
And look'd upon things precious, as they were  
The common muck o'the world: he covets leſs  
Than miſery||| itſelf would give; rewards  
His deeds with doing them; and is content  
To ſpend the time, to end it.

*Men.* He's right noble;  
Let him be call'd for.

1 *Sen.* Call for Coriolanus.

*Off.* He doth appear.

*Re-enter CORIOLANUS.*

*Men.* The ſenate, Coriolanus, are well  
To make thee conſul. [pleas'd

*Cor.* I do owe them ſtill  
My life and ſervices.

*Men.* It then remains,  
That you do ſpeak to the people.

*Cor.* I do beſeech you,  
Let me o'erleap that cuſtom; for I cannot  
Put on the gown, ſtand naked, and entreat  
them, [please you,  
For my wounds' ſake, to give their ſuffrage:  
That I may paſs this doing.

*Stc.* Sir, the people  
Muſt have their voices; neither will they bate  
One jot of ceremony.

*Men.* Put them not to't:—  
Pray you, go fit you to the cuſtom; and  
Take to you, as your predeceſſors have,  
Your honour with your form.

*Cor.* It is a part  
That I ſhall bluſh in acting, and might well  
Be taken from the people.

*Bru.* Mark you that?  
*Cor.* To brag unto them,—Thus I did, and  
thus;— [hide,

Show them the unaching ſcars which I ſhould  
As if I had received them for the hire  
Of their breath only:—

*Men.* Do not ſtand upon't—  
We recommend to you, tribunes of the people,  
Our purpoſe to them;—and to our noble  
Wish we all joy and honour. [conſul

*Sen.* To Coriolanus come all joy and honour!  
[*Flouriſh. Then exeunt Senators.*

*Bru.* You ſee how he intends to uſe the  
people. [will require them,

*Sic.* May they perceive his intent! He that  
As if he did contemn what he requeſted  
Should be in them to give.

*Bru.* Come, we'll inform them  
Of our proceedings here: on the market-place  
I know they do attend us. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. The ſame. The forum.

Enter ſeveral Citizens.

1 *Cit.* Once, if he do require our voices  
we ought not to deny him.

2 *Cit.* We may, ſir, if we will.

\* Summons to battle. † Poſſeſſor.  
Smooth faced enough to act a woman's part.

‡ Followed.

§§ Wearied.

‡ Without a beard.

¶ Reward.

\*\* Won.

||| Avarice.

§ Bearded.

†† Stroke

**3 Cit.** We have power in ourselves to do it, but it is a power that we have no power to do: for if he show us his wounds, and tell us his deeds, we are to put our tongues into those wounds, and speak for them; so if he tell us his noble deeds, we must also tell him our noble acceptance of them. Ingratitude is monstrous: and for the multitude to be ungrateful, were to make a monster of the multitude; of the which, we being members, should bring ourselves to be monstrous members.

**1 Cit.** And to make us no better thought of, a little help will serve: for once, when we stood up about the corn, he himself stuck not to call us the many-headed multitude.

**3 Cit.** We have been called so of many; not that our heads are some brown, some black, some auburn, some bald, but that our wits are so diversely coloured: and truly I think, if all our wits were to issue out of one scull, they would fly east, west, north, south; and their consent of one direct way should be at once to all the points o' the compass.

**2 Cit.** Think you so? Which way, do you judge, my wit would fly?

**3 Cit.** Nay, your wit will not so soon out as another man's will, 'tis strongly wedged up in a block head: but, if it were at liberty, 'twould sure southward.

**2 Cit.** Why that way?

**3 Cit.** To lose itself in a fog; where being three parts melted away with rotten dews, the fourth would return for conscience sake, to help to get thee a wife.

**2 Cit.** You are never without your tricks:—You may, you may.

**3 Cit.** Are you all resolved to give your voices? But that's no matter, the greater part carries it. I say, if he would incline to the people, there was never a worthier man.

*Enter CORIOLANUS and MENENIUS.*

Here he comes, and in the gown of humility; mark his behaviour. We are not to stay all together, but to come by him where he stands, by ones, by twos, and by threes. He's to make his requests by particulars: wherein every one of us has a single honour, in giving him our own voices with our own tongues: therefore follow me, and I'll direct you how you shall go by him.

*All.* Content, content. [*Exeunt.*]

*Men.* O, sir, you are not right: have you not the worthiest men have done it? [*known*]

*Cor.* What must I say?—I pray, sir,—Plague upon't! I cannot bring My tongue to such a pace:—Look, sir;—my wounds;—

I got them in my country's service, when Some certain of your brethren roard'd, and ran From the noise of our own drums.

*Men.* O me, the gods! You must not speak of that; you must desire To think upon you. [*them*]

*Cor.* Think upon me! Hang 'em! I would they would forget me, like the virtues Which our divines lose by them.

*Men.* You'll mar all:

I'll leave you: Pray you, speak to them, I pray you

In wholesome manner.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter Two Citizens.*

*Cor.* Bid them wash their faces, And keep their teeth clean.—So, here comes a brace,

You know the cause, sir, of my standing here.

**1 Cit.** We do, sir; tell us what hath brought *Cor.* Mine own desert. [*you to't!*]

**2 Cit.** Your own desert?

*Cor.* Ay, not

Mine own desire.

**1 Cit.** How! not your own desire?

*Cor.* No, sir:

'Twas never my desire yet

To trouble the poor with begging. [*thing,*

**1 Cit.** You must think, if we give you any We hope to gain by you. [*consulship?*]

*Cor.* Well, then, I pray, your price o'the

**1 Cit.** The price is, sir, to ask it kindly.

*Cor.* Kindly?

Sir, I pray let me ha't: I have wounds to show you, [*voice, sir;*]

Which shall be yours in private.—Your good What say you?

**2 Cit.** You shall have it, worthy sir.

*Cor.* A match, sir:—

There is in all two worthy voices begg'd:—

I have your alms; adieu.

**1 Cit.** But this is something odd.

**2 Cit.** An 'twere to give again—But 'tis no matter. [*Exeunt two Citizens.*]

*Enter two other Citizens.*

*Cor.* Pray you now, if it may stand with the tune of your voices, that I may be consul, I have here the customary gown.

**3 Cit.** You have deserved nobly of your country, and you have not deserved nobly.

*Cor.* Your enigma?

**3 Cit.** You have been a scourge to her enemies, you have been a rod to her friends; you have not, indeed, loved the common people.

*Cor.* You should account me the more virtuous, that I have not been common in my love. I will, sir, flatter my sworn brother the people, to earn a dearer estimation of them; 'tis a condition they account gentle: and since the wisdom of their choice is rather to have my hat than my heart, I will practise the insinuating nod, and be off to them most counterfeitedly; that is, sir, I will counterfeit the bewitchment of some popular man, and give it bountifully to the desirers. Therefore, beseech you, I may be consul.

**4 Cit.** We hope to find you our friend; and therefore give you our voices heartily.

**3 Cit.** You have received many wounds for your country.

*Cor.* I will not seal your knowledge with showing them. I will make much of your voices, and so trouble you no farther.

*Both Cit.* The gods give you joy, sir, heartily! [*Exeunt.*]

*Cor.* Most sweet voices!—

Better it is to die, better to starve, Than crave the hire which first we do deserve.



Why in this wolvisish gown should I stand here,  
To beg of Hob and Dick, that do appear,  
Their needless vouches? Custom calls me to't:  
What custom wills, in all things should we do't,  
The dust on antique time would lie unswept,  
And mountainous error be too highly heap'd  
For truth to over-peer \*—Rather than fool it!  
Let the high office and the honour go [so  
To one that would do thus.—I am half through:  
The one part suffer'd, the other will I do.

*Enter Three other Citizens.*

Here come more voices,—

Your voices: for your voices I have fought;  
Watch'd for your voices: for your voices, bear  
Of wounds two dozen odd; battles thrice six  
I have seen and heard of; for your voices  
have [voices:

Done many things, some less, some more: your  
Indeed, I would be consul.

5 *Cit.* He has done nobly, and cannot go  
without any honest man's voice.

6 *Cit.* Therefore let him be consul: The  
gods give him joy, and make him good friend  
to the people!

*All.* Amen, amen.—

God save thee, noble consul!

[*Exeunt* Citizens.

*Cor.* Worthy voices!

*Re-enter MENENIUS, with BRUTUS and  
SICINIUS.*

*Men.* You have stood your limitation; and  
the tribunes

Endue you with the people's voice: Remains,  
That, in the official marks invested, you  
Anon do meet the senate.

*Cor.* Is this done?

*Sic.* The custom of request you have dis-  
charged;

The people do admit you; and are summon'd  
To meet anon, upon your approbation.

*Cor.* Where? at the senate-house?

*Sic.* There, Coriolanus.

*Cor.* May I then change these garments?

*Sic.* You may, sir.

*Cor.* That I'll straight do; and, knowing  
myself again,

Repair to the senate-house. [along?

*Men.* I'll keep you company.—Will you

*Bru.* We stay here for the people.

*Sic.* Fare you well.

[*Exeunt* CORIOL. and MENEN.

He has it now; and by his looks, methinks,  
'Tis warm at his heart.

*Bru.* With a prond heart he wore  
His humble weeds: Will you dismiss the  
people?

*Re-enter* Citizens.

*Sic.* How now, my masters? have you chose

1 *Cit.* He has our voices, sir. [this man?

*Bru.* We pray the gods, he may deserve  
your loves. [notice,

2 *Cit.* Amen, sir: To my poor unworthy  
He mock'd us, when he begg'd our voices

3 *Cit.* Certainly,

He flouted us down-right. [mock us.

1 *Cit.* No, 'tis his kind of speech, he did not

2 *Cit.* Not one amongst us save yourself,  
but says [us

He used us scornfully: he should have show'd  
His marks of merit, wounds received for his

*Sic.* Why, so he did, I am sure. [country.  
*Cit.* No; no man saw 'em.

[*See* *eral* speak.

3 *Cit.* He said, he had wounds, which he  
could show in private;

And with his hat, thus waving it in scorn,

*I would be consul*, says he: *aged custom*,

*But by your voices*, will not so permit me;

*Your voices therefore*: When we granted

that, [thank you,—

Here was,—*I thank you for your voices*,—

*Your most sweet voices*:—now you have left

your voices, [this mockery?

*I have no further with you*:—Was not

*Sic.* Why, either you were ignorant to see't.

Or, seeing it, of such childish friendliness

To yield your voices.

*Bru.* Could you not have told him,

As you were lesson'd,—When he had no

But was a petty servant to the state, [power,

He was your enemy; ever spake against

Your liberties, and the charters that you bear

To the body of the weal: and now, arriving

At place of potency, and sway o'the state,

If he should still indignantly remain

Fast foe to the plebeian, your voices might

Be curses to yourselves? You should have said,

That, as his worthy deeds did claim no less

Than what he stood for; so his gracious nature

Would think upon you for your voices, and

Translate his malice towards you into love,

Standing your friendly lord.

*Sic.* Thus to have said,

As you were fore-advised, had touch'd his  
spirit,

And try'd his inclination; from him pluck'd

Either his gracious promise, which you might,

As cause had call'd you up, have held him to;

Or else it would have gall'd his surly nature,

Which easily endures not article

Tying him to aught; so, putting him to rage,

You should have ta'en the advantage of his

And pass'd him unselected. [choler,

*Bru.* Did you perceive,

He did solicit you in free contempt, [think,

When he did need your loves; and do you

That his contempt shall not be bruising to you,

When he hath power to crush? Why, had your  
bodies [cry

No heart among you? Or had you tongues, to

Against the rectorship of judgment?

*Sic.* Have you,

Ere now, deny'd the asker? and, now again,

On him, that did not ask, but mock, bestow

Your sued-for tongues?

3 *Cit.* He's not confirm'd, we may deny him

2 *Cit.* And will deny him: [yet.

I'll have five hundred voices of that sound.

1 *Cit.* I twice five hundred, and their friends

to piece 'em.

*Bru.* Get you hence instantly; and tell those

friends,—

\* Over-look.

† Plebeians, common people.

They have chose a consul, that will from them take

Their liberties; make them of no more voice  
Than dogs, that are as often beat for barking,  
As therefore kept to do so.

*Sic.* Let them assemble;  
And, on a safer judgment, all revoke  
Your ignorant election: Enforce\* his pride,  
And his old name unto you: besides, forget not  
With what contempt he wore the humble weed;  
How in his suit he scorn'd you: but your loves,  
Thinking upon his services, took from you  
The apprehension of his present portance†,  
Which gibingly, ungravely he did fashion  
After the inveterate hate he bears you.

*Bru.* Lay  
A fault on us, your tribunes; that we labour'd  
(No impediment between) but that you must  
Cast your election on him.

*Sic.* Say, you chose him  
More after our commandment, than as guided  
By your own true affections: and that your  
minds

Pre-occupy'd with what you rather must do  
Than what you should, made you against the  
To voice him consul: Lay the fault on us. [grain

*Bru.* Ay, spare us not. Say we read lectures  
to you,

How youngly he began to serve his country,  
How long continued: and what stock he  
springs of, [came

The noble house o'the Marcians; from whence

That Ancus Marcius, Numa's daughter's son,  
Who, after great Hostilius, here was king:  
Of the same house Publius and Quintus were,  
That our best water brought by conduits hither;  
And Censorinus, darling of the people,  
And nobly named so, being Censor twice,  
Was his great ancestor.

*Sic.* One thus descended,  
That hath beside well in his person wrought  
To be set high in place, we did commend  
To your remembrances: but you have found,  
Scaling‡ his present bearing with his past,  
That he's your fixed enemy, and revoke  
Your sudden approbation

*Bru.* Say, you ne'er had done't,  
(Harp on that still,) but by our putting on §:  
And presently, when you have drawn your  
Repair to the Capitol. [number,

*Cit.* We will so: almost all [Several speak.  
Repent in their election. [Exeunt Citizens.

*Bru.* Let them go on;  
This mutiny were better put in hazard,  
Than stay, past doubt, for greater:  
If, as his nature is, he fall in rage  
With their refusal, both observe and answer  
The vantage || of his anger.

*Sic.* To the Capitol:  
Come; we'll be there before the stream o' the  
people;  
And this shall seem, as partly 'tis, their own,  
Which we have goaded ¶ onward. [Exeunt.

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. The same. A Street.

*Cornets.* Enter CORIOLANUS, MENENIUS,  
COMINIUS, TITUS LARTIUS, Senators, and  
Patricians.

*Cor.* Tullus Aufidius then had made new  
head? [which caused

*Lart.* He had, my lord; and that it was,  
Our swifter composition.

*Cor.* So then the Volces stand but as at first;  
Ready, when time shall prompt them, to make  
Upon us again. [road

*Com.* They are worn, lord consul, so,  
That we shall hardly in our ages see  
Their banners wave again.

*Cor.* Saw you Aufidius?  
*Lart.* On safe-guard \*\* he came to me; and  
did curse

Against the Volces, for they had so vilely  
Yielded the town: he is retired to Antium.

*Cor.* Spoke he of me?

*Lart.* He did, my lord.

*Cor.* How? what?

*Lart.* How often he had met you, sword to  
sword

That, of all things upon the earth, he hated  
Your person most: that he would pawn his  
To hopeless restitution, so he might [fortunes  
Be call'd your vanquisher.

*Cor.* At Antium lives he?

*Lart.* At Antium.

*Cor.* I wish, I had a cause to seek him there,  
To oppose his hatred fully.—Welcome home.  
[To LARTIUS.

Enter SICINIUS and BRUTUS.

Behold! these are the tribunes of the people,  
The tongues o'the common mouth. I do de  
spise them;

For they do prank † them in authority,  
Against all noble sufferance.

*Sic.* Pass no further.

*Cor.* Ha! what is that?

*Bru.* It will be dangerous to  
Go on: no further.

*Cor.* What makes this change?

*Men.* The matter?

*Com.* Hath he not pass'd the nobles, and the

*Bru.* Cominius, no. [commons?

*Cor.* Have I had children's voices?

*1 Sen.* Tribunes, give way; he shall to the  
market-place.

*Bru.* The people are incensed against him.

*Sic.* Stop,

Or all will fall in broil.

*Cor.* Are these your herd?—

Must these have voices, that can yield them  
now, [are your offices?  
And straight disclaim their tongues?—What

\* Object. † Carriage.  
‡ Advantage. ¶ Driven.

‡ Weighing. § Incitation.  
\*\* With a guard. †† Plume, deck.

You being their mouths, why rule you not  
I have you not set them on? [their teeth?]

*Men.* Be calm, be calm.

*Cor.* It is a purposed thing, and grows by  
To curb the will of the nobility:— [plot,  
Suffer it, and live with such as cannot rule,  
Nor ever will be ruled.

*Bru.* Call't not a plot:  
The people cry, you mock'd them: and, of late,  
When corn was given them gratis, you repined;  
Scandal'd the suppliants for the people; call'd  
them

Time-pleasers, flatterers, foes to nobleness.

*Cor.* Why, this was known before.

*Bru.* Not to them all.

*Cor.* Have you inform'd them since?

*Bru.* How! I inform them!

*Cor.* You are like to do such business.

*Bru.* Not unlike,

Each way to better yours.

*Cor.* Why then should I be consul? By you  
clouds,

Let me deserve so ill as you, and make me  
Your fellow tribune.

*Sic.* You show too much of that,  
For which the people stir: If you will pass  
To where you are bound, you must inquire  
your way,

Which you are out of, with a gentler spirit;

Or never be so noble as a consul,

Nor yoke with him for tribune.

*Men.* Let's be calm.

*Com.* The people are abused:—Set on.—  
This palt'ring\*

Becomes not Rome; nor has Coriolanus  
Deserved this so dishonour'd rub, laid falsely†  
I' the plain way of his merit.

*Cor.* Tell me of corn?  
This was my speech, and I will speak't again;—

*Men.* Not now, not now.

*1 Sen.* Not in this heat, sir, now.

*Cor.* Now, as I live, I will.—My nobler  
I crave their pardons:— [friends,

For the mutable, rank-scented many‡ let them  
Regard me as I do not flatter, and

Therein behold themselves: I say again,  
In soothing them, we nourish 'gainst our senate

The cockle of rebellion, insolence, sedition,  
Which we ourselves have plough'd for, sow'd,

and scatter'd, [ber;

By mingling them with us, the honour'd num-  
Who lack not virtue, no, nor power, but that

Which they have given to beggars.

*Men.* Well, no more.

*Sen.* No more words, we beseech you.

*Cor.* How! no more?  
As for my country I have shed my blood,

Not fearing outward force, so shall my lungs  
Coin words till their decay, against those

meazels§

Which we disdain should tetter|| us, yet sought  
The very way to catch them.

*Bru.* You speak o'the people  
As if you were a god to punish, not  
A man of their infirmity.

*Sic.*

We let the people know't.

*Men.*

What, what? his choler?

*Cor.* Choler!

Were I as patient as the midnight sleep,  
By Jove, 'twould be my mind.

*Sic.*

It is a mind

That shall remain a poison where it is,  
Not poison any further.

*Cor.*

Shall remain!

Here you this Triton of the minnows¶? mark  
His absolute shall?

*Com.*

'Twas from the canon\*\*.

*Cor.*

Shall!

O good, but most unwise patricians, why,  
You grave, but reckless†† senators, have you  
thus

Given Hydra here to choose an officer,  
That with his peremptory shall, being but  
The horn and noise o'the monsters, wants not  
spirit

To say he'll turn your current in a ditch,  
And make your channel his? If he have power,  
Then vail your ignorance: if none, awake  
Your dangerous lenity. If you are learned,  
Be not as common fools; if you are not,  
Let them have cushions by you. You are ple-  
beians,

If they be senators: and they are no less,  
When both your voices blended, the greatest  
taste [trate;

Most palates theirs. They choose their magis-  
And such a one as he, who puts his shall,  
His popular shall, against a graver bench  
Than ever frown'd in Greece! By Jove himself,  
It makes the consuls base: and my soul aches  
To know, when two authorities are up,  
Neither supreme, how soon confusion  
May enter 'twixt the gap of both, and take  
The one by the other.

*Com.*

Well—on to the market-place.

*Cor.* Whoever gave that counsel, to give forth  
The corn o'the store-house gratis, as 'twas used  
Sometime in Greece,——

*Men.*

Well, well, no more of that.

*Cor.* (Though there the people had more ab-  
solute power,)

I say, they nourish'd disobedience, fed  
The ruin of the state.

*Bru.*

Why, shall the people give

One, that speaks thus, their voice?

*Cor.*

I'll give my reasons,

More worthy than their voices. They know  
the corn

Was not our recompense; resting well assured  
They ne'er did service for't: Being press'd to

the war,

Even when the navel of the state was touch'd,  
That would not thread‡‡ the gates: this kind of

service

Did not deserve corn gratis: being i'the war,  
Their mutinies and revolts, wherein they

show'd [tion

Most valour, spoke not for them: The accusa-  
Which they have often made against the senate,

\* Shuffling.

† Treacherously.

‡ Populace.

§ Lepers.

|| Scab.

¶ Small fish.

\*\* According to law.

†† Careless.

‡‡ Pass through.



All cause unborn, could never be the native\*  
Of our so frank donation. Well, what then?  
How shall this bosom multiplied digest  
The senate's courtesy? Let deeds express  
What's like to be their words:—*We did request it;*

*We are the greater pollt, and in true fear  
They gave us our demands:*—Thus we debase  
The nature of our seats, and make the rabble  
Call our cares, fears; which will in time break  
ope

The locks o'the senate, and bring in the crows  
To peck the eagles.—

*Men.* Come, enough.

*Bru.* Enough, with over-measure.

*Cor.* No, take more:

What may be sworn by, both divine and human,  
ship,—

Seal what I end withal!—This double wor.  
Where one part does disdain with cause, the  
other [wisdom

Insult without all reason; where gentry, title,  
Cannot conclude, but by the yea and no  
Of general ignorance,—it must omit  
Real necessities, and give way the while

To unstable sightness: purpose so barr'd, it  
follows, [you,—

Nothing is done to purpose: Therefore, beseech  
You that will be less fearful than discreet;

That love the fundamental part of state,  
More than you doubt† the change oft; that pre-

A noble life before a long, and wish [fer  
To jump a body with a dangerous physis [out

That's sure of death without it,—at once pluck  
The multitudinous tongue, let them not lick

The sweet which is their poison: your dishonour

Mangles true judgment, and bereaves the state  
Of that integrity which should become it;

Not having the power to do the good it would,  
For the ill which doth control it.

*Bru.* He has said enough.

*Sic.* He has spoken like a traitor, and shall  
As traitors do. [answer

*Cor.* Thou wretch! despite o'erwhelm thee!—  
What should the people do with these bald  
tribunes?

On whom depending, their obedience fails  
To the greater bench: In a rebellion, [law,  
When what's not meet, but what must be, was  
Then were they chosen; in a better hour,  
Let what is meet, be said it must be meet,  
And throw their power i'the dust.

*Bru.* Manifest treason.

*Sic.* This a consul? no.

*Bru.* The Ædiles, ho!—Let him be apprehended.

*Sic.* Go, call the people; [*Exit BRUTUS.*] in  
whose name, myself

Attach thee, as a traitorous innovator,  
A foe to the public weal: Obey, I charge thee,  
And follow to thine answer.

*Cor.* Hence, old goat!

*Sen. & Pat.* We'll surety him.

*Com.* Aged sir, hands off.

*Cor.* Hence, rotten thing, or I shall shake thy  
Out of thy garments. [bones

*Sic.* Help, ye citizens.

*Re-enter BRUTUS, with the Ædiles, and a  
Rabble of Citizens.*

*Men.* On both sides more respect.

*Sic.* Here's he, that would  
Take from you all your power.

*Bru.* Seize him, Ædiles.

*Cit.* Down with him, down with him!

[Several speak.

*2 Sen.* Weapons, weapons, weapons!

[*They all bustle about CORIOLANUS*  
Tribunes, patricians, citizens!—what ho!—

Sicinius, Brutus, Coriolanus, citizens!

*Cit.* Peace, peace, peace; stay, hold, peace!

*Men.* What is about to be?—I am out of  
breath; [bunes

Confusion's near: I cannot speak:—You, tri-  
to the people,—Coriolanus, patience:—

Speak, good Sicinius.

*Sic.* Hear me, people;—Peace.

*Cit.* Let's hear our tribune:—Peace. Speak,  
speak, speak.

*Sic.* You are at point to lose your liberties:  
Marcius would have all from you; Marcius,  
Whom late you have named for consul.

*Men.* Fie, fie, fie!

This is the way to kindle, not to quench.  
*1 Sen.* To unbuild the city, and to lay all flat.

*Sic.* What is the city, but the people?

*Cit.* True,

The people are the city. [blish'd

*Bru.* By the consent of all, we were esta-  
The people's magistrates.

*Cit.* You so remain.

*Men.* And so are like to do.

*Cor.* That is the way to lay the city flat;  
To bring the roof to the foundation;

And bury all, which yet distinctly ranges,  
In heaps and piles of ruin.

*Sic.* • This deserves death.

*Bru.* Or let us stand to our authority,  
Or let us lose it:—We do here pronounce,

Upon the part o'the people, in whose power  
We were elected theirs, Marcius is worthy  
Of present death.

*Sic.* Therefore, lay hold of him;  
Bear him to the rock Tarpeian, and from  
Into destruction cast him. [thence

*Bru.* Ædiles, seize him.

*Cit.* Yield, Marcius, yield.

*Men.* Hear me one word.

Beseech you, tribunes, hear me but a word.  
*Ædi.* Peace, peace. [friend,

*Men.* Be that you seem, truly your country's  
And temperately proceed to what you would  
Thus violently redress.

*Bru.* Sir, those cold ways,  
That seem like prudent helps, are very poison-  
ous [him,

Where the disease is violent:—Lay hands upon  
And bear him to the rock.

*Cor.* No; I'll die here.

[*Drawing his Sword.*

\* Motive, no doubt, was Shakspeare's word.

† Number.

‡ Fear.

§ Risk.

|| From whence criminals were thrown, and dashed to pieces.

There's some among you have beheld me fighting; [seen me.]

Come, try upon yourselves what you have  
*Men.* Down with that sword;—Tribunes,  
withdraw awhile.

*Bru.* Lay hands upon him.

*Men.* Help, Marcius! help!

You that be noble; help him, young and old!

*Cit.* Down with him, down with him!

[In this Mutiny, the Tribunes, the Ædiles,  
and the People, are all beat in.]

*Men.* Go, get you to your house; be gone,  
All will be naught else. [away,

2 *Sen.* Get you gone.

*Cor.* Stand fast;

We have as many friends as enemies.

*Men.* Shall it be put to that?

1 *Sen.* The gods forbid!

I prythee, noble friend, home to thy house;  
Leave us to cure this cause.

*Men.* For 'tis a sore upon us,

You cannot tent yourself: Begone, 'beseech

*Com.* Come, sir, along with us. [you.]

*Cor.* I would they were barbarians, (as they  
are,

Though in Rome litter'd,) not Romans, (as they  
are not,

Though calv'd i' the porch o'the Capitol,)—

*Men.* Be gone;

Put not your worthy rage into your tongue;  
One time will owe another.

*Cor.* On fair ground,

I could beat forty of them.

*Men.* I could myself

Take up a brace of the best of them; yea, the  
two tribunes.

*Com.* But now 'tis odds beyond arithmetic;  
And manhood is call'd foolery, when it stands  
Against a falling fabric.—Will you hence,  
Before the tag\* return? Whose rage doth rend  
Like interrupted waters, and o'erbear  
What they are used to bear.

*Men.* Pray you, be gone:  
I'll try whether my old wit be in request

With those that have but little; this must be  
With cloth of any colour. [patch'd

*Com.* Nay, come away.

[*Exeunt Cor. Com. and others.*]

1 *Pat.* This man has marr'd his fortune.

*Men.* His nature is too noble for the world:  
He would not flatter Neptune for his trident,  
Or Jove for his power to thunder. His heart's  
his mouth: [vent;

What his breast forges, that his tongue must  
And, being angry, does forget that ever  
He heard the name of death. [A noise within.  
Here's goodly work!

2 *Pat.* I would they were a-bed!

*Men.* I would they were in Tyber!—What,  
the vengeance,

Could he not speak them fair?

*Re-enter BRUTUS and SICINIUS, with the  
Rabble.*

*Sic.* Where is this viper,  
That would depopulate the city, and

Be every man himself?

*Men.* You worthy tribunes,—  
*Sic.* He shall be thrown down the Tarpeian  
rock

With rigorous hands; he hath resisted law,  
And therefore law shall scorn him further trial  
Than the severity of the public power,  
Which he so sets at naught.

1 *Cit.* He shall well know,  
The noble tribunes are the people's mouths,  
And we their hands.

*Cit.* He shall, sure on't†.  
[Several speak together.

*Men.* Sir,—

*Sic.* Peace.

*Men.* Do not cry havoc†, where you  
With modest warrant. [should but hunt

*Sic.* Sir, how comes it that you  
Have help to make this rescue?

*Men.* Hear me speak:—  
As I do know the consul's worthiness,  
So can I name his faults:—

*Sic.* Consul!—what consul?

*Men.* The consul Coriolanus.

*Bru.* He a consul!

*Cit.* No, no, no, no, no.

*Men.* If, by the tribunes' leave, and yours,  
good people,

I may be heard, I'd crave a word or two;  
The which shall turn you to no further harm,  
Than so much loss of time.

*Sic.* Speak briefly then;  
For we are peremptory to despatch

This viperous traitor: to eject him hence,  
Were but one danger; and, to keep him here,  
Our certain death; therefore it is decreed  
He dies to-night.

*Men.* Now the good gods forbid,  
That our renowned Rome, whose gratitude  
Towards her deserved children is enroll'd  
In Jove's own book, like an unnatural dam  
Should now eat up her own!

*Sic.* He's a disease, that must be cut away.

*Men.* O, he's a limb, that has but a disease;  
Mortal to cut it off; to cure it, easy.

What has he done to Rome, that's worthy  
death?

Killing our enemies? The blood he hath lost,  
(Which, I dare vouch, is more than that he  
hath, [country;

By many an ounce,) he dropp'd it for his  
And what is left, to lose it by his country,  
Were to us all, that do't and suffer it,  
A brand to the end o'the world.

*Sic.* This is clean kam‡.

*Bru.* Merely¶ awry: when he did love his  
It honour'd him. [country

*Men.* The service of the foot  
Being once gangrened, is not then respected  
For what before it was.

*Bru.* We'll hear no more:—

Pursue him to his house, and pluck him thence  
Lest his infection, being of catching nature,  
Spread further.

*Men.* One word more, one word.

\* The lowest of the populace, tag, rag, and bobtail.

† Be sure on't.

‡ The signal for slaughter.

§ Deserving.

¶ Quite awry.

‡ Absolutely

This tiger-footed rage, when it shall find  
The harm of unscann'd \* swiftmess, will, too  
late, [process;  
Tie leaden pounds to his heels. Proceed by  
Lest parties (as he is beloved) break out,  
And sack great Rome with Romans.

*Bru.* If it were so,—

*Sic.* What do ye talk?

Have we not had a taste of his obedience?

Our *Ædiles* smote? ourselves resisted? Come:

*Men.* Consider this;—He has been bred i'  
the wars

Since he could draw a sword, and is ill school'd  
In boulded† language; meal and bran together  
He throws without distinction. Give me leave,  
I'll go to him, and undertake to bring him  
Where he shall answer, by a lawful form,  
(In peace) to his utmost peril.

*I Sen.* Noble tribunes,

It is the humane way: the other course  
Will prove too bloody; and the end of it  
Unknown to the beginning.

*Sic.* Noble Menenius,

Be you then as the people's officer:

Mast'ers, lay down your weapons.

*Bru.* Go not home.

*Sic.* Meet on the market-place: We'll at-  
tend you there: [ceed  
Where, if you bring not *Marcins*, we'll pro-  
In our first way.

*Men.* I'll bring him to you:—

Let me desire your company. [To the Senators.]

He must come,

Or what is worst will follow.

*I Sen.* Pray you, let's to him.

[*Ereunt.*

SCENE II. A Room in *Coriolanus's House.*

*Enter CORIOLANUS, and Patricians.*

*Cor.* Let them pull all about mine ears;  
present me

Death on the wheel, or at wild horses' heels;  
Or pile ten hills on the Tarpeian rock,  
That the precipitation might down stretch  
Below the beam of sight, yet will I still  
Be thus to them.

*Enter VOLUMNIA.*

*I Pat.* You do the nobler.

*Cor.* I muse‡, my mother

Does not approve me further, who was wont  
To call them woollen vassals, things created  
To buy and sell with groats; to show bare heads  
In congregations, to yawn, be still, and won-  
der,

When one but of my ordinance§ stood up  
To speak of peace, or war. I talk of you;

[To *VOLUMNIA.*

Why did you wish me milder? Would you  
have me

False to my nature? Rather say, I play  
The man I am.

*Vol.* O, sir, sir, sir,

I would have had you put your power well on,  
Before you had worn it out.

*Cor.* Let go.

*Vol.* You might have been enough the man  
you are,

With striving less to be so: Lesser had been  
The thwartings of your dispositions, if  
You had not show'd them how you were dis-  
Ere they lack'd power to cross you. [posed  
*Cor.* Let them hang.

*Vol.* Ay, and burn too.

*Enter MENENIUS, and Senators.*

*Men.* Come, come, you have been too  
rough, something too rough;

You must return, and mend it.

*I Sen.* There's no remedy;  
Unless, by not so doing, our good city  
Cleave in the midst, and perish.

*Vol.* Pray be counsel'd:  
I have a heart as little apt as yours,  
But yet a brain, that leads my use of anger,  
To better vantage.

*Men.* Well said, noble woman: [that  
Before he should thus stoop to the herd, but  
The violent fit o'the time craves it as physic  
For the whole state, I would put mine armour  
Which I can scarcely bear. [on,

*Cor.* What must I do?

*Men.* Return to the tribunes.

*Cor.* Well,

What then? what then?

*Men.* Repent what you have spoke.

*Cor.* For them?—I cannot do it to the gods;  
Must I then do't to them.

*Vol.* You are too absolute;  
Though therein you can never be too noble,  
But when extremities speak. I have heard  
you say,

Honour and policy, like unsevered friends,  
I' the war do grow together: Grant that, and  
tell me,

In peace, what each of them by th' other lose  
That they combine not there.

*Cor.* Tush, tush!

*Men.* A good demand.

*Vol.* If it be honour, in your wars, to seem  
The same you are not, (which, for your best  
ends, [worse,

You adopt your policy,) how is it less, or  
That it shall hold companionship in peace  
With honour, as in war; since that to both  
It stands in like request?

*Cor.* Why force|| you this?

*Vol.* Because that now it lies you on to speak  
To the people; not by your own instruction,  
Nor by the matter which your heart prompts  
you to,

But with such words that are but roted in  
Your tongue, though but bastards, and syllables  
Of no allowance, to your bosom's truth.  
Now, this no more dishonours you at all,  
Than to take in¶ a town with gentle words,  
Which else would put you to your fortune, and  
The hazard of much blood.—

I would dissemble with my nature, where  
My fortunes and my friends at stake required  
I should do so in honour: I am in this,  
Your wife, your son, these senators, the nobles

\* Inconsiderate haste.

§ Rank.

† Finely sifted.

|| Urge.

‡ Wonder.

¶ Subdue.



And you will rather show our general lowts \*  
How you can frown, than spend a fawn upon  
them [guard  
For the inheritance of their loves, and safe-  
Of what that want might ruin.

*Men.* Noble lady!— [so,  
Come, go with us; speak fair: you may salve  
Not what is dangerous present, but the loss  
Of what is past.

*Vol.* I pry'thee now, my son,  
Go to them, with this bonnet in thy hand;  
And thus far having stretch'd it, (here be with  
them.) [ness

Thy knee bussing the stones, (for in such busi-  
Action is eloquence, and the eyes of the ig-  
norant

More learned than the ears,) waving thy head,  
Which often, thus, correcting thy stout heart,  
That humble, as the ripest mulberry, [them,  
Now will not hold the handling: Or, say to  
Thou art their soldier, and being bred in broils,  
Hast not the soft way, which, thou dost con-  
fess,

Were fit for thee to use, as they to claim,  
In asking their good loves; but thou wilt  
frame

Thyself, forsooth, hereafter theirs, so far  
As thou hast power and person.

*Men.* This but done,  
Even as she speaks, why, all their hearts were  
yours:

For they have pardons, being ask'd, as free  
As words to little purpose.

*Vol.* Pry'thee now, [rather  
Go, and be ruled: although, I know, thou had'st  
Follow thine enemy in a fiery gulf,  
Than flatter him in a bower. Here is Cominius.

*Enter COMINIUS.*

*Com.* I have been i' the market-place: and,  
sir, 'tis fit

You make strong party, or defend yourself  
By calmness, or by absence; all's in anger.

*Men.* Only fair speech.

*Com.* I think 'twill serve, if he  
Can thereto frame his spirit.

*Vol.* He must, and will:—  
Pry'thee now, say you will, and go about it.

*Cor.* Must I go show them my unbarb'd  
sconce? Must I,

With my base tongue, give to my noble heart  
A lie, that it must bear? Well, I will do't:

Yet were there but this single plot to lose,  
This mould of Marcius, they to dust should

grind it, [ket-place:—  
And throw it against the wind.—To the mar-

You have put me now to such a part, which  
I shall discharge to the life. [never

*Com.* Come, come, we'll prompt you.

*Vol.* I pry'thee now, sweet son; as thou  
hast said,

My praises made thee first a soldier, so,  
To have my praise for this, perform a part  
Thou hast not done before.

*Cor.* Well, I must do't:  
Away, my disposition, and possess me

Some harlot's spirit! My throat of war  
Which quired with my drum, into a pipe [turn'  
Small as an eunuch, or the virgin voice  
That babies lulls asleep! The smiles of knaves  
Tent i' my cheeks; and school-boys' tears  
take up

The glasses of my sight! A beggar's tongue  
Make motion through my lips; and my arm'd  
knees,

Who bow'd but in my stirrup, bend like his  
That hath received an alms!—I will not do't:  
Lest I surcease to honour mine own truth,  
And, by my body's action, teach my mind  
A most inherent baseness.

*Vol.* At thy choice then.

To beg of thee, it is my more dishonour,  
Than thou of them. Come all to ruin; let  
Thy mother rather feel thy pride, than fear  
Thy dangerous stoutness; for I mock at death  
With as big heart as thou. Do as thou list.  
Thy valiantness was mine, thou suck'dst it from  
But owe'st thy pride thyself. [me;

*Cor.* Pray, be content;

Mother, I am going to the market-place;  
Chide me no more. I'll mountebank their  
loves, [beloved

Cog their hearts from them, and come home  
Of all the trades in Rome. Look, I am going:  
Commend me to my wife. I'll return consul;  
Or never trust to what my tongue can do  
I the way of flattery further.

*Vol.* Do your will. [*Exit.*

*Com.* Away, the tribunes do attend you:  
arm yourself

To answer mildly; for they are prepared  
With accusations, as I hear, more strong  
Than are upon you yet.

*Cor.* The word is, mildly:—Pray you, let us  
Let them accuse me by invention, I [go;  
Will answer in mine honour.

*Men.* Ay, but mildly.

*Cor.* Well, mildly be it then; mildly.  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *The same. The Forum.*

*Enter SICINIUS and BRUTUS.*

*Bru.* In this point charge him home, that  
he affects

Tyrannical power; If he evade us there,  
Enforce him with his envy to the people;  
And that the spoil, got on the Antiates,  
Was ne'er distributed.—

*Enter an Ædile.*

What, will he come?

*Æd.* He's coming.

*Bru.* How accompanied?

*Æd.* With old Menenius and those senators  
That always favoured him.

*Sic.* Have you a catalogue  
Of all the voices that we have procured,  
Set down by the poll?

*Æd.* I have; 'tis ready, here.

*Sic.* Have you collected them by tribes?

*Æd.* I have

*Sic.* Assemble presently the people hither

\* Common clowns.

‡ Own.

† Unshaven head.

‡ Object his hatred.

‡ Dwell.

And when they hear me say, *It shall be so*  
*I' the right and strength o' the commons,*  
 be it either [them],  
 For death, for fine, or banishment, then let  
 If I say, *die, cry fine*; if death, *cry death*;  
 Insisting on the old prerogative  
 And power i' the truth o' the cause.

*Æd.* I shall inform them

*Bru.* And when such time they have begun  
 to cry,

Let them not cease, but with a din confused  
 Enforce the present execution  
 Of what we chance to sentence.

*Æd.* Very well.

*Sic.* Make them be strong, and ready for this  
 When we shall hap to give't them. [hint,

*Bru.* Go about it.—  
 [Exit Ædile.]

Put him to choler straight: He hath been used  
 Ever to conquer, and to have his worth  
 Of contradiction: Being once chafed, he cannot  
 Be rein'd again to temperance; then he speaks  
 What's in his heart; and that is there, which  
 With us to break his neck. [looks

*Enter CORIOLANUS, MENENIUS, COMINIUS,*  
*Senators, and Patricians.*

*Sic.* Well, here he comes.

*Men.* Calmly, I do beseech you.

*Cor.* Ay, as an ostler, that for the poorest  
 piece [honour'd gods  
 Will bear the knave\* by the volume—The  
 Keep Rome in safety, and the chairs of justice  
 Supplied with worthy men! plant love among  
 us! [peace,

Throng our large temples with the shows of  
 And not our streets with war!

*1 Sen.* Amen, amen!

*Men.* A noble wish.

*Re-enter Ædile, with Citizens.*

*Sic.* Draw near, ye people.

*Æd.* List to your tribunes, audience:

*Cor.* First, hear me speak. [Peace, I say.

*Both Tri.* Well, say.—Peace, ho.

*Cor.* Shall I be charged no further than this  
 Must all determine here? [present?

*Sic.* I do demand

If you submit you to the people's voices,

Allow their officers, and are content

To suffer lawful censure for such faults

As sh<sup>ll</sup> be proved upon you?

*Cor.* I am content.

*Men.* Lo, citizens, he says he is content:

The warlike service he has done consider;  
 Think on the wounds his body bears, which  
 Like graves i' the holy churchyard. [show

*Cor.* Scratches with briers,  
 Scars to move laughter only.

*Men.* Consider further,

That when he speaks not like a citizen,

You find him like a soldier: Do not take

His rougher accents for malicious sounds,

But, as I say, such as become a soldier,

Rather than envy† you.

*Com.* Well, well, no more.

*Cor.* What is the matter,

that being pass'd for consul with full voice,  
 I am so dishonoured, that the very hour  
 You take it off again?

*Sic.* Answer to us.

*Cor.* Say then: 'tis true, I ought so.

*Sic.* We charge you, that you have contrived  
 to take

From Rome all season'd‡ office, and to wind  
 Yourself into a power tyrannical;

For which, you are a traitor to the people.

*Cor.* How! traitor?

*Men.* Nay; temperately: Your promise.

*Cor.* The fires i' the lowest hell told in the  
 people!

Call me their traitor!—Thou injurious tribune!  
 Within thine eyes sat twenty thousand deaths  
 In thy hands clutch'd§ as many millions, in  
 thy lying tongue both numbers, I would say,  
 Thou liest, unto thee, with a voice as free  
 As I do pray the gods.

*Sic.* Mark you this, people?

*Cit.* To the rock with him, to the rock with

*Sic.* Peace. [him]

We need not put new matter to his charge:

What you have seen him do, and heard him  
 speak,

Beating your officers, cursing yourselves,  
 Opposing laws with strokes, and here deying  
 Those whose great power must try him; even  
 So criminal, and in such capital kind, [this,  
 Deserves the extremest death.

*Bru.* But since he hath

Served well for Rome,—

*Cor.* What do you prate of service?

*Bru.* I talk of that, that know it.

*Cor.* You?

*Men.* Is this

The promise that you made your mother?

*Com.* Know,

I pray you,—

*Cor.* I'll know no further:

Let them pronounce the steep Tarpeian death,  
 Vagabond exile, flogging; pent to linger

But with a grain a day, I would not buy

Their mercy at the price of one fair word;

Nor check my courage for what they can give,

To have't with saying, Good morrow.

*Sic.* For that he has

(As much as in him lies) from time to time

Envid¶ against the people, seeking means

To pluck away their power; as now at last

Given hostile strokes, and that not¶ in the

presence

Of dread'd justice, but on the ministers

That do distribute it; in the name o' the people,

And in the power of us the tribunes, we,

Even from this instant, banish him our city;

In peril of precipitation

From off the rock Tarpeian, never more

To enter our Rome gates: I' the people's name

I say it shall be so.

*Cit.* It shall be so,

It shall be so; let him away: he's banish'd,

And so it shall be. [mon friends;—

*Com.* Hear me, my masters, and my coun-

\* Will bear being called a knave.

§ Gras'd.

† Injure.

‡ Of long standing.

¶ Not only.

¶ Showed hatred.

*Sic.* He's sentenced ; no more hearing.

*Com.* Let me speak :

I have been consul, and can show from \* Rome  
Her enemies' marks upon me. I do love  
My country's good, with a respect more tender,  
More holy, and profound than mine own life,  
My dear wife's estimate, her womb's in-  
crease,

And treasure of my loins ; then if I would  
Speak that—

*Sic.* We know your drift : Speak what ?

*Bru.* There's no more to be said, but he is  
banish'd,

As enemy to the people and his country :  
It shall be so.

*Cit.* It shall be so, it shall be so.

*Cor.* You common cry of curs ! whose  
breath I hate

As reek of the rotten fens, whose loves I prize  
As the dead carcasses of unburied men  
That do corrupt my air, I banish you ;  
And here remain with your uncertainty !  
Let every feeble rumour shake your hearts !  
Your enemies, with nodding of their plumes,

Fan you into despair ! Have the power still  
To banish your defenders ; till, at length,  
Your ignorance, (which finds not till it feels,)  
Making not reservation of yourselves,  
(Still your own foes,) deliver you, as most  
Abated captives, to some nation  
That won you without blows ! Despising,  
For you, the city, thus I turn my back :  
There is a world elsewhere.

[*Exeunt* CORIOLANUS, COMINIUS, ME-  
NENIUS, Senators, and Patricians.

*Æd.* The people's enemy is gone, is gone !

*Cit.* Our enemy's banish'd ! he is gone !  
Hoor! hoor !

[*The people shout, and throw up their  
Caps.*

*Sic.* Go, see him out at gates, and follow him,  
As he hath follow'd you, with all despite ;  
Give him deserved vexation. Let a guard  
Attend us through the city.

*Cit.* Come, come, let us see him out at  
gates ; come :—  
The gods preserve our noble tribunes !—Come.  
[*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The same. Before a Gate of  
the City.*

*Enter* CORIOLANUS, VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA,  
MENENIUS, COMINIUS, and several young  
Patricians.

*Cor.* Come, leave your tears ; a brief fare-  
well :—the beast † [ther,  
With many heads butts me away.—Nay, mo-  
Where is your ancient courage ? you were used  
To say, extremity was the trier of spirits ; [bear ;  
That common chances common men could  
That, when the sea was calm, all boats alike  
Show'd mastership in floating : fortune's blows,  
When most struck home, being gentle wound-  
ed, craves

A noble cunning : you were used to load me  
With precepts, that would make invincible  
The heart that cou'd them.

*Vir.* O heavens ! O heavens !

*Cor.* Nay, I pry thee, woman,—

*Vol.* Now the red pestilence strike all  
And occupations perish ! [trades in Rome,

*Cor.* What, what, what !

I shall be loved when I am lack'd. Nay,  
mother, [say,  
Resume that spirit, when you were wont to  
If you had been the wife of Hercules,  
Six of his labours you'd have done, and saved  
Your husband so much sweat.—Cominius,  
Droop not ; adieu :—Farewell, my wife ! my  
mother !

I'll do well yet.—Thou old and true Menenius,  
Thy tears are saltier than a younger man's,  
And venomous to thine eyes.—My sometime  
general

I have seen thee stern, and thou hast oft beheld  
Heart-hardening spectacles ; tell these sad  
'Tis fond\*\* to wail inevitable strokes. [women,  
As 'tis to laugh at them.—My mother, you  
wot well

My hazards still have been your solace : and  
Believe't not lightly, (though I go alone  
Like to a lonely dragon, that his fen  
Makes fear'd, and talk'd of more than seen,)  
your son

Will, or exceed the common, or be caught  
With cautelous†† baits and practice.

*Vol.* My first‡ son,  
Whither wilt thou go ? Take good Cominius  
With thee awhile : Determine on some course,  
More than a wild exposure§§ to each chance  
That starts i'th way before thee.

*Cor.* O the gods !

*Com.* I'll follow thee a month, devise with  
thee [us,

Where thou shalt rest, that thou mayst hear of  
And we of thee : so, if the time thrust forth  
A cause for thy repeal, we shall not send  
O'er the vast world to seek a single man ;  
And lose advantage, which doth ever cool  
I'th absence of the needer.

*Cor.* Fare ye well :—

Thou hast years upon thee ; and thou art too  
Of the war's surfeits, to go rove with one [full  
That's yet unbruised : bring me but out at  
gate.—

Come, my sweet wife, my dearest mother, and  
My friends of noble touch||, when I am forth,  
Bid me farewell, and smile. I pray you, come  
While I remain above the ground, you shall  
Hear from me still ; and never of me aught

\* For. † Value. ‡ Pack.

¶ The government of the people.

‡‡ Noblest.

§§ Exposure.

§ Vapour.

\*\* Foolish.

|| Subdued.

†† Insidious.

||| True metal.



But what is like me formerly.

*Men.* That's worthily  
As any ear can hear.—Come, let's not weep.—  
If I could shake off but one seven years  
From these old arms and legs, by the good  
I'd with thee every foot. [*gods.*]  
*Cor.* Give me thy hand:—  
Come. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The same. A Street near the Gate.*

*Enter SICINIUS, BRUTUS, and an Ædile.*

*Sic.* Bid them all home; he's gone, and  
we'll no further.—  
The nobility are vex'd, who, we see, have sided  
In his behalf.

*Bru.* Now we have shown our power,  
Let us seem humbler after it is done,  
Than when it was a doing.

*Sic.* Bid them home :  
Say, their great enemy is gone, and they  
Stand in their ancient strength.

*Bru.* Dismiss them home. [*Exit Ædile.*]  
*Enter VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, and MENE-  
NIUS.*

Here comes his mother.

*Sic.* Let's not meet her.

*Bru.* Why ?

*Sic.* They say, she's mad.

*Bru.* They have ta'en note of us :  
Keep on your way.

*Vol.* O, you're well met : The hoarded plague  
Requite your love ! [*o'the gods*]

*Men.* Peace, peace ; be not so loud.  
*Vol.* If that I could for weeping, you should  
hear.—

Nay, and you shall hear some.—Will you be  
gone ? [*To BRUTUS.*]

*Vir.* You shall stay too : [*To SICIN.*] I  
would I had the power  
To say so to my husband.

*Sic.* Are you mankind ?

*Vol.* Ay, fool ; is that a shame ?—Note but  
this fool,— [*ship\**]

Was not a man my father ? Hadst thou fox-  
To banish him that struck more blows for  
Than thou hast spoken words ? [*Rome,*]

*Sic.* O blessed heavens !  
*Vol.* More noble blows, than ever thou wise  
words ; [*Yet, go :—*]

And for Rome's good.—I'll tell thee what ;—  
Nay but thou shalt stay too :—I would my son  
Were in Arabia, and thy tribe before him,  
His good sword in his hand.

*Sic.* What then ?

*Vir.* What then ?  
He'd make an end of thy posterity.

*Vol.* Bastards, and all. [*Rome !*]  
Good man, the wounds that he does bear for  
*Men.* Come, come, peace.

*Sic.* I would he had continued to his country  
As he began : and not unknit himself  
The noble knot he made.

*Bru.* I would he had.

*Vol.* I would he had ? 'Twas you incensed  
the rabble :

Cats, that can judge as fitly of his worth,  
As I can of those mysteries which heaven  
Will not have earth to know.

*Bru.* Pray, let us go.

*Vol.* Now, pray, sir, get you gone :  
You have done a brave deed. Ere you go,  
As far as doth the Capitol exceed [*hear this :*]  
The meanest house in Rome, so far my son,  
(This lady's husband here, this, do you see,) *Exeunt Tribunes.*  
Whom you have banish'd, does exceed you all.

*Bru.* Well, well, we'll leave you.

*Sic.* Why stay we to be baited  
With one that wants her wits ?

*Vol.* Take my prayers with you.—  
I would the gods had nothing else to do

But to confirm my curses ! Could I meet them  
But once a day, it would unclog my heart  
Of what lies heavy to't.

*Men.* You have told them home,  
And, by my troth, you have cause. You'll sup  
with me ?

*Vol.* Anger's my meat ; I sup upon myself,  
And so shall starve with feeding.—Come, let's  
go :

Leave this faint puling, and lament as I do,  
In anger, Juno-like. Come, come, come,

*Men.* Fie, fie, fie ! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *A Highway between Rome and Antium.*

*Enter a Roman and a Volce, meeting.*

*Rom.* I know you well, sir, and you know  
me : your name, I think, is Adrian.

*Vol.* It is so, sir : truly, I have forgot you.

*Rom.* I am a Roman ; and my services are,  
as you are, against them : Know you me yet ?

*Vol.* Nicanor ? No.

*Rom.* The same, sir.

*Vol.* You had more beard, when I last saw  
you ; but your favour † is well appeared by  
your tongue. What's the news in Rome ? I  
have a note from the Volcian state, to find you  
out there : You have well saved me a day's  
journey.

*Rom.* There hath been in Rome strange in-  
surrection : the people against the senators  
patricians, and nobles.

*Vol.* Hath been ! Is it ended then ? Our  
state thinks not so ; they are in a most warlike  
preparation, and hope to come upon them in  
the heat of their division.

*Rom.* The main blaze of it is past, but a  
small thing would make it flame again. For  
the nobles receive so to heart the banishment  
of that worthy Coriolanus, that they are in a  
ripe aptness, to take all power from the people,  
and to pluck from them their tribunes for ever.  
This lies glowing, I can tell you, and is almost  
mature for the violent breaking out.

*Vol.* Coriolanus banished

*Rom.* Banished, sir.

*Vol.* You will be welcome with this intelli-  
gence, Nicanor.

*Rom.* The day serves well for them now. I  
have heard it said, the fittest time to corrupt a

\* Mean currying.

† Countenance.

man's wife, is when she's fallen out with her husband. Your noble Tullus Aufidius will appear well in these wars, his great opposer, Coriolanus, being now in no request of his country.

*Vol.* He cannot choose. I am most fortunate, thus accidentally to encounter you: You have ended my business, and I will merrily accompany you home.

*Rom.* I shall, between this and supper, tell you most strange things from Rome; all tending to the good of their adversaries. Have you an army ready, say you?

*Vol.* A most royal one: the centurions, and their charges, distinctly billeted, already in the entertainment\*, and to be on foot at an hour's warning.

*Rom.* I am joyful to hear of their readiness, and am the man, I think, that shall set them in present action. So, sir, heartily well met, and most glad of your company.

*Vol.* You take my part from me, sir; I have the most cause to be glad of yours.

*Rom.* Well, let us go together. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE IV. Antium. Before Aufidius's House.

*Enter CORIOLANUS, in mean Apparel, disguised and muffled.*

*Cor.* A goodly city is this Antium: City! 'Tis I that made thy widows; many an heir Of these fair edifices 'fore my wars Have I heard groan, and drop: thou know me not; *[stones,*

*Lost* that thy wives with spits, and boys with *Enter a Citizen.*

In pny battle slay me.—Save you, sir.

*Cit.* And you.

*Cor.* Direct me, if it be your will, Where great Aufidius lies: Is he in Antium?

*Cit.* He is, and feasts the nobles of the state At his house this night.

*Cor.* Which is his house, 'beseech you?

*Cit.* This, here, before you.

*Cor.* Thank you, sir; farewell. *[Exit Citizen.]*

O, world, thy slippery turns! Friends now fast sworn,

Whose double bosoms seem to wear one heart, Whose hours, whose bed, whose meal, and exercise,

Are still together, who twin, as 'twere, in love Unseparable, shall within this hour, On a dissension of a doitt, break out

To bitterest enmity: So, fellest foes, Whose passions and whose plots have broke their sleep

To take the one the other, by some chance, Some trick not worth an egg, shall grow dear friends,

And interjoin their issues. So with me:— My birth-place hate I, and my love's upon This enemy town.—I'll enter: if he slay me, He does fair justice; if he give me way, I'll do his country service. *[Exit.]*

SCENE V. The same. A Hall in Aufidius's House.

*Music within. Enter a Servant.*

*1 Serv.* Wine, wine, wine! What service is here! I think our fellows are asleep. *[Exit. Enter another Servant.]*

*2 Serv.* Where's Cotus! my master calls for him. Cotus! *[Exit.]*

*Enter CORIOLANUS.*

*Cor.* A goodly house: The feast smells well: Appear not like a guest. *[but I*

*Re-enter the first Servant.]*

*1 Serv.* What would you have, friend? Whence are you? Here's no place for you: Pray, go to the door.

*Cor.* I have deserved no better entertainment In being Coriolanus.

*Re-enter second Servant.*

*2 Serv.* Whence are you, sir? Has the porter his eyes in his head, that he gives entrance to such companions? Pray, get you out.

*Cor.* Away!

*2 Serv.* Away! Get you away.

*Cor.* Now thou art troublesome.

*2 Serv.* Are you so brave? I'll have you talked with anon.

*Enter a third Servant. The first meets him.*

*3 Serv.* What fellow's this?

*1 Serv.* A strange one as ever I looked on: I cannot get him out o'the house: Pr'ythee, call my master to him.

*3 Serv.* What have you to do here, fellow? Pray you, avoid the house.

*Cor.* Let me but stand; I will not hurt your hearth.

*3 Serv.* What are you?

*Cor.* A gentleman.

*3 Serv.* A marvellous poor one!

*Cor.* True, so I am.

*3 Serv.* Pray you, poor gentleman, take up some other station; here's no place for you; pray you, avoid: come.

*Cor.* Follow your function, go! And batten || on cold bits. *[Pushes him away.]*

*3 Serv.* What, will you not? Pr'ythee, tell my master what a strange guest he has here.

*2 Serv.* And I shall. *[Exit.]*

*3 Serv.* Where dwellest thou?

*Cor.* Under the canopy.

*3 Serv.* Under the canopy?

*Cor.* Ay.

*3 Serv.* Where's that?

*Cor.* I' the city of kites and crows.

*3 Serv.* I' the city of kites and crows?—What an ass it is!—Then thou dwellest with daws too?

*Cor.* No, I serve not thy master.

*3 Serv.* How, sir! Do you meddle with my master?

*Cor.* Ay; 'tis an honest service than to meddle with thy mistress:

Thou prat'st, and prat'st; serve with thy trencher, hence! *[Beats him away.]*

*Enter AUFIDIUS and the second Servant.*

*Auf.* Where is this fellow?

\* In pay † A small coin. ‡ Having derived that name from Corioli. § Fellows.  
|| Feed.

2 *Serv.* Here, sir; I'd have beaten him like a dog, but for disturbing the lords within.

*Auf.* Whence comest thou? what wouldst thou? Thy name? [name?]

Why speak'st not? Speak, man: What's thy *Cor.* If, Tullus, [Unmuffling.]

Not yet thou know'st me, and seeing me, dost Think me for the man I am, necessity [not] Commands me name myself.

*Auf.* What is thy name? [servants retire.]

*Cor.* A name unmusical to the Volcians' ears, And harsh in sound to thine.

*Auf.* Say, what's thy name? Thou hast a grim appearance, and thy face Bears a command in't; though thy tackle's torn, [name?]

Thou show'st a noble vessel: What's thy *Cor.* Prepare thy brow to frown; Know'st thou me yet?

*Auf.* I know thee not:—Thy name?

*Cor.* My name is Caius Marcius, who hath done

To thee particularly, and to all the Voices, Great hurt and mischief; thereto witness may My surname, Coriolanus: The painful service, The extreme dangers, and the drops of blood Shed for my thankless country, are requited But with that surname; a good memory \*, And witness of the malice and displeasure Which thou shouldst bear me: only that name remains;

The cruelty and envy of the people, Permitted by our dastard nobles, who Have all forsook me, hath devour'd the rest; And suffered me by the voice of slaves to be Whoop'd out of Rome. Now, this extremity Hath brought me to thy hearth; Not out of Mistake me not, to save my life; for if [hope, I had fear'd death, of all the men i' the world I would have voided thee: but in mere spite, To be full quit of those my banishers, Stand I before thee here. Then if thou hast A heart of wreak † in thee, that will revenge Thine own particular wrongs, and stop those mains ‡ [straight,

Of shame seen through thy country, speed thee And make my misery serve thy turn; so use it, That my revenged services may prove As benefits to thee; for I will fight Against my canker'd country with the spleen Of all the under † fiends. But if so be [fortunes Thou dar'st not this, and that to prove more Thou art tired, then, in a word, I also am Longer to live most weary, and present My throat to thee, and to thy ancient malice: Which not to cut, would show thee but a fool; Since I have ever follow'd thee with hate, Drawn thus of blood out of thy country's breast,

And cannot live but to thy shame, unless It be to do thee service.

*Auf.* O, Marcius, Marcius, Each word thou hast spoke hath weeded from A root of ancient envy. If Jupiter [my heart]

Should from yon cloud speak divine things, and say, [thee,

'Tis true, I'd not believe them more than All noble Marcius.—O, let me twine Mine arms about that body, where against My grained ash an hundred times hath broke, And scared the moon with splinters! Here I The anvil of my sword; and do contest [clip] As hotly and as nobly with thy love, As ever in ambitious strength I did Contend against thy valour. Know thou first I loved the maid I married; never man Sigh'd truer breath; but that I see thee here, Thou noble thing! more dances my rapt heart, Than when I first my wedded mistress saw Bestride my threshold. Why, thou Mars! I tell thee,

We have a power on foot; and I had purpose Once more to hew thy target from thy brawn †, Or lose mine arm for't: Thou hast beat me out \*\* Twelve several times, and I have nightly since Dream'd of encounters 'twixt thyself and me; We have been down together in my sleep, Unbuckling helms, fisting each other's throat, And waked half dead with nothing. Worthy Marcius,

Had we no quarrel else to Rome, but that Thou art thence banish'd, we would muster all From twelve to seventy †; and, pouring war Into the bowels of ungrateful Rome, Like a bold flood o'er-eat. O, come, go in, And take our friendly senators by the hands; Who now are here, taking their leaves of me, Who am prepared against your territories, Though not for Rome itself.

*Cor.* You bless me, Gods!

*Auf.* Therefore, most absolute sir, if thou wilt have

The leading of thine own revenges, take The one half of my commission; and set down As best thou art experienced, since thou know'st [own ways:

Thy country's strength and weakness,—thine Whether to knock against the gates of Rome, Or rudely visit them in parts remote, To fright them, ere destroy. But come in: Let me commend thee first to those, that shall Say *yea* to thy desires. A thousand welcomes! And more a friend than e'er an enemy; Yet, Marcius, that was much. Your hand! Most welcome!

[*Exeunt CORIOLANUS and AUFIDIUS.*]

1 *Serv.* [Advancing.] Here's a strange alteration!

2 *Serv.* By my hand, I had thought to have stricken him with a cudgel; and yet my mind gave me his clothes made a false report of him.

1 *Serv.* What an arm he has! He turned me about with his finger and his thumb, as one would set up a top.

2 *Serv.* Nay, I knew by his face that there was something in him: He had, sir, a kind of face, methought,—I cannot tell how to term it.

1 *Serv.* He had so: looking as it were,—

\* Memorial. † Resentment. ‡ Injuries. § Infernal. ¶ Embrace. ¶ Arm  
\*\* Full. †† Years of age.



'Would I were hanged, but I thought there was more in him than I could think.

2 *Serv.* So did I, I'll be sworn: He is simply the rarest man i' the world.

1 *Serv.* I think he is: but a greater soldier than he, you wot\* one.

2 *Serv.* Who! my master?

1 *Serv.* Nay, it's no matter for that.

2 *Serv.* Worth six of him.

1 *Serv.* Nay, not so neither; but I take him to be the greater soldier.

2 *Serv.* 'Faith, look you, one cannot tell how to say that: for the defence of a town, our general is excellent.

1 *Serv.* Ay, and for an assault too.

*Re-enter third Servant.*

3 *Serv.* O, slaves, I can tell you news; news, you rascals.

1, 2 *Serv.* What, what, what? let's partake.

3 *Serv.* I would not be a Roman, of all nations; I had as lieve be a condemned man.

1, 2 *Serv.* Wherefore? wherefore?

3 *Serv.* Why, here's he that was wont to thwack our general,—Caius Marcius.

1 *Serv.* Why do you say thwack our general?

3 *Serv.* I do not say thwack our general; but he was always good enough for him.

2 *Serv.* Come, we are fellows and friends: he was ever too hard for him; I have heard him say so himself.

1 *Serv.* He was too hard for him directly, to say the truth on't: before Corioli, he scotched him and notched him like a carbonado†.

2 *Serv.* An he had been cannibally given, he might have broiled and eaten him too.

1 *Serv.* But more of thy news?

3 *Serv.* Why, he is so made on here within, as if he were son and heir to Mars: set at upper end o'the table: no question asked him by any of the senators, but they stand bald before him: Our general himself makes a mistress of him; sanctifies himself with's hand, and turns up the white o'the eye to his discourse. But the bottom of the news is, our general is cut i' the middle, and but one half of what he was yesterday; for the other has half, by the entreaty and grant of the whole table. He'll go, he says, and sowle‡ the porter of Rome gates by the ears: He will mow down all before him, and leave his passage polled §.

2 *Serv.* And he's as like to do't, as any man I can imagine.

3 *Serv.* Do't? he will do't: For, look you, sir, he has as many friends as enemies: which friends, sir, (as it were,) durst not (look you, sir) show themselves (as we term it) his friends, whilst he's in directitude.

1 *Serv.* Directitude! what's that?

3 *Serv.* But when they shall see, sir, his crest up again, and the man in blood||, they will out of their burrows, like conies after rain, and revel all with him.

1 *Serv.* But when goes this forward?

3 *Serv.* To-morrow; to-day; presently. You shall have the drum struck up this afternoon: 'tis, as it were, a parcel ¶ of their feast, and to be executed ere they wipe their tips.

2 *Serv.* Why, then we shall have a stirring world again. This peace is nothing, but to rust iron, increase tailors, and breed ballad-makers.

1 *Serv.* Let me have war, say I; it exceeds peace, as far as day does night; it's spritely, waking, audible, and full of vent\*\*. Peace is a very apoplexy, lethargy; muffled†, deaf, sleepy, insensible; a getter of more bastard children than war's a destroyer of men.

2 *Serv.* 'Tis so: and as war, in some sort, may be said to be a ravisher; so it cannot be denied, but peace is a great maker of cuckolds.

1 *Serv.* Ay, and it makes men hate one another.

3 *Serv.* Reason; because they then less need one another. The wars, for my money. I hope to see Romans as cheap as Volcians. They are rising, they are rising.

*All.* In, in, in, in.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE VI. Rome. A public Place.

*Enter SICIPIUS and BRUTUS.*

*Sic.* We hear not of him, neither need we fear him;

His remedies are tame i' the present peace  
And quietness o'the people, which before  
Were in wild hurry. Here do we make his friends

[*had,*  
Blush that the world goes well; who rather  
Though they themselves did suffer by't, behold  
Dissentious numbers pestering streets, than see  
Our tradesmen singing in their shops, and  
About their functions friendly. [*going*

*Enter MENENIUS.*

*Bru.* We stood to't in good time. Is this Menenius?

*Sic.* 'Tis he, 'tis he: O, he is grown most Of late.—Hail, sir!

*Men.* Hail to you both!

*Sic.* Your Coriolanus, sir, is not much miss'd [*stand;*  
But with his friends; the commonwealth doth  
And so would do, were he more angry at it.

*Men.* All's well; and might have been much He could have temporized. [*better, if*

*Sic.* Where is he, hear you?

*Men.* Nay, I hear nothing; his mother and Hear nothing from him. [*his wife*

*Enter three or four Citizens.*

*Cit.* The gods preserve you both.

*Sic.* Good-e'en, our neighbours.

*Bru.* Good-e'en to you all, good-e'en to you all. [*our knees,*

1 *Cit.* Ourselves, our wives, and children, on Are bound to pray for you both.

*Sic.* Live, and thrive!

*Bru.* Farewell, kind neighbours: we wish'd Had loved you as we did. [*Coriolanus*

*Cit.* Now the gods keep you!

*Both Tri.* Farewell, farewell. [*Ex. Citizens.*

\* Know. † Meat cut across to be broiled. ‡ Pull. § Cut clear. || Vigour.

¶ Part. \*\* Rumour. †† Softened.

*Sic.* This is a happier and more comely time,  
Than when these fellows ran about the streets,  
Crying Confusion.

*Bru.* Caius Marcius was  
A worthy officer i' the war; but insolent,  
O'ercome with pride, ambitious past all think-  
Self-loving,—— [ing,

*Sic.* And affecting one sole throne,  
Without assistance\*.

*Men.* I think not so. [tion,  
*Sic.* We should by this, to all our lamenta-  
If he had gone forth consul, found it so.

*Bru.* The gods have well prevented it, and  
Sits safe and still without him. [Rome  
*Enter Edile.*

*Æd.* Worthy tribunes,  
There is a slave, whom we have put in prison,  
Reports,—the Volces with two several powers  
Are entered in the Roman territories;  
And with the deepest malice of the war  
Destroy what lies before them.

*Men.* 'Tis Aufidius,  
Who, hearing of our Marcius' banishment,  
Thrusts forth his horns again into the world:  
Which were inshell'd when Marcius stood†  
And durst not once peep out. [for Rome,

*Sic.* Come, what talk you  
Of Marcius?

*Bru.* Go see this rumourer whipp'd.—It  
The Volces dare break with us. [cannot be

*Men.* Cannot be!  
We have record that very well it can;  
And three examples of the like have been  
Within my age. But reason ‡ with the fellow,  
Before you punish him, where he heard this:  
Lest you should chance to whip your informa-  
tion,

And beat the messenger who bids beware  
Of what is to be dreaded.

*Sic.* Tell not me:  
I know this cannot be.

*Bru.* Not possible.  
*Enter a Messenger.* [going

*Mess.* The nobles, in great earnestness, are  
All to the senate house: some news is come,  
That turns † their countenances.

*Sic.* 'Tis this slave;—  
Go whip him 'fore the people's eyes:—his  
raising ‡

Nothing but his report!

*Mess.* Yes, worthy sir,  
The slave's report is seconded; and more,  
More fearful is deliver'd.

*Sic.* What more fearful?

*Mess.* It spoke freely out of many mouths,  
(How probable I do not know,) that Marcius,  
Join'd with Aufidius, leads a power 'gainst  
Rome;

And vows revenge as spacious, as between  
The young'st and oldest thing.

*Sic.* This is most likely!

*Bru.* Raised only, that the weaker sort may  
Good Marcius home again. [wish

*Sic.* The very trick on't.

*Men.* This is unlikely:

He and Aufidius can no more atone ‖,  
Than violentest contrariety.

*Enter another Messenger.*

*Mess.* You are sent for to the senate:  
A fearful army, led by Caius Marcius,  
Associated with Aufidius, rages  
Upon our territories; and have already  
O'erborne their way, consumed with fire, and  
What lay before them. [took

*Enter COMINIUS.*

*Com.* O, you have made good work!

*Men.* What news? what news?

*Com.* You have help to ravish your own  
daughters, and

To melt the city leads upon your pates;  
To see your wives dishonour'd to your noses;—

*Men.* What's the news? what's the news?

*Com.* Your temples burn'd in their cement;  
and

Your franchises, whereon you stood, confined  
Into an auger's bore ¶?

*Men.* Pray now, your news?

You have made fair work, I fear me:—Pray,  
your news?

If Marcius should be join'd with Volcians,—

*Com.* If!

He is their god; he leads them like a thing  
Made by some other deity than nature,  
That shapes man better: and they follow him  
Against us brats, with no less confidence,  
Than boys pursuing summer butterflies,  
Or butchers killing flies.

*Men.* You have made good work,  
You and your apron men; you that stood so  
Upon the voice of occupation \*\*, and [much  
The breath of garlic-eaters!

*Com.* He will shake  
Your Rome about your ears.

*Men.* As Hercules  
Did shake down mellow fruit: You have  
made fair work?

*Bru.* But is this true, sir?

*Com.* Ay, and you'll look pale  
Before you find it other. All the regions  
Do smilingly revolt †; and, who resist,  
Are only mock'd for valiant ignorance,  
And perish constant fools. Who is't can blame  
him?

Your enemies, and his, find something in him.

*Men.* We are all undone, unless

The noble man have mercy.

*Com.* Who shall ask it?

The tribunes cannot do't for shame; the people  
Deserve such pity of him as the wolf

Does of the shepherds: for his best friends, if  
they [even

Should say *Begood to Rome*, they charged him  
As those should do that had deserved his hate,  
And therein show'd like enemies.

*Men.* 'Tis true:

If he were putting to my house the brand  
That should consume it, I have not the face

To say *'Beseech you, cease.*—You have made  
fair hands,

You and your crafts! you have crafted fair!

\* Suffrage. † Stood up in its defence. ‡ Talk. § Changes. ‖ Unite.

¶ A small round hole; an auger is a carpenter's tool. \*\* Mechanics. † Revolt with pleasure.

*Com.* You have brought  
A trembling upon Rome, such as was never  
So incapable of help.

*Tri.* Say not we brought it.

*Men.* How! was it we? We loved him;  
but like beasts, [clusters,  
And cowardly nobles gave way to your  
Who did hoot him out o'the city.

*Com.* But, I fear  
They'll roar him in again. Tullus Aufidius,  
The second name of men, obeys his points  
As if he were his officer:—Desperation  
Is all the policy, strength, and defence,  
That Rome can make against them.

*Enter a Troop of Citizens.*

*Men.* Here come the clusters.—  
And is Aufidius with him?—You are they  
That made the air unwholesome, when you  
cast

Your stinking greasy caps, in hooting at  
Coriolanus' exile. Now he's coming;  
And not a hair upon a soldier's head,  
Which will not prove a whip; as many cox-  
combs,

As you threw caps up, will he tumble down,  
And pay you for your voices. 'Tis no matter;  
If he could burn us all into one coal,  
We have deserved it.

*Cit.* 'Faith, we hear fearful news.

*1 Cit.* For mine own part,  
When I said banish him, I said 'twas pity.

*2 Cit.* And so did I.

*3 Cit.* And so did I; and, to say the truth,  
so did very many of us: That we did, we did  
for the best: and though we willingly consented  
to his banishment, yet it was against  
our will.

*Com.* You are goodly things, you voices!

*Men.* You have made  
Good work, you and your cry\*! Shall us to the

*Com.* O, ay; what else? [Capitol?

[*Exeunt Com. and Men.*

*Sic.* Go, masters, get you home, be not dis-  
may'd;

These are a side, that would be glad to have  
This true, which they so seem to fear. Go  
And show no sign of fear. [home,

*1 Cit.* The gods be good to us! Come, mas-  
ters, let's home. I ever said, we were i' the  
wrong, when we banish'd him.

*2 Cit.* So did we all. But come, let's home.

[*Exeunt Citizens.*

*Bru.* Nor do not like this news.

*Sic.* Nor I. [wealth

*Bru.* Let's to the Capitol:—Would half my  
Would buy this for a lie!

*Sic.* Pray, let us go. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII. *A Camp: at a small distance  
from Rome.*

*Enter AUFIDIUS, and his Lieutenant.*

*Auf.* Do they still fly to the Roman?

*Lieut.* I do not know what witchcraft's in  
him; but

Your soldiers use him as the grace 'fore meat  
Their talk at table, and their thanks at end;  
And you are darken'd in this action, sir,  
Even by your own.

*Auf.* I cannot help it now;  
Unless, by using means, I lame the foot  
Of our design. He bears himself more proud-  
lier

Even to my person than I thought he would,  
When first I did embrace him: Yet his nature  
In that's no changeling; and I must excuse  
What cannot be amended.

*Lieut.* Yet I wish, sir,  
(I mean for your particular,) you had not  
Join'd in commission with him: but either  
Had borne the action of yourself, or else  
To him had left it solely. [sure,

*Auf.* I understand thee well; and be thou  
When he shall come to his account, he knows  
not [seems,

What I can urge against him. Although it  
And so he thinks, and is no less apparent  
To the vulgar eye, that he bears all things fairly,  
And shows good husbandry for the Volcian  
state;

Fights dragon-like, and does achieve as soon  
As draw his sword: yet he hath left undone  
That, which shall break his neck or hazard  
mine,

Where'er we come to our account.

*Lieut.* Sir, I beseech you, think you he'll  
carry Rome? [down;

*Auf.* All places yield to him ere he sits  
And the nobility of Rome are his:  
The senators and patricians love him too:

The tribunes are no soldiers; and their people  
Will be as rash in the repeal, as hasty

To expel him thence. I think he'll be to Rome,  
As is the osprey† to the fish, who takes it

By sovereignty of nature. First he was  
A noble servant to them; but he could not

Carry his honours even: whether 'twas pride,  
Which out of daily fortune ever taints

The happy man; whether defect of judgment,  
To fail in the disposing of those chances

Which he was lord of; or whether nature,  
Not to be other than one thing, not moving

From the casque‡ to the cushion§, but com-  
manding peace

Even with the same austerity and garb  
As he controll'd the war; but, one of these,

(As he hath spices of them all, not all||,  
For I dare so far free him,) made him fear'd,

So hated, and so banish'd: But he has a merit,  
To choke it in the utterance. So our virtues

Lie in the interpretation of the time:  
And power, unto itself most commendable,

Hath not a tomb so evident as a chair  
To extol what it hath done.

One fire drives out one fire; one nail, one nail;  
Rights by rights fouler, strengths by strengths

do fail. [thine,

Come, let's away. When, Caius, Rome is  
Thou art poor'st of all; then shortly art thou  
mine. [*Exeunt.*

\* Pack, alluding to a pack of hounds.

§ The chair of civil authority.

† An eagle that preys on fish.

‡ Helmet.

|| Not all in their full extent.



## ACT V.

## SCENE I. Rome. A public Place.

Enter MENENIUS, COMINIUS, SICINIUS,  
BRUTUS, and Others.

*Men.* No, I'll not go: you hear what he hath said, [him]  
Which was sometime his general; who loved  
In a most dear particular. He call'd me father:  
But what o'th'it? Go, you that banish'd him,  
A mile before his tent fall down, and kneel  
The way into his mercy: Nay, if he coy'd\*  
To hear Cominius speak, I'll keep at home.

*Com.* He would not seem to know me.

*Men.* Do you hear?

*Com.* Yet one time he did call me by my name:

I urged our old acquaintance, and the drops  
That we have bled together. Coriolanus  
He would not answer to: forbid all names;  
He was a kind of nothing, titleless,  
Till he had forged himself a name i'the fire  
Of burning Rome.

*Men.* Why, so; you have made good work:  
A pur of tribunes that have rack'd† for Rome,  
To make coals cheap: A noble memory!‡

*Com.* I minded him, how royal 'twas to par-  
When it was less expected: He replied, [don  
It was a bare petition of a state  
To one whom they had punish'd.

*Men.* Very well:  
Could he say less?

*Com.* I offer'd to awaken his regard  
For his private friends: His answer to me was,  
He could not stay to pick them in a pile  
Of noisome, musty chaff: He said, 'twas folly,  
For one poor grain or two, to leave unburnt,  
And still to nose the offence.

*Men.* For one poor grain  
Or two? I am one of those; his mother, wife,  
His child, and this brave fellow too, we are the  
grains:

You are the musty chaff; and you are smelt  
Above the moon: We must be burnt for you.

*Sic.* Nay, pray, be patient: If you refuse  
your aid

In this so never-heeded help, yet do not  
Upbraid us with our distress. But, sure, if you  
Would be your country's pleader, your good  
tongue,

More than the instant army we can make,  
Might stop our countryman.

*Men.* No; I'll not meddle.

*Sic.* I pray you, go to him.

*Men.* What should I do?

*Bru.* Only make trial what your love can do  
For Rome towards Marcius.

*Men.* Well, and say that Marcius  
Return me, as Cominius is return'd,  
Unheard; what then?—

But as a discontented friend, grief-shot  
With his unkindness? Say't be so?

*Sic.* Yet your good will  
Must have that thanks from Rome, after the  
As you intended well. [measure

*Men.* I'll undertake it:

I think he'll hear me. Yet to let his lip, [me.  
And hum at good Cominius much n. hearts  
He was not taken with; he had not died:  
The veins unfill'd, our blood is cold, and then  
We pour upon the morning, are unapt  
To give or to forgive; but when we have stuff'd  
These pipes and these conveyances of our blood  
With wine and feedi. g. we have suppler souls  
Than in our priest-like fasts: therefore I'll  
Till he be dieted to my request, [watch him  
And then I'll set upon him.

*Bru.* You know the very road into his kind  
And cannot lose your way.

*Men.* Good faith, I'll prove him,  
Speed how it will. I shall, ere long, have  
knowledge

Of my success. [Exit.

*Com.* He'll never hear him.

*Sic.* Not?

*Com.* I tell you, he does sit in gold, his eye  
Red as 'twould burn Rome; and his injury  
The gaoler to his pity. I kneel'd before him;  
'I was very faintly he said, Rise; dismiss'd me  
Thus, with his speechless hand: What he would  
do, [not,

He sent in writing after me; what he would  
Bound with an oath, to yield to his conditions:  
So, that all hope is vain,  
Unless his noble mother, and his wife;  
Who, as I hear, mean to solicit him [hence,  
For mercy to his country. Therefore, let's  
And with our fair entreaties haste them on.

[Exit.

SCENE II. An advanced Post of the Vol-  
cian Camp before Rome. The Guard at  
their Stations.

Enter to them, MENENIUS.

1 G. Stay: Whence are you?

2 G. Stand, and go back.

*Men.* You guard like men; 'tis well: But,  
by your leave,

I am an officer of state, and come  
To speak with Coriolanus.

1 G. From whence?

*Men.* From Rome.

1 G. You may not pass, you must return: our  
Will no more hear from thence. [general

2 G. You'll see your Rome embraced with  
You'll speak with Coriolanus. [fire, before

*Men.* Good, my friends,  
If you have heard your general talk of Rome,  
And of his friends there, it is lots§ to blanks,  
My name hath touch'd your ears: it is Mene-  
nius. [name

1 G. Be it so; go back: the virtue of your  
Is not here passable.

*Men.* I tell thee, fellow,  
Thy general is my lover‡: I have been [read  
The book of his good acts, whence men have  
His fame unparallel'd haply amplified;

Condescended unwillingly. † Harassed by exactions. ‡ Memorial. § Prizes. || Friend.

For I have ever verified \* my friends, [verity †  
(Of whom he's chief,) with all the size that  
Would without lapsing suffer: nay, sometimes,  
Like to a bowl upon a subtle ‡ ground,  
I have tumbled past the throw; and in his praise  
Have, almost, stamp'd the leasing §: Therefore,  
I must have leave to pass. [fellow,

1 G. 'Faith, sir, if you had told as many lies  
in his behalf, as you have uttered words in your  
own, you should not pass here: no, though it  
were as virtuous to lie, as to live chastely.  
Therefore, go back.

Men. Pr'ythee, fellow, remember my name  
is Menenius, always factionary on the party of  
your general.

2 G. Howsoever you have been his liar, (as  
you say you have) I am one that, telling true  
under him, must say, you cannot pass. There-  
fore, go back.

Men. Has he dined, can'st thou tell? for I  
would not speak with him till after dinner.

1 G. You are a Roman, are you?

Men. I am as thy general is.

1 G. Then you should hate Rome, as he does.  
Can you, when you have pushed out your gates  
the very defender of them, and, in a violent po-  
pular ignorance, given your enemy your shield,  
think to front his revenges with the easy groans  
of old women, the virginal palms of your daugh-  
ters, or with the palsied intercession of such a  
decayed dotant || as you seem to be? Can you  
think to blow out the intended fire your city  
is ready to flame in, with such weak breath as  
this? No, you are deceived; therefore, back  
to Rome, and prepare for your execution: you  
are condemned, our general has sworn you out  
of reprieve and pardon.

Men. Sirrah, If thy captain knew I were  
here, he would use me with estimation.

2 G. Come, my captain knows you not.

Men. I mean, thy general.

1 G. My general cares not for you. Back, I  
say, go, lest I let forth your half pint of blood;—  
back,—that's the utmost of your having:—back.

Men. Nay, but fellow, fellow,—

Enter CORIOLANUS and AUFIDIUS.

Cor. What's the matter?

Men. Now, you companion ¶, I'll say an er-  
rand for you; you shall know now that I am  
in estimation; you shall perceive that a Jack \*\*  
guardant cannot office me from my son Corio-  
lanus: guess, but by my entertainment with him,  
if thou stand'st not i' the state of hanging, or of  
some death more long in spectatorship, and  
crueller in suffering; behold now presently, and  
swoon for what's to come upon thee.—The glo-  
rious gods sit in hourly synod about thy parti-  
cular prosperity, and love thee no worse than  
thy old father Menenius does! O, my son! my  
son! thou art preparing fire for us; look thee,  
here's water to quench it. I was hardly moved to  
come to thee; but being assured, none but my-  
self could move thee, I have been blown out of  
your gates with sighs; and conjure thee to par-  
don Rome, and thy petitionary countrymen.

The good gods assuage thy wrath, and turn the  
dregs of it upon this varlet here; this, who,  
like a block, hath denied my access to thee.

Cor. Away!

Men. How! away?

[affairs

Cor. Wife, mother, child, I know not. My  
Are servanted to others: Though I owe  
My revenge properly, my remission lies  
In Volcian breasts. That we have been familiar,  
Ingrate forgetfulness shall poison, rather [gone.  
Than pity, note how much.—Therefore, be  
Mine ears against your suits are stronger, than  
Your gates against my force. Yet, for † I loved  
Take this along; I writ it for thy sake, [thee,

[Gives a Letter.

And would have sent it. Another word, Me-  
nenius, [dius,  
I will not hear thee speak.—This man, Aufi-  
Was my beloved in Rome: yet thou behold'st—  
Auf. You keep a constant temper.

[Exeunt CORIOLANUS and AUFIDIUS.

1 G. Now, sir, is your name Menenius.

2 G. 'Tis a spell, you see, of much power:  
You know the way home again.

1 G. Do you hear how we are shent ‡ for  
keeping your greatness back? [swoon?

2 G. What cause, do you think, I have to

Men. I neither care for the world, nor your  
general: for such things as you, I can scarce  
think there's any, you are so slight. He that  
hath a will to die by himself, fears it not from  
another. Let your general do his worst. For  
you, be that you are long; and your misery  
increase with your age! I say to you, as I was  
said to, Away! [Exit.

1 G. A noble fellow, I warrant him.

2 G. The worthy fellow is our general: He  
is the rock, the oak not to be wind-shaken.

[Exeunt.

### SCENE III. The Tent of Coriolanus.

Enter CORIOLANUS, AUFIDIUS, and Others.

Cor. We will before the walls of Rome to-  
morrow

Set down our host.—My partner in this action,  
You must report to the Volcian lords, how  
I have borne this business. [plainly §§

Auf. Only their ends

You have respected; stopp'd your ears against  
The general suit of Rome; never admitted  
A private whisper, no, not with such friends  
That thought them sure of you.

Cor. This last old man,

Whom with a crack'd heart I have sent to  
Rome,

Loved me above the measure of a father;  
Nay, godded me, indeed. Their latest refuge  
Was to send him: for whose old love, I have  
(Though I show'd sourly to him,) once more  
offer'd

The first conditions, which they did refuse,  
And cannot now accept, to grace him only,  
That thought he could do more; a very little  
I have yielded too: Fresh embassies, and suits,

\* Proved to.

† Truth.

‡ Deceitful.

§ Lie.

|| Dotard.

¶ Fellow.

\*\* Jack in office.

†† Because.

‡‡ Reprimanded.

§§ Openly.

Nor from the state, nor private friends, here-  
after

Will I lend ear to.—Ha! what shout is this!  
[*Shout within.*]

Shall I be tempted to infringe my vow  
In the same time 'tis made? I will not.—

*Enter in mourning habits VIRGILIA, VOL-  
LUMNIA, leading young MARCIUS, VALE-  
RIA, and Attendants.*

My wife comes foremost; then the honour'd  
mould

Wherein this trunk was framed, and in her  
The grand-child to her blood. But, out, affec-

Al! bond and privilege of nature, break! [*tion!*]  
Let it be virtuous, to be obstinate.— [eyes,

What is that curt'sy worth? or those doves?  
Which can make gods foreworn?—I melt, and

am not [bows;  
Of stronger earth than others.—My mother

As if Olympus to a molehill should  
In supplication nod: and my young boy

Hath an aspect of intercession, which  
Great nature cries, *Deny not*.—Let the Voices

Plow Rome, and harrow Italy; I'll never  
Be such a gosling\* to obey instinct; but stand,

As if a man were author of himself,  
And knew no other kin.

*Vir.* My lord and husband!  
*Cor.* These eyes are not the same I wore in

home.  
*Vir.* The sorrow, that delivers us thus

Makes you think so. [changed,  
*Cor.* Like a dull actor now,

I have forgot my part, and I am out,  
Even to a full disgrace. Best of my flesh,

Forgive my tyranny; but do not say,  
For that, *Forgive our Romans*.—O, a kiss

Long as my exile, sweet as my revenge!  
Now by the jealous queen† of heaven, that kiss

I carried from thee, dear; and my true lip  
Hath virgin'd it e'er since.—You gods! I praye,

And the most noble mother of the world  
Leave unsaluted: Sink, my knee, i' the earth;

[*Kneels.*  
Of thy deep duty more impression show

Than that of common sons.  
*Vol.* O stand up, bless'd!

Whilst, with no softer cushion than the flint,  
I kneel before thee; and unproperly

Show duty, as mistaken all the while  
Between the child and parent. [*Kneels.*

*Cor.* What is this?  
Your knees to me? to your corrected son?

Then let the pebbles on the hungry beach  
Fillip the stars; then let the mutinous winds

Strike the proud cedars 'gainst the fiery sun;  
Murd'ring impossibility, to make

What cannot be, slight work.  
*Vol.* Thou art my warrior;

I help to frame thee. Do you know this lady?  
*Cor.* The noble sister of Publicola,

The moon of Rome; chaste as the icicle,  
That's curdled by the frost from purest snow,

And hangs on Dian's temple: Dear Valeria!  
*Vol.* This is a poor epitome of yours,

Which, by the interpretation of full time,

May show like all yourself.

*Cor.* The god of soldiers,  
With the consent of supreme Jove, inform

Thy thoughts with nobleness; that thou may'st  
prove

To shame invulnerable, and stick i' the wars  
Like a great sea mark, standing every flaw ‡,

And saving those that eye thee!  
*Vol.* Your knee, sirrah.

*Cor.* That's my brave boy.  
*Vol.* Even he, your wife, this lady, and

Are suitors to you. [myself,  
*Cor.* I beseech you, peace:

Or, if you'd ask, remember this before;  
The things I have forsworn to grant, may never

Be held by you denials. Do not bid me  
Dismiss my soldiers, or capitulate

Again with Rome's mechanics:—I'll me not  
Wherein I seem unnatural: Desire not

To allay my rages and revenges, with  
Your colder reasons.

*Vol.* O, no more, no more!  
You have said you will not grant us any thing;

For we have nothing else to ask, but that  
Which you deny already: Yet we will ask;

That, if you fail in our request, the blame  
May hang upon your hardness: therefore hear

us. [we'll  
*Cor.* Aufidius, and you, Volces, mark; for

Hear nought from Rome in private.—Your  
request?

*Vol.* Should we be silent and not speak, our  
raiment,

And state of bodies, would bewray § what life  
We have led since thy exile. Think with

thyself,  
How more unfortunate than all living women

Are we come hither: since that thy sight,  
which should [with comforts,

Make our eyes flow with joy, hearts dance  
Constrains them weep, and shake with fear

and sorrow;  
Making the mother, wife, and child, to see

The son, the husband, and the father, tearing  
His country's bowels out. And to poor we,

Thine enmity's most capital: thou barr'st us  
Our prayers to the gods, which is a comfort

that all but we enjoy: For how can we,  
Alas! how can we for our country pray,

Whereto we are bound; together with thy  
victory, [lose

Whereto we are bound? Alack! or we must  
The country, our dear nurse; or else thy

person,  
Our comfort in the country. We must find

An evident calamity though we had  
Our wish, which side should win: for either

Must, as a foreign recreant, be led [thou  
With manacles thorough our streets, or else

Triumphantly tread on thy country's ruin;  
And bear the palm, for having bravely shed

Thy wife and children's blood. For myself,  
I purpose not to wait on fortune, till [son,

These wars determine||: If I cannot persuade  
thee

Rather to show a noble grace to both parts,

\* A young goose.

† Juno.

‡ Gust, storm.

§ Betray.

|| Conclude.



Than seek the end of one, thou shalt no sooner  
March to assault thy country, than to tread,  
(trust to't, thou shalt not,) on thy mother's  
That brought thee to this world [womb,  
Vir. Ay, and on mine,

That brought you forth this boy, to keep your  
Living to time. [name

Boy. He shall not tread on me;

I'll run away, till I am bigger, but then I'll

Cor. Not of a woman's tenderness to be, [fight.

Requires nor child nor woman's face to see.

I have sat too long. [Rising.

Vol. Nay, go not from us thus.

If it were so, that our request did tend

To save the Romans, thereby to destroy

The Volces whom you serve, you might con-

demn us,

As poisonous of your honour: No; our suit

Is, that you reconcile them: while the Volces

May say, *This mercy we have show'd*; the

Romans,

*This we received*; and each in either side

Give the all-hail to thee, and cry, *Be bless'd,*

*For making up this peace!* Thou know'st,

great son,

The end of war's uncertain; but this certain,

That, if thou conquer Rome, the benefit

Which thou shalt thereby reap, is such a name,

Whose repetition will be dogg'd with curses;

Whose chronicle thus writ,—*The man was*

noble,

*But with his last attempt he wiped it out;*

*Destroy'd his country; and his name re-*

mains [me, son:

*To the ensuing age, abhorr'd.* Speak to

Thou hast affected the fine strains\* of honour,

To imitate the graces of the gods;

To tear with thunder the wide cheeks o'the air,

And yet to charge thy sulphur with a bolt

That should but rive an oak. Why dost not

speak?

Think'st thou it honourable for a noble man

Still to remember wrongs?—Daughter, speak

you: [boy:

He cares not for your weeping—Speak thou,

Perhaps, thy childishness will move him more

Than can our reasons.—There is no man in

the world [me prate

More bound to his mother; yet here he lets

Like one i' the stocks. Thou hast never in thy

Show'd thy dear mother any courtesy; [life

When she (poor hen!) fond of no second brood,

Has cluck'd thee to the wars, and safely home,

Loaden with honour. Say, my request's un-

And spurn me back: But, if it be not so, [just,

Thou art not honest; and the gods will plague

thee,

That thou restrain'st from me the duty, which

To a mother's part belongs.—He turns away:

Down, ladies; let us shame him with our

knees,

To his surname Coriolanus 'longs more pride,

Than pity to our prayers. Down; an end:

This is the last;—So we will home to Rome,

And die among our neighbours.—Nay, behold

us:

This boy, that cannot tell what he would have,  
But kneels, and holds up hands, for fellowship,  
Does reason our petition with more strength  
Than thou hast to deny't.—Come, let us go:  
This fellow had a Volcian to his mother;  
His wife is in Corioli, and his child  
Like him by chance:—Yet give us our des-  
I am hush'd until our city be afire, [patch:  
And then I'll speak a little.

Cor. O mother, mother!

[*Holding VOLUMNIA by the hands, silent.*

What have you done? Behold the heavens

do ope,

The gods look down, and this unnatural scene

They laugh at. O my mother, mother! O!

You have won a happy victory to Rome:

But, for your son,—believe it, O, believe it,

Most dangerously you have with him prevail'd,

If not most mortal to him. But, let it come:—

Aufidius, though I cannot make true wars,

I'll frame convenient peace. Now, good Au-

fidius, [heard

Were you in my stead, say, would you have

A mother less? or granted less, Aufidius?

Auf. I was moved withal.

Cor. I dare be sworn you were:

And, sir, it is no little thing, to make [sir,

Mine eyes to sweat compassion. But, good

What peace you'll make, advise me: For my

part, [you,

I'll not to Rome, I'll back with you; and pray

Stand to me in this cause.—O mother! wife!

Auf. I am glad thou hast set thy mercy and

thy honour

At difference in thee: out of that I'll work

Myself a former fortune. [Aside,

[*The Ladies make signs to CORIOLANUS.*

Cor. Ay, by and by;

[*To VOLUMNIA, VIRGILIA, &c.*

But we will drink together: and you shall bear

A better witness back than words, which we,

On like conditions, will have counter-seal'd.

Come, enter with us. Ladies, you deserve

To have a temple built you: all the swords

In Italy, and her confederate arms,

Could not have made this peace. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE IV. Rome. A Public Place.

Enter MENENIUS and SICINIUS.

Men. See you yond' coign o'the Capitol:  
yond' corner stone?

Sic. Why, what of that?

Men. If it be possible for you to displace it  
with your little finger, there is some hope the  
ladies of Rome, especially his mother, may  
prevail with him. But I say, there is no hope  
in't; our throats are sentenced, and stay † upon  
execution.

Sic. Is't possible, that so short a time can  
alter the condition of a man?

Men. There is differency between a grub  
and a butterfly; yet your butterfly was a grub.  
This Marcius is grown from man to dragon;  
he has wings; he's more than a creeping thing.

Sic. He loved his mother dearly.

Men. So did he me: and he no more re-

\* The refinements.

† Angle.

‡ Stay but for it.

members his mother now, than an eight year old horse. The tartness of his face sours ripe grapes. When he walks, he moves like an engine, and the ground shrinks before his treading. He is able to pierce a corslet with his eye; talks like a knell, and his hum is a battery. He sits in his state\*, as a thing madet for Alexander. What he bids be done, is finished with his bidding. He wants nothing of a god but eternity, and a heaven to throne in.

*Sic.* Yes, mercy, if you report him truly.

*Men.* I paint him in the character. Mark what mercy his mother shall bring from him. There is no more mercy in him than there is milk in a male tiger; that shall our poor city find: and all this is 'long of you.

*Sic.* The gods be good unto us!

*Men.* No, in such a case the gods will not be good unto us. When we banished him, we respected not them; and he returning to break our necks, they respect not us.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Sir, if you'd save your life, fly to your house;

The plebeians have got your fellow tribune, And hale him up and down; all swearing, if The Roman ladies bring not comfort home, They'll give him death by inches.

*Enter another Messenger.*

*Sic.* What's the news?

*Mess.* Good news, good news;—The ladies have prevail'd, The Volces are dislodged, and Marcius gone: A merrier day did never yet greet Rome, No, not the expulsion of the Tarquins.

*Sic.* Friend, Art thou certain this is true? is it most certain?

*Mess.* As certain as I know the sun is fire: Where have you lurk'd, that you make doubt of it? [tide, Ne'er through an arch so hurried the blown As the recomforted through the gates. Why, hark you:

[*Trumpets and Hautboys sounded, and Drums beaten, all together. Shouting also within.*

The trumpets, sackbuts, psalteries, and fifes, Tabors, and cymbals, and the shouting Roman. Make the sun dance. Hark you! [mans, [Shouting again.

*Men.* This is good news:

I will go meet the ladies. This Volumnia Is worth of consuls, senators, patricians, A city full; of tribunes, such as you, to-day; A sea and land full: You have prayed well This morning, for ten thousand of your throats, I'd not have given a doit. Hark, how they joy! [Shouting and Music.

*Sic.* First, the gods bless you for your tid. Accept my thankfulness. [ings; next,

*Mess.* Sir, we have all Great cause to give great thanks.

*Sic.* They are near the city?

*Mess.* Almost at point to enter.

*Sic.* We will meet them, And help the joy. [Going.

*Enter the Ladies, accompanied by Senators, Patricians, and People. They pass over the Stage.*

1 *Sen.* Behold our patroness, the life of Rome! Call all your tribes together, praise the gods, And make triumphant fires; strew flowers before them;

Unshout the noise that banish'd Marcius, Repeal† him with the welcome of his mother; Cry,—Welcome, ladies, welcome!—

*All.*

Welcome, ladies!

Welcome!

[*A Flourish with Drums and Trumpets.*

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. Antium. A Public Place.

*Enter TULLUS AUFIDIUS, with Attendants.*

*Auf.* Go tell the lords of the city, I am here: Deliver them this paper: having read it, Bid them repair to the market-place; where I, Even in theirs and in the commons' ears, Will vouch the truth of it. Him I accuse, The city ports§ by this hath enter'd, and Intends to appear before the people, hoping To purge himself with words: Despatch.

[*Exeunt Attendants*

*Enter three or four Conspirators of Aufidius' Faction.*

Most welcome!

1 *Con.* How is it with our general?

*Auf.* Even so

As with a man by his own alms empoison'd, And with his charity slain.

2 *Con.* Most noble sir

If you do hold the same intent wherein You wish'd us parties, we'll deliver you Of your great danger.

*Auf.* Sir, I cannot tell;

We must proceed, as we do find the people.

3 *Con.* The people will remain uncertain, whilst [either

'Twixt you there's difference; but the fall of Makes the survivor heir of all.

*Auf.* I know it;

And my pretext to strike at him admits

A good construction. I raised him, and I pawn'd [heightened,

Mine honour for his truth: Who being so He water'd his new plants with dews of flattery, Seducing so my friends: and to this end, [tery, He bow'd his nature, never known before But to be rough, unswayable, and free.

3 *Con.* Sir, his stoutness, When he did stand for consul, which he lost By lack of stooping,——

*Auf.* That I would have spoke of Being banish'd for't, he came unto my hearth; Presented to my knife his throat: I took him; Made him joint-servant with me; gave him way In all his own desires: nay, let him choose Out of my files his projects to accomplish, [ments My best and freshest men; served his design. In mine own person; help|| to reap the fame, Which he did end all his; and took some To do myself this wrong: till, at the last, [pride I seem'd his follower, not partner; and

\* Chair of state.

† To resemble.

‡ Recall.

Gates.

|| Helped.

He waged me with his countenance\*, as if I had been mercenary.

1 Con. So he did, my lord : The army marvel'd at it. And, in the last, When he had carried Rome; and that we For no less spoil than glory,— [look'd

Auf. There was it :— For which my sinews shall be stretch'd upon him,

At a few drops of women's rheum†, which are As cheap as lies, he sold the blood and labour Of our great action : Therefore shall he die, And I'll renew me in his fall. But, hark !

[Drums and Trumpets sound, with great shouts of the People.]

1 Con. Your native town you enter'd like a post,

And had no welcomes home; but he returns. Splitting the air with noise.

2 Con. And patient fools, Whose children he hath slain, their base throats With giving him glory. [tear.

3 Con. Therefore, at your vantage, Ere he express himself, or move the people With what he would say, let him feel your sword,

Which we will second. When he lies along, After your way his tale pronounced shall bury His reasons with his body.

Auf. Say no more ;

Here come the Lords.

*Enter the Lords of the City.*

Lords. You are most welcome home.

Auf. I have not deserved it. But, worthy lords, have you with heed perused What I have written to you ?

Lords. We have.

1 Lord. And grieve to hear it.

What faults he made before the last, I think, Might have found easy fines; but there to end, Where he was to begin; and give away The benefit of our levies, answering as

With our own charge‡; making a treaty where There was a yielding; this admits no excuse.

Auf. He approaches, you shall hear him.

*Enter CORIOLANUS, with Drums and Colours; a Crowd of Citizens with him.*

Cor. Hail, lords! I am returned your soldier; No more infected with my country's love, Than when I parted hence, but still subsisting Under your great command. You are to know, That prosperously I have attempted, and With bloody passage, led your wars, even to The gates of Rome. Our spoils we have brought home

Do more than counterpoise, a full third part, The charges of the action. We have made With no less honour to the Antiates§, [peace, Than shame to the Romans: And we here deliver,

Subscribed by the consuls and patricians, Together with the seal of the senate, what We have compounded on.

Auf. Read it not, noble lords ;

But tell the traitor, in the highest degree He hath abused your powers.

Cor. Traitor!—How now ?

Auf. Ay, traitor, Marcius.

Cor. Marcius!

Auf. Ay, Marcius, Caius Marcius: Dost thou think [name

I'll grace thee with that robbery, thy stol'n Coriolanus in Corioli?—

You lords and heads of the state, perfidiously He has betray'd your business, and given up,

For certain drops of salt||, your city Rome (I say, your city,) to his wife and mother:

Breaking his oath and resolution, like A twist of rotten silk; never admitting

Counsel of the war; but at his nurse's tears He whined and roared away your victory;

That pages blush'd at him, and men of heart Look'd wondering each at other.

Cor. Hear'st thou, Mars?

Auf. Name not the god, thou boy of tears,—

Cor. Ha!

Auf. No more ¶?

Cor. Measureless liar, thou hast made my heart

Too great for what contains it. Boy! O slave!—

Pardon me, lords, 'tis the first time that ever I was forced to scold. Your judgments, my

grave lords, Must give this cur the lie: and his own notion (Who wears my stripes impress'd on him; that

must bear My beating to his grave;) shall join to thrust The lie unto him.

1 Lord. Peace, both, and hear me speak.

Cor. Cut me to pieces, Volces; men and lads, [hounds!

Stain all your edges on me.—Boy! False If you have writ your annals true, 'tis there,

That like an eagle in a dovecote, I Flatter'd your Volces in Corioli:

Alone I did it.—Boy!

Auf. Why, noble lords,

Will you be put in mind of his blind fortune, Which was your shame, by this unholy brag?

Fore your own eyes and ears? [gart,

Cor. Let him die for't.

[Several speak at once.

Cit. [Speaking promiscuously.] Tear him to pieces, do it presently. He killed my son;—my daughter;—He killed my cousin Mar-

cus;—He killed my father.—

2 Lord. Peace, ho;—no outrage;—peace. The man is noble, and his fame folds in

This orb of the earth\*\*. His last offence to us Shall have judicious† hearing.—Stand, Anti-

And trouble not the peace. [dins,

Cor. O, that I had him, With six Aufidiuses, or more, his tribe,

To use my lawful sword!

Auf. Insolent villain!

Cor. Kill, kill, kill, kill, kill him.

[Aufidius and the Conspirators draw,

\* Thought me rewarded with good looks.

† Tears.

‡ Rewarding us with our own expenses.

§ People of Antium.

|| Drops of tears.

¶ No more than a boy of tears.

\*\* His fame overspreads the world.

† Judicial



and kill CORIOLANUS, who falls, and  
AUFIDIUS stands on him.]

Lords. Hold, hold, hold, hold.

Auf. My noble masters, hear me speak.

1 Lord. O Tullus.—

2 Lord. Thou hast done a deed whereat  
valour will weep. [be quiet;

3 Lord. Tread not upon him.—Masters all,  
Put up your swords. [this rage,

Auf. My lords, when you shall know (as in  
Provoked by him, you cannot,) the great  
danger

Which this man's life did owe you, you'll re-  
joice

That he is thus cut off. Please it your honours  
To call me to your senate, I'll deliver  
Myself your loyal servant, or endure  
Your heaviest censure.

1 Lord. Bear from hence his body,  
And mourn you for him : let him be regarded  
As the most noble corse that ever herald  
Did follow to his urn.

2 Lord. His own impatience  
Takes from Aufidius a great part of blame.  
Let's make the best of it.

Auf. My rage is gone,  
And I am struck with sorrow.—Take him up :  
Help, three o'the chiefest soldiers; I'll be  
one.—

Beat thou the drum that it speak mournfully :  
Trail your steel pikes.—Though in this city he  
Hath widow'd and unchilded many a one,  
Which to this hour bewail the injury,  
Yet he shall have a noble memory\*.—

Assist. [Exeunt, bearing the body of CORIO-  
LANUS. A dead March sounded.

• Memorial.

The tragedy of CORIOLANUS is one of the most amusing of our author's performances. The old man's merriment in Menenius; the lofty lady's dignity in Volumnia; the bridal modesty in Virgilia; the patrician and military haughtiness in Coriolanus; the plebeian malignity and tribunitian insolence in Brutus and Sicinius, make a very pleasing and interesting variety; and the various revolutions of the hero's fortune fill the mind with anxious curiosity. There is, perhaps, too much bustle in the first Act, and too little in the last.—  
JOHNSON.

# JULIUS CÆSAR.

## Persons represented.

JULIUS CÆSAR,  
OCTAVIUS CÆSAR, } *triumvirs, after the*  
MARCUS ANTONIUS, } *death of Julius*  
M. ÆMIL. LEPIDUS, } *Cæsar.*  
CICERO, PUBLIUS, POPILIUS LENA; senators.  
MARCUS BRUTUS, }  
CASSIUS, } *Conspirators against*  
CASCA, } *Julius Cæsar.*  
TREBONIUS,  
LIGARIUS,  
DECIDUS BRUTUS,  
METELLUS CIMBER,  
CINNA,  
FLAVIUS and MARULLUS, tribunes.  
ARTEMIDORUS, a sophist of Cnidos.  
A Soothsayer.

CINNA, a poet. Another Poet.  
LUCILIUS, TITINIUS, MESSALA, young  
CATO, and VOLUMINIUS; friends to Brutus and Cassius.  
VARRO, CLITUS, CLAUDIUS, STRATO, LUCIUS, DARDANIUS; servants to Brutus.  
PINDARUS, servant to Cassius.

CALPHURNIA, wife to Cæsar.  
PORTIA, wife to Brutus.

Senators, Citizens, Guards, Attendants, &c.

Scene, during a great part of the Play, at Rome: afterwards at Sardis; and near Philippi.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. Rome. A Street.

Enter FLAVIUS, MARULLUS, and a Rabble of Citizens.

Fla. Hence; home, you idle creatures, get you home;

Is this a holiday? What! know you not, Being mechanical, you ought not walk, Upon a labouring day, without the sign Of your profession?—Speak, what trade art

1 Cit. Why, sir, a carpenter. [thou?

Mar. Where is thy leather apron and thy rule? What dost thou with thy best apparel on?— You, sir; what trade are you?

2 Cit. Truly, sir, in respect of a fine work, I am but, as you would say, a cobbler. [man,

Mar. But what trade art thou? Answer me directly.

2 Cit. A trade, sir, that, I hope, I may use with a safe conscience; which is, indeed, sir, a mender of bad soles.

Mar. What trade, thou knave; thou naughty knave, what trade?

2 Cit. Nay, I beseech you, sir, be not out with me: yet, if you be out, sir, I can mend you.

Mar. What meanest thou by that? Mend me, thou saucy fellow?

2 Cit. Why, sir, cobbler you.

Flav. Thou art a cobbler, art thou?

2 Cit. Truly, sir, all that I live by is, with the awl: I meddle with no tradesman's matters, nor women's matters, but with awl. I am, indeed, sir, a surgeon to old shoes; when they are in great danger, I recover them. As proper men as ever trod upon neat's leather, have gone upon my handy-work.

Flav. But wherefore art not in thy shop to-day? Why dost thou lead these men about the streets?

2 Cit. Truly, sir, to wear out their shoes, to get myself into more work. But, indeed, sir, we make holiday, to see Cæsar, and to rejoice in his triumph.

Mar. Wherefore rejoice? What conquest brings he home?

What tributaries follow him to Rome, To grace in captive bonds his chariot wheels? You blocks, you stones, you worse than senseless things!

O, you hard hearts, you cruel men of Rome, Knew you not Pompey? Many a time and oft

Have you climb'd up to walls and battlements, To towers and windows, yea, to chimney-tops, [sat

Your infants in your arms, and there have The live-long day, with patient expectation, To see great Pompey pass the streets of Rome: And when you saw his chariot but appear, Have you not made an universal shout, That Tyber trembled underneath her banks, To hear the replication of your sounds, Made in her concave shores?

And do you now put on your best attire? And do you now cull out a holiday? And do you now strew flowers in his way, That comes in triumph over Pompey's blood? Be gone;

Run to your houses, fall upon your knees, Pray to the gods to intermit the plague That needs must light on this ingratitude. [fan t

Flav. Go, go, good countrymen, and, for this Assemble all the poor men of your sort \*;

Draw them to Tyber banks, and weep your  
Into the channel, till the lowest stream [tears  
Do kiss the most exalted shores of all.

[*Exeunt Citizens.*]

See, whe'r\* their basest metal be not moved;  
They vanish tongue-tied in their guiltiness.  
Go you down that way towards the Capitol;  
This way will I: Disrobe the images,  
If you do find them deck'd with ceremoniest.

*Mar.* May we do so?

You know, it is the feast of Lupercal.

*Flav.* It is no matter; let no images  
Be hung with Cæsar's trophies. I'll about,  
And drive away the vulgar from the streets:  
So do you too, where you perceive them thick.  
These growing feathers pluck'd from Cæsar's  
Will make him fly an ordinary pitch; [wing,  
Who else would soar above the view of men,  
And keep us all in servile fearfulness. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *The same. A public Place.*

*Enter in Procession, with Music, CÆSAR;  
ANTONY, for the course; CALPHURNIA,  
PORTIA, DECIVS, CICERO, BRUTUS, CAS-  
SIUS, and CASCA; a great Crowd following,  
among them a Soothsayer.*

*Cæs.* Calphurnia.—

*Casca.* Peace, ho! Cæsar speaks.

[*Music ceases.*]

*Cæs.*

*Cal.* Here, my lord.

*Cæs.* Stand you directly in Antonius' way,  
When he doth run his course.—Antonius.

*Ant.* Cæsar, my lord.

*Cæs.* Forget not, in your speed, Antonius,  
To touch Calphurnia: for our elders say,  
The barren, touched in this holy chase,  
Shake off their steril curse.

*Ant.*

I shall remember:

When Cæsar says, *Do this*, it is perform'd.

*Cæs.* Set on; and leave no ceremony out.

[*Music.*]

*Sooth.* Cæsar.

*Cæs.* Ha! who calls?

*Casca.* Bid every noise be still:—Peace yet  
again. [*Music ceases.*]

*Cæs.* Who is it in the press‡, that calls on me?  
I hear a tongue, shriller than all the music,

*Cry.* Cæsar: Speak; Cæsar is turn'd to hear.

*Sooth.* Beware the ides of March.

*Cæs.* What man is that?

*Bru.* A soothsayer bids you beware the ides  
of March.

*Cæs.* Set him before me, let me see his face.

*Cæs.* Fellow, come from the throng: Look  
upon Cæsar. [once again.

*Cæs.* What says't thou to me now? Speak

*Sooth.* Beware the ides of March. [pass.

*Cæs.* He is a dreamer; let us leave him;—

[*Sennet*]. *Exeunt all but BRU. and CÆS.*

*Cæs.* Will you go see the order of the course?

*Bru.* Not I.

*Cæs.* I pray you, do.

[part

*Bru.* I am not gamesome: I do lack some

Of that quick spirit that is in Antony.

Let me not hinder, Cassius, your desires;  
I'll leave you.

*Cas.* Brutus, I do observe you now of late:  
I have not from your eyes that gentleness,  
And show of love, as I was wont to have:  
You bear too stubborn and too strange a hand  
Over your friend that loves you.

*Bru.* Cassius,  
Be not deceived: if I have veil'd my look,  
I turn the trouble of my countenance  
Merely upon myself. Vexed I am,  
Of late, with passions of some difference,  
Conceptions only proper to myself, [vours:  
Which give some soil, perhaps, to my beha-  
But let not therefore my good friends be  
grieved;

(Among which number, Cassius, be you one;)  
Nor construe any further my neglect,  
Than that poor Brutus, with himself at war,  
Forgets the shows of love to other men.

*Cas.* Then, Brutus, I have much mistook  
your passion†, [buried

By means whereof, this breast of mine hath  
Thoughts of great value, worthy cogitations.  
Tell me, good Brutus, can you see your face?

*Bru.* No, Cassius: for the eye sees not itself,  
But by reflection, by some other things.

*Cas.* 'Tis just:

And it is very much lamented, Brutus,  
That you have no such mirrors, as will turn  
Your hidden worthiness into your eye,  
That you might see your shadow. I have heard,  
Where many of the best respect in Rome,  
(Except immortal Cæsar,) speaking of Brutus,  
And groaning underneath this age's yoke,  
Have wish'd that noble Brutus had his eyes.

*Bru.* Into what dangers would you lead me,  
Cassius,

That you would have me seek into myself  
For that which is not in me? [to hear:

*Cas.* Therefore, good Brutus, be prepared  
And, since you know you cannot see yourself  
So well as by reflection, I, your glass,  
Will modestly discover to yourself

That of yourself which you yet know not of.  
And be not jealous of me, gentle Brutus:

Were I a common laughèr, or did use  
To stale\*\* with ordinary oaths my love

To every new protester; if you know  
That I do fawn on men, and hug them hard,

And after scandal them; or if you know  
That I profess myself in banqueting

To all the ront, then hold me dangerous.

[*Flourish and Shout.*]

*Bru.* What means this shouting? I do fear  
Choose Cæsar for their king. [the people

*Cas.* Ay, do you fear it?  
Then must I think you would not have it so.

*Bru.* I would not, Cassius; yet I love him  
well:—

But wherefore do you hold me here so long?  
What is it that you would impart to me?

If it be aught toward the general good,

\* Whether.

† Honorary ornaments; tokens of respect.

A ceremony observed at the feast of *Lupercalia*. § Crowd. || Flourish of instruments.

‡ The nature of your feelings.

\*\* Allure.



Set honour in one eye, and death i' the other,  
And I will look on both indifferently :  
For, let the gods so speed me, as I love  
The name of honour more than I fear death.

*Cas.* I know that virtue to be in you, Brutus,  
As well as I do know your outward favour.  
Well, honour is the subject of my story.—  
I cannot tell what you and other men  
Think of this life; but, for my single self,  
I had as lief not be, as live to be  
In awe of such a thing as I myself.

I was born free as Cæsar; so were you:  
We both have fed as well; and we can both  
Endure the winter's cold as well as he.  
For once, upon a raw and gusty \* day,  
The troubled Tyber clashing with her shores,  
Cæsar said to me, *Darest thou, Cassius, now  
Leap in with me into this angry flood,  
And swim to yonder point?* Upon the word,  
Accoutred as I was, I plunged in,  
And bade him follow: so, indeed, he did.  
The torrent roar'd; and we did buffet it  
With lusty sinews; throwing it aside,  
And stemming it with hearts of controversy.  
But ere we could arrive the point proposed,  
Cæsar cry'd, *Help me, Cassius, or I sink.*

I, as Æneas, our great ancestor,  
Did from the flames of Troy upon his shoulder  
The old Anchises bear, so, from the waves of  
Did I the tired Cæsar: And this man [Tyber  
Is now become a god; and Cassius is  
A wretched creature, and must bend his body,  
If Cæsar carelessly but nod on him.  
He had a fever when he was in Spain,  
And, when the fit was on him, I did mark  
How he did shake: 'tis true, this god did shake:  
His coward lips did from their colour fly;  
And that same eye, whose bend doth awe the  
Did lose his lustre: I did hear him groan. [world,  
Ay, and that tongue of his, that bade the  
Romans [books,

Mark him, and write his speeches in their  
Alas! it cried, *Give me some drink*, Titinius,  
As a sick girl. Ye gods, it doth amaze me,  
A man of such a feeble temper! should  
So get the start of the majestic world,  
And bear the palm alone. [Shout. Flourish.

*Bru.* Another general shout!  
I do believe that these applauses are [Cæsar.

For some new honours that are heap'd on  
*Cas.* Why, man, he doth bestride the narrow  
Like a Colossus; and we petty men [world  
Walk under his huge legs, and peep about  
To find ourselves dishonourable graves.  
Men at some time are masters of their fates:  
The fault, dear Brutus, is not in our stars,  
But in ourselves, that we are underlings.  
Brutus, and Cæsar: What should be in that  
Cæsar? [yours?

Why should that name be sounded more than  
Write them together, yours is as fair a name;  
Sound them, it doth become the mouth as well;  
Weigh them, it is as heavy; conjure them,  
Brutus will start a spirit as soon as Cæsar.

[Shout.

Now in the names of all the gods at once,  
Upon what meat doth this our Cæsar feed,  
That he is grown so great? Age, thou art  
shamed: [bloods!

Rome, thou hast lost the breed of noble  
When went there by an age, since the great  
flood, [man?

But it was famed with more than with one  
When could they say, till now, that talk'd of  
Rome,

That her wide walks encompass'd but one man?  
Now is it Rome indeed, and room enough,  
When there is in it but one only man.

O! you and I have heard our fathers say,  
There was a Brutus† once, that would have  
brook'd

The eternal devil to keep his state in Rome,  
As easily as a king.

*Bru.* That you do love me, I am nothing  
jealous; [aim;

What you would work me to, I have some  
How I have thought of this, and of these times  
I shall recount hereafter; for this present,  
I would not, so with love I might entreat you,  
Be any further moved. What you have said,  
I will consider; what you have to say,  
I will with patience hear: and find a time  
Both meet to hear, and answer, such high  
things.

Till then, my noble friend, chew! upon this;  
Brutus had rather be a villager,  
Than to repute himself a son of Rome,  
Under these hard conditions as this time  
Is like to lay upon us.

*Cas.* I am glad that my weak words  
Have struck but this much show of fire from  
Brutus.

*Re-enter CÆSAR, and his Train,*

*Bru.* The games are done, and Cæsar is  
returning. [sleeve;

*Cas.* As they pass by, pluck Casca by the  
And he will, after his sour fashion, tell you  
What hath proceeded worthy note to-day

*Bru.* I will do so:—But look you, Cassius,  
The angry spot doth glow on Cæsar's brow,  
And all the rest look like a chidden train:

Calphurnia's cheek is pale; and Cicero  
Looks with such ferret† and such fiery eyes,  
As we have seen him in the Capitol,  
Being cross'd in conference by some senators.

*Cas.* Casca will tell us what the matter is.

*Cas.* Antonius.

*Ant.* Cæsar. [fat;

*Cas.* Let me have men about me that are  
Sleek-headed men, and such as sleep o' nights:  
Yond' Cassius has a lean and hungry look;  
He thinks too much: such men are dangerous.

*Ant.* Fear him not, Cæsar, he's not dan-  
gerous;

He is a noble Roman, and well given.

*Cas.* 'Would he were fatter:—But I fear  
him not:

Yet, if my name were liable to fear,  
I do not know the man I should avoid  
So soon as that spare Cassius. He reads much

\* Windy.

† Temperament, constitution.

‡ Lucius Junius Brutus.

§ Guess.

¶ Ruminat.

¶ A ferret has red eyes.

He is a great observer, and he looks  
Quite through the deeds of men: he loves  
no plays,

As thou dost, Antony; he hears no music:  
Seldom he smiles; and smiles in such a sort,  
As if he mock'd himself, and scorn'd his spirit  
That could be moved to smile at any thing.  
Such men as he be never at heart's ease,  
Whies they behold a greater than themselves;  
And therefore are they very dangerous.  
I rather tell thee what is to be fear'd,  
Than what I fear, for always I am Cæsar.  
Come on my right hand, for this ear is deaf,  
And tell me truly what thou think'st of him.

[*Exit CÆSAR and his Train.*]

*Casca stays behind.*

*Casca.* You pull'd me by the cloak: Would  
you speak with me?

*Bru.* Ay, Casca; tell us what hath chanced  
That Cæsar looks so sad. [to-day,

*Casca.* Why you were with him, were  
you not?

*Bru.* I should not then ask Casca what  
hath chanced.

*Casca.* Why, there was a crown offer'd him:  
and being offer'd him, he put it by with the  
back of his hand, thus; and then the people  
fell a' shouting.

*Bru.* What was the second noise for?

*Casca.* Why, for that too.

*Cas.* They shouted thrice: What was the  
last cry for?

*Casca.* Why, for that too.

*Bru.* Was the crown offer'd him thrice?

*Casca.* Ay, marry, was't, and he put it by  
thrice, every time gentler than other; and  
at every putting by mine honest neighbours  
shouted.

*Cas.* Who offer'd him the crown?

*Casca.* Why, Antony.

*Bru.* Tell us the manner of it, gentle Casca.

*Casca.* I can as well be hanged as tell the  
manner of it: it was mere foolery. I did not  
mark it. I saw Mark Antony offer him a  
crown;—yet 'twas not a crown neither, 'twas  
one of these coronets;—and, as I told you, he  
put it by once; but for all that, to my think-  
ing, he would fain have had it. Then he  
offer'd it to him again; then he put it by  
again: but, to my thinking, he was very loth  
to lay his fingers off it. And then he offer'd  
it the third time; he put it the third time by:  
and still as he refused it, the rabblement hooted,  
and clapped their chopped hands, and threw  
up their sweaty night-caps, and uttered such  
a deal of stinking breath because Cæsar refused  
the crown, that it had almost choked Cæsar;  
for he swooned, and fell down at it: And, for  
mine own part, I durst not laugh, for fear of  
opening my lips, and receiving the bad air.

*Cas.* But, soft, I pray you: What, did  
Cæsar swoon?

*Casca.* He fell down in the market-place,  
and foamed at mouth, and was speechless.

*Bru.* 'Tis very like: he hath the falling  
sickness.

*Cas.* No, Cæsar hath it not; but you, and I,  
And honest Casca, we have the falling sickness.

*Casca.* I know not what you mean by that;  
but, I am sure, Cæsar fell down. If the tag-  
rag people did not clap him, and hiss him, ac-  
cording as he pleased and displeased them, as  
they use to do the players in the theatre, I am  
no true\* man.

*Bru.* What said he when he came into  
himself?

*Casca.* Marry, before he fell down, when  
he perceived the common herd was glad he  
refused the crown, he plucked me ope his  
doublet, and offered them his throat to cut.—  
An I had been a man of any occupation †, if  
I would not have taken him at a word, I  
would I might go to hell among the rogues:—  
and so he fell. When he came to himself  
again, he said, If he had done or said any thing  
amiss, he desired their worship to think it  
was his infirmity. Three or four wenches,  
where I stood, cried, *Alas, good soul!*—and  
forgave him with all their hearts: But there's  
no heed to be taken of them; if Cæsar had  
stabbed their mothers, they would have done  
no less.

*Bru.* And after that he came, thus sad, away?

*Casca.* Ay.

*Cas.* Did Cicero say any thing?

*Casca.* Ay, he spoke Greek.

*Cas.* To what effect?

*Casca.* Nay, an I tell you that, I'll ne'er  
look you † the face again: But those that  
understood him smiled at one another, and  
shook their heads; but, for mine own part, it  
was Greek to me. I could tell you more  
news too: Marullus and Flavius, for pulling  
scarfs off Cæsar's images, are put to silence.  
Fare you well. There was more foolery yet,  
if I could remember it.

*Cas.* Will you sup with me to-night, Casca?

*Casca.* No, I am promised forth.

*Cas.* Will you dine with me to-morrow?

*Casca.* Ay, if I be alive, and your mind  
hold, and your dinner worth the eating.

*Cas.* Good; I will expect you.

*Casca.* Do so: Farewell, both.

[*Exit CÆSAR.*]

*Bru.* What a blunt fellow is this grown to be!  
He was quick mettle when he went to school.

*Cas.* So is he now, in execution  
Of any bold or noble enterprise,  
However he puts on this tardy form.  
This rudeness is a sauce to his good wit,  
Which gives men stomach to digest his words  
With better appetite. [to you:]

*Bru.* And so it is. For this time I will leave  
To-morrow, if you please to speak with me,  
I will come home to you; or, if you will,  
Come home with me, and I will wait for you.

*Cas.* I will do so:—till then, think of the  
world. [Exit BRUTUS.]

Well, Brutus, thou art noble; yet, I see,  
Thy honourable metal may be wrought  
From that it is disposed ‡: Therefore 'tis meet  
That noble minds keep ever with their likes †

\* Honest.

† A mechanic.

‡ Disposed to.

For who so firm that cannot be seduced?  
Cæsar doth bear me hard\*; but he loves  
Brutus:

If I were Brutus now, and he were Cassius,  
He should not humour me. I will this night,  
In several hands, in at his windows throw,  
As if they came from several citizens,  
Writings all tending to the great opinion  
That Rome holds of his name; wherein ob-  
Cæsar's ambition shall be glanced at: [scurely  
And, after this, let Cæsar seat him sure;  
For we will shake him, or worse days endure.  
[Exit.

SCENE III. *The same. A Street.*

*Thunder and Lightning. Enter, from opposite sides, CASCA, with his sword drawn, and CICERO.*

Cic. Good even, Casca: Brought you Cæsar home†?

Why are you breathless? and why stare you so?  
Casca. Are not you moved, when all the  
sway of earth

Shakes, like a thing unfirm? O Cicero,  
I have seen tempests, when the scolding winds  
Have rived the knotty oaks; and I have seen  
The ambitious ocean swell, and rage, and foam,  
To be exalted with the threaten'ing clouds:  
But never till to-night, never till now,  
Did I go through a tempest dropping fire.  
Either there is a civil strife in heaven;  
Or else the world, too saucy with the gods,  
Incenses them to send destruction. [ful?

Cic. Why, saw you any thing more wonder-

Casca. A common slave (you know him well  
by sight,) [burn

-held up his left hand, which did flame and  
like twenty torches join'd; and yet his hand,  
Not sensible of fire, remain'd unscorch'd.  
Besides, (I have not since put up my sword,)  
Against the Capitol I met a lion,  
Who glared upon me, and went surly by,  
Without annoying me: And there were drawn  
Upon a heap a hundred ghastly women, [saw  
Transform'd with their fear; who swore, they  
Men, all in fire, walk up and down the streets.  
And, yesterday, the bird of night did sit,  
Even at noon-day, upon the market-place,  
Hooting and shrieking. When these prodigies  
Do so conjointly meet, let not men say,  
*These are their reasons,—They are natural;*  
For, I believe they are portentous things  
Unto the climate that they point upon.

Cic. Indeed, it is a strange-disposed time:  
But men may construe things after their fashion,  
Clean from the purpose of the things them-  
selves.

Comes Cæsar to the Capitol to-morrow?

Casca. He doth; for he did bid Antonius [row.  
Send word to you, he would be there to-mor-

Cic. Good night then, Casca: this disturbed  
is not to walk in. [sky

Casca. Farewell, Cicero.

[Exit CICERO.]

*Enter CASSIUS*

Cas. Who's there?

Casca. A Roman.

Cas. Casca, by your voice.

Casca. Your ear is good. Cassius, what  
night is this?

Cas. A very pleasing night to honest men.

Casca. Whoever knew the heavens menace  
so? [of faults.

Cas. Those, that have known the earth so full  
For my part, I have walk'd about the streets,  
Submitting me unto the perilous night;  
And, thus unbraced, Casca, as you see,  
Have bared my bosom to the thunder-stone: [:  
And, when the cross blue lightning seem'd to  
open

The breast of heaven, I did present myself  
Even in the aim and very flash of it.

Casca. But wherefore did you so much tempt  
the heavens?

It is the part of men to fear and tremble,  
When the most mighty gods, by tokens, send  
Such dreadful heralds to astonish us. [of life

Cas. You are dull, Casca; and those sparks  
That should be in a Roman you do want,  
Or else you use not: You look pale, and gaze,  
And put on fear, and cast yourself in wonder,  
To see the strange impatience of the heavens:  
But if you would consider the true cause,  
Why all these fires, why all these gliding ghosts,  
Why birds, and beasts, from quality and kind; [;  
Why old men, fools, and children calculate:  
Why all these things change, from their ordi-  
Their natures and pre-formed faculties, [nance,  
To monstrous quality; why, you shall find, [rits,  
That heaven hath infused them with these spi-  
To make them instruments of fear, and warn-  
ing, [Casca,

Unto some monstrous state. Now could I,  
Name to thee a man most like this dreadful  
night; [roars

That thunders, lightens, opens graves, and  
As doth the lion in the Capitol:  
A man no mightier than thyself, or me,  
In personal action; yet prodigious\*\* grown,  
And fearful as these strange eruptions are.

Casca. 'Tis Cæsar that you mean: Is it not,  
Cassius?

Cas. Let it be who it is: for Romans now  
Have the west and limbs like to their ancestors;  
But, woe the while! our fathers' minds are  
dead,

And we are govern'd with our mothers' spirits;  
Our yoke and suzerance show us womanish.

Casca. Indeed, they say, the senators to-  
Mean to establish Cæsar as a king: [morrow  
And he shall wear his crown by sea and land,  
In every place, save here in Italy. [then;

Cas. I know where I will wear this dagger  
Cassius from bondage will deliver Cassius:  
Therein, ye gods, you make the weak most  
strong;

Therein, ye gods, you tyrants do defeat:  
Nor stony tower, nor walls of beaten brass,

\* Has an unfavourable opinion of me.

† Entirely.

‡ Bott.

\*\* Portentous.

Cajole.

† Did you attend Cæsar home

Why they deviate from quality and nature.

† Miracles.



Nor airless dungeon, nor strong links of iron,  
Can be retentive to the strength of spirit;  
But life, being weary of these worldly bars,  
Never lacks power to dismiss itself.  
If I know this, know all the world besides,  
That part of tyranny that I do bear,  
I can shake off at pleasure.

*Casca.* So can I:  
So every bondman in his own hand bears  
The power to cancel his captivity. [then?]

*Cas.* And why should Cæsar be a tyrant  
Poor man! I know he would not be a wolf,  
But that he sees the Romans are but sheep:  
He were no lion, were not Romans hinds\*.  
Those that with haste will make a mighty fire,  
Begin it with weak straws: What trash is  
Rome,

What rubbish, and what offal, when it serves  
For the base matter to illuminate  
So vile a thing as Cæsar? But, O grief!  
Where hast thou led me? I, perhaps, speak this  
Before a willing bondman: then I know  
My answer must be made: But I am arm'd,  
And dangers are to me indifferent. [man,

*Casca.* You speak to Casca; and to such a  
That is no fleeing tell-tale. Hold my hand:  
Be factious† for redress of all these griefs;  
And I will set this foot of mine as far  
As who goes farthest.

*Cas.* There's a bargain made.  
Now know you, Casca, I have moved already  
Some certain of the noblest-minded Romans,  
To undergo, with me, an enterprise  
Of honourable-dangerous consequence;  
And I do know, by this, they stay for me  
In Pompey's porch: for now, this fearful night,  
There is no stir, or walking in the streets;  
And the complexion of the element  
Is favour'd‡, like the work we have in hand,  
Most bloody, fiery, and most terrible.

*Enter CINNA.*

*Casca.* Stand close awhile, for here comes  
one in haste.

*Cas.* 'Tis Cinna, I do know him by his gait||  
He is a friend.—Cinna, where haste you so?

*Cin.* To find out you: Who's that? Metellus  
Cimber?

*Cas.* No, it is Casca; one incorporate  
To our attempts. Am I not staid for, Cinna?

*Cin.* I am glad on't. What a fearful night  
is this! [sighs]

There's two or three of us have seen strange  
*Cas.* Am I not staid for, Cinna? Tell me.

*Cin.* Yes  
You are. O, Cassius, if you could but win  
The noble Brutus to our party——

*Cas.* Be you content: Good Cinna, take this  
paper,

and look you lay it in the prætor's chair,  
Where Brutus may but find it; and throw this  
In at his window: set this up with wax  
Upon old Brutus' statue: all this done,  
Repair to Pompey's porch, where you shall  
find us.

Is Decius Brutus and Trebonius there?

*Cin.* All but Metellus Cimber; and he's  
gone

To seek you at your house. Well, I will hie,  
And so bestow these papers as you bade me.

*Cas.* That done, repair to Pompey's theatre.  
[Exit CINNA.]

Come, Casca, you and I will, yet, ere day,  
See Brutus at his house: three parts of him  
Is ours already; and the man entire,  
Upon the next encounter, yields him ours.

*Casca.* O, he sits high in all the people's  
hearts:

And that, which would appear offence in us,  
His countenance, like richest alchymy,  
Will change to virtue, and to worthiness.

*Cas.* Him, and his worth, and our great  
need of him,

You have right well conceited. Let us go,  
For it is after midnight; and, ere day,  
We will awake him, and be sure of him.

[Exit.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *The same.* Brutus's Orchard.

*Enter BRUTUS.*

*Bru.* What, Lucius! ho!

I cannot, by the progress of the stars,  
Give guess how near to-day.—Lucius, I say!—  
I would it were my fault to sleep so soundly.  
When, Lucius, when? Awake, I say: What,  
Lucius!

*Enter LUCIUS.*

*Luc.* Call'd you, my lord?

*Bru.* Get me a taper in my study, Lucius:  
When it is lighted, come and call me here.

*Luc.* I will, my lord. [Exit.]

*Bru.* It must be by his death: and, for my  
part,

I know no personal cause to spurn at him,  
But for the general. He would be crown'd:—

How that might change his nature, there's the  
question:

It is the bright day, that brings forth the adder;  
And that craves wary walking. Crown him?—

That;—  
And then, I grant, we put a sting in him,  
That at his will he may do danger with.

The abuse of greatness is when it disjoins  
Remorse\*\* from power: And, to speak truth of  
Cæsar,

I have not known when his affections sway'd  
More than his reason. But 'tis a common

proof†,†  
That lowliness is young ambition's ladder,  
Whereto the climber-upward turns his face:

But when he once attains the upmost round,  
He then unto the ladder turns his back,

Looks in the clouds, scorning the base degrees:‡‡

\* Deer. † Here's my hand.

† Active.

§ Resembles.

|| Air of walking.

\* An exclamation of impatience.

\*\* Pity, tenderness.

†† Experience.

‡‡ Low steps.

By which he did ascend : So Cæsar may ;  
Then, lest he may, prevent. And, since the  
quarrel

Will bear no colour for the thing he is,  
Fashion it thus ; that what he is, augmented,  
Would run to these and these extremities :  
And therefore think him as a serpent's egg,  
Which, hatch'd, would, as his kind \*, grow  
And kill him in the shell. *mischievous ;*

*Re-enter Lucius.*

*Luc.* The taper burneth in your closet, sir.  
Searching the window for a flint I found  
This paper, thus seal'd up ; and, I am sure,  
It did not lie there when I went to bed.

*Bru.* Get you to bed again, it is not day.  
Is not to-morrow, boy, the ides of March ?

*Luc.* I know not, sir. *[word.]*

*Bru.* Look in the calendar, and bring me

*Luc.* I will, sir. *[Exit.]*

*Bru.* The exhalations, whizzing in the air,  
Give so much light, that I may read by them.

*[Opens the Letter, and reads.]*

*Brutus, thou sleep'st ; awake, and see thyself.*

*Shall Rome, &c. Speak, strike, redress !*

*Brutus, thou sleep'st ; awake,——*

Such instigations have been often dropp'd  
Where I have took them up.

*Shall Rome, &c. Thus must I piece it out :*  
Shall Rome stand under one man's awe ?

What ! Rome ?

My ancestors did from the streets of Rome  
The Tarquin drive, when he was call'd a king.  
*Speak, strike, redress !*—Am I entreated then  
To speak, and strike ? O Rome ! I make thee  
promise,

If the redress will follow, thou receivest  
Thy full petition at the hand of Brutus !

*Re-enter Lucius.*

*Luc.* Sir, March is wasted fourteen days.

*—[Knock within.]*

*Bru.* 'Tis good. Go to the gate ; somebody  
knocks. *[Exit Lucius.]*

Since Cassius first did whet me against Cæsar,  
I have not slept.

Between the acting of a dreadful thing  
And the first motion, all the interim is  
Like a phantasma †, or a hideous dream :  
The genius, and the mortal instruments,  
Are then in council ; and the state of man,  
Like to a little kingdom, suffers then  
The nature of an insurrection.

*Re-enter Lucius.*

*Luc.* Sir, 'tis your brother Cassius at the  
Who doth desire to see you. *[door,]*

*Bru.* Is he alone ?

*Luc.* No, sir, there are more with him.

*Bru.* Do you know them ?

*Luc.* No, sir ; their hats are pluck'd about  
their ears,

And half their faces buried in their cloaks,  
That by no means I may discover them  
By any mark of favour ‡.

*Bru.* Let them enter.

*[Exit Lucius.]*

They are the faction. O conspiracy ! [night,  
Shamest thou to show thy dangerous brow by  
When evils are most free ! O, then, by day,  
Where wilt thou find a cavern dark enough  
To mask thy monstrous visage ? Seek none,  
conspiracy ;

Hide it in smiles and affability :

For if thou path thy native semblance § on,  
Not Erebus ¶ itself were dim enough

To hide thee from prevention.

*Enter Cassius, Casca, Decius, Cinna,  
Metellus Cimber, and Trebonius.*

*Cas.* I think we are too bold upon your  
rest :

Good morrow, Brutus ; Do we trouble you ?

*Bru.* I have been up this hour ; awake, all  
night.

Know I these men that come along with you ?

*Cas.* Yes, every man of them ; and no man  
here

But honours you : and every one doth wish  
You had but that opinion of yourself,  
Which every noble Roman bears of you.

This is Trebonius.

*Bru.* He is welcome hither.

*Cas.* This Decius Brutus.

*Bru.* He is welcome too.

*Cas.* This, Casca ; this, Cinna ;

And this, Metellus Cimber.

*Bru.* They are all welcome.

What watchful cares do interpose themselves  
Betwixt your eyes and night ?

*Cas.* Shall I entreat a word ? *[They whisper.]*

*Dec.* Here lies the east ; Doth not the day  
*Casca.* No. *[break here ?]*

*Cin.* O, pardon, sir, it doth ; and yon grey  
lines,

That fret the clouds, are messengers of day.

*Casca.* You shall confess that you are both  
deceived.

Here, as I point my sword, the sun arises ;  
Which is a great way growing on the south,  
Weighing the youthful season of the year.

Some two months hence, up higher toward  
the north

He first presents his fire ; and the high east  
Stands, as the capitol, directly here. *[one.]*

*Bru.* Give me your hands all over, one by  
*Cas.* And let us swear our resolution.

*Bru.* No, not an oath : If not the face ¶  
of men,

The sufferance of our souls, the time's abuse,—  
If these be motives weak, break off betimes,

And every man hence to his idle bed ;

So let high-sighted tyranny range on,  
Till each man drop by lottery \*\*. But if these,

As I am sure they do, bear fire enough

To kindle cowards, and to steel with valour  
The melting spirits of women ; then, country-  
men,

What need we any spur, but our own cause,  
To prick us to redress ? what other bond,

Than secret Romans, that have spoke the word  
And will not palter †† ? and what other oath,

Than honesty to honesty engaged

\* Nature.

† Visionary.

‡ Countenance.

§ Walk in thy true form.

¶ Hell.

¶ Perhaps Shakspeare wrote *faith*.

\*\* Lot.

†† Prevaricate.

That this shall be, or we will fall for it?  
Swear priests, and cowards, and men cautious\*,

Old feeble carrions, and such suffering souls  
That welcome wrongs; unto bad causes swear  
Such creatures as men doubt; but do not stain  
The even virtue of our enterprise,  
Nor the insuppressive mettle of our spirits,  
To think that or our cause, or our performance,

Did need an oath; when every drop of blood  
That every Roman bears, and nobly bears,  
Is guilty of a several bastardy.

If he do break the smallest particle  
Of any promise that hath pass'd from him.

*Cas.* But what of Cicero? Shall we sound him?

I think, he will stand very strong with us.

*Casca.* Let us not leave him out.

*Cin.* No, by no means.

*Met.* O let us have him; for his silver hairs  
Will purchase us a good opinion†,

And buy men's voices to commend our deeds:  
It shall be said, his judgment ruled our hands;  
Our youths, and wildness, shall no whit appear,  
But all be buried in his gravity, [pear,

*Bru.* O, name him not; let us not break†  
with him;

For he will never follow any thing  
That other men begin.

*Cas.* Then leave him out.

*Casca.* Indeed, he is not fit.

*Dec.* Shall no man else be touch'd but only  
Cæsar? [meet,

*Cas.* Decius, well urged: I think it is not  
Mark Antony, so well beloved of Cæsar,  
Should outlive Cæsar: We shall find of him  
A shrewd contriver; and you know his  
means,

If he improves them, may well stretch so far,  
As to annoy us all: which to prevent,  
Let Antony and Cæsar fall together.

*Bru.* Our course will seem too bloody,  
Caius Cassius,

To cut the head off, and then hack the limbs;  
Like wrath in death, and envy‡ afterwards:  
For Antony is but a limb of Cæsar.

Let us be sacrificers, but no butchers, Caius.  
We all stand up against the spirit of Cæsar;  
And in the spirit of men there is no blood:  
O, that we then could come by Cæsar's spirit,  
And not dismember Cæsar! But, alas,  
Cæsar must bleed for it! And, gentle friends,  
Let's kill him boldly, but not wrathfully;  
Let's carve him as a dish fit for the gods,  
Not hew him as a carcase fit for hounds:  
And let our hearts, as subtle masters do,  
Stir up their servants to an act of rage,  
And after seem to chide them. This shall  
make

Our purpose necessary, and not envious:  
Which so appearing to the common eyes,  
We shall be call'd purgers, not murderers.  
And for Mark Antony, think not of him;

For he can do no more than Cæsar's arm,  
When Cæsar's head is off.

*Cas.*

Yet I do fear him:

For in the ingrafted love he bears to Cæsar,—  
*Bru.* Alas! good Cassius, do not think of  
If he love Cæsar, all that he can do [him]:  
Is to himself; take thought, and die for Cæsar:  
And that were much he should; for he is given  
To sports, to wildness, and much company.

*Treb.* There is no fear in him; let him not  
die;

For he will live and laugh at this hereafter  
[Clock strikes:

*Bru.* Peace, count the clock.

*Cas.* The clock hath striken three.

*Treb.* 'Tis time to part.

*Cis.*

But it is doubtful yet,

Wher' Cæsar will come forth to-day, or no:

For he is superstitious grown of late;

Quite from the main opinion he held once  
Of fantasy, of dreams, and ceremonies¶.

It may be, these apparent prodigies,

The unaccustom'd terror of this night,

And the persuasion of his augurers\*\*,

May hold him from the capitol to-day.

*Dec.* Never fear that: If he be so resolved

I can o'ersway him: for he loves to hear,

That unicorns may be betray'd with trees,

And bears with glasses, elephants with holes,

Lions with toils, and men with flatterers:

But, when I tell him he hates flatterers,

He says he does; being then most flattered.

Let me work:

For I can give his honour the true bent;

And I will bring him to the Capitol.

*Cas.* Nay, we will all of us be there to fetch  
him. [most†

*Bru.* By the eighth hour: Is that the utter-

*Cin.* Be that the uttermost, and fail not then.

*Met.* Caius Ligarius doth bear Cæsar hard,

Who rated him for speaking well of Pompey;

I wonder, none of you have thought of him.

*Bru.* Now, good Metellus, go along by him††:  
He loves me well, and I have given him  
reasons;

Send him but hither, and I'll fashion him.

*Cas.* The morning comes upon us: We'll  
leave you, Brutus:— [member

And, friends, disperse yourselves: but all re-  
What you have said, and show yourselves true

Romans. [silly;

*Bru.* Good gentlemen, look fresh and mer-  
Let not our looks put on†† our purposes;

But bear it as our Roman actors do,

With untired spirits, and formal constancy:

And so, good-morrow to you every one.

[Exeunt all but BRUTUS.

Boy! Lucius!—Fast asleep? It is no matter;

Enjoy the honey-heavy dew of slumber:

Thou hast no figures‡‡, nor no fantasies,

Which busy care draws in the brains of men;

Therefore thou sleep'st so sound.

Enter PORTIA.

Por.

Brutus, my lord

\* Cautious.

† Character.

‡ Let us not break the matter to him.

§ Malice.

|| Whether.

¶ Omens at sacrifices.

\*\* Prognosticators.

By his house.

‡‡ Show our designs.

§§ Shapes created by imagination



*Bru.* Portia, what mean you? Wherefore rise you now?

It is not for your health, thus to commit Your weak condition to the raw-cold morning.

*Por.* Nor for you's neither. You have ungently, Brutus, [per,  
Stole from my bed: And yesternight, at sup-  
You suddenly arose, and walk'd about,  
Musing, and sighing with your arms across:  
And when I ask'd you what the matter was,  
You stared upon me with ungentle looks:  
I urg'd you further; then you scratch'd your head,

And too impatiently stamp'd with your foot:  
Yet I insist, yet you answer'd not;  
But, with an angry wafture of your hand,  
Gave sign for me to leave you: So I did;  
Fearing to strengthen that impatience, [withal,  
Which seem'd too much enkindled; and,  
Hoping it was but an effect of humour, [man,  
Which sometime hath his hour with every  
It will not let you eat, nor talk, nor sleep;  
And, could it work so much upon your shape,  
As it hath much prevail'd on your condition\*,  
I should not know you, Brutus. Dear my lord,  
Make me acquainted with your cause of grief.

*Bru.* I am not well in health, and that is all.

*Por.* Brutus is wise, and were he not in health,

He would embrace the means to come by it.

*Bru.* Why, so I do:—Good Portia, go to

*Por.* Is Brutus sick? and is it physical [bed.  
To walk unbraced, and suck up the humours  
Of the dank + morning? What, is Brutus sick;  
And will he steal out of his wholesome bed,  
To dare the vile contagion of the night?  
And tempt the rheumy; and unpurged air  
To add unto his sickness? No, my Brutus;  
You have some sick offence within your mind,  
Which, by the right and virtue of my place,  
I ought to know of: And, upon my knees,  
I charm you, by my once commended beauty,  
By all your vows of love, and that great vow  
Which did incorporate and make us one,  
That you unfold to me, yourself, your half,  
Why you are heavy; and what men to-night  
Have had resort to you: for here have been  
Some six or seven, who did hide their faces  
Even from darkness.

*Bru.* Kneel not, gentle Portia.

*Por.* I should not need, if you were gentle Brutus.

Within the bond of marriage, tell me, Brutus,  
Is it excepted, I should know no secrets  
That appertain to you? Am I yourself  
But, as it were, in sort or limitation;  
To keep with you at meals, comfort your bed,  
And talk to you sometimes? Dwell I but in the suburbs?

Of your good pleasure? If it be no more,  
Portia is Brutus' harlot, not his wife.

*Bru.* You are my true and honourable wife;  
As dear to me, as are the ruddy drops  
That visit my sad heart. [this secret.

*Por.* If this were true, then should I know

I grant I am a woman; but, withal,  
A woman that lord Brutus took to wife:  
I grant I am a woman; but, withal,  
A woman well-reputed; Cato's daughter.  
Think you, I am no stronger than my sex,  
Being so father'd and so husbanded?  
Tell me your counsels, I will not disclose them:  
I have made strong proof of my constancy,  
Giving myself a voluntary wound  
Here, in the thigh: Can I bear that with  
And not my husband's secrets? [patience,

*Bru.* O ye gods,  
Render me worthy of this noble wife!

[Knocking within.

Hark, hark! one knocks: Portia, go in a while;

And by and by thy bosom shall partake  
The secrets of my heart.

All my engagements I will construe to thee,  
All the charytery || of my sad brows:—  
Leave me with haste. [Exit PORTIA.

Enter LUCIUS and LIGARIUS.

Lucius, who is that knocks?

*Luc.* Here is a sick man, that would speak with you. [of.—

*Bru.* Caius Ligarius, that Metellus spake  
Boy, stand aside.—Caius Ligarius! how?

*Lig.* Vouchsafe good morrow from a feeble tongue. [brave Caius,

*Bru.* O, what a time have you chose out,  
To wear a kerchief? 'Would you were not sick!

*Lig.* I am not sick, if Brutus have in hand  
Any exploit worthy the name of honour.

*Bru.* Such an exploit have I in hand,  
Ligarius,

Had you a healthful ear to hear of it. [fore,

*Lig.* By all the gods that Romans bow be-  
I here discard my sickness. Soul of Rome!

Brave son, derived from honourable loins!  
Thou, like an exorcist, hast conjured up  
My mortified spirit. Now bid me run,  
And I will strive with things impossible;

Yea, get the better of them. What's to do?

*Bru.* A piece of work, that will make sick  
men whole. [make sick?

*Lig.* But are not some whole, that we must

*Bru.* That must we also. What it is, my  
I shall unfold to thee, as we are going [Caius,  
To whom it must be done.

*Lig.* Set on your foot;  
And, with a heart new-fired, I follow you,  
To do I know not what: but it sufficeth  
That Brutus leads me on.

*Bru.* Follow me then.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II. *The same. A Room in Cæsar's Palace.*

*Thunder and Lightning. Enter CÆSAR, in his Night-gown.*

*Cæs.* Nor heaven, nor earth, have been at  
peace to-night:

Thrice hath Calphurnia in her sleep cried out,  
*Help, ho! they murder Cæsar! Who's*  
within?

Temper.

† Damp.

‡ Moisture.

§ The residence of harlots.

All that is charactered on.

*Enter a Servant.**Serv.* My lord?*Cæs.* Go bid the priests do present sacrifice,  
And bring me their opinions of success.*Serv.* I will, my lord. *[Exit.]**Enter CALPHURNIA.**Cal.* What mean you, Cæsar? Think you to  
walk forth?

You shall not stir out of your house to-day.

*Cæs.* Cæsar shall forth: The things that  
threaten'd me,Ne'er look'd but on my back; when they shall  
The face of Cæsar, they are vanished.*Cal.* Cæsar, I never stood on ceremonies \*,  
Yet now they fright me. There is one within,  
Besides the things that we have heard and seen,  
Recounts most horrid sights seen by the watch.  
A lioness hath whelped in the streets; [dead :  
And graves have yawn'd, and yielded up their  
Fierce fiery warriors fight upon the clouds,  
In ranks, and squadrons, and right form of war,  
Which drizzled blood upon the Capitol:  
The noise of battle hurl'd † in the air,  
Horses did neigh, and dying men did groan;  
And ghosts did shriek, and squeal ‡ about the  
streets,O Cæsar! these things are beyond all use,  
And I do fear them.*Cæs.* What can be avoided,  
Whose end is purposed by the mighty gods?  
Yet Cæsar shall go forth: for these predictions  
Are to the world in general, as to Cæsar.*Cal.* When beggars die, there are no comets  
seen; [of princes.*Cæs.* Cowards die many times before their  
deaths;

The valiant never taste of death but once.

Of all the wonders that I yet have heard,  
It seems to me most strange that men should  
Seeing that death, a necessary end, [fear;  
Will come, when it will come.*Re-enter a Servant.*

What say the augurers?

*Serv.* They would not have you to stir forth  
to-day.Plucking the entrails of an offering forth,  
They could not find a heart within the beast.*Cæs.* The gods do this in shame of coward-  
Cæsar should be a beast without a heart, [ice:  
If he should stay at home to-day for fear.No, Cæsar shall not: Danger knows full well  
That Cæsar is more dangerous than he.We were two lions litter'd in one day,  
And I the elder and more terrible;

And Cæsar shall go forth.

*Cal.* Alas, my lord,  
Your wisdom is consumed in confidence.  
Do not go forth to-day: Call it my fear [own.  
That keeps you in the house, and not your  
We'll send Mark Antony to the senate-house;  
And he shall say, you are not well to-day:  
Let me, upon my knee, prevail in this.*Cæs.* Mark Antony shall say, I am not well;  
And, for thy humour, I will stay at home.*Enter DECIVS.*

Here's Decius Brutus, he shall tell them so.

*Dec.* Cæsar, all hail! Good morrow, wor-  
thy Cæsar:

I come to fetch you to the senate-house.

*Cæs.* And you are come in very happy time  
To bear my greeting to the senators,  
And tell them, that I will not come to-day:  
Cannot, is false; and that I dare not, falser;  
I will not come to-day: Tell them so, Decius.*Cal.* Say, he is sick.*Cæs.* Shall Cæsar send a lie?  
Have I in conquest stretch'd mine arm so far,  
To be afraid to tell grey-beards the truth?  
Decius, go tell them, Cæsar will not come.*Dec.* Most mighty Cæsar, let me know some  
cause,  
Lest I be laugh'd at, when I tell them so.*Cæs.* The cause is in my will, I will not  
That is enough to satisfy the senate. [come;  
But, for your private satisfaction,  
Because I love you, I will let you know.  
Calphurnia here, my wife, stays me at home:  
She dreamt to-night she saw my statue,  
Which, like a fountain, with a hundred spouts,  
Did run pure blood; and many lusty Romans  
Came smiling, and did bathe their hands in it.  
And these does she apply for warnings, por-  
And evils imminent; and on her knee [tents,  
Hath begg'd, that I will stay at home to-day.*Dec.* This dream is all amiss interpreted;  
It was a vision, fair and fortunate:Your statue spouting blood in many pipes,  
In which so many smiling Romans bath'd,  
Signifies that from you great Rome shall suck  
Reviving blood: and that great men shall press  
For tinctures, stains, relics, and cognizance ||.  
This by Calphurnia's dream is signified. [it.*Cæs.* And this way have you well expounded*Dec.* I have, when you have heard what I  
can say:And know it now: The senate have concluded  
To give, this day, a crown to mighty Cæsar.If you shall send them word, you will not  
come, [nockTheir minds may change. Besides, it were a  
Apt to be render'd, for some one to say,*Break up the senate till another time,*  
*When Cæsar's wife shall meet with better**dreams.*If Cæsar hide himself, shall they not whisper,  
*Lo, Cæsar is afraid?*Pardon me, Cæsar; for my dear, dear love  
To your proceeding bids me tell you this;  
And reason to my love is liable ¶.*Cæs.* How foolish do your fears seem now,  
Calphurnia?

I am ashamed I did yield to them.—

Give me my robe, for I will go:—  
*Enter PUBLIUS, BRUTUS, LIGARIUS, ME-**TELLUS, CASCA, TREBONIUS, & CINNA.*  
And look where Publius is come to fetch me.*Pub.* Good morrow, Cæsar.*Cæs.* Welcome, Publius.—

What, Brutus, are you stirr'd so early too?—

Never paid a regard to prodigies or omens.

§ As to a saint, for reliques.

|| As to a prince for honours.

† Encountered.

‡ Cry with pain.

• Subordina

Good-morrow, Casca.—Caius Ligarius,  
Cæsar was ne'er so much your enemy,  
As that same ague which hath made you lean.  
What is't o'clock?

*Bru.* Cæsar, 'tis stricken eight.

*Cas.* I thank you for your pains and courtesy.

*Enter ANTONY.*

See! Antony, that reveals long o' nights,  
Is notwithstanding up:—

Good morrow, Antony.

*Ant.* So to most noble Cæsar.

*Cas.* Bid them prepare within:—

I am to blame to be thus waited for. [bonius!  
Now, Cinna:—Now, Metellus:—What, Tre-  
I have an hour's talk in store for you;  
Remember that you call on me to-day:  
Be near me, that I may remember you.

*Treb.* Cæsar, I will:—and so near will I be,

[*Aside.*

That your best friends shall wish I had been  
further. [wine with me;

*Cas.* Good friends, go in, and taste some  
And we, like friends, will straightway go to-  
gether. [Cæsar,

*Bru.* That every like is not the same, O  
The heart of Brutus yearns\* to think upon!

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *The same. A Street near  
the Capitol.*

*Enter ARTEMIDORUS, reading a Paper.*

*Art.* Cæsar, beware of Brutus; take heed  
of Cassius; come not near Casca; have an  
eye to Cinna; trust not Trebonius; mark  
well Metellus Cimber; Decius Brutus loves  
thee not; thou hast wronged Caius Ligi-  
rius. There is but one mind in all these  
men, and it is bent against Cæsar. If thou  
be'st not immortal, look about you: *Secu-  
rity gives way to conspiracy. The mighty  
gods defend thee! Thy lover †, Artemidorus.*  
Here will I stand till Cæsar pass along,  
And as a suitor will I give him this.  
My heart laments, that virtue cannot live  
Out of the teeth of emulation ‡.  
If thou read this, O Cæsar, thou may'st live;  
If not, the fates with traitors do contrive.

[*Exit.*

SCENE IV. *The same. Another Part of  
the same street, before the House of  
Brutus.*

*Enter PORTIA and LUCIUS.*

*Por.* I pr'ythee, boy, run to the senate-  
house;

Stay not to answer me, but get thee gone:  
Why dost thou stay?

*Luc.* To know my errand, madam.

*Por.* I would have had thee there, and here  
again, [there.—

Ere I can tell thee what thou shouldst do  
O constancy, be strong upon my side!  
Set a huge mountain 'tween my heart and  
tongue!

I have a man's mind, but a woman's might.  
How hard it is for women to keep counsel!—  
Art thou here yet?

*Luc.* Madam, what should I do?

Run to the Capitol, and nothing else?

And so return to you, and nothing else?

*Por.* Yes, bring me word, boy, if thy lord  
look well,

For he went sickly forth: And take good note  
What Cæsar doth, what suitors press to him.  
Hark, boy! what noise is that?

*Luc.* I hear none, madam.

*Por.* Pr'ythee, listen well;

I heard a bustling rumour, like a fray,  
And the wind brings it from the Capitol.

*Luc.* Sooth's, madam, I hear nothing.

*Enter Soothsayer.*

*Por.* Come hither, fellow:

Which way hast thou been?

*Sooth.* At mine own house, good lady.

*Por.* What is't o'clock?

*Sooth.* About the ninth hour, lady.

*Por.* Is Cæsar yet gone to the Capitol?

*Sooth.* Madam, not yet; I go to take my  
To see him pass on to the Capitol. [stand,

*Por.* Thou hast some suit to Cæsar, hast  
thou not? [Cæsar

*Sooth.* That I have, lady: if it will please  
To be so good to Cæsar, as to hear me,  
I shall beseech him to befriend himself.

*Por.* Why, knowest thou any harm's in-  
tended towards him?

*Sooth.* None that I know will be, much that  
I fear may chance. [row:

Good-morrow to you. Here the street is nar-  
The throng that follows Cæsar at the heels,  
Of senators, of prætors, common suitors,  
Will crowd a feeble man almost to death:  
I'll get me to a place more void, and there  
Speak to great Cæsar as he comes along.

[*Exit.*

*Por.* I must go in.—Ah me! how weak a  
The heart of woman is! O Brutus! [thing

The heavens speed thee in thine enterprise!  
Sure, the boy heard me:—Brutus hath a suit,

That Cæsar will not grant.—O, I grow faint:  
Run, Lucius, and commend me to my lord;

Say, I am merry: come to me again,  
And bring me word what he doth say to thee.

[*Exeunt*

\* Grieves.

† Friend.

‡ Envy.

§ Really.



## ACT III.

SCENE I. *The same. The Capitol; the Senate sitting.*

*A Crowd of People in the Street leading to the Capitol; among them ARTEMIDORUS, and the Soothsayer. Flourish. Enter CÆSAR, BRUTUS, CASSIUS, CASCA, DECIMIUS, METELLUS, TREBONIUS, CINNA, ANTONY, LEPIDUS, POPILIUS, PUBLIUS, and Others.*

*Cæs.* The ides of March are come.

*Sooth.* Ay, Cæsar; but not gone.

*Art.* Hail, Cæsar! Read this schedule.

*Dec.* Trebonius doth desire you to o'er-read, At your best leisure, this his humble suit.

*Art.* O, Cæsar, read mine first for mine's a suit [Cæsar.

That touches Cæsar nearer: Read it, great

*Cæs.* What toucheth us ourself shall be last served.

*Art.* Delay not, Cæsar; read it instantly.

*Cæs.* What, is the fellow mad?

*Pub.* Sirrah, give place.

*Cæs.* What, urge you your petitions in the

Come to the Capitol. [street?

*CÆSAR enters the Capitol, the rest following. All the Senators rise.*

*Pop.* I wish your enterprise to-day may

*Cæs.* What enterprise, Popilius? [thrive.

*Pop.* Fare you well.

[Advances to CÆSAR.

*Bru.* What said Popilius Lena?

*Cæs.* He wish'd to-day our enterprise might I fear, our purpose is discovered. [thrive.

*Bru.* Look, how he makes to Cæsar: Mark him.

*Cæs.* Casca, be sudden, for we fear prevention.—

Brutus, what shall be done? If this be known, Cassius or Cæsar never shall turn back, For I will slay myself.

*Bru.* Cassius, be constant:

Popilius Lena speaks not of our purposes; For, look, he smiles, and Cæsar doth not

change. [you, Brutus,

*Cæs.* Trebonius knows his time; for, look He draws mark Antony out of the way.

[Exit ANTONY and TREBONIUS. CÆSAR and the Senators take their Seats.

*Dec.* Where is Metellus Cimber? Let him And presently prefer his suit to Cæsar. [go,

*Bru.* He is address'd\*: press near, and second him. [hand.

*Cin.* Casca, you are the first that rears your

*Cæs.* Are we all ready? what is now amiss, That Cæsar, and his senate must redress?

*Met.* Most high, most mighty, and most puissant Cæsar,

Metellus Cimber throws before thy seat An humble heart:— [Kneeling.

*Cæs.* I must prevent thee, Cimber.

These conchings, and these lowly courtesies,

Might fire the blood of ordinary men;

And turn pre-ordnance, and first decree,

Into the law of children. Be not fond,

To think that Cæsar bears such rebel blood,

That will be thaw'd from the true quality

With that which melteth fools; I mean, sweet words, [sing.

Low-crook'd curtsies, and base spaniel fawn—

Thy brother by decree is banished;

If thou dost bend, and pray, and fawn for him,

I spurn thee like a cur out of my way.

Know, Cæsar doth not wrong; nor without

Will he be satisfied. [cause

*Met.* Is there no voice more worthy than my own,

To sound more sweetly in great Cæsar's ear,

For the repealing of my banish'd brother?

*Bru.* I kiss thy hand, but not in flattery,

Desiring thee, that Publius Cimber may [Cæsar;

Have an immediate freedom of repeal.

*Cæs.* What, Brutus!

*Cæs.* Pardon, Cæsar; Cæsar, pardon:

As low as to thy foot doth Cassius fall,

To beg enfranchisement for Publius Cimber.

*Cæs.* I could be well moved, if I were, as you; [me:

If I could pray to move, prayers would move

But I am constant as the northern star,

Of whose true-fix'd and resting quality

There is no fellow in the firmament. [sparks,

The skies are painted with unnumber'd

They are all fire, and every one doth shine;

But there's but one in all doth hold his place:

So, in the world; 'Tis furnish'd well with men, [sive†;

And men are flesh and blood, and apprehen—

Yet, in the number, I do know but one

That unassailable holds on his rank†,

Unshak'd of motion§: and, that I am he,

Let me a little show it, even in this;

That I was constant, Cimber should be banish'd,

And constant do remain to keep him so.

*Cin.* O Cæsar,—

*Cæs.* Hence! Wilt thou lift up Olympus?

*Dec.* Great Cæsar,—

*Cæs.* Doth not Brutus bootless|| kneel?

*Casca.* Speak, hands, for me.

[Casca slabs CÆSAR in the Neck. CÆSAR catches hold of his Arm. He is then stabbed by several other Conspirators,

and at last by MARCUS BRUTUS.

*Cæs.* Et tu, Brute?—Then fall, Cæsar.

[Dies. The Senators and People retire in confusion.

*Cin.* Liberty! Freedom! Tyranny is dead!—

Run hence, proclaim, cry it about the streets.

*Cæs.* Some to the common pulpits, and cry out

Liberty, freedom, and enfranchisement!

*Bru.* People, and senators! be not affrighted;

Fly not; stand still—ambition's debt is paid.

*Casca.* Go to the pulpit, Brutus.

\* Ready.

† Intelligent.

‡ Continues to hold it.

§ Solicitation.

|| Unsuccessfully.

¶ And thou, Brutus?

*Dec.* And Cassius too.

*Bru.* Where's Publius?

*Cin.* Here, quite confounded with this mutiny. [*Cæsar's*]

*Met.* Stand fast together, lest some friend of Should chance—— [*cheer*;

*Bru.* Talk not of standing;—Publius, good There is no harm intended to your person, Nor to no Roman else: so tell them, Publius.

*Cas.* And leave us, Publius; lest that the people, [*chief*.

Rushing on us, should do your age some mis-  
*Bru.* Do so;—and let no man abide this But we the doers. [*deed*,

*Re-enter TREBONIUS.*

*Cas.* Where's Antony?

*Tre.* Fled to his house amazed: Men, wives, and children, stare, cry out, and As it were doomsday. [*run*,

*Bru.* Fates! we will know your pleasures: That we shall die, we know; 'tis but the time, And drawing days out, that men stand upon.

*Cas.* Why, he that cuts off twenty years of life,

Cut's off so many years of fearing death.

*Bru.* Grant that, and then is death a benefit: So are we Cæsar's friends, that have abridged His time of fearing death.—Stoop, Romans, stoop,

And let us bathe our hands in Cæsar's blood Up to the elbows, and besmear our swords: Then walk we forth, even to the market-place; And, waving our red weapons o'er our heads, Let's all cry, Peace! Freedom! and Liberty!

*Cas.* Stoop then, and wash\*. How many ages hence,

Shall this our lofty scene be acted over, In states unborn, and accents yet unknown?

*Bru.* How many times shall Cæsar bleed in That now on Pompey's basis lies along, [sport, No worthier than the dust?

*Cas.* So oft as that shall be, So often shall the knot of us be call'd The men that gave our country liberty.

*Dec.* What, shall we forth?

*Cas.* Ay, every man away: Brutus must lead; and we will grace his heels With the most boldest and best hearts of Rome.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Bru.* Soft, who comes here? A friend of Antony's. [*kneel*;

*Serv.* Thus, Brutus, did my master bid me Thus did Mark Antony bid me fall down: And, being prostrate, thus he bade me say.

Brutus is noble, wise, valiant, and honest; Cæsar was mighty, bold, royal, and loving: Say, I love Brutus, and I honour him;

Say, I fear'd Cæsar, honour'd him, and loved If Brutus will vouchsafe, that Antony [him.

May safely come to him, and be resolved How Cæsar hath deserved to lie in death,

Mark Antony shall not love Cæsar dead So well as Brutus living; but will follow The fortunes and affairs of noble Brutus,

Thorough the hazards of this untrod state, With all true faith. So says my master Antony.

*Bru.* Thy master is a wise and valiant Ro- I never thought him worse. [*man*;

Tell him, so please him come unto this place, He shall be satisfied; and, by my honour, Depart untouch'd.

*Serv.*

I'll fetch him presently.

[*Exit Servant.*]

*Bru.* I know, that we shall have him well to friend.

*Cas.* I wish, we may: but yet have I a mind That fears him much; and my misgiving still Falls shrewdly to the purpose.

*Re-enter ANTONY.*

*Bru.* But here comes Antony.—Welcome, Mark Antony.

*Ant.* O mighty Cæsar! Dost thou lie so low? Are all thy conquests, glories, triumphs, spoils, Shrunk to this little measure?—Fare thee well. I know not, gentlemen, what you intend, Who else must be let blood, who else is rank: If I myself, there is no hour so fit As Cæsar's death-hour; nor no instrument Of half that worth, as those your swords, made rich

With the most noble blood of all this world. I do beseech ye, if you bear me hard, [smoke, Now, whilst your purpled hands do reek and Fulfil your pleasure. Live a thousand years, I shall not find myself so apt to die: No place will please me so, no mean of death, As here by Cæsar, and by you cut off, The choice and master spirits of this age.

*Bru.* O Antony! beg not your death of us. Though now we must appear bloody and cruel, As, by our hands, and this our present act, You see we do; yet see you but our hands, And this the bleeding business they have done; Our hearts you see not, they are pitiful; And pity to the general wrong of Rome (As fire drives out fire, so pity, pity,) Hath done this deed on Cæsar. For your part, To you our swords have leaden points, Mark

Antony:

Our arms, in strength of malice, and our hearts, Of brothers' temper, do receive you in [ence. With all kind love, good thoughts, and rever-

*Cas.* Your voice shall be as strong as any In the disposing of new dignities. [*man's*,

*Bru.* Only be patient, till we have appeased The multitude, beside themselves with fear, And then we will deliver you the cause

Why I, that did love Cæsar when I struck him, Have thus proceeded.

*Ant.*

I doubt not of your wisdom.

Let each man render me his bloody hand:

First, Marcus Brutus, will I shake with you;

Next, Caius Cassius, do I take your hand;—

Now, Decius Brutus, yours;—now yours, Me-

tellus;

Yours, Cinna; and, my valiant Cæsa, yours; Though last, not least in love, your good Tre-

bonius.

Gentlemen all,—alas! what shall say?

My credit now stands on such slip- ry ground That one of two bad ways you must onceit me

Either a coward or a flatterer.—

\* In Cæsar's blood.

† Grown too high for the public safety

That I did love thee, Cæsar, O, tis true :  
 If then thy spirit look upon us now,  
 Shall it not grieve thee, dearer than thy death,  
 To see thy Antony making his peace,  
 Shaking the bloody fingers of thy foes,  
 Most noble! in the presence of thy corse?  
 Had I as many eyes as thou hast wounds,  
 Weeping as fast as they stream forth thy  
 blood,

It would become me better, than to close  
 In terms of friendship with thine enemies.  
 Pardon me, Julius!—Here wast thou bay'd,  
 brave hart; [stand,  
 Here didst thou fall; and here thy hunters  
 Sign'd in thy spoil, and crimson'd in thy lethe.  
 O world! thou wast the forest to this hart;  
 And this, indeed, O world, the heart of thee.  
 How like a deer, stricken by many princes,  
 Dost thou here lie?

*Cas.* Mark Antony,—  
*Ant.* Pardon me, Cains Cassius :  
 The enemies of Cæsar shall say this;  
 Then, in a friend, it is cold modesty.

*Cas.* I blame you not for praising Cæsar so;  
 But what compæct mean you to have with us?  
 Will you be prick'd in number of our friends;  
 Or shall we on, and not depend on you?

*Ant.* Therefore I took your hands; but was,  
 indeed, [Cæsar.  
 Sway'd from the point by looking down on  
 Friends am I with you all, and love you all;  
 Upon this hope, that you shall give me reasons,  
 Why, and wherein, Cæsar was dangerous.

*Bru.* Or else were this a savage spectacle:  
 Our reasons are so full of good regard,  
 That were you, Antony, the son of Cæsar,  
 You should be satisfied.

*Ant.* That's all I seek :  
 And am moreover suitor, that I may  
 Produce his body to the market-place;  
 And in the pulpit, as becomes a friend,  
 Speak in the order of his funeral.

*Bru.* You shall, Mark Antony.

*Cas.* Brutus, a word with you.—  
 You know not what you do; Do not consent,  
 [Aside.

That Antony speak in his funeral :  
 Know you how much the people may be moved  
 By that which he will utter?

*Bru.* By your pardon;—  
 I will myself into the pulpit first,  
 And show the reason of our Cæsar's death :  
 What Antony shall speak, I will protest  
 He speaks by leave and by permission;  
 And that we are contented, Cæsar shall  
 Have all true rites, and lawful ceremonies.  
 It shall advantage more than do us wrong.

*Cas.* I know not what may fall; I like it not.  
*Bru.* Mark Antony, here, take you Cæsar's  
 body.

You shall not in your funeral speech blame us,  
 But speak all good you can devise of Cæsar;  
 And say, you do't by our permission;  
 Else shall you not have any hand at all  
 About his funeral: And you shall speak

In the same pulpit whereto I am going,  
 After my speech is ended.

*Ant.* Be it so;  
 I do desire no more.

*Bru.* Prepare the body then, and follow us.  
 [Exeunt all but ANTONY.

*Ant.* O, pardon me, thou piece of bleeding  
 earth,

That I am meek and gentle with these butchers!  
 Thou art the ruins of the noblest man  
 That ever lived in the tide \* of times.

Woe to the hand that shed this costly blood!  
 Over thy wounds now do I prophesy,— [lips,  
 Which, like dumb mouths, do ope their ruby  
 To beg the voice and utterance of thy tongue;  
 A curse shall light upon the limbs of men;  
 Domestic fury, and fierce civil strife,  
 Shall cumber all the parts of Italy :  
 Blood and destruction shall be so in use,  
 And dreadful objects so familiar,  
 That mothers shall but smile, when they behold  
 Their infants quarter'd with the hands of war;  
 All pity choked with custom of fell deeds :  
 And Cæsar's spirit, ranging for revenge,  
 With Atë by his side, come hot from hell,  
 Shall in these confines, with a monarch's voice,  
 Cry *Havoc*†, and let slip ‡ the dogs of war;  
 That this foul deed shall smell above the earth  
 With carrion men, groaning for burial.

*Enter a Servant.*  
 You serve Octavius Cæsar, do you not?

*Serv.* I do, Mark Antony.  
*Ant.* Cæsar did write for him to come to  
 Rome. [ing :

*Serv.* He did receive his letters, and is com-  
 And bid me say to you by word of mouth,—  
 O Cæsar!— [Seeing the Body.

*Ant.* Thy heart is big, get thee apart and  
 weep.

Passion, I see, is catching; for mine eyes,  
 Seeing those beads of sorrow stand in thine,  
 Began to water. Is thy master coming?

*Serv.* He lies to-night within seven leagues  
 of Rome. [hath chanced :

*Ant.* Post back with speed, and tell him what  
 Here is a mourning Rome, a dangerous Rome,  
 No Rome of safety for Octavius yet;  
 Hie hence, and tell him so. Yet, stay a while;  
 Thou shalt not back, till I have borne this corse  
 Into the market-place: there shall I try,  
 In my oration, how the people take  
 The cruel issue of these bloody men;  
 According to the which, thou shalt discourse  
 To young Octavius of the state of things.  
 Lend me your hand.

[Exeunt, with CÆSAR'S Body.

SCENE II. *The same. The Forum.*  
*Enter BRUTUS and CASSIUS, and a Throng  
 of Citizens.*

*Cit.* We will be satisfied; let us be satisfied.  
*Bru.* Then follow me, and give me audience,  
 friends,—

Cassius, go you into the other street,  
 And part the numbers.—

\* Course.

† The signal for giving no quarter.

‡ To let slip a dog at a deer, &c., was the technical phrase of Shakspeare's time.



Those that will hear me speak, let them stay here;

Those that will follow Cassius, go with him;  
And public reasons shall be rendered  
Of Cæsar's death.

1 *Cit.* I will hear Brutus speak.

2 *Cit.* I will hear Cassius; and compare their reasons,

When severally we hear them rendered.

[*Exit* CASSIUS, with some of the Citizens.

BRUTUS goes into the Rostrum.

3 *Cit.* The noble Brutus is ascended: Sit, *Bru.* Be patient till the 'xt. [Ience! Romans, countrymen, and lovers\*! hear me for my cause; and be silent that you may hear: believe me for mine honour; and have respect to mine honour, that you may believe; censure me in your wisdom; and awake your senses that you may the better judge. If there be any in this assembly, any dear friend of Cæsar's, to him I say, that Brutus' love to Cæsar was no less than his. If then that friend demand, why Brutus rose against Cæsar, this is my answer,—Not that I loved Cæsar less, but that I loved Rome more. Had you rather Cæsar were living, and die all slaves,—than that Cæsar were dead, to live all free men? As Cæsar loved me, I weep for him; as he was fortunate, I rejoice at it; as he was valiant, I honour him: but, as he was ambitious, I slew him: There is tears for his love; joy for his fortune; honour for his valour; and death for his ambition. Who is here so base, that would be a bondman? If any, speak; for him have I offended. Who is here so rude, that would not be a Roman? If any, speak; for him have I offended. Who is here so vile, that will not love his country? If any, speak; for him have I offended. I pause for a reply.

*Cit.* None, Brutus, none.

[Several speaking at once.

*Bru.* Then none have I offended. I have done no more to Cæsar, than you should do to Brutus. The question of his death is enrolled in the Capitol: his glory not extenuated, wherein he was worthy; nor his offences enforced, for which he suffered death.

Enter ANTONY and Others, with

CÆSAR'S Body.

Here comes his body, mourned by Mark Antony: who, though he had no hand in his death, shall receive the benefit of his dying, a place in the commonwealth; as which of you shall not? With this I depart; That, as I slew my best lover† for the good of Rome, I have the same dagger for myself, when it shall please my country to need my death.

*Cit.* Live, Brutus, live! live!

1 *Cit.* Bring him with triumph home unto his house.

2 *Cit.* Give him a statue with his ancestors.

3 *Cit.* Let him be Cæsar.

4 *Cit.*

Cæsar's better parts  
Shall now be crown'd in Brutus.

1 *Cit.* We'll bring him to his house with shouts

*Bru.* My countrymen,— [and clamours.

2 *Cit.* Peace; silence! Brutus speaks.

1 *Cit.* Peace, ho!

*Bru.* Good countrymen, let me depart alone,  
And, for my sake, stay here with Antony:  
Do grace to Cæsar's corpse, and grace his speech [Tony,

Tending to Cæsar's glories; which Mark An-  
By our permission is allowed to make.

I do entreat you, not a man depart,  
Save I alone, till Antony have spoke. [*Exit.*

1 *Cit.* Stay, ho! and let us hear Mark Antony.

3 *Cit.* Let him go up into the public chair,  
We'll hear him:—Noble Antony, go up.

*Ant.* For Brutus' sake, I am beholden to you.

4 *Cit.* What does he say of Brutus?

3 *Cit.* He says, for Brutus' sake,  
He finds himself beholden to us all.

4 *Cit.* 'Twere best he speak no harm of Brutus here.

1 *Cit.* This Cæsar was a tyrant.

3 *Cit.* Nay, that's certain;  
We are bless'd that Rome is rid of him,

2 *Cit.* Peace; let us hear what Antony can

*Ant.* You gentle Romans,— [say.

*Cit.* Peace, ho! let us hear him.

*Ant.* Friends, Romans, countrymen, lend me your ears;

I come to bury Cæsar, not to praise him.

The evil that men do lives after them;

The good is oft interred with their bones;

So let it be with Cæsar. The noble Brutus

Hath told you Cæsar was ambitious;

If it were so, it was a grievous fault;

And grievously hath Cæsar answer'd it.

Here, under leave of Brutus and the rest,

(For Brutus is an honourable man;

So are they all, all honourable men;)

Come I to speak in Cæsar's funeral.

He was my friend, faithful and just to me:

But Brutus says he was ambitious;

And Brutus is an honourable man.

He hath brought many captives home to Rome

Whose ransoms did the general coffers fill:

Did this in Cæsar seem ambitious? [wept

When that the poor have cried, Cæsar hath

Ambition should be made of sterner stuff:

Yet Brutus says he was ambitious;

And Brutus is an honourable man.

You all did see, that on the Lupercal,

I thrice presented him a kingly crown,

Which he did thrice refuse. Was this ambi-

Yet Brutus says, he was ambitious; [tion?

And, sure, he is an honourable man.

I speak not to disprove what Brutus spoke,

But here I am to speak what I do know.

You all did love him once, not without cause;

What cause withholds you then to mourn for him?

O judgment, thou art fled to brutish beasts,

And men have lost their reason! Bear with me;

My heart is in the coffin there with Cæsar,

And I must pause till it come back to me.

1 *Cit.* Methinks, there is much reason in his sayings.

2 *Cit.* If thou consider rightly of the matter,

\* Friends.

† Friend.

Cæsar has had great wrong.

3 *Cit.* Has he, masters?

I fear there will a worse come in his place.

4 *Cit.* Mark'd ye his words? He would not take the crown;

Therefore, 'tis certain, he was not ambitious.

1 *Cit.* If it be found so, some will dear abide it. [with weeping.

2 *Cit.* Poor son! his eyes are red as fire

3 *Cit.* There's not a nobler man in Rome than Antony. [speak.

4 *Cit.* Now mark him, he begins again to

*Ant.* But yesterday, the word of Cæsar might [there,

Have stood against the world: now lies he And none so poor\* to do him reverence.

O masters! if I were disposed to stir

Your hearts and minds to mutiny and rage,

I should do Brutus wrong, and Cassius wrong,

Who, you all know, are honourable men.

I will not do them wrong; I rather choose

To wrong the dead, to wrong myself, and you,

Than I will wrong such honourable men.

But here's a parchment, with the seal of Cæsar,

I found it in his closet, 'tis his will:

Let but the commons hear this testament,

(Which, pardon me, I do not mean to read,)

And they would go and kiss dead Cæsar's wounds,

And dip their napkins† in his sacred blood;

Yea, beg a hair of him for memory,

And, dying, mention it within their wills,

Bequeathing it, as a rich legacy,

Unto their issue.

4 *Cit.* We'll hear the will: Read it, Mark Antony. [will.

*Cit.* The will, the will; we will hear Cæsar's

*Ant.* Have patience, gentle friends, I must not read it;

It is not meet you know how Cæsar loved you.

You are not wood, you are not stones, but men;

And, being men, hearing the will of Cæsar,

It will inflame you, it will make you mad:

'Tis good you know not that you are his heirs;

For if you should, O, what would come of it!

4 *Cit.* Read the will: we will hear it, Antony;

You shall read us the will; Cæsar's will.

*Ant.* Will you be patient? Will you stay a while?

I have o'ershot myself to tell you of it.

I fear, I wrong the honourable men, [it.

Those daggers have stabb'd Cæsar: I do fear

4 *Cit.* They were traitors: Honourable men!

*Cit.* The will! the testament!

2 *Cit.* They were villains, murderers: The will! read the will! [will?

*Ant.* You will compel me then to read the

Then make a ring about the corpse of Cæsar,

And let me show you him that made the will

Shall I descend? And will you give me leave.

*Cit.* Come down.

2 *Cit.* Descend.

[He comes down from the Pulpit.

3 *Cit.* We shall have leave.

4 *Cit.* A ring; stand round.

1 *Cit.* Stand from the hearse, stand from the body. [tonv.

2 *Cit.* Room for Antony;—most noble An-

*Ant.* Nay, press not so upon me; stand far off.

*Cit.* Stand back! room! bear back!

*Ant.* If you have tears, prepare to shed them now.

You all do know this mantle: I remember

The first time ever Cæsar put it on;

'Twas on a summer's evening, in his tent;

That day he overcame the Nervii:—

Look! in this place ran Cassius' dagger through:

See! what a rent the envious Casca made:

Through this the well beloved Brutus stabb'd;

And, as he pluck'd his cursed steel away,

Mark how the blood of Cæsar follow'd it;

As rushing out of doors, to be resolved

If Brutus so unkindly knock'd or no;

For Brutus, as you know, was Cæsar's angel:

Judge, O you gods, how dearly Cæsar loved him!

This was the most unkindest cut of all:

For when the noble Cæsar saw him stab,

Ingratitude, more strong than traitors' arms,

Quite vanquish'd him: then burst his mighty heart;

And, in his mantle muffling up his face,

Even at the base of Pompey's statue†, [fell.

Which all the while ran blood, great Cæsar

O, what a fall was there, my countrymen!

Then I, and you, and all of us, fell down,

Whilst bloody treason flourish'd over us.

O, now you weep; and, I perceive, you feel

The dint‡ of pity: these are gracious drops.

Kind souls, what weep you, when you but

behold Our Cæsar's vesture wounded? Look you

here, [tors.

Here is himself, marr'd, as you see, with trait-

1 *Cit.* O piteous spectacle!

2 *Cit.* O noble Cæsar!

3 *Cit.* O woful day!

4 *Cit.* O traitors, villains!

1 *Cit.* O most bloody sight!

2 *Cit.* We will be revenged: revenge; about,

—seek,—burn,—fire,—kill,—slay!—let not a traitor live.

*Ant.* Stay, countrymen.

1 *Cit.* Peace there:—Hear the noble Antony.

2 *Cit.* We'll hear him, we'll follow him, we'll die with him.

*Ant.* Good friends, sweet friends, let me not stir you up.

To such a sudden flood of mutiny.

They, that have done this deed, are honourable;

What private griefs¶ they have, alas, I know not,

That made them do it; they are wise and honourable

And will, no doubt, with reasons answer you.

I come not, friends, to steal away your hearts;

\* The meanest man is now too high to do reverence to Cæsar. † Handkerchiefs.

‡ Statue, for statue, is common among the old writers. § Was successful. ¶ Impression.

¶ Grievances.

I am no orator as Brutus is:

But, as you know me all, a plain blunt man, [well  
That love my friend; and that they know full  
That gave me public leave to speak of him.

For I have neither wit, nor words, nor worth,  
Action, nor utterance, nor the power of speech,  
To stir men's blood: I only speak right on;  
I tell you that, which you yourselves do know;  
Show you sweet Cæsar's wounds, poor, poor  
dumb mouths, [tus,

And bid them speak for me: But were I Bru-  
And Brutus Antony, there were an Antony  
Would ruffle up your spirits, and put a tongue  
In every wound of Cæsar, that should move  
The stones or Rome to rise and mutiny.

*Cit.* We'll mutiny.

*1 Cit.* We'll burn the house of Brutus.

*3 Cit.* Away then, come, seek the conspi-  
rators. [me speak.

*Ant.* Yet hear me, countrymen; yet hear

*Cit.* Peace, ho! Hear Antony, most noble  
Antony. [not what:

*Ant.* Why, friends, you go to do you know  
Wherein hath Cæsar thus deserved your loves?  
Alas, you know not:—I must tell you then:—  
You have forgot the will I told you of.

*Cit.* Most true;—the will;—let's stay, and  
hear the will. [seal.

*Ant.* Here is the will, and under Cæsar's  
To every Roman citizen he gives,  
To every several man, seventy-five drachmas\*.

*2 Cit.* Most noble Cæsar!—we'll revenge

*3 Cit.* O royal Cæsar! [his death.

*Ant.* Hear me with patience.

*Cit.* Peace, ho! [walks,

*Ant.* Moreover, he hath left you all his  
His private arbours, and new-planted orchards,  
On this side Tiber; he hath left them you,  
And to your heirs for ever; common pleasures,  
To walk abroad, and recreate yourselves.

Here was a Cæsar: When comes such another?

*1 Cit.* Never, never:—Come, away, away:  
We'll burn his body in the holy place,

And with the brands fire the traitors' houses.  
Take up the body.

*2 Cit.* Go, fetch fire.

*3 Cit.* Pluck down benches. [thing.

*4 Cit.* Pluck down forms, windows, any  
[*Exeunt Citizens, with the Body.*

*Ant.* Now let it work: Mischief, thou art  
afout, [fellow?

Take thou what course thou wilt!—How now,  
*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* Sir, Octavius is already come to Rome.

*Ant.* Where is he?

*Serv.* He and Lepidus are at Cæsar's house.

*Ant.* And thither will I straight to visit him:  
He comes upon a wish. Fortune is merry,  
And in this mood will give us any thing.

*Serv.* I heard him say, Brutus and Cassius  
Are rid like madmen through the gates of  
Rome. [people,

*Ant.* Belike they had some notice of the  
How I had moved them. Bring me to Octa-  
vius. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *The same. A street.*

*Enter CINNA, the Poet.*

*Cin.* I dreamt to-night, that I did feast with  
Cæsar,

And things unluckily charge my fantasy:  
I have no will to wander forth of doors,  
Yet something leads me forth.

*Enter Citizens.*

*1 Cit.* What is your name?

*2 Cit.* Whither are you going.

*3 Cit.* Where do you dwell? [lor?

*4 Cit.* Are you a married man, or a bache-

*2 Cit.* Answer every man directly.

*1 Cit.* Ay, and briefly.

*4 Cit.* Ay, and wisely.

*3 Cit.* Ay, and truly, you were best

*Cin.* What is my name? Whither am I go-  
ing? Where do I dwell? Am I a married man,  
or a bachelor? Then to answer every man di-  
rectly, and briefly, wisely, and truly. Wisely  
I say, I am a bachelor.

*2 Cit.* That's as much as to say, they are fools  
who marry:—You'll bear me a bang for that,  
I fear. Proceed; directly.

*Cin.* Directly, I am going to Cæsar's funeral.

*1 Cit.* As a friend or an enemy?

*Cin.* As a friend.

*2 Cit.* That matter is answered directly.

*4 Cit.* For your dwelling,—briefly.

*Cin.* Briefly, I dwell by the Capitol.

*3 Cit.* Your name, sir, truly.

*Cin.* Truly, my name is Cinna.

*1 Cit.* Tear him to pieces, he's a conspirator

*Cin.* I am Cinna the poet, I am Cinna the  
poet.

*4 Cit.* Tear him for his bad verses, tear him  
for his bad verses.

*2 Cit.* It is no matter, his name's Cinna; pluck  
but his name out of his heart, and turn him going.

*3 Cit.* Tear him, tear him. Come, brands,  
ho! fire-brands. To Brutus', to Cassius'; burn  
all. Some to Decius' house, and some to Cas-  
ca's; some to Ligarius': away; go. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The same. A Room in Antony's  
House.*

ANTONY, OCTAVIUS, AND LEPIDUS, seated  
at a Table.

*Ant.* These many then shall die; their names  
are prick'd. [you, Lepidus?

*Oct.* Your brother, too, must die; Consent

*Lep.* I do consent.

*Oct.*

Prick† him down, Antony  
*Lep.* Upon condition Publius shall not live,  
Who is your sister's son, Mark Antony.

*Ant.* He shall not live; look, with a spot I  
damn† him.

*Ant.* Lepidus, go you to Cæsar's house;  
Fetch the will hither, and we will determin-  
how to cut off some charge in legacies.

\* Greek coin.

† Set mark.

Condemn.



*Lep.* What, shall I find you here?  
*Oct.* Or here, or at  
 The Capitol. [*Exit LEPIDUS.*]  
*Ant.* This is a slight unmeritable man,  
 Meet to be sent on errands: Is it fit,  
 The three-fold world divided, he should stand  
 One of the three to share it?

*Oct.* So you thought him;  
 And took his voice who should be prick'd to  
 In our black sentence and proscription. [*die,*  
*Ant.* Octavius, I have seen more days than

you;  
 And though we lay these honours on this man,  
 To ease ourselves of divers slanderous loads,  
 He shall but bear them as the ass bears gold:  
 To groan and sweat under the business,  
 Either led or driven as we point the way;  
 And having brought our treasure where we will,  
 Then take we down his load, and turn him off,  
 Like to the empty ass, to shake his ears,  
 And graze in commons.

*Oct.* You may do your will;  
 But he's a tried and valiant soldier.

*Ant.* So is my horse, Octavius; and, for that,  
 I do appoint him store of provender.  
 It is a creature that I teach to fight,  
 To wind, to stop, to run directly on;  
 His corporal motion govern'd by my spirit.  
 And, in some taste, is Lepidus but so; [forth:  
 He must be taught, and train'd, and bid go  
 A barren-spirited fellow; one that feeds  
 On objects, arts, and imitations;  
 Which, out of use, and staled by other men,  
 Begin his fashion: Do not talk of him,  
 But as a property\*. And now, Octavius,  
 Listen great things.—Brutus and Cassius  
 Are levying powers: we must straight make  
 Therefore, let our alliance be combined, [head:  
 Our best friends made, and our best means  
 stretch'd out;

And let us presently go sit in council,  
 How covert matters may be best disclosed,  
 And open perils surest answered.

*Oct.* Let us do so: for we are at the stake,  
 And bay'd† about with many enemies; [fear,  
 And some, that smile, have in their hearts, I  
 Millions of mischief. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *Before Brutus' Tent, in the  
 Camp near Sardis.*

*Drum.* Enter BRUTUS, LUCILIUS, LUCIUS,  
 and Soldiers: TITINIUS and PINDARUS  
 meeting them.

*Bru.* Stand here.

*Luc.* Give the word, ho! and stand.

*Bru.* What now, Lucilius? is Cassius near?

*Luc.* He is at hand; and Pindarus is come  
 To do you salutation from his master.

[PINDARUS gives a Letter to BRUTUS.]

*Bru.* Hegreets me well.—Your master, Pin-  
 In his own change, or by ill officers, darus,  
 Hath given me some worthy cause to wish  
 Things done, undone: but, if he be at hand,  
 I shall be satisfied.

*Pin.* I do not doubt,

But that my noble master will appear  
 Such as he is, full of regard, and honour.

*Bru.* He is not doubted.—A word, Lucilius:  
 How he received you, let me be resolved.

*Luc.* With courtesy, and with respect  
 enough;

But not with such familiar instances,  
 Nor with such free and friendly conference,  
 As he hath used of old.

*Bru.* Thou hast described  
 A hot friend cooling: Ever note, Lucilius,  
 When love begins to sicken and decay,  
 It useth an enforced ceremony.  
 There are no tricks in plain and simple faith:  
 But hollow men, like horses hot at hand,  
 Make gallant show and promise of their mettle:  
 But when they should endure the bloody spur,  
 They fall their crests, and, like deceitful jades,  
 Sink in the trial. Comes his army on?

*Luc.* They mean this night in Sardis to be  
 quarter'd;

The greater part, the horse in general,  
 Are come with Cassius. [*March within.*

*Bru.* Hark, he is arrived:—  
 March gently on to meet him.

*Enter CASSIUS and Soldiers.*

*Cas.* Stand, ho!

*Bru.* Stand, ho! Speak the word along.

*Within.* Stand.

*Within.* Stand.

*Within.* Stand.

*Cas.* Most noble brother, you have done me  
 wrong. [enemies?

*Bru.* Judge me, you gods! Wrong I mine  
 And, if not so, how should I wrong a brother?

*Cas.* Brutus, this sober form of yours hides  
 And when you do them— [wrongs;

*Bru.* Cassius, be content,  
 Speak your griefs‡ softly,—I do know you  
 well:—

Before the eyes of both our armies here, [us,  
 Which should perceive nothing but love from  
 Let us not wrangle: Bid them move away;  
 Then in my tent, Cassius, enlarge your griefs,  
 And I will give you audience.

*Cas.* Pindarus,  
 Bid our commanders lead their charges off  
 A little from this ground.

*Bru.* Lucilius, do the like; and let no man  
 Come to our tent, till we have done our con-  
 ference.

Let Lucius and Titinius guard our door.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *Within the Tent of Brutus.*

LUCIUS and TITINIUS at some distance  
 from it.

*Enter BRUTUS and CASSIUS.*

*Cas.* That you have wrong'd me, doth ap-  
 pear in this:

You have condemn'd and noted Lucius Pella,  
 For taking bribes here of the Sardians;  
 Wherein, my letters, praying on his side,  
 Because I knew the man, were slighted off.

*Bru.* You wrong'd yourself, to write in  
 such a case.

As a thing at our disposal.

† Surrounded, baited.

‡ Grievances.

*Cas.* In such a time as this, it is not meet  
That every nice \* offence should bear his com-  
ment.

*Bru.* Let me tell you, Cassius, you yourself  
Are much condemn'd to have an itching palm;  
To sell and mart your offices for gold,  
To undeservers.

*Cas.* I an itching palm?  
You know, that you are Brutus that speak this,  
Or, by the gods, this speech were else your last.

*Bru.* The name of Cassius honours this  
corruption,  
And chastisement doth therefore hide his head.

*Cas.* Chastisement! [remember!

*Bru.* Remember March, the ides of March  
Did not great Julius bleed for justice' sake?  
What villain touch'd his body, that did stab,  
And not for justice? What, shall one of us,  
That struck the foremost man of all this world,  
But for supporting robbers; shall we now  
Contaminate our fingers with base bribes?  
And sell the mighty space of our large honours,  
For so much trash, as may be grasped thus?—  
I had rather be a dog, and bay† the moon,  
Than such a Roman.

*Cas.* Brutus, bay not me,  
I'll not endure it: you forget yourself,  
To hedge me in; I am a soldier, I  
Older in practice, abler than yourself  
To make conditions§.

*Bru.* Go to; you're not, Cassius.

*Cas.* I am.

*Bru.* I say you are not. [self;

*Cas.* Urge me no more, I shall forget my-  
Have mind upon your health, tempt me no

*Bru.* Away, slight man! further.

*Cas.* Is't possible?

*Bru.* Hear me, for I will speak.  
Must I give way and room to your rash choler?  
Shall I be frighted when a madman stares?

*Cas.* O ye gods! ye gods! Must I endure  
all this? [proud heart break;

*Bru.* All this; ay, more: Fret, till your  
Go, show your slaves how choleric you are,  
And make your bondmen tremble. Must I  
budge?

Must I observe you? Must I stand and crouch  
Under your testy humour? By the gods,  
You shall digest the venom of your spleen,  
Though it do split you: for, from this day forth,  
I'll use you for my mirth, yea, for my laughter,  
When you are waspish.

*Cas.* Is it come to this?

*Bru.* You say, you are a better soldier:  
Let it appear so; make your vaunting true,  
And it shall please me well: For mine own  
I shall be glad to learn of noble men. [part,

*Cas.* You wrong me every way, you wrong  
me, Bruins;

I said an elder soldier, not a better:  
D.d I say better?

*Bru.* If you did, I care not.

*Cas.* When Cæsar lived, he durst not thus  
have moved me. [tempted him.

*Bru.* Peace, peace; you durst not so have

*Cas.* I durst not?

*Bru.* No.

*Cas.* What? durst not tempt him?

*Bru.* For your life you durst not.

*Cas.* Do not presume too much upon my  
I may do that I shall be sorry for. [love,

*Bru.* You have done that you should be  
sorry for.

There is no terror, Cassius, in your threats  
For I am arm'd so strong in honesty,  
That they pass by me, as the idle wind,  
Which I respect not. I did send to you [me;  
For certain sums of gold, which you denied  
For I can raise no money by vile means:  
By heaven, I had rather coin my heart,  
And drop my blood for drachmas||, than to  
wring [trash,

From the hard hands of peasants their vile  
By any indirection. I did send  
To you for gold to pay my legions, [Cassius?  
Which you denied me: Was that done like  
Should I have answer'd Caius Cassius so?  
When Marcus Brutus grows so covetous,  
To lock such rascal counters from his friends,  
Be ready, gods, with all your thunderbolts,  
Dash him to pieces!

*Cas.* I denied you not.

*Bru.* You did.

*Cas.* I did not:—he was but a fool,  
That brought my answer back.—Brutus hath  
rived¶ my heart:

A friend should bear his friend's infirmities,  
But Brutus makes mine greater than they are.

*Bru.* I do not, till you practise them on me.

*Cas.* You love me not.

*Bru.* I do not like your faults.

*Cas.* A friendly eye could never see such  
faults. [do appear

*Bru.* A flatterer's would not, though they  
As huge as high Olympus. [come,

*Cas.* Come, Antony, and young Octavius,  
Revenge yourselves alone on Cassius,  
For Cassius is aware of the world:

Hated by one he loves; braved by his brother:  
Check'd like a bondman; all his faults ob-

served,

Set in a note-book, learn'd, and conn'd by rote  
To cast into my teeth. O, I could weep

My spirit from mine eyes!—There is my  
dagger,

And here my naked breast; within, a heart  
Dearer than Plutus' mine, richer than gold:

If that thou be'st a Roman, take it forth;  
I, that denied thee gold, will give my heart:

Strike, as thou didst at Cæsar; for, I know,  
When thou didst hate him worst, thou lovedst

Than ever thou lovedst Cassius. [him better

*Bru.* Sheath your dagger  
Be angry when you will, it shall have scope,  
Do what you will, dishonour shall be humour:  
O Cassius, you are yoked with a lamb  
That carries anger, as the flint bears fire;  
Who, much enforced, shows a hasty spark,  
And straight is cold again.

*Cas.* Hath Cassius lived

\* Trifling.

† Bait, bark at.

‡ Limit my authority.

§ Terms, fit to confer the offices at my disposal.

|| Coin.

¶ Split.

to be but mirth and laughter to his Brutus,  
When grief, and blood ill-temper'd, vexeth  
him? [too.]

*Bru.* When I spoke that, I was ill-temper'd

*Cas.* Do you confess so much? Give me

*Bru.* And my heart too. [your hand.]

*Cas.* O Brutus!—

*Bru.* What's the matter?

*Cas.* Have you not love enough to bear  
with me, [gave me,

When that rash humour, which my inother  
Makes me forgetful?

*Bru.* Yes, Cassius; and, henceforth,  
When you are over-earnest with your Brutus,  
He'll think your mother chides, and leave you  
so. [Noise within.]

*Poet.* [Within.] Let me go in to see the  
generals; [meet

There is some grudge between them, 'tis not  
They be alone.

*Luc.* [Within.] You shall not come to them.

*Poet.* [Within.] Nothing but death shall  
stay me.

*Enter Poet.*

*Cas.* How now? What's the matter?

*Poet.* For shame, you generals; What do  
you mean? [should be;  
Love, and be friends, as two such men  
For I have seen more years, I am sure, than  
ye. [rhyme]

*Cas.* Ha, ha; how vilely doth this cynic

*Bru.* Get you hence, sirrah; saucy fellow,  
hence.

*Cas.* Bear with him, Brutus; 'tis his fashion.

*Bru.* I'll know his humour, when he knows  
his time? [fools?

What should the wars do with these jiggling  
Companion\*, hence.

*Cas.* Away, away, be gone.

[Exit Poet.]

*Enter LUCILIUS and TITINIUS.*

*Bru.* Lucilius and Titinius, bid the com-  
manders

Prepare to lodge their companies to-night.

*Cas.* And come yourselves, and bring Mes-  
sala to us. [sala with you

[Exit LUCILIUS and TITINIUS.]

*Bru.* Lucius, a bowl of wine. [angry.]

*Cas.* I did not think, you could have been so

*Bru.* O Cassius, I am sick of many griefs.

*Cas.* Of your philosophy you make no use,  
If you give place to accidental evils. [is dead.]

*Bru.* No man bears sorrow better:—Portia

*Cas.* Ha! Portia?

*Bru.* She is dead. [you so?—

*Cas.* How 'scaped I killing, when I cross'd  
O insupportable and touching loss!—

Upon what sickness?

*Bru.* Impatient of my absence;  
And grief, that young Octavius with Mark An-  
tony [her death

Have made themselves so strong:—for, with  
That tidings came;—With this she fell distract,  
And, her attendants absent, swallow'd fire.

*Cas.* And died so?

*Bru.* Even so.

*Cas.* O ye mortal gods!

*Enter LUCIUS, with Wine and Tapers.*

*Bru.* Speak no more of her.—Give me a  
bowl of wine:—

In this I bury all unkindness, Cassius. [Drinks.]

*Cas.* My heart is thirsty for that noble  
pledge:—

Fill, Lucius, till the wine o'erswell the cup;  
I cannot drink too much of Brutus' love.  
[Drinks.]

*Re-enter TITINIUS, with MESSALA.*

*Bru.* Come in, Titinius:—Welcome, good  
Messala.—

Now sit we close about this taper here,

And call in question our necessities.

*Cas.* Portia, art thou gone?

*Bru.* No more, I pray you.—

Messala, I have here received letters,  
That young Octavius, and Mark Antony,  
Come down upon us with a mighty power,  
Bending their expedition toward Philippi.

*Mes.* Myself have letters of the self-same

*Bru.* With what addition? [tenour.]

*Mes.* That by proscription, and bills of  
Octavius, Antony, and Lepidus, [outlawry,  
Have put to death an hundred senators.

*Bru.* Therein our letters do not well agree;  
Mine speak of seventy senators, that died  
By their proscriptions, Cicero being one.

*Cas.* Cicero one?

*Mes.* Ay, Cicero is dead,

And by that order of proscription.—

Had you your letters from your wife, my lord?

*Bru.* No, Messala. [her?

*Mes.* Nor nothing in your letters writ of

*Bru.* Nothing, Messala.

*Mes.* That, methinks, is strange. [In yours?

*Bru.* Why ask you? Hear you aught of her

*Mes.* No, my lord. [true.]

*Bru.* Now, as you are a Roman, tell me

*Mes.* Then like a Roman bear the truth I  
tell; [ner.]

For certain she is dead, and by strange man-

*Bru.* Why, farewell, Portia.—We must die,  
Messala:

With meditating that she must die once,

I have the patience to endure it now.

*Mes.* Even so great men great losses should  
endure.

*Cas.* I have as much of this in art as you,  
But yet my nature could not bear it so.

*Bru.* Well, to our work alive. What do you

Of marching to Philippi presently? [think

*Cas.* I do not think it good.

*Bru.* Your reason?

*Cas.* This it is:

'Tis better, that the enemy seek us:

So shall he waste his means, weary his soldiers,  
Doing himself offence; whilst we, lying still,  
Are full of rest, defence, and nimbleness.

*Bru.* Good reasons must, of force, give  
place to better.

The people, 'twixt Philippi and this ground,  
Do stand but in a forced affection;

For they have grudged us contribution:

The enemy, marching along by them,



By them shall make a fuller number up,  
Come on refresh'd, new-added, and encour-  
aged;

From which advantage shall we cut him off,  
If at Philippi we do face him there,  
These people at our back.

*Cas.* Hear me, good brother.

*Bru.* Under your pardon.—You must note  
beside,

That we have try'd the utmost of our friends,  
Our legions are brim-full, our cause is ripe:  
The enemy increaseth every day,  
We, at the height, are ready to decline.  
There is a tide in the affairs of men, [tune;  
Which, taken at the flood, leads on to for-  
omitted, all the voyage of their life  
Is bound in shallows, and in miseries.  
On such a full sea are we now afloat;  
And we must take the current when it serves,  
Or lose our ventures.

*Cas.* Then, with your will, go on;  
We'll along ourselves, and meet them at Phi-  
lippi. [talk,

*Bru.* The deep of night is crept upon our  
And nature must obey necessity;  
Which we must niggard with a little rest.  
There is no more to say?

*Cas.* No more. Good night;  
Early to-morrow will we rise, and hence.

*Bru.* Lucius, my gown. [Exit LUCIUS.]  
Farewell, good Messala;—  
Good night, Titinius:—Noble, noble Cassius,  
Good night, and good repose.

*Cas.* O, my dear brother!  
This was an ill beginning of the night:  
Never come such division 'tween our souls!  
Let it not, Brutus.

*Bru.* Every thing is well.

*Cas.* Good night, my lord.

*Bru.* Good night, good brother.

*Tit. Mes.* Good night, lord Brutus.

*Bru.* Farewell, every one.

[Exit CAS. TIT. and MES.]

*Re-enter LUCIUS, with the Gown.*

Give me the gown. Where is thy instrument?  
*Luc.* Here in the tent.

*Bru.* What, thou speak'st drowsily?  
Poor knave, I blame thee not; thou art o'er-  
watch'd.

Call Claudius, and some other of my men;  
I'll have them sleep on cushions in my tent.

*Luc.* Varro, and Claudius!

*Enter VARRO and CLAUDIUS.*

*Var.* Calls my lord?

*Bru.* I pray you, sirs, lie in my tent, and  
It may be, I shall raise you by and by [sleep;  
On business to my brother Cassius.

*Var.* So please you, we will stand, and  
watch your pleasure. [sirs;

*Bru.* I will not have it so: lie down, good  
It may be, I shall otherwise bethink me.

Look, Lucius, here's the book I sought for so;  
I put it in the pocket of my gown.

[Servants lie down.

*Luc.* I was sure your lordship did not give  
it me.

*Bru.* Bear with me, good boy, I am much  
forgetful.

Canst thou hold up thy heavy eyes awhile,  
And touch thy instrument a strain or two?

*Luc.* Ay, my lord, an it please you.

*Bru.* It does, my boy:

I trouble thee too much, but thou art willing.

*Luc.* It is my duty, sir.

*Bru.* I should not urge thy duty past thy  
might;

I know, young bloods look for a time of rest.

*Luc.* I have slept, my lord, already.

*Bru.* It is well done; and thou shalt sleep  
again;

I will not hold thee long: if I do live,  
I will be good to thee. [Music, and a Song—  
This is a sleepy tune:—O murderous slumber  
Lay'st thou thy leaden mace \* upon my boy,  
That plays thee music?—Gentle knave, good  
night;

I will not do thee so much wrong to wake thee  
If thou dost nod, thou break'st thy instrument  
I'll take it from thee; and, good boy, good  
night. [down.

Let me see, let me see;—Is not the leaf turn'd  
Where I left reading? Here it is, I think.

[He sits down

*Enter the Ghost of CÆSAR.*

How ill this taper burns!—Ha! who comes  
here?

I think it is the weakness of mine eyes  
That shapes this monstrous apparition.  
It comes upon me:—Art thou any thing?  
Art thou some god, some angel, or some devil  
That makest my blood cold, and my hair to  
Speak to me, what thou art. [stare

*Ghost.* Thy evil spirit, Brutus.

*Bru.* Why comest thou? [lippi.

*Ghost.* To tell thee thou shalt see me at Phi-

*Bru.* Well;

Then I shall see thee again?

*Ghost.* Ay, at Philippi.

[Ghost vanishes.

*Bru.* Why, I will see thee at Philippi then.  
Now I have taken heart, thou vanishest:  
Ill spirit, I would hold more talk with thee.—  
Boy! Lucius!—Varro! Claudius! sirs, awake!  
Claudius!

*Luc.* The strings, my lord, are false.

*Bru.* He thinks he still is at his instrument.  
Lucius, awake.

*Luc.* My lord! [so cry'dst out?

*Bru.* Didst thou dream, Lucius, that thou

*Luc.* My lord, I do not know that I did  
cry. [any thing?

*Bru.* Yes, that thou didst: Didst thou see

*Luc.* Nothing, my lord.

*Bru.* Sleep again, Lucius. Sirrah, Claudius!  
Fellow thou! awake.

*Var.* My lord.

*Clau.* My lord. [sleep?

*Bru.* Why did you so cry out, sirs, in your

*Var. Clau.* Did we, my lord?

*Bru.* Ay; Saw you any thing?

*Var.* No, my lord. I saw nothing.

*Clau.* Nor I, my lord.

*Bru.* Go, and commend me to my brother  
Cassius;  
Bid him set on his powers betimes before,

And we will follow.

*Var. Clau.* It shall be done, my lord.

[*Exeunt*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. *The Plains of Philippi.*

*Enter OCTAVIUS, ANTONY, and their Army.*

*Oct.* Now, Antony, our hopes are answer'd:  
You said, the enemy would not come down,  
But keep the hills and upper regions;  
It proves not so: their battles are at hand;  
They mean to warn\* us at Philippi here,  
Answering before we do demand of them.

*Ant.* Tut, I am in their bosoms, and I know  
Wherefore they do it: they could be content  
To visit other places; and come down  
With fearful bravery, thinking, by this face,  
To fasten in our thoughts that they have con-  
But 'tis not so. [rage];

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Prepare you, generals:  
The enemy comes on in gallant show;  
Their bloody sign of battle is hung out,  
And something to be done immediately.

*Ant.* Octavius, lead your battle softly on,  
Upon the left hand of the even field. [left.]

*Oct.* Upon the right hand I, keep thou the

*Ant.* Why do you cross me in this exigent?

*Oct.* I do not cross you; but I will do so.

[*March.*]

*Drum. Enter BRUTUS, CASSIUS, and their  
Army; LUCILIUS, TITINIUS, MESSALA,  
and Others.*

*Bru.* They stand, and would have parley.

*Cas.* Stand fast, Titinius: We must out and  
talk. [battle?]

*Oct.* Mark Antony, shall we give sign of

*Ant.* No, Cæsar, we will answer on their  
charge. [words.]

Make forth, the generals would have some  
*Oct.* Stir not until the signal. [men?]

*Bru.* Words before blows: Is it so, country-

*Oct.* Not that we love words better, as you  
do. [Octavius.]

*Bru.* Good words are better than bad strokes.

*Ant.* In your bad strokes, Brutus, you give  
good words:

Witness the hole you made in Cæsar's heart,  
Crying, *Long live! hail Cæsar!*

*Cas.* Antony,  
The posture of your blows are yet unknown;  
But for your words, they rob the Hybla bees,  
And leave them honeyless.

*Ant.* Not stingless too.

*Bru.* O, yes, and soundless too;

For you have stol'n their buzzing, Antony,  
And very wisely, threat before you sting.

*Ant.* Villains, you did not so, when your  
vile daggers

Hack'd one another in the sides of Cæsar:  
You show'd your teeth like apes, and fawn'd  
like hounds,

And bow'd like bondmen, kissing Cæsar's feet;

Whilst damned Casca, like a cur, behind,  
Struck Cæsar on the neck. O flatterers!

*Cas.* Flatterers!—Now, Brutus, thank you—  
This tongue had not offended so to-day, [self:]  
If Cassius might have ruled. [us sweat,

*Oct.* Come, come, the cause: If arguing make  
The proof of it will turn to redder drops.

Look;

I draw a sword against conspirators;  
When think you that the sword goes up again?

Never, till Cæsar's three and twenty wounds  
Be well avenged; or till another Cæsar  
Have added slaughter to the sword of traitors.

*Bru.* Cæsar, thou can'st not die by traitors,  
Unless thou bring'st them with thee.

*Oct.* So I hope:  
I was not born to die on Brutus' sword.

*Bru.* O, if thou wert the noblest of thy strain,  
Young man, thou could'st not die more honour-

able. [honour,

*Cas.* A peevish schoolboy, worthless of such  
Join'd with a masker and a reveller.

*Ant.* Old Cassius still!

*Oct.* Come, Antony; away.—  
Defiance, traitors, hurl + we in your teeth:

If you dare fight to-day, come to the field;  
If not, when you have stomachs.

[*Exeunt OCTAVIUS, ANTONY, and  
their Army.*]

*Cas.* Why now, blow wind; swell, billow;  
and swim, bark!

The storm is up, and all is on the hazard.

*Bru.* Ho!

Lucilius; hark, a word with you.

*Luc.* My lord.

[*BRUTUS and LUCILIUS converse apart.*]

*Cas.* Messala,—

*Mes.* What says my general?

*Cas.* Messala,  
This is my birth-day; as this very day [sala:]

Was Cassius born. Give me thy hand, Mes-  
Be thou my witness, that, against my will,

As Pompey was, am I compell'd to set  
Upon one battle all our liberties.

You know, that I held Epicurus strong,  
And his opinion: now I change my mind,

And partly credit things that do presage.  
Coming from Sardis, on our former + ensign

Two mighty eagles fell, and there they perch'd,  
Gorging and feeding from our soldiers' hands;

Who to Philippi here consorted + us;  
This morning are they fled away, and gone;

And in their steads, do ravens, crows, and kites,  
Fly o'er our heads, and downward look on us,

As we were sickly prey; their shadows seem  
A canopy most fatal, under which

Our army lies, ready to give up the ghost.  
*Mes.* Believe not so.

*Cas.* I but believe it partly,

Summon.

† Throw

‡ Foremost.

§ Accompanied.

For I am fresh of spirit, and resolved  
To meet all perils very constantly.

*Br.* Even so, Lucilius.

*Cas.* Now, most noble Brutus,  
The gods to-day stand friendly; that we may,  
Lovers in peace, lead on our days to age!  
But, since the affairs of men rest still uncertain,  
Let's reason with the worst that may befall.  
If we do lose this battle, then is this  
The very last time we shall speak together:  
What are you then determined to do?

*Br.* Even by the rule of that philosophy,  
By which I did blame Cato for the death  
Which he did give himself:—I know not how,  
But I do find it cowardly and vile,  
For fear of what might fall, so to prevent  
The time of life:—arming myself with patience,  
To stay the providence of some high powers,  
That govern us below.

*Cas.* Then, if we lose this battle,  
You are contented to be lead in triumph  
Thorough the streets of Rome? [*Roman*,

*Br.* No, Cassius, no: think not, thou noble  
That ever Brutus will go bound to Rome;  
He bears too great a mind. But this same day  
Must end that work the ides of March begun;  
And whether we shall meet again I know not.  
Therefore our everlasting farewell take:—  
For ever, and for ever, farewell, Cassius!  
If we do meet again, why we shall smile;  
If not, why then this parting was well made.

*Cas.* For ever, and for ever, farewell, *Br.*  
If we do meet again, we'll smile indeed; [*tus!*  
If not, 'tis true, this parting was well made.

*Br.* Why then, lead on.—O, that a man  
might know

The end of this day's business, ere it come!  
But it sufficeth, that the day will end,  
And then the end is known.—Come, ho!  
away! [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II. *The same. The Field of Battle.*

*Alarum.* Enter BRUTUS and MESSALA.

*Br.* Ride, ride, Messala, ride, and give  
these bills \*

Unto the legions on the other side:  
[*Loud Alarum.*

Let them set on at once; for I perceive  
But cold demeanour in Octavius' wing,  
And sudden push gives them the overthrow.  
Ride, ride, Messala: let them all come down.  
[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE III. *The same. Another Part of the Field.*

*Alarum.* Enter CASSIUS and TITINIUS.

*Cas.* O, look, Titinius, look, the villains fly!  
Myself have to mine own turn'd enemy:  
This ensign here of mine was turning back;  
I slew the coward, and did take it from him.

*Tit.* O Cassius, Brutus gave the word too  
early:

Who having some advantage on Octavius,  
Took it too eagerly; his soldiers fell to spoil,  
Whilst we by Antony are all enclosed.

Enter PINDARUS.

*Pin.* Fly further off, my lord, fly further off;  
Mark Antony is in your tents, my lord!  
Fly, therefore, noble Cassius, fly far off.

*Cas.* This hill is far enough. Look, look,  
Titinius;

Are those my tents, where I perceive the fire?  
*Tit.* They are, my lord.

*Cas.* Titinius, if thou lovest me,  
Mount thou my horse, and hide thy spurs in  
him,

Till he have brought thee up to yonder troops,  
And here again; that I may rest assured,  
Whether yond' troops are friend or enemy.

*Tit.* I will be here again, even with a  
thought. [*Exit.*

*Cas.* Go, Pindarus, get higher on that hill;  
My sight was ever thick; regard Titinius,  
And tell me what thou notest about the field.—

[*Exit PINDARUS.*  
This day I breathed first: time is come round,  
And where I did begin, there I shall end;  
My life is run his compass.—Sirrah, what news?

*Pin.* [*Above.*] O my lord!

*Cas.* What news!  
*Pin.* Titinius is  
Enclosed round about with horsemen, that  
Make to him on the spur;—yet he spurs on.—  
Now they are almost on him: now, Titinius!—  
Now some 'light:—O, he 'lights too:—he's  
ta'en—and hark! [*Shout.*

They shout for joy.

*Cas.* Come down, behold no more.—  
O, coward that I am, to live so long,  
To see my best friend ta'en before my face!

Enter PINDARUS.

Come hither, sirrah:  
In Parthia did I take thee prisoner;  
And then I swore thee, saving of thy life,  
That whatsoever I did bid thee do, [thine oath]  
Thou should'st attempt it. Come now, keep  
Now be a freeman; and, with this good sword,  
That ran through Cæsar's bowels, search this  
bosom.

Stand not to answer: Here, take thou the hilts:  
And, when my face is cover'd as 'tis now,  
Guide thou the sword.—Cæsar, thou art re-  
venged,

Even with the sword that kill'd thee. [*Dies.*

*Pin.* So, I am free; yet would not so have  
Durst I have done my will. O Cassius! been,  
Far from this country Pindarus shall run,  
Where never Roman shall take note of him.

[*Exit.*

Re-enter TITINIUS, with MESSALA.

*Mes.* It is but change, Titinius; for Octa-  
Is overthrown by noble Brutus' power, [wins]  
As Cassius' legions are by Antony.

*Tit.* These tidings will well comfort Cassius.

*Mes.* Where did you leave him?

*Tit.* All disconsol

With Pindarus his bondsman on this hill.

*Mes.* Is not that he, that lies upon the ground?

*Tit.* He lies not like the living. O my heart!

*Mes.* Is not that he?

*Tit.* No, this was he, Messala,



But Cassius is no more.—O setting sun!  
As in thy red rays thou dost sink to night,  
So in his red blood Cassius' day is set;  
The sun of Rome is set! Our day is gone;  
Clouds, dews, and dangers come; our deeds  
are done!

Mistrust of my success hath done this deed.

Mes. Mistrust of good success hath done  
O hateful error, melancholy's child! [this deed.  
Why dost thou show to the apt thoughts of  
men

The things that are not? O error, soon con-  
ceived,

Thou never comest unto a happy birth,  
But kill'st the mother that engender'd thee.

Tit. What, Pindarus! Where art thou, Pin-  
darus?

Mes. Seek him, Titinius: whilst I go to  
The noble Brutus, thrusting this report  
into his ears: I may say, thrusting it;  
For piercing steel, and darts envenomed,  
Shall be as welcome to the ears of Brutus,  
As tidings of this sight.

Tit. Hie you, Messala,  
And I will seek for Pindarus the while.

[Exit MESSALA.  
Why didst thou send me forth, brave Cassius?  
Did I not meet thy friends? and did not they  
Put on my brows this wreath of victory,  
And bid me give 't thee? Didst thou not hear  
their shouts?

Alas, thou hast misconstrued every thing.  
But hold thee, take this garland on thy brow;  
Thy Brutus bid me give it thee, and I  
Will do his bidding.—Brutus, come apace,  
And see how I regarded Caius Cassius.—  
By your leave, gods:—this is a Roman's part:  
Come, Cassius' sword, and find Titinius' heart.  
[Dies.

Alarum. Re-enter MESSALA, with BRUTUS,  
Young CATO, STRATO, VOLUMNIUS, and  
LUCILIUS.

Bru. Where, where, Messala, doth his body  
lie?

Mes. Lo, yonder, and Titinius mourning it.

Bru. Titinius' face is upward.

Cato. He is slain.

Bru. O Julius Cæsar, thou art mighty yet!  
Thy spirit walks abroad, and turns our swords  
In our own proper entrails. [Low Alarums.

Cato. Brave Titinius!  
Look, wher' he have not crown'd dead Cassius!

Bru. Are yet two Romans living such as  
these?

The last of all the Romans, fare thee well!  
It is impossible that ever Rome  
Should breed thy fellow.—Friends, I owe  
more tears

To this dead man, than you shall see me pay.—  
I shall find time, Cassius, I shall find time.—  
Come, therefore, and to Thassos send his body;  
His funerals shall not be in our camp,  
Lest it discomfort us.—Lucilius, come;—  
And come, young Cato: let us to the field.—  
Labeo, and Flavius, set our battles on:—

'Tis three o'clock; and, Romans, yet ere night  
We shall try fortune in a second fight. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE IV. Another part of the Field.

Alarum. Enter fighting, Soldiers of both  
armies; then BRUTUS, CATO, LUCILIUS,  
and Others.

Bru. Yet, countrymen, O, yet hold up your  
heads!

Cato. What bastard doth not? Who will ge-  
I will proclaim my name about the field:  
I am the son of Marcus Cato, ho!  
A foe to tyrants, and my country's friend;  
I am the son of Marcus Cato, ho!

[Charges the enemy.  
Bru. And I am Brutus, Marcus Brutus, I;  
Brutus, my country's friend; know me for  
Brutus.

[Exit, charging the enemy. CATO is  
overpowered, and falls.

Luc. O young and noble Cato, art thou  
down?

Why, now thou diest as bravely as Titinius;  
And may'st be honoured being Cato's son.

1 Sold. Yield, or thou diest.  
Luc. Only I yield to die:

There is so much that thou wilt kill me  
straight;

[Offering Money.  
Kill Brutus, and be honour'd in his death.

1 Sold. We must not.—A noble prisoner!

2 Sold. Room, ho! Tell Antony, Brutus is  
ta'en.

1 Sold. I'll tell the news.—Here comes the  
[general:—  
Enter ANTONY.

Brutus is ta'en, Brutus is ta'en, my lord.

Ant. Where is he?

Luc. Safe, Antony; Brutus is safe enough:

I dare assure thee, that no enemy  
Shall ever take alive the noble Brutus:

The gods defend him from so great a shame!

When you do find him, or alive, or dead,

He will be found like Brutus, like himself.

Ant. This is not Brutus, friend; but I as-  
sure you,

A prize no less in worth: keep this man safe,

Give him all kindness: I had rather have

Such men my friends than enemies. Go on,

And see wher' Brutus be alive or dead:

And bring us word, unto Octavius' tent,

How every thing is chanced. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE V. Another part of the Field.

Enter BRUTUS, DARDANIUS, CLITUS,  
STRATO, and VOLUMNIUS.

Bru. Come, poor remains of friends, rest  
on this rock.

Clit. Statilius show'd the torch-light; but, my  
He came not back; he is or ta'en or slain.

Bru. Sit thee down, Clitus: Slaying is th  
word;

It is a deed in fashion. Hark thee, Clitus.—  
[Whispering.

Clit. What, I, my lord? No, not for all the  
world.

Bru. Peace then, no words.

Clit. I'll rather kill myself.

*Bru.* Hark thee, Dardanius!

[*Whispers him.*]

*Dar.*

I do such a deed?

*Cli.* O, Dardanius!

*Dar.* O, Clitus!

[*thee?*]

*Cli.* What ill request did Brutus make to

*Dar.* To kill him, Clitus: Look, he meditates.

*Cli.* Now is that noble vessel full of grief,  
That it runs over even at his eyes.

*Bru.* Come hither, good Volumnius: list a

*Vol.* What says my lord?

[*word.*]

*Bru.* Why this, Volumnius:

The ghost of Cæsar hath appear'd to me

Two several times by night: at Sardis, once;

And, this last night, here in Philippi's fields.

I know my hour is come.

*Vol.* Not so, my lord.

*Bru.* Nay, I am sure it is, Volumnius.

Thou see'st the world, Volumnius, how it goes;

Our enemies have beat us to the pit:

It is more worthy to leap in ourselves,

Than tarry till they push us. Good Volumnius,

Thou know'st, that we two went to school to-

Even for that our love of old, I pray thee,

Hold thou my sword-hilts, whilst I run on it.

*Vol.* That's not an office for a friend, my

lord.

[*Alarum still.*]

*Cli.* Fly, fly, my lord; there is no tarrying

here.

[*Volumnius.—*]

*Bru.* Farewell to you;—and you;—and you,

Strato, thou hast been all this while asleep;

Farewell to thee too, Strato.—Countrymen,

My heart doth joy, that yet, in all my life,

I found no man, but he was true to me.

I shall have glory by this losing day,

More than Octavius and Mark Antony,

By this vile conquest shall attain unto.

So, fare you well at once; for Brutus' tongue

Hath almost ended his life's history:

Night hangs upon mine eyes; my bones

would rest,

That have but labour'd to attain this hour.

[*Alarum. Cry within, Fly, fly, fly.*]

*Cli.* Fly, my lord, fly.

*Bru.* Hence; I will follow thee.

[*Exeunt CLITUS, DARDANIUS, and VOL-*]

*UMLNIUS.*]

I pr'ythee, Strato, stay thou by thy lord:

Thou art a fellow of a good respect; [it:]

Thy life hath had some smatch of honour in

Hold then my sword, and turn away thy face,

While I do run upon it. Wilt thou, Strato?

*Str.* Give me your hand first: Fare you

well, my lord.

*Bru.* Farewell, good Strato.—Cæsar, now

be still:

I kill'd not thee with half so good a will.

[*He runs on his Sword, and dies.*]

*Alarum. Retreat. Enter OCTAVIUS, AN-*

*TONY, MESSALA, LUCILIUS, and their*

*Army.*

*Oct.* What man is that?

*Mess.* My master's man.—Strato, where is

thy master? [Messala;]

*Str.* Free from the bondage you are in,

The conquerors can but make a fire of him;

For Brutus only overcame himself,

And no man else hath honour by his death.

*Luc.* So Brutus should be found.—I thank

thee, Brutus,

That thou hast proved Lucilius' saying true.

*Oct.* All that served Brutus, I will enter-

tain them\*:

Fellow, wilt thou bestow thy time with me?

*Str.* Ay, if Messala will prefer me to

*Oct.* Do so, Messala. [yon.]

*Mes.* How died my master, Strato?

*Str.* I held the sword, and he did run on

it. [thee,]

*Mes.* Octavius, then take him to follow

That did the latest service to my master.

*Ant.* This was the noblest Roman of them

All the conspirators, save only he, [all:]

Did that they did in envy of great Cæsar;

He, only, in a general honest thought,

And common good to all, made one of them.

His life was gentle; and the elements

So mix'd in him, that Nature might stand up,

And say to all the world, *This was a man!*

*Oct.* According to his virtue let us use him,

With all respect and rites of burial.

Within my tent his bones to-night shall lie,

Most like a soldier, order'd honourably.

So, call the field to rest: and let's away,

To part the glories of this happy day.

[*Exeunt.*]

\* Receive into my service.

† Recommend.

Of this tragedy many particular passages deserve regard, and the contention and recommendation of Brutus and Cassius is universally celebrated; but I have never been strongly agitated in perusing it, and think it somewhat cold and unaffecting, compared with some other of Shakspeare's plays; his adherence to the real story, and to Roman manners, seem to have impeded the natural vigour of his genius.—JOHNSON.

# ANTONY AND CLEOPATRA.

## Persons represented.

M ANTONY,  
OCTAVIUS CÆSAR, } *triumvirs.*  
M. ÆMIL. LEPIDUS,  
SEXTUS POMPEIUS.  
DOMITIUS ENOBARBUS, VENTIDIUS, EROS,  
SCARUS, DERCETAS, DEMETRIUS, PHILO,  
*friends of Antony.*  
MECÆNAS, AGRIPPA, DOLABELLA, PRO-  
CULEIUS, THYREUS, GALLUS, *friends to*  
*Cæsar.*  
MENAS, MENECRATES, VARRIUS, *friends*  
*of Pompey.*  
TAURUS, *lieutenant-general to Cæsar.*  
CANILIUS, *lieutenant-general to Antony.*  
SILIUS, *an officer in Ventidius's army.*

EUPHRONIUS, *an ambassador from Antony*  
*to Cæsar.*  
ALEXAS, MARDIAN, SELEUCUS, and DIO-  
MEDES, *attendants on Cleopatra.*  
A Soothsayer. A Clown.  
CLEOPATRA, *queen of Egypt.*  
OCTAVIA, *sister to Cæsar, and wife to*  
*Antony.*  
CHARMIAN, } *attendants on Cleopatra.*  
IRAS,  
*Officers, Soldiers, Messengers, and other*  
*Attendants.*  
*Scene, dispersed; in several parts of the*  
*Roman empire.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. Alexandria. A Room in  
Cleopatra's Palace.

*Enter DEMETRIUS and PHILO.*

*Phi.* Nay, but this dotage of our general's,  
O'erflows the measure: those his goodly eyes,  
That o'er the files and musters of the war {turn,  
Have glow'd like plated Mars, now bend, now  
The office and devotion of their view  
Upon a tawny front: his captain's heart  
Which in the scuffles of great fights hath  
burst [per;

The buckles on his breast, reneges \* all tem-  
And is become the bellows, and the fan,  
To cool a gipsy's lust. Look where they come!

*Flourish. Enter ANTONY and CLEO-  
PATRA, with their Trains; Eunuchs fan-  
ning her.*

Take but good note, and you shall see in him  
The triple pillar of the world transform'd  
Into a strumpet's fool: behold and see.

*Cleo.* If it be love indeed, tell me how much.

*Ant.* There's beggary in the love that can be  
reckon'd.

*Cleo.* I'll set a bourn † how far to be beloved.

*Ant.* Thou must thou needs find out new  
heaven, new earth.

*Enter an Attendant.*

*Att.* News, my good lord, from Rome.

*Ant.* Grates ‡ me:—the sum.

*Cleo.* Nay, hear them, Antony:

Fulvia, perchance, is angry; Or, who knows  
If the scarce-bearded Cæsar have not sent

His powerful mandate to you, *Do this, or*  
*this; [that,*  
*Take in's that kingdom, and enfranchise*  
*Perform't, or else we damn thee.*

*Ant.* How, my love!

*Cleo.* Perchance,—nay, and most like,

You must not stay here longer, your dismissal  
Is come from Cæsar; therefore hear it, An-  
tony. [say?—Both?—

Where's Fulvia's process ¶? Cæsar's, I would  
Call in the messengers.—As I am Egypt's

queen, [thine  
Thou blushest, Antony; and that blood of  
Is Cæsar's homager: else so thy cheek pays

shame, [sengers.

When shrill-tongued Fulvia scolds.—The mes-

*Ant.* Let Rome in Tiber melt I and the wide  
arch

Of the ranged empire fall! Here is my space;

Kingdoms are clay: our dungy earth alike

Feeds beast as man: the nobleness of life

Is to do thus; when such a mutual pair,

[Embracing.

And such a twain can do't, in which, I bind

On pain of punishment, the world to weet ¶,

We stand up peerless.

*Cleo.* Excellent falsehood!

Why did he marry Fulvia, and not love her?

I'll seem the fool I am not; Antony

Will be himself.

*Ant.* But stirr'd by Cleopatra.—

Now, for the love of Love, and her so-

hours,

\* Renounces.

† Bound or limit.

‡ Summons.

§ Offends.

¶ Know.

§ Subdue, conquer.



Let's not confound \* the time with conference  
harsh :

[stretch  
There's not a minute of our lives should  
Without some pleasure now : What sport to-  
Cleo. Hear the ambassadors. [night?

Ant. Fie, wrangling queen !  
Whom every thing becomes, to chide, to laugh,  
To weep ; whose every passion fully strives  
To make itself, in thee, fair and admired !  
No messenger ; but thine and all alone, [note  
To-night we'll wander through the streets, and  
The qualities of people. Come, my queen ;  
Last night you did desire it : Speak not to us.

[Er. Ant. and Cleo. with their Train.  
Dem. Is Cæsar with Antonius prized so  
slight ? [tony,

Phi. Sir, sometimes, when he is not An-  
He comes too short of that great property  
Which still should go with Antony.

Dem. I'm full sorry,  
That he approves the common liar †, who  
Thus speaks of him at Rome : But I will hope  
Of better deeds to-morrow. Rest you happy !  
[Exeunt.

## SCENE II. The same. Another Room.

Enter CHARMIAN, IRAS, ALEXAS, and  
a Soothsayer.

Char. Lord Alexas, sweet Alexas, most any  
thing Alexas, almost most absolute Alexas,  
where's the soothsayer that you praised so to  
the queen ? O, that I knew this husband,  
which, you say, must change his horns with  
garlands !

Alex. Soothsayer.

Sooth. Your will ? [know things ?

Char. Is this the man ?—Is't you, sir, that

Sooth. In nature's infinite book of secrecy,  
A little I can read.

Alex. Show him your hand.

Enter ENOBARBUS.

Eno. Bring in the banquet quickly ; wine  
enough, Cleopatra's health to drink.

Char. Good sir, give me good fortune.

Sooth. I make not, but foresee.

Char. Pray, then, foresee me one.

Sooth. You shall be yet far fairer than you  
are.

Char. He means, in flesh.

Iras. No, you shall paint when you are old.

Char. Wrinkles forbid !

Alex. Vex not his prescience ; be attentive.

Char. Hush !

Sooth. You shall be more beloved than  
beloved.

Char. I had rather heat my liver with  
drinking.

Alex. Nay, hear him.

Char. Good now, some excellent fortune !  
Let me be married to three kings in a forenoon,  
and widow them all : let me have a child at  
fifty, to whom Herod of Jewry may do homage :  
find me to marry me with Octavius Cæsar, and  
companion me with my mistress.

Sooth. You shall outlive the lady whom you  
serve.

Char. O excellent ! I love long life better  
than figs. [former fortune

Sooth. You have seen and proved a fairer  
Than that which is to approach.

Char. Then, belike, my children shall have  
no names ‡ : Pr'ythee, how many boys and  
wenches must I have ?

Sooth. If every of your wishes had a womb,  
And fertile every wish, a million.

Char. Out, fool ! I forgive thee for a witch.

Alex. You think, none but your sheets are  
privy to your wishes.

Char. Nay, come, tell Iras hers.

Alex. We'll know all our fortunes.

Eno. Mine, and most of our fortunes, to-  
night shall be—drunk to bed.

Iras. There's a palm presages chastity, if  
nothing else.

Char. Even as the o'erflowing Nilus pre-  
sageth famine.

Iras. Go, you wild bedfellow, you cannot  
soothsay.

Char. Nay, if an oily palm be not a fruit-  
ful prognostication, I cannot scratch mine  
ear.—Pr'ythee, tell her but a worky-day for-  
tune.

Sooth. Your fortunes are alike.

Iras. But how ? but how ? give me parti-  
culars.

Sooth. I have said.

Iras. Am I not an inch of fortune better  
than she ?

Char. Well, if you were but an inch of for-  
tune better than I, where would you choose it ?

Iras. Not in my husband's nose.

Char. Our worse thoughts heavens mend !  
Alexas,—come, his fortune, his fortune.—O,  
let him marry a woman that cannot go, sweet  
Isis, I beseech thee ! And let her die too, and  
give him a worse ! and let worse follow worse,  
till the worst of all follow him laughing to his  
grave, fifty-fold a cuckold ! Good Isis, hear  
me this prayer, though you deny me a matter  
of more weight ; good Isis, I beseech thee !

Iras. Amen. Dear goddess, hear that prayer  
of the people ! for, as it is a heart-breaking to  
see a handsome man loose-wived, so it is a  
deadly sorrow to behold a foul knave un-  
cuckolded ; Therefore, dear Isis, keep decu-  
rum, and fortune him accordingly !

Char. Amen.

Alex. Lo, now ! if it lay in their hands to  
make me a cuckold, they would make them-  
selves whores, but they'd do't.

Eno. Hush ! here comes Antony.

Char. Not he, the queen.

Enter CLEOPATRA.

Cleo. Saw you my lord ?

Eno. No, lady.

Cleo. Was he not here ?

Char. No, madam. [sudden

Cleo. He was disposed to mirth ; but on the  
A Roman thought hath struck him.—Enobar-

Eno. Madam. [hns,—

Cleo. Seek him, and bring him hither  
Where's Alexas ?

\* Consume.

† Fame.

‡ Shall be bastards.

§ An Egyptian goddess.

Alex. Here, madam, at your service.—My lord approaches.

Enter ANTONY, with a Messenger and Attendants.

Cleo. We will not look upon him: Go with us.

[Enter ANT. CLEOPATRA, ENOBARBUS, ALEXAS, IRAS, CHARMIAN, Soothsayer, and Attendants.

Mess. Fulvia, thy wife, first came into the Ant. Against my brother Lucius? [field.

Mis. Ay: [state

But soon that war had end, and the time's Made friends of them, jointing their force 'gainst Cæsar;

Whose better issue in the war, from Italy, Upon the first encounter, drave them.

Ant. Well,

What worst? [teller.

Mess. The nature of bad news infects the

Ant. When it concerns the fool or coward.

On: 'Tis thus;

Things, that are past, are done, with me.— Who tells me true, though in his tale lie death, I hear him as he flatter'd.

Mess. Labienus

(This is stiff news) hath, with his Parthian force, Extended \* Asia from Euphrates;

His conquering banner shook, from Syria To Lydia, and to Ionia;

Whilst—

Ant. Antony, thou wouldst say,—

Mess. O, my lord!

Ant. Speak to me home, mince not the general tongue;

Name Cleopatra as she's call'd in Rome:

Rail thou in Fulvia's phrase; and taunt my fault [malice

With such full license, as both truth and Have power to utter, O, then we bring forth weeds, [told us,

When our quick winds † lie still; and our ill's Is as our earring ‡. Fare thee well a while.

Mess. At your noble pleasure. [Exit.

Ant. From Sicyon how the news? Speak there. [such an one?

1 Att. The man from Sicyon.—Is there

2 Att. He stays § upon your will.

Ant. Let him appear,—

These strong Egyptian fetters I must break, Enter another Messenger.

Or lose myself in dotage.—What are you?

2 Mess. Fulvia, thy wife, is dead.

Ant. Where died she?

2 Mess. In Sicyon: [serious

Her length of sickness, with what else more Importeth thee to know, this bears.

[Gives a letter.

Ant. Forbear me.—

[Exit Messenger.

There's a great spirit gone! Thus did I desire it: What our contempts do often hurl from us,

We wish it ours again; the present pleasure, By revolution lowering, does become

The opposite of itself: she's good, being gone;

The hand could pluck her back, that shoves her on.

I must from this enchanting queen break off Ten thousand harms, more than the ill's I know, My idleness doth hatch.—How now! Eno barbus!

Enter ENOBARBUS.

Eno. What's your pleasure, sir?

Ant. I must with haste from hence.

Eno. Why, then, we kill all our women: We see how mortal an unkindness is to them; if they suffer our departure, death's the word.

Ant. I must be gone.

Eno. Under a compelling occasion, let women die: It were pity to cast them away for nothing; though, between them and a great cause, they should be esteemed nothing. Cleopatra, catching but the least noise of this, dies instantly; I have seen her die twenty times upon far poorer moment: I do think, there is mettle in death, which commits some loving act upon her, she hath such a celerity in dying.

Ant. She is cunning past man's thought.

Eno. Alack, sir, no; her passions are made of nothing but the finest part of pure love: We cannot call her winds and waters, sighs and tears; they are greater storms and tempests than almanacks can report: this cannot be cunning in her; if it be, she makes a shower of rain as well as Jove.

Ant. 'Would I had never seen her!

Eno. O, sir, you had then left unseen a wonderful piece of work; which not to have been blessed withal, would have discredited your travel.

Ant. Fulvia is dead.

Eno. Sir?

Ant. Fulvia is dead.

Eno. Fulvia?

Ant. Dead.

Eno. Why, sir, give the gods a thankful sacrifice. When it pleaseth their deities to take the wife of a man from him, it shows to man the tailors of the earth; comforting therein, that when old robes are worn out, there are members to make new. If there were no more women but Fulvia, then had you indeed a cut, and the case to be lamented: this grief is crowned with consolation; your old smock brings forth a new petticoat:—and, indeed, the tears live in an onion, that should water this sorrow. [state

Ant. The business she hath broached in the Cannot endure my absence.

Eno. And the business you have broached here cannot be without you; especially that of Cleopatra's, which wholly depends on your abode. [officers

Ant. No more light answers. Let our Have notice what we purpose. I shall break

The cause of our expedience || to the queen, And get her love ¶ to part. For not alone

The death of Fulvia, with more urgent touches Do strongly speak to us; but the letters too

\* Seized.

† In some editions *minds*.

‡ Tilling, plowing; prepares us to produce good seed.

§ Waits.

|| Expedition.

¶ Leave.

Of many our contriving friends in Rome  
 Petition us at home: Sextus Pompeius  
 Hath given the dare to Cæsar, and commands  
 The empire of the sea: our slippery people  
 (Whose love is never link'd to the deserver,  
 Till his deserts are past,) begin to throw  
 Pompey the great, and all his dignities,  
 Upon his son; who, high in name and power,  
 Higher than both in blood and life, stands up  
 For the main soldier: whose quality, going on,  
 The sides o'the world may danger: Much is  
 breeding, [life,  
 Which, like the courser's\* hair, hath yet but  
 And not a serpent's poison. Say, our pleasure,  
 To such whose place is under us, requires  
 Our quick remove from hence.

*Eno.* I shall do't.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and ALEXAS.*

*Cleo.* Where is he?

*Char.* I did not see him since.

*Cleo.* See where he is, who's with him,  
 what he does:—

I did not send you;—If you find him sad,  
 Say, I am dancing; it in mirth, report  
 That I am sudden sick: Quick, and return.

[*Exit ALEX.*

*Char.* Madam, methinks, if you did love  
 him dearly,

You do not hold the method to enforce  
 The like from him.

*Cleo.* What should I do, I do not?

*Char.* In each thing give him way, cross him  
 in nothing. [lose him.

*Cleo.* Thou teachest like a fool: the way to

*Char.* Tempt him not so too far: I wish,  
 forbear;

In time we hate that which we often fear.

*Enter ANTONY.*

But here comes Antony.

*Cleo.* I am sick, and sullen.

*Ant.* I am sorry to give breathing to my  
 purpose,— [fall;

*Cleo.* Help me away, dear Charmian, I shall  
 It cannot be thus long, the sides of nature  
 Will not sustain it.

*Ant.* Now, my dearest queen,—

*Cleo.* Pray you, stand further from me.

*Ant.* What's the matter?

*Cleo.* I know, by that same eye, there's  
 some good news.

What says the married woman?—You may go;  
 Would, she had never given you leave to come!  
 Let her not say, 'tis I that keep you here,  
 I have no power upon you; hers you are.

*Ant.* The gods best know,—

*Cleo.* O, never was there queen  
 So mightily betray'd! Yet, at the first,  
 I saw the treasons planted.

*Ant.* Cleopatra,—

*Cleo.* Why should I think, you can be mine,  
 and true, [gods

Though you in swearing shake the throned

Who have been false to Fulvia? Riotous mad-  
 ness,

To be entangled with those month-made vows  
 Which break themselves in swearing!

*Ant.*

Most sweet queen,—

*Cleo.* Nay, pray you, seek no colour for  
 your going, [staying,

But bid farewell, and go: when you sued  
 Then was the time for words: No going then;—  
 Eternity was in our lips, and eyes; [poor,  
 Bliss in our brows' bent; none our parts so  
 But was a race of heaven: They are so still,  
 Or thou, the greatest soldier of the world,  
 Art turn'd the greatest liar.

*Ant.*

How now, lady!

*Cleo.* I would, I had thy inches; thou shouldst  
 There were a heart in Egypt. [know,

*Ant.*

Hear me, queen:

The strong necessity of time commands  
 Our services a while; but my full heart  
 Remains in use with you. Our Italy [peius  
 Shines o'er with civil swords: Sextus Pom-  
 Makes his approaches to the port of Rome:  
 Equality of two domestic powers [to strength,  
 Breeds scrupulous faction: The hated, grown  
 Are newly grown to love: the condemn'd Pom-  
 Rich in his father's honour, creeps apace [pey,  
 Into the hearts of such as have not thrived  
 Upon the present state, whose numbers  
 threaten;

And quietness, grown sick of rest, would purge  
 By any desperate change: My more particular,  
 And that which most with you should safe my  
 Is Fulvia's death. [going,

*Cleo.* Though age from folly could not give  
 me freedom,

It does from childishness:—Can Fulvia die \*\*?

*Ant.* She's dead, my queen:

Look here, and, at thy sovereign leisure, read  
 The garboils she awak'd;† at the last, best:  
 See, when and where she died.

*Cleo.*

O most false love!

Where be the sacred vials thou shouldst fill  
 With sorrowful water? Now I see, I see,  
 In Fulvia's death, how mine received shall be.

*Ant.* Quarrel no more, but be prepared to  
 know

The purposes I bear; which are, or cease,  
 As you shall give the advice: Now, by the fire,  
 That quickens Nilus' slime ‡, I go from hence,  
 Thy soldier, servant; making peace, or war,  
 As thou affect'st.

*Cleo.* Cut my lace, Charmian, come;—

But let it be.—I am quickly ill, and well:

So Antony loves.

*Ant.*

My precious queen, forbear;  
 And give true evidence to his love, which  
 An honourable trial. [stands

*Cleo.*

So Fulvia told me.

I pr'ythee, turn aside, and weep for her;  
 Then bid adieu to me, and say, the tears  
 Belong to Egypt §§: Good now, play one scene  
 Of excellent dissembling: and let it look  
 Like perfect honour.

\* Horse.

† Look as if I did not send you.

‡ The arch of our eye-brows.

§ Smack or flavour. || Gate. ¶ Render my going not dangerous. \*\* Can Fulvia be dead

‡ The commotion she occasioned. §§ Mad of the river Nile. §§ To me, the Queen of Egypt



*Ant.* You'll heat my blood; no more.  
*Cleo.* You can do better yet; but this is  
*Ant.* Now, by my sword,— [meetly.  
*Cleo.* And target,—Still he mends;  
 But this is not the best: Look, pr'ythee, Char-  
 How this Herculean Roman does become [mian,  
 The carriage of his chafe\*.

*Ant.* I'll leave you, lady.  
*Cleo.* Courteous lord, one word.  
 Sir, you and I must part,—but that's not it:  
 Sir, you and I have loved,—but there's not it;  
 That you know well: Something it is I would,—  
 O, my oblivion† is a very Antony,  
 And I am all forgotten!

*Ant.* But that your royalty  
 Holds idleness your subject, I should take you  
 For idleness itself.

*Cleo.* 'Tis sweating labour,  
 To bear such idleness so near the heart  
 As Cleopatra this. But, sir, forgive me;  
 Since my becoming kill me, when they do not  
 Eye well to you: Your honour calls you hence;  
 Therefore be deaf to my unpitied folly,  
 And all the gods go with you! upon your sword  
 Sit laurel'd victory! and smooth success  
 Be strew'd before your feet!

*Ant.* Let us go. Come;  
 Our separation so abides, and flies,  
 That thou, residing here, go'st yet with me,  
 And I, hence fleeting, here remain with thee.  
 Away. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV. Rome. An Apartment in  
 Cæsar's House.

Enter OCTAVIUS CÆSAR, LEPIDUS, and  
 Attendants.

*Cæs.* You may see, Lepidus, and henceforth  
 It is not Cæsar's natural vice to hate [know,  
 One great competitor: From Alexandria  
 This is the news; He fishes, drinks, and wastes  
 The lamps of night in revel: is not more man-  
 Than Cleopatra; nor the queen Ptolemy [like  
 More womanly than he: hardly gave audience,  
 or [find there  
 Vouchsafe to think he had partners: you shall  
 A man, who is the abstract of all faults  
 That all men follow.

*Lep.* I must not think there are  
 Evils enough to darken all his goodness:  
 His faults, in him, seem as the spots of heaven,  
 More fiery by night's blackness; hereditary,  
 Rather than purchased; what he cannot  
 Than what he chooses. [change,

*Cæs.* You are too indulgent: Let us grant, it  
 Amiss to tumble on the bed of Ptolemy; [is not  
 To give a kingdom for a mirth; to sit  
 And keep the turn of tippling with a slave;  
 To reel the streets at noon, and stand the buffet  
 With knaves that smell of sweat: say, this be-  
 comes him,

(As his composure must be rare indeed,  
 Whom these things cannot blemish,) yet must  
 Antony

No way excuse his soils, when we do bear

So great weight in his lightness||. If he fill'd  
 His vacancy with his voluptuousness,  
 Full surfeits, and the dryness of his bones,  
 Call on him! for't: but to confound\*\* such time,  
 That drums him from his sport, and speaks as  
 As his own state, and ours,—'tis to be chid [loud  
 As we rate boys; who, being mature in know-  
 ledge, [sure,  
 Pawn their experience to their present plea-  
 And so rebel to judgment.

Enter a Messenger.

*Lep.* Here's more news.

*Mess.* Thy bidding has been done; and  
 every hour,

Most noble Cæsar, shalt thou have report  
 How 'tis abroad. Pompey is strong at sea;  
 And it appears, he is beloved of those  
 That only have fear'd Cæsar: to the ports  
 The discontents†† repair, and men's reports  
 Give him much wrong'd.

*Bas.* I should have known no less:—  
 It hath been taught us from the primal state,  
 That he, which is, was wish'd, until he were;  
 And the ebb'd man, ne'er loved, till ne'er worth  
 love, [body,

Comes dear'd, by being lack'd‡‡. This common  
 Like a vagabond flag upon the stream,  
 Goes to, and back, lackeying the varying tide,  
 To rot itself with motion.

*Mess.* Cæsar, I bring thee word,  
 Menecrates and Menas, famous pirates, [wound  
 Make the sea serve them; which they ear §§ and  
 With keels of every kind: Many hot inroads  
 They make in Italy; the borders maritime  
 Lack blood ||| to think on't, and flush ¶¶ youth  
 revolt:

No vessel can peep forth, but 'tis as soon  
 Taken as seen; for Pompey's name strikes  
 Than could his war resisted. [more,

*Cæs.* Antony, [once  
 Leave thy lascivious wassals\*\*\*. When thou  
 wast beaten from Modena, where thou slew'st  
 Hirtius and Pansa, consuls, at thy heel [against,  
 Did famine follow; whom thou fought'st  
 Though daintily brought up, with patience more  
 Than savages could suffer: Thou didst drink  
 The stale ††† of horses, and the gilded puddle †††  
 Which beasts would cough at: thy palate then  
 did deign

The roughest berry on the rudest hedge;  
 Yea, like the stag, when snow the pasture sheets,  
 The barks of trees thou browsed'st; on the Alps  
 It is reported, thou didst eat strange flesh,  
 Which some did die to look on: And all this  
 (It wounds thine honour, that I speak it now,)  
 Was borne so like a soldier, that thy cheek  
 So much as lank'd not.

*Lep.* It is pity of him.

*Cæs.* Let his shames quickly  
 Drive him to Rome: 'Tis time we twain [end,  
 Did show ourselves i' the field; and, to that  
 Assemble we immediate council: Pompey  
 Thrives in our idleness.

\* Heat. † Oblivious memory. ‡ Associate or partner. § Procured by his own fault.  
 ¶ Levity. ¶ Visit him. \*\* Consume. †† Discontented. †† Endear'd by being missed.  
 §§ Plough. ||| Turn pale. ¶¶ Ruddy. \*\*\* Feastings, in the old copy it is *vassalls*,  
 'e., vassals. ††† Urine. ††† Stagnant, slimy water.

*Lep.* To-morrow, Cæsar,  
I shall be furnish'd to inform you rightly  
Both what by sea and land I can be able,  
To 'front this present time.

*Cæs.* Till which encounter,  
It is my business too. Farewell.

*Lep.* Farewell, my lord: What you shall  
know mean time

Of stirs abroad, I shall beseech you, sir,  
To let me be partaker.

*Cæs.* Doubt not, sir;  
I knew it for my bond\*. [Exeunt.

SCENE V. Alexandria. A Room in the  
Palace.

Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and  
MARDIAN.

*Cleo.* Charmian,—

*Char.* Madam.

*Cleo.* Ha, ha!—

Give me to drink mandragora†.

*Char.* Why, madam?

*Cleo.* That I might sleep out this great gap  
My Antony is away. [of time,

*Char.* You think of him  
Too much.

*Cleo.* O, treason!

*Char.* Madam, I trust, not so.

*Cleo.* Thou, Eunuch! Mardian!

*Mar.* What's your highness' pleasure?

*Cleo.* Not now to hear thee sing; I take no  
pleasure

In aught an eunuch has: 'Tis well for thee,  
That, being unseminar'd‡, thy freer thoughts  
May not fly forth of Egypt. Hast thou affec-

*Mar.* Yes, gracious madam. [tions?]

*Cleo.* Indeed? [nothing]

*Mar.* Not in deed, madam; for I can do  
But what in deed is honest to be done:  
Yet have I fierce affections, and think  
What Venus did with Mars.

*Cleo.* O Charmian,  
Where think'st thou he is now? Stands he, or  
sits he?

Or does he walk? or is he on his horse?  
O happy horse, to bear the weight of Antony!  
Do bravely, horse! for wot'st thou whom thou  
The demi-Atlas of this earth, the arm [movest?  
And burgoonet § of men.—He's speaking now,  
Or murmuring, *Where's my serpent of old*  
For so he calls me; Now I feed myself [Nile?  
With most delicious poison:—Think on me,  
That am with Phœbus' amorous pinches black,  
And wrinkled deep in time? Broad-fronted  
Cæsar,

When thou wast here above the ground, I was  
A morsel for a monarch: and great Pompey  
Would stand, and make his eyes grow in my  
brow;

There would he anchor his aspect, and die  
With his looking on his life.

Enter ALEXAS.

*Alex.* Sovereign of Egypt, hail!  
*Cleo.* How much unlike art thou Mark An-  
tony? [hath]

Yet, coming from him, that great medicine  
With his tinct gilded thee.—

How goes it with my brave Mark Antony?

*Alex.* Last thing he did, dear queen,  
He kiss'd,—the last of many doubled kisses,—  
This orient pearl;—His speech sticks in my

*Cleo.* Mine ear must pluck it thence. [heart.

*Alex.* Good friend, quoth he,  
Say, the firm Roman to great Egypt sends  
This treasure of an oyster; at whose foot  
To mend the petty present, I will piece  
Her opulent throne with kingdoms; All the  
east, [nodded,

Say thou, shall call her mistress. So he  
And soberly did mount a termagant || steed,  
Who neigh'd so high, that what I would have  
Was beastly dumb'd by him. [spoke

*Cleo.* What, was he sad, or merry?

*Alex.* Like to the time o'the year between  
the extremes

Of hot and cold; he was nor sad, nor merry.

*Cleo.* O well-divided disposition!—Note  
him, [note him:

Note him, good Charmian, 'tis the man: but  
He was not sad; for he would shine on those  
That make their looks by his: he was not merry;  
Which seem'd to tell them, his remembrance  
In Egypt with his joy: but between both; [lay  
O heavenly mingle!—Be'st thou sad, or merry,  
The violence of either thee becomes;  
So does it no man else.—Met'st thou my posts?

*Alex.* Ay, madam, twenty several messen-  
Why do you send so thick? [gers:

*Cleo.* Who's born that day  
When I forget to send to Antony,  
Shall die a beggar.—Ink and paper, Charmian.  
Welcome, my good Alexas.—Did I, Charmian,  
Ever love Cæsar so?

*Char.* O that brave Cæsar!  
*Cleo.* Be choked with such another emphasis!  
Say, the brave Antony.

*Char.* The valiant Cæsar!  
*Cleo.* By Isis, I will give thee bloody teeth,  
If thou with Cæsar paragon again  
My man of men.

*Char.* By your most gracious pardon,  
I sing but after you.

*Cleo.* My salad days;  
When I was green in judgment: Cold in blood  
To say, as I said then!—But, come, away:  
Get me ink and paper: he shall have every day  
A several greeting, or I'll unpeople Egypt.

[Exeunt

\* My bounden duty.

† A sleepy potion.

‡ Unmanned.

§ A helmet.

|| Furious.

## ACT II.

SCENE I. Messina. *A Room in Pompey's House.*

*Enter POMPEY, MENEKRATES, and MENAS.*

*Pom.* If the great gods be just, they shall  
The deeds of justest men. [assist

*Mene.* Know, worthy Pompey,  
That what they do delay, they not deny.

*Pom.* Whiles we are suitors to their throne,  
The thing we sue for. [decays

*Mene.* We, ignorant of ourselves,  
Beg often our own harms, which the wise  
powers

Deny us for our good ; so find we profit,  
By losing of our prayers.

*Pom.* I shall do well :  
The people love me, and the sea is mine ;  
My power's a crescent, and my auguring hope  
Says, it will come to the full. Mark Antony  
In Egypt sits at dinner, and will make [where  
No wars without doors : Cæsar gets money,  
He loses hearts : Lepidus flatters both,  
Of both is flatter'd ; but he neither loves,  
Nor either cares for him.

*Men.* Cæsar and Lepidus  
Are in the field ; a mighty strength they carry.

*Pom.* Where have you this ? 'tis false.

*Men.* From Silvius, sir.  
*Pom.* He dreams ; I know, they are in  
Rome together,

Looking for Antony : But all charms of love,  
Salt Cleopatra, soften thy waned \* lip ! [both !  
Let witchcraft join with beauty, lust with  
Tie up the libertine in a field of feasts,  
Keep his brain fuming ; Epicurean cooks,  
Sharpen with cloyless sauce his appetite ;  
That sleep and feeding may prorogue his ho-  
nour, [Varius ?  
Even till † a Lethe'd dulness.—How now

*Enter VARRIUS.*

*Var.* This is most certain that I shall deliver :  
Mark Antony is every hour in Rome  
Expected ; since he went from Egypt, 'tis  
A space for further travel.

*Pom.* I could have given less matter  
A better ear.—Menas, I did not think,  
This amorous surfeiter would have don'd ‡ his  
For such a petty war : his soldiiership [helm §  
Is twice the other twain : But let us rear  
The higher our opinion, that our stirring  
Can from the lap of Egypt's widow pluck  
The ne'er-lust-wearyed Antony.

*Men.* I cannot hope,  
Cæsar and Antony shall well greet together :  
His wife, that's dead, did trespasses to Cæsar ;  
His brother warr'd upon him ; although, I  
Not moved by Antony. [think,

*Pom.* I know not, Menas,  
How lesser enmities may give way to greater.  
Were't not that we stand up against them all,  
Twere pregnant they should square || between  
themselves ;

For they have entertained cause enough  
To draw their swords : but how the fear of us  
May cement their divisions, and bind up  
The petty difference, we yet not know.  
Be it as our gods will have it ! It only stands  
Our lives upon, to use our strongest hands.  
Come, Menas. [Exeunt.

SCENE II. Rome. *A Room in the House  
of Lepidus.*

*Enter ENOBARBUS and LEPIDUS.*

*Lep.* Good Enobarbus, 'tis a worthy deed,  
And shall become you well, to entreat your  
To soft and gentle speech. [captain

*Eno.* I shall entreat him  
To answer like himself : if Cæsar move him,  
Let Antony look over Cæsar's head,  
And speak as loud as Mars. By Jupiter,  
Were I the wearer of Antonius' beard,  
I would not shave to-day.

*Lep.* 'Tis not a time  
For private stomaching.

*Eno.* Every time  
Serves for the matter that is then born in it.

*Lep.* But small to greater matters must  
give way.

*Eno.* Not if the small come first.

*Lep.* Your speech is passion :  
But, pray you, stir no embers up. Here comes  
The noble Antony.

*Enter ANTONY and VENTIDIUS.*

*Eno.* And yonder, Cæsar.

*Enter CÆSAR, MECÆNAS, and AGRIPPA.*  
*Ant.* If we compose well here, to Parthia :  
Hark you, Ventidius.

*Cas.* I do not know,  
Mecænas ; ask Agrippa.

*Lep.* Noble friends,  
That which combined us was most great, and  
A leaner action rend us. What's amiss, [let not  
May it be gently heard : When we debate  
Our trivial difference loud, we do commit  
Murder in healing wounds : Then, noble part-  
(The rather for I earnestly beseech,) [ners,  
Touch you the sonnest points with sweetest  
Nor curstness \*\* grow to the matter. [terms,  
*Ant.* 'Tis spoken well :

Were we before our armies, and to fight,  
I should do thus.

*Cas.* Welcome to Rome.

*Ant.* Thank you.

*Cas.* Sit.

*Ant.* Sit, sir !

*Cas.* Nay,

Then—

*Ant.* I learn, you take things ill, which are  
Or, being, concern you not. [not so ;

*Cas.* I must be laugh'd at  
If, or for nothing, or a little, I  
Should say myself offended ; and with you  
Chiefly i' the world : more laugh'd at, that †  
should

\* Declined, faded.

|| Quarrel.

To.

† Agree.

‡ Done on ; i. e., put on.

§ Helmet

\*\* Let not ill-humour be added.



Once name you derogately, when to sound  
t not concern'd me. [your name]

*Ant.* My being in Egypt, Cæsar,  
What was't to you? [Rome]

*Cæs.* No more than my residing here at  
Might be to you in Egypt: Yet, if you there  
Did practise\* on my state, your being in  
Might be my question†. [Egypt]

*Ant.* How intend you, practised?

*Cæs.* You may be pleased to catch at mine  
intent, [brother,

By what did here befall me. Your wife, and  
Made wars upon me; and their contestation  
Was theme for you, you were the word of war.

*Ant.* You do mistake your business; my  
brother never

Did urge me in his act: I did inquire it;

And have my learning from some true reports,†  
That drew their swords with you. Did he not  
Discredit my authority with yours; [rather  
And make the wars alike against my stomach,  
Having alike your cause; Of this, my letters  
Before did satisfy you. If you'll patch a quarrel,  
As matter whole you have not to make it with,  
It must not be with this.

*Cæs.* You praise yourself  
By laying defects of judgment to me; but  
You patched up your excuses.

*Ant.* Not so, not so.  
I know you could not lack, I am certain on't,  
Very necessity of this thought, that I,  
Your partner in the cause 'gainst which he  
fought,

Could not with graceful eyes attend those wars  
Which 'fronted§ mine own peace. As for my  
wife,

I would you had her spirit in such another:  
The third o'the world is yours; which with a  
snaffle||

You may pace easy, but not such a wife.

*Eno.* 'Would we had all such wives, that  
the men might go to wars with the women!

*Ant.* So much incurable, her garbolls¶,  
Cæsar,

Made out of her impatience, (which not wanted  
Shrewdness of policy too,) I grieving grant,  
Did you to much disquiet: for that, you must  
But say, I could not help it.

*Cæs.* I wrote to you,  
When rioting in Alexandria; you  
Did pocket up my letters, and with taunts  
Did gibe my missive\*\* out of audience.

*Ant.* Sir,  
He fell upon me, ere admitted: then  
Three kings I had newly feasted, and did want  
Of what I was i' the morning: but, next day,  
I told him of myself; which was as much  
As to have ask'd him pardon: Let this fellow  
Be nothing of our strife; if we contend,  
Out of our question†† wipe him.

*Cæs.* You have broken  
The article of your oath; which you shall never  
Have tongue to charge me with.

*Lep.* Soft, Cæsar,

*Ant.* No, Lepidus, let him speak;

The honour's sacred which he talks on now,  
Supposing that I lack'd it: But on, Cæsar;  
The article of my oath,—

*Cæs.* To lend me arms and aid when I re-  
The which you both denied. [quired them;

*Ant.* Neglected rather;  
And then, when poisoned hours had bound me  
up [may,

From mine own knowledge. As nearly as I  
I'll play the penitent to you: but mine honesty  
Shall not make poor my greatness, nor my  
Work without it: Truth is, that Fulvia, [power  
To have me out of Egypt, made wars here;  
For which myself, the ignorant motive, do  
So far ask pardon, as befits mine honour  
To stoop in such a case.

*Lep.* 'Tis nobly spoken.

*Mec.* If it might please you, to enforce no  
further

The griefs‡ between ye: to forget them quite,  
Were to remember that the present need  
Speaks to atone§§ you.

*Lep.* Worthily spoke, Mæcenas.

*Eno.* Or, if you borrow one another's love  
for the instant, you may, when you hear no  
more words of Pompey, return it again: you  
shall have time to wrangle in, when you have  
nothing else to do.

*Ant.* Thou art a soldier only; speak no more.

*Eno.* That truth should be silent I had al-  
most forgot. [speak no more.

*Ant.* You wrong this presence, therefore

*Eno.* Go to, then; your considerate stone.

*Cæs.* I do not much dislike the matter, but  
The manner of his speech: for it cannot be,  
We shall remain in friendship, our conditions|||  
So differing in their acts. Yet, if I knew  
What hoop should hold us staunch¶¶, from  
O' the world I would pursue it. [edge to edge

*Agr.* Give me leave, Cæsar,—

*Cæs.* Speak, Agrippa.

*Agr.* Thou hast a sister by the mother's side,  
Admired Octavia: great Mark Antony  
Is now a widower.

*Cæs.* Say not so, Agrippa;

If Cleopatra heard you, your reproof

Were well deserved of rashness.

*Ant.* I am not married, Cæsar: let me hear  
Agrippa further speak.

*Agr.* To hold you in perpetual amity,  
To make you brothers, and to knit your hearts  
With an unslipping knot, take Antony  
Octavia to his wife: whose beauty claims  
No worse a husband than the best of men;  
Whose virtue, and whose general graces, speak  
That which none else can utter. By this mar-  
riage,

All little jealousies, which now seem great,  
And all great fears, which now import their  
dangers, ¶¶¶

Would then be nothing: truths would be bu-  
Where now half tales be truths: her love to  
both, ¶¶¶

\* Use bad arts or stratagems.

§ Opposed. || Bridle.

‡ Grievances.

¶ Commotions.

†† Reconcile.

‡‡ Dispositions.

† Subject of conversation.

\*\* Messenger.

‡ Reporters.

¶¶ Conversation

¶¶¶ Fum.

Would, each to other, and all loves to both,  
Draw after her. Pardon what I have spoke;  
For 'tis a studied, not a present thought,  
By duty ruminated.

*Ant.* Will Cæsar speak?

*Cæs.* Not till he hears how Antony is touch'd  
With what is spoke already.

*Ant.* What power is in Agrippa,  
If I would say, *Agrippa, be it so,*  
To make this good?

*Cæs.* The power of Cæsar, and  
His power unto Octavia.

*Ant.* May I never  
To this good purpose, that so fairly shows,  
Dream of impediment!—Let me have thy  
hand:

Further this act of grace; and, from this hour,  
The heart of brothers govern in our loves,  
And sway our great designs!

*Cæs.* There is my hand.  
A sister I bequeath you, whom no brother  
Did ever love so dearly: Let her live  
To join our kingdoms, and our hearts; and  
Fly off our loves again!

*Lep.* Happily, amen!

*Ant.* I did not think to draw my sword  
'gainst Pompey;

For he hath laid strange courtesies, and great,  
Of late upon me; I must thank him only,  
Lest my remembrance suffer ill report;  
At heel of that, defy him.

*Lep.* Time calls upon us:  
Of us must Pompey presently be sought,  
Or else he seeks out us.

*Ant.* And where lies he?

*Cæs.* About the Mount Misenum.

*Ant.* What's his strength  
By land?

*Cæs.* Great and increasing: but by sea  
He is an absolute master.

*Ant.* So is the fame.  
'Would we had spoke together? Haste we  
for it:

Yet, ere we put ourselves in arms, despatch we  
The business we have talk'd of.

*Cæs.* With most gladness;  
And do invite you to my sister's view,  
Whither straight I will lead you.

*Ant.* Let us, Lepidus,  
Not lack your company.

*Lep.* Noble Antony,  
Not sickness should detain me.

[*Flourish. Exeunt CÆSAR, ANTONY,  
AND LEPIDUS.*]

*Mec.* Welcome from Egypt, sir.

*Eno.* Half the heart of Cæsar, worthy Me-  
cenas!—my honourable friend Agrippa!

*Ag.* Good Enobarbus!

*Mec.* We have cause to be glad, that mat-  
ters are so well digested. You staid well by  
it in Egypt.

*Eno.* Ay, sir; we did sleep day out of coun-  
tenance, and made the night light with  
drinking.

*Mec.* Eight wild boars roasted whole at a

breakfast, and but twelve persons there. Is  
this true?

*Eno.* This was but as a fly by an eagle: we  
had much more monstrous matter of feast  
which worthily deserved noting.

*Mec.* She's a most triumphant lady, if re-  
port be square\* to her.

*Eno.* When she first met Mark Antony, she  
purs'd up his heart upon the river of Cydnus.

*Ag.* There she appeared indeed; or my  
reporter devised well for her.

*Eno.* I will tell you.

The barge she sat in, like a burnish'd throne,  
Burn'd on the water: the poop was beaten  
gold:

Purple the sails, and so perfumed, that  
The winds were love-sick with them; the oars  
were silver; [made

Which to the tune of flutes kept stroke, and  
The water, which they beat, to follow faster,  
As amorous of their strokes. For her own per-  
It beggar'd all description: she did lie [son,  
In her pavilion, (cloth of gold, of tissue,)  
O'er picturing that Venus, where we see,

The fancy out-work nature: on each side her,  
Stood prettily dimpled boys, like smiling  
Cupids, [seem

With diverse-colour'd fans, whose wind did  
To glow the delicate cheeks which they did  
And what they undid, did. [cool,

*Ag.* O, rare for Antony!

*Eno.* Her gentlewomen, like the Nereides,  
So many mermaids, tended her i' the eyes,  
And made their bends adornings: at the helm  
A seeming mermaid steers; the silken tackle  
Swell with the touches of those flower-soft  
hands,

That yarely frame† the office. From the barge  
A strange invisible perfume hits the sense  
Of the adjacent wharfs. The city cast

Her people out upon her; and Antony,  
Enthroned in the market-place, did sit alone,  
Whistling to the air; which, but for vacancy  
Had gone to gaze on Cleopatra too,  
And made a gap in nature.

*Ag.* Rare Egyptian!

*Eno.* Upon her landing, Antony sent to her  
Invited her to supper: she replied,  
It should be better, he became her guest;  
Which she entreated: Our courteous Antony,  
Whom ne'er the word of *No* woman heard  
speak,

Being barber'd ten times o'er, goes to the feast;  
And, for his ordinary, pays his heart,  
For what his eyes eat only.

*Ag.* Royal wench!

She made great Cæsar lay his sword to bed;  
He plough'd her, and she cropp'd.

*Eno.* I saw her once

Hop forty paces through the public street:  
And having lost her breath, she spoke, and  
panted,

That she did make defect, perfection,  
And, breathless, power breathe forth.

*Mec.* Now Antony must leave her utterly.

\* Suits with her merits.

† Added to the warmth they were intended to diminish.

‡ Readily perform.

§ Wanton.

¶ Allotment.

*Eno.* Never; he will not;  
Age cannot wither her, nor custom stale  
Her infinite variety: Other women [hungry  
Cloy th' appetites they feed; but she makes  
Where most she satisfies. For vilest things  
Become themselves in her; that the holy priests  
Bless her, when she's riggish \*.

*Mec.* If beauty, wisdom, modesty, can settle  
The heart of Antony, Octavia is  
A blessed lottery † to him.

*Agr.* Let us go.—  
Good Enobarbus make yourself my guest,  
Whilst you abide here.

*Eno* Humbly, sir, I thank you.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. A Room in  
Cæsar's House.*

*Enter CÆSAR, ANTONY, OCTAVIA between  
them; Attendants, and a Soothsayer.*

*Ant.* The world, and my great office, will  
Divide me from your bosom. [sometimes  
*Octa.* All which time

Before the gods my knee shall bow my prayers  
To them for you.

*Ant.* Good night, sir.—My Octavia,  
Read not my blemishes in the world's report:  
I have not kept my square; but that to come  
Shall all be done by the rule. Good night,

*Octa.* Good night, sir. [dear lady.—  
*Cæs.* Good night.

[*Exeunt CÆSAR and OCTAVIA.*  
*Ant.* Now, sirrah! you do wish yourself in  
Egypt? [nor you

*Sooth.* Would I had never come from thence,  
Thither!

*Ant.* If you can, your reason?  
*Sooth.* I see't in

My motion, have it not in my tongue: But yet  
Hie you again to Egypt.

*Ant.* Say to me,  
Whose fortunes shall rise higher, Cæsar's, or  
*Sooth.* Cæsar's. [mine?

Therefore, O Antony, stay not by his side:  
Thy dæmon, that's thy spirit which keeps  
thee, is

Noble, courageous, high, unmatchable,  
Where Cæsar's is not; but near him thy angel  
Becomes a Fear, as being o'erpower'd; there-  
Make space enough between you. [fore

*Ant.* Speak this no more.  
*Sooth.* To none but thee; no more, but  
when to thee.

If thou dost play with him at any game,  
Thou art sure to lose; and, of that natural  
luck, [thickens,

He beats thee 'gainst the odds; thy lustre  
When he shines by: I say again, thy spirit  
Is all afraid to govern thee near him;  
But, he away, 'tis noble.

*Ant.* Get thee gone:  
Say to Ventidius, I would speak with him;—  
[*Exit Soothsayer.*

He shall to Parthia.—Be it art, or hap, [him;  
He hath spoken true: The very dice obey

And, in our sports, my better chance fairs  
Under his chance: if we draw low, he speeds:  
His cocks do win the battle still of mine,  
When it is all to nought; and his quails ever  
Beat mine, inhoop'd, at odds. I will go  
Egypt: [Exit

And though I make this marriage for me,  
*Enter VENTIDIUS.*

I'll east my pleasure lies:—O, come, Ven-  
tidius, [ready

You must to Parthia; your commission  
Follow me, and receive it. [Exit

SCENE IV. *The same. A Street.*  
*Enter LEPIDUS, MÆCENAS, and AGRIPPA*

*Lep.* Trouble yourselves no further: pray  
Your generals after. [you, hasten

*Agr.* Sir, Mark Antony  
Will e'en but kiss Octavia, and we'll follow.

*Lep.* Till I shall see you in your soldier's  
dress,

Which will become you both, farewell.  
*Mec.* We shall,

As I conceive the journey, be at mount ||  
Before you, Lepidus.

*Lep.* Your way is shorter,  
My purposes do draw me much about;  
You'll win two days upon me.

*Mec. Agr.* Sir, good success!  
*Lep.* Farewell. [Exit.

SCENE V. *Alexandria. A Room in the  
Palace.*

*Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and  
ALEXAS.*

*Cleo.* Give me some music; music, moody ¶  
Of us that trade in love. [food

*Attend.* The music, ho!  
*Enter MARDIAN.*

*Cleo.* Let it alone; let us to billiards:  
Come, Charmian. [dian.

*Char.* My arm is sore, best play with Mar-  
*Cleo.* As well a woman with an enunch

play'd [me, sir?  
As with a woman;—Come, you'll play with

*Mar.* As well as I can, madam.  
*Cleo.* And when good will is show'd, though

it come too short,  
The actor may plead pardon. I'll nonenow:—

Give me mine angle,—We'll to the river:  
there,

My music playing far off, I will betray  
Tawny-finn'd fishes; my bended hook shall

pierce  
Their slimy jaws; and, as I draw them up,

I'll think them every one an Antony,  
And say, Ah, ha! you're caught.

*Char.* 'Twas merry, when  
You wager'd on your angling; when your

diver  
Did hang a salt-fish on his hook, which he

With fercency drew up.  
*Cleo.* That time!—O times!—

I laugh'd him out of patience; and that night  
I laugh'd him into patience; and next morn

\* Wanton.

† Allotment.

§ Enclosed.

‡ The ancients used to match quails as we match cocks

|| Mount Misæum.

¶ Melancholy.



Ere the ninth hour, I drunk him to his bed ;  
Then put my tires \* and mantles on him, whilst  
I wore his sword Philippan. O! from Italy ;

*Enter a Messenger.*

Ram thou thy fruitful tidings in mine ears,  
That long time have been barren.

*Mess.* Madam, madam,—

*Cleo.* Antony's dead ?—

If thou say so, villain, thou kill'st thy mistress :  
But well and free,  
If thou so yield him, there is gold, and here  
My bluest veins to kiss; a hand that kings  
Have lipp'd, and trembled kissing.

*Mess.* First, madam, he's well.

*Cleo.* Why, there's more gold. But, sir-  
rah, mark; We use  
To say the dead are well: bring it to that,  
The gold I give thee will I melt, and pour  
Down thy ill-uttering throat.

*Mess.* Good madam, hear me.

*Cleo.* Well, go to, I will;

But there's no goodness in thy face: If Antony  
Be free and healthful, why so tart a favour t,  
To trumpet such good tidings? If not well,  
Thou shouldst come like a fury crown'd with  
Not like a formal man †. [snakes,

*Mess.* Wilt please you hear me?

*Cleo.* I have a mind to strike thee, ere thou  
speak'st :  
Yet, if thou say Antony lives, is well,  
Or friends with Cæsar, or not captive to him,  
I'll set thee in a shower of gold, and hail  
Rich pearls upon thee.

*Mess.* Madam, he's well.

*Cleo.* Well said.

*Mess.* And friends with Cæsar.

*Cleo.* Thou'rt an honest man.

*Mess.* Cæsar and he are greater friends  
than ever.

*Cleo.* Make thee a fortune from me.

*Mess.* But yet, madam,—

*Cleo.* I do not like *but yet*, it does allay  
The good precedence ‡; fie upon *but yet* :  
*But yet* is as a gaoler to bring forth  
Some monstrous malefactor. Prythee, friend,  
Pour out the pack of matter to mine ear,  
The good and bad together: He's friend with  
Cæsar; [free.

In state of health, thou say'st; and, thou say'st,  
*Mess.* Free, madam! no; I made no such  
He's bound unto Octavia. [report :

*Cleo.* For what good turn?

*Mess.* For the best turn i' the bed.

*Cleo.* I am pale, Charmian.

*Mess.* Madam, he's married to Octavia.

*Cleo.* The most infectious pestilence upon  
thee! [Strikes him down.

*Mess.* Good madam, patience.

*Cleo.* What say you?—Hence,  
[Strikes him again.

Horrible villain! or I'll spurn thine eyes  
Like balls before me; I'll unhair thy head;  
[She hales him up and down.  
Thou shalt be whipp'd with wire, and stew'd  
Smarting in ling'ring pickle. [in brine,

*Mess.* Gracious madam,  
I, that do bring the news, made not the match.

*Cleo.* Say, 'tis not so, a province I will give  
thee, [hadst  
And make thy fortunes proud: the blow thou  
Shall make thy peace, for moving me to rage;  
And I will boot || thee with what gift beside  
Thy modesty can beg.

*Mess.* He's married, madam.

*Cleo.* Rogue, thou hast lived too long.

[Draws a dagger

*Mess.* Nay, then I'll run:—  
What mean you, madam? I have made no  
fault. [Exit.

*Char.* Good madam, keep yourself within  
The man is innocent. [yourself;

*Cleo.* Some innocents 'scape not the thun-  
derbolt.—

Melt Egypt into Nile! and kindly creatures  
Turn all to serpents!—Call the slave again;  
Though I am mad, I will not bite him:—Call.

*Char.* He is afraid to come.

*Cleo.* I will not hurt him:—  
These hands do lack nobility, that they strike  
A meaner than myself; since I myself [sir.  
Have given myself the cause.—Come hither,

*Re-enter Messenger.*

Though it be honest, it is never good [sage  
To bring bad news: Give to a gracious mes-  
An host of tongues; but let ill tidings tell  
Themselves, when they be felt.

*Mess.* I have done my duty.

*Cleo.* Is he married?  
I cannot hate thee worse than I do,  
If thou again say, Yes.

*Mess.* He is married, madam.

*Cleo.* The gods confound thee! dost thou  
hold there still?

*Mess.* Should I lie, madam?

*Cleo.* O, I would thou didst;  
So half my Egypt were submerged ¶, and made  
A cistern for scaled snakes! Go, get thee  
hence;

Hadst thou Narcissus in thy face, to me  
Thou wouldst appear most ugly. He is mar-

*Mess.* I crave your highness' pardon. [ried?

*Cleo.* He is married?

*Mess.* Take no offence, that I would not  
offend you:

To punish me for what you make me do,  
Seems much unequal: He is married to Octa-  
via. [of thee,

*Cleo.* O, that his fault should make a knave  
That art not!—What? thou'rt sure of't?—Get  
thee hence:

[Rome,  
The merchandise which thou hast brought from  
Are all too dear for me; Lie they upon thy  
hand,

And be undone by 'em! [Exit Messenger.

*Char.* Good your highness, patience.

*Cleo.* In praising Antony, I have dispraised

*Char.* Many times, madam. [Cæsar.

*Cleo.* I am paid for't now.

Lead me from hence,  
I faint; O Iras, Charmian,—'Tis no matter:—

\* Head dress. † So sour a countenance.

|| Recompense.

‡ A man in his senses.

§ Preceding.

¶ Whelm'd under water.

Go to the fellow, good Alexas; bid him Report the feature\* of Octavia, her years, Her inclination, let him not leave out The colour of her hair:—bring me word quickly.— [Exit ALEXAS.]

Let him for ever go:—Let him not—Char-  
mian,

Though he be painted one way like a Gorgon,  
T'other way he's a Mars:—Bid you Alexas

[To MARDIAN.]

Bring me word, how tall she is.—Pity me,  
Charmian,

But do not speak to me.—Lead me to my  
chamber. [Exeunt.]

SCENE VI. Near Misenum.

Enter POMPEY and MENAS, at one side,  
with Drum and Trumpet; at another,  
CÆSAR, LEPIDUS, ANTONY, ENOBAR-  
BUS, MECÆNAS, with Soldiers marching.

Pom. Your hostages I have, so have you  
And we shall talk before we fight. [mine;]

Cæs. Most meet, [have we  
That first we come to words; and therefore  
Our written purposes before us sent;  
Which, if thou hast consider'd let us know  
If 'twill tie up thy discontented sword;  
And carry back to Sicily much tall t youth  
That else must perish here.]

Pom. To you all three,  
The senators alone of this great world,  
Chief factors for the gods,—I do not know,  
Wherefore my father should revengers want,  
Having a son and friends; since Julius Cæsar,  
Who at Philippi the good Brutus ghosted †,  
There saw you labouring for him. What was  
it, [what

That moved pale Cassius to conspire? And  
Made the all-honour'd, honest, Roman Brutus,  
With the arm'd rest, courtiers of beauteous  
freedom,

To drench the Capitol; but that they would  
Have one man but a man? And that is it,  
Hath made me rig my navy; at whose bur-  
den [meant

The anger'd ocean foams; with which I  
To scourge the ingratitude that spiteful  
Cast on my noble father. [Rome

Cæs. Take your time.

Ant. Thou canst not fear ‡ us, Pompey, with  
thy sails, [know'st  
We'll speak with thee at sea: at land, thou  
How much we do o'ercount thee.]

Pom. At land, indeed,  
Thou dost o'er-count me of my father's house:  
But, since the cuckoo builds not for himself,  
Remain in't as thou may'st.

Lep. Be pleased to tell us,  
(For this is from the present ||,) how you take  
the offers we have sent you.

Cæs. There's the point.  
Ant. Which do not be entreated to, but  
What it is worth embraced. [weigh

Cæs. And what may follow,  
To try a larger fortune.

Pom. You have made me offer  
Of Sicily, Sardinia; and I must  
Rid all the sea of pirates; then, to send  
Measures of wheat to Rome: This 'greed upon,  
To part with unhack'd edges, and bear back  
Our target ¶ undinted.

Cæs. Ant. Lep. That's our offer.

Pom. Know then,  
I came before you here, a man prepared  
To take this offer: But Mark Antony  
Put me to some impatience:—Though I lose  
The praise of it by telling, You must know,  
When Cæsar and your brothers were at blows,  
Your mother came to Sicily, and did find  
Her welcome friendly.

Ant. I have heard it, Pompey;  
And am well studied for a liberal thanks,  
Which I do owe you.

Pom. Let me have your hand:  
I did not think, sir, to have met you here.

Ant. The beds i' the east are soft; and thanks  
to you,

That call'd me timelier than my purpose, hither,  
For I have gain'd by it

Cæs. Since I saw you last,  
There is a change upon you.

Pom. Well, I know not  
What counts\*\* harsh fortune casts upon my  
But in my bosom shall she never come, [face;  
To make my heart her vassal.]

Lep. Well met here.

Pom. I hope so, Lepidus.—Thus we are  
agreed:

I crave, our composition may be written,  
And seal'd between us.

Cæs. That's the next to do.

Pom. We'll feast each other, ere we part;  
Draw lots who shall begin. [and let us

Ant. That will I, Pompey.

Pom. No, Antony, take the lot. but, first,  
Or last, your fine Egyptian cookery [Cæsar  
Shall have the fame. I have heard that Julius  
Grew fat with feasting there.]

Ant. You have heard much.

Pom. I have fair meanings, sir.

Ant. And fair words to them.

Pom. Then so much have I heard:—

And I have heard, Apollodorus carried—

Eno. No more of that:—He did so.

Pom. What, I pray you †

Eno. A certain queen to Cæsar in a ma-  
tress. [soldier

Pom. I know thee now;—How farest thou  
Eno. Well

And well am like to do; for, I perceive,  
Four feasts are toward.

Pom. Let me shake thy hand  
I never hated thee: I have seen thee fight,  
When I have envied thy behaviour.

Eno. Sir,

I never loved you much; but I have praised  
you, much

When you have well deserved ten times as  
As I have said you did.

Pom. Enjoy thy plainness,

\* Beanty. † Brave. ‡ Haunted.

¶ Target, shield.

§ Affright. || Present subject.

\*\* Scores, marks.

It nothing ill becom' a mee.—

Aboard my galley: write you all:

Will you lead, lords?

*Cæs. Ant. Lep.* Show us the way, sir.

*Pom.*

*Come.*

[*Exeunt POMPEY, CÆSAR, ANTONY, LEPIDUS, Soldiers, and Attendants.*]

*Men.* Thy father, Pompey, would ne'er have made this treaty.—[*Aside.*—You and I have known\*, sir.

*Eno.* At sea, I think.

*Men.* We have, sir.

*Eno.* You have done well by water.

*Men.* And you by land.

*Eno.* I will praise any man that will praise me: though it cannot be denied what I have done by land.

*Men.* Nor what I have done by water.

*Eno.* Yes, something you can deny for your own safety: you have been a great thief by sea.

*Men.* And you by land.

*Eno.* There I deny my land service. But give me your hand, Menas: If our eyes had authority, here they might take two thieves kissing.

*Men.* All men's faces are true, whatsoever their hands are.

*Eno.* But there is never a fair woman has a true face.

*Men.* No slander; they steal hearts.

*Eno.* We came hither to fight with you.

*Men.* For my part, I am sorry it is turned to a drinking. Pompey doeth this day laugh away his fortune.

*Eno.* If he do, sure, he cannot weep it back again.

*Men.* You have said, sir. We looked not for Mark Antony here; Pray you, is he married to Cleopatra?

*Eno.* Cæsar's sister is called Octavia.

*Men.* True, sir; she was the wife of Caius Marcellus.

*Eno.* But she is now the wife of Marcus Antonius?

*Men.* Pray you, sir?

*Eno.* 'Tis true.

*Men.* Then is Cæsar and he for ever knit together.

*Eno.* If I were bound to divine of this unity, I would not prophesy so.

*Men.* I think the policy of that purpose made more in the marriage, than the love of the parties.

*Eno.* I think so too. But you shall find, the band that seems to tie their friendship together, will be the very strangler of their amity: Octavia is of a holy, cold, and still conversation†.

*Men.* Who would not have his wife so?

*Eno.* Not he, that himself is not so; which is Mark Antony. He will to his Egyptian dish again: then shall the sighs of Octavia blow the fire up in Cæsar; and, as I said before, that which is the strength of their amity, shall prove the immediate author of their variance. An-

tony will use his affection where it is; he married but his occasion here.

*Men.* And thus it may be. Come, sir, will you aboard? I have a health for you.

*Eno.* I shall take it, sir: we have used our throats in Egypt.

*Men.* Come; let's away.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VII. On Board Pompey's Galley, lying near Misenum.

*Music.* Enter Two or Three Servants, with a Banquet‡.

1 *Serv.* Here they'll be, man: Some o' their plants§ are ill-rooted already, the least wind i' world will blow them down.

2 *Serv.* Lepidus is high-coloured.

1 *Serv.* They have made him drink alms-drink.

2 *Serv.* As they pinch one another by the disposition, he cries out, *no more*; reconciles them to his entreaty, and himself to the drink.

1 *Serv.* But it raises the greater war between him and his discretion.

2 *Serv.* Why, this it is to have a name in great men's fellowship: I had as lief have a reed that will do me no service, as a partisan|| I could not heave.

1 *Serv.* To be called into a huge sphere, and not to be seen to move in't, are the holes where eyes should be, which pitifully disaster the cheeks.

A *Sennet sounded.* Enter CÆSAR, ANTONY, POMPEY, LEPIDUS, AGRIPPA, MÆCENAS, ENOBARBUS, MENAS, with other Captains.

*Ant.* Thus do they, sir: [To CÆSAR.] They take the flow o' the Nile.

By certain scales i' the pyramid; they know, By the height, the lowness, or the mean¶, if dearth,

Or foizon\*\*, follow: The higher Nilus swells, The more it promises: as it ebbs, the seedsman Upon the slime and ooze scatters his grain, And shortly comes to harvest.

*Lep.* You have strange serpents there.

*Ant.* Ay, Lepidus.

*Lep.* Your serpent of Egypt is bred now of your mud by the operation of your sun: so is your crocodile.

*Ant.* They are so.

*Pom.* Sit,—and some wine.—A health to Lepidus.

*Lep.* I am not so well as I should be, but I'll ne'er out.

*Eno.* Not till you have slept; I fear me, you'll be in, till then.

*Lep.* Nay, certainly, I have heard, the Ptolemies' pyramises† are very goodly things; without contradiction, I have heard that.

*Men.* Pompey, a word.

*Pom.* Say in mine ear: What is't?

*Men.* Forsake thy seat, I do beseech thee, captain,

[*Aside.*]

And hear me speak a word.

*Pom.* Forbear me till anon.—

This wine for Lepidus.

\* Been acquainted.

† Behaviour.

‡ Dessert.

§ Feet.

|| Pike.

¶ Middle.

\*\* Plenty

†† Pyramids.



*Lep.* What manner o' thing is your crocodile?

*Ant.* It is shaped, sir, like itself; and it as broad as it hath breadth: it is just so high as it is, and moves with its own organs: it lives by that which nourisheth it; and the elements once of it, it transmigrates.

*Lep.* What colour is it of?

*Ant.* Of its own colour too.

*Lep.* 'Tis a strange serpent.

*Ant.* 'Tis so. And the tears of it are wet.

*Cas.* Will this description satisfy him?

*Ant.* With the health that Pompey gives him, else he is a very epicure.

*Pom.* [*To MENAS aside.*] Go hang, sir, hang! ell me of that away? away!

Do as I bid you.—Where's this cup I call'd for?

*Men.* If for the sake of merit thou wilt hear Rise from thy stool. [*Aside.*]

*Pom.* I think thou'rt mad. The matter? [*Rises, and walks aside.*]

*Men.* I have ever held my cap off to thy fortunes. [*What's else to say?*]

*Pom.* Thou hast served me with much faith: Be jolly, lords.

*Ant.* These quick-sands, Lepidus, Keep off them, for you sink.

*Men.* Wilt thou be lord of all the world?

*Pom.* What say'st thou?

*Men.* Wilt thou be lord of the whole world? That's twice.

*Pom.* How should that be?

*Men.* But entertain it, and, Although thou think me poor, I am the man Will give thee all the world.

*Pom.* Hast thou drunk well?

*Men.* No, Pompey, I have kept me from the cup.

Thou art, if thou darest be, the earthly Jove: Whate'er the ocean pales\*, or sky inclips†, Is thine, if thou wilt have 't.

*Pom.* Show me which way.

*Men.* These three world-sharers, these competitors,

Are in thy vessel: Let me cut the cable; And, when we are put off, fall to their throats: All there is thine.

*Pom.* Ah, this thou shouldst have done, And not have spoken on't! In me, 'tis villany; In thee, it had been good service. Thou must know,

'Tis not my profit that does lead mine honour; Mine honour, it. Repent, that e'er thy tongue Hath so betray'd thine act: Being done unknown,

I should have found it afterwards well done; But must condemn it now. Desist, and drink.

*Men.* For this, [*Aside.*] I'll never follow thy pall'd fortunes more.—Who seeks, and will not take, when once 'tis Shall never find it more. [*offer'd,*]

*Pom.* This health to Lepidus. [*Pompey.*]

*Ant.* Bear him ashore I'll pledge it for him,

*Eno.* Here's to thee, Menas.

*Men.* Enobarbus, welcome.

*Pom.* Fill, till the cup be hid.

*Eno.* There's a strong fellow, Menas.

[*Pointing to the Attendant who carries off LEPIDUS.*]

*Men.* Why?

*Eno.* He bears The third part of the world, man; See'st not?

*Men.* The third part then is drunk: 'Would That it might go on wheels! [*it were all,*]

*Eno.* Drink thou; increase the reels.

*Men.* Come.

*Pom.* This is not yet an Alexandrian feast.

*Ant.* It ripens towards it.—Strike the vessel Here is to Caesar. [*sells*], ho!

*Cas.* I could well forbear it. It's monstrous labour, when I wash my brain, And it grows fouler.

*Ant.* Be a child o'the time.

*Cas.* Possess 't it, I'll make answer: but I had rather fast [*one.*]

From all, four days, than drink so much in

*Eno.* Ha, my brave emperor! [*To ANTONY.* Shall we dance now the Egyptian Bacchanals, And celebrate our drink?

*Pom.* Let's ha't, good soldier.

*Ant.* Come, let us all take hands! [*sense* Till that the conquering wine hath steep'd our In soft and delicate Lethe.

*Eno.* All take hands.— Make battery to our ears with the loud music:

The while, I'll place you: Then the boy shall sing;

The holding\*\* every man shall bear, as loud As his strong sides can volley.

[*Music plays, ENOBARBUS places them hand in hand.*]

### SONG.

*Come, thou monarch of the vine,  
Plumy Bacchus, with pink eyne††:  
In thy vats our cares be drown'd;  
With thy grapes our hairs be crown'd;  
Cup us, till the world go round;  
Cup us, till the world go round!*

*Cas.* What would you more?—Pompey good night. Good brother,

Let me request you off: our graver business Frowns at this levity. Gentle lords, let's part;

You see, we have burnt our cheeks: strong Enobarbe [*tongue*

Is weaker than the wine; and mine own Splits what it speaks: the wild disguise hath almost

[*Good night.*] Antick'd us all. What needs more words? Good Antony, your hand.

*Pom.* I'll try you o'the shore.

*Ant.* And shall, sir: give't your hand.

*Pom.* O, Antony, [*are friends:* You have my father's house,—But what? we Come, down into the boat.

*Eno.* Take heed you fall not.—

[*Exeunt POMPEY, CÆSAR, ANTONY and Attendants.*]

Menas, I'll not on shore.

*Men.* No, to my cabin.—

\* Encompasses.

† Kettle-drums.

† Embraces.

† Understand.

† Confederates.

\*\* Burden, chorus.

§ Cloyed.

†† Red eyes.

These drums!—these trumpets, flutes! what!  
Let Neptune hear we bid a loud farewell  
To these great fellows: Sound and be hang'd,  
sound out.

[A Flourish of Trumpets, with Drums.  
*Eno.* Ho, says 'a!—There's my cap.  
*Men.* Ho!—noble captain!  
Come. [Exeunt.]

## ACT III.

## SCENE I. A Plain in Syria.

Enter VENTIDIUS, as after Conquest, with  
SILIUS, and other Romans, Officers, and  
Soldiers; the dead Body of PACORUS borne  
before him.

*Ven.* Now, darting Parthia, art thou struck;  
and now

Pleased fortune does of Marcus Crassus' death  
Make me revenger.—Bear the king's son's  
body

Before our army:—Thy Pacorus, Orodes\*,  
Pays this for Marcus Crassus.

*Sil.* Noble Ventidius, [warm,  
Whilst yet with Parthian blood thy sword is  
The fugitive Parthians follow; spur through  
Media,

Mesopotamia, and the shelters whither  
The routed fly: so thy grand captain Antony  
Shall set thee on triumphant chariots, and  
Put garlands on thy head.

*Ven.* O Silius, Silius,  
I have done enough: A lower place, note well,  
May make too great an act: For learn this,  
Silius;

Better leave undone, than by our deed acquire  
Too high a fame, when him we serve's away.  
Cæsar and Antony have ever won  
More in their officer, than person: Sossius,  
One of my place in Syria, his lieutenant,  
For quick accumulation of renown,  
Which he achieved by the minute, lost his  
favour.

Who does† the wars more than his captain  
can,

Becomes his captain's captain: and ambition,  
The soldier's virtue, rather makes choice of  
Than gain, which darkens him. [loss

I could do more to do Antonius good,  
But 'twould offend him; and in his offence  
Should my performance perish.

*Sil.* Thou hast, Ventidius,  
That without which a soldier, and his sword,  
Grants scarce distinction. Thou wilt write to  
Antony?

*Ven.* I'll humbly signify what in his name,  
That magical word of war, we have effected;  
How, with his banners, and his well-paid  
The ne'er-yet-beaten horse of Parthia [ranks,  
We have jaded out o'the field.

*Sil.* Where is he now?

*Ven.* He purposeth to Athens; whither with  
what haste

The weight we must convey with us will  
permit,

We shall appear before him.—On, there; pass  
along. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. Rome. An Ante-Chamber in  
Cæsar's House.

Enter AGRIPPA, and ENOBARBUS, meeting.

*Agr.* What, are the brothers parted?

*Eno.* They have despatch'd with Pompey,  
he is gone;

The other three are sealing. Octavia weeps  
To part from Rome: Cæsar is sad; and Lepi-  
dus, [troubled

Since Pompey's feast, as Menas says, is  
With the green sickness.

*Agr.* 'Tis a noble Lepidus.

*Eno.* A very fine one: O, how he loves  
Cæsar! [Antony]

*Agr.* Nay, but how dearly he adores Mark

*Eno.* Cæsar? Why, he's the Jupiter of men.

*Agr.* What's Antony? The god of Jupiter.

*Eno.* Spake you of Cæsar? How? the non-  
pareil!

*Agr.* O Antony! O thou Arabian bird †!

*Eno.* Would you praise Cæsar, say,—  
Cæsar;—go no further.

*Agr.* Indeed, he ply'd them both with ex-  
cellent praises. [loves Antony:

*Eno.* But he loves Cæsar best;—Yet he  
Hol hearts, tongues, figures, scribes, bards,  
poets cannot [love

Think, speak, cast, write, sing, number, he, his  
To Antony. But as for Cæsar,

Kneel down, kneel down, and wonder.

*Agr.* Both he loves.

*Eno.* They are his shards‡, and he their  
beetle. So,— [Trumpets.

This is to horse.—Adieu, noble Agrippa.

*Agr.* Good fortune, worthy soldier; and  
farewell.

Enter CÆSAR, ANTONY, LEPIDUS, and  
OCTAVIA.

*Ant.* No farther, sir. [self;

*Cæs.* You take from me a great part of my—  
Use me well in it.—Sister, prove such a wife  
As my thoughts make thee, and as my furthest  
band§

Shall pass on thy approof.—Most noble An-  
tony,

Let not the piece of virtue||, which is set  
Betwixt us, as the cement of our love,

To keep it builded, be the ram, to batter  
The fortress of it: for better might we  
Have loved without this mean, if on both parts  
This be not cherish'd.

*Ant.* Make me not offended  
In your distrust.

*Cæs.* I have said.

*Ant.* You shall not find,  
Though you be therein curious¶, the least cause

\* Pacorus was the son of Orodes, king of Parthia.  
† Wings. § Boud. || Octavia.

‡ The phoenix.  
¶ Scrupulous.

For what you seem to fear : So the gods keep  
you [ends!]

And make the hearts of Romans serve your  
We will here part. [well;]

*Cæs.* Farewell, my dearest sister, fare thee  
The elements\* be kind to thee, and make  
Thy spirits all of comfort! fare thee well.

*Octa.* My noble brother!— [spring.  
*Ant.* The April's in her eyes: It is love's  
And these the showers to bring it on.—Be  
cheerful. [and—

*Octa.* Sir, look well to my husband's house;  
*Cæs.* What,  
Octavia?

*Octa.* I'll tell you in your ear. [nor can  
*Ant.* Her tongue will not obey her heart,  
Her heart inform her tongue: the swan's down  
feather,

That stands upon the swell at full of tide,  
And neither way inclines.

*Eno.* Will Cæsar weep? [*Aside to AGRIPPA.*

*Agr.* He has a cloud in 's face.

*Eno.* He were the worse for that were he a  
So is he being a man. [horse;]

*Agr.* Why, Enobarbus?

When Antony found Julius Cæsar dead,  
He cried almost to roaring: and he wept,  
When at Philippi he found Brutus slain.

*Eno.* That year, indeed, he was troubled  
with a rheum;

What willingly he did confound†, he wail'd:  
Believe it, till I weep too.

*Cæs.* No, sweet Octavia,  
You shall hear from me still; the time shall  
Out-go my thinking on you. [not

*Ant.* Come, sir, come;  
I'll wrestle with you in my strength of love:  
look, here I have you; thus I let you go,  
And give you to the gods.

*Cæs.* Adieu; be happy!

*Lep.* Let all the number of the stars give  
To thy fair way! [light

*Cæs.* Farewell, farewell! [*Kisses OCTA.*  
*Ant.* Farewell!

[*Trumpets sound. Exit.*

SCENE III. Alexandria. A Room in the  
Palace.

*Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and  
ALEXAS.*

*Cleo.* Where is the fellow?

*Alex.* Half afraid to come.

*Cleo.* Go to, go to:—Come hither, sir.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Alex.* Good majesty,  
Herod of Jewry dare not look upon you,  
But when you are well pleased.

*Cleo.* That Herod's head  
I'll have: But how? when Antony is gone  
Through whom I might command it.—Come  
thou near.

*Mess.* Most gracious majesty,—

*Cleo.* Didst thou behold

Octavia?

*Mess.* Ay, dread queen.

*Cleo.* Where?

Of air and water.

‡ Palled, lugged.

*Mess.*

Madam, in Rome  
I look'd her in the face; and saw her led  
Between her brother and Mark Antony.

*Cleo.* Is she as tall as me?

*Mess.*

She is not, madam.  
*Cleo.* Didst hear her speak? Is she shrill-  
tongued, or low? [low-voiced.

*Mess.* Madam, I heard her speak; she is  
*Cleo.* That's not so good;—he cannot like  
her long.

*Char.* Like her? O Isis! 'tis impossible.

*Cleo.* I think so, Charmian: Dull of tongue,  
and dwarfish!—

What majesty is in her gait? Remember,  
If e'er thou look'dst on majesty.

*Mess.*

She creeps;  
Her motion and her station † are as one:  
She shows a body rather than a life;  
A statue, than a breather.

*Cleo.*

Is this certain?

*Mess.* Or I have no observance.

*Char.*

Three in Egypt

Cannot make better note.

*Cleo.*

He's very knowing,

I do perceiv't:—There's nothing in her yet:—  
The fellow has good judgment.

*Char.*

Excellent.

*Cleo.* Guess at her years, I pry'thee.

*Mess.*

Madam,  
She was a widow.

*Cleo.*

Widow?—Charmian, hark.

*Mess.* And I do think she's thirty.

*Cleo.* Bear'st thou her face in mind? is it  
long, or round?

*Mess.* Round even to faultiness.

*Cleo.*

For the most part, too,

They are foolish that are so.—Her hair, what  
colour? [as low

*Mess.* Brown, madam: And her forehead is  
As she would wish it.

*Cleo.*

There is gold for thee.

Thou must not take my former sharpness ill:—

I will employ thee back again; I find thee

Most fit for business: Go, make thee ready;

Our letters are prepared. [*Exit Messenger.*

*Char.*

A proper man.

*Cleo.* Indeed, he is so: I repent me much

That so I harry'd ‡ him. Why, methinks, by  
This creature's no such thing. [him,

*Char.*

O, nothing, madam.

*Cleo.* The man hath seen some majesty, and  
should know. [fend,

*Char.* Hath he seen majesty? Isis else de-  
And serving you so long!

*Cleo.* I have one thing more to ask him  
yet, good Charmian:—

But 'tis no matter; thou shalt bring him to me  
Where I will write: All may be well enough.

*Char.* I warrant you, madam. [*Exit.*

SCENE IV. Athens. A Room in Antony's  
House.

*Enter ANTONY and OCTAVIA.*

*Ant.* Nay, nay, Octavia, not only that,—  
That were excusable, that, and thousands more  
Of semblable import||,—but he hath waged

† Destroy.

‡ Standing.

|| Similar tendency.



New wars 'gainst Pompey; made his will, and  
To public ear: [read it  
Spoke scantily of me: when perforce he could  
not \*

But pay me terms of honour, cold and sickly  
He vented † them; most narrow measure lent  
me: [took't,

When the best hint was given him, he not  
Or did it from his teeth ‡.

*Oct.* O my good lord,  
Believe not all; or, if you must believe,  
Stomach § not all. A more unhappy lady,  
If this division chance, ne'er stood between,  
Praying for both parts:  
And the good gods will mock me presently,  
When I shall pray, *O, bless my lord and husband!*

Undo that prayer, by crying out as loud, [ther,  
*O, bless my brother!* Husband win, win bro-  
Prays, and destroys the prayer; no midway  
Twixt these extremes at all.

*Ant.* Gentle Octavia,  
Let your best love draw to that point, which  
seeks

Best to preserve it: if I lose mine honour,  
I lose myself: better I were not yours,  
Than yours so branchless. But, as you re-  
quested, [lady,

Youself shall go between us: The mean time,  
I'll raise the preparation of a war [lady,  
Shall stain || your brother: Make your soonest  
So your desires are yours. [haste;

*Oct.* Thanks to my lord.  
The Jove of power make me most weak, most  
weak,

Your reconciler! Wars 'twixt you twain  
would be

As if the world should cleave, and that slain  
men

Should solder ¶ up the rift \*\*. [begins,

*Ant.* When it appears to you where this  
Turn your displeasure that way; for our faults  
Can never be so equal, that your love  
Can equally move with them. Provide your  
going; [what cost

Choose your own company, and command  
Your heart has mind to. [Exeunt.

SCENE V. *The same. Another Room in  
the same.*

*Enter ENOBARBUS and EROS, meeting.*

*Ero.* How now, friend Eros?

*Eros.* There's strange news come, sir.

*Ero.* What, man?

*Eros.* Cæsar and Lepidus have made wars  
pon Pompey.

*Ero.* This is odd; What is the success †?

*Eros.* Cæsar, having made use of him ‡ in  
the wars 'gainst Pompey, presently denied him  
rivalry §§; would not let him partake in the  
glory of the action: and not resting here, ac-  
cuses him of letters he had formerly wrote to  
Pompey; upon his own appeal |||, seizes him:

So the poor third is up till death or large his  
confine.

*Ero.* Then, world, thou hast a pair of chaps  
no more; [hast

And throw between them all the food thou  
They'll grind the one the other. Where's An-  
tony? [spurns

*Eros.* He's walking in the garden—thus; and  
The rush that lies before him; cries, *Fool!*  
*Lepidus!*

And threatens the throat of that his officer,  
That murder'd Pompey.

*Ero.* Our great navy's rigged.

*Eros.* For Italy, and Cæsar. More, Domi-  
My lord desires you presently: my news [tins,  
I might have told hereafter.

*Ero.* 'Twill be naught:  
But let it be.—Bring me to Antony.

*Eros.* Come, sir. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI. *Rome. A Room in Cæsar's  
House.*

*Enter CÆSAR, AGRIPPA, and MECÆNAS.*

*Cæs.* Contemning Rome, he has done all  
this: and more;

In Alexandria,—here's the manner of it,—  
I' the market-place, on a tribunal silver'd,  
Cleopatra and himself in chairs of gold

Were publicly enthroned: at the feet sat  
Cæsarion, whom they call my father's son;  
And all the unlawful issue, that their lust

Since then hath made between them. Unto her  
He gave the 'establishment of Egypt; made her  
Of lower Syria, Cyprus, Lydia,

Absolute queen.

*Mec.* This in the public eye!

*Cæs.* I' the common show-place, where they  
exercise. [kings:

His sons he there proclaim'd, The kings of  
Great Media, Parthia, and Armenia,

He gave to Alexander; to Ptolemy he assign'd  
Syria, Cilicia, and Phœnicia: She

In the habiliments of the goddess Isis  
That day appear'd; and oft before gave au-  
As 'tis reported, so. [dicence

*Mec.* Let Rome be thus  
Inform'd.

*Agr.* Who, queasy ¶¶ with his insolence,  
Already will their good thoughts call from him.

*Cæs.* The people know it; and have now  
His accusations. [received

*Agr.* Whom does he accuse?

*Cæs.* Cæsar; and that, having in Sicily  
Sextus Pompeius spoil'd, we had not rated \*\*\*

him [me

His part o' the isle: then does he say, he lent  
Some shipping unrestored: lastly, he frets,

That Lepidus of the triumvirate [tain  
Should be deposed; and, being, that we de-  
All his revenue.

*Agr.* Sir, this should be answer'd.  
*Cæs.* 'Tis done already, and the messenger  
gone.

\* Could not help.

† Disgrace.

‡ Published.

¶ Cement, clove.

‡ Indistinct, through his teeth.

\*\*\* Opening.

§ Resent

||| Hows.

¶ i. e., Lepidus.

§§ Equal rank.

||| Accusation.

¶¶ Sick, disgusted.

\*\*\* Assigned.

I have told him, Lepidus was grown too cruel;  
That he his high authority abused,  
And did deserve his change; for what I have  
conquer'd,  
I grant him part: but, then, in his Armenia,  
And other of his conquer'd kingdoms, I  
Demand the like.

*Mec.* He'll never yield to that.

*Cæs.* Nor must not then be yielded to in this.

*Enter OCTAVIA.*

*Oct.* Hail, Cæsar, and my lord! hail, most  
dear Cæsar!

*Cæs.* That ever I should call thee, cast-away!

*Oct.* You have not call'd me so, nor have  
you cause. [You come not

*Cæs.* Why have you stolen upon us thus?

Like Cæsar's sister: The wife of Antony  
Should have an army for an usher, and  
The neighs of horse to tell of her approach,  
Long ere she did appear; the trees, by the way,  
Should have borne men; and expectation  
fainted,

Longing for what it had not: nay, the dust  
Should have ascended to the roof of heaven,  
Raised by your populous troops: But you are  
come

A market-maid to Rome; and have prevented  
The ostent \* of our love, which, left unshown  
Is often left unloved: we should have met you  
By sea and land; supplying every stage  
With an augmented greeting.

*Oct.* Good my lord,  
To come thus was I not constrain'd, but did it  
On my free-will. My lord, Mark Antony,  
Hearing that you prepared for war, acquainted  
My grieved ear withal; whereon, I begg'd  
His pardon for return.

*Cæs.* Which soon he granted,  
Being an obstruct † 'tween his lust and him.

*Oct.* Do not say so, my lord.

*Cæs.* I have eyes upon him,  
And his affairs come to me on the wind.

Where is he now?

*Oct.* My lord, in Athens.

*Cæs.* No, my most wrong'd sister; Cleo-  
patra [empire

Hath nodded him to her. He hath given his  
Up to a whore; who now are levying  
The kings of the earth for war: He hath  
assembled

Bocchus, the king of Lybia; Archelans,  
Of Cappadocia; Philadelphos, king  
Of Paphlagonia; the Thracian king, Adallas;  
King Malchus, of Arabia; king of Pont;  
Herod, of Jewry; Mithridates, king  
Of Comagene; Polemon and Amintas,  
The kings of Mede and Lycaonia, with a  
More larger list of scepters.

*Oct.* Ah me, most wretched,  
That have my heart parted betwix two friends,  
That do afflict each other!

*Cæs.* Welcome hither:  
Your letters did withhold our breaking forth;  
Till we perceived, both how you were wrong  
led,

And we in negligent danger. Cheer your  
heart: [drives

Be you not troubled with the time, which  
O'er your content these strong necessities;  
But let determined things to destiny  
Hold unbewail'd their way. Welcome to Rome:  
Nothing more dear to me. You are abused  
Beyond the mark of thought: and the high gods,  
To do you justice, make the ministers  
Of us, and those that love you. Best of com  
And ever welcome to us. [fort;

*Agr.* Welcome, lady.

*Mec.* Welcome, dear madam,  
Each heart in Rome does love and pity you:  
Only the adulterous Antony, most large  
In his abominations, turns you off;  
And gives his potent regiment ‡ to a trull §,  
That noises || it against us.

*Oct.* Is it so, sir? [you,

*Cæs.* Most certain. Sister, welcome: Pray  
Be ever known to patience: My dearest sister!  
[Exeunt.

# SCENE VII. Antony's Camp, near the Promontory of Actium.

*Enter CLEOPATRA and ENOBARBUS.*

*Cleo.* I will be even with thee, doubt it not.

*Eno.* But why, why, why?

*Cleo.* Thou hast forsok † my being in these  
And say'st it is not fit. [wars;

*Eno.* Well, it is, is it?

*Cleo.* Is't not? Denounce against us, why  
Be there in person? [should not we

*Eno.* [Aside.] Well, I could reply:

If we should serve with horse and mares to-  
gether, [would bear

The horse were merely \*\* lost; the mares  
A soldier and his horse.

*Cleo.* Whas is't you say?

*Eno.* Your presence needs must puzzle  
Antony; [his time,

Take from his heart, take from his brain, from  
What should not then be spared. He is already

Traduced for levity; and 'tis said in Rome,  
That Photinus, an eunuch, and your maids,

Manage this war.

*Cleo.* Sink Rome; and their tongues rot  
That speak against us! A charge we bear i'the  
war,

And, as the president of my kingdom, will  
Appear there for a man. Speak not against it;  
I will not stay behind.

*Eno.* Nay, I have done:  
Here comes the emperor.

*Enter ANTONY and CANIDIUS.*

*Ant.* Is't not strange, Canidius  
That from Tarentum, and Brundisium,  
He could so quickly cut the Ionian sea,

And take in † Toryne?—You have heard on't  
sweet?

*Cleo.* Celerity is never more admired  
Than by the negligent.

*Ant.* A good rebuke,  
Which might have well become the best o.  
men,

\* Show, token. † Obstruction. ‡ Government. § Harlot. || Threatens.  
¶ Forbid. \*\* Absolutely. †† Take, subdue.

To taunt at slackness.—Canidius, we  
Will fight with him by sea.

*Cleo.* By sea! What else?

*Can.* Why will my lord do so?

*Ant.* For \* he dares us to't.

*Eno.* So hath my lord dared him to single  
fight. [salia,

*Can.* Ay, and to wage this battle at Phar-  
Where Cæsar fought with Pompey: But these  
offers,

Which serve not for his vantage, he shakes off;  
And so should you.

*Eno.* Your ships are not well mann'd:  
Your mariners are molesters†, reapers, people  
Ingross'd by swift impress‡; in Cæsar's fleet  
Are those that often have 'gainst Pompey  
fought: [grace

Their ships are yare§; yours, heavy ||. No dis-  
shall fall you for refusing him at sea,  
Being prepared for land.

*Ant.* By sea, by sea. [away

*Eno.* Most worthy sir, you therein throw  
The absolute soldiiership you have by land;  
Distract your army, which doth most consist  
Of war-mark'd footmen; leave unexecuted  
Your own renowned knowledge; quite forego  
The way which promises assurance; and  
Give up yourself merely to chance and hazard,  
From firm security.

*Ant.* I'll fight at sea.

*Cleo.* I have sixty sails¶, Cæsar none better.

*Ant.* Our overplus of shipping will we  
burn; [head of Actium

And, with the rest full-mann'd, from the  
Beat the approaching Cæsar. But if we fail,  
*Enter a Messenger.*

We then can do't at land.—Thy business?

*Mess.* The news is true, my lord; he is de-  
Cæsar has taken Tornyne. [cried;

*Ant.* Can he be there in person? 'tis im-  
possible; [dius,

Strange, that his power should be \*\*.—Can-  
Our nineteen legions thou shalt hold by land,  
And our twelve thousand horse:—We'll to  
our ship;

*Enter a Soldier.*

Away, my Thetis††!—How now, worthy sol-  
dier?

*Sold.* O noble emperor, do not fight by sea;  
Trust not to rotten planks: Do you misdoubt  
This sword, and these my wounds? Let the  
Egyptians,

And the Phœnicians, go a ducking; we  
Have used to conquer, standing on the earth,  
And fighting foot to foot.

*Ant.* Well, well, away.

*Exeunt ANTONY, CLEOPATRA, and  
ENOBARBUS.*

*Sold.* By Hercules, I think, I am 't the right.

*Can.* So dier, thou art: but his whole ac-  
tion grows

Not in the power on't: So our leader's led,

And we are women's men.

*Sold.*

You keep by land

The legions and the horse whole, do you not?

*Can.* Marcus Octavius, Marcus Justeius,  
Publicola, and Cælius, are for sea:

But we keep whole by land. This speed of  
Carries ¶ beyond belief. [Cæsar's

*Sold.* While he was yet in Rome,  
His power §§ went out in such distractions |||, as  
Beguiled all spies.

*Can.* Who's his lieutenant, hear you?

*Sold.* They say, one Taurus.

*Can.* Well I know the man.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* The emperor calls for Canidius.

*Can.* With news the time's with labour;  
and throes ¶¶ forth,

Each minute, some. [Exeunt

SCENE VIII. A Plain near Actium.

*Enter CÆSAR, TAURUS, Officers, and  
Others.*

*Cas.* Taurus,—

*Taur.* My lord.

*Cas.* Strike not by land; keep whole:  
Provoke not battle, till we have done at sea.

Do not exceed the prescript of this scroll:  
Our fortune lies upon this jump\*\*\*. [Exeunt.

*Enter ANTONY and ENOBARBUS.*

*Ant.* Set we our squadrons on yon' side  
o' the hill,

In eye†† of Cæsar's battle; from which place  
We may the number of the ships behold,  
And so proceed accordingly. [Exeunt.

[Enter CANIDIUS, marching with his Land  
Army one way over the Stage; and TA-  
RUS, the Lieutenant of Cæsar, the other  
way. After their going in, is heard the  
noise of a Sea-Fight.

*Alarum. Re-enter ENOBARBUS.*

*Eno.* Naught, naught, all naught! I can  
behold no longer:

The Antoniad †††, the Egyptian admiral,  
With all their sixty, fly, and turn the rudder;  
To see't, mine eyes are blasted.

*Enter SCARUS.*

*Scar.* Gods and goddesses,  
All the whole synod of them!

*Eno.* What's thy passion?

*Scar.* The greater cantle §§§ of the world is  
lost

With very ignorance; we have kiss'd away  
Kingdoms and provinces.

*Eno.* How appears the fight?

*Scar.* On our side like the token'd |||| pesti-  
lence, [of Egypt,

Where death is sure. Yon' ribald-rid nag ¶¶¶  
Whom leprosy o'ertake! i' the midst o'the  
fight,—

When vantage like a pair of twins appear'd,  
Both as the same, or rather ours the elder \*\*\*,  
The brizet†††† upon her, like a cow in June,

\* Because. † Mule drivers. ‡ Pressed in haste. § Ready. || Incombered.

¶ Ships. \*\* Strange that his forces should be there. †† Cleopatra. ††† Goes.

§§ Forces. ||| Detachments, separate bodies. ¶¶ Agonizes. \*\*\* Hazard. ††† Sight.

|||| Name of Cleopatra's ship. §§§ Corner. ||||| Spotted. ¶¶¶ Lewd, common strumpet.

\*\*\*\* Better.

†††† The gad fly that stings cattle.



Hoists sails, and flies.

*Eno.* That I beheld: mine eyes  
Did sicken at the sight on't, and could not  
Endure a further view.

*Scar.* She once being loof'd \*,  
The noble ruin of her magic, Antony,  
Claps on his sea-wing, and like a doting mal-  
lard,

Leaving the fight in height, flies after her:  
I never saw an action of such shame;  
Experience, manhood, honour, ne'er before  
Did violate so itself.

*Eno.* Alack, alack!

*Enter CANIDIUS.*

*Can.* Our fortune on the sea is out of breath,  
And sinks most lamentably. Had our general  
Been what he knew himself, it had gone well:  
O, he has given example for our flight,  
Most grossly, by his own.

*Eno.* Ay, are you thereabouts? Why then,  
good night

Indeed. *[Aside.]*

*Can.* Towards Peloponnesus are they fled.  
*Scar.* 'Tis easy to't; and there I will attend  
What further comes.

*Can.* To Cæsar will I render  
My legions, and my horse; six kings already  
Show me the way of yielding.

*Eno.* I'll yet follow *[reason]*  
The wounded chance of Antony, though my  
Sits in the wind against me. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE IX. Alexandria. A Room in the  
Palace.

*Enter ANTONY, and Attendants.*

*Ant.* Hark, the land bids me tread no more  
upon't, *[ther,*  
It is ashamed to bear me!—Friends, come hi-  
I am so lated † in the world, that I  
Have lost my way for ever:—I have a ship  
Laden with gold; take that, divide it; fly,  
And make your peace with Cæsar.

*Att.* Fly! not we. *[reason]*  
*Ant.* I have fled myself; and have instructed  
cowards *[be gone];*

To run, and show their shoulders.—Friends,  
I have myself resolved upon a course  
Which has no need of you; be gone:

My treasure's in the harbour, take it.—O,  
I follow'd that I blush to look upon:  
My very hairs do mutiny; for the white  
Reprove the brown for rashness, and they  
them *[shall]*

For fear and doting.—Friends, be gone; you  
Have letters from me to some friends, that  
will *[sad,*

Sweep your way for you. Pray you, look not  
Nor make replies of loathness; take the hint  
Which my despair proclaims; let that be  
left *[way:]*

Which leaves itself: to the sea-side straight-  
I will possess you of that ship and treasure.  
Leave me, I pray, a little: 'pray you now:—  
Nay, do so; for, indeed, I have lost com-  
mand,

Therefore I pray you:—I'll see you by and  
by. *[Sits down.]*

*Enter EROS, and CLEOPATRA, led by CHAR-  
MIAN and IRAS.*

*Eros.* Nay, gentle madam, to him:—Com-

*Iras.* Do, most dear queen. *[fort him.]*

*Char.* Do! Why, what else?

*Eleo.* Let me sit down. O Juno!

*Ant.* No, no, no, no.

*Eros.* See you here, sir?

*Ant.* O fie, fie, fie.

*Char.* Madam,—

*Iras.* Madam; O good empress!—

*Eros.* Sir, sir,— *[kept]*

*Ant.* Yes, my lord, yes;—He †, at Philippi,  
His sword even like a dancer; while I struck  
The lean and wrinkled Cassius; and 'twas I,  
That the mad Brutus ended: he alone  
Dealt on lieutenantry §, and no practice had  
In the brave squares of war: Yet now—No  
matter.

*Cleo.* Ah, stand by.

*Eros.* The queen, my lord, the queen.

*Iras.* Go to him, madam, speak to him;  
He is unqualified || with very shame.

*Cleo.* Well then,—Sustain me:—O!

*Eros.* Most noble sir, arise; the queen ap-  
proaches; *[but ¶]*  
Her head's declined, and death will seize her;  
Your comfort makes the rescue.

*Ant.* I have offended reputation;  
A most un noble swerving.

*Eros.* Sir, the queen.

*Ant.* O, whether hast thou led me, Egypt?  
How I convey my shame out of thine eyes [See,  
By looking back on what I have left behind  
'Stroy'd in dishonour.

*Cleo.* O, my lord, my lord!  
Forgive my fearful sails! I little thought,  
You would have follow'd.

*Ant.* Egypt, thou knew'st too well,  
My heart was to thy rudder tied by the strings,  
And thou shouldst tow me after: O'er my spirit  
Thy full supremacy thou knew'st; and that  
Thy beck might from the bidding of the gods  
Command me.

*Cleo.* O, my pardon.

*Ant.* Now I must  
To the young man send humble treaties, dodge  
And palter in the shifts of lowliness; who  
With half the bulk o'the world play'd as I  
pleased,

Making and marring fortunes. You did know,  
How much you were my conqueror; and that  
My sword, made weak by my affection, would  
Obey it on all cause.

*Cleo.* O pardon, pardon!

*Ant.* Fall not a tear, I say; one of them rates \*\*  
All that is one and lost: Give me a kiss; [ter,  
Even this repays me.—We sent our schoolmas-  
Is he come back?—Love, I am full of lead:—  
Some wine, within there, and our viands:—

Fortune knows,  
We scorn her most, when most she offers  
blows. *[Exeunt.]*

\* Brought close to the wind. † Belated, benighted. ‡ Cæsar. § Fought by his officers.

¶ Divested of his faculties. ¶ Unless. \*\* Values.

SCENE X. *Cæsar's Camp, in Egypt.*

*Enter CÆSAR, DOLABELLA, THYREUS, and Others.*

*Cæs.* Let him appear that's come from Antony. Know you him? [Tony.—

*Dol.* Cæsar, 'tis his schoolmaster\*: An argument that he is pluck'd, when hither He sends so poor a pinion of his wing, Which had superfluous kings for messengers, Not many moons gone by.

*Enter EUPHRONIUS.*

*Cæs.* Approach, and speak.

*Eup.* Such as I am, I come from Antony: I was of late as petty to his ends, As is the morn-dew on the myrtle leaf To his grand seat†.

*Cæs.* Be it so; Declare thine office.

*Eup.* Lord of his fortunes he salutes thee, and Requires to live in Egypt: which not granted, He lessens his requests; and to thee sues To let him breathe between the heavens and earth,

A private man in Athens: This for him.

Next, Cleopatra does confess thy greatness; Submits her to thy might; and of thee craves The circle‡ of the Ptolemies for her heirs, Now hazarded to thy grace.

*Cæs.* For Antony, I have no ears to his request. The queen Of audience, nor desire, shall fail; so she From Egypt drive her all-disgraced friend§, Or take his life there: This if she perform, She shall not sue unheard. So to them both.

*Eup.* Fortune pursue thee! [bands.

*Cæs.* Bring him through the [Exit EUPHRONIUS.

To try thy eloquence, now 'tis time: Despatch; From Antony win Cleopatra: promise,

[To THYREUS.

And in our name, what she requires; add more, From thine invention, offers: women are not, In their best fortunes, strong; but want will perjure

[Thyrens; The ne'er-touch'd vestal: Try thy cunning, Make thine own edict for thy pains, which we Will answer as a law.

*Thyr.* Cæsar, I go. [flaw||;

*Cæs.* Observe how Antony becomes his And what thou think'st his very action speaks In every power that moves.

*Thyr.* Cæsar, I shall. [Exit.

SCENE XI. *Alexandria. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter CLEOPATRA, ENOBAREUS, CHARMIAN, and IRAS.*

*Cleo.* What shall we do, Enobarbus?

*Eno.* Think, and die.

*Cleo.* Is Antony, or we, in fault for this?

*Eno.* Antony only, that would make his will Lord of his reason. What although you fled From that great face of war, whose several ranges

Frighted each other? why should he follow? The itch of his affection should not then Have nick'd his captainship; at such a point, When half to half the world opposed, he being The mered question¶: 'Twas a shame no less Than was his loss, to course your flying flags, And leave his navy gazing.

*Cleo.* Pr'ythee, peace.

*Enter ANTONY, with EUPHRONIUS.*

*Ant.* Is this his answer?

*Eup.* Ay, my lord.

*Ant.* The queen Shall then have courtesy, so she will yield. Us up.

*Eup.* He says so.

*Ant.* Let her know it.—

To the boy Cæsar send this grizzled head,

And he will fill thy wishes to the brim

With principalities.

*Cleo.* That head, my lord?

*Ant.* To him again; Tell him he wears the rose [should note

Of youth upon him; from which the world Something particular: his coin, ships, legions May be a coward's; whose ministers would pre- Under the service of a child, as soon [vail As i' the command of Cæsar: I dare him, there- To lay his gay comparisons\*\* apart, [fore, And answer me declined††, sword against sword,

Ourselves alone: I'll write it; follow me.

[Exit ANTONY and EUPHRONIUS.

*Eno.* Yes, like enough, high-battled Cæsar will [show,

Unstate his happiness, and be staged to the Against a sword.—I see, men's judgments are A parcel‡‡ of their fortunes; and things out- Do draw the inward quality after them, [ward To suffer all alike. That he should dream, Knowing all measures, the full Cæsar will Answer his emptiness!—Cæsar, thou hast sub- His judgment, too. [due

*Enter an Attendant.*

*Att.* A messenger from Cæsar

*Cleo.* What, no more ceremony?—See, my women!— [nose,

Against the blown rose may they stop their That kneel'd unto the buds.—Admit him, sir.

*Eno.* Mine honesty and I, begin to square§§ [Aside.

The loyalty, well held to fools, does make Our faith mere folly:—Yet, he, that can endure To follow with allegiance a fallen lord, Does conquer him that did his master conquer, And earns a place i' the story.

*Enter THYREUS.*

*Cleo.* Cæsar's will?

*Thyr.* Hear it apart.

*Cleo.* None but friends; say boldly.

*Thyr.* So, haply|||, are they friends to An- tony.

*Eno.* He needs as many, sir, as Cæsar has; Or needs not us. If Cæsar please, our master

\* Euphronius, schoolmaster to Antony's children.

† As is the dew to the sea.

‡ Diadem, the crown. § Paramour.

¶ Conforms himself to this breach of his fortune

‡‡ The only cause of the dispute. \*\* Circumstances of splendour.

†† In age and power

‡‡ Are of a piece with them.

§§ Quarrel.

||| Perhaps.

Will leap to be his friend: For us, you know,  
Whose he is, we are; and that's Cæsar's.

*Thyr.* So.—  
Thus then, thou most renown'd; Cæsar entreats,  
Not to consider in what case thou stand'st,  
Further than he is Cæsar.

*Cleo.* Go on: Right royal.

*Thyr.* He knows, that you embrace not An-  
As you did love, but as you fear'd him. [*tony*

*Cleo.* O!

*Thyr.* The scars upon your honour, there-  
Does pity, as constrain'd blemishes, [fore, he  
Not as deserved.

*Cleo.* He is a god, and knows  
What is most right: Mine honour was not  
But conquer'd merely. [*yielded,*

*Eno.* To be sure of that, [*Aside.*  
I will ask Antony.—Sir, sir, thou'rt so leaky,  
That we must leave thee to thy sinking, for  
Thy dearest quit thee. [*Exit ENOBARBUS.*

*Thyr.* Shall I say to Cæsar  
What you require of him? for he partly begs  
To be desired to give. It much would please  
him,

That of his fortunes you should make a staff  
To lean upon: but it would warm his spirits,  
To hear from me you had left Antony,  
And put yourself under his shroud,  
The universal landlord.

*Cleo.* What's your name?

*Thyr.* My name is Thyrens.

*Cleo.* Most kind messenger,  
Say to great Cæsar this, In disputation \*  
I kiss his conquer'ring hand: tell him, I am prompt  
To lay my crown at his feet, and there to kneel:  
Tell him, from his all-obeying† breath I hear  
The doom of Egypt.

*Thyr.* 'Tis your noblest course.  
Wisdom and fortune combating together,  
If that the former dare but what it can, [lay  
No chance may shake it. Give me grace‡ to  
My duty on your hand.

*Cleo.* Your Cæsar's father  
Oft, when he hath mused of taking kingdoms  
Bestow'd his lips on that unworthy place, [in §,  
As it rain'd kisses.

*Re-enter ANTONY and ENOBARBUS.*

*Ant.* Favours, by Jove that thunders!—  
What art thou, fellow?

*Thyr.* One, that but performs  
The bidding of the fullest¶ man, and worthiest  
To have command obey'd.

*Eno.* You will be whipp'd.

*Ant.* Approach, there:—Ay, you kite!—  
Now gods and devils! [*cry'd, ho!*

Authority melts from me: Of late, when I  
Like boys unto a mass¶, kings would start forth,  
And cry, *Your will?* Have you no ears? I am  
*Enter Attendants.*

Antony, yet. Take hence this Jack\*\*, and  
whip him.

*Eno.* 'Tis better playing with a lion's whelp,  
Than with an old one dying.

*Ant.* Moon and stars!

Whip him:—Were't twenty of the greatest  
tributaries

That do acknowledge Cæsar, should I find  
them [*her name,*

So saucy with the hand of she here, (What's  
Since she was Cleopatra?)—Whip him, fellows,  
Till, like a boy, you see him cringe his face,  
And whine aloud for mercy: Take him hence.

*Thyr.* Mark Anthony,—

*Ant.* Tug him away: being whipp'd,  
Bring him again:—This Jack of Cæsar's shall  
Bear us an errand to him.—

[*Exeunt Attend. with THYREUS.*

You were half blasted ere I knew you:—Hal!  
Have I my pillow left unpress'd in Rome,  
Forborne the getting of a lawful race,  
And by a gem of women, to be abused  
By one that looks on feeders††?

*Cleo.* Good my lord,—

*Ant.* You have been a boggler ever:—  
But when we in our viciousness grow hard,  
(O misery on't!) the wise gods seal †† our eyes;  
In our own filth drop our clear judgments;  
make us

Adore our errors; laugh at us, while we strut  
To our confusion.

*Cleo.* O, is it come to this?

*Ant.* I found you as a morsel, cold upon  
Dead Cæsar's trencher: nay, you were a frag-  
ment [*hours,*

Of Cneius Pompey's; besides what hotter  
Unregister'd in vulgar fame, you have  
Luxuriously §§ pick'd out:—For, I am sure,  
Though you can guess what temperance should  
You know not what it is. [*be,*

*Cleo.* Wherefore is this?

*Ant.* To let a fellow that will take rewards,  
And say, *God quit you!* be familiar with  
My playfellow, your hand; this kingly seal,  
And plighter of high hearts!—O, that I were  
Upon the hill of Basan, to outstar  
The horned herd! for I have savage cause;  
And to proclaim it civilly, were like [thank  
A halter'd neck, which does the hangman  
For being yare ||| about him.—Is he whipp'd?

*Re-enter Attendants, with THYREUS.*

1 *Att.* Soundly, my lord.

*Ant.* Cry'd he? and begged he pardon?  
1 *Att.* He did ask favour.

*Ant.* If that thy father live, let him repent  
Thou wast not made his daughter; and be thou  
To follow Cæsar in his triumph, since [sorry  
Thou hast been whipp'd for following him:  
henceforth,

The white hand of a lady fever thee, [Cæsar,  
Shake thou to look on't.—Get thee back to  
Tell him thy entertainment: Look, thou say,  
He makes me angry with him: for he seems  
Proud and disdainful; harping on what I am;  
Not what he knew I was: He makes me angry;  
And at this time most easy 'tis to do't;

When my good stars, that were my former  
guides,

Have empty left their orbs, and shot their fires

\* Supposed to be an error for *deputation*, i. e., by proxy. † Obeyed. ‡ Grant me the  
favour. § Conquering. || Most complete and perfect. ¶ Scramble. \*\* A term of contempt.

†† Servants.

‡‡ Close up.

§§ Wantonly.

||| Ready, handy.



Into the abism of hell. If he mislike  
My speech, and what is done; tell him, he has  
Hipparchus, my enfranchised bondman, whom  
He may at pleasure whip, or hang, or torture,  
As he shall like, to quit \* me: Urge it thou:  
Hence, with thy stripes, begone. [*Exit THYR.*]

*Cleo.* Have you done yet?

*Ant.* Alack, our terrene † moon  
Is now eclipsed; and it portends alone  
The fall of Antony!

*Cleo.* I must stay his time.

*Ant.* To flatter Cæsar, would you mingle eyes  
With one that ties his points?

*Cleo.* Not know me yet?

*Ant.* Cold-hearted toward me?

*Cleo.* Ah, dear, if I be so,  
From my cold heart let heaven engender hail,  
And poison it in the source; and the first stone  
Drop in my neck: as it determines ‡, so  
Dissolve my life! The next Cæsarion § smite!  
Till, by degrees, the memory of my womb,  
Together with my brave Egyptians all,  
By the discarding ¶ of this pelleted storm,  
Lie graveless; till the flies and gnats of Nile  
Have buried them for prey!

*Ant.* I am satisfied.

Cæsar sits down in Alexandria; where  
I will oppose his fate. Our force by land  
Hath nobly held; our severed navy too  
Have knit again, and fleet ¶, threatening most  
sea-like. [thou hear, lady?

Where hast thou been, my heart?—Dost  
If from the field I shall return once more  
To kiss these lips, I will appear in blood;  
I and my sword will earn our chronicle;

There is hope in it yet.

*Cleo.* That's my brave lord!

*Ant.* I will be treble-sinew'd, hearted,  
breathed,  
And fight maliciously: for when mine hours  
Were nice\*\* and lucky, men did ransom lives  
Of me for jests; but now, I'll set my teeth,  
And send to darkness all that stop me.—Come  
Let's have one other gaudy †† night: call to me  
All my sad captains, fill our bowls; once more  
Let's mock the midnight bell.

*Cleo.* It is my birth-day:  
I had thought, to have held it poor; but, since  
my lord

Is Antony again, I will be Cleopatra.

*Ant.* We'll yet do well.

*Cleo.* Call all his noble captains to my lord.

*Ant.* Do so, we'll speak to them; and to-  
night I'll force

The wine peep through their scars.—Come on,  
my queen;

There's sap in't yet. The next time I do fight,  
I'll make death love me; for I will contend  
Even with his pestilent scythe.

[*Exeunt ANTONY, CLEOPATRA, and  
Attendants.*]

*Eno.* Now he'll out-stare the lightning. To  
be furious, [mood,

Is, to be frightened out of fear: and in that  
The dove will peck the estridge ††; and I see  
A diminution in our captain's brain [still

Restores his heart: When valour preys on  
reason,

It eats the sword it fights with. I will seek  
Some way to leave him. [*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. Cæsar's Camp at Alexandria.

*Enter CÆSAR, reading a Letter; AGRIPPA,  
MECÆNAS, and Others.*

*Cæs.* He calls me boy; and chides, as he  
had power

To beat me out of Egypt: my messenger  
He hath whipp'd with rods; dares me to per-  
sonal combat,

Cæsar to Antony: Let the old ruffian know,  
I have many other ways to die; mean time,  
Laugh at his challenge.

*Mec.* Cæsar must think,

When one so great begins to rage, he's hunted  
Even to falling. Give him no breath, but now  
Make boot §§ of his distraction: Never anger  
Made good guard for itself.

*Cæs.* Let our best heads  
Know, that to-morrow the last of many battles  
We mean to fight:—Within our files there  
are

Of those that served Mark Antony but late,  
Enough to fetch him in. See it be done;  
And feast the army: we have store to do't,  
And they have earn'd the waste. Poor Antony!

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE II. Alexandria. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter ANTONY, CLEOPATRA, ENOBARBUS,  
CHARMIAN, IRAS, ALEXAS, and Others.*

*Ant.* He will not fight with me, Domitius.

*Eno.* No.

*Ant.* Why should he not?

*Eno.* He thinks, being twenty times of bet-  
He is twenty men to one. [ter fortune,

*Ant.* To-morrow, soldier,  
By sea and land I'll fight: or I will live,  
Or bathe my dying honour in the blood

Shall make it live again. Woo't thou fight  
*Eno.* I'll strike; and cry, *Take all.* [well?

*Ant.* Well said; come on.—  
Call forth my household servants; let's to-  
night

*Enter Servants.*

Be bounteous at our meal.—Give me thy hand,  
Thou hast been rightly honest;—so hast  
thou;

And thou,—and thou,—and thou:—you have  
served me well,

And kings have been your fellows.

*Cleo.* What means this?

\* Requite. † Earthly. ‡ Dissolves. § Her son by Julius Cæsar. || Melting. ¶ Float.  
\*\* Trifling. †† Feasting. ‡‡ Ostrich. §§ Take advantage.

*Eno.* 'Tis one of those odd tricks, which sorrow shoots  
Out of the mind. [*Aside.*]

*Ant.* And thou art honest too.  
I wish, I could be made so many men;  
And all of you clapp'd up together in  
An Antony; that I might do you service,  
So good as you have done.

*Serv.* The gods forbid!  
*Ant.* Well, my good fellows, wait on me to-night:

Scant not my cups; and make as much of me,  
As when mine empire was your fellow too,  
And suffer'd my command.

*Cleo.* What does he mean?  
*Eno.* To make his followers weep.

*Ant.* Tend me to-night;  
May be, it is the period of your duty:  
Haply \*, you shall not see me more; or if,  
A mangled shadow: perchance, to-morrow  
You'll serve another master. I look on you,  
As one that takes his leave. Mine honest friends,

I turn you not away; but, like a master  
Married to your good service, stay till death:  
Tend me to-night two hours, I ask no more,  
And the gods yield † you for't!

*Eno.* What mean you, sir,  
To give them this discredit? Look, they weep;

And I, an ass, am onion-eyed; for shame,  
Transform us not to women.

*Ant.* Ho, ho, ho! †  
Now the witch take me, if I meant it thus!  
Grace grow where those drops fall! My hearty friends,

You take me in too dolorous a sense:  
I spake to you for your comfort: did desire you

To burn this night with torches: Know, my  
I hope well of to-morrow; and will lead you,  
Where rather I'll expect victorious life,  
Than death and honour. Let's to supper; come,  
And drown consideration. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III. *The same. Before the Palace.*

*Enter Two Soldiers, to their Guard.*

1 *Sold.* Brother, good night: to-morrow is the day. [*Well.*]

2 *Sold.* It will determine one way: fare you  
Heard you of nothing strange about the streets?

1 *Sold.* Nothing: What news?

2 *Sold.* Belike, 'tis but a rumour:  
Good night to you.

1 *Sold.* Well, sir, good night.  
*Enter Two other Soldiers.*

2 *Sold.* Soldiers,  
Have careful watch.

3 *Sold.* And you: Good night, good night.  
[*The first Two place themselves at their Posts.*]

4 *Sold.* Here we: [*They take their Posts.*]  
and if to-morrow

Our navy thrive, I have an absolute hope  
Our landmen will stand up.

3 *Sold.* 'Tis a brave army,

And full of purpose.

[*Music of Hautboys under the Stage.*]

4 *Sold.* Peace what noise?

1 *Sold.* List, list!

2 *Sold.* Hark!

1 *Sold.* Music i' the air.

3 *Sold.* Under the earth.

4 *Sold.* It signs § well,

Does't not?

3 *Sold.* No.

1 *Sold.* Peace, I say. What should this mean? [*Antony loved,*]

2 *Sold.* 'Tis the god Hercules, whom An-  
Now leaves him.

1 *Sold.* Walk; let's see if other watchmen  
Do hear what we do.

[*They advance to another Post.*]

2 *Sold.* How now, masters?

1 *Sold.* How now?

How now? do you hear this?

[*Several speaking together.*]

1 *Sold.* Ay; Is't not strange?

3 *Sold.* Do you hear, masters? do you hear?

1 *Sold.* Follow the noise so far as we have  
quarter;

Let's see how't will give off.

1 *Sold.* [*Several speaking.*] Content: 'Tis  
strange. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV. *The same. A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter ANTONY and CLEOPATRA; CHARMIAN, and Others, attending.*

*Ant.* Eros! mine armour, Eros!

*Cleo.* Sleep a little.

*Ant.* No, my chuck.—Eros, come; mine  
armour, Eros!

*Enter Eros, with Armour.*

Come, my good fellow, put thine iron on:—

If fortune be not our's to-day, it is

Because we brave her.—Come.

*Cleo.* Nay, I'll help too.

What's this for?

*Ant.* Ah, let be, let be! thou art  
The armourer of my heart:—False, false; this,  
this.

*Cleo.* Sooth, la, I'll help: Thus it must be.

*Ant.* Well, well;

We shall thrive now.—See'st thou, my good  
Go, put on thy defences. [*fellow?*]

*Eros.* Briefly ‖, sir.

*Cleo.* Is not this buckled well?

*Ant.* Rarely, rarely:

He that unbuckles this, till we do please  
To doff't ¶ for our repose, shall hear a storm.

Thou fumblest, Eros; and my queen's a squire  
More tight \*\* at this, than thou: Despatch.—

O love, [*knew'st*]  
That thou could'st see my wars to-day, and  
The royal occupation! thou should'st see

*Enter an Officer, armed.*

A workman in't.—Good morrow to thee; wel-  
come:

Thou look'st like him that knows a warlike  
[charge:]

\* Perhaps.

† Reward.

‡ Stop.

§ Bodes.

‖ Shortly.

¶ Put off.

\*\* Handy.

To business that we love, we rise betime,  
And go to it with delight.

1 *Off.* A thousand, sir,  
Early though it be, have on their rivetted trim\*,  
And at the port expect you.

[*Shout. Trumpets. Flourish.*

*Enter other Officers, and Soldiers.*

2 *Off.* The morn is fair.—Good morrow,

*All.* Good morrow, general. [*general.*

*Ant.* 'Tis well blown, lads.

This morning, like the spirit of a youth

That means to be of note, begins betimes.—

So, so; come, give me that: this way; well  
said.

Fare thee well, dame, whate'er becomes of me:

This is a soldier's kiss: rebukable, [*Kisses her.*

And worthy shameful check it were, to stand

On more mechanic compliment; I'll leave

thee [*fight,*

Now, like a man of steel.—Yon, that will

Follow me close; I'll bring you to't.—Adieu.

[*Exeunt ANTONY, EROS, Officers, and  
Soldiers.*

*Char.* Please you retire to your chamber?

*Cleo.* Lead me,

He goes forth gallantly. That he and Cæsar

Determine this great war in single fight! [*might*

Then, Antony,—But now,—Well on.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. Antony's Camp near Alexandria.

*Trumpets sound. Enter ANTONY and*

*EROS; a Soldier meeting them.*

*Sold.* The gods make this a happy day to  
Antony! [*once prevail'd*

*Ant.* 'Would, thou and those thy scars had  
To make me fight at land!

*Sold.* Had'st thou done so,

The kings that have revolted, and the soldier

That has this morning left thee, would have  
Follow'd thy heels. [*still*

*Ant.* Who's gone this morning?

*Sold.* Who?

One ever near thee: Call for Enobarbus,

He shall not hear thee; or from Cæsar's camp

Say, *I am none of thine.*

*Ant.* What say'st thou?

*Sold.* Sir,

He is with Cæsar.

*Eros.* Sir, his chests and treasure

He has not with him.

*Ant.* Is he gone?

*Sold.* Most certain.

*Ant.* Go, Eros, send his treasure after; do it;

Detain no jot, I charge thee: write to him

(I will subscribe) gentle adieus, and greetings:

Say, that I wish he never find more cause

To change a master.—O, my fortunes have

Corrupted honest men;—Eros, despatch.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI. Cæsar's Camp before Alex-  
andria.

*Flourish. Enter CÆSAR, with AGRIPPA,  
ENOBARBUS, and Others.*

*Cæs.* Go forth, Agrippa, and begin the fight:

Our will is, Antony be took alive;  
Make it so known.

*Agr.* Cæsar, I shall. [*Exit AGRIPPA.*

*Cæs.* The time of universal peace is near:

Prove this a prosperous day, the three-hood'd

Shall bear the olive freely. [*world*

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Antony

Is come into the field.

*Cæs.* Go, charge Agrippa

Plant those that have revolted in the van,

That Antony may seem to spend his fury

Upon himself.

[*Exeunt CÆSAR and his Train.*

*Eno.* Alexas did revolt; and went to Jewry,

On affairs of Antony; there did persuade

Great Herod to incline himself to Cæsar,

And leave his master, Antony: for this pains,

Cæsar hath hang'd him. Canidius, and the

That fell away, have entertainment, but rest

No honourable trust. I have done ill;

Of which I do accuse myself so sorely,

That I will joy no more.

*Enter a Soldier of Cæsar's.*

*Sold.* Enobarbus, Antony

Hath after thee sent all thy treasure, with

His bounty overplus: The messenger

Came on my guard; and at thy tent is now,

Unloading of his mules.

*Eno.* I give it you.

*Sold.* Mock me not, Enobarbus.

I tell you true: Best that you safed the bringer

Out of the host; I must attend mine office,

Or would have done't myself. Your emperor

Continues still a Jove. [*Exit Soldier.*

*Eno.* I am alone the villain of the earth,

And feel I am so most. O Antony, [*paid*

Thou mine of bounty, how wouldst thou have

My better service, when my turpitude

Thou dost so crown with gold! This blows †

my heart:

If swift thought break it not, a swifter mean

Shall outstrike thought; but thought will do't,

I feel.

I fight against thee!—No; I will go seek

Some ditch, wherein to die; the foul'st best fits

My latter part of life. [*Exit.*

SCENE VII. Field of Battle between the  
Camps.

*Alarum. Drums and Trumpets. Enter  
AGRIPPA, and Others.*

*Agr.* Retire, we have engaged ourselves too  
far:

Cæsar himself has work, and our oppression  
Exceeds what we expected. [*Exeunt.*

*Alarum. Enter ANTONY, and SCARUS,  
wounded.*

*Scar.* O my brave emperor, this is fought  
indeed! [*home*

Had we done so at first, we had driven them  
With clouts about their heads.

*Ant.* Thou bleed'st apace

*Scar.* I had a wound here that was like a T.  
But now 'tis made an H.

*Ant.* They do retire.

\* Rivetted dress, armour

† Swells.



*Scar.* We'll beat 'em into bench-holes; I Room for six scotches\* more. [have yet

*Enter EROS.*

*Eros.* They are beaten, sir; and our advantage serves For a fair victory. [vantage serves

*Scar.* Let us score their backs, And snatch 'em up, as we take hares, behind; 'Tis sport to maul a runner.

*Ant.* I will reward thee Once for thy spritely comfort, and ten-fold For thy good valour. Come thee on.

*Scar.* I'll halt after. [Exeunt.

SCENE VIII. Under the Walls of Alexandria.

*Alarum.* Enter ANTONY, marching; SCARUS, and Forces.

*Ant.* We have beat him to his camp; Run one before, [morrow, And let the queen know of our guests.—To Before the sun shall see us, we'll spill the blood That has to-day escaped. I thank you all; For doughty†-handed are you; and have fought Not as you served the cause, but as it had been Each man's like mine; you have shewn all Hector's.

Enter the city, clip† your wives, your friends, Tell them your feasts; whilst they with joyful tears [kiss Wash the congealment from your wounds, and The honour'd gashes whole.—Give me thy hand; [To SCARUS.

*Enter CLEOPATRA, attended.*

To this great fairy§ I'll commend thy acts, Make her thanks bless thee.—O thou day o'the world, [all,

Chain mine arm'd neck; leap thou, attire and Through proof of harness|| to my heart, and Ride on the pants triumphing. [there

*Cleo.* Lord of lords! O infinite virtue! comest thou smiling from The world's great snare uncaught?

*Ant.* My nightingale, We have beat them to their beds. What, girl? though grey [have we Do something mingle with our brown; yet A brain that nourishes our nerves, and can Get goal for goal of youth. Behold this man; Commend unto his lips thy favouring hand;— Kiss it, my warrior:—He hath fought to-day, As if a god, in hate of mankind, had Destroyed in such a shape.

*Cleo.* I'll give thee, friend, An armour all of gold; it was a king's.

*Ant.* He has deserved it, were it carbuncled Like holy Phœbus' car.—Give me thy hand; Through Alexandria make a jolly march; Bear our hack'd targets like the men that owe Had our great palace the capacity [them¶: To camp this host, we all would snip together; And drink carouses to the next day's fate, Which promises royal peril.—Trumpeters, With brazen din blast you the city's ear;

Make mingle with our rattling tabourines\*\* ; That heaven and earth may strike their sounds together, Applauding our approach. [Exeunt.

SCENE IX. Cæsar's Camp.

Sentinels on their Post. Enter ENOBARBUS.

1 *Sold.* If we be not relieved within this hour, [night We must return to the court of guard: The Is shiny; and, they say, we shall embattle By the second hour i' the morn.

2 *Sold.* This last day was A shrewd one to us.

*Eno.* O, bear me witness, night,—

3 *Sold.* What man is this?

2 *Sold.* Stand close, and list to him. *Eno.* Be witness to me, O thou blessed moon,

When men revolted shall upon record Bear hateful memory, poor Enobarbus did Before thy face repent!—

1 *Sold.* Enobarbus!

3 *Sold.* Peace; Hark further. [choly,

*Eno.* O sovereign mistress of true melan- The poisonous damp of night dispo[n]ge†† upon That life, a very rebel to my will, [me: May hang no longer on me: Throw my heart Against the flint and hardness of my fault; Which, being dried with grief, will break to powder,

And finish all foul thoughts. O Antony, Nobler than my revolt is infamous, Forgive me in thine own particular; But let the world rank me in register A master-leaver and a fugitive:

O Antony! O Antony! [Dies.

2 *Sold.* Let's speak

To him. [speaks 1 *Sold.* Let's hear him, for the things he May concern Cæsar.

3 *Sold.* Let's do so. But he sleeps. 1 *Sold.* Swoons rather; for so bad a prayer Was never yet for sleeping. [as his

2 *Sold.* Go we to him.

3 *Sold.* Awake, awake, sir; speak to us.

2 *Sold.* Hear you, sir? •

1 *Sold.* The hand of death hath taught†† him. Hark, the drums. [Drums afar off.

Demurely §§ wake the sleepers. Let us bear him [hour

To the court of guard; he is of note: our Is fully out.

3 *Sold.* Come on then; He may recover yet. [Exeunt with the Body.

SCENE X. Between the two Camps.

Enter ANTONY and SCARUS, with Forces, marching.

*Ant.* Their preparation is to-day by sea; We please them not by land.

*Scar.* For both, my lord

\* Cuts.

† Brave.

‡ Embrace.

§ Beauty, united with power, was the popular characteristic of fairies. || Armour of proof

¶ As becomes the brave warriors that own them. \*\* Small drums. †† Discharge, as sponge when squeezed discharges the moisture it had imbibed. ‡‡ Reached. §§ Solemnly

*Ant.* I would they'd fight i' the fire, or in the air;

We'd fight there too. But this it is: Our foot Upon the hills adjoining to the city, Shall stay with us: order for sea is given; They have put forth the haven: Further on, Where their appointment we may best dis- And look on their endeavour\*. [cover, [Exit.

*Enter CÆSAR and his Forces, marching.*

*Cæs.* But\* being charged, we will be still by land. [force Which, as I take't, we shall; for his best Is forth to man his galleys. To the vales, And hold our best advantage. [Exit.

*Re-enter ANTONY and SCARUS.*

*Ant.* Yet they're not join'd: Where yonder pine doth stand,

I shall discover all: I'll bring thee word Straight how 'tis like to go. [Exit.

*Scar.* Swallows have built In Cleopatra's sails their nest: the augurers Say, they know not,—they cannot tell,—look grimly,

And dare not speak their knowledge. Antony Is valiant, and dejected; and, by starts, His fretted fortunes give him hope and fear, Of what he has and has not.

*Alarum afar off, as at a Sea Fight.*

*Re-enter ANTONY.*

*Ant.* All is lost; This foul Egyptian hath betrayed me: My fleet hath yielded to the foe; and yonder They cast their caps up, and carouse together Like friends long lost.—Triple-turn'd whore†! 'tis thou

Hast sold me to this novice; and my heart Makes only wars on thee.—Bid them all fly; For when I am revenged upon my charm, I have done all:—Bid them all fly, begone. [Exit SCARUS.

O sun, thy uprise shall I see no more: Fortune and Antony part here; even here Do we shake hands.—All come to this?—The hearts

That spaniel'd me at heels, to whom I gave Their wishes, do discandy, melt their sweets On blossoming Cæsar; and this pine is bark'd, That overtopp'd them all. Betray'd I am: O this false soul of Egypt! this grave charm\$, Whose eye beck'd† forth my wars, and call'd them home;

Whose bosom was my crownet¶, my chief end, Like a right gipsy, hath, at fast and loose\*\*, Beguiled me to the very heart of loss.—What, Eros, Eros!

*Enter CLEOPATRA.*

Ah, thou spell! I avaunt

*Cleo.* Why is my lord enraged against his love?

*Ant.* Vanish; or I shall give thee thy de serving,

And blemish Cæsar's triumph. Let him take thee,

And hoist thee up to the shouting plebeians: Follow his chariot, like the greatest spot Of all thy sex; most monster-like, be shown For poor† diminutives to dolts†; and let Patient Octavia plough thy visage up With her prepared nails. [Exit CLEO.] 'Tis well thou'rt gone,

If it be well to live: But better 'twere Thou fell'st into my fury, for one death Might have prevented many.—Eros, ho!—The shirt of Nessus is upon me: Teach me, Alcides††, thou mine ancestor, thy rage: Let me lodge Lichas§§ on the horns o' the moon; And with those hands that grasp'd the heaviest club, Subdue my worthiest self. The witch shall To the Roman boy she hath sold me, and I fall Under this plot: she dies for't.—Eros, ho! [Exit

SCENE XI. Alexandria. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, IRAS, and MARDIAN.*

*Cleo.* Help me, my women! O, he is more mad [Thessaly Than Telamon||| for his shield; the boar of Was never so emboss'd¶¶.

*Char.* To the monument; There lock yourself, and send him word you are dead. [ing The soul and body rive\*\*\* not more in part—Than greatness going off.

*Cleo.* To the monument:—Mardian, go tell him I have slain myself; Say that the last I spoke was Antony, And word it, pr'ythee, piteously: Hence, Mardian; and bring me how he takes my death.—

To the monument. [Exit.

SCENE XII. The same. Another Room.

*Enter ANTONY and EROS.*

*Ant.* Eros, thou yet behold'st me?

*Eros.* Ay, noble lord.

*Ant.* Sometime, we see a cloud that's dragonish;

A vapour, sometime, like a bear, or lion, A tower'd citadel, a pendant rock, A forked mountain or blue promontory With trees upon't, that nod unto the world, And mock our eyes with air: Thou hast seen these signs;

They are black vespers' pageants.

*Eros.* Ay, my lord.

*Ant.* That, which is now a horse, even with a thought,

\* Discover their numbers, and see their motions. † Without. ‡ Cleopatra first belonged to Julius Cæsar; then to Antony; and now, as Antony supposes, to Augustus.  
§ Deadly piece of witchcraft. || Was the motion for. ¶ Finish. \*\* A cheating game, at present named *pricking at the bell*. †† For the smallest piece of money to clowns. §§ Hercules. §§ The boy that brought the poisoned shirt to Hercules. ¶¶ Foaming at the mouth. \*\*\* Split.

The rack \* dislimns; and makes it indistinct,  
As water is in water.

*Eros.* It does, my lord. [tain is  
*Ant.* My good knave†, Eros, now thy cap-  
Even such a body: here I am Antony;  
Yet cannot hold this visible shape, my knave.  
I made these wars for Egypt; and the queen,  
Whose heart I thought I had, for she had mine;  
Which, whilst it was mine, had annex'd unto't  
A million more, now lost,—she, Eros, has  
Pack'd cards with Cæsar, and false play'd my  
Unto an enemy's triumph.— [glory  
Nay, weep not, gentle Eros; there is left us  
Ourselves to end ourselves.—O, thy vile lady!

*Enter MARDIAN.*

She hast robb'd me of my sword.

*Mar.* No, Antony;  
My mistress loved thee, and her fortunes min-  
With thine entirely. [gled

*Ant.* Hence, sancy eunuch; peace;  
She hath betray'd me, and shall die the death.

*Mar.* Death of one person can be paid but  
once: [wouldst do,

And that she has discharged: What thou  
Is done unto thy hand; the last she spake  
Was Antony! most noble Antony!

Then in the midst a tearing groan did break  
The name of Antony; it was divided  
Between her heart and lips: she render'd life,  
Thy name so buried in her.

*Ant.* Dead then?

*Mar.* Dead.

*Ant.* Eros, unarm; the long day's task is  
done, [hence safe,

And we must sleep:—That thou depart'st  
Does pay thy labour richly; Go.—Off, pluck  
off;— [Exit MARDIAN.

The sevenfold shield of Ajax cannot keep  
The battery from my heart. O, cleave, my  
sides!

Heart, once be stronger than thy continent‡,  
Crack thy frail case!—Apace, Eros, apace.—  
No more a soldier:—Bruised pieces, go;  
You have been nobly borne.—From me a  
while.— [Exit EROS.

I will o'ertake thee, Cleopatra, and  
Weep for my pardon. So it must be, for now  
All length is torture:—Since the torch is out,  
Liedown, and stray no further: Now all labour  
Mars what it does; yea, very force entangles  
Itself with strength: Seal then §, and all is  
done.— [me:

Eros!—I come, my queen:—Eros!—Stay for  
Where souls do couch on flowers, we'll hand  
in hand, [gaze:  
And with our sprightly port make the ghosts  
Dido and her Æneas shall want troops,  
And all the haunt be ours.—Come, Eros, Eros!

*Re-enter EROS.*

*Eros.* What would my lord?

*Ant.* Since Cleopatra died,  
I have lived in such dishonour, that the gods  
Detest my baseness. I, that with my sword  
Quarter'd the world, and o'er green Neptune's  
back

With ships made cities, condemn myself to  
lack

The courage of a woman; less noble mind  
Than she, which, by her death, our Cæsar tells,  
*I, am conqueror of myself.* Thou art sworn,

*Eros,* [now  
That, when the exigent should come, (which  
Is come, indeed,) when I should see behind me  
The inevitable prosecution of

Disgrace and horror, that, on my command,  
Thou then wouldst kill me: do't; the time is  
come:

Thou strikest not me, 'tis Cæsar thou defeat'st.  
Put colour in thy cheek.

*Eros.* The gods withhold me!  
Shall I do that, which all the Parthian darts,  
Though enemy, lost aim, and could not?

*Ant.* Eros,  
Wouldst thou be window'd in great Rome, and  
see [down

Thy master thus with pleach'd || arms, bending  
His corrigible ¶ neck, his face subdued [seat  
To penetrative \*\* shame; whilst the wheel'd  
Of fortunate Cæsar, drawn before him, branded  
His baseness that ensued ††?

*Eros.* I would not see't.

*Ant.* Come, then; for with a wound I must  
be cured. [worn

Draw that, thy honest sword, which thou hast  
Most useful for thy country.

*Eros.* O, sir, pardon me.

*Ant.* When I did make thee free, sworest  
thou not then

To do this when I bade thee? Do it at once;  
Or thy precedent services are all

But accidents unpurposed. Draw, and come.

*Eros.* Turn from me, then, that noble coun-  
tenance,

Wherein the worship ‡‡ of the whole world lies.

*Ant.* Lo thee. [Turning from him.

*Eros.* My sword is drawn.

*Ant.* Then let it do at once  
The thing why thou hast drawn it.

*Eros.* My dear master,  
My captain, and my emperor! let me say,  
Before I strike this bloody stroke, farewell.

*Ant.* 'Tis said, man;—and farewell. [now?

*Eros.* Farewell, great chief. Shall I strike

*Ant.* Now, Eros.

*Eros.* Why, there then: [Falls on his sword.

Thus do I escape the sorrow  
Of Antony's death. [Dies.

*Ant.* Thrice nobler than myself!

Thou teachest me, O valiant Eros, what [Eros  
I should, and thou couldst not. My queen and  
Have, by their brave instruction, got upon me  
A nobleness in record: But I will be  
A bridegroom in my death, and run into't  
As to a lover's bed. Come, then; and, Eros,  
Thy master dies thy scholar; to do thus

[Falling on his sword  
I learn'd of thee. How! not yet dead? no!

The guard!—ho!—O, despatch me. [dead!—

*Enter DERCETAS and Guard.*

1 Guard. What's the noise?

\* The fleeting clouds. † Servant. ‡ *i. e.*, The thing that contains thee. § Sealing com-  
pletes a contract. || Folded. ¶ Corrected. \*\* Penetrating. †† Followed. ‡‡ Dignity



*Ant.* I have done my work ill, friends; O,  
Of what I have begun. [make an end

2 *Guard.* The star is fallen.

1 *Guard.* And time is at his period.

*All.* Alas, and woe!

*Ant.* Let him that loves me, strike me dead.

1 *Guard.* Not I.

2 *Guard.* Nor I.

3 *Guard.* Nor any one. [*Exeunt Guard.*

*Der.* Thy death and fortunes bid thy fol-  
lowers fly. [ings,

This sword but shewn to Cæsar, with this tid-  
Shall enter me with him.

*Enter DIOMEDES.*

*Dio.* Where's Antony?

*Der.* There, Diomed, there.

*Dio.* Lives he?

Wilt thou not answer man? [*Exit DERCEIAS.*

*Ant.* Art thou there, Diomed? Draw thy  
Sufficing strokes for death. [sword, and give me

*Dio.* Most absolute lord,

My mistress Cleopatra sent me to thee.

*Ant.* When did she send thee?

*Dio.* Now, my lord,

*Ant.* Where is she?

*Dio.* Lock'd in her monument. She had a  
prophesying fear

Of what hath come to pass: for when she saw  
(Which never shall be found,) you did suspect

She had disposed \* with Cæsar, and that your  
rage [was dead;

Would not be purged, she sent you word she  
But, fearing since how it might work, hath sent

Me to proclaim the truth; and I am come,  
I dread, too late. [guard, I pry thee.

*Ant.* Too late, good Diomed:—Call my

*Dio.* What, ho! the emperor's guard! The  
Come, your lord calls. [guard, what, ho!

*Enter some of the Guard.*

*Ant.* Fear me, good friends, where Cleo-  
patra bides;

'Tis the last service that I shall command you.

1 *Guard.* Woe are we, sir, you may not live  
All your true followers out. [to wear

*All.* Most heavy day!

*Ant.* Nay, good my fellows, do not please  
sharp fate [come

To grace it with your sorrows: bid that wel-  
Which comes to punish us, and we punish it

Seeming to bear it lightly. Take me up:  
I have led you oft; carry me now, good friends,

And have my thanks for all. [*Exeunt bearing ANTONY.*

SCENE XIII. The same. A Monument.  
*Enter above, CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN,*

*and IRAS.*

*Cleo.* O, Charmian, I will never go from  
Char. Be comforted, dear madam. [hence.

*Cleo.* No, I will not;

All strange and terrible events are welcome,  
But comforts we despise; our size of sorrow,

Proportion'd to our cause, must be as great  
*Enter DIOMEDES.*

As that which makes it.—How now? is he dead?

*Dio.* His death's upon him, but not dead.

Look out o'the other side your monument.  
His guard have brought him thither.

*Enter ANTONY, borne by the Guard.*

*Cleo.* O thou sun,  
Burn the great sphere thou movest in!—dark-  
ling† stand

The varying shore o'the world!—O Antony!

Antony! Antony!—Charmian, help; help, Iras;  
Help, friends below; let's draw him hither.

*Ant.* Peace:  
Not Cæsar's valour hath o'erthrown Antony,

But Antony's hath triumphed on itself.

*Cleo.* So it should be, that none but Antony  
Should conquer Antony; but woe 'tis so!

*Ant.* I am dying, Egypt, dying; only  
I here importune death a while, until

Of many thousand kisses the poor last  
I lay upon thy lips.—

*Cleo.* I dare not, dear  
(Dear my lord, pardon,) I dare not,

Lest I be taken: not the imperious show  
Of the full-fortuned Cæsar ever shall [have

Be brooch'd† with me; if knife, drugs, serpents,  
Edge, sting, or operation, I am safe:

Your wife Octavia, with her modest eyes,  
And still conclusion, shall acquire no honour

Denurring upon me.—But come, come, An-  
tony, [up;—

Help me, my women,—we must draw thee  
Assist, good friends.

*Ant.* O, quick, or I am gone.  
*Cleo.* Here's sport, indeed!—How heavy

weighs my lord!

Our strength is all gone into heaviness,  
That makes the weight: Had I great Juno's

power, [up,  
The strong-wing'd Mercury should fetch thee  
And set thee by Jove's side. Yet come a little,—

Wishers were ever fools;—O, come, come,  
come; [They draw ANTONY up.

And welcome, welcome! die, where thou hast  
lived; [power,

Quicken|| with kissing; had my lips that  
Thus would I wear them out.

*All.* A heavy sight!  
*Ant.* I am dying, Egypt, dying:

Give me some wine, and let me speak a little.

*Cleo.* No, let me speak; and let me rail so  
high, [wheel,

That the false housewife Fortune break her  
Provoked by my offence.

*Ant.* One word, sweet queen:  
Of Cæsar seek your honour with your safety.

*Cleo.* They do not go together. [—O!  
*Ant.* Gentle, hear me—

None about Cæsar trust but Proculeius.

*Cleo.* My resolution, and my hands, I'll  
None about Cæsar. [trust;

*Ant.* The miserable change now at my end,  
Lament nor sorrow at: but please your thoughts

In feeding them with those my former fortunes  
Wherein I lived the greatest prince o' th

world,  
The noblest: and do now not basely die,  
Nor cowardly; put off my helmet, to

My countryman, a Roman, by a Roman

\* Settled. † Without light. ‡ Ornamented. § Sedate determination. || Read

Valiantly vanquish'd. Now, my spirit is going ;  
I can no more. *[Dies.]*

*Cleo.* Noblest of men, woo'd die ?  
Hast thou no care of me? shall I abide  
In this dull world, which in thy absence is  
No better than a sty?—O, see, my women,  
The crown o' the earth doth melt:—My lord!—  
O, wither'd is the garland of the war, [girls  
The soldier's pole is fallen; young boys and  
Are level now with men: the odds is gone,  
And there is nothing left remarkable  
Beneath the visiting noon. *[She faints.]*

*Char.* O, quietness, lady!

*Iras.* She is dead, too, our sovereign!

*Char.* Lady,—

*Iras.* Madam,—

*Char.* O madam, madam, madam!

*Iras.* Royal Egypt!  
Empress!

*Char.* Peace, peace, Iras. *[commanded]*

*Cleo.* No more, but e'en a woman; and  
By such poor passion as the maid that milks,

And does the meanest chares\*.—It were for me  
To throw my sceptre at the injurious gods;  
To tell them that this world did equal theirs,  
Till they had stolen our jewel. All's but naught;  
Patience is sottish; and impatience does  
Become a dog that's mad: Then is it sin,  
To rush into the secret house of death,  
Ere death dare come to us?—How do you,  
women?

What, what? good cheer! Why, how now,  
Charmian?

My noble girls!—Ah, women, women! look,  
Our lamp is spent, it's out:—Good sirs, take  
heart:— *[To the Guard below.]*

We'll bury him: and then, what's brave, what's  
Let's do it after the high Roman fashion, [noble,  
And make death proud to take us. Come, away:  
This case of that huge spirit now is cold.

Ah, women, women! come; we have no friend  
But resolution, and the briefest end.

*[Exeunt; those above bearing off  
ANTONY'S Body.]*

## ACT V.

SCENE I. *Cæsar's Camp before Alexandria.*

*Enter CÆSAR, AGRIPPA, DOLABELLA, MENCÆNAS, GALLUS, PROCULEIUS, and others.*

*Cæs.* Go to him, Dolabella, bid him yield;  
Being so frustrat†, tell him, he mocks us by  
The pauses that he makes†.

*Dol.* Cæsar, I shall. *[Exit DOLAB.]*

*Enter DERCETAS, with the Sword of ANTONY.*

*Cæs.* Wherefore is that? and what art thou,  
Appear thus to us? *[that darest]*

*Dec.* I am call'd Dercetas;

Mark Antony I served, who best was worthy  
Best to be served: whilst he stood up, and  
He was my master; and I wore my life, [spoke,  
To spend upon his haters: If thou please  
To take me to thee, as I was to him  
I'll be to Cæsar; if thou pleases not,  
I yield thee up my life.

*Cæs.* What is't thou say'st?

*Der.* I say, O Cæsar, Antony is dead.

*Cæs.* The breaking of so great a thing should  
make *[shook]*

A greater crack: The round world should have  
Lions into civil streets, *[tony]*  
And citizens to their dens:—The death of An-  
Is not a single doom; in the name lay  
A moiety of the world.

*Der.* He is dead, Cæsar;  
Not by a public minister of justice,  
Nor by a hired knife; but that self hand,  
Which writ his honour in the acts it did, [it,  
Hath, with the courage which the heart did lend  
Splitted the heart.—This is his sword,  
I robb'd his wound of it; behold it stain'd  
With his most noble blood.

*Cæs.* Look you sad, friends?  
The gods rebuke me, but it is a tidings  
To wash the eyes of kings.

*Ag.* And strange it is,  
That nature must compel us to lament  
Our most persisted deeds.

*Mec.* His taints and honour  
Waged equal with him.

*Ag.* A rarer spirit never  
Did steer humanity: but you, gods, will give us  
Some faults to make us men. Cæsar is touch'd.

*Mec.* When such a spacious mirror's set be-  
He needs must see himself. *[fore him,*

*Cæs.* O Antony!

I have follow'd thee to this;—But we do lance  
Diseases in our bodies: I must perforce  
Have shown to thee such a declining day,  
Or look on thine; we could not stall together  
In the whole world: But yet let me lament,  
With tears as sovereign as the blood of hearts,  
That thou, my brother, my competitor  
In top of all design, my mate in empire,  
Friend and companion in the front of war,  
The arm of mine own body, and the heart  
Where mine his thoughts did kindle,—that our  
Unreconcilable, should divide *[stars,*  
Our equality to this.—Hear me, good friends;  
But I will tell you at some meeter season:

*Enter a Messenger.*  
The business of this man looks out of him,  
We'll hear him what he says.—Whence are  
you? *[mistress,*

*Mess.* A poor Egyptian yet. The queen, my  
Confined in all she has, her monument,  
Of thy intents desires instruction;  
That she prepaedly may frame herself  
To the way she's forced to.

*Cæs.* Bid her have good heart;  
She soon shall know of us, by some of ours,  
How honourable and how kindly we  
Determine for her: for Cæsar cannot live  
To be ungentle.

*Mess.* So the gods preserve thee! *[Exit]*

*Cæs.* Come hither, Proculeius; Go, and say,  
We purpose her no shame: give her what comforts

[The quality of her passion shall require;  
Lest, in her greatness, by some mortal stroke  
She do defeat us: for her life in Rome  
Would be eternal in our triumph: Go, [says,  
And, with your speediest, bring us what she  
And how you find of her.

*Pro.* Cæsar, I shall. [Exit PROCULEIUS.

*Cæs.* Gallus, go you along.—Where's Dolabella,

To second Proculeius? [Exit GALLUS.

*Agr. Mec.* Dolabella!

*Cæs.* Let him alone, for I remember now  
How he's employ'd; he shall in time be ready.  
Go with me to my tent; where you shall see  
How hardly I was drawn into this war;  
How calm and gentle I proceeded still  
In all my writings: Go with me, and see  
What I can show in this. [Exeunt.

SCENE II. Alexandria. A Room in the Monument.

Enter CLEOPATRA, CHARMIAN, and IRAS.

*Cleo.* My desolation does begin to make  
A better life: 'Tis paltry to be Cæsar;  
Not being fortune, he's but fortune's knave\*,  
A minister of her will; And it is great  
To do that thing that ends all other deeds;  
Which shackles accidents, and bolts up change;  
Which sleeps, and never palates more the  
The beggar's nurse and Cæsar's. [dunc,

Enter, to the Gates of the Monument, PROCULEIUS, GALLUS, and Soldiers.

*Pro.* Cæsar sends greeting to the queen of Egypt;

And bids thee study on what fair demands  
Thou mean'st to have him grant thee.

*Cleo.* [Within.] What's thy name?

*Pro.* My name is Proculeius.

*Cleo.* [Within.] Antony

Did tell me of you, bade me trust you; but  
I do not greatly care to be deceived,  
That have no use for trusting. If your master  
Would have a queen his beggar, you must tell  
That majesty, to keep decorum, must [him,  
No less beg than a kingdom: if he please  
To give me conquer'd Egypt for my son,  
He gives me so much of mine own, as I  
Will kneel to him with thanks.

*Pro.* Be of good cheer;  
You are fallen into a princely hand, fear nothing:

Make your full reference freely to my lord,  
Who is so full of grace, that it flows over  
On all that need: Let me report to him.  
Your sweet dependancy: and you shall find  
A conqueror, that will pray in aid for kindness,  
Where he for grace is kneel'd to.

*Cleo.* [Within.] Pray you, tell him  
I am his fortune's vassal, and I send him  
The greatness he has got. I hourly learn  
A doctrine of obedience; and would gladly  
Look him i' the face.

*Pro.* This I'll report, dear lady:

Have comfort; for I know, your plight is pitied  
Of him that caused it. [prised;

*Gal.* You see how easily she may be sur-  
[Here PROCULEIUS, and two of the  
Guard, ascend the Monument by a  
Ladder placed against a Window,  
and having descended, come behind  
CLEOPATRA. Some of the Guard un-  
bar and open the Gates.

Guard her till Cæsar come.

[To PROCULEIUS and the Guard.

[Exit GALLUS.

*Irás.* Royal queen!

*Char.* O Cleopatra! thou art taken, queen!—

*Cleo.* Quick, quick, good hands.

[Drawing a Dagger.

*Pro.* Hold, worthy lady, hold:  
[Seizes and disarms her.

Do not yourself such wrong, who are in this  
Relieved, but not betray'd.

*Cleo.* What, of death too  
That rids our dogs of languish?

*Pro.* Cleopatra,

Do not abuse my master's bounty, by  
The undoing of yourself: let the world see  
His nobleness well acted, which your death  
Will never let come forth.

*Cleo.* Where art thou, death?  
Come hither, come! come, come, and take a

Worth many babes and beggars! [queen

*Pro.* O, temperance, lady!

*Cleo.* Sir, I will eat no meat, I'll not drink,  
If idle talk will once be necessary, [sir;  
I'll not sleep neither: This mortal house I'll  
ruin,

Do Cæsar what he can. Know, sir, that I  
Will not wait pinion'd† at your master's court;  
Nor once be chastised with the sober eye  
Of dull Octavia. Shall they hoist me up,  
And show me to the shouting varletry‡  
Of censuring Rome? Rather a ditch in Egypt  
Be gentle grave to me! rather on Nilus' mud  
Lay me stark naked, and let the water-flies  
Blow me into abhorring! rather make  
My country's high pyramids my gibbet,  
And hang me up in chains!

*Pro.* You do extend  
These thoughts of horror further than you shall  
Find cause in Cæsar.

Enter DOLABELLA.

*Dol.* Proculeius,  
What thou hast done thy master Cæsar knows,  
And he hath sent for thee: as for the queen,  
I'll take her to my guard.

*Pro.* So, Dolabella,  
It shall content me best: be gentle to her.—  
To Cæsar I will speak what you shall please.

[To CLEOPATRA

If you'll employ me to him.

*Cleo.* Say, I would die.  
[Exeunt PROCULEIUS, and Soldiers.

*Dol.* Most noble empress, you have heard  
*Cleo.* I cannot tell. [of me?

*Dol.* Assuredly, you know me.

*Cleo.* No matter, sir, what I have heard, o  
known.

\* Servant.

† Bound, confined.

‡ Rabble.



You laugh, when boys or women tell their  
Is't not your trick? [dreams;

*Dol.* I understand not, madam.  
*Cleo.* I dream'd there was an emperor  
Antony;—

O, such an another sleep, that I might see  
But such another man!

*Dol.* If it might please you,—  
*Cleo.* His face was as the heavens; and  
therein stuck [and lighted  
A sun and moon; which kept their course,  
The little O, the earth.

*Dol.* Most sovereign creature,—  
*Cleo.* His legs bestrid the ocean: his rear'd  
arm

Crested the world: his voice was propertied  
As all the tuned spheres, and that to friends;  
But when he meant to quail \* and shake the orb,  
He was as rattling thunder. For his bounty,  
There was no winter in't; an autumn 'twas,  
That grew the more by reaping: His delights  
Were dolphin-like; they show'd his back above  
The element they lived in: In his livery  
Walk'd crowns and crownets; realms and  
islands were

As plates† dropp'd from his pocket.

*Dol.* Cleopatra,—  
*Cleo.* Think you, there was, or might be,  
As this I dream'd of? [such a man

*Dol.* Gentle madam, no.  
*Cleo.* You lie, up to the hearing of the gods;  
But, if there be, or ever were one such,  
It's past the size of dreaming: Nature wants  
stuff [gine

To vie strange forms with fancy; yet, to ima-  
An Antony, were nature's piece 'gainst fancy,  
Condemning shadows quite.

*Dol.* Hear me, good madam:  
Your loss is as yourself, great; and you bear it  
As answering to the weight: 'Would I might  
Overtake pursued success, but I do feel, [never  
By the rebound of yours, a grief that shoots  
My very heart at root.

*Cleo.* I thank you, sir.

Know you, what Cæsar means to do with me;

*Dol.* I am loath to tell you what I would

*Cleo.* Nay, pray you, sir,— [you knew.

*Dol.* Though he be honourable,—

*Cleo.* He'll lead me then in triumph?

*Dol.* Madam, he will;

I know it.

*Within.* Make way there,—Cæsar.

*Enter CÆSAR, GALLUS, PROCULIUS, ME-  
CÆNAS, SELEUCUS, and Attendants.*

*Cas.* Which is the queen

Of Egypt?

*Dol.* 'Tis the emperor, madam.

[CLEOPATRA kneels.

*Cas.* Arise,

you shall not kneel:—

I pray you rise; rise, Egypt.

*Cleo.* Sir, the gods

Will have it thus; my master and my lord  
I must obey.

*Cas.* Take to you no hard thoughts:  
The record of what injuries you did us,

Though written in our flesh, we shall remem-  
As things but done by chance. [ber

*Cleo.* Sole sir of the world,  
I cannot project ‡ mine own cause so well  
To make it clear; but do confess, I have  
Been laden with like frailties, which before  
Have often shamed our sex.

*Cas.* Cleopatra, know  
We will extenuate rather than enforce:  
If you apply yourself to our intents,  
(Which towards you are most gentle,) you  
shall find

A benefit in this change; but if you seek  
To lay on me a cruelty, by taking  
Antony's course, you shall bereave yourself  
Of my good purposes, and put your children  
To that destruction which I'll guard them from,  
If thereon you rely. I'll take my leave.

*Cleo.* And may, through all the world: 'tis  
yours: and we [shall  
Your 'scutcheons, and your signs of conquest,  
Hang in what place you please. Here, my  
good lord. [patra.

*Cas.* You shall advise me in all for Cleo-  
*Cleo.* This is the brief of money, plate, and  
jewels,

I am possess'd of; 'tis exactly valued;  
Not petty things admitted.—Where's Seleucus?

*Sel.* Here, madam. [my lord,

*Cleo.* This is my treasurer; let him speak,  
Upon his peril, that I have reserved

To myself nothing. Speak the truth, Seleucus.

*Sel.* Madam,  
I had rather seal § my lips, than, to my peril,  
Speak that which is not.

*Cleo.* What have I kept back?

*Sel.* Enough to purchase what you have  
made known.

*Cas.* Nay, blush not, Cleopatra; I approve  
Your wisdom in the deed.

*Cleo.* See, Cæsar! O, behold,  
How pomp is follow'd! mine will now be  
yours; [mine

And, should we shift estates, yours would be  
The ingratitude of this Seleucus does [trust

Even make me wild:—O slave, of no more  
Than love that's hired!—What, goest thou  
back? thou shalt [eyes,

Go back, I warrant thee; but I'll catch thine  
Though they had wings; Slave, soul-less vil-  
O rarely || base! [lain dog.

*Cas.* Good queen, let us entreat you.

*Cleo.* O Cæsar, what a wounding shame is  
That thou, vouchsafing here to visit me, [this;

Doing the honour of thy lordliness  
To one so meek, that mine own servant should

Parcel ¶ the sum of my disgraces by  
Addition of his envy! Say, good Cæsar,

That I some lady trifles have reserved,  
Inmement toys, things of such dignity

As we greet modern friends \*\* withal; and say,  
Some nobler token I have kept apart

For Livia ††, and Octavia ‡‡, to induce  
Their mediation; must I be unfolded

With one that I have bred? The gods! It  
smites me

Crush. + Silver money † Shape or form. § Sew up. || Uncommonly  
¶ Add to. \*\* Common. †† Cæsar's wife. ‡‡ His sister.

Beneath the fall I have. Pr'ythee, go hence;  
[To SELEUCUS.]

Or I shall show the cinders\* of my spirits  
Through the ashes of my chance:—Wert thou  
Thou wouldst have mercy on me. [a man,  
Cæs.

Forbear, Seleucus.

[Exit SELEUCUS.]

Cleo. Be it known, that we, the greatest,  
are misthought  
For things that others do; and, when we fall,  
We answer others' merits† in our name,  
Are therefore to be pitied.

Cæs. Cleopatra,  
Not what you have reserved, nor what acknowledged,  
[yours,  
Put we i'the roll of conquest: still be it  
Bestow it at your pleasure; and believe,  
Cæsar's no merchant, to make prize with you  
Of things that merchants sold. Therefore be  
cheer'd; [queen;

Make not your thoughts your prisons: no, dear  
For we intend so to dispose you, as  
Yourself shall give us counsel. Feed, and sleep:  
Our care and pity is so much upon you,  
That we remain your friend; And so adieu.

Cleo. My master, and my lord!  
Cæs. Not so; Adieu.

[Exit CÆSAR, and his Train.]

Cleo. He words me, girls, he words me,  
that I should not  
Be noble to myself: but hark thee, Charmian.  
[H whispers CHARMIAN.]

Irás. Finish, good lady; the bright day is  
And we are for the dark. [done,

Cleo. Hie thee again:  
I have spoke already, and it is provided;  
Go, put it to the haste.

Char. Madam, I will.  
Re-enter DOLABELLA.

Dol. Where is the queen?

Char. Behold, sir. [Exit CHARMIAN.]

Cleo. Dolabella?

Dol. Madam, as thereto sworn by your com-  
Which my love makes religion to obey, [mand,  
I tell you this: Cæsar through Syria  
Intends his journey; and, within three days,  
You with your children will be send before:  
Make your best use of this: I have perform'd  
Your pleasure, and my promise.

Cleo. Dolabella,  
I shall remain your debtor.

Dol. I your servant.  
Adieu, good queen; I must attend on Cæsar.

Cleo. Farewell, and thanks. [Exit DOL.]

Now, Irás what think'st thou?  
Thou, an Egyptian puppet, shall be shown  
In Rome as well as I: mechanic slaves  
With greasy aprons, rules, and hammers, shall  
Uplift us to the view; in their thick breaths,  
Rank of gross diet, shall we be enclouded,  
And forced to drink their vapour.

Irás. The gods forbid!

Cleo. Nay, 'tis most certain, Irás: Saucy  
lictors†  
Will catch at us, like strumpets; and scald  
Ballad us out o'tune: the quick‡ comedians

Extemporally will stage us, and present  
Our Alexandrian revels; Antony  
Shall be brought drunken forth, and I shall see  
Some squeaking Cleopatra boy || my greatness  
I' the posture of a whore.

Irás. O the good gods!

Cleo. Nay, that is certain.

Irás. I'll never see it; for, I am sure, my  
Are stronger than mine eyes. [nails

Cleo. Why, that's the way  
To fool their preparation, and to conquer  
Their most absurd intents.—Now, Charmian?

Enter CHARMIAN.

Show me, my women, like a queen;—Go fetch  
My best attires;—I am again for Cydnus,  
To meet Mark Antony:—Sirrah, Irás, go.—  
Now, noble Charmian, we'll despatch indeed:  
And, when thou hast done this chare\*, I'll give  
thee leave [all.

To play till dooms-day.—Bring our crown and  
Wherefore's this noise?

[Exit IRÁS. A Noise within.]

Enter one of the Guard.

Guard. Here's a rural fellow  
That will not be denied your highness' pre-  
He brings you figs. [sence;

Cleo. Let him come in. How poor an in-  
strument [Exit Guard.]

May do a noble deed! he brings me liberty.  
My resolution's plac'd, and I have nothing  
Of woman in me: Now from head to foot  
I am marble-constant: now the fleeting\*\* moon  
No planet is of mine.

Re-enter Guard, with a Clown bringing a  
basket.

Guard. This is the man.

Cleo. Avoid, and leave him. [Exit Guard.]  
Hast thou the pretty worm†† of Nilus there,  
That kills and pains not?

Clown. Truly I have him: but I would not  
be the party that should desire you to touch  
him, for his biting is immortal; those, that do  
die of it, do seldom or never recover.

Cleo. Remember'st thou any that have died  
on't?

Clown. Very many, men and women too.  
I heard of one of them no longer than yester-  
day: a very honest woman, but something  
given to lie; as a woman should not do, but  
in the way of honesty: how she died of the  
biting of it, what pain she felt.—Truly, she  
makes a very good report of the worm:  
But he that will believe all that they say,  
shall never be saved by half that they do:  
But this is most fallible, the worm's an odd  
worm.

Cleo. Get thee hence; farewell.

Clown. I wish you all joy of the worm.

Cleo. Farewell.

[Clown sets down the Basket.]

Clown. You must think this, look you, tha  
the worm will do his kind††.

Cleo. Ay, ay; farewell.

Clown. Look you, the worm is not to be  
trusted, but in the keeping of wise people; for  
indeed, there is no goodness in the worm.

§ Lively. || Female characters were played  
† Serpent. †† Act according to his nature

\* Fire. † Merits or demerits. ‡ Beadles.  
oy boys. § Job of work. \*\* Inconstant

*Cleo.* Take thou no care; it shall be heeded.

*Clown.* Very good: give it nothing, I pray you, for it is not worth the feeding.

*Cleo.* Will it eat me?

*Clown.* You must not think I am so simple, but I know the devil himself will not eat a woman: I know, that a woman is a dish for the gods, if the devil dress her not. But, truly, these same whoreson devils do the gods great harm in their women; for in every ten that they make, the devils mar five.

*Cleo.* Well, get thee gone; farewell.

*Clown.* Yes, forsooth; I wish you joy of the worm. *[Exit.]*

*Re-enter IRAS, with a Robe, Crown, &c.*

*Cleo.* Give me my robe, put on my crown; I Immortal longings in me: Now no more [have The juice of Egypt's grape shall moist this lip: Yare, yare\*, good Iras; quick.—Methinks I Antony call; I see him rouse himself [hear To praise my noble act; I hear him mock The luck of Cæsar, which the gods give men To excuse their after wrath: Husband, I come: Now to that name my courage prove my title! I am fire and air; my other elements I give to baser life.—So,—have you done? Come, then, and take the last warmth of my lips. *[well.]*

Farewell, kind Charmian;—Iras, long fare-

*[Kisses them. IRAS falls and dies.]*  
Have I the aspic in my lips? Dost fall?  
If thou and nature can so gently part,  
The stroke of death is as a lover's pinch, [still?  
Which hurts, and is desired. Dost thou lie  
If thus thou vanishest, thou tell'st the world  
It is not worth leave-taking.

*Char.* Dissolve, thick clond, and rain; that  
The gods themselves do weep! *[I may say,*

*Cleo.* This proves me base:  
If she first meet the curled Antony,  
He'll make demand of her; and spend that  
kiss *[wretch,*  
Which is my heaven to have. Come, mortal  
*[To the Asp, which she applies to her Breast.]*

With thy sharp teeth this knot intricate  
Of life at once untie: poor venomous fool,  
Be angry, and despatch. O, couldst thou  
speak!

That I might hear thee call great Cæsar, ass  
Unpoliced†!

*Char.* O eastern star!

*Cleo.* Peace, peace!  
Dost thou not see my baby at my breast,  
That sucks the nurse asleep?

*Char.* O, break! O, break!  
*Cleo.* As sweet as balm, as soft as air, as  
gentle,—

O Antony!—Nay, I will take thee too:—  
*[Applying another Asp to her Arm.]*

What should I stay?—*[Falls on a Bed, & dies.]*  
*Char.* In this wild world?—So, fare thee  
well.—

Now boast thee, death! in thy possession lies  
A lass unparallel'd.—Downy windows, close;  
And golden Phæbus never be beheld

Of eyes again so royal! Your crown's awry  
I'll mend it, and then play.

*Enter the Guard, rushing in.*

1 *Guard.* Where is the queen?

*Char.* Speak softly, wake her not.

1 *Guard.* Cæsar hath sent—

*Char.* Too slow a messenger.

*[Applies the Asp.]*  
O, come; apace, despatch: I partly feel thee.

1 *Guard.* Approach, oh! All's not well:

Cæsar's beguiled. *[Cæsar;—call him.]*

2 *Guard.* There's Dolabella sent from

1 *Guard.* What work is here?—Charmian,  
is this well done? *[princess]*

*Char.* It is well done, and fitting for a  
Descended of so many royal kings,

Ah, soldier! *[Dies.]*

*Enter DOLABELLA.*

*Dol.* How goes it here?

2 *Guard.* All dead.

*Dol.* Cæsar, thy thoughts  
Touch their effects in this: Thyself art coming  
To see perform'd the dreaded act, which thou  
So sought'st to hinder.

*Within.* A way there, way for Cæsar!

*Enter CÆSAR, and Attendants.*

*Dol.* O, sir, you are too sure an augurer;

That you did fear, is done.

*Cæs.* Bravest at the last:  
She levell'd at our purposes, and being royal,  
Took her own way.—The manner of their  
I do not see them bleed. *[deaths?]*

*Dol.* Who was last with them?

1 *Guard.* A simple countryman, that brought  
This was his basket. *[her figs;]*

*Cæs.* Poison'd then.

1 *Guard.* O Cæsar,  
This Charmian lived but now; she stood, and  
I found her trimming up the diadem *[spake:]*  
On her dead mistress; tremblingly she stood,  
And on the sudden dropp'd.

*Cæs.* O noble weakness!—  
If they had swallow'd poison, 'twould appear  
By external swelling: but she looks like sleep,  
As she would catch another Antony  
In her strong toil of grace.

*Dol.* Here, on her breast,  
There is a vent of blood, and something blown:  
The like is on her arm. *[fig-leaves]*

1 *Guard.* This is an aspic's trail: and these  
Have slime upon them, such as the aspic leaves  
Upon the caves of Nile.

*Cæs.* Most probable,  
That so she died; for her physician tells me,  
She bath pursued conclusions; infinite  
Of easy ways to die.—Take up her bed;  
And bear her women from the monument:—  
She shall be buried by her Antony:

No grave upon the earth shall clip it in it  
A pair so famous. High events as these  
Strike those that make them: and their story is  
No less in pity, than his glory, which  
Brought them to be lamented. Our army shall  
In solemn show, attend this funeral;  
And then to Rome.—Come, Dolabella, see  
High order in this great solemnity. *[Exit]*

\* Make haste.

† Unpolitic, to leave me to myself.

‡ Graceful appearance.

§ Tried experiments.

Enfold.



# CYMBELINE.

## Persons represented.

CYMBELINE, King of Britain.

CLOTEN, son to the Queen by a former husband.

LEONATUS POSTHUMUS, a gentleman, husband to Imogen.

BELARIUS, a banished lord, disguised under the name of Morgan.

GUIDERIUS, { sons to Cymbeline, disguised  
ARVIRAGUS, { under the names of Polydore and Cadwal, supposed sons to Belarius.

PHILARIO, friend to Posthumus. { Italians.  
IACHIMO, friend to Philario.

A French Gentleman, friend to Philario.

CAIUS LUCIUS, general of the Roman forces.

A Roman Captain. Two British Captains.

PISANIO, servant to Posthumus.

CORNELIUS, a physician.

Two Gentlemen.

Two Gaolers.

Queen, wife to Cymbeline.

IMOGEN, daughter to Cymbeline by a former Queen.

HELEN, woman to Imogen.

Lords, Ladies, Roman Senators, Tribunes, Apparitions, a Soothsayer, a Dutch Gentleman, a Spanish Gentleman, Musicians, Officers, Captains, Soldiers, Messengers, and other Attendants.

Scene,—sometimes in Britain; sometimes in Italy.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. Britain. The Garden behind Cymbeline's Palace.

*Enter Two Gentlemen.*

1 Gent. You do not meet a man, but frowns :  
our bloods \*

No more obey the heavens, than our courtiers ;  
Still seem, as does the king's.

2 Gent. But what's the matter ?

1 Gent. His daughter, and the heir of his kingdom, whom

He purposed to his wife's sole son, (a widow,  
That late he married,) hath referr'd herself  
Unto a poor but worthy gentleman : She's  
wedded ;

Her husband banish'd ; she imprison'd : all  
Is outward sorrow ; though I think, the king  
Be touch'd at very heart.

2 Gent. None but the king ?

1 Gent. He, that hath lost her, too : so is  
the queen, [tier,

That late he married the match : But not a court-  
Although they wear their faces to the bent  
Of the king's looks, hath a heart that is not  
Glad at the thing they scowl at.

2 Gent. And why so ? [a thing

1 Gent. He that hath miss'd the princess, is  
Too bad for bad report : and he that hath her,  
(I mean, that married her,—alack, good man !  
And therefore banish'd) is a creature such  
As, to seek through the regions of the earth  
For one his like, there would be something  
failing

In him that should compare. I do not think,

So fair an outward, and such stuff within,  
Endows a man but he.

2 Gent. You speak him far t.

1 Gent. I do extend him, sir, within him :  
Crush him together, rather than unfold [self ;  
His measure duly t.

2 Gent. What's his name, and birth ?

1 Gent. I cannot delve him to the root :

His father

Was call'd Sicilius, who did join his honour,  
Against the Romans, with Cassibelan ;

But had his titles by Tenantius §, whom  
He served with glory and admired success :

So gain'd the sur-addition, Leonatus :  
And had, besides this gentleman in question,  
Two other sons, who, in the wars o'the time,  
Died with their swords in hand ; for which

their father [row,  
(Then old and fond of issue,) took such sor-  
That he quit being ; and his gentle lady,  
Big of this gentleman, our theme, deceased

As he was born. Th : king, he takes the hab  
To his protection ; calls him Posthumus ; [ber  
Breeds him, and makes him of his bed-cham  
Puts him to all the learnings that his time  
Could make him the receiver of ; which he

took,  
As we do air, fast as 'twas minister'd ; and  
In his spring became a harvest : Lived in

court, [loved :  
(Which rare it is to do,) most praised, most  
A sample to the youngest ; to the more ma-  
ture,

A glass that feated || them ; and to the graver,

As we do air, fast as 'twas minister'd ; and  
In his spring became a harvest : Lived in

court, [loved :  
(Which rare it is to do,) most praised, most  
A sample to the youngest ; to the more ma-  
ture,

A glass that feated || them ; and to the graver,

As we do air, fast as 'twas minister'd ; and  
In his spring became a harvest : Lived in

\* Inclination, natural disposition.

My praise, however extensive, is within his merit.

+ t. e., You praise him extensively.

§ The father of Cymbeline

|| Formed their manners.

A child that guided dotards : to his mistress,  
For whom he now is banish'd,—her own price  
Proclaims how she esteem'd him and his vir-  
By her election may be truly read, [tue;  
What kind of man he is.

2 *Gent.* I honour him [me,  
Even out of your report. But, 'pray you, tell  
Is she sole child to the king?

1 *Gent.* His only child. [ing,  
He had two sons, (if this be worth your hear-  
Mark it;) the eldest of them at three years old,  
I' the swathing clothes the other, from their  
nursery [knowledge

Were stolen : and to this hour, no guess in  
Which way they went.

2 *Gent.* How long is this ago?

1 *Gent.* Some twenty years. [convey'd!

2 *Gent.* That a king's children should be so  
So slackly guarded! And the search so slow,  
That could not trace them!

1 *Gent.* Howsoe'er 'tis strange,  
Or that the negligence may well be laugh'd at,  
Yet is it true, sir.

2 *Gent.* I do well believe you.

1 *Gent.* We must forbear : Here comes the  
queen, and princess. [Exeunt.

## SCENE II. The same.

Enter the Queen, POSTHUMUS, and IMOGEN.

Queen. No, be assured, you shall not find  
me, daughter,

After the slander of most step-mothers,  
Evil-eyed unto you : you are my prisoner, but  
Your gaoler shall deliver you the keys [mus,  
That lock up your restraint. For you, Posthu-  
So soon as I can win the offended king,  
I will be known your advocate : marry, yet  
The fire of rage is in him; and 'twere good,  
You lean'd unto his sentence with what pa-  
Your wisdom may inform you. [tience.

Post. Please your highness,  
I will from hence to-day.

Queen. You know the peril :—  
I'll fetch a turn about the garden, pitying  
The pangs of barr'd affections; though the  
king

Hath charged you should not speak together.  
[Exit Queen.

Imo. O  
Dissembling courtesy! How fine this tyrant  
Can tickle where she wounds!—My dearest  
husband, [thing,  
I something fear my father's wrath; but no-  
'Always reserved my holy duty,) what  
His rage can do on me : You must be gone;  
And I shall here abide the hourly shot  
Of angry eyes; not comforted to live,  
But that there is this jewel in the world,  
That I may see again.

Post. My queen! my mistress!  
O, lady, weep no more; lest I give cause  
To be suspected of more tenderness  
Than doth become a man! I will remain  
The loyal'st husband that did e'er plight troth.  
My residence in Rome, at one Philario's;

Who to my father was a friend, to me  
Known but by letter : thither write, my queen,  
And with mine eyes I'll drink the words you  
Though ink be made of gall. [send,

Re-enter Queen.

Queen. Be brief; I pray you.  
If the king come, I shall incur I know not  
How much of his displeasure : yet I'll move  
him [Aside.

To walk this way : I never do him wrong,  
But he does buy my injuries, to be friends;  
Pays dear for my offences. [Exit.

Post. Should we be taking leave  
As long a term as yet we have to live,  
The loathness to depart would grow : Adieu!

Imo. Nay, stay a little :

Were you but riding forth to air yourself,  
Such parting were too petty. Look here, love;  
This diamond was my mother's : take it  
heart;

But keep it till you woo another wife,  
When Imogen is dead.

Post. How! how! another?—  
You gentle gods, give me but this I have,  
And sear up\* my embracements from a next  
With bonds of death!—Remain thou here.

[Putting on the Ring.

While sense † can keep it on! And sweetest,  
fairest,

As I my poor self did exchange for you,  
To your so infinite loss; so, in our trifles  
I still win of you : For my sake, wear this;  
It is a manacle of love; I'll place it  
Upon this fairest prisoner.

[Putting a Bracelet on her Arm.

Imo. O, the gods!

When shall we see again?

Enter CYMBELINE and Lords.

Post. Alack, the king!

Cym. Thou basest thing, avoid! hence, from  
my sight!

If, after this command, thou fraught ‡ the court  
With thy unworthiness, thou diest : Away!  
Thou art poison to my blood.

Post. The gods protect you!  
And bless the good remainders of the court!  
I am gone. [Exit.

Imo. There cannot be a pinch in death  
More sharp than this is.

Cym. O disloyal thing,  
That shouldst repair my youth; thou heapest  
A year's age on me!

Imo. I beseech you, sir,  
Harm not yourself with your vexation; I  
Am senseless of your wrath; a touch more  
Subdues all pangs, all fears. [rare §

Cym. Past grace? obedience?  
Imo. Past hope, and in despair; that way,  
past grace. [of my queen!

Cym. That might'st have had the sole || son  
Imo. O bless'd, that I might not! I chose an  
And did avoid a puttock ¶.

Cym. Thou took'st a beggar; wouldst have  
made my throne  
A seat for baseness.

\* Close up.

§ A more exquisite feeling.

† Sensation.

|| Only.

‡ Fili.

¶ A kite.

*Imo.* No; I rather added  
A lustre to it.  
*Cym.* O thou vile one!  
*Imo.* Sir,  
It is your fault that I have loved Posthumus:  
You bred him as my playfellow; and he is  
A man worth any woman; overbuys me  
Almost the sum he pays.

*Cym.* What! art thou mad?  
*Imo.* Almost, sir: Heaven restore me!—  
Would I were  
A neat-herd's\* daughter! and my Leonatus  
Our neighbour shepherd's son!

*Re-enter Queen.*  
*Cym.* Thou foolish thing!—  
They were again together: you have done  
[To the Queen.]

Not after our command. Away with her,  
And pen her up.

*Queen.* Beseech your patience:—Peace,  
Dear lady daughter, peace;—Sweet sovereign,  
Leave us to ourselves; and make yourself  
Out of your best advice†. [some comfort]

*Cym.* Nay, let her languish  
A drop of blood a day; and, being aged,  
Die of this folly! [Exit.]

*Enter PISANIO.*  
*Queen.* Fie,—you must give way:  
Here is your servant.—How now, sir? What  
news?

*Pis.* My lord your son drew on my master.  
*Queen.* Ha!  
No harm, I trust, is done?

*Pis.* There might have been,  
But that my master rather play'd than fought,  
And had no help of anger: they were parted  
By gentlemen at hand.

*Queen.* I am very glad on't.  
*Imo.* Your son's my father's friend; he  
takes his part.—

To draw upon an exile!—O brave sir!—  
I would they were in Afric both together;  
Myself by with a needle, that I might prick  
The goer back.—Why came you from your  
master? [Ime]

*Pis.* On his command: he would not suffer  
To bring him to the haven: left these notes  
Of what commands I should be subject to,  
When it pleased you to employ me.

*Queen.* This hath been  
Your faithful servant: I dare lay mine honour,  
He will remain so.

*Pis.* I humbly thank your highness.  
*Queen.* Pray, walk a while.

*Imo.* About some half hour hence,  
I pray you, speak with me: you shall, at least,  
Go see my lord aboard: for this time, leave  
me. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE III. A public Place.

*Enter CLOTEN, and Two Lords.*

1 *Lord.* Sir, I would advise you to shift a  
shirt; the violence of action hath made you  
reek as a sacrifice: Where air comes out, air

comes in: there's none abroad so wholesome  
as that you vent.

*Clo.* If my shirt were bloody, then to shift  
it—Have I hurt him?

2 *Lord.* No, faith; not so much as his pa-  
tience. [Aside.]

1 *Lord.* Hurt him? his body's a passable  
carcass, if he be not hurt: it is a thoroughfare  
for steel if it be not hurt.

2 *Lord.* His steel was in debt; it went o'the  
backside the town. [Aside.]

*Clo.* The villain would not stand me.

2 *Lord.* No; but he fled forward still, to-  
ward your face. [Aside.]

1 *Lord.* Stand you! You have land enough  
of your own: but he added to your having;  
gave you some ground.

2 *Lord.* As many inches as you have oceans:  
Puppies! [Aside.]

*Clo.* I would, they had not come between us.

2 *Lord.* So would I, till you had measured  
how long a fool you were upon the ground. [Aside.]

*Clo.* And that she should love this fellow,  
and refuse me!

2 *Lord.* If it be a sin to make a true elec-  
tion, she is damned. [Aside.]

1 *Lord.* Sir, as I told you always, her  
beauty and her brain go not together†: She's  
a good sign, but I have seen small reflection  
of her wit‡.

2 *Lord.* She shines not upon fools, lest the  
reflection should hurt her. [Aside.]

*Clo.* Come, I'll to my chamber: 'Would  
there had been some hurt done!

3 *Lord.* I wish not so; unless it had been  
the fall of an ass, which is no great hurt. [Aside.]

*Clo.* You'll go with us?  
1 *Lord.* I'll attend your lordship.

*Clo.* Nay, come, let's go together.  
2 *Lord.* Well, my lord. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE IV. A Room in Cymbeline's Pa- lace.

*Enter IMOGEN and PISANIO.*

*Imo.* I would thou grew'st unto the shores  
o'the haven,

And question'dst every sail: if he should write,  
And I not have it, 'twere a paper lost

As offer'd mercy is. What was the last  
That he spake to thee?

*Pis.* 'Twas, *His queen, his queen!*  
*Imo.* Then waved his handkerchief?

*Pis.* And kissed it, madam.  
*Imo.* Senseless linen! happier therein than

And that was all? [Ime]

*Pis.* No, madam; for so long  
As he could make me with this eye or ear

Distinguish him from others, he did keep  
The deck, with glove, or hat, or handkerchief

Still waving, as the fits and starts of his mind  
Could best express how slow his soul sail'd

How swift his ship. [Ime]

\* Cattle-keeper.

† Consideration.

‡ Her beauty and sense are not equal.

To understand the force of this idea, it should be remembered that anciently almost every  
sign had a motto, or some attempt at a witticism underneath it.



*Imo.* Thou shouldst have made him  
As little as a crow, or less, ere left  
To after-eye him.

*Pis.* Madam, so I did.

*Imo.* I would have broke mine eye-strings;  
crack'd them, but  
To look upon him; till the diminution  
Of space had pointed him sharp as my needle;  
Nay, follow'd him, till he had melted from  
The smallness of a gnat to air; and then  
Have turn'd mine eye, and wept.—But, good  
When shall we hear from him? [*Pisano;*  
*Pis.* Be assured, madam,  
With his next vantage\*.

*Imo.* I did not take my leave of him, but  
had  
Most pretty things to say; ere I could tell him,  
How I would think on him, at certain hours,  
Such thoughts, and such; or I could make  
him swear

The shes of Italy should not betray [*him,*  
Mine interest, and his honour; or have charged  
At the sixth hour of morn, at noon, at mid-  
night,

To encounter me with orisons†, for then  
I am in heaven for him: or ere I could  
Give him that parting kiss, which I had set  
Betwixt two charming words, comes in my  
father,  
And, like the tyrannous breathing of the north,  
Shakes all our buds from growing.

*Enter a Lady.*

*Lady.* The queen, madam,  
Desires your highness' company.

*Imo.* Those things I bid you do, get them  
I will attend the queen. [*despatch'd.*—

*Pis.* Madam, I shall.  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. Rome. *An Apartment in Philario's House.*

*Enter PHILARIO, IACHIMO, a Frenchman,  
a Dutchman, and a Spaniard.*

*Iach.* Believe it, sir: I have seen him in  
Britain: he was then of a crescent note‡, ex-  
pected to prove so worthy, as since he hath  
been allowed the name of: but I could then  
have looked on him without the help of ad-  
miration; though the catalogue of his endow-  
ments had been tabled by his side, and I to  
peruse him by items.

*Phi.* You speak of him when he was less  
furnished§ than now he is, with that which  
makes || him both without and within.

*French.* I have seen him in France: we  
had very many there, could behold the sun  
with as firm eyes as he.

*Iach.* This matter of marrying his king's  
daughter, (wherein he must be weighed rather  
by her value, than his own,) words him, I  
doubt not, a great deal from the matter.

*French.* And then his banishment:—

*Iach.* Ay, and the approbation of those

that weep this lamentable divorce, under her  
colours, are wonderfully to extend ¶ him; be  
it but to fortify her judgment, which else an  
easy battery might lay flat, for taking a beggar  
without more quality. But how comes it, he  
is to sojourn with you? How creeps ac-  
quaintance?

*Phi.* His father and I were soldiers toge-  
ther; to whom I have been often bound for  
no less than my life:—

*Enter POSTHUMUS.*

Here comes the Briton: Let him be so enter-  
tained amongst you, as suits, with gentlemen  
of your knowing, to a stranger of his quality.—  
I beseech you all, be better known to this  
gentleman; whom I commend to you as a  
noble friend of mine: How worthy he is, I  
will leave to appear hereafter, rather than  
story him in his own hearing.

*French.* Sir, we have known together in  
Orleans.

*Post.* Since when I have been debtor to  
you for courtesies, which I will be ever to  
pay, and yet pay still.

*French.* Sir, you o'er-rate my poor kind-  
ness: I was glad I did atone\*\* my country-  
men and you; it had been pity, you should  
have been put together with so mortal a pur-  
pose, as then each bore, upon importance†† of  
so slight and trivial a nature.

*Post.* By your pardon, sir, I was then a  
young traveller: rather shunn'd to go even  
with what I heard, than in my every action to  
be guided by others' experiences: but, upon  
my mended judgment, (if I offend not to say  
it is mended,) my quarrel was not altogether  
slight.

*French.* Faith, yes, to be put to the arbi-  
triment of swords; and by such two, that  
would, by all likelihood, have confounded‡‡  
one the other, or have fallen both.

*Iach.* Can we, with manners, ask what was  
the difference?

*French.* Safely, I think: 'twas a contention  
in public, which may, without contradiction,  
suffer the report. It was much like an argu-  
ment that fell out last night, where each of us  
fell in praise of our country mistresses: This  
gentleman at that time vouching, (and upon  
warrant of bloody affirmation,) his to be more  
fair, virtuous, wise, chaste, constant qualified,  
and less attemptible, than any the rarest of our  
ladies in France.

*Iach.* That lady is not now living; or this  
gentleman's opinion, by this, worn out.

*Post.* She holds her virtue still, and I my  
mind.

*Iach.* You must not so far prefer her fore-  
ours of Italy.

*Post.* Being so far provoked as I was in  
France, I would abate her nothing; though I  
profess myself her adorer, not her friend §§.

*Iach.* As fair, and as good, (a kind of hand-

\* Opportunity. † Meet me with reciprocal prayer.

§ Accomplished.

|| Forms him.

‡ Increasing in fame.

\*\* Reconcile.

†† Importunity, instigation.

¶ Praise him.

‡‡ Destroyed.

§§ Lover,—I speak of her as a being I reverence, not as a beauty whom I enjoy.

hand comparison,) had been something too fair, and too good, for any lady in Britany. If she went before others I have seen, as that diamond of yours out-lustres many I have beheld, I could not but believe she excelled many: but I have not seen the most precious diamond that is, nor you the lady.

*Post.* I praised her as I rated her: so do I my stone.

*Iach.* What do you esteem it at?

*Post.* More than the world enjoys.

*Iach.* Either your unparagoned mistress is dead, or she's out-prized by a trifle.

*Post.* You are mistaken: the one may be sold, or given; if there were wealth enough for the purchase, or merit for the gift: the other is not a thing for sale, and only the gift of the gods.

*Iach.* Which the gods have given you?

*Post.* Which, by their graces, I will keep.

*Iach.* You may wear her in title yours: but, you know, strange fowl light upon neighbouring ponds. Your ring may be stolen too; so, of your brace of unprizeable estimations, the one is but frail, and the other casual; a cunning thief, or a that way accomplished courtier, would hazard the winning both of first and last.

*Post.* Your Italy contains none so accomplished a courtier, to convince\* the honour of my mistress; if, in the holding or loss of that, you term her frail. I do nothing doubt, you have store of thieves; notwithstanding I fear not my ring.

*Phi.* Let us leave here, gentlemen.

*Post.* Sir, with all my heart. This worthy signior, I thank him, makes no stranger of me; we are familiar at first.

*Iach.* With five times so much conversation, I should get ground of your fair mistress: make her go back, even to the yielding; had I admittance, and opportunity to friend.

*Post.* No, no.

*Iach.* I dare, thereon, pawn the moiety of my estate to your ring; which, in my opinion, o'ervalues it something: But I make my wager rather against your confidence than her reputation: and to bar your offence herein too, I durst attempt it against any lady in the world.

*Post.* You are a great deal abused† in too bold a persuasion: and I doubt not of what I sustain what you're worthy of by your attempt.

*Iach.* What's that?

*Post.* A repulse: Though your attempt, as you call it, deserve more: a punishment too.

*Phi.* Gentlemen, enough of this: it came in too suddenly; let it die as it was born, and, I pray you, be better acquainted.

*Iach.* 'Would I had put my estate, and my neighbour's, on the approbation‡ of what I have spoke.

*Post.* What lady would you choose to assail?

*Iach.* Yours; whom in constancy, you think, stands so safe. I will lay you ten thousand ducats to your ring, that, commend me

to the court where your lady is, with no more advantage than the opportunity of a second conference, and I will bring from thence that honour of hers which you imagine so reserved.

*Post.* I will wage against your gold, gold to it: my ring I hold dear as my finger; 'tis part of it.

*Iach.* You are a friend, and therein the wiser. If you buy ladies' flesh at a million a dram, you cannot preserve it from tainting: But, I see, you have some religion in you, that you fear.

*Post.* This is but a custom in your tongue; you bear a graver purpose, I hope.

*Iach.* I am the master of my speeches; and would undergo what's spoken, I swear.

*Post.* Will you?—I shall but lend my diamond till your return:—Let there be covenants drawn between us: My mistress exceeds in goodness the hugeness of your unworthy thinking: I dare you to this match: here's my ring.

*Phi.* I will have it no lay.

*Iach.* By the gods it is one:—If I bring you no sufficient testimony that I have enjoyed the dearest bodily part of your mistress, my ten thousand ducats are yours; so is your diamond too. If I come off, and leave her in such honour as you have trust in, she your jewel, this your jewel, and my gold are yours:—provided I have your commendation § for my more free entertainment.

*Post.* I embrace these conditions; let us have articles betwixt us:—only, thus far you shall answer. If you make your voyage upon her, and give me directly to understand you have prevailed, I am no further your enemy, she is not worth our debate: if she remain unsexed, (you not making it appear otherwise,) for your ill opinion, and the assault you have made to her chastity, you shall answer me with your sword.

*Iach.* Your hand; a covenant: We will have these things set down by lawful counsel, and straight away for Britain; lest the bargain should catch cold, and starve; I will fetch my gold, and have our two wagers recorded.

*Post.* Agreed.

[*Exeunt* POSTHUMUS and IACHIMO.]

*French.* Will this hold, think you?

*Phi.* Signior Iachimo will not from it. Pray, let us follow 'em. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI. Britain. A Room in Cymbeline's Palace.

*Enter* Queen, Ladies, and CORNELIUS.

*Queen.* Whiles yet the dew's on ground, gather those flowers;

Make haste: who has the note of them?

1 *Lady.* I, madam.

*Queen.* Despatch.—— [*Exeunt* Ladies] Now, master doctor; have you brought those drugs?

*Cor.* Pleaseth your highness, ay: here they are, madam: [*Presenting a small Box* But I beseech your grace, (without offence;

\* Overcome.

† Deceived.

‡ Proof.

§ Recommendation

My conscience bids me ask;) wherefore you have [pounds, Commanded of me these most poisonous com- Which are the movers of a languishing death; But, though slow, deadly?

Queen. I do wonder, doctor, Thou ask'st me such a question: Have I not been [how Thy pupil long? Has thou not learn'd me To make perfumes? distil? preserve? yea, so, That our great king himself doth woo me oft For my confections? Having thus far proceeded, [meet

(Unless thou think'st me devilish,) is't not That I did amplify my judgment in Other conclusions\*? I will try the forces Of these thy compounds on such creatures as We count not worth the hanging, (but none human,)

To try the vigour of them, and apply Allayments to their act; and by them gather Their several virtues and effects.

Cor. Your highness Shall from this practice but make hard your heart:

Besides, the seeing these effects will be Both noisome and infectious.

Queen. O, content thee.—

Enter PISANIO.

Here comes a flattering rascal; upon him [Aside.

Will I first work: he's for his master, And enemy to my son.—How now, Pisanio?— Doctor, your service for this time is ended; Take your own way.

Cor. I do suspect you, madam; But you shall do no harm. [Aside.

Queen. Hark thee, a word.— [To PISANIO.

Cor. [Aside.] I do not like her. She doth think she has

Strange lingering poisons: I do know her spirit, And will not trust one of her malice with A drug of such damn'd nature: Those she has Will stupify and dull the sense awhile: Which first, perchance, she'll prove on cats and dogs;

Then afterward up higher; but there is No danger in what show of death it makes, More than the locking up the spirits a time, To be more fresh, reviving. She is fool'd With a most false effect; and I the truer, So to be false with her.

Queen. No further, service, doctor, Until I send for thee.

Cor. I humbly take my leave. [Exit.

Queen. Weeps she still, say'st thou? Dost thou think in time [enter She will not quench; and let instructions Where folly now possesses? Do thou work; When thou shalt bring me word she loves my son,

I'll tell thee, on the instant, thou art then As great as is thy master: greater; for His fortunes all lie speechless, and his name

Is at last gap: Return he cannot, nor Continue where he is: to shift his being †, Is to exchange one misery with another; And every day that comes, comes to decay A day's work in him: What shalt thou expect To be depend on a thing that leans?

Who cannot be new built? nor has no friends, [The Queen drops a Box: PISANIO takes it up.

So much as but to prop him?—Thou takest up Thou know'st not what; but take it for thy labour:

It is a thing I made, which hath the king Five times redeem'd from death: I do not know [it;

What is more cordial:—Nay, I prythee, take It is an earnest of a further good

That I mean to thee. Tell thy mistress how The case stands with her; do't, as from thyself. Think what a chance thou changest on; but think

Thou hast thy mistress still; to boot, my son, Who shall take notice of thee: I'll move the king

To any shape of thy preferment, such As thou'lt desire; and then myself, I chiefly That set thee on to this desert, am bound To load thy merit richly. Call my women: Think on my words. [Exit PISA.]—A sly and constant knave;

Not to be shaken: the agent for his master; And the remembrancer of her, to hold [that, The hand fast to her lord.—I have given him Which, if he take, shall quite unpeople her Of liegers ‡ for her sweet; and which she, after, Except she bend her humour, shall be assured

Re-enter PISANIO, and Ladies. To taste of too.—So, so;—well done, well done:

The violets, cowlips, and the primroses, Bear to my closet:—Fare thee well, Pisanio; Think on my words.

[Exit Queen and Ladies. Pis. And shall do:

But when to my good lord I prove untrue, I'll choke myself: there's all I'll do for you. [Exit.

SCENE VII. Another Room in the same.

Enter IMOGEN.

Imo. A father cruel, and a step-dame false; A foolish suitor to a wedded lady, That hath her husband banish'd;—O, that husband! [peated

My supreme crown of grief! and those re Vexations of it! Had I been thief-stolen, As my two brothers, happy! but most miserable

Is the desire that's glorious: Blessed be those, How mean so'er, that have their honest wills, Which seasons comfort.—Who may this be? Fie!

Enter PISANIO and IACHIMO.

Pis. Madam, a noble gentleman of Rome; Comes from my lord with letters.

Iach. Change you, madam?

\* Experiments. † i. e., Grow

‡ To change his abode. § Ambassadors.



The worthy Leonatus is in safety,  
And greets your highness dearly.

[Presents a Letter.

*Imo.* Thanks, good sir :  
You are kindly welcome.

*Iach.* All of her, that is out of door, most rich ! [Aside.

If she be furnish'd with a mind so rare,  
She is alone the Arabian bird ; and I  
Have lost the wager. Boldness be my friend !  
Arm me, audacity, from head to foot !  
Or, like the Parthian, I shall flying fight ;  
Rather, directly fly.

*Imo* [Reads].—*He is one of the noblest  
note, to whose kindnesses I am most infi-  
nitely tied. Reflect upon him accordingly,  
as you value your truest*

LEONATUS.

So far I read aloud :

But even the very middle of my heart  
Is warm'd by the rest, and takes it thankfully.  
You are as welcome, worthy sir, as I  
Have words to bid you ; and shall find it so,  
In all that I can do.

*Iach.* Thanks, fairest lady.—  
What! are men mad? Hath nature given them  
eyes

To see this vaulted arch, and the rich crop  
Of sea and land, which can distinguish 'twixt  
The fiery orbs above, and the twinn'd stones  
Upon the number'd beach? and can we not  
Partition make with spectacles so precious  
'Twixt fair and foul?

*Imo.* What makes your admiration?

*Iach.* It cannot be i'the eye; for apes and  
monkeys, [and

'Twixt two such shes, would chatter this way,  
Contemn with mows\* the other : Nor i'the  
judgment ;

For idiots, in this case of favour, would  
Be wisely definite : Nor i'the appetite ;  
Sluttery, to such neat excellence opposed,  
Should make desire vomit emptiness,  
Not so allured to feed.

*Imo.* What is the matter, trow?

*Iach.* The cloyed will,  
(That satiate yet unsatisfied desire,

That tub both fill'd and running,) ravening first  
The lamb, longs after for the garbage.

*Imo.* What, dear sir,  
Thus raps you? Are you well?

*Iach.* Thanks, madam; well:—Beseech,  
yon, sir, desire [To PISANTO.

My man's abode where I did leave him: he  
Is strange and peevish.

*Pis.* I was going, sir,  
To give him welcome. [Exit PISANTO.

*Imo.* Continues well my lord? His health,

*Iach.* Well, madam. [Beseech you?

*Imo.* Is he disposed to mirth? I hope, he is.

*Iach.* Exceeding pleasant; none a stranger  
there

So merry and so gamesome; he is called  
The Briton reveller.

*Imo.* When he was here

He did incline to sadness; and oft-times  
Not knowing why.

*Iach.* I never saw him sad  
There is a Frenchman his companion, one  
An eminent monsieur, that, it seems, much  
A Gallian girl at home: he furnaces [loves  
The thick sighs from him; whiles the jolly  
Briton [cries, O!

(Your lord, I mean,) laughs from's free lungs,  
Can my sides hold, to think, that man,—  
who knows

By history, report, or his own proof,  
What woman is, yea, what she cannot choose  
But must be,—will his free hours languish  
Assured bondage? [for

*Imo.* Will my lord say so?

*Iach.* Ay, madam; with his eyes in flood  
It is a recreation to be by, [with laughter.  
And hear him mock the Frenchman: But,  
heavens know,

Some men are much to blame.

*Imo.* Not he, I hope.

*Iach.* Not he; But yet heaven's bounty  
towards him might

Be used more thankfully. In himself, 'tis  
much [lents,—

In you,—which I count his, beyond all ta  
Whilst I am bound to wonder, I am bound  
To pity too.

*Imo.* What do you pity, sir?

*Iach.* Two creatures, heartily.

*Imo.* Am I one, sir?

You look on me; What wreck discern you in  
Deserves your pity? [me,

*Iach.* Lamentable! What!

To hide me from the radiant sun, and solace  
I'the dungeon by a snuff?

*Imo.* I pray you, sir,

Deliver with more openness your answers  
To my demands. Why do you pity me?

*Iach.* That others do,  
I was about to say, enjoy your—But  
It is an office of the gods to 'venge it,  
Not mine to speak on't.

*Imo.* You do seem to know  
Something of me, or what concerns me; 'Pray  
you,

(Since doubting things go ill, often hurts more  
Than to be sure they do: For certainties  
Either are past remedies; or, timely knowing,  
The remedy then born,) discover to me  
What both you spur and stop.

*Iach.* Had I this cheek  
To bathe my lips upon; this hand, whose  
touch, [soul

Whose every touch would force the feeler's  
To the oath of loyalty; this object, which  
Takes prisoner the wild motion of mine eye,  
Fixing it only here: should I (damn'd then,)  
Slaver with lips as common as the stairs  
That mount the Capitol; join gripes with hands  
Made hard with hourly falsehood (falsehood, as  
With labour;) then lie peeping in an eye,  
Base and unlustring as the smoky light  
That's fed with stinking tallow; it were fit,

• Making months.

Shy and foolish.

† What you seem anxious to utter, and yet withhold.

That all the plagues of hell should at one time  
Encounter such revolt.

*Imo.* My lord, I fear,  
Has forgot Britain.

*Iach.* And himself. Not I,  
Inclined to this intelligence, pronounce  
The beggary of his change; but 'tis your graces  
That, from my muteest conscience, to my  
Charms this report out. [tongue,

*Imo.* Let me hear no more.  
*Iach.* O dearest soul! your cause doth strike  
my heart

With pity, that, doth make me sick. A lady,  
So fair, and fasten'd to an empery\*, [partner'd  
Would make the great'st king double to be  
With tomboyst, hired with that self-exhibi-  
tion]. [ventures,

Which your own coffers yield I with diseased  
That play with all infirmities for gold [stuff,  
Which rottenness can lend nature! such boil'd  
As well might poison poison! Be revenged;  
Or she, that bore you, was no queen, and you  
Recoil from your great stock.

*Imo.* Revenged!  
How should I be revenged? If this be true,  
(As I have such a heart, that both mine ears  
Must not in haste abuse,) if it be true,  
How should I be revenged?

*Iach.* Should he make me  
Live like Diana's priest, betwix cold sheets;  
Whiles he is vaulting variable ramps, [it.  
In your despite, upon your purse? Revenge  
I dedicate myself to your sweet pleasure;  
More noble than that runagate to your bed;  
And will continue fast to your affection,  
Still close, as sure.

*Imo.* What ho, Pisanio!  
*Iach.* Let me my service tender on your lips.  
*Imo.* Away!—I do condemn mine ears, that  
have [able,

So long attended thee.—If thou wert honour-  
Thou wouldst have told this tale for virtue,  
not [strange.

For such an end thou seek'st; as base as  
Thou wrongst a gentleman, who is as far  
From thy report, as thou from honour; and  
Solicit'st here a lady that disdains  
Thee and the devil alike.—What ho, Pisanio!—  
The king my father shall be made acquainted  
Of thy assault: if he shall think it fit,  
A saucy stranger, in his court, to mart  
As in a Roush stew, and to expound  
His beastly mind to us; he hath a court  
He little cares for, and a daughter whom  
He not respects at all.—What ho, Pisanio!—

*Iach.* O happy Leonatus! I may say;  
The credit, that thy lady hath of thee, [ness  
Deserves thy trust; and thy most perfect good-  
Her assured credit!—Blessed live you long!  
A lady to the worthiest sir, that ever  
Country call'd his! and you his mistress, only  
For the most worthiest fit! Give me your  
pardon.

I have spoke this, to know if your affianced  
Were deeply rooted; and shall make your lord,  
That which he is, new o'er: And he is one  
The truest manner'd; such a holy witch,  
That he enchants societies unto him:  
Half all men's hearts are his.

*Imo.* You make amends.

*Iach.* He sits 'mongst men, like a descended  
He hath a kind of honour sets him off, [god:  
More than a mortal seeming. Be not angry,  
Most mighty princess, that I have adventured  
To try your taking of a false report; which  
hath [ment

Honour'd with confirmation your great judg-  
In the election of a sir so rare,  
Which you know, cannot err: The love I bear  
him [you,

Made me to fanſy you thus; but the gods made  
Unlike all others, chaffless. Pray, your par-  
don, [court for yours.

*Imo.* All's well, sir: Take my power i'the  
*Iach.* My humble thanks. I had almost  
forgot

To entreat your grace but in a small request,  
And yet of moment too, for it concerns  
Your lord; myself, and other noble friends,  
Are partners in the business.

*Imo.* Pray, what is't?

*Iach.* Some dozen Romans of us, and your  
lord, [stems,  
(The best feather of our wing) have mingled  
To buy a present for the emperor;  
Which I, the factor for the rest, have done  
In France: 'Tis plate, of rare device; and  
jewels,

Of rich and exquisite form; their values great;  
And I am something curious, being strange||,  
To have them in safe stowage; May it please  
To take them in protection? [you

*Imo.* Willingly;  
And pawn mine honour for their safety: since  
My lord hath interest in them, I will keep them  
In my bed-chamber.

*Iach.* They are in a trunk,  
Attended by my men: I will make bold  
To send them to you, only for this night;  
I must aboard to-morrow.

*Imo.* O, no, no.

*Iach.* Yes, I beseech; or I shall short my  
Bylength'ning my return. From Gallia [word,  
I cross'd the seas on purpose, and on promise  
To see your grace.

*Imo.* I thank you for your pains;  
But not away to-morrow?

*Iach.* O, I must, madam:  
Therefore, I shall beseech you, if you please  
To greet your lord with writing, do't to-night:  
I have outstood my time; which is material  
To the tender of our present.

*Imo.* I will write.  
Send your trunk to me; it shall safe be kept,  
And truly yielded you: You are very wel-  
come. [Exeunt

\* Sovereign command.

† Wantons.

‡ Allowance, pension.

§ To fan, is to winnow.

|| A stranger.

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *Court before Cymbeline's Palace.**Enter CLOTEN, and Two Lords.*

*Clo.* Was there ever man had such luck! when I kissed the jack upon an up-cast \*, to be hit away! I had a hundred pound on't: And then a whoreson jackanapes must take me up for swearing; as if I borrowed mine oaths of him, and might not spend them at my pleasure.

1 *Lord.* What got he by that? You have broke his pate with your bowl.

2 *Lord.* If his wit had been like him that broke it, it would have ran all out. [*Aside.*

*Clo.* When a gentleman is disposed to swear, it is not for any standers-by to curtail his oaths: Ha?

2 *Lord.* No, my lord; nor [*Aside.*] crop the ears of them.

*Clo.* Whoreson dog!—I give him satisfaction? 'Would, he had been one of my rank!

2 *Lord.* To have smelt like a fool. [*Aside.*

*Clo.* I am not more vexed at any thing in the earth,—A pox on't! I had rather not be so noble as I am; they dare not fight with me, because of the queen my mother: every jack-slave hath his belly full of fighting, and I must go up and down like a cock that nobody can match.

2 *Lord.* You are a cock and capon too; and you crow, cock, with your comb on. [*Aside.*

*Clo.* Sayest thou?

1 *Lord.* It is not fit, your lordship should undertake every companion† that you give offence to.

*Clo.* No, I know that: but it is fit, I should commit offence to my inferiors.

2 *Lord.* Ay, it is fit for your lordship only.

*Clo.* Why, so I say.

1 *Lord.* Do you hear of a stranger, that's come to court to-night?

*Clo.* A stranger! and I know not on't!

2 *Lord.* He's a strange fellow himself, and knows it not. [*Aside.*

1 *Lord.* There's an Italian come; and, 'tis thought, one of Leonatus' friends.

*Clo.* Leonatus! a banished rascal; and he's another, whatsoever he be. Who told you of this stranger?

1 *Lord.* One of your lordship's pages.

*Clo.* Is it fit I went to look upon him? Is there no derogation in't?

1 *Lord.* You cannot derogate‡, my lord.

*Clo.* Not easily, I think.

2 *Lord.* You are a fool granted; therefore your issues being foolish, do not derogate.

[*Aside.*

*Clo.* Come, I'll go see this Italian: What I have lost to-day at bowls, I'll win to-night of him. Come, go.

2 *Lord.* I'll attend your lordship.

[*Exeunt CLOTEN and first Lord.*

That such a crafty devil as is his mother Should yield the world this ass! a woman, that Bears all down with her brain; and this her son Cannot take two from twenty for his heart, And leave eighteen. Alas, poor princess, Thou divine Imogen, what thou endurest! Betwixt a father by thy step-dame govern'd; A mother hourly coining plots; a wooer, More hateful than the foul expulsion is Of thy dear husband, than that horrid act Of the divorce he'd make! The heavens hold firm

The walls of thy dear honour; keep unshaked That temple, thy fair mind; that thou may'st stand,

To enjoy thy banish'd lord, and this great land! [*Exit.*

SCENE II. *A Bed-chamber; in one Part of it a Trunk.*

IMOGEN reading in her Bed; a Lady attending.

*Imo.* Who's there? my woman Helen?

*Lady.* Please you, madam.

*Imo.* What hour is it?

*Lady.* Almost midnight, madam.

*Imo.* I have read three hours then: mine eyes are weak:—

Fold down the leaf where I have left: To-bed: Take not away the taper, leave it burning; And if thou canst awake by four o'clock, I pr'ythee, call me. Sleep hath seized me wholly. [*Exit Lady.*

To your protection I commend me, gods! From fairies, and the tempters of the night, Guard me, beseech ye!

[*Sleeps.* IACHIMO, from the Trunk.

*Iach.* The crickets sing, and man's o'er labour'd sense

Repairs itself by rest: Our Tarquin thus Did softly press the rushes§ ere he waken'd The chastity he wounded.—Cytherea, [lily! How bravely thou becomest thy bed! fresh And whiter than the sheets! That I might touch!

But kiss; one kiss!—Rubies unparagon'd, How dearly they do't!—'Tis her breathing that Perfumes the chamber thus: The flame o'the taper [lids,

Bows toward her; and would under peep her To see the enclosed lights, now canopied Under these windows: White and azure, laced [design?

With blue of heaven's own tinct||.—But my To note the chamber:—I will write all down. Such and such pictures:—There the window:

Such

The adornment of her bed:—The arras¶ figures,

\* He is describing his fate at bowls, the jack is the small bowl at which the others are aimed  
Fellow. † i. e., Degrade yourself. § It was anciently the custom to strew chambers  
with rushes. || i. e., The white skin laced with blue veins. ¶ Tapestry.



Why, such and such:—And the contents  
o' the story,—

Ah, but some natural notes about her body,  
Above ten thousand meaner moveables  
Would testify, to enrich mine inventory:  
O sleep, thou ape of death, lie dull upon her!  
And be her sense but as a monument,  
Thus in a chapel lying!—Come off, come  
off;— [*Taking off her Bracelet.*]

As slippery as the Gordian knot was hard!  
'Tis mine; and this will witness outwardly,  
As strongly as the conscience does within,  
To the madding of her lord. On her left breast  
A mole cinque-spotted, like the crimson drops  
I the bottom of a cowslip: Here's a voucher  
Stronger than ever law could make: this secret  
Will force him think I have pick'd the lock,  
and ta'en [what end?]

The treasure of her honour. No more.—To  
Why should I write this down, that's rivetted,  
Screw'd to my memory? She hath been read-  
ing late [down,

The tale of Terens; here the leaf's turn'd  
Where Philomel gave up;—I have enough:  
To the trunk again, and shut the spring of it.  
Swift, swift, you dragons of the night!—that  
dawning

May bare the raven's eye: I lodge in fear;  
Though this a heavenly angel, hell is here.

[*Clock strikes.*  
One, two, three,—Time, time!

[*Goes into the Trunk. The Scene crosses.*]

SCENE III. An Ante-Chamber adjoining  
Imogen's Apartment.

*Enter CLOTEN and Lords.*

1 Lord. Your lordship is the most patient  
man in loss, the most coldest that ever turn'd  
up ace.

Clo. It would make any man cold to lose.

1 Lord. But not every man patient, after  
the noble temper of your lordship; You are  
most hot and furious when you win.

Clo. Winning would put any man into cou-  
rage: If I could get this foolish Imogen, I  
should have gold enough: It's almost morn-  
ing, is't not?

1 Lord. Day, my lord.

Clo. I would this music would come: I am  
advised to give her music o' mornings; they  
say, it will penetrate.

*Enter Musicians.*

Come on; tune: If you can penetrate her with  
your fingering, so; we'll try with tongue too:  
if none will do, let her remain; but I'll never  
give o'er. First, a very excellent good-con-  
ceited thing; after, a wonderful sweet air,  
with admirable rich words to it,—and then let  
her consider.

SONG.

Hark! hark! the lark at heaven's gate  
And Phœbus' gins arise, [*sings,*  
His steeds to water at those springs  
On chaliced flowers that lies;

And winking Mary-buds begin  
To ope their golden eyes;  
With every thing that pretty bin:  
My lady sweet, arise;  
Arise, arise.

So, get you gone: If this penetrate, I will  
consider your music the better: if it do not,  
it is a vice in her ears, which horse hairs, and  
cats'-guts, nor the voice of unpaved eunuch to  
boot, can never amend. [*Exeunt Musicians.*]

*Enter CYMBELINE and Queen.*

2 Lord. Here comes the king.

Clo. I am glad I was up so late: for that's  
the reason I was up so early: He cannot  
choose but take this service I have done, fa-  
therly.—Good morrow to your majesty, and  
to my gracious mother.

Cym. Attend you here the door of our stern  
Will she not forth? [*daughter?*]

Clo. I have assailed her with music, but she  
vouchsafes no notice.

Cym. The exile of her minion is too new;  
She hath not yet forgot him: some more time  
Must wear the print of his remembrance out,  
And then she's yours.

Queen. You are most bound to the king;  
Who let's go by no vantages, that may  
Prefer you to his daughter: Frame yourself  
To orderly sollicit; and be friended  
With aptness of the season: make denials  
Increase your services: so seem, as if  
You were inspired to do those duties which  
You tender to her; that you in all obey her,  
Save when command to your dismission tends,  
And therein you are senseless.

Clo. Senseless? not so,

*Enter a Messenger.*

Mess. So like you, sir, ambassadors from  
The one is Caius Lucius. [*Rome;*

Cym. A worthy fellow,  
Albeit he comes on angry purpose now;  
But that's no fault of his: We must receive  
According to the honour of his sender; [him  
And towards himself his goodness forespent  
on us

We must extend our notice.—Our dear son,  
When you have given good morning to your  
mistress,

Attend the queen and us; we shall have need  
To employ you towards this Roman.—Come,  
our queen.

[*Exeunt Cym., Queen, Lords, and Mess.*]

Clo. If she be up, I'll speak with her; if not,  
Let her lie still, and dream.—By your leave  
ho!— [*Knocks.*

I know her women are about her; What  
If I do line one of their hands? 'Tis gold  
Which buys admittance; oft it doth; yea, and  
makes

Diana's rangers false themselves, yield up  
Their deer to the stand of the stealer; and 'tis  
gold [*the thief:*

Which makes the true man kill'd, and saves  
Nay, sometime, hangs both thief and true  
man: What

\* Cups. † Will pay you more for it. ‡ With solicitations not only proper but  
well-timed.

Can it not do, and undo? I will make  
One of her women lawyer to me; for  
I yet not understand the case myself.  
By your leave.

[Knocks.

*Enter a Lady.*

*Lady.* Who's there that knocks?

*Clo.* A gentleman.

*Lady.* No more?

*Clo.* Yes, and a gentlewoman's son.

*Lady.* That's more

Than some, whose tailors are as dear as yours,  
Can justly boast of: What's your lordship's  
pleasure?

*Clo.* Your lady's person: Is she ready?

*Lady.* Ay,

To keep her chamber.

*Clo.* There's gold for you; sell me your  
good report.

[of you]

*Lady.* How! my good name? or to report  
What I shall think is good?—The princess—

*Enter IMOGEN.*

*Clo.* Good morrow, fairest sister: Your  
sweet hand.

[much pains]

*Imo.* Good morrow, sir: You lay out too  
For purchasing but trouble: the thanks I give  
Is telling you that I am poor of thanks,  
And scarce can spare them.

*Clo.* Still I swear I love you. [with me:

*Imo.* If you but said so, 'twere as deep  
If you swear still, your recompense is still  
That I regard it not.

*Clo.* This is no answer.

*Imo.* But that you shall not say I yield,  
being silent,

[i'faith,

I would not speak. I pray you, spare me:  
I shall unfold equal discourtesy

[ing]

To your best kindness; one of your great know-  
Should learn, being taught, forbearance.

*Clo.* To leave you in your madness, 'twere  
I will not.

[my sin:

*Imo.* Fools are not mad folks.

*Clo.* Do you call me fool?

*Imo.* As I am mad, I do:

If you'll be patient, I'll no more be mad;  
That cures us both. I am much sorry, sir,

You put me to forget a lady's manners,  
By being so verbal\*: and learn now, for all,

That I, which know my heart, do here pro-  
nounce,

By the very truth of it, I care not for you;  
And am so near the lack of charity,

[rather]

(To accuse myself) I hate you: which I had  
You felt, than make't my boast.

*Clo.* You sin against

Obedience, which you owe your father. For  
The contract you pretend with that base wretch

(One, bred of alms, and foster'd with cold  
dishes,

[none:

With scraps o'the court,) it is no contract.  
And though it be allow'd in meaner parties,

(Yet who, than he, more mean?) to knit their  
souls

(On whom there is no more dependency  
Put brats and beggary) in self-figured knot †;

Yet you are curb'd from that enlargement by

The consequence o'the crown: and must not  
soil

The precious note of it with a base slave,  
A hilding ‡ for a livery, a squire's cloth,  
A pantler, not so eminent.

*Imo.*

Profane fellow!

Wert thou the son of Jupiter, and no more,  
But what thou art, besides, thou wert too base  
To be his groom: thou wert dignified enough,  
Even to the point of envy, if 'twere made  
Comparative for your virtues, to be styled  
The under-hangman of his kingdom; and hated  
For being preferr'd so well.

*Clo.*

The south-fog rot him!

*Imo.* He never can meet more mischance,  
than come

[ment,

To be but named of thee. His meanest gar-  
That ever hath but clipp'd his body is dearer

In my respect, than all the hairs above thee,  
Were they all made such men.—How now,  
Pisanio?

*Enter PISANIO.*

*Clo.* His garment? Now, the devil—

*Imo.* To Dorothy my woman bid thee pre-

*Clo.* His garment? [sently:—

*Imo.* I am sprighted § with a fool;

Frighted, and anger'd worse:—Go, bid my  
Search for a jewel, that too casually [woman

Hath left mine arm; it was thy master's: shrew  
If I would lose it for a revenue

[me,

Of any king's in Europe. I do think  
I saw't this morning: confident I am

Last night 'twas on mine arm; I kiss'd it: I  
hope it be not gone to tell my lord

That I kiss aught but he.

*Pis.*

'Twill not be lost.

*Imo.* I hope so: go, and search. [Exit Pis.

*Clo.* You have abused me:—

His meanest garment?

*Imo.*

Ay; I said so, sir.

If you will make't an action, call witness to't.

*Clo.* I will inform your father.

*Imo.*

Your mother too:

She's my good lady; and will conceive, I hope  
But the worst of me. So I leave you, sir,

To the worst of discontent. [Exit.

*Clo.*

I'll be revenged:—

His meanest garment?—Well. [Exit.

SCENE IV. Rome. An Apartment in  
Philario's House.

*Enter POSTHUMUS and PHILARIO.*

*Post.* Fear it not, sir: I would I were so  
sure

To win the king, as I am bold, her honour  
Will remain hers.

*Phi.* What means do you make to him?

*Post.* Not any; but abide the change of  
time;

Quake in the present winter's state, and wish  
That warmer days would come: In these fear'd

I barely gratify your love; they failing, [hopes,  
I must die much your debtor.

*Phi.* Your very goodness, and your com-  
pany,

\* So verbose, so full of talk. † In knots of their own tying.  
wear a livery.

‡ A low fellow, only fit to

§ Haunted.

O'er pays all I can do. By this, your king  
Hath heard of great Augustus : Caius Lucius  
Will do his commission throughly : And, I  
think,  
He'll grant the tribute, send the arrearsages,  
Or look upon our Romans, whose remem-  
Is yet fresh in their grief. [brance

*Post.* I do believe,  
(Statist\* though I am none, nor like to be,)  
That this will prove a war ; and you shall hear  
The legions, now in Gallia, sooner landed  
In our, not-fearing Britain, than have tidings  
Of any penny tribute paid. Our countrymen  
Are men more order'd than when Julius Cæsar  
Smiled at their lack of skill, but found their  
courage

Worthy his frowning at : Their discipline  
(Now mingled with their courages) will make  
known

To their approvers†, they are people such  
That mend upon the world.

*Enter IACHIMO.*

*Phi.* See! Iachimo?

*Post.* The swiftest harts have posted you by  
land :

And winds of all the corners kiss'd your sails,  
To make your vessel nimble.

*Phi.* Welcome, sir.

*Post.* I hope the briefness of your answer  
The speediness of your return. [made

*Iach.* Your lady

Is one the fairest that I have look'd upon.

*Post.* And, therewithal, the best ; or let her  
beauty

Look through a casement to allure false hearts,  
And be false with them.

*Iach.* Here are letters for you.

*Post.* Their tenour good, I trust.

*Iach.* 'Tis very like.

*Phi.* Was Caius Lucius in the Britain court,  
When you were there?

*Iach.* He was expected then,  
But not approach'd.

*Post.* All is well yet.—

Sparkles this stone as it was wont? or is't not  
Too dull for your good wearing?

*Iach.* If I have lost it,  
I should have lost the worth of it in gold.

I'll make a journey twice as far, to enjoy  
A second night of such sweet shortness, which  
Was mine in Britain; for the ring is won.

*Post.* The stone's too hard to come by.

*Iach.* Not a whit,  
Your lady being so easy.

*Post.* Make not, sir,  
Your loss your sport: I hope you know that  
Must not continue friends. [we

*Iach.* Good sir, we must,

If you keep covenant: Had I not brought  
The knowledge of your mistress home, I grant  
We were to question further: but I now  
Profess myself the winner of her honour,  
Together with your ring: and not the wronger  
Of her, or you, having proceeded but  
By both your wills.

*Post.*

If you can make't apparent  
That you have tasted her in bed, my hand,  
And ring, is yours; if not, the foul opinion  
You had of her pure honour, gains, or loses,  
Your sword, or mine; or masterless leaves both  
To who shall find them.

*Iach.*

Sir, my circumstances,  
Being so near the truth, as I will make them,  
Must first induce you to believe: whose  
strength

I will confirm with oath; which I doubt not,  
You'll give me leave to spare, when you shall  
You need it not. [find

*Post.* Proceed.

*Iach.*

First, her bed-chamber  
(Where, I confess, I slept not; but, profess,  
Had that was well worth watching,) It was  
hang'd

With tapestry of silk and silver: the story  
Proud Cleopatra, when she met her Roman,  
And Cydnus swell'd above the banks, or for  
The press of boats, or pride: A piece of work  
So bravely done, so rich, that it did strive  
In workmanship and value; which I won—  
Could be so rarely and exactly wrought, [der'd  
Since the true life on't was—

*Post.*

This is true,  
And this you might have heard of here, by me,  
Or by some other.

*Iach.*

More particulars

Must justify my knowledge.

*Post.*

So they must,  
Or do your honour injury.

*Iach.*

The chimney  
Is south the chamber; and the chimney-  
piece,

Chaste Dian bathing: never saw I figures  
So likely to report themselves; the cutter  
Was as another nature, dumb; outwent her,  
Motion and breath left out.

*Post.*

This is a thing  
Which you might from relation likewise reap;  
Being, as it is, much spoke of.

*Iach.*

The roof o'the chamber  
With golden cherubims is fretted: her andi-  
rons†

(I had forgot them,) were two winking cupids  
Of silver, each on one foot standing, nicely  
Depending on their brands§.

*Post.*

This is her honour!  
Let it be granted you have seen all this, (and  
praise

[tion  
Be given to your remembrance,) the descrip-  
Of what is in her chamber, nothing saves  
The wager you have laid.

*Iach.*

Then if you can,  
[Pulling out the Bracelet.  
Be pale; I beg but leave to air this jewel:

See!—

And now 'tis up again: it must be married  
To that your diamond; I'll keep them.

*Post.*

Jove!—  
Once more let me behold it; is it that  
Which I left with her?

*Iach.*

Sir, (I thank her,) that:

\* Statesman.

† To those who try them.

‡ Ornamented iron bars which

support wood burnt in chimneys.

§ Torches in the hands of cupids.



She stripp'd it from her arm; I see her yet;  
Her pretty action did outsell her gift, [said,  
And yet enrich'd it too: She gave it me, and  
She prized it once.

*Post.* May be, she pluck'd it off,  
To send it me.

*Iach.* She writes so to you; doth she?

*Post.* O no, no, no; 'tis true. Here, take  
this too; [Gives the Ring.

It is a basilisk unto mine eye,  
Kills me to look on't.—Let there be no honour,  
Where there is beauty; truth, where sem-  
blance; love, [women  
Where there's another man. The vows of  
Of no more bondage be, to where they are made,  
Than they are to their virtues; which is no-  
O, above measure false! thing:

*Phi.* Have patience, sir,  
And take your ring again: 'tis not yet won;  
It may be probable she lost it; or,  
Who knows if one of her women, being cor-  
Hath stolen it from her. [rupted,

*Post.* Very true;  
And so, I hope, he came by't;—Back my ring;  
Render to me some corporal sign about her,  
More evident than this; for this was stolen.

*Iach.* By Jupiter, I had it from her arm.

*Post.* Hark you, he swears; by Jupiter, he  
swears. [sure,  
'Tis true;—nay, keep the ring—'tis true: I am  
She would not lose it: her attendants are  
All sworn and honourable:—They induced to  
steal it!

And by a stranger?—No, he hath enjoy'd her:  
The cognizance\* of her incontinency [dearly.  
Is this—she hath bought the name of whore thus  
There, take thy hire: and all the fiends of hell  
Divide themselves between you!

*Phi.* Sir, be patient:  
This is not strong enough to be believed  
Of one persuaded well of—

*Post.* Never talk on't;  
She hath been colted by him.

*Iach.* If you seek  
For further satisfying, under her breast  
(Worthy the pressing) lies a mole, right proud  
Of that most delicate lodging. By my life,  
I kiss'd it; and it gave me present hunger  
To feed again, though full. You do remember  
This stain upon her?

*Post.* Ay, and it doth confirm  
Another stain, as big as hell can hold,  
Were there no more but it.

*Iach.* Will you hear more?

*Post.* Spare your arithmetic; never count  
(Once, and a million! [the turns;

*Iach.* I'll be sworn,—

*Post.*

No swearing.

If you will swear you have not done't, you lie;  
And I will kill thee, if thou dost deny  
Thou hast made me a cuckold.

*Iach.* I will deny nothing.

*Post.* O, that I had her here, to tear her  
limb-meal!

I will go there, and do't; i'the court; before  
Her father:—I'll do something— [Exit.

*Phi.* Quite besides

The government of patience!—You have won:  
Let's follow him, and pervert the present wrath  
He hath against himself.

*Iach.* With all my heart.

[Exit.

SCENE V. *The same. Another Room in  
the same.*

*Enter POSTHUMUS.*

*Post.* Is there no way for men to be, but  
women

Must be half-workers? We are bastards all;  
And that most venerable man which I  
Did call my father, was I know not where  
When I was stamp'd; some coiner with his  
tools

Made me a counterfeit: yet my mother seem'd  
The Dian of that time; so doth my wife [geancel  
The nonpareil of this.—O vengeance, ven-  
Me of my lawful pleasure she restrain'd,  
And pray'd me, oft, forbearance: did it with  
A pendency† so rosy, the sweet view on't  
Might well have warm'd old Saturn; that I  
thought her [devils!—

As chaste as unsunned snow.—O, all the  
This yellow Iachimo, in an hour,—was't not?  
Or less,—at first: Perchance he spoke not; but,  
Like a full-acorn'd boar, a German one,

Cry'd, *oh!* and mounted: found no opposition  
But what he look'd for should oppose, and she  
Should from encounter guard. Could I find out  
The woman's part in me! For there's no motion  
That tends to vice in man, but I affirm

It is the woman's part: Be it lying, note it  
The woman's; flattering, hers; deceiving, hers;  
Ambitions, covetings, change of prides, disdain,  
Nice longings, slanders, mutability, [knows,  
All faults that may be named, nay that hell  
Why, hers, in part, or all; but, rather, all:

For even to vice  
They are not constant, but are changing still  
One vice, but of a minute old, for one  
Not half so old as that. I'll write against them,  
Detest them, curse them:—yet 'tis greater skill  
In a true hate, to pray they have their will:  
The very devils cannot plague them better.

[Exit.

## ACT III.

SCENE I. Britain. *A Room of State in  
Cymbeline's Palace.*

*Enter CYMBELINE, Queen, CLOTEN, and  
Lords, at one Door; and at another, CAIUS  
LUCIUS, and Attendants. [with us?  
Cym.* Now say, what would Augustus Cæsar

*Luc.* When Julius Cæsar (whose remem-  
brance yet [tongues,

Lives in men's eyes; and will to ears and  
Be thine and hearing ever,) was in this Bri-  
And conquer'd it, Cassibelan, thine uncle, [tain  
(Famous in Cæsar's praises, to whit less

\* The badge, the token.

† Modesty.

Than in his feats deserving it,) for him,  
And his succession, granted Rome a tribute,  
Yearly three thousand pounds; which by thee  
Is left untender'd. [lately

*Queen.* And, to kill the marvel,  
Shall be so ever.

*Clo.* There be many Cæsars  
Ere such another Julius. Britain is  
A world by itself; and we will nothing pay  
For wearing our own noses.

*Queen.* That opportunity,  
Which then they had to take from us, to re-  
sume

We have again.—Remember, sir, my liege,  
The kings your ancestors; together with  
The natural bravery of yourisle; which stands  
As Neptune's park, ribbed and paled in  
With rocks unscaleable, and roaring waters;  
With sands, that will not bear your enemies'  
boats, [conquest

But suck them up to the top-mast. A kind of  
Cæsar made here; but made not here his brag  
(Of, came, and saw, and overcame: with shame  
The first that ever touch'd him,) he was carried  
[ping,

From off our coast, twice beaten: and his ship-  
(Poor ignorant baubles!) on our terrible seas,  
Like egg-shells moved upon their surges,  
crack'd

As easily 'gainst our rocks: for joy whereof,  
The famed Cassibelan, who was once at point  
(O giglot's fortune!) to master Cæsar's sword,  
Made Lnd's town with rejoicing fires bright,  
And Britons strut with courage.

*Clo.* Come there's no more tribute to be paid:  
Our kingdom is stronger than it was at that  
time; and, as I said, there is no more such  
Cæsars: other of them may have crooked  
noses; but, to owe such straight arms, none.

*Cym.* Son, let your mother end.

*Clo.* We have yet many among us can gripe  
as hard as Cassibelan: I do not say I am one;  
but I have a hand.—Why tribute? why  
should we pay tribute? If Cæsar can hide  
the sun from us with a blanket, or put the  
moon in his pocket, we will pay him tribute for  
light; else, sir, no more tribute, pray you now.

*Cym.* You must know,  
Till the injurious Romans did extort  
this tribute from us, we were free: Cæsar's  
ambition, [stretch

(Which swell'd so much, that it did almost  
The sides of the world,) against all colour, here  
Did put the yoke upon us; which to shake off,  
Becomes a warlike people, whom we reckon  
Ourselves to be. We do say then to Cæsar,  
Our ancestor was that Mulmutius, which  
ordain'd our laws; (whose use the sword of  
Cæsar [franchise,

Hath too much mangled; whose repair, and  
Shall, by the power we hold, be our good deed,  
Though Rome be therefore angry;) Mulmutius,  
Who was the first of Britain which did put  
His brows within a golden crown, and call'd  
Himself a king.

*Luc.* I am sorry, Cymbeline,  
That I am to pronounce Augustus Cæsar  
(Cæsar, that hath more kings his servants, than  
Thyself domestic officers,) thine enemy: [sion  
Receive it from me, then:—War and confu-  
In Cæsar's name pronounce I 'gainst thee: look  
For fury not to be resisted:—Thus defied,  
I thank thee for myself.

*Cym.* Thou art welcome, Caius.  
Thy Cæsar knighted me; my youth I spent  
Much under him; of him I gather'd honour;  
Which he, to seek of me again, perforce,  
Behoves me keep at utterance; I am perfect †,  
That the Pannonians and Dalmatians, for  
Their liberties, are now in arms: a precedent  
Which, not to read, would show the Britons  
So Cæsar shall not find them. [cold:

*Luc.* Let proof speak.

*Clo.* His majesty bids you welcome. Make  
pastime with us a day or two longer: If you  
seek us afterwards in other terms, you shall  
find us in our salt-water girdle: if you beat us  
out of it, it is yours; if you fall in the adven-  
ture, our crowns shall fare the better for you;  
and there's an end.

*Luc.* So, sir. [mine:

*Cym.* I know your master's pleasure, and he  
All the remain is, welcome. [Exeunt.

## SCENE II. Another Room in the same.

Enter PISANIO.

*Pis.* How! of adultery? Wherefore write  
you not

What monster's her accuser?—Leonatus!  
O, master! what a strange infection  
Is fallen into thy ear? What false Italian [vail'd  
(As poisonous tongued as handed) hath pre-  
On thy too ready hearing?—Disloyal? No:  
She's punish'd for her truth; and undergoes,  
More goddess-like than wife-like, such assaults  
As would take in some virtue.—O, my master  
Thy mind to her is now as low, as were  
Thy fortunes.—How! that I should murder her!  
Upon the love, and truth, and vows, which I  
Have made to thy command?—I, her?—her  
If it be so to do good service, never [blood?  
Let me be counted serviceable. How look I,  
That I should seem to lack humanity,  
So much as this fact comes to? Do't: The

letter— [Reading.  
That I have sent her, by her own command  
Shall give thee opportunity:—O damn'd  
paper! [bauble

Black as the ink that's on thee! Senseless  
Art thou a feodary || for this act, and look'st  
So virgin-like without? Lo, here she comes.

Enter IMOGEN.

I am ignorant in what I am commanded.

*Imo.* How now, Pisanio?

*Pis.* Madam, here is a letter from my lord  
*Imo.* Who? thy lord? that is my lord? Leo  
O, learn'd indeed were that astronomer, [natus  
That knew the stars as I his characters;  
He'd lay the future open.—You good gods,  
Let what is here contain'd relish of love,

\* Strumpet.

† At the extremity of defiance.

‡ Well-informed.

§ To take in a town is to conquer it.

|| Confederate.

Of my lord's health, of his content,—yet not,  
That we two are asunder, let that grieve him,—  
(Some griefs are med'cinable:) that is one of  
For it doth physic love;—of his content, [them,  
All but in that!—Good wax, thy leave:—

Bless'd be, [Lovers,  
You bees, that make these locks of counsel!  
And men in dangerous bonds pray not alike;  
Though forfeiters you cast in prison, yet  
You clasp young Cupid's tables.—Good news,  
gods! [Reads.

*Justice, and your father's wrath, should  
he take me in his dominion, could not be so  
cruel to me, as you, O the dearest of crea-  
tures, would not even renew me with your  
eyes. Take notice, that I am in Cambria,  
at Milford-Haven. What your own love  
will, out of this, advise you, follow. So, he  
wishes you all happiness, that remains loyal  
to his vow, and your, increasing in love,*

LEONATUS POSTHUMUS.

O, for a horse with wings!—Hear'st thou,  
Pisano?

He is at Milford-Haven: Read, and tell me  
How far 'tis thither: If one of mean affairs  
May plod it in a week, why may not I  
Glide thither in a day?—Then, true Pisano,  
(Who long'st, like me, to see thy lord; who  
long'st,— [long'st,—

O, let me 'bate,—but not like me:—yet  
But in a fainter kind:—O, not like me;  
For mine's beyond beyond,) say, and speak  
thick\*, [ing,

(Love's counsellor should fill the bores of hear-  
To the smothering of the sense,) how far it is  
To this same blessed Milford: And, by the way,  
Tell me how Wales was made so happy, as  
To inherit such a haven: But, first of all,  
How we may steal from hence; and, for the  
gap [going,

That we shall make in time, from our hence-  
And our return, to excuse:—but first, how get  
hence:

Why should excuse be born or e'er begot?  
We'll talk of that hereafter. Pr'ythee, speak,  
How many score of miles may we well ride  
'Twixt hour and hour?

Pis. One score 'twixt sun and sun,  
Madam, 's enough for you; and too much too.

Imo. Why, one that rode to his execution,  
man, [wagers,  
Could never go so slow: I have heard of riding  
Where horses have been nimbler than the sands  
That run i' the clock's behalf:—But this is  
foolery:—

Go, bid my woman feign a sickness; say  
She'll home to her father: and provide me,  
presently,

A riding suit; no costlier than would fit  
A franklin's† housewife.

Pis. Madam, your best consider.

Imo. I see before me, man, nor here, nor  
there,

Nor what ensues; but have a fog in them,  
That I cannot look through. Away, I pr'ythee;

Do as I bid thee: There's no more to say;  
Accessible is none but Milford way. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. Wales. A mountainous  
Country, with a Cave.

Enter BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVI  
RAGUS.

Bel. A goodly day not to keep house, with  
such [gate  
Whose roofs as low as ours! Stoop, boys: This  
Instructs you how to adore the heavens; and  
bows you

To morning's holy office: The gates of monarchy  
Are arch'd so high, that giants may jet through  
And keep their impious turbands on, without  
Good morrow to the sun.—Hail, thou fair  
heaven!

We house i' the rock, yet use thee not so hardly  
As prouder livers do.

Gui. Hail, heaven!  
Arv. Hail, heaven!

Bel. Now, for our mountain sport: Up to  
yon hill, [sider,

Your legs are young; I'll tread these flats. Con-  
When you above perceive me like a crow,  
That it is place which lessens, and sets off.  
And you may then revolve what tales I have  
told you,

Of courts, of princes, of the tricks in war:  
This service is not service, so being done,  
But being so allow'd: To apprehend thus,  
Draws us a profit from all things we see:  
And often, to our comfort, shall we find  
The sharded beetle in a safer hold  
Than is the full-wing'd eagle. O, this life  
Is nobler, than attending for a check;  
Richer, than doing nothing for a babe;  
Prouder, than rustling in unpaid-for silk:  
Such gain the cap of him, that makes them fine  
Yet keeps his book uncross'd: no life to ours||

Gui. Out of your proof you speak: we, poor  
unfledged, [know not

Have never wing'd from view o' the nest; nor  
What air's from home. Haply, this life is best.  
If quiet life be best; sweeter to you, [ing  
That have a sharper known; well correspond-  
With your stiff age; but, unto us, it is  
A cell of ignorance; travelling abed;  
A prison for a debtor, that not dares  
To stride a limit¶

Arv. What should we speak of,  
When we are old as you? when we shall hear  
The rain and wind beat dark December, how  
In this our pinching cave, shall we discourse  
The freezing hours away? We have seen  
nothing:

We are beastly; subtle as the fox, for prey;  
Like warlike as the wolf, for what we eat:  
Our valour is, to chase what flies; our cage  
We make a quire, as doth the prison bird,  
And sing our bondage freely.

Bel. How you speak  
Did you but know the city's usuries,  
And felt them knowingly: the art o' the court  
As hard to leave, as keep; whose top to climb

Crowd one word on another, as fast as possible. + A freeholder. † Strut, walk proudly  
‡ Scaly-winged || i. e., Compared with ours. ¶ To overpass his bound.



Is certain falling, or so slippery, that  
The fear's as bad as falling; the toil of the war,  
A pain that only seems to seek out danger  
I' the name of fame and honour; which dies  
I' the search;

And bath as oft a slanderous epitaph,  
As record of fair act; nay, many times,  
Doth ill deserve by doing well; what's worse,  
Must court'sy at the censure:—O, boys, this  
story

The world may read in me: My body's mark'd  
With Roman swords: and my report was once  
First with the best of note: Cymbeline loved  
me;

And when a soldier was the theme, my name  
Was not far off: Then was I as a tree,  
Whose boughs did bend with fruit: but in one  
night,

A storm, or robbery, call it what you will,  
Shook down my mellow hangings, nay, my  
And left me bare to weather. [leaves,

Gui. Uncertain favour!

Bel. My fault being nothing (as I have told  
you oft,) [vail'd

But that two villains, whose false oaths pre-  
Before my perfect honour, swore to Cymbeline,  
I was confederate with the Romans: so, [years,  
Follow'd my banishment; and, this twenty  
This rock, and these demesnes, have been my  
world:

Where I have lived at honest freedom; paid  
More pious debts to heaven, than in all [tains;  
The fore-end of my time.—But, up to the moun-  
This is not hunters' language:—He, that strikes  
The venison first, shall be the lord o' the feast;  
To him the other two shall minister;

And we will fear no poison, which attends  
In place of greater state. I'll meet you in the  
valleys. [Exeunt Gui. and Arv.

How hard it is, to hide the sparks of nature!  
These boys know little they are sons to the  
king;

Nor Cymbeline dreams that they are alive.  
They think they are mine: and, though train'd  
up thus meanly [do hit

I' the cave, wherein they bow, their thoughts  
The roofs of palaces; and nature prompts them,  
In simple and low things to prance it, much  
Beyond the trick of others. This Polydore,—  
The heir of Cymbeline and Britain, whom

The king his father call'd Guiderius,—Jove!  
When on thy three foot stool I sit, and tell!

The warlike feats I have done, his spirits fly out  
Into my story: say,—Thus mine enemy fell;  
And thus I set my foot on his neck; even then  
The princely blood flows in his cheek, he sweats,  
Strains his young nerves, and puts him-self in  
posture [Cadwal,

That acts my words. The younger brother,  
(Once, Arvirágus,) in as like a figure, [more  
Strikes life into my speech, and shows much  
His own conceiving. Hark! the game is  
roused!— [knows,

O Cymbeline! heaven, and my conscience  
Thou didst unjustly banish me: whereon,  
At three, and two years old, I stole these babes;

Thinking to bar thee of succession, as  
Thou rest'st me of my lands. Enurphile,  
Thou wast their nurse; they took thee for their  
mother,

And every day do honour to her grave:  
Myself, Belarius, that am Morgan call'd,  
They take for natural father. The game is up.  
[Exit.

#### SCENE IV. Near Milford-Haven.

Enter PISANIO and IMOGEN.

Imo. Thou told'st me when we came from  
horse, the place [so

Was near at hand:—Ne'er long'd my mother  
To see me first, as I have now:—Pisanio! man!  
Where is Posthumus? What is in thy mind,  
That makes thee stare thus? Wherefore breaks  
that sigh [thus,

From the inward of thee? One, but painted  
Would be interpreted a thing perplex'd  
Beyond self-explication: Put thyself

Into a haviour\* of less fear, ere wildness  
Vanquish my staid senses. What's the matter?  
Why tender'st thou that paper to me, with  
A look untender? If it be summer news,  
Smile to't before: if winterly, thou need'st  
But keep that countenance still.—My husband's  
hand!

That drug-damp'd Italy hath out-craftied him,  
And he's at some hard point.—Speak, man;  
thy tongue

May take off some extremity, which to read  
Would be even mortal to me.

Pis. Please you, read;

And you shall find me, wretched man, a thing  
The most disdain'd of fortune.

Imo. [Reads.] *Thy mistress, Pisanio, hath  
played the strumpet in my bed; the testi-  
monies wherof lie bleeding in me. I speak  
not out of weak surmises; from proof as  
strong as my grief, and as certain as I ex-  
pect my revenge. That part, thou Pisanio,  
must act for me, if thy faith be not tainted  
with the breach of hers. Let thine own hands  
take away her life: I shall give thee opportu-  
nities at Milford-Haven: she hath my letter  
for the purpose: where, if thou fear to strike,  
and to make me certain it is done, thou art  
the pander to her dishonour, and equally  
to me disloyal.*

Pis. What shall I need to draw my sword?  
the paper

Hath cut her throat already.—No, 'tis slander;  
Whose edge is sharper than the sword: whose  
tongue [breath

Ont-venoms all the worms of Nile; whose  
Rides on the posting winds and doth belie  
All corners of the world: kings, queens, and  
states,

Maids, matrons, nay, the secrets of the grave,  
This viperous slander enters.—What cheer,  
madam?

Imo. False to his bed! What is it to be false?  
To lie in watch there, and to think on him?  
To weep 'twixt clock and clock? if sleep  
charge nature,

\* For behaviour.

To break it with a fearful dream of him,  
And cry myself awake? that's false to his bed?  
Is it?

*Pis.* Alas, good lady! [*Iachimo,*

*Imo.* I false? Thy conscience witness:—  
Thou didst accuse him of incontinency; [thinks,  
Thou then look'dst like a villain; now, methinks  
Thy favour's good enough.—Some jay\* of Italy,  
Whose mother was her painting†, hath betray'd him:

Poor I am stale, a garment out of fashion;  
And, for I am richer than to hang by the walls,  
I must be ripp'd:—to pieces with me!—O,  
Men's vows are women's traitors! All good  
seeming,

By thy revolt, O husband, shall be thought  
Put on for villany; not born, where't grows;  
But worn, a bait for ladies.

*Pis.* Good madam, hear me.

*Imo.* True honest men being heard, like false  
Æneas, [weeping  
Were, in his time, thought false: and Sinon's  
Did scandal many a holy tear; took pity  
From most true wretchedness: So, thou, Post-  
Wilt lay the leaven on all proper men; [hūmus,  
Goodly and gallant, shall be false and perjured,  
From thy great fail.—Come, fellow, be thou  
honest: [him,

Do thou thy master's bidding: when thou see'st  
A little witness my obedience: Look!  
I draw the sword myself: take it; and hit  
The innocent mansion of my love, my heart:  
Fear not; 'tis empty of all things, but grief:  
Thy master is not there; who was, indeed,  
The riches of it: Do his bidding; strike.  
Thou may'st be valiant in a better cause;  
But now thou seem'st a coward.

*Pis.* Hence, vile instrument!  
Thou shalt not damn my hand.

*Imo.* Why, I must die;  
And if I do not by thy hand, thou art slaughter  
No servant of thy master's: Against self  
There's a prohibition so divine, [my heart;  
That cravens‡ my weak hand. Come, here's  
Something's afore't: Soft, soft; we'll no defence;  
Obedient as the scabbard.—What is here?

The scriptures§ of the loyal Leonatus,  
All turn'd to heresy? Away, away,  
Corrupters of my faith! you shall no more  
Be stomachers to my heart! 'Thus may poor  
fools [betray'd

Believe false teachers: Though those that are  
Do feel the treason sharply, yet the traitor  
Stands in worse case of woe.

And thou, Posthūmus, thou that didst set up  
My disobedience 'gainst the king my father,  
And make me put into contempt the suits  
Of princely fellows, shalt hereafter find  
It is no act of common passage, but  
A strain of rareness: and I grieve myself,  
To think, when thou shalt be disedged by her  
That now thou tirest|| on, how thy memory  
Will then be pang'd by me.—Pr'ythee, de-  
spatch: [knife?

The lamb entreats the butcher: Where's thy

Thou art too slow to do thy master's bidding,  
When I desire it too.

*Pis.* O gracious lady,  
Since I received command to do this business,  
I have not slept one wink.

*Imo.* Do't, and to bed then.

*Pis.* I'll wake mine eye-balls blind first.

*Imo.* Wherefore then  
Didst undertake it? Why hast thou abused  
So many miles with a pretence? this place?  
Mine action, and thine own? our horses' la-  
bour?

The time inviting thee? the perturb'd court,  
For my being absent: whereunto I never  
Purpose return? Why hast thou gone so far,  
To be unbent, when thou hast ta'en thy stand,  
The elected deer before thee?

*Pis.* But to win time  
To lose so bad employment: in the which  
I have consider'd of a course: Good lady,  
Hear me with patience.

*Imo.* Talk thy tongue weary; speak:  
I have heard I am a strumpet; and mine ear,  
Therein false struck, can take no greater wound,  
Nor tent to bottom that. But speak.

*Pis.* Then, madam,  
I thought you would not back again.

*Imo.* Most like;  
Bringing me here to kill me.

*Pis.* Not so, neither:  
But if I were as wise as honest, then  
My purpose would prove well. It cannot be,  
But that my master is abused:  
Some villain, ay, and singular in his art,  
Hath done you both this cursed injury.

*Imo.* Some Roman courtezan.

*Pis.* No, on my life.  
I'll give but notice you are dead, and send him  
Some bloody sign of it; for 'tis commanded  
I should do so: You shall be miss'd at court,  
And that will well confirm it.

*Imo.* Why, good fellow,  
What shall I do the while? Where bide? How  
Or in my life what comfort, When I am [live?  
Dead to my husband?

*Pis.* If you'll back to the court,—

*Imo.* No court, no father; nor no more ado  
With that harsh, noble, simple, nothing:  
That Cloten, whose love-suit hath been to me  
As fearful as a siege.

*Pis.* If not at court,  
Then not in Britain must you bide.

*Imo.* Where then?  
Hath Britain all the sun that shines? Day,  
night, [volume  
Are they not but in Britain? 'P the world's  
Our Britain seems as of it, but not in it;  
In a great pool, a swan's nest: Pr'ythee, think  
There's livers out of Britain.

*Pis.* I am most glad  
You think of other place. The ambassador,  
Lucius the Roman, comes to Milford-Haven  
To-morrow: Now, if you could wear a mind  
Dark as your fortune is; and but disguise  
That, which, to appear itself, must not yet be

\* *Putta*, in Italian, signifies both a jay and a whore. † Likeness. ‡ Cowards.  
§ The writings. || Feedest, or preys on.

But by self-danger; you should tread a course  
Pretty, and full of view: yea, haply, near  
The residence of Posthumus: so nigh, at least,  
That though his actions were not visible, yet  
Report should render him hourly to your ear,  
As truly as he moves.

*Imo.* O, for such means!  
Though peril to my modesty, not death on't,  
I would adventure.

*Pis.* Well then, here's the point:  
You must forget to be a woman; change  
Command into obedience; fear and niceness  
(The handmaids of all women, or, more truly,  
Woman its pretty self,) to a waggish courage;  
Ready in gibes, quick-answer'd, saucy, and  
As quarrellous as the weasel: nay, you must  
Forget that rarest treasure of your cheek,  
Exposing it (but, O, the harder heart!  
Alack, no remedy!) to the greedy touch  
Of common-kissing Titan\*; and forget  
Your laboursome and dainty trims, wherein  
You made great Juno angry.

*Imo.* Nay, be brief:  
I see into thy end, and am almost  
A man already.

*Pis.* First, make yourself but like one.  
Fore-thinking this, I have already fit,  
'Tis in my cloak-bag, a doublet, hat, hose, all  
That answer to them: Would you, in their serv-  
And with what imitation you can borrow [ing,  
From youth of such a season, 'fore noble

*Lucius*  
Present yourself, desire his service, tell him  
Wherein you are happy†, (which you'll make  
him know,

If that his head have ear in music,) doubtless,  
With joy he will embrace you; for he's honour-  
able, [abroad

And, doubling that, most holy. Your means  
You have me†, rich; and I will never fail  
Beginning nor supplyment.

*Imo.* Then art all the comfort  
The gods will diet me with. Pr'ythee, away:  
There's more to be consider'd; but we'll even  
All that good time will give us: This attempt  
I'm soldier to, and will abide it with  
A prince's courage. Away, I pr'ythee.

*Pis.* Well, madam, we must take a short  
Lest, being miss'd, I be suspected of [farewell:  
Your carriage from the court. My noble mis-  
Here is a box; I had it from the queen; [tress,  
What's in't is precious; if you are sick at sea,  
Or stomach-qualm'd at land, a dram of this  
Will drive away distemper.—To some shade,  
And fit you to your manhood:—May the gods  
Direct you to the best!

*Imo.* Amen: I thank thee.  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. A Room in Cymbeline's Palace.  
*Enter CYMBELINE, Queen, CLOTEN,*  
*LUCIUS, and Lords.*

*Cym.* Thus far: and so farewell.  
*Luc.* Thanks, royal sir.  
My emperor hath wrote; I must from hence;  
And am right sorry, that I must report ye

My master's enemy.

*Cym.* Our subjects, sir,  
Will not endure his yoke; and for ourself  
To show less sovereignty than they, must needs  
Appear unkinglike.

*Luc.* So, sir, I desire of you  
A conduct over land, to Milford-Haven.—  
Madam, all joy befall your grace, and you!

*Cym.* My lords, you are appointed for that  
The due of honour in no point omit:— [office;  
So, farewell, noble Lucius.

*Luc.* Your hand, my lord.  
*Clo.* Receive it friendly; but from this time  
I wear it as your enemy. [forth

*Luc.* Sir, the event  
Is yet to name the winner; Fare you well.

*Cym.* Leave not the worthy Lucius, good  
my lords.

Till he have cross'd the Severn.—Happiness!  
[*Exeunt LUCIUS, and Lords.*

*Queen.* He goes hence frowning: but it ho-  
That we have given him cause. [nours us,  
*Clo.* 'Tis all the better;

Your valiant Britons have their wishes in it.  
*Cym.* Lucius hath wrote already to the em-  
peror

How it goes here. It fits us, therefore, ripely,  
Our chariots and our horsemen be in readiness:  
The powers that he already hath in Gallia  
Will soon be drawn to head, from whence he  
His war for Britain. [moves

*Queen.* 'Tis not sleepy business;  
But must be look'd to speedily, and strongly.

*Cym.* Our expectation that it would be thus,  
Hath made us forward. But, my gentle queen,  
Where is our daughter? She hath not appear'd  
Before the Roman, nor to us hath render'd  
The duty of the day: She looks us like  
A thing more made of malice than of duty:  
We have noted it.—Call her before us; for  
We have been too slight in sufferance.

[*Exit an Attendant.*  
*Queen.* Royal sir,  
Since the exile of Posthumus, most retired  
Hath her life been; the cure whereof, my lord,  
'Tis time must do. 'Beseech your majesty,  
Forbear sharp speeches to her: she's a lady  
So tender of rebukes, that words are strokes,  
And strokes death to her.

*Re-enter an Attendant.*  
*Cym.* Where is she, sir? How  
Can her contempt be answer'd?

*Atten.* Please you, sir,  
Her chambers are all lock'd; and there's no  
answer [make.  
That will be given to the loud'st of noise we  
*Queen.* My lord, when last I went to visit  
her,

She pray'd me to excuse her keeping close;  
Whereto constrain'd by her infirmity,  
She should that duty leave unpaid to you,  
Which daily she was bound to proffer: this  
She wish'd me to make known; but our great  
Made me to blame in memory. [court

*Cym.* Her doors lock'd?

\* The sun. † i. e., Wherein you are accomplished.  
As for your subsistence abroad, you may rely on me § Equal to.



Not seen of late? Grant, heavens, that which  
I fear  
Prove false! [Exit.]

Queen. Son, I say, follow the king.

Clo. That man of hers, Pisanio, her old  
I have not seen these two days. [servant,

Queen. Go, look after.—

[Exit CLOTEN.]

Pisanio, thou that stand'st so for Posthúmus!—  
He hath a drug of mine: I pray, his absence  
Proceed by swallowing that; for he believes  
It is a thing most precious. But for her, [her;  
Where is she gone? Haply despair hath seized  
Or, wing'd with fervour of her love, she's flown  
To her desired Posthúmus: Gone she is  
To death, or to dishonour; and my end  
Can make good use of either: She being down,  
I have the placing of the British crown.

Re-enter CLOTEN.

How now, my son?

Clo. 'Tis certain she is fled:  
Go in, and cheer the king; he rages; none  
Dare come about him.

Queen. All the better: May  
This night forestall him of the coming day!

[Exit Queen.]

Clo. I love and hate her: for she's fair and  
royal; [site

And that she hath all courtly parts more exquisite  
Than lady, ladies, woman\*; from every one  
The best she hath, and she, of all compounded,  
Outsells them all: I love her, therefore: But,  
Disdaining me, and throwing favours on  
The low Posthúmus, slanders so her judgment,  
That what's else rare, is choked; and in that  
point,

I will conclude to hate her, nay, indeed,  
To be revenged upon her. For when fools

Enter PISANIO.

Shall—Who is here? What! are you packing,  
sirrah? [lain,

Come hither: Ah, you precious pander! Villain—  
Where is thy lady?—In a word; or else  
Thou art straightway with the fiends.

Pis. O, good my lord!

Clo. Where is thy lady? or, by Jupiter  
I will not ask again. Close villain,  
I'll have this secret from thy heart, or rip  
Thy heart to find it. Is she with Posthúmus?  
From whose so many weights of baseness can  
A dram of worth be drawn. [not

Pis. Alas, my lord,  
How can she be with him? When was she  
He is in Rome. [miss'd?

Clo. Where is she, sir? Come nearer;  
No further halting: satisfy me home,  
What is become of her?

Pis. O, my all-worthy lord!

Clo. All-worthy villain!

Discover where thy mistress is, at once,  
At the next word,—No more of worthy lord,—  
Speak, or thy silence on the instant is  
Thy condemnation and thy death.

Pis. Then, sir,  
This paper is the history of my knowledge  
Touching her flight. [Presenting a Letter.]

Clo. Let's see't:—I will pursue her  
Even to Augustus' throne.

Pis. Or this, or perish.)  
She's far enough; and what he learns  
by this, } Aside.  
May prove his travel, not her danger.

Clo. Humph!

Pis. I'll write to my lord she's dead. O

Imogen,

Safe may'st thou wander, safe return again!

[Aside.]

Clo. Sirrah, is this letter true?

Pis. Sir, as I think.

Clo. It is Posthúmus' hand; I know't.—  
Sirrah, if thou wouldst not be a villain, but  
do me true service; undergo those employ-  
ments, wherein I should have cause to use  
thee, with a serious industry,—that is, what  
villany soe'er I bid thee do, to perform it  
directly and truly,—I would think thee an  
honest man: thou shouldst neither want my  
means for thy relief, nor my voice for thy  
preferment.

Pis. Well, my good lord.

Clo. Wilt thou serve me? For since patiently  
and constantly thou hast stuck to the bare  
fortune of that beggar Posthúmus, thou canst  
not in the course of gratitude but be a diligent  
follower of mine. Wilt thou serve me?

Pis. Sir, I will.

Clo. Give me thy hand, here's my purse.  
Hast any of thy late master's garments in thy  
possession?

Pis. I have, my lord, at my lodging, the  
same suit he wore when he took leave of my  
lady and mistress.

Clo. The first service thou dost me, fetch  
that suit hither: let it be thy first service; go.

Pis. I shall, my lord. [Exit.]

Clo. Meet thee at Milford-Haven:—I forgo  
to ask him one think; I'll remember't anon;  
—Even there, thou villain, Posthúmus, will I  
kill thee.—I would these garments were come.  
She said upon a time, (the bitterness of it I  
now belch from my heart,) that she held the  
very garment of Posthúmus in more respect  
than my noble and natural person, together  
with the adornment of my qualities. With  
that suit upon my back, will I ravish her:  
First kill him, and in her eyes; there shall she  
see my valour, which will then be a torment  
to her contempt. He on the ground, my  
speech of insultment ended on his dead body,  
—and when my lust hath dined, (which, as I  
say, to vex her, I will execute in the clothes  
that she so praised,) to the court I'll knock her  
back, foot her home again. She hath despised  
me rejoicingly, and I'll be merry in my re-  
venge.

Re-enter PISANIO, with the Clothes.

Be those the garments?

Pis. Ay, my noble lord.

Clo. How long is't since she went to Mil-  
ford-Haven?

Pis. She can scarce be there yet.

Clo. Bring this apparel to my chamber

\* Than any lady, than all ladies, than all womankind.

that is the second thing that I have commanded thee; the third is, that thou shalt be a voluntary mute to my design. Be but duteous, and true preferment shall tender itself to thee.—My revenge is now at Milford; 'Would I had wings to follow it!—Come, and be true. [*Exit.*]

*Pis.* Thou bidd'st me to my loss: for, true to thee,

Were to prove false, which I will never be,  
To him that is most true.—To Milford go,  
And find not her whom thou pursuest. Flow,  
flow, [speed  
You heavenly blessings, on her! This fool's  
Be cross'd with slowness; labour be his meed! [*Exit.*]

SCENE VI. *Before the Cave of Belarius.*

*Enter IMOGEN, in Boy's Clothes.*

*Imo.* I see, a man's life is a tedious one:  
I have tired myself; and for two nights together [sick,  
Have made the ground my bed. I should be  
But that my resolution helps me.—Milford,  
When from the mountain-top Pisanio show'd thee,  
Thou wast within a ken: O Jove! I think,  
Foundations fly the wretched: such, I mean,  
Where they should be relieved. Two beggars told me,

I could not miss my way: Will poor folks lie,  
That have afflictions on them; knowing 'tis  
A punishment, or trial? Yes; no wonder,  
When rich ones scarce tell true: To lapse in  
faintness

Is sorer, than to lie for need; and falsehood  
Is worse in kings than beggars.—My dear  
lord! [on thee,

Thou art one o'the false ones: Now I think  
My hunger's gone; but even before, I was  
At point to sink for food.—But what is this?  
Here is a path to it: 'Tis some savage hold:  
I were best not call; I dare not call: yet  
famine,

Ere clean it o'erthrow nature, makes it valiant.  
Plenty, and peace, breeds cowards; hardness  
ever

Of hardness is mother.—Ho! who's here?  
If any thing that's civil, speak; if savage,  
Take, or lend.—Ho!—No answer? then I'll  
enter.

Best draw my sword; and if mine enemy  
But fear the sword like me, he'll scarcely look  
Such a foe, good heavens! [on't.

[*She goes into the Cave.*]

*Enter BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and AR-  
VIRAGUS.*

*Bel.* You, Polydore, have proved best wood-  
man\*, and  
Are master of the feast: Cadwal and I  
Will play the cook and servant; 'tis our  
match†:

The sweet of industry would dry, and die,  
But for the end it works to. Come; our  
stomachs [ness

Will make what's homely, savoury: Weari-  
Can snore upon the flint, when restive sloth

Finds the down pillow hard.—Now, peace be  
Poor house, that keep'st thyself! [here,

*Gui.* I am thoroughly weary.

*Arv.* I am weak with toil, yet strong in  
appetite. [browze on that,

*Gui.* There is cold meat i'the cave; we'll  
Whilst what we have kill'd be cook'd.

*Bel.* Stay; come not in:  
[*Looking in.*]

But that it eats our victuals, I should think  
Here were a fairy.

*Gui.* What's the matter, sir?

*Bel.* By Jupiter, an angel! or, if not,  
An earthly paragon! Behold divineness  
No elder than a boy!

*Enter IMOGEN.*

*Imo.* Good masters, harm me not:  
Before I enter'd here, I call'd; and thought  
To have begg'd, or bought, what I have took:  
Good troth, [I had found  
I have stolen nought; nor would not, though  
Gold strew'd o'the floor. Here's money for  
my meat:

I would have left it on the board, so soon  
As I had made my meal; and parted  
With prayers for the provider.

*Gui.* Money, youth?

*Arv.* All gold and silver rather turn to dirt!  
As 'tis no better reckon'd, but of those  
Who worship dirty gods.

*Imo.* I see you are angry:  
Know, if you kill me for my fault, I should  
Have died, had I not made it.

*Bel.* Whither bound?

*Imo.* To Milford-Haven, sir.

*Bel.* What is your name?

*Imo.* Fidele, sir: I have a kinsman, who  
Is bound for Italy; he embark'd at Milford;  
To whom being going, almost spent with hun-  
I am fallen in† this offence. [ger,

*Bel.* Prythee, fair youth,  
Think us no churls; nor measure our good  
minds [ter'd!

By this rude place we live in. Well encoun-  
'Tis almost night: you shall have better cheer  
Ere you depart; and thanks, to stay and eat  
Boys, bid him welcome. [it.—

*Gui.* Were you a woman, youth,  
I should woo hard, but be your groom.—In  
I bid for you, as I'd buy. [honesty,

*Arv.* I'll make't my comfort,  
He is a man; I'll love him as my brother:—  
And such a welcome as I'd give to him,  
After long absence, such as yours:—Most wel-  
come!

Be sprightly, for you fall 'mongst friends.

*Imo.* 'Mongst friends

If brothers?—'Would it had been so,  
that they [my prize  
Had been my father's sons! then had  
Been less; and so more equal ballast- } *Aside.*  
To thee, Posthumus. [ing]

*Bel.* He wrings at some distress.

*Gui.* 'Would, I could free't!

*Arv.* Or I; whate'er it be,  
What pain it cost, what danger! Gods!

\* Best hunter.

† Agreement.

‡ In, for into.

*Bel.*Hark, boys.  
[*Whispering.*]

*Imo.* Great men,  
That had a court no bigger than this cave,  
That did attend themselves, and had the virtue  
Which their own conscience seal'd them, (lay-  
ing by

That nothing gift of differing \* multitudes,)  
Could not out-peer these twain. Pardon me,  
gods!

I'd change my sex to be companion with them,  
Since Leonatus' false.

*Bel.* It shall be so:

Boys, we'll go dress our hunt.—Fair youth,  
come in:

Discourse is heavy, fasting; when we have  
supp'd,

We'll mannerly demand thee of thy story,

So far as thou wilt speak it.

*Gui.* Pray, draw near.

*Arv.* The night to the owl, and morn to the  
*Imo.* Thanks, sir. [lark, less welcome.

*Arv.* I pray, draw near. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE VII. Rome.

*Enter Two Senators and Tribunes.*

*1 Sen.* This is the tenour of the emperor's  
writ;

That since the common men are now in action  
'Gainst the Pannonians and Dalmatians;  
And that the legions now in Gallia are  
Full weak to undertake our wars against  
The fallen off Britons; that we do incite  
The gentry to this business: He creates  
Lucius pro-consul: and to you the tribunes,  
For this immediate levy, he commands  
His absolute commission. Long live Cæsar!

*Tri.* Is Lucius general of the forces?

*2 Sen.* Ay,

*Tri.* Remaining now in Gallia?

*1 Sen.* With those legions

Which I have spoke of, whereunto your levy  
Must be suppliant: The words of your com-  
mission

Will tie you to the numbers, and the time  
Of their despatch.

*Tri.* We will discharge our duty. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The Forest, near the Cave.*

*Enter CLOTEN.*

*Clo.* I am near to the place where they  
should meet, if Pisanio have mapped it truly.  
How fit his garments serve me! Why should  
his mistress, who was made by him that made  
the tailor, not be fit too? the rather (saving  
reverence of the word) for 'tis said, a wo-  
man's fitness comes by fits. Therein I must  
play the workman. I dare speak it to myself,  
(for it is not vain-glory, for a man and his glass  
to confer; in his own chamber, I mean,) the  
lines of my body are as well drawn as his;  
no less young, more strong, not beneath him  
in fortunes, beyond him in the advantage of  
the time, above him in birth, alike conversant  
in general services, and more remarkable in  
single oppositions;† yet this imperseverant  
thing loves him in my despite. What mortali-  
ty is! Posthumus, thy head, which now is  
growing upon thy shoulders, shall within this  
hour be off; thy mistress enforced; thy gar-  
ments cut to pieces before thy face: and all  
this done, spurn her home to her father: who  
may, haply, be a little angry for my so rough  
usage: but my mother, having power of his  
testiness, shall turn all into my commendations.  
My horse is tied up safe: Out, sword,  
and to a sore purpose! Fortune, put them into  
my hand! This is the very description of their  
meeting-place; and the fellow dares not de-  
ceive me. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II. *Before the Cave.*

*Enter, from the Cave, BELARIUS, GUIDE-  
RIUS, ARVIRAGUS, and IMOGEN.*

*Bel.* You are not well: [*To IMOGEN.*] re-  
main here in the cave;

We'll come to you after hunting.

*Arv.* Brother, stay here: [*To IMOGEN.*]  
Are we not brothers?

*Imo.* So man and man should be;  
But clay and clay differs in dignity,  
Whose dust is both alike. I am very sick.

*Gui.* Go you to hunting, I'll abide with him.

*Imo.* So sick I am not;—yet I am not well:  
But not so citizen a wanton, as [me]  
To seem to die, ere sick: So please you leave  
Stick to your journal § course: the breach of  
custom [me]

Is breach of all. I am ill; but your being by  
Cannot amend me: Society is no comfort  
To one not sociable: I'm not very sick,  
Since I can reason of it. Pray you, trust me  
here:

I'll rob none but myself; and let me die,  
Stealing so poorly.

*Gui.* I love thee; I have spoke it:  
How much the quantity, the weight as much,  
As I do love my father.

*Bel.* What? how? how?  
*Arv.* If it be sin to say so, sir, I yoke me  
In my good brother's fault: I know not why  
I love this youth; and I have heard you say,  
Love's reason's without reason; the bier ‡  
door,

And a demand who is't shall die, I'd say,  
*My father, not his youth.*

*Bel.* O noble strain! [*Aside*]  
O worthiness of nature! breed of greatness!  
Cowards father cowards, and base things sire  
base. [*Grace.*]

Nature hath meal, and bran; contempt, and  
I am not their father; yet who this should be,  
Doth miracle itself, lover before me.—  
'Tis the ninth hour o' the morn.

\* Unsteady.

† i. e., Because.

‡ In single combat.

§ Keep your daily course.



*Arv.* Brother, farewell.

*Imo.* I wish ye sport.

*Arv.* You health.—So please you, sir.

*Imo.* [*Aside.*] These are kind creatures. Gods, what lies I have heard!

Our courtiers say, all's savage but at court: Experience, O, thou disprove'st report! [dish, The Imperious\* seas breed monsters; for the Poor tributary rivers as sweet fish.

I am sick still; heart-sick:—Pisanio,

I'll now taste of thy drug.

*Gui.* I could not stir him;

He said, he was gentle†, but unfortunate;

Dishonestly afflicted, but yet honest. [after

*Arv.* Thus did he answer me: yet said, here- I might know more.

*Bel.* To the field, to the field:—

We'll leave you for this time; go in, and rest.

*Arv.* We'll not be long away.

*Bel.* Pray, be not sick,

For you must be our housewife.

*Imo.* Well, or ill,

I am bound to you.

*Bel.* And so shalt be ever. [*Exit IMOGEN.* This youth, howe'er distress'd, appears, he hath Good ancestors. [had

*Arv.* How angel-like he sings!

*Gui.* But his neat cookery! He cut our roots in characters;

And sauced our broths, as Juno had been sick, And he her dieter.

*Arv.* Nobly he yokes

A smiling with a sigh: as if the sigh

Was that it was, for not being such a smile;

The smile mocking the sigh, that it would fly

From so divine a temple, to commix

With winds that sailors rail at.

*Gui.* I do note,

That grief and patience, rooted in him both, Mingle their spurs‡ together.

*Arv.* Grow, patience;

And let the stinking elder, grief, untwine

His perishing root, with the increasing vine!

*Bel.* It is great morning. Come; away.— Who's there?

*Enter CLOTEN.*

*Clo.* I cannot find those runagates; that vil- Hath mock'd me;—I am faint. [lain

*Bel.* Those runagates!

Means he not us? I partly know him; 'tis Cloten, the son o'the queen. I fear some ambush.

I saw him not these many years, and yet I know 'tis he:—We are held as outlaws:—

Hence. [search

*Gui.* He is but one: You and my brother What companies are near: pray you, away; Let me alone with him.

[*Exeunt BELARIUS and ARVIRAGUS.*

*Clo.* Soft! What are you

That fly me thus? some villain mountaineers? I have heard of such.—What slave art thou?

*Gui.* A thing

More slavish did I ne'er, than answering A slave, without a knock.

Imperial. † Well-born.

‡ Countenance.

*Clo.*

Thou art a robber,

A law-breaker, a villain: Yield thee, thief.

*Gui.* To who? to thee? What art thou

Have not I

An arm as big as thine? a heart as big?

Thy words, I grant, are bigger; for I wear not

My dagger in my mouth. Say, what thou art;

Why I should yield to thee?

*Clo.*

Thou villain base,

Know'st me not by my clothes?

*Gui.*

No, nor thy tailor, rascal,

Who is thy grandfather; he made those clothes, Which, as it seems, make thee.

*Clo.*

Thou precious varlet

My tailor made them not.

*Gui.*

Hence then, and thank

The man that gave them thee. Thou art some

I am loath to beat thee. [fool

*Clo.*

Thou injurious thief,

Hear but my name, and tremble.

*Gui.*

What's thy name?

*Clo.* Cloten, thou villain.

*Gui.* Cloten, thou double villain, be thy name, [spider

I cannot tremble at it; were't toad, or adder

'Twould move me sooner.

*Clo.*

To thy further fear,

Nay, to thy mere confusion, thou shalt know I'm son to the queen.

*Gui.*

I'm sorry for't; not seeming

So worthy as thy birth.

*Clo.*

Ait not afraid? [the wise:

*Gui.* Those that I reverence, those I fear;

At fools I laugh, not fear them.

*Clo.*

Die the death:

When I have slain thee with my proper hand,

I'll follow those that even now fled hence,

And on the gates of Lud's town set your heads:

Yield, rustic mountaineer. [*Exeunt, fighting.*

*Enter BELARIUS and ARVIRAGUS.*

*Bel.* No company's abroad. [him, sure,

*Arv.* None in the world: You did mistake

*Bel.* I cannot tell: Long is it since I saw him, [favour;

But time hath nothing blurr'd those lines of

Which then he wore; the snatches in his voice

And burst of speaking, were as his: I am ab-

'Twas very Cloten. [solute,

*Arv.*

In this place we left them;

I wish my brother make good time with him,

You say he is so fell.

*Bel.*

Being scarce made up,

I mean, to man, he had not apprehension

Of roaring terrors; for the effect of judgment

Is oft the cause of fear: But see, thy brother.

*Re-enter GUIDERIUS, with CLOTEN's Head.*

*Gui.* This Cloten was a fool; an empty purse,

There was no money in't: not Hercules

Could have knock'd out his brains, for he had none:

Yet I not doing this, the fool had borne

My head, as I do his.

*Bel.*

What hast thou done? [ten's head

*Gui.* I am perfect||, what: cut off one's

† Spurs are the roots of trees.

|| I am well-informed what.

Son to the queen, after his own report;  
Who call'd me traitor, mountaineer; and  
swore,

With his own single hand he'd take us in\*,  
Displace our heads, where (thank the gods!)  
And set them on Lud's town. [they grow,

*Bel.* We are all undone.

*Gui.* Why, worthy father, what have we to  
lose, [law

But, that he swore, to take our lives? The  
Protects not us: Then why should we be  
tender,

To let an arrogant piece of flesh threat us;  
Play judge, and executioner, all himself;  
For we do fear the law? What company  
Discover you abroad?

*Bel.* No single soul  
Can we set eye on, but, in all safe reason,  
He must have some attendants. Though his  
humour

Was nothing but mutation †; ay, and that  
From one bad thing to worse; not frenzy, not  
Absolute madness could so far have raved,  
To bring him here alone: Although, perhaps,  
It may be heard at court, that such as we  
Cave here, hunt here, are outlaws, and in time  
May make some stronger head: the which he  
hearing,

(As it is like him,) might break out, and swear  
He'd fetch us in: yet is't not probable  
To come alone, either he so undertaking,  
Or they so suffering: then on good ground we  
If we do fear this body hath a tail [fear,  
More perilous than the head.

*Arv.* Let ordinance  
Come as the gods foresay it: howsoe'er,  
My brother hath done well.

*Bel.* I had no mind  
To hunt this day: the boy Fidele's sickness  
Did make my way long forth§.

*Gui.* With his own sword,  
Which he did wave against my throat, I have  
ta'en [creek  
His head from him: I'll throw't into the  
Behind our rock; and let it to the sea,  
And tell the fishes, he's the queen's son, Cloten:  
That's all I reckon. [Exit.

*Bel.* I fear, 'twill be revenged;  
\*Would, Polydore, thou had'st not done't!  
Becomes thee well enough. [though valour

*Arv.* \*Would I had done't,  
So the revenge alone pursued me!—Polydore,  
I love thee brotherly; but envy much,  
Thou hast robb'd me of this deed: I would,  
revenges, [us through,

That possible strength might meet, would seek  
And put us to our answer.

*Bel.* Well, 'tis done:—  
We'll hunt no more to-day, nor seek for danger  
Where there's no profit. I prythee, to our  
You and Fidele play the cooks: I'll stay [rock;  
Till hasty Polydore return, and bring him  
To dinner presently.

*Arv.* Poor sick Fidele!  
I'll willingly to him: To gain ¶ his colour,

I'd let a parish of such Clotens blood,  
And praise myself for charity. [Exit.

*Bel.* O thou goddess,  
Thou divine Nature, how thyself thou blazon'st  
In these two princely boys! They are as gentle  
As zephyrs, blowing below the violet,  
Not wagging his sweet head: and yet as rough,  
Their royal blood enchain'd, as the rudest wind,  
That by the top doth take the mountain pine,  
And make him stoop to the vale. 'Tis wonder-  
ful,

That an invisible instinct should frame them  
To royalty unlearn'd; honour untaught;  
Civility not seen from other; valour,  
That wildly grows in them, but yields a crop  
As if it had been sow'd! Yet still it's strange  
What Cloten's being here to us portends;  
Or what his death will bring us.

*Re-enter GUIDERIUS.*

*Gui.* Where's my brother?  
I have sent Cloten's clotpoll down the stream,  
In embassy to his mother; his body's hostage  
For his return. [Solemn Music.

*Bel.* My ingenious instrument!  
Hark, Polydore, it sounds! But what occa-  
sion

Hath Cadwal now to give it motion! Hark!

*Gui.* Is he at home?

*Bel.* He went hence even now.

*Gui.* What does he mean? since death of  
my dear'st mother

It did not speak before. All solemn things  
Should answer solemn accidents. The matter?  
Triumphs for nothing, and lamenting toys \*\*,  
Is jollity for apes, and grief for boys,  
Is Cadwal mad?

*Re-enter ARVIRAGUS, bearing IMOGEN as  
dead, in his Arms.*

*Bel.* Look, here he comes,  
And brings the dire occasion in his arms,  
Of what we blame him for!

*Arv.* The bird is dead,  
That we have made so much on. I had rather  
Have skip'd from sixteen years of age to sixty,  
To have turn'd my leaping time into a crutch,  
Than have seen this.

*Gui.* O sweetest, fairest lily!  
My brother wears thee not the one half so well,  
As when thou grew'st thyself.

*Bel.* O, melancholy!  
Who ever yet could sound thy bottom? And  
The ooze, to show what coast thy sluggish care ††  
Might easiest barbour in?—Thou blessed  
thing? [made; but I,

Jove knows what man thou might'st have  
Thou diedst, a most rare boy, of melancholy!  
How found you him?

*Arv.* Starkit, as you see:  
Thus smiling, as some fly had tickled slumber,  
Not as death's dart, being laugh'd at: his right  
Reposing on a cushion. [check

*Gui.* Where? O the floor;  
*Arv.* His arms tins leagued: I thought, he slept;  
and put

\* Conquer, subdue. † For, for because. ‡ Change, alteration. § Did make my walk tedious.  
¶ Care. ¶ Regain, restore. \*\* Trifles. †† A slow-sailing, unwieldy vessel. ‡‡ Still.

My clouted brogues\* from off my feet, whose  
Answer'd my steps too loud. [rudeness

*Gui.* Why, he but sleeps:  
If he be gone, he'll make his grave a bed;  
With female fairies will his tomb be haunted,  
And worms will not come to thee.

*Arr.* With fairest flowers,  
Whilst summer lasts, and I live here, Fidele,  
I'll sweeten thy sad grave: Thou shalt not lack  
The flower, that's like thy face, pale primrose;  
nor

The azure hare-bell, like thy veins; no, nor  
The leaf of eglantine, whom not to slander,  
Out-sweeten'd not thy breath: the ruddock†  
would,

With charitable bill (O bill, sore-shaming  
Those rich-left heirs, that let their fathers lie  
Without a monument!) bring thee all this;  
Yea, and furr'd moss besides, when flowers  
To winter-ground‡ thy corse. [are none,

*Gui.* Pr'ythee, have done;  
And do not play in wench-like words with that  
Which is so serious. Let us bury him,  
And not protract with admiration what  
Is now due debt.—To the grave.

*Arr.* Say, where shall's lay him?  
*Gui.* By good Euriphile, our mother.

*Arr.* Be't so:  
And let us, Polydore, though now our voices  
Have got the mannish crack, sing him to the  
ground, [words,  
As once our mother; use like note, and  
Save that Euriphile must be Fidele.

*Gui.* Cadwal,  
I cannot sing: I'll weep, and word it with  
thee;

For notes of sorrow, out of tune, are worse  
Than priests and fanes that lie.

*Arr.* We'll speak it then.

*Bel.* Great griefs, I see, medicine the less:  
for Cloten

Is quite forgot. He was a queen's son, boys:  
And, though he came our enemy, remember,  
He was paid § for that: Though mean and  
mighty, rotting

Together, have one dust; yet reverence,  
(That angel of the world,) doth make distinc-  
tion [princely;

Of place 'tween high and low. Our foe was  
And though you took his life, as being our foe,  
Yet bury him as a prince.

*Gui.* Pray you, fetch him hither.  
Therites' body is as good as Ajax,  
When others are alive.

*Arr.* If you'll go fetch him.  
We'll say our song the whilst.—Brother, begin.

[*Exit* BELARIUS.  
*Gui.* Nay, Cadwal, we must lay his head  
to the east;

My father hath a reason for't.

*Arr.* 'Tis true.

*Gui.* Come on then, and remove him.

*Arr.* So,—begin.

## SONG.

*Gui.* Fear no more the heat o'the sun,  
Nor the furious winter's rages;  
Thou thy worldly task hast done,  
Home art gone, and t'wen thy wages:  
Golden lads and girls all must,  
As chimney-sweepers, come to dust.

*Arr.* Fear no more the frown o'the great,  
Thou art past the tyrant's stroke;  
Care no more to clothe and eat;  
To thee the reed is as the oak:  
The sceptre, learning, physic, must  
All follow this, and come to dust.

*Gui.* Fear no more the lightning-flash,  
*Arr.* Nor the all-dreaded thunder-stone;  
*Gui.* Fear not slander, censure|| rash;

*Arr.* Thou hast finish'd joy and moan:  
Both. All lovers young, all lovers must  
Consign¶ to thee, and come to dust.

*Gui.* No exorciser harm thee!  
*Arr.* Nor no witchcraft charm thee!  
*Gui.* Ghost unlaid forbear thee!  
*Arr.* Nothing ill come near thee!

Both. Quiet consummation have;  
And renowned be thy grave!

*Re-enter* BELARIUS, with the Body of  
CLOTEN.

*Gui.* We have done our obsequies: Come  
lay him down.

*Bel.* Here's a few flowers, but about mid-  
night, more [night,  
The herbs, that have on them cold dew o'the  
Are strewings fitst for graves.—Upon their  
faces:—

You were as flowers, now wither'd: even so  
These herb'lets shall, which we upon you  
strow.—

Come on, away: apart upon our knees.

The ground, that gave them first, has them  
again;

Their pleasures here are past, so is their pain.

[*Exeunt* BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and  
ARVIRAGUS.

*Imo.* [*Awaking.*] Yes, sir, to Milford Ha-  
ven; Which is the way?—

I thank you.—By yon bush?—Pray, how far  
thither?

'Ods pittikins\*\*!—can it be six miles yet?

I have gone all night:—Faith, I'll lie down  
and sleep.

But, soft! no bedfellow:—O, gods and god-  
desses! [Seeing the Body.

These flowers are like the pleasures of the  
world; [dream;

This bloody man, the care on't.—I hope I  
For, so, I thought I was a cave-keeper,  
And cook to honest creatures: But 'tis not so;  
'Twas but a bolt†† of nothing, shot at nothing,  
Which the brain makes of fumes: Our very  
eyes [faith,

Are sometimes like our judgments, blind. Good

\* Shoes plated with iron.

† The red-breast.

‡ Probably a corrupt reading, for, *with* round thy corse.

§ Punished.

|| Judgment.

¶ Seal the same contract.

\*\* This diminutive adjuration is derived from *God's my pity*.

†† An arrow.



I tremble still with fear: But if there be  
Yet left in heaven as small a drop of pity  
As a wren's eye, fear'd gods, a part of it!  
The dream's here still: even when I wake, it is  
Without me, as within me; not imagined, felt.  
A headless man!—The garments of Posthu-  
mus!

I know the shape of his leg: this is his hand;  
His foot Mercurial; his Martial thigh;  
The brawns of Hercules: but his Jovial\*  
face— [sanio,

Murder in heaven?—How?—'Tis gone.—Pi  
All curses madded Hecuba gave the Greeks,  
And mine to boot, be darted on thee! Thou,  
Conspired with that irregularous† devil, Cloten,  
Hast here cut off my lord.—To write, and  
read,

Behenceforth treacherous!—damn'd Pisanio—  
Hath with his forged letters,—damn'd Pisanio—

From this most bravest vessel of the world  
Struck the main-top!—O, Posthumus! alas,  
Where is thy head? where's that? Ah me!  
where's that?

Pisanio might have kill'd thee at the heart,  
And left this head on.—How should this be?  
Pisanio?

'Tis he, and Cloten; malice and lucre in them  
Have laid this woe here. O, 'tis pregnant,  
pregnant!‡ [cious

The drug he gave me, which, he said, was pre-  
And cordial to me, have I not found it  
Murd'rous to the senses? That confirms it  
home:

This is Pisanio's deed, and Cloten's: O!—  
Give colour to my pale cheek with thy blood,  
That we the horrid may seem to those  
Which chance to find us: O, my lord, my  
lord!

Enter Lucius, a Captain, and other Offi-  
cers, and a Soothsayer.

Cap. To them the legions garrison'd in Gallia,  
After your will, have cross'd the sea: attending  
You here at Milford Haven, with your ships:  
They are here in readiness.

Luc. But what from Rome?

Cap. The senate hath stirr'd up the confusers,  
And gentlemen of Italy; most willing spirits,  
That promise noble service: and they come  
Under the conduct of bold Iachimo,  
Sienna's brother.

Luc. When expect you them?

Cap. With the next benefit o' the wind.

Luc. This forwardness  
Makes our hopes fair. Command our present  
numbers [sir,  
Be master'd; bid the captains look to't.—Now,  
What have you dream'd, of late, of this war's  
purpose?

Sooth. Last night the very gods show'd me  
a vision: [Thus:—  
(I fast, and pray'd, for their intelligence,)  
I saw Jove's bird, the Roman eagle, wing'd  
From the spongy south to this part of the  
west,

There vanish'd in the sunbeams: which por-  
tends,

(Unless my sins abuse my divination,)  
Success to the Roman host.

Luc. Dream often so,  
And never false.—Soft, ho! what trunk is  
here, [time

Without his top? The ruin speaks, that some-  
It was a worthy building.—How! a page!—  
Or dead, or sleeping on him? But dead, rather:  
For nature doth abhor to make his bed  
With the defunct, or sleep upon the dead.—  
Let's see the boy's face.

Cap. He is alive, my lord.

Luc. He'll then instruct us of this body.—  
Young one,

Inform us of thy fortunes; for, it seems,  
They crave to be demanded: Who is this,  
Thou makest thy bloody pillow? Or who was he,  
That, otherwise than noble nature did,  
Hath alter'd that good picture? What's thy in-  
terest

In this sad wreck? How came it? Who is it  
What art thou?

Imo. I am nothing: or if not,  
Nothing to be were better. This was my mas-  
A very valiant Briton, and a good, [ter,  
That here by mountaineers lies slain:—Alas!  
There are no more such masters: I may wander  
From east to occident§, cry out for service,  
Try many, all good, serve truly, never  
Find such another master.

Luc. 'Lack, good youth!  
Thou movest no less with thy complaining,  
than [friend.

Thy master in bleeding: Say his name, good  
Imo. Richard du Champ. If I do lie, and do  
No harm by it, though the gods hear, I hope  
[Aside.

They'll pardon it. Say you, sir?

Luc. Thy name?

Imo. Fidele.  
Luc. Thou dost approve thyself the very  
same: [name.

Thy name well fits thy faith; thy faith, thy  
Wilt take thy chance with me? I will not say,  
Thou shalt be so well master'd; but, be sure,  
No less beloved. The Roman emperor's letters,  
Sent by a consul to me, should not sooner  
Than thine own worth prefer thee: Go with  
me. [the gods,

Imo. I'll follow, sir. But first, an't please  
I'll hide my master from the flies, as deep  
As these poor pickaxes|| can dig: and when  
With wild wood-leaves and weeds I have  
strew'd his grave,  
And on it said a century of prayers,  
Such as I can, twice o'er, I'll weep, and sigh;  
And, leaving so his service, follow you,  
So please you entertain me.

Luc. Ay, good youth;  
And rather father thee, than master thee.—  
My friends,  
The boy hath taught us manly duties: Let us  
Find out the prettiest daisied plot we can,

A face like Love's.

† Lawless, licentious.

§ The west

‡ I.e., 'Tis a ready, apposite, conclusion.

|| Her fingers.

And make him with our pikes and partisans  
A grave: Come, arm him.—Boy, he is prefer'd  
By thee to us; and he shall be interr'd  
As soldiers can. Be cheerful; wipe thine eyes:  
Some falls are means the happier to arise.

[*Exeunt.*]SCENE III. *A Room in Cymbeline's Palace.*

Enter CYMBELINE, Lords, and PISANIO.

Cym. Again; and bring me word, how 'tis with her.

A fever with the absence of her son;  
A madness, of which her life's in danger:—  
Heavens, [Imogen,  
How deeply you at once do touch me!  
The great part of my comfort, gone: my queen  
Upon a desperate bed; and in a time  
When fearful sways point at me; her son gone,  
Somedevil for this present: It strikes me past  
The hope of comfort.—But for thee, fellow,  
Who needs must know of her departure, and  
Dost seem so ignorant, we'll enforce it from thee  
By a sharp torture.

Pis. Sir, my life is yours,  
I humbly set it at your will: But, for my  
mistress,  
I nothing know where she remains, why gone,  
Nor when she purposes return. 'Beseech your  
highness,  
Hold me your loyal servant.

1 Lord. Good, my liege,  
The day that she was missing he was here:  
I dare be bound he's true, and shall perform  
All parts of his subjection loyally.

For Cloten,—  
There wants no diligence in seeking him,  
And will, no doubt, be found.

Cym. The time's troublesome:  
We'll slip you for a season; but our jealousy  
[To PISANIO.

Does yet depend.

1 Lord. So please your majesty,  
The Roman legions, all from Gallia drawn,  
Are landed on your coast; with a supply  
Of Roman gentlemen, by the senate sent.

Cym. Now for the counsel of my son and  
I am amazed with matter\*. [queen]

1 Lord. Good my liege,  
Your preparation can affront † no less  
Than what you hear of: come more, for more  
you're ready: [motion]

The want is, but to put those powers ‡ in  
That long to move.

Cym. I thank you: Let's withdraw:  
And meet the time, as it seeks us. We fear  
What can from Italy annoy us; but [not  
We grieve at chances here.—Away. [*Exeunt.*]

Pis. I heard no letter from my master, since  
I wrote him Imogen was slain: 'Tis strange:  
Nor hear I from my mistress, who did promise  
To yield me often tidings; Neither know I  
What is betid to Cloten; but remain  
Perplex'd in all. The heavens still must work:

Wherein I am false, I am honest; not true  
to be true.

[try,  
These present wars shall find I love my coun-  
Even to the note § o'the king, or I'll fall in  
them.

All other doubts, by time let them be clear'd:  
Fortune brings in some boats, that are not  
steer'd. [*Exit.*

SCENE IV. *Before the Cave.*

Enter BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVIRAGUS.

Gui. The noise is round about us.

Bel. Let us from it.

Arv. What pleasure, sir, find we in life, to  
From action and adventure? [lock it

Gui. Nay, what hope  
Have we in hiding us? this way, the Romans  
Must or for Britons slay us; or receive us  
For barbarous and unnatural revolts ||  
During their use, and slay us after.

Bel. Sons,  
We'll higher to the mountains; there secure us.  
To the king's party there's no going; newness  
Of Cloten's death (we being not known, not  
muster'd

Among the bands) may drive us to a render ¶  
Where we have lived; and so extort from us  
That which we've done, whose answer would  
Drawn on with torture. [be death

Gui. This is, sir, a doubt,  
In such a time, nothing becoming you,  
Nor satisfying us.

Arv. It is not likely,  
That when they hear the Roman horses neigh,  
Behold their quarter'd fires, have both their  
eyes

And ears so cloy'd importantly as now,  
That they will waste their time upon our note\*\*,  
To know from whence we are.

Bel. O, I am known  
Of many in the army: many years,  
Though Cloten then but young, you see, not  
wore him

From my remembrance. And, besides, the king  
Hath not deserved my service, nor your loves;  
Who find in my exile the want of breeding,  
The certainty of this hard life; aye hopeless  
To have the courtesy your cradle promised,  
But to be still hot summer's tanlings, and  
The shrinking slaves of winter.

Gui. Than be so  
Better to cease to be. Pray, sir, to the army  
I and my brother are not known; yourself,  
So out of thought, and thereto so o'ergrown,  
Cannot be question'd.

Arv. By this sun that shines  
I'll thither: What thing is it, that I never  
Did see man die? scarce ever look'd on blood  
But that of coward hares, hot goats, and ve  
uison?

Never bestrid a horse, save one, that had  
A rider like myself, who ne'er wore rowel  
Nor iron on his heel? I am ashamed  
To look upon the holy sun, to have

\* Confounded by a variety of business. † Encounter. ‡ Forces.  
§ Notice. || Revolvers. ¶ An account. \*\* Noticing us.

The benefit of his bless'd beams, remaining  
So long a poor unknown.

*Gui.* By heavens, I'll go:  
If you will bless me, sir, and give me leave,  
I'll take the better care; but if you will not,  
The hazard therefore due fall on me by  
The hands of Romans!

*Arv.* So say I; Amen.  
*Bel.* No reason I, since on your lives you  
set

So slight a valuation, should reserve  
My crack'd one to more care. Have with  
you, boys:  
If in your country wars you chance to die,  
That is my bed too, lads, and there I'll lie:  
Lead, lead.—The time seems long; their blood  
thinks scorn, [*Aside.*  
Till it fly out, and show them princes born. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. A Field between the British and Roman Camps.

*Enter POSTHUMUS with a bloody  
Handkerchief.*

*Post.* Yea, bloody cloth, I'll keep thee;  
for I wish'd [ones,  
Thou shouldst be colour'd thus. You married  
If each of you would take this course, how  
many [selves,  
Must murder wives much better than them-  
For wrying\* but a little?—O, Pisanio!  
Every good servant does not all commands:  
No bond, but to do just ones.—Gods, if you  
Should have ta'en vengeance on my faults, I  
never

Had lived to put on † this: so had you saved  
The noble Imogen to repent; and struck  
Me wretch more worth your vengeance. But,  
alack, [love,

You snatch some hence for little faults; that's  
To have them fall no more: you some permit  
To second ills with ills, each elder worse;  
And make them dread it to the doer's thrift.  
But Imogen is your own: Do your best wills,  
And make me bless'd to obey!—I am brought  
Among the Italian gentry, and to fight [hither  
Against my lady's kingdom: 'Tis enough  
That, Britain, I have kill'd thy mistress;  
peace! [heavens,

I'll give no wound to thee. Therefore, good  
Hear patiently my purpose: I'll disrobe me  
Of these Italian weeds, and suit myself  
As does a Briton peasant: so I'll fight  
Against the part I come with; so I'll die  
For thee, O Imogen, even for whom my life  
Is, every breath, a death: and thus, unknown,  
Pitied nor hated, to the face of peril  
Myself I'll dedicate. Let me make men know  
More valour in me, than my habits show.  
Gods, put the strength o'the Leonati in me!  
To shame the guise o'the world, I will begin  
The fashion, less without and more within.

[*Exit.*

### SCENE II. The same.

*Enter, at one side, LUCIUS, IACHIMO, and  
the Roman Army; at the other side, the  
British Army.—LEONATUS POSTHUMUS  
following it like a poor Soldier. They  
march over, and go out. Alarums. Then*

*enter again, in skirmish, IACHIMO and  
POSTHUMUS: he vanquisheth and dis-  
armeth IACHIMO, and then leaves him.*

*Iach.* The heaviness and guilt within my  
bosom

Takes off my manhood: I have belied a lady,  
The princess of this country, and the air on't  
Revengefully enfeebles me; or could this carl I,  
A very drudge of nature's, have subdued me,  
In my profession? Knighthoods and honours,  
borne

As I wear mine, are titles but of scorn,  
If that thy gentry, Britain, go before  
This lout, as he exceeds our lords, the odds  
Is, that we scarce are men, and you are gods.  
[*Exit.*

*The battle continues; the Britons fly; CYM-  
BELINE is taken: then enter to his rescue,  
BELARIUS, GUIDERIUS, and ARVIRAGUS.*

*Bel.* Stand, stand! We have the advantage  
of the ground;

The lane is guarded: nothing routs us but  
The villany of our fears.

*Gui. Arv.* Stand, stand, and fight!

*Enter POSTHUMUS, and seconds the Britons.*

*They rescue CYMBELINE, and exeunt.  
Then, enter LUCIUS, IACHIMO, and  
IMOGEN.* [thyself:

*Luc.* Away, boy, from the troops, and save  
For friends kill friends, and the disorder's such  
As war were hood-wink'd.

*Iach.* 'Tis their fresh supplies.

*Luc.* It is a day turn'd strangely: or betimes  
Let's re-enforce or fly. [*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III. Another Part of the Field.

*Enter POSTHUMUS and a British Lord.*

*Lord.* Camest thou from where they made  
the stand?

*Post.* I did:

Though you, it seems, come from the fliers.

*Lord.* I did.

*Post.* No blame be to you, sir; for all was  
lost,

But that the heavens fought: The king himself  
Of his wings destitute, the army broken,  
And but the backs of Britons seen, all flying  
Through a strait lane; the enemy full-hearted,  
Lolling the tongue with slaughtering, having  
work

\* Deviating from the right way.

† Incite, instigate.

‡ Clown.



More plentiful than tools to do't, struck down,  
Some mortally, some slightly touch'd, some  
falling [damnd\*]

Merely through fear; that the strai' pass was  
With dead men, hurt behind, and cowards liv-  
To die with lengthen'd shame. [ing]

Lord. Where was this lane?

Post. Close by the battle, ditch'd, and wall'd  
with turf;

Which gave advantage to an ancient soldier,—  
An honest one, I warrant; who deserved  
So long a breeding, as his white beard came to,  
In doing this for his country;—athwart the  
lane,

He, with two striplings, (lads more like to run  
The country base't, than to commit such slaugh-  
With faces fit for masks, or rather fairer [ter;  
Than those for preservation cas'd, or shame,)  
Made good the passage; cry'd to those that fled,  
*Our Britain's harts die flying, not our men!*  
*To darkness fleet, souls that fly backwards:*  
*Stand;*

*Or we are Romans, and will give you that*  
*Like beasts, which you shun beastly; and*  
*may save,* [These three,

*But to look back in frown: stand, stand.—*  
Three thousand confident, in act as many,  
(For three performers are the file, when all  
The rest do nothing,) with this word, *stand,*  
*stand,*

Accommodated by the place, more charming,  
With their own nobleness, (which could have  
A distaff to a lance,) gilded pale looks, [turn'd  
Part, shame, part, spirit renew'd; that some,  
turn'd coward

But by example (O, a sin in war,  
Damnd in the first beginners!) 'gan to look  
The way that they did, and to grin like lions  
Upon the pikes o' the hunters. Then began

A stop i'the chaser, a retire; anon,  
A rout, confusion thick: Forthwith they fly  
Chickens, the way which they stoop'd eagles;  
slaves, [cowards

The strides they victors made: and now our  
(Like fragments in hard voyages,) became  
The life o'the need; having found the back-  
door open [wound!

Of the unguarded hearts, heavens! how they  
Some, slain before; some, dying; some, their  
friends [one,

O'erborne i'the former wave: ten, chased by  
Are now each one the slaughter-man of twenty:  
Those, that would die, or ere resist, are grown  
The mortal bugs; o'the field.

Lord. This was a strange chance:  
A narrow lane! an old man, and two boys!

Post. Nay, do not wonder at it: You are  
made

Rather to wonder at the things you hear,  
Than to work any. Will you rhyme upon't,  
And vent it for a mockery? Here is one:

*Two boys, an old man, twice a boy, a lane,*  
*Preserved the Britons, was the Roman's*

Lord. Nay, be not angry, sir. [bane.

Post. Lack, to what end?

\* Block'd up.

+ A country game called *prison bars* vulgarly *prison-base*.

‡ Terrois.

Who dares not stand his foe, I'll be his friend:  
For if he'll do, as he is made to do,  
I know, he'll quickly fly my friendship too.  
You have put me into rhyme.

Lord. Farewell, you are angry.

[Exit.

Post. Still going?—This is a lord! O noble  
misery!

To be i'the field, and ask, what news of me!  
To-day, how many would have given their  
honours

To have saved their carcasses? took heel to do't,  
And yet died too? I, in mine own woe charm'd,  
Could not find death, where I did hear him  
groan; [monster,

Nor feel him, where he struck: Being an ugly  
'Tis strange, he hides him in fresh cups, soft  
beds,

Sweet words; or hath more ministers than we  
That draw his knives i'the war.—Well, I will  
find him:

For being now a favourer to the Roman,  
No more a Briton, I have resumed again  
The part I came in: Fight I will no more,  
But yield me to the veriest hind, that shall  
Once touch my shoulder. Great the slaughter is  
Here made by the Roman; great the answer be  
Britons must take; For me, my ransome's  
death;

On either side I come to spend my breath;  
Which neither here I'll keep, nor bear again,  
But end it by some means for Imogen.

Enter Two British Captains, and Soldiers.

1 Cap. Great Jupiter be praised! Lucius is  
taken: [angels.

'Tis thought, the old man and his sons were  
2 Cap. There was a fourth man, in a silly  
habit,

That gave the affront § with them.

1 Cap. So 'tis reported:

But none of them can be found.—Stand! who

Post. A Roman; [is there?

Who had not now been drooping here, if so  
Had answer'd him. [conds

2 Cap. Lay hands on him; a dog!

A leg of Rome shall not return to tell  
What crows have peck'd them here. He brags  
his service

As if he were of note: bring him to the king.

Enter CYMBELINE, attended; BELARIUS,  
GUDERIUS, ARVIRAGUS, PISANIO, and  
Roman Captives. The Captains present  
POSTHUMUS to CYMBELINE, who delivers  
him over to a Gauler: after which, all  
go out.

#### SCENE IV. A Prison.

Enter POSTHUMUS, and Two Gaulers.

1 Gaol. You shall not now be stolen, you  
have locks upon you;

So, graze, as you find pasture.

2 Gaol. Ay, or a stomach.

[Exit Gaolers.

Post. Most welcome, bondage! for thou art  
I think, to liberty: Yet am I better [a way,

Than one that's sick o'the gout: since he had  
Groan so in perpetuity, than be cured [rather  
By the sure physician, death; who is the key  
To unbar these locks. My conscience! thou  
art fetter'd [gods, give me  
More than my shanks and wrists: You, good  
The penitent instrument, to pick that bolt,  
Then, free for ever! Is't enough, I am sorry?  
So children temporal fathers do appease;  
Gods are more full of mercy. Must I repent?  
I cannot do it better than in gyves\*,  
Desired, more than constrain'd: to satisfy,  
If of my freedom 'tis the main part, take  
No stricter render of me, than my all.  
I know, you are more clement than vile men,  
Who of their broken debtors take a third,  
A sixth, a tenth, letting them thrive again  
On their abatement; that's not my desire:  
For Imogen's dear life, take mine; and though  
'Tis not so dear, yet 'tis a life; you coin'd it:  
'Tween man and man, they weigh not every  
stamp;

Though light, take pieces for the figure sake:  
You rather mine, being yours: And so, great  
powers,

If you will take this audit, take this life,  
And cancel these cold bonds. O Imogen!  
I'll speak to thee in silence. [He sleeps.

*Solmn Music.* Enter, as an Apparition,  
SICILIUS LEONATUS, Father to POSTHU-  
MUS, an old Man, attired like a Warrior;  
leading in his Hand an ancient Matron,  
his Wife, and Mother to POSTHUMUS,  
with Music before them. Then, after  
other Music, follow the Two Young Leo-  
nati, Brothers to POSTHUMUS, with  
Wounds, as they died in the Wars. They  
circle POSTHUMUS round, as he lies  
sleeping.

*Sici.* No more, thou thunder master, show  
Thy spite on mortal flies:

With Mars fall out, with Juno chide,  
That thy adulteries

Rates and revenges.

Hath my poor boy done aught but well,  
Whose face I never saw?

I died, whilst in the womb he stay'd  
Attending Nature's law.

Whose father then (as men report,  
Thou orphans' father art,)

Thou shouldst have been, and shielded him  
From this earth-vexing smart.

*Moth.* Lucina lent not me her aid,  
But took me in my throes;

That from me was Posthumus ript,  
Came crying 'mongst his foes,  
A thing of pity!

*Sici.* Great nature, like his ancestry,  
Moulded the stuff so fair,  
That he deserved the praise o'the world,  
As great Sicilius' heir.

1 *Bro.* When once he was mature for man,  
In Britain, where was he  
That could stand up his parallel;  
Or fruitful object be

In eye of Imogen, that best  
Could deem his dignity  
*Moth.* With marriage wherefore was he  
To be exiled and thrown [mock'd,  
From Leonati's seat, and cast  
From her his dearest one,  
Sweet Imogen?

*Sici.* Why did you suffer Iachimo,  
Slight thing of Italy,  
To taint his nobler heart and brain  
With needless jealousy;  
And to become the geck? and scorn  
O' the other's villany?

2 *Bro.* For this, from stiller seats we came,  
Our parents, and us twain,  
That, striking in our country's cause,  
Fell bravely, and were slain;  
Our fealty, and Tenantius' right,  
With honour to maintain.

1 *Bro.* Like hardiment Posthumus hath  
To Cymbeline perform'd:

Then Jupiter, thou king of gods,  
Why hast thou thus adjourn'd

The graces for his merits due;  
Being all to dolours turn'd?

*Sici.* Thy crystal window ope; look out;  
No longer exercise,

Upon a valiant race, thy harsh  
And potent injuries.

*Moth.* Since, Jupiter, our son is good,  
Take off his miseries.

*Sici.* Peep through thy marble mansion  
Or we poor ghosts will cry [help!

To the shining synod of the rest,  
Against thy deity.

2 *Bro.* Help, Jupiter; or we appeal,  
And from thy justice fly.

JUPITER descends in Thunder and Light-  
ning, sitting upon an Eagle; he throws a  
Thunder-bolt. The Ghosts fall on their  
knees.

*Jup.* No more, you petty spirits of region low,  
Offend our hearing; hush!—How dare you  
ghosts,

Accuse the thunderer, whose bolt you know,  
Sky-planted, batters all rebelling coasts?

Poor shadows of Elysium, hence: and rest  
Upon your never withering banks of flowers:

Be not with mortal accidents oppress'd;  
No care of yours it is, you know, 'tis ours.

Whom best I love, I cross; to make my gift,  
The more delay'd, delighted. Be content;

Your low-laid son our godhead will uplift:  
His comforts thrive, his trials well are spent.

Our Jovial star reign'd at his birth, and in  
Our temple was he married.—Rise, and

He shall be lord of lady Imogen, [fade!—  
And happier much by his affliction made.

This tablet lay upon his breast; wherein  
Our pleasure his full fortune doth confine;

And so, away: no further with your din  
Express impatience, lest you stir up mine.—

Mount, eagle, to my palace crystalline. [Ascends.

*Sici.* He came in thunder; his celestial breath

\* Fetters.

† This Scene is supposed not to be Shakspeare's, but feisted in by the Players  
for mere show.

‡ The fool.

Was sulphurous to smell: the holy eagle  
Stoop'd, as to foot us: his ascension is [bird  
More sweet than our bless'd fields: his royal  
Prunes the immortal wing, and cloyes his beak,  
As when his god is pleased.

*All.* Thanks, Jupiter!

*Sici.* The marble pavement closes, he is enter'd

His radiant roof:—Away! and, to be blest,  
Let us with care perform his great behest.

[*Ghosts vanish.*]

*Post.* [*Waking.*] Sleep, thou hast been a  
grandsire, and begot

A father to me: and thou hast created

A mother and two brothers: But (*O scorn!*)

Gone! they went hence so soon as they were  
born.

And so I am awake.—Poor wretches that de-  
On greatness' favour, dream as I have done;  
Wake, and find nothing.—But, alas, I swerve:  
Many dream not to find, neither deserve,  
And yet are steep'd in favours; so am I, [why.  
That have this golden chance, and know not  
What fairies haunt this ground? A book? O  
rare one!

Be not, as is our fangled world, a garment  
Nobler than that it covers: let thy effects  
So follow, to be most unlike our courtiers,  
As good as promise.

[*Reads.*] *When as a lion's whelp shall, to  
himself known, without seeking find, and  
be embraced by a piece of tender air; and  
when from a stately cedar shall be lopped  
branches, which, being dead many years,  
shall after revive, be jointed to the old  
stock, and freshly grow; then shall Fortu-  
natus end his miseries, Britain be fortun-  
ate, and flourish in peace and plenty.*

'Tis still a dream; or else such stuff as madmen  
Tongue, and brain not: either both, or nothing:  
Or senseless speaking, or a speaking such  
As sense cannot untie. Be what it is,  
The action of my life is like it, which  
I'll keep, if but for sympathy.

*Re-enter Gaolers.*

*Gaol.* Come, sir, are you ready for death?

*Post.* Over-roasted rather: ready long ago.

*Gaol.* Hanging is the word, sir; if you be  
ready for that, you are well cooked.

*Post.* So, if I prove a good repast to the  
spectators, the dish pays the shot.

*Gaol.* A heavy reckoning for you, sir: But  
the comfort is, you shall be called to no more  
payments, fear no more tavern bills; which  
are often the sadness of parting, as the pro-  
curing of mirth: you come in faint for want  
of meat, depart reeling with too much drink;  
sorry that you have paid too much, and sorry  
that you are paid too much; purse and brain  
both empty: the brain the heavier for being  
too light, the purse too light, being drawn of  
heaviness: O! of this contradiction you shall  
now be quit.—O the charity of a penny cord!  
it sums up thousands in a trice: you have no  
true debtor and creditor but it; of what's  
past, is, and to come, the discharge:—Your

neck, sir, is pen, book, and counters; so the  
acquittance follows.

*Post.* I am merrierto die, than thou art to live.

*Gaol.* Indeed, sir, he that sleeps feels not  
the tooth-ach: But a man that were to sleep  
your sleep, and a hangman to help him to bed,  
I think, he would change places with his officer;  
for, look you, sir, you know not which  
way you shall go.

*Post.* Yes, indeed, do I, fellow.

*Gaol.* Your death has eyes in's head then:  
I have not seen him so pictured: you must  
either be directed by some that take upon  
them to know; or take upon yourself that,  
which I am sure you do not know; or jump \*  
the after-inquiry on your own peril: and how  
you shall speed in your journey's end, I think  
you'll never return to tell one.

*Post.* I tell thee, fellow, there are none  
want eyes to direct them the way I am going,  
but such as wink, and will not use them.

*Gaol.* What an infinite mock is this, that a  
man should have the best use of eyes, to see  
the way of blindness! I am sure, hanging's the  
way of winking.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Knock off his manacles; bring your  
prisoner to the king.

*Post.* Thou bringest good news;—I am  
called to be made free.

*Gaol.* I'll be hanged then.

*Post.* Thou shalt be then freer than a gaole  
no bolts for the dead.

[*Exeunt POSTHUMUS and Messenger*]

*Gaol.* Unless a man would marry a gallows  
and beget young gibbets, I never saw one so  
prone†. Yet, on my conscience, there are  
verier knaves desire to live, for all he be a  
Roman: and there be some of them too, that  
die against their wills; so should I, if I were  
one. I would we were all of one mind, and  
one mind good; O, there were desolation on  
gaolers, and gallowses? I speak against my  
present profit; but my wish hath a prefer-  
ment in't. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. Cymbeline's Tent.

*Enter CYMBELINE, BELARIUS, GUIDER-  
IUS, ARVIRAGUS, PISANIO, Lords, Offi-  
cers, and Attendants.*

*Cym.* Stand by my side, you whom the gods  
have made

Preservers of my throne. Woe is my heart,  
That the poor soldier, that so richly fought,  
Whose rags shamed gilded arms, whose naked  
breast

Stepp'd before target of proof, cannot be found:  
He shall be happy that can find him, if  
Our grace can make him so.

*Bel.* I never saw  
Such noble fury in so poor a thing;

Such precious deeds in one that promised  
But beggary and poor looks. [*Knought*]

*Cym.* No tidings of him

*Pis.* He hath been search'd among the dead  
But no trace of him. [*and living*]

\* Hazard.

† Forward.

‡ Target, shield.



*Cym.* To my grief, I am  
The heir of his reward; which I will add  
To you, the liver, heart, and brain of Britain,  
[To BELAR., GUID., and ARVIR.  
By whom, I grant, she lives; 'Tis now the  
To ask of whence you are:—report it. [time  
*Bel.* Sir,  
In Cambria are we born, and gentlemen:  
Further to boast, were neither true nor modest,  
Unless I add, we are honest.

*Cym.* Bow your knees:  
Arise, my knights o'the battle: I create you  
Companions to our person, and will fit you  
With dignities becoming your estates.

*Enter CORNELIUS and Ladies.*  
There's business in these faces:—Why so sadly  
Greet you our victory? you look like Romans,  
And not o'the court of Britain.

*Cor.* Hail, great king!  
To sour your happiness, I must report  
The queen is dead.

*Cym.* Whom worse than a physician  
Would this report become? But I consider,  
By medicine life may be prolong'd, yet death  
Will seize the doctor too.—How ended she?

*Cor.* With horror, madly dying, like her life;  
Which, being cruel to the world, concluded  
Most cruel to herself. What she confessed,  
I will report, so please you: These her women  
Can trip me, if I err: who, with wet cheeks,  
Were present when she finish'd.

*Cym.* Pry'thee, say.  
*Cor.* First, she confess'd she never loved  
you; only

Affected greatness got by you, not you:  
Married your royalty, was wife to your place;  
Abhorr'd your person.

*Cym.* She alone knew this:  
And, but she spoke it dying, I would not  
Believe her lips in opening it. Proceed.

*Cor.* Your daughter, whom she bore in hand  
With such integrity, she did confess [to love  
Was as a scorpion to her sight; whose life,  
But that her slight prevented it, she had  
Ta'en off by poison.

*Cym.* O most delicate fiend!  
Who is't can read a woman?—Is there more?

*Cor.* More, sir, and worse. She did confess,  
she had

For you a mortal mineral; which, being took,  
Should by the minute feed on life, and, ling'r-  
ing, [posed,

By inches waste you: In which time, she pur-  
By watching, weeping, tendance, kissing, to  
O'ercome you with her show: yes, and in  
time, [work

(When she had fitted you with her craft,) to  
Her son into the adoption of the crown.  
But failing of her end by his strange absence,  
Grew shameless desperate; open'd, in despite  
Of heaven and men, her purposes; repented  
The evils she hatch'd were not effected; so,  
Despairing, died.

*Cym.* Heard you all this, her women?  
*Lady.* We did so, please your highness.

*Cym.* Mine eyes

Were not in fault, for she was beautiful;  
Mine ears, that heard her flattery; nor my  
heart, [been vicious,  
That thought her like her seeming; it had  
To have mistrusted her: yet, O my daughter!  
That it was folly in me, thou may'st say,  
And prove it in thy feeling. He! 'ten mend all!  
*Enter LUCIUS, IACHIMO, the Soothsayer,  
and other Roman Prisoners, guarded;  
POSTHUMUS behind, and IMOGEN.*

Thou com'st not, Caius, now for tribute; that  
The Britons have razed out, though with the  
loss [made suit,

Of many a bold one; whose kinsmen have  
That their good souls may be appeased with  
slaughter [granted;

Of you their captives, which ourself have  
So, think of your estate. [day

*Luc.* Consider, sir, the chance of war: the  
Was yours by accident; had it gone with us,  
We should not, when the blood was cool, have  
threaten'd [gods

Our prisoners with the sword. But since the  
Will have it thus, that nothing but our lives  
May be call'd ransom, let it come: sufficeth,  
A Roman with a Roman's heart can suffer:

Augustus lives to think on't: And so much  
For my peculiar care. This one thing only  
I will entreat; My boy, a Briton born,  
Let him be ransomed: never master had

A page so kind, so duteous, diligent,  
So tender over his occasions, true,  
So feat\*, so nurse-like: let his virtue join  
With my request, which, I'll make bold, your  
highness

Cannot deny; he hath done no Briton harm,  
Though he have served a Roman: save him, sir,  
And spare no blood beside.

*Cym.* I have surely seen him:  
His favour † is familiar to me.—

Boy, thou hast look'd thyself into my grace,  
And art mine own.—I know not why, nor  
wherefore, [live:

To say, live, boy: ne'er thank thy master;  
And ask of Cymbeline what boon thou wilt,  
Fitting my bounty, and thy state, I'll give it;  
Yea, though thou do demand a prisoner,  
The noblest ta'en.

*Imo.* I humbly thank your highness.

*Luc.* I do not bid thee beg my life, good  
And yet, I know, thou wilt. [lad;

*Imo.* No, no: a lack,  
There's other work in hand: I see a thing  
Bitter to me as death: your life, good master,  
Must shuffle for itself.

*Luc.* The boy disdains me,  
He leaves me, scorns me: Briefly die their  
joys, [boys,  
That place them on the truth of girls and  
Why stands he so perplex'd?

*Cym.* What wouldst thou, boy?  
I love thee more and more; think more and  
more [on? speak,

What's best to ask. Know'st him thou look'st  
Wilt have him live? Is he thy kin? thy friend?

*Imo.* He is a Roman: no more kin to me,

\* Ready, dexterous.

† Countenance.

than I to your highness; who, being born  
Am something nearer. [your vassal,

*Cym.* Wherefore ey'st him so?

*Imo.* I'll tell you, sir, in private, if you please  
To give me hearing.

*Cym.* Ay, with all my heart,  
And lend my best attention. What's thy name?

*Imo.* Fidele, sir.

*Cym.* Thou art, my good youth, my page;  
I'll bethy master: Walk with me; speak freely.

*CYMBELINE and IMOGEN converse apart.*

*Bel.* Is not this boy revived from death?

*Arv.* One said another  
Not more resembles: That sweet rosy lad,  
Who died, and was Fidele:—What think you?

*Gui.* The same dead thing alive.

*Bel.* Peace, peace! see further; he eyes us  
not; forbear;

Creatures may be alike: were't he, I am sure  
He would have spoke to us.

*Gui.* But we saw him dead.

*Bel.* Be silent; let's see further.

*Pis.* It is my mistress: [Aside.

Since she is living, let the time run on,  
To good, or bad.

*[CYMBELINE and IMOGEN come forward.]*

*Cym.* Come, stand thou by our side;  
Make thy demand aloud.—Sir, [To IACH.] step  
yon forth;

Give answer to this boy, and do it freely:  
Or, by our greatness, and the grace of it,  
Which is our honour, bitter torture shall  
Winnow the truth from falsehood.—On,  
speak to him.

*Imo.* My boon is, that this gentleman may  
Of whom he had this ring, [render

*Post.* What's that to him? [Aside.

*Cym.* That diamond upon your finger, say,  
How came it yours?

*Iach.* Thou'lt torture me to leave unspoken  
Which, to be spoke, would torture thee. [that

*Cym.* How! me?

*Iach.* I am glad to be constrain'd to utter  
that which

Forments me to conceal. By villany  
I got this ring; 'twas Leonatus' jewel:

Whom thou didst banish; and (which more  
may grieve thee,

As it doth me,) a nobler sir ne'er lived  
'Twixt sky and ground. Wilt thou hear more,

*Cym.* All that belongs to this. [my lord?

*Iach.* That paragon, thy daughter,—  
For whom my heart drops blood, and my false  
spirits

Quail\* to remember,—Give me leave; I faint.

*Cym.* My daughter! what of her? Renew  
thy strength:

[will,  
I had rather thou shouldst live while nature  
Than die ere I hear more: strive man, and  
speak.

*Iach.* Upon a time, (unhappy was the clock  
That struck th' hour!) it was in Rome, (accursed  
The mansion where!) 'twas at a feast, (O  
'would

Our viands had been poison'd! or, at least,  
Those which I heaved to head!) the good

Posthūmus,

(What should I say? he was too good, to be  
Where ill men were; and was the best of all  
Amongst the rarest of good ones,) sitting sadly  
Hearing us praise our loves of Italy

For beauty that made barren the swell'd boast  
Of him that best could speak: for feature,  
laming [nerve,

The shrine of Venus, or straight-pight Mi-  
Postures beyond brief nature; for condition,

A shop of all the qualities that man  
Loves woman for; besides, that hook of  
wiving,

Fairness which strikes the eye:—

*Cym.* I stand on fire:  
Come to the matter.

*Iach.* All too soon I shall,  
Unless thou wouldst grieve quickly.—This

Posthūmus

(Most like a noble lord in love, and one  
That had a royal lover,) took his hint;

And, not dispraising whom he praised, (therein  
He was as calm as virtue) he began

His mistress' picture; which by his tongue  
being made,

And then a mind put in't, either our brags  
Were crack'd of kitchen trulls, or his descrip-  
Proved us unspeaking sots. [tion

*Cym.* Nay, nay, to the purpose.

*Iach.* Your daughter's chastity—there it  
begins.

He spake of her as Dian had hot dreams,  
And she alone were cold: Whereat, I, wretch!

Made scruple of his praise; and wager'd with  
him

Pieces of gold 'gainst this which then he wore  
Upon his honour'd finger, to attain [ring

In suit the place of his bed, and win this  
By hers and mine adultery: he, true knight,

No lesser of her honour confident  
Than I did truly find her, stakes this ring;

And would so, had it been a carbuncle  
Of Phœbus' wheel; and might so safely, had it

Been all the worth of his ear. Away to Britain  
Post I in this design: Well may you, sir,

Remember me at court, where I was taught  
Of your chaste daughter the wide difference

'Twixt amorous and villanous. Being thus  
quench'd

Of hope, not longing, mine Italian brain  
'Gan in your drier Britain operate

Most vilely; for my vantage, excellent;  
And, to be brief, my practice so prevail'd,

That I return'd with simular proof enough  
To make the noble Leonatus mad,

By wounding his belief in her renown  
With tokens thus and thus; averring notes

Of chamber-hanging, pictures, this her brace  
let,

(O, cunning, how I got it!) nay, some marks  
Of secret on her person, that he could not

But think her bond of chastity quite crack'd  
I having ta'en the forfeit. Whereupon,—

Methinks, I see him now, —

Sink into dejection.

*Post.* Ay, so thou dost,  
[*Coming forward.*  
Italian fiend!—Ah me, most credulous fool,  
Egregious murderer, thief, any thing  
That's due to all the villains past, in being,  
To come!—O, give me cord, or knife, or poison,  
Some upright justicer! Thou, king, send out  
For torturers ingenious: it is I  
That all the abhorred things of the earth amend,  
By being worse than they. I am Posthúmus,  
That kill'd thy daughter:—villain-like, I lie;  
That caused a lesser villain than myself,  
A sacrilegious thief, to do't:—the temple  
Of virtue was she; yea, and she herself\*.  
Spit, and throw stones, cast mire upon me, set  
The dogs of the street to bay me: every villain  
Be call'd Posthúmus Leonatus; and  
Be villany less than 'twas!—O Imogen!  
My queen, my life, my wife! O Imogen,  
Imogen, Imogen!

*Imo.* Peace, my lord; hear, hear—  
*Post.* Shall's have a play of this? Thou  
scornful page,

There lie thy part. [*Striking her, she falls.*  
*Pis.* O, gentlemen, help, help [mus!  
Mine, and your mistress:—O, my lord Posthú-  
mus, you ne'er kill'd Imogen till now:—Help,  
Mine honour'd lady! [*help!—*

*Cym.* Does the world go round?  
*Post.* How come these staggers on me?

*Pis.* Wake, my mistress?  
*Cym.* If this be so, the gods do mean to  
To death with mortal joy. [*strike me*

*Pis.* How fares my mistress?  
*Imo.* O, get thee from my sight; [hence!  
Thou gavest me poison: dangerous fellow,  
Breathe not where princes are.

*Cym.* The tune of Imogen!

*Pis.* Lady,  
The gods throw stones of sulphur on me, if  
That box I gave you was not thought by me  
A precious thing; I had it from the queen.

*Cym.* New matter still?

*Imo.* It poison'd me.

*Cor.* O Gods!—  
I left out one thing which the queen confess'd,  
Which must approve thee honest: If Pisanio  
Have said she, given his mistress that confection  
Which I gave him for a cordial, she is served  
As I would serve a rat.

*Cym.* What's this, Cornelius?  
*Cor.* The queen, sir, very oft importuned me  
To temper† poisons for her; still pretending  
The satisfaction of her knowledge, only  
In killing creatures vile, as cats and dogs  
Of no esteem; I, dreading that her purpose  
Was of more danger, did compound for her  
A certain stuff, which, being ta'en would cease  
The present power of life; but, in short time,  
All offices of nature should again  
Do their due functions.—Have you ta'en of it?

*Imo.* Most like I did, for I was dead.

*Bel.* My boys,  
There was our error.

*Gui.* This is sure, Fidele. [from you?

*Imo.* Why did you throw your wedded lady

Think, that you are upon a rock; and now  
Throw me again. [*Embracing him*

*Post.* Hang there like fruit, my soul  
Till the tree die!

*Cym.* How now, my flesh, my child?  
What, makest thou me a dullard in this act?  
Wilt thou not speak to me?

*Imo.* Your blessing, sir.  
[*Kneeling.*

*Bel.* Though you did love this youth,  
You had a motive for't. [*blame ye not;*

[*To GUIDERIUS and ARVIRAGUS.*  
*Cym.* My tears that fall

Prove holy water on thee! Imogen,  
Thy mother's dead.

*Imo.* I am sorry for't, my lord

*Cym.* O, she was naught; and 'long of her  
was,

That we meet here so strangely: But her soul  
Is gone, we know not how, nor where.

*Pis.* My lord  
Now fear is from me, I'll speak troth. Look'd  
Upon my lady's missing, came to me [Cloten,

With his sword drawn; foam'd at the mouth,  
and swore,

If I discover'd not which way she was gone,  
It was my instant death: By accident,

I had a feigned letter of my master's  
Then in my pocket; which directed him

To seek her on the mountains near to Milford;  
Where, in a frenzy, in my master's garments,

Which he enforced from me, away he posts  
With unchaste purpose, and with oath to vio-

My lady's honour: what became of him, [late  
I further know not.

*Gui.* Let me end the story:  
I slew him there.

*Cym.* Marry, the gods forfend?!

I would not thy good deeds should from my  
lips

Pluck a hard sentence: pry'thee, valiant youth,  
Deny't again.

*Gui.* I have spoke it, and I did it.

*Cym.* He was a prince. [*did me*

*Gui.* A most uncivil one: The wrongs he  
Were nothing prince-like; for he did provoke  
me [*scat,*

With language that would make me spurn the  
If it could roar so to me: I cut off's head;

And am right glad he is not standing here  
To tell this tale of mine.

*Cym.* I am sorry for thee:  
By thine own tongue thou art condemn'd, and  
Endure our law: Thou art dead. [*must*

*Imo.* That headless man  
I thought had been my lord.

*Cym.* Bind the offender,  
And take him from our presence.

*Bel.* Stay, sir king:  
This man is better than the man he slew,

As well descended as thyself; and hath  
More of thee merited than a band of Clotens

Had ever scar for.—Let his arms alone;  
[*To the Guard*

They were not born for bondage.

*Cym.* Why, old soldier

\* Not only the temple of virtue, but virtue herself. † Mix, compound. ‡ Forbid.



Wilt thou undo the worth thou art unpaid for,  
By tasting of our wrath? How of descent  
As good as we?

*Arv.* In that he spake too far.

*Cym.* And thou shalt die for't.

*Bel.* We will die all three:

But I will prove, that two of us are as good  
As I have given out him.—My sons, I must,  
For mine own part, unfold a dangerous speech,  
Though, haply, well for you.

*Arv.* Your danger is  
Ours.

*Gul.* And our good his.

*Bel.* Have at it, then.—  
By leave;—Thou hadst, great king, a subject,  
Was call'd Belarius. [who

*Cym.* What of him? he is  
A banish'd traitor.

*Bel.* He it is, that hath  
Assumed this age: indeed, a banish'd man;  
I know not how, a traitor.

*Cym.* Take him hence;  
The whole world shall not save him.

*Bel.* Not too hot:  
First pay me for the nursing of thy sons;  
And let it be confiscate all, so soon  
As I have received it.

*Cym.* Nursing of my sons?

*Bel.* I am too blunt, and saucy: Here's my  
Ere I arise, I will prefer my sons; [knee;  
Then, spare not the old father. Mighty sir,  
These two young gentlemen, that call me father,  
And think they are my sons, are none of mine;  
They are the issue of your loins, my liege,  
And blood of your begetting.

*Cym.* How! my issue?

*Bel.* So sure as you your father's. I, old  
Morgan, [nish'd:  
Am that Belarius whom you sometime ba-  
Your pleasure was my mere offence, my pu-  
nishment

Itself, and all my treason; that I suffer'd,  
Was all the harm I did. These gentle princes  
(For such, and so, they are,) these twenty years  
Have I train'd up: those arts they have, as I  
Could put into them; my breeding was, sir, as  
Your highness knows. Their nurse, Euriphile,  
Whom for the theft I wedded, stole these chil-  
Upon my banishment: I moved her to't; [dren  
Having received the punishment before,  
For that which I did then: Beaten for loyalty  
Excited me to treason: Their dear loss,  
The more of you 'twas felt, the more it shaped  
Unto my end of stealing them. But, gracious  
Here are your sons again; and I must lose [sir,  
Two of the sweet'st companions in the world:  
The benediction of these covering heavens  
Fall on their heads like dew! for they are  
To inlay heaven with stars. [worthy

*Cym.* Thou weep'st, and speak'st.  
The service that you three have done, is more  
Unlike than this thou tell'st: I lost my chil-  
If these be they, I know not how to wish [dren;  
A pair of worthier sons.

*Bel.* Be pleased a while.—  
This gentleman, whom I call Polydore,

Most worthy prince, as yours, is true, Guide-  
This gentleman, my Cadwal, Arviragus, [rius;  
Your younger princely son; he, sir, was lapp'd  
In a most curious mantle, wrought by the hand  
Of his queen mother, which, for more proba-  
I can with ease produce. [tion,

*Cym.* Guiderius had  
Upon his neck a mole, a sanguine star;  
It was a mark of wonder.

*Bel.* This is he;  
Who hath upon him still that natural stamp;  
It was wise nature's end in the donation,  
To be his evidence now.

*Cym.* O, what am I  
A mother to the birth of three? Ne'er mother  
Rejoiced deliverance more:—Bless'd may you  
be,

That, after this strange starting from your orbs,  
You may reign in them now!—O Imogen,  
Thou hast lost by this a kingdom.

*Imo.* No, my lord;  
I have got two worlds by't.—O my gentle bro-  
Have we thus met? O never say hereafter, [ther,  
But I am truest speaker: you call'd me brother,  
When I was but your sister; I you brothers,  
When you were so indeed.

*Cym.* Did you ere meet?  
*Arv.* Ay, my good lord.

*Gul.* And at first meeting loved;  
Continued so, until we thought he died.

*Car.* By the queen's dram she swallow'd.

*Cym.* O rare instinct!  
When shall I hear all through? This fierce \*  
abridgment

Hath to it circumstantial branches, which  
Distinction should be rich in't.—Where? how  
lived you? [tive?

And when came you to serve our Roman cap-  
How parted with your brothers? how first met  
them? [These,

Why fled you from the court? and whither?  
And your three motives to the battle, with  
I know not how much more, should be de-  
And all the other by-dependancies. [manded;  
From chance to chance; but nor the time, nor  
Will serve our long intergatories. See, [place,  
Posthumus anchors upon Imogen; [eye  
And she, like harmless lightning, throws her  
On him, her brothers, me, her master; hitting  
Each object with a joy; the counterchange  
Is severally in all. Let's quit this ground,  
And smoke the temple with our sacrifices.—  
Thou art my brother; So we'll hold thee ever.

[To BELARIUS.  
*Imo.* You are my father too; and did re-  
To see this gracious season. [lieve me,

*Cym.* All o'erjoy'd,  
Save these in bonds; let them be joyful too,  
For they shall taste our comfort.

*Imo.* My good master,  
I will yet do you service.

*Luc.* Happy be you!

*Cym.* The foilorn soldier, that so nobly  
fought, [graced  
He would have well become this place, and  
The thankings of a king.

*Post.* I am, sir,  
The soldier that did company these three  
In poor beseeching; 'twas a fitment for  
The purpose I then follow'd;—That I was he,  
Speak, Iachimo; I had you down, and might  
Have made you finish.

*Iach.* I am down again :  
[*Kneeling.*  
But now my heavy conscience sinks my knee,  
As then your force did. Take that life, 'beseech  
you,  
Which I so often owe : but, your ring first ;  
And here the bracelet of the truest princess  
That ever swore her faith.

*Post.* Kneel not to me ;  
The power that I have on you, is to spare you ;  
The malice towards you, to forgive you : Live,  
And deal with others better.

*Cym.* Nobly doom'd :  
We'll learn our freeness of a son-in-law ;  
Pardon's the word to all.

*Arrv.* You help us, sir.  
As you did mean indeed to be our brother ;  
Joy'd are we, that you are. [*Lord of Rome,*

*Post.* Your servant, princes.—Good my  
Call forth your soothsayer : As I slept, me-  
Great Jupiter, upon his eagle back, [*thought,*  
Appear'd to me, with other spritely shows \*  
Of mine own kindred : when I waked, I found  
This label on my bosom ; whose containing  
Is so from sense in hardness, that I can  
Make no collection of it ; let him show  
His skill in the construction.

*Luc.* Philarmonus, —  
*Sooth.* Here, my good lord.

*Luc.* Read, and declare the meaning.  
*Sooth.* [*Reads.*] *When as a lion's whelp  
shall, to himself unknown, without seeking  
find, and be embraced by a piece of tender  
air ; and when from a stately cedar shall  
be lopp'd branches, which, being dead many  
years shall after revive, be jointed to the  
old stock, and freshly grow ; then shall  
Posthumus end his miseries, Britain be for-  
tunate, and flourish in peace and plenty.  
Thou, Leonatus, art the lion's whelp ;  
The fit and apt construction of thy name,*

Being Leo-natus, doth import so much :  
The piece of tender air, thy virtuous daughter  
[*To CYMBELINE.*

Which we call *mollis aër* ; and *mollis aër*  
We term it *mulier* ; which *mulier* I divine,  
Is this most constant wife : who, even now,  
Answering the letter of the oracle,  
Unknown to you, unsought, were clipp'd about  
With this most tender air.

*Cym.* This hath some seeming.  
*Sooth.* The lofty cedar, royal Cymbeline,  
Personates thee : and thy lopp'd branches point  
Thy two sons forth : who, by Belarius stolen,  
For many years thought dead, are now revived,  
To the majestic cedar join'd ; whose issue  
Promises Britain peace and plenty.

*Cym.* Well,  
My peace we will begin :—And, Caius Lucius,  
Although the victor, we submit to Caesar,  
And to the Roman empire ; promising  
To pay our wonted tribute, from the which  
We were dissuaded by our wicked queen ;  
Whom heavens, in justice, (both on her and  
Have laid most heavy hand. [*hers.*]

*Sooth.* The fingers of the powers above do  
The harmony of this peace. The vision [*tune*  
Which I made known to Lucius, ere the stroke  
Of this yet scarce-cold battle, at this instant  
Is full accomplish'd : For the Roman eagle,  
From south to west on wing soaring aloft,  
Lessen'd herself, and in the beams o'the sun  
So vanish'd : which foreshow'd our princely  
The imperial Caesar, should again unite [*eagle,*  
His favour with the radiant Cymbeline,  
Which shines here in the west.

*Cym.* Laud we the gods ;  
And let our crooked smokes climb to their  
nostrils  
From our bless'd altars ! Publish we this peace  
To all our subjects. Set we forward : Let  
A Roman and a British ensign wave  
Friendly together : so through Lud's town  
And in the temple of great Jupiter [*march :*  
Our peace we'll ratify ; seal it with feasts.—  
Set on there :—Never was a war did cease,  
Ere bloody hands were wash'd, with such a  
peace. [*Exeunt.*

\* Ghostly appearances.

† Embraced.

This play has many just sentiments, some natural dialogues, and some pleasing scenes, but they are obtained at the expense of much incongruity. To remark the folly of the fiction, the absurdity of the conduct, the confusion of the names, and manners of different times, and the impossibility of the events in any system of life, were to waste criticism upon unresisting imbecility, upon faults too evident for detection, and too gross for aggravation.—  
JOHNSON.

# TITUS ANDRONICUS.

## Persons represented.

SATURNINUS, son to the late Emperor of Rome, and afterwards declared Emperor himself.  
 BASSIANUS, brother to Saturninus; in love with Lavinia.  
 TITUS ANDRONICUS, a noble Roman, general against the Goths.  
 MARCUS ANDRONICUS, tribune of the people, and brother to Titus.  
 LUCIUS, QUINTUS, MARTIUS, MUTIUS, sons to Titus Andronicus.  
 YOUNG LUCIUS, a boy, son to Lucius.  
 PUBLIUS, son to Marcus, the tribune.  
 EMILIUS, a noble Roman.

ALARBUS,  
 CHIRON,  
 DEMETRIUS, } sons to Tamora.  
 AARON, a Moor, beloved by Tamora.  
 A Captain, Tribune, Messenger, and Clown Romans.  
 Goths and Romans.  
 TAMORA, Queen of the Goths.  
 LAVINIA, daughter to Titus Andronicus.  
 A Nurse, and a Black Child.  
 Kinsmen of Titus, Senators, Tribunes, Officers, Soldiers, and Attendants.  
 Scene, Rome, and the country near it.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. Rome. Before the Capitol.

*The Tomb of the Andronici appearing: the Tribunes and Senators aloft, as in the Senate. Enter, below, SATURNINUS and his Followers, on one side; and BASSIANUS and his Followers, on the other; with Drum and Colours.*

*Sat.* Noble patricians, patrons of my right,  
 Defend the justice of my cause with arms;  
 And, countrymen, my loving followers,  
 Plead my successive title\* with your swords:  
 I am his first-born son, that was the last  
 That wore the imperial diadem of Rome;  
 Then let my father's honours live in me,  
 Nor wrong mine age with this indignity.

*Bas.* Romans,—friends, followers, favourers  
 of my right,—

If ever Bassianus, Cæsar's son,  
 Were gracious in the eyes of royal Rome,  
 Keep then this passage to the Capitol;  
 And suffer not dishonour to approach  
 The imperial seat, to virtue consecrate,  
 To justice, continence, and nobility:  
 But let desert in pure election shine;  
 And, Romans, fight for freedom in your choice.

*Enter MARCUS ANDRONICUS aloft, with the Crown.*

*Mar.* Princes, that strive by factions and  
 by friends  
 Ambitiously for rule and empery,—  
 Know that the people of Rome, for whom  
 we stand  
 A special party, have, by their common voice,  
 In election for the Roman empery,

Chosen Andronicus, surnamed Pius,  
 For many good and great deserts to Rome;  
 A nobler man, a braver warrior,  
 Lives not this day within the city walls:  
 He by the senate is accited † home,  
 From weary wars against the barbarous Goths  
 That, with his sons, a terror to our foes,  
 Hath yoked a nation strong, train'd up in arms.  
 Ten years are spent since first he undertook  
 This cause of Rome, and chastised with arms  
 Our enemies' pride. Five times he hath re-

turn'd  
 Bleeding to Rome, bearing his valiant sons  
 In coffins from the field;  
 And now, at last, laden with honour's spoils,  
 Returns the good Andronicus to Rome,  
 Renowned Titus, flourishing in arms.  
 Let us entreat,—By honour of his name,  
 Whom, worthily, you would have now succeed,  
 And in the Capitol and senate's right,  
 Whom you pretend to honour and adore,—  
 That you withdraw you, and abate your  
 strength;  
 Dismiss your followers, and, as suitors should,  
 Plead your deserts in peace and humbleness.

*Sat.* How fair the tribune speaks to calm  
 my thoughts!

*Bas.* Marcus Andronicus, so I do affy  
 In thy uprightness and integrity,  
 And so I love and honour thee and thine,  
 Thy nobler brother Titus, and his sons, [all  
 And her, to whom my thoughts are humbled  
 Gracious Lavinia, Rome's rich ornament,  
 That I will here dismiss my loving friends;  
 And to my fortunes, and the people's favour,

\* i e., My title to the succession.

† Summoned.



Commit my cause in balance to be weigh'd.

[*Exeunt the Followers of BASSIANUS.*]

*Sat.* Friends that have been thus forward in my right,

I thank you all, and here dismiss you all;  
And to the love and favour of my country  
Commit myself, my person, and the cause,

[*Exeunt the Followers of SATURNINUS.*]

Rome, be as just and gracious unto me,  
As I am confident and kind to thee.—  
Open the gates, and let me in.

*Bas.* Tribunes! and me, a poor competitor.

[*SAT. and BAS. go into the Capitol, and exeunt with Senators, MARCUS, &c.*]

## SCENE II. *The same.*

*Enter a Captain, and Others.*

*Cap.* Romans, make way; the good Andronicus,

Patron of virtue, Rome's best champion,  
Successful in the battles that he fights,  
With honour and with fortune is return'd,  
From where he circumscribed with his sword,  
And brought to yoke, the enemies of Rome.

*Flourish of Trumpets, &c., enter MUTIUS and MARTIUS: after them, two Men bearing a Coffin covered with black; then QUINTUS and LUCIUS. After them, TITUS ANDRONICUS; and then TAMORA, with ALARBUS, CHIRON, DEMETRIUS, AARON, and other Goths, prisoners; Soldiers and People, following. The Bearers set down the Coffin, and TITUS speaks.*

*Tit.* Hail, Rome, victorious in thy mourning weeds!

Lo, as the bark that hath discharged her  
Returns with precious lading to the bay,  
From whence at first she weigh'd her anchorage,

Come th Andronicus, bound with laurel boughs,  
To re-solute his country with his tears;  
Tears of true joy for his return to Rome.—  
Thou great defender of this Capitol,  
Stand gracious to the rites that we intend!—  
Romans, of five-and-twenty valiant sons,  
Half of the number that king Priam had,  
Behold the poor remains, alive, and dead!  
These, that survive, let Rome reward with love;

These, that I bring unto their latest home,  
With burial amongst their ancestors:  
Here Goths have given me leave to sheath my sword.

Titus, unkind, and careless of thine own,  
Why suffer'st thou thy sons, unburied yet,  
To hover on the dreadful shore of Styx?—  
Make way to lay them by their brethren.

[*The Tomb is opened.*]

There greet in silence, as the dead are wont,  
And sleep in peace, slain in your country's  
O sacred receptacle of my joys, [wails]  
Sweet cell of virtue and nobility,  
How many sons of mine hast thou in store,  
That thou wilt never render to me more?

*Luc.* Give us the proudest prisoner of the Goths,

That we may hew his limbs, and, on a pile,  
*Ad manes fratrum* sacrifice his flesh,  
Before this earthly prison of their bones;  
That so the shadows be not unappeased,  
Nor we disturbed with prodigies on earth.

*Tit.* I give him you; the noblest that survives,

The eldest son of this distressed queen

*Tam.* Stay, Roman brethren;—Gracious conqueror,

Victorious Titus, rue the tears I shed,  
A mother's tears in passion for her son:  
And, if thy sons were ever dear to thee,  
O, think my son to be as dear to me.

Sufficeth not, that we are brought to Rome,  
To beautify thy triumphs, and return,  
Captive to thee, and to thy Roman yoke;  
But must my sons be slaughter'd in the streets,  
For valiant doings in their country's cause?  
O! if to fight for king and common weal  
Were piety in thine, it is in these.

Andronicus, stain not thy tomb with blood:  
Wilt thou draw near the nature of the gods  
Draw near them then in being merciful:  
Sweet mercy is nobility's true badge;  
Thrice noble Titus, spare my first-born son.

*Tit.* Patient yourself, madam, and pardon me. [beheld]

These are their brethren, whom you Goths  
Alive, and dead; and for their brethren slain,  
Religiously they ask a sacrifice:  
To this your son is mark'd; and die he must,  
To appease their groaning shadows that are gone. [straight;]

*Luc.* Away with him! and make a fire  
And with our swords, upon a pile of wood,  
Let's hew his limbs, till they be clean consumed.

[*Exeunt LUCIUS, QUINTUS, MARTIUS, and MUTIUS, with ALARBUS.*]

*Tam.* O cruel, irreligious piety!

*Chi.* Was ever Scythia half so barbarous?

*Dem.* Oppose not Scythia to ambitious  
Alarbus goes to rest; and we survive [Rome].  
To tremble under Titus's threatening look.

Then, madam, stand resolved; but hope withal, [Troy]

The self-same gods, that arm'd the queen of  
With opportunity of sharp revenge  
Upon the Thracian tyrant in his tent,  
May favour Tamora, the queen of Goths,  
(When Goths were Goths, and Tamora was queen.)

To quit the bloody wrongs upon her foes.

*Re-enter LUCIUS, QUINTUS, MARTIUS, and MUTIUS, with their Swords bloody.*

*Luc.* See, lord and father, how we have perform'd

Our Roman rites: Alarbus' limbs are lopp'd,  
And entrails feed the sacrificing fire,  
Whose smoke, like incense, doth perfume the sky.

Remaineth nought, but to inter our brethren

• Freight.      + Jupiter, to whom the Capitol was sacred.

ghosts of unburied people appeared to solicit the rites of funeral.

† It was supposed that the

§ Sattering.

And with loud 'larums welcome them to Rome.

*Tit.* Let it be so, and let Andronicus Make this his latest farewell to their souls.

[*Trumpets sound, and the Coffins laid in the Tomb.*]

In peace and honour rest you here, my sons; Rome's readiest champions, repose you here, Secure from worldly chances and mishaps! Here lurks no treason, here no envy swells, Here grow no damned grudges; here, are no storms,

No noise, but silence and eternal sleep:

*Enter LAVINIA.*

In peace and honour rest you here, my sons!

*Lav.* In peace and honour live lord Titus long;

My noble lord and father, live in fame!

Lo! at this tomb my tributary tears

I render, for my brethren's obsequies;

And at thy feet I kneel with tears of joy

Shed on the earth, for thy return to Rome:

O, bless me here with thy victorious hand,

Whose fortunes Rome's best citizens applaud.

*Tit.* Kind Rome, that hast thus lovingly reserved

The cordial of mine age to glad my heart!—

Lavinia, live; outlive thy father's days,

And fame's eternal date, for virtue's praise\*!

*Enter MARCUS ANDRONICUS, SATURNINUS, BASSIANUS, and Others.*

*Mar.* Long live lord Titus, my beloved brother,

Gracious triumpher in the eyes of Rome!

*Tit.* Thanks, gentle tribune, noble brother Marcus.

[*cessful wars,*]

*Mar.* And welcome, nephews, from suc-

You that survive, and you that sleep in fame.

Fair lords, your fortunes are alike in all,

That in your country's service drew your

swords:

But safer triumph is this funeral pomp,

That hath aspired to Solon's happiness†,

And triumphs over chance, in honour's bed.—

Titus Andronicus, the people of Rome,

Whose friend in justice thou hast ever been,

Send thee by me, their tribune and their trust,

This palliament‡ of white and spotless hue;

And name thee in election for the empire,

With these our late-deceased emperor's sons

Be *candidatus* then, and put it on.

And help to set a head on headless Rome.

*Tit.* A better head her glorious body fits

Than his, that shakes for age and feebleness:

What! should I don§ this robe, and trouble

Be chosen with proclamations to-day; [you]

To-morrow, yield up rule, resign my life,

And set abroad new business for you all?

Rome, I have been thy soldier forty years,

And buried one-and-twenty valiant sons,

Knighted in field, slain manfully in arms,

In right and service of their noble country:

Give me a staff of honour for mine age,

But not a sceptre to control the world:

Upright he held it, lords, that neld it last.

*Mar.* Titus, thou shalt obtain and ask the empery. [thou tell?—

*Sat.* Proud and ambitious tribune, canst

*Tit.* Patience, prince Saturnine.

*Sat.*

Romans, do me right;— Patricians, draw your swords, and sheath them not

Till Saturninus be Rome's emperor:—

Andronicus, 'would thou wert shipp'd to hell, Rather than rob me of the people's hearts.

*Luc.* Proud Saturnine, interrupter of the good

That noble-minded Titus means to thee!

*Tit.* Content thee, prince; I will restore to thee [themselves.

The people's hearts, and wean them from

*Bas.* Andronicus, I do not flatter thee,

But honour thee, and will do till I die;

My faction, if thou strengthen with thy friends,

I will most thankful be: and thanks, to men Of noble minds, is honourable meed. [here,

*Tit.* People of Rome, and people's tribunes

I ask your voices, and your suffrages; [us?

Will you bestow them friendly on Andronicus?

*Tri.* To gratify the good Andronicus,

And gratulate his safe return to Rome,

The people will accept whom he admits.

*Tit.* Tribunes, I thank you: and this suit I make,

That you create your emperor's eldest son, Lord Saturnine; whose virtues will, I hope,

Reflect on Rome, as Titan's|| rays on earth,

And ripen justice in this common-weal:

Then if you will elect by my advice, [peror!

Crown him, and say,—*Long live our em-*

*Mar.* With voices and applause of every

Patricians, and plebeians, we create [sort,

Lord Saturninus Rome's great emperor;

And say,—*Long live our emperor Saturnine!*

[*A long Flourish.*]

*Sat.* Titus Andronicus, for thy favours done

To us in our election this day,

I give thee thanks in part of thy deserts,

And will with deeds requite thy gentleness:

And, for an onset, Titus, to advance

Thy name, and honourable family,

Lavinia will I make my emperess,

Rome's royal mistress, mistress of my heart,

And in the sacred Pantheon her espouse:

Tell me, Andronicus, doth this motion please

thee? [match,

*Tit.* It doth, my worthy lord; and, in this

I hold me highly honour'd of your grace:

And here, in sight of Rome, to Saturnine,—

King and commander of our common-weal,

The wide world's emperor,—do I consecrate

My sword, my chariot, and my prisoners;

Presents well worthy Rome's imperial lord:

Receive them then, the tribute that I owe,

Mine honour's ensigns humbled at thy feet.

*Sat.* Thanks, noble Titus, father of my life

How proud I am of thee, and of thy gifts,

\* He wishes that her life may be longer than his, and her praise longer than fame.

† The maxim alluded to is, that no man can be pronounced happy before his death.

‡ A robe.

§ i. e., Do on, put it on.

|| The sun.

Rome shall record; and, when I do forget  
The least of these unspeakable deserts,  
Romans, forget your fealty to me.

*Tit.* Now, madam, are you prisoner to an emperor; [To TAMORA.

To him, that for your honour and your state,  
Will use you nobly, and your followers.

*Sat.* A goodly lady, trust me; of the hue  
That I would choose, were I to choose anew.  
Clear up, fair queen, that cloudy countenance;  
Though chance of war hath wrought this  
change of cheer,

Thou comest not to be made a scorn in Rome:  
Princely shall be thy usage every way.

Rest on my word, and let not discontent  
Daunt all your hopes; Madam, he comforts  
you,

Can make you greater than the queen of Goths.  
Lavinia, you are not displeased with this?

*Lav.* Not I, my lord; sith \* true nobility  
Warrants these words in princely courtesy.

*Sat.* Thanks, sweet Lavinia.—Romans, let  
us go;

Ransomless here we set our prisoners free:  
Proclaim our honours, lords, with trump and  
drum.

*Bas.* Lord Titus, by your leave, this maid  
is mine. [Seizing LAVINIA.

*Tit.* How, sir? Are you in earnest then, my  
lord?

*Bas.* Ay, noble Titus; and resolved withal,  
To do myself this reason and this right.

[The Emperor courts TAMORA in dumb  
show.

*Mar.* *Suum cuique* is our Roman justice:  
This prince in justice seizeth but his own.

*Luc.* And that he will, and shall, if Lucius  
live. [peror's guard?

*Tit.* Traitors, avaunt! Where is the em-  
pire's guard? Treason, my lord; Lavinia is surprised.

*Sat.* Surprised! By whom?

*Bas.* By him that justly may  
Bear his betroth'd from all the world away.

[*Exeunt* MARCUS and BASSIANUS,  
with LAVINIA.

*Mut.* Brothers, help to convey her hence  
away,

And with my sword I'll keep this door safe.

[*Exeunt* LUCIUS, QUINTUS, and  
MARTIUS.

*Tit.* Follow, my lord, and I'll soon bring  
her back.

*Mut.* My lord, you pass not here.

*Tit.* What, villain boy!  
Barr'st me my way in Rome?

[*Titus kills MUTIUS.*  
Help, Lucius, help.

*Mut.* *Re-enter* LUCIUS.

*Luc.* My lord, you are unjust: and, more  
than so,

In wrongful quarrel you have slain your son.

*Tit.* Nor thou, nor he, are any sons of  
My sons would never so dishonour me: [mine:  
Traitor, restore Lavinia to the emperor.

*Luc.* Dead, if you will: but not to be his  
wife,

That is another's lawful promised love. [*Exit*

*Sat.* No, Titus, no; the emperor needs her  
Not her, nor thee, nor any of thy stock: not  
I'll trust, by leisure, him that mocks me once;  
Thee never, nor thy traitorous haughty sons,  
Confederates all thus to dishonour me. [of,  
Was there none else in Rome to make a stale?  
But Saturnine? Full well, Andronicus,  
Agree these deeds with that proud brag of thine,  
That said'st, I begg'd the empire at thy hands.

*Tit.* O monstrous! what reproachful words  
are these? [ing piece

*Sat.* But go thy ways; go, give that chang-  
To him that flourish'd for her with his sword:  
A valiant son-in-law thou shalt enjoy;  
Oue fit to bandy with thy lawless sons,  
To ruffle † in the commonwealth of Rome.

*Tit.* These words are razors to my wounded  
heart. [of Goths,—

*Sat.* And therefore, lovely Tamora, queen  
That, like the stately Phœbe 'mongst her  
nymphs,

Dost overshine the gallant'st dames of Rome,  
If thou be pleased with this my sudden choice,  
Behold, I choose thee, Tamora, for my bride,  
And will create thee emperess of Rome.

Speak, queen of Goths, dost thou applaud my  
choice?

And here I swear by all the Roman gods,—  
Sith priest and holy water are so near,  
And tapers burn so bright, and every thing  
In readiness for Hymeneus stand,—  
I will not re-salute the streets of Rome,  
Or climb my palace, till from forth this place  
I lead espoused my bride along with me.

*Tam.* And here, in sight of heaven, to Rome  
I swear,

If Saturnine advance the queen of Goths,  
She will a handmaid be to his desires,  
A loving nurse, a mother to his youth.

*Sat.* Ascend, fair queen, Pantheon:—Lords,  
accompany

Your noble emperor and his lovely bride,  
Sent by the heavens for prince Saturnine,  
Whose wisdom hath her fortune conquered:  
There shall we consummate our spousal rites.

[*Exeunt* SATURNINUS, and his Fol-  
lowers: TAMORA, and her Sons;  
AARON, and Goths.

*Tit.* I am not bid ‡ to wait upon this bride;  
Titus, when wert thou wont to walk alone,  
Dishonour'd thus, and challenged of wrongs?  
*Re-enter* MARCUS, LUCIUS, QUINTUS, and  
MARTIUS.

*Mar.* O, Titus, see, O, see, what thou hast  
In a bad quarrel slain a virtuous son. [done!

*Tit.* No, foolish tribune, no; no son of  
mine,—

Nor thou, nor these, confederates in the deed  
That hath dishonour'd all our family;  
Unworthy brother, and unworthy sons!

*Luc.* But let us give him burial, as becomes;  
Give Mutius burial with our brethren. [tomb.

*Tit.* Traitors, away! he rests not in this  
This monument five hundred years hath stood  
Which I have sumptuously re-edified:

• Since.

† A stalking-horse.

‡ A ruffler was a bully.

§ Invited.



Here none but soldiers, and Rome's servitors,  
Repose in fame; none basely slain in brawls:  
Bury him where you can, he comes not here.

*Mar.* My lord, this is impiety in you:  
My nephew Mutius' deeds do plead for him;  
He must be buried with his brethren.

*Quin. Mart.* And shall, or him we will accompany. [that word?

*Tit.* And shall? What villain was it spoke  
*Quin.* He that would youch't it in any place  
but here. [spite?

*Tit.* What, would you bury him in my de-  
*Mar.* No, noble Titus; but entreat of thee  
to pardon Mutius, and to bury him. [crest,

*Tit.* Marcus, even thou hast struck upon my  
And, with these boys, mine honour thou hast  
wounded:

My foes I do repute you every one;  
So trouble me no more, but get you gone.

*Mar.* He is not with himself; let us with-  
draw.

*Quin.* Not I, till Mutius' bones be buried.  
[*MARCUS and the Sons of TITUS kneel.*

*Mar.* Brother, for in that name doth nature  
plead. [speak.

*Quin.* Father, and in that name doth nature  
*Tit.* Speak thou no more, if all the rest  
will speed. [soul,—

*Mar.* Renowned Titus, more than half my  
*Luc.* Dear father, soul and substance of us  
all,—

*Mar.* Suffer thy brother Marcus to inter  
His noble nephew here in virtue's nest,  
That died in honour and Lavinia's cause.  
Thou art a Roman, be not barbarous.  
The Greeks, upon advice, did bury Ajax  
That slew himself; and wise Laertes' son  
Did graciously plead for his funerals.

Let not young Mutius then, that was thy joy,  
Be barr'd his entrance here.

*Tit.* Rise, Marcus, rise:—  
The dismall'st day is this, that e'er I saw,  
To be dishonour'd by my sons in Rome!—  
Well, bury him, and bury me the next.

[*MUTIUS is put into the Tomb.*  
*Luc.* There lie thy bones, sweet Mutius,  
with thy friends,

Till we with trophies do adorn thy tomb!—

*All.* No man shed tears for noble Mutius;  
He lives in fame that died in virtue's cause.

*Mar.* My lord,—to step out of these dreary  
dumps,—

How comes it, that the subtle queen of Goths  
Is of a sudden thus advanced in Rome? [is;

*Tit.* I know not, Marcus; but, I know, it  
Whether by device, or no, the heavens can  
Is she not then beholden to the man [tell:  
That brought her for this high good turn so far?  
Yes, and will nobly him remunerate.

*Flourish.* Re-enter, at one side, SATUR-  
NINUS, attended; TAMORA, CHIRON, DE-  
METRIUS, and AARON: At the Other,  
BASSIANUS, LAVINIA, and Others.

*Sat.* So Bassianus, you have play'd your  
prize;

God give you joy, sir, of your gallant bride.

*Bas.* And you of yours, my lord: I say no  
more,

Nor wish no less; and so I take my leave.

*Sat.* Traitor, if Rome have law, or we have  
power,

Thou and thy faction shall repent this rape.

*Bas.* Rape, call you it, my lord, to seize  
my own,

My true-betrothed love, and now my wife?

But let the laws of Rome determine all;

Mean while I am possess'd of that is mine.

*Sat.* 'Tis good, sir: You are very short  
with us;

But, if we live, we'll be as sharp with you.

*Bas.* My lord, what I have done, as best I  
may,

Answer I must, and shall do with my life.

Only thus much I give your grace to know,

By all the duties that I owe to Rome,  
This noble gentleman, lord Titus here,

Is in opinion, and in honour, wrong'd;

That, in the rescue of Lavinia,

With his own hand did slay his youngest son,

In zeal to you, and highly moved to wrath

To be controll'd in that he frankly gave:

Receive him then to favour, Saturnine;

That hath express'd himself, in all his deeds,

A father and a friend, to thee and Rome.

*Tit.* Prince Bassianus, leave to plead my  
deeds;

'Tis thou, and those, that have dishonour'd me:

Rome and the righteous heavens be my judge

How I have loved and honour'd Saturnine!

*Tam.* My worthy lord, if ever Tamora  
Were gracious in those princely eyes of thine,

Then hear me speak indifferently for all;

And at my suit, sweet, pardon what is past.

*Sat.* What! madam! be dishonour'd openly,  
And basely put it up without revenge?

*Tam.* Not so, my lord; The gods of Rome  
forefend \*

I should be author to dishonour you!

But, on mine honour, dare I undertake

For good lord Titus' innocence in all,

Whose fury, not dissembled, speaks his griefs:

Then, at my suit, look graciously on him;

Lose not so noble a friend on vain suppose,

Nor with sour looks afflict his gentle heart.—

My lord, be ruled by me, be won at

last, [tents:

Dissemble all your griefs and discon-

you are but newly planted in your

throne; [too,

Lest then the people, and patricians

Upon a just survey, take Titus' part,

And so supplant us for ingratitude,

(Which Rome reputes to be a heinous  
sin,) [alone:

Yield at entreats, and then let me

I'll find a day to massacre them all,

And raze their faction, and their

family, [sons,

The cruel father, and his traitorous

To whom I sued for my dear son's queen

life; [let a queen

And make them know, what 'tis to

*Aside*

Kneel in the streets, and beg for grace } *Aside.*  
in vain.—

Come, come, sweet emperor,—come, Andronicus,

Take up this good old man, and cheer the heart  
That dies in tempest of thy angry frown.

*Sat.* Rise, Titus, rise; my empress hath prevail'd. [loud:]

*Tit.* I thank your majesty, and her, my  
These words, these looks, infuse new life in me.

*Tam.* Titus, I am incorporate in Rome,  
A Roman now adopted happily,

And must advise the emperor for his good.  
This day all quarrels die, Andronicus;—

And let it be mine honour, good my lord,  
That I have reconciled your friends and you.—

For you, prince Bassianus, I have pass'd  
My word and promise to the emperor,

That you will be more mild and tractable.—  
And fear not, lords,—and you, Lavinia;—

By my advice, all humbled on your knees,  
You shall ask pardon of his majesty.

*Luc.* We do; and vow to heaven, and to  
his highness,

That, what we did, was mildly, as we might,

Tend'ring our sister's honour, and our own.

*Mar.* That on mine honour here I do protest.

*Sat.* Away, and talk not; trouble us no  
more.—

*Tam.* Nay, nay, sweet emperor, we must all  
be friends:

The tribune and his nephews kneel for grace;  
I will not be denied. Sweet heart, look back.

*Sat.* Marcus, for thy sake, and thy brother's  
And at my lovely Tamora's entreats, [here,

I do remit these young men's heinous faults.  
Stand up.

Lavinia, though you left me like a churl,  
I found a friend; and sure as death I swore,

I would not part a bachelor from the priest.  
Come, if the emperor's court can feast two

brides,

You are my guest, Lavinia, and your friends:  
This day shall be a love-day, Tamora.

*Tit.* To-morrow, an it please your majesty  
To hunt the panther and the hart with me,

With horn and hound, we'll give your grace  
*bonjour.*

*Sat.* Be it so, Titus, and gramercy too.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. *The same. Before the Palace.*

*Enter AARON.*

*Aar.* Now climbeth Tamora Olympus' top,  
Safe out of fortune's shot: and sits aloft,  
Secure of thunder's crack, or lightning's flash;

Advanced above pale envy's threat'ning reach.  
As when the golden sun salutes the morn,

And, having gilt the ocean with his beams,  
Gallops the zodiac in his glistering coach,

And overlooks the highest-peering hills;  
So Tamora.—

Upon her wit doth earthly honour wait,  
And virtue stoops and trembles at her frown.

Then, Aaron, arm thy heart, and fit thy thoughts  
To mount aloft with thy imperial mistress,

And mount her pitch; whom thou in triumph  
long

Hast prisoner held, fetter'd in amorous chains;  
And faster bound to Aaron's charming eyes,

Than is Prometheus tied to Caucasus.  
Away with slavish weeds, and idle thoughts!

I will be bright, and shine in pearl and gold,  
To wait upon this new-made empress.

To wait, said I? to wanton with this queen,  
This goddess, this Semiramis;—this queen,

This siren, that will charm Rome's Saturnine,  
And see his shipwreck, and his commonweal's.

Ho! what storm is this?  
*Enter CHIRON and DEMETRIUS, braving.*

*Dem.* Chiron, thy years want wit, thy wit  
wants edge

And manners, to intrude where I am graced;  
And may, for aught thou know'st affected be.

*Chi.* Demetrius, thou dost overween in all;  
And so in this to bear me down with braves.

'Tis not the difference of a year or two

Makes me less gracious, thee more fortunate:  
I am as able, and as fit, as thou

To serve, and to deserve my mistress' grace \*;  
And that my sword upon thee shall approve,

And plead my passions for Lavinia's love.  
*Aar.* Clubs, clubs! these lovers will not

keep the peace. [advised,

*Dem.* Why, boy, although our mother un-  
gave you a dancing-rapier † by your side,

Are you so desperate grown, to threat your  
friends?

Go to; have your lath glued within your sheath,  
Till you know better how to handle it. [have,

*Chi.* Mean while, sir, with the little skill I  
Full well shalt thou perceive how much I dare.

*Dem.* Ay, boy, grow ye so brave?  
[*They draw.*]

*Aar.* Why, how now, lords?  
So near the emperor's palace dare you draw,

And maintain such a quarrel openly?  
Full well I wot ‡ the ground of all this grudge;

I would not for a million of gold, [cens:]  
The cause were known to them it most con-

nor would your noble mother, for much more,  
Be so dishonour'd in the court of Rome.

For shame, put up.  
*Dem.* Not I; till I have sheath'd

My rapier in his bosom, and, withal, [throat,  
Thrust these reproachful speeches down his

That he hath breathed in my dishonour here.  
*Chi.* For that I am prepared and full re-

solved,— [tongue

Foul-spoken coward! that thunder'st with thy  
And with thy weapon nothing darest perform

*Aar.* Away, I say.—

\* Favour. † This was the usual outcry for assistance, when any riot in the street happened

‡ A sword worn in dancing.

§ Know.

Now, by the gods that warlike Goths adore,  
This petty brabble will undo us all.—  
Why, lords,—and think you not how dangerous  
It is to jut upon a prince's right?  
What, is Lavinia then become so loose,  
Or Bassianus so degenerate,  
That for her love such quarrels may be broach'd  
Without controlment, justice, or revenge?  
Young lords, beware!—an should the empress  
know [please.]

This discord's ground, the music would not  
*Chi.* I care not, I, knew she and all the  
world;

I love Lavinia more than all the world.

*Dem.* Youngling, learn thou to make some  
meaner choice:

Lavinia is thine elder brother's hope.

*Aar.* Why, are ye mad? or know ye not,  
How furious and impatient they be, [in Rome  
And cannot brook competitors in love?  
I tell you, lords, you do but plot your deaths  
By this device.

*Chi.* Aaron, a thousand deaths  
Would I propose, to achieve her whom I love.

*Aar.* To achieve her!—How?

*Dem.* Why makest thou it so strange?  
She is a woman, therefore may be woo'd;  
She is a woman, therefore may be won;  
She is Lavinia, therefore must be loved.  
What, man! more water glideth by the mill  
Than wots the miller of; and easy it is  
Of a cut loaf to steal a shive\*, we know:

Though Bassianus be the emperor's brother,  
Better than he have yet worn Vulcan's badge.

*Aar.* Ay, and as good as Saturninus may.  
[Aside.]

*Dem.* Then why should he despair, that  
knows to count it

With words, fair looks, and liberality?  
What, hast thou not full often struck a doe,  
And borne her cleanly by the keeper's nose?

*Aar.* Why then, it seems, some certain  
Would serve your turns. [snatch or so]

*Chi.* Ay, so the turn were served.

*Dem.* Aaron, thou hast hit it.

*Aar.* 'Would you had hit it too;  
Then should not we be tired with this ado.

Why, hark ye, hark ye,—And are you such  
fools,

To square† for this? Would it offend you then  
That both should speed?

*Chi.* P'faith, not me.

*Dem.* Nor me.  
So I were one. [that you jar.]

*Aar.* For shame, be friends; and join for  
'Tis policy and stratagem must do  
That you affect; and so must you resolve;  
That what you cannot, as you would, achieve,  
You must perforce accomplish as you may.  
Take this of me, Lucrece was not more chaste  
Than this Lavinia, Bassianus' love.

A speedier course than lingering languishment  
Must we pursue, and I have found the path.  
My lords, a solemn hunting is in hand;  
There will the lovely Roman ladies troop:  
The forest walks are wide and spacious;

And many unfrequented plots there are,  
Fitted by kind; for rape and villany:  
Single you thither than this dainty doe,  
And strike her home by force, if not by words:  
This way, or not at all, stand you in hope.  
Come, come, our empress, with her sacred  
To villany and vengeance consecrate, wit  
Will we acquaint with all that we intend;  
And she shall file our engines with advice  
That will not suffer you to square yourselves,  
But to your wishes' height advance you both.  
The emperor's court is like the house of fame,  
The palace full of tongues, of eyes, of ears:  
The woods are ruthless, dreadful, deaf, and  
dull; [your turns:]

There speak, and strike, brave boys, and take  
There serve your lust, shadow'd from heaven's  
And revel in Lavinia's treasury. [eye,

*Chi.* Thy counsel, lad, smells of no coward-  
dice. [stream]

*Dem.* Sit fas aut nefas, till I find the  
To cool this heat, a charm to calm these fits,  
*Per Styga, per manes vehor.* [Exeunt]

SCENE II. A Forest near Rome. A Lodge  
seen at a distance, Horns, and cry of  
Hounds heard.

Enter TITUS ANDRONICUS, with Hunters,  
&c. MARCUS, LUCIUS, QUINTUS, and  
MARTUS.

*Tit.* The hunt is up, the morn is bright and  
grey, [green.]

The fields are fragrant, and the woods are  
Uncomely here, and let us make a bay,  
And wake the emperor and his lovely bride,  
And rouse the prince; and ring a hunter's peal,  
That all the court may echo with the noise.

Sons, let it be your charge, as it is ours,  
To tend the emperor's person carefully:

I have been troubled in my sleep this night,  
But dawning day new comfort hath inspired.

*Horns wind a Peal.* Enter SATURNINUS,  
TAMORA, BASSIANUS, LAVINIA, CHIRON,  
DEMETRIUS, and Attendants.

*Tit.* Many good morrows to your majesty;  
Madam, to you as many and as good!—

I promised your grace a hunter's peal.

*Sat.* And you have rung it lustily, my lords,  
Somewhat too early for new-married ladies.

*Bas.* Lavinia, how say you?  
*Lav.* I say, no;

I have been broad awake two hours and more.

*Sat.* Come on then, horse and chariots let  
us have,

And to our sport:—Madam, now shall ye see  
Our Roman hunting. [To TAMORA.]

*Mar.* I have dogs, my lord,  
Will rouse the proudest panther in the chase,  
And climb the highest promontory top.

*Tit.* And I have horse will follow where the  
game [plain]

Makes way, and run like swallows o'er the

*Dem.* Chiron, we hunt not, we, with horse  
nor hound,

But hope to pluck a dainty doe to ground.  
[Exeunt]

\* Slice. † Quarrel. ‡ By nature.

§ Sacred here signifies accursed; a Latinism



SCENE III. *A desert part of the Forest.**Enter AARON, with a Bag of Gold.*

*Aar.* He, that had wit, would think that I  
To bury so much gold under a tree, [had none  
And never after to inherit\* it.

Let him, that thinks of me so abjectly,  
Know, that this gold must coin a stratagem;  
Which, cunningly effected, will beget  
A very excellent piece of villany:

And so repose, sweet gold, for thy unrest†,  
[*Hides the Gold.*

That have their alms out of the empress' chest.

*Enter TAMORA.*

*Tam.* My lovely Aaron, wherefore look'st  
thou sad,

When every thing doth make a gleeful boast?  
The birds chant melody on every bush;  
The snake lies rolled in the cheerful sun;  
The green leaves quiver with the cooling wind,  
And make a chequer'd shadow on the ground:  
Under their sweet shade, Aaron, let us sit,  
And,—whilst the babbling echo mocks the  
hounds,

Replying shrilly to the well-tuned horns,  
As if a double hunt were heard at once,—  
Let us sit down and mark their yelling noise:  
And,—after conflict such as was supposed  
The wandering prince of Dido once enjoy'd,  
When with a happy storm they were surprised,  
And certain'd with a counsel-keeping cave,—  
We may, each wreathed in the other's arms,  
Our pastimes done, possess a golden slumber;  
Whiles hounds, and horns, and sweet melody  
Be unto us, as is a nurse's song [ous birds,  
Of lullaby, to bring her babe asleep.

*Aar.* Madam, though Venus govern your  
Saturn is dominator over mine: [desires,  
What signifies my deadly-standing eye,  
My silence, and my cloudy melancholy?  
My fleece of woolly hair that now uncurls,  
Even as an adder, when she doth unroll  
To do some fatal execution?

No, madam, these are no venereal signs;  
Vengeance is in my heart, death in my hand,  
Blood and revenge are hammering in my head.  
Hark, Tamora,—the empress of my soul,  
Which never hopes more heaven than rests in  
This is the day of doom for Bassianus; [thee,—  
His Philomel† must lose her tongue to-day;  
Thy sons make pillage of her chastity,  
And wash their hands in Bassianus' blood.  
Seest thou this letter? take it up, I pray thee,  
And give the king this fatal-plotted scroll:—  
Now question me no more, we are espied;  
Here comes a parcel of our hopeful booty,  
Which dreads not yet their lives' destruction.

*Tam.* Ah, my sweet Moor, sweeter to me  
than life! [comes:

*Aar.* No more, great empress, Bassianus  
Be cross with him, and I'll go fetch thy sons  
To back thy quarrels, whatsoe'er they be. [*Exit.*

*Enter BASSIANUS and LAVINIA.*

*Bas.* How have we here? Rome's royal  
empress,

Unfurnish'd of her well-becoming troop?  
Or is it Dian, habited like her;  
Who hath abandoned her holy groves,  
To see the general hunting in this forest?

*Tam.* Saucy controller of our private steps!  
Had I the power that some say Dian had,  
Thy temples should be planted presently  
With horns, as was Actæon's; and the hounds  
Should drive upon thy new transformed limbs,  
Unmannerly intruder as thou art!

*Lav.* Under your patience, gentle empress,  
'Tis thought you have a goodly gift in horning;  
And to be doubted, that your Moor and you  
Are singled forth to try experiments:  
Jove shield your husband from his hounds to-  
'Tis pity they should take him for a stag. [day!

*Bas.* Believe me, queen, your swarth Cim-  
merian

Doth make your honour of his body's hue,  
Spotted, detested, and abominable.  
Why are you sequestered from all your train?  
Dismounted from your snow-white goodly  
And wander'd hither to an obscure plot, [steed,  
Accompanied with a barbarous Moor,  
If foul desire had not conducted you?

*Lav.* And being intercepted in your sport,  
Great reason that my noble lord be rated  
For sauciness.—I pray you, let us hence,  
And let her 'joy her raven-coloured love;  
This valley fits the purpose passing well.

*Bas.* The king, my brother, shall have note  
of this. [noted long:

*Lav.* Ay, for these slips have made him  
Good king! to be so mightily abused!

*Tam.* Why have I patience to endure all this?  
*Enter CHIRON and DEMETRIUS.*

*Dem.* How now, dear sovereign, and our  
gracious mother,

Why doth your highness look so pale and wan?  
*Tam.* Have I not reason, think you, to look  
pale!

These two have 'ticed me hither to this place,  
A barren, detested vale, you see, it is:  
The trees, though summer, yet forlorn and lean,  
O'ercome with moss, and baleful mistletoe.  
Here never shines the sun; here nothing breeds  
Unless the nightly owl, or fatal raven.  
And, when they show'd me this abhorred pit,  
They told me, here, at dead time of the night,  
A thousand fiends, a thousand hissing snakes,  
Ten thousand swelling toads, as many urchins,||  
Would make such fearful and confused cries,  
As any mortal body, bearing it,  
Should straight fall mad, or else die suddenly.  
No sooner had they told this hellish tale,  
But straight they told me they would bind me  
Unto the body of a dismal yew; [here  
And leave me to this miserable death.

And then they called me, foul adulteress,  
Lascivious Goth, and all the bitterest terms  
That ever ear did hear to such effect.  
And, had you not by wondrous fortune come,  
This vengeance on me had they executed:  
Revenge it, as you love your mother's life,  
Or be ye not henceforth called my children.

\* Possess.

† Disquiet.

‡ Part.

‡ See Ovid's *Metamorphoses*, Book VI.

|| Hedge-hogs.

*Dem.* This is a witness that I am thy son.

[*Stabs BASSIANUS.*]

*Chi.* And this for me, struck home to show my strength. [*Stabbing him likewise.*]

*Lav.* Ay, come, Semiramis,—nay, barbarous Tamora!

For no name fits thy nature but thy own!

*Tam.* Give me thy poinard; you shall know, my boys, [wrong,

Your mother's hand shall right your mother's

*Dem.* Stay, madam, here is more belongs to her; [straw:

First, thrash the corn, then after burn the This minion stood upon her chastity,

Upon her nuptial vow, her loyalty, [mightiness: And with that painted hope braves your And shall she carry this unto her grave?

*Chi.* And if she do, I would I were an eunuch.

Drag hence her husband to some secret hole, And make his dead trunk pillow to our lust.

*Tam.* But when you have the honey you desire,

Let not this wasp outlive, us both to sting.

*Chi.* I warrant you, madam; we will make that sure.—

Come, mistress, now perforce we will enjoy That nice-preserved honesty of yours. [face.—

*Lav.* O Tamora! thou hear'st a woman's

*Tam.* I will not hear her speak; away with her. [a word.

*Lav.* Sweet lords, entreat her hear me but

*Dem.* Listen, fair madam: let it be your glory

To see her tears: but be your heart to them, As unrelenting flint to drops of rain. [the dam?

*Lav.* When did the tiger's young ones teach O, do not learn her wrath; she taught it thee: The milk thou suck'dst from her, did turn to marble;

Even at thy teat thou hadst thy tyranny.— Yet every mother breeds not sons alike;

Do thou entreat her shew a woman pity. [To CHIRON.

*Chi.* What! wouldst thou have me prove myself a bastard? [lark:

*Lav.* 'Tis true; the raven doth not hatch a Yet I have heard, (O could I find it now!) The lion moved with pity, did endure

To have his princely paws pared all away. Some say that ravens foster forlorn children,

The whilst their own birds famish in their nests: O, be to me, though thy hard heart say no,

Nothing so kind, but something pitiful!

*Tam.* I know not what it means; away with her. [sake,

*Lav.* O, let me teach thee: for my father's That gave thee life, when well he might have slain thee,

Be not obdurate, open thy deaf ears.

*Tam.* Had thou in person ne'er offended me, Even for his sake am I pitiless:—

Remember, boys, I pour'd forth tears in vain, To save your brother from the sacrifice;

But fierce Andronicus would not relent. [will; Therefore away with her, and use her as you

The more we love the better loved of me.

*Lav.* O Tamora, be call'd a gentle queen,

And with thine own hands kill me in this place: For 'tis not life that I have begg'd so long; Poor I was slain when Bassianus died.

*Tam.* What begg'st thou then; fond woman, let me go. [more,

*Lav.* 'Tis present death I beg; and one thing That womanhood denies my tongue to tell:

O, keep me from their worse than killing lust, And tumble me into some loathsome pit;

Where never man's eye may behold my body: Do this, and be a charitable murderer.

*Tam.* So should I rob my sweet sons of their No, let them satisfy their lust on thee. [see:

*Dem.* Away, for thou hast staid us here too long. [ly creature!

*Lav.* No grace? no womanhood? Ah, beast— The blot and enemy to our general name!

Confusion fall—— [thou her husband; *Chi.* Nay, then I'll stop your mouth: Bring

This is the hole where Aaron bid us hide him. [Exit unt.

*Tam.* Farewell, my sons; see that you make her sure:

Ne'er let my heart know merry cheer indeed, Till all the Andronici be made away.

Now will I hence to seek my lovely Moor, And let my spleenful sons this trull defleur. [Exit.

#### SCENE IV. The same.

Enter AARON, with QUINTUS and MARTIUS.

*Aar.* Come on, my lords; the better foot before:

Straight will I bring you to the loathsome pit, Where I espy'd the panther fast asleep.

*Quin.* My sight is very dull, whate'er it bodes. [for shame,

*Mart.* And mine, I promise you; we're not Well could I leave our sport to sleep awhile.

[MARTIUS falls into the Pit.

*Quin.* What art thou fallen? What subtle hole is this, [briers;

Whose mouth is cover'd with rude-growing Upon whose leaves are drops of new-shed blood,

As fresh as morning's dew distill'd on flowers? A very fatal place it seems to me:— [fall?

Speak, brother, hast thou hurt thee with the

*Mart.* O, brother, with the dismallest object That ever eye, with sight, made heart lament.

*Aar.* [Aside.] Now will I fetch the king to find them here;

That he thereby may give a likely guess, How these were they that made away his brother. [Exit AARON.

*Mart.* Why dost not comfort me, and help me out

From this unhal'ow'd and blood-stained hole?

*Quin.* I am surprised with an uncouth fear: A chilling sweat o'er-runs my trembling joints,

My heart suspects more than mine eye can see.

*Mart.* To prove thou hast a true-divining heart,

Aaron and thou look down into this den, And see a fearful sight of blood and death.

*Quin.* Aaron is gone; and my compassion ate heart

Will not permit mine eyes once to behold  
The thing, whereat it trembles by surmise:  
O, tell me how it is; for ne'er till now  
Was I a child, to fear I know not what.

*Marr.* Lord Bassianus lies embrewed here,  
All on a heap, like to a slaughter'd lamb,  
In this detested, dark, blood-drinking pit.

*Quin.* If it be dark, how dost thou know  
'tis he?

*Mart.* Upon his bloody finger he doth wear  
A precious ring, that lightens all the hole,  
Which, like a taper in some monument,  
Doth shine upon the dead man's earthy cheeks,  
And shows the ragged entrails of this pit:  
So pale did shine the moon on Pyramus,  
When he by night lay bath'd in maiden blood.  
O brother, help me with thy fainting hand,—  
If fear hath made thee faint, as me it hath,—  
Out of this fell-devouring receptacle,  
As hateful as Cocytus' misty mouth.

*Quin.* Reach me thy hand, that I may help  
thee out;

Or, wanting strength to do thee so much good,  
I may be pluck'd into the swallowing womb  
Of this deep pit, poor Bassianus' grave.  
I have no strength to pluck thee to the brink.

*Mart.* Nor I no strength to climb without  
thy help. [again,

*Quin.* Thy hand once more; I will not loose  
Till thou art here aloft, or I below:  
Thou canst not come to me, I come to thee.

[Falls in.

*Enter SATURNINUS and AARON.*

*Sat.* Along with me:—I'll see what hole is  
here.

And what he is, that now is leap'd into it.  
Say, who art thou, that lately didst descend  
Into this gaping hollow of the earth?

*Mart.* The unhappy son of old Andronicus;  
Brought hither in a most unlucky hour,  
To find thy brother Bassianus dead.

*Sat.* My brother dead? I know thou dost  
but jest:

He and his lady both are at the lodge,  
Upon the north side of this pleasant chase;  
'Tis not an hour since I left him there. [alive,

*Mart.* We know not where you left him all  
But, ont alas! here have we found him dead.

*Enter TAMORA, with Attendants; TITUS  
ANDRONICUS, and LUCIUS.*

*Tam.* Where is my lord, the king?

*Sat.* Here, Tamora; though griev'd with  
killing grief.

*Tam.* Where is thy brother Bassianus?

*Sat.* Now to the bottom dost thou search  
my wound;

Poor Bassianus here lies murdered.

*Tam.* Then all too late I bring this fatal writ,  
[Giving a Letter.

The complot of this timeless\* tragedy;  
And wonder greatly, that man's face can fold  
In pleasing smiles such murderous tyranny.

*Sat.* [Reads.] *An if we miss to meet him  
handsomely,—*

*Sweet huntsman, Bassianus 'tis, we mean,  
Do thou so much as dig the grave for him;*

*Thou know'st our meaning: Look for thy  
reward*

*Among the nettles at the elder tree,  
Which overshades the mouth of that same  
Where we decreed to bury Bassianus. [p 4,  
Do this, and purchase us thy lasting  
friends.*

O, Tamora! was ever heard the like?

This is the pit, and this the elder tree:

Look, sirs, if you can find the huntsman out,  
That should have murder'd Bassianus here.

*Aar.* My gracious lord, here is the bag of  
gold. [Showing it.

*Sat.* Two of thy whelps, [To Tit.] fell cure  
of bloody kind,

Have here bereft my brother of his life:—

Sirs, drag them from the pit unto the prison;  
There let them bide, until we have devised  
Some never-heard-of torturing pain for them.

*Tam.* What, are they in this pit? O won-  
drous thing!

How easily murder is discover'd!

*Tit.* High emperor, upon my feeble knee  
I beg this boon, with tears not lightly shed,

That this fell fault of my accursed sons,  
Accused, if the fault be proved in them,—

*Sat.* If it be proved! you see, it is apparent.

Who found this letter? Tamora, was it you?

*Tam.* Andronicus himself did take it up.

*Tit.* I did, my lord: yet let me be their bail:

For by my father's reverend tomb, I vow,

They shall be ready at your highness' will,  
To answer their suspicion with their lives.

*Sat.* Thou shalt not bail them: see, thou  
follow me. [derers:]

Some bring the murder'd body, some the mur-  
Let them not speak a word, the guilt is plain;

For, by my soul, were there worse end than  
death,

That end upon them should be executed.

*Tam.* Andronicus, I will entreat the king;  
Fear not thy sons, they shall do well enough.

*Tit.* Come, Lucius, come; stay not to talk  
with them. [Exeunt severally.

#### SCENE V. *The same.*

*Enter DEMETRIUS and CHIRON, with LA-  
VINIA, ravished; her Hands cut off, and  
her Tongue cut out.*

*Dem.* So, now go tell, an if thy tongue can  
speak, [there.]

Who 'twas that cut thy tongue, and ravish'd  
*Chi.* Write down thy mind, bewray thy  
meaning so;

And, if thy stumps will let thee, play the scribe.

*Dem.* See, how with signs and tokens she  
can scowl. [thy hands.]

*Chi.* Go home, call for sweet water, wash  
*Dem.* She hath no tongue to call, nor hands  
to wash;

And so let's leave her to her silent walks.

*Chi.* An 'twere my case, I should go hang  
myself.

*Dem.* If thou hadst hands to help thee knit  
the cord.

[Exeunt DEMETRIUS and CHIRON]



*Enter MARCUS.*

*Mar.* Who's this,—my niece, that flies away so fast?

Cousin, a word; Where is your husband?—  
If I do dream, 'would all my wealth would wake me!

If I do wake, some planet strike me down,  
That I may slumber in eternal sleep!—  
Speak, gentle niece, what stern ungentle hands  
Have lopp'd, and hew'd, and made thy body bare

Of her two branches? those sweet ornaments,  
Whose circling shadows kings have sought to sleep in;

And might not gain so great a happiness,  
As half thy love? Why dost not speak to me?  
Alas, a crimson river of warm blood,  
Like to a bubbling fountain stirr'd with wind,  
Doth rise and fall between thy rosed lips,  
Coming and going with thy honey breath.  
But, sure, some Terens hath deflour'd thee;  
And, lest thou shouldst detect him, cut thy tongue.

Ah, now thou turn'st away thy face for shame!  
And, notwithstanding all this loss of blood,—  
As from a conduit with three issuing spouts,—  
Yet do thy cheeks look red as Titan's face,  
Blushing to be encounter'd with a cloud.  
Shall I speak for thee? shall I say, 'tis so?

O, that I knew thy heart; and knew the beast,

That I might rail at him to ease my mind!  
Sorrow concealed, like an oven stopp'd,  
Doth burn the heart to cinders where it is.

Fair Philomela, she but lost her tongue,  
And in a tedious sampler sew'd her mind:  
But, lovely niece, that mean is cut from thee;  
A craftier Tereus hast thou met withal,  
And he hath cut those pretty fingers off,  
That could have better sewed than Philomel.

O, had the monster seen those lily hands  
Tremble, like aspen leaves, upon a lute,  
And make the silken strings delight to kiss them;

[*life:*  
He would not then have touch'd them for his  
Or, had he heard the heavenly harmony,  
Which that sweet tongue hath made, [*asleep*  
He would have dropp'd his knife, and fell  
As Cerberus at the Thracian poet's \* feet.  
Come, let us go, and make thy father blind:  
For such a sight will blind a father's eye:  
One hour's storm will drown the fragrant meads;

[*eyes?*  
What will whole months of tears thy father's  
Do not draw back, for we will mourn with thee;  
O, could our mourning ease thy misery!

[*Exeunt.*

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. Rome. A Street.

*Enter Senators, Tribunes, and Officers of Justice, with MARTIUS and QUINTUS, bound, passing on to the Place of Execution: TITUS going before, pleading.*

*Tit.* Hear me, grave fathers! noble tribunes, stay!

For pity of mine age, whose youth was spent  
In dangerous wars, whilst you securely slept;  
For all my blood in Rome's great quarrel shed;  
For all the frosty nights that I have watch'd;  
And for these bitter tears, which now you see  
Filling the aged wrinkles in my cheeks;  
Be pitiful to my condemned sons,  
Whose souls are not corrupted as 'tis thought!  
For two and twenty sons I never wept,  
Because they died in honour's lofty bed.  
For these, these tribunes, in the dust I write  
*Throwing himself on the Ground.*

My heart's deep languor, and my soul's sad tears.

Let my tears staunch the earth's dry appetite;  
My sons' sweet blood will make it shame and blush.

[*Exeunt Senators, Tribunes, &c., with the Prisoners.*

O earth, I will befriend thee more with rain,  
That shall distil from these two ancient urns,  
Than youthful April shall with all his showers:  
In summer's drought, I'll drop upon thee still;  
In winter, with warm tears I'll melt the snow,

And keep eternal spring-time on thy face,  
So thou refuse to drink my dear sons' blood.

*Enter LUCIUS, with his sword drawn.*  
O, reverend tribunes! gentle aged men!  
Unbind my sons, reverse the doom of death;  
And let me say, that never wept before,  
My tears are now prevailing orators.

*Luc.* O, noble father, you lament in vain;  
The tribunes hear you not, no man is by,  
And you recount your sorrows to a stone.

*Tit.* Ah, Lucius, for thy brothers let me plead:

Grave tribunes, once more I entreat of you.

*Luc.* My gracious lord, no tribune hears you speak.

*Tit.* Why, 'tis no matter, man: if they did hear,

[*mark,*  
They would not mark me; or, if they did  
All bootless to them, they'd not pity me.  
Therefore I tell my sorrows to the stones;

Who, though they cannot answer my distress,  
Yet in some sort they're better than the tribunes,

For that they will not intercept my tale:  
When I do weep, they humbly at my feet  
Receive my tears, and seem to weep with me.  
And, were they but attired in grave weeds,  
Rome could afford no tribune like to these.

A stone is soft as wax, tribunes more hard than stones:

A stone is silent, and offendeth not; [*death.*  
And tribunes with their tongues doom men to

\* Orpheus.

But wherefore stand'st thou with thy weapon drawn?

*Luc.* To rescue my two brothers from their death:

For which attempt, the judges have pronounced My everlasting doom of banishment. [thee.]

*Tit.* O happy man! they have befriended Why, foolish Lucius, dost thou not perceive That Rome is but a wilderness of tigers?

Tigers must prey; and Rome affords no prey, But me and mine: How happy art thou then,

From these devourers to be banished?

But who comes with our brother Marcus here?

*Enter MARCUS and LAVINIA.*

*Mar.* Titus, prepare thy noble eyes to weep; Or, if not so, thy noble heart to break;

I bring consuning sorrow to thine age.

*Tit.* Will it consume me? let me see it then.

*Mar.* This was thy daughter.

*Tit.* Why, Marcus, so she is.

*Luc.* Ah me! this object kills me!

*Tit.* Faint-hearted boy, arise, and look upon her:—

Speak, my Lavinia, what accursed hand Hath made thee handless in thy father's sight?

What fool hath added water to the sea?

Or brought a fagot to bright-burning Troy?

My grief was at the height before thou camest,

And now, like Nilus\*, it disdaineth bounds.—

Give me a sword, I'll chop off my hands too;

For they have fought for Rome, and all in vain;

And they have nursed this woe, in feeding life; In bootless prayer have they been held up,

And they have served me to effectless use:

Now, all the service I require of them

Is, that the one will help to cut the other.

'Tis well, Lavinia, that thou hast no hands;

For hands, to do Rome service, are but vain.

*Luc.* Speak, gentle sister, who hath martyrd thee? [thoughts.]

*Mar.* O, that delightful engine of her That blab'd them with such pleasing eloquence,

Is torn from forth that pretty hollow cage:

Where, like a sweet melodious bird, it sung

Sweet varied notes, enchanting every ear!

*Luc.* O say thou for her, who hath done this deed? [park.]

*Mar.* O, thus I found her, straying in the Seeking to hide herself, as doth the deer,

That hath received some unrecuring wound.

*Tit.* It was my deer, and he, that wounded her, [dead:]

Hath hurt me more, than had he kill'd me For now I stand as one upon a rock,

Environ'd with a wilderness of sea; [wave,]

Who marks the waxing tide grow wave by Expecting ever when some envious surge

Will in his brinish bowels swallow him.

This way to death my wretched sons are gone;

Here stands my other son, a banish'd man;

And here, my brother, weeping at my woes;

But that which gives my soul the greatest spurn,

Is dear Lavinia, dearer than my soul.—

Had I but seen thy picture in this plight,

It would have madd'd me: What shall I do Now I behold thy lively body so?

Thou hast no hands to wipe away thy tears;

Nor tongue to tell me who hath martyrd thee:

Thy husband he is dead; and, for his death, Thy brothers are condemn'd, and dead by this:—

Look, Marcus! ah, son Lucius, look on her! When I did name her brothers, then fresh tears

Stood on her cheeks; as doth the honey dew Upon a gather'd lily almost wither'd.

*Mar.* Perchance, she weeps because they kill'd her husband:

Perchance, because she knows them innocent.

*Tit.* If they did kill thy husband, then be joyful,

Because the law hath ta'en revenge on them. No, no, they would not do so foul a deed;

Witness the sorrow that their sister makes.— Gentle Lavinia, let me kiss thy lips;

Or make some sign how I may do thee ease: Shall thy good uncle, and thy brother Lucius,

And thou, and I, sit round about some fountain; Looking all downwards, to behold our cheeks

How they are stain'd? like meadows, yet not With mry slime left on them by a flood? [dry]

And in the fountain shall we gaze so long, Till the fresh taste be taken from that clearness,

And made a brine-pit with our bitter tears? Or shall we cut away our hands, like thine?

Or shall we bite our tongues, and in dumb Pass the remainder of our hateful days? [shows]

What shall we do? let us, that have our tongues, Plot some device of further misery,

To make us wonder'd at in time to come.

*Luc.* Sweet father, cease your tears; for, at your grief,

See, how my wretched sister sobs and weeps.

*Mar.* Patience, dear niece:—good Titus, dry thine eyes. [wilt.]

*Tit.* Ah, Marcus, Marcus! brother, well I Thy napkin† cannot drink a tear of mine,

For thou, poor man, hast drown'd it with thine own.

*Luc.* Ah, my Lavinia, I will wipe thy cheeks. [her signs:]

*Tit.* Mark, Marcus, mark! I understand Had she a tongue to speak, now would she say

That to her brother which I said to thee; His napkin, with his true tears all bewet,

Can do no service on her sorrowful cheeks, O, what a sympathy of woe is this?

As far from help as limbo is from bliss!

*Enter AARON.*

*Aar.* Titus Andronicus, my lord the emperor Sends thee this word,—That, if thou love thy

Let Marcus, Lucius, or thyself, old Titus, [sons] Or any one of you, chop off your hand,

And send it to the king: he for the same, Will send thee hither both thy sons alive;

And that shall be the ransom for their fault.

*Tit.* O, gracious emperor! O gentle Aaron Did ever raven sing so like a lark, That gives sweet tidings of the sun's uprise?

\* The river Nile.

† Know.

‡ Handkerchief.

With all my heart, I'll send the emperor  
My hand :

Good Aaron, wilt thou help to chop it off?

*Luc.* Stay, father; for that noble hand of  
thine,

That hath thrown down so many enemies,  
Shall not be sent : my hand will serve the turn :  
My youth can better spare my blood than you ;  
And therefore mine shall save my brothers'  
lives. [fended Rome.

*Mar.* Which of your hands hath not de-  
And rear'd aloft the bloody battle-axe,  
Writing destruction on the enemy's castle ?  
O, none of both but are of high desert :  
My hand hath been but idle ; let it serve  
To ransome my two nephews from their death ;  
Then have I kept it to a worthy end.

*Aar.* Nay, come agree, whose hand shall go  
along,

For fear they die before their pardon come.

*Mar.* My hand shall go.

*Luc.* By heaven it shall not go.

*Tit.* Sirs, strive no more ; such wither'd  
herbs as these

Are meet for plucking up, and therefore mine.

*Luc.* Sweet father, if I shall be thought thy  
son,

Let me redeem my brothers both from death.

*Mar.* And, for our father's sake, and mo-  
ther's care,

Now let me show a brother's love to thee.

*Tit.* Agree between you ; I will spare my  
*Luc.* Then I'll go fetch an axe. [hand.

*Mar.* But I will use the axe.

[*Exeunt LUCIUS and MARCUS.*]

*Tit.* Come hither, Aaron ; I'll deceive them  
both ;

Lend me thy hand, and I will give thee mine.

*Aar.* If that be call'd deceit, I will be  
honest,

And never, whilst I live, deceive men so :—

But I'll deceive you in another sort,  
And that you'll say, ere half an hour can pass.

[*Aside.*]

[*He cuts off TITUS's Hand.*]

*Enter LUCIUS and MARCUS.*

*Tit.* Now, stay your strife ; what shall be, is  
despatch'd.—

Good Aaron, give his majesty my hand :

Tell him, it was a hand that warded him

From thousand dangers ; bid him bury it ;

More hath it merited, that let it have.

As for my sons, say, I account of them

As jewels purchased at an easy price ;

And yet dear too, because I bought mine own.

*Aar.* I go, Andronicus ; and for thy hand,

Look by and by to have thy sons with thee :—

Their heads, I mean.—O, how this villany

[*Aside.*]

Doth fat me with the very thoughts of it !

Let fools do good, and fair men call for grace,

Aaron may have his soul black like his face.

[*Exit.*]

*Tit.* O, here I lift this one hand up to heaven,

And bow this feeble ruin to the earth :

If any power pities wretched tears,

To that I call ;—What, wilt thou kneel with  
me ? [To LAVINIA.

Do then, dear heart ; for heaven shall hear our  
prayers ;

Or with our sighs we'll breathe the welkin dim,  
And stain the sun with fog, as sometime clouds,  
When they do hug him in their melting bosoms.

*Mar.* O ! brother, speak with possibilities,  
And do not break into these deep extremes.

*Tit.* Is not my sorrow deep, having no  
bottom ?

Then be my passions\* bottomless with them.

*Mar.* But yet let reason govern thy lament

*Tit.* If there were reason for these miseries  
Then into limits could I bind my woes :

When heaven doth weep, doth not the earth  
o'erflow ?

If the winds rage, doth not the sea wax mad,  
Threat'ning the welkin with his big-swoln face !

And wilt thou have a reason for this coil ?

I am the sea ; hark, how her sighs do blow !

She is the weeping welkin, I the earth :

Then must my sea be moved with her sighs ;

Then must my earth with her continual tears

Become a deluge, overflow'd and drown'd :

For why ? my bowels cannot hide her woes,

But like a drunkard must I vomit them.

Then give me leave ; for losers will have leave

To ease their stomachs with their bitter tongues.

*Enter a Messenger, with Two Heads and*

*a Hand.* [paid

*Mess.* Worthy Andronicus, ill art thou re-

For that good hand thou sent'st the emperor.

Here are the heads of thy two noble sons ;

And here's thy hand, in scorn to thee sent back ;

Thy griefs their sports, thy resolution mock'd :

That woe is me to think upon thy woes,

More than remembrance of my father's death.

[*Exit.*]

*Mar.* Now let hot Ætna cool in Sicily,

And be my heart an ever-burning hell !

These miseries are more than may be borne !

To weep with them that weep doth ease some

deal,

But sorrow flouted at is double death.

*Luc.* Ah that this sight should make so deep

a wound,

And yet detested life not shrink thereat !

That ever death should let life bear his name,

Where life hath no more interest but to breathe !

[*LAVINIA kisses him.*]

*Mar.* Alas, poor heart, that kiss is comfort-

As frozen water to a starved snake. [less,

*Tit.* When will this fearful slumber have an

end ? [nics ;

*Mar.* Now, farewell, flattery : Die, Andro-

Thou dost not slumber : see, thy two sons' heads ;

Thy warlike hand ; thy mangled daughter here ;

Thy other banish'd son, with this dear sight

Struck pale and bloodless ; and thy brother I,

Even like a stony image, cold and numb.

Ah ! now no more will I control thy griefs :

Rent off thy silver hair, thy other hand [sigh

Gnawing with thy teeth ; and be this dismal

The closing up of our most wretched eyes !

Now is a time to storm ; why art thou still ?

\* Sufferings.

† The sky.

‡ Stir, bustle.



*Tit.* Ha, ha, ha! [this hour.

*Mar.* Why dost thou laugh? it fits not with  
*Tit.* Why I have not another tear to shed:

Besides this sorrow is an enemy,  
And would usurp upon my watery eyes,  
And make them blind with tributary tears;  
Then which way shall I find revenge's cave?  
For these two heads do seem to speak to me;  
And threat me, I shall never come to bliss,  
Till all these mischiefs be returned again,  
Even in their throats that have committed them.  
Come, let me see what task I have to do.—  
You heavy people, circle me about;  
That I may turn me to each one of you,  
And swear unto my soul to right your wrongs.  
The vow is made.—Come, brother, take a head;  
And in this hand the other will I bear:  
Lavinia, thou shalt be employed in these things;  
Bear thou my hand, sweet wench, between thy  
teeth.

As for thee, boy, go, get thee from my sight;  
Thou art an exile, and thou must not stay:  
Hie to the Goths, and raise an army there:  
And, if you love me, as I think you do,  
Let's kiss and part, for we have much to do.

[*Ereunt* TITUS, MARCUS, and LAVINIA.

*Luc.* Farewell, Andronicus, my noble father;  
The woeful'st man that ever lived in Rome!  
Farewell, proud Rome! till Lucius come again,  
He leaves his pledges dearer than his life.  
Farewell, Lavinia, my noble sister;  
O, 'would thou wert as thou 'tfore hast been!  
But now nor Lucius, nor Lavinia lives  
But in oblivion, and hateful griefs.  
If Lucius live, he will requite your wrongs;  
And make proud Saturninus and his empress  
Beg at the gates, like Tarquin and his queen.  
Now will I to the Goths, and raise a power,  
To be revenged on Rome and Saturnine. [*Exit.*

SCENE II. A Room in Titus's House. A  
Banquet set out.

*Enter* TITUS, MARCUS, LAVINIA, and young  
LUCIUS, a Boy.

*Tit.* So, so; now sit: and look, you eat no  
more

Than will preserve just so much strength in us  
As will revenge these bitter woes of ours.  
MARCUS, unknit that sorrow-wreathen knot;  
Thy niece and I, poor creatures, want our  
And cannot passionate our tenfold grief [hands  
With folded arms. This poor right-hand of  
Is left to tyrannize upon my breast; [mine  
And when my heart, all mad with misery,  
Beats in this hollow prison of my flesh,  
Then thus I thump it down.—

Thou map of woe, that thus dost talk in signs!

[*To* LAVINIA.

When thy poor heart beats with outrageous  
beating,

Thou canst not strike it thus to make it still.  
Wound it with sighing, girl, kill it with groans;  
Or get some little knife between thy teeth,  
And just against thy heart make thou a hole;  
That all the tears that thy poor eyes let fall,  
May run into that sink, and soaking in,

Drown the lamenting fool in sea salt tears.

*Mar.* Fie, brother, fie! teach her not thus  
to lay

Such violent hands upon her tender life.

*Tit.* How now! has sorrow made thee dote  
already?

Why, Marcus, no man should be mad but I.  
What violent hands can she lay on her life!  
Ah, wherefore dost thou urge the name of  
To bid Æneas tell the tale twice o'er, [hands,  
How Troy was burnt, and he made miserable?  
O, handle not the theme, to talk of hands;  
Lest we remember still, that we have none.—  
Fie, fie, how frantically I square my talk!  
As if we should forget we had no hands,  
If Marcus did not name the word of hands!—  
Come, let's fall to; and, gentle girl, eat this:—  
Here is no drink! Hark, Marcus, what she  
says:—

I can interpret all her martyr'd signs;  
She says, she drinks no other drink but tears.  
Brew'd with her sorrows, mesh'd upon her  
cheeks \* :—

Speechless complainer, I will learn thy thought;  
In thy dumb action will I be as perfect,  
As begging hermits in their holy prayers:

Thou shalt not sigh, nor hold thy stumps to  
heaven,

Nor wink, nor nod, nor kneel, nor make a sign,  
But I, of these, will wrest an alphabet,  
And, by still† practice, learn to know thy  
meaning. [laments :

*Boy.* Good grandsire, leave these bitter deep  
Make my aunt merry with some pleasing tale.

*Mar.* Alas, the tender boy, in passion moved,  
Doth weep to see his grandsire's heaviness.

*Tit.* Peace, tender sapling; thou art made  
of tears,

And tears will quickly melt thy life away.—

[*MARCUS strikes the Dish with a Knife.*  
What dost thou strike at, Marcus, with thy  
knife? [a fly.

*Mar.* At that that I have kill'd, my lord;  
*Tit.* Out on thee, murderer! thou kill'st my  
heart;

Mine eyes are cloy'd with view of tyranny;  
A deed of death, done on the innocent,  
Becomes not Titus' brother: Get thee gone;  
I see, thou art not for my company.

*Mar.* Alas, my lord, I have but kill'd a fly.  
*Tit.* But how, if that fly had a father and  
mother?

How would he hang his slender gilded wings,  
And buz lamenting doings in the air?  
Poor harmless fly!

That with his pretty buzzing melody,  
Came here to make us merry; and thou hast  
kill'd him.

*Mar.* Pardon me, sir; 'twas a black ill-  
favoured fly, [him

Like to the empress' Moor; therefore I kill'd  
*Tit.* O, O, O,

Then pardon me for reprehending thee,  
For thou hast done a charitable deed.  
Give me thy knife, I will insult on him;  
Flattering myself, as if it were the Moor,

\* An allusion to brewing.

† Constant or continual practice.

Come hither purposely to poison me.—  
There's for thyself, and that's for Tamora.—  
Ah, sirrah\*!—  
Yet I do think we are not brought so low,  
But that, between us, we can kill a fly,  
That comes in likeness of a coal-black Moor.

Mar. Alas, poor man! grief has so wrought  
on him,

He takes false shadows for true substances  
Tit. Come, take away.—Lavinia, go with  
I'll to thy closet; and go read with thee [me :  
Sad stories, chanced in the times of old.—  
Come, boy, and go with me; thy sight is  
young,  
And thou shalt read, when mine begins to  
dazzle. [Exit.

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. *The same. Before Titus's House.*

Enter TITUS and MARCUS. Then enter  
young LUCIUS, LAVINIA running after him.

Boy. Help, grandsire, help! my aunt La-  
vinia

Follows me every where, I know not why :—  
Good uncle Marcus, see how swift she comes!  
Alas, sweet aunt, I know not what you mean.

Mar. Stand by me, Lucius; do not fear  
thine aunt. [harm.

Tit. She loves thee, boy, too well to do thee

Boy. Ay, when my father was in Rome, she  
did. [these signs?

Mar. What means my niece Lavinia by

Tit. Fear her not, Lucius :—Somewhat doth  
she mean : [thee :

See, Lucius, see, how much she makes of  
Somewhither would she have thee go with her.  
Ah, boy, Cornelia never with more care  
Read to her sons, than she hath read to thee,  
Sweet poetry, and Tully's Oration. [thus?  
Canst thou not guess wherefore she plies thee

Boy. My lord, I know not, I, nor can I  
guess,

Unless some fit or frenzy do possess her :  
For I have heard my grandsire say full oft,  
Extremity of griefs would make men mad ;  
And I have read that Hecuba of Troy [fear ;  
Ran mad through sorrow : That made me to  
Although, my lord, I know; my noble aunt  
Loves me as dear as e'er my mother did,  
And would not, but in fury, fright my youth :  
Which made me down to throw my books,  
and fly ; [aunt :

Causeless, perhaps : But pardon me, sweet  
And, madam, if my uncle Marcus go,  
I will most willingly attend your ladyship.

Mar. Lucius, I will.

[LAVINIA turns over the books which  
LUCIUS has let fall.

Tit. How now, Lavinia?—Marcus, what  
means this?

Some book there is that she desires to see :—  
Which is it, girl, of these?—Open them,  
boy.—

But thou art deeper read, and better skill'd ;  
Come, and take choice of all my library,  
And so beguile thy sorrow, till the heavens  
Reveal the damn'd contriver of this deed.—  
Why lifts she up her arms in sequence? thus?

Mar. I think, she means, that there was  
more than one

Confederate in the fact :—Ay, more there was :  
Or else to heaven she heaves them for revenge.

Tit. Lucius, what book is that she tosseth  
so?

Boy. Grandsire, 'tis Ovid's Metamorphosis ;  
My mother gave't me.

Mar. For love of her that's gone,  
Perhaps she cull'd it from among the rest.

Tit. Soft! see, how busily she turns the  
Help her :— [leaves!

What would she find?—Lavinia, shall I read?

This is the tragic tale of Philomel,

And treats of Tereus' treason, and his rape ;

And rape, I fear, was root of thine annoy.

Mar. See, brother, see; note, how she  
quotes § the leaves. [girl,

Tit. Lavinia, wert thou thus surprised, sweet  
Ravish'd and wrong'd, as Philomela was,

Forced in the ruthless, vast, and gloomy  
See, see!— [woods?—

Ay, such a place there is, where we did hunt,  
(O, had we never, never, hunted there!)

Pattern'd by that the poet here describes,  
By nature made for murders and for rapes.

Mar. O, why should nature build so foul a  
Unless the gods delight in tragedies! [den,

Tit. Give signs, sweet girl,—for here are  
none but friends,—

What Roman lord it was durst do the deed :  
Or slunk not Saturnine, as Tarquin erst,

That left the camp to sin in Lucrece' bed?

Mar. Sit down, sweet niece ;—brother, sit  
down by me.—

Apollo, Pallas, Jove, or Mercury,  
Inspire me, that I may this treason find!—

My lord, look here ;—Look here, Lavinia :

This sandy plot is plain ; guide, if thou canst,  
This after me, when I have writ my name

Without the help of any hand at all.  
[He writes his Name with his Staff, and

guides it with his Feet and Mouth.  
Curs'd be that heart that forced us to this shift!

Write thou, good niece ; and here display, at  
last,

What God will have discover'd for revenge :  
Heaven guide thy pen to print thy sorrows

plain,  
That we may know the traitors, and the truth!

[She takes the Staff in her Mouth, and  
guides it with her stumps, and writes.

\* This was formerly not a disrespectful expression.

Tully's Treatise on Eloquence, entitled *Orator*. ‡ Succession. § To quote is to observe.

¶ Pitiless.

*Tit.* O, do you read, my lord, what she hath  
*Stuprum—Chiron,—Demetrius.* [writ?]

*Mar.* What, what!—the lustful sons of  
Tamora

Performers of this heinous, bloody deed?

*Tit.* *Magne Dominator poli,*

*Tam lentus audis scelera? tam lentus vides?*

*Mar.* O, calm thee, gentle lord! although, I  
There is enough written upon this earth, [know,  
To stir a mutiny in the mildest thoughts.  
And arm the minds of infants to exclains.  
My lord, kneel down with me; Lavinia, kneel;  
And kneel, sweet boy, the Roman Hector's  
hope;

And swear with me,—as with the woful  
And father, of that chaste dishonour'd dame,  
Lord Junius Brutus, swear for Lucrece' rape,—  
That we will prosecute, by good advice,  
Mortal revenge upon these traitorous Goths,  
And see their blood, or die with this reproach.

*Tit.* 'Tis sure enough, an you know how,  
But if you hurt these bear-whelps, then beware:  
The dam will wake; and, if she wind you once,  
She's with the lion deeply still in league,  
And lulls him whilst she playeth on her back,  
And, when he sleeps, will she do what she list.  
You're a young huntsman, Marcus; let it alone;  
And, come, I will go get a leaf of brass,  
And with a gad of steel will write these words,  
And lay it by: the angry northern wind  
Will blow these sands, like Sibil's leaves,  
abroad,

And where's your lesson then?—Boy, what

*Boy.* I say, my lord, that if I were a man,  
Their mother's bed-chamber should not be safe  
Fore these bad-bondmen to the yoke of Rome.

*Mar.* Ay, that's my boy! thy father hath  
full oft

For this ungrateful country done the like.

*Boy.* And, uncle, so will I, an if I live.

*Tit.* Come, go with me into mine armory;  
Lucius, I'll fit thee; and withal, my boy  
Shall carry from me to the empress' sons  
Presents, that I intend to send them both:  
Come, come; thou'lt do thy message, wilt thou  
not?

*Boy.* Ay, with my dagger in their bosoms,

*Tit.* No, boy, not so; I'll teach thee another course.

Lavinia, come:—Marcus, look to my house;  
Lucius and I'll go brave it at the court; [on.  
Ay, marry, will we, sir: and we'll be waited  
[*Exeunt TITUS, LAVINIA, and BOY.*

*Mar.* O heavens, can you hear a good man  
And not relent, or not compassion him? [groan,  
Marcus, attend him in his ecstasy;  
That hath more scars of sorrow in his heart,  
Than foe-men's marks upon his batter'd shield:  
But yet so just, that he will not revenge—  
Revenge the heavens for old Andronicus!

[*Exit.*

SCENE II. *The same. A Room in the  
Palace.*

Enter AARON, CHIRON, and DEMETRIUS,  
at one Door, at another Door, young

LUCIUS, and an Attendant, with a Bundle  
of Weapons, and Verses writ upon them.

*Chi.* Demetrius, here's the son of Lucius;

He hath some message to deliver to us.

*Aar.* Ay, some mad message from his mad  
grandfather.

*Boy.* My lords, with all the humbleness I  
I greet your honours from Andronicus:—

And pray, the Roman gods confound you  
both.

*Dem.* Gramercy!, lovely Lucius: what's  
the news?

*Boy.* That you are both decipher'd, that's  
For villains mark'd with rape. [Aside.]—May  
it please you,

My grandsire, well advised, hath sent by me  
The goodliest weapons of his armory,  
To gratify your honourable youth,  
The hope of Rome; for so he bade me say;  
And so I do, and with his gifts present  
Your lordships, that, whenever you have need,  
You may be armed and appointed well:  
And so I leave you both. [Aside.] like bloody  
villains. [*Exeunt Boy and Attendant.*

*Dem.* What's here? A scroll; and written  
Let's see; [round about!]

*Integer vitæ, scelerisque purus,*

*Non eget Mauri jaculis, nec arcu.*

*Chi.* O, 'tis a verse in Horace; I know it  
I read it in the grammar long ago.

*Aar.* Ay, just!—a verse in Horace:—right,  
you have it.

Now, what a thing it is to be an ass!  
Here's no sound jest! the old man  
hath found their guilt;

And sends the weapons wrapp'd about  
with lines,

That wound beyond their feeling, to  
the quick.

But were our witty empress well  
a-foot,

She would applaud Andronicus' conceit.

But let her rest in her unrest awhile.—

And now, young lords, was't not a happy star  
Led us to Rome, strangers, and, more than so,

Captives, to be advanced to this height?  
It did me good, before the Palace gate

To brave the tribune in his brother's hearing.

*Dem.* But me more good, to see so great a  
Basely insinuate, and send us gifts.

*Aar.* Had he not reason, lord Demetrius?  
Did you not use his daughter very friendly?

*Dem.* I would we had a thousand Roman  
dames

At such a bay, by turn to serve our lust.

*Chi.* A charitable wish, and full of love.

*Aar.* Here lacks but your mother for to say  
amen.

*Chi.* And that would she for twenty thou-  
Dem. Come, let us go; and pray to all the

For our beloved mother in her pains. [gods  
*Aar.* Pray to the devils; the gods have  
given us o'er.

*Dem.* Why do the emperor's trumpets flourish thus?

• Husband.

† The point of a spear.

† I. e., *Grand merci*; great thanks.



*Chi.* Belike, for joy the emperor hath a son.

*Dem.* Soft; who comes here?

*Enter a Nurse, with a Black-a-moor Child in her Arms.*

*Nur.* Good morrow, lords;

O, tell me, did you see Aaron the Moor.

*Aar.* Well, more or less, or ne'er a whit at all,

Here Aaron is: and what with Aaron now?

*Nur.* O gentle Aaron, we are all undone!

Now help, or woe betide thee evermore!

*Aar.* Why, what a caterwauling dost thou keep!

*What dost thou wrap and fumble in thine*

*Nur.* O, that which I would hide from heaven's eye,

Our empress' shame, and stately Rome's dish-

She is deliver'd, lords; she is deliver'd.

*Aar.* To whom?

*Nur.* I mean she's brought to bed.

*Aar.* Well, God Give her good rest! what hath he sent her?

*Nur.* A devil.

*Aar.* Why then she's the devil's dam; a joyful issue.

*Nur.* A joyless, dismal, black, and sorrowful issue:

Here is the babe, as loathsome as a toad

Amongst the fairest breeders of our clime.

The empress sends it thee, thy stamp, thy seal,

And bids thee christen it with thy dagger's point.

*Aar.* Out, out, you whore! is black so base a hue?

*Sweet blowse, you are a beauteous blossom,*

*Dem.* Villain, what hast thou done?

*Aar.* Done! that which thou Canst not undo.

*Chi.* Thou hast undone our mother.

*Aar.* Villain, I have done thy mother.

*Dem.* And therein, hellish dog, thou hast undone.

Woe to her chance, and damn'd her loathed Accursed the offspring of so foul a fiend!

*Chi.* It shall not live.

*Aar.* It shall not die.

*Nur.* Aaron, it must: the mother wills it so.

*Aar.* What, must I, nurse? then let no Do execution on my flesh and blood.

*Dem.* I'll broach\* the tadpole on my rapier's point;

Nurse, give it me; my sword shall soon

*Aar.* Sooner this sword shall plough thy bowels up.

*[Takes the Child from the Nurse, and draws.]*

Stay, murderous villains! will you kill your

Now, by the burning tapers of the sky,

That shone so brightly when this boy was got,

He dies upon my scimitar's sharp point,

That touches this, my first-born son and heir!

I tell you, younglings, not Enceladus†, With all his threat'ning band of Typhon's brood,

Nor great Alcides‡, nor the god of war,

Shall seize this prey out of his father's hands

What, what, ye sauguine shallow-hearted boys!

Ye white limed walls! ye alehouse painted

Coal black is better than another hue,

In that it scorns to bear another hue:

For all the water in the ocean

Can never turn a swan's black legs to white,

Although she lave them hourly in the flood.

Tell the empress from me, I am of age

To keep mine own; excuse it how she can.

*Dem.* Wilt thou betray thy noble mistress thus?

*Aar.* My mistress is my mistress, this The vigour and the picture of my youth:

This, before all the world, do I prefer;

This, maugre§ all the world, will I keep safe

Or some of you shall smoke for it in Rome.

*Dem.* By this our mother is for ever

shamed.

*Chi.* Rome will despise her for this foul

*Nur.* The emperor, in his rage, will doom

her death.

*Chi.* I blush to think upon this ignomy ||.

*Aar.* Why, there's the privilege your beauty

bears:

Fie, treacherous hue! that will betray with

The close enacts and counsels of the heart!

Here's a young lad framed of another leer ¶:

Look how the black slave smiles upon the

father;

As who should say, *Old lad, I am thine own.*

He is your brother, lords; sensibly fed

Of that self-blood that first gave life to you;

And from that womb, where you imprison'd

were,

He is enfranchised and come to light:

Nay, he's your brother by the surer side,

Although my seal be stamped in his face.

*Nur.* Aaron, what shall I say unto the em-

press?

*Dem.* Advise thee, Aaron, what is to be

And we will all subscribe to thy advice;

Save thou the child, so we may all be safe.

*Aar.* Then sit we down, and let us all con-

sult.

My son and I will have the wind of you:

Keep there: Now talk at pleasure of your

safety.

*[They sit on the Ground.]*

*Dem.* How many women saw this child of

his?

*Aar.* Why so, brave lords? when we all

I am a lamb: but, if you brave the Moor,

The chafed boar, the mountain lioness,

The ocean swells not so as Aaron storms.—

But, say again, how many saw the child!

*Nur.* Cornelia, the midwife, and myself

And no one else, but the deliver'd empress.

*Aar.* The empress, the midwife, and your-

self:

Two may keep counsel when the third's

Go to the empress; tell her, this I said:—

*[Stabbing her]*

Weke, weke!—so cries a pig, prepared to the

splt.

\* Spitt.

† A giant, the son of Titan and Terra.

‡ Hercules.

§ In spite of.

|| i. e., Ignominy.

¶ Complexion.

*Dem.* What mean'st thou, Aaron? Wherefore didst thou this?

*Aar.* O lord, sir, 'tis a deed of policy:

Shall she live to betray this guilt of ours?

A long-tongued babbling gossip! no, lords, no.

And now be it known to you my full intent.

Not far one Multeius lives, my countryman,

His wife but yesternight was brought to bed;

His child is like to her, fair as you are:

Go pack\* with him, and give the mother gold,

And tell them both the circumstance of all;

And how by this their child shall be advanced,

And be received for the emperor's heir,

And substituted in the place of mine,

To calm this tempest whirling in the court;

And let the emperor dandle him for his own.

Hark ye, lords! ye see that I have given her

physic, [*Pointing to the Nurse.*]

And you must needs bestow her funeral;

The fields are near, and you are gallant grooms:

This done, see that you take no longer days,

But send the midwife presently to me.

The midwife and the nurse well made away,

Then let the ladies tattle what they please.

*Chi.* Aaron, I see thou wilt not trust the air  
With secrets.

*Dem.* For this care of Tamora,

Herself and hers are highly bound to thee.

[*Exit DEM. and CHI. bearing off the Nurse.*]

*Aar.* Now to the Goths, as swift as swallow flies;

There to dispose this treasure in mine arms,

And secretly to greet the empress' friends.—

Come on, you thick-lipp'd slave, I'll bear you  
hence;

For it is you that puts us to our shifts:

I'll make you feed on berries and on roots,

And feed on curds and whey, and suck the goat,

And cabin in a cave; and bring you up

To be a warrior, and command a camp.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III. *The same. A public Place.*

*Enter TITUS, bearing Arrows, with Letters at the ends of them; with him MARCUS, young LUCIUS, and other Gentlemen, with Bows.*

*Tit.* Come, Marcus, come;—Kinsmen, this is the way:—

Sir boy, now let me see your archery;

Look ye draw home enough, and 'tis there  
straight:

*Terras Astræa reliquit:*

Be you remember'd, Marcus, she's gone, she's  
 fled. [*shall*]

Sir, take you to your tools. You, consins,

Go sound the ocean, and cast your nets;

Happiyy you may find her in the sea;

Yet there's as little justice as at land:—

No; Publius and Sempronius, you must do it;

'Tis you must dig with mattock and with spade,

And pierce the inmost centre of the earth:

Then, when you come to Pluto's region,

I pray you, deliver him this petition:

Tell him it is for justice and for aid;

And that it comes from old Andronicus,

Shaken with sorrows in ungrateful Rome.—

Ah, Rome!—Well, well! I made thee miserable,

What time I threw the people's suffrages

On him that thus doth tyrannize o'er me.—

Go, get you gone; and pray be careful all,

And leave you not a man-of-war unsearch'd;

This wicked emperor may have shipp'd her  
hence, [*twice.*]

And, kinsmen, then we may go pipe for juns.

*Mar.* O, Publius, is not this a heavy case

To see thy noble uncle thus distract?

*Pub.* Therefore, my lord, it highly us concerns,

By day and night, to attend him carefully;

And feed his humour kindly as we may,

Till time beget some careful remedy.

*Mar.* Kinsmen, his sorrows are past remedy

Join with the Goths; and with revengeful war

Take wreak on Rome for this ingratitude,

And vengeance on the traitor Saturnine.

*Tit.* Publius, how now; how now, my

Have you met with her? [*masters?*] What

*Pub.* No, my good lord; but Plutus sends  
you word

If you will have revenge from hell, you shall:

Marry, for Justice, she is so employ'd,

He thinks, with Jove in heaven, or somewhere  
else,

So that perforce you must needs stay a time.

*Tit.* He doth me wrong, to feed me with

I'll dive into the burning lake below, [*delays.*]

And pull her out of Acheron by the heels.—

Marcus, we are but shrubs, no cedars we;

No big-boned men, framed of the Cyclop's size:

But metal, Marcus, steel to the very back;

Yet wrung† with wrongs, more than our backs  
can bear:

And sith‡ there is no justice in earth nor hell,

We will solicit heaven; and move the gods,

To send down justice for to wreak‡ our wrongs:

Come, to this gear||. You are a good archer,

Marcus. [*He gives them the Arrows.*]

*Ad Jovem*, that's for you:—Here, ad *Apol-*

*Ad Martem*, that's for myself;— [*lincom:*—

Here, boy, to Pallas:—Here, to Mercury:

To Saturn, Cains, not to Saturnine,—

You were as good to shoot against the wind.—

To it, boy. Marcus, loose when I bid:

O' my word, I have written to effect;

There's not a god left unsolicited. [*the court:*]

*Mar.* Kinsmen, shoot all your shafts into

We will afflict the emperor in his pride.

*Tit.* Now, masters, draw. [*They shoot.*] O,  
well said, Lucius!

Good boy, in Virgo's lap; give it Pallas. [*moon;*]

*Mar.* My lord, I aim a mile beyond the

Your letter is with Jupiter by this. [*done!*]

*Tit.* Ha! Publius, Publius, what hast thou

See, see, thou hast shot off one of Taurus' horns.

*Mar.* This was the sport, my lord: when

Publius shot,

The bull being gall'd, gave Aries such a knock

\* Contrive, bargain with.

† Strained.

‡ Since.

§ Revenge.

|| Dress, furniture.

That down fell both the ram's horns in the court; [villain?]  
And who should find them but the empress?  
She laugh'd, and told the Moor, he should not choose

But give them to his master for a present.  
*Tit.* Why, there it goes: God give your lordship joy.

*Enter a Clown, with a Basket and Two Pigeons.*

News, news from heaven! Marcus, the post is come.

Sirrah, what tidings? have you any letters? Shall I have justice? what says Jupiter?

*Clo.* Ho! the gibbet-maker? he says, that he hath taken them down again, for the man must not be hanged till the next week.

*Tit.* But what says Jupiter, I ask thee?

*Clo.* Alas, sir, I know not Jupiter; I never drank with him in all my life.

*Tit.* Why, villain, art not thou the carrier?

*Clo.* Ay, of my pigeons, sir; nothing else.

*Tit.* Why, didst thou not come from heaven?

*Clo.* From heaven? alas, sir, I never came there: God forbid, I should be so bold to press to heaven in my young days. Why, I am going with my pigeons to the tribunal plebs\*, to take up a matter of brawl betwixt my uncle and one of the imperial's men.

*Mar.* Why, sir, that is as fit as can be, to serve for your oration; and let him deliver the pigeons to the emperor for you.

*Tit.* Tell me, can you deliver an oration to the emperor with a grace?

*Clo.* Nay, truly, sir, I could never say grace in all my life.

*Tit.* Sirrah, come hither: make no more ado, But give your pigeons to the emperor:

By me thou shalt have justice at his hands.

Hold, hold;—mean while, here's money for Give me a pen and ink.— [thy charges.

Sirrah, can you with a grace deliver a suppli-  
*Clo.* Ay, sir. [cation?

*Tit.* Then here is a supplication for you. And when you come to him, at the first approach, you must kneel; then kiss his foot; then deliver up your pigeons; and then look for your reward, I'll be at hand, sir: see you do it bravely.

*Clo.* I warrant you, sir; let me alone. [see it.

*Tit.* Sirrah, hast thou a knife? Come, let me Here, Marcus, fold it in the oration; [pliant:—

For thou hast made it like an humble sup- And when thou hast given it to the emperor,

Knock at my door, and tell me what he says.

*Clo.* God be with you, sir; I will.

*Tit.* Come, Marcus, let's go:—Publius, fol- low me. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV. *The same. Before the Palace.*

*Enter SATURNINUS, TAMORA, CHIRON, DEMETRIUS, Lords, and Others: SATURNINUS with the Arrows in his Hand, that TITUS shot.*

*Sat.* Why, lords, what wrongs are these? Was ever seen

An emperor of Rome thus overborne, Troubled, confronted thus: and, for the extent Of equal† justice, used in such contempt?

My lords, you know, as do the mighty gods, However these disturbers of our peace [pass'd, Buz in the people's ears, there nought hath

But even with law, against the wilful sons Of old Andronicus. And what an if His sorrows have so overwhelm'd his wits,

Shall we be thus afflicted in his wrecks, His fits, his frenzy, and his bitterness? And now he writes to heaven for his redress:

See, here's to Jove, and this to Mercury; This to Apollo; this to the god of war: Sweet scrolls to fly about the streets of Rome!

What's this, but libelling against the senate, And blazoning our injustice every where? A goodly humour, is it not, my lords?

As who would say, in Rome no justice were. But, if I live, his feigned ecstasies Shall be no shelter to these outrages:

But he and his shall know that justice lives In Saturninus' health; whom, if she sleep, He'll so awake, as she in fury shall

Cut off the proud'st conspirator that lives.

*Tam.* My gracious lord, my lovely Saturnine, Lord of my life, commander of my thoughts, Calm thee, and bear the faults of Titus' age,

The effects of sorrow for his valiant sons, Whose loss hath pierced him deep, and scarr'd his heart;

And rather comfort his distressed plight, Than prosecute the meanest, or the best, [come For these contempts. Why, thus it shall be- High-witted Tamora to gloze‡ with all: [Aside.

But, Titus, I have touch'd thee to the quick, Thy life-blood out: if Aaron now be wise, Then is all safe, the anchor's in the port.—

*Enter Clown.*

How now, good fellow? wouldst thou speak with us? [imperial.

*Clo.* Yes, forsooth, an your mistresship be

*Tam.* Empress I am, but yonder sits the emperor.

*Clo.* 'Tis he.—God, and saint Stephen, give you good den:—I have brought you a letter, and a couple of pigeons here.

[SATURNINUS reads the Letter.

*Sat.* Go, take him away, and hang him presently.

*Clo.* How much money must I have?

*Tam.* Come, sirrah, you must be hang'd.

*Clo.* Hang'd! By'r lady, then I have brought up a neck to a fair end. [Exit, guarded.

*Sat.* Despicable and intolerable wrongs! Shall I endure this monstrous villany?

I know from whence this same device proceeds; May this be borne?—as if his traitorous sons,

That died by law for murder of our brother, Have by my means been butcher'd wrongfully.

Go, drag the villain hither by the hair; Nor age, nor honour, shall shape privilege:—

For this proud mock, I'll be thy slaughter-man: Sty frantic wretch, that help'st to make me great,

In hope thyself should govern Rome and me.

\* The Clown means to say *plebeian tribune*, i. e., tribune of the people. † Equal. ‡ Flatter



*Enter ÆMILIUS.*

What news with thee, Æmilius? [more cause!]

*Æmil.* Arm, arm, my lords; Rome never had  
The Goths have gather'd head; and with a  
Of high-resolved men, bent to the spoil, [power  
They hither march amain, under conduct  
Of Lucius, son to old Andronicus;  
Who threats, in course of this revenge, to do  
As much as ever Coriolanus did.

*Sat.* Is warlike Lucius general of the Goths?  
These tidings nip me; and I hang the head  
As flowers with frost, or grass beat down with  
storms.

Ay, now begin our sorrows to approach:  
'Tis he the common people love so much;  
Myself hath often overheard them say,  
(When I have walk'd like a private man,)  
That Lucius' banishment was wrongfully,  
And they have wish'd that Lucius were their  
emperor. {city strong?

*Tam.* Why should you fear? is not your  
*Sat.* Ay, but the citizens favour Lucius;  
And will revolt from me to succour him.

*Tam.* King, be thy thoughts imperious\*,  
like thy name.

Is the sun dimm'd, that quats do fly in it?  
The eagle suffers little birds to sing,  
And is not careful what they mean thereby;  
Knowing that with the shadow of his wings,  
He can at pleasure stint† their melody:

Even so may'st thou the giddy men of Rome.  
Then cheer thy spirit: for know, thou emperor,  
I will enchant the old Andronicus, [gerous,  
With words more sweet, and yet more dan-  
Than baits to fish, or honey-stalks to sheep;  
When as the one is wounded with the bait,  
The other rotted with delicious feed.

*Sat.* But he will not entreat his son for us.

*Tam.* If Tamora entreat him, then he will:  
For I can smooth, and fill his aged ear  
With golden promises; that were his heart  
Almost impregnable, his old ears deaf,  
Yet should both ear and heart obey my tongue.  
Go thou before, be our ambassador:

[To ÆMILIUS.]

Say, that the emperor requests a parley  
Of warlike Lucius, and appoint the meeting,  
Even at his father's house, the old Andronicus.

*Sat.* Æmilius, do this message honourably:  
And if he stand on hostage for his safety, [best  
Bid him demand what pledge will please him

*Æmil.* Your bidding shall I do effectually.

[Exit ÆMILIUS]

*Tam.* Now will I to that old Andronicus;  
And temper him with all the art I have,  
To pluck proud Lucius from the warlike Goths.  
And now, sweet emperor, be blithe again,  
And bury all thy fear in my devices.

*Sat.* Then go successfully, and plead to him.

[Exeunt.]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. Plains near Rome.

*Enter LUCIUS, and Goths, with Drum and Colours.*

*Luc.* Approved warriors, and my faithful  
friends,

I have received letters from great Rome,  
Which signify, what hate they bear their em-  
peror,

And how desirous of our sight they are. [ness,  
Therefore, great lords, be, as your titles wit-  
Imperious, and impatient of your wrongs;  
And wherein Rome hath done you any scath‡,  
Let him make treble satisfaction.

1 *Goth.* Brave slip, sprung from the great  
Andronicus, [comfort;

Whose name was once our terror, now our  
Whose high exploits, and honourable deeds,  
Ingrateful Rome requites with foul contempt,  
Be bold in us: we'll follow where thou lead'st,  
Like stinging bees in hottest summer's day,  
Led by their master to the flower'd fields,—  
And be avenged on cursed Tamora. [him.

*Goths.* And, as he saith, so say we all with

*Luc.* I humbly thank him, and I thank you  
But who comes here, led by a lusty Goth? [all.  
*Enter a Goth, leading AARON, with his  
Child in his Arms.*

2 *Goth.* Renowned Lucius, from our troops  
To gaze upon a ruinous monastery; [I stray'd,  
And as I earnestly did fix mine eye

Upon the wasted building, suddenly  
I heard a child cry underneath a wall:  
I made unto the noise; when soon I heard  
The crying babe controll'd with this discourse:  
*Peace, tawny slave, half me, and half thy  
dam!*

*Did not thy hue bewray whose brat thou art  
Had nature lent thee but thy mother's look  
Villain, thou might'st have been an em-  
peror:* [white

*But where the bull and cow are both milk  
They never do beget a coal-black calf.*

*Peace, villain, peace!*—even thus he rate  
the babe,—

*For I must bear thee to a trusty Goth;  
Who, when he knows thou art the empress  
babe,*

*Will hold thee dearly for thy mother's sake  
With this, my weapon drawn, I rush'd upon  
him.* [hither,

Surprised him suddenly; and brought him  
To use as you think needful of the man.

*Luc.* O worthy Goth! this is the incarnate  
devil,

That robb'd Andronicus of his good hand:  
This is the pearl that pleased your empress  
eyes;

And here's the base fruit of his burning lust.—  
Say, wall-eyed slave, whither would'st thou  
convey

This growing image of thy fiend-like fac-

\* Imperial

† Stop.

‡ Harm.

§ Alluding to the proverb, "a black man is a pearl in a fair woman's eye."

Why dost not speak? What! deaf? No; not a word?

A halter, soldiers; hang him on this tree, And by his side his fruit of bastardy.

*Aar.* Touch not the boy, he is of royal blood.

*Luc.* Too like the sire for ever being good.

First, hang the child, that he may see it sprawl;

A sight to vex the father's soul withal.

Get me a ladder.

[*A Ladder brought, which AARON is obliged to ascend.*

*Aar.* Lucius, save the child;

And bear it from me to the empress.

If thou do this, I'll show thee wondrous things,

That highly may advantage thee to hear:

If thou wilt not, befall what may befall,

I'll speak no more; But vengeance rot you all!

*Luc.* Say on; and, if it please me which

thou speak'st,

Thy child shall live, and I will see it nourish'd.

*Aar.* An if it please thee? why, assure thee,

Lucius,

'Twill vex thy soul to hear what I shall speak;

For I must talk of murders, rapes, and massa-

acts of black night, abominable deeds, [cries,

Complots of mischief, treason; villanies

Ruthful to hear, yet piteously perform'd:

And this shall all be buried by my death,

Unless thou swear to me, my child shall live.

*Luc.* Tell on thy mind; I say, thy child shall

live.

[begin.

*Aar.* Swear, that he shall, and then I will

*Luc.* Who should I swear by? thou believest

no god;

That granted, how canst thou believe an oath?

*Aar.* What if I do not? as, indeed, I do not:

Yet,—for I know thou art religious,

And hast a thing within thee, called conscience;

With twenty popish tricks and ceremonies;

Which I have seen thee careful to observe,—

Therefore I urge thy oath:—For that, I know,

An idiot holds his bauble for a god, [swears;

And keeps the oath, which by that god he

To that I'll urge him:—Therefore, thou shalt

By that same god, what god so'er it be, [vow

That thou adorest and hast in reverence,—

To save my boy, to nourish, and bring him up;

Or else I will discover nought to thee.

*Luc.* Even by my god, I swear to thee, I

will.

[empress.

*Aar.* First, know thou, I begot him on the

*Luc.* O most insatiate, luxurious woman!

*Aar.* Tut, Lucius! this was but a deed of

charity,

To that which thou shalt hear of me anon,

'Twas her two sons that murder'd Bassianus:

They cut thy sister's tongue, and ravish'd her,

And cut her hands; and trimm'd her as thou

saw'st.

[trimming?

*Luc.* O, detestable villain! call'st thou that

*Aar.* Why, she was wash'd, and cut, and

trimm'd; and 'twas

Trim sport for them that had the doing of it.

*Luc.* O, barbarous, beastly villains, like

thyselves!

[them;

*Aar.* Indeed, I was their tutor to instruct

That coddling spirit had they from their mother,

As sure a card as ever won the set:

That bloody mind, I think, they learn'd of me,

As true a dog as ever fought at head.—

Well, let my deeds be witness of my worth.

I train'd thy brethren to that guileful hole,

Where the dead corpse of Bassianus lay:

I wrote the letter that thy father found,

And hid the gold within the letter mention'd,

Confederate with the queen, and her two sons;

And what not done, that thou hast cause to rue,

Wherein I had no stroke of mischief in it?

I play'd the cheater for thy father's hand;

And, when I had it, drew myself apart,

And almost broke my heart with extreme

laughter.

I pry'd me through the crevice of a wall,

When, for his hand, he had his two sons' heads;

Beheld his tears, and laugh'd so heartily,

That both mine eyes were rainy like to his;

And when I told the empress of this sport,

She swoonded almost at my pleasing tale,

And, for my tidings, gave me twenty kisses.

*Goth.* What! canst thou say all this, and

never blush?

*Aar.* Ay, like a black dog, as the saying is.

*Luc.* Art thou not sorry for these heinous

deeds?

[more.

*Aar.* Ay, that I had not done a thousand

Even now I curse the day, (and yet I think,

Few come within the compass of my curse.)

Wherein I did not some notorious ill:

As kill a man, or else devise his death;

Ravish a maid, or plot the way to do it;

Accuse some innocent, and forswear myself

Set deadly enmity between two friends;

Make poor men's cattle break their necks;

Set fire on barns and hay-stacks in the night,

And bid the owners quench them with their

tears.

[graves,

Of't have I digg'd up dead men from their

And set them upright at their dear friends'

doors,

Even when their sorrows almost were forgot;

And on their skins, as on the bark of trees,

Have with my knife carved in Roman letters,

*Let not your sorrow die, though I am dead.*

Tut, I have done a thousand dreadful things,

As willingly as one would kill a fly;

And nothing grieves me heartily indeed,

But that I cannot do ten thousand more.

*Luc.* Bring down the devil; for he must not

die

So sweet a death, as hanging presently.

*Aar.* If there be devils, 'would I were a

To live and burn in everlasting fire; [devil,

So I might have your company in hell,

But to torment you with my bitter tongue!

*Luc.* Sirs, stop his mouth, and let him speak

no more.

*Enter a Goth.*

*Goth.* My lord, there is a messenger from

Rome,

Desires to be admitted to your presence.

*Luc.* Let him come near.—

*Enter ÆMILIUS.*

Welcome, Æmilius, what's the news from

Rome?

[Goths,

*Æmil.* Lord Lucius, and you princes of the

The Roman emperor greets you all by me:

4 G 3

And, for he understands you are in arms,  
He craves a parley at your father's house  
Willing you to demand your hostages,  
And they shall be immediately deliver'd.

*I Goth.* What says our general? [pledges

*Luc.* *Æmilius*, let the emperor give his  
Unto my father and my uncle *Marcus*,  
And we will come.—March away\*.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *Rome. Before Titus's House.*

*Enter TAMORA, CHIRON, and DEMETRIUS,*  
*disguised.*

*Tam.* Thus, in this strange and sad habili-  
I will encounter with *Andronicus*; [ment,  
And say, I am *Revenge*, sent from below,  
To join with him, and right his heinous wrongs.  
Knock at his study where, they say, he keeps,  
To ruminate strange plots of dire revenge;  
Tell him, *Revenge* is come to join with him,  
And work confusion on his enemies.

[*They knock.*

*Enter TITUS, above.*

*Tit.* Who doth molest my contemplation?  
Is it your trick, to make me ope the door;  
That so my sad decrees may fly away,  
And all my study be to no effect?

You are deceived: for what I mean to do,  
See here, in bloody lines I have set down;  
And what is written shall be executed.

*Tam.* *Titus*, I am come to talk with thee.

*Tit.* No; not a word: How can I grace my  
Wanting a hand to give it action? [talk,  
Thou hast the odds of me, therefore no more.

*Tam.* If thou didst know me, thou wouldst  
talk with me. [enough:]

*Tit.* I am not mad; I know thee well  
Witness this wretched stump, these crimson  
lines; [care:]

Witness these trenches, made by grief and  
Witness the tiring day, and heavy night;  
Witness all sorrow, that I know thee well  
For our proud empress, mighty *Tamora*:

Is not thy coming for my other hand? [*mora*;

*Tam.* Know, thou sad man, I am not *Ta-*  
*She* is thy enemy, and I thy friend: [dom,  
I am *Revenge*; sent from the infernal king-  
To ease the gnawing vulture of thy mind,  
By working wreakful vengeance on thy foes.  
Come down, and welcome me to this world's  
light;

Transfer with me of murder and of death:  
*Chere's* not a hollow cave, or lurking-place,  
No vast obscurity, or misty vale,  
Where bloody murder, or detested rape,  
Can couch for fear, but I will find them out;  
And in their ears tell them my dreadful name,  
*Revenge*, which makes the foul offender quake.

*Tit.* Art thou *Revenge*? and art thou sent to  
To be a torment to mine enemies? [me,

*Tam.* I am; therefore come down, and  
welcome me. [thee.]

*Tit.* Do me some service, ere I come to  
Lo, by thy side were *Rape*, and *Murder*,  
stands;

Now give some surance that thou art *Revenge*,

Stab them, or tear them on thy chariot wheels;  
And then I'll come, and be thy waggoner,  
And whirl along with thee about the globes.  
Provide thee proper palfrics, black as jet,  
To hale thy vengeful waggon swift away,  
And find out murderers in their guilty caves:  
And, when thy car is laden with their heads,  
I will dismount, and by the waggon wheel  
Trot, like a servile footman, all day long;  
Even from *Hyperion's* rising in the east,  
Until his very downfall in the sea.  
And day by day I'll do this heavy task,  
So thou destroy *Rapine* and *Murder* there.

*Tam.* These are my ministers, and com-  
with me. [call'd.]

*Tit.* Are they thy ministers? what are they  
*Tam.* *Rapine* and *Murder*; therefore called  
so, [mien.]

'Cause they take vengeance of such kind of  
*Tit.* Good lord, how like the empress' sons  
they are!

And you, the empress! But we worldly men  
Have miserable, mad, mistaking eyes.  
O sweet *Revenge*, now do I come to thee:  
And, if one arm's embracement will content  
I will embrace thee in it by and by. [thee,

[*Exit TITUS, from above.*

*Tam.* This closing with him fits his lunacy:  
Whate'er I forge, to feed his brain-sick fits,  
Do you uphold and maintain in your speeches.  
For now he firmly takes me for *Revenge*;  
And, being credulous in this mad thought,  
I'll make him send for *Lucius*, his son;  
And, whilst I at a banquet hold him sure,  
I'll find some cunning practice out of hand,  
To scatter and disperse the giddy *Goths*,  
Or, at the least, make them his enemies.  
See, here he comes, and I must ply my theme.

*Enter TITUS.*

*Tit.* Long have I been forlorn, and all for  
thee:

Welcome, dread fury, to my woful house;—  
*Rapine*, and *Murder*, you are welcome too:—  
How like the empress and her sons you are!  
Well are you fitted, had you but a Moor:—  
Could not all hell afford you such a devil?—  
For, well I wot, the empress never wags,  
But in her company there is a Moor;  
And, would you represent our queen aright,  
It were convenient you had such a devil:  
But welcome, as you are. What shall we do?

*Tam.* What wouldst thou have us do, *Andronicus*? [him.]

*Dem.* Show me a murderer, I'll deal with  
*Chi.* Show me a villain, that hath done a  
And I am sent to be revenged on him. [rape,

*Tam.* Show me a thousand, that hath done  
thee wrong,

And I will be revenged on them all.

*Tit.* Look round about the wicked streets of  
*Rome*;

And when thou find'st a man that's like thyself,  
Good *Murder*, stab him; he's a murderer.—  
Go thou with him; and when it is thy hap  
To find another that is like to thee.

Good *Rapine*, stab him; he is a -avisher.

\* Perhaps this is a stage direction, crept into the text.



Go thou with them; and in the emperor's  
There is a queen, attended by a Moor; [court  
Well may'st thou know her by thy own pro-  
portion,

For up and down she doth resemble thee;  
I pray thee, do on them some violent death,  
They have been violent to me and mine. [we do.

*Tam.* Well hast thou lesson'd us; this shall  
But would it please thee, good Andronicus,  
To send for Lucius, thy thrice valiant son,  
Who leads towards Rome a band of warlike  
Goths,

And bid him come and banquet at thy house:  
When he is here, even at thy solemn feast,  
I will bring in the empress and her sons,  
The emperor himself, and all thy foes;  
And at thy mercy shall they stoop and kneel,  
And on them shalt thou ease thy angry heart.  
What says Andronicus to this device? [calls.

*Tit.* Marcus, my brother!—'tis sad Titus  
*Enter Marcus.*

Go, gentle Marcus, to thy nephew Lucius;  
Thou shalt inquire him out among the Goths:  
Bid him repair to me, and bring with him  
Some of the chiefest princes of the Goths;  
Bid him encamp his soldiers where they are:  
Tell him, the emperor and the empress too  
Feast at my house: and he shall feast with  
them.

This do thou for my love; and so let him,  
As he regards his aged father's life.

*Mar.* This will I do, and soon return again.  
[Exit.

*Tam.* Now will I hence about thy business,  
And take my ministers along with me.

*Tit.* Nay, nay, let Rape and Murder stay  
with me;

Or else I'll call my brother lack again,  
And cleave to no revenge but Lucius.

*Tam.* What say you, boys? will you abide  
Whiles I go tell mylord the emperor, [with him,  
How I have govern'd our determined jest?  
Yield to his humour, smooth and speak him  
fair, [Aside.

And tarry with him, till I come again.

*Tit.* I know them all, though they suppose  
me mad;

And will o'er-reach them in their own devices,  
A pair of cursed hell-hounds, and their dam. [Aside.

*Dem.* Madam, depart at pleasure, leave us  
here. [goes

*Tam.* Farewell, Andronicus: Revenge now  
To lay a complot to betray thy foes.

[Exit TAMORA.  
*Tit.* I know thou dost; and, sweet Revenge,  
farewell.

*Chi.* Tell us, old man, how shall we be em-  
ploy'd? [do.—

*Tit.* Tut, I have work enough for you to  
Publius, come hither, Caius, and Valentine!

*Enter Publius, and Others.*

*Pub.* What's your will?

*Tit.* Know you these two?

*Pub.* Th' empress' sons,  
take them, Chiron and Demetrius.

*Tit.* Fie, Publius, fie! thou art too much  
deceived;

The one is Murder, Rape is the other's name:  
And therefore bind them, gentle Publius;  
Caius, and Valentine, lay hands on them:  
Oft have you heard me wish for such an hour,  
And now I find it; therefore bind them sure;  
And stop their mouths, if they begin to cry.

[Exit TITUS.—PUBLIUS, &c., lay hold on  
CHIRON and DEMETRIUS.

*Chi.* Villains, forbear: we are the empress'  
sons. [commanded.—

*Pub.* And therefore do we what we are  
Stop close their mouths, let them not speak a  
word: [fast.

Is he sure bound? look, that you bind them  
*Re-enter TITUS ANDRONICUS, with LAVI-  
NIA; she bearing a Basin, and he a Knife.*

*Tit.* Come, come, Lavinia; look, thy foes  
are bound;— [me;

Sirs, stop their mouths, let them not speak to  
But let them hear what fearful words I utter.  
O villains, Chiron and Demetrius!

Here stands the spring whom you have stain'd  
with mud;

This goodly summer with your winter mix'd.  
You kill'd her husband; and, for that vile fault,  
Two of her brothers were condemn'd to death:  
My hand cut off, and made a merry jest:  
Both her sweet hands, her tongue, and that,  
more dear

Than hands or tongue, her spotless chastity,  
Inhuman traitors, you constrain'd and forced.  
What would you say, if I should let you  
speak? [grace.

Villains, for shame you could not beg for  
Hark, wretches, how I mean to martyr you.  
This one hand yet is left to cut your throats;  
Whilst that Lavinia 'tween her stumps doth  
hold

The basin, that receives your guilty blood.

You know, your mother means to feast with  
me, [mad,—

And calls herself, Revenge, and thinks me  
Hark, villains; I will grind your bones to dust,  
And with your blood and it, I'll make a  
And of the paste a coffin \* I will rear, [paste;  
And make two pasties of your shameful heads;  
And bid that strumpet, your unhallow'd dam,  
Like to the earth, swallow her own increase.

This is the feast that I have bid her to,  
And this the banquet she shall surfeit on;

For worse than Philomel you used my daughter,  
And worse than Progne I will be revenged:

And now prepare your throats.—Lavinia,  
come, [He cuts their throats.

Receive the blood: and, when that they are  
dead,

Let me go grind their bones to powder small,  
And with this hateful liquor temper it;

And in that paste let their vile heads be baked.  
Come, come, be every one officious [prove

To make this banquet; which I wish may  
More stern and bloody than the Centaur's feast.

So, now bring them in, for I will play the  
cook,

\* Crust of raised pie.

And see them ready 'gainst their mother comes.

[*Exeunt, bearing the dead bodies.*]

SCENE III. *The same. A Partition, with Tables, &c.*

*Enter LUCIUS, MARCUS, and Goths, with AARON, Prisoner.*

*Luc.* Uncle Marcus, since 'tis my father's That I repair to Rome, I am content. [mind, I *Goth.* And ours, with thine, befall what fortune will. [Moor,

*Luc.* Good uncle, take you in this barbarous This ravenous tiger, this accursed devil ; Let him receive no sustenance, fetter him, Till he be brought unto the empress' face, For testimony of her foul proceedings : And see the ambush of our friends be strong : I fear, the emperor means no good to us.

*Aar.* Some devil whisper curses in mine ear, And prompt me, that my tongue may utter forth

The venomous malice of my swelling heart !

*Luc.* Away, inhuman dog ! unhallow'd slave ! Sirs, help our uncle to convey him in.—

[*Exeunt Goths, with AARON. Flourish.* The trumpets show the emperor is at hand.

*Enter SATURNINUS and TAMORA, with Tribunes, Senators, and Others.*

*Sat.* What, hath the firmament more suns than one ? [sun ?

*Luc.* What boots \* it thee, to call thyself a *Mar.* Rome's emperor, and nephew, break † the parle ;

These quarrels must be quietly debated.

The feast is ready, which the careful Titus Hath ordained to an honourable end, [Rome : For peace, for love, for league, and good to Please you, therefore, draw nigh, and take *Sat.* Marcus, we will. [your places.

[*Hautboys sound. The Company sit down at Table.*]

*Enter TITUS, dressed like a Cook. LAVINIA, veiled, young LUCIUS, and Others.*

*Titus places the Dishes on the Table.*

*Tit.* Welcome, my gracious lord : welcome, dread queen ; [cious ;

Welcome, ye warlike Goths ; welcome, *Luc.* And welcome, all : although the cheer be poor, [it.

'Twill fill your stomachs ; please you eat of *Sat.* Why art thou thus attired, Andronicus ? [well,

*Tit.* Because I would be sure to have all To entertain your highness, and your empress.

*Tam.* We are beholden to you, good Andronicus. [you were.

*Tit.* An if your highness knew my heart, My lord the emperor, resolve me this ;

Was it well done of rash Virginus, To slay his daughter with his own right-hand,

Because she was enforced, stain'd, and de- *Sat.* It was, Andronicus. [flour'd ?

*Tit.* Your reason, mighty lord !

*Sat.* Because the girl should not survive her shame,

And by her presence still renew his sorrows.

*Tit.* A reason mighty, strong, and effectual ; A pattern, precedent, and lively warrant, For me, most wretched to perform the like : Die, die, Lavinia, and thy shame with thee ; [He kills LAVINIA.

And, with thy shame, thy father's sorrow die ! *Sat.* What hast thou done, unnatural, and unkind ?

*Tit.* Kill'd her, for whom my tears have made me blind.

I am as woful as Virginus was :

And have a thousand times more cause than he To do this outrage ;—and it is now done.

*Sat.* What, was she ravish'd ? tell, who did the deed. [highness feed ?

*Tit.* Will' please you eat ? will't please you *Tam.* Why hast thou slain thine only daughter thus ?

*Tit.* Not I ; 'twas Chiron and Demetrius : They ravish'd her, and cut away her tongue,

And they, 'twas they, that did her all this wrong.

*Sat.* Go, fetch them hither to us presently.

*Tit.* Why, there they are both, baked in that Whereof their mother daintily hath fed, [pie ; Eating the flesh that she herself hath bred.

'Tis true, 'tis true ; witness my knife's sharp point. [Killing TAMORA.

*Sat.* Die, frantic wretch, for this accursed deed. [Killing TITUS.

*Luc.* Can the son's eye behold his father bleed ? [deed.

There's need for meed, death for a deadly [Kills SATURNINUS. A great Tumult.

*The People in confusion disperse.*

MARCUS, LUCIUS, and their Partisans ascend the Steps before TITUS'S House.

*Mar.* You sad-faced men, people and sons of Rome,

By uproar severed, like a flight of fowl Scatter'd by winds and high tempestuous gusts,

O, let me teach you how to knit again This scatter'd corn into one mutual sheaf,

These broken limbs again into one body.

*Sen.* Lest Rome herself be bane unto herself ; And she, whom mighty kingdoms court'sy to,

Like a forlorn and desperate cast-away, Do shameful execution on herself.

But if my frosty signs and chaps of age, Grave witnesses of true experience,

Cannot induce you to attend my words,— Speak, Rome's dear friend ; [To LUCIUS.] as

erst our ancestor,

When with his solemn tongue he did discourse To love-sick Dido's sad attending ear,

The story of that baleful burning night. [Troy ; When subtle Greeks surprised king Priam's

Tell us, what Sinon hath bewitch'd our ears, Or who hath brought the fatal engine in,

That gives our Troy, our Rome, the civil wound.—

My heart is not compact of flint, nor steel ; Nor can I utter all our bitter grief,

Nor floods of tears will drown my oratory, And break my very utterance ; even i' the time

\* Advantage, benefit.

† i. e., Begin the parley.

When it should move you to attend me most,  
Lending your kind commiseration :  
Here is a captain, let him tell the tale ;  
Your hearts will throb and weep to hear him  
speak. [you,

*Luc.* Then noble auditory, be it known to  
That cursed Chiron and Demetrius [ther ;  
Were they that murdered our emperor's bro-  
And they it were that ravished our sister :  
For their fell faults our brothers were behead-  
ed ; [zen'd

Our father's tears despised ; and basely co-  
Of that true hand, that fought Rome's quarrel  
And sent her enemies unto the grave. [out,

Lastly, myself unkindly banished,  
The gates shut on me, and turn'd weeping out,  
To beg relief among Rome's enemies ;  
Who drown'd their enmity in my true tears,  
And oped their arms to embrace me as a friend :  
And I am the turn'd-forth, be it known to you,  
That have preserved her welfare in my blood ;  
And from her bosom took the enemy's point,  
Sheathing the steel in my adventurous body.

Alas ! you know I am no vaunter, I ;  
My scars can witness, dumb although they are,  
That my report is just, and full of truth.  
But, soft ; methinks, I do digress too much,  
Citing my worthless praise : O, pardon me ;  
For when no friends are by, men praise them-  
selves. [child.

*Mar.* Now is my turn to speak ; Behold this  
[Pointing to the Child in the arms of  
an Attendant.

Of this was Tamora delivered ;  
The issue of an irreligious Moor,  
Chief architect and plotter of these woes ;  
The villain is alive in Titus' house,  
Damn'd as he is, to witness this is true.  
Now judge, what cause had Titus to revenge  
These wrongs, unspeakable, past patience,  
Or more than any living man could bear.  
Now you have heard the truth, what say you,  
Romans ?

Have we done aught amiss ? Show us wherein,  
And, from the place where you behold us now,  
The poor remainder of Andronici  
Will, hand in hand, all headlong cast us down,  
And on the ragged stones beat forth our brains,  
And make a mutual closure of our house.  
Speak, Romans, speak ; and, if you say, we  
shall,

Lo, hand in hand, Lucius and I will fall.

*Emil.* Come, come, thou reverend man of  
Rome,

And bring our emperor gently in thy hand,  
Lucius our emperor ; for, well I know,  
The common voice do cry, it shall be so.

*Rom.* [Several speak.] Lucius, all hail ;  
Rome's royal emperor !

Lucius, &c. descend.

*Mar.* Go, go into old Titus' sorrowful house ;  
[To an Attendant.

And hither hale that misbelieving Moor,  
To be adjudg'd some direful slaughtering death,  
As punishment for his most wicked life.

*Rom.* [Several speak.] Lucius, all hail ;  
Rome's gracious governor !

*Luc.* Thanks, gentle Romans : May I govern  
so,

To heal Rome's harms, and wipe away her woe !  
But, gentle people, give me aim awhile,—  
For nature puts me to a heavy task ;—

Stand all aloof :—but, uncle, draw you near,  
To shed obsequious tears upon this trunk :—  
O, take this warm kiss on thy pale cold lips,  
[Kisses Titus.

These sorrowful drops upon thy blood-stain'd  
The last true duties of thy noble son ! [face,

*Mar.* Tear for tear, and loving kiss for kiss,  
Thy brother Marcus tenders on thy lips :  
O, were the sum of these that I should pay  
Countless and infinite, yet would I pay them !

*Luc.* Come hither, boy ; come, come, and  
learn of us [well :

To melt in showers : Thy grandsire loved thee  
Many a time he danced thee on his knee,  
Sung thee asleep, his loving breast thy pillow ;  
Many a matter hath he told to thee,

Meet, and agreeing with thine infancy ;  
In that respect then, like a loving child, [spring,  
Shed yet some small drops from thy tender  
Because kind nature doth require it so : [woe :  
Friends should associate friends in grief and  
Bid him farewell ; commit him to the grave ;  
Do him that kindness, and take leave of him.

*Boy.* O grandsire, grandsire ! even with all  
my heart

Would I were dead, so you did live again !—  
O lord, I cannot speak to him for weeping  
My tears will choke me, if I ope my mouth.

*Enter Attendants, with AARON.*

*1 Rom.* You sad Andronici, have done with  
Give sentence on this execrable wretch, [woes,  
That hath been breeder of these dire events.

*Luc.* Set him breast-deep in earth, and fa-  
mish him ;

There let him stand and rave, and cry for food !  
If any one relieves or pities him,  
For the offence he dies. This is our doom :  
Some stay, to see him fastened in the earth.

*Aar.* O, why should wrath be mute, and  
fury dumb ?

I am no baby, I, that, with base prayers,  
I should repent the evils I have done ;  
Ten thousand worse, than ever yet I did,  
Would I perform, if I might have my will  
If one good deed in all my life I did,  
I do repent it from my very soul.

*Luc.* Some loving friends convey the em-  
peror hence,

And give him burial in his father's grave :

My father, and Lavinia, shall forthwith  
Be closed in our household's monument.

As for that heinous tiger, Tamora,  
No funeral rite, nor man in mournful weeds,  
No mournful bell shall ring her burial ;  
But throw her forth to beasts and birds of prey  
Her life was beast-like, and devoid of pity ;  
And, being so, shall have like want of pity.  
See justice done to Aaron, that damn'd Moor  
By whom our heavy haps had their beginning.  
Then afterwards, to order well the state ;  
That like events may ne'er it ruin.

[Exeunt



# PERICLES, PRINCE OF TYRE.

## Persons represented.

ANTIOCHUS, *King of Antioch.*  
 PERICLES, *Prince of Tyre.*  
 HELLICANUS, } *Two Lords of Tyre.*  
 ESCANES, }  
 SIMONIDES, *King of Pentapolis.*  
 CLEON, *governor of Tharsus.*  
 LYSIMACHUS, *governor of Mitylene.*  
 CERIMON, *a Lord of Ephesus.*  
 THALIARD, *a Lord of Antioch.*  
 PHILEMON, *servant to Cerimon.*  
 LEONINE, *servant to Dionyza.*  
 Marshal.  
 A Pander, and his Wife.

BOULT, *their servant.*  
 GOWER, *as Chorus.*

*The Daughter of Antiochus.*  
 DIONYZA, *wife to Cleon.*  
 THAISA, *daughter to Simonides.*  
 MARINA, *daughter to Pericles and Thaisa.*  
 LYCHORIDA, *nurse to Marina.* DIANA.

*Lords, Ladies, Knights, Gentlemen, Sailors,  
 Pirates, Fishermen, Messengers, &c.*

*Scene,—dispersedly in various countries.*

That the reader may know through how many regions the scene of this drama is dispersed, it is necessary to observe, that *Antioch* was the metropolis of Syria; *Tyre*, a city of Phœnicia, in Asia; *Tarsus*, the metropolis of Cilicia, a country of Asia Minor; *Mitylene*, the capital of Lesbos, an island in the Ægean sea; and *Ephesus*, the capital of Ionia, a country of the Lesser Asia.

## ACT I.

*Enter GOWER\*.*

*Before the Palace of Antioch.*

To sing a song of old† was sung,  
 From ashes ancient Gower is come;  
 Assuming man's infirmities,  
 To glad your ear, and please your eyes.  
 It hath been sung at festivals,  
 On ember-eves, and holy ales‡;  
 And lords and ladies of their lives  
 Have read it for restoratives:  
 'I purpose to make men glorious;  
*Et quo antiquius, eo melius.*  
 If you, born in these latter times,  
 When wit's more ripe, accept my rhymes,  
 And that to hear an old man sing,  
 May to your wishes pleasure bring,  
 I life would wish, and that I might  
 Waste it for you, like taper-light.—  
 This city then, Antioch the great  
 Built up for his chiefest seat;  
 The fairest in all Syria;  
 (I tell you what mine authors say:)  
 This king unto him took a pheere§,  
 Who died and left a female heir,  
 So buxom, blithe, and full of face,  
 As heaven had lent her all his grace;  
 With whom the father liking took,  
 And her to incest did provoke:  
 Bad father! to entice his own  
 To evil, should be done by none.

Chorus, in the character of Gower, an ancient English Poet, who has related the story of this play in his *Confessio Amantis*. † *i.e.*, That of old. ‡ Whitsun-ales, &c.

§ Wife, the word signifies a mate or companion.

\* Pointing to the scene of the palace-gate at Antioch, on which the heads of those unfortunate wights were fixed.

By custom, what they did begin,  
 Was, with long use, account|| no sin.  
 The beauty of this sinful dame  
 Made many princes thither frame,  
 To seek her as a bed-fellow,  
 In marriage-pleasures play-fellow:  
 Which to prevent, he made a law,  
 (To keep her still, and men in awe,)  
 That whoso ask'd her for his wife,  
 His riddle told not, lost his life:  
 So for her many, a wight did die,  
 As yon grim looks do testify¶.  
 What now ensues, to the judgment of your  
 eye  
 I give, my cause who best can justify.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE I. Antioch. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter ANTIOCHUS, PERICLES, and Attendants.*

*Ant.* Young prince of Tyre, you have at large received  
 The danger of the task you undertake.

*Per.* I have, Antiochus, and with a soul  
 Embolden'd with the glory of her praise,  
 Think death no hazard, in this enterprise.

[*Music.*]

*Ant.* Bring in our daughter, clothed like a  
 bride,

For the embracements even of Jove himself;  
At whose conception, (till Lucina reign'd,) Nature this dowry gave, to glad her presence,  
The senate-house of planets all did sit,  
To knit in her their best perfections.

*Enter the Daughter of Antiochus.*

*Per.* See, where she comes, apparell'd like the spring,  
Graces her subjects, and her thoughts the king  
Of every virtue gives renown to men!  
Her face, the book of praises, where is read  
Nothing but curious pleasures, as from thence  
Sorrow were ever rased, and testy wrath  
Could never be her mild companion.  
Ye gods that made me man, and sway in love,  
That have inflamed desire in my breast,  
To taste the fruit of you celestial tree,  
Or die in the adventure, be my helps,  
As I am son and servant to your will,  
To compass such a boundless happiness!

*Ant.* Prince Pericles,—

*Per.* That would be son to great Antiochus.  
*Ant.* Before thee stands this fair Hesperides,  
With golden fruit, but dangerous to be touch'd;  
For death-like dragons here affright thee hard:  
Her face, like heaven, enticeth thee to view  
A countless glory, which desert must gain:  
And which, without desert, because thine eye  
Presumes to reach, all thy whole heap must die.

Yon sometime famous princes, like thyself,  
Drawn by report, advent'rous by desire,  
Tell thee with speechless tongues, and semblance pale,

That, without covering, save yon field of stars,  
They here stand martyrs, slain in Cupid's wars;

And with dead cheeks advise thee to desist,  
For going on death's net, whom none resist.

*Per.* Antiochus, I thank thee, who hath  
My frail mortality to know itself, [taught  
And by those fearful objects to prepare  
This body, like to them, to what I must:  
For death remember'd, should be like a mirror, [error.

Who tells us, life's but breath; to trust it,  
I'll make my will then; and as sick men do,  
Who know the world, see heaven, but feeling woe,

Gripe not at earthly joys, as erst they did;  
So I bequeath a happy peace to you,  
And all good men, as every prince should do;  
My riches to the earth from whence they came;  
But my unspotted fire of love to you.

[*To the Daughter of Antiochus.*

Thus ready for the way of life or death,  
I wait the sharpest blow, Antiochus,  
Scorning advice.

*Ant.* Read the conclusion then;  
Which read and not expounded, 'tis decreed,  
As these before thee thou thyself shalt bleed.

*Daugh.* In all, save that, may'st thou prove prosperous!

In all, save that, I wish thee happiness!

*Per.* Like a bold champion, I assume the lists,

Nor ask advice of any other thought  
But faithfulness, and courage.

[*He reads the Riddle.*]

*I am no viper, yet I feed  
On mother's flesh, which did me breed:  
I sought a husband, in which labour,  
I found that kindness in a father.  
He's father, son, and husband mild,  
I mother, wife, and yet his child.  
How they may be, and yet in two,  
As you will live, resolve it you.*

Sharp physic is the last: but, O you powers!  
That give heaven countless eyes to view men's acts,

Why cloud they not their sights perpetually,  
If this be true, which makes me pale to read it?

Fair glass of light, I loved you, and could still,  
[*Takes hold of the hand of the princess.*

Were not this glorious casket stored with ill:  
But I must tell you,—now, my thoughts revolt;

For he's no man on whom perfections wait,  
That knowing sin within, will touch the gate.  
You're a fair viol, and your sense the strings:  
Who, finger'd to make man his lawful music,  
Would draw heaven down, and all the gods to hearken;

But, being play'd upon before your time,  
Hell only danceth at so harsh a chime:  
Good sooth, I care not for you. [life,

*Ant.* Prince Pericles, touch not, upon thy  
For that's an article within our law,  
As dangerous as the rest. Your time's expired;  
Either expound now, or receive your sentence.

*Per.* Great king,  
Few love to hear the sins they love to act;  
'Twould braid yourself too near for me to tell it;

Who has a book of all that monarchs do,  
He's more secure to keep it shut than shown;  
For vice repeated, is like the wand'ring wind,  
Blows dust in others' eyes, to spread itself;  
And yet the end of all is bought thus dear,  
The breath is gone, and the sore eyes see clear:  
To stop the air would hurt them. The blind mole casts [is wrong'd

Copp'd\* hills towards heaven, to tell, the earth  
By man's oppression; and the poor worm doth die for't.

Kings are earth's gods: in vice their law's their will;

And if Jove stray, who dares say, Jove doth  
It is enough you know; and it is fit, [ill?  
What being more known grows worse, to smother it.

All love the womb that their first beings bred,  
Then give my tongue like leave to love my head.

*Ant.* Heaven, that I had thy head! he has found the meaning;—

But I will glaze† with him. [*Aside.*] Young prince of Tyre,

Though by the tenour of our strict edict,  
Your exposition misinterpreting,

\* Rising to a top or head.

† Flatter, insinuate.

We might proceed to cancel of your days\*;  
Yet hope, succeeding from so fair a tree  
As your fair self, doth tune us otherwise:  
Forty days longer we do respite you;  
If by which time our secret be undone,  
This mercy shows, we'll joy in such a son:  
And until then, your entertain shall be,  
As doth befit our honour, and your worth.

[*Exeunt* ANTIOCHUS, his Daughter,  
and Attendants.

*Per.* How courtesy would seem to cover  
When what is done is like an hypocrite, [sin!  
The which is good in nothing but in sight.  
If it be true that I interpret false,  
Then were it certain, you were not so bad,  
As with foul incest to abuse your soul;  
Where† now you're both a father and a son,  
By your untimely claspings with your child,  
(Which pleasure fits an husband, not a father;)  
And she an eater of her mother's flesh,  
By the defiling of her parent's bed;  
And both like serpents are, who though they  
feed

On sweetest flowers, yet they poison breed.  
Antioch, farewell! for wisdom sees, those men  
Blush not in actions blacker than the night,  
Will shun no course to keep them from the  
light.

One sin, I know, another doth provoke;  
Murder's as near to lust, as flame to smoke.  
Poison and treason are the hands of sin,  
Ay, and the targets, to put off the shame:  
Then, lest my life be cropp'd to keep you  
clear,

By flight I'll shun the danger which I fear.

[*Exit.*

*Re-enter* ANTIOCHUS.

*Ant.* He hath found the meaning, for the  
To have his head. [which we mean  
He must not live to trumpet forth my infamy,  
Nor tell the world, Antiochus doth sin  
In such a loathed manner:  
And therefore instantly this prince must die;  
For by his fall my honour must keep high.  
Who attends on us there?

*Enter* THALIARD.

*Thal.* Doth your highness call?  
*Ant.* Thaliard, you're of our chamber, and  
our mind

Partakes her private actions to your secrecy;  
And for your faithfulness we will advance you.  
Thaliard, behold, here's poison, and here's  
gold; [kill him;

We hate the prince of Tyre, and thou must  
It fits thee not to ask the reason why,  
Because we bid it. Say, is it done?

*Thal.*

'Tis done.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Ant.* Enough? [haste.  
Lest your breath cool yourself, telling your  
*Mess.* My lord, prince Pericles is fled.

[*Exit* Messenger.

*Ant.* As thou  
Will live, fly after: and, as an arrow, shot  
From a well-experienced archer, hits the mark

His eye doth level at, so ne'er return,  
Unless thou say, prince Pericles is dead.

*Thal.* My lord, if I

Can get him once within my pistol's length,  
I'll make him sure; so farewell to your high-  
ness. [*Exit.*

*Ant.* Thaliard, adieu! till Pericles be dead,  
My heart can lend no succour to my head.

[*Exit.*

SCENE II. Tyre. A Room in the Palace.

*Enter* PERICLES, HELICANUS, and other  
Lords.

*Per.* Let none disturb us: Why this change  
of thoughts?

The sad companion, dull-ey'd melancholy,  
By me so used a guest is, not an hour,  
In the day's glorious walk, or peaceful night,  
(The tomb where grief should sleep,) can  
breed me quiet! [eyes shun them,

Here pleasures court mine eyes, and mine  
And danger, which I feared, is at Antioch,  
Whose arm seems far too short to hit me here:  
Yet neither pleasure's art can joy my spirits,  
Nor yet the other's distance comfort me.  
Then it is thus: the passions of the mind,  
That have their first conception by mis-dread,  
Have after-nourishment and life by care;  
And what was first but fear what might be  
done,

Grows elder now, and cares it be not done.  
And so with me;—the great Antiochus  
(Gainst whom I am too little to contend,  
Since he's so great, can make his will his act;)  
Will think me speaking, though I swear to  
silence;

Nor boots it me to say, I honour him,  
If he suspect I may dishonour him;  
And what may make him blush in being known.  
He'll stop the course by which it might be  
known;

With hostile forces he'll o'erspread the land,  
And with the ostent of war will look so huge.  
Amazement shall drive courage from the state;  
Our men be vanquish'd, ere they do resist,  
And subjects punish'd, that no'er thought  
offence:

Which care of them, not pity of myself,  
(Who am no more but as the tops of trees,  
Which fence the roots they grow by, and de-  
fend them,) [guish,

Makes both my body pine, and soul to lan-  
And punish that before, that he would punish.

1 *Lord.* Joy and all comfort in your sacred  
breast! [turn to us,

2 *Lord.* And keep your mind, till you re-  
Peaceful and comfortable!

*Hel.* Peace, peace, my lords, and give ex-  
perience tongue.

They do abuse the king, that flatter him:  
For flattery is the bellows blows up sin;  
The thing the which is flatter'd, but a spark,  
To which that breath gives heat and stronger  
glowing;

Whereas reproof, obedient, and in order,  
Fits kings, as they are men. for they may err

\* To the destruction of your life.

† Whereas.



When signior Sooth here does proclaim a peace,

He flatters you, makes war upon your life :  
Prince, pardon me, or strike me, if you please ;

I cannot be much lower than my knees.

*Per.* All leave us else ; but let your cares o'erlook. [heaven,  
What shipping, and what lading's in our  
And then return to us. [*Exeunt Lords.*] Helicanus, thou

Hast moved us : what seest thou in our looks ?

*Hel.* An angry brow, dread lord. [frowns,

*Per.* If there be such a dart in princes' How durst thy tongue move anger to our face ?

*Hel.* How dare the plants look up to haven, from whence

They have their nourishment ?

*Per.* Thou knowest I have power to take thy life. [myself ;

*Hel.* [*Kneeling.*] I have ground the axe Do you but strike the blow.

*Per.* Rise, pr'ythee rise ; Sit down, sit down ; thou art no flatterer : I thank thee for it ; and high heaven forbid That kings should let their ears hear their faults hid !

Fit counsellor, and servant for a prince, Who by thy wisdom makest a prince thy ser- What wouldst thou have me do ? [vant,

*Hel.* With patience bear Such griefs as you do lay upon yourself.

*Per.* Thou speak'st like a physician, Helicanus ; Who minister'st a potion unto me, [canus ; That thou wouldst tremble to receive thyself. Attend me then : I went to Antioch, [death, Where, as thou know'st, against the face of I sought the purchase of a glorious beauty, From whence an issue I might propagate, Bring arms to princes, and to subjects joys. Her face was to mine eye beyond all wonder ; The rest (hark in thine ear,) as black as incest ; Which by my knowledge found, the sinful father [know'st this,

Seem'd not to strike, but smooth : but thou 'Tis time to fear, when tyrants seem to kiss.

Which fear so grew in me, I hither fled, Under the covering of a careful night, Who seem'd my good protector ; and being here, [ceed.

Bethought me what was past, what might succed ; I knew him tyrannous ; and tyrants' fears

Decrease not, but grow faster than their years : And should he doubt it, (as no doubt he doth,) That I should open to the listening air,

How many worthy princes' bloods were shed, To keep his bed of blackness unalaid open,— To lop that doubt, he'll fill this land with arms, And make pretence of wrong that I have done him ;

When all, for mine, if I may call't offence, Must feel war's blow, who spares not innocence :

Which love to all (of which thyself art one, Who now reprovest me for it)——

*Hel.* Alas, sir !

*Per.* Drew sleep out of mine eyes, blood from my cheeks,

Musings into my mind, a thousand doubts How I might stop this tempest, ere it came ; And finding little comfort to relieve them, I thought it princely charity to grieve them.

*Hel.* Well, my lord, since you have given me leave to speak,

Freely I'll speak. Antiochus you fear, And justly too, I think, you fear the tyrant, Who either by public war, or private treason Will take away your life.

Therefore, my lord, go travel for a while,

Till that his rage and anger be forgot,

Or Destinies do cut his thread of life.

Your rule direct to any ; if to me,

Day serves not light more faithful than I'll be.

*Per.* I do not doubt thy faith ;

But should he wrong my liberties in absence——

*Hel.* We'll mingle bloods together in the earth

From whence we had our being and our birth.

*Per.* Tyre, I now look from thee then, and to Tharsus

Intend my travel, where I'll hear from thee ;

And by whose letters I'll dispose myself.

The care I had and have of subjects' good,

On thee I lay, whose wisdom's strength can bear it.

I'll take thy word for faith, not ask thine oath ; Who shuns not to break one, will sure crack both :

But in our orbs\* we'll live so round and safe, That time of both this truth shall ne'er convince†,

Thou show'dst a subject's shine, I a true prince. [*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III. Tyre. An Ante-chamber in the Palace.

*Enter THALIARD.*

*Thal.* So, this is Tyre, and this is the court. Here must I kill king Pericles ; and if I do not, I am sure to be hang'd at home : 'tis dangerous.—Well, I perceive he was a wise fellow, and had good discretion, that being bid to ask what he would of the king, desired he might know none of his secrets. Now do I see he had some reason for it : for if a king bid a man be a villain, he is bound by the indenture of his oath to be one.—Hush, here come the lords of Tyre.

*Enter HELICANUS, ESCANES, and other Lords.*

*Hel.* You shall not need, my fellow peers of Tyre,

Further to question of your king's departure.

His seal'd commission, left in trust with me.

Doth speak sufficiently, he's gone to travel.

*Thal.* How ! the king gone ! [*Aside.*

*Hel.* If further yet you will be satisfied,

Why, as it were unlicensed of your loves,

He would depart, I'll give some light unto you

Being at Antioch——

*Thal.* What from Antioch ? [*Aside*

\* In our different spheres.

† Overcome.

*Hel.* Royal Antiochus (on what cause I know not,) [judged so : Took some displeasure at him; at least he And doubting lest that he had err'd or sinn'd, To show his sorrow, would correct himself; So puts himself unto the shipman's toil, With whom each minute threatens life or death.

*Thal.* Well, I perceive [Aside. I shall not be hang'd now, although I would; But since he's gone, the king it sure must please, He 'scaped the land, to perish on the seas.— But I'll present me. Peace to the Lords of Tyre!

*Hel.* Lord Thaliard from Antiochus is well.

*Thal.* From him I come With message unto princely Pericles; But, since my landing, as I have understood Your lord has took himself to unknown travels, My message must return from whence it came.

*Hel.* We have no reason to desire it, since Commended to our master, not to us: Yet, ere you shall depart, this we desire,— As friends to Antioch, we may feast in Tyre.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE IV. Tharsus. A Room in the Governor's House.

Enter CLEON, DIONYZA, and Attendants.

*Cle.* My Dionyza, shall we rest us here, And by relating tales of others' griefs, See if 'twill teach us to forget our own?

*Dio.* That were to blow at fire, in hope to quench it; For who digs hills because they do aspire, Throws down one mountain, to cast up a higher.

O my distressed lord, even such our griefs; Here they're but felt, and seen with mistful eyes, [rise.

But like to groves, being topp'd, they higher

*Cle.* O Dionyza, [it. Who wanteth food, and will not say he wants Or can conceal his hunger, till he famish? Our tongues and sorrows do sound deep our woes

Into the air; our eyes do weep, till lungs Fetch breath that may proclaim them louder; that,

If heaven slumber, while their creatures want, They may awake their helps to comfort them. I'll then discourse our woes, felt several years, And wanting breath to speak, help me with

*Dio.* I'll do my best, sir. [tears.

*Cle.* This Tharsus, o'er which I have government,

(A city on whom plenty held full hand.)

For riches, strew'd herself even in the streets; Whose towers bore heads so high, they kiss'd the clouds,

And strangers ne'er beheld, but wonder'd at; Whose men and dames so jetted\* and adorn'd, Like one another's glass to trim them by: Their tables were stored full, to glad the sight, And not so much to feed on, as delight;

All poverty was scorn'd, and pride so great, The name of help grew odious to repeat.

*Dio.* O, 'tis too true. [our change,

*Cle.* But see what heaven can do! By this These mouths, whom but of late, earth, sea, and air,

Were all too little to content and please, Although they gave their creatures in abundance As houses are defiled for want of use, [ance, They are now starved for want of exercise:

Those palates, who not yet two summers younger,

Must have inventions to delight the taste, Would now be glad of bread, and beg for it; Those mothers who, to nurse up their babes, Thought nought too curious, are ready now, To eat those little darlings whom they loved. So sharp are hunger's teeth, that man and wife Draw lots, who first shall die to lengthen life: Here stands a lord, and there a lady weeping; Here many sink, yet those which see them fall,

Have scarce strength left to give them burial. Is not this true? [it.

*Dio.* Our cheeks and hollow eyes do witness *Cle.* O, let those cities, that of Plenty's cup And her prosperities so largely taste, With their superfluous riots, hear these tears! The misery of Tharsus may be theirs.

Enter a Lord.

*Lord.* Where's the lord governor?

*Cle.* Here. [haste, Speak out thy sorrows which thou bring'st, in For comfort is too far for us to expect.

*Lord.* We have descried, upon our neighbouring shore,

A portly sail of ships make hitherward.

*Cle.* I thought as much.

One sorrow never comes, but brings an heir, That may succeed as his inheritor; And so in ours: some neighbouring nation, Taking advantage of our misery, [power, Hath stuff'd these hollow vessels with their To beat us down, the which are down already; And make a conquest of unhappy me, Whereas no glory's got to overcome.

*Lord.* That's the least fear: for, by the semblance [peace,

Of their white flags display'd, they bring us And come to us as favourers, not as foes.

*Cle.* Thou speak'st like him's untutor'd to repeat, [deceit,

Who makes the fairest show, means most: But bring they what they will, what need we fear? [there.

The ground's the low'st, and we are half way Go tell their general, we attend him here, To know for what he comes, and whence he And what he craves. [comes,

*Lord.* I go, my lord. [Exit.

*Cle.* Welcome is peace, if he on peace con If wars, we are unable to resist. [sist;

Enter PERICLES, with Attendants.

*Per.* Lord governor, for so we hear you are Let not our ships and number of our men,

\* To jet is to strut, to walk proudly.  
; Nurse fondly.

§ Forces.

† To dress them by.

|| If he stands on peace.

Be, like a beacon fired, to amaze your eyes.  
 We have heard your miseries as far as Tyre,  
 And seen the desolation of your streets :  
 Nor come we to add sorrow to your tears,  
 But to relieve them of their heavy load ;  
 And these our ships you happily\* may think  
 Are, like the Trojan horse, war stuff'd within,  
 With bloody views, expecting overthrow,  
 Are stored with corn, to make your needy  
 bread, [half dead.  
 And give them life, who are hunger-starved,  
*All.* The gods of Greece protect you !  
 And we'll pray for you.  
*Per.* Rise I pray you, rise ;

We do not look for reverence, but for love.  
 And harbourage for ourself, our ships, and men.  
*Cle.* The which when any shall not gratify  
 Or pay you with unthankfulness in thought,  
 Be it our wives, our children, or ourselves,  
 The curse of heaven and men succeed their  
 evils !  
 Till when, (the which, I hope, shall ne'er be  
 seen,)  
 Your grace is welcome to our town and us.  
*Per.* Which welcome we'll accept ; feast  
 here a while,  
 Until our stars that frown, lend us a smile.  
*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT II.

*Enter GOWER.*

*Gow.* Here have you seen a mighty king  
 His child, I wist, to incest bring ;  
 A better prince, and benign lord,  
 Prove awful both in deed and word.  
 Be quiet then, as men should be,  
 Till he hath pass'd necessity.  
 I'll show you those in trouble's reign,  
 Losing a mite, a mountain gain.  
 The good in conversation †  
 (To whom I give my benison §,)  
 Is still at Tharsus, where each man  
 Thinks all is writ he spoken can ;  
 And, to remember what he does,  
 Gild his statue glorious :  
 But tidings to the contrary  
 Are brought your eyes ; what need speak I ?

*Dumb Show.*

*Enter at one door PERICLES, talking with  
 CLEON ; all the train with them. Enter  
 at another door, a Gentleman with a Letter  
 to PERICLES ; PERICLES shows the Letter  
 to CLEON ; then gives the Messenger a re-  
 ward, and knights him. Exeunt PERICLES,  
 CLEON, &c., severally.*

*Gow.* Good Helicane hath staid at home,  
 Not to eat honey, like a drone,  
 From others' labours ; forth he strive  
 To killen bad, keep good alive ;  
 And, to fulfil his prince's desire  
 Sends word of all that haps in Tyre :  
 How Thaliard came full bent with sin,  
 And hid intent to murder him ;  
 And that in Tharsus was not best  
 Longer for him to make his rest :  
 He knowing so, put forth to seas,  
 Where when men begin, there's seldom ease ;  
 For now the wind begins to blow ;  
 Thunder above, and deeps below,  
 Make such unquiet, that the ship  
 Should house him safe, is wreck'd and split ;  
 And he, good prince, having all lost,  
 By waves from coast to coast is tost :  
 All perishen of man, of pelf,  
 Ne aught escapen but himself ;  
 Till fortune, tired with doing bad,  
 Threw him ashore, to give him glad :

And here he comes : what shall be next,  
 Pardon old Gower ; this long's the text.

*[Exit.]*

SCENE I. Pentapolis. *An open Place by  
 the Sea side.*

*Enter PERICLES, wet.*

*Per.* Yet cease your ire, ye angry stars of  
 heaven ! [man  
 Wind, rain, and thunder, remember, earthly  
 Is but a substance that must yield to you ;  
 And I, as fits my nature, do obey you ;  
 Alas, the sea hath cast me on the rocks,  
 Wash'd me from shore to shore, and left me  
 Nothing to think on, but ensuing death : [breath  
 Let it suffice the greatness of your powers,  
 To have bereft a prince of all his fortunes ;  
 And having thrown him from your wat'ry  
 grave,

Here to have deatn in peace, is all he'll crave.

*Enter three Fishermen.*

1 *Fish.* What, ho, Pilchel !

2 *Fish.* Ho ! come, and bring away the nets.

1 *Fish.* What Patch-breech, I say !

3 *Fish.* What say you, master ?

1 *Fish.* Look how thou stirrest now ! come  
 away, or I'll fetch thee with a wannion.

3 *Fish.* 'Faith, master, I am thinking of the  
 poor men that were cast away before us, even  
 now.

1 *Fish.* Alas, poor souls ! it grieved my heart  
 to hear what pitiful cries they made to us, to  
 help them, when, well-a-day, we could scarce  
 help ourselves.

3 *Fish.* Nay, master, said not I as much,  
 when I saw the porpus, how he bounced and  
 tumbled ? they say, they are half fish, half flesh :  
 a plague on them, they ne'er come, but I look  
 to be washed. Master, I marvel how the fishes  
 live in the sea.

1 *Fish.* Why as men do a-land ; the great ones  
 eat up the little ones : I can compare our rich  
 misers to nothing so fitly as to a whale ; 'a plays  
 and tumbles, driving the poor fry before him,  
 and at last devours them all at a mouthful.  
 Such whales have I heard on 's the land, who  
 never leave gaping, till they've swallow'd the  
 whole parish, church, steeple, bells and all.

*Per.* A pretty moral.

\* Perhaps.

† Know

‡ i. e., Conduct, behaviour.

§ Blessing.



3 *Fish.* But, master, if I had been the sexton, I would have been that day in the belfry.

2 *Fish.* Why, man?

3 *Fish.* Because he should have swallow'd me too: and when I had been in his belly, I would have kept such a jangling of the bells, that he should never have lett, till he cast bells, steeple, church, and parish, up again. But if the good king Simonides were of my mind—

*Per.* Simonides?

3 *Fish.* We would purge the land of these drones, that rob the bee of her honey.

*Per.* How from the finny subject of the sea These fishers tell the infirmities of men; And from their wat'ry empire recollect All that may men approve, or men detect! Peace be at your labour, honest fishermen.

2 *Fish.* Honest! good fellow, what's that? if it be a day fits you, scratch it out of the calendar, and nobody will look after it.

*Per.* Nay, see, the sea hath cast upon your coast—

2 *Fish.* What a drunken knave was the sea; to cast thee in our way?

*Per.* A man whom both the waters and the wind,

In that vast tennis-court, hath made the ball For them to play upon, entreats you pity him; He asks of you, that never used to beg.

1 *Fish.* No, friend, cannot you beg? here's them in our country of Greece, gets more with begging, than we can do with working.

2 *Fish.* Canst thou catch any fishes, then?

*Per.* I never practised it.

2 *Fish.* Nay, then thou wilt starve sure; for here's nothing to be got now-a-days, unless thou canst fish for't.

*Per.* What I have been, I have forgot to know;

But what I am, want teaches me to think on; A man shrunk up with cold: my veins are chill, And have no more of life, than may suffice To give my tongue that heat, to ask your help; Which if you shall refuse, when I am dead, For I am a man, pray see me buried.

1 *Fish.* Die, quoth-a? Now gods forbid! I have a gown here; come, put it on; keep thee warm. Now, afore me, a handsome fellow! Come, thou shalt go home, and we'll have flesh for holidays, fish for fasting-days, and more'o'er puddings and flap-jacks\*, and thou shalt be welcome.

*Per.* I thank you, sir.

2 *Fish.* Hark you, my friend, you said you could not beg.

*Per.* I did but crave.

2 *Fish.* But crave? Then I'll turn craver too, and so I shall 'scape whipping.

*Per.* Why, are all your beggars whipp'd then?

2 *Fish.* O, not all my friend, not all; for if all your beggars were whipp'd, I would wish no better office, than to be beadle. But, master, I'll go draw up the net.

[*Exeunt two of the Fishermen.*]

*Per.* How well this honest mirth becomes their labour!

1 *Fish.* Hark you, sir! do you know where you are?

*Per.* Not well.

1 *Fish.* Why I'll tell you: this is called Penapolis, and our king, the good Simonides.

*Per.* The good king Simonides, do you call him?

1 *Fish.* Ay, sir; and he deserves to be so call'd, for his peaceable reign, and good government.

*Per.* He is a happy king, since from his subjects

He gains the name of good, by his government. How far is his court distant from this shore?

1 *Fish.* Marry, sir, half a day's journey; and I'll tell you he hath a fair daughter, and to-morrow is her birth-day; and there are princes and knights come from all parts of the world, to just and tourney† for her love.

*Per.* Did but my fortunes equal my desires, I'd wish to make one there.

1 *Fish.* O, sir, things must be as they may; and what a man cannot get, he may lawfully deal for—his wife's soul.

*Re-enter the Two Fishermen, drawing up a Net.*

2 *Fish.* Help, master, help; here's a fish hangs in the net, like a poor man's right in the law; 'twill hardly come out. Ha! bots on't, 'tis come at last, and 'tis turn'd to a rusty armour.

*Per.* An armour, friends! I pray you let me see it.

Thanks, fortune, yet, that after all my crosses, Thou givest me somewhat to repair myself; And, though it was mine own, part of mine heritage,

Which my dead father did bequeath to me, With this strict charge, (even as he left his life,)

Keep it, my Pericles, it hath been a shield 'Twixt me and death; (and pointed to this brace‡:)

[*sigh*]  
For that it saved me, keep it; in like necessity Which gods protect thee from! it may defend It kept where I kept, I so dearly loved it; [*thee*]. Till the rough seas, that spare not any man, Took it in rage, though calm'd, they give't again: I thank thee for't; my shipwreck's now no ill, Since I have here my father's gift by will.

1 *Fish.* What mean you, sir?

*Per.* To beg of you, kind friends, this coat For it was sometime target to a king; [of worth, I know it by this mark. He loved me dearly, And for his sake, I wish the having of it; And that you'd guide me to your sovereign's court,

Where with't I may appear a gentleman; And if that ever my low fortune's better, I'll pay your bounties; till then, rest your debtor.

1 *Fish.* Why wilt thou tourney for the lady?

*Per.* I'll show the virtue I have borne in arms.

1 *Fish.* Why, do ye take it, and the gods give thee good on't!

2 *Fish.* Ay, but hark you, my friend

\* Pancakes.

† To tilt, mock fight.

‡ Armour for the arm.

we that made up this garment through the rough seams of the waters: there are certain condolences, certain wails. I hope, sir, if you thrive, you'll remember from whence you had it.

*Per.* Believe't, I will. [steel;  
Now, by your furtherance, I am clothed in  
And spite of all the rupture of the sea,  
This jewel holds his bidding\* on my arm;  
Unto thy value will I mount myself  
Upon a courser, whose delightful steps  
Shall make the gazer joy to see him tread.—  
Only, my friend, I yet am unprovided  
Of a pair of bases†.

*2 Fish.* We'll sure provide: thou shalt have  
my best gown to make thee a pair; and I'll  
bring thee to the court myself.

*Per.* Then honour be but a goal to my will;  
This day I'll rise, or else add ill to ill. [Exeunt.

SCENE II. *The same. A public Way, or  
Platform, leading to the Lists. A Pavilion  
by the side of it, for the reception of  
the King, Princess, Lords, &c.*

*Enter SIMONIDES, THAISA, Lords, and  
Attendants.*

*Sim.* Are the knights ready to begin the  
1 *Lord.* They are, my liege; [triumph?  
And stay your coming to present themselves.

*Sim.* Return them‡, we are ready; and our  
daughter,

In honour of whose birth these triumphs are,  
Sits here, like beauty's child, whom nature gat  
For men to see, and seeing wonder at.

[Exit a Lord.

*Thai.* It pleaseth you, my father, to express  
My commendations great, whose merit's less.

*Sim.* 'Tis fit it should be so; for princes are  
A model, which heaven makes like to itself:  
As jewels lose their glory, if neglected,  
So princes their renown, if not respected.  
'Tis now your honour, daughter, to explain  
The labour of each knight, in his device§.

*Thai.* Which, to preserve mine honour, I'll  
perform.

*Enter a Knight: he passes over the Stage,  
and his Squire presents his Shield to the  
Princess.*

*Sim.* Who is the first that doth prefer|| him-  
self? [father;

*Thai.* A knight of Sparta, my renowned  
And the device he bears upon his shield  
Is a black Æthiop, reaching at the sun;  
The word¶, *Lux tua vita mihi.*

*Sim.* He loves you well that holds his life  
of you. [The second Knight passes.

Who is the second that presents himself?  
*Thai.* A prince of Macedon, my royal father;  
And the device he bears upon his shield  
Is an arm'd knight that's conquer'd by a lady:  
The motto thus, in Spanish, *Piu per dulçura  
que per fuerza\*\*.*

[The third Knight passes.

*Sim.* And what's the third?

*Thai.* The third of Antioch;  
And his device a wreath of chivalry:  
The word, *Me pompe proveait apex.*

[The fourth Knight passes.

*Sim.* What is the fourth? [down;

*Thai.* A burning torch that's turned upside  
The word, *Quod me alit, me extinguit.*

*Sim.* Which shows that beauty hath his  
power and will,  
Which can as well intame as it can kill.

[The fifth Knight passes.

*Thai.* The fifth an hand environed with  
clouds; [tried;

Holding out gold that's by the touchstone  
The motto thus, *Sic spectanda fides.*

[The sixth Knight passes.

*Sim.* And what's the sixth and last, which  
the knight himself

With such a graceful courtesy deliver'd?

*Thai.* He seems a stranger; but his present is  
A wither'd branch that's only green at top;  
The motto, *In hac spe vivo.*

*Sim.* A pretty moral;  
From the dejected state wherein he is,  
He hopes by you his fortunes yet may flourish.

1 *Lord.* He had need mean better than his  
outward show

Can any way speak in his just commend:

For, by his rusty outside, he appears

To have practised more the whipstock†† than  
the lance. [comes

2 *Lord.* He well may be a stranger, for he  
To an honour'd triumph strangely furnished.

3 *Lord.* And on set purpose let his armour  
Until this day to scour it in the dust. [rust

*Sim.* Opinion's but a fool, that makes us scan  
The outward habit by the inward man.

But stay, the knights are coming; we'll with-  
draw

Into the gallery. [Exeunt.

[Great shouts; and all cry, The mean  
Knight.

SCENE III. *The same. A Hall of State.  
A Banquet prepared.*

*Enter SIMONIDES, THAISA, Lords, Knights,  
and Attendants.*

*Sim.* Knights,  
To say you're welcome were superfluous.  
To place upon the volume of your deeds,  
As in a title-page, your worth in arms,  
Were more than you expect, or more than's fit,  
Since every worth in show commends itself.  
Prepare for mirth, for mirth becomes a feast:  
You are my guests.

*Thai.* But you, my knight and guest;  
To whom this wreath of victory I give,  
And crown you king of this day's happiness.

*Per.* 'Tis more by fortune, lady, than my  
merit. [yours;

*Sim.* Call it by what you will, the day is  
And here, I hope, is none that envies it.

In framing artists, art hath thus decreed,  
To make some good, but others to exceed;

\* Keeping.

† A kind of loose breeches.

‡ i. e., Return them notice.

Emblem on a shield.

|| Offer.

¶ The motto.

\*\* i. e., More by sweetness than by force.

†† Handle of a whip.

And you're her labour'd scholar. Come, queen  
o'the feast, [place:  
(For, daughter, so you are,) here take your  
Marshal the rest as they deserve their grace.

*Knights.* We are honour'd much by good  
Simonides. [we love,

*Sim.* Your presence glads our days; honour  
For who hates honour hates the gods above.

*Mar.* Sir, yond's your place.

*Per.* Some other is more fit.

*1 Knight.* Contend not, sir; for we are  
gentlemen,

That neither in our hearts, nor outward eyes,  
Envy the great, nor do the low despise.

*Per.* You are right courteous knights.

*Sim.* Sit, sit, sir; sit.

*Per.* By Jove, I wonder, that is king of  
thoughts,

These cates resist me\*, she not thought upon.

*Thai.* By Juno, that is queen

Of marriage, all the viands that I eat  
Do seem unsavoury, wishing him my meat;  
Sure he's a gallant gentleman.

*Sim.* He's but

A country gentleman; [done;  
He has done no more than other knights have  
Broken a staff or so; so let it pass.

*Thai.* To me he seems like diamond to  
glass. [ther's picture,

*Per.* Yon king's to me, like to my sa-  
which tells me in that glory once he was;  
Had princes sit like stars about his throne,  
And be the sun for them to reverence.  
None that beheld him, but like lesser lights,  
Did vail† their crowns to his supremacy;  
Where now his son's a glow-worm in the night,  
The which hath fire in darkness, none in light;  
Whereby I see that time's the king of men,  
For he's their parent, and he is their grave,  
And gives them what he will, not what they  
crave.

*Sim.* What, are you merry, knights?

*1 Knight.* Who can be other in this royal  
presence?

*Sim.* Here, with a cup that's stored unto  
the brim,

(As you do love, fill to your mistress' lips,)

We drink this health to you.

*Knights.* We thank your grace.

*Sim.* Yet pause a while;

You knight, methinks, doth sit too melancholy,  
As if the entertainment in our court  
Had not a show might countervail his worth.  
Note it not you, Thaisa?

*Thai.* What is it

To me, my father?

*Sim.* O, attend, my daughter:

Princes, in this, should live like gods above,  
Who freely give to every one that comes  
To honour them: and princes, not doing so,  
Are like to gnats, which make a sound, but kill'd  
Are wonder'd at. [say,

Therefore, to make's entrance more sweet, here  
We drink this standing bowl of wine to him.

*Thai.* Alas, my father, it befits not me

Unto a stranger knight to be so bold;  
He may my proffer take for an offence,  
Since men take women's gifts for impudence.

*Sim.* How!

Do as I bid you, or you'll move me else.

*Thai.* Now, by the gods, he could not please  
me better. [Aside.

*Sim.* And further tell him, we desire to know,  
Of whence he is, his name and parentage.

*Thai.* The king, my father, sir, has drunk

*Per.* I thank him. [to you.

*Thai.* Wishing it so much blood unto your  
life. [him freely.

*Per.* I thank both him and yon, and pledge

*Thai.* And further he desires to know of you,  
Of whence you are, your name and parentage.

*Per.* A gentleman of Tyre—(my name  
Pericles,

My education being in arts and arms;)—  
Who, looking for adventures in the world,  
Was by the rough seas reft of ships and men,  
And, after shipwreck, driven upon this shore.

*Thai.* He thanks your grace; names himself  
A gentleman of Tyre, who only by [Pericles,  
Misfortune of the seas has been bereft  
Of ships and men, and cast upon this shore.

*Sim.* Now, by the gods, I pity his mis-  
fortune,

And will awake him from his melancholy.  
Come, gentlemen, we sit too long on trifles,  
And waste the time, which looks for other  
revels.

Even in your armours, as you are address'd‡,  
Will very well become a soldier's dance.

I will not have excuse, with saying, this  
Loud music is too harsh for ladies' heads;  
Since they love men in arms, as well as beds.

[The knights dance.

So, this was well ask'd, 'twas so well perform'd.  
Come, sir;

Here is a lady that wants breathing too:  
And I have often heard, you knights of Tyre  
Are excellent in making ladies trip;  
And that their measures§ are as excellent.

*Per.* In those that practise them, they are,  
my lord.

*Sim.* O, that's as much, as you would be de-  
ny'd [The Knights and Ladies dance.

Of your fair courtesy.—Unclasp, unclasp;  
Thanks, gentlemen, to all; all have done well,  
But you the best. [To PERICLES.] Pages and  
lights, conduct [Yours, sir

These knights unto their several lodgings:  
We have given order to be next our own.

*Per.* I am at your grace's pleasure.

*Sim.* Princes, it is too late to talk of love,  
For that's the mark I know you level at:  
Therefore each one betake him to his rest;  
To morrow, all for speeding do their best.

[Exeunt.

SCENE IV. Tyre. A Room in the  
Governor's House.

Enter HELICANUS and ESCANES.

*Hel.* No, no, my Escanes; know this of me,—

\* i. e., These delicacies go against my stomach.

† Prepared for combat.

§ Dances.

‡ Lower.



Antiochus from incest lived not free;  
For which the most high gods not minding  
longer,

To withhold the vengeance that they had in  
Due to this leinous capital offence, [store,  
Even in the height and pride of all his glory,  
When he was seated, and his daughter with  
In a chariot of inestimable value, [him,  
A fire from heaven came, and shrivel'd up  
Their bodies, even to loathing; for they so stunk,  
That all those eyes adored them \* ere their fall,  
Scorn now their hand should give them burial.

*Esca.* 'Twas very strange.

*Hel.* And yet but just; for though  
This king were great, his greatness was no  
guard

To bar heaven's shaft, but sin had his reward.

*Esca.* 'Tis very true.

*Enter three Lords.*

1 *Lord.* See, not a man in private conference,  
Or council, has respect with him but he.

2 *Lord.* It shall no longer grieve without  
reproof. [it.

3 *Lord.* And curst be he that will not second

2 *Lord.* Follow me, then: Lord Helicane,  
a word. [my lords.

*Hel.* With me? and welcome: Happy day,

1 *Lord.* Know that our griefs are risen to  
the top,

And now at length they overflow their banks.

*Hel.* Your griefs, for what? wrong not the  
prince you love. [Helicane;

1 *Lord.* Wrong not yourself, then, noble  
But if the prince do live, let us salute him,  
Or know what ground's made happy by his  
breath.

If in the world he live, we'll seek him out;

If in his grave he rest, we'll find him there;

And be resolved†, he lives to govern us;

Or dead, gives cause to mourn his funeral,

And leaves us to our free election.

2 *Lord.* Whose death's indeed, the strongest  
in our censure‡:

And knowing this kingdom, if, without a head,  
(Like goodly buildings left without a roof,)

Will soon to ruin fall, your noble self,

That best know'st how to rule, and how to  
We thus submit unto,—our sovereign. [reign,

*All.* Live, noble Helicane! [frages:]

*Hel.* Try honour's cause, forbear your suf-  
fer that you love prince Pericles, forbear.

Fake I your wish, I leap into the seas,

Where's hourly trouble for a minute's ease.

A twelvemonth longer, let me then entreat you  
To forbear choice if the absence of your king;

If in which time expired he not return,

I shall with aged patience bear your yoke.

But if I cannot win you to this love,

Go search like noblemen, like noble subjects,  
And in your search spend your adventurous

worth;

Whom if you find, and win unto return.

You shall like d'iamonds sit about his crown.

1 *Lord.* To wisdom he's a fool that will not  
And since Lord Helicane enjoineth us, [yield;

We with our travels will endeavour it.

*Hel.* Then you love us, we you, and we'll  
clasp hands;

When peers thus knit, a kingdom ever stands.  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V. Pentapolis. A Room in the  
Palace.

*Enter SIMONIDES, reading a Letter, the  
Knights meet him.*

1 *Knight.* Good morrow to the good Simo-  
nides. [you know,

*Sim.* Knights, from my daughter this I let  
That for this twelvemonth, she'll not undertake  
A married life.

Her reason to herself is only known,  
Which from herself by no means can I get.

2 *Knight.* May we not get access to her, my  
lord? [tied her,

*Sim.* Faith, by no means; she hath so strictly  
To her chamber, that it is impossible. [livery;  
One twelve moons more she'll wear Diana's  
This by the eye of Cynthia hath she vow'd,  
And on her virgin honour will not break it.

3 *Knight.* Though loath to bid farewell, we  
take our leaves. [*Exeunt.*

*Sim.* So [ter's letter:  
They're well despatch'd; now to my daugh-  
She tells me here, she'll wed the stranger  
knight,

Or never more to view nor day nor light.

Mistress, 'tis well, your choice agrees with  
mine;

I like that well:—nay, how absolute she's in't,  
Not minding whether I dislike or no!

Well, I commend her choice;

And will no longer have it be delay'd.

Soft, here he comes:—I must dissemble it.

*Enter PERICLES.*

*Per.* All fortune to the good Simonides!

*Sim.* To you as much, sir! I am beholden  
to you,

For your sweet music this last night: my ears,  
I do protest, were never better fed

With such delightful pleasing harmony.

*Per.* It is your grace's pleasure to commend;  
Not my desert.

*Sim.* Sir, you are music's master. [lord.

*Per.* The worst of all her scholars, my good

*Sim.* Let me ask one thing. What do you  
My daughter? [think sir, of

*Per.* As of a most virtuous princess.

*Sim.* And she is fair too, is she not? [fair.

*Per.* As a fair day in summer; wondrous

*Sim.* My daughter, sir, thinks very well of you;  
Ay, so well, sir, that you must be her master,

And she'll your scholar be; therefore look to it.

*Per.* Unworthy I to be her schoolmaster.

*Sim.* She thinks not so; peruse this writing

*Per.* What's here! [else.

A letter, that she loves the knight of Tyre?  
'Tis the king's subtlety, to have my life. [Aside.

O, seek not to entrap, my gracious lord,

A stranger and distressed gentleman, [ter,  
That never aim'd so high, to love your daugh-

But bent all offices to honour her.

*Sim.* Thou hast bewitch'd my daughter, and  
A villain. [thou art

\* Which adored them.

† Satisfied.

‡ Judgment, opinion.

*Per.* By the gods, I have not, sir.  
Never did thought of mine levy offence;  
Nor never did my actions yet commence  
A deed might gain her love, or your displea-

*Sim.* Traitor, thou liest. [sure.]

*Per.* Traitor!

*Sim.* Ay, traitor, sir.

*Per.* Even in his throat, (unless it be the  
That calls me traitor, I return the lie. [king.]

*Sim.* Now, by the gods, I do applaud his  
courage. [Aside.]

*Per.* My actions are as noble as my thoughts,  
That never relish'd of a base descent.

I came unto your court for honour's cause,  
And not to be a rebel to her state;  
And he that otherwise accounts of me,  
This sword shall prove he's honour's enemy.

*Sim.* No!—

Here comes my daughter, she can witness it.

*Enter THAISA.*

*Per.* Then, as you are as virtuous as fair,  
Resolve your angry father, if my tongue  
Did e'er solicit, or my hand subscribe  
To any syllable that made love to you?

*Thai.* Why, sir, say if you had,  
Who takes offence at that would make me glad.

*Sim.* Yea, mistress, are you so peremptory?  
I am glad of it with all my heart. [Aside.] I'll  
I'll bring you in subjection— [tame you;  
Will you, not having my consent, bestow  
Your love and your affections on a stranger?  
(Who, for aught I know to the contrary,  
Or think, may be as great in blood as I.) [Aside.  
Hear, therefore, mistress; frame your will to  
mine,— [me,

And you, sir, hear you.—Either be ruled by  
Or I will make you—man and wife.— [too.—  
Nay, come; your hands and lips must seal it  
And being join'd, I'll thus your hopes destroy;  
And for a further grief,—God give you joy!  
What, are you both pleased?

*Thai.* Yes, if you love me, sir.

*Per.* Even as my life, my blood that fosters

*Sim.* What, are you both agreed? [it.

*Both.* Yes, please your majesty.

*Sim.* It pleaseth me so well, I'll see you wed.  
Then, with what haste you can, get you to bed.  
[Exeunt.]

## ACT III.

*Enter GOWER.*

*Gow.* Now sleep yslak'd\* hath the rout;  
No din but snores, the house about,  
Made louder by the o'er-fed breast  
Of this most pompous marriage-feast.  
The cat, with eyne of burning coal,  
Now couches 'fore the mouse's hole;  
And crickets sing at th' oven's mouth,  
As the blither for their drowth.  
Hymen hath brought the bride to bed,  
Where, by the loss of maidenhead,  
A babe is moulded;—Be attent,  
And time that is so briefly spent,  
With your fine fancies quaintly eche†;  
What's dumb in show, I'll plain with speech.

*Dumb Show.*

*Enter PERICLES and SIMONIDES at one  
door, with Attendants; a Messenger meets  
them, kneels, and gives PERICLES a letter.  
PERICLES shows it to SIMONIDES; the  
Lords kneel to the former. Then enter  
THAISA with child, and LYCHORIDA. SI-  
MONIDES shows his daughter the letter;  
she rejoices: she and PERICLES take  
leave of her father, and depart. Then  
SIMONIDES, &c., retire.*

*Gow.* By many a dear† and painful perch§  
Of Pericles the careful search  
By the four opposing coignes||,  
Which the world together joins,  
Is made, with all due diligence,  
That horse, and sail, and high expense,  
Can stead the quest¶. At last from Tyre  
(Fame answering the most strong inquire,)  
To the count of king Simonides  
Are letters brought; the tenour these:

Antiochus and his daughter's dead;  
The men of Tyrus, on the head  
Of Helicannus would set on  
The crown of Tyre, but he will none:  
The mutiny there he hastes † appease;  
Says to them, if king Pericles  
Come not, in twice six moons, home,  
He, obedient to their doom,  
Will take the crown. The sum of this,  
Brought hither to Pentapolis,  
Y-ravished the regions round,  
And every one with claps 'gan sound,  
*Our heir apparent is a king:  
Who dream'd, who thought of such a thing?*  
Brief, he must hence depart to Tyre:  
His queen, with child, makes her desire  
(Which who shall cross?) along to go;  
(Omit we all their dole and woe;)   
Lychorida, her nurse, she takes,  
And so to sea. Their vessel shakes  
On Neptune's billow; half the flood  
Hath their keel cut; but fortune's mood\*\*  
Varies again; the grizzled north  
Disgorges such a tempest forth,  
That, as a duck for life that dives,  
So up and down the poor ship drives.  
The lady shrieks, and well-a-nea††  
Doth fall in travail with her fear:  
And what ensues in this fell storm,  
Shall, for itself, itself perform.  
I will †† relate; action may  
Conveniently the rest convey:  
Which might not what by me is told.  
In your imagination hold  
This stage the ship, upon whose deck  
The sea-tost prince appears to speak. [Exit.]

\* Quenched.

† Eke out.

‡ Lonely.

§ A measure.

|| Corners.

¶ Help, or assist the search. \*\* Disposition. †† An exclamation equivalent to well-a-day.

‡‡ I shall not.

## SCENE I.

*Enter PERICLES, on a ship at sea.*

*Per.* Thou god of this great vast\*, rebuke these surges, [that hast  
Which wash both heaven and hell; and thou,  
Upon the winds command, bind them in brass,  
Having call'd them from the deep! O still thy  
deaf'ning, [nimble,  
Thy dreadful thunders; gently quench thy  
Sulphureous flashes!—O how, Lychorida,  
How does my queen?—Thou storm thou! venomously†

Wilt thou spit all thyself? The seaman's whistle  
Is as a whisper in the ears of death,  
Unheard.—Lychorida!—Lucina‡, O  
Divinest patroness and midwife, gentle  
To those that cry by night, convey thy deity  
Aboard our dancing boat; make swift the pangs  
Of my queen's travails!—Now, Lychorida—

*Enter LYCHORIDA, with an infant.*

*Lyc.* Here is a thing  
Too young for such a place, who if it had  
Conceit§ would die as I am like to do. [queen.  
Take in your arms this piece of your dead

*Per.* How! how, Lychorida! [storm.

*Lyc.* Patience, good sir; do not assist the  
Here's all that is left living of your queen,—  
A little daughter; for the sake of it,  
Be manly, and take comfort.

*Per.* O you gods!  
Why do you make us love your goodly gifts,  
And snatch them straight away? We, here  
below,

Recall not what we give, and therein may  
Vie honour|| with yourselves.

*Lyc.* Patience, good sir,  
Even for this charge.

*Per.* Now, mild may be thy life!  
For a more blust'rous birth had never babe;  
Quiet and gentle thy conditions!  
For thou'rt the rudest welcomed to this  
world, [lows!

That e'er was prince's child. Happy what fol-  
Thou hast as chiding¶ a nativity,  
As fire, air, water, earth, and heaven can make,  
To herald thee from the womb: even at the first,  
Thy loss is more than can thy portage quit\*\*,  
With all thou canst find here.—Now the good  
Throw their best eyes upon it! [gods

*Enter two Sailors.*

*1 Sail.* What courage, sir? God save you.

*Per.* Courage enough: I do not fear the  
flaw ††; [love  
It hath done to me the worst. Yet, for the  
Of this poor infant, this fresh-new sea-farer,  
I would, it would be quiet.

*1 Sail.* Slack the bolins‡‡ there; thou wilt  
not, wilt thou? Blow, and split thyself.

*2 Sail.* But sea-room, an the brine and cloudy  
billow kiss the moon, I care not.

*1 Sail.* Sir, your queen must overboard; the  
sea works high, the wind is loud, and will not  
lie till the ship be cleared of the dead.

*Per.* That's your superstition.

*1 Sail.* Pardon us, sir; with us at sea it still  
hath been observed; and we are strong in  
earnest. Therefore briefly yield her; for she  
must overboard straight.

*Per.* Be it as you think meet.—Most wretched

*Lyc.* Here she lies, sir. [queen!

*Per.* A terrible child-bed hast thou had,  
my dear,

No light, no fire: the unfriendly elements  
Forgot thee utterly: nor have I time  
To give thee hallow'd to thy grave, but straight  
Must cast thee, scarcely coffin'd, in the ooze;  
Where, for a monument upon thy bones,  
And aye-remaining §§ lamps, the belching  
whale,

And humming water must o'erwhelm thy  
Lying with simple shells. Lychorida, [corpse,  
Bid Nestor bring me spices, ink, and paper,  
My casket and my jewels; and bid Nicander  
Bring me the satin coffer: lay the babe  
Upon the pillow; hie thee whiles I say  
A priestly farewell to her: suddenly, woman.

[Exit LYCHORIDA.

*2 Sail.* Sir, we have a chest beneath the  
hatches, caul'd and bitumed ready. [is this?

*Per.* I thank thee. Mariner, say what coast

*2 Sail.* We are near Tharsus.

*Per.* Thither, gentle mariner. [reach it?  
Alter thy course for Tyre. When canst thou

*2 Sail.* By break of day, if the wind cease.

*Per.* O make for Tharsus.

There will I visit Cleon, for the babe  
Cannot hold out to Tyrus; there I'll leave it  
At careful nursing. Go thy ways, good ma-  
riner;

I'll bring the body presently. [Exeunt.

SCENE II. Ephesus. A Room in Cerimon's  
House.

*Enter CERIMON, a Servant, and some per-  
sons who have been shipwrecked.*

*Cer.* Philemon, ho!

*Enter PHILEMON.*

*Phil.* Doth my lord call?

*Cer.* Get fire and meat for these poor men;  
It has been a turbulent and stormy night.

*Serv.* I have been in many; but such a night  
Till now I ne'er endured. [as this,

*Cer.* Your master will be dead ere you return;  
There's nothing can be minister'd to nature,  
That can recover him. Give this to the 'po-  
thecary,

And tell me how it works. [To PHILEMON.

[Exeunt PHILEMON, Servant, and those  
who had been shipwrecked.

*Enter Two Gentlemen.*

*1 Gent.* Good morrow, sir.

*2 Gent.* Good morrow to your lordship.

*Cer.* Gentlemen,

Why do you stir so early?

*1 Gent.* Sir,

Our lodgings, standing bleak upon the sea,

\* This wide expanse.

† Maliciously.

‡ The goddess of child-bearing.

§ Thought.

|| Contend with you in honour.

¶ As noisy a one.

\*\* Than thy entrance into life can require.

†† Blast.

‡‡ Bowlines, ropes of the sails

§§ Ever-burning.



Shook, as the earth did quake;  
The very principals\* did seem to rend,  
And all to topple†; pure surprise and fear  
Made me to quit the house.

2 *Gent.* That is the cause we trouble you so  
'Tis not our husbandry‡. [early;

*Cer.* O, you say well.

1 *Gent.* But I much marvel that your lord-  
ship, having  
Rich tire§ about you, should at these early  
hours

Shake off the golden slumber of repose.  
It is most strange,  
Nature should be so conversant with pain,  
Being thereto not compell'd.

*Cer.* I held it ever,  
Virtue and cunning|| were endowments greater  
Than nobleness and riches: careless heirs  
May the two latter darken and expend;  
But immortality attends the former,  
Making a man a god. 'Tis known, I ever  
Have studied physic, through which secret art,  
By turning o'er authorities, I have  
(Together with my practice,) made familiar  
To me and to my aid, the blest infusions  
That dwell in vegetables, in metals, stones;  
And I can speak of the disturbances  
That nature works and of her cures; which  
give me

A more content in course of true delight  
Than to be thirsty after tottering honour,  
Or tie my treasure up in silken bags,  
To please the fool and death.

2 *Gent.* Your honour has through Ephesus  
pour'd forth

Your charity, and hundreds call themselves  
Your creatures, who by you have been restored;  
And not your knowledge, personal pain, but  
even

Your purse, still open, hath built lord Cerimon  
Such strong renown as time shall never——

*Enter Two Servants with a Chest.*

*Serv.* So; lift there.

*Cer.* What is that?

*Serv.* Sir, even now  
Did the sea toss upon our shore this chest;  
'Tis of some wreck.

*Cer.* Set 't down, let's look on it.

2 *Gent.* 'Tis like a coffin, sir.

*Cer.* Whate'er it be,  
'Tis wondrous heavy. Wrench it open straight;  
If the sea's stomach be o'charged with gold,  
It is a good constraint of fortune, that  
It belches upon us.

2 *Gent.* 'Tis so, my lord.

*Cer.* How close 'tis caul'd and bitum'd!—  
Did the sea cast it up?

*Serv.* I never saw so huge a billow, sir,  
As toss'd it upon shore.

*Cer.* Come, wrench it open;  
Soft, soft!—it smells most sweetly in my sense.

2 *Gent.* A delicate odour.

*Cer.* As ever hit my nostril; so,—up with it.  
O you most potent god! what's here? a corse!

1 *Gent.* Most strange!

*Cer.* Shrouded in cloth of Kate; balin'd  
and entreasur'd

With bags of spices full! A passport too!  
Apollo, perfect me i'the characters!

[Unfolds a scroll.

Here I give to understand, [Reads  
(If e'er this coffin drive a-land,)

I, king Pericles, have lost  
This queen, worth all our mundane cost.  
Who finds her, give her burying,  
She was the daughter of a king;  
Besides this treasure for a fee,  
The gods requite his charity!

If thou livest, Pericles, thou hast a heart  
That even cracks for woe!—This chanced to-  
night.

2 *Gent.* Most likely, sir.

*Cer.* Nay, certainly to-night;  
For look, how fresh she looks!—They were  
too rough,

That threw her in the sea. Make fire within;  
Fetch hither all the boxes in my closet.  
Death may usurp on nature many hours,  
And yet the fire of life kindle again  
The overpressed spirits. I have heard  
Of an Egyptian had nine hours lien dead,  
By good appliance was recovered.

*Enter a Servant, with boxes, napkins, and  
fire.*

Well said, well said; the fire and the cloths.—  
The rough and woful music that we have,  
Cause it to sound, 'beseech you.

The vial once more;—How thou stirr'st, thou  
block!—

The music there.—I pray you, give her air:—  
Gentlemen,

This queen will live: nature awakes; a warmth  
Breathes out of her; she hath not been en-  
tranced

Above five hours. See, how she 'gins to blow  
Into life's flower again!

1 *Gent.* The heavens, sir,

Through you, increase our wonder, and set up  
Your fame for ever.

*Cer.* She is alive; behold  
Her eye-lids, cases to those heavenly jewels  
Which Pericles hath lost,  
Begin to part their fringes of bright gold;  
The diamonds of a most praised water  
Appear, to make the world twice rich. Olive,  
And make us weep to hear your fate, fair  
creature,

Rare as you seem to be! [She moves.

*Thais.* O dear Diana,  
Where am I? Where's my lord? What world

2 *Gent.* Is not this strange! [Is this?

1 *Gent.* Most rare.

*Cer.* Hush, gentle neighbours;  
Lend me your hands: to the next chamber  
bear her.

Get linen: now this matter must be look'd to,  
For her relapse is mortal. Come, come, come;  
And Æsculapins guide us!

[Exit, carrying THAISA away.

\* The principals are the strongest rafters in the roof of a building.  
† i. e., Economical prudence, early rising.

‡ Tumble.

§ Attire.

|| Knowledge.

¶ Worldly

SCENE III. *Tharsus. A Room in Cleon's House.*

*Enter PERICLES, CLEON, DIONTZA, LYCHORIDA, and MARINA.*

*Per.* Most honour'd Cleon, I must needs be gone; [stands]  
My twelve months are expired, and Tyrus  
In a litigious peace. You, and your lady,  
Take from my heart all thankfulness! The gods  
Make up the rest upon you! [you mortally,  
*Cle.* Your shafts of fortune, though they hurt  
Yet glance full wand'ringly on us.

*Dion.* O your sweet queen!  
That the strict fates had pleased you had  
To have bless'd mine eyes! [brought her hither,  
*Per.* We cannot but obey

The powers above us. Could I rage and roar  
As doth the sea she lies in, yet the end  
Must be as 'tis. My babe Marina (whom,  
For she was born at sea, I have named so,) here  
I charge your charity withal, and leave her  
The infant of your care; beseeching you  
To give her princely training, that she may be  
Manner'd as she is born.

*Cle.* Fear not, my lord: [corn,  
Your grace \*, that fed my country with your  
(For which the people's prayers still fall upon  
you,) [tion

Must in your child be thought on. If neglect  
Should therein make me vile, the common  
body †,

By you relieved, would force me to my duty:  
But if to that my nature need a spur,  
The gods revenge it upon me and mine,  
To the end of generation!

*Per.* I believe you; [dit,  
Your honour and your goodness teach me cre-  
Without your vows. Till she be married, ma-  
By bright Diana, whom we honour all, [dam,  
Unscissor'd shall this hair of mine remain,

Though I show will ‡ in't. So I take my leave.  
Good madam, make me blessed in your care  
In bringing up my child.

*Dion.* I have one myself,  
Who shall not be more dear to my respect  
Than yours, my lord.

*Per.* Madam, my thanks and prayers.  
*Cle.* We'll bring your grace even to the edge  
o'the shore;

Then give you up to the mask'd Neptune§, and  
The gentlest winds of heaven.

*Per.* I will embrace  
Your offer.—Come, dear'st madam.—O no  
Lychorida, no tears: [tears,  
Look to your little mistress, on whose grace  
You may depend hereafter.—Come, my lord.  
[Exeunt.

SCENE IV. *Ephesus. A Room in Cerimon's House.*

*Enter CERIMON and THAISA.*

*Cer.* Madam, this letter, and some certain  
jewels,

Lay with you in your coffer: which are now  
At your command. Know you the character?  
*Thai.* It is my lord's.

That I was shipp'd at sea, I well remember,  
Even on my yearning || time; but whether there  
Delivered or no, by the holy gods,  
I cannot rightly say: But since king Pericles,  
My wedded lord, I ne'er shall see again,  
A estal livery will I take me to,  
And never more have joy.

*Cer.* Madam, if this you purpose as you  
Diana's temple is not distant far, [speak,  
Where you may 'bide until your date expire.  
Moreover, if you please, a niece of mine  
Shall there attend you.

*Thai.* My recompense is thanks, that's all;  
Yet my good will is great, though the gift small.  
[Exeunt.

## ACT IV.

*Enter GOWER.*

*Gow.* Imagine Pericles at Tyre,  
Welcomed to his own desire.  
His woful queen leave at Ephesus,  
To Dian there a votaress.  
Now to Marina bend your mind,  
Whom our fast growing scene must find  
At Tharsus, and by Cleon train'd  
In music, letters; who hath gain'd  
Of education all the grace,  
Which makes her both the heart and place  
Of general wonder. But alack!  
That monster envy, oft the wrack  
Of earned praise, Marina's life  
Seeks to take off by treason's knife.  
And in this kind hath our Cleon  
One daughter, and a wench full grown,  
Even ripe for marriage fight; this maid  
Hight ¶ Philoten: and it is said

For certain in our story, she  
Would ever with Marina be:  
Bc't when she weaved the sleided \*\* silk  
With fingers, long, small, white as milk;  
Or when she would with sharp need † wound  
The cambric, which she made more sound  
By hurting it; or when to the lute  
She sung, and made the night-bird mute,  
That still records ‡ with moan; or when  
She would with rich and constant pen  
Vall to her mistress Dian; still  
This Philoten contends in skill  
With absolute §§ Marina: so  
With the dove of Paphos might the crow  
Vie feathers white. Marina gets  
All praises, which are paid as debts,  
And not as given. This so dark  
In Phileton all graceful marks,  
That Cleon's wife, with envy rare,

\* Favour. † The common people.

§ Insidious waves that wear a treacherous smile.

\*\* Untwisted,

† Needle.

‡ Appear wilful, perverse by such conduct

§ Groaning.

¶ Called.

‡ Sings.

§§ Accomplished, perfect.

A present murderer does prepare  
 For good Marina, that her daughter  
 Might stand peerless by this slaughter.  
 The sooner her vile thoughts to stead,  
 Lychorida, our nurse, is dead;  
 And cursed Dionyza hath  
 The pregnant \* instrument of wrath  
 Prest† for this blow, The unborn event  
 I do commend to your content:  
 Only I carry winged time  
 Post on the lame feet of my rhyme;  
 Which never could I so convey,  
 Unless your thoughts went on my way.—  
 Dionyza does appear,  
 With Leonine, a murderer. [Exit.

SCENE I. Tharsus. An open Place near  
 the Sea-shore.

Enter DIONYZA and LEONINE.

Dion. Thy oath remember; thou hast sworn  
 to do it:

'Tis but a blow, which never shall be known.  
 Thou canst not do a thing i'the world so soon,  
 To yield thee so much profit. Let not con-  
 science,

Which is but cold, inflame love in thy bosom,  
 Inflame too nicely; nor let pity, which  
 Even women have cast off, melt thee, but be  
 A soldier to thy purpose. [creature.

Leon. I'll do't; but yet she is a goodly

Dion. The fitter then the gods should have  
 her. Here

Weeping she comes for her old nurse's death.  
 Thou art resolved?

Leon. I am resolved.

Enter MARINA, with a Basket of Flowers.

Mar. No, no, I will rob Tellus‡ of her weed,  
 To strew thy green with flowers: the yellows,  
 The purple violets, and marigolds, [blues,  
 Shall, as a chaplet, hang upon thy grave,  
 While summer days do last. Ah me! poor  
 maid,

Born in a tempest, when my mother died,  
 This world to me is like a lasting storm,  
 Whirling me from my friends.

Dion. How now, Marina! why do you  
 keep alone! [Do not

How chance my daughter is not with you?  
 Consume your blood with sorrowing: you  
 have

A nurse of me. Lord! how your favour's §  
 changed

With this unprofitable woe! Come, come;  
 Give me your wreath of flowers. Ere the sea  
 mar it, [there,

Walk forth with Leonine||; the air is quick  
 Piercing, and sharpens well the stomach.  
 Come;—

Leonine, take her by the arm, walk with her.

Mar. No, I pray you;

I'll not bereave you of your servant.

Dion. Come, come;  
 I love the king your father, and yourself,  
 With more than foreign heart. We every day  
 Expect him here: when he shall come, and find

Our paragon to all reports, thus blasted,  
 He will repent the breadth of his great voyage;  
 Blame both my lord and me, that we have  
 ta'en

No care to your best courses. Go, I pray you,  
 Walk, and be cheerful once again; reserve  
 That excellent complexion, which did steal  
 The eyes of young and old. Care not for me;  
 I can go home alone.

Mar. Well, I will go;  
 But yet I have no desire to it. [you.

Dion. Come, come, I know 'tis good for  
 Walk half an hour, Leontine, at the least;  
 Remember what I have said.

Leon. I warrant you, madam.

Dion. I'll leave you, my sweet lady, for a  
 while;

Pray you walk softly, do not heat your blood:  
 What! I must have a care of you.

Mar. Thanks, sweet madam.—  
 [Exit DIONYZA.

Is this wind westerly that blows?

Leon. South-west.

Mar. When I was born, the wind was north.

Leon. Was't so?

Mar. My father, as nurse said, did never fear  
 But cry'd, good seamen! to the sailors, galling  
 His kingly hands with hauling of the ropes;  
 And, clasping to the mast, endured a sea  
 That almost burst the deck, and from the lad-  
 der-tackle

Wash'd off a canvass-climber ¶: Ha! says one,  
 Will't out? and, with a dropping industry,  
 They skip from stem to stern: the boatswain  
 whistles,

The master calls, and trebles their confusion.

Leon. And when was this?

Mar. It was when I was born:

Never was waves nor wind more violent.

Leon. Come, say your prayers speedily.

Mar. What mean you

Leon. If you require a little space for prayer

I grant it: Pray; but be not tedious,

For the gods are quick of ear, and I am sworn  
 To do my work with haste.

Mar. Why will you kill me?

Leon. To satisfy my lady.

Mar. Why would she have me kill'd?

Now, as I can remember, by my troth,

I never did her hurt in all my life;

I never spake bad word, nor did ill turn

To any living creature: believe me, la,

I never kill'd a mouse, nor hurt a fly:

I trod upon a worm against my will,

But I wept for it. How have I offended,

Wherein my death might yield her profit, or  
 My life imply her danger?

Leon. My commission

Is not to reason of the deed, but do it.

Mar. You will not do't for all the world, I  
 hope. [show

You are well-favour'd, and your looks fore-

You have a gentle heart. I saw you lately,

When you caught hurt in parting two that  
 fought:

Prepared. † Ready. ‡ The earth.

the sea by the coming in of the tide,

§ Countenance, look.

mar your walk.

¶ i. e., Ere  
 † A ship boy.



Good sooth, it show'd well in you; do so now:

Your lady seeks my life: come you between, And save poor me, the weaker.

*Leon.* I am sworn, And will despatch.

*Enter Pirates, whilst MARINA is struggling.*

1 *Pirate.* Hold, villain!

[*LEONINE runs away.*]

2 *Pirate.* A prize! a prize!

3 *Pirate.* Half-part, mates, half-part. Come let's have her aboard suddenly.

[*Exeunt Pirates with MARINA.*]

SCENE II. *The same.*

*Reenter LEONINE.*

*Leon.* These roving thieves serve the great pirate Valdes;

And they have seized Marina. Let her go: There's no hope she'll return. I'll swear she's dead,

And thrown into the sea.—But I'll see further; Perhaps they will but please themselves upon Not carry her aboard. If she remain, [her, Whom they have ravish'd, must by me be slain.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III. *Mitylene. A Room in a Brothel.*

*Enter Pander, Bawd, and BOULT.*

*Pand.* Boul't.

*Boul't.* Sir.

*Pand.* Search the market narrowly; Mitylene is full of gallants. We lost too much money this mart, by being too wenchless.

*Bawd.* We were never so much out of creasures. We have but poor three, and they can do no more than they can do; and with continual action are even as good as rotten.

*Pand.* Therefore let's have fresh ones, whate'er we pay for them. If there be not a conscience to be used in every trade, we shall never prosper.

*Bawd.* Thou say'st true: 'tis not the bringing up of poor bastards, as I think I have brought up some eleven—

*Boul't.* Ay, to eleven, and brought them down again. But shall I search the market?

*Bawd.* What else, inan? The stuff we have, a strong wind will blow it to pieces, they are so pitifully sodden.

*Pand.* Thou say'st true; they are too unwholesome o' conscience. The poor Transylvanian is dead, that lay with the little baggage.

*Boul't.* Ay, she quickly poop'd him; she made him roast-meat for worms:—but I'll go search the market. [*Exit BOULT.*]

*Pand.* Three or four thousand chequins were as pretty a proportion to live quietly, and so give over.

*Bawd.* Why, to give over, I pray you? is it a shame to get when we are old?

*Pand.* O, our credit comes not in like the commodity; nor the commodity wages not with the canger; therefore, if in our youths

we could pick up some pretty estate, 'twere not amiss to keep our door hatch'd\*. Besides, the sore terms we stand upon with the gods, will be strong with us for giving over.

*Bawd.* Come, other sorts offend as well as we.

*Pand.* As well as we! ay, and better too; we offend worse. Neither is our profession any trade; it's no calling:—but here comes Boul't.

*Enter the Pirates, and BOULT, dragging in MARINA.*

*Boul't.* Come your ways. [*To MARINA.*]—My masters, you say she's a virgin?

1 *Pirate.* O, sir, we doubt it not.

*Boul't.* Master, I have gone thorough† for this piece, you see: if you like her, so; if not, I have lost my earnest.

*Bawd.* Boul't, has she any qualities?

*Boul't.* She has a good face, speaks well, and has excellent good clothes; there's no further necessity of qualities can make her be refused.

*Bawd.* What's her price, Boul't?

*Boul't.* I cannot be bated one doit of a thousand pieces.

*Pand.* Well, follow me, my masters; you shall have your money presently. Wife, take her in; instruct her what she has to do, that she may not be raw in her entertainment.

[*Exeunt Pander and Pirates.*]

*Bawd.* Boul't, take you the marks of her; the colour of her hair, complexion, height, age, with warrant of her virginity; and cry, *He that will give most, shall have her first.* Such a maidenhead were no cheap thing, if men wait as they have been. Get this done as I command you.

*Boul't.* Performance shall follow.

[*Exit BOULT.*]

*Mar.* Alack, that Leonine was so slack, so slow!

[*these pirates.*]

(He should have struck, not spoke;) or that (Not enough barbarous,) had not overboard Thrown me, to seek my mother!

*Bawd.* Why lament you, pretty one?

*Mar.* That I am pretty.

*Bawd.* Come, the gods have done their part in you.

*Mar.* I accuse them not.

*Bawd.* You are lit into my hands, where you are like to live.

*Mar.* The more my fault,

To 'scape his hands, where I was like to die.

*Bawd.* Ay, and you shall live in pleasure.

*Mar.* No.

*Bawd.* Yes, indeed, shall you, and taste gentlemen of all fashions. You shall fare well; you shall have the difference of all complexions. What! do you stop your ears!

*Mar.* Are you a woman?

*Bawd.* What would you have me be, an I be not a woman?

*Mar.* An honest woman, or not a woman.

*Bawd.* Marry, whip thee, gosling: I think I shall have something to do with you. Come,

\* *i. e.*, Half open.

† Bid a high price for her

you are a young foolish sapling, and must be bowed as I would have you.

*Mar.* The gods defend me!

*Bawd.* If it please the gods to defend you by men, then men must comfort you, men must feed you, men must stir you up.—Boults returned.

*Enter BOULT.*

Now, sir, hast thou cried her through the market?

*Boults.* I have cried her almost to the number of her hairs; I have drawn her picture with my voice.

*Bawd.* And I prythee tell me, how dost thou find the inclination of the people, especially of the younger sort?

*Boults.* Faith, they listened to me, as they would have hearkened to their father's testament. There was a Spaniard's mouth so watered, that he went to bed to her very description.

*Bawd.* We shall have him here to-morrow with his best ruff on.

*Boults.* To-night, to-night. But, mistress, do you know the French knight that cowers i' the hams?

*Bawd.* Who? Monsieur Veroles?

*Boults.* Ay; he offered to cut a caper at the proclamation; but he made a groan at it, and swore he would see her to-morrow.

*Bawd.* Well, well; as for him, he brought his disease hither: here he does but repair it. I know he will come in our shadow, to scatter his crowns in the sun.

*Boults.* Well, if we had of every nation a traveller, we should lodge them with this sign?

*Bawd.* Pray you, come hither awhile. You have fortunes coming upon you. Mark me; you must seem to do that fearfully, which you commit willingly; to despise profit, where you have most gain. To weep that you live as you do, makes pity in your lovers: Seldom, but that pity begets you a good opinion, and that opinion a mere profit.

*Mar.* I understand you not.

*Boults.* O, take her home, mistress, take her home: these blushes of her's must be quenched with some present practice.

*Bawd.* Thou say'st true, i' faith, so they must: for your bridle goes to that with shame, which is her way to go with warrant.

*Boults.* Faith, some do, and some do not. But, mistress, if I have bargained for the joint,—

*Bawd.* Thou may'st cut a morsel off the spit.

*Boults.* I may so.

*Bawd.* Who should deny it? Come, young one, I like the manner of your garments well.

*Boults.* Ay, by my faith, they shall not be changed yet.

*Bawd.* Boults, spend thou that in the town: report what a sojourner we have; you'll lose

nothing by custom. When nature framed this piece, she meant thee a good turn; therefore say what a paragon she is, and thou hast the harvest out of thine own report.

*Boults.* I warrant you, mistress, thunder shall not so awake the beds of eels, as my giving out her beauty stir up the lewdly-inclined. I'll bring home some to-night.

*Bawd.* Come your ways; follow me.

*Mar.* If fires be hot, knives sharp, or waters deep,

Untied I still my virgin knot will keep.

Diana, aid my purpose!

*Bawd.* What have we to do with Diana? Pray you, will you go with us? [Exit.]

SCENE IV. Tharsus. A Room in Cleon's House.

*Enter CLEON and DIONYZA.*

*Dion.* Why, are you foolish? Can it be undone?

*Cle.* O Dionyza, such a piece of slaughter The sun and moon ne'er look'd upon!

*Dion.* I think You'll turn a child again.

*Cle.* Were I chief lord of all the spacious I'd give it to undo the deed. O lady, [world, Much less in blood than virtue, yet a princess To equal any single crown o' the earth, I'the justice of compare! O villain Leonine, Whom thou hast poison'd too! [ness If thou hadst drunk to him, it had been a kind

Becoming well thy feat; what canst thou say, When noble Pericles shall demand his child?

*Dion.* That she is dead. Nurses are not the To foster it, nor ever to preserve. [tates She died by night; I'll say so. Who can cross

Unless you play the impious innocent, [it? And for an honest attribute, cry out, She died by foul play.

*Cle.* O, go to. Well, well, Of all the faults beneath the heavens, the god Do like this worst.

*Dion.* Be one of those, that think The petty wrens of Tharsus will fly hence,

And open this to Pericles. I do shame To think of what a noble strain you are,

And of how cow'd a spirit.

*Cle.* To such proceeding Who ever but his approbation added,

Though not his pre-consent, he did not flow From honourable courses.

*Dion.* Be it so then: Yet none does know, but you, how she came dead,

Nor none can know, Leonine being gone. She did disdain my child, and stood between

Her and her fortunes: None would look on But cast their gazes on Marina's face; [her, Whilst ours was blurted at, and held a malking],

Not worth the time of day. It pierced me thorough;

And though you call my course unnatural, You not your child well loving, yet I find,

Bends. † An absolute, a certain profit. ‡ i. e., Of a piece with the rest of thy exple  
An innocent was formerly a common appellation for an idiot. ¶ A coarse wench not  
worth a good morrow.

It greets me, as an enterprise of kindness,  
Perform'd to your sole \* daughter.

*Cle.* Heavens forgive it!

*Dion.* And as for Pericles,  
What should he say? We wept after her hearse,  
And even yet we mourn: her monument  
Is almost finish'd, and her epitaphs  
In glittering golden characters express  
A general praise to her, and care in us.  
At whose expense 'tis done.

*Cle.* Thou art like the harpy,  
Which, to betray, doth wear an angel's face,  
Seize with an eagle's talons.

*Dion.* You are like one, that superstitiously  
Doth swear to the gods, that winter kills the  
flies;

But yet I know you'll do as I advise. [*Exeunt.*  
*Enter GOWR, before the Monument of  
MARINA at Tharsus.*

*Gow.* Thus time we waste, and longest  
leagues make short;

Sail seas in cockles, have, and wish but for't;  
Making, (to take your imagination,)

From bourn to bourn, region to region.

By you being pardon'd, we commit no crime  
To use one language, in each several clime,  
Where our scenes seem to live. I do be-  
seech you

To learn of me, who stand i'the gap to teach  
The stages of our story. Pericles

Is now again thwarting the wayward seas,  
(Attended on by many a lord and knight,)

To see his daughter, all his life's delight.

Old Escanes, whom Helicanus late

Advanced in time to great and high estate,

Is left to govern. Bear you it in mind,

Old Helicanus goes along behind.

Well-sailing ships, and bounteous winds,  
have brought

This king to Tharsus, (think his pilot  
So with his steerage shall your thoughts

grow on,)

To fetch his daughter home, who first is  
Like motes and shadows see them move  
awhile;

Your ears unto your eyes I'll reconcile.

*Dumb Show.*

*Enter at one door, PERICLES with his  
Train; CLEON and DIONYZA at the other.*  
*CLEON shows PERICLES the tomb of MA-  
RINA; whereat PERICLES makes lamenta-  
tion, puts on sackcloth, and in a mighty  
passion departs. Then CLEON and  
DIONYZA retire.*

*Gow.* See how belief may suffer by foul  
show!

This borrow'd passion stands for true old  
And Pericles, in sorrow all devour'd,  
With sighs shot through, and biggest tears  
o'ershow'r'd,

Leaves Tharsus, and again embarks. He  
Never to wash his face, nor cut his hairs;  
He puts on sackcloth, and to sea. He  
bears

A tempest, which his mortal vessels tears,

And yet he rides it out. Now please you wit!  
The epitaph is for Marina writ  
By wicked Dionyza.

[*Reads the inscription on MARINA'S  
Monument.*

*The fairest, sweet'st, and best lies here,  
Who wither'd in her spring of year.  
She was of Tyrus, the king's daughter,  
On whom foul death hath made this  
slaughter;*

*Marina was she call'd; and at her birth,  
Thetis, being proud, swallow'd some  
part o'the earth:*

*Therefore the earth, fearing to be o'er-  
Hath Thetis birth-child on the heavens  
bestow'd:*

*Wherefore she does, (and swears she'll  
Make raging battery upon shores of flint.  
No visor does become black villany  
So well as soft and tender flattery.*

Let Pericles believe his daughter's dead,  
And bear his courses to be ordered

By lady fortune; while our scenes display

His daughter's woe and heavy well-a-day,

In her unholy service. Patience then,

And think you now are all in Mitylen. [*Exit.*

SCENE V. Mitylene. A Street before the  
Brothel.

*Enter, from the Brothel, Two Gentlemen.*

1 *Gent.* Did you ever hear the like?

2 *Gent.* No, nor never shall do in such a  
place as this, she being once gone.

1 *Gent.* But to have divinity preached  
there! did you ever dream of such a thing?

2 *Gent.* No, no. Come, I am for no more  
bawdy-houses: shall we go hear the vestals  
sing?

1 *Gent.* I'll do any thing now that is vir-  
tuous; but I am out of the road of rutting, for  
ever.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI. The same. A Room in the  
Brothel.

*Enter Pander, Bawd, and BOULT.*

*Pand.* Well, I had rather than twice the  
worth of her, she had ne'er come here.

*Bawd.* Fie, fie upon her; she is able to  
freeze the god Priapus, and undo a whole  
generation. We must either get her ravished,  
or be rid of her. When she should do for  
clients her fitment, and do me the kindness of  
our profession, she has me her quirks, her rea-  
sons, her master-reasons, her prayers, her  
knees; that she would make a puritan of the  
devil, if he should cheapen a kiss of her.

*Boult.* 'Faith, I must ravish her, or she'll  
disfurnish us of all our cavaliers, and make all  
our swearers priests.

*Pand.* Now, the pox upon her green-sick-  
ness for me?

*Bawd.* 'Faith, there's no way to be rid on't,  
but by the way to the pox. Here comes the  
lord Lysimachus, disguised.

*Boult.* We should have both lord and lown,

Only.

† Travelling.

‡ To know.

† From one boundary to another.

¶ The sea.

§ His body

\*\* Never cease.



if the peevish baggage would but give way to customers.

*Enter LYSIMACHUS.*

*Lys.* How now? How\* a dozen of virginities?

*Bawd.* Now, the gods to-bless your honour!

*Boult.* I am glad to see your honour in good health.

*Lys.* You may so; 'tis the better for you that your resorters stand upon sound legs. How now, wholesome iniquity? Have you that a man may deal withal, and defy the surgeon?

*Bawd.* We have here one, sir, if she would—but there never came her like in Mitylene.

*Lys.* If she'd do the deeds of darkness, thou wouldst say.

*Bawd.* Your honour knows what 'tis to say, well enough.

*Lys.* Well; call forth, call forth.

*Boult.* For flesh and blood, sir, white and red, you shall see a rose; and she were a rose indeed, if she had but—

*Lys.* What, pr'ythee?

*Boult.* O, sir, I can be modest.

*Lys.* That dignifies the renown of a bawd, no less than it gives a good report to a number to be chaste.

*Enter MARINA.*

*Bawd.* Here comes that which grows to the stalk;—never plucked yet, I can assure you. Is she not a fair creature?

*Lys.* 'Faith, she would serve after a long voyage at sea. Well, there's for you;—leave us.

*Bawd.* I beseech your honour, give me leave: a word, and I'll have done presently.

*Lys.* I beseech you, do.

*Bawd.* First I would have you note, this is an honourable man.

[*To MARINA, whom she takes aside.*]

*Mar.* I desire to find him so, that I may worthily note him.

*Bawd.* Next, he's the governor of this country, and a man whom I am bound to.

*Mar.* If he govern the country, you are bound to him indeed; but how honourable he is in that, I know not.

*Bawd.* 'Pray you, without any more virginal fencing, will you use him kindly? He will line your apron with gold.

*Mar.* What he will do graciously, I will thankfully receive.

*Lys.* Have you done?

*Bawd.* My lord, she's not paced yet; you must take some pains to work her to your manage. Come, we will leave his honour and her together.

[*Exeunt Bawd, Pander, and BOULT.*]

*Lys.* Go thy ways.—Now, pretty one, how long have you been at this trade?

*Mar.* What trade, sir?

*Lys.* What I cannot name but I shall offend.

*Mar.* I cannot be offended with my trade. Please you to name it.

*Lys.* How long have you been of this profession?

*Mar.* Ever since I can remember.

*Lys.* Did you go to it so young? Were you a gamester at five, or at seven?

*Mar.* Earlier too, sir, if now I be one.

*Lys.* Why, the house you dwell in, proclaims you to be a creature of sale.

*Mar.* Do you know this house to be a place of such resort, and will come into it? I hear say, you are of honourable parts, and are the governor of this place.

*Lys.* Why, hath your principal made known unto you who I am?

*Mar.* Who is my principal?

*Lys.* Why, your herb woman; she that sets seeds and roots of shame and iniquity. O, you have heard something of my power, and so stand aloof for more serious wooing. But I protest to thee, pretty one, my authority shall not see thee, or else, look friendly upon thee. Come, bring me to some private place. Come, come.

*Mar.* If you were born to honour, show it now;

If put upon you, make the judgment good That thought you worthy of it.

*Lys.* How's this? how's this?—Some more?—be sage.

*Mar.* For me,

That am a maid, though most ungente fortune Hath placed me here within this loathsome sty,

Where, since I came, diseases have been sold Dearer than physic,—O that the good gods Would set me free from this unhallow'd place, Though they did change me to the meanest That flies i'the purer air! [bird]

*Lys.* I did not think

Thou couldst have spoke so well; ne'er dream'd thou couldst.

Had I brought hither a corrupted mind, Thy speech had alter'd it. Hold, here's gold for thee:

Perserver still in that clear way thou goest, And the gods strengthen thee!

*Mar.* The gods preserve you!

*Lys.* For me, be you thoughten

That I came with no ill intent; for to me The very doors and windows savour vilely. Farewell. Thou art a piece of virtue, and I doubt not but thy training hath been noble.

Hold; here's more gold for thee.—

A curse upon him, die he like a thief, That robs thee of thy goodness! If thou hears It shall be for thy good. [from me,

[*As LYSIMACHUS is putting up his Purse, BOULT enters.*]

*Boult.* I beseech your honour, one piece for me.

*Lys.* Avant, thou damned door-keeper!

Your house, But for this virgin that doth prop it up, Would sink, and overwhelm you all. Away! [Exit LYSIMACHUS.]

*Boult.* How's this? We must take another

course with you. If your peevish chastity, which is not worth a breakfast in the cheapest country under the cope\*, shall undo a whole household, let me be gelded like a spaniel. Come your ways.

*Mar.* Whither would you have me?

*Boult.* I must have your maidenhead taken off, or the common hangman shall execute it. Come your way. We'll have no more gentlemen driven away. Come your ways, I say.

*Re-enter Bawd.*

*Bawd.* How now! what's the matter?

*Boult.* Worse and worse, mistress; she has here spoken holy words to the lord Lysimachus.

*Bawd.* O abominable!

*Boult.* She makes our profession as it were to stink afore the face of the gods.

*Bawd.* Marry, hang her up for ever!

*Boult.* The nobleman would have dealt with her like a nobleman, and she sent him away as cold as a snowball; saying his prayers too.

*Bawd.* Boult, take her away; use her at thy pleasure: crack the glass of her virginity, and make the rest malleable.

*Boult.* An if she were a thornier piece of ground than she is, she shall be ploughed.

*Mar.* Hark, hark, you gods!

*Bawd.* She conjures: away with her. Would she had never come within my doors! Marry hang you! She's born to undo us. Will you not go the way of women-kind? Marry come up, my dish of chastity with rosemary and bays!

*[Exit Bawd.]*

*Boult.* Come, mistress; come your way with me.

*Mar.* Whither would you have me?

*Boult.* To take from you the jewel you hold so dear.

*Mar.* Pr'ythee tell me one thing first.

*Boult.* Come now, your one thing.

*Mar.* What canst thou wish thine enemy to be?

*Boult.* Why, I could wish him to be my master, or rather, my mistress. *[thou art,*

*Mar.* Neither of these are yet so bad as

Since they do better thee in their command. Thou hold'st a place, for which the pained'st fend

Of hell would not in reputation change:

Thou'rt the damn'd door-keeper to every coys. That hither comes inquiring for his tib: *[trelt* To the choleric fistings of each rogue thy ear Is liable: thy very food is such

As hath been belch'd on by infected lungs.

*Boult.* What would you have me? go to the wars, would you? where a man may serve seven years for the loss of a leg, and have not money enough in the end to buy him a wooden one? *[Emp'y*

*Mar.* Do any thing but this thou doest. Old receptacles, common sewers, of filth; Serve by indenture to the common hangman; Any of these ways are better yet than this: For that which thou professest, a baboon, Could he but speak, would own a name too dear.

O that the gods would safely from this place Deliver me! Here, here is gold for thee.

If that thy master would gain aught by me, Proclaim that I can sing, weave, sew, and dance,

With other virtues, which I'll keep from boast; And I will undertake all these to teach.

I doubt not but this populous city will Yield many scholars.

*Boult.* But can you teach all this you speak of?

*Mar.* Prove that I cannot, take me home again,

And prostitute me to the basest groom That doth frequent your house.

*Boult.* Well, I will see what I can do for thee: if I can place thee, I will.

*Mar.* But, amongst honest women?

*Boult.* Faith, my acquaintance lies little amongst them. But since my master and mistress have bought you, there's no going but by their consent; therefore I will make them acquainted with your purpose, and I doubt not but I shall find them tractable enough. Come, I'll do for thee what I can; come your ways. *[Exit.*

## ACT V.

*Enter GOWER.*

*Gow.* Marina thus the brothel scapes, and chances

Into an honest house, our story says.

She sings like one immortal, and she dances

As goddess-like to her admired lays:

Deep clerks† she dumbe; and with her need‡ composes

Nature's own shape, of bud, bird, branch, or berry;

That even her art sisters the natural roses:

Her inkle, silk, twin with the rubied cherry:

That pupils lacks she none of noble race,

Who pour their bounty on her; and her gain

She gives the cursed bawd. Here we her place;

And to her father turn our thoughts again, Where we left him, on the sea. We there him lost; *[arrived*

Whence, driven before the winds, he is Here where his daughter dwells; and on this coast *[strived*

Suppose him now at anchor. The city God Neptune's annual feast to keep: from whence

Lysimachus our Tyrian sh' p'espies,

His banners sable, trimm'd with rich expense;

And to him in his barge with fervour hies.

Cope or canopy of heaven.

† Paltry fellow.

‡ Learned men.

§ Needle.

In your supposing once more put your sight;  
Of heavy Pericles think this the bark: [might]  
Where, what is done in action, more, if  
Shall be discover'd; please you, sit, and  
hark. [Exit.]

SCENE I. *On board PERICLES' Ship, off Mitylene. A close Pavilion on deck, with a Curtain before it; PERICLES within it, reclined on a Couch. A Barge lying beside the Tyrian Vessel.*

*Enter Two Sailors, one belonging to the Tyrian Vessel, the other to the Barge; to them HELICANUS.*

*Tyr. Sail.* Where's the lord Helicanus? he can resolve you.

[*To the Sailor of Mitylene.*]

O here he is.—

Sir, there's a barge put off from Mitylene.

And in it is Lysimachus the governor,

Who craves to come aboard. What is your will? [Gentlemen.]

*Hel.* That he have his. Call up some gent.

*Tyr. Sail.* Ho, gentlemen! my lord calls.

[*Enter Two Gentlemen.*]

*1 Gent.* Doth your lordship call?

*Hel.* Gentlemen, [I pray you, There is some of worth would come aboard; To greet them fairly.]

[*The Gentlemen and the Two Sailors descend, and go on board the Barge.*]

*Enter, from thence LYSIMACHUS and Lords; the Tyrian Gentlemen, and the Two Sailors.*

*Tyr. Sail.* Sir,

This is the man that can, in aught you would, Resolve you. [you!]

*Lys.* Hail, reverend sir! The gods preserve

*Hel.* And you, Sir, to out-live the age I am, And die as I would do.

*Lys.* You wish me well.

Being on shore, honouring of Neptune's triumphs,

Seeing this goodly vessel ride before us,

I made to it, to know of whence you are.

*Hel.* First, sir, what is your place?

*Lys.* I am governor of this place you lie

*Hel.* Sir, [before.]

Our vessel is of Tyre, in it the king;

A man, who for this three months hath not

To any one, nor taken sustenance, [spoken]

But to prorogue\* his grief. [ture?]

*Lys.* Upon what ground is his distemper?

*Hel.* Sir, it would be too tedious to repeat; But the main grief of all springs from the loss Of a beloved daughter and a wife.

*Lys.* May we not see him, then?

*Hel.* You may indeed, sir,

But bootless is your sight: he will not speak To any.

*Lys.* Yet, let me obtain my wish.

*Hel.* Behold him, sir: [PERICLES discovered.] this was a goodly person,

Till the disaster, that, one mortal† night, Drove him to this. [you! Hail,

*Lys.* Sir, king, all hail! the gods preserve Hail, royal sir!

*Hel.* It is in vain; he will not speak to you.

*1 Lord.* Sir, we have a maid in Mitylene, I Would win some words of him. [durst wager,

*Lys.* 'Tis well bethought.

She, questionless, with her sweet harmony And other choice attractions, would allure,

And make a battery through his deafen'd

Which now are midway stopp'd: [parts.]

She, all as happy as of all the fairest,

Is, with her fellow maidens, now within

The leafy shelter that abuts against

The island's side.

[*He whispers one of the attendant*

*Lords.—Exit Lord, in the Barge*

*of LYSIMACHUS.*]

*Hel.* Sure, all's effectless; yet nothing we'll

omit [kindness]

That bears recovery's name. But, since your We have stretch'd thus far, let us beseech you

further,

That for our gold we may provision have, Wherein we are not destitute for want,

But weary for the staleness.

*Lys.* O, sir, a courtesy,

Which if we should deny, the most just God

For every graff would send a caterpillar,

And so inflict our province.—Yet once more

Let me entreat to know at large the cause

Of your king's sorrow.

*Hel.* Sit, sir, I will recount it;—

But see, I am prevented.

*Enter, from the Barge, Lord, MARINA,*

*and a young Lady.*

*Lys.* O, here is

The lady that I sent for. Welcome, fair one!

Is't not a goodly presence?

*Hel.* A gallant lady.

*Lys.* She's such, that were I well assured

she came

Of gentle kind, and noble stock, I'd wish

No better choice, and think me rarely wed.

Fair one, all goodness that consists in bounty

Expect even here, where is a kingly patient:

If that thy prosperous-artificial feat

Can draw him but to answer thee in aught,

Thy sacred physic shall receive such pay

As thy desires can wish.

*Mar.* Sir, I will use

My utmost skill in his recovery,

Provided none but I and my companion

Be suffer'd to come near him.

*Lys.* Come, let us leave her,

And the gods make her prosperous!

[*MARINA sings.*]

*Lys.* Mark'd he your music?

*Mar.* No, nor look'd on us.

*Lys.* See, she will speak to him—

*Mar.* Hail, sir! my lord, lend ear:—

*Per.* Hum! ha!

*Mar.* I am a maid,

My lord, that ne'er before invited eyes,

But have been gaz'd on, comet-like: she speaks

My lord, that, may be, hath endured a grief

Might equal yours, if both were justly weigh'd.

Though wayward fortune did malign my state

My derivation was from ancestors

\* To lengthen or prolong his grief.

† Destructive.

‡ i. e., Mars.



Who stood equivalent with mighty kings:  
But time hath rooted out my parentage,  
And to the world and awkward casualties  
Bound me in servitude.—I will desist;  
But there is something glows upon my cheek,  
And whispers in mine ear, *Go not till he speak.* [Aside.]

*Per.* My fortunes—parentage—good parentage— [you?]

To equal mine!—was it not thus? what say  
*Mar.* I said, my lord, if you did know my  
You would not do me violence. [parentage,  
*Per.* I do think so.

I pray you, turn your eyes again upon me.—  
You are like something that—What country  
Here of these shores? [woman?]

*Mar.* No, nor of any shores:  
Yet I was mortally brought forth, and am  
No other than I appear.

*Per.* I am great with woe, and shall deliver  
weeping.

My dearest wife was like this maid, and such  
a one [square brows;

My daughter might have been: my queen's  
Her stature to an inch; as wand-like straight;  
As silver-voiced; her eyes as jewel-like,  
And cased as richly: in pace another Juno;  
Who starves the ears she feeds, and makes  
them hungry, [you live?

The more she gives them speech.—Where do  
*Mar.* Where I am but a stranger: from the  
You may discern the place. [deck

*Per.* Where were you bred?  
And how achieved you these endowments,  
You make more rich to owe? [which

*Mar.* Should I tell my history,  
'Twould seem like lies disdain'd in the re-  
*Per.* Prythee speak; [porting,

Falseness cannot come from thee, for thou  
look'st

Modest as justice, and thou seem'st a palace  
For the crown'd truth to dwell in: I'll believe  
And make my senses credit thy relation, [thee,  
To points that seem impossible; for thou  
look'st [friends?

Like one I loved indeed. What were thy  
Didst thou not say, when I did push thee  
back, [camest

(Which was when I perceived thee,) that thou  
From good descending?

*Mar.* So indeed I did.

*Per.* Report thy parentage. I think, thou  
saidst

Thou hadst been toss'd from wrong to injury,  
And that thou thought'st thy griefs might equal  
If both were open'd. [mine,

*Mar.* Some such thing indeed  
I said, and said no more but what my thoughts  
Did warrant me was likely.

*Per.* Tell thy story;  
If thine consider'd prove the thousandth part  
Of my endurance, thou art a man, and I

Have suffer'd like a girl. Yet thou dost look  
Like Patience, gazing on kings' graves, and  
smiling

Extremity out of act. What were thy friends?

How lost thou them? Thy name, my most  
kind virgin?

Recount, I do beseech thee; come, sit by me.

*Mar.* My name, sir, is Marina.

*Per.* O, I am mock'd

And thou by some incensed god sent hither  
To make the world laugh at me.

*Mar.* Patience, good sir,  
Or here I'll cease.

*Per.* Nay, I'll be patient;  
Thou little know'st how thou dost startle me  
To call thyself Marina.

*Mar.* The name Marina  
Was given me by one that had some power;  
My father, and a king.

*Per.* How I a king's daughter?  
And call'd Marina?

*Mar.* You said you would believe me;  
But, not to be a troubler of your peace,  
I will end here.

*Per.* But are you flesh and blood?  
Have you a working pulse, and are no fairy?  
No motion?—Well, speak on, Where were  
And wherefore call'd Marina? [you born?

*Mar.* Call'd Marina,  
For I was born at sea.

*Per.* At sea? thy mother?

*Mar.* My mother was the daughter of a  
Who died the very minute I was born, [king;  
As my good nurse, Lychorida, hath oft  
Deliver'd weeping.

*Per.* O, stop there a little!  
This is the rarest dream that e'er dull sleep  
Did mock sad fools withal: this cannot be.  
My daughter's buried. [Aside.] Well:—where  
were you bred?

I'll hear you more, to the bottom of your story,  
And never interrupt you. [I did give o'er,

*Mar.* You'll scarce believe me; 'twere best  
*Per.* I will believe you by the syllable

Of what you shall deliver. Yet, give me  
leave:— you bred?

How came you in these parts? where were  
*Mar.* The king, my father, did in Tharsus  
leave me;

Till cruel Cleon, with his wicked wife,  
Did seek to murder me: and having woo'd  
A villain to attempt it, who having drawn,  
A crew of pirates came and rescued me;  
Brought me to Mitylene. But now, good sir,  
Whither will you have me? Why do you  
weep? It may be;

You think me an impostor. No, good faith;  
I am the daughter to king Pericles,  
If good king Pericles be.

*Per.* Ho, Helicanus!  
*Hel.* Calls my gracious lord?

*Per.* Thou art a grave and noble counsellor,  
Most wise in general: Tell me, if thou canst,  
What this maid is, or what is like to be,  
That thus hath made me weep?

*Hel.* I know not; but  
Here is the regent, sir, of Mitylene  
Speaks nobly of her.

*Lys.* She would never tell  
Her parentage; being demanded that,

She would sit still and weep.

*Per.* O, Helicanus! strike me, honour'd sir;  
Give me a gash, put me to present pain;  
Lest this great sea of joys rushing upon me,  
O'erbear the shores of my mortality,  
And drown me with their sweetness. O,  
come hither,

Thou that begett'st him that did thee beget;  
Thou that wast born at sea, buried at Tharsus,  
And found at sea again! O, Helicanus!  
Down on thy knees, thank the holy gods as  
loud

As thunder threatens us: This is Marina.—  
What was thy mother's name? tell me but that,  
For truth can never be confirm'd enough,  
Though doubts did ever sleep.

*Mar.* First, sir, I pray,  
What is your title? [now

*Per.* I am Pericles of Tyre: but tell me  
(As in the rest thou hast been godlike perfect,)  
My drown'd queen's name, thou art the heir  
of kingdoms,

And another life to Pericles, thy father.

*Mar.* Is it no more to be your daughter than  
To say, my mother's name was Thaisa?  
Thaisa was my mother, who did end  
The minute I began. [my child.

*Per.* Now, blessing on thee; rise, thou art  
Give me fresh garments. Mine own, Heli-  
canus, [been,

(Not dead at Tharsus, as she should have  
By savage Cleon,) she shall tell thee all;  
When thou shalt kneel and justify in know-  
She is thy very princess.—Who is this? [ledge,

*Hel.* Sir, 'tis the governor of Mitylene,  
Who, hearing of your melancholy state,  
Did come to see you.

*Per.* I embrace you, sir,  
Give me my robes; I am wild in my behold-  
ing. [music?

O heavens! bless my girl! But hark! what  
Tell Helicanus, my Marina, tell him  
O'er, point by point, for yet he seems to  
doubt, [music?

How sure you are my daughter.—But what  
*Hel.* My lord, I hear none.

*Per.* None?  
The music of the spheres: list, my Marina.

*Lys.* It is not good to cross him; give him  
*Per.* Rarest sounds! [way.

Do ye not hear?

*Lys.* Music! My lord, I hear—  
*Per.* Most heavenly music:

It nips me unto list'ning, and thick slumber  
Hangs on mine eye-lids; let me rest.

[*He sleeps.*

*Lys.* A pillow for his head;  
[*The Curtain before the Pavilion of*  
*PERICLES is closed.*

So leave him all.—Well, my companion-  
friends,

If this but answer to my just belief,  
I'll well remember you.

[*Exeunt* LYSIMACHUS, HELICANUS, MA-  
RINA, and attendant Lady.

## SCENE II. *The same.*

*PERICLES on the Deck asleep; DIANA*  
*appearing to him as in a vision.*

*Dia.* My temple stands in Ephesus; hide  
thee hither,  
And do upon mine altar sacrifice.  
There, when my maiden priests are met to-  
gether, Before the people all,  
Reveal how thou at sea didst lose thy wife:  
To mourn thy crosses, with thy daughter's call,  
And give them repetition to the life\*.  
Perform my bidding, or thou livest in woe:  
Do't, and be happy, by my silver bow.  
Awake, and tell thy dream.

[*DIANA disappears.*

*Per.* Celestial Dian, goddess argentine,†,  
I will obey thee!—Helicanus!

*Enter* LYSIMACHUS, HELICANUS, and  
MARINA.

*Hel.* Sir.

*Per.* My purpose was for Tharsus, there to  
The inhospitable Cleon; but I am [strike  
For other service first: toward Ephesus  
Turn our blown† sails; ere-soon§ I'll tell thee  
why.— [To HELICANUS.

Shall we refresh us, sir, upon your shore,  
And give you gold for such provision  
As our intents will need?

*Lys.* With all my heart, sir; and, when you  
I have another suit. [come ashore,

*Per.* You shall prevail,  
Were it to woo my daughter; for it seems  
You have been noble towards her.

*Lys.* Sir, lend your arm.

*Per.* Come, my Marina. [Exeunt,

*Enter* GOWER before the Temple of  
DIANA, at Ephesus.

*Gow.* Now our sands are almost run;  
More a little, and then done.

This, as my last boon, give me,  
(For such kindness must relieve me,)

That you aptly will suppose  
What pageantry, what feats, what shows,

What minstrelsy and pretty din  
The regent made in Mitylin,

To greet the king. So he has thrived,  
That he is promised to be wived

To fair Marina; but in no wise,  
Till he|| had done his sacrifice,

As Dian bade: whereto being bound,  
The interim, pray you, all confound¶.

In feather'd briefness sails are fill'd,  
And wishes fall out as they're will'd.

At Ephesus the temple see,  
Our king and all his company.

That he can hither come so soon,  
Is by your fancy's thankful boon. [Exit

SCENE III. *The Temple of DIANA at*  
*Ephesus: THAISA standing near the Al-*  
*tar as high Priestess; a number of Vir-*  
*gins on each side; CERIXON and other*  
*Inhabitants of Ephesus attending.*

*Enter* PERICLES with his Train; LYSI-

\* Repeat a lively narrative of your adventures.  
Swollen. § Soon. || i. e., Pericles.

† i. e., Regent of the silver moon.  
¶ Confound here signifies to consume

MACHUS, HELICANUS, MARINA, and a Lady.

*Per.* Hail Dian! to perform thy just command,

I here confess myself the king of Tyr.;

Who, frighted from my country, did wed

The fair Thaisa at Pentapolis.

At sea in childbed died she, but brought forth

A maid-child call'd Marina; who, O goddess,

Wears yet thy silver livery\*. She at Tharsus

Was nursed with Cleon, whom at fourteen years

He sought to murder: but her better stars

Brought her to Mitylene; against whose shore

Riding, her fortunes brought the maid aboard us, [she

Where, by her own most clear remembrance, Made known herself my daughter.

*Tha.* Voice and favour!—

You are—you are—O, royal Pericles!—

[*She faints.*]

*Per.* What means the woman? she dies!

*Cer.* Noble sir, [help, gentlemen!

If you have told Diana's altar true,

This is your wife.

*Per.* Reverend appearer, no;

I threw her o'erboard with these very arms.

*Cer.* Upon this coast, I warrant you.

*Per.* 'Tis most certain.

*Cer.* Look to the lady; O, she's but o'er-

Early one blustering morn this lady was [joy'd

Thrown on this shore. I oped the coffin, and

Found there rich jewels; recover'd her, and

placed her

Here in Diana's temple.

*Per.* May we see them?

*Cer.* Great sir, they shall be brought you to

my house,

Whither I invite you. Look! Thaisa is

Recover'd.

*Thai.* O, let me look!

If he be none of mine, my sanctity

Will to my sense † bend no licentious ear,

But curb it spite of seeing. O, my lord,

Are you not Pericles? Like him you speak,

Like him you are: Did you not name a tem-

A birth, and death? [pest,

*Per.* The voice of dead Thaisa!

*Thai.* That Thaisa am I, supposed dead

And drown'd.

*Per.* Immortal Dian!

*Thai.* Now I know you better.—

When we with tears parted Pentapolis,

The king, my father, gave you such a ring.

[*Shows a Ring.*]

*Per.* This, this! no more, ye gods! your

present kindness

Makes my past miseries sport. You shall do

well,

That on the touching of her lips I may

Melt and no more be seen. O come, be buried

A second time within these arms.

*Mar.* My heart

Leaps to be gone into my mother's bosom.

[*Kneels to THAISA.*]

*Per.* Look, who kneels here? Flesh of thy flesh, Thaisa;

Thy burden at the sea, and call'd Marina,

For she was yielded there.

*Thai.* Bless'd and mine own!

*Hel.* Hail, madam, and my queen!

*Thai.* I know you not.

*Per.* You have heard me say, when I did fly from Tyre,

I left behind an ancient substitute.

Can you remember what I call'd the man?

I have named him off.

*Thai.* 'Twas Helicanus then.

*Per.* Still confirmation:

Embrace him, dear Thaisa; this is he.

Now do I long to hear how you were found;

How possibly preserved: and whom to thank,

Besides the gods, for this great miracle.

*Thai.* Lord Cerimon, my lord; this man

Through whom the gods have shown their

power; that can

From first to last resolve you.

*Per.* Reverend sir,

The gods can have no mortal officer

More like a god than you. Will you deliver

How this dead queen re-lives?

*Cer.* I will, my lord.

Beseech you, first go with me to my house,

Where shall be shown you all was found with her;

How she came placed here within the temple;

No needful thing omitted.

*Per.* Pure Diana!

I bless thee for thy vision, and will offer,

My night oblations to thee. Thaisa, [ter,

This prince, the fair-betrothed of your daughter,

Shall marry her at Pentapolis. And now,

This ornament ‡ that makes me look so dismal,

Will I, my loved Marina, clip to form;

And what this fourteen years no razor touch'd,

To grace thy marriage-day I'll beautify.

*Thai.* Lord Cerimon hath letters of good

Sir, that my father's dead. [credit,

*Per.* Heavens make a star of him! Yet there, my queen,

We'll celebrate their nuptials, and ourselves

Will in that kingdom spend our following

days;

Our son and daughter shall in Tyrrus reign.

Lord Cerimon, we do our longing stay,

To hear the rest untold.—Sir, lead the way.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter GOWER.*

*Gow.* In Antioch †, and his daughter, you have heard

Of monstrous lust the due and just reward;

In Pericles, his queen and daughter, seen

(Although assail'd with fortune fierce and keen,)

i. e., Her white robe of innocence.

† Sensual passion.

‡ i. e., His beard.

§ i. e., The king of Antioch.



Virtue preserved from fell destruction's blast,  
Led on by heaven, and crown'd with joy  
at last.

In Helicanus may you well descry  
A figure of truth, of faith, of loyalty:  
In reverend Cerimon there well appears,  
The worth that learned charity aye\* wears.  
For wicked Cleon and his wife, when fame  
Had spread their cursed deed, and honour'd  
name

Of Pericles, to rage the city turn;  
That him and his they in his palace burn.  
The gods for murder seemed so content  
To punish them; although not done, but  
meant.  
So on your patience evermore attending,  
New joy wait on you! Here our play has  
ending.

[Exit GOWER.]

\* Ever.

That this tragedy has some merit, it were vain to deny; but that it is the entire composition of Shakspeare, is more than can be hastily granted. I shall not venture, with Dr. Farmer, to determine that the hand of our great poet is only visible in the last act, for I think it appears in several passages dispersed over each of these divisions. I find it difficult, however, to persuade myself that he was the original fabricator of the plot, or the author of every dialogue, chorus, &c.—STEEVENS.

The story is of great antiquity, and is related by various ancient authors in Latin, French, and English.

# KING LEAR.

## Persons represented.

LEAR, King of Britain.

King of France.

Duke of Burgundy.

Duke of Cornwall.

Duke of Albany.

Earl of Kent.

Earl of Gloster.

EDGAR, son to Gloster.

EDMUND, bastard son to Gloster.

CURAN, a courtier.

Old Man, tenant to Gloster.

Physician.

Fool.

OSWALD, steward to Goneril.

An Officer, employed by Edmund.

Gentleman, attendant on Cordelia.

A Herald.

Servants to Cornwall.

GONERIL, }

REGAN, }

CORDELIA, }

daughters to Lear.

*Knights attending on the King, Officers, Messengers, Soldiers, and Attendants.*

*Scene, Britain.*

## ACT I.

SCENE I. *A Room of State in King Lear's Palace.*

*Enter KENT, GLOSTER, and EDMUND.*

*Kent.* I thought, the king had more affected the duke of Albany, than Cornwall.

*Glo.* It did always seem so to us : but now, in the division of the kingdom, it appears not which of the dukes he values most ; for equalities are so weighed, that curiosity \* in neither can make choice of either's society †.

*Kent.* Is not this your son, my lord ?

*Glo.* His breeding, sir, hath been at my charge : I have so often blushed to acknowledge him, that now I am brazed to it.

*Kent.* I cannot conceive you.

*Glo.* Sir, this young fellow's mother could : whereupon she grew round-wombed ; and had, indeed, sir, a son for her cradle, ere she had a husband for her bed. Do you smell a fault ?

*Kent.* I cannot wish the fault undone, the issue of it being so proper ‡.

*Glo.* But I have, sir, a son by order of law, some year elder than this, who yet is no dearer in my account : though this knave came somewhat saucily into the world before he was sent for, yet was his mother fair ; there was good sport at his making, and the whoreson must be acknowledged.—Do you know this noble gentleman, Edmund ?

*Edm.* No, my lord.

*Glo.* My lord of Kent : remember him hereafter as my honourable friend.

*Edm.* My services to your lordship.

*Kent.* I must love you, and sue to know you better.

*Edm.* Sir, I shall study deserving.

*Glo.* He hath been out nine years, and away he shall again :—The king is coming.

*[Trumpets sound within.]*

*Enter LEAR, CORNWALL, ALBANY, GONERIL, REGAN, CORDELIA, & Attendants.*

*Lear.* Attend the lords of France and Burgundy.

*Glo.* I shall, my liege.

*[Exit GLOSTER and EDMUND.]*

*Lear.* Mean-time we shall express our darker § purpose.

Give me the map there.—Know, that we have In three, our kingdom : and 'tis our fast intent To shake all cares and business from our age, Conferring them on younger strengths, while we Unburden'd crawl toward death.—Our son of Cornwall,

And you, our no less loving son of Albany, We have this hour a constant will to publish Our daughters' several dowers, that future strife May be prevented now. The princes, France and Burgundy,

Great rivals in our youngest daughter's love, Long in our court have made their amorous sojourn,

And here are to be answer'd.—Tell me, my daughters,

(Since now we will divest us, both of rule, Interest of territory, cares of state,)

Which of you, shall we say, doth love us most ? That we our largest bounty may extend

Where merit doth most challenge it.—Goneril, Our eldest-born, speak first.

*Gon.* Sir, I

Do love you more than words can wield the Dearer than eye-sight, space, and liberty ; Beyond what can be valued, rich or rare ; No less than life, with grace, health, beauty,

honour : As much as child e'er loved, or father found. A love that makes breath poor, and speech

unable ; Beyond all manner of so much I love you.

\* Most scrupulous nicety.

† More secret.

‡ Part or division.

§ Handsome.

|| Determined resolution.

*Cor.* What shall Cordelia do? Love, and be silent. [*Aside.*]

*Lear.* Of all these bounds, even from this lute to this, [*rich'd,*]

With shadowy forests and with champains\* With plenteous rivers and wide skirted meads. We make thee lady: to thine and Albany's issue Be this perpetual.—What says our second daughter,

Our dearest Regan, wife to Cornwall? Speak.

*Reg.* I am made of that self metal as my sister, And prize me at her worth. In my true heart I find, she names my very deed of love; Only she comes too short,—that I profess Myself an enemy to all other joys, [sesses: Which the most precious square† of sense possess. And find, I am alone teli itate‡ In your dear highness' love.

*Cor.* Then poor Cordelia! [*Aside.* And yet not so; since, I am sure, my love's More richer than my tongue.

*Lear.* To thee, and thine, hereditary ever, Remain this ample third of our fair kingdom; No less in space, validity§, and pleasure, Than that confirm'd on Goneril.—Now, on joy, [*love*]

Although the last, not least; to whose young The vines of France, and milk of Burgundy. Strive to be interest'd: what can you say to draw A third more opulent than your sisters? Speak.

*Cor.* Nothing, my lord.

*Lear.* Nothing?

*Cor.* Nothing. [*again.*]

*Lear.* Nothing can come of nothing: speak

*Cor.* Unhappy that I am, I cannot heave My heart into my mouth: I love your majesty According to my bond; nor more, nor less.

*Lear.* How, how, Cordelia? mend your love! Let it may mar your fortunes. [speech a little,

*Cor.* Good my lord, You have begot me, bred me, loved me: I Return those duties back as are right fit, Obey you, love you, and most honour you. Why have my sisters husbands, if they say, They love you all? Haply||, when I shall wed, That lord, whose hand must take my plight, shall carry [*duty:*

Half my love with him, half my care, and Sure, I shall never marry like my sisters, To love my father all.

*Lear.* But goes this with thy heart?

*Cor.* Ay, good my lord.

*Lear.* So young, and so untender?

*Cor.* So young, my lord, and true. [*dower:*

*Lear.* Let it be so,—Thy truth then be thy For, by the sacred radiance of the sun; The mysteries of Hecate, and the night; By all the operations of the orbs, From whom we do exist, and cease to be; Here I disclaim all my paternal care, Propinquity¶ and property of blood, And as a stranger to my heart and me Hold thee, from this\*\*, for ever. The ear. barons Seythian,

Or he that makes his generation†† messes To gorge his appetite, shall to my bosom Be as well neighbour'd, pitied, and relieved, As thou my sometime daughter.

*Kent.* Good my liege,—

*Lear.* Peace, Kent!

Come not between the dragon and his wrath: I loved her most, and thought to set my rest On her kind nursery.—Hence, and avoid my sight!— [*To CORDELIA.*

So be my grave my peace, as here I give Her father's heart from her!—Call France;— Who stirs?

Call Burgundy.—Cornwall, and Albany, With my two daughters' dowers digest this third:

Let pride, which she calls plainness, marry her. I do invest you jointly with my power, Pre-eminence, and all the large effects [course, That troop with majesty.—Ourself, by monthly With reservation of an hundred knights, By you to be sustain'd, shall our abode [tain Make with you by due turns. Only we still re- The name, and all the additions‡‡ to a king; The sway, Revenue, execution of the rest§§, Beloved sons, be yours: which to confirm, This coronet part between you.

[*Giving the Crown.*

*Kent.* Royal Lear,

Whom I have ever honour'd as my king, Loved as my father, as my master follow'd, As my great patron thought on in my prayers,—

*Lear.* The bow is bent and drawn, make from the shaft. [*fade*

*Kent.* Let it fall rather, though the fork in- The region of my heart: be Kent unmannerly, When Lear is mad. What wouldst thou do, old man? [*speak,*

Think'st thou, that duty shall have dread to When power to flattery bows? To plainness honour's bound, [*doom;* When majesty stoops to folly. Reverse thy And, in thy best consideration, check This hideous rashness: answer my life my judgment.

Thy youngest daughter does not love thee least; Nor are those empty hearted, whose low sound Reverbs|| no hollowness.

*Lear.* Kent, on thy life, no more.

*ent.* My life I never held but as a pawn To wage against thine enemies; nor fear to Thy safety being the motive. [*lose it,*

*Lear.* Out of my sight!

*Kent.* See better, Lear, and let me still re- The true blank¶¶ of thine eye. [*main*

*Lear.* Now, by Apollo,—

*Kent.* Now, by Apollo, king

Thou swear'st thy gods in vain.

*Lear.* O, vassal! miscreant!

[*Laying his Hand on his Sword.*

*Att. Cora.* Dear sir, forbear.

*Kent.* Do;

Kill thy physician, and the fee bestow

\* Open plains. † Comprehension. ‡ Made happy. § Value. || Perhaps. ¶ Kindred. \*\* From this time. †† His children. ‡‡ Titles. §§ All other subjects. || Reverberates. ¶¶ The mark to shoot at.



Upon the foul disease. Revoke thy gift;  
Or, whilst I can vent clamour from my throat,  
I'll tell thee, thou dost evil.

*Lear.* Hear me, recreant!  
On thine allegiance hear me!—

Since thou hast sought to make us break our  
vow, [pride,  
(Which we durst never yet,) and, with strain'd  
To come betwixt our sentence and our power;  
(Which nor our nature nor our place can bear,)  
Our potency make good, take thy reward.  
Five days we do allot thee, for provision  
To shield thee from diseases of the world;  
And, on the sixth, to turn thy hated back  
Upon our kingdom: if, on the tenth day fol-  
lowing,

Thy banish'd trunk be found in our dominions,  
The moment is thy death: Away! By Jupiter,  
This shall not be revoked. [wilt appear,

*Kent.* Fare thee well, king: since thus thou  
Freedom lives hence, and banishment is here.—  
The gods to their dear shelter take thee, maid,

[*To CORDELIA.*  
That justly think'st, and hast most rightly said!—  
And your large speeches may your deeds ap-  
prove, [*To REGAN and GONERIL.*  
That good effects may spring from words of  
love.

Thus Kent, O princes, bids you all adieu;  
He'll shape his old course\* in a country new.  
[*Exit.*

*Re-enter GLOSTER; with FRANCE, BUR-  
GUNDY, and Attendants.*

*Glo.* Here's France and Burgundy, my no-  
*Lear.* My lord of Burgundy, [ble lord.  
We first address towards you, who with this  
king [least,

Hath rival'd for our daughter; What, in the  
Will you require in present dower with her,  
Or cease your quest of love†?

*Bur.* Most royal majesty,  
I crave no more than hath your highness  
Nor will you tender less. [offer'd,

*Lear.* Right noble Burgundy,  
When she was dear to us, we did hold her so;  
But now her price is fall'n: Sir, there she stands;  
If aught within that little, seeming† substance,  
Or all of it, with our displeasure pieced,  
And nothing more, may fitly like your grace,  
She's there, and she is yours.

*Bur.* I know no answer.

*Lear.* Sir,  
Will you, with those infirmities she owes‡,  
Unfriended, new-adapted to our hate,  
Dower'd with our curse, and stranger'd with  
Take her, or leave her? [our oath,

*Bur.* Pardon me, royal sir;  
Election makes not up|| on such conditions.

*Lear.* Then, leave her, sir; for, by the  
power that made me,

I tell you all her wealth.—For you, great king,  
[*To FRANCE.*

I would not from your love make such a stray,

To match you where I hate; therefore beseech  
you

To avert‡ your liking a more worthier way,  
Than on a wretch whom nature is ashamed  
Almost to acknowledge hers.

*France.* This is most strange  
That she, that even but now was your best object,  
The argument of your praise, balm of your age,  
Most best, most dearest, should in this trice  
of time

Commit a thing so monstrous, to dismantle  
So many folds of favour! Sure, her offence  
Must be of such unnatural degree, [tion  
That monsters it, or your fore-vouch'd\*\* affec-  
Fall into taint††: which to believe of her,  
Must be a faith, that reason without miracle  
Could never plant in me.

*Cor.* I yet beseech your majesty,  
(If for‡ I want that glib and oily art, [tend,  
To speak and purpose not; since what I well in-  
I'll do before I speak,) that you make known  
It is no vicious blot, murder, or foulness,  
No unchaste action, or dishonour'd step,  
That hath deprived me of your grace and favour;  
But even for want of that, for which I am richer;  
A still-soliciting eye, and such a tongue [it,  
That I am glad I have not, though not to have  
Hath lost me in your liking.

*Lear.* Better thou [me better.  
Hadst not been born, than not to have pleased  
*France.* Is it but this? a tardiness in nature,  
Which often leaves the history unspoke,  
That it intends to do?—My lord of Burgundy,  
What say you to the lady? Love is not love,  
When it is mingled with respects, that stand  
Aloof from the entire point§§. Will you  
She is herself a dowry. [have her?

*Bur.* Royal Lear,  
Give but that portion which yourself proposed,  
And here I take Cordelia by the hand,  
Duchess of Burgundy.

*Lear.* Nothing: I have sworn; I am firm.

*Bur.* I am sorry then, you have so lost a  
That you must lose a husband. [father,

*Cor.* Peace be with Burgundy!  
Since that respects of fortune are his love,  
I shall not be his wife. [being poor;

*France.* Fairest Cordelia, that art most rich,  
Most choice, forsaken; and most loved, despis'd!  
Thee and thy virtues here I seize upon:  
Be it lawful, I take up what's cast away.  
Gods! 'tis strange, that from their cold'st  
neglect

My love should kindle to inflamed respect.—  
Thy dowless daughter, king, thrown to my  
chance,

Is queen of us, of ours, and our fair France  
Not all the dukes of wat'rish Burgundy  
Shall buy this unprized precious maid of me.—  
Bid them farewell, Cordelia, though unkind:  
Thou lovest here, a better where||| to find.

*Lear.* Thou hast her, France: let her be  
thine; for we

\* Follow his old mode of life.

† Amorous expedition.

‡ Specious.

§ Owns, is possessed of.

|| Concludes not.

¶ Turn.

\*\* Former declaration of..

†† Reproach or censure.

‡‡ Because.

§§

“Who seeks for aught in love but love alone!”

||| Place.

Have no such daughter, nor shall ever see  
That face of her's again :—Therefore be gone,  
Without our grace, our love, our benison\*.—  
Come, noble Burgundy.

[*Flourish. Exeunt LEAR, BURGUNDY,  
CORNWALL, ALBANY, GLOSTER,  
and Attendants.*]

*France.* Bid farewell to your sisters. [eyes  
*Cor.* The jewels of our father, with wash'd  
Cordelia leaves you : I know you what you are ;  
And, like a sister, am most loath to call [father :  
Your faults, as they are named. Use well our  
To your professed bosoms I commit him :  
But yet, alas ! stood I within his grace,  
I would prefer him to a better place.  
So farewell to you both.

*Gon.* Prescribe not us our duties.

*Reg.* Let your study  
Be, to content your lord ; who hath received you  
At fortune's alms. You have obediences scant'd,  
And well are worth the want that you have  
wanted. [ning hides ;

*Cor.* Time shall unfold what plaited† cun-  
Who cover faults, at last shame them derides.  
Well may you prosper!

*France.* Come, my fair Cordelia.

[*Exeunt FRANCE and CORDELIA.*]

*Gon.* Sister, it is not a little I have to say,  
of what most nearly appertains to us both.  
I think, our father will hence to-night.

*Reg.* That's most certain, and with you ;  
next month with us.

*Gon.* You see how full of changes his age  
is ; the observation we have made of it hath  
not been little : he always loved our sister  
most ; and with what poor judgment he hath  
now cast her off, appears too grossly.

*Reg.* 'Tis the infirmity of his age ; yet he  
hath ever but slenderly known himself.

*Gon.* The best and soundest of his time hath  
been but rash ; then must we look to receive  
from his age, not alone the imperfections of  
long-ingrafted condition‡, but therewithal, the  
unruly waywardness that infirm and choleric  
years bring with them.

*Reg.* Such unconstant starts are we like to  
have from him, as this of Kent's banishment.

*Gon.* There is further compliment of leave-  
taking between France and him. Pray you,  
let us hit together : If our father carry autho-  
rity with such dispositions as he bears, this  
last surrender of his will but offend us.

*Reg.* We shall further think of it.

*Gon.* We must do something, and i'the  
heat§. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. A Hall in the Earl of Glos-  
ter's Castle.

*Enter EDMUND, with a Letter.*

*Edm.* Thou, nature, art my goddess ; to thy law  
My services are bound : Wherefore should I  
Stand in the plague¶ of custom ; and permit  
The curiosity¶ of nations to deprive me,

For that I am some twelve or fourteen moon-  
shines [base ?

Lag of a brother ? Why bastard ? wherefore  
When my dimensions are as well compact,  
My mind as generous, and my shape as true,  
As honest madam's issue ? Why brand they us  
With base ? with baseness ? bastardy ? base, base ?  
Who, in the lusty stealth of nature, take  
More composition and fierce quality,  
Than doth, within a dull, stale, tired bed,  
Go to the creating a whole tribe of fops,  
Got 'tween asleep and wake ?—Well then,  
Legitimate Edgar, I must have your land :  
Our father's love is to the bastard Edmund,  
As to the legitimate : Fine word,—legitimate !  
Well, my legitimate, if this letter speed,  
And my invention thrive, Edmund the base  
Shall top the legitimate. I grow ; I prosper :—  
Now, gods, stand up for bastards!

*Enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Kent banish'd thus ! And France in  
choler parted ! [power !

And the king gone to-night ! subscribed\*\* his  
Confined to exhibition†† ! All this done

Upon the gad‡‡ !—Edmund ! How now ? what  
*Edm.* So please your lordship, none. [news ?

[*Putting up the Letter.*]

*Glo.* Why so earnestly seek you to put up  
*Edm.* I know no news, my lord. [that letter ?

*Glo.* What paper were you reading ?

*Edm.* Nothing, my lord.

*Glo.* No ? What needed then that terrible  
despatch of it into your pocket ? the quality  
of nothing hath not such need to hide itself.  
Let's see : Come, if it be nothing, I shall not  
need spectacles.

*Edm.* I beseech you, sir, pardon me : it is  
a letter from my brother, that I have not all  
o'er-read ; for so much as I have perused, I  
find it not fit for your over-looking.

*Glo.* Give me the letter, sir.

*Edm.* I shall offend, either to detain or give  
it. The contents, as in part I understand  
them, are to blame.

*Glo.* Let's see, let's see.

*Edm.* I hope, for my brother's justification,  
he wrote this but as an essay§§ or taste of my  
virtue.

*Glo.* [Reads.] *This policy, and reverence  
of age, makes the world bitter to the best of  
our times ; keeps our fortunes from us,  
till our oldness cannot relish them. I be-  
gin to find an idle and fond||| bondage in  
the oppression of aged tyranny ; who sways,  
not as it hath power, but as it is suffered.  
Come to me, that of this I may speak more.  
If our father would sleep till I waked  
him, you should enjoy half his revenue for  
ever, and live the beloved of your brother,  
Edgar.—Humph—Conspiracy !—Sleep till I  
waked him—you should enjoy half his re-  
venue.—My son Edgar ! Had he a hand to  
write this ? a heart and brain to breed it in ?—  
When came this to you ? Who brought it ?*

\* Blessing. † Folded, doubled. ‡ Qualities of mind.

¶ The injustice. ¶ The nicety of civil institution.

†† Allowance.

‡‡ Suddenly.

§§ Trial.

§ Strike while the iron's hot.

\*\* Yielded, surrendered.

||| Weak and foolish.

*Edm.* It was not brought me, my lord, there's the cunning of it; I found it thrown in at the casement of my closet.

*Glo.* You know the character to be your brother's?

*Edm.* If the matter were good, my lord, I arst swear it were his; but, in respect of that, would fain think it were not.

*Glo.* It is his.

*Edm.* It is his hand, my lord; but, I hope, is heart is not in the contents.

*Glo.* Hath he never heretofore sounded you in this business?

*Edm.* Never, my lord: But I have often heard him maintain it to be fit, that, sons at perfect age, and fathers declining, the father should be as ward to the son, and the son manage his revenue.

*Glo.* O villain, villain!—His very opinion in the letter!—Abhorred villain! Unnatural, detested, brutish villain! worse than brutish!—Go, sirrah, seek him; I'll apprehend him:—Abominable villain!—Where is he?

*Edm.* I do not well know, my lord. If it shall please you to suspend your indignation against my brother, till you can derive from him better testimony of his intent, you shall run a certain course; where\*, if you violently proceed against him, mistaking his purpose, it would make a great gap in your own honour, and shake in pieces the heart of his obedience. I dare pawn down my life for him, that he hath writ this to feel my affection to your honour†, and to no other pretence‡ of danger.

*Glo.* Think you so?

*Edm.* If your honour judge it meet, I will place you where you shall hear us confer of this, and by an auricular assurance have your satisfaction; and that without any further delay than this very evening.

*Glo.* He cannot be such a monster.

*Edm.* Nor is not, sure.

*Glo.* To his father, that so tenderly and entirely loves him.—Heaven and earth!—Edmund, seek him out; wind me into him, I pray you: frame the business after your own wisdom; I would unstate myself, to be in a due resolution§.

*Edm.* I will seek him, sir, presently; convey|| the business as I shall find means, and acquaint you withal.

*Glo.* These late eclipses in the sun and moon portend no good to us: Though the wisdom of nature can reason it thus and thus, yet nature finds itself scourged by the sequent¶ effects: love cools, friendship falls off, brothers divide: in cities, mutinies; in countries, discord; in palaces, treason; and the bond cracked between son and father. This villain of mine comes under the prediction; there's son against father: the king falls from bias of nature; there's father against child. We have seen the best of our time: Machinations, hol-

lowness, treachery, and all ruinous disorders, follow us disquietly to our graves!—Find out this villain, Edmund, it shall lose thee nothing; do it carefully:—And the noble and true-hearted Kent banished! his offence, honesty!—Strange! strange!

[Exit.]

*Edm.* This is the excellent foppery of the world! that, when we are sick in fortune, (often the surfeit of our own behaviour,) we make guilty of our disasters, the sun, the moon, and the stars: as if we were villains by necessity: fools, by heavenly compulsion; knaves, thieves, and treachers\*\*, by spherical predominance; drunkards, liars, and adulterers, by an enforced obedience of planetary influence; and all that we are evil in, by a divine thrusting on: An admirable evasion of whoremaster man, to lay his goatish disposition to the charge of a star! My father compounded with my mother under the dragon's tail; and my nativity was under *ursa major*††; so that it follows, I am rough and lecherous.—Tut, I should have been that I am, had the maidenliest star in the firmament twinkled on my bastardizing. Edgar—

Enter EDGAR.

and pat he comes, like the catastrophe of the old comedy: My cue is villainous melancholy, with a sigh like Tom o'Bedlam.—O, these eclipses do portend these divisions! fa, sol, la, mi‡.

*Edg.* How now, brother Edmund? What serious contemplation are you in?

*Edm.* I am thinking, brother, of a prediction I read this other day, what should follow these eclipses.

*Edg.* Do you busy yourself with that?

*Edm.* I promise you, the effects he writes of, succeed unhappily; as of unnaturalness between the child and the parent; death, dearth, dissolutions of ancient amities; divisions in state, menaces and maledictions against king and nobles; needless diffidences, banishment of friends, dissipation of cohorts§§, nuptial breaches, and I know not what.

*Edg.* How long have you been a sectary astronomical?

*Edm.* Come, come; when saw you my father last?

*Edg.* Why, the night gone by.

*Edm.* Spake you with him?

*Edg.* Ay, two hours together.

*Edm.* Parted you in good terms? Found you no displeasure in him, by word or countenance?

*Edg.* None at all.

*Edm.* Bethink yourself, wherein you may have offended him: and at my entrety, forbear his presence, till some little time hath qualified the heat of his displeasure; which at this instant so rageth in him, that with the mischief of your person it would scarcely ally.

*Edg.* Some villain hath done me wrong.

\* Whereas.

† The usual address to a lord.

‡ Design.

Give all that I am possessed of, to be certain of the truth.

|| Manage.

¶ Following.

\*\* Traitors. †† Great bear, the constellation so named.

‡‡ These sounds are unnatural

and offensive in music.

§§ For cohorts some editors read courts.



*Edm.* That's my fear. I pray you, have a continent\* forbearance, till the speed of his rage goes slower; and, as I say, retire with me to my lodging, from whence I will fitly bring you to hear my lord speak: Pray you, go; there's my key:—If you do stir abroad, go armed.

*Edg.* Armed, brother?

*Edm.* Brother, I advise you to the best: go armed; I am no honest man, if there be any good meaning towards you: I have told you what I have seen and heard, but faintly; nothing like the image and horror of it: Pray you, away.

*Edg.* Shall I hear from you anon?

*Edm.* I do serve you in this business.—

[*Exit* EDGAR.]

A credulous father, and a brother noble,  
Whose nature is so far from doing harmis,  
That he suspects none; on whose foolish honesty  
My practices ride easy!—I see the business.—  
Let me, if not by birth, have lands by wit:  
All with me's meet, that I can fashion fit. [*Exit*.]

SCENE III. *A Room in the Duke of Albany's Palace.*

*Enter* GONERIL and Steward.

*Gon.* Did my father strike my gentleman

*Stew.* Ay, madam. [for chiding of his fool?]

*Gon.* By day and night he wrongs me; every  
He flashes into one gross crime or other, [hour  
That sets us all at odds: I'll not endure it:

His knights grow riotous, and himself up-  
braids us [ing,

On every trifle:—When he returns from hunt-  
I will not speak with him; say, I am sick:

If you come slack of former services,  
You shall do well; the fault of it I'll answer.

*Stew.* He's coming, madam; I hear him.

[*Horns within.*]

*Gon.* Put on what weary negligence you  
please, [question:]

You and your fellows; I'd have it come to  
If he dislike it, let him to my sister,

Whose mind and mine, I know, in that are one,  
Not to be over-ruled. Idle old man,

That still would manage those authorities,  
That he hath given away!—Now, by my life,

Old fools are babes again; and must be used  
With checks, as flatteries,—when they are seen

Remember what I have said. [abused.]

*Stew.* Very well, madam.

*Gon.* And let his knights have colder looks  
among you; [fellows so:]

What grows of it, no matter; advise your  
would breed from hence occasions, and I

shall, [sister]

That I may speak:—I'll write straight to my  
To hold my very course:—Prepare for dinner.

[*Exit*.]

SCENE IV. *A Hall in the same.*

*Enter* KENT, disguised.

*Kent.* If but as well I other accents borrow,  
That can my speech diffuse, my good intent

May carry through itself to that full issue  
For which I razed† my likeness.—Now, be-  
nish'd Kent, [condemn'd,  
If thou canst serve where thou dost stand  
(So may it come!) thy master, whom thou  
Shall find thee full of labours. [lovest,  
*Horns within.* *Enter* LEAR, Knights, and  
Attendants.

*Lear.* Let me not stay a jot for dinner;  
go, get it ready. [*Exit* an Attendant.] How  
now, what art thou?

*Kent.* A man, sir.

*Lear.* What dost thou profess? What  
wouldst thou with us?

*Kent.* I do profess to be no less than I  
seem; to serve him truly, that will put me in  
trust; to love him that is honest; to converse‡  
with him that is wise, and says little; to fear  
judgment; to fight, when I cannot choose;  
and to eat no fish.

*Lear.* What art thou?

*Kent.* A very honest-hearted fellow, and  
as poor as the king.

*Lear.* If thou be as poor for a subject, as  
he is for a king, thou art poor enough. What  
wouldst thou?

*Kent.* Service.

*Lear.* Who wouldst thou serve?

*Kent.* You.

*Lear.* Dost thou know me, fellow?

*Kent.* No, sir; but you have that in your  
countenance, which I would fain call master.

*Lear.* What's that?

*Kent.* Authority.

*Lear.* What services canst thou do?

*Kent.* I can keep honest counsel, ride, run,  
mar a curious tale in telling it, and deliver a  
plain message bluntly: that which ordinary  
men are fit for, I am qualified in; and the  
best of me is diligence.

*Lear.* How old art thou?

*Kent.* Not so young, sir, to love a woman  
for singing; nor so old, to dote on her for  
anything: I have years on my back, forty-eight.

*Lear.* Follow me; thou shalt serve me; if  
I like thee no worse after dinner, I will not  
part from thee yet.—Dinner, ho, dinner!—  
Where's my knave? my fool? Go you, and  
call my fool hither:

*Enter* Steward.

You, you, sirrah, where's my daughter?  
*Stew.* So please you,— [Exit.]

*Lear.* What says the fellow there? Call  
the clotpoll back.—Where's my fool, ho?—I  
think the world's asleep.—How now? where's  
that mongrel?

*Knight.* He says, my lord, your daughter  
is not well.

*Lear.* Why came not the slave back to me,  
when I called him?

*Knight.* Sir, he answered me in the round-  
est manner, he would not.

*Lear.* He would not!

*Knight.* My lord, I know not what the  
matter is; but to my judgment, your highness  
is not entertained with that ceremonious attec-

\* Temperate. † Disorder, disguise.

‡ Effaced. § Keep company.

tion as you were wont; there's a great abatement of kindness appears, as well in the general dependants, as in the duke himself also, and your daughter.

*Lear.* Ha! sayst thou so?

*Knight.* I beseech you, pardon me, my lord, if I be mistaken; for my duty cannot be silent, when I think your highness is wronged.

*Lear.* Thou but remember'st me of mine own conception; I have perceived a most faint neglect of late; which I have rather blamed as mine own jealous curiosity\*, than as a very pretence† and purpose of unkindness: I will look further into't.—But where's my fool? I have not seen him this two days.

*Knight.* Since my young lady's going into France, sir, the fool hath much pined away.

*Lear.* No more of that; I have noted it well.—Go you, and tell my daughter I would speak with her.—Go you, call hither my fool.—

*Re-enter Steward.*

O, you sir, you sir, come you hither: Who am I, sir?

*Stew.* My lady's father.

*Lear.* My lady's father! my lord's knave: you whoreson dog; you slave! you cur!

*Stew.* I am none of this, my lord; I beseech you, pardon me.

*Lear.* Do you bandy looks with me, you rascal?

[*Striking him.*]

*Stew.* I'll not be struck, my lord.

*Kent.* Nor tripped neither; you base football player.

[*Tripping up his heels.*]

*Lear.* I thank thee, fellow; thou servest me, and I'll love thee.

*Kent.* Come, sir, arise, away; I'll teach you differences; away, away: If you will measure your lubber's length again, tarry: But away; go to; Have you wisdom? so.

[*Pushes the Steward out.*]

*Lear.* Now, my friendly knave, I thank thee: there's earnest of thy service.

[*Giving KENT money.*]

*Enter Fool.*

*Fool.* Let me hire him too;—Here's my coxcomb.

[*Giving KENT his Cap.*]

*Lear.* How now, my pretty knave? how dost thou?

*Fool.* Sirrah, you were best take my coxcomb.

*Kent.* Why, fool?

*Fool.* Why? For taking one's part that is out of favour: Nay, an thou canst not smile as the wind sits, thou'lt catch cold shortly: There, take my coxcomb: Why, this fellow has banished two of his daughters, and did the third a blessing against his will; if thou follow him, thou must needs wear my coxcomb.—How now, nuncle? 'Would I had two coxcombs, and two daughters!

*Lear.* Why, my boy?

*Fool.* If I gave them all my living†, I'd keep my coxcombs myself: There's mine; beg another of thy daughters.

*Lear.* Take heed, sirrah; the whip.

*Fool.* Truth's a dog that must to kennel? he must be whipped out, when Lady, the brachy, may stand by the fire, and stink.

*Lear.* A pestilent gall to me!

*Fool.* Sirrah, I'll teach thee a speech.

*Lear.* Do.

*Fool.* Mark it, nuncle:

Have more than thou showest,  
Speak less than thou knowest,  
Lend less than thou owest||,  
Ride more than thou goest,  
Learn more than thou trowest ¶,  
Set less than thou throwest;  
Leave thy drink and thy whore,  
And keep in-a-door,  
And thou shalt have more  
Than two tens to a score.

*Lear.* This is nothing, fool.

*Fool.* Then 'tis like the breath of an unfeed lawyer: you gave me nothing for't: Can you make no use of nothing, nuncle?

*Lear.* Why, no, boy; nothing can be made out of nothing.

*Fool.* Pry'thee, tell him, so much the rent of his land comes to; he will not believe a fool.

[*To KENT.*]

*Lear.* A bitter fool!

*Fool.* Dost thou know the difference, my boy, between a bitter fool and a sweet fool?

*Lear.* No, lad; teach me.

*Fool.* That lord, that counsell'd thee

To give away thy land,

Come, place him here by me,—

Or do thou for him stand:

The sweet and bitter fool

Will presently appear;

The one in motley here,

The other found out there.

*Lear.* Dost thou call me fool, boy?

*Fool.* All thy other titles thou hast given away; that thou wast born with.

*Kent.* This is not altogether fool, my lord.

*Fool.* No, 'faith, lords and great men will not let me; if I had a monopoly out, they would have part on't: and ladies too, they will not let me have all fool to myself; they'll be snatching.—Give me an egg, nuncle, and I'll give thee two crowns.

*Lear.* What two crowns shall they be?

*Fool.* Why, after I have cut the egg i' the middle, and eat up the meat, the two crowns of the egg. When thou clovest thy crown i' the middle, and gavest away both parts, thou borest thine ass on thy back over the dirt: Thou hadst little wit in thy bald crown, when thou gavest thy golden one away. If I speak like myself in this, let him be whipp'd that first finds it so.

*Fools had ne'er less grace\*\* in a year; [Sings.*

*For wise men are grown foolish;*

*And know not how their wits to wear,*

*Their manners are so apish.*

*Lear.* When were you wont to be so full of songs, sirrah?

*Fool.* I have used it, nuncle, ever since thou

Punctilious jealousy. † Design

|| Ownest, possessest.

‡ Estate or property. § Bitch hound.

¶ Believeest.

\*\* Favour.

maiest thy daughters thy mother: for when thou gavest them the rod, and put'st down thine own breeches,

*Then they for sudden joy did weep, [Sings.*

*And I for sorrow sung,*

*That such a king should play bo-peep,*

*And go the fools among.*

Pry'thee, nuncle, keep a school-master that can teach thy fool to lie; I would fain learn to lie.

*Lear.* If you lie, sirrah, we'll have you whipped.

*Fool.* I marvel, what kin thou and thy daughters are: they'll have me whipped for speaking true, thou'll have me whipped for lying; and, sometimes, I am whipped for holding my peace. I had rather be any kind of thing, than a fool: and yet I would not be thee, nuncle; thou hast pared thy wit o' both sides, and left nothing in the middle: Here comes one o' the parings.

*Enter GONERIL.*

*Lear.* How now, daughter! what makes that frontlet\* on? Methinks, you are too much of late† the frown.

*Fool.* Thou wast a pretty fellow, when thou hadst no need to care for her frowning; now thou art an O† without a figure: I am better than thou art now; I am a fool, thou art nothing. Yes, forsooth, I will hold my tongue; so your face [To GON.] bids me, though you say nothing. Mum, mum,

He that keeps nor crust nor crum,

Weary of all, shall want some.—

That's a shealed peascod‡. [Pointing to LEAR.]

*Gon.* Not only, sir, this your all-licensed fool, But other of your insolent retinue

Do hourly carp and quarrel; breaking forth In rank and not-to-be-endured riots. Sir, I had thought, by making this well known unto you,

[fearful,  
To have found a safe redress; but now grow By what yourself too late have spoke and done, That you protect this course, and put it on By your allowance§; which if you should, the fault

[sleep;  
Would not scape censure, nor the redresses Which in the tender of a wholesome weal||, Might in their working do you that offence, Which else were shame, that then necessity Will call discreet proceeding.

*Fool.* For you trow, nuncle,

The hedge sparrow fed the cuckoo so long, That it had its head bit off by its young.

So, out went the candle, and we were left darkling.

*Lear.* Are you our daughter?

*Gon.* Come, sir, I would, you would make use of that good wisdom whereof I know you are fraught¶; and put away these dispositions, which of late transform you from what you rightly are.

*Fool.* May not an ass know when the cart draws the horse?—Whoop, Jug! I love thee.

*Lear.* Does any here know me?—Why this

is not Lear: does Lear walk thus? speak thus? Where are his eyes? Either his notion weakens, or his discernings are lethargied.—Sleeping or waking!—Ha! sure 'tis not so.—Who is it that can tell me who I am?—Lear's shadow? I would learn that; for by the marks of sovereignty, knowledge, and reason, I should be false persuaded I had daughters.—

*Fool.* Which they will make an obedient father.

*Lear.* Your name, fair gentlewoman?

*Gon.* Come, sir;

This admiration is much o' the favour\*\* Of other your new pranks. I do beseech you To understand my purposes aright:

As you are old and reverend, you should be wise: squires;

Here do you keep a hundred knights and Men so disorder'd, so debauch'd, and bold, That this our court, infected with their manners, Shows like a riotous inn: epicurism and lust Make it more like a tavern or a brothel,

Than a graced palace. The shame itself doth For instant remedy: Be then desired [speak By her, that else will take the thing she begs, A little to disquantity your train;

And the remainder, that shall still depend††, To be such men as may besort your age, And know themselves and you.

*Lear.* Darkness and devils!—

Saddle my horses; call my train together.— Degenerate bastard! I'll not trouble thee;

Yet have I left a daughter. [order'd rabble

*Gon.* You strike my people; and your dislike Make servants of their betters.

*Enter ALBANY.*

*Lear.* Woe, that too late repents,—O, sir, are you come? [pare my horses.

Is it your will? [To ALB.] Speak, sir.—Pre- Ingratitude! thou marble-hearted fiend, More hideous, when thou show'st thee in a Than the sea-monster! [child,

*Alb.* Pray, sir, be patient.

*Lear.* Detested kite! thou liest: [To GON. My train are men of choice and rarest parts, That all particulars of duty know:

And in the most exact regard support [faint, The worship of their name.—O most small How ugly didst thou in Cordelia show!

Which, like an engine‡‡ wrench'd my frame of nature [love,

From the fix'd place; drew from my heart all And added to the gall. O Lear, Lear, Lear! Beat at this gate that let thy folly in.

[Striking his head,

And thy dear judgment out!—Go, go, my people.

*Alb.* My lord, I am guiltless, as I am ignorant of what hath moved you. [van.

*Lear.* It may be so, my lord.—Here, nature here;

Dear goddess, hear! Suspend thy purpose, if Thou didst intend to make this creature fruitful! Into her womb convey sterility! [full!

Dry up in her the organs of increase;

\* Part of a woman's head-dress to which Lear compares her frowning brow. † A cipher. A mere husk which contains nothing. § Approbation. || Well-governed state.

¶ Stored.

\*\* Complexion.

†† Continue in service.

‡‡ The rack.



And from her derogate\* body never spring  
A babe to honour her! If she must teem,  
Create her child of spleen; that it may live,  
And be a thwart disnatured torment to her!  
Let it stamp wrinkles in her brow of youth;  
With cadent† tears fret channels in her cheeks;  
Turn all her mother's pains, and benefits,  
To laughter and contempt; that she may feel  
How sharper than a serpent's tooth it is  
To have a thankless child!—Away, away! [Exit.]

*Alb.* Now, gods, that we adore, whereof comes this? [cause;  
*Gon.* Never afflict yourself to know the  
But let his disposition have that scope  
That dotage gives it.

*Re-enter LEAR.*

*Lear.* What, fifty of my followers, at a clap!  
Within a fortnight?

*Alb.* What's the matter, sir? [ashamed  
*Lear.* I'll tell thee;—Life and death! I am  
That thou hast power to shake my manhood  
thus: [To GONERIL.

That these hot tears, which break from me  
perforce, [fogs upon thee!  
Should make thee worth them.—Blasts and  
The untented‡ woundings of a father's curse  
Pierce every sense about thee!—Old fond eyes,  
Beweped this cause again, I'll pluck you out;  
And cast you, with the waters that you lose,  
To temper clay.—Ha! is it come to this?

Let it be so:—Yet have I left a daughter,  
Who, I am sure, is kind and comfortable;  
When she shall hear this of thee, with her nails  
She'll flay thy wolfish visage! Thou shalt find,  
That I'll resume the shape which thou dost think  
I have cast off for ever; thou shalt, I warrant thee.

[Exit LEAR, KENT, and Attendants.

*Gon.* Do you mark that, my lord?

*Alb.* I cannot be so partial, Goneril,  
To the great love I bear you,—

*Gon.* Pray you, content.—What, Oswald, ho!  
You, sir, more knave than fool, after your  
master. [To the Fool.

*Fool.* Nuncle Lear, nuncle Lear, tarry, and  
take the fool with thee.

A fox, when one has caught her,  
And such a daughter,  
Should sure to the slaughter,  
If my cap would buy a halter;  
So the fool follows after. [Exit.]

*Gon.* This man hath had good counsel:—A  
hundred knights!  
'Tis politic, and safe, to let him keep  
At point§ a hundred knights. Yes, that on  
every dream,

Each buzz, each fancy, each complaint, dislike,  
He may enguard his dotage with their powers,  
And hold our lives in mercy.—Oswald, I say!—

*Alb.* Well, you may fear too far.

*Gon.* Safer than trust:  
Let me still take away the harms I fear,  
Not fear still to be taken. I know his heart:  
What he hath utter'd, I have writ my sister;  
If she sustain him and his hundred knights,  
When I have show'd the unfitness,—How  
now, Oswald?

*Enter Steward.*

What, have you writ that letter to my sister?  
*Stew.* Ay, madam. [to horse:

*Gon.* Take you some company, and away  
Inform her full of my particular fear;  
And thereto add such reasons of your own,  
As may compact it more. Get you gone;  
And hasten your return. [Exit Stew.] No,  
no, my lord,

This milky gentleness, and course of yours,  
Though I condemn it not, yet, under pardon,  
You are much more attack'd|| for want of wis-  
Than praised for harmful mildness. [dom,  
*Alb.* How far your eyes may pierce, I can-  
not tell;

Striving to better, oft we mar what's well.

*Gon.* Nay, then—

*Alb.* Well, well; the event. [Exit.]

## SCENE V. Court before the same.

*Enter LEAR, KENT, and Fool.*

*Lear.* Go you before to Gloster with these  
letters: acquaint my daughter no further with  
any thing you know, than comes from her de-  
mand out of the letter: If your diligence be  
not speedy, I shall be there before you.

*Kent.* I will not sleep, my lord, till I have  
delivered your letter. [Exit.]

*Fool.* If a man's brains were in his heels,  
wer'e't not in danger of kibes?

*Lear.* Ay, boy.

*Fool.* Then, I pr'ythee, be merry; thy wit  
shall not go slipshod.

*Lear.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Fool.* Shalt see, thy other daughter will use  
thee kindly: for though she's as like this as a  
crab is like an apple, yet I can tell what I can tell.

*Lear.* Why, what canst thou tell, my boy?

*Fool.* She will taste as like this, as a crab  
does to a crab. Thou canst tell, why one's  
nose stands i' the middle of his face?

*Lear.* No.

*Fool.* Why, to keep his eyes on either side  
his nose; that what a man cannot smell out,  
he may spy into.

*Lear.* I did her wrong:—

*Fool.* Canst tell how an oyster makes his shell?

*Lear.* No.

*Fool.* Nor I neither; but I can tell why a  
snail has a house.

*Lear.* Why?

*Fool.* Why, to put his head in; not to give  
it away to his daughters, and leave his horns  
without a case.

*Lear.* I will forget my nature.—So kind a  
father!—Be my horses ready?

*Fool.* Thy asses are gone about 'em. The  
reason why the seven stars are no more than  
seven, is a pretty reason.

*Lear.* Because they are not eight?

*Fool.* Yes, indeed; thou wouldest make a  
good fool.

*Lear.* To take it again perforce!—Monster  
ingratitude!

*Fool.* If thou wert my fool, nuncle, I'd have  
thee beaten for being old before thy time.

\* Degraded. † Falling. ‡ Undressed. § Armed. || Liable to reprehension

*Lear.* How's that?  
*Fool.* Thou shouldst not have been old, before thou hadst been wise.

*Lear.* O let me not be mad, not mad, sweet heaven!  
 Keep me in temper; I would not be mad!—

*Enter Gentleman.*  
 How now! Are the horses ready?  
*Gent.* Ready, my lord.

*Lear.* Come boy. [my departure]  
*Fool.* She that is maid now, and wishes a  
 Shall not be a maid long, unless things be cut  
 shorter. [Exit.]

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *A Court within the Castle of the Earl of Gloster.*

*Enter EDMUND and CURAN, meeting.*

*Edm.* Save thee, Curan.

*Cur.* And you, sir. I have been with your father; and given him notice, that the duke of Cornwall, and Regan his duchess, will be here with him to-night.

*Edm.* How comes that?

*Cur.* Nay, I know not: You have heard of the news abroad; I mean, the whispered ones, for they are yet but ear-kissing arguments?

*Edm.* Not I; 'Pray you, what are they?

*Cur.* Have you heard of no likely wars to-ward, 'twixt the dukes of Cornwall and Albany?

*Edm.* Not a word.

*Cur.* You may then, in time. Fare you well, sir. [Exit.]

*Edm.* The duke be here to night? The better! Best!

This weaves itself perforce into my business! My father hath set guard to take my brother; And I have one thing, of a queazy \* question, Which I must act:—Briefness, and fortune, work!—

Brother, a word; descend:—Brother, I say;

*Enter EDGAR.*

My father watches:—O sir, fly this place; Intelligence is given where you are hid; You have now the good advantage of the night:— [Cornwall?]

Have you not spoken 'gainst the duke of He's coming hither; now, i' the night, i' the haste,

And Regan with him; Have you nothing said Upon his party 'gainst the duke of Albany? Advise† yourself.

*Edg.* I am sure on't, not a word.

*Edm.* I hear my father coming.—Pardon me:— [you:—]

In cunning, I must draw my sword upon Draw: Seem to defend yourself: Now quit you well. [here!—]

Yield:—come before my father;—Light, ho, Fly, brother;—Torches! torches!—So, farewell.— [Exit EDGAR.]

Some blood drawn on me would beget opinion [Wounds his arm.]

Of my more fierce endeavour: I have seen drunkards

Do more than this in sport.—Father! father! Stop, stop! No help?

*Enter GLOSTER, and Servants with Torches.*

*Glo.* Now, Edmund, where's the villain?

*Edm.* Here stood he in the dark, his sharp sword out, [moon] Mumbling of wicked charms, conjuring the To stand his auspicious mistress:—

*Glo.* But where is he?

*Edm.* Look, sir, I bleed.

*Glo.* Where is the villain, Edmund?

*Edm.* Fled this way, sir. When by no means he could—

*Glo.* Pursue him, ho!—Go after.—[Exit Serv.] By no means,—what?

*Edm.* Persuade me to the murder of your lordship;

But that I told him, the revenging gods 'Gainst parricides did all their thunders bend; Spoke, with how manifold and strong a bond The child was bound to the father;—Sir, in fine, Seeing how loathly opposite I stood To his unnatural purpose, in fell motion, With his prepared sword, he charges home My unprovided body, lanced my arm: But when he saw my best alarm'd spirits, Bold in the quarrel's right, roused to the encounter,

Or whether gasted‡ by the noise I made, Full suddenly he fled.

*Glo.* Let him fly far:

Not in this land shall he remain uncaught; And found—Despatch.—The noble duke my master,

My worthy arch‡ and patron, comes to-night: By his authority I will proclaim it, [thanks, That he, which finds him, shall deserve our Bringing the murderous coward to the stake; He, that conceals him, death.

*Edm.* When I dissuaded him from his intent, And found him pight‡ to do it, with curst‡ speech

I threaten'd to discover him: He replied, Thou unpossessing bastard! dost thou think, If I would stand against thee, would the reposal

Of any trust, virtue, or worth, in thee Make thy words faith'd? No: what I should deny, [produce

(As this I would; ay, though thou didst My very character\*\*) I'd turn it all To thy suggestion, plot, and damned practice. And thou must make a dullard of the world, If they not thought the profits of my death Were very pregnant and potential spurs To make thee seek it.

\* Delicate. † Consider, recollect yourself. ‡ Severe, harsh.

‡ Frighted. § Chief. || Pitched, fixed. \*\* Haud-writing.

*Glo.* Strong and fasten'd villain!  
Would he deny his letter?—I never got him.

[*Trumpets within.*]

Hark, the duke's trumpets! I know not why  
he comes:—

All ports I'll bar; the villain shall not scape;  
The duke must grant me that: besides, his  
picture

I will send far and near, that all the kingdom  
May have due note of him; and of my land,  
Loyal and natural boy, I'll work the means  
To make thee capable\*.

*Enter CORNWALL, REGAN, & Attendants.*

*Corn.* How now, my noble friend? since I  
came hither, [strange news.

[Which I can call but now,] I have heard

*Reg.* If it be true, all vengeance comes too  
short, [my lord?

Which can pursue the offender. How dost,

*Glo.* O, madam, my old heart is crack'd,  
is crack'd! [your life?

*Reg.* What, did my father's godson seek  
He whom my father named? your Edgar?

*Glo.* O, lady, lady, shame would have it hid!

*Reg.* Was he not companion with the riotous  
That tend upon my father? [knights

*Glo.* I know not, madam:

It is too bad, too bad.—

*Edm.* Yes, madam, he was.

*Reg.* No marvel then, though he were ill  
affected;

'Tis they have put him on the old man's death,  
To have the waste and spoil of his revenues.

I have this present evening from my sister  
Been well inform'd of them; and with such

cautions,

That, if they come to sojourn at my house,  
I'll not be there.

*Corn.* Nor I, assure thee, Regan.—

Edmund, I hear that you have shown your  
A child-like office. [father

*Edm.* 'Twas my duty, sir. [ceiv'd

*Glo.* He did bewray† his practice; and re-  
This hurt you see, striving to apprehend him.

*Corn.* Is he pursued?

*Glo.* Ay, my good lord, he is.

*Corn.* If he be taken, he shall never more  
Be fear'd of doing harm: make your own

purpose, [Edmund,

How in my strength you please.—For you,  
Whose virtue and obedience doth this instant

So much commend itself, you shall be ours;  
Natures of such deep trust we shall much need;

You we first seize on.

*Edm.* I shall serve you, sir,  
Truly, however else.

*Glo.* For him I thank your grace.

*Corn.* You know not why we came to visit  
you,— [ey'd night.

*Reg.* Thus out of season; threading dark-  
Decisions, noble Gloucester, of some poize,

Wherein we must have use of your advice:—  
Our father he hath writ, so hath our sister,

Of differences, which I best thought it fit [gers  
To answer from our home; the several messen-

From hence attend despatch. Our good old  
friend,

Lay comforts to your bosom; and bestow  
Your needful counsel to our business,  
Which craves the instant use.

*Glo.* I serve you, madam:  
Your graces are right welcome. [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II. Before Gloucester's Castle.

*Enter KENT and Steward, severally.*

*Stew.* Good dawning to thee, friend: Art  
of the house?

*Kent.* Ay.

*Stew.* Where may we set our horses?

*Kent.* I' the mire.

*Stew.* Prythee, if thou love me, tell me.

*Kent.* I love thee not.

*Stew.* Why, then I care not for thee.

*Kent.* If I had thee in Lipsbury pinfold, I  
would make thee care for me.

*Stew.* Why dost thou use me thus? I know  
thee not,

*Kent.* Fellow, I know thee.

*Stew.* What dost thou know me for?

*Kent.* A knave; a rascal, an eater of broken  
meats; a base, proud, shallow, beggarly, three-  
suited, hundred-pound, filthy worse-stocking  
knave; a lily-livered, action-taking knave; a  
whoreson, glass-gazing, superserviceable, fin-  
ical rogue; one-trunk inheriting slave; one  
that wouldst be a bawd, in way of good-ser-  
vice, and art nothing but the composition of a  
knave, beggar, coward, pander, and the son  
and heir of a mongrel bitch: one whom I  
will beat into clamorous whining, if thou de-  
niest the least syllable of thy addition||.

*Stew.* Why, what a monstrous fellow art  
thou, thus to rail on one, that is neither known  
of thee, nor knows thee!

*Kent.* What a brazen-faced varlet art thou,  
to deny thou knowest me? Is it two days  
ago, since I tripp'd up thy heels, and beat  
thee, before the king? Draw, you rogue: for,  
though it be night, the moon shines; I'll make  
a sop o' the moonshine of you: Draw, you  
whoreson, cullionly barber-monger, draw.

[*Drawing his sword.*]

*Stew.* Away; I have nothing to do with thee.

*Kent.* Draw, you rascal: you come with  
letters against the king: and take vanity ¶  
the puppet's part, against the royalty of her  
father: Draw, you rogue, or I'll so carbonado  
your shanks:—draw, you rascal; come your  
ways.

*Stew.* Help, ho! murder! help!

*Kent.* Strike, you slave; stand, rogue,  
stand; you neat slave, strike. [*Beating him.*

*Stew.* Help, ho! murder! murder!

*Enter EDMUND, CORNWALL, REGAN,*

*GLOSTER, and Servants.*

*Edm.* How now? What's the matter? Part.

*Kent.* With you, goodman boy, if you please;  
come, I'll flesh you; come on, young master.

*Glo.* Weapons! arms! What's the matter  
here?

\* i. e., Capable of succeeding to my land.

§ Weight.

|| Titles.

† Betray.

‡ Wicked purpose.

¶ A character in the old moralities.



*Corn.* Keep peace, upon your lives;  
He dies, that strikes again: What is the matter?  
*Reg.* The messengers from our sister and the king.

*Corn.* What is your difference? speak.

*Stew.* I am scarce in breath, my lord.

*Kent.* No marvel, you have so bestirred your valour. You cowardly rascal, nature disclaims in thee; a tailor made thee.

*Corn.* Thou art a strange fellow: a tailor make a man?

*Kent.* Ay, a tailor, sir; a stone-cutter, or a painter, could not have made him so ill, though they had been but two hours at the trade.

*Corn.* Speak yet, how grew your quarrel?

*Stew.* This ancient ruffian, sir, whose life I at suit of his grey beard,— [have spared.

*Kent.* Thou whoreson zed! thou unnecessary letter!—My lord, if you will give me leave, I will tread this unbolted\* villain into mortar, and daub the wall of a jake† with him.—Spare my grey beard, you wagtail?

*Corn.* Peace, sirrah!

You beastly knave, know you no reverence?

*Kent.* Yes, sir; but anger has a privilege.

*Corn.* Why art thou angry?

*Kent.* That such a slave as this should wear a sword, [as these,  
Who wears no honesty. Such smiling rogues like rats, oft bite the holy cords atwain  
Which are too intrinset† unloose: smooth every passion

That in the natures of their lords rebels;  
Bring oil to fire, snow to their colder moods;  
Reneged, affirm, and turn their halcyon|| beaks  
With every gale and vary of their masters,  
As knowing nought, like dogs, but following.—  
A plague upon your epileptic visage!  
Smile you my speeches, as I were a fool?  
Goose, if I had you upon Sarum plain,  
I'd drive ye cackling home to Camelot¶.

*Corn.* What, art thou mad, old fellow?

*Glo.* How fell you out?

Say that.

*Kent.* No contraries hold more antipathy,  
Than I and such a knave. [his offence?

*Corn.* Why dost thou call him knave? What's

*Kent.* His countenance likes me not\*\*.

*Corn.* No more, perchance, does mine, or his, or hers.

*Kent.* Sir, 'tis my occupation to be plain;  
I have seen better faces in my time,  
Than stands on any shoulder that I see  
Before me at this instant.

*Corn.* This is some fellow, [affect  
Who, having been praised for bluntness, doth  
A sancy roughness; and constrains the garb,  
Quite from his nature: He cannot flatter, he!—  
An honest mind and plain,—he must speak truth:  
An they will take it, so; if not, he's plain.  
These kind of knaves I know, which in this plainness

Harbour more craft, and more corrupter ends,  
Than twenty silly†† ducking observants,  
That stretch their duties nicely.

*Kent.* Sir, in good sooth, in sincere verity,  
Under the allowance of your grand aspect,  
Whose influence, like the wreath of radiant  
On flickering Phœbus' front,— [fire

*Corn.* What mean'st by this?

*Kent.* To go out of my dialect, which you discommend so much. I know, sir, I am no flatterer: he that beguiled you, in a plain accent, was a plain knave; which, for my part, I will not be, though I should win your displeasure to entreat me to it.

*Corn.* What was the offence you gave him?

*Stew.* Never any;  
It pleased the king his master, very late,  
To strike at me, upon his misconstruction;  
When he, conjunct, and flattering his displeasure, [rail'd,

Tripp'd me behind; being down, insulted,  
And put upon him such a deal of man,  
That worthy'd him, got praises of the king  
For him attempting who was self-subdued;  
And, in the fleshment of this dread exploit,  
Drew on me here.

*Kent.* None of these rogues, and cowards,  
But Ajax is their fool††.

*Corn.* Fetch forth the stocks, ho!  
You stubborn ancient knave, you reverend  
We'll teach you— [bragart,

*Kent.* Sir, I am too old to learn:  
Call not your stocks for me: I serve the king;  
On whose employment I was sent to you:  
You shall do small respect, show too bold malice

Against the grace and person of my master,  
Stocking his messenger.

*Corn.* Fetch forth the stocks:  
As I've life and honour, there shall he sit till noon. [all night too.

*Reg.* Till noon! till night, my lord; and

*Kent.* Why, madam, if I were your father's  
You should not use me so. [dog,

*Reg.* Sir, being his knave, I will.

[Stocks brought out.

*Corn.* This is a fellow of the self-same colour  
Our sister speaks of:—Come, bring away the stocks.

*Glo.* Let me beseech your grace not to do so  
His fault is much, and the good king his master  
Will check him for't: your purposed low correction

Is such, as basest and condemn'd'st wretches,  
For pilferings and most common trespasses,  
Are punish'd with: the king must take it ill,  
That he's so slightly valued in his messenger,  
Should have him thus restrain'd.

*Corn.* I'll answer that.

*Reg.* My sister may receive it much more worse,  
To have her gentleman abused, assaulted,

\* Unrefined.

† Privy.

† Perplexed.

‡ Disowned.

|| The bird called the king-fisher, which, when dried and hung up by a thread, is supposed to turn his bill to the point from whence the wind blows.

¶ In Somersetshire, where are bred great quantities of geese.

\*\* i. e., Pleases me not.

†† Simple or rustic.

‡ i. e., Ajax is a fool to them.

For following her affairs.—Put in his legs.—

[*Kent is put in the Stocks.*]

Come, my good lord; away.

[*Exeunt REGAN and CORNWALL.*]

*Glo.* I am sorry for thee, friend; 'tis the duke's pleasure,

Whose disposition, all the world well knows, Will not be rubb'd, nor stopp'd: I'll entreat for thee. [*and travell'd hard;*]

*Kent.* Pray, do not, sir: I have watch'd, Some time I shall sleep out, the rest I'll whistle. A good man's fortune may grow out at heels: Give you good morrow!

*Glo.* The duke's to blame in this; 'twill be ill taken. [*Exit.*]

*Kent.* Good king, that must approve the common saw\*!

Thou out of heaven's benediction comest To the warm sun!

Approach, thou beacon to this under globe, That by thy comfortable beams I may [cles, Peruse this letter!—Nothing almost sees mira- But misery;—I know 'tis from Cordelia; Who hath most fortunately been inform'd Of my obscured course; and shall find time From this enormous state,—seeking to give Losses their remedies:—All weary and o'er- watch'd,

Take vantage, heavy eyes, not to behold This shameful lodging.

Fortune, good night; smile once more; turn thy wheel! [*He sleeps.*]

### SCENE III. A part of the Heath.

*Enter EDGAR.*

*Edg.* I heard myself proclaim'd; And, by the happy hollow of a tree, Escaped the hunt. No port is free; no place, That guard, and most unusual vigilance, Does not attend my taking. While I may scape, I will preserve myself: and am bethought To take the basest and most poorest shape, That ever penury, in contempt of man, [filth; Brought near to beast: my face I'll grim with Blanket my loins; elft all my hair in knots; And with presented nakedness outface The winds, and persecutions of the sky. The country gives me proof and precedent Of Bedlam beggars, who, with roaring voices, Strike in their numb'd and mortified bare arms Pins, wooden pricks†, nails, sprigs of rosemary; And with this horrible object, from low farms, Poor pelted villages, sheep cotes and mills, Sometime with lunatic bans§, sometime with prayers,

Enforce their charity.—Poor Turlygood! poor That's something yet;—Edgar I nothing am. [*Exit.*]

### SCENE IV. Before Gloster's Castle.

*Enter LEAR, Fool, and Gentleman.*

*Lear.* 'Tis strange, that they should so depart from home,

And not send back my messenger.

*Gent.* As I learn'd, The night before there was no purpose in them Of this remove.

*Kent.* Hail to thee, noble master!

*Lear.* How! Makest thou this shame thy pastime?

*Kent.* No, my lord.

*Fool.* Ha, ha; look! he wears cruel garters! Horses are tied by the heads; dogs, and bears, by the neck; monkeys by the loins, and men by the legs: when a man is over-lusty at legs, then he wears wooden nether-stocks¶.

*Lear.* What's he, that hath so much thy To set thee here? [place mistook

*Kent.* It is both he and she,

Your son and daughter.

*Lear.* No.

*Kent.* Yes.

*Lear.* No, I say.

*Kent.* I say, yea.

*Lear.* No, no; they would not.

*Kent.* Yes, they have.

*Lear.* By Jupiter, I swear no.

*Kent.* By Juno, I swear, ay.

*Lear.* They durst not do't; [than murder, They could not, would not do't; 'tis worse To do upon respect such violent outrage: Resolve me, with all modest haste, which way Thou mightst deserve, or they impose, this Coming from us. [usage

*Kent.* My lord, when at their home I did commend your highness' letters to them, Ere I was risen from the place that show'd My duty kneeling, came there a reeking post. Stew'd in his haste, half breathless, panting From Goneril his mistress, salutations; [forth Deliver'd letters, spite of intermission, Which presently they read: on whose contents, They summon'd up their meiny\*\*, straight took horse;

Commanded me to follow, and attend The leisure of their answer; gave me cold looks: And meeting here the other messenger, Whose welcome, I perceived, had poison'd (Being the very fellow that of late [mine, Display'd so saucily against your highness,) Having more man than wit about me, drew; He raised the house with loud and coward cries: Your son and daughter found this trespass The shame which here it suffers. [worth

*Fool.* Winter's not gone yet, if the wild geese fly that way.

Fathers, that wear rags,

Do make their children blind;

But fathers, that bear bags,

Shall see their children kind.

Fortune, that arrant whore,

Ne'er turns the key to the poor.—

But, for all this, thou shalt have as many dolours†† for thy daughters as thou canst tell in a year.

\* Saying or proverb. † Hair thus knotted was supposed to be the work of elves and fairies in the night. ‡ Skewers. § Curses. ¶ A quibble on *cruel*, *worsted*.

¶ The old word for stockings.

\*\* People, train or retinue.

†† A quibble between *dolours* and *dollars*.

*Lear.* O, how this mother \* swells up  
toward my heart! [row,  
*Hysterica passio* down, thou climbing sor-  
Thy element's below!—Where is this daughter?  
*Kent.* With the earl, sir, here within.

*Lear.* Follow me not;  
Stay here. [Exit.

*Gent.* Made you no more offence than what  
*Kent.* None. [you speak of?  
How chance the king comes with so small a  
train?

*Fool.* An thou hadst been set i' the stocks  
for that question, thou hadst well deserved it.

*Kent.* Why, fool?

*Fool.* We'll set thee to school to an ant, to  
teach thee there's no labouring in the winter.  
All that follow their noses are led by their  
eyes, but blind men; and there's not a nose  
among twenty, but can smell him that's stink-  
ing. Let go thy hold, when a great wheel  
runs down a hill, lest it break thy neck with  
following it; but the great one that goes  
up the hill, let him draw thee after. When  
a wise man gives thee better counsel, give me  
mine again: I would have none but knaves  
follow it, since a fool gives it.

That, sir, which serves and seeks for gain,

And follows but for forin,  
Will pack, when it begins to rain,  
And leave thee in the storm.

But I will tarry, the fool will stay,  
And let the wise man fly:

The knave turns fool, that runs away;  
The fool no knave, perdy.

*Kent.* Where learn'd you this, fool?

*Fool.* Not i' the s.ocks, fool.

*Re-enter LEAR, with GLOSTER.*

*Lear.* Deny to speak with me? They are  
sick? they are weary? [fetches;

They have travell'd hard to-night? Mere  
The images of revolt and flying off!  
Fetch me a better answer.

*Glo.* My dear lord,  
You know the fiery quality of the duke;  
How unremoveable and fix'd he is  
In his own course. [sion!—

*Lear.* Vengeance! plague! death! confu-  
Fieri? what quality? why Gloster, Gloster,  
I'd speak with the duke of Cornwall, and his  
wife. [them so.

*Glo.* Well, my good lord, I have inform'd

*Lear.* Inform'd them! Dost thou under-

*Glo.* Ay, my good lord. [st and me, man?

*Lear.* The king would speak with Corn-  
wall; the dear father [her service:  
Would with his daughter speak, commands  
Are they inform'd of this?—My breath and  
blood!— [that—

Fiery the fiery duke?—Tell the hot duke,  
No, but not yet:—may be, he is not well:

Infirmary doth still neglect all office, [selves,  
Whereto our health is bound; we are not our-  
When nature, being oppress'd, commands the

To suffer with the body: I'll forbear; [mind  
And am fallen out with my more headier will,

To take the indisposed and sickly fit  
For the sound man.—Death on my state!  
wherefore [Looking on KENT.

Should he sit here? This act persuades me,  
That this remotion of the duke and her

Is practice † on'y. Give me my servant forth:  
Go, tell the duke and his wife, I'd speak with  
them, [hear me,

Now, presently: bid them come forth and  
Or at their chamber door I'll beat the drum,  
Till it cry—*Sleep to death.*

*Glo.* I'd have all well betwixt you. [Exit:

*Lear.* O me, my heart, my rising heart!—  
but, down.

*Fool.* Cry to it, nuncle, as the cockney did  
to the eels, when she put them i' the paste §  
alive; she rapp'd 'em o'the coxcombs with a  
stick, and cry'd, *Down, wantons, down:*  
'Twas her brother, that in pure kindness to his  
horse, butter'd his hay.

*Enter CORNWALL, REGAN, GLOSTER, and  
Servants.*

*Lear.* Good morrow to you both.

*Corn.* Hail to your grace!  
[KENT is set at liberty.

*Reg.* I am glad to see your highness.

*Lear.* Regan, I think you are; I know  
what reason [glad,

I have to think so: if thou shouldst not be  
I would divorce me from thy mother's tomb,  
Sepulchring an adultrous.—O, are you free?

[To KENT.  
Some other time for that.—Beloved Regan,  
Thy sister's naught: O Regan, she hath tied  
Sharp-tooth'd unkindness, like a vulture here,—

[Points to his heart.  
I can scarce speak to thee; thou'lt not believe,  
Of how depraved a quality—O Regan!

*Reg.* I pray you, sir, take patience; I have  
You less know how to value her desert, [hope.  
Than she to scant|| her duty.

*Lear.* Say, how is that?

*Reg.* I cannot think, my sister in the least  
Would fail her obligation: If, sir, perchance,  
She have restrain'd the riots of your followers,  
'Tis on such ground, and to such wholesome  
As clears her from all blame. [end,

*Lear.* My curses on her!

*Reg.* O, sir, you are old;  
Nature in you stands on the very verge  
Of her confine: you should be mied and led  
By some discretion, that discerns your state  
Better than you yourself: Therefore, I pray  
That to our sister you do make return; [you,  
Say, you have wrong'd her, sir.

*Lear.* Ask her forgiveness?  
Do you but mark how this becomes the house †:  
Dear daughter, I confess that I am old;  
Age is unnecessary: on my knees I beg,  
[Kneeling.

That you'll vouchsafe me raiment, bed, and  
food.

*Reg.* Good sir, no more; these are unsightly  
Return you to my sister. [tricks:

*Lear.* Never, Regan:

\* The disease called the *mother*.

† Removing from their own house.

‡ Artifice.

§ Crust of a pie.

|| Be wanting in.

¶ The order of families.



She hath abated me of half my train; [tongue,  
Look'd black upon me; struck me with her  
Most serpent-like, upon the very heart:—  
All the stored vengeance of heaven fall  
On her ingrateful top! Strike her young bones,  
You taking airs, with lameness!

*Corn.* Fie, fie, fie!

*Lear.* You nimble lightnings, dart your  
blinding flames

Into her scornful eyes! Infect her beauty,  
You fen-suck'd fogs, drawn by the powerful  
To fall and blast her pride! [sun,

*Reg.* O the blest gods!

So will you wish on me, when the rash mood's  
on. [my curse;

*Lear.* No, Regan, thou shalt never have  
Thy tender-hefted nature shall not give [thine  
The o'er to harshness; her eyes are fierce, but  
Do comfort, and not burn: 'Tis not in thee  
To grudge my pleasures, to cut off my train,  
To bandy hasty words, to scant my sizes\*,  
And, in conclusion, to oppose the bolt  
Against my coming in: thou better know'st  
The offices of nature, bond of childhood,  
Effects of courtesy, dues of gratitude;  
Thy half o' the kingdom hast thou not forgot,  
Wherein I thee endow'd.

*Reg.* Good sir, to the purpose.

[*Trumpets within.*

*Lear.* Who put my man i'the stocks?

*Corn.* What trumpet's that?

*Enter Steward.*

*Reg.* I know't, my sister's: this approves  
her letter, [come?

That she would soon be here.—Is your lady

*Lear.* This is a slave, whose easy-borrow'd  
pride

Dwells in the fickle grace of her he follows:—  
Out, varlet, from my sight?

*Corn.* What means your grace?

*Lear.* Who stock'd my servant? Regan, I  
have good hope [O heavens,  
Thou didst not know of't.—Who comes here?

*Enter GONERIL.*

If you do love old men, if your sweet sway  
Allow obedience, if yourselves are old,  
Make it your cause; send down, and take my  
part!—

Art not ashamed to look upon this beard?—  
[To GONERIL.

©, Regan, wilt thou take her by the hand?

*Gon.* Why not by the hand, sir? How have  
I offended?

All's not offence, that indiscretion finds,  
And dotage terms so.

*Lear.* O, sides, you are too tough!  
Will you yet hold?—How came my man i'the  
stocks? [orders

*Corn.* I set him there, sir; but his own dis-  
Deserved much less advancement.

*Lear.* You! did you?

*Reg.* I pray you, father, being weak, seem so.  
If, till the expiration of your month,  
You will return and sojourn with my sister,  
Dismissing half your train, come then to me;

I am now from home, and out of that provision  
Which shall be needful for your entertainment.

*Lear.* Return to her, and fifty men dismiss'd!  
No, rather I abjure all roofs, and choose  
To wage† against the enmity o' the air;  
To be a comrade with the wolf and owl,—  
Necessity's sharp pinch!—Return with her?  
Why, the hot-blooded France, that dowerless  
took

Our youngest born, I could as well be brought  
To kneel his throne, and, squire-like, pension beg  
To keep base life afoot:—Return with her?  
Persuade me rather to be slave and sumpter‡  
To this detested groom.

[*Looking on the Steward.*

*Gon.* At your choice, sir. [mad;

*Lear.* I pry'thee, daughter, do not make me  
I will not trouble thee, my child; farewell:  
We'll no more meet, no more see one another:—  
But yet thou art my flesh, my blood, my daugh-  
Or, rather, a disease that's in my flesh, [ter;  
Which I must needs call mine: thou art a boil,  
A plague-sore, an embossed carbuncle, [thee;  
In my corrupted blood. But I'll not chide  
Let shame come when it will, I do not call it:  
I do not bid the thunder-bearer shoot,  
Nor tell tales of thee to high-judging Jove:  
Mend, when thou canst; be better, at thy lei-  
I can be patient; I can stay with Regan, [sure:  
I and my hundred knights.

*Reg.* Not altogether so, sir;  
I look'd not for you yet, nor am provided  
For your fit welcome: Give ear, sir, to my sister;  
For those that mingle reason with your passion  
Must be content to think you old, and so—  
But she knows what she does.

*Lear.* Is this well spoken now?

*Reg.* I dare avouch it, sir: What, fifty fol-  
lowers?

Is it not well? What should you need of more?  
Yea, or so many? sith¶ that both charge and  
danger [one house,

Speak 'gainst so great a number? How, in  
Should many people, under two commands,  
Hold amity? 'Tis hard; almost impossible.

*Gon.* Why might not you, my lord, receive  
attendance [mine?

From those that she calls servants, or from  
*Reg.* Why not, my lord? If then they  
chanced to slack you,

We could control them: If you will come to me,  
(For now I spy a danger,) I entreat you  
To bring but five and twenty; to no more  
Will I give place or notice.

*Lear.* I gave you all.—

*Reg.* And in good time you gave it.

*Lear.* Made you my guardians, my deposita-  
But kept a reservation to be follow'd [ries;  
With such a number: What, must I come to you  
With five and twenty, Regan? said you so?

*Reg.* And speak it again, my lord; no more  
with me. [well-favour'd,

*Lear.* Those wicked creatures yet do look  
When others are more wicked; not being the  
worst,

\* Contract my allowances.

† Approve.

‡ War.

§ A horse that carries necessaries on a journey.

¶ Swelling.

¶ Since.

4 L

Stands in some rank of praise:—I'll go with thee; [To GONERIL.

Thy fifty yet doth double five and twenty,  
And thou art twice her love.

Gon. Hear me, my lord;  
What need you five and twenty, ten, or five,  
To follow in a house, where twice so many  
Have a command to tend you?

Reg. What need one?  
Lear. O, reason not the need: our basest beg-  
Are in the poorest thing superfluous: [gars  
Allow not nature more than nature needs,  
Man's life is cheap as beast's: thou art a lady;  
If only to go warm were gorgeous, [wear'st,  
Why, nature needs not what thou gorgeous  
Which scarcely keeps thee warm.—But, for  
true need,— [I need!

You heavens, give me that patience, patience  
You see me here, you gods, a poor old man,  
As full of grief as age; wretched in both!  
If it be you that stir these daughters' hearts  
Against their father, fool me not so much  
To bear it tamely; touch me with noble anger!  
O, let not women's weapons, water-drops,  
Stain my man's cheeks!—No, you unnatural  
I will have such revenges on you both, [hags,  
That all the world shall—I will do such things,—  
What they are, yet I know not; but they shall be  
The terrors of the earth. You think, I'll weep;  
No, I'll not weep:—  
I have full cause of weeping; but this heart  
Shall break into a hundred thousand flaws,  
Or ere I'll weep:—O, fool, I shall go mad!

[*Exeunt* LEAR, GLOSTER, KENT, & Fool.]

Corn. Let us withdraw, 'twill be a storm.  
[*Storm heard at a distance.* This house

Reg. This house  
Is little; the old man and his people cannot  
Be well bestow'd.

Gon. 'Tis his own blame; he hath put  
Himself from rest, and must needs taste his  
folly. [gladly,

Reg. For his particular, I'll receive him  
But not one follower.

Gon. So am I purposed.  
Where is my lord of Gloster?

*Re-enter* GLOSTER.

Corn. Follow'd the old man forth:—he is  
Glo. The king is in high rage. [return'd.

Corn. Whither is he going?

Glo. He calls to horse; but will I know not  
whither. [himself.

Corn. 'Tis best to give him way; he leads

Gon. My lord, entreat him by no means to  
stay. [bleak winds

Glo. Alack, the night comes on, and the  
Do sorely ruffle; for many miles about  
There's scarce a bush.

Reg. O, sir, to wilful men,  
The injuries, that they themselves procure,  
Must be their schoolmasters: Shut up your  
He is attended with a desperate train; [doors;  
And what they may incense \* him to, being apt  
To have his ear abused, wisdom bids fear.

Corn. Shut up your doors, my lord: 'tis a  
wild night;.

My Regan counsels well; come out o'the storm.  
[*Exeunt.*

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. A Heath.

*A Storm is heard, with Thunder and Light-  
ning.*

*Enter* KENT and a Gentleman, meeting.

Kent. Who's here, beside foul weather?

Gent. One minded like the weather, most  
unquietly.

Kent. I know you: Where's the king?

Gent. Contending with the fretful element:  
Bids the wind blow the earth into the sea,  
Or swell the curled waters 'bove the main,  
That things might change or cease: tears his  
white hair;

Which the impetuous blasts, with eyeless rage,  
Catch in their fury, and make nothing of:  
Strives in his little world of man to out-scorn  
The to-and-fro conflicting wind and rain.  
This night, wherein the cub-drawn bear † would  
The lion and the belly-pinched wolf [couch,  
Keep their fur dry, unbonneted he runs,  
And bids what will take all.

Kent. But who is with him?

Gent. None but the fool; who labours to out-  
His heart-struck injuries. [jest

Kent. Sir, I do know you;

And dare upon the warrant of my art †,  
Commend a dear thing to you. There is division,  
Although as yet the face of it be cover'd [wall;  
With mutual cunning, 'twixt Albany and Corn-  
Who have (as who have not, that their great  
stars [no less;  
Throned and set high?) servants, who seem  
Which are to France the spies and speculations  
Intelligent of our state; what hath been seen,  
Either in snuffs and packings ‡ of the dukes;  
Or the hard rein which both of them have borne  
Against the old kind king; or something deeper,  
Whereof, perchance, these are but furnishings||;  
[But, true it is, from France there comes a power  
Into this scatter'd kingdom; who already,  
Wise in our negligence, have secret feet  
In some of our best ports, and are at point  
To show their open banner.—Now to you:  
If on my credit you dare build so far  
To make your speed to Dover, you shall find  
Some that will thank you, making just report  
Of how unnatural and bemadding sorrow  
The king hath cause to 'plain.  
I am a gentleman of blood and breeding;  
And, from some knowledge and assurance, offer  
This office to you.]

\* Instigate.

† Whose dugs are drawn dry by its young.

Which teaches us "to find the mind's construction in the face." § Snuffs are dislikes,  
and packings underhand contrivances. || Samples.

*Gent.* I will talk further with you.

*Kent.* No, do not.

For confirmation that I am much more  
Than my out wall, open this purse, and take  
What it contains: If you shall see Cordelia,  
(As fear not but you shall,) show her this ring;  
And she will tell you who your fellow \* is,  
That yet you do not know. Fie on this storm!  
I will go seek the king. [more to say?]

*Gent.* Give me your hand: Have you no  
*Kent.* Few words, but, to effect, more than  
all yet; [your pain]

That, when we have found the king, (in which  
That way; I'll this;) he that first lights on him,  
Holla the other. [Exeunt severally.]

SCENE II. *Another Part of the Heath.*  
*Storm continues.*

*Enter LEAR and Fool.*

*Lear.* Blow, wind, and crack your cheeks!  
rage! blow!

You cataracts, and hurricanes, spout  
Till you have drench'd our steeples, drown'd  
the cocks!

You sulphurous and thought-executing † fires,  
Vaunt couriers ‡ to oak-cleaving thunder-bolts,  
Sing me my white head! And thou, all-shaking  
thunder,

Strike flat the thick rotundity o' the world!  
Crack nature's moulds, all germens † spill at once,  
That make ingrateful man:

*Fool.* O nuncle, court holy water § in a dry  
house is better than this rain-water out o' door.  
Good nuncle, in, and ask thy daughter's blessing;  
here's a night pines neither wise men  
nor fools. [spout, rain!]

*Lear.* Rumble thy bellyful! Spit, fire!  
Nor rain, wind, thunder, fire, are my daughters;  
I tax not you, you elements, with unkindness,  
I never gave you kingdom, call'd you children,  
You owe me no subscription ||; why then let fall  
Your horrible pleasure; here I stand, your  
slave,

A poor, infirm, weak, and despised old man:—  
But yet I call you servile ministers,  
That have with two pernicious daughters join'd  
Your high engender'd battles, 'gainst a head  
So old and white as this. O! O! 'tis foul!

*Fool.* He that has a house to put his head  
in, has a good head-piece.

*The cod-piece, that will house,  
Before the head has any,  
The head and he shall lose;—  
So beggars marry many.*

*The man that makes his toe  
What he his heart should make,  
Shall of a corn cry woe,  
And turn his sleep to wake.*

—for there was never yet fair woman, but she  
made mouths in a glass.

*Enter KENT.*

*Lear.* No, I will be the pattern of all pa-  
tience, I will say nothing.

*Kent.* Who's there?

*Fool.* Marry, here's grace, and a cod-piece;  
that's a wise man, and a fool.

*Kent.* Alas! sir, are you here? things that  
love night, [skies]

Love not such nights as these; the wrathful  
Gallow † the very wanderers of the dark,  
And make them keep their caves: Since I was  
man, [thunder]

Such sheets of fire, such bursts of horrid  
Such groans of roaring wind and rain, I never  
Remember to have heard: man's nature can-  
The affliction, nor the fear. [not carry]

*Lear.* Let the great gods,

That keep this dreadful pother \*\* o'er our heads,  
Find out their enemies now. Tremble, thou  
wretch,

That hast within thee undivulged crimes,  
Unwhipp'd of justice: Hide thee, thou bloody  
hand; [tue,

Thou perjured, and thou simular †† man of vir-  
That art incestuous: Caitiff, to pieces shake,  
That under covert and convenient seeming ††  
Hast practis'd on man's life!—Close pent-up  
guilts,

Rive your concealing continents, and cry  
These dreadful summoners grace §§.—I am a  
More sinn'd against, than sinning. [man,

*Kent.* Alack, bare-headed!

Gracious my lord, hard by here is a hovel;  
Some friendship will it lend you 'gainst the  
tempest;

Repose you there: while I to this hard house,  
(More hard than is the stone whereof 'tis raised;  
Which even but now, demanding ||| after you,  
Denied me to come in,) return, and force  
Their scanty courtesy.

*Lear.* My wits begin to turn,—

Come on, my boy: How dost, my boy? Art  
cold? [fellow?]

I am cold myself.—Where is this straw, my  
The art of our necessities is strange, [hovel,  
That can make vile things precious. Come, your  
Poor fool and knave, I have one part in my heart  
That's sorry yet for thee.

*Fool.* He that has a little tiny wit,—

*With heigh ho, the wind and the  
rain,—* [tunes fit;

*Must make content with his jor-  
For the rain it raineth every  
day ¶¶.*

*Lear.* Truc, my good boy.—Come, bring us  
to this hovel. [Exeunt LEAR & KENT.]

*Fool.* This is a brave night to cool a cour-  
tezan.—I'll speak a prophecy ere I go:

When priests are more in word than matter;  
When brewers mar their malt with water;  
When nobles are their tailors' tutors;  
No heretics burn'd, but wenches' suitors:  
When every case in law is right;  
No squire in debt, nor no poor knight  
When slanders do not live in tongues;  
Nor cutpurses come not to throngs;

\* Companion.

† Quick as thought.

‡ Avant courier, French.

§ A proverbial phrase for fair words.

|| Obedience.

¶ Scare or frighten.

\*\* Blustering noise.

†† Counterfeit.

‡‡ Appearance.

§§ Favour.

||| Inquiring

¶¶ Part of the Clown's song in *Tuclth Night*.



When usurers tell their gold i'the field;  
And bawds and whores do churches build:—  
Then shall the realm of Albion  
Come to great confusion.

Then comes the time, who lives to see't,  
That going shall be used with feet.

This prophecy Merlin shall make; for I live  
before his time. [Exit.]

SCENE III. *A Room in Gloster's Castle.*

*Enter GLOSTER and EDMUND.*

*Glo.* Alack, alack, Edmund, I like not this unnatural dealing: When I desired their leave that I might pity him, they took from me the use of mine own house; charged me, on pain of their perpetual displeasure, neither to speak of him, entreat for him, nor any way sustain him.

*Edm.* Most savage, and unnatural!

*Glo.* Go to; say you nothing: There is division between the dukes; and a worse matter than that: I have received a letter this night;—'tis dangerous to be spoken;—I have locked the letter in my closet: these injuries the king now bears will be revenged home; there is part of a power already footed\*: we must incline to the king. I will seek him, and privily relieve him: go you, and maintain talk with the duke that my charity be not of him perceived: If he ask for me, I am ill, and gone to bed. If I die for it, as no less is threatened me, the king my old master must be relieved. There is some strange thing toward, Edmund; pray you, be careful. [Exit.]

*Edm.* This courtesy forbid thee, shall the duke instantly know; and of that letter too:—This seems a fair deserving, and must draw me that which my father loses; no less than all: The younger rises, when the old doth fall. [Exit.]

SCENE IV. *A Part of the Heath, with a Hovel.*

*Enter LEAR, KENT, and Fool.*

*Kent.* Here is the place, my lord; good my lord, enter:

The tyranny of the open night's too rough  
For nature to endure. [Storm still.]

*Lear.* Let me alone.

*Kent.* Good my lord, enter here.

*Lear.* Wilt break my heart?

*Kent.* I'd rather break mine own: Good my lord, enter. [contentious storm]

*Lear.* Thou think'st 'tis much, that this invades us to the skin: so 'tis to thee; But where the greater malady is fix'd, [bear: The lesser is scarce felt. Thou'dst shun a But if thy flight lay toward the raging sea, Thou'dst meet the bear i'the mouth. When the mind's free,

The body's delicate: the tempest in my mind Doth from my senses take all feeling else, Save what beats there.—Filial ingratitude! Is it not as this mouth should tear this hand, For lifting food to't?—But I will punish home: No, I will weep no more.—In such a night To shut me out!—Pour on; I will endure:—

In such a night as this! O Regan, Goneril!—  
Your old kind father, whose frank heart gave all,—

O, that way madness lies; let me shun that;  
No more of that,—

*Kent.* Good my lord, enter here. [ease;

*Lear.* Pr'ythee, go in thyself; seek thine own  
This tempest will not give me leave to ponder  
On things would hurt me more.—But I'll go in:  
In, boy; go first.—[To the Fool.] You houseless poverty,—

Nay, get thee in. I'll pray, and then I'll sleep.

[Fool goes in]

Poor naked wretches, wheresoe'er you are,  
That bide the pelting of this pitiless storm,  
How shall your houseless heads, and unfed sides  
Your loop'd and window'd raggedness, defend  
From seasons, such as these? O, I have ta'en [you:  
Too little care of this! Take physic, pomp;  
Expose thyself to feel what wretches feel;  
That thou mayst shake the superflux to them,  
And show the heavens more just.

*Edg.* [Within.] Fathom and half, fathom and half! Poor Tom!

[The Fool runs out from the Hovel.]

*Fool.* Come not in here, nuncle, here's a spirit. Help me, help me!

*Kent.* Give me thy hand.—Who's there?

*Fool.* A spirit, a spirit; he says his name's poor Tom. [i'the straw?

*Kent.* What art thou that dost grumble there  
Come forth.

*Enter EDGAR, disguised as a Madman.*

*Edg.* Away! the foul fiend follows me;—  
Through the sharp hawthorn blows the cold wind.—

Humph! go to thy cold bed, and warm thee.

*Lear.* Hast thou given all to thy two daughters? And art thou come to this?

*Edg.* Who gives any thing to poor Tom? whom the foul fiend hath led through fire and through flame, through ford and whirlpool, over bog and quagmire; that hath laid knives under his pillow, and halters in his pew; set ratsbane by his porridge; made him proud of heart, to ride on a bay trotting-horse over four-inched bridges, to course his own shadow for a traitor:—Bless thy five wits! Tom's a-cold.—O, do de, do de, do de.—Bless thee from whirlwinds, star-blasting, and taking! Do poor Tom some charity, whom the foul fiend vexes: There could I have him now,—and there,—and there,—and there again, and there.

[Storm continues.]

*Lear.* What, have his daughters brought him to this pass?— [them all?

Couldst thou save nothing? Didst thou give  
*Fool.* Nay, he reserved a blanket, else we had been all shamed.

*Lear.* Now, all the plagues that in the pendulous air [daughters!

Hang fated o'er men's faults, light on thy  
*Kent.* He hath no daughters, sir.

*Lear.* Death, traitor! nothing could have subdued nature [ters.—  
To such a lowness, but his unkind daugh

\* A force already landed.

† To take is to blast, or strike with malignant influence.

Is it the fashion, that discarded fathers  
Should have thus little mercy on their flesh?  
Judicious punishment! 'twas this flesh begot  
Those pelican daughters.

*Edg.* Pillicock sat on pillicock's-hill;—  
Hallow, hallow, loo, loo!

*Fool.* This cold night will turn us all to fools  
and madmen.

*Edg.* Take heed o'the foul fiend: Obey thy  
parents; keep thy word justly; swear not;  
commit not with man's sworn spouse; set not  
thy sweet heart on proud array: Tom's a-cold.

*Lear.* What hast thou been?

*Edg.* A serving-man, proud in heart and  
mind; that curled my hair; wore gloves in my  
cap\*, served the lust of my mistress's heart,  
and did the act of darkness with her; swore  
as many oaths as I spake words, and broke  
them in the sweet face of heaven; one, that  
slept in the contriving of lust, and waked to do  
it: wine loved I deeply; dice dearly; and in  
woman, out-paramoured the Turk: False of  
heart, light of ear, bloody of hand: Hog in  
sloth, fox in stealth, wolf in greediness, dog in  
madness, lion in prey. Let not the creaking of  
shoes, nor the rustling of silks, betray thy poor  
heart to women: Keep thy foot out of brothels,  
thy hand out of plackets, thy pen from lenders'  
books, and defy the foul fiend.—Still through  
the hawthorn blows the cold wind: Says suum,  
mun, ha no nonny, dolphin my boy, my boy,  
sessa; let him trot by. [*Storm continues.*]

*Lear.* Why, thou were better in thy grave,  
than to answer with thy uncover'd body this  
extremity of the skies.—Is man no more than  
this? Consider him well: Thou owest the worm  
no silk, the beast no hide, the sheep no wool,  
the cat no perfume:—Hal! here's three of us  
are sophisticated!—Thou art the thing itself:  
unaccommodated man is no more but such a  
poor, bare, forked animal as thou art.—Off,  
off, you lendings:—Come, unbutton here†.

[*Tearing off his clothes.*]  
*Fool.* Pr'ythee, nuncle, be contented; this is  
a naughty night to swim in.—Now a little fire  
in a wild field were like an old lecher's heart;  
a small spark, all the rest of his body cold.—  
Look, here comes a walking fire.

*Edg.* This is the foul fiend Flibbertigibbet:  
he begins at curfew, and walks till the first cock;  
he gives the web and the pin‡, squints the eye,  
and makes the hare-lip; mildews the white  
wheat, and hurts the poor creature of earth.

*Saint Withold§ footed thrice the world¶;*

*He met the night-mare, and her nine-*

*Bid her alight, ¶ fold;*

*And her troth plight,*

*And, aroint thee¶, witch, aroint thee!*

*Kent.* How fares your grace?

*Enter GLOSTER, with a Torch.*

*Lear.* What's he?

*Kent.* Who's there? What is't you seek?

*Glo.* What are you there? Your names?

*Edg.* Poor Tom; that eats the swimming  
frog, the toad, the tadpole, the wall-newt, and  
the water\*\*; that in the fury of his heart, when  
the foul fiend rages, eats cow-dung for sallets;  
swallows the old rat, and the ditch-dog; drinks  
the green mantle of the standing pool; who is  
whipped from tything to tything†, and stocked,  
punished, and imprisoned; who hath had three  
suits to his back, six shirts to his body, horse  
to ride, and weapon to wear,—

*But mice and rats, and such small deer,  
Have been Tom's food for seven long year.*  
Beware my follower:—Peace, Smolkin‡, peace,  
thou fiend! [pany?

*Glo.* What, hath your grace no better con-

*Edg.* The price of darkness is a gentleman;  
Modo he's call'd, and Mabu§§. [so vile,

*Glo.* Our flesh and blood, my lord, is grown  
That it doth hate what gets it.

*Edg.* Poor Tom's a-cold.

*Glo.* Go in with me; my duty cannot suffer  
To obey in all your daughters' hard commands;  
Though their injunction be to bar my doors,  
And let this tyrannous night take hold upon you;  
Yet have I ventured to come seek you out,  
And bring you where both fire and food is  
ready. [sopher:—

*Lear.* First let me talk with this philo-  
sopher:—What is the cause of thunder?

*Kent.* Good my lord, take his offer;

Go into the house. [Theban:

*Lear.* I'll talk a word with this same learned  
What is your study? [vermin.

*Edg.* How to prevent the fiend, and to kill

*Lear.* Let me ask you one word in private.

*Kent.* Importune him once more to go, my  
His wits begin to unsettle. [lord.

*Glo.* Canst thou blame him? [Kent!—

His daughters seek his death:—Ah, that good  
He said it would be thus:—Poor banish'd man!—  
Thou sayst the king grows mad; I'll tell thee,  
friend,

I am almost mad myself; I had a son, [life,  
Now outlaw'd from my blood; he sought my  
But lately, very late; I loved him, friend,—  
No father his son dearer: true to tell thee,

[*Storm continues.*]  
The grief hath crazed my wits. What a night's  
I do beseech your grace,— [this!

*Lear.* O, cry you mercy,

Noble philosopher, your company.

*Edg.* Tom's a-cold. [thee warm.

*Glo.* In, fellow, there, to the hovel; keep

*Lear.* Come, let's in all.

*Kent.* This way, my lord.

*Lear.* With him;

I will keep still with my philosopher.

*Kent.* Good my lord, soothe him; let him

*Glo.* Take him you on. [take the fellow.

\* It was the custom to wear gloves in the hat, as the favour of a mistress.

† The words *unbutton here*, are probably only a marginal direction crept into the matter.

‡ Diseases of the eye. § A saint said to protect his devotees from the disease called  
the *night-mare*. ¶ Wild downs, so called in various parts of England. ¶ Avaunt.

\*\* *i. e.*, The water-newt. †† A tything is a division of a county. ‡‡ Name of a spirit.

§§ The chief devil.

*Kent.* Sirrah, come on; go along with us.

*Lear.* Come, good Athenian.

*Glo.* No words, no words;

*Hush.* [came,

*Edg. Child \* Rowland to the dark tower*

*His word was still,—Fie, foh, and fum,*

*I smell the blood of a British man.*

[*Exeunt.*

# SCENE V. A Room in Gloster's Castle.

*Enter CORNWALL and EDMUND.*

*Corn.* I will have my revenge, ere I depart his house.

*Edm.* How, my lord, I may be censured, that nature thus gives way to loyalty, something fears me to think of.

*Corn.* I now perceive, it was not altogether your brother's evil disposition made him seek his death; but a provoking merit, set a-work by a reproveable badness in himself.

*Edm.* Most malicious is my fortune, that I must repent to be just! 'This is the letter he spoke of, which approves him an intelligent party to the advantages of France. O heavens! that this treason were not, or not I the detector!

*Corn.* Go with me to the duchess.

*Edm.* If the matter of this paper be certain, you have mighty business in hand.

*Corn.* True, or false, it hath made thee earl of Gloster. Seek out where thy father is, that he may be ready for our apprehension.

*Edm.* [Aside.] If I find him comforting the king, it will stuff his suspicion more fully.—I will persevere in my course of loyalty, though the conflict be sore between that and my blood.

*Corn.* I will lay trust upon thee; and thou shalt find a dearer father in my love. [*Exeunt.*

# SCENE VI. A Chamber in a Farm-House adjoining the Castle.

*Enter GLOSTER, LEAR, KENT, Fool, and EDMUND.*

*Glo.* Here is better than the open air; take it thankfully: I will piece out the comfort with what addition I can: I will not be long from you.

*Kent.* All the power of his wits has given way to his impatience:—The gods reward your kindness! [*Exit GLOSTER.*

*Edg.* Frateretto calls me; and tells me, Nero is an angler in the lake of darkness. Pray, innocent†, and beware the foul fiend.

*Fool.* Prythee, nuncle, tell me, whether a madman be a gentleman, or a yeoman?

*Lear.* A king, a king!

*Fool.* No; he's a yeoman, that has a gentleman to his son: for he's a mad yeoman, that sees his son a gentleman before him.

*Lear.* To have a thousand with red burning Come hissing in upon them:— [spits

*Edg.* The foul fiend bites my back.

*Fool.* He's mad, that trusts in the tameness of a wolf, a horse's health, a boy's love, or a whore's oath. [straight:—

*Lear.* It shall be done, I will arraign them Come, sit thou here, most learned justicer:—

[To EDMUND.

Thou, sapient sir, sit here. [To the Fool.]—

Now, you she foxes!—

*Edg.* Look, where he stands and glares†!— Wantest thou eyes at trial, madam?

*Come o'er the bourns, Bessy, to me:—*

*Fool.* Her boat hath a leak,

*And she must not speak*

*Why she dares not come o'er to thee.*

*Edg.* The foul fiend haunts poor Tom in the voice of a nightingale. *Hopdance* cries in Tom's belly for two white herrings. Croak not, black angel; I have no food for thee.

*Kent.* How do you, sir? Stand you not so amazed:

Will you lie down and rest upon the cushions?

*Lear.* I'll see their trial first:—Bring in the evidence.—

Thou robed man of justice, take thy place; [To EDMUND.

And thou, his yoke-fellow of equity, [To the Fool.

Bench by his side:—You are of the commission, Sit you too. [To KENT.

*Edg.* Let us deal justly.

*Sleepest, or wakest thou, jolly shepherd?*

*Thy sheep be in the corn;*

*And for one blast of thy minikin mouth,*

*Thy sheep shall take no harm.*

*Pur!* the cat is grey.

*Lear.* Arraign her first; tis Goneril. I here take my oath before this honourable assembly, she kicked the poor king her father.

*Fool.* Come hither, mistress; Is your name Goneril?

*Lear.* She cannot deny it.

*Fool.* Cry you mercy, I took you for a joint-stool.

*Lear.* And here's another, whose warp'd looks proclaim [there!

What store her heart is made of.—Stop her Arms, arins, sword, fire!—Corruption in the place! False justicer, why hast thou let her scape?

*Edg.* Bless thy five wits!

*Kent.* O pity!—Sir, where is the patience That you so oft have boasted to retain? [now,

*Edg.* My tears begin to take his part so much,

They'll mar my counterfeiting. [Aside.

*Lear.* The little dogs and all, [at me.

Tray, Blanch, and Sweat-heart, see, they bark

*Edg.* Tom will throw his head at them:—

*Avant, you curs!*

*Be thy mouth or black or white,*

*Tooth that poisons if it bite;*

*Mastiff, grey-hound, mongrel grim,*

*Hound, or spaniel, brach, or lym||;*

\* *Child* is an old term for knight.

† Addressed to the Fool, who were anciently called Innocents.

‡ Edgar is speaking in the character of a madman, who thinks he sees the fiend.

§ Brook or rivulet.

|| A blood-hound.



Or bobtail tike, or trundle-tail ;  
 Toin will make them weep and wail :  
 For, with throwing thus my head,  
 Dogs leap the hatch, and all are fled.  
 D, de, de de. Sessa. Come, march to wakes  
 and fairs, and market towns :—Poor Tom, thy  
 horn is dry.

*Lear.* Then let them anatomize Regan, see  
 what breeds about her heart: Is there any  
 cause in nature, that makes these hard hearts ?  
 —You, sir, I entertain you for one of my hun-  
 dred; only, I do not like the fashion of your  
 garments: you will say, they are Persian  
 attire; but let them be changed. [To EDGAR.

*Kent.* Now, good my lord, lie here, and  
 rest awhile.

*Lear.* Make no noise, make no noise; draw  
 the curtains: So, so, so: We'll go to supper  
 i' the morning: So, so, so.

*Fool.* And I'll go to bed at noon.

*Re-enter GLOSTER.*

*Glo.* Come hither, friend: Where is the  
 king my master?

*Kent.* Here, sir; but trouble him not, his  
 wits are gone. [thy arms;

*Glo.* Good friend, I pr'ythee take him in  
 I have o'er-heard a plot of death upon him:  
 There is a litter ready; lay him in't,  
 And drive towards Dover, friend, where thou  
 shalt meet [master:

Both welcome and protection. Take up thy  
 If thou shouldst dally half an hour, his life,  
 With thine, and all that offer to defend him,  
 Stand in assured loss: Take up, take up;  
 And follow me, that will to some provision  
 Give thee quick conduct.

*Kent.* Oppress'd nature sleeps:— [senses,  
 This rest might yet have balm'd thy broken  
 Which, if convenience will not allow,  
 Stand in hard cure.—Come, help to bear thy  
 master;

Thou must not stay behind. [To the Fool.

*Glo.* Come, come, away.

[*Exeunt KENT, GLOSTER, and the Fool,*  
*bearing off the King.*

*Edg.* When we our betters see bearing our  
 woes,

We scarcely think our miseries our foes.  
 Who alone suffers, suffers most i' the mind;  
 Leaving free things, and happy shows, behind:  
 But then the mind much sufferance doth o'er-  
 skip,

When grief hath mates, and bearing fellowship.  
 How light and portable my pain seems now,  
 When that, which makes me bend, makes the  
 king bow;

He childed, as I father'd!—Tom, away:  
 Mark the high noises\*; and thyself bewray†,  
 When false opinion, whose wrong thought de-  
 files thee,

In thy just proof, repeals, and reconciles thee.  
 What will hap more to-night, safe scape the  
 king!

Lark, lark

[*Exit.*

# SCENE VII. A Room in Gloster's Castle.

*Enter CORNWALL, REGAN, GONERIL,  
 EDMUND, and Servants.*

*Corn.* Post speedily to my lord your hus-  
 band; show him this letter:—the army of  
 France is landed:—Seek out the villain Glos-  
 ter.

[*Exeunt some of the Servants.*

*Reg.* Hang him instantly.

*Gon.* Pluck out his eyes.

*Corn.* Leave him to my displeasure. Edmund,  
 keep you our sister company; the revenges  
 we are bound to take upon your traitorous  
 father, are not fit for your beholding. Advise  
 the duke, where you are going, to a most festi-  
 nate preparation; we are bound to the like.  
 Our posts shall be swift, and intelligent betwixt  
 us. Farewell, dear sister;—farewell, my lord  
 of Gloster‡.

*Enter Steward.*

How now? Where's the king? [him convey:

*Stew.* My lord of Gloster hath convey'd  
 Some five or six and thirty of his knights,  
 Hot questrists§ after him, met him at gate;  
 Who, with some other of the lord's dependants,  
 Are gone with him towards Dover; where  
 To have well-arm'd friends. [they boast

*Corn.* Get horses for your mistress.

*Gon.* Farewell, sweet lord, and sister.

[*Exeunt GONERIL and EDMUND.*

*Corn.* Edmund, farewell.—Go, seek the  
 traitor Gloster,

Pinion him like a thief; bring him before us:

[*Exeunt other Servants.*

Though well we may not pass upon his life  
 Without the form of justice; yet our power  
 Shall do a courtesy|| to our wrath, which men  
 May blame, but not control. Who's there?  
 The traitor?

*Re-enter Servants, with GLOSTER.*

*Reg.* Ingrateful fox! 'tis he.

*Corn.* Bind fast his corky¶ arms.

*Glo.* What mean your graces?—Good my  
 friends, consider

You are my guests: do me no foul play, friends.

*Corn.* Bind him, I say. [Servants bind him.

*Reg.* Hard, hard:—O filthy traitor!

*Glo.* Unmerciful lady as you are, I am none.

*Corn.* To this chair bind him:—Villain, thou  
 shalt find— [REGAN plucks his beard.

*Glo.* By the kind gods, 'tis most ignobly done  
 To pluck me by the beard.

*Reg.* So white, and such a traitor.

*Glo.* Naughty lady,  
 These hairs, which thou dost ravish from my  
 chin, host;

Will quicken\*\*, and accuse thee: I am your  
 With robbers' hands, my hospitable favours††  
 You should not ruffle thus. What will you do?

*Corn.* Come, sir, what letters had you late  
 from France? [truth.

*Reg.* Be simple-answer'd, for we know the  
*Corn.* And what confederacy have you with  
 Late footed in the kingdom? [the traitors

\* The great events that are approaching.  
 Meaning Edmund invested with his father's title.

† Deceitful.

\*\* Live.

† Betray, discover.

§ Inquirers.

|| Bend to our wrath.

†† Features.

*Reg.* To whose hands have you sent the  
Speak. [lunatic king?

*Glo.* I have a letter guessingly set down,  
Which came from one that's of a neutral heart,  
And not from one opposed.

*Corn.* Cunning.

*Reg.* And false.

*Corn.* Where hast thou sent the king?

*Glo.* To Dover.

*Reg.* Wherefore  
To Dover? Wast thou not charged at thy peril—

*Corn.* Wherefore to Dover? Let him first  
answer that. [stand the course.

*Glo.* I am tied to the stake, and I must  
*Reg.* Wherefore to Dover?

*Glo.* Because I would not see thy cruel nails  
Pluck out his poor old eyes; nor thy fierce sister  
In his anointed flesh stick boarish fangs.

The sea, with such a storm as his bare head  
In hell-black night endured, would have buoy'd  
up, [heart,

And quench'd the stelled \* fires: yet, poor old  
He help the heavens to rain.

If wolves had at thy gate howl'd that stern  
time, [the key;

Thou shouldst have said, *Good porter, turn*  
All cruels else subscribed †:—But I shall see  
The winged vengeance overtake such children.

*Corn.* See it shalt thou never:—Fellows,  
hold the chair:

Upon these eyes of thine I'll set my foot.

[*GLOSTER is held down in his Chair,*  
*while CORNWALL plucks out one of*  
*his Eyes, and sets his Foot on it.*

*Glo.* He, that will think to live till he be old,  
Give me some help: O cruel! O ye gods!

*Reg.* One side will mock another; the other

*Corn.* If you see vengeance,— [too.

*Serv.* Hold your hand, my lord:

I have served you ever since I was a child;  
But better service have I never done you,  
Than now to bid you hold.

*Reg.* How now, you dog?

*Serv.* If you did wear a beard upon your chin,  
I'd shake it on this quarrel; What do you mean?

*Corn.* My villain! [*Draws, & runs at him.*

*Serv.* Nay, then come on, and take the  
chance of anger.

[*Draws. They fight. CORN. is wounded.*

*Reg.* Give me thy sword. [*To another Serv.*]

A peasant stand up thus!

[*Snatches a Sword, comes behind, and*  
*stabs him.* [one eye left

*Serv.* O, I am slain!—My lord, you have  
To see some mischief on him:—O! [*Dis.*

*Corn.* Lest it see more, prevent it:—Out,  
Where is thy lustre now? [vile jelly!

[*Tears out GLOSTER's other Eye, and*  
*throws it on the Ground.*

*Glo.* All dark and comfortless. Where's  
my son Edmund?

Edmund, enkindle all the sparks of nature,  
To quit ‡ this horrid act.

*Reg.* Out, treacherous villain!  
Thou call'st on him that hates thee: it was he  
That made the overture § of thy treasons to us;  
Who is too good to pity thee.

*Glo.* O my follies!

Then Edgar was abused.—

Kind gods, forgive me that, and prosper him!

*Reg.* Go, thrust him out at gates, and let  
him smell [look you?

His way to Dover.—How is't, my lord? How

*Corn.* I have received a hurt:—Follow me,  
lady.—

Turn out that eyeless villain;—throw this slave  
Upon the dunghill.—Regan, I bleed apace:

Untimely comes this hurt: Give me your arm.

[*Exit CORN. led by REGAN;—Servants*  
*unbind GLOSTER, and lead him out.*

1 *Serv.* I'll never care what wickedness I do,  
If this man comes to good.

2 *Serv.* If she live long,  
And, in the end, meet the old course of death,  
Women will all turn monsters.

1 *Serv.* Let's follow the old earl, and get the  
Bedlam || [madness

To lead him where he would; his roguish  
Allows itself to any thing. [whites of eggs,

2 *Serv.* Go thou; I'll fetch some flax, and  
To apply to his bleeding face. Now, heaven

help him! [*Exeunt severally.*

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. The Heath.

*Enter EDGAR.*

*Edg.* Yet better thus, and known to be con-  
temn'd, [worst,  
Than still contemn'd and flatter'd ¶. To be  
The lowest and most dejected thing of fortune,  
Stands still in esperance \*\*, lives not in fear:  
The lamentable change is from the best;  
The worst returns to laughter. Welcome then,  
Thou unsubstantial air, that I embrace!  
The wretch, that thou hast blown unto the  
worst, [here?—  
Owes nothing to thy blasts.—But who comes

*Enter GLOSTER, led by an old Man.*

My father, poorly led?—World, world, O world!  
But that thy strange mutations †† make us hate  
Life would not yield to age. [thee,

*Old M.* O, my good lord, I have been your  
tenant, and your father's tenant, these fourscore  
years. [gone:

*Glo.* Away, get thee away; good friend, be  
Thy comforts can do me no good at all,  
Thee they may hurt.

*Old M.* Alack, sir, you cannot see your way.

*Glo.* I have no way, and therefore want no  
eyes;

I stumbled when I saw: Full oft 'tis seen,

\* Starred. † Yielded, submitted to the necessity of the occasion. ‡ Requite.

§ Laid open. || Madman. ¶ i. e., It is better to be thus contemn'd and know it, than  
to be flattered by those who secretly contemn us. \*\* In hope. †† Changes.

Our mean secures us; and our mere defects  
Prove our commodities.—Ah, dear son Edgar,  
The food of thy abused father's wrath!  
Might I but live to see thee in my touch,  
I'd say, I'd eyes again?

*Old M.* How now? Who's there?

*Edg. [Aside.]* O gods! Who is't can say,  
*I am at the worst!*

I am worse than e'er I was.

*Old M.* 'Tis poor mad Tom.

*Edg. [Aside.]* And worse I may be yet:  
The worst is not,

So long as we can say, *This is the worst.*

*Old M.* Fellow, where goest?

*Glo.* Is it a beggar-man?

*Old M.* Madman and beggar too. [not beg.]

*Glo.* He has some reason, else he could  
P' the last night's storm I such a fellow saw;  
Which made me think a man a worm: My son  
Came then into my mind; and yet my mind  
Was then scarce friends with him: I have  
heard more since:

As flies to wanton boys, are we to the gods;  
They kill us for their sport.

*Edg.* How should this be?—  
Bad is the trade must play the fool to sorrow,  
Angering itself and others. [*Aside.*—Bless  
thee, master!

*Glo.* Is that the naked fellow?

*Old M.* Ay, my lord.

*Glo.* Then, pr'ythee, get thee gone: If, for  
my sake,

Thou wilt o'ertake us, hence a mile or twain,  
I'll the way to Dover, do it for ancient love;  
And bring some covering for this naked soul,  
Whom I'll entreat to lead me.

*Old M.* Alack, sir, he's mad.

*Glo.* 'Tis the time's plague, when madmen  
lead the blind.

Do as I bid thee, or rather do thy pleasure;  
Above the rest, be gone. [have,

*Old M.* I'll bring him the best 'parel that I  
Come on't what will. [*Erit.*

*Glo.* Sirrah, naked fellow!

*Edg.* Poor Tom's a-cold—I cannot danb\*  
it further. [*Aside.*

*Glo.* Come hither, fellow.

*Edg. [Aside.]* And yet I must.—Bless thy  
sweet eyes, they bleed.

*Glo.* Knowst thou the way to Dover?

*Edg.* Both stile and gate, horse-way, and  
foot path. Poor Tom hath been scared out of  
his good wits: Bless the good man from the  
foul fiend! Five fiends have been in poor Tom  
at once; of lust, as *Obidicut*; *Hobbididence*,  
prince of dumbness; *Mahu*, of stealing; *Modo*,  
of murder; and *Flibbertigibbet*, of mopping  
and mowing; who since possesses chamber-  
maids and waiting-women. So, bless thee,  
master!

*Glo.* Here, take this purse, thou whom the  
heaven's plagues  
Have humbled to all strokes: that I am wretched  
Makes thee the happier:—Heavens, deal so  
still!

Let the superfluous, and lust-dieted man,  
That slaves your ordinance, that will not see  
Because he doth not feel, feel your power  
So distribution should undo excess, [quickly.  
And each man have enough.—Dost thou

*Edg.* Ay, master. [know Dover?

*Glo.* There is a cliff, whose high and bending  
Looks fearfully in the confined deep: [head  
Bring me but to the very brim of it,  
And I'll repair the misery thou dost bear,  
With something rich about me: from that place  
I shall no leading need.

*Edg.* Give me thy arm;

Poor Tom shall lead thee. [*Ereunt.*

## SCENE II. Before the Duke of Albany's Palace.

*Enter GONERIL and EDMUND; Steward  
meeting them.*

*Gon.* Welcome, my lord: I marvel, our mild  
husband [master?

Not met us on the way:—Now, where's your  
*Stew.* Madam, within; but never man so  
changed;

I told him of the army that was landed;  
He smiled at it: I told him, you were coming;  
His answer was, *The worse*: of Gloster's trea-  
And of the loyal service of his son, [chery,  
When I inform'd him, then he call'd me sot;  
And told me, I had turn'd the wrong side out:—  
What most he should dislike, seems pleasant  
What like, offensive. [to him;

*Gon.* Then shall you go no further.  
[To EDMUND.

It is the cowish terror of his spirit,  
That dares not undertake: he'll not feel wrongs,  
Which tie him to an answer: Our wishes, on  
the way, [brother:

May prove effects†. Back, Edmund, to my  
Hasten his musters, and conduct his powers:  
I must change arms at home, and give the distaff  
Into my husband's hands. This trusty servant  
Shall pass between us: ere long, you are like  
to hear,

If you dare venture in your own behalf,  
A mistress's command. Wear this; spare  
speech; [Giving a favour.

Decline your head: this kiss, if it durst speak,  
Would stretch thy spirits up into the air;—  
Conceive, and fare thee well.

*Edm.* Yours in the ranks of death.

*Gon.* My most dear Gloster!  
[Exit EDMUND.

O, the difference of man, and man! i o thee  
A woman's services are due; my fool  
Usurps my bed.

*Stew.* Madam, here comes my lord.  
[Exit Steward.

*Enter ALBANY.*

*Gon.* I have been worth the whistle§.

*Alb.* O Goneril!

You are not worth the dust which the rude wind  
Blows in your face—I fear your disposition;  
That nature, which contemns its origin,  
Cannot be border'd certain in itself;

\* Disguise. † i. e., To make it subject to us, instead of acting in obedience to it.

‡ i. e., Our wishes on the road may be completed.

§ Worth calling for.



She that herself will sliver \* and disbranch  
From her material sap, perforce must wither,  
And come to deadly use.

*Gon.* No more; the text is foolish. [vile:  
*Alb.* Wisdom and goodness to the vile seem  
Filth's savour but themselves. What have you  
done?

Tigers, not daughters, what have you perform'd?  
A father, and a gracious aged man,  
Whose reverence the head-lugg'd bear would  
lick, [maddened.

Most barbarous, most degenerate! have you  
Could my good brother suiter you to do it?  
A man, a prince, by him so benefited?

If that the heavens do not their visible spirits  
Send quickly down to tame these vile offences,  
'Twill come,

Humanity must perforce prey on itself,  
Like monsters of the deep.

*Gon.* Milk-liver'd man!  
That bearest a cheek for blows, a head for  
wrongs;

Who hast not in thy brows an eye discerning  
Thine honour from thy suffering; that not  
know'st,

Fools do those villains pity, who are punish'd  
Ere they have done their mischief. Where's  
thy drum? [land;

France spreads his banners in our noiseless  
With plumed helm thy slayer begins threats;  
Whilst thou, a moral fool, sit'st still, and criest,  
*Alack! why does he so?*

*Alb.* See thyself, devil!  
Proper deformity seems not in the fiend  
So horrid, as in woman.

*Gon.* O vain fool! [for shame,  
*Alb.* Thou changed and self-cover'd thing,  
Be-monster not thy feature. Were it my fitness

To let these hands obey my blood t,  
They are apt enough to dislocate and tear  
Thy flesh and bones:—Howe'er thou art a fiend,  
A woman's shape doth shield thee.

*Gon.* Marry, your manhood now!

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Alb.* What news? [wall's dead,

*Mess.* O, my good lord, the duke of Corn-  
slain by his servant, going to put out  
The other eye of Gloucester.

*Alb.* Gloucester's eyes! [remorse,  
*Mess.* A servant that he bred, thrill'd with  
Opposed against the act, bending his sword  
To his great master; who, thereat enraged,  
Flew on him, and amongst them fell'd him dead:  
But not without that harmful stroke, which since  
Hath pluck'd him after.

*Alb.* This shows you are above,  
You justicers, that these our nether crimes  
So speedily can venge!—But, O poor Gloucester!  
Lost he his other eye?

*Mess.* Both, both, my lord.—  
This letter, madam, craves a speedy answer;  
'Tis from your sister.

*Gon.* [Aside.] One way I like this well;  
But being widow, and my Gloucester with her,  
May all the building in my fancy pluck

Upon my hateful life: Another way,  
The news is not so tart.—I'll read and answer.  
[Exit.

*Alb.* Where was his son, when they did take  
his eyes?

*Mess.* Come with my lady hither.

*Alb.* He is not here.

*Mess.* No, my good lord; I met him back

*Alb.* Knows he the wickedness? [again.

*Mess.* Ay, my good lord; 'twas he inform'd  
against him; [punishment

And quit the house on purpose, that their  
Might have the freer course.

*Alb.* Gloucester, I live  
To thank thee for the love thou show'st the  
king, [friend;

And to revenge thine eyes.—Come hither,  
Tell me what more thou knowest. [Exit.

SCENE III. *The French Camp near Dover.*

*Enter KENT, and a Gentleman.*

*Kent.* Why the king of France is so suddenly  
gone back know you the reason?

*Gent.* Something he left imperfect in the state,  
Which since his coming forth is thought of;  
which [danger,

Imports to the kingdom so much fear and  
That his personal return was most required,  
And necessary.

*Kent.* Who hath he left behind him general?

*Gent.* The Mareschal of France, Monsieur  
le Fer.

*Kent.* Did your letters pierce the queen to  
any demonstration of grief?

*Gent.* Ay, sir; she took them, read them in  
my presence;

And now and then an ample tear trill'd down  
Her delicate cheek: it seem'd, she was a queen  
Over her passion; who, most rebel-like,  
Sought to be king o'er her.

*Kent.* O, then it moved her.

*Gent.* Not to a rage: patience and sorrow  
strove [seen

Who should express her goodliest. You have  
Sunshine and rain at once: her smiles and tears  
Were like a better day: Those happy smiles,  
That play'd on her ripe lip, seem'd not to  
know [thence,

What guests were in her eyes; which parted  
As pearls from diamonds dropp'd.—In brief,  
Would be a rarity most beloved, if all [sorrow  
Could so become it.

*Kent.* Made she no verbal question?

*Gent.* 'Faith, once, or twice, she heaved the  
name of father

Pantingly forth, as if it press'd her heart;  
Cried, *Sisters! sisters!—Shame of ladies!*  
*sisters!* [?the night?

*Kent!* father! sisters! What? 'the storm?  
*Let pity not be believed!*—There she shook  
The holy water from her heavenly eyes,  
And clamour moisten'd; then away she started  
To deal with grief alone.

*Kent.* It is the stars,  
The stars above us, govern our conditions;

\* Tear off.

† Inclination.

‡ Discourse, conversation.

§ i. e., Let not pity be supposed to exist.

¶ Dispositi<sup>o</sup>ns.

Else one self mate and mate could no bezet  
Such different issues. You spoke not with her

*Gent.* No. [since?

*Kent.* Was this before the king return'd?

*Gent.* No, since.

*Kent.* Well, sir; The poor distress'd Lear is  
i'the town;

Who sometime, in his better tune, remembers  
What we are come about, and by no means  
Will yield to see his daughter.

*Gent.* Why, good sir?

*Kent.* A sovereign shame so elbows him:  
his own unkindness, [her  
That stripp'd her from his benediction, turn'd  
To foreign casualties, gave her dear rights  
To his dog-hearted daughters,—these things  
sting

His mind so venomously, that burning shame  
Detains him from Cordelia.

*Gent.* Alack, poor gentleman!

*Kent.* Of Albany's and Cornwall's powers\*  
you heard not?

*Gent.* 'Tis so; they are afoot. [Lear,

*Kent.* Well, sir, I'll bring you to our master  
And leave you to attend him: some dear cause†  
Will in concealment wrap me up awhile;  
When I am known aright, you shall not grieve  
Lending me this acquaintance. I pray you, go  
Along with me. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE IV. The same. A Tent.

*Enter* CORDELIA, Physician, and Soldiers.

*Cor.* Alack, 'tis he; why, he was met even  
As mad as the vex'd sea; singing aloud; [now  
Crown'd with rank fumiter‡, and furrow  
weeds, [ers,  
With harlocks§, hemlock, nettles, cuckoo-flow-  
Darnel, and all the idle weeds that grow  
In our sustaining corn.—A century send forth;  
Search every acre in the high-grown field;  
And bring him to our eye. [Exit an Officer.]—

What can man's wisdom do,  
In the restoring his bereaved sense?  
He, that helps him, take all my outward worth.

*Phy.* There is means, madam:  
Our foster-nurse of nature is repose,  
The which he lacks; that to provoke in him,  
Are many simples operative, whose power  
Will close the eye of anguish.

*Cor.* All bless'd secrets,  
All you unpublish'd virtues of the earth,  
Spring with my tears! be aidant, and remediate,  
In the good man's distress!—Seek, seek for him;  
Lest his ungovern'd rage dissolve the life  
That wants the means to lead it||.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Madam, news;  
The British powers are marching hitherward.  
*Cor.* 'Tis known before; our preparation  
stands

In expectation of them.—O dear father,  
It is thy business that I go about;  
Therefore great France

My mourning, and important¶ tears, hath  
pitied.

No blown\*\* ambition doth our arms incite,  
But love, dear love, and our aged father's right:  
Soon may I hear, and see him. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE V. A Room in Gloster's Castle.

*Enter* REGAN and Steward.

*Reg.* But are my brother's powers set forth?

*Stew.* Ay, madam.

*Reg.* Himself

In person there?

*Stew.* Madam, with much ado:

Your sister is the better soldier. [at home?

*Reg.* Lord Edmund spake not with your lord

*Stew.* No, madam. [him?

*Reg.* What might import my sister's letter to

*Stew.* I know not, lady. [matter.

*Reg.* 'Faith, he is posted hence on serious  
It was great ignorance, Gloster's eyes being out,  
To let him live; where he arrives, he moves  
All hearts against us: Edmund, I think, is gone,  
In pity of his misery, to despatch

His nighted life††; moreover, to descry  
The strength o'the enemy. [my letter.

*Stew.* I must needs after him, madam, with

*Reg.* Our troops set forth to-morrow; stay

The ways are dangerous. [with us;

*Stew.* I may not, madam;

My lady charged my duty in this business.

*Reg.* Why should she write to Edmund?  
might not you

Transport her purposes by word? Felike,  
Something—I know not what:—I'll love thee  
Let me unseal the letter. [much,

*Stew.* Madam, I had rather—

*Reg.* I know, your lady does not love her  
husband;

I am sure of that: and, at her late being here,  
She gave strange celliads‡‡, and most speaking  
looks [bosom.

To noble Edmund: I know, you are of her  
*Stew.* I, madam? [know it:

*Reg.* I speak in understanding; you are, I  
Therefore, I do advise you, take this note§§:  
My lord is dead; Edmund and I have talk'd;  
And more convenient is he for my hand,  
Than for your lady's:—You may gather more|||.  
If you do find him, pray you, give him this;  
And when your mistress hears thus much from  
I pray, desire her call her wisdom to her. [you,  
So, fare you well.

If you do chance to hear of that blind traitor,  
Preferment falls on him that cuts him off.

*Stew.* 'Would I could meet him, madam! I  
What party I do follow. [would show

*Reg.* Fare thee well. [Exeunt.]

#### SCENE VI. The Country near Dover.

*Enter* GLOSTER, and EDGAR, dressed like a  
Peasant.

*Glo.* When shall we come to the top of that  
same hill?

\* Forces. † Important business.

‡ Furnitory. § Charlocks.

|| i. e., The reason which should guide it.

¶ Important. \*\* Inflated, swelling.

†† i. e., His life made dark as night.

‡‡ A cast, or significant glance of the eye.

§§ Observe what I am saying.

||| Infer more.

*Edg.* You do climb up it now: look, how we labour.

*Glo.* Methinks, the ground is even.

*Edg.* Horrible steep: Mark, do you hear the sea?

*Glo.* No, truly.

*Edg.* Why, then your other senses grow im-  
By your eyes' anguish. [perfect

*Glo.* So may it be, indeed: Methinks, thy voice is alter'd; and thou speakst  
In better phrase, and matter, than thou didst.

*Edg.* You are much deceived; in nothing  
But in my garments. [am I changed,

*Glo.* Methinks, you are better spoken.

*Edg.* Come on, sir; here's the place:—stand  
still.—How fearful

And dizzy 'tis, to cast one's eyes so low!  
The crows, and choughs\*, that wing the mid-  
way air,

Show scarce so gross as beetles: Half way down  
Hangs one that gathers samphire†; dreadful  
trade!

Methinks, he seems no bigger than his head:  
The fishermen, that walk upon the beach,  
Appear like mice; and yon tall anchoring bark,  
Diminish'd to her cock‡; her cock, a buoy  
Almost too small for sight: The murmuring  
surge,

That on the unnumber'd idle pebbles chafes,  
Cannot be heard so high:—I'll look no more;  
Lest my brain turn, and the deficient sight  
Topple§ down headlong.

*Glo.* Set me where you stand.

*Edg.* Give me your hand: You are now  
within a foot

Of the extreme verge: for all beneath the moon  
Would I not leap upright.

*Glo.* Let go my hand.

Here, friend, is another purse; in it a jewel  
Well worth a poor man's taking: Fairies, and  
gods,

Prosper it with thee! Go thou further off;  
Bid me farewell, and let me hear thee going.

*Edg.* Now, fare you well, good sir.

[Seems to go.

*Glo.* With all my heart.

*Edg.* Why I do trifle thus with his despair,  
Is done to cure it.

*Glo.* O you mighty gods!

This world I do renounce; and, in your sights,  
Shake patiently my great affliction off:

If I could bear it longer, and not fall  
To quarrel with your great opposess' wills,  
My snuff, and loathed part of nature, should  
Burn itself out. If Edgar live, O, bless him!—  
No, fellow, fare thee well.

[He leaps, and falls along.

*Edg.* Gone, sir? farewell.—

And yet I know not how conceit may rob  
The treasury of life, when life itself [thought,  
Yields to the theft: Had he been where he  
Is, this, had thought been past.—Alive, or dead?  
Ho, you sir! friend!—Hear you, sir?—speak!

Thus might he pass indeed ||:—Yet he revives:  
What are you, sir?

*Glo.* Away, and let me die.

*Edg.* Hadst thou been aught but gossamer-  
feathers, air,

So many fathom down precipitating,  
Thou hadst shiver'd like an egg: but thou dost  
breathe; [art sound,

Hast heavy substance; bleed'st not; speakst;  
Ten masts at each make not the altitude,  
Which thou hast perpendicularly fell;  
Thy life's a miracle: speak yet again.

*Glo.* But have I fallen, or no? [hourn ¶

*Edg.* From the dread summit of this chalky  
Look up a-height;—the shrill-gorged \*\* lark so  
Cannot be seen or heard: do but look up. [far

*Glo.* Alack, I have no eyes.—  
Is wretchedness deprived that benefit [fort,  
To end itself by death? 'Twas yet some com-  
When misery could beguile the tyrant's rage,  
And frustrate his proud will.

*Edg.* Give me your arm:  
Up: So;—How is't? Feel you your legs?

*Glo.* Too well, too well. [You stand.

*Edg.* This is above all strangeness.  
Upon the crown o' the cliff, what thing was that  
Which parted from you?

*Glo.* A poor unfortunate beggar.

*Edg.* As I stood here below, methought, his  
eyes

Were two full moons; he had a thousand noses,  
Horns whelk'd ††, and waved like the enridged  
sea;

It was some fiend: Therefore, thou happy  
father, [honours

Think that the clearest ‡‡ gods, who makethem  
Of men's impossibilities, have preserved thee.

*Glo.* I do remember now: henceforth I'll  
Affliction, till it do cry out itself, [bear

Enough, enough, and, die. That thing you  
speak of,

I took it for a man; often 'twould say,  
The fiend, the fiend: he led me to that place.

*Edg.* Bear free and patient thoughts.—But  
who comes here?

*Enter LEAR, fantastically dressed up with  
Flowers.*

The safer sense will ne'er accommodate  
His master thus.

*Lear.* No, they cannot touch me for coining;  
I am the king himself.

*Edg.* O thou side-piercing sight!

*Lear.* Nature's above art in that respect.  
There's your press-money. That fellow handles  
his bow like a crow keeper: draw me a clo-  
thier's §§ yard.—Look, look, a mouse! Peace,  
peace; this piece of toasted cheese will do't.  
There's my gauntlet; I'll prove it on a giant.  
Bring up the brown bills ||. O, well flown,  
bird.—i'the clout, i'the clout ¶¶: hewgh! Give  
the word \*\*\*.

*Edg.* Sweet marjoram.

*Lear.* Pass.

\* Daws. † A vegetable gathered for pickling. ‡ Her cock-boat. § Tumble.

|| Thus might he die in reality. ¶ i. e., This chalky boundary of England.

\*\* Shrill-throated. †† Twisted, convolved. ‡‡ The purest. §§ An arrow of a cloth

yard long. ||| Battle-axes. ¶¶ The white mark for archers to aim at. \*\*\* The watch word.



*Glo.* I know that voice.

*Lear.* Ha! Goneril! with a white beard!—They flatter'd me like a dog; and told me, I had white hairs in my beard, ere the black ones were there. To say *ay*, and *no*, to every thing I said.—*Ay* and no too was no good divinity. When the rain came to wet me once, and the wind to make me chatter; when the thunder would not peace at my bidding; there I found them, there I smelt them out. Go to, they are not men o'th'ir words: they told me I was every thing; 'tis a lie; I am not ague-proof.

*Glo.* The trick \* of that voice I do well  
Is't not the king? [remember:

*Lear.* Ay, every inch a king:  
When I do stare, see, how the subject quakes.  
I pardon that man's life; what was thy cause?—  
*Adultery.*

Thou shalt not die: Die for adultery! No:  
The wren goes to't, and the small gilded fly  
Does lecher in my sight.

Let copulation thrive, for Gloster's bastard son  
Was kinder to his father, than my daughters  
Got 'tween the lawful sheets.

To't, luxury, pell-mell, for I lack soldiers.—  
Behold you sinpering dame

Whose face between her forks presageth snow;  
That minces virtue, and does shake the head  
To hear of pleasure's name;

The fitchew, nor the soiled horse, goes to't  
With a more riotous appetite.

Down from the waist they are centaurs,  
Though women all above;

But 't to the girdle do the gods inherit,  
Beneath is all the fiend's: there's hell, there's  
darkness,

There is the sulphurous pit, burning, scalding,  
stench, consumption;—Fie, fie, fie! pah, pah!  
Give me an ounce of civet, good apothecary, to  
sweeten my imagination: there's money for thee.

*Glo.* O, let me kiss that hand!  
*Lear.* Let me wipe it first; it smells of mortality.

*Glo.* O ruin'd piece of nature! This great  
world [me?

Shall so wear out to naught.—Dost thou know  
*Lear.* I remember thine eyes well enough.

Dost thou squiny § at me? No, do thy worst,  
blind Cupid; I'll not love.—Read thou this  
challenge; mark but the penning of it.

*Glo.* Were all the letters suns, I could not  
see one.

*Edg.* I would not take this from report;—it is,  
And my heart breaks at it.

*Lear.* Read.  
*Glo.* What, with the case of eyes?

*Lear.* O, ho, are you there with me? No  
eyes in your head, nor no money in your purse?  
Your eyes are in a heavy case, your purse in a  
light: Yet you see how this world goes.

*Glo.* I see it feelingly.  
*Lear.* What, art mad? A man may see how  
this world goes, with no eyes. Look with

thine ears; see how yon' justice rails upon yon'  
simple thief. Hark, in thine ear: Change  
places; and, handy-dandy, which is the jus-  
tice, which is the thief?—Thou hast seen a far-  
mer's dog bark at a beggar?

*Glo.* Ay, sir.

*Lear.* And the creature run from the cur?  
There thou might'st behold the great image of  
authority: a dog's obeyed in office.

Thou rascal beadle, hold thy bloody hand:  
Why dost thou lash that whore? Strip thine  
own back;

Thou hotly linst't to use her in that kind  
For which thou whipp'st her. The usurer  
hangs the cozened.

Through tatter'd clothes small vices do appear;  
Robes, and furr'd gowns, hide all. Plate sin  
with gold,

And the strong lance of justice hurtless breaks:  
Arm it in rags, a pigmy's straw doth pierce it.  
None does offend, none, I say, none; I'll able  
'em:

Take that of me, my friend, who have the power  
To seal the accuser's lips. Get thee glass eyes;  
And, like a scurvy politician, seem [now, now:  
To see the things thou dost not.—Now, now,  
Pull off my boots:—harder, harder; so.

*Edg.* O, matter and impertinency mix'd!  
Reason in madness! [my eyes,

*Lear.* If thou wilt weep my fortunes, take  
I know thee well enough; thy name is Gloster:  
Thou must be patient; we came crying hither,  
Thou know'st, the first time that we smell the air.  
We wawl, and cry:—I will preach to thee;  
mark me.

*Glo.* Alack, alack the day! [are come  
*Lear.* When we are born, we cry, that we  
To this great stage of fools:—This a good block ¶?  
It were a delicate stratagem, to shoe  
A troop of horse with felt: I'll put it in proof;  
And when I have stolen upon these sons-in-law,  
Then, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill, kill.

*Enter a Gentleman, with Attendants.*  
*Gent.* O, here he is, lay hand upon him,—Sir,  
Your most dear daughter—

*Lear.* No rescue? What, a prisoner? I am even  
The natural fool of fortune.—Use me well;  
You shall have ransom. Let me have a surgeon,  
I am cut to the brains.

*Gent.* You shall have any thing.  
*Lear.* No seconds? All myself?

Why, this would make a man, a man of salt ¶,  
To use his eyes for garden water-pots,  
Ay, and for laying autumn's dust.

*Gent.* Good sir,— [What?  
*Lear.* I will die bravely, like a bridegroom:  
I will be jovial; come, come; I am a king,  
My masters, know you that!

*Gent.* You are a royal one, and we obey you.  
*Lear.* Then there's life in it. Nay, an you  
get it, you shall get it by running. Sa, sa, sa,  
sa. [Exit, running; Attendants follow.

*Gent.* A sight most pitiful in the meanest  
wretch, [daughter,  
Past speaking of in a king! Thou hast one

\* Likeness, manner.

† Only.

‡ Possess.

§ Look asquint.

*Block* anciently signified the head part of a hat.

¶ i. e., A man of tears.

Who redeems nature from the general curse  
Which twain have brought her to.

*Edg.* Hail, gentle sir.

*Gent.* Sir, speed you: What's your will?

*Edg.* Do you hear aught, sir, of a battle to-ward?

*Gent.* Most sure, and vulgar: every one  
Which can distinguish sound. [hears that,

*Edg.* But, by your favour,  
How near's the other army?

*Gent.* Near, and on speedy foot, the main  
Stands on the hourly thought\*.

*Edg.* I thank you, sir: that's all.

*Gent.* Though that the queen on special  
Her army is moved on. [cause is here,

*Edg.* I thank you, sir. [Exit *Gent.*

*Glo.* You ever-gentle gods, take my breath  
from me;

Let not my worse† spirit tempt me again  
To die before you please!

*Edg.* Well pray you, father.

*Glo.* Now, good sir, what are you?

*Edg.* A most poor man, made tame by for-  
tune's blows;

Who, by the art of known and feeling sorrows,  
Am pregnant to good pity. Give me your hand,  
I'll lead you to some biding.

*Glo.* Hearty thanks:

The bounty and the benison‡ of heaven  
To boot, and boot§!

*Enter Steward.*

*Stew.* A proclaim'd prize! most happy!  
That eyeless head of thine was first framed flesh  
To raise my fortunes.—Thou old unhappy  
traitor,

Briefly|| thyself remember:—The sword is out  
That must destroy thee.

*Glo.* Now let thy friendly hand  
Put strength enough to it. [*Edg.* opposes.

*Stew.* Wherefore, bold peasant,  
Darest thou support a pabliſh'd traitor? Hence;  
Lest that the infection of his fortune take  
Like hold on thee. Let go his arm. [Casation.

*Edg.* Ch'ill not let go, zir, without vurther  
Stew. Let go, slave, or thou diest.

*Edg.* Good gentleman, go your gait¶, and let  
poor volk pass. And ch'ud ha' been zwagger'd  
out of my life, 'twould not ha' been so long as  
'tis by a fortnight. Nay, come not near the  
old man; keep out, che vor'ye, or ise try  
whether your costard\*\* or my batt† be the  
harder: Ch'ill be plain with you.

*Stew.* Out, dunghill!

*Edg.* Ch'ill pick your teeth, zir: Come; no  
matter vor your foin††.

[They fight; and *Edg.* knocks him down.

*Stew.* Slave, thou hast slain me:—Villain,  
take my purse;

If ever thou wilt thrive, bury my body; [me,  
And give the letters, which thou find'st about  
To Edmund, earl of Gloster; seek him out  
Upon the British party:—O untimely death!

[Dies.

*Edg.* I know thee well: A serviceable villain;  
As dutious to the vices of thy mistress,  
As badness would desire.

*Glo.* What, is he dead?

*Edg.* Sit you down, father; rest you.—  
Let's see his pockets: these letters, that he  
speaks of, [sorry

May be my friends.—He's dead: I am only  
He had no other death's-man.—Let us see:  
Leave, gentle wax; and, manners, blame us not:  
To know our enemies' minds, we'd rip their  
Their papers, is more lawful§§. [hearts;

[Reads.] Let our reciprocal vows be re-  
membered. You have many opportunities  
to cut him off: if your will want not, time  
and place will be fruitfully offered. There  
is nothing done, if he return the conqueror:  
Then am I the prisoner, and his bed my  
gao!; from the loathed warmth whereof deli-  
ver me, and supply the place for your labour.

Your wife, (so I would say,) and your  
affectionate servant,

GONERIL.

O undistinguish'd space of woman's will!—  
A plot upon her virtuous husband's life;  
And the exchange, my brother!—Here, in the  
Thee I'll rake up||, the post unsanctified [sands,  
Of murderous lechers: and, in the mature time,  
With this ungracious paper strike the sight  
Of the death-practised duke: For him 'tis well,  
That of thy death and business I can tell.

[Exit *Edg.*, dragging out the body.

*Glo.* The king is mad: How stiff is my vile  
sense,

That I stand up, and have ingenious feeling  
Of my huge sorrows! Better I were distract:  
So should my thoughts be severed from my  
And woes, by wrong imaginations, lose [griefs;  
The knowledge of themselves.

*Re-enter Edg.*

*Edg.* Give me your hand:  
Far off, methinks, I hear the beaten drum.  
Come, father, I'll bestow you with a friend.

[Exeunt.

SCENE VII. A Tent in the French Camp.

*LEAR*, on a Bed, asleep: Physician, Gen-  
tleman, and others, attending.

*Enter Cordelia and Kent.*

*Cor.* O, thou good Kent, how shall I live, and  
work, [short,  
To match thy goodness? My life will be too  
And every measure fail me. [paid.

*Kent.* To be acknowledged, madam, is o'er-  
All my reports go with the modest truth;  
Nor more, nor clipp'd, but so.

*Cor.* Be better suited¶¶:  
These weeds are memories\*\*\* of those worser  
I prythee, put them off. [hours;

*Kent.* Pardon me, dear madam;  
Yet to be known, shortens my inate intent†††:  
My boon I make it, that you know me not,  
Till time and I think meet.

\* The main body is expected to be descried every hour. † Evil genius. ‡ Blessing.  
§ Reward, recompense. || Quickly recollect the offences of thy life. ¶ Go your way.

\*\* Head. †† Club. ††† Thrusts. §§ To rip their papers is more lawful. || I'll cover  
thee (the dead steward) in the sands. ¶¶ Dressed. \*\*\* Memorials. ††† Intent formed

Cor. Then be it so, my good lord.—How does the king? [To the Physician.]

Phys. Madam, sleeps still.

Cor. O you kind gods,

Cure this great breach in his abused nature! The untuned and jarring senses, O wind up, Of this child-change father!

Phys. So please your majesty, That we may wake the king? he hath slept long.

Cor. Be govern'd by your knowledge, and proceed

I' the sway of your own will. Is he array'd?

Gent. Ay, madam; in the heaviness of his We put fresh garments on him. [sleep,

Phys. Be by, good madam, when we do I doubt not of his temperance. [awake him;

Cor. Verv well. [music there.

Phys. Please you, draw near.—Louder the

Cor. O, my dear father! Restoration, hang Thy medicine on my lips; and let this kiss Repair those violent harms, that my two sisters Have in thy reverence made!

Kent. Kind and dear princess!

Cor. Had you not been their father, these white flakes

Had challenged pity of them. Was this a face, To be exposed against the warring winds?

To stand against the deep dread-bolted thunder? In the most terrible and nimble stroke

Of quick, cross lightning? to watch (poor perdu\*)! With this thin helm†? Mine enemy's dog,

Though he had bit me, should have stood that night [father,

Against my fire: And wast thou fain, poor To hovel thee with swine, and rogues forlorn,

In short and musty straw? Alack, alack! 'Tis wonder, that thy life and wits at once

Had not concluded all.—He wakes; speak to Phys. Madam, do you; 'tis fittest. [him.

Cor. How does my royal lord? How fares your majesty? [o'the grave:—

Lea. You do me wrong, to take me out Thou art a soul in bliss; but I am bound

Upon a wheel of fire, that mine own tears Do scald like molten lead.

Cor. Sir, do you know me?

Lea. You are a spirit, I know: When did

Cor. Still, still, far wide! [you die?

Phys. He's scarce awake; let him alone awhile.

Lea. Where have I been?—Where am I?—Fair day light? [pity,

I am mightily abused.—I should even die with To see another thus.—I know not what to say.—

I will not swear, these are my hands:—let's see; I feel this pin prick. Would I were assured Of my condition.

Cor. O, look upon me, sir, And hold your hands in benediction o'er me:—No, sir, you must not kneel.

Lea. Pray do not mock me: I am a very foolish fond old man,

Fourscore and upward; and, to deal plainly, I fear, I am not in my perfect mind: [man;

Methinks, I should know you, and know this Yet I am doubtful: for I am mainly ignorant

What place this is: and all the skill I have Remembers not these garments; nor I know not

Where I did lodge last night: Do not laugh at me, For, as I am a man, I think this lady

To be my child Cordelia.

Cor. And so I am, I am. [weep not;

Lea. Be your tears wet? Yes, faith. I pray, If you have poison for me, I will drink it.

I know, you do not love me; for your sisters Have, as I do remember, done me wrong:

You have some cause, they have not.

Cor. No cause, no cause.

Lea. Am I in France?

Kent. In your own kingdom, sir.

Lea. Do not abuse me. [great rage,

Phys. Be comforted, good madam: the You see, is cured in him: and yet it is danger

To make him even † o'er the time he has lost. Desire him to go in; trouble him no more,

Till further settling.

Cor. Will't please your highness walk?

Lea. You must bear with me: Pray now forget and forgive: I am old, and

foolish. [Exit LEAR, CORDELIA, PHYSICIAN, & Attendants.

Gent. Holds it true, sir,

That the duke of Cornwall was so slain?

Kent. Most certain, sir.

Gent. Who is conductor of his people?

Kent. As 'tis said,

The bastard son of Gloster.

Gent. They say Edgar,

His banish'd son, is with 'he earl of Kent In Germany.

Kent. Report is changeable.

'Tis time to look about; the powers ‡ o'the king— Approach apace. [dom

Gent. The arbitrement|| is like to be a bloody.

Fare you well, sir. [Exit.

Kent. My point and period will be thoroughly wronged.

Or well, or ill, as this day's battle's fought. [Exit.

## ACT V.

SCENE I. The Camp of the British Forces near Dover.

Enter, with Drums, and Colours, EDMUND,

REGAN, Officers, Soldiers, and others.

Edm. Know of the duke, if his last purpose Or, whether since he is advised by aught [hold;

To change the course: He's full of alteration, And self-reproving;—bring his constant pleasure ¶. [To an Officer, who goes out.

Reg. Our sister's man is certainly miscarried.

Edm. 'Tis to be doubted, madam.

Reg. Now, sweet lord,

\* The allusion is to the forlorn hope in an army, called, in French, *enfants perdus*.

† Thin covering of hair. ‡ To reconcile it to his apprehension. § Forces. || Decision.

¶ His settled resolution.



You know the goodness I intend upon you:  
Tell me,—but truly,—but then speak the truth,  
Do you not love my sister?

*Edm.* In honour'd love.

*Reg.* But have you never found my brother's  
To the forefended \* place? [way

*Edm.* That thought abuses† you.

*Reg.* I am doubtful that you have been con-  
junct

And bosom'd with her, as far as we call hers.

*Edm.* No, by mine honour, madam.

*Reg.* I never shall endure her: Dear my lord,  
Be not familiar with her.

*Edm.* Fear me not:—

She, and the duke her husband,——

*Enter ALBANY, GONERIL, and Soldiers.*

*Gon.* I had rather lose the battle, than that  
sister

Should loosen him and me. [*Aside.*

*Alb.* Our very loving sister, well be met.—  
Sir, this I hear,—The king is come to his

daughter,

With others, whom the rigour of our state  
Forced to cry out. Where I could not be honest,

I never yet was valiant: for this business,  
It toucheth us, as France invades our land,

Not holds† the king; with others, whom, I fear,  
Must just and heavy causes make oppose‡.

*Edm.* Sir, you speak nobly.

*Reg.* Why is this reason'd?

*Gon.* Combine together 'gainst the enemy:  
For these domestic and particular broils

Are not to question here.

*Alb.* Let us then determine  
With the ancient of war on our proceedings.

*Edm.* I shall attend you presently at your tent.

*Reg.* Sister, you'll go with us?

*Gon.* No.

*Reg.* 'Tis most convenient; pray you, go  
with us. [will go.

*Gon.* O, ho, I know the riddle: [*Aside.*] I  
As they are going out, *enter EDGAR, dis-*  
*guised.*

*Edg.* If e'er your grace had speech with man  
Hear me one word. [so poor,

*Alb.* I'll overtake you.—Speak.

[*Exit* EDMUND, REGAN, GONERIL,  
Officers, Soldiers and Attendants.

*Edg.* Before you fight the battle, ope this  
letter.

If you have victory, let the trumpet sound  
For him that brought it: wretched though I

seem,

I can produce a champion, that will prove  
What is avouched there: If you miscarry,

Your business of the world hath so an end,  
And machination ceases||. Fortune love you!

*Alb.* Stay till I have read the letter.

*Edg.* I wa's forbid it.  
When time shall serve, let but the herald cry,

And I'll appear again. [*Exit.*

*Alb.* Why, fare thee well; I will o'erlook  
thy paper.

*Re-enter EDMUND.*

*Edm.* The enemy's in view, draw up your  
powers. [forces,

Here is the guess of their true strength and  
By diligent discovery:—but your haste

Is now urged on you.

*Alb.* We will greet the time¶. [*Exit.*

*Edm.* To both these sisters have I sworn my  
Each jealous of the other, as the stung [love;

Are of the adder. Which of them shall I take?

Both? one? or neither? Neither can be enjoy'd,

If both remain alive; To take the widow,

Exasperates, makes mad her sister Goneril;

And hardly shall I carry out my side\*\*,

Her husband being alive. Now then, we'll use

His countenance for the battle; which being  
done,

Let her, who would be rid of him, devise  
His speedy taking off. As for the mercy

Which he intends to Lear, and to Cordelia,—

The battle done, and they within our power,

Shall never see his pardon: for my state

Stands on me to defend, not to debate. [*Exit.*

SCENE II. A Field between the two Camps.

*Alarum within.* Enter, with Drum and  
Colours, LEAR, CORDELIA, & their Forces;

and exeunt.

*Enter EDGAR and GLOSTER.*

*Edg.* Here, father, take the shadow of this tree  
For your good host; pray that the right may

If ever I return to you again, [thrive:

I'll bring you comfort.

*Glo.* Grace go with you, sir! [*Exit* EDG.  
*Alarums; afterwards a Retreat. Re-enter*

EDGAR.

*Edg.* Away, old man, give me thy hand,  
away;

King Lear hath lost, he and his daughter ta'en:  
Give me thy hand, come on.

*Glo.* No further, sir; a man may rot even  
here. [endure

*Edg.* What, in ill thoughts again? Men must  
Their going hence, even as their coming hither:

Ripeness is all††: Come on.

*Glo.* And that's true too. [*Exit.*

SCENE III. The British Camp near Dover.

*Enter, in Conquest, with Drum & Colours,*  
EDMUND; LEAR and CORDELIA, as Pri-

soners; Officers, Soldiers, &c.

*Edm.* Some officers take them away: good  
guard;

Until their greater pleasures first be known  
That are to censure‡ them.

*Cor.* We are not the first,  
Who, with best meaning, have incur'd the

worst,  
For thee, oppressed king, am I cast down;

Myself could else out-frown false fortune's  
frown. [sisters?

Shall we not see these daughters, and these

\* Forbidden.

† Imposes on you.

‡ i. e., Emboldens him.

§ Oppositi-

|| i. e., All designs against your life will have an end. ¶ Be ready to meet the o-

\*\* Make my party good.

†† i. e., To be ready prepared, is all.

‡‡ Pass judgment on them.

*Lear.* No, no, no, no! Come, let's away to prison:

We two alone will sing like birds i'the cage: When thou dost ask me blessing, I'll kneel down,

And ask of thee forgiveness: So we'll live, And pray, and sing, and tell old tales, and laugh At gilded butterflies, and hear poor rogues Talk of court news; and we'll talk with them too, [out;—

Who loses, and who wins; who's in, who's out, And take upon us the mystery of things, As if we were God's spies: And we'll wear out, In a wall'd prison, packs and sects of great ones, That ebb and flow by the moon.

*Edm.* Take them away.

*Lear.* Upon such sacrifices, my Cordelia, The gods themselves throw incense. Have I caught thee? [heaven,

He, that parts us, shall bring a brand from And fire us hence, like foxes. Wipe thine eyes; The gougiers\* shall devour them, flesh and fell, starve first.

Ere they shall make us weep: we'll see them Come. [*Exit LEAR and COR. guarded.*

*Edm.* Come hither, captain; hark.

Take thou this note; [*Giving a Paper.*] go, follow them to prison:

One step I have advanced thee; if thou dost As this instructs thee, thou dost make thy way To noble fortunes: Know thou this,—that men Are as the time is: to be tender-minded [ment Does not become a sword:—Thy great employ- Will not bear question; either say, thou'lt do't, Or thrive by other means.

*Off.* I'll do't, my lord.

*Edm.* About it; and write happy, when thou hast done.

Mark,—I say, instantly; and carry it so, As I have set it down.

*Off.* I cannot draw a cart, nor eat dried oats; If it be man's work, I will do it. [*Exit Officer.* *Flourish.* Enter *ALBANY, GOWERIL, REGAN, Officers, and Attendants.*

*Alb.* Sir, you have shown to-day your valiant strain, [tives

And fortune led you well: You have the cap- Who were the opposites of this day's strife: We do require them of you; so to use them, As we shall find their merits and our safety May equally determine.

*Edm.* Sir, I thought it fit To send the old and miserable king To some retention, and appointed guard; Whose age has charms in it, whose title more, To pluck the common bosom on his side, And turn our impress'd lances in our eyes Which do command them. With him I sent the queen;

My reason all the same; and they are ready To-morrow, or at further space, to appear Where you shall hold your session. At this time [friend:

We sweat and bleed: the friend hath lost his

And the best quarrels, in the heat, are cursed By those that feel their sharpness:— The question of Cordelia, and her father, Requires a fitter place.

*Alb.* Sir, by your patience, I hold you but a subject of this war, Not as a brother.

*Reg.* That's as we list to grace him Methinks, our pleasure might have been de- manded,

Ere you had spoke so far. Heled our powers; Bore the commission of my place and person; The which immediacy may well stand up, And call itself your brother.

*Gon.* Not so hot: In his own grace he doth exalt himself, More than in your advancement.

*Reg.* In my rights, By me invested, he compeers the best.

*Gon.* That were the most, if he should husband you.

*Reg.* Jesters do oft prove prophets.

*Gon.* Holloa, holloa! That eye, that told you so, look'd but a-squint.

*Reg.* Lady, I am not well; else I should answer

From a full flowing stomach.—General, Take thou my soldiers, prisoners, patrimony; Dispose of them, of me, the walls are thine: Witness the world, that I create thee here My lord and master.

*Gon.* Mean you to enjoy him?

*Alb.* The let-alone\*\* lies not in your good

*Edm.* Nor in thine, lord. [will.

*Alb.* Half-blooded fellow, yes.

*Reg.* Let the drum strike, and prove my title thine. [*To EDMUND.*

*Alb.* Stay yet; hear reason: Edmund, I arrest thee

On capital treason; and, in thy arrest, This gilded serpent: [*Pointing to GON.*]—for your claim, fair sister,

I bar it in the interest of my wife; 'Tis she, is sub-contracted to this lord, And I, her husband, contradict your bans. If you will marry, make your love to me, My lady is bespoken.

*Gon.* An interlude! [pet sound:

*Alb.* Thou art arm'd, Gloster:—Let the trumpet none appear to prove upon thy person, Thy heinous, manifest, and many treasons, There is my pledge; [*Throwing down a Glove.*]

I'll prove it on thy heart, Ere I taste bread, thou art in nothing less Than I have here proclaim'd thee.

*Reg.* Sick, O, sick!

*Gon.* If not, I'll ne'er trust poison. [*Aside.*

*Edm.* There's my exchange: [*Throwing down a Glove.*] what in the world he is

That names me traitor, villain-like he lies: Call by thy trumpet: he that dares approach, On him, on you, (who not?) I will maintain My truth and honour firmly.

*Alb.* A herald, ho!

\* The French disease. † Skin. ‡ Admit of debate. § To be discoursed of in greater privacy Authority to act on his own judgment. ¶ Alluding to the proverb, "Love being jealous makes a good eye look a-squint." \*\* The hinderance.

*Edm.* A herald, ho, a herald!

*Alb.* Trust to thy single virtue\*; for thy soldiers,  
All levied in my name, have, in my name,  
Took their discharge.

*Reg.* This sickness grows upon me.  
*Enter a Herald.*

*Alb.* She is not well; convey her to my tent.

[*Exit REGAN, led.*

Come hither, herald.—Let the trumpet sound,—  
And read out this.

*Off.* Sound, trumpet. [*A Trumpet sounds.*  
*Herald reads.*

*If any man of quality, or degree, within  
the lists of the army, will maintain upon  
Edmund, supposed earl of Gloster, that he  
is a manifold traitor, let him appear at the  
third sound of the trumpet: He is bold in  
his defence.*

*Edm.* Sound.

[1 Trumpet.

*Her.* Again.

[2 Trumpet.

*Her.* Again.

[3 Trumpet.

[*Trumpet answers within.*

*Enter EDGAR, armed, preceded by a  
Trumpet.*

*Alb.* Ask him his purposes, why he appears  
Upon this call o'the trumpet.

*Her.* What are you?  
Your name, your quality? and why you answer  
This present summons?

*Edg.* Know, my name is lost;  
By treason's tooth bare-gnawn, and canker-bit:  
Yet am I noble as the adversary  
I come to cope withal.

*Alb.* Which is that adversary?

*Edg.* What's he, that speaks for Edmund  
earl of Gloster?

*Edm.* Himself;—What sayst thou to him?

*Edg.* Draw thy sword;

That, if my speech offend a noble heart,  
Thy arm may do thee justice: here is mine.  
Behold, it is the privilege of mine honours,  
My oath, and my profession: I protest,—  
Maugre† thy strength, youth, place, and emi-  
nence,

Despite thy victor sword, and fire-new fortune,  
Thy valour, and thy heart,—thou art a traitor:  
False to thy gods, thy brother, and thy father;  
Conspirant† against this high illustrious prince;  
And, from the extremest upward of thy head,  
To the descent and dust beneath thy feet,  
A most toad-spotted traitor. Say thou, No,  
This sword, this arm, and my best spirits, are  
bent

To prove upon thy heart, whereto I speak,  
Thou liest.

*Edm.* In wisdom, I should ask thy name;†  
But, since thy outside looks so fair and warlike,  
And that thy tongue some 'say§ of breeding  
breathes,

What safe and nicely I might well delay  
By rule of knighthood, I disdain and spurn:  
Back do I toss these treasons to thy head;  
With the hell-hated lie o'erwhelm thy heart;

Which, (for they yet glance by, and scarcely  
bruise,)

This sword of mine shall give them instant way,  
Where they shall rest for ever.—Trumpets,  
speak.

[*Alarums. They fight. EDMUND falls.*

*Alb.* O save him, save him!

*Gon.* This is mere practice||, Gloster:  
By the law of arms, thou wast not bound to  
answer

An unknown opposite; thou art not vanquish'd,  
But cozen'd and beguiled.

*Alb.* Shut your mouth, dame,  
Or with this paper shall I stop it:—Hold, sir:—  
Thou worse than any name, read thine own  
evil:—

No tearing, lady: I perceive, you know it.

[*Gives the letter to EDMUND.*

*Gon.* Say, if I do; the laws are mine, not thine:  
Who shall arraign me for't?

*Alb.* Most monstrous!

Know'st thou this paper?

*Gon.* Ask me not what I know.

[*Exit GONERIL.*

*Alb.* Go after her: she's desperate; govern  
her. [*To an Officer, who goes out.*

*Edm.* What you have charged me with, that  
have I done; [out;

And more, much more: the time will bring it  
'Tis past, and so am I: But what art thou,  
That hast this fortune on me? If thou art noble,  
I do forgive thee.

*Edg.* Let's exchange charity.  
I am no less in blood than thou art, Edmund;  
If more, the more thou hast wrong'd me.

My name is Edgar, and thy father's son.  
The gods are just, and of our pleasant vices  
Make instruments to scourge us:

The dark and vicious place where thee he got,  
Cost him his eyes.

*Edm.* Thou hast spoken right, 'tis true;  
The wheel is come full circle; I am here.

*Alb.* Methought, thy very gait did prophesy  
A royal nobleness: I must embrace thee;  
Let sorrow split my heart, if ever I  
Did hate thee, or thy father!

*Edg.* Worthy prince,  
I know it well.

*Alb.* Where have you bid yourself?  
How have you known the miseries of your  
father? [brief tale;

*Edg.* By nursing them, my lord—List¶ a  
And, when 'tis told, O, that my heart would  
The bloody proclamation to escape, [burst!  
That follow'd me so near, (O, our lives' sweet-  
ness!

That with the pain of death we'd hourly die,  
Rather than die at once!) taught me to shift  
Into a madman's rags; to assume a semblance  
That very dogs disdain'd: and in this habit  
Met I my father with his bleeding rings,  
Their precious stones new-lost; became his  
guide, [despair;  
Led him, begg'd for him, saved him from

\* i. e., Valour.

† Notwithstanding.

‡ Because if his adversary was not of equal rank, Edmund might have declined the combat

§ Sample.

|| Stratagem.

¶ Hear.



Never (O fault!) reveal'd myself unto him,  
Until some half hour past, when I was arm'd,  
Not sure, though hoping, of this good success,  
I ask'd his blessing, and, from first to last,  
Told him my pilgrimage: But his flaw'd heart,  
(Alack, too weak the conflict to support!)  
'Twixt two extremes of passion, joy and grief,  
Burst smilingly.

*Edm.* This speech of yours hath moved me,  
And shall, perchance, do good: but speak  
you on;

You look as you had something more to say.

*Alb.* If there be more, more woful, hold it in;  
For I am almost ready to dissolve,  
Hearing of this.

*Edg.* This would have seem'd a period  
To such as love not sorrow; but another,  
To amplify too much, would make much more,  
And top extremity.

Whilst I was big in clamour, came there a man,  
Who having seen me in my worst estate,  
Shunn'd my abhorr'd society; but then, finding  
Who 'twas that so endured, with his strong arms  
He fasten'd on my neck, and bellow'd out  
As he'd burst heaven; threw him on my father;  
Told the most piteous tale of Lear and him,  
That ever ear received: which in recounting  
His grief grew puissant, and the strings of life  
Began to crack: Twice then the trumpet  
And there I left him tranced. [sounded,

*Alb.* But who was this? [disguise  
*Edg.* Kent, sir, the banish'd Kent; who in  
Follow'd his enemy king, and did him service  
Improper for a slave.

*Enter a Gentleman hastily, with a bloody Knife.*

*Gent.* Help! help! O help!

*Edg.* What kind of help?

*Alb.* Speak, man.

*Edg.* What means that bloody knife?

*Gent.* 'Tis hot, it smokes;  
It came even from the heart of—

*Alb.* Who, man? speak.

*Gent.* Your lady, sir, your lady: and her  
By her is poison'd; she confesses it. [sister

*Edm.* I was contracted to them both; all three  
Now marry in an instant.

*Alb.* Produce their bodies, be they alive or  
dead!— [tremble,

This judgment of the heavens, that makes us  
Touches us not with pity. [*Exit Gentleman.*

*Enter KENT.*

*Edg.* Here comes Kent, sir.

*Alb.* O! it is he.

The time will not allow the compliment,  
Which very manners urges.

*Kent.* I am come  
To bid my king and master ay \* good night;  
Is he not here?

*Alb.* Great thing of us forgot!—  
Speak, Edmund, where's the king? and where's  
Seest thou this object, Kent? [Cordelia?—

[*The Bodies of GONERIL and REGAN are brought in.*

*Kent.* Alack, why thus?

*Edm.* Yet Edmund was beloved:  
The one the other poison'd for my sake,  
And after slew herself.

*Alb.* Even so.—Cover their faces. [to do,  
*Edm.* I pant for life.—Some good I mean  
Despite of mine own nature. Quickly send,—  
Be brief in it,—to the castle; for my writ  
Is on the life of Lear, and on Cordelia:—  
Nay, send in time.

*Alb.* Run, run, O, run—

*Edg.* To who, my lord?—Who has the office?  
Thy token of reprieve. [send

*Edm.* Well thought on; take my sword,  
Give it the captain.

*Alb.* Haste thee, for thy life. [*Exit Edm.*

*Edm.* He hath commission from thy wife  
To hang Cordelia in the prison, and [and me,  
To lay the blame upon her own despair,  
That she fordid herself.

*Alb.* The gods defend her! Bear him hence  
awhile. [EDMUND is borne off

*Enter LEAR, with CORDELIA dead in his arms; EDGAR, Officer, and others.*

*Lear.* Howl, howl, howl!—O, you are  
men of stones;

Had I your tongues and eyes, I'd use them so  
That heaven's vault should crack:—O, she is  
gone for ever!—

I know when one is dead, and when one lives;  
She's dead as earth:—Lend me a looking-glass;  
If that her breath will mist or stain the stone,  
Why, then, she lives.

*Kent.* Is this the promised end?†

*Edg.* Or image of that horror?

*Alb.* Fall, and cease!‡

*Lear.* This feather stirs; she lives! if it be so,  
It is a chance that does redeem all sorrows  
That ever I have felt.

*Kent.* O my good master! [*Kneeling.*

*Lear.* Pr'ythee, away.

*Edg.* 'Tis noble Kent, your friend.

*Lear.* A plague upon you, murderers, traitors,  
all! [ever!—

I might have saved her; now she's gone for  
Cordelia, Cordelia, stay a little. Ha!

What is't thou sayst?—Her voice was ever soft,  
Gentle, and low; an excellent thing in woman:—  
I kill'd the slave that was a hanging thee.

*Off.* 'Tis true, my lords, he did.

*Lear.* Did I not, fellow?  
I have seen the day, with my good biting  
falcon

I would have made them skip: I am old now,  
And these same crosses spoil me.—Who are  
you? [straight.

Mine eyes are none o'the best:—I'll tell you

*Kent.* If fortune brag of two she loved and  
One of them we behold. [hated,

*Lear.* This is a dull sight: Are you not Kent?

*Kent.* The same;

Your servant Kent: Where is your servant  
Caius?

*Lear.* He's a good fellow, I can tell you that:  
He'll strike, and quickly too:—He's dead and  
rotten.

\* For ever. † Destroyed herself.  
circumstances preceding it

‡ The end of the world, or the horrid  
§ i. e., Die; Albany speaks to Lear.

*Kent.* No, my good lord; I am the very man—  
*Lear.* I'll see that straight.

*Kent.* That from your first of difference and  
Have follow'd your sad steps. [decay,

*Lear.* You are welcome hither.

*Kent.* Nor no man else; all's cheerless, dark,  
and deadly.— [selves,

Your eldest daughters have fore-doom'd them—  
And desperately are dead.

*Lear.* Ay, so I think.

*Alb.* He knows not what he says, and vain it is  
That we present us to him.

*Edg.* Very bootless\*.

*Enter an Officer.*

*Off.* Edmund is dead, my lord.

*Alb.* That's but a trifle here.—

You, lords, and noble friends, know our intent,  
What comfort to this great decay† may come.

Shall be applied: for us, we will resign,

During the life of this old majesty,

To him our absolute power:—You, to your  
rights; [To EDGAR and KENT.

With boot, and such addition‡ as your honours  
Have more than merited:—All friends shall

The wages of their virtue, and all foes [taste  
The cup of their deservings.—O, see, see!

*Lear.* And my poor fool|| is hang'd! No,  
no, no life:

Why should a dog, a horse a rat, have life,

And thou no breath at all? O, thou wilt come  
Never, never, never, never, never!— [no more  
Pray you, undo this button: Thank you, sir.—  
Do you see this?—Look on her,—look,—her  
lips,—

Look there, look there!— [He dies.

*Edg.* He faints!—My lord, my lord,—

*Kent.* Break, heart; I pry'thee, break!

*Edg.* Look up, my lord.

*Kent.* Vex not his ghost: O, let him pass ¶!  
he hates him,

That would upon the rack of this tough world  
Stretch him out longer.

*Edg.* O, he is gone, indeed.

*Kent.* The wonder is, he hath endured so  
long:

He but usurp'd his life. [business

*Alb.* Bear them from hence.—Our present  
Is general woe. Friends of my soul, you twain,

[To KENT and EDGAR.

Rule in this realm, and the gored state sustain.

*Kent.* I have a journey, sir, shortly to go;  
My master calls, and I must not say no.

*Alb.* The weight of this sad time we must obey;  
Speak what we feel, not what we ought to say.

The oldest hath borne most: we, that are  
young,

Shall never see so much, nor live so long.

[Exeunt, with a dead march.]

\* Useless.

‡ i. e., Lear.

† Benefit.

§ Titles.

|| Poor fool, in the time of Shakspeare, was an expression of endearment.

¶ Die.

The tragedy of Lear is deservedly celebrated among the dramas of Shakspeare. There is perhaps no play which keeps the attention so strongly fixed; which so much agitates our passions, and interests our curiosity. The artful involutions of distinct interests, the striking oppositions of contrary characters, the sudden changes of fortune, and the quick succession of events, fill the mind with a perpetual tumult of indignation, pity, and hope. There is no scene which does not contribute to the aggravation of the distress or conduct of the action, and scarce a line which does not conduce to the progress of the scene. So powerful is the current of the poet's imagination, that the mind, which once ventures within it, is hurried irresistibly along.

On the seeming improbability of Lear's conduct, it may be observed, that he is represented according to histories at that time vulgarly received as true. And, perhaps, if we turn our thoughts upon the barbarity and ignorance of the age to which this story is referred, it will appear not so unlikely as while we estimate Lear's manners by our own. Such preference of one daughter to another, or resignation of dominion on such conditions, would be yet credible, if told of a petty prince of Guinea or Madagascar. Shakspeare, indeed, by the mention of his earls and dukes, has given us the idea of times more civilized, and of life regulated by softer manners; and the truth is, that though he so nicely discriminates, and so minutely describes the characters of men, he commonly neglects and confounds the characters of ages, by mingling customs ancient and modern, English and foreign.

My learned friend, Mr. Warton\*, who has, in THE ADVENTURER, very minutely criticised this play, remarks, that the instances of cruelty are too savage and shocking, and that the intervention of Edmund destroys the simplicity of the story. These objections may, I think, be answered by repeating, that the cruelty of the daughters is an historical fact, to which the poet has added little, having only drawn it into a series of dialogue and action. But I am not able to apologize with equal plausibility for the extrusion of Gloucester's eyes, which seems an act too horrid to be endured in dramatic exhibition, and such as must always compel the mind to relieve its distress by incredulity. Yet let it be remembered, that our author well knew what would please the audience for which he wrote.

The injury done by Edmund to the simplicity of the action, is abundantly recompensed by

\* Dr. Joseph Warton.

the addition of variety, by the art with which he is made to co-operate with the chief design, and the opportunity which he gives the poet of combining perfidy with perfidy, and connecting the wicked son with the wicked daughters, to impress this important moral, that villainy is never at a stop, that crimes lead to crimes, and at last terminate in ruin.

But though this moral be incidentally enforced, Shakspeare has suffered the virtue of Cordelia to perish in a just cause, contrary to the natural ideas of justice, to the hope of the reader, and what is yet more strange, to the faith of chronicle? Yet this conduct is justified by *THE SPECTATOR*, who blames Tate for giving Cordelia success and happiness in his alteration, and declares, that in his opinion, "the tragedy has lost half its beauty." Dennis has remarked, whether justly or not, that, to secure the favourable reception of "Cato, the town was poisoned with much false and abominable criticism," and that endeavours had been used to discredit and decry poetical justice. A play in which the wicked prosper, and the virtuous miscarry, may doubtless be good, because it is a just representation of the common events of human life: but since all reasonable beings naturally love justice, I cannot easily be persuaded, that the observation of justice makes a play worse; or that if other excellencies are equal, the audience will not always rise better pleased from the final triumph of persecuted virtue.

In the present case, the public has decided. Cordelia, from the time of Tate, has always retired with victory and felicity. And, if my sensations could add any thing to the general suffrage, I might relate, I was many years ago so shocked by Cordelia's death, that I know not whether I ever endured to read again the last scenes of the play till I undertook to revise them as an editor.

There is another controversy among the critics concerning this play. It is disputed whether the predominant image in Lear's disordered mind be the loss of his kingdom, or the cruelty of his daughters. Mr. Murphy, a very judicious critic, has evinced by induction of particular passages, that the cruelty of his daughters is the primary source of his distress, and that the loss of royalty affects him only as a secondary and subordinate evil. He observes, with great justness, that Lear would move our compassion but little, did we not rather consider the injured father than the degraded king.

The story of this play, except the episode of Edmund, which is derived, I think, from Sidney, is taken originally from Geoffry of Monmouth, whom Holingshed generally copied; but perhaps immediately from an old historical ballad. My reason for believing that the play was posterior to the ballad, rather than the ballad to the play, is, that the ballad has nothing of Shakspeare's nocturnal tempest, which is too striking to have been omitted, and that it follows the chronicle; it has the rudiments of the play, but none of its amplifications: it first hinted Lear's madness, but did not array it in circumstances. The writer of the ballad added something to the history, which is a proof that he would have added more, if more had occurred to his mind, and more must have occurred if he had seen Shakspeare.

JOHNSON.



# ROMEO AND JULIET.

## Persons represented.

ESCALUS, *Prince of Verona.*  
 PARIS, *a young nobleman, kinsman to the Prince.*  
 MONTAGUE, } *heads of two houses, at*  
 CAPULET, } *variance with each other.*  
*An Old Man, uncle to Capulet.*  
 ROMEO, *son to Montague.*  
 MERCUTIO, *kinsman to the Prince, and friend to Romeo.*  
 BENVOLIO, *nephew to Montague, and friend to Romeo.*  
 TYBALT, *nephew to Lady Capulet.*  
 FRIAR LAWRENCE, *a Franciscan.*  
 FRIAR JOHN, *of the same order.*  
 BALTHAZAR, *servant to Romeo.*  
 SAMPSON, } *servants to Capulet.*  
 GREGORY, }

ABRAM, *servant to Montague.*  
*An Apothecary.*  
*Three Musicians.*  
 CHORUS. *Boy, page to Paris. PETER An Officer.*  
 Lady MONTAGUE, *wife to Montague.*  
 Lady CAPULET, *wife to Capulet.*  
 JULIET, *daughter to Capulet.*  
*Nurse to Juliet.*  
*Citizens of Verona ; several Men and Women, relations to both houses ; Maskers, Guards, Watchmen, and Attendants.*  
*Scene,—during the greater part of the Play, in Verona : once in the fifth Act, at Mantua.*

## PROLOGUE.

Two households, both alike in dignity,  
 In fair Verona, where we lay our scene,  
 From ancient grudge break to new mutiny,  
 Where civil blood makes civil hands unclean.  
 From forth the fatal loins of these two foes  
 A pair of star-cross'd lovers take their life ;  
 Whose misadventured piteous overthrows  
 Do, with their death, bury their parents' strife.

The fearful passage of their death-mark'd love,  
 And the continuance of their parents' rage,  
 Which, but their children's end, nought could remove,  
 Is now the two hours' traffic of our stage ;  
 The which if you with patient ears attend,  
 What here shall miss, our toil shall strive to mend.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. *A public Place.*

*Enter SAMPSON and GREGORY, armed with Swords and Bucklers.*

*Sam.* Gregory, o'my word we'll not carry coals\*.

*Gre.* No, for then we should be colliers.

*Sam.* I mean, an we be in choler, we'll draw.

*Gre.* Ay, while you live, draw your neck out of the collar.

*Sam.* I strike quickly, being moved.

*Gre.* But thou art not quickly moved to strike.

*Sam.* A dog of the house of Montague moves me.

*Gre.* To move, is—to stir ; and to be valiant, is—to stand to it : therefore, if thou art moved, thou runn'st away.

*Sam.* A dog of that house shall move me to stand : I will take the wall of any man or maid of Montague's.

*Gre.* That shows thee a weak slave ; for the weakest goes to the wall.

*Sam.* True ; and therefore women, being the weaker vessels, are ever thrust to the wall : therefore I will push Montague's men from the wall, and thrust his maids to the wall.

*Gre.* The quarrel is between our masters, and us their men.

*Sam.* 'Tis all one, I will show myself a tyrant : when I have fought with the men, I will be cruel with the maids ; I will cut off their heads.

*Gre.* The heads of the maids ?

*Sam.* Ay, the heads of the maids, or their maidenheads ; take it in what sense thou wilt.

*Gre.* They must take it in sense, that feel it.

*Sam.* Me they shall feel, while I am able to stand : and, 'tis known, I am a pretty piece of flesh.

*Gre.* 'Tis well thou art not fish ; if thou hadst, thou hadst been poor John†. Draw thy

\* A phrase formerly in use to signify the bearing injuries.

† Poor John is hake, dried and salted.

tool; here comes two of the house of the Montagues\*.

*Enter* ABRAM *and* BALTHASAR.

*Sam.* My naked weapon is out; quarrel, I will back thee.

*Gre.* How? turn thy back and run?

*Sam.* Fear me not.

*Gre.* No, marry: I fear thee!

*Sam.* Let us take the law of our sides; let them begin.

*Gre.* I will frown, as I pass by; and let them take it as they list.

*Sam.* May, as they dare. I will bite my thumb at them; which is a disgrace to them, if they bear it.

*Abr.* Do you bite your thumb at us, sir?

*Sam.* I do bite my thumb, sir.

*Abr.* Do you bite your thumb at us, sir?

*Sam.* Is the law on our side, if I say,—ay?

*Gre.* No.

*Sam.* No, sir, I do not bite my thumb at you, sir; but I bite my thumb, sir.

*Gre.* Do you quarrel, sir?

*Abr.* Quarrel, sir? no, sir.

*Sam.* If you do, sir, I am for you; I serve as good a man as you.

*Abr.* No better.

*Sam.* Well, sir.

*Enter* BENVOLIO, *at a distance.*

*Gre.* Say—better; here comes one of my master's kinsmen.

*Sam.* Yes, better, sir.

*Abr.* You lie.

*Sam.* Draw, if you be men.—Gregory, remember thy swashing blow. [*They fight.*]

*Ben.* Part, fools; put up your swords; you know not what you do.

[*Beats down their Swords.*]

*Enter* TYBALT.

*Tyb.* What! art thou drawn among these heartless hinds?

Turn thee, Benvollio, look upon thy death.

*Ben.* I do but keep the peace; put up thy sword,

Or manage it to part these men with me.

*Tyb.* What, drawn and talk of peace? I hate the word,

As I hate hell, all Montagues, and thee:

Have at thee, coward. [*They fight.*]

*Enter several Partisans of both Houses, who join the Fray; then enter Citizens, with Clubs.*

*1 Cit.* Clubs! bills, and partisans! strike! beat them down!

Down with the Capulets! down with the Montagues!

*Enter* CAPULET, *in his Gown; and* Lady CAPULET.

*Cap.* What noise is this!—Give me my long sword, ho!

*La. Cap.* A crutch, a crutch!—Why call you

*Cap.* My sword, I say!—Old Montague is dead, and flourishes his blade in spite of me. [*Come, Enter* MONTAGUE *and* Lady MONTAGUE.]

*Mon.* Thou villain Capulet.—Hold me not, let me go.

*La. Mon.* Thou shalt not stir one foot to seek a foe.

*Enter* Prince, *with Attendants.*

*Prin.* Rebellious subjects, enemies to peace, Profaners of this neighbour-stained steel,—Will they not hear?—what ho! you men, you beasts,—

That quench the fire of your pernicious rage With purple fountains issuing from your veins, On pain of torture, from those bloody hands Throw your mistemper'd weapons to the ground,

And hear the sentence of your moved prince.—

Three civil brawls, bred of an airy word,

By thee, old Capulet and Montague,

Have thrice disturb'd the quiet of our streets;

And made Verona's ancient citizens

Cast by their grave beseeching ornaments,

To wield old partisans, in hands as old,

Canker'd with peace, to part your canker'd

If ever you disturb our streets again, [hate:]

Your lives shall pay the forfeit of the peace.

For this time, all the rest depart away:

You, Capulet, shall go along with me;

And, Montague, come you this afternoon,

To know our further pleasure in this case, [place,

To old Free-town, our common judgment.

Once more, on pain of death, all men depart.

[*Exit* Prince, *and Attendants; CAPULET, Lady CAPULET, TYBALT,*

*Citizens, and Servants.* [abroach.

*Mon.* Who set this ancient quarrel new

Speak, nephew, were you by when it began?

*Ben.* Here were the servants of your adversary

And yours, close fighting ere I did approach:

I drew to part them; in the instant came

The fiery Tybalt, with his sword prepared;

Which, as he breathed defiance to my ears,

He swung about his head, and cut the winds,

Who nothing hurt withal, hiss'd him in scorn:

While we were interchanging thrusts and

blows, [part,

Came more and more, and fought on part and

Till the prince came, who parted either part.

*La. Mon.* O, where is Romeo!—saw you him to-day?

Right glad I am, he was not at this fray. [sun

*Ben.* Madam, an hour before the worshipp'd

Peer'd forth the golden window of the east,

A troubled mind drove me to walk abroad;

Where,—underneath the grove of sycamore,

That westward rooteth from the city's side,—

So early walking did I see your son:

Towards him I made; but he was 'ware of me,

And stole into the covert of the wood:

I, measuring his affections by my own,—

That most are busied when they are most

Pursued my humour, not pursuing his, [alone,—

And gladly shunn'd who gladly fled from me.

*Mon.* Many a morning hath he there been

seen, [dew,

With tears augmenting the fresh morning's

Adding to clouds more clouds with his deep

But all so soon as the all-cheering sun [sighs

\* The disregard of concord is in character. at an affray in the streets, as we now call watch!

† Clubs! was the usual exclamation  
‡ Angry. § Appeared.

Should in the furthest east begin to draw  
The shady curtains from Aurora's bed,  
Away from light steals home my heavy son,  
And private in his chamber pens himself;  
Shuts up his windows, locks fair daylight out,  
And makes himself an artificial night:  
Black and portentous must this humour prove,  
Unless good counsel may the cause remove.

*Ben.* My noble uncle, do you know the cause?

*Mon.* I neither know it, nor can learn of

*Ben.* Have you importuned him by any means?

*Mon.* Both by myself and many other  
But he, his own affections' counsellor,  
Is to himself,—I will not say how true—  
But to himself so secret and so close,  
So far from sounding and discovery,  
As is the bud bit with an envious worm,  
Ere he can spread his sweet leaves to the air,  
Or dedicate his beauty to the sun. [grow,  
Could we but learn from whence his sorrows  
We would as willingly give cure, as know.

*Enter ROMEO, at a distance.*

*Ben.* See, where he comes: So please you, step aside;

I'll know his grievance, or be much denied.

*Mon.* I would thou wert so happy by thy stay,

To hear true shrift.—Come, madam, let's away.

[*Exeunt MONTAGUE and Lady.*]

*Ben.* Good morrow, cousin.

*Rom.* Is the day so young?

*Ben.* But new-struck nine.

*Rom.* Ah me! sad hours seem long.

Was that my father that went thence so fast?

*Ben.* It was.—What sadness lengthens Romeo's hours?

*Rom.* Not having that, which having, makes

*Ben.* In love?

*Rom.* Out—

*Ben.* Of love?

*Rom.* Out of her favour, where I am in love.

*Ben.* Alas, that love, so gentle in his view,  
Should be so tyrannous and rough in proof!

*Rom.* Alas, that love, whose view is muffled still,

Should, without eyes, see pathways to his will!  
Where shall we dine?—O me!—What fray was here?

Yet tell me not, for I have heard it all.

Here's much to do with hate, but more with love:—

Why then, O brawling love! O loving hate!

O any thing, of nothing first create!

O heavy lightness! serious vanity!

Mis-shapen chaos of well-seeming forms!

Feather of lead, bright smoke, cold fire, sick health!

Still-waking sleep, that is not what it is!—

This love feel I, that feel no love in this.

Dost thou not laugh?

*Ben.* No, coz, I rather weep.

*Rom.* Good heart, at what?

*Ben.* At thy good heart's oppression.

*Rom.* Why, such is love's transgression.—

Griefs of mine own lie heavy in my breast;  
Which thou wilt propagate, to have it prest  
With more of thine: this love, that thou has  
shown [own.

Doth add more grief to too much of mine  
Love is a smoke raised with the fume of sighs,  
Being purged, a fire sparkling in lovers' eyes;  
Being vex'd, a sea nourish'd with lovers'  
tears:

What is it else? a madness most discreet,  
A choking gall, and a preserving sweet.

*Farewell, my coz.* [Going.

*Ben.* Soft, I will go along;  
An if you leave me so, you do me wrong.

*Rom.* Tut, I have lost myself; I am not here;

This is not Romeo, he's some other where.

*Ben.* Tell me in sadness\*, who she is you love.

*Rom.* What, shall I groan, and tell thee?

*Ben.* Groan? why, no;  
But sadly tell me, who. [will.

*Rom.* Bid a sick man in sadness make his  
Ah, word ill urged to one that is so ill!—

In sadness, cousin, I do love a woman.

*Ben.* I aim'd so near, when I supposed you loved.

*Rom.* A right good marksman!—And she's

*Ben.* A right fair mark, fair coz, is soonest hit. [be hit

*Rom.* Well, in that hit, you miss: she'll not  
With Cupid's arrow, she hath Dian's wit;  
And, in strong proof of chastity well arm'd,  
From love's weak childish bow she lives un-  
harm'd.

She will not stay the siege of loving terms,  
Nor bide the encounter of assailing eyes,  
Nor ope her lap to saint-seducing gold:

O, she is rich in beauty; only poor,  
That, when she dies, with beauty dies her store.

*Ben.* Then she hath sworn, that she will still live chaste?

*Rom.* She hath, and in that sparing makes  
huge waste;

For beauty, starved with her severity,  
Cuts beauty off from all posterity.

She is too fair, too wise; wisely too fair,  
To merit bliss by making me despair:  
She hath forsworn to love; and, at that vow,  
Do I live dead, that live to tell it now.

*Ben.* Be ruled by me, forget to think of her.

*Rom.* O, teach me how I should forget to think.

*Ben.* By giving liberty unto thine eyes;  
Examine other beauties.

*Rom.* 'Tis the way  
To call her's, exquisite, in question more:  
These happy masks, that kiss fair ladies'  
brows,

Being black, put us in mind they hide the fair;  
He, that is stricken blind, cannot forget  
The precious treasure of his eyesight lost:  
Show me a mistress that is passing fair,  
What doth her beauty serve, but as a note  
Where I may read, who pass'd that pass-  
fair?

\* In seriousness.

† i. e., What end does it answer



Farewell; thou canst not teach me to forget.

*Ben.* I'll pay that doctrine, or else die in debt. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *A Street.*

*Enter CAPULET, PARIS, and Servant.*

*Cap.* And Montague is bound as well as I, In penalty alike; and 'tis not hard, I think. For men so old as we to keep the peace. [both;]

*Par.* Of honourable reckoning\* are you And pity 'tis, you lived at odds so long.

But now, my lord, what say you to my suit?

*Cap.* But saying o'er what I have said before:

My child is yet a stranger in the world, She hath not seen the change of fourteen years;

Let two more summers wither in their pride, Ere we may think her ripe to be a bride.

*Par.* Younger than she are happy mothers made. [made.]

*Cap.* And too soon marr'd are those so early The earth hath swallow'd all my hopes but She is the hopeful lady of my earth: [she,]

But woo her, gentle Paris, get her heart, My will to her consent is but a part;

An she agree, within her scope of choice Lies my consent and fair according voice.

This night I hold an old accustom'd feast, Whereto I have invited many a guest,

Such as I love; and you, among the store, One more, most welcome, makes my number more.

At my poor house, look to behold this night Earth-treading stars, that make dark heaven light:

Such comfort, as do lusty young men feel When well-apparell'd April on the heel

Of limping winter treads, even such delight Among fresh female buds shall you this night

Inherit† at my house; hear all, all see, And like her most, whose merit most shall be:

Such, amongst view of many, mine being one, May stand in number, though in reckoning‡ none.

Come, go with me;—Go, sirrah, trudge about Through fair Verona; find those persons out,

Whose names are written there, [*Gives a Paper.*] and to them say,

My house and welcome on their pleasure stay. [*Exeunt CAPULET and PARIS.*]

*Serv.* Find them out whose names are written here? It is written—that the shoe-

maker should meddle with his yard, and the tailor with his last, the fisher with his pencil,

and the painter with his nets; but I am sent to find those persons, whose names are here

writ, and can never find what names the writing person hath here writ. I must to the

learned:—In good time.

*Enter BENVOLIO and ROMEO.*

*Ben.* Tut, man! one fire burns out another's burning,

One pain is lessen'd by another's anguish;

Account, estimation.

‡ Estimation.

† To inherit, in the language of Shakspeare is to possess.

§ We still say in cant language—to crack a bottle.

|| Weigh'd.

Turn giddy, and be help by backward turning, One desperate grief cures with another's languish:

Take thou some new infection to thy eye, And the rank poison of the old will die.

*Rom.* Your plaitain leaf is excellent for

*Ben.* For what, I pray thee? [that.]

*Rom.* For your broken shin.

*Ben.* Why, Romeo, art thou mad?

*Rom.* Not mad, but bound more than a madman is:

Shut up in prison, kept without my food, Whipp'd, and tormented, and—Good e'en, good fellow.

*Serv.* God gi' good e'en.—I pray, sir, can you read?

*Rom.* Ay, mine own fortune in my misery.

*Serv.* Perhaps you have learn'd it without book:

But I pray, can you read any thing you see?

*Rom.* Ay, if I know the letters, and the language.

*Serv.* Ye say honestly; Rest you merry!

*Rom.* Stay, fellow; I can read. [*Reads.*]

*Signior Martino, and his wife, and daughters; County Anselme, and his beauteous sisters; The lady widow of Virtruvio; Signior*

*Placentio, and his lovely nieces; Mercutio and his brother Valentine, Mine uncle Capulet, his wife, and daughters; My fair niece*

*Rosaline; Livia; Signior Valentio, and his cousin Tybalt; Lucio, and the lively Helena.*

A fair assembly; [*Gives back the Note.*]

Whether should they come?

*Serv.* Up.

*Rom.* Whither?

*Serv.* To supper; to our house.

*Rom.* Whose house?

*Serv.* My master's. [before.]

*Rom.* Indeed, I should have asked you that

*Serv.* Now I'll tell you without asking:

My master is the great rich Capulet; and if you be not of the house of Montagues, I pray,

come and crush a cup of wine§. Rest you merry. [*Exit.*]

*Ben.* At this same ancient feast of Capulet's

Sups the fair Rosaline, whom thou so lovest; With all the admired beauties of Verona.

Go thither; and, with unattainted eye, Compare her face with some that I shall show,

And I will make thee think thy swan a crow.

*Rom.* When the devout religion of mine eye [fires!]

Maintains such falsehood, then turn tears to And these,—who, often drown'd, could never

die,—

Transparent heretics, be burnt for liars!

One fairer than my love! the all-seeing sun Ne'er saw her match, since first the world

begun. [by,]

*Ben.* Tut? you saw her fair, none else being Herself poised || with herself in either eye:

But in those crystal scales, let there be weigh'd Your lady's love against some other maid

That I will show you, shining at this feast,  
And she shall scant\* show well, that now  
shows best. [shown,

Rom. I'll go along, no such sight to be  
But to rejoice in splendour of mine own.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III. A Room in Capulet's House.

Enter Lady CAPULET and Nurse.

La. Cap. Nurse, where's my daughter?  
call her forth to me.

Nurse. Now, by my maiden-head,—at  
twelve year old,— [bird!—  
I bade her come.—What, lamb! what, lady—  
God forbid!—where's this girl?—what, Juliet!

Enter JULIET.

Jul. How now, who calls?

Nurse. Your mother.

Jul. Madam, I am here,  
What is your will? [leave awhile,

La. Cap. This is the matter:—Nurse, give  
We must talk in secret.—Nurse, come back  
again; [counsel.

I have remember'd me, thou shalt hear our  
Thou know'st, my daughter's of a pretty age.

Nurse. Faith, I can tell her age unto an

La. Cap. She's not fourteen. [hour.

Nurse. I'll lay fourteen of my teeth,  
And yet, to my teen† be it spoken, I have but  
four,—

She is not fourteen: How long is it now  
To Lammas-tide?

La. Cap. A fortnight, and odd days.

Nurse. Even or odd, of all days in the  
year, [teen.

Come Lammas-eve at night, shall she be four—  
Susan and she,—God rest all Christian souls!  
Were of an age.—Well, Susan is with God;

She was too good for me: But, as I said,  
On Lammas-eve at night shall she be fourteen;  
That shall she, marry; I remember it well.

'Tis since the earthquake now eleven years;  
And she was wean'd,—I never shall forget it,  
Of all the days of the year, upon that day:

For I had then laid wormwood to my dug,  
Sitting in the sun under the dove-house wall,  
My lord and you were then at Mantua:—

Nay, I do bear a brain†:—but, as I said,  
When it did taste the wormwood on the nipple  
Of my dug, and felt it bitter, pretty fool!

To see it tetchy, and fall out with the dug.  
Shake, quoth the dove-house: 'twas no need,  
To bid me trudge. [I trow,

And since that time it is eleven years:  
For then she could stand alone; nay, by the  
rood§,

She could have run and waddled all about.  
For even the day before, she broke her brow:  
And then my husband—God be with his soul!

'A was a merry man;—took up the child:  
Yea, quoth he, dost thou fall upon thy face?

Thou wilt fall backward, when thou hast  
more wit;

Wilt thou not, Jule? and by my holy-dam  
The pretty wretch left crying, and said—Ay:

To see now, how a jest shall come about!  
I warrant, an I should live a thousand years,  
I never should forget it; Wilt thou not, Jule?

quoth he:  
And, pretty fool, it stinted ¶, and said—Ay.

La. Cap. Enough of this; I pray thee, hold  
thy peace. [but laugh,

Nurse. Yes, madam; Yet I cannot choose  
To think it should leave crying, and say—Ay:

And yet, I warrant, it had upon it's brow  
A bump as big as a young cockrel's stone;  
A parlous knock; and it cried bitterly.

Yea, quoth my husband, fall'st upon thy  
face? [to age,

Thou wilt fall backward, when thou comest  
Wilt thou not, Jule? it stinted, and said—Ay.

Jul. And stint thou too, I pray thee, nurse,  
say I. [to his grace\*\*.

Nurse. Peace, I have done. God mark thee  
Thou wast the prettiest babe that e'er I nursed:  
An I might live to see thee married once,  
I have my wish.

La. Cap. Marry, that marry is the very  
theme

I came to talk of:—Tell me, daughter Juliet,  
How stands your disposition to be married?

Jul. It is an honour that I dream not of.

Nurse. An honour! were not I thine only  
nurse, [teat.

I'd say, thou hadst suck'd wisdom from thy  
La. Cap. Well, think of marriage now;  
younger than you,

Here in Verona, ladies of esteem,  
Are made already mothers: by my count,  
I was your mother much upon these years  
That you are now a maid. Thus then, in brief;

The valiant Paris seeks you for his love.

Nurse. A man, young lady! lady, such a  
man,

As all the world—Why, he's a man of wax ††.

La. Cap. Verona's summer hath not such  
a flower. [flower.

Nurse. Nay, he's a flower; in faith, a very

La. Cap. What say you? can you love the  
gentleman?

This night you shall behold him at our feast:  
Read o'er the volume of young Paris' face,  
And find delight writ there with beauty's pen;  
Examine every married lineament.

And see how one another lends content;  
And what obscured in this fair volume lies,  
Find written in the margin of his eyes ‡.

This precious book of love, this unbound  
To beautify him, only lacks a cover: [lover,

The fish lives in the sea§§; and 'tis much pride,  
For fair without the fair within to hide:

That book in many's eyes doth share the glory,  
That in gold clasps locks in the golden story;

\* Scarce, hardly. † To my sorrow. ‡ i. e., I have a perfect remembrance or recollection  
§ The cross. || Holy dame, i. e., the blessed virgin. ¶ It stopped crying.

\*\* Favour.

†† Well made, as if he had been modelled in wax.

‡‡ The comments on ancient books were always printed in the margin.

§§ i. e., Is not yet caught, whose skin was wanted to bind him.

So shall you share all that he doth possess,  
By having him, making yourself no less.

*Nurse.* No less? nay, bigger; women grow  
by men. [Paris' love?

*La. Cap.* Speak briefly, can you like of  
*Jul.* I'll look to like, if looking liking move:

But no more deep will I endart mine eye,  
Than your consent gives strength to make it fly.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* Madam, the guests are come, supper  
served up, you called, my young lady asked  
for, the nurse cursed in the pantry, and every  
thing in extremity. I must hence to wait;  
I beseech you, follow straight.

*La. Cap.* We follow thee.—Juliet, the  
county stays. [happy days.

*Nurse.* Go, girl, seek happy nights to  
[*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE IV. A Street.

*Enter* ROMEO, MERCUTIO, BENVOLIO, *with*  
*five or six Maskers, Torch-Bearers, and*  
*Others.*

*Rom.* What, shall this speech be spoke for  
our excuse?

Or shall we on without apology?

*Ben.* The date is out of such prolixity\*:  
We'll have no Cupid hood-wink'd with a  
scarf,

Bearing a Tartar's painted bow of lath,  
Scaring the ladies like a crow-keeper†;   
Nor no without-book prologue, faintly spoke  
After the prompter, for our entrance:  
But, let them measure us by what they will,  
We'll measure them a measure‡, and be gone.

*Rom.* Give me a torch§,—I am not for this  
ambling;

Being but heavy, I will bear the light.

*Mer.* Nay, gentle Romeo, we must have  
you dance. [shoes,

*Rom.* Not I, believe me; you have dancing  
With nimble soles: I have a soul of lead  
So stakes me to the ground, I cannot move.

*Mer.* You are a lover; borrow Cupid's  
wings,

And soar with them above a common bound.

*Rom.* I am too sore enpierced with his  
shaft,

To soar with his light feathers; and so bound,  
I cannot bound a pitch above dull woe:

Under love's heavy burden do I sink. [love;

*Mer.* And, to sink in it, should you burden  
Too great oppression for a tender thing.

*Rom.* Is love a tender thing? it is too rough,  
Too rude, too boist'rous; and it pricks like  
thorn. [with love;

*Mer.* If love be rough with you, be rough  
Prick love for pricking, and you beat love  
Give me a case to put my visage in: [down.—

[*Putting on a Mask.*

A visor for a visor!—What care I,  
What curious eye doth quote|| deformities?

Here are the beetle-brows, shall blush for me.

*Ben.* Come, knock, and enter; and no  
sooner in,

But every man betake him to his legs.

*Rom.* A torch for me: let wantons, light  
of heart,

Tickle the senseless rushes¶ with their heels;  
For I am proverbed with a grandsire phrase,  
I'll be a candle-holder, and look on,—  
The game was ne'er so fair, and I am done\*\*.

*Mer.* Tut! dun's the mouse, the constable's  
own word: [mire

If thou art dun, we'll draw thee from the  
Of this (save reverence) love, wherein thou  
stick'st

Up to the ears.—Come, we burn day-light, ho.

*Rom.* Nay, that's not so.

*Mer.* I mean, sir, in delay

We waste our lights in vain, like lamps by day.  
Take our good meaning; for our judgment sits  
Five times in that, ere once in our five wits.

*Rom.* And we mean well, in going to this  
But 'tis no wit to go. [mask;

*Mer.* Why, may one ask?

*Rom.* I dreamt a dream to-night.

*Mer.* And so did I.

*Rom.* Well, what was yours?

*Mer.* That dreamers often lie.

*Rom.* In bed, asleep, while they do dream  
things true. [with you.

*Mer.* O, then I see queen Mab hath been  
She is the fairies' midwife; and she comes

In shape no bigger than an agate-stone

On the fore-finger of an alderman,

Drawn with a team of little atomies††

Athwart men's noses as they lie asleep: [legs;

Her waggon-spokes made of long spinners'

The cover of the wings of grasshoppers;

The traces, of the smallest spider's web;

The collars, of the moonshine's wat'ry beams:

Her whip, of cricket's bone; the lash, of film:

Her waggoner, a small grey-coated gnat,

Not half so big as a round little worm

Prick'd from the lazy finger of a maid:

Her chariot is an empty hazel-nut,

Made by the joiner squirrel, or old grub,

Time out of mind the fairies' coach-makers.

And in this state she gallops night by night

Through lovers' brains, and then they dream of

love: [straight:

On courtiers' knees, that dream on court'sies

O'er lawyers' fingers, who straight dream on

fees:

O'er ladies' lips, who straight on kisses dream;

Which oft the angry Mab with blisters plagues,

Because their breaths with sweetmeats tainted

are,

Sometime she gallops o'er a courtier's nose,

And then dreams he of smelling out a suit‡‡:

And sometimes comes she with a tithe-pig's

Tickling a parson's nose as 'a lies asleep, [tail,

Then dreams he of another benefice:

\* i. e., Long speeches are out of fashion. † A scare-crow, a figure made up to frighten crows.

‡ A dance. § A torch-bearer was a constant appendage to every troop of maskers.

|| Observe. ¶ It was anciently the custom to strew rooms with rushes.

\*\* This is equivalent to phrases in common use—I am done for, it is over with me.

†† Atoms.

‡‡ A place in court.



Sometime she driveth o'er a soldier's neck,  
And then dreams he of cutting foreign throats,  
Of breaches, ambuscadoes, Spanish blades,  
Of healths five fathom deep; and then anon  
Drums in his ear; at which he starts, and wakes;  
And, being thus frightened, swears a prayer or  
And sleeps again. This is that very Mab, [two,  
That platts the manes of horses in the night;  
And bakes the elf-locks\* in foul sluttish hairs,  
Which, once untangled, much misfortune bodes.  
This is the hag, when maids lie on their backs,  
That presses them, and learns them first to  
Making them women of good carriage. [bear,  
This, this is she—

*Rom.* Peace, peace, Mercutio, peace;  
Thou talk'st of nothing.

*Mer.* True, I talk of dreams;  
Which are the children of an idle brain,  
Begot of nothing but vain fantasy;  
Which is as thin of substance as the air;  
And more inconstant than the wind, who woos  
Even now the frozen bosom of the north,  
And, being anger'd, puffs away from thence,  
Turning his face to the dew-dropping south.

*Ben.* This wind you talk of, blows us from  
ourselves;

Supper is done, and we shall come too late.

*Rom.* I fear, too early: for my mind misgives,  
Some consequence, yet hanging in the stars,  
Shall bitterly begin his fearful date  
With this night's revels; and expire the term  
Of a despised life, closed in my breast,  
By some vile forfeit of untimely death:  
But He, that bath the steerage of my course,  
Direct my sail!—On, lusty gentlemen.

*Ben.* Strike, drum. [*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE V. A Hall in Capulet's House.

*Musicians waiting. Enter Servants.*

*1 Serv.* Where's Potpan, that he helps not  
to take away? he shift a trencher! he scrape  
a trencher!

*2 Serv.* When good manners shall lie all in  
one or two men's hands, and they unwashed  
too, 'tis a foul thing.

*1 Serv.* Away with the joint-stools, remove  
the court-cupboard †, look to the plate:—good  
thou, save me a piece of marchpane‡; and, as  
thou lovest me, let the porter let in Susan  
Grindstone, and Nell.—Antony! and Potpan!

*2 Serv.* Ay, boy; ready.

*1 Serv.* You are looked for, and called for,  
asked for, and sought for, in the great chamber.

*2 Serv.* We cannot be here and there too.—  
Cheerly, boys; be brisk a while, and the longer  
liver take all. [*They retire behind.*

*Enter CAPULET, &c., with the Guests  
and the Maskers.*

*Cap.* Gentlemen, welcome! ladies, that have  
their toes [you:—  
Unplagued with corns, will have a bout with  
Ah ha, my mistresses! which of you all  
Will now deny to dance? she that makes  
dainty, she,

I'll swear hath corns; Am I come near you now?  
You are welcome, gentlemen! I have seen the  
That I have worn a visor; and could tell [day,  
A whispering tale in a fair lady's ear, [gone:  
Such as would please;—'tis gone, 'tis gone, 'tis  
You are welcome, gentlemen!—Come, musi-  
cians play.

A hall! a hall! give room, and foot it, girls.

[*Music plays, and they dance.*

More light, ye knaves; and turn the tables up,  
And quench the fire, the room is grown too hot.  
Ah, sirrah, this unlook'd-for sport comes well.  
Nay, sit, nay sit, good cousin Capulet;  
For you and I are past our dancing days:  
How long is't now, since last yourself and I  
Were in a mask?

*2 Cap.* By'r lady, thirty years.

*1 Cap.* What, man! 'tis not so much, 'tis not  
'Tis since the nuptial of Lucentio, [so much:  
Come pentecost as quickly as it will, [mask'd.  
Some five and twenty years; and then we

*2 Cap.* 'Tis more, 'tis more: his son is elder,  
His son is thirty. [sir:

*1 Cap.* Will you tell me that?

His son was but a ward two years ago.

*Rom.* What lady's that, which doth enrich  
Of yonder knight? [the hand

*Serv.* I know not, sir. [bright!

*Rom.* O, she doth teach the torches to burn  
Her beauty hangs upon the cheek of night

Like a rich jewel in an Ethiop's|| ear:

Beauty too rich for use, for earth too dear!

So shows a snowy dove trooping with crows,

As yonder lady o'er her fellows shows, [stand,  
The measure † done, I'll watch her place of

And, touching hers, make happy my rude hand.

Did my heart love till now? forswear it, sight!

For I ne'er saw true beauty till this night.

*Tyb.* This, by his voice, should be a Mon-  
tague:— [slave

Fetch me my rapier, boy:—What! dares the

Come hither, cover'd with an antic face,

To fleer and scorn at our solemnity?

Now, by the stock and honour of my kin,

To strike him dead I hold it not a sin.

*1 Cap.* Why, how now, kinsman? wherefore  
storm you so?

*Tyb.* Uncle, this is a Montague, our foe;

A villain, that is hither come in spite,

To scorn at our solemnity this night

*1 Cap.* Young Romeo is't?

*Tyb.* 'Tis he, that villain Romeo.

*1 Cap.* Content thee, gentle coz, let him

He bears him like a portly gentleman; [alone,  
And, to say truth, Verona brags of him,

To be a virtuous and well-govern'd youth:

I would not for the wealth of all this town,

Here in my house, do him disparagement:

Therefore be patient, take no note of him,

It is my will; the which if thou respect,

Show a fair presence, and put off these frowns,

And ill-beseeming semblance for a feast.

*Tyb.* It fits, when such a villain is a guest;

I'll not endure him.

\* i. e., Fairy-locks, locks of hair clotted and tangled in the night.

A cupboard set in a corner like a beaufet on which the plate was placed. † Almond-cake

‡ i. e., Make room.

|| An Ethiopian, a black.

¶ The dance.

*1 Cap.* He shall be endured ;  
What, Goodman boy!—I say, he shall;—Go to;

Am I the master here, or you? go to. [soul—  
You'll not endure him!—God shall mend my  
You'll make a mutiny among my guests!

You will set cock-a-hoop! you'll be the man!  
*Tyb.* Why, uncle, 'tis a shame.

*1 Cap.* Go to, go to,  
You are a saucy boy:—Is't so, indeed?—  
This trick may chance to scath\* you;—I know  
what.

You must contrary me! marry, 'tis time—  
Well said, my hearts:—You are a princex†;  
go:— [shame!—

Be quiet, or—More light, more light, for  
I'll make you quiet; What!—Cheerly, my  
hearts. -[meeting,

*Tyb.* Patience perforce with wilful choler  
Makes my flesh tremble in their different greet-  
ing.

I will withdraw: but this intrusion shall,  
Now seeming sweet, convert to bitter gall.

[*Exit.*  
*Rom.* If I profane with my unworthy hand  
[*To Juliet.*

This holy shrine, the gentle fine is this,—  
My lips, two blushing pilgrims, ready stand  
To smooth that rough touch with a tender  
kiss. [too much,

*Jul.* Good pilgrim, you do wrong your hand  
Which mannerly devotion shows in this;  
For saints have hands that pilgrims' hands do  
touch,

And palm to palm is holy palmers' kiss.  
*Rom.* Have not saints lips, and holy palmers  
too? [prayer.

*Jul.* Ay, pilgrim, lips that they must use in  
*Rom.* O then, dear saint, let lips do what  
hands do; [despair.

They pray, grant thou, lest faith turn to  
*Jul.* Saints do not move, though grant for  
prayers' sake. [effect I take.

*Rom.* Then move not, while my prayer's  
Thus from my lips, by yours, my sin is purged.  
[*Kissing her.*

*Jul.* Then have my lips the sin that they  
have took. [urged!

*Rom.* Sin from my lips? O trespass sweetly  
Give me my sin again.

*Jul.* You kiss by the book.

*Nurse.* Madam, your mother craves a word

*Rom.* What is her mother? [with you.

*Nurse.* Marry, bachelor,

Her mother is the lady of the house,

And a good lady, and a wise, and virtuous:

I nursed her daughter, that you talk'd withal;

I tell you,—he, that can lay hold of her,

Shall have the chinks.

\* Do you an injury. † A coxcomb.

*Rom.* Is she a Capulet?  
O dear account! my life is my foe's debt.  
*Ben.* Away, begone; the sport is at the  
best.

*Rom.* Ay, so I fear; the more is my unrest.

*1 Cap.* Nay, gentlemen, prepare not to be  
gone;

We have a trifling foolish banquet‡ towards.—  
Is it e'en so? Why, then I thank you all;  
I thank you, honest gentlemen; good night:—  
More torches here!—Come on, then let's to  
bed.

Ah, sirrah, [*To 2 Cap.*] by my fay §, it waxes  
late;

I'll to my rest.  
[*Exeunt all but JULIET and Nurse.*

*Jul.* Come hither, nurse: What is yon  
gentleman?

*Nurse.* The son and heir of old Tiberio.

*Jul.* What's he, that now is going out of  
door? [truchio.

*Nurse.* Marry, that, I think, be young Pe-  
*Jul.* What's he, that follows there, that would

*Nurse.* I know not. [not dance?

*Jul.* Go, ask his name:—if he be married,  
My grave is like to be my wedding bed.

*Nurse.* His name is Romeo, and a Monta-  
gue;

The only son of your great enemy. [hate!

*Jul.* My only love sprung from my only  
Too early seen unknown, and known too late!

Prodigious birth of love it is to me,  
That I must love a loathed enemy.

*Nurse.* What's this? what's this?  
*Jul.* A rhyme I learn'd even now  
Of one I danced withal.

*Nurse.* Anon, anon:—  
Come, let's away; the strangers all are gone.  
[*Exeunt.*

[*One calls within, JULIET.*

*Enter CHORUS.*  
Now old Desire doth in his death-bed lie,

And young Affection gapes to be his heir;  
That fair, which love groan'd for, and would  
die,

With tender Juliet match'd is now not fair.  
Now Romeo is beloved, and loves again,

Alike bewitched by the charm of looks;  
But to his foe supposed he must complain,

And she steal love's sweet bait from fearful  
hooks:

Being held a foe, he may not have access  
To breathe such vows as lovers use to swear;

And she as much in love, her means much less  
To meet her new-beloved any where:

But passion lends them power, time means to  
meet,

Temp'ring extremities with extreme sweet.  
[*Exit.*

‡ A collation of fruit, wine, &c. § Faith,

## ACT II.

SCENE I. *An open Place, adjoining Capulet's Garden.*

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Rom.* Can I go forward, when my heart is here?

Turn back, dull earth\*, and find thy centre out.  
[*He climbs the Wall, and leaps down within it.*]

*Enter BENVOLIO and MERCUTIO.*

*Ben.* Romeo! my cousin, Romeo!

*Mer.* He is wise;

And, on my life, hath stolen him home to bed.

*Ben.* He ran this way, and leap'd this orchard  
Call, good Mercutio. [wall:]

*Mer.* Nay, I'll conjure too.—

Romeo! humours! madman! passion! lover!  
Appear thou in the likeness of a sigh,  
Speak but one rhyme, and I am satisfied;  
Cry but—Ah me! couple but—love and dove;  
Speak to my gossip Venus one fair word,  
One nick name for her purblind son and heir,  
Young Adam Cupid, he that shot so trim,  
When king Cophetua loved the beggar-maid†.—

He heareth not, stirreth not, he moveth not;  
The ape‡ is dead, and I must conjure him.—  
I conjure thee by Rosaline's bright eyes,  
By her high forehead, and her scarlet lip,  
By her fine foot, straight leg, and quivering  
thigh,

And the demesnes that there adjacent lie,  
That in thy likeness thou appear to us.

*Ben.* An if he hear thee, thou wilt anger him.

*Mer.* This cannot anger him: 'twould anger  
To raise a spirit in his mistress' circle [him  
Of some strange nature, letting it there stand  
Till she had laid it, and conjured it down;  
That were some spite: my invocation  
Is fair and honest, and, in his mis-tress' name,  
I conjure only but to raise up him. [trees,

*Ben.* Come, he hath hid himself among those  
To be consorted with the humorous night;  
Blind is his love, and best befits the dark.

*Mer.* If love be blind, love cannot hit the  
Now will he sit under a medlar tree, [mark.  
And wish his mistress were that kind of fruit,  
As maids call medlars, when they laugh  
alone.—

Romeo, good night;—I'll to my truckle-bed;  
This field-bed is too cold for me to sleep:  
Come, shall we go?

*Ben.* Go, then; for 'tis in vain  
To seek him here, that means not to be found.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *Capulet's Garden.*

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Rom.* He jests at scars, that never felt a  
wound.—

[*JULIET appears above, at a Window.*]

But, soft! what light through yonder window  
It is the east, and Juliet is the sun!—[*breaks!*  
Arise, fair sun, and kill the envious moon,  
Who is already sick and pale with grief,  
That thou her maid art far more fair than she.  
He not her maid ‖, since she is envious:  
Her vestal livery is but sick and green,  
And none but fools do wear it; cast it off.—  
It is my lady: O, it is my love:

O, that she knew she were!— [that!]  
She speaks, yet she says nothing: What of  
Her eye discourses, I will answer it.—

I am too bold, 'tis not to me she speaks:  
Two of the fairest stars in all the heaven,  
Having some business, do entreat her eyes  
To twinkle in their spheres till they return.  
What if her eyes were there, they in her head?  
The brightness of her cheek would shame  
— those stars,

As daylight doth a lamp; her eye in heaven  
Would through the airy region stream so bright,  
That birds would sing, and think it were not  
night.

See how she leans her cheek upon her hand!  
O, that I were a glove upon that hand,  
That I might touch that cheek!

*Jul.* Ah me!

*Rom.* She speaks:—  
O, speak again, bright angel! for thou art  
As glorious to this night, being o'er my head,  
As is a winged messenger of heaven  
Unto the white upturned wond'ring eyes  
Of mortals, that fall back to gaze on him.  
When he bestrides the lazy-pacing clouds,  
And sails upon the bosom of the air. [Romeo†

*Jul.* O, Romeo, Romeo! wherefore art thou  
Deny thy father, and refuse thy name;  
Or, if thou wilt not, be but sworn my love,  
And I'll no longer be a Capulet.

*Rom.* Shall I hear more, or shall I speak at  
this? [aside.

*Jul.* 'Tis but thy name that is my enemy;  
Thou art thyself, though not a Montague.  
What's Montague? it is nor hand, nor foot,  
Nor arm, nor face, nor any other part  
Belonging to a man. O, be some other name!  
What's in a name? that which we call a rose,  
By any other name would smell as sweet;  
So Romeo would, were he not Romeo call'd,  
Retain that dear perfection which he owes †,  
Without that title.—Romeo, doff\*\* thy name;  
And for that name, which is no part of thee,  
Take all myself.

*Rom.* I take thee at thy word:  
Call me but love, and I'll be new baptized;  
Henceforth I never will be Romeo.

*Jul.* What man art thou that, thus be-  
screen'd in night,  
So stumblest on my counsel?

*Rom.* By a name  
I know not how to tell thee who I am:

‡ e. e., Himself. + Alluding to the old ballad of the king and the beggar. † This phrase,  
in Shakespeare's time, was used as an expression of tenderness. § Humid, moist.  
‖ A votary to the moon, to Diana. ¶ Owns, possesses. \*\* Do off.



My name, dear saint, is hateful to myself,  
Because it is an enemy to thee;

Had I it written, I would tear the word.

*Jul.* My ears have not yet drunk a hundred words

Of that tongue's utterance, yet I know thee  
Art thou not Romeo and a Montague?

*Rom.* Neither, fair saint, if either thee dislike.

*Jul.* How camest thou hither, tell me? and  
The orchard walls are high, and hard to climb;  
And the place death, considering who thou  
If any of my kinsmen find thee here.

*Rom.* With love's light wings did I o'er-  
perch these walls;

For stony limits cannot hold love out:

And what love can do that dares love attempt,  
Therefore thy kinsmen are not let\* to me. [thee.

*Jul.* If they do see thee they will murder,  
*Rom.* Alack! there lies more peril in thine  
eye

Than twenty of their swords; look thou but  
And I am proof against their enmity. [here:]

*Jul.* I would not for the world they saw thee  
*Rom.* I have night's cloak to hide me from  
their sight;

And, but thou love me†, let them find me  
My life were better ended by their hate,  
Than death prorogued, wanting of thy love.

*Jul.* By whose direction found'st thou out  
this place?

*Rom.* By love, who first did prompt me to  
He lent me counsel, and I lent him eyes.

I am no pilot; yet, wert thou as far  
As that vast shore wash'd with the furthest sea,  
I would adventure for such merchandise. [face,

*Jul.* Thou know'st the mask of night is on my  
Else would a maiden blush bepaint my cheek,  
For that which thou hast heard me speak to-  
night,

Fain would I dwell on form—fain, fain deny  
What I have spoke. But farewell compliment!

Dost thou love me? I know thou wilt say—Ay;  
And I will take thy word: yet, if thou swear'st,  
Thou may'st prove false; at lover's perjuries,  
They say, Jove laughs. O, gentle Romeo,  
If thou dost love pronounce it faithfully:

Or, if thou think'st I am too quickly won,  
I'll frown, and be perverse, and say thee nay,  
So thou wilt woo; but else not for the world.  
In truth, fair Montague, I am too fond; [light:]  
And therefore thou may'st think my haviour†  
But trust me, gentleman, I'll prove more true  
Than those that have more cunning to be  
strange§.

*Rom.* Lady, by yonder blessed moon I  
swear,

That tips with silver all these fruit-tree tops,—  
*Jul.* O, swear not by the moon, the incon-  
stant moon

That monthly changes in her circled orb,  
Lest that thy love prove likewise variable.

*Rom.* What shall I swear by?

*Jul.* Do not swear at all;  
Or, if thou wilt, swear by thy gracious self,  
Which is the god of my idolatry,  
And I'll believe thee.

*Rom.* If my heart's dear love—  
*Jul.* Well, do not swear: although I joy in  
I have no joy of this contract to-night: [thee,  
It is too rash, too unadvised, too sudden;  
Too like the lightning, which doth cease to be  
Ere one can say—It lightens.] Sweet, good  
night!

This bud of love, by summer's ripening breath,  
May prove a beauteous flower when next we  
meet.

Good night! good night! as sweet repose and  
Come to thy heart, as that within my breast!

*Rom.* O, wilt thou leave me so unsatisfied?  
*Jul.* What satisfaction canst thou have  
to-night?

*Rom.* The exchange of thy love's faithful  
vow for mine.

*Jul.* I gave thee mine before thou didst re-  
And yet I would it were to give again.

*Rom.* Wouldst thou withdraw it? for what  
purpose, love?

*Jul.* But to be frank||, and give it thee  
And yet I wish but for the thing I have:  
My bounty is as boundless as the sea,  
My love as deep; the more I give to thee  
The more I have, for both are infinite.

[Nurse calls within.  
I hear some noise within; Dear love, adieu!  
Anon, good nurse!—Sweet Montague, be true.  
Stay but a little, I will come again. [Exit.  
*Rom.* O blessed, blessed night! I am afeard,  
Being in night, all this is but a dream,  
Too flattering-sweet to be substantial.  
Re-enter JULIET above.

*Jul.* Three words, dear Romeo, and good  
night, indeed.

If that thy bent¶ of love be honourable, [row,  
Thy purpose marriage, send me word to-mor-  
By one that I'll procure to come to thee, [rite;  
Where, and what time, thou wilt perform the  
And all my fortunes at thy foot I'll lay,  
And follow thee, my lord, throughout the  
Nurse. [Within.] Madam. [world:]

*Jul.* I come anon:—But if thou mean'st not  
I do beseech thee,— [well,  
Nurse. [Within.] Madam.

*Jul.* By and by I come:  
To cease thy suit, and leave me to my grief:  
To-morrow will I send.

*Rom.* So thrive my  
*Jul.* A thousand times good night!  
*Rom.* A thousand times the worse  
thy light.— [their  
Love goes toward love as school-boys  
But love from love, toward school with  
looks. [Retiring slow  
Re-enter JULIET, above.

*Jul.* Hist! Romeo, hist!—O, for a falconer's  
To lure this tassel-gentle\*\* back again! [voice,  
Bondage is hoarse, and may not speak aloud;

\* Hindrance.

|| Free.

† Unless thou love me.

¶ Inclination.

‡ Behaviour.

§ Shy.

\*\* The male of the goshawk.

Else would I tear the cave where echo lies,  
And make her airy tongue more hoarse than  
With repetition of my Romeo's name. [mine]

*Rom.* It is my soul, that calls upon my name:  
How silver-sweet sound lovers' tongues by  
Like softest music to attending ears! [night]

*Jul.* Romeo!

*Rom.* My sweet!

*Jul.* At what o'clock to-morrow  
Shall I send to thee?

*Rom.* At the hour of nine.

*Jul.* I will not fail; 'tis twenty years till  
I have forgot why I did call thee back. [then.]

*Rom.* Let me stand here till thou remember it.

*Jul.* I shall forget, to have thee still stand  
Rememb'ring how I love thy company. [there.]

*Rom.* And I'll still stay, to have thee still  
Forgetting any other home but this. [forget.]

*Jul.* 'Tis almost morning, I would have thee  
And yet no further than a wanton's bird; [gone:]  
Who lets it hop a little from her hand,  
Like a poor prisoner in his twisted gyves\*,  
And with a silk thread plucks it back again,  
So loving-jealous of his liberty.

*Rom.* I would, I were thy bird.

*Jul.* Sweet, so would I:  
Yet I should kill thee with much cherishing.  
Good night, good night! parting is such sweet  
sorrow,

That I shall say—good night, till it be morrow.

*Rom.* Sleep dwell upon thine eyes, peace  
in thy breast!— [Exit.]

'Would I were sleep and peace so sweet to  
Hence will I to my ghostly father's cell;  
His help to crave, and my dear hap† to tell.

[Exit.]

### SCENE III. Friar Laurence's Cell.

*Enter Friar LAURENCE, with a Basket.*

*Fri.* The grey-eyed morn smiles on the  
frowning night, [light:]  
Chequering the eastern clouds with streaks of  
And flecked‡ darkness like a drunkard reels  
From forth day's path-way, made by Titan's§  
wheels:

Now ere the sun advance his burning eye,  
The day to cheer, and night's dank dew to dry,  
I must fill up this osier cage of ours, [fers.]  
With baleful weeds, and precious juiced flow-  
The earth, that's nature's mother, is her tomb;  
What is her burying grave, that is her womb:  
And from her womb children of divers kind  
We sucking on her natural bosom find;  
Many for many virtues excellent,  
None but for some, and yet all different.  
O, mickle is the powerful grace||, that lies  
In herbs, plants, stones, and their true qualities:  
For nought so vile that on the earth doth live,  
But to the earth some special good doth give;  
Nor aught so good, but strain'd from that fair  
use,

Revolts from true birth, stumbling on abuse:  
Virtue itself turns vice, being misapplied;  
And vice sometime's by action dignified.  
Within the infant rind of this small flower  
Poison hath residence, and medicine power:

For this, being smelt, with that part cheers  
each part;

Being tasted, slays all senses with the heart.  
Two such opposed foes encamp them still  
In man as well as herbs, grace, and rude will;  
And where the worser is predominant,  
Full soon the canker death eats up that plant.

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Rom.* Good morrow, father!

*Fri.* Benedicite!

What early tongue so sweet saluteth me?—  
Young son, it argues a distemper'd head,  
So soon to bid good morrow to thy bed:  
Care keeps his watch in every old man's eye,  
And where care lodges, sleep will never lie;  
But where unbruis'd youth with unstuff'd  
brain [reign:]  
Doth couch his limbs, there golden sleep doth  
Therefore thy earliness doth me assure,  
Thou art up-roused by some distemp'rature;  
Or if not so, then here I hit it right—  
Our Romeo hath not been in bed to-night.

*Rom.* That last is true, the sweeter rest was  
mine. [line?]

*Fri.* God pardon sin! wast thou with Rosa-

*Rom.* With Rosaline, my ghostly father? no;  
I have forgot that name, and that name's woe.

*Fri.* That's my good son: But where hast  
thou been then?

*Rom.* I'll tell thee, ere thou ask it me again  
I have been feasting with mine enemy;  
Where, on a sudden, one hath wounded me,  
That's by me wounded; both our remedies  
Within thy help and holy physic lies:  
I bear no hatred, blessed man; for, lo,  
My intercession likewise steads my foe. [drift:]

*Fri.* Be plain, good son, and homely in thy  
Riddling confession finds but riddling shrift.

*Rom.* Then plainly know, my heart's dear  
love is set

On the fair daughter of rich Capulet:  
As mine on hers, so hers is set on mine; [bine  
And all combined, save what thou must com-  
By holy marriage: when, and where, and how,  
We met, we woo'd, and made exchange of vow,  
I'll tell thee as we pass; but this I pray,  
That thou consent to marry us this day. [here!]

*Fri.* Holy Saint Francis! what a change is  
Is Rosaline, whom thou didst love so dear,  
So soon forsaken? young men's love then lies  
Not truly in their hearts but in their eyes.

*Jesu Maria!* what a deal of brine  
Hath wash'd thy sallow cheeks for Rosaline!  
How much salt water thrown away in waste,  
To season love, that of it doth not taste!  
The sun not yet thy sighs from heaven clears,  
Thy old groans wring yet in my ancient ears;  
Lo, here upon thy cheek the stain doth sit  
Of an old tear that is not wash'd off yet:  
If e'er thou wast thyself, and these woes thine,  
Thou and these woes were all for Rosaline;  
And art thou changed? pronounce this sen-  
tence then— [men.]

Women may fall, when there's no strength in  
*Rom.* Thou chid'st me oft for loving Rosaline.

*Fri.* For doting, not for loving, pupil mine.

\* Fetters. † Chance, fortune. ‡ Spotted, streaked. § The sun. || Virtue.

*Rom.* And badest me bury love.

*Fri.* Not in a grave,  
To lay one in, another out to have. [love now,  
*Rom.* I pray thee, chide not: she, whom I  
Doth grace for grace and love for love allow;  
The other did not so.

*Fri.* O, she knew well,  
Thy love did read by rote, and could not spell.  
But come, young waverer, come go with me,  
In one respect I'll thy assistant be;  
For this alliance may so happy prove,  
To turn your households' rancour to pure love.

*Rom.* O, let us hence; I stand on sudden  
haste\*.

*Fri.* Wisely, and slow; they stumble that  
run fast. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE IV. A Street.

*Enter BENEVOLIO and MERCUTIO.*

*Mer.* Where the devil should this Romeo  
Came he not home to-night? [be?—

*Ben.* Not to his father's; I spoke with his  
man. [that Rosaline,

*Mer.* Ah, that same pale hard-hearted wench,  
Torments him so, that he will sure run mad.

*Ben.* Tybalt, the kinsman of old Capulet,  
Hath sent a letter to his father's house.

*Mer.* A challenge, on my life.

*Ben.* Romeo will answer it.

*Mer.* Any man, that can write, may answer  
a letter.

*Ben.* Nay, he will answer the letter's mas-  
ter, how he dares, being dared.

*Mer.* Alas, poor Romeo, he is already dead!  
stabbed with a white wench's black eye; shot  
through the ear with a love-song; the very pin  
of his heart cleft with the blind bow-boy's butt-  
shaft†: And is he a man to encounter Tybalt?

*Ben.* Why, what is Tybalt?

*Mer.* More than prince of cats‡, I can tell  
you. O, he is the courageous captain of com-  
pliments. He fights as you sing prick-song§,  
keeps time, distance, and proportion; rests me  
his minim rest, one, two, and the third in your  
bosom: the very butcher of a silk button, a  
duellist, a duellist; a gentleman of the very  
first house,—of the first and second cause: Ah,  
the immortal passado! the punto reverso! the  
hay||!

*Ben.* The what?

*Mer.* The pox of such antic, lisping, affect-  
ing fantasticoes; these new tuners of accents!—  
*By Jesu, a very good blade!—a very tall  
man!—a very good whore!*—Why, is not this a  
lamentable thing, grandsire, that we should  
be thus afflicted with these strange flies, these  
fashion-mongers, these *pardonnez-moy's*, who  
stand so much on the new form, that they  
cannot sit at ease on the old bench? O, their  
*bons*, their *bons* ¶!

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Ben.* Here comes Romeo, here comes Romeo.

*Mer.* Without his roe, like a dried her-  
ring:—O flesh, flesh, how art thou fishified!  
—Now is he for the numbers that Petrarch  
flowed in: Laura, to his lady, was but a kitch-  
en-wench;—marry, she had a better love to  
be-rhyme her: Dido, a dowdy; Cleopatra, a  
gipsy; Helen and Hero, hildings and harlots;  
Thisbé, a grey eye or so, but not to the pur-  
pose.—Signior Romeo, *bon jour*! there's a  
French salutation to your French slop\*\*. You  
gave us the counterfeit fairly last night,

*Rom.* Good-morrow to you both. What  
counterfeit did I give you?

*Mer.* The slip, sir, the slip ††; Can you not  
conceive?

*Rom.* Pardon, good Mercutio, my business  
was great; and, in such a case as mine, a man  
may strain courtesy.

*Mer.* That's as much as to say—such a case  
as yours constrains a man to bow in the hams.

*Rom.* Meaning—to court'sy.

*Mer.* Thou hast most kindly hit it.

*Rom.* A most courteous exposition.

*Mer.* Nay, I am the very pink of courtesy.

*Rom.* Pink for flower.

*Mer.* Right.

*Rom.* Why, then is my pump‡‡ well flowered.

*Mer.* Well said: Follow me this jest now,  
till thou hast worn out thy pump; that, when  
the single sole of it is worn, the jest may re-  
main, after the wearing, solely singular.

*Rom.* O single-soled§§ jest, solely singular  
for the singleness!

*Mer.* Come between us, good Benvolio;  
my wits fail.

*Rom.* Switch and spurs, switch and spurs;  
or I'll cry a match.

*Mer.* Nay, if thy wits run the wild-geese  
chase ||||, I have done; for thou hast more of  
the wild-geese in one of thy wits, than, I am  
sure, I have in my whole five: Was I with  
you there for the goose?

*Rom.* Thou wast never with me for any  
thing, when thou wast not there for the goose.

*Mer.* I will bite thee by the ear for that jest.

*Rom.* Nay, good goose, bite not.

*Mer.* Thy wit is a very bitter sweetening ¶¶;  
it is a most sharp sauce.

*Rom.* And is it not well served in to a  
sweet goose?

*Mer.* O, here's a wit of cheverel\*\*\*, that  
stretches from an inch narrow to an ell broad!

*Rom.* I stretch it out for that word—broad:  
which, added to the goose, proves thee far and  
wide a broad goose.

*Mer.* Why, is not this better now than  
groaning for love? now art thou sociable, now  
art thou Romeo; now art thou what thou art  
by art as well as by nature: for this drivelling

\* *i.e.*, It is of the utmost consequence for me to be hasty. † Arrow. ‡ See the story of  
Reynard the fox. § By notes pricked down. || Terms of the fencing school. ¶ In  
ridicule of frenchified coxcombs. \*\* Trowsers or pantaloons, a French fashion in Shak-  
speare's time. †† A pun on counterfeit money called slips. ‡‡ Shoe. §§ Slight thin.

|| A horse race in any direction the leader chooses to take. ¶¶ An apple. \*\*\* Soft  
stretching leather.



love is like a great natural, that runs lolling up and down to hide his bauble in a hole.

*Ben.* Stop there, stop there.

*Mer.* Thou desirest me to stop in my tale against the hair.

*Ben.* Thou wouldst else have made thy tale large.

*Mer.* O, thou art deceived, I would have made it short: for I was come to the whole depth of my tale: and meant, indeed, to occupy the argument no longer.

*Rom.* Here's goodly geer!

*Enter Nurse and PETER.*

*Mer.* A sail, a sail, a sail!

*Ben.* Two, two; a shirt, and a smock.

*Nurse.* Peter!

*Peter.* Anon?

*Nurse.* My fan, Peter\*.

*Mer.* Prythee, do, good Peter, to hide her face; for her fan's the fairer of the two.

*Nurse.* God ye good morrow, gentlemen.

*Mer.* God ye good den†, fair gentlewoman.

*Nurse.* Is it good den?

*Mer.* 'Tis no less, I tell you; for the bawdy hand of the dial is now upon the prick‡ of noon.

*Nurse.* Out upon you! what a man are you?

*Rom.* One, gentlewoman, that God hath made himself to mar.

*Nurse.* By my troth, it is well said;—For himself to mar, quoth'a?—Gentlemen, can any of you tell me where I may find the young Romeo?

*Rom.* I can tell you; but young Romeo will be older when you have found him, than he was when you sought him: I am the youngest of that name, for 'fault of a worse.

*Nurse.* You say well.

*Mer.* Yea, is the worst well? very well took, i'faith; wisely, wisely.

*Nurse.* If you be he, sir, I desire some confidence with you.

*Ben.* She will indite him to some supper.

*Mer.* A bawd, a bawd, a bawd! So ho!

*Rom.* What hast thou found?

*Mer.* No hare, sir; unless a hare, sir, in a lenten pie, that is something stale and hoar ere it be spent.

*An old hare hoar,*

*And an old hare hoar,*

*Is very good meat in Lent:*

*But a hare that is hoar,*

*Is too much for a score,*

*When it hours ere it be spent.*

Romeo, will you come to your father's? we'll to dinner thither.

*Rom.* I will follow you.

*Mer.* Farewell, ancient lady; farewell, lady, lady, lady.

[*Exeunt MERCUTIO and BENVOLIO.*]

*Nurse.* Marry farewell!—I pray you, sir, what sancey merchant¶ was this, that was so full of his ropery\*\*?

*Rom.* A gentleman, nurse, that loves to hear

himself talk; and will speak more in a minute, than he will stand to in a month.

*Nurse.* An 'a speak any thing against me, I'll take him down an 'a were lustier than he is, and twenty such Jacks; and if I cannot, I'll find those that shall. Scurvy knave! I am none of his flirt-gills; I am none of his skains-mates††:—And thou must stand by too, and suffer every knave to use me at his pleasure?

*Pet.* I saw no man use you at his pleasure; if I had, my weapon should quickly have been out, I warrant you: I dare draw as soon as another man, if I see occasion in a good quarrel, and the law on my side.

*Nurse.* Now, afore God, I am so vexed, that every part about me quivers. Scurvy knave!—Pray you, sir, a word: and as I told you, my young lady bade me inquire you out; what she bade me say, I will keep to myself; but first let me tell ye, if ye should lead her into a fool's paradise, as they say, it were a very gross kind of behaviour, as they say: for the gentlewoman is young; and, therefore, if you should deal double with her, truly, it were an ill thing to be offered to any gentlewoman, and very weak dealing.

*Rom.* Nurse, commend me to thy lady and mistress. I protest unto thee.—

*Nurse.* Good heart! and, i'faith, I will tell her as much: Lord, lord, she will be a joyful woman.

*Rom.* What wilt thou tell her, nurse? thou dost not mark me.

*Nurse.* I will tell her, sir,—that you do protest; which, as I take it, is a gentleman-like offer.

*Rom.* Bid her devise some means to come This afternoon; [to shrift‡‡

And there she shall at friar Laurence' cell Be shrived, and married. Here is for thy pains.

*Nurse.* No, truly, sir; not a penny.

*Rom.* Go to; I say, you shall.

*Nurse.* This afternoon, sir? well, she shall be there.

*Rom.* And stay, good nurse, behind the abbey wall:

Within this hour my man shall be with thee; And bring thee cords made like a tackled stair Which to the high top gallant of my joy Must be my convoy in the secret night. Farewell!—Be trusty, and I'll quit|| thy pains. Farewell! commend me to thy mistress.

*Nurse.* Now God in heaven bless thee!—Hark you, sir.

*Rom.* What say'st thou, my dear nurse?

*Nurse.* Is your man secret? Did you ne'er hear say—

Two may keep counsel, putting one away?

*Rom.* I warrant thee; my man's as true as steel.

*Nurse.* Well, sir; my mistress is the sweetest lady—Lord, lord!—when 'twas a little prating thing,—O,—there's a nobleman in

It was the custom for servants to carry the lady's fan. † Good even. ‡ Point.  
§ Hoary, mouldy. || The burthen of an old song. ¶ A term of disrespect in contradiction to gentleman. \*\* Roguery. †† A mate or companion of one wearing a skain; a short sword. ‡‡ Confession. §§ The highest extremity of the mast of a ship. || Recurve

town, one Paris, that would fain lay knife aboard; but she, good soul, had as lieve see a toad, a very toad, as see him. I anger her sometimes, and tell her that Paris is the properer man; but, I'll warrant you, when I say so, she looks as pale as any clout in the varsal world. Doth not rosemary and Romeo begin both with a letter?

*Rom.* Ay, nurse; What of that? both with an R.

*Nurse.* Ah, mocker! that's the dog's name. R. is for the dog. No; I know it begins with some other letter: and she hath the prettiest sententions of it, of you and rosemary, that it would do you good to hear it.

*Rom.* Commend me to thy lady. [Exit.

*Nurse.* Ay, a thousand times.—Peter!

*Pet.* Anon?

*Nurse.* Peter, take my fan, and go before. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE V. Capulet's Garden.

*Enter JULIET.*

*Jul.* The clock struck nine, when I did send the nurse;

In half an hour she promised to return. [so.—Perchance, she cannot meet him: that's not O, she is lame! love's heralds should be thoughts, [beams, Which ten times faster glide than the sun's Driving back shadows over low'ring hills: Therefore do nimble-pinion'd doves draw love, And therefore hath the wind-swift Cupid wings. Now is the sun upon the highmost hill Of this day's journey; and from nine till twelve

Is three long hours,—yet she is not come. Had she affections, and warm youthful blood, She'd be as swift in motion as a ball; My words would bandy\* her to my sweet love, And his to me: But old folks, many feign as they were dead; Unwieldily, slow, heavy and pale as lead.

*Enter Nurse and PETER.*

O God, she comes!—O honey nurse, what news?

Hast thou met with him? Send thy man away. *Nurse.* Peter, stay at the gate.

[Exit PETER.

*Jul.* Now, good sweet nurse,—O lord! why look'st thou sad?

Though news be sad, yet tell them merrily; If good, thou shalt meet the music of sweet news By playing it to me with so sooth a face.

*Nurse.* I am weary, give me leave a while: Fie, how my bones ache! What a jaunt have I had! [thy news:

*Jul.* I would, thou hadst my bones, and I Nay, come, I pray thee, speak;—good, good nurse, speak. [awhile?

*Nurse.* Jesu. What haste? can you not stay? Do you not see, that I am out of breath?

*Jul.* How art thou out of breath, when thou hast breath

To say to me—that thou art out of breath?

The excuse, that thou dost make in this delay Is longer than the tale thou dost excuse.

Is thy news good, or bad? answer to that; Say either, and I'll stay the circumstance:

Let me be satisfied, Is't good or bad?

*Nurse.* Well, you have made a simple choice; you know not how to choose a man: Romeo! no, not he; though his face be better than any man's, yet his leg excels all men's; and for a hand, and a foot, and a body,—though they be not to be talked on, yet they are past compare: He is not the flower of courtesy,—but, I'll warrant him, as gentle as a lamb.—Go thy ways, wench; serve God.—What, have you dined at home? [fore;

*Jul.* No, no: But all this did I know before. What says he of our marriage? what of that?

*Nurse.* Lord, how my head akes! what a head have I?

It beats as it would fall in twenty pieces.

My back o't'other side,—O, my back, my back! Beshrew't your heart, for sending me about,

To catch my death with jaunting up and down! *Jul.* P'faith, I am sorry that thou art not well: [my love?

Sweet, sweet, sweet nurse, tell me, what says *Nurse.* Your love says like an honest gentleman,

And a courteous, and a kind, and a handsome, And, I warrant, a virtuous:—Where is your mother? [within;

*Jul.* Where is my mother?—why, she is Where should she be? How oddly thou reply'st?

*Your love says like an honest gentleman,—Where is your mother?*

*Nurse.* O, God's lady dear! Are you so hot? Marry, come up, I trow; Is this the poultrie for my aking bones? Henceforward do your messages yourself.

*Jul.* Here's such a coil;—come, what says Romeo? [to-day?

*Nurse.* Have you got leave to go to shrift *Jul.* I have. [rence' cell,

*Nurse.* Then hie you hence to friar Lau There stays a husband to make you a wife: Now comes the wanton blood up in your cheeks,

They'll be in scarlet straight at any news Hie you to church; I must another way, To fetch a ladder, by the which your love Must climb a bird's nest soon, when it is dark:

I am the drudge, and toil in your delight; But you shall bear the burden soon at night. Go, I'll to dinner; hie you to the cell.

*Jul.* Hie to high fortune!—honest nurse, farewell. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE VI. Friar Laurence's Cell.

*Enter FRIAR LAURENCE and ROMEO.*

*Fri.* So smile the heavens upon this holy act, That after-hours with sorrow chide us not!

\* Drive her, as a ball struck with a bandy, i. e., a bat or battledore. † Ill beds.

‡ Noise, bustle.

*Rom.* Amen! amen! but come what sorrow  
can,  
It cannot countervall the exchange of joy  
That one short minute gives me in her sight:  
Do thou but close our hands with holy  
words,

Then love-devouring death do what he dare,  
It is enough I may but call her mine.

*Fri.* These violent delights have violent  
ends, [powder,  
And in their triumph die; like fire and  
Which, as they kiss, consume: The sweetest  
honey

Is loathsome in his own deliciousness,  
And in the taste confounds the appetite:  
Therefore, love moderately; long love doth so;  
Too swift arrives as tardy as too slow.

*Enter JULIET.*

Here comes the lady: O, so light a foot  
Will ne'er wear out the everlasting flint:  
A lover may bestride the gossomers\*  
That idle in the wanton summer air,  
And yet not fall; so light is vanity.

*Jul.* Good even to my ghosdy confessor.  
*Fri.* Romeo shall thank thee, daughter, for  
us both! [too much.]  
*Jul.* As much to him, else are his thanks  
*Rom.* Ah, Juliet, if the measure of thy joy  
Be heap'd like mine, and that thy skill be  
more

To blazent it, then sweeten with thy breath  
This neighbour air, and let rich music's  
tongue,

Unfold the imagined happiness that both  
Receive in either by this dear encounter.

*Jul.* Conceit†, more rich in matter than in  
words,

Braggs of his substance, not of ornament:  
They are but beggars that can count their worth;  
But my true love is grown to such excess,  
I cannot sum up half my sum of wealth.

*Fri.* Come, come with me, and we will  
make short work;

For, by your leaves, you shall not stay alone,  
Till holy church incorporate two in one.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. *A public Place.*

*Enter MERCUTIO, BENVOLIO, Page, and  
Servants.*

*Ben.* I pray thee, good Mercutio, let's retire;  
The day is hot, the Capulets abroad,  
And, if we meet, we shall not 'scape a brawl;  
For now, these hot days, is the mad blood  
stirring.

*Mer.* Thou art like one of those fellows,  
that, when he enters the confines of a tavern,  
claps me his sword upon the table, and says,  
*God send me no need of thee!* and, by the  
operation of the second cup, draws it on the  
drawer, when, indeed, there is no need.

*Ben.* Am I like such a fellow?

*Mer.* Come, come, thou art as hot a Jack in  
thy mood as any in Italy; and as soon moved  
to be moody, and as soon moody to be moved.

*Ben.* And what to?

*Mer.* Nay, an there were two such, we  
should have none shortly, for one would kill  
the other. Thou! why thou wilt quarrel with  
a man that hath a hair more, or a hair less, in  
his beard, than thou hast. Thou wilt quarrel  
with a man for cracking nuts, having no other  
reason but because thou hast hazel eyes; What  
eye, but such an eye, would spy out such a  
quarrel? Thy head is as full of quarrels, as an  
egg is full of meat; and yet thy head hath been  
beaten as addle as an egg, for quarrelling.  
Thou hast quarrelled with a man for coughing  
in the street, because he hath wakened thy  
dog that hath lain asleep in the sun. Didst  
thou not fall out with a tailor for wearing his  
new doublet before Easter? with another, for  
tying his new shoes with old riband? and yet  
thou wilt tutor me from quarrelling!

*Ben.* An I were so apt to quarrel as thou  
art, any man should buy the fee-simple of my  
life for an hour and a quarter.

*Mer.* The fee-simple? O simple!  
*Enter TYBALT, and Others.*

*Ben.* By my head, here come the Capulets.

*Mer.* By my heel, I care not.

*Tyb.* Follow me close, for I will speak to  
them.—Gentlemen, good den: a word with  
one of you.

*Mer.* And but one word with one of us?  
Cuple it with something; make it a word and  
a blow.

*Tyb.* You will find me apt enough to that,  
sir, if you will give me occasion.

*Mer.* Could you not take some occasion  
without giving?

*Tyb.* Mercutio, thou consortest with Romeo,  
*Mer.* Consort? what, dost thou make us  
minstrels? an thou make minstrels of us, look  
to hear nothing but discords: here's my fiddle-  
stick; here's that shall make you dance.  
'Zounds, consort!

*Ben.* We talk here in the public haunt of  
men:

Either withdraw into some private place,  
Or reason coldly of your grievances,  
Or else depart; here all eyes gaze on us.

*Mer.* Men's eyes were made to look, and  
let them gaze;

I will not budge for no man's pleasure, I.

*Enter ROMEO.*

*Tyb.* Well, peace be with you, sir! here  
comes my man. [your livery:]

*Mer.* But I'll be hanged, sir, if he wear  
Marry, go before to field, he'll be your fol-  
lower; [man]

Your worship, in that sense, may call him—

\* The long white filament which flies in the air.

† Paint, display.

‡ Imagination.



*Tyb.* Romeo, the hate I bear thee, can afford

No better term than this—Thou art a villain.

*Rom.* Tybalt, the reason that I have to love thee

Doth much excuse the appertaining rage

To such a greeting:—Villain art thou none;

Therefore farewell; I see, thou know'st me not.

*Tyb.* Boy, this shall not excuse the injuries that thou hast done me; therefore turn and draw.

*Rom.* I do protest I never injured thee; But love thee better than thou canst devise, Till thou shalt know the reason of my love: And so, good Capulet,—which name I tender As dearly as mine own,—be satisfied. [sion!

*Mer.* O, calm, dishonourable, vile submission! *Ala stoccata\** carries it away. [Draws.

*Tybalt*, you rat-catcher, will you walk?

*Tyb.* What wouldst thou have with me?

*Mer.* Good king of cats, nothing but one of your nine lives, that I mean to make bold withal; and, as you shall use me hereafter, dry-beat the rest of the eight. Will you pluck your sword out of his placher† by the ears? make haste, lest mine be about your ears ere it be out.

*Tyb.* I am for you. [Drawing.

*Rom.* Gentle Mercutio, put thy rapier up.

*Mer.* Come, sir, your passado. [They fight.

*Rom.* Draw, Benvolio; [shame!

Beat down their weapons.—Gentlemen, forbear this outrage. Tybalt—Mercutio—The prince expressly hath forbid this bandying [cutio.

In Verona streets:—hold, Tybalt; good Mercutio! [Exeunt TYBALT and his Partisans.

*Mer.* I am hurt;—

A plague o'both the houses!—I am sped.—Is he gone, and hath nothing?

*Ben.* What, art thou hurt?

*Mer.* Ay, ay, a scratch, a scratch: marry, 'tis enough.—

Where is my page?—go, villain, fetch a surgeon. [Exit Page.

*Rom.* Courage, man; the hurt cannot be much.

*Mer.* No, 'tis not so deep as a well, nor so wide as a church-door; but 'tis enough, 'twill serve: ask for me to-morrow, and you shall find me a grave man. I am peppered, I warrant, for this world:—A plague o'both your houses!—Zounds, a dog, a rat, a mouse, a cat, to scratch a man to death! a braggart, a rogue, a villain, that fights by the book of arithmetic!—Why the devil came you between us? I was hurt under your arm.

*Rom.* I thought all for the best.

*Mer.* Help me into some house, Benvolio, Or I shall faint.—A plague o'both your houses! 'they have made worms' meat of me: I have it, and soundly too:—Your houses!

[Exeunt MERCUTIO and BENVOLIO.

*Rom.* This gentleman, the prince's near ally,

My very friend, hath got his mortal hurt In my behalf; my reputation stain'd With Tybalt's slander.—Tybalt, that an hour Hath been my kinsman:—O, sweet Juliet, Thy beauty hath made me effeminate, And in my temper softened valour's steel.

*Re-enter BENVOLIO.*

*Ben.* O Romeo, Romeo, brave Mercutio is dead;

That gallant spirit hath aspir'd the clouds, Which too untimely here did scorn the earth.

*Rom.* This day's black fate on more days doth depend,

This but begins the woe, others must end.

*Re-enter TYBALT.*

*Ben.* Here comes the furious Tybalt back again. [slain!

*Rom.* Alive! in triumph! and Mercutio Away to heaven, respective† lenity,

And fire-eyed fury be my conduct § now!—

Now, Tybalt, take the villain back again, That late thou gavest me; for Mercutio's soul Is but a little way above our heads,

Staying for thine to keep him company;

Either thou, or I, or both, must go with him.

*Tyb.* Thou, wretched boy, that didst consort Shalt with him hence. [him here!

*Rom.* This shall determine that.

[They fight; TYBALT falls.

*Ben.* Romeo, away, be gone!

The citizens are up, and Tybalt slain:

Stand not amazed:—the prince will doom thee death,

If thou art taken:—hence!—be gone!—away!

*Rom.* O, I am fortune's fool!

*Ben.* Why dost thou stay? [Exit ROMEO.

*Enter Citizens, &c.*

1 *Cit.* Which way ran he that kill'd Mercutio?

Tybalt, that murderer, which way ran he?

*Ben.* There lies that Tybalt.

1 *Cit.* Up, sir, go with me;

I charge thee in the prince's name, obey.

*Enter Prince, attended; MONTAGUE, CAPULET, their Wives, and Others.*

*Prin.* Where are the vile beginners of this fray?

*Ben.* O noble prince, I can discover all

The unlucky manage of this fatal brawl:

There lies the man slain by young Romeo,

That slew thy kinsman, brave Mercutio.

*La. Cap.* Tybalt, my cousin!—O my brother's child!

Unhappy sight! ah me, the blood is spill'd!

Of my dear kinsman!—Prince, as thou art true,

For blood of ours shed blood of Montague.—O cousin, cousin!

*Prin.* Benvolio, who began this bloody fray? [did slay;

*Ben.* Tybalt, here slain whom Romeo's hand

Romeo, that spoke him fair, bade him bethink

How nice\*\* the quarrel was, and urg'd withal

\* The Italian term for a thrust or stab with a rapier.

† Case or scabbard.

‡ Cool, considerate gentleness.

§ Conduct for conductor.

|| Accompany.

\*\* Just and upright.

\*\*\* Slight, unimportant.

Your high displeasure:—All this—utter'd  
With gentle breath, calm look, knees humbly  
bowed,—

Could not take truce with the unruly spleen  
Of Tybalt, deaf to peace, but that he tilts  
With piercing steel at bold Mercutio's breast  
Who, all as hot, turns deadly point to point,  
And, with a martial scorn, with one hand beats  
Cold death aside, and with the other sends  
It back to Tybalt, whose dexterity  
Retorts it: Romeo he cries aloud,  
*Hold, friends! friends, part!* and, swifter  
than his tongue,  
His agile arm beats down their fatal points,  
And 'twixt them rushes; underneath whose  
arm

An envious thrust from Tybalt hit the life  
Of stout Mercutio; and then Tybalt fled:  
But by and by comes back to Romeo,  
Who had but newly entertain'd revenge,  
And to't they go like lightning; for, ere I  
Could draw to part them, was stout Tybalt  
And as he fell did Romeo turn and fly: [slain;  
This is the truth, or let Benvolio die.

*La Cap.* He is a kinsman to the Montague;  
Affection makes him false, he speaks not true:  
Some twenty of them fought in this black  
strife,

And all those twenty could but kill one life:  
I beg for justice, which thou, prince, must give;  
Romeo slew Tybalt, Romeo must not live.

*Prin.* Romeo slew him, he slew Mercutio;  
Who now the price of his dear blood doth  
owe?

*Mon.* Not Romeo, prince, he was Mercutio's  
His fault concludes but what the law should  
The life of Tybalt. [end,

*Prin.* And, for that offence,  
Immediately we do exile him hence:  
I have an interest in your hates' proceeding,  
My blood for your rude brawls doth lie a  
bleeding;

But I'll amerce\* you with so strong a fine,  
That you shall all repent the loss of mine:  
I will be deaf to pleading and excuses; [abuses,  
Nor tears nor prayers shall purchase out  
Therefore use none: let Romeo hence in haste,  
Else, when he's found, that hour is his last.—  
Bear hence this body, and attend our will:  
Mercy but murders, pardoning those that kill.

[*Eunt.*

## SCENE II. A Room in Capulet's House.

*Enter JULIET.*

*Jul.* Gallop apace, you fiery-footed steeds,  
Towards Phœbus' mansion; such a waggoner  
As Phœton would whip you to the west,  
And bring in cloudy night immediately.—  
Spread thy close curtain, love-performing  
night!

That run-away's eyes may wink; and Romeo  
Leap to these arms, untalk'd of and unseen!  
Lovers can see to do their amorous rites  
By their own beauties; or, if love be blind,

It best agrees with night.—Come, civil night,  
Thou sober suited matron all in black,  
And learn me how to lose a winning match,  
Play'd for a pair of stainless maidenhoods:  
Hood my unmann'd blood bating in my  
cheeks, [grown bold,  
With thy black mantle; till strange love,  
Think true love acted, simple modesty.  
Come, night!—Come, Romeo! come, thou  
day in night!

For thou wilt lie upon the wings of night  
Whiter than new snow on a raven's back.—  
Come, gentle night; come, loving, black-  
brow'd night,

Give me my Romeo: and, when he shall die,  
Take him and cut him out in little stars,  
And he will make the face of heaven so fine,  
That all the world will be in love with night,  
And pay no worship to the garish sun.—  
O, I have bought the mansion of a love,  
But not possess'd it; and, though I am sold,  
Not yet enjoy'd: So tedious is this day,  
As is the night before some festival  
To an impatient child, that hath new robes,  
And may not wear them. O, here comes my  
nurse,

*Enter Nurse, with Cords.*

And she brings news; and every tongue, that  
speaks

But Romeo's name, speaks heavenly elo-  
quence.—  
Now, nurse, what news? What hast thou there,  
That Romeo bade thee fetch?

*Nurse.* Ay, the cords.  
[*Throws them down.*

*Jul.* Ah me! what news! why dost thou  
wring thy hands?

*Nurse.* Ah well-a-day! he's dead, he's dead,  
We are undone, lady, we are undone!—  
Alack the day!—he's gone, he's kill'd he's

*Jul.* Can heaven be so envious? [dead!  
*Nurse.* Romeo can,

Though heaven cannot:—O Romeo! Romeo!  
Who ever would have thought it?—Romeo?

*Jul.* What devil art thou, that dost torment  
me thus?

This torture should be roar'd in dismal hell.  
Hath Romeo slain himself? say thou but *I*!  
And that bare vowel *I* shall poison more  
Than the death-darting eye of cockatrice:  
I am not *I*, if there be such an *I*;  
Or those eyes shut, that make thee answer, *I*!  
If he be slain, say—*I*; or if not, no:  
Brief sounds determine of my weal, or woe.

*Nurse.* I saw the wound, I saw it with mine  
eyes,— [breast:  
God save the mark!—here on his manly  
A piteous corse, a bloody piteous corse;  
Pale, pale as ashes, all bedawb'd in blood,  
All in gore blood; I swoonded at the sight.

*Jul.* O break, my heart!—poor bankrupt,  
break at once!

To prison, eyes! ne'er look on liberty!  
Vile earth, to earth resign; end motion here;  
And thou, and Romeo, press one heavy bier!

\* Punish by fine. † Grave, solemn. ‡ These are terms of falconry. § Gaudy, showy  
|| In Shakspeare's time the affirmative particle *ay* was usually written *I*, and here it is  
necessary to retain the old spelling.

*Nurse.* O Tybalt, Tybalt, the best friend I  
O courteous Tybalt! honest gentleman! [had]  
That ever I should live to see thee dead!

*Jul.* What storm is this, that blows so contrary?

Is Romeo slaughter'd; and is Tybalt dead?  
My dear-loved cousin, and my dearer lord?—  
Then, dreadful trumpet, sound the general  
doom!

For who is living, if those two are gone?

*Nurse.* Tybalt is gone, and Romeo banished;  
Romeo, that kill'd him, he is banished.

*Jul.* O God!—did Romeo's hand shed  
Tybalt's blood?

*Nurse.* It did, it did; alas the day! it did.

*Jul.* O serpent heart, hid with a flow'ring  
Did ever dragon keep so fair a cave? [face]  
Beautiful tyrant! fiend angelical!

Dove-feather'd raven! volkish-ravens lamb!  
Despised substance of divinity show!

Just opposite to what thou justly seem'st,  
A damned saint, an honourable villain!—

O, nature! what hadst thou to do in hell,  
When thou didst bower the spirit of a fiend  
In mortal paradise of such sweet flesh?

Was ever book, containing such vile matter,  
So fairly bound? O, that deceit should dwell  
In such a gorgeous palace!

*Nurse.* There's no trust,  
No faith, no honesty in men; all perjured,  
All forsworn, all naught, all dissemblers.—  
Ah, where's my man? give me some *aqua*  
*vita*: [me old.

These griefs, these woes, these sorrows make  
Shame come to Romeo!

*Jul.* Blister'd be thy tongue,  
For such a wish! he was not born to shame:

Upon his brow shame is ashamed to sit;  
For 'tis a throne where honour may be crown'd

Sole monarch of the universal earth.  
O, what a beast was I to chide at him!

*Nurse.* Will you speak well of him that  
kill'd your cousin? [husband?

*Jul.* Shall I speak ill of him that is my  
Ah, poor my lord, what tongue shall smooth\*

thy name, [it?—  
When I, thy three-hours wife, have mangled

But, wherefore, villain, didst thou kill my  
cousin? [band:

That villain cousin would have kill'd my hus-  
Back, foolish tears, back to your native

spring;  
Your tributary drops belong to woe,

Which you, mistaking, offer up to joy.  
My husband lives, that Tybalt would have

slain; [husband:  
And Tybalt's dead, that would have slain my

All this is comfort: Wherefore weep I then?  
Some word there was, worse than Tybalt's

death,  
That murder'd me: I would forget it fain;

But O! it presses to my memory,  
Like damned guilty deeds to sinners' minds:

*Tybalt is dead, and Romeo—banished;*  
*That—banished, that one word—banished,*

Hath slain ten thousand Tybalts†. Tybalt's  
death

Was woe enough, if it had ended there:  
Or,—if sour woe delights in fellowship,

And needly will be rank'd with other griefs.—  
Why follow'd not, when she said—Tybalt's

dead,  
Thy father, or thy mother, nay, or both,

Which modern‡ lamentation might have  
moved?

But, with a rear-ward following Tybalt's death,  
*Romeo is banished*,—to speak that word,

Is father, mother, Tybalt, Romeo, Juliet,  
All slain, all dead:—*Romeo is banished*,—

There is no end, no limit, measure, bound,  
In that word's death; no words can that woe

sound.—  
Where is my father, and my mother, nurse?

*Nurse.* Weeping and wailing over Tybalt's  
corse:

Will you go to them? I will bring you thither.

*Jul.* Wash thy wounds with tears?  
mine shall be spent,

When theirs are dry, for Romeo's banishment,  
Take up those cords:—Poor ropes, you are

beguiled,  
Both you and I; for Romeo is exil'd:

He made you for a highway to my bed;  
But I, a maid, die maiden-widowed.

Come, cords; come, nurse; I'll to my wed-  
ding bed;

And death, not Romeo, take my maidenhead!

*Nurse.* Hie to your chamber: I'll find  
Romeo

To comfort you:—I wot§ well where he is.  
Hark ye, your Romeo will be here at night;

I'll to him; he is hid at Laurence's cell.

*Jul.* O find him! give this ring to my true  
knight,  
And bid him come to take his last farewell.

[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III. Friar Laurence's Cell.

*Enter Friar LAURENCE and ROMEO.*

*Fri.* Romeo, come forth; come forth, thou  
fearful man;

Affliction is enamour'd of thy parts,  
And thou art wedded to calamity.

*Rom.* Father, what news? what is the  
prince's doom?

What sorrow craves acquaintance at my hand,  
That I yet know not?

*Fri.* Too familiar  
Is my dear son with such sour company:

I bring thee tidings of the prince's doom.

*Rom.* What less than dooms-day is the  
prince's doom? [lips

*Fri.* A gentler judgment vanish'd from his  
Not body's death, but body's banishment.

*Rom.* Ha! banishment? be merciful, say—  
For exile hath more terror in his look, [death:

Much more than death; do not say—banish-  
ment.

*Fri.* Hence from Verona art thou banished:  
Be patient, for the world is broad and wide.

\* To smooth, in ancient language, is to stroke, to caress.

† i. e., Is worse than the loss of ten thousand Tybalts.

‡ Common.

§ Know.



*Rom.* There is no world without Verona  
But purgatory, torture, hell itself. [walls,  
Hence-banished is banish'd from the world,  
And world's exile is death:—then banishment  
Is death mis-term'd: calling death—banish-  
ment,

Thou cut'st my head off with a golden axe,  
And smilest upon the stroke that murders me.

*Fri.* O deadly sin! O rude unthankfulness!  
Thy fault our law calls death; but the kind  
prince,

Taking thy part, hath rush'd aside the law,  
And turn'd that black word death to banish-  
ment:

This is dear mercy, and thou seest it not.

*Rom.* 'Tis torture, and not mercy: heaven  
is here,

Where Juliet lives; and every cat, and dog,  
And little mouse, every unworthy thing,  
Live here in heaven, and may look on her,  
But Romeo may not.—More validity\*,  
More honourable state, more courtship lives  
In carrion flies, than Romeo: they may seize  
On the white wonder of dear Juliet's hand,  
And steal immortal blessing from her lips;  
Who, even in pure and vestal modesty,  
Still blush, as thinking their own kisses sin.  
But Romeo may not; he is banished:  
Flies may do this, when I from this must fly;  
They are free men, but I am banished.  
And say't thou yet, that exile is not death?  
Hadst thou no poison mix'd, no sharp-ground

knife, [mean,  
No sudden mean of death, though ne'er so  
But—banished—to kill me; banished?

O friar, the damned use that word in hell;  
Howlings attend it: How hast thou the heart,  
Being a divine, a ghostly confessor,  
A sin-absolver, and my friend profess'd,  
To mangle me with that word—banishment?

*Fri.* Thou fond mad man, hear me but speak  
a word. [ment.

*Rom.* O, thou wilt speak again of banish-  
*Fri.* I'll give thee armour to keep off that  
word;

Adversity's sweet milk, philosophy,  
To comfort thee, though thou art banished.

*Rom.* Yet banished?—Hang up philosophy!  
Unless philosophy can make a Juliet,  
Displant a town, reverse a prince's doom;  
It helps not, it prevails not, talk no more.

*Fri.* O, then I see that madmen have no ears.

*Rom.* How should they, when that wise  
men have no eyes?

*Fri.* Let me dispute with thee of thy estate.  
*Rom.* Thou canst not speak of what thou  
dost not feel:

Wert thou as young as I, Juliet thy love,  
An hour but married, Tybalt murdered,  
Doting like me, and like me banished,  
Then might'st thou speak, then might'st thou  
tear thy hair,

And fall upon the ground, as I do now,  
Taking the measure of an unmade grave.

*Fri.* Arise; one knocks: good Romeo, hide  
thyself. [Knocking within.]

*Rom.* Not I; unless the breath of heart-sick  
groans,

Mist-lie, infold me from the search of eyes.

[Knocking

*Fri.* Hark, how they knock!—Who's there  
—Romeo, arise;

Thou wilt be taken:—Stay a while: stand up.

[Knocking

Run to my study:—By and by:—God's will!  
What wilfulness is this?—I come, I come.

[Knocking

Who knocks so hard? whence come you?  
what's your will?

*Nurse.* [Within.] Let me come in, and you  
shall know my errand;

I come from lady Juliet.

*Fri.* Welcome then.

*Enter Nurse.*  
*Nurse.* O holy friar, O tell me, holy friar,  
Where is my lady's lord, where's Romeo?

*Fri.* There on the ground, with his own  
tears made drunk.

*Nurse.* O, he is even in my mistress' case,  
Just in her case!

*Fri.* O woful sympathy!

Piteous predicament!

*Nurse.* Even so lies she,  
Blubbering and weeping, weeping and blub-  
bering:—

Stand up, stand up; stand, an you be a man:  
For Juliet's sake, for her sake, rise and stand;  
Why should you fall into so deep an O?

*Rom.* Nurse!

*Nurse.* Ah sir! ah sir!—Well, death's the  
end of all. [her?

*Rom.* Spakest thou of Juliet? how is it with  
Doth she not think me an old murderer,  
Now I have stain'd the childhood of our joy  
With blood reioined but little from her own?  
Where is she? and how doth she? and what  
My conceal'd lady to our cancell'd love? [says

*Nurse.* O, she says nothing, sir, but weeps  
and weeps;

And now falls on her bed; and then starts up,  
And Tybalt calls; and then on Romeo cries,  
And then down falls again.

*Rom.* As if that name,

Shot from the deadly level of a gun,  
Did murder her; as that name's cursed hand  
Murder'd her kinsman.—O tell me, friar, tell  
In what vile part of this anatomy [me,

Doth my name lodge? tell me, that I may sack  
The hateful mansion. [Drawing his Sword.

*Fri.* Hold thy desperate hand:  
Art thou a man? thy form cries out, thou art;  
Thy tears are womanish; thy wild acts denote  
The unreasonable fury of a beast:

Unseemly woman, in a seeming man!  
Or ill-beseeming beast, in seeming both!  
Thou hast amazed me: by my holy order,  
I thought thy disposition better temper'd.  
Hast thou slain Tybalt? wilt thou slay thyself?  
And slay thy lady too that lives in thee,  
By doing damned hate upon thyself?

Why rail'st thou on thy birth, the heaven, and  
earth?

Since birth, and heaven, and earth, all three  
do meet

In thee at once; which thou at once wouldst  
lose. [thy wit;

Fie, fie! thou sham'st thy shape, thy love,  
Which, like an usurer, abound'st in all,  
And usest none in that true use indeed  
Which should bedeck thy shape, thy love, thy  
Thy noble shape is but a form of wax, [wit.  
Digressing from the valour of a man:  
Thy dear love, sworn, but hollow perjury,  
Killing that love which thou hast vow'd to  
cherish:

Thy wit, that ornament to shape and love,  
Mis-shapen in the conduct of them both,  
Like powder in a skill-less soldier's flask,  
Is set on fire by thine own ignorance,  
And thou dismember'd with thine own de-  
fence\*

What, rouse thee, man! thy Juliet is alive,  
For whose dear sake thou wast but lately dead;  
There art thou happy: Tybalt would kill thee,  
But thou slew'st Tybalt; there art thou happy  
too: [friend,

The law, that threaten'd death, becometh thy  
And turns it to exile; there art thou happy:  
A pack of blessings lights upon thy back;  
Happiness courts thee in her best array;  
But like a misbehaved and sullen wench,  
Thou pont'st upon thy fortune and thy love:  
Take heed, take heed, for such die miserable.  
Go, get thee to thy love, as was decreed,  
Ascend her chamber, hence and comfort her;  
But, look, thou stay not till the watch be set,  
For then thou canst not pass to Mantua;  
Where thou shalt live, till we can find a time  
To blaze your marriage, reconcile your friends,  
Beg pardon of the prince, and call thee back  
With twenty hundred thousand times more joy  
Than thou went'st forth in lamentation.—  
Go before, nurse: commend me to thy lady;  
And bid her hasten all the house to bed,  
Which heavy sorrow makes them apt unto:  
Romeo is coming. [the night,

Nurse. O Lord, I could have staid here all  
To hear good counsel: O, what learning is!—  
My lord, I'll tell my lady you will come.

Rom. Do so, and bid my sweet prepare to  
chide. [you, sir;

Nurse. Here, sir, a ring she bid me give  
Hie you, make haste, for it grows very late.

[Exit Nurse.  
Rom. How well my comfort is revived by  
this! [all your state;

Fri. Go hence: Good night; and here stands  
Either begone before the watch be set,  
Or by the break of day disguised from hence:  
Sojourn in Mantua; I'll find out your man,  
And he shall signify from time to time  
Every good hap to you, that chances here:  
Give me thy hand; 'tis late: farewell; good  
night. [me,

Rom. But that a joy past joy calls out on  
It were a grief, so brief to part with thee:  
Farewell. [Exit.

#### SCENE IV. A Room in Capulet's House.

Enter CAPULET, Lady CAPULET, and  
PARIS.

Cap. Things have fallen out, sir, so unluckily,  
That we have had no time to move our daugh-  
ter:

[ly,  
Look you, she loved her kinsman Tybalt dear—  
And so did I;—Well, we were born to die.—  
'Tis very late, she'll not come down to-night:  
I promise you, but for your company,  
I would have been a-bed an hour ago. [woo:

Par. These times of woe afford no time to  
Madam, good night: commend me to your  
daughter. [to-morrow;

La. Cap. I will, and know her mind early  
To-night she's mew'd† up to her heaviness.

Cap. Sir Paris, I will make a desperate§  
tender

Of my child's love: I think, she will be ruled  
In all respects by me; nay more, I doubt it not.  
Wife, go you to her ere you go to bed;  
Acquaint her here of my son Paris' love;  
And bid her, mark you me, on Wednesday  
But soft; What day is this? [next—

Par. Monday, my lord.

Cap. Monday? ha! ha! Well, Wednesday is  
too soon,

O' Thursday let it be;—O' Thursday, tell her,  
She shall be married to this noble earl:—  
Will you be ready? do you like this haste?  
We'll keep no great ado;—a friend, or two:—  
For hark you, Tybalt being slain so late,  
It may be thought we held him carelessly,  
Being our kinsman, if we revel much:  
Therefore we'll have some half a dozen friends,  
And there an end. But what say you to Thurs-  
day? [to-morrow.

Par. My lord, I would that Thursday were

Cap. Well, get you gone:—O' Thursday be  
Go you to Juliet ere you go to bed, [it then:—  
Prepare her, wife, against this wedding-day.—  
Farewell, my lord.—Light to my chamber, ho!  
Afore me, it is so very late, that we  
May call it early by and by:—Good night.

[Exit.

#### SCENE V. Juliet's Chamber.

Enter ROMEO and JULIET.

Jul. Wilt thou be gone? it is not yet near  
It was the nightingale, and not the lark [day:  
That pierced the fearful hollow of thine ear;  
Nightly she sings on yon pomegranate tree:  
Believe me, love, it was the nightingale.

Rom. It was the lark, the herald of the morn,  
No nightingale: look, love, what envious  
streaks

Do lace the severing clouds in yonder east:  
Night's candles are burnt out, and jocund day  
Stands tip-toe on the misty mountain-tops;  
I must be gone, and live, or stay and die.

Jul. Yon light is not day-light, I know it, I:  
It is some meteor that the sun exhales,  
To be to thee this night a torch-bearer,  
And light thee on thy way to Mantua:

\* Torn to pieces with thine own weapons.

† Shut up.

‡ The whole of your fortune depends on this  
§ Bold.

Therefore stay yet, thou need'st not to be gone.

*Rom.* Let me be ta'en, let me be put to death; I am content, so thou wilt have it so.

I'll say, yon grey is not the morning's eye,  
'Tis but the pale reflex of Cynthia's brow \*;  
Nor that is not the lark, whose notes do beat  
The vaulty heaven so high above our heads:  
I have more care + to stay, than will to go;—  
Come, death, and welcome! Juliet wills it so.—  
How is't, my soul? let's talk, it is not day.

*Jul.* It is, it is, hie hence, be gone, away;  
It is the lark that sings so out of tune,  
Straining harsh discords, and unpleasing sharps  
Some say, the lark makes sweet division †;  
This doth not so, for she divideth us: [eyes:  
Some say, the lark and loathed toad change  
O, now I would they had changed voices too!  
Since arm from arm that voice doth us affray,  
Hunting thee hence with hunts-up ‡ to the day.  
O, now begone; more light and light it grows.

*Rom.* More light and light?—more dark and dark our woes.

*Enter Nurse.*

*Nurse.* Madam!

*Jul.* Nurse?

*Nurse.* Your lady mother's coming to your chamber:

The day is broke; be wary, look about.

[*Exit Nurse.*]

*Jul.* Then, window, let day in, and let life out.

*Rom.* Farewell, farewell! one kiss, and I'll descend. [*ROMEO descends.*]

*Jul.* Art thou gone so? my love! my lord! my friend!

I must hear from thee every day i' the hour,  
For in a minute there are many days:  
O! by this count I shall be much in years,  
Ere I again behold my Romeo.

*Rom.* Farewell! I will omit no opportunity  
That may convey my greetings, love, to thee.

*Jul.* O, think'st thou, we shall ever meet again? [*serve*]

*Rom.* I doubt it not; and all these woes shall  
For sweet discourses in our time to come.

*Jul.* O God! I have an ill-divining soul:  
Methinks, I see thee, now thou art below,  
As one dead in the bottom of a tomb:  
Either my eye-sight fails, or thou look'st pale.

*Rom.* And trust me, love, in my eye so do you:

Dry sorrow drinks our blood. Adieu! adieu!

[*Exit ROMEO.*]

*Jul.* O fortune, fortune! all men call thee  
fickle:

If thou art fickle, what dost thou with him  
That is renown'd for faith? Be fickle, fortune;  
For then, I hope, thou wilt not keep him long.  
But send him back. [*up?*]

*La. Cap.* [*Within.*] Ho, daughter! are you

*Jul.* Who is't that calls? is it my lady mo-  
s she not down so late, or up so early? [*ther?*]  
What uncouth custom'd cause procures † her hither?

*Enter Lady CAPULET.*

*La. Cap.* Why, how now, Juliet?

*Jul.*

Madam, I am not well.

*La. Cap.* Evermore weeping for your cousin's death? [*tears?*]

What, wilt thou wash him from his grave with  
An if thou couldst, thou couldst not make him  
live; [*of love:*]

Therefore, have done: Some griefshows much  
But much of grief shows still some want of wit.

*Jul.* Yet let me weep for such a feeling loss.

*La. Cap.* So shall you feel the loss, but not  
Which you weep for. [*the friend*]

*Jul.*

Feeling so the loss,  
I cannot choose but ever weep the friend.

*La. Cap.* Well, girl, thou weep'st not so  
much for his death,

As that the villain lives which slaughtered him.

*Jul.* What villain, madam?

*La. Cap.* That same villain, Romeo.

*Jul.* Villain and he are many miles asunder.  
God pardon him! I do, with all my heart;

And yet no man, like he, doth grieve my heart.

*La. Cap.* That is, because the traitor murder-  
er lives. [*hands.*]

*Jul.* Ay, madam, from the reach of these my  
'Would, none but I might venge my cousin's  
death! [*thou not:*]

*La. Cap.* We will have vengeance for it, fear  
Thou weep no more. I'll send to one in  
Mantua,—

Where that same banish'd runaway doth live,—  
That shall bestow on him so sure a draught,

That he shall soon keep Tybalt company;  
And then, I hope, thou wilt be satisfied.

*Jul.* Indeed, I never shall be satisfied  
With Romeo, till I behold him—dead—

Is my poor heart so for a kinsman vex'd:—  
Madam, if you could find out but a man

To bear a poison, I would temper it;  
That Romeo should, upon receipt thereof,

Soon sleep in quiet.—O, how my heart abhors  
To hear him named,—and cannot come to  
him,—

To wreak the love I bore my cousin Tybalt  
Upon his body that hath slaughter'd him!

*La. Cap.* Find thou the means, and I'll find  
such a man.

But, now I'll tell thee joyful tidings, girl. [*time:*]

*Jul.* And joy comes well in such a needful  
What are they, I beseech your ladyship?

*La. Cap.* Well, well, thou hast a careful  
father, child;

One, who to put thee from thy heaviness,  
Hath sorted out a sudden day of joy,

That thou expect'st not, nor I look'd not for.

*Jul.* Madam, in happy time, what day is  
that? [*day morn,*]

*La. Cap.* Marry, my child, early next Thurs-  
The gallant, young, and noble gentleman,

The county Paris, at Saint Peter's church,  
Shall happily make thee there a joyful bride

*Jul.* Now, by Saint Peter's church, and  
Peter too,

He shall not make me there a joyful bride.  
I wonder at this haste; that I must wed

\* Reflection of the moon.  
for musical composition.

† Inclination.

‡ Division was the technical phrase

§ A tune played to wake hunters, also a morning song to a  
woman the day after marriage.

¶ Erings



Ere he, that should be husband, comes to woo.  
I pray you, tell my lord and father, madam,  
I will not marry yet; and, when I do, I swear,  
It shall be Romeo, whom you know I hate,  
Rather than Paris;—These are news indeed!

*La. Cap.* Here comes your father; tell him  
so yourself.

And see how he will take it at your hands.

*Enter CAPULET and Nurse.*

*Cap.* When the sunsets, the air doth drizzle  
But for the sunset of my brother's son, [dew;  
It rains downright.—

How now! a conduit, girl? what, still in tears?  
Ever more showering? In one little body  
Thou counterfeist a bark, a sea, a wind:  
For still thy eyes, which I may call the sea,  
Do ebb and flow with tears; the bark thy  
body is,

Sailing in this salt flood; the winds, thy sighs;  
Who,—raving with thy tears, and they with  
Without a sudden calm, will overset [them,—  
Thy tempest-tossed body.—How now, wife?  
Have you delivered to her our decree?

*La. Cap.* Ay, sir; but she will none, she  
gives you thanks.

I would the fool were married to her grave!

*Cap.* Soft, take me with you, take me with  
you, wife. [thanks?

Hew! will she none? doth she not give us  
Is she not proud? doth she not count her  
bless'd,

Unworthy as she is, that we have wrought  
So worthy a gentleman to be her bridegroom!

*Jul.* Not proud, you have; but thankful,  
that you have:

Proud can I never be of what I hate;  
But thankful even for hate, that is meant love.

*Cap.* How now! how now, chop-logick!  
What is this? [not;—

Proud,—and, I thank you,—and, I thank you  
And yet not proud;—Mistress minion, you  
Thank me no thankings, nor proud me no  
prouds, [next,

But settle your fine joints 'gainst Thursday  
To go with Paris to Saint Peter's church,  
Or I will drag thee on a hurdle thither.

Out, you green-sickness carrion! out, you  
You tallow face! [baggage!

*La. Cap.* Fie, fie! what are you mad?

*Jul.* Good father, I beseech you on my knees,  
Hear me with patience but to speak a word

*Cap.* Hang thee, young baggage; disobedient  
wretch! [day,

I tell thee what,—get thee to church o' Thurs-  
Or never after look me in the face:

Speak not, reply not, do not answer me:  
My fingers itch.—Wife, we scarce thought us  
bless'd,

That God had sent us but this only child;  
But now I see this one is one too much,  
And that we have a curse in having her:  
Out on her, hilding! \*

*Nurse.* God in heaven bless her!—  
You are to blame, my lord, to rate her so.

*Cap.* And why, my lady wisdom? hold  
your tongue,

Good prudence; snatter with your gossips  
*Nurse.* I speak no treason. [go.

*Cap.* O, God ye good den!

*Nurse.* May not one speak?

*Cap.* Peace, you mumbling fool!

Utter your gravity o'er a gossip's bowl,  
For here we need it not.

*La. Cap.* You are too hot.

*Cap.* God's bread! it makes me mad: Day  
night, late, early,

At home, abroad, alone, in company,  
Waking, or sleeping, still my care hath been  
To have her match'd: and having now pro-  
vided

A gentleman of princely parentage,  
Of fair demesnes, youthful, and nobly train'd,  
Stuff'd (as they say,) with honourable parts,  
Proportion'd as one's heart could wish a man,  
And then to have a wretched puling fool,  
A whining mammet, in her fortune's tender,  
To answer—*I'll not wed,—I cannot love,  
I am too young,—I pray you, pardon me;*  
But, an you will not wed, I'll pardon you:  
Graze where you will, you shall not house  
with me;

Look to't, think on't, I do not use to jest.  
Thursday is near; lay hand on heart, advise:  
An you be mine, I'll give you to my friend;  
An you be not, hang, beg, starve, die i'the  
streets,

For, by my soul, I'll ne'er acknowledge thee,  
Nor what is mine shall never do thee good:  
Trust to't, bethink you, I'll not be forsworn.

[*Erit.*

*Jul.* Is there no pity sitting in the clouds,  
That sees into the bottom of my grief?  
O, sweet my mother, cast me not away!  
Delay this marriage for a month, a week;  
Or, if you do not, make the bridal bed  
In that dim monument where Tybalt lies.

*La. Cap.* Talk not to me, for I'll not speak  
a word;

Do as thou wilt, for I have done with thee.

[*Erit.*

*Jul.* O God!—O nurse! how shall this be  
prevented?

My husband is on earth, my faith in heaven;  
How shall that faith return again to earth,  
Unless that husband send it me from heaven.  
By leaving earth!—comfort me, counsel me.—  
Alack, alack, that heaven should practise stra  
Upon so soft a subject as myself!— [tageme  
What say'st thou? hast thou not a word of joy?  
Some comfort, nurse.

*Nurse.* 'Faith, here 'tis: Romeo

Is banish'd; and all the world to nothing,  
That he dares ne'er come back to challenge  
you;

Or, if he do, it needs must be by stealth.  
Then, since the case so stands as now it doth,  
I think it best you married with the county.  
O, he's a lovely gentleman!

Romeo's a dishclout to him; an eagle, madam  
Hath not so green, so quick, so fair an eye,  
As Paris hath. Feshrew my very heart,  
I think you are happy in this second match,

For it excels your first: or if it did not,  
Your first is dead; or 'twere as good he were,  
As living here, and you no use of him.

*Jul.* Speakest thou from thy heart?

*Nurse.* From my soul too;  
Or else beshrew them both.

*Jul.* Amen!

*Nurse.* To what?

*Jul.* Well, thou hast comforted me marvellous much.

Go in; and tell my lady I am gone,  
Having displeased my father, to Laurence's cell,  
To make confession, and to be absolved.

*Nurse.* Marry, I will; and this is wisely done. *[Exit.]*

*Jul.* Ancient damnation! O most wicked fiend!

Is it more sin—to wish me thus forsworn,  
Or to dispraise my lord with that same tongue  
Which she hath praised him with above compare

So many thousand times?—Go, counsellor,  
Thou and my bosom henceforth shall be twain.  
I'll to the friar, to know his remedy;  
If all else fail, myself have power to die. *[Exit.]*

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. Friar Laurence's Cell.

*Enter Friar LAURENCE and PARIS.*

*Fri.* On Thursday, sir? the time is very short.

*Par.* My father Capulet will have it so;  
And I am nothing slow, to slack his haste.

*Fri.* You say, you do not know the lady's  
Uneven is the course, I like it not. *[mind.]*

*Par.* Immoderately she weeps for Tybalt's  
And therefore have I little talk'd of love; [death,  
For Venus smiles not in a house of tears.

Now, sir, her father counts it dangerous,  
That she doth give her sorrow so much sway;  
And, in his wisdom, hastens our marriage,  
To stop the inundation of her tears;

Which, too much minded by herself alone,  
May be put from her by society:

Now do you know the reason of this haste.

*Fri.* I would I knew not why it should be  
slow'd. *[Aside.]*

Look, sir, here comes the lady towards my cell.

*Enter JULIET.*

*Par.* Happily met, my lady, and my wife!

*Jul.* That may be, sir, when I may be a wife.

*Par.* That may be, must be, love, on Thursday.

*Jul.* What must be shall be. *[day next.]*

*Fri.* That's a certain text.

*Par.* Come you to make confession to this  
father?

*Jul.* To answer that, were to confess to you.

*Par.* Do not deny to him that you love me.

*Jul.* I will confess to you, that I love him.

*Par.* So will you, I am sure, that you love

*Jul.* If I do so, it will be of more price, [me.  
Being spoke behind your back, than to your face.

*Par.* Poor soul, thy face is much abused with  
tears.

*Jul.* The tears have got small victory by that;  
For it was bad enough, before their spite.

*Par.* Thou wrong'st it, more than tears, with  
that report.

*Jul.* That is no slander, sir, that is a truth;  
And what I spake, I spake it to my face.

*Par.* Thy face is mine, and thou hast slander'd it.

*Jul.* It may be so, for it is not mine own.—  
Are you at leisure, holy father, now;  
Or shall I come to you to evening mass?

*Fri.* My leisure serves me, pensive daughter,  
now:—

My lord, we must entreat the time alone.

*Par.* God shield, I should disturb devotion!—

Juliet, on Thursday early will I rouse you:  
Till then, adieu! and keep this holy kiss. *[Exit PARIS.]*

*Jul.* O, shut the door! and when thou hast  
done so, *[past help!]*

Come weep with me; Past hope, past cure,

*Fri.* Ah, Juliet, I already know thy grief;  
It strains me past the compass of my wits:  
I hear thou must, and nothing must prorroge it,  
On Thursday next be married to this county.

*Jul.* Tell me not, friar, that thou heart'st  
this,

Unless thou tell me how I may prevent it:

If, in thy wisdom, thou canst give no help

Do thou but call my resolution wise,

And with this knife I'll help it presently.

God join'd my heart and Romeo's, thou our  
hands;

And ere this hand, by thee to Romeo seal'd,

Shall be the label to another deed,

Or my true heart with treacherous revolt,

Turn to another, this shall slay them both:

Therefore, out of thy long-experienced time.

Give me some present counsel; or, behold,

'Twixt my extremes and me this bloody knife

Shall play the umpire\*; arbitrating that

Which the commission† of thy years and art

Could to no issue of true honour bring.

Be not so long to speak; I long to die,

If what thou speak'st speak not of remedy.

*Fri.* Hold, daughter; I do spy a kind of hope,

Which craves as desperate an execution

As that is desperate which we would prevent

If, rather than to marry county Paris,

Thou hadst the strength of y to slay thyself

Then is it likely, thou wilt undertake

A thing like death to chide away this shame,

That cop'st with death himself to scape from

And, if thou darest, I'll give thee remedy. *[it.]*

*Jul.* O, bid me leap, rather than marry Paris,

From off the battlements of yonder tower;

Or walk in thievish ways; or bid me lurk

Where serpents are; chain me with roaring  
bears;

Or shut me nightly in a charnel-house, [bones,

O'er cover'd quite with dead men's rattling

With reeky shanks and yellow chapless skulls

\* Decide the struggle between me and my distresses.

† Authority or power.

Or bid me go into a new-made grave,  
And hide me with a dead man in his shroud;  
Things that, to hear them told, have made me  
tremble;

And I will do it without fear or doubt.  
To live an unstain'd wife to my sweet love.

*Fri.* Hold, then; go home, be merry, give  
consent

To marry Paris: Wednesday is to-morrow:  
To-morrow night look that thou lie alone,  
Let not thy nurse lie with thee in thy cham-  
ber: Take thou this phial, being then in bed,<sup>†</sup> [ber:  
And this distilled liquor drink thou off:  
When, presently, through all thy veins shall run  
A cold and drowsy humour, which shall seize  
Each vital spirit; for no pulse shall keep  
His natural progress, but surcease to beat:  
No warmth, no breath, shall testify thou liv'st;  
The roses in thy lips and cheeks shall fade  
To pale ashes; thy eyes' windows fall,  
Like death, when he shuts up the day of life;  
Each part, deprived of supple government,  
Shall stiff, and stark, and cold, appear like  
death:

And in this borrow'd likeness of shrunk  
Thou shalt remain full two and forty hours,  
And then awake as from a pleasant sleep.  
Now when the bridegroom in the morning  
comes

[dead:]  
To rouse thee from thy bed, there art thou  
Then (as the manner of our country is,)  
In thy best robes uncover'd on the bier,  
Thou shalt be borne to that same ancient vault,  
Where all the kindred of the Capulets lie.  
In the mean time, against thou shalt awake,  
Shall Romeo by my letters know our drift;  
And hither shall he come; and he and I  
Will watch thy waking, and that very night  
Shall Romeo bear thee hence to Mantua.  
And this shall free thee from this present  
shame;

If no unconstant toy, nor womanish fear,  
Abate thy valour in the acting it.

*Jul.* Give me, O give me! tell me not of  
fear. [prosperous]

*Fri.* Hold; get you gone, be strong and  
In this resolve: I'll send a friar with speed  
To Mantua, with my letters to thy lord.

*Jul.* Love, give me strength! and strength  
shall help afford.

Farewell, dear father! [Exeunt.]

SCENE II. A Room in Capulet's House.

Enter CAPULET, Lady CAPULET, Nurse,  
and Servant.

*Cap.* So many guests invite as here are  
writ,— [Exit Servant.]

Sirrah, go hire me twenty cunning cooks.

*2 Serv.* You shall have none ill, sir; for  
I'll try if they can lick their fingers.

*Cap.* How canst thou try them so?

*2 Serv.* Marry, sir, 'tis an ill cook that can-  
not lick his own fingers: therefore he that can-  
not lick his fingers, goes not with me.

*Cap.* Go, begone.— [Exit Servant.]  
We shall be much unfurnish'd for this time.

What, is my daughter gone to friar Lawrence?

*Nurse.* Ay, forsooth.

*Cap.* Well, he may chance to do some good.  
A peevish self-will'd harlot y'it is. [ou her:  
Enter JULIET.]

*Nurse.* See, where she comes from shrift\*  
with merry look.

*Cap.* How now, my headstrong? where  
have you been gadding? [sin]

*Jul.* Where I have learn'd me to repent the  
Of disobedient opposition

To you, and your behests; and am enjoin'd  
By holy Lawrence to fall prostrate here.

And, beg your pardon:—Pardon, I beseech  
Henceforward I am ever ruled by you. [you:]

*Cap.* Send for the county; go tell him of  
this;

I'll have this knot knit up to-morrow morning.

*Jul.* I met the youthful lord at Lawrence's cell,  
And gave him what becometh love I might,  
Not stepping o'er the bounds of modesty.

*Cap.* Why, I am glad on't; this is well,—  
stand up:

This is as't should be.—Let me see the county;  
Ay, marry, go, I say, and fetch him hither.—

Now, afore God, this rev'rend holy friar,  
All our whole city is much bound to him.

*Jul.* Nurse, will you go with me into my  
closet,

To help me sort such needful ornaments

As you think fit to furnish me to-morrow?

*La. Cap.* No, not till Thursday; there is  
time enough. [church to-morrow.]

*Cap.* Go, nurse, go with her:—we'll to  
[Exit JULIET and Nurse.]

*La. Cap.* We shall be short in our provision;  
'Tis now near night.

*Cap.* Tush! I will stir about,  
And all things shall be well, I warrant thee,

Go thou to Juliet, help to deck up her; [wife:]  
I'll not to bed to-night;—let me alone;

I'll play the housewife for this once. What, ho!—  
They are all forth: Well, I will walk myself

To county Paris, to prepare him up [light,  
Against to-morrow: my heart is wondrous  
Since this same wayward girl is so reclaim'd.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III. Juliet's Chamber.

Enter JULIET and Nurse.

*Jul.* Ay, those attires are best:—But, gentle  
I pray thee, leave me to myself to-night; [nurse,  
For I have need of many orisons]

To move the heavens to smile upon my state,  
Which, well thou know'st, is cross and full o'

sin.

Enter Lady CAPULET.

*La. Cap.* What, are you busy? do you need  
my help? [cessaries]

*Jul.* No, madam; we have call'd such ne-  
As are behoveful for our state to-morrow:

So please you, let me now be left alone,  
And let the nurse this night sit up with you;

For, I am sure, you have your hands full all,  
In this so sudden business.

*La. Cap.* Good night!

\* Confession

† Commands.

‡ Becoming.

§ Prayers.



Get thee to bed, *with rest*: for thou hast need.

[*Exeunt* LADY CAPULET and Nurse.

*Jul.* Farewell! God knows when we shall meet again.

I have a faint cold fear thrills through my veins,  
That almost freezes up the heat of life:

I'll call them back again to comfort me;—

Nurse!—What should she do here?

My dismal scene I needs must act alone.—

Come, phial.—

What if this mixture do not work at all?

Must I of force be married to the county?—

No, no; this shall forbid it:—lie thou there.—

[*Laying down a dagger.*

What if it be a poison, which the friar

Subtly have minister'd to have me dead;

Lest in this marriage he should be dishonour'd,

Because he married me before to Romeo?

I fear it is: and yet, methinks, it should not,

For he hath still been tried a holy man:

I will not entertain so bad a thought.—

How if, when I am laid into the tomb,

I wake before the time that Romeo

Come to redeem me? there's a fearful point!

Shall I not then be stifled in the vault,

To whose foul mouth no healthsome air  
breathes in,

And there die strangled ere my Romeo comes?

Or, if I live, is it not very like,

The horrible conceit of death and night,

Together with the terror of the place,—

As in a vault, an ancient receptacle,

Where, for these many hundred years, the

Of all my buried ancestors are pack'd; [bones

Where bloody Tybalt, yet but green in earth,

Lies fest'ring in his shroud; where, as they say,

At some hours in the night spirits resort;—

Alack, alack! is it not like, that I,

So early waking,—what with loathsome smells,

And shrieks like mandrakes' torn out of the  
earth,

That living mortals, hearing them, run mad\* ;—

O! if I wake, shall I not be distraught,

Environed with all these hideous fears?

And madly play with my forefathers' joints?

And pluck the mangled Tybalt from his shroud?

And, in this rage, with some great kinsman's  
bone,

As with a club, dash out my desperate brains?

O, look! methinks, I see my cousin's ghost

Seeking out Romeo, that did spit his body

Upon a rapier's point:—Stay, Tybalt, stay!—

Romeo, I come! this do I drink to thee.

[*She throws herself on the Bed.*

#### SCENE IV. Capulet's Hall.

*Enter* Lady CAPULET and Nurse.

*La. Cap.* Hold, take these keys, and fetch  
more spices, nurse.

*Nurse.* They call for dates and quinces in  
the pastry †.

*Enter* CAPULET.

*Cap.* Come, stir, stir, stir! the second cock  
hath crow'd,

The curfew bell hath rung, 'tis three o'clock:

Look to the baked meats, good Angelica:

Spare not for cost.

*Nurse.*

Go, go, you cot-quean, go,  
Get you to bed; 'faith you'll be sick to-morrow  
For this night's watching.

*Cap.* No, not a whit; What! I have watch'd  
ere now

All night for lesser cause, and ne'er been sick.

*La. Cap.* Ay, you have been a mouse-hunt  
in your time;

But I will watch you from such watching now.

*Exeunt* Lady CAPULET and Nurse.

*Cap.* A jealous-hood, a jealous-hood!—Now,  
What's there? [fellow,

*Enter* Servants, with Spits, Logs, and  
Baskets.

1 *Serv.* Things for the cook, sir; but I  
know not what.

*Cap.* Make haste, make haste. [*Exit* 1 *Serv.*]

—Sirrah, fetch drier logs;

Call Peter, he will shew thee where they are.

2 *Serv.* I have a head, sir, that will find out  
logs.

And never trouble Peter for the matter. [*Exit.*

*Cap.* 'Mass, and well said; a merry whore-  
son! ha, [day:

Thou shalt be logger-head.—Good faith, 'tis  
The county will be here with music straight,

[*Music within.*

For so he said he would. I hear him near:—

Nurse!—Wife!—what, ho!—what, nurse, I  
say!

*Enter* Nurse.

Go, waken Juliet, go, and trim her up;

I'll go and chat with Paris:—Hie, make haste,

Make haste! the bridegroom he is come al-  
ready:

Make haste, I say! [*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE V. Juliet's Chamber. JULIET on the Bed.

*Enter* Nurse.

*Nurse.* Mistress!—what, mistress!—Juliet!

—fast, I warrant her, she:—

Why, lamb!—why, lady!—fie, you slug-a-  
bed!— [why, bride!—

Why, love, I say!—madam! sweet-heart!—

What, not a word?—you take your penny-  
worths now; [rant,

Sleep for a week: for the next night, I war-

The county Paris hath set up his rest,

That you shall rest but little.—God forgive me,

(Marry and amen!) how sound is she asleep!

I needs must wake her:—Madam, madam,  
madam!

Ay, let the county take you in your bed;

He'll fright you up, if 'faith.—Will it not be?

What, drest! and in your clothes! and down  
again?

I must needs wake you: Lady! lady! lady!

Alas! alas!—Help! help! my lady's dead!—

O, well-a-day, that ever I was born!—

Some aqua-vitæ, ho!—my lord! my lady!

\* The fabulous accounts of the plant called a *mandrake* give it a degree of animal life, and when it is torn from the ground it groans, which is fatal to him that pulls it up. † Distracted.

The room where pies were made.

§ *Mouse* was a term of endearment to a woman

*Enter* Lady CAPULET.

*La. Cap.* What noise is here?

*Nurse.* O lamentable day!

*La. Cap.* What is the matter?

*Nurse.* Look, look! O heavy day!

*La. Cap.* O me, O me!—my child, my only life,

Revive, look up, or I will die with thee!—  
Help, help!—call help.

*Enter* CAPULET.

*Cap.* For shame, bring Juliet forth; her lord is come. [alack the day!]

*Nurse.* She's dead, deceased, she's dead;

*La. Cap.* Alack the day! she's dead, she's dead, she's dead. [cold;]

*Cap.* Ha! let me see her:—Out, alas! she's  
Her blood is settled; and her joints are stiff;  
Life and these lips have long been separated:  
Death lies on her, like an untimely frost  
Upon the sweetest flower of all the field.  
Accursed time! unfortunate old man!

*Nurse.* O lamentable day!

*La. Cap.* O woful time!

*Cap.* Death, that hath ta'en her hence to  
make me wail,

Ties up my tongue, and will not let me speak.

*Enter* Friar LAURENCE and PARIS, with Musicians. [church?]

*Fri.* Come, is the bride ready to go to

*Cap.* Ready to go, but never to return:

O son, the night before thy wedding-day  
Hath death lain with thy bride:—See, there  
Flower as she was, deflowered by him. [she lies,  
Death is my son-in-law, death is my heir;  
My daughter he hath wedded! I will die,  
And leave him all; life leaving, all is death's.

*Par.* Have I thought long to see this morn-  
ing's face,

And doth it give me such a sight as this?

*La. Cap.* Accursed, unhappy, wretched,  
hateful day!

Most miserable hour that e'er time saw

In lasting labour of his pilgrimage!

But one, poor one, one poor and loving child,

But one thing to rejoice and solace in,

And cruel death hath catch'd it from my sight.

*Nurse.* O wo! O woful, woful, woful day!

Most lamentable day! most woful day.

That ever, ever, I did yet behold!

O day! O day! O day! O hateful day!

Never was seen so black a day as this:

O woful day! O woful day!

*Par.* Beguiled, divorced, wronged, spited,

Most detestable death, by thee beguiled, [slain!]

By cruel, cruel thee quite overthrown!—

O love! O life!—not life, but love in death!

*Cap.* Despised, distressed, hated, martyr'd,  
kill'd!—

Uncomfortable time! why camest thou now

To murder, murder our solemnity?—

O child! O child!—my soul, and not my child!

Dead art thou, dead!—Alack! my child is dead;

And, with my child, my joy's are buried!

*Fri.* Peace, ho, for shame! confusion's cure  
lives not

In these confusions. Heaven and yourself  
Had part in this fair maid; now heaven hath  
And all the better is it for the maid: [all,  
Your part in her you could not keep from  
death;

But heaven keeps his part in eternal life.  
The most you sought was her promotion;  
For 'twas your heaven, she should be advanc'd;  
And weep ye now, seeing she is advanced,  
Above the clouds, as high as heaven itself!

O, in this love, you love your child so ill,  
That you run mad, seeing that she is well:  
She's not well married, that lives married long  
But she's best married, that dies married young  
Dry up your tears, and stick your rosemary  
On this fair corpse; and, as the custom is,  
In all her best array bear her to church:  
For though fond nature bids us all lament,  
Yet nature's tears are reason's merriment.

*Cap.* All things, that we ordained festival,  
Turn from their office to black funeral:  
Our instruments, to melancholy bells;  
Our wedding cheer, to a sad burial feast;  
Our solemn hymns, to sullen dirges change;  
Our bridal flowers serve for a buried corse,  
And all things change them to the contrary.

*Fri.* Sir, go you in,—and, madam, go with  
And go, sir Paris;—every one prepare [him:—  
To follow this fair corpse unto her grave:  
The heavens do low'r upon you, for some ill;  
Move them no more, by crossing their high  
will. [Exit CAPULET, Lady

CAPULET, PARIS, and Friar.

1 *Mus.* 'Faith we may put up our pipes, and  
be gone.

*Nurse.* Honest good fellows, ah, put up; put  
For, well you know, this is a pitiful case. [up;  
[Exit Nurse.

1 *Mus.* Ay, by my troth, the case may be  
amended.

*Enter* PETER.

*Pet.* Musicians, O, musicians, *Heart's ease*,  
*heart's ease*; O, an you will have me live,  
play—*heart's ease*.

1 *Mus.* Why *heart's ease*?

*Pet.* O, musicians, because my heart itself  
plays—*My heart is full of woe*: O, play me  
some merry dump\*, to comfort me.

2 *Mus.* Not a dump we; 'tis no time to play  
now.

*Pet.* You will not then?

*Mus.* No.

*Pet.* I will then give it you soundly.

1 *Mus.* What will you give us?

*Pet.* No money, on my faith; but the  
gleek†: I will give you the minstrel.

1 *Mus.* Then will I give you the serving-  
creature.

*Pet.* Then will I lay the serving-creature's  
dagger on your pate. I will carry no crotchets:  
I'll *re* you, I'll *fa* you; Do you note me?

1 *Mus.* An you *re* us, and *fa* us, you note us.

2 *Mus.* Pray you, put up your dagger, and  
put out your wit.

*Pet.* Then have at you with my wit; I will

\* *Dumps* were heavy mournful tunes.

† To *gleek* is to scoff, and a *gleekman* signified a minstrel.

dry beat you with an iron wit, and put up my  
ron dagger:—Answer me like men:

*When griping grief the heart doth wound,  
And doleful dumps the mind oppress,  
Then music with her silver sound;*

*Why, silver sound? why, music with her  
silver sound?*

What say you, Simon Catling?

1 Mus. Marry, sir, because silver hath a  
sweet sound.

*Pet. Pretty! What say you, Hugh Rebeck\*?*

2 Mus. I say—*silver sound*, because musi-  
cious sound ~~for~~ silver.

*Pet. Pretty too!—What say you, James  
Soundpost?*

3 Mus. 'Faith, I know not what to say.

*Pet. O, I cry you mercy! you are the singer:  
I will say for you. It is—music with her  
silver sound*, because such fellows as you have  
seldom gold for sounding:—

*Then music with her silver sound,  
With speedy help doth lend redress.*

[Exit, singing.]

1 Mus. What a pestilent knave is this same?

2 Mus. Hang him, Jack! Come, we'll in  
here; tarry for the mourners, and stay dinner.

[Exeunt.]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I. Mantua. A Street.

#### Enter ROMEO.

Rom. If I may trust the flattering eye of sleep,  
My dreams presage some joyful news at hand:  
My bosom's lord<sup>†</sup> sits lightly in his throne;  
And all this day, an unaccustom'd spirit  
Lifts me above the ground with cheerful  
thoughts.

I dreamt my lady came and found me dead;  
(Strange dream! that gives a dead man leave  
to think,)

And breathed such life with kisses in my lips,  
That I reviv'd, and was an emperor.

Ah me! how sweet is love itself possess'd,

When but love's shadows are so rich in joy?

#### Enter BALTHASAR.

News from Verona!—How now, Balthasar?

Dost thou not bring me letters from the friar?

How doth my lady? Is my father well?

How fares my Juliet? That I ask again;

For nothing can be ill, if she be well. [ill;]

Bal. Then she is well, and nothing can be  
Her body sleeps in Capels' monument,  
And her immortal part with angels lives;  
I saw her laid low in her kindred's vault,  
And presently took post to tell it you:  
O pardon me for bringing these ill news,  
Since you did leave it for my office, sir.

Rom. Is it even so? then I defy you, stars!—  
Thou know'st my lodging: get me ink and  
paper,

And hire post-horses; I will hence to-night.

Bal. Pardon me, sir, I will not leave you  
thus:

Your looks are pale and wild, and do import  
Some misadventure.

Rom. Tush, thou art deceived;  
Leave me, and do the thing I bid thee do:  
Hast thou no letters to me from the friar?

Bal. No, my good lord.

Rom. No matter: get thee gone,  
And hire those horses; I'll be with thee straight.

#### [Exit BALTHASAR.]

Well, Juliet, I will lie with thee to-night.  
Let's see for means.—O, mischief: thou art  
swift

to enter in the thoughts of desperate men!

I do remember an apothecary,—

And hereabouts he dwells,—whom late I noted  
In tatter'd weeds, with overwhelming brows,  
Culling of simples; meagre were his looks,  
Sharp misery had worn him to the bones:

And in his needy shop a tortoise hung,  
An alligator stuff'd, and other skins

Of ill-shaped fishes; and about his shelves

A beggarly account of empty boxes,

Green earthen pots, bladders, and musty seeds,

Remnants of packthread, and old cakes of roses,

Were thinly scatter'd, to make up a show.

Noting this penury, to myself I said—

And if a man did need a poison now,

Whose sale is present death in Mantua,

Here lives a caitiff wretch would sell it him.

O, this same thought did but fore-run my need;

And this same needy man must sell it me.

As I remember, this should be the house:

Being holiday, the beggar's shop is shut.—

What, ho! apothecary!

#### Enter Apothecary.

Ap. Who calls so loud?

Rom. Come hither, man.—I see that thou  
art poor;

Hold, there is forty ducats: let me have

A dram of poison; such soon-speeding geer<sup>§</sup>

As will disperse itself through all the veins,

That the life-weary taker may fall dead;

And that the trunk may be discharged of breath

As violently, as hasty powder fired

Doth hurry from the fatal cannon's womb. [law]

Ap. Such mortal drugs I have; but Mantua's

Is death, to any he that utters them. [edness,

Rom. Art thou so bare, and full of wretch-

And fear'st to die? famine is in thy cheeks,

Need and oppression starveth in thy eyes,

Upon thy back hangs ragged misery, [law]

The world is not thy friend, nor the world's

The world affords no law to make thee rich;

Then be not poor, but break it, and take this.

Ap. My poverty, but not my will, consents.

Rom. I pay thy poverty, and not thy will.

Ap. Put this in any liquid thing you will,

And drink it off; and, if you had the strength

Of twenty men, it would despatch you straight.

Rom. There is thy gold, worse poison to

men's souls,

\* "And the jocund rebecks sound."—MILTON. † i. e., Love. ‡ Herbs. § Stuff.



Doing more murders in this loathsome world,  
Than these poor compounds that thou may'st  
not sell:

I sell thee poison, thou hast sold me none.  
Firewell; buy food, and get thyself in flesh.—  
Come, cordial, and not poison; go with me  
To Juliet's grave, for there must I use thee.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II. *Friar Laurence's Cell.*

*Enter Friar JOHN.*

*John.* Holy Franciscan friar! brother, hol  
*Enter FRIAR LAURENCE.*

*Lau.* This same should be the voice of friar  
*John.*—

Welcome from Mantua: What says Romeo?  
Or, if his mind be writ, give me his letter.

*John.* Going to find a barefoot brother out,  
One of our order to associate me,  
Here in this city visiting the sick,  
And finding him, the searchers of the town,  
Suspecting that we both were in a house  
Where the infectious pestilence did reign,  
Seal'd up the doors, and would not let us forth;  
So that my speed to Mantua there was stay'd.

*Lau.* Who bare my letter then to Romeo?

*John.* I could not send it—here it is again,—  
Nor get a messenger to bring it thee,  
So fearful were they of infection.

*Lau.* Unhappy fortune! by my brotherhood,  
The letter was not nice\*, but full of charge,  
Of dear import; and the neglecting it  
May do much danger: Friar John, go hence;  
Get me an iron crow, and bring it straight  
Unto my cell.

*John.* Brother, I'll go and bring it thee. [*Exit.*]

*Lau.* Now must I to the monument alone;  
Within these three hours will fair Juliet wake;  
She will beshrew me much, that Romeo  
Hath had no notice of these accidents:  
But I will write again to Mantua,  
And keep her at my cell till Romeo come;  
Poor living corse, closed in a dead man's tomb!

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III. *A Church-Yard; in it a Monument belonging to the Capulets.*

*Enter PARIS, and his Page, bearing Flowers and a Torch.*

*Par.* Give me thy torch, boy: Hence, and  
stand aloof;—

Yet put it out, for I would not be seen.  
Under yon yew-trees lay thee all along,  
Holding thine ear close to the hollow ground;  
So shall no foot upon the church-yard tread,  
(Being loose, unfirm, with digging up of graves,)  
But thou shalt hear it: whistle then to me,  
As signal that thou hear'st something approach  
Give me those flowers. Do as I bid thee, go.

*Page.* I am almost afraid to stand alone  
Here in the church-yard; yet I will adventure.

[*Retires.*]

*Par.* Sweet flower, with flowers I strew  
thy bridal bed:  
Sweet tomb, that in thy circuit doth contain  
The perfect model of eternity;

\* *i. e.*, On a trivial or idle subject.

Fair Juliet, that with angels dost remain,  
Accept this latest favour at my hands;  
That living honour'd thee, and, being dead,  
With funeral praises do adorn thy tomb!

[*The Boy whistles*

The boy gives warning, something doth ap-  
proach.

What cursed foot wanders this way to-night,  
To cross my obsequies, and true-love's rites?  
What, with a torch!—muffle me, night, a  
while.

[*Retires.*]

*Enter ROMEO and BALTHASAR with a Torch, Mattock, &c.*

*Rom.* Give me that mattock, and the wrench-  
ing iron.

Hold, take this letter; early in the morning  
See thou deliver it to my lord and father.  
Give me the light: Upon thy life I charge thee,  
Whate'er thou hear'st or seest, stand all aloof,  
And do not interrupt me in my course.

Why I descend into this bed of death,  
Is, partly, to behold my lady's face: [finger  
But, chiefly, to take thence from her dead  
A precious ring; a ring that I must use  
In dear employment: therefore hence, be  
gone:—

But if thou, jealous, dost return to pry  
In what I further shall intend to do,  
By heaven, I will tear thee joint by joint  
And strew this hungry church-yard with thy  
limbs:

The time and my intents are savage-wild;  
More fierce, and more inexorable far,  
Than empty tigers, or the roaring sea.

*Bal.* I will be gone, sir, and not trouble you.

*Rom.* So shalt thou show me friendship.—  
Take thou that: [fellow.

Live, and be prosperous; and farewell, good  
*Bal.* For all this same, I'll hide me here-  
about;

His looks I fear, and his intents I doubt.

[*Retires.*]

*Rom.* Thou detestable maw, thou womb of  
death,  
Gorged with the dearest morsel of the earth,  
Thus I enforce thy rotten jaws to open,

[*Breaking open the Door of the Monument.*

And, in despite, I'll cram thee with more food!

*Par.* This is that banish'd haughty Monta-  
gne, [grief,

That murder'd my love's cousin;—with which  
It is supposed the fair creature died,—  
And here is come to do some villainous shame  
To the dead bodies: I will apprehend him.

[*Advances.*

Stop thy unhallow'd toil, vile Montague;  
Can vengeance be pursued further than death?  
Condemned villain, I do apprehend thee:  
Obey, and go with me; for thou must die.

*Rom.* I must, indeed; and therefore came I  
hither.—

Good gentle youth, tempt not a desperate man,  
Fly hence and leave me;—think upon these  
gone;

† *i. e.*, Action of importance.

Let them affright thee.—I beseech thee, youth.  
 Heap not another sin upon my head,  
 By arguing me to fury:—O, be gone!  
 By heaven, I love thee better than myself:  
 For I come hither arm'd against myself:  
 Stay not, begone;—live, and hereafter say—  
 A madman's mercy bade thee run away.

*Par.* I do defy thy conjurations\*,  
 And do attach thee as a felon here.

*Rom.* Wilt thou provoke me? then have at thee, boy. *[They fight.]*

*Page.* O lord! they fight: I will go call the watch. *[Exit Page.]*

*Par.* O, I am slain! *[Falls.]*—If thou be merciful,

Open the tomb, lay me with Juliet. *[Dies.]*

*Rom.* If faith, I will:—Let me peruse this face;—

Mercutio's kinsman, noble county Paris:—  
 What said my man, when my betossed soul  
 Did not attend him as we rode? I think,  
 He told me, Paris should have married Juliet:  
 Said he not so? or did I dream it so?  
 Or am I mad, hearing him talk of Juliet,  
 To think it was so?—O give me thy hand,  
 One writ with me in sour misfortune's book!  
 I'll bury thee in a triumphant grave,—  
 A grave? O, no; a lantern†, slaughter'd youth,  
 For here lies Juliet, and her beauty makes  
 This vault a feasting presence‡ full of light.  
 Death, lie thou there, by a dead man interr'd.

*[Laying Paris in the Monument.]*

How oft when men are at the point of death  
 Have they been merry? which their keepers  
 A lightning before death: O, how may I  
 Call this a lightning?—O, my love! my wife!  
 Death that hath suck'd the honey of thy breath,  
 Hath had no power yet upon thy beauty:  
 Thou art not conquer'd; beauty's ensign yet  
 Is crimson in thy lips and in thy cheeks,  
 And death's pale flag is not advanced there.—  
 Tybalt, liest thou there in thy bloody sheet?  
 O, what more favour can I do to thee,  
 Than with that hand that cut thy youth in  
 To sunder his that was thine enemy? *[twain,*  
 Forgive me, cousin!—Ah dear Juliet,  
 Why art thou yet so fair? Shall I believe  
 That unsubstantial death is amorous;  
 And that the lean abhorred monster keeps  
 Thee here in dark to be his paramour?  
 For fear of that, I will still stay with thee;  
 And never from this palace of dim night  
 Depart again; here, here will I remain  
 With worms that are thy chambermaids; O,  
 Will I set up my everlasting rest; *[here]*  
 And shake the yoke of inauspicious stars  
 From this world-wearied flesh.—Eyes look  
 your last!

Arms, take your last embrace! and lips, O you  
 The doors of breath, seal with a righteous kiss  
 A dateless bargain to engrossing death?—  
 Come, bitter conduct, come, unsavoury  
 guide!

Thou desperate pilot, now at once run on

The dashing rocks thy sea-sick weary bark!  
 Here's to my love!—*[Drinks.]* O, true apo-  
 theary!

Thy drugs are quick.—Thus with a kiss I die. *[Dies.]*

*Enter at the other end of the Church-yard,*  
*Friar LAURENCE, with a Lantern, Crook,*  
*and Spade.*

*Fri.* Saint Francis be my speed! how oft  
 to-night *[there]*

Have my old feet stumbled at graves?—Who's  
 Who is it that consorts, so late, the dead?

*Bal.* Here's one, a friend, and one that  
 knows you well.

*Fri.* Bliss be upon you! Tell me, good my  
 friend,

What torch is yond', that vainly lends his  
 light

To grubs, and eye-less skulls? as I discern,  
 It burneth in the Capel's monument.

*Bal.* It doth so, holy sir, and there's my  
 One that you love. *[master.]*

*Fri.* Who is it?

*Bal.* Romeo.

*Fri.* How long hath he been there?

*Bal.* Full half an hour.

*Fri.* Go with me to the vault.

*Bal.* I dare not, sir;

My master knows not, but I am gone hence;  
 And fearfully did menace me with death,  
 If I did stay to look on his intents.

*Fri.* Stay then, I'll go alone:—Fear comes  
 upon me;

O, much I fear some ill unlucky thing. *[here,*  
*Bal.* As I did sleep under this yew-tree

I dreamt my master and another fought,  
 And that my master slew him.

*Fri.* Romeo? *[Advances.]*

Alack, alack, what blood is this, which stains

The stony entrance of this sepulchre?—

What mean these masterless and gory swords  
 To lie discolour'd by this place of peace?

*[Enters the Monument.]*  
 Romeo! O, pale!—Who else? what, Paris,  
 too? *[hour]*

And steep'd in blood?—Ah, what an unkind  
 Is guilty of this lamentable chance!—

The lady stirs. *[JULIET wakes and stirs.]*

*Jul.* O, comfortable friar! where is my  
 lord?

I do remember well where I should be,  
 And there I am:—Where is my Romeo?

*[Noise within]*  
*Fri.* I hear some noise.—Lady, come from  
 that nest

Of death, contagion, and unnatural sleep;  
 A greater Power than we can contradict

Hath thwarted our intents; come, come away;  
 Thy husband in thy bosom there lies dead;

And Paris too, come, I'll dispose of thee  
 Among a sisterhood of holy nuns:

Stay not to question, for the watch is coming;  
 Come, go, good Juliet. *[Noise again.]* I dare  
 stay no longer. *[Exit]*

\* I refuse to do as thou conjurest me to do, i. e., depart. † The allusion is to a louver  
 or turret full of windows, by means of which ancient halls, &c., are illuminated.

Presence-chamber.

‡ Conductor.

*Jul.* Go, get thee hence, for I will not away.— [hand?]

What's here? a cup, closed in my true love's Poison, I see, hath been his timeless end:—  
O churl! drink all; and leave no friendly drop,

To help me after?—I will kiss thy lips;—  
Haply, some poison yet doth hang on them,  
To make me die with a restorative.

[Kisses him.]

Thy lips are warm!

[way?]

*1 Watch.* [Within.] Lead, boy:—Which  
*Jul.* Yea, noise?—then I'll be brief.—O happy dagger!

[Snatching Romeo's Dagger.]

This is thy sheath; [*Stabs herself.*] there rust,  
and let me die.

[Falls on Romeo's Body, and dies.]

*Enter Watch, with the Page of Paris.*

*Page.* This is the place; there, where the torch doth burn.

*1 Watch.* The ground is bloody;—Search about the church-yard:

Go, some of you, who e'er you find, attach.

[*Exeunt some.*]

Pitiful sight! here lies the county slain;—  
And Juliet bleeding; warm, and newly dead,  
Who here hath lain these two days buried.—

Go, tell the prince,—run to the Capulets,—  
Raise up the Montagues,—some others search;

[*Exeunt other Watchmen.*]

We see the ground whereon these woes do lie;  
But the true ground of all these piteous woes,  
We cannot without circumstance descry.

*Enter some of the Watch, with BALTHASAR.*

*2 Watch.* Here's Romeo's man, we found him in the church-yard.

*1 Watch.* Hold him in safety, till the prince come hither.

*Enter another Watchman, with Friar LAURENCE.*

LAURENCE.

*3 Watch.* Here is a friar, that trembles,  
sighs, and weeps:

We took this maddock and this spade from him,  
As he was coming from this church-yard side.

*1 Watch.* A great suspicion; Stay the friar too.

*Enter the Prince and Attendants.*

*Prince.* What misadventure is so early up,  
That calls our person from our morning's rest?

*Enter CAPULET, Lady CAPULET, and Others.*

*Cap.* What should it be, that they so shriek abroad?

[Romeo.]

*La. Cap.* The people in the street cry—  
Some—Juliet, and some—Paris; and all run,  
With open outcry toward our monument.

*Prince.* What fear is this, which startles in our ears?

[Paris slain;]

*1 Watch.* Sovereign, here lies the county  
And Romeo dead; and Juliet, dead before,  
Warm and new kill'd.

*Prince.* Search, seek, and know how this  
foul murder comes. [Romeo's man;]

*1 Watch.* Here is a friar, and slaughter'd  
With instruments upon them, fit to open

These dead men's tombs.

*Cap.* O, heavens!—O, wife! look how our daughter bleeds!

This dagger hath mista'en,—for lo! his house\*  
Is empty on the back of Montague,—  
And is mis-sheathed in my daughter's bosom.

*La. Cap.* O me! this sight of death is as a  
That warns my old age to a sepulchre. [bell,  
*Enter MONTAGUE and Others.*

*Prince.* Come, Montague; for thou art early up.

To see thy son and heir more early down.

*Mon.* Alas, my liege, my wife is dead to-night;

[breath:]

Grief of my son's exile hath stopp'd her  
What further woe conspires against mine ear?

*Prince.* Look, and thou shalt see. [this,

*Mon.* O thou untaught! what manners is in  
To press before thy father to a grave?

*Prince.* Seal up the mouth of outrage for a  
Till we can clear these ambiguities, [while,  
And know their spring, their head, their true descent;

And then will I be general of your woes,  
And lead you even to death: Mean time forbear,

And let mischance be slave to patience.—  
Bring forth the parties of suspicion.

*Fri.* I am the greatest, able to do least,  
Yet most suspected, as the time and place

Doth make against me, of this direful murder;  
And here I stand, both to impeach and purge

Myself condemned and myself excused.

*Prince.* Then say at once what thou dost know in this. [breath]

*Fri.* I will be brief, for my short date of  
Is not so long as is a tedious tale.

Romeo, there dead, was husband to that  
Juliet; [wife:]

And she, there dead, that Romeo's faithful  
I married them; and their stolen-marriage-day

Was Tybalt's dooms-day, whose untimely  
death [city:]

Banish'd the new-made bridegroom from this  
For whom, and not for Tybalt, Juliet pined.

You—to remove that siege† of grief from her,  
Betroth'd, and would have married her per-

force,

To county Paris:—Then comes she to me;

And, with wild looks, bid me devise some  
means

To rid her from this second marriage,  
Or, in my cell there would she kill herself.

Then gave I her, so tutor'd by my art,  
A sleeping potion; which so took effect

As I intended, for it wrought on her

The form of death: meantime I writ to Romeo  
That he should hither come as this dire night,

To help to take her from her borrow'd grave  
Being the time the potion's force should cease.

But he which bore my letter, friar John,

Was staid by accident; and yesternight

Return'd my letter back: Then all alone,

At the prefixed hour of her waking,

Came I to take her from her kindred's vault;

Meaning to keep her closely at my cell,

Till I conveniently could send to Romeo:

\* i.e., The scabbard.

† The dagger.

‡ Seat.



But, when I came, (some minute ere the time  
Of her awakening,) here untimely lay  
The noble Paris, and true Romeo, dead.  
She wakes; and I entreated her come forth,  
And bear this work of heaven with patience:  
But then a noise did scare me from the tomb;  
And she, too desperate, would not go with me,  
But (as it seems,) did violence on herself.  
All this I know; and to the marriage  
Her nurse is privy: And, if aught in this  
Miscarried by my fault, let my old life  
Be sacrificed, some hour before his time,  
Unto the rigour of severest law.

*Prince.* We still have known thee for a holy  
man.— [this?

Where's Romeo's man? what can he say in  
*Bal.* I brought my master news of Juliet's  
death;

And then in post he came from Mantua,  
To this same place, to this same monument.  
This letter he early bid me give his father;  
And threaten'd me with death, going in the  
If I departe in it, and left him there. [vault,

*Prince.* Give me the letter, I will look on  
it.— [watch?—

Where is the county's page, that raised the  
Sirrah, what made your master in this place?

*Page.* He came with flowers to strew his  
lady's grave;

And bid me stand aloof, and so I did:

Anon, comes one with light to ope the tomb:

And, by and by, my master drew on him;  
And then I ran away to call the watch.

*Prince.* This letter doth make good the  
friar's words,

Their course of love, the tidings of her death:  
And here he writes—that he did buy a poison  
Of a poor 'pothecary, and therewithal  
Came to this vault to die, and lie with Juliet.—  
Where be these enemies? Capulet! Montague!—  
See, what a scourge is laid upon your hate,  
That heaven finds means to kill your joys with  
And I, for winking at your discords too, [love!  
Have lost a brace of kinsmen\*: all are  
punish'd.

*Cap.* O, brother Montague, give me thy hand;  
This is my daughter's jointure, for no more  
Can I demand.

*Mon.* But I can give thee more:

For I will raise her statue in pure gold;  
That, while Verona by that name is known,  
There shall no figure at such rate be set,  
As that of true and faithful Juliet.

*Cap.* As rich shall Romeo by his lady lie;  
Poor sacrifices of our enmity!

*Prince.* A glooming peace this morning with  
it brings;

The sun for sorrow will not show his head:  
Go hence, to have more talk of these sad things;  
Some shall be pardon'd, and some punish'd;  
For never was a story of more woe,  
Than this of Juliet and her Romeo. [Exeunt.

\* Mercutio and Paris.

This play is one of the most pleasing of our author's performances. The scenes are busy and various, the incidents numerous and important, the catastrophe irresistibly affecting, and the process of the action carried on with such probability, at least with such congruity to popular opinions, as tragedy requires.

Here is one of the few attempts of Shakspeare to exhibit the conversation of gentlemen, to represent the airy sprightliness of juvenile elegance. Mr. Dryden mentions a tradition, which might easily reach his time, of a declaration made by Shakspeare, that he was obliged to kill Mercutio in the third Act, lest he should have been killed by him. Yet he thinks him no such formidable person, but that he might have lived through the play, and died in his bed, without danger to the poet. Dryden well knew, had he been in quest of truth, in a pointed sentence, that more regard is commonly had to the words than the thought, and that it is very seldom to be rigorously understood. Mercutio's wit, gaiety, and courage, will always procure him friends that wish him a longer life: but his death is not precipitated; he has lived on the time allotted him in the construction of the play; nor do I doubt the ability of Shakspeare to have continued his existence, though some of his sallies are perhaps out of the reach of Dryden; whose genius was not very fertile of merriment, nor ductile to humour, but acute, argumentative, comprehensive, and sublime.

The Nurse is one of the characters in which the author delighted: he has, with great subtilty of distinction, drawn her at once loquacious and secret, obsequious and insolent, trusty and dishonest.

His comic scenes are happily wrought, but his pathetic strains are always polluted with some unexpected depravations. His persons, however distressed, have a conceit left them in their misery, a miserable conceit.—JOHNSON.

# HAMLET, PRINCE OF DENMARK.

## Persons represented.

CLAUDIUS, *king of Denmark.*  
 HAMLET, *son to the former, and nephew to the present, king.*  
 POLONIUS, *lord chamberlain.*  
 HORATIO, *friend to Hamlet.*  
 LAERTES, *son to Polonius.*  
 VOLTIMAND, CORNELIUS, ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDENSTERN, *courtiers.*  
 OSRIC, *A Courtier.*  
 Another Courtier.  
 A Priest.  
 MARCELLUS, } *officers.*  
 BERNARDO, }

FRANCISCO, *a soldier*  
 REYNALDO, *servant to Polonius.*  
 A Captain. *An Ambassador.*  
 Ghost of *Hamlet's father.*  
 FORTINBRAS, *prince of Norway.*  
 GERTRUDE, *queen of Denmark, and mother of Hamlet.*  
 OPHELIA, *daughter of Polonius.*  
 Lords, Ladies, Officers, Soldiers, Players.  
 Grave-diggers, Sailors, Messengers, and other Attendants.

Scene—Elsinore.

## ACT I.

SCENE I. Elsinore. *A Platform before the Castle.*

FRANCISCO *on his Post. Enter to him*  
 BERNARDO.

Ber. Who's there?

Fran. Nay, answer me: stand, and unfold Yourself.

Ber. Long live the king!

Fran. Bernardo?

Ber. He.  
 Fran. You come most carefully upon your hour.

Ber. 'Tis now struck twelve, get thee to  
 Fran. For this relief much thanks: 'tis And I am sick at heart.

Ber. Have you had quiet guard?  
 Fran. Not a mouse stirring.

Ber. Well, good night,  
 If you do meet Horatio and Marcellus,  
 The rivals\* of my watch, bid them make haste.

*Enter HORATIO and MARCELLUS.*

Fran. I think I hear them.—Stand, ho! Who is there?

Hor. Friends to this ground.

Mar. And liegemen to the Dane.

Fran. Give you good night.

Mar. O, farewell, honest soldier:  
 Who hath relieved you?

Fran. Bernardo hath my place.  
 Give you good night. *[Exit FRANCISCO.]*

Mar. Holla! Bernardo!

Ber. Say.

What, is Horatio there?

Hor. A piece of him.

Ber. Welcome, Horatio; welcome, good Marcellus. *[to night?]*

Hor. What, has this thing appear'd again  
 Ber. I have seen nothing.

Mar. Horatio says, 'tis but our fantasy;  
 And will not let belief take hold of him.  
 Touching this dreaded sight, twice seen of us;  
 Therefore I have entreated him, along  
 With us to watch the minutes of this night;  
 That, if again this apparition come,  
 He may approve† our eyes, and speak to it.

Hor. Tush! tush! 'twill not appear.  
 Ber. Sit down awhile,

And let us once again assail your ears,  
 That are so fortified against our story,  
 What we two nights have seen.

Hor. Well, sit we down,  
 And let us hear Bernardo speak of this.

Ber. Last night of all, *[the pole,*  
 When you same star that's westward from  
 Had made his course to illumine that part of  
 heaven

Where now it burns, Marcellus and myself,  
 The bell then beating one,—

Mar. Peace, break thee off; look, where  
 it comes again! *[Enter Ghost.]*

Ber. In the same figure like the king that's  
 dead. *[ratio.]*

Mar. Thou art a scholar, speak to it, Ho-  
 Ber. Looks it not like the king? mark it,  
 Horatio. *[fear and wonder.]*

Hor. Most like:—it harrows† me with  
 Ber. It would be spoke to.

Mar. Speak to it, Horatio.

Hor. What art thou that usurp'st this time  
 of night,

\* Partners.

† Make good or establish.

‡ Conquers.

Together with that fair and warlike form  
In which the majesty of buried Denmark  
Did sometimes march? by heaven I charge

*Mar.* It is offended. [thee, speak.

*Ber.* See! it stalks away.

*Hor.* Stay; speak: speak. I charge thee,  
speak. [Exit Ghost.

*Mar.* 'Tis gone, and will not answer.

*Ber.* How now, Horatio? you tremble, and  
look pale:

Is not this something more than fantasy?

What think you of it? [believe,

*Hor.* Before my God, I might not this

Without the sensible and true avouch

Of mine own eyes.

*Mar.* Is it not like the king?

*Hor.* As thou art to thyself:

Such was the very armour he had on,  
When he the ambitious Norway combated;  
So frown'd he once, when, in an angry parle \*  
He smote the sledded † Polack ‡ on the ice.  
'Tis strange.

*Mar.* Thus twice before, and jump § at this  
dead hour,

With martial stalk hath he gone by our watch.

*Hor.* In what particular thought to work I  
know not;

But, in the gross and scope of mine opinion,  
This bodes some strange eruption to our state.

*Mar.* Good now, sit down, and tell me, he  
that knows,

Why this same strict and most observant watch  
So nightly toils the subject of the land;  
And why such daily cast of brazen cannon,  
And foreign mart for implements of war;  
Why such impress of shipwrights, whose sore  
task

Does not divide the sunday from the week:  
What might be toward, that this sweaty haste  
Doth make the night joint-labourer with the  
Who is't that can inform me? [day;

*Hor.* That can I;

At least, the whisper goes so. Our last king,  
Whose image even but now appear'd to us,  
Was, as you know, by Fortinbras of Norway,  
Thereto prick'd on by a most emulate pride,  
Dared to the combat; in which our valiant

Hamlet [him,)

(For so this side of our known world esteem'd  
Did slay this Fortinbras; who, by a seal'd  
compact,

Well ratified by law and heraldry,  
Did forfeit with his life all those his lands,  
Which he stood seized of, to the conqueror:  
Against the which, a moiety competent  
Was gaged by our king; which had return'd  
To the inheritance of Fortinbras, [co-nart||  
Had he been vanquisher; as, by the same  
And carriage of the article design'd ¶, [bras  
His fell to Hamlet: Now, sir, young Fortin-  
Of unimproved mettle hot and full \*\*,  
Hath in the skirts of Norway, here and there,  
Shark'd †† up a list of landless resolute,  
For food and diet, to some enterprise

That hath a stomach †† in't: which is no other  
(As it doth well appear unto our state,)  
But to recover of us, by strong hand  
And terms compulsory, those 'foresaid lands  
So by his father lost: And this, I take it,  
Is the main motive of our preparations,  
The source of this our watch, and the chief  
head

Of this post-haste and romage §§ in the land.

[*Ber.* I think it be no other, but even so:  
Well may it sort |||, that this portentous figure  
Comes armed through our watch; so like the  
king

That was, and is, the question of these wars.

*Hor.* A mote it is to trouble the mind's eye.  
In the most high and palmy ¶¶ state of Rome,  
A little ere the mightiest Julius fell, [dead  
The graves stood tenantless, and the sheeted  
Did squeak and gibber in the Roman streets.

As stars with trains of fire and dews of blood,  
Disasters in the sun; and the moist star\*\*\*,  
Upon whose influence Neptune's empire  
stands,

Was sick almost to dooms-day with eclipse.  
And even the like precursor of fierce events,—  
As harbingers preceding still the fates,  
And prologue to the omen ††† coming on,  
Have heaven and earth together démonstrated  
Unto our climatures and countrymen.—]

*Re-enter Ghost.*

But soft; behold! lo, where it comes again!  
I'll cross it, though it blast me.—Stay, illusion!  
If thou hast any sound, or use of voice,  
Speak to me:

If there be any good thing to be done,  
That may to thee do ease, and grace to me,  
Speak to me:

If thou art privy to thy country's fate,  
Which, happily, foreknowing, may avoid,  
O, speak!  
Or, if thou hast uphoarded in thy life  
Extorted treasure in the womb of earth,  
For which, they say, you spirits oft walk in  
death, [Cock crows.

Speak of it:—stay, and speak.—Stop it, Mar-  
cellus.

*Mar.* Shall I strike at it with my partisan?

*Hor.* Do, if it will not stand.

*Ber.* 'Tis here!

*Hor.* 'Tis here.

*Mar.* 'Tis gone! [Exit Ghost.

We do it wrong, being so majestic,  
To offer it the show of violence;  
For it is, as the air, invulnerable,  
And our vain blows malicious mockery.

*Ber.* It was about to speak when the cock  
crew.

*Hor.* And then it started, like a guilty thing  
Upon a fearful summons. I have heard,  
The cock, that is the trumpet of the morn,  
Doth with his lofty and shrill sounding throat  
Awake the god of day; and, at his warning,  
Whether in sea or fire, in earth or air,

\* Dispute. † Sledge. ‡ Polander, an inhabitant of Poland. § Just.

|| Joint bargain. ¶ The covenant to confirm that bargain.

\*\* Full of spirit without experience. †† Picked. ‡ Resolution. § Search. ||| Suit.

¶¶ Victorious.

\*\*\* The moon.

††† Event.



The extravagant and erring\* spirit hies  
To his confine: and of the truth herein  
This present object made probation†.

*Mar.* It faded on the crowing of the cock.  
Some say, that ever 'gainst that season comes  
Wherein our Saviour's birth is celebrated,  
This bud of dawn'ng singeth all night long:  
And then they say no spirit dares stir abroad;  
The nights are wholesome; then no planets  
strike, [charm,

No fairy takes, nor witch hath power to  
So hallow'd and so gracious is the time.

*Hor.* So have I heard, and do in part be-  
lieve it.

But, look! the morn, in russet mantle clad,  
Walks o'er the dew of yon high eastern hill:  
Break we our watch up: and, by my advice,  
Let us impart what we have seen to-night  
Unto young Hamlet: for, 'pon my life,  
This spirit, dumb to us, w<sup>d</sup> speak to him:  
Do you consent we shall acquaint him with it,  
As needful in our loves, attending our duty?

*Mar.* Let's do't, I pray; and I this morning  
know

Where we shall find him most convenient.  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *The same. A Room of State  
in the same.*

*Enter the King, Queen, HAMLET, POLO-  
NIUS, LAERTES, VOLTINAND, CORNE-  
LIUS, Lords, and Attendants.*

*King.* Though yet of Hamlet, our dear  
brother's death

The memory be green; and that it us befitted  
To bear our hearts in grief, and our whole  
kingdom

To be contracted in one brow of woe;  
Yet so far hath discretion fought with nature,  
That we with wisest sorrow think on him,  
Together with remembrance of ourselves.

Therefore our sometime sister, now our queen,  
The imperial jointress of this warlike state,  
Have we, as 'twere, with a defeated joy,—  
With one auspicious, and one-dropping eye;  
With mirth in funeral, and with dirge in mar-  
riage,

In equal scale weighing delight and dole‡,—  
Taken to wife: nor have we herein barr'd  
Your better wisdoms, which have freely gone  
With this affair along:—For all, our thanks.

Now follows, that you know, young Fortin-  
bras,—

Holding a weak supposal of our worth;  
Or thinking, by our late dear brother's death,  
Our state to be disjoint and out of frame,  
Collegued with this dream of his advantage,  
He hath not fail'd to pester us with message,  
Importing the surrender of those lands  
Lost by his father, with all bands§ of law,  
To our most valiant brother.—So much for  
him.

Now for ourself, and for this time of meeting.  
Thus much the business is: We have here writ  
To Norway, uncle of young Fortinbras,—

Who, impotent and bed-rid, scarcely hears  
Of this his nephew's purpose,—to suppress  
His further gait|| herein in that the levies,  
The lists, and full proportions, are all made  
Out of his subject:—and we here despatch  
You, good Cornelius, and you, Voltinand,  
For bearers of this greeting to old Norway;  
Giving to you no further personal power  
To business with the king, more than the scope  
Of these dilated articles allow.

Farewell; and let your haste commend your  
duty. [show our duty.

*Cor. Vol.* In that, and all things, will we  
*King.* We doubt it nothing; heartily farewell.

[*Exeunt VOLTINAND and CORNELIUS*  
And now, Laertes, what's the news with you?  
You told us of some suit; What ist, Laertes?  
You cannot speak of reason to the Dane,  
And lose your voice: What wouldst thou beg,  
Laertes,

That shall not be my offer, not thy asking?  
The head is not more native to the heart,  
The hand more instrumental to the mouth,  
Than is the throne of Denmark to thy father.  
What wouldst thou have, Laertes?

*Laer.* My dread lord,  
Your leave and favour to return to France;  
From whence though willingly I came to Den-  
To show my duty in your coronation; [mark,  
Yet now, I must confess, that duty done,  
My thoughts and wishes bend again toward  
France, [pardon.

And bow them to your gracious leave and  
*King.* Have you your father's leave? What  
says Polonius? [slow leave,

*Pol.* He hath, my lord, [wrung from me my  
By laboursome petition; and, at last,  
Upon his will I seal'd my hard consent: ]  
I do beseech you, give him leave to go.

*King.* Take thy fair hour, Laertes; time be  
thine,  
And thy best graces: spend it at thy will.—

But now, my cousin Hamlet, and my son,—  
*Ham.* A little more than kin, and less than  
kind¶. [Aside.

*King.* How is it that the clouds still hang on  
you? [sun.

*Ham.* Not so, my lord, I am too much i'the  
*Queen.* Good Hamlet, cast thy nighted co-  
lour off, [mark,

And let thine eye look like a friend on Den-  
Do not, for ever, with thy valid lids\*\*  
Seek for thy noble father in the dust:  
Thou know'st 'tis common; all, that live, must  
Passing through nature to eternity. [die,

*Ham.* Ay, madam, it is common.  
*Queen.* If it be,

Why seems it so particular with thee?  
*Ham.* Seems, madam! nay, it is; I know  
not seems.

'Tis not alone my inky cloak, good mother,  
Nor customary suits of solemn black,  
Nor windy suspiration of forced breath,  
No, nor the fruitful river in the eye,  
Nor the dejected haviour of the visage,

\* Wandering. † Proof. ‡ Grief. § Bonds. || Way, path. ¶ Nature, a  
little more than a kinsman, and less than a natural one. \*\* Lowering eyes.

Together with all forms, modes, shows of grief,  
That can denote me truly: These, indeed,  
seem,

For they are actions that a man might play:  
But I have that within, which passeth show;  
These, but the trappings and the suits of woe.

*King.* 'Tis sweet and commendable in your  
nature, Hamlet,

To give these mourning duties to your father:  
But, you must know, your father lost a father;  
That father lost his; and the survivor bound  
In filial obligation, for some term

To do obsequious sorrow: But to perséver  
In obstinate condelement, is a course

Of impious stubbornness; 'tis unmanly grief:  
It shows a will most incorrect to heaven;

A heart unfortified, or mind impatient;  
An understanding simple and unschool'd:

For what, we know, must be, and is as com-  
mon

As any the most vulgar thing to sense,  
Why should we, in our peevish opposition,

Take it to heart? Fie! 'tis a fault to heaven,  
A fault against the dead, a fault to nature,

To reason most absurd; whose common theme  
Is death of fathers, and who still hath cried,  
From the first cause, till he that died to-day,

*This must be so.* We pray you, throw to earth  
This unprevailing woe; and think of us,

As of a father: for let the world take note,  
You are the most immediate to our throne;

And, with no less nobility of love  
Than that which dearest father bears his son,

Do I impart toward you. For your intent  
In going back to school in Wittenberg,

It is most retrograde \* to our desire:  
And, we beseech you, bend you to remain

Here, in the cheer and comfort of our eye,  
Our chiefest courtier, cousin, and our son.

*Queen.* Let not thy mother lose her prayers,  
Hamlet:

I pray thee, stay with us, go not to Wittenberg.  
*Ham.* I shall in all my best obey you, madam.

*King.* Why, 'tis a loving and a fair reply;  
Be as ourself in Denmark.—Madam, come;

This gentle and unforced accord of Hamlet  
Sits smiling to my heart: in grace whereof,

No jocund health that Denmark drinks to-day,  
But the great cannon to the clouds shall tell;

And the king's rouse† the heaven shall bruit‡  
again,

Respeaking earthly thunder. Come away.  
[*Exeunt King, Queen, Lords, &c., POLO-*

*NIUS, and LAERTES.*

*Ham.* O, that this too too solid flesh would  
Thaw, and resolve § itself into a dew! [melt,

Or that the Everlasting had not fix'd ¶ [God!  
His canon|| 'gainst self-slaughter! O God! O

How weary, stale, flat, and unprofitable  
Seem to me all the uses of this world!

Fie on't! O fie! 'tis an unweeded garden,  
That grows to seed; things rank, and gross in

nature,  
Possess it merely ¶. That it should come to this!

But two months dead!—nay, not so much, not  
So excellent a king; that was, to this, [two:  
Hyperion\*\* to a satyr: so loving to my mother,  
That he might not beteem† the winds of heaven  
Visit her face too roughly. Heaven and earth!  
Must I remember? why, she would hang on  
As if increase of appetite had grown [him,  
By what it fed on: And yet, within a month,—  
Let me not think on't;—Frailty, thy name is  
woman!—

A little month; or ere those shoes were old,  
With which she follow'd my poor father's body,

Like Niobe, all tears;—why she, even she,—  
O heaven! a beast, that wants discourse of  
reason,

Would have mourn'd longer,—married with  
My father's brother; but no more like my fa-  
ther I to Hercules: Within a month; [ther

Ere yet the salt of most unrighteous tears  
Had left the flushing in her galled eyes,

She married:—O most wicked speed, to post  
With such dexterity to incestuous sheets!

It is not, nor it cannot come to, good;  
But break, my heart: for I must hold my  
tongue!

*Enter HORATIO, BERNARDO, and MAR-*  
*CELLUS.*

*Hor.* Hail to your lordship!

*Ham.* I am glad to see you  
Horatio,—or I do forget myself.

*Hor.* The same, my lord, and your poor  
servant ever. [name with you.

*Ham.* Sir, my good friend; I'll change that  
And what make you from Wittenberg, Ho-

Marcellus? [ratio?—

*Mar.* My good lord,— [sir.—

*Ham.* I am very glad to see you; good even,  
But what, in faith, make you from Wittenberg?

*Hor.* A truant disposition, good my lord.

*Ham.* I would not hear your enemy say so.  
Nor shall you do mine ear that violence,

To make it trustor of your own report  
Against yourself: I know, you are no truant.

But what is your affair in Elsinore?  
We'll teach you to drink deep ere you depart.

*Hor.* My lord, I came to see your father's  
funeral. [student,

*Ham.* I pray thee, do not mock me, fellow  
I think, it was to see my mother's wedding.

*Hor.* Indeed, my lord, it follow'd hard upon.  
*Ham.* Thrift, thrift, Horatio! the funeral  
baked meats‡

Did coldly furnish forth the marriage tables.  
'Would I had met my dearest § foe in heaven

Or ever I had seen that day, Horatio!—  
My father,—Methinks, I see my father.

*Hor.* Where,

*Ham.* In my mind's eye, Horatio.

*Hor.* I saw him once, he was a goodly king.

*Ham.* He was a man, take him for all in all,  
I shall not look upon his like again.

*Hor.* My lord, I think I saw him yesternight,  
*Ham.* Saw! who?

\* Contrary.

\*\* Apollo.

† Draught.

‡ Suffer.

§ Report.

|| It was

a funeral.

§ Dissolve.

|| Chiefest.

|| Law.

¶ Entirely.

¶ It was anciently the custom to give a cold entertainment at

*Hor.* My lord, the king your father.

*Ham.* The king my father!

*Hor.* Season your admiration for a while  
With an attent\* ear; till I may deliver,  
Upon the witness of these gentlemen,  
This marvel to you.

*Ham.* For God's love, let me hear.

*Hor.* Two nights together had these gentle-  
Marcellus and Bernardo, on their watch, [men,  
In the dead waist and middle of the night,  
Been thus encounter'd. A figure like your  
Armed at point, exactly, cap-à-pé, [father,  
Appears before them, and, with solemn march,  
Goes slow and stately by them: thrice he  
walk'd,

By their oppress'd and fear-surprised eyes,  
Within his truncheon's length; whilst they,  
Almost to jelly with the act of fear, [distill'd  
Stand dumb, and speak not to him. This to  
In dreadful secrecy impart they did; [me  
And I with them, the third night kept the  
watch:

Where, as they had deliver'd, both in time,  
Form of the thing, each word made true and  
good.

The apparition comes: I knew your father;  
These hands are not more like.

*Ham.* But where was this?

*Hor.* My lord, upon the platform where we

*Ham.* Did you not speak to it? [watch'd.

*Hor.* My lord, I did;  
But answer made it none: yet once, methought,  
It lifted up its head, and did address  
Itself to motion, like as it would speak:  
But, even then, the morning cock crew loud;  
And at the sound it shrunk in haste away,  
And vanish'd from our sight.

*Ham.* 'Tis very strange.

*Hor.* As I do live, my honour'd lord, 'tis  
true;

And we did think it writ down in our duty,  
To let you know of it. [me.

*Ham.* Indeed, indeed, sirs, but this troubles  
Hold you the watch to-night?

*All.* We do, my lord.

*Ham.* Arm'd, say you?

*All.* Arm'd, my lord.

*Ham.* From top to toe?

*All.* My lor I, from head to foot.

*Ham.* Then saw you not  
His face.

*Hor.* O, yes, my lord; he wore his beaver†

*Ham.* What, look'd he frowningly? [up.

*Hor.* A countenance more  
In sorrow than in anger.

*Ham.* Pale, or red?

*Ham.* Nay, very pale.

*Ham.* And fix'd his eyes upon you?

*Hor.* Most constantly.

*Ham.* I would, I had been there.

*Hor.* It would have much amazed you.

*Ham.* Very like,

Very like: Stay'd it long? [tell a hundred.

*Hor.* While one with moderate haste might

*Mar. Ber.* Longer, longer.

*Hor.* Not when I saw it.

*Ham.* His beard was grizzled? no?

*Hor.* It was, as I have seen it in his life,  
A sable silver'd.

*Ham.* I will watch to-night;  
Perchance, 'twill walk again.

*Hor.* I warrant, it will.

*Ham.* If it assume my noble father's person,  
I'll speak to it, though hell itself should gape,  
And bid me hold my peace. I pray you ell,  
If you have hitherto conceal'd this sight,  
Let it be tenable in your silence still;  
And whatsoever else shall hap to-night,  
Give it an understanding, but no tongue;  
I will requite your loves: So, fare you well:  
Upon the platform, 'twixt eleven and twelve,  
I'll visit you.

*All.* Our duty to your honour.

*Ham.* Your loves, as mine to you: Fare-  
well.

[*Exeunt* HORATIO, MARCELLUS, and  
BERNARDO.

My father's spirit in arms! all is not well;  
I doubt some foul play: 'would, the night  
were come!

Till then sit still, my soul: Foul deeds will rise,  
Though all the earth o'erwhelm them to men's  
eyes. [*Exit.*

SCENE III. A Room in Polonius' House.

*Enter* LAERTES and OPHELIA.

*Laer.* My necessities are embark'd; fare-  
And, sister, as the winds give benefit, [well:  
And convoy is assistant, do not sleep,  
But let me hear from you.

*Oph.* Do you doubt that?

*Laer.* For Hamlet, and the trifling of his  
Hold it a fashion, and a toy in blood: [favour,  
A violet in the youth of primy nature,  
Forward, not permanent, sweet, not lasting,  
The perfume and suppliance of a minute;  
No more.

*Oph.* No more but so?

*Laer.* Think it no more:  
For nature, crescent†, does not grow alone  
In thews‡, and bulk; but, as this temple waxes,  
The inward service of the mind and soul  
Grows wide withal. Perhaps, he loves you  
now;

And now no soil, nor cautel||, doth besmirch¶  
The virtue of his will; but, you must fear,  
His greatness weigh'd, his will is not his own;  
For he himself is subject to his birth:  
He may not, as unvalued persons do,  
Carve for himself; for on his choice depends  
The safety and the health of the whole state;  
And therefore must his choice be circumscrib'd  
Unto the voice and yielding of that body,  
Whereof he is the head: Then if he says he  
loves you,

It fits your wisdom so far to believe it,  
As he in his particular act and place  
May give his saying deed; which is no further,  
Than the main voice of Denmark goes withal.  
Then weigh what loss your honour may sustain,

\* Attentive.

† Increasing.

‡ That part of the helmet which may be lifted up.

§ Sinews.

|| Subtlety, deceit.

¶ Discolour.



If with too credent \* ear you list † his songs;  
Or lose your heart; or your chaste treasure  
To his unmaster'd ‡ importunity. [open  
Fear it, Ophelia, fear it, my dear sister;  
And keep you in the rear of your affection,  
Out of the shot and danger of desire.  
The chariest § maid is prodigal enough,  
If she unmask her beauty to the moon:  
Virtue itself scapes not calumnious strokes:  
The canker galls the infants of the spring,  
Too oft before their buttons be disclosed;  
And in the morn and liquid dew of youth  
Contagious blastments are most imminent.  
Be wary then: best safety lies in fear;  
Youth to itself rebels, though none else near.

*Oph.* I shall the effect of this good lesson  
keep, [brother,  
As watchman to my heart: But, good my  
Do not, as some ungracious pastors do,  
Show me the steep and thorny way to heaven;  
Whilst, like a puff'd and reckless || libertine,  
Himself the primrose path of dalliance treads,  
And recks not his own read ¶.

*Laer.* O fear me not.  
I stay too long;—But here my father comes.

*Enter POLONIUS.*

A double blessing is a double grace;  
Occasion smiles upon a second leave. [shame;  
*Pol.* Yet here, Laertes! aboard, aboard, for  
The wind sits in the shoulder of your sail,  
And you are staid for: There,—my blessing  
with you;

[*Laying his Hand on LAERTES' Head.*  
And these few precepts in thy memory  
Look thou character \*\*. Give thy thoughts no  
tongue,

Nor any unproportion'd thought his act.  
Be thou familiar, but by no means vulgar.  
The friends thou hast, and their adoption tried,  
Grapple them to thy soul with hooks of steel;  
But do not dull thy palm †† with entertain-  
ment [ware

Of each new-hatch'd, unfledged comrade. Be-  
Of entrance to a quarrel: but, being in,  
Bear it that the opposer may beware of thee.  
Give every man thine ear, but few thy voice:  
Take each man's censure ‡‡, but reserve thy  
judgment.

Costly thy habit as thy purse can buy,  
But not express'd in fancy; rich, not gaudy:  
For the apparel oft proclaims the man; [tion,  
And they in France, of the best rank and sta-  
Are most select and generous §§, chief ||| in  
Neither a borrower, nor a lender be: [that.  
For loan oft loses both itself and friend;  
And borrowing dulls the edge of husbandry ¶¶.  
This above all,—To thine own self be true;  
And it must follow, as the night the day,  
Thou canst not then be false to any man.

Farewell; my blessing season \*\*\* this in thee!

*Laer.* Most humbly do I take my leave, my  
lord.

*Pol.* The time invites you; go, your  
vants tend ††.

*Laer.* Farewell, Ophelia; and remember  
What I have said to you. [well

*Oph.* 'Tis in my memory lock'd  
And you yourself shall keep the key of it.

*Laer.* Farewell. [*Exit LAERTES.*

*Pol.* What is't, Ophelia, he hath said to you?

*Oph.* So please you, something touching the

*Pol.* Marry, well bethought: [lord Hamlet.

'Tis told me, he hath very oft of late

Given private time to you: and you yourself

Have of your audience been most free and

If it be so, (as so 'tis put on me, [bounteous:

And that in way of caution,) I must tell you,

You do not understand yourself so clearly

As it behoves my daughter, and your honour:

What is between you? give me up the truth.

*Oph.* He hath, my lord, of late, made many

Of his affection to me. [tenders

*Pol.* Affection? puh! you speak like a green  
girl,

Unsifted ††† in such perilous circumstance.

Do you believe his tenders, as you call them?

*Oph.* I do not know, my lord, what I should  
think. [a baby;

*Pol.* Marry, I'll teach you: think yourself

That you have ta'en these tenders for true pay,

Which are not sterling. Tender yourself more  
dearly;

Or (not to crack the wind of the poor phrase,

Wronging it thus,) you'll tender me a fool.

*Oph.* My lord, he hath importuned me with

In honourable fashion §§§. [love,

*Pol.* Ay, fashion you may call it; go to, go

to. [speech, my lord,

*Oph.* And hath given countenance to his

With almost all the holy vows of heaven.

*Pol.* Ay, springes to catch woodcocks. I

do know,

When the blood burns, how prodigal the soul

Lends the tongue vows: these blazes, daughter,

Giving more light than heat,—extinct in both,

Even in their promise, as it is a making.—

You must not take for fire. From this time,

Be somewhat scantier of your maiden presence;

Set your entreatments |||| at a higher rate,

Than a command to parley. For lord Hamlet,

Believe so much in him, that he is young;

And with a larger tether ¶¶¶ may he walk,

Than may be given you: In few, Ophelia,

Do not believe his vows; for they are brok-  
ers\*\*\*\*,

Not of that die which their investments show,

But mere implorators ††† of unholy suits,

Breathing like sanctified and pious bonds,

The better to beguile. This is for all,— [forth,

I would not, in plain terms, from this time

Have you so slander any moment's leisure,

As to give words or talk with the lord Hamlet.

Look to't, I charge you; come your ways.

*Oph.* I shall obey, my lord. [*Exeunt.*

\* Believing. † Listen to. ‡ Licentious. § Most cautious. || Careless.  
¶ Regards not his own lessons. \*\* Write. †† Palm of the hand. †† Opinion.  
§§ Noble. ||| Chieflly. ¶¶ Economy. \*\*\* Infix. ††† Wait.  
††† Untempted. §§§ Manner. |||| Company. ¶¶¶ Longer line; a horse  
fastened by a string to a stake, is tethered. \*\*\*\* Pimps. †††† Implores.

SCENE IV. *The Platform.*

*Enter HAMLET, HORATIO, and MARCELLUS.*

*Ham.* The air bites shrewdly; it is very cold.

*Hor.* It is a nipping and an eager\* air.

*Ham.* What hour now?

*Hor.* I think it lacks of twelve.

*Mar.* No, it is struck.

*Hor.* Indeed? I heard it not; it then draws near the season,

Wherein the spirit held is wont to walk.

[*A Flourish of Trumpets, and Ordinance shot off, within.*]

What does this mean, my lord?

*Ham.* The king doth wake to-night, and takes his rouse†. [spring] reels; Keeps wassel‡, and the swaggering up-And as he drains his draughts of Rhenish down, The kettle drum and trumpet thus bray out The triumph of his pledge.

*Hor.* Is it a custom?

*Ham.* Ay, marry, is't:

But to my mind,—though I am native here, And to the manner born,—it is a custom More honour'd in the breach, than the observance.

This heavy-headed revel, east and west, Makes us traduced, and taxed of other nations: They clepe|| us, drunkards, and with swinish Soil our addition; and, indeed it takes [phrase From our achievements, though performed at The pith and marrow of our attribute. [height, So, oft it chances in particular men, That, for some vicious mole of nature in them, As, in their birth, (wherein they are not guilty, Since nature cannot choose his origin,) By the o'ergrowth of some complexion¶ Oft breaking down the pales and forts of reason; Or by some habit, that too much o'er-leavens The form of plausible manners;—that these men,—

Carrying, I say, the stamp of one defect; Being nature's livery, or fortune's star,— Their virtues else (be they as pure as grace, As infinite as man may undergo,) Shall in the general censure take corruption From that particular fault: The dram of base Doth all the noble substance often dout\*\*, To his own scandal.

*Enter Ghost.*

*Hor.* Look, my lord, it comes!

*Ham.* Angels and ministers of grace, defend us!—

Be thou a spirit of health, or goblin damn'd, Bring with thee airs from heaven, or blasts Be thy intents wicked, or charitable, [from hell, Thou com'st in such a questionable†† shape, That I will speak to thee; I'll call thee, Hamlet, King, father, royal Dane: O, answer me: Let me not burst in ignorance! but tell, Why thy canonized bones, hearsed in death, Have burst their cerements! why the sepulchre, Wherein we saw thee quietly in-urn'd,

Hath oped his ponderous and marble jaws, To cast thee up again! What may this mean, That thou, dead corse, again in complete steel Revisit'st thus the glimpses of the moon, Making night hideous; and we fools of nature, So horribly to shake our disposition‡‡, With thoughts beyond the reaches of our souls? Say, why is this? wherefore? what should we do?

*Hor.* It beckons you to go away with it, As if it some impartment did desire To you alone.

*Mar.* Look, with what courteous action, It waves you to a more removed§§ ground: But do not go with it.

*Hor.* No, by no means.

*Ham.* It will not speak; then I will follow.

*Hor.* Do not, my lord. [it.]

*Ham.* Why, what should be the fear?

I do not set my life at a pin's fee|||;

And for my soul, what can it do to that,

Being a thing immortal as itself?

It waves me forth again;—I'll follow it.

*Hor.* What, if it tempt you toward the flood, my lord,

Or to the dreadful summit of the cliff,

That beetles¶¶ o'er his base into the sea?

And there assume some other horrible form,

Which might deprive your sovereignty of rea

And draw you into madness? think of it; [son,

The very place puts toys\*\*\* of desperation,

Without more motive, into every brain,

That looks so many fathoms to the sea,

And hears it roar beneath.

*Ham.* It waves me still:—

Go on, I'll follow thee.

*Mar.* You shall not go, my lord.

*Ham.* Hold off your hands.

*Hor.* Be ruled, you shall not go.

*Ham.* My fate cries out

And makes each petty artery in this body

As hardy as the Nemean lion's nerve.—

[*Ghost beckons.*]

Still am I call'd;—unhand me, gentlemen;—

[*Breaking from them.*]

By heaven, I'll make a ghost of him that lets †††

I say, away:—Go on, I'll follow thee. [me:]

[*Exeunt Ghost and HAMLET.*]

*Hor.* He waxes desperate with imagination.

*Mar.* Let's follow; 'tis not fit thus to obey him. [come?]

*Hor.* Have after:—To what issue will this

*Mar.* Something is rotten in the state of

*Hor.* Heaven will direct it. [Denmark.]

*Mar.* Nay, let's follow him.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V. *A more remote part of the Platform.*

*Re-enter Ghost and HAMLET.*

*Ham.* Whither wilt thou lead me? speak,

*Ghost.* Mark me. [I'll go no further.]

*Ham.* I will.

*Ghost.* My hour is almost come

\* Sharp.

† Jovial draught.

‡ Jollity.

§ a dance.

|| Call.

¶ Humour.

¶ Do out.

†† Conversable.

‡‡ Frame.

§§ Remote

||| Value.

¶¶ Hangs.

\*\*\* Whims.

††† Hinders.

When I to sulphurous and tormenting flames  
Must render up myself.

*Ham.* Alas, poor ghost!

*Ghost.* Pity me not, but lend thy serious  
To what I shall unfold. [hearing]

*Ham.* Speak, I am bound to hear.

*Ghost.* So art thou to revenge, when thou

*Ham.* What? [shalt hear.]

*Ghost.* I am thy father's spirit;  
Doom'd for a certain term to walk the night;  
And, for the day, confined to fast in fires,  
Till the foul crimes, done in my days of nature,  
Are burnt and purged away. But that I am  
To tell the secrets of my prison-house, [forbid  
I could a tale unfold, whose lightest word  
Would harrow up thy soul; freeze thy young  
blood;

Make thy two eyes, like stars, start from their  
Thy knotted and combined locks to part,  
And each particular hair to stand on end,  
Like quills upon the fretful porcupine;  
But this eternal blazon\* must not be  
To ears of flesh and blood:—List, list, O list!  
If thou didst ever thy dear father love,—

*Ham.* O heaven!

*Ghost.* Revenge his foul and most unnatural

*Ham.* Murder? [murder.]

*Ghost.* Murder most foul, as in the best it is;  
But this most foul, strange, and unnatural.

*Ham.* Haste me to know it; that I, with wings  
As meditation, or the thoughts of love, [as swift  
May sweep to my revenge.

*Ghost.* I find thee apt;  
And duller shouldst thou be than the fat weed  
That rots itself in ease on Lethe wharf, [hear:  
Wouldst thou not stir in this. Now, Hamlet,  
'Tis given out, that sleeping in mine orchard,  
A serpent stung me; so the whole ear of Den-  
Is by a forged process of my death [mark  
Rankly abused: but know, thou noble youth,  
The serpent that did sting thy father's life,  
Now wears his crown.

*Ham.* O, my prophetic soul! my uncle!

*Ghost.* Ay, that incestuous, that adulterate  
beast, [gifts,  
With witchcraft of his wit, with traitorous  
(O wicked wit, and gifts, that have the power  
So to seduce!) won to his shameful lust  
The will of my most seeming virtuous queen;  
O, Hamlet, what a falling off was there!  
From me, whose love was of that dignity,  
That it went hand in hand even with the vow  
I made to her in marriage; and to decline  
Upon a wretch, whose natural gifts were poor  
To those of mine!

But virtue, as it never will be moved,  
Though lewdness court it in a shape of heaven;  
So lust, though to a radiant angel link'd,  
Will satiate† itself in a celestial bed,  
And prey on garbage.  
But, soft! methinks, I scent the morning air;  
Brief let me be:—Sleeping within mine or-  
My custom always of the afternoon, [chard,

Upon my secure hour thy uncle stole,  
With juice of cursed hebenon§ in a vial,  
And in the porches of mine ears did pour  
The lecherous distilment: whose effect  
Holds such an enmity with blood of man,  
That, swift as quicksilver, it courses through  
The natural gates and alleys of the body;  
And, with a sudden vigour, it doth posset  
And curd, like eager droppings into milk,  
The thin and wholesome blood: so did it mine:  
And a most instant tetter|| bark'd about,  
Most lazarus-like, with vile and loathsome crust,  
all my smooth body.

Thus was I, sleeping, by a brother's hand,  
Of life, of crown, of queen, at once despatch'd \*\*:  
Cut off even in the blossoms of my sin,  
Unhouseld†, disappointed‡, unanel'd§§;  
No reckoning made, but sent to my account  
With all my imperfections on my head:  
O, horrible! O, horrible! most horrible!  
If thou hast nature in thee, bear it not;  
Let not the royal bed of Denmark be  
A couch for luxury and damned incest.

But, howsoever thou pursuest this act,  
Taint not thy mind, nor let thy soul contrive  
Against thy mother's anght; leave her to heaven  
And to those thorns that in her bosom lodge,  
To prick and sting her. Fare thee well at once!  
The glow-worm shows the matin to be near,  
And 'gins to pale his unfeetual fire:  
Adieu, adieu, adieu! remember me. [Exit.]

*Ham.* O all you host of heaven! O earth!  
What else? [my heart;

And shall I couple hell?—O fie!—Hold, hold,  
And yon, my sinews, grow not instant old,  
But bear me stiffly up!—Remember thee?  
Ay, thou poor ghost, while memory holds a  
seat

In this distracted globe|||. Remember thee?  
Yea, from the table of my memory  
I'll wipe away all trivial fond records, [past  
All saws¶¶ of books, all forms, all pressures  
That youth and observation copied there;  
And thy commandment all alone shall live  
Within the book and volume of my brain,  
Unmix'd with baser matter: yes, by heaven.  
O most pernicious woman!  
O villain, villain, smiling, damned villain!  
My tables\*\*\*,—meet it is, I set it down,  
That one may smile, and smile, and be a villain;  
At least, I am sure, it may be so in Denmark:  
[Writing.]

So, uncle, there you are. Now to my word;  
It is, *Adieu, adieu! remember me.*  
I have sworn't.

*Hor.* [Within.] My lord, my lord,—

*Mar.* [Within.] Lord Hamlet,—

*Hor.* [Within.] Heaven secure him:  
*Ham.* So be it!

*Mar.* [Within.] Illo, ho, ho, my lord!

*Ham.* Illo, ho, ho, boy! come, bird, come

*Enter HORATIO and MARCELLUS.*

*Mar.* How is't, my noble lord?

\* Display. † Garden. ‡ Satiated. § Henbane. || Scab, scurf.

¶ Leprous. \*\* Bereft. †† Without having received the Sacrament.

‡‡ Unappointed, unprepared. §§ Without extreme unction.

|| Head. ¶¶ Sayings, sentences. \*\*\* Memorandum book



*Hor.* What news, my lord?  
*Ham.* O wonderful!  
*Hor.* Good my lord, tell it.  
*Ham.* No;  
 You will reveal it.  
*Hor.* Not I, my lord, by heaven.  
*Mar.* Nor I, my lord.  
*Ham.* How say you then; would heart of man once think it?—  
 But you'll be secret,—  
*Hor. Mar.* Ay, by heaven, my lord.  
*Ham.* There's ne'er a villain, dwelling in Denmark, But he's an arrant knave. [all Denmark,  
*Hor.* There needs no ghost, my lord, come To tell us this. [from the grave,  
*Ham.* Why, right; you are in the right; And so, without more circumstance at all, I hold it fit, that we shake hands, and part: You, as your business and desire shall point For every man hath business and desire, [you; Such as it is,—and, for my own poor part, Look you, I will go pray.  
*Hor.* These are but wild and whirling words, my lord. [yes,  
*Ham.* I am sorry they offend you, heartily; Faith, heartily.  
*Hor.* There's no offence, my lord.  
*Ham.* Yes, by Saint Patrick, but there is, Horatio, And much offence too. Touching this vision here,— It is an honest ghost, that let me tell you; For your desire to know what is between us, O'ermaster it as you may. And now, good friends, As you are friends, scholars, and soldiers, Give me one poor request.  
*Hor.* What is't, my lord?  
*We will.* [seen to-night.  
*Ham.* Never make known what you have  
*Hor. Mar.* My lord, we will not.  
*Ham.* Nay, but swear't.  
*Hor.* In faith,  
 My lord, not I.  
*Mar.* Nor I, my lord, in faith.  
*Ham.* Upon my sword.  
*Mar.* We have sworn, my lord, already.  
*Ham.* Indeed, upon my sword, indeed.  
*Ghost.* [Beneath.] Swear.

*Ham.* Ha, ha, boy! say'st thou so; art thou there, true-penny?  
 Come on,—you hear this fellow in the cellar—  
 Consent to swear. [age,—  
*Hor.* Propose the oath, my lord.  
*Ham.* Never to speak of this that you have  
 Swear by my sword. [seen,  
*Ghost.* [Beneath.] Swear.  
*Ham.* *Hic et ubique*\*? then we'll shift our  
 Come hither, gentlemen, [ground:—  
 And lay your hands again upon my sword:  
 Swear by my sword,  
 Never to speak of this that you have heard.  
*Ghost.* [Beneath.] Swear by his sword.  
*Ham.* Well said, old mole! can'st work  
 i'the earth so fast? [friends.  
 A worthy pioneer!—Once more remove, good  
*Hor.* O day and night, but this is wondrous  
 strange! [welcome.  
*Ham.* And therefore as a stranger give it  
 There are more things in heaven and earth, Ho-  
 Than are dreamt of in your philosophy. [ratio,  
 But come:—  
 Here, as before, never, so help you mercy!  
 How strange or odd so'er I bear myself,  
 As I, perchance, hereafter shall think meet  
 To put an antic disposition on,—  
 That you, at such times seeing me, never shall,  
 With arms encumber'd thus, or this head-  
 shake,  
 Or by pronouncing of some doubtful phrase,  
 As, *Well, well, we know*;—or, *We could, an*  
*if we would*;—or, *If we list to speak*;—or,  
*There be, an if they might*;—  
 Or such ambiguous giving out, to note [swear,  
 That you know aught of me:—This do you  
 So grace and mercy at your most need help  
 Ghost. [Beneath.] Swear. [you!  
*Ham.* Rest, rest, perturbed spirit! So, gen-  
 tlemen,  
 With all my love I do commend me to you:  
 And what so poor a man as Hamlet is [you,  
 May do to express his love and friending to  
 God willing, shall not lack. Let us go in to  
 gether;  
 And still your fingers on your lips, I pray.  
 The time is out of joint;—O cursed spite!  
 That ever I was born to set it right!  
 Nay, come, let's go together. [Exeunt

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. A Room in Polonius's House.

*Enter* POLONIUS and REYNALDO.

*Pol.* Give him this money, and these notes,  
*Rey.* I will, my lord. [Reynaldo.  
*Pol.* You shall do marvellous wisely, good  
 Reynaldo,

Before you visit him, to make inquiry  
 Of his behaviour.

*Rey.* My lord, I did intend it.

*Pol.* Marry, well said: very well said. Look  
 you, sir,  
 Enquire me first what Danes† are in Paris;

And how, and who, what means, and where  
 they keep,  
 What company, at what expense; and finding,  
 By this encompassment and drift of question,  
 That they do know my son, come you more  
 nearer  
 Than your particular demands will touch it:  
 Take you, as'twere, some distant knowledge  
 of him;  
 As thus,—*I know his father, and his friends,*  
*And, in part, him*;—Do you mark this, Rey-  
 naldo?

*Rey.* Ay, very well, my lord.

\* Here and every where.

† Danes.

*Pol. And, in part, him;—but, you may say, not well:*

*But, if't he be: I mean, he's very wild; As dicted so and so;—and there put on him What forgeries you please; marry, none so rank As may dishonour him; take heed of that; But, sir, such wanton, wild, and usual slips, As are companions noted and most known To youth and liberty.*

*Reg. As gaming, my lord.*

*Pol. Ay, or drinking, fencing, swearing, Drabbing:—You may go so far. [quarrelling, Reg. My lord, that would dishonour him.*

*Pol. Faith, no; as you may season it in the charge.*

*You must not put another scandal on him, That he is open to incontinency; so quaintly, That's not my meaning: but breathe his faults That they may seem the taints of liberty: The flash and out-break of a fiery mind; A savageness\* in unreclaimed blood, Of general assault.*

*Reg. But, my good lord,——*

*Pol. Wherefore should you do this?*

*Reg. Ay, my lord, I would know that.*

*Pol. Marry, sir, here's my drift; And, I believe, it is a fetch of warrant: You laying these slight sullies on my son, As 'twere a thing a little soil'd i' the working, Mark you, Your party in converse him you would sound, Having ever seen in the predominat† crimes, The youth you breathe of, guilty, be assured, He closes with you in this consequence; Good sir, or so; or friend, or gentleman,—According to the phrase, or the addition, Of man, and country.*

*Reg. Very good, my lord.*

*Pol. And then, sir, does he this,—He does—What was I about to say?—By the mass, I was about to say some something:—Where did I leave?*

*Reg. At, closes in the consequence [marry;*

*Pol. At, closes in the consequence,—Ay, He closes with you thus:—I know the gentle- I saw him yesterday, or t'other day, [man; Or then, or then; with such, or such; and, as you say, [rouse;*

*There was he gaming; there o'ertook in his There falling out at tennis; or, perchance, I saw him enter such a house of sale, (Videlicet‡, a brothel), or so forth.—*

*See you now; Your bait of falsehood takes this carp of truth: And thus do we of wisdom and of reach, With windlances, and with assays of bias,*

*By indirections find directions out; So, by former lecture and advice, [not? Shall you my son: You have me, have you*

*Reg. My lord, I have.*

*Pol. God be wi' you; fare you well.*

*Reg. Good, my lord,——*

*Pol. Observe his inclination in yourself.*

*Reg. I shall, my lord.*

*Pol. And let him ply his music.*

*Reg. Well, my lord. [Exit.]*

*Enter OPHELIA.*

*Pol. Farewell!—How now, Ophelia? what's the matter; [afflicted]*

*Oph. O, my lord, my lord, I have been so*

*Pol. With what, in the name of heaven?*

*Oph. My lord, as I was sewing in my closet, Lord Hamlet,—with his doublet all unbraced; No hat upon his head; his stockings foul'd, Ungarter'd, and down-gyved; to his ankle; Pale as his shirt; his knees knocking each And with a look so piteous in purport, [other; As if he had been loosed out of hell, To speak of horrors,—he comes before me.*

*Pol. Mad for thy love?*

*Oph. My lord, I do not know; But, truly, I do fear it.*

*Pol. What said he? [hard;*

*Oph. He took me by the wrist, and held me Then goes he to the length of all his arm; And, with his other hand thus o'er his brow, He falls to such perusal of my face, As he would draw it. Long stay'd he so; At last,—a little shaking of mine arm, And thrice his head thus waving up and down, He raised a sigh so piteous and profound, As it did seem to shatter all his bulk ||, And end his being: That done, he lets me go; And, with his head over his shoulder turn'd, He seem'd to find his way without his eyes; For out o' doors he went without their helps, And, to the last, bended their light on me.*

*Pol. Come, go with me; I will go seek the This is the very ecstasy of love; [king. Whose violent property foredoes † itself, And leads the will to desperate undertakings, As oft as any passion under heaven, That does afflict our natures. I am sorry,—What, have you given him any hard words of late? [command]*

*Oph. No, my good lord; but, as you did I did repel his letters, and denied*

*His access to me.*

*Pol. That hath made him mad I am sorry, that with better heed and judgment I had not quoted\*\* him: I fear'd he did but trifle, [jealousy]*

*And meant to wreck thee; but beshrew my It seems it is as proper to our age*

*To cast beyond ourselves in our opinions, As it is common for the younger sort*

*To lack discretion. Come, go we to the king; This must be known; which, being kept close, might move*

*More grief to hide, than hate to utter love. Come. [Exit.]*

## SCENE II. A Room in the Castle.

*Enter King, Queen, ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDENSTERN, and Attendants.*

*King. Welcome, dear Rosencrantz, and Guildenstern!*

*Moreover that we much did long to see you The need we have to use you, did provoke*

\* Wildness.

† Already named.

‡ That is to say.

§ Hanging down like fetters.

|| Body.

† Destroys.

\*\* Observed.

Our hasty sending. Something have you heard Of Hamlet's transformation; so I call it, Since not the exterior nor the inward man Resembles that it was: What it should be, More than his father's death, that thus hath put him

So much from the understanding of himself, I cannot dream of: I entreat you both, [him:] That,—being of so young days brought up with And, since, so neighbour'd to his youth and humour,—

That you vouchsafe your rest here in our court Some little time: so by your companies To draw him on to pleasures; and to gather, So much as from occasion you may glean, Whether aught, to us unknown, afflicts him, That, open'd, lies within our remedy. [thus.]

*Queen.* Good gentlemen, he hath much talk'd of you;

And, sure I am, two men there are not living, To whom he more adheres. If it will please you

To show us so much gentry\*, and good will, As to expend your time with us awhile, For the supply and profit of our hope, Your visitation shall receive such thanks As fits a king's remembrance.

*Ros.* Both your majesties Might, by the sovereign power you have of us, Put your dread pleasures more into command Than to entreaty.

*Guil.* But we both obey; And here give up ourselves, in the full bent, To lay our service freely at your feet, To be commanded.

*King.* Thanks, Rosencrantz, and gentle Guildenstern.

*Queen.* Thanks, Guildenstern, and gentle Rosencrantz:

And I beseech you instantly to visit My too much changed son.—Go, some of you, And bring these gentlemen where Hamlet is.

*Guil.* Heavens make our presence, and our Pleasant and helpful to him! [practices,

*Queen.* Ay, amen! [Exit ROSCENCRANTZ, GUILDENSTERN, and some Attendants.]

*Enter POLONIUS.*

*Pol.* The ambassadors from Norway, my Are joyfully return'd. [good lord,

*King.* Thou still hast been the father of good news. [good liege,

*Pol.* Have I, my lord? Assure you, my I hold my duty, as I hold my soul, Both to my God, and to my gracious king: And I do think, (or else this brain of mine Hunts not the trail of policy so sure As it hath used to do,) that I have found The very cause of Hamlet's lunacy.

*King.* O, speak of that; that do I long to hear. [sadors:

*Pol.* Give first admittance to the embas- My news shall be the fruit; to that great feast.

*King.* Thyself do grace to them, and bring them in. [Exit POLONIUS.]

He tells me, my dear Gertrude, he hath found The head and source of all your son's distemper.

*Queen.* I doubt, it is no other but the main; His father's death, and our o'erhasty marriage.

*Re-enter POLONIUS, with VOLTIMAND and CORNELIUS*

*King.* Well, we shall sift him.—Welcome, my good friends!

Say, Voltimand, what from our brother Norway? [desires.

*Volt.* Most fair return of greetings, and Upon our first, he sent out to suppress His nephew's levies; which to him appear'd To be a preparation 'gainst the Polack ||;

But, better look'd into, he truly found It was against your highness: Whereat grieved,

That so his sickness, age, and impotence, Was falsely borne in hand ||,—sends out arrests

On Fortinbras; which he, in brief, obeys; Receives rebuke from Norway; and, in fine,

Makes vow before his uncle, never more To give the assay of arms against your majesty.

Whereon old Norway, overcome with joy, Gives him three thousand crowns in annual fee;

And his commission, to employ those soldiers, So levied as before, against the Polack:

With an entreaty, herein further shown, [Gives a Paper.

That it might please you to give quiet pass 'I through your dominions for this enterprise;

On such regards of safety, and allowance, As therein are set down.

*King.* It likes us well: And, at our more consider'd time, we'll read, Answer, and think upon this business.

Mean time, we thank you for your well-took labour:

Go to your rest; at night we'll feast together: Most welcome home!

[Exit VOLTIMAND and CORNELIUS.] *Pol.* This business is well ended.

My liege, and madam, to expostulate\*\* What majesty should be, what duty is,

Why day is day, night, night, and time is time, Were nothing but to waste night, day, and time.

Therefore,—since brevity is the soul of wit, And tediousness the limbs and outward flourish,—

I will be brief: Your noble son is mad: Mad call I it; for, to define true madness, What is't, but to be nothing else but mad:

But let that go.

*Queen.* More matter, with less art. *Pol.* Madam, I swear I use no art at all.

That he is mad, 'tis true: 'tis true, 'tis pity; And pity 'tis, 'tis true: a foolish figure;

But farewell it, for I will use no art. Mad let us grant him then: and now remains,

That we find out the cause of this effect; Or, rather say, the cause of this defect;

For this effect, defective, comes by cause: Thus it remains, and the remainder thus. Perpend.

I have a daughter; have, while she is mine;

Complaisance.

† Utmost exertion.

‡ Imposed on.

‡ Scent.

§ Dessert

|| Poland.

\*\* Discuss.



Who, in her duty and obedience, mark,  
Hath given me this: Now gather and surmise.  
—*To the celestial and my soul's idol, the  
most beautified Ophelia,*—  
That's an ill phrase, a vile phrase; *beautified*  
is a vile phrase; but you shall hear.—Thus:

*In her excellent white bosom, these, &c.*

Queen. Came this from Hamlet to her?

Pol. Good madam, stay awhile; I will be faithful.

*Doubt thou, the stars are fire; [Reads.*

*Doubt, that the sun doth move:*

*Doubt truth to be a liar;*

*But never doubt, I love.*

*O lear Ophelia, I am ill at these numbers;  
I have not art to reckon my groans; but  
that I love thee best, O most best, believe it.  
A lie.*

*Thine evermore, most dear lady, whilst  
this machine is to him, Hamlet.*

This, in obedience, hath my daughter shown  
And more above, hath his solicitings, [me:  
As they fell out by time, by means, and place,  
All given to mine ear.

King. But how hath she  
Received his love?

Pol. What do you think of me?

King. As of a man faithful and honourable.

Pol. I would fain prove so. But what  
might you think,

When I had seen this hot love on the wing,  
(As I perceived it, I must tell you that,  
Before my daughter told me,) what might you,  
Or my dear majesty your queen here, think,  
If I had play'd the desk, or table-book;  
Or given my heart a working, mute and dumb;  
Or look'd upon this love with idle sight;  
What might you think? no, I went round \* to  
work,

And my young mistress thus did I bespeak;  
*Lord Hamlet is a prince out of thy sphere;  
This must not be:* and then I precepts gave her,  
That she should lock herself from his resort,  
Admit no messengers, receive no tokens.  
Which done, she took the fruits of my advice;  
And he, repulsed, (a short tale to make,)  
Fell into a sadness; then into a fast;  
Thence to a watch; thence into a weakness;  
Thence to a lightness; and, by this declension,  
Into the madness wherein now he raves,  
And all we mourn for.

King. Do you think, 'tis this?

Queen. It may be, very likely.

Pol. Hath there been such a time, (I'd fain  
That I have positively said, 'Tis so, [know that,])  
When it proved otherwise?

King. Not that I know.

Pol. Take this from this, if this be otherwise:

[*Pointing to his Head and Shoulder.*

If circumstances lead me, I will find  
Where truth is hid, though it were hid indeed  
Within the centre.

King. How may we try it further?

Pol. You know, sometimes he walks four  
Here in the lobby. [hours together

Queen. So he does, indeed.

Pol. At such a time I'll loose my daughter  
to him:

Be you and I behind an arras then;  
Mark the encounter: if he love her not,  
And be not from his reason fallen thereon,  
Let me be no assistant for a state,  
But keep a farm, and carters.

King. We will try it.

*Enter HAMLET, reading.*

Queen. But, look, where sadly the poor  
wretch comes reading.

Pol. Away, I do beseech you, both away;  
I'll board him presently:—O, give me leave.

[*Exeunt King, Queen, and Attendants.*  
How does my good lord Hamlet?

Ham. Well, god-a-mercy.

Pol. Do you know me, my lord!

Ham. Excellent well; you are a fishmonger.

Pol. Not I, my lord? [man.

Ham. Then I would you were so honest a

Pol. Honest, my lord?

Ham. Ay, sir; to be honest, as this world  
goes, is to be one picked man out of ten thou-  
sand.

Pol. That's very true, my lord.

Ham. For if the sun breed maggots in a  
dead dog, being a god, kissing carrion,—  
Have you a daughter?

Pol. I have, my lord.

Ham. Let her not walk i'the sun: concep-  
tion is a blessing; but as your daughter may  
conceive,—friend, look to't.

Pol. How say you by that? [*Aside.*] Still  
harping on my daughter:—yet he knew me  
not at first; he said, I was a fishmonger: He  
is far gone, far gone: and, truly in my youth  
I suffered much extremity for love; very near  
this. I'll speak to him again.—What do you  
read, my lord?

Ham. Words, words, words!

Pol. What is the matter, my lord?

Ham. Between you?

Pol. I mean, the matter that you read, my  
lord.

Ham. Slanders, sir; for the satirical rogue  
says here, that old men have grey beards; that  
their faces are wrinkled; their eyes purging  
thick amber, and plum-tree gum; and that  
they have a plentiful lack of wit, together  
with most weak hams: All of which, sir,  
though I most powerfully and potently be-  
lieve, yet I hold it not honesty to have it thus  
set down; for yourself, sir, shall be as old as  
I am, if, like a crab, you could go backward.

Pol. Though this be madness, yet there's  
method in it. [*Aside.*] Will you walk out of  
the air, my lord?

Ham. Into my grave?

Pol. Indeed, that is out o'the air.—How  
pregnant sometimes his replies are! a hap-  
piness that often madness hits on, which reason  
and sanity\*\* could not so prosperously be de-  
livered of. I will leave him, and suddenly  
contrive the means of meeting between him

\* Roundly, without reserve.

† Be pregnant.

† Tapestry.

† Ready, apt.

† Accost.

\*\* Soundness of mind.

§ Understanding

and my daughter.—My honourable lord, I will most humbly take my leave of you.

*Ham.* You cannot, sir, take from me any thing that I will more willingly part withal; except my life, except my life, except my life.

*Pol.* Fare you well, my lord.

*Ham.* These tedious old fools?

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*

*Pol.* You go to seek the Lord Hamlet; there he is.

*Ros.* God save you, sir! [*To POLONIUS.*

[*Exit POLONIUS.*

*Guil.* My honour'd lord!—

*Ros.* My most dear lord!—

*Ham.* My excellent good friends! how dost thou, Guildenstern? Ah, Rosencrantz! Good lads, how do you both?

*Ros.* As the indifferent children of the earth.

*Guil.* Happy, in that we are not overhappy;

On fortune's cap we are not the very button.

*Ham.* Nor the soles of her shoe?

*Ros.* Neither, my lord.

*Ham.* Then you live about her waist, or in the middle of her favours?

*Guil.* 'Faith her privates we.

*Ros.* In the secret parts of fortune? O, most true; she is a strumpet. What news?

*Ros.* None, my lord; but that the world is grown honest.

*Ham.* Then is dooms-day near: But your news is not true. Let me question more in particular: What have you, my good friends, deserved at the hands of fortune, that she sends you to prison hither?

*Guil.* Prison, my lord!

*Ham.* Denmark's a prison.

*Ros.* Then is the world one.

*Ham.* A goodly one; in which there are many confines, wards, and dungeons; Denmark being one of the worst.

*Ros.* We think not so, my lord.

*Ham.* Why, then, 'tis none to you; for there is nothing either good or bad, but thinking makes it so: to me it is a prison.

*Ros.* Why, then your ambition makes it one; 'tis too narrow for your mind.

*Ham.* O God! I could be bounded in a nutshell, and count myself a king of infinite space; were it not that I have bad dreams.

*Guil.* Which dreams, indeed, are ambition; for the very substance of the ambitious is merely the shadow of a dream.

*Ham.* A dream itself is but a shadow.

*Ros.* Truly, and I hold ambition of so airy and light a quality, that it is but a shadow's shadow.

*Ham.* Then are our beggars, bodies; and our monarchs, and out-stretch'd heroes, the beggars' shadows: Shall we to the court? for, by my fay, I cannot reason.

*Ros. Guil.* We'll wait upon you.

*Ham.* No such matter: I will not sort you with the rest of my servants; for, to speak to you like an honest man, I am most dreadfully

attended. But, in the beaten way of friendship, what make you at Elsinore?

*Ros.* To visit you, my lord; no other occasion.

*Ham.* Beggar that I am, I am even poor of thanks; but I thank you: and sure, dear friends, my thanks are too dear, a halfpenny. Were you not sent for? Is it your own inclining? Is it a free visitation? Come, come; deal justly with me: come, come; nay, speak.

*Guil.* What should we say my lord?

*Ham.* Any thing—but to the purpose. You were sent for; and there is a kind of confession in your looks, which your modesties have not craft enough to colour: I know, the good king and queen have sent for you.

*Ros.* To what end, my lord?

*Ham.* That you must teach me. But let me conjure you by the rights of our fellowship, by the consonancy of our youth, by the obligation of our ever-preserved love, and by what more dear a letter proposer could charge you withal, be even and direct with me, whether you were sent for, or no?

*Ros.* What say you? *To GUILDENSTERN.*

*Ham.* Nay, then I have an eye of you; [*Aside.*—if you love me, hold not off.

*Guil.* My lord, we were sent for.

*Ham.* I will tell you why; so shall my anticipation prevent your discovery, and your secrecy to the king and queen moults no feather. I have of late, (but wherefore, I know not,) lost all my mirth, forgone all custom of exercises; and, indeed, it goes so heavily with my disposition, that this goodly frame, the earth, seems to me a sterile promontory; this most excellent canopy, the air, look you, this brave o'erhanging firmament, this majestical roof fretted with golden fire, why, it appears no other thing to me, than a foul and pestilent congregation of vapours. What a piece of work is a man! How noble in reason! how infinite in faculties! in form, and moving, how express and admirable! in action, how like an angel! in apprehension, how like a god! the beauty of the world! the paragon of animals! And yet, to me, what is this quintessence of dust? man delights not me, nor woman neither; though, by your smiling, you seem to say so.

*Ros.* My lord, there's no such stuff in my thoughts.

*Ham.* Why did you laugh then, when I said, *Man delights not me?*

*Ros.* To think, my lord, if you delight not in man, what lenten\* entertainment the players shall receive from you: we coted† them on the way; and hither are they coming, to offer you service.

*Ham.* He that plays the king, shall be welcome; his majesty shall have tribute of me; the adventurous knight shall use his foil, and target: the lover shall not sigh gratis; the humorous man shall end his part in peace; the clown shall make those laugh, whose lungs are tickled o'the scere; and the lady shall say her

mind freely, or the blank verse shall halt for't.—What players are they?

*Ros.* Even those you were wont to take such delight in, the tragedians of the city.

*Ham.* How chances it, they travel\*? their residence, both in reputation and profit, was better both ways.

*Ros.* I think, their inhibition comes by the means of the late innovation.

*Ham.* Do they hold the same estimation they did when I was in the city? Are they so followed?

*Ros.* No, indeed, they are not.

*Ham.* How comes it? Do they grow rusty?

*Ros.* Nay, their endeavour keeps in the wonted pace: But there is, sir, an airy of children, little eyases†, that cry out on the top of question‡, and are most tyrannically clapped for't: these are now the fashion; and so berattle the common stages, [so they call them] that many, wearing rapiers, are afraid of goose quills, and dare scarce come thither.

*Ham.* What, are they children? who maintain them? how are they escoted§? Will they pursue the quality|| no longer than they can sin? will they not say afterwards, if they should grow themselves to common players, (as it is most like, if their means are no better,) their writers do them wrong, to make them exclaim against their own succession?

*Ros.* 'Faith, there has been much to do on both sides; and the nation holds it no sin, to tarre¶ them on to controversy: there was, for a while, no money bid for argument, unless the poet and the player went to cuffs in the question.

*Ham.* Is it possible?

*Guil.* O, there has been much throwing about of brains.

*Ham.* Do the boys carry it away?

*Ros.* Ay, that they do, my lord; Hercules and his load too\*\*.

*Ham.* It is not very strange: for my uncle is king of Denmark, and those, that would make months at him while my father lived, give twenty, forty, fifty, an hundred ducats a-piece, for his picture in little††. 'Sblood, there is something in this more than natural, if philosophy could find it out.

[Flourish of Trumpets within.]

*Guil.* There are the players.

*Ham.* Gentlemen, you are welcome to Elsinore. Your hands. Come then: the apurtenance of welcome is fashion and ceremony: let me comply‡‡ with you in this garb; lest my extent to the players, which, I tell you, must show fairly outward, should more appear like entertainment than yours. You are welcome: but my uncle-father, and aunt-mother, are deceived.

*Guil.* In what, my dear lord?

*Ham.* I am but mad north-north west:

when the wind is southerly, I know a hawk from a hand-saw.

*Enter* POLONIUS.

*Pol.* Well be with you, gentlemen!

*Ham.* Hark you, Guildenstern;—and you too;—at each ear a hearer: that great baby, you see there, is not yet out of his swaddling-clouts.

*Ros.* Happily, he's the second time come to them; for, they say, an old man is twice a child.

*Ham.* I will prophesy, he comes to tell me of the players; mark it.—You say right, sir: o'Monday morning; 'twas then, indeed.

*Pol.* My lord, I have news to tell you.

*Ham.* My lord, I have news to tell you; When Roscius was an actor in Rome,—

*Pol.* The actors are come hither, my lord.

*Ham.* Buz, buz!

*Pol.* Upon my honour,—

*Ham.* Then *came each actor on his ass*.—

*Pol.* The best actors in the world, either for tragedy, comedy, history, pastoral, pastoral comical, historical-pastoral, [tragical-historical, tragical-comical] historical-pastoral, scene indivisible, or poem unlimited: Seneca cannot be too heavy, nor Plautus too light. For the law of writ§§, and the liberty, these are the only men.

*Ham.* O Jephthah, judge of Israel,—what a treasure hadst thou!

*Pol.* What a treasure had he, my lord?

*Ham.* Why,—*One fair daughter, and no more*.

*The which he loved passing well.*

*Pol.* Still on my daughter. [Aside.]

*Ham.* Am I not i'the right, old Jephthah?

*Pol.* If you call me Jephthah, my lord, I have a daughter, that I love passing well.

*Ham.* Nay, that follows not.

*Pol.* What follows then, my lord?

*Ham.* Why, *As by lot, God wot*, and then you know, *It came to pass, As most like it was*.—The first row of the pious chanson||| will show you more; for look, my abridgment comes.

*Enter four or five Players.*

You are welcome, masters; welcome, all:—I am glad to see thee well:—welcome, good friends.—O, old friend! Why, thy face is valanced¶¶ since I saw thee last; Comest thou to beard\*\*\* me in Denmark?—What! my young lady and mistress! By-er lady, your ladyship is nearer to heaven, than when I saw you last, by the altitude of a chopine†††. Pray God, your voice, like a piece of uncurrent gold, be not cracked within the ring.—Masters, you are all welcome. We'll e'en to't like French falconers, fly at any thing we see: We'll have a speech straight: come, give us a taste of your ty‡‡: qualicome, a passionate speech.

*1 Player.* What speech, my lord?

*Ham.* I heard thee speak me a speech once,—but it was never acted; or, if it was,

\* Become strollers.

† Young nestlings.

‡ Dialogue.

§ Paid.

|| Profession.

¶ Provoke.

\*\* i. e., The Globe, the sign of Shakspeare's theatre.

†† Miniature.

‡‡ Compliment.

§§ Writing.

||| Christmas carols.

¶¶ Fringed.

\*\*\* Defy.

††† Clog.

‡‡ Profession.



not above once: for the play, I remember, pleased not the million; 'twas caviare\* to the general: but it was (as I received it, and others, whose judgments, in such matters, cried in the top; of mine,) an excellent play; well digested in the scenes, set down with as much modesty as cunning. I remember, one said, there were no saiaids in the lines, to make the matter savoury; nor no matter in the phrase, that might indite the author of affection: but called it an honest method, as wholesome as sweet, and by very much more handsome than fine. One speech in it I chiefly loved: 'twas Æneas' tale to Dido; and thereabout of it especially where he speaks of Priam's slaughter: If it live in your memory, begin at this line; let me see, let me see;—

*The rugged Pyrrhus, like the Hyrcanean beast,—*

'tis not so; it begins with Pyrrhus. [arm.  
*The rugged Pyrrhus,—he, whose sable Black as his purpose, did the night resemble*

*When he lay couched in the ominous horse, Hath now this dread and black complexion smear'd*

*With heraldry more dismal; head to foot Now is he total gules†; horribly trick'd\*\**

*With blood of fathers, mothers, daughters, sons, [streets,*

*Baked and impasted with the parching That lend a tyrannous and a damned light To their lord's murder: Roasted in wrath and fire,*

*And thus o'er-sized with coagulate gore, With eyes like carbuncles, the hellish Pyrrhus [you.*

*Old grandvire Priam seeks;—So proceed*

*Pol. 'Fore God, my lord, well spoken; with good accent and good discretion.*

*1 Play. Anon he finds him [sword, Striking too short at Greeks; his antique Rebellious to his arm, lies where it falls, Repugnant to commands: Unequal match'd, Pyrrhus at Priam drives, in rage strikes wide; [sword,*

*But with the whiff and wind of his fell The unnerued father falls. Then senseless Ilium,*

*Seeming to feel this blow, with flaming [crash*

*Stoops to his base, and with a hideous Takes prisoner Pyrrhus' ear; for, lo! his sword,*

*Which was declining on the milky head Of reverend Priam, seem'd i' the air to stick:*

*So, as a painted tyrant, Pyrrhus stood; And, like a neutral to his will and mat- Did nothing. [ter,*

*But, as we often see against some storm A silence in the heavens, the rack† stand still,*

*The bold winds speechless, and the orb below*

*As hush as death: anon the dreadful thunder [pause,*

*Doth rend the region: So, after Pyrrhus' A roused vengeance sets him new a work,*

*And never did the Cyclops' hammers fall On Mars's armour, joined for proof etern††*

*With less remorse than Pyrrhus' bleed- Now falls on Priam.— [you gods,*

*Out, out, thou strumpet Fortune! All In general synod, take away her power;*

*Break all the spokes and felloes from her wheel, [of heaven,*

*And bow the round nave down the hill As low as to the fiends!*

*Pol. This is too long.*

*Ham. It shall to the barber's with your beard.—Pr'ythee, say on: He's for a gig or a tale of bawdry, or he sleeps: say on: come to Hecuba. [mobied§§ queen—*

*1 Play. But who, ah uo! have seen the Ham. The mobled queen!*

*Pol. That's good; mobled queen is good.*

*1 Play. Run barefoot up and down threatening the flames*

*With bisson||| rheum; a ciout upon that head [a robe*

*Where late the diadem stood; and, for About her lunk and all o'erteemed loins,*

*A blanket, in the alarm of fear caught up; [nom steep'd*

*Who this had seen, with tongue in ve- 'Gainst fortune's state would treason have pronounced:*

*But if the gods themselves did see her then, When she saw Pyrrhus make malicious sport [limbs;*

*In mincing with his sword her husband's. The instant burst of clamour that she made, [all,)*

*(Unless things mortal move them not at Would have made milch†† the burning eye And passion in the gods. [of heaven,*

*Pol. Look whether he has not turn'd his colour, and has tears in his eyes. Pr'ythee, no more.*

*Ham. 'Tis well; I'll have thee speak out the rest of this soon.—Good my lord, will you see the players well bestowed? Do you hear? let them be well used; for they are the abstract and brief chronicles of the time: After your death you were better have a bad epitaph, than their ill report while you live.*

*Pol. My lord, I will use them according to their desert.*

*Ham. Odd's bodikin, man, much better: Use every man after his desert, and who shall 'scape whipping? Use them after your own honour and dignity: The less they deserve, the more merit is in your bounty. Take them in.*

*Pol. Come, sirs.*

*[Exit POLONIUS, with some of the Players.*

\* An Italian dish made of the roes of fishes.  
§ Convict. || Affectation. ¶ Red.

|| Eternal §§ Muffled.

† Multitude.

\*\* Blazoned.

||| Blind.

† Above.

†† Light clouds.

†† Milk.

*Ham.* Follow him, friends: we'll hear a play to-morrow.—Dost thou hear me, old friend? can you play the Murder of Gonzago?

1 *Play.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* We'll have it to-morrow night. You could, for a need, study a speech of some dozen or sixteen lines, which I would set down, and insert in't? could you not?

1 *Play.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* Very well.—Follow that lord, and look you mock him not. [*Exit Player.*] My good friends, [*To Ros. and Guild.*] I'll leave you till night: you are welcome to Elsinore.

*Ros.* Good my lord!

[*Ereunt Ros. and Guild.*]

*Ham.* Ay, so, God be wi' you:—Now I am alone.

O, what a rogue and peasant slave am I! Is it not monstrous, that this player here, But in a fiction, in a dream of passion, Could force his soul so to his own conceit, That from her working all his visage wann'd; Tears in his eyes, distraction in's aspect, A broken voice, and his whole function suiting With forms to his conceit? And all for nothing! For Hecuba!

What's Hecuba to him, or he to Hecuba, [do, That he should weep for her? What would he Had he the motive and the cue for passion That I have? He would drown the stage with tears,

And cleave the general ear with horrid Make mad the guilty, and appal the free, Confound the ignorant, and amaze, indeed, The very faculties of eyes and ears.

Yet I,

A dull and muddy-mettled rascal, peak, Like John a-dreams, unpregnant of my cause, And can say nothing; no, not for a king, Upon whose property and most dear life,

A damn'd defeat\* was made. Am I a coward? Who calls me villain? breaks my pate across? Plucks off my beard, and blows it in my face? Tweaks me by the nose? gives me the lie i'th' throat,

As deep as to the lungs? Who does me this? Ha!

Why, I should take it: for it cannot be, But I am pigeon-liver'd, and lack gall To make oppression bitter: or, ere this, I should have fatted all the region kites With this slave's offal: Bloody, bawdy villain! Remorseless, treacherous, lecherous, kindless villain!

Why, what an ass am I? This is most brave; That I, the son of a dear father murder'd, Prompted to my revenge by heaven and hell, Must, like a whore, unpack my heart with And fall a cursing, like a very drab, [words, A scullion!

[I have heard, Fie upon't! foh! About my brains! Humph! That guilty creatures, sitting at a play, Have by the very cunning of the scene Been struck so to the soul, that presently They have proclaim'd their malefactions; For murder, though it hath no tongue, will speak

[players With most miraculous organ. I'll have these Play something like the murder of my father, Before mine uncle: I'll observe his looks; I'll tent him† to the quick; if he do blench‡, I know my course. The spirit, that I have seen, May be a devil: and the devil hath power To assume a pleasing shape; yea, and, perhaps, Out of my weakness, and my melancholy, (As he is very potent with such spirits,) Abuses me to damn me: I'll have grounds More relative than this: The play's the thing, Wherein I'll catch the conscience of the king.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. A Room in the Castle.

*Enter King, Queen, POLONIUS, OPHELIA, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.*

*King.* And can you, by no drift of conference

Get from him, why he puts on this confusion; Grating so harshly all his days of quiet With turbulent and dangerous lunacy?

*Ros.* He does confess, he feels himself distracted;

But from what cause he will by no means *Guild.* Nor do we find him forward to be sounded;

But, with a crafty madness, keeps aloof, When we would bring him on to some confession of his true state.

*Queen.* Did he receive you well?

*Ros.* Most like a gentleman.

*Guild.* But with much forcing of his disposition.

*Ros.* Niggard of question; but, of our de- Most free in his reply.

*Queen.* Did you assay him To any pastime!

*Ros.* Madam, it so fell out, that certain We o'er-raught| on the way: of these we told And there did seem in him a kind of joy [him; To hear of it: They are about the court; And, as I think, they have already order This night to play before him.

*Pol.* 'Tis most true: And he beseech'd me to entreat your ma- To hear and see the matter.

*King.* With all my heart; and it doth much To hear him so inclined.

Good gentlemen, give him a further edge, And drive his purpose on to these delights.

*Ros.* We shall, my lord.

[*Ereunt ROSEN. and GUILDEN*

*King.* Sweet Gertrude, leave us too. For we have closely sent for Hamlet hither;

\* Destruction.

† Unnatural.

‡ Search his wounds.

§ Shrink or start.

Overtook.

That he, as 'twere by accident, may here  
Affront \* Ophelia :  
Her father, and myself (lawful espials †,)  
Will so bestow ourselves, that, seeing, unseem,  
We may of their encounter frankly ‡ judge ;  
And gather by him, as he is behav'd,  
If't be the affliction of his love, or no,  
That thus he suffers for.

*Queen.* I shall obey you :  
And, for your part, Ophelia, I do wish,  
That your good beauties be the happy cause  
Of Hamlet's wildness : so shall I hope, your  
virtues

Will bring him to his wonted way again,  
To both your honours.

*Oph.* Madam, I wish it may.  
[Exit Queen.]

*Pol.* Ophelia, walk you here :—Gracious,  
so please you,

We will bestow § ourselves :—Read on this  
book ; [To OPHELIA.]

That show of such an exercise may colour  
Your loneliness.—We are oft to blame in this,  
'Tis too much proved ||,—that, with devotion's  
And pious action, we do sugar o'er ¶ visage,  
The devil himself.

*King.* O, 'tis too true ! how smart  
A lash that speech doth give my conscience !  
The harlot's cheek, beautied with plastering  
art,

Is not more ugly to the thing that helps it,  
Than is my deed to my most painted word :  
O heavy burden ! [Aside.]

*Pol.* I hear him coming ; let's withdraw,  
my lord.

[Exit King and POLONIUS.]  
Enter HAMLET.

*Ham.* To be, or not to be, that is the ques-  
tion :—

Whether 'tis nobler in the mind, to suffer  
The slings and arrows of outrageous fortune ;  
Or to take arms against a sea of troubles,  
And, by opposing, end them ?—To die,—to  
sleep,—

No more ;—and, by a sleep, to say we end  
The heart-ach, and the thousand natural shocks  
That flesh is heir to,—'tis a consummation  
Devoutly to be wish'd. To die ;—to sleep ;—  
To sleep ! perchance to dream ;—ay, there's  
the rub ; [come,

For in that sleep of death what dreams may  
When we have shuffled off this mortal coil ¶,  
Must give us pause : There's the respect \*\*,  
That makes calamity of so long life :

For who would bear the whips and scorns of  
time, [tumely ††,

The oppressor's wrong, the proud man's con-  
The pangs of despised love, the law's delay,  
The insolence of office, and the spurns

That patient merit of the unworthy takes,  
When he himself might his quietus ‡‡ make  
With a bare bodkin §§, who would fardels |||

To grunt and sweat under a weary life ; [bear,

But that the dread of something after death,—  
The undiscover'd country, from whose bourn ¶¶  
No traveller returns,—puzzles the will ;  
And makes us rather bear those ills we have,  
Than fly to others that we know not of ?  
Thus conscience does make cowards of us all ;  
And thus the native hue of resolution  
Is sicklied o'er with the pale cast of thought ;  
And enterprises of great pith and moment,  
With this regard, their currents turn awry,  
And lose the name of action.—Soft you, now !  
The fair Ophelia : Nymph, in thy orisons \*\*\*,  
Be all my sins remember'd.

*Oph.* Good, my lord,  
How does your honour for this many a day ?

*Ham.* I humbly thank you ; well. [your's,  
*Oph.* My lord, I have remembrances of  
That I have longed long to re-deliver ;

I pray you, now receive them.  
*Ham.* No, not I ;

I never gave you aught.

*Oph.* My honour'd lord, you know right  
well, you did ; [composed

And, with them, words of so sweet breath  
As made the things more rich : their perfume  
lost,

Take these again ; for to the noble mind,  
Rich gifts wax poor, when givers prove un-  
There, my lord. [kind,

*Ham.* Ha, ha ! are you honest ?

*Oph.* My lord ?

*Ham.* Are you fair ?

*Oph.* What means your lordship ?

*Ham.* That if you be honest, and fair, you  
should admit no discourse to your beauty.

*Oph.* Could beauty, my lord, have better  
commerce than with honesty ?

*Ham.* Ay, truly ; for the power of beauty  
will sooner transform honesty from what it is  
to a bawd, than the force of honesty can  
translate beauty into his likeness ; this was  
some time a paradox, but now the time gives  
it proof. I did love you once.

*Oph.* Indeed, my lord, you made me be-  
lieve so.

*Ham.* You should not have believed me :  
for virtue cannot so inoculate our old stock,  
but we shall relish of it : I loved you not.

*Oph.* I was the more deceived.

*Ham.* Get thee to a nunnery ; Why wouldst  
thou be a breeder of sinners ? I am myself in-  
different honest ; but yet I could accuse me of  
such things, that it were better, my mother  
had not borne me : I am very proud, revenge-  
ful, ambitious ; with more offences at my  
beck †††, than I have thoughts to put them in,  
imagination to give them shape, or time to act  
them in : What should such fellows as I do  
crawling between earth and heaven ! We are  
arrant knaves, all ; believe none of us : Go  
thy ways to a nunnery. Where's your father ?

*Oph.* At home, my lord.

*Ham.* Let the doors be shut upon him ;

\* Meet. † Spies. ‡ Freely. § Place.

¶ Stir, bustle.

\*\* Consideration.

|| Too frequent.

‡ Acquittance.

§§ The ancient term for a small dagger.

†† Rudeness.

¶¶ Boundary, limits.

\*\*\* Prayers

||| Pack, burden.

††† Call.



that he may play the fool no where but in's own house. Farewell.

*Oph.* O, help him, you sweet heavens!

*Ham.* If thou dost marry, I'll give thee this plague for thy dowry; Be thou as chaste as ice, as pure as snow, thou shalt not escape calumny. Get thee to a nunnery; Farewell: Or, if thou wilt needs marry, marry a fool; for wise men know well enough, what monsters you make of them. To a nunnery, go; and quickly too. Farewell.

*Oph.* Heavenly powers, restore him!

*Ham.* I have heard of your paintings too, well enough; God hath given you one face, and you make yourselves another: you jig, you amble, and you lisp, and nick-name God's creatures, and make your wantonness your ignorance: Go to; I'll no more of't; it hath made me mad. I say, we will have no more marriages: those that are married already, all but one shall live; the rest shall keep as they are. To a nunnery go. [Exit HAMLET.]

*Oph.* O, what a noble mind is here o'erthrown! [sword:]  
The courtier's, soldier's, scholar's, eye, tongue,  
The expectancy and rose of the fair state,  
The glass of fashion, and the mould\* of form,  
The observed of all observers! quite, quite down!

And I, of ladies most deject and wretched,  
That suck'd the honey of his music vows,  
Now see that noble and most sovereign reason,  
Like sweet bells jangled, out of tune and harsh;  
That unmatch'd form and feature of blown  
Blasted with ecstasy†: O, woe is me! [youth,  
To have seen what I have seen, see what I see!

*Re-enter King and POLONIUS.*

*King.* Love! his affections do not that way tend; [little,  
Nor what he spake, though it lack'd form a  
Was not like madness. There's something in  
his soul,

O'er which his melancholy sits on brood;  
And, I do doubt, the hatch, and the disclose,  
Will be some danger: Which for to prevent,  
I have, in quick determination, [land,  
Thus set it down; he shall with speed to Eng-  
For the demand of our neglected tribute:  
Haply, the seas, and countries different,  
With variable obj-cts, shall expel  
This something-settled matter in his heart;  
Whereon his brains still beating, puts him thus  
From fashion of himself. What think you  
on't?

*Pol.* It shall do well: But yet I do believe,  
The origin and commencement of his grief  
Sprung from neglected love.—How now,  
Ophelia,

You need not tell us what lord Hamlet said;  
We heard it all.—My lord, do as you please;  
But, if you hold it fit, after the play,  
Let his queen mother all alone entreat him

To show his grief; let her be round† with him;  
And I'll be placed, so please you, in the ear  
Of all their conference: If she find him not,  
To England send him; or confine him, where  
Your wisdom best shall think.

*King.* It shall be so:  
Madness in great ones must not unwatch'd go.  
[Exit.]

## SCENE II. A Hall in the same.

Enter HAMLET, and certain Players.

*Ham.* Speak the speech, I pray you, as I pronounced it to you, trippingly on the tongue; but if you mouth it, as many of our players do, I had as lief the town-crier spoke my lines. Nor do not saw the air too much with your hand, thus; but use all gently: for in the very torrent, tempest, and (as I may say) whirlwind of your passion, you must acquire and beget a temperance, that may give it smoothness. O, it offends me to the soul, to hear a robustious periwig-pated fellow tear a passion to tatters, to very rags, to split the ears of the groundlings; who, for the most part, are capable of nothing but inexplicable dumb shows, and noise: I would have such a fellow whipped for o'er-doing Termagant; it out herods Herod‡: Pray you, avoid it.

*1 Player.* I warrant your honour.

*Ham.* Be not too tame neither, but let your own discretion be your tutor: suit the action to the word, the word to the action; with this special observance, that you o'er-step not the modesty of nature: for any thing so overdone is from the purpose of playing, whose end, both at the first, and now, was, and is, to hold, as 'twere, the mirror up to nature; to show virtue her own feature, scorn her own image, and the very age and body of the time, his form and pressure¶. Now this, overdone, or come tardy off, though it make the unskilful laugh, cannot but make the judicious grieve; the censure of which one, must, in your allowance\*\*, o'er-weigh a whole theatre of others. O, there be players, that I have seen play,—and heard others praise, and that highly,—not to speak it profanely, that, neither having the accent of christians, nor the gait of christian, pagan, nor man, have so strutted, and bel-  
lowed, that I have thought some of nature's journeymen had made men, and not made them well, they imitated humanity so abominably. †

*1 Play.* I hope, we have reformed that indifferently with us.

*Ham.* O, reform it altogether. And let those, that play your clowns, speak no more than is set down for them: for there be of them, that will themselves laugh, to set on some quantity of barren spectators to laugh too; though, in the mean time, some necessary question† of the play be then to be considered: that's villainous; and shows a most

\* The model by whom all endeavoured to form themselves.

† Alienation of mind.

‡ Reprimand him with freedom.

§ The meaner people then seem to have sat in the pit.

¶ Herod's character was always violent.

¶ Impression, resemblance.

\*\* Approbation.

†† Conversation, discourse.

pitiful ambition in the fool that uses it. Go, make you ready. [Exeunt Players.]

Enter POLONIUS, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDENSTERN.

How now, my lord? will the king hear this piece of work?

Pol. And the queen too, and that presently.

Ham. Bid the players make haste.—

[Exit POLONIUS.]

Will you two help to hasten them?

Both. Ay, my lord.

[Exeunt ROSEN. and GUILDEN.]

Ham. What, ho; Horatio!

Enter HORATIO.

Hor. Here, sweet lord, at your service.

Ham. Horatio, thou art e'en as just a man as e'er my conversation coped withal.

Hor. O, my dear lord,—

Ham. Nay, do not think I flatter: For what advancement may I hope from thee, That no revenue hast, but thy good spirits, To feed, and clothe thee? Why should the poor be flatter'd?

No, let the candied tongue lick absurd pomp; And crook the pregnant hinges of the knee, Where thrift may follow fawning. Dost thou hear?

Since my dear soul was mistress of her choice, And could of men distinguish her election, She hath seal'd thee for herself: for thou hast been

As one, in suffering all, that suffers nothing; A man, that fortune's buffets and rewards Has ta'en with equal thanks: and bless'd are those,

Whose blood and judgment are so well co- That they are not a pipe for fortune's finger To sound what stop she please: Give me that man

That is not passion's slave, and I will wear him In my heart's core, ay, in my heart of heart, As I do thee.—Something too much of this.— There is a play to-night before the king;

One scene of it comes near the circumstance, Which I have told thee of my father's death. I prythee, when thou seest that act afoot, Even with the very comment of thy soul Observe my uncle: if his occulted guilt Do not itself unkenel in one speech, It is a damned ghost that we have seen; And my imaginations are as foul As Vulcan's stithy: Give him heedful note: For I mine eyes will rivet to his face; And, after, we will both our judgments join In censure of his seeming.

Hor. Well, my lord: If he steal aught, the whilst this play is playing, And 'scape detecting, I will pay the theft.

Ham. They are coming to the play; I must get you a place. [be idle:]

Danish March. A Flourish. Enter King, Queen, POLONIUS, OPHELIA, ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDENSTERN, and Others.

King. How fares our cousin Hamlet?

Ham. Excellent, i'faith; of the camelion's

dish: I eat the air, promise-crammed: You cannot feed capons so.

King. I have nothing with this answer, Hamlet; these words are not mine.

Ham. No, nor mine now. My lord,—you played once in the University, you say?

[To POLONIUS.]

Pol. That did I, my lord; and was accounted a good actor.

Ham. And what did you enact?

Pol. I did enact Julius Cæsar: I was killed i'the Capitol; Brutus killed me.

Ham. It was a brute part of him, to kill so capital a calf there.—Be the players ready?

Ros. Ay, my lord; they stay upon your patience.

Queen. Come hither, my dear Hamlet, sit by me.

Ham. No, good mother, here's metal more attractive.

Pol. O ho! do you mark that?

[To the King.]

Ham. Lady, shall I lie in your lap?

[Lying down at OPHELIA's feet.]

Oph. No, my lord.

Ham. I mean my head upon your lap?

Oph. Ay, my lord.

Ham. Do you think, I meant country matters?

Oph. I think nothing, my lord.

Ham. That's a fair thought to lie between maids' legs.

Oph. What is, my lord?

Ham. Nothing.

Oph. You are merry, my lord.

Ham. Who, I?

Oph. Ay, my lord.

Ham. O! your only jig-maker. What should a man do, but be merry; for, look you, how cheerfully my mother looks, and my father died within these two hours.

Oph. Nay, 'tis twice two months, my lord.

Ham. So long? Nay, then let the devil wear black, for I'll have a suit of sables. O heavens! die two months ago, and not forgotten yet? Then there's hope, a great man's memory may outlive his life half a year: But, by'r-lady, he must build churches then: or else shall he suffer not thinking on, with the hobby-horse; whose epitaph is, For, O, for, O, the hobby-horse is forgot.

Trumpets sound. The dumb show follows.

Enter a King and a Queen, very lovingly, the Queen embracing him, and he her. She kneels, and makes show of protestation unto him. He takes her up, and declines his head upon her neck: lyes him down upon a bank of flowers; she, seeing him asleep, leaves him. Aon comes in a fellow, takes off his crown, kisses it, and pours poison in the King's ears, and exit. The Queen returns; finds the King dead, and makes passionate action. The poisoner, with some two or three Mutes comes in again, seeming to lament with

\* Quick, ready.

† Secret.

‡ Shop, stithy is a smith's shop.

§ Opinion.

¶ Wal..

¶ The richest dress.

*her. The dead body is carried away. The poisoner woos the Queen with gifts; she seems loath and unwilling awhile, but, in the end, accepts his love.* [Exeunt.]

*Oph.* What means this, my lord?

*Ham.* Marry, this is miching mallecho\*: it means mischief.

*Oph.* Belike, this show imports the argument of the play.

*Enter Prologue.*

*Ham.* We shall know by this fellow: the players cannot keep counsel; they'll tell all.

*Oph.* Will he tell us what this show meant?

*Ham.* Ay, or any show that you'll show him: Be not you ashamed to show, he'll not shame to tell you what it means.

*Oph.* You are naught, you are naught; I'll mark the play.

*Pro.* *For us, and for our tragedy,  
Here stooping to your clemency,  
We beg your hearing patiently.*

*Ham.* Is this a prologue, or the posy of a ring?

*Oph.* 'Tis brief†, my lord.

*Ham.* As woman's love.

*Enter a King and a Queen.*

*P. King.* Fall thirty times hath Phæbus' cart‡ gone round [ground;

Neptune's salted wash, and Tellus'§ orbid And thirty dozen moons, with borrow'd sheen||, [been;

About the world have times twelve thirties Since love our hearts, and Hymen did our hands,

Unite commutual in most sacred bands.

*P. Queen.* So many journeys may the sun and moon

Make us again count o'er, ere love be done!

But, woe is me, you are so sick of late, So far from cheer, and from your former state, That I distrust you. Yet, though I distrust,

Discomfort you, my lord, it nothing must: For women fear too much, even as they love;

And women's fear and love hold quantity; In neither ought, or in extremity. [know;

Now, what my love, is proof hath made you And as my love is sized¶, my fear is so.

Where love is great, the littlest doubts are fear; [there.  
Where little fears grow great, great love grows

*P. King.* Faith, I must leave thee, love, and shortly too; [do:

My operant\*\* powers their functions leave to And thou shalt live in this fair world behind,

Honour'd, beloved; and, haply, one as kind, For husband shalt thou—

*P. Queen.* O, confound the rest! Such love must needs be treason in my breast:

In second husband let me be accurst! None wed the second, but who kill'd the first.

*Ham.* That's wormwood. *P. Queen.* The instances†† that second marriage move.

Are base respects of thrift, but none of love;

A second time I kill my husband dead, When second husband kisses me in bed.

*P. King.* I do believe, you think what now you speak;

But, what we do determine, oft we break.

Purpose is but the slave to memory; Of violent birth, but poor validity: [tree;

Which now, like fruit unripe, sticks on the But fall, unshaken, when they mellow be.

Most necessary 'tis, that we forget To pay ourselves what to ourselves is debt:

What to ourselves in passion we propose, The passion ending, doth the purpose lose.

The violence of either grief or joy [stroy: Their own enactures‡‡ with themselves de.

Where joy most revels, grief doth most lament;

Grief joys, joy grieves, on slender accident. This world is not for aye§§; nor 'tis not strange

That even our loves should with our fortunes change;

For 'tis a question left us yet to prove, Whether love lead fortune, or else fortune

love. [flies;

The great man down, you mark his favourite The poor advanced makes friends of enemies.

And hitherto doth love on fortune tend: For who not needs, shall never lack a

friend;

And who in want a hollow friend doth try Directly seasons him his enemy.

But, orderly to end where I begun,— Our wills, and fates, do so contrary run,

That our devices still are overthrown; [own: Our thoughts are our's, their ends none of our

So think thou wilt no second husband wed; But die thy thoughts, when thy first lord is

dead. [heaven light!

*P. Queen.* Nor earth to give me food, nor Sport and repose look from me, day and

night!

To desperation turn my trust and hope! An anchor's||| cheer in prison be my scope!

Each opposite, that blanks the face of joy, Meet what I would have well, and it destroy!

Both here, and hence, pursue me lasting strife, If, once a widow, ever I be wife!

*Ham.* If she should break it now,— [To Ophelia.

*P. King.* 'Tis deeply sworn. Sweet, leave me here a while;

My spirits grow dull, and fain I would beguile The tedious day with sleep. [Sleeps.

*P. Queen.* Sleep rock thy brain; And never come mischance between us twain! [Exit.

*Ham.* Madam, how like you this play?

*Queen.* The lady doth protest too much, methinks.

*Ham.* O, but she'll keep her word.

*King.* Have you heard the argument? Is there no offence in't?

*Ham.* No, no, they do but jest, poison in jest; no offence i'th' world.

\* Secret wickedness. † Short. ‡ Car, chariot. § The earth. || Shining, lustre.  
¶ Magnitude, proportion. \*\* Active. †† Motives. ‡‡ Determinations. §§ Ever.  
||| Anchoret.



*King.* What do you call the play?

*Ham.* The mouse-trap\*. Marry, how! Tropically. This play is the image of a murder done in Vienna: Gonzago is the duke's name; his wife, Baptista: you shall see anon; 'tis a knavish piece of work: But what of that? your majesty, and we that have free souls, it touches us not: Let the galled jade wince†, our withers are unwrung.—

*Enter LUCIANUS.*

This is one Lucianus, nephew to the king.

*Oph.* You are as good as a chorus, my lord.

*Ham.* I could interpret between you and your love, if I could see the puppets dallying.

*Oph.* You are keen, my lord, you are keen.

*Ham.* It would cost you a groaning, to take off my edge.

*Oph.* Still better, and worse.

*Ham.* So you mistake your husbands.—Begin, murderer;—leave thy damnable faces, and begin. Come;—

—The croaking raven

Doth bellow for revenge.

*Luc.* Thoughts black, hands apt, drugs fit, and time agreeing;

Confederate season, else no creature seeing;  
Thou mixture rank, of midnight weeds collected,

With Hecate's ban† thrice blasted, thrice infected,  
Thy natural magic and dire property,  
On wholesome life usurp immediately.

[*Pours the Poison into the Sleeper's Ears.*]

*Ham.* He poisons him i' the garden for his estate. His name's Gonzago; the story is extant, and written in very choice Italian: You shall see anon, how the murderer gets the love of Gonzago's wife.

*Oph.* The king rises.

*Ham.* What! frighted with false fire!

*Queen.* How fares my lord?

*Pol.* Give o'er the play.

*King.* Give me some light:—away!

*Pol.* Lights, lights, lights!

[*Exeunt all but HAMLET and HORATIO.*]

*Ham.* Why, let the stricken deer go weep,  
The hart ungalled play:

For some must watch, while some must sleep,  
Thus runs the world away.— [sleep,

Would not this, sir, and a forest of feathers §, (if the rest of my fortunes turn Turk || with me,) with two Provincial roses on my razed ¶ shoes, get me a fellowship in a cry \*\* of players, sir?

*Hor.* Half a share.

*Ham.* A whole one, I.

For thou dost know, O Damen dear,

This realm dismantled was

Of Jove himself; and now reigns here

A very, very—peacock.

*Hor.* You might have rhymed.

*Ham.* O good Horatio, I'll take the ghost's word for a thousand pound. Didst perceive?

*Hor.* Very well, my lord.

*Ham.* Upon the talk of the poisoning,—

*Hor.* I did very well note him.

*Ham.* Ah, ha!—Come, some music; come, the recorders †.—

For if the king like not the comedy,  
Why then, belike,—he likes it not, perdy ‡.—

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*  
Come, some music.

*Guil.* Good, my lord, vouchsafe me a word with you.

*Ham.* Sir, a whole history.

*Guil.* The king, sir,—

*Ham.* Ay, sir, what of him?

*Guil.* Is, in his retirement, marvellous discontented.

*Ham.* With drink, sir?

*Guil.* No, my lord, with choler.

*Ham.* Your wisdom should show itself more richer, to signify this to the doctor; for, for me to put him to his purgation, would, perhaps, plunge him into more choler.

*Guil.* Good my lord, put your discourse into some frame, and start not so wildly from my affair.

*Ham.* I am tame, sir:—pronounce.

*Guil.* The queen, your mother, in most great affliction of spirit, hath sent me to you.

*Ham.* You are welcome.

*Guil.* Nay, good my lord, this courtesy is not of the right breed. If it shall please you to make me a wholesome answer, I will do your mother's commandment; if not, your pardon, and my return, shall be the end of my business.

*Ham.* Sir, I cannot.

*Guil.* What, my lord?

*Ham.* Make you a wholesome answer; my wit's diseased: But, sir, such answer as I can make, you shall command; or, rather, as you say, my mother: therefore no more, but to the matter: My mother, you say,——

*Ros.* Then thus she says; Your behaviour hath struck her into amazement and admiration.

*Ham.* O wonderful son, that can so astonish a mother!—But is there no sequel at the heels of this mother's admiration? impart.

*Ros.* She desires to speak with you in her closet, ere you go to bed.

*Ham.* We shall obey, were she ten times our mother. Have you any further trade ||| with us?

*Ros.* My lord, you once did love me.

*Ham.* And do still, by these pickers and stealers ¶¶.

*Ros.* Good my lord, what is your cause of distemper? you do, surely, but bar the door upon your own liberty, if you deny your griefs to your friend.

*Ham.* Sir, I lack advancement.

*Ros.* How can that be, when you have the voice of the king himself for your succession in Denmark?

• ————— The thing

In which he'll catch the conscience of the king.

This is a proverbial saying.

¶ Slashed. \*\* Pack, company.

† Curse.

‡ A kind of flute.

¶ Hands.

§ For his head.

¶ Par Dieu.

¶ R

| Change conditions.

||| Business

*Ham.* Ay, sir, but, *While the grass grows*,  
—the proverb is something musty.

*Enter the Players, with Recorders.*

O, the recorders:—let me see one.—To withdraw with you:—Why do you go about to recover the wind of me, as if you would drive me into a toil?

*Guil.* O my lord, if my duty be too bold, my love is too uninnerly.

*Ham.* I do not well understand that. Will you play upon this pipe?

*Guil.* My lord, I cannot.

*Ham.* I pray you.

*Guil.* Believe me, I cannot.

*Ham.* I do beseech you.

*Guil.* I know no touch of it, my lord.

*Ham.* 'Tis as easy as lying: govern these ventages\*, with your fingers and thumb, give it breath with your mouth, and it will discourse most eloquent music. Look you, these are the stops

*Guil.* But these cannot I command to any utterance of harmony; I have not the skill.

*Ham.* Why, look you now, how unworthy a thing you make of me? You would play upon me; you would seem to know my stops; you would pluck out the heart of my mystery; you would sound me from my lowest note to the top of my compass: and there is much music, excellent voice, in this little organ; yet cannot you make it speak. 'Sblood, do you think, I am easier to be played on than a pipe? Call me what instrument you will, though you can fret me, you cannot play upon me.

*Enter POLONIUS.*

God bless you, sir!

*Pol.* My lord, the queen would speak with you and presently.

*Ham.* Do you see yonder cloud, that's almost in shape of a camel?

*Pol.* By the mass, and 'tis like a camel indeed.

*Ham.* Methinks, it is like a weasel.

*Pol.* It is backed like a weasel.

*Ham.* Or, like a whale?

*Pol.* Very like a whale.

*Ham.* Then will I come to my mother by and by.—They fool me to the top of my bent†.—I will come by and by.

*Pol.* I will say so. [*Exit POLONIUS.*]

*Ham.* By and by is easily said.—Leave me, friends. [*Exit Ros. Guil. Hor., &c.*]

'Tis now the very witching time of night  
When churchyards yawn, and hell itself  
breathes out [hot blood,

Contagion to this world: Now could I drink  
And do such business as the bitter day

Would quake to look on. Soft; now to my  
mother.—

O, heart, lose not thy nature; let not ever

The soul of Nero enter this firm bosom:

Let me be cruel, not unnatural:

I will speak daggers to her, but use none;

My tongue and soul in this be hypocrites:

How in my words soever she be shent‡,  
To give them seals§ never, my soul, consent!  
[*Exit.*]

### SCENE III. A Room in the same.

*Enter King, ROSENCRANTZ, and GUILDEN-  
STERN.*

*King.* I like him not; nor stands it safe  
with us, [you;

To let his madness range. Therefore, prepare  
I your commission will forthwith despatch,  
And he to England shall along with you;  
The terms of our estate may not endure  
Hazard so near us, as doth hourly grow  
Out of his luness||.

*Guil.* We will ourselves provide:  
Most holy and religious fear it is,  
To keep those many many bodies safe,  
That live, and feed, upon your majesty.

*Ros.* The single and peculiar life is bound,  
With all the stren th and armour of the mind,  
To keep itself from 'noyance; but much more  
That spirit, upon whose weal depend and rest  
The lives of many. The cease of majesty  
Dies not alone; but, like a gulf, doth draw  
What's near it, with it; it is a massy wheel,  
Fix'd on the summit of the highest mount,  
To whose huge spokes ten thousand lesser  
things [falls,

Are mortised and adjoin'd; which, when it  
Each small annexment, petty consequence,  
Attends the boist'rous ruin. Never alone  
Did the king sigh, but with a general groan.

*King.* Arm you, I pray you, to this speedy  
voyage;

For we will fetters put upon this fear,  
Which now goes too free-footed.

*Ros. Guil.* We will haste us.  
[*Exit Ros. ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDEN-  
STERN.*]

*Enter POLONIUS.*

*Pol.* My lord, he's going to his mother's  
Behind the arras¶ I'll convey myself, [closet:  
To hear the process; I'll warrant, she'll tax  
him home:

And, as you said, and wisely was it said,  
'Tis meet, that some more audience, than a  
mother,

Since nature makes them partial, should o'er-  
hear

The speech of vantage. Fare you well, my  
I'll call upon you ere you go to bed, [liege,  
And tell you what I know.

*King.* Thanks, dear my lord  
[*Exit POLONIUS.*]

O, my offence is rank, it smells to heaven;  
It hath the primal eldest curse upon't,  
A brother's murder!—Pray can I not,  
Though inclination be as sharp as will;  
My stronger guilt defeats my strong intent;  
And, like a man to double business bound,  
I stand in pause where I shall first begin,  
And both neglect. What if this cursed hand  
Were thicker than itself with brother's blood  
Is there not rain enough in the sweet heavens

\* Holes † Utmost stretch. ‡ Reproved. § Authority to put them in execution  
¶ Lunacies. ¶ Tapestry

To wash it white as snow? Whereto serves mercy,

But to confront the visage of offence?  
And what's in prayer, but this two-fold force,  
To be forestalled, ere we come to fall,  
Or pardon'd, being down? Then I'll look up;  
My fault is past. But, O, what form of prayer  
Can serve my turn? Forgive me my foul murder!

That cannot be; since I am still possess'd  
Of those effects for which I did the murder,  
My crown, mine own ambition, and my queen,  
May one be pardon'd, and retain the offence?  
In the corrupted currents of this world,  
Offence's gilded hand may shove by justice;  
And oft 'tis seen, the wicked prize itself  
Buys out the law: But 'tis not so above:  
There is no shuffling, there the action lies  
In his true nature; and we ourselves compell'd  
Even to the teeth and forehead of our faults,  
To give in evidence. What then? what rents?  
Try what repentance can: What can it not?  
Yet what can it, when one cannot repent?  
O wretched state! O bosom, black as death!  
O limed soul; that struggling to be free,  
Art more engaged! Help, angels, make assay!  
Bow, stubborn knees! and heart, with strings  
Be soft as sinews of the new-born babe;  
All may be well! [*Retires and Kneels.*]

*Enter HAMLET*

*Ham.* Now might I do it, pat, now he is  
praying;  
And now I'll do't; and so he goes to heaven:  
And so am I revenged? That would be  
scann'd†:  
A villain kills my father; and, for that,  
I, his sole son, do this same villain send  
To heaven.  
Why, this is hire and salary, not revenge.  
He took my father grossly, full of bread;  
With all his crimes broad blown, as flush as  
May; heaven?  
And how his audit stands who knows, save  
But, in our circumstance and course of thought,  
'Tis heavy with him: And am I then revenged,  
To take him in the purging of his soul,  
When he is fit and season'd for his passage?  
No. [*Heut*]:  
Up, sword, and know thou a more horrid  
When he is drunk, asleep, or in his rage;  
Or in the incestuous pleasures of his bed;  
At gaming, swearing; or about some act  
That has no relish of salvation in't:  
Then trip him, that his heels may kick at  
heaven:  
And that his soul may be as damn'd  
As hell, whereto it goes. My mother stays:  
This physic but prolongs thy sickly days.

[*Exit.*]

*The King rises and advances.*

*King.* My words fly up, my thoughts remain  
below:

Words, without thoughts, never to heaven go.  
[*Exit.*]

# SCENE IV.

*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter QUEEN and POLONIUS.*

*Pol.* He will come straight. Look, you lay  
home to him: [bear with;  
Tell him, his pranks have been too broad to  
And that your grace hath screen'd and stood  
between

Much heat and him. I'll silence me e'en here.  
Pray you, be round with him

*Queen* I'll warrant you;

Fear me not:—withdraw, I hear him coming.  
[*POLONIUS hides himself.*]

*Enter HAMLET.*

*Ham.* Now, mother; what's the matter?

*Queen.* Hamlet, thou hast thy father much  
offended.

*Ham.* Mother, you have my father much  
offended. [idle tongue.

*Queen.* Come, come, you answer with an  
*Ham.* Go, go, you question with a wicked

*Queen.* Why, how now, Hamlet? [tongue.

*Ham.* What's the matter now?

*Queen.* Have you forgot me?

*Ham.* No, by the rood†, not so:  
You are the queen, your husband's brother's  
wife; [mother.

And,—would it were not so!—you are my  
*Queen.* Nay, then I'll set those to you that  
can speak.

*Ham.* Come, come, and sit you down; you  
shall not budge;

You go not, till I set you up a glass  
Where you may see the inmost part of you.

*Queen.* What wilt thou do? thou wilt not  
Help, help, ho! [murder me?

*Pol.* [*Behind.*] What, ho! help!

*Ham.* How now? a rat!  
[*Draws.*

Dead, for a ducat, dead.

[*HAMLET makes a pass through the Arras.*]

*Pol.* [*Behind.*] O, I am slain.  
[*Falls, and dies.*

*Queen.* O, me! what hast thou done?

*Ham.* Nay, I know not:

Is it the king?

[*Lifts up the Arras, and draws forth  
POLONIUS.*]

*Queen.* O, what a rash and bloody deed is  
this! [good mother,

*Ham.* A bloody deed!—almost as bad,  
As kill a king, and marry with his brother.

*Queen.* As kill a king!

*Ham.* Ay, lady, 'twas my word.—  
Thou wretched, rash, intruding fool, farewell

[*To POLONIUS*]

I took thee for thy better; take thy fortune:  
Thou find'st to be too busy is some danger.—

Leave wringing of your hands: Peace; sit  
you down,

And let me wring your heart: for so I shall,  
If it be made of penetrable stuff;

If damned custom have not brazed it so,  
That it be proof and bulwark against sense.

\* Caught as with bird-lime.

† Should be considered.

‡ Only.

§ Reward.

|| Seize him at a more horrid time.

¶ Cross.



*Queen.* What have I done, that thou dar'st wag thy tongue In noise so rude against me?

*Ham.* Such an act, That blurs the grace and blush of modesty; Calls virtue hypocrite; takes off the rose From the fair forehead of an innocent love, And sets a blister there; makes marriage vows As false as dicers' oaths: O, such a deed As from the body of contraction \* plucks The very soul; and sweet religion makes A rhapsody of words: Heaven's face doth glow;

Yea, this solidity and compound mass, With tristful † visage, as against the doom, Is thought-sick at the act.

*Queen.* Ah me! what act! That roars so loud, and thunders in the index? ‡

*Ham.* Look here, upon this picture, and on this;

The counterfeit presentment of two brothers. See what a grace was seated on this brow: Hyperion's curls §; the front of Jove himself: An eye like Mars, to threaten and command; A station || like the herald Mercury, New-lighted on a heaven-kissing hill; A combination, and a form, indeed, Where every god did seem to set his seal, To give the world assurance of a man: This was your husband.—Look you now, what follows:

Here is your husband, like a mildew'd ear, Blasting his wholesome brother. Have you eyes?

Could you on this fair mountain leave to feed, And batten ¶ on this moor? Ha! have you eyes?

You cannot call it love; for, at your age, The hey-day in the blood is tame; it's humble, And waits upon the judgment; And what judgment

Would step from this to this? Sense \*\*, sure, you have, [that sense

Else could you not have motion: But, sure, Is apoplex'd: for madness would not err; Nor sense to ecstasy †† was ne'er so thrall'd But it reserved some quantity of choice To serve in such a difference. What devil was't,

That thus hath cozen'd you at hoodman-blind †††? Eyes without feeling, feeling without sight, Ears without hands or eyes, smelling sans §§ all, Or but a sickly part of one true sense Could not so mope |||.

O shame! where is thy blush? Rebellious hell, If thou canst mutine in a matron's bones, To flaming youth let virtue be as wax, And melt in her own fire: proclaim no shame When the compulsive ardour gives the charge; Since frost itself as actively doth burn, And reason panders will.

*Queen.* O, Hamlet! speak no more: Thou turn'st mine eyes into my very soul: And there I see such black and grain'd spots, As will not leave their tinct ¶¶.

*Ham.* Nay, but to live In the rank sweat of an enseamed \*\*\* bed Stew'd in corruption; honeying, and making Over the nasty sty; — [love

*Queen.* O, speak to me no more; These words like daggers enter in mine ears: No more, sweet Hamlet.

*Ham.* A murderer, and a villain: A slave, that is not twentieth part the title Of your precedent ††† lord:—a vice of kings: A cutpurse of the empire and the rule; That from a shelf the precious diadem stole, And put it in his pocket!

*Queen.* No more.

*Enter Ghost.*

*Ham.* A king Of shreds and patches:—

Save me, and hover o'er me with your wings, You heavenly guards!—What would your

*Queen.* Alas! he's mad. [gracious figure?

*Ham.* Do you not come your tardy son to chide,

That, lapsed in time and passion, lets go by The important acting of your dread command? O, say!

*Ghost.* Do not forget: This visitation Is but to whet thy almost blunted purpose. But, look! amazement on thy mother sits: O, step between her and her fighting soul; Conceit ††† in weakest bodies strongest works; Speak to her, Hamlet.

*Ham.* How is it with you, lady!

*Queen.* Alas! how is't with you? That you do bend your eye on vacancy, And with the incorporal air do hold discourse? Forth at your eyes your spirits wildly peep; And, as the sleeping soldiers in the alarm, Your bedded hair, like life in excrements |||, Starts up, and stands on end. O, gent e son, Upon the heat and flame of thy distemper Sprinkle cool patience. Whereon do you look?

*Ham.* On him! on him!—Look you, how pale he glares! [stones, His form and cause conjoin'd, preaching to Would make them capable ¶¶¶.—Do not look upon me;

Lest, with this piteous action, you convert My stern effects \*\*\*\*: then what I have to do Will want true colour; tears, perchance †††, for

*Queen.* To whom do you speak this? [blood.

*Ham.* Do you see nothing there?

*Queen.* Nothing at all; yet all, that is, I see.

*Ham.* Nor did you nothing hear?

*Queen.* No, nothing, but ourselves.

*Ham.* Why, look you there! look, how it steals away!

My father, in his habit as he lived!

\* Marriage contract. † Sorrowful. ‡ Index of contents prefixed to a book.

§ Apollo's. || The act of standing. ¶ To grow fat. \*\* Sensation.

† Frenzy. ‡ Blindman's-buff. §§ Without. ||| Be so stupid. ¶¶ Colour.

\*\*\* Greasy. †† Mimic. ††† Imagination.

|||| The hair of animals is excrementitious; that is, without life or sensation.

¶¶¶ Intelligent. \*\*\*\* Actions. ††† Perhaps.

Look, where he goes, even now, out at the portal!  
*[Exit Ghost.]*

*Queen.* This is the very coinage of your  
 This bodiless creation ecstasy\* *[brain:]*  
 Is very cunning in.

*Ham.* Ecstasy!  
 My pulse, as yours, doth temperately keep  
 time, *[ness,*  
 And makes as healthful music: It is not mad-  
 That I have utter'd: bring me to the test,  
 And I the matter will re-word; which madness  
 Would gambol from. Mother, for love of grace,  
 Lay not that flattering unction to your soul,  
 That not your trespass, but my madness speaks:  
 It will but skin and film the nicerous place;  
 Whiles rank corruption, mining all within,  
 Infects unseen. Confess yourself to heaven;  
 Repent what's past; avoid what is to come;  
 And do not spread the compost on the weeds,  
 To make them ranker. Forgive me this my  
 For in the fatness of these porsy times, *[virtue:]*  
 Virtue itself of vice must pardon beg;  
 Yea, curb and woo, for leave to do him good.

*Queen.* O Hamlet! thou hast cleft my heart  
 in twain.

*Ham.* O, throw away the worser part of it  
 And live the purer with the other half.  
 Good night; but go not to my uncle's bed;  
 Assume a virtue, if you have it not.  
 That monstrous custom, who all sense doth eat  
 Of habit's devil, is angel yet in this:  
 That to the use of actions fair and good  
 He likewise gives a frock, or livery,  
 That aptly is put on: Refrain to-night;  
 And that shall lend a kind of easiness  
 To the next abstinence: the next more easy:  
 For use almost can change the stamp of nature,  
 And either curb the devil, or throw him out  
 With wondrous potency. Once more, good  
 night!

And when you are desirous to be bless'd,  
 I'll blessing beg of you. For this same lord,  
*[Pointing to POLONIUS.]*  
 I do repent: But heaven hath pleased it so,—  
 To punish me with this, and this with me,  
 That I must be their scourge and minister.  
 I will bestow him, and will answer well  
 The death I gave him. So, again, good night!—  
 I must be cruel, only to be kind:

Thus bad begins, and worse remains behind.—  
 But one word more, good lady.

*Queen.* What shall I do?  
*Ham.* Not this, by no means, that I bid  
 you do:

Let the bloated king tempt you again to bed;  
 Pinch wanton on your cheek; call you his  
 mouse;—  
 And let him, for a pair of reechy || kisses,  
 Or paddling in your neck with his damn'd  
 fingers,

Make you to ravel all this matter out,  
 That I essentially am not in madness, *[know:]*  
 But mad in craft. 'Twere good, you let him  
 For who, that's but a queen, fair, sober, wise,  
 Would from a paddock\*, from a bat, a gib\*\*.  
 Such dear concernings hide? who would do so?  
 No, in despite of sense, and secrecy,  
 Unpeg the basket on the horse's top,  
 Let the birds fly; and, like the famous ape,  
 To try conclusions††, in the basket creep,  
 And break your own neck down. *[breath,*

*Queen.* Be thou assured, if words be made of  
 And breath of life, I have no life to breathe  
 What thou hast said to me.

*Ham.* I must to England; you know that?  
*Queen.* Alack,

I had forgot; 'tis so concluded on.

*Ham.* There's letters seal'd: and my two  
 school-fellows,—

Whom I will trust, as I will adders fang'd‡‡,—  
 They bear the mandate; they must sweep my  
 way,

And marshal me to knavery: Let it work;  
 For 'tis the sport, to have the engineer *[hard,*  
 Hoist with his own petar§§: and it shall go  
 But I will delve one yard below their mines,  
 And blow them at the moon: O, 'tis most  
 sweet,

When in one line two crafts directly meet.—  
 This man shall set me packing.

I'll lug the guts into the neighbour room:—  
 Mother, good night.—Indeed, this counsellor  
 Is now most still, most secret, and most grave,  
 Who was in life a foolish prating knave.  
 Come, sir, to draw toward an end with you:—  
 Good night, mother.

*[Exeunt severally HAMLET dragging  
 in POLONIUS.]*

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I. *The same.*

*Enter King, Queen, ROSENCRANTZ, and  
 GUILDENSTERN.*

*King.* There's matter in these sighs; these  
 profound heaves;  
 You must translate; 'tis fit we understand  
 Where is your son? *[them:]*

*Queen.* Bestow this place on us a little  
 while.—

*[To ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN,  
 who go out.]*

Ah, my good lord, what have I seen to-night!  
*King.* What, Gertrude? How does Hamlet?

*Queen.* Mad as the sea, and wind, when  
 both contend

Which is the mightier: In his lawless fit,  
 Behind the arras hearing something stir,  
 Whips out his rapier, cries, *A rat! a rat!*  
 And, in this brainish apprehension, kills  
 The unseen good old man.

*King.* O heavy deed!  
 It had been so with us, had we been there:

\* Frenzy. † Mannre.

‡ Steaming with heat.

§ Toad.

¶ Having their teeth.

‡ Bend.

§ A term of endearment.

\*\* Cat.

†† Experiments.

§§ Blown up with his own bomb.

His liberty is full of threats to all;  
To you yourself, to us, to every one.  
Alas! how shall this bloody deed be answer'd?  
It will be laid to us, whose providence  
Should have kept short, restrain'd, and out of  
haunt\*.

This mad young man: but, so much was our  
love,

We would not understand what was most fit;  
But like the owner of a foul disease,  
To keep it from divulging, let it feed  
Even on the pith of life. Where is he gone?

*Queen.* To draw apart the body he hath  
kill'd:

O'er whom his very madness, like some ore,  
Among a mineral† of metals base,  
Shows itself pure; he weeps for what is done.

*King.* O, Gertrude, come away!  
The sun no sooner shall the mountains touch,  
But we will ship him hence: and this vile deed  
We must, with all our majesty and skill,  
Both countenance and excuse.—Ho! Guildenstern!

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*  
Friends both, go join you with some further  
Hamlet in madness hath Polonius slain, [aid:  
And from his mother's closet hath he dragg'd  
him; [body  
Go, seek him out; speak fair, and bring the  
Into the chapel. I pray you, haste in this.

[*Exeunt Ros. and GUIL.*  
Come, Gertrude, we'll call up our wisest friends;  
And let them know, both what we mean to do,  
And what's untimely done: so, haply, slander,—

Whose whisper o'er the world's diameter,  
As level as the cannon to his blank‡, [name,  
Transports his poison'd shot,—may miss our  
And hit the woundless air.—O come away!  
My soul is full of discord and dismay. [*Exeunt.*

# SCENE II. Another Room in the same.

*Enter HAMLET.*

*Ham.*—Safely stowed,—[*Ros. &c. within.* Hamlet! lord Hamlet!] But soft!—what  
noise? who calls on Hamlet? O, here they  
come.

*Enter ROSENCRANTZ and GUILDENSTERN.*

*Ros.* What have you done, my lord, with  
the dead body? [‡tis kin.

*Ham.* Compounded it with dust, whereto  
*Ros.* Tell us where 'tis; that we may take  
And bear it to the chapel. [it thence,

*Ham.* Do not believe it.

*Ros.* Believe what?

*Ham.* That I can keep your counsel, and not  
mine own. Besides, to be demanded of a  
sponge!—what replication should be made by  
the son of a king?

*Ros.* Take you me for a sponge, my lord?

*Ham.* Ay, sir; that soaks up the king's  
countenance, his rewards, his authorities. But  
such officers do the king best service in the  
end: He keeps them, like an ape, in the corner  
of his jaw; first mouthed, to be last swallow'd:  
When he needs what you have glean-

ed, it is but squeezing you, and, sponge, you  
shall be dry again.

*Ros.* I understand you not, my lord.

*Ham.* I am glad of it: A knavish speech  
sleeps in a foolish ear.

*Ros.* My lord, you must tell us where the  
body is, and go with us to the king.

*Ham.* The body is with the king, but the  
king is not with the body. The king is a  
thing—

*Guil.* A thing, my lord?

*Ham.* Of nothing: bring me to him. Hide  
fox, and all after §. [*Exeunt.*

# SCENE III. Another Room in the same.

*Enter King attended.*

*King.* I have sent to seek him, and to find  
the body.

How dangerous is it, that this man goes loose?  
Yet must not we put the strong law on him:  
He's loved of the distracted multitude,  
Who like not in their judgment, but their eyes;  
And, where 'tis so, the offender's scourge is  
weigh'd, [and even,  
But never the offence. To bear all smooth  
This sudden sending him away must seem  
Deliberate pause: Diseases, desperate grown,  
By desperate appliance are relieved,  
*Enter ROSENCRANTZ.*

Or not at all.—How now? what hath befallen?  
*Ros.* Where the dead body is bestow'd, my  
We cannot get from him. [lord,

*King.* But where is he?

*Ros.* Without, my lord; guarded, to know

*King.* Bring him before us. [your pleasure.

*Ros.* Ho, Guildenstern? bring in my lord.

*Enter HAMLET and GUILDENSTERN.*

*King.* Now, Hamlet, where's Polonius?

*Ham.* At supper.

*King.* At supper? Where?

*Ham.* Not where he eats, but where he is  
eaten: a certain convocation of politic worms  
are e'en at him. Your worm is your only em-  
peror for diet: we fat all creatures else to fat  
us; and we fat ourselves for maggots: Your  
fat king, and your lean beggar, is but variable  
service; two dishes, but to one table; that's  
the end.

*King.* Alas, alas!

*Ham.* A man may fish with the worm that  
hath eat of a king; and eat of the fish that  
hath fed of that worm.

*King.* What dost thou mean by this?

*Ham.* Nothing, but to show you how a king  
may go a progress through the guts of a beggar.

*King.* Where is Polonius?

*Ham.* In heaven; send thither to see: if  
your messenger find him not there, seek him  
i' the other place yourself. But, indeed, if  
you find him not within this month, you shall  
nose him as you go up the stairs into the lobby.

*King.* Go seek him there.

[*To some Attendants.*

*Ham.* He will stay till you come.

[*Exeunt Attendants.*

\* Company.

† Mine.

‡ Mark.

§ A sport among children.



*King.* Hamlet, this deed, for thine especial safety,—  
Which we do tender, as we dearly grieve  
For that which thou hast done,—must send  
thee hence [self;  
With fiery quickness: therefore prepare thy-  
The bark is ready, and the wind at help\*,  
The associates tend†, and every thing is bent  
For England.

*Ham.* For England?

*King.* Ay, Hamlet.

*Ham.* Good.

*King.* So is it, if thou knew'st our purposes.  
*Ham.* I see a cherub, that sees them.—But,  
come; for England!—Farewell, dear mother.

*King.* Thy loving father, Hamlet,  
*Ham.* My mother: Father and mother is  
mau and wife; man and wife is one flesh;  
and so, my mother. Come, for England.

[Exit.  
*King.* Follow him at foot; tempt him with  
speed aboard;

Delay it not, I'll have him hence to-night:  
Away; for every thing is seal'd and done  
That else leans on the affair: Pray you, make  
haste. [Exit Ros. and GUIL.

And, England, if my love thou hold'st at aught,  
(As my great power thereof may give thee  
sense;

Since yet thy cicatrice looks raw and red  
After the Danish sword, and thy free awe  
Pays homage to us,) thou may'st not coldly  
set†

Our sovereign process; which imports at full,  
By letters conjuring to that effect,  
The present death of Hamlet. Do it, England;  
For like the hectic in my blood he rages,  
And thou must cure me: Till I know'tis done,  
Howe'er my haps§, my joys will ne'er begin.

[Exit.

#### SCENE IV. A Plain in Denmark.

*Enter FORTINBRAS, and Forces, marching.*

*For.* Go, captain, from me greet the Danish  
Tell him, that, by his license, Fortinbras [king;  
Craves the conveyance of a promised march  
Over his kingdom. You know the rendezvous.  
If that his majesty would aught with us,  
We shall express our duty in his eye ||.  
And let him know so.

*Cap.* I will do't, my lord.

*For.* Go softly on.

[Exit FORTINBRAS and Forces.

*Enter HAMLET, ROSENCRANTZ, GUILDEN-  
STERN, &c.*

*Ham.* Good sir, whose powers¶ are these?

*Cap.* They are of Norway, sir.

*Ham.* How purposed, sir,

I pray you?

*Cap.* Against some part of Poland.

*Ham.* Who

Commands them, sir? [bras.

*Cap.* The nephew to old Norway, Fortin-

*Ham.* Goes it against the main of Poland,  
Or for some frontier? [sir,

*Cap.* Truly to speak, sir, and with no ad-  
dition,

We go to gain a little patch of ground,  
That hath in it no profit but the name.

To pay five ducats, five, I would not farm it;  
Nor will it yield to Norway, or the Pole,  
A ranker rate, should it be sold in fee.

*Ham.* Why, then the Polack\*\* never will  
defend it.

*Cap.* Yes, 'tis already garrison'd.

*Ham.* Two thousand souls, and twenty  
thousand ducats,

Will not debate the question of this straw:

This is the imposthume of much wealth and  
peace: [out

That inward breaks, and shows no cause with-  
Why the man dies.—I humbly thank you, sir.

*Cap.* God be wi' you, sir. [Exit Captain.

*Ros.* Will't please you go, my lord?

*Ham.* I will be with you straight. Go a  
little before. [Exit Ros. and GUIL.

How all occasions do inform against me,  
And spur my dull revenge! What is a man,

If his chief good, and market† of his time,  
Be but to sleep, and feed? a beast, no more.

Sure, he, that made us with such large dis-  
course‡,

Looking before, and after, gave us not  
That capability and godlike reason

To fust§§ in us unused. Now, whether it be  
Bestial oblivion, or some craven|| scruple

Of thinking too precisely on the event,—  
A thought, which, quarter'd, hath but one part

wisdom,

And, ever, three parts coward,—I do not  
know

Why yet I live to say, *This thing's to do*;

Sith¶¶ I have cause, and will, and strength, and  
means,

To do't. Examples, gross as earth, exhort me:  
Witness, this army of such mass, and charge,

Led by a delicate and tender prince;  
Whose spirit, with divine ambition puff'd,

Makes mouths at the invisible event;  
Exposing what is mortal, and unsure,

To all that fortune, death, and danger, dare  
Even for an egg-shell. Rightly to be great,

Is, not to stir without great argument;  
But greatly to find quarrel in a straw, [then,

When honour's at the stake. How stand I  
That have a father kill'd, a mother stain'd,

Excitements of my reason, and my blood,  
And let all sleep? while, to my shame, I see

The imminent death of twenty thousand men,  
That, for a fantasy, and trick of fame

Go to their graves like birds; fight for a plot  
Whereon the numbers cannot try the cause,

Which is not tomb enough, and continent,  
To hide the slain?—O, from this time forth,

My thoughts be bloody, or be nothing worth!

[Exit

\* Right, ready.

† Attend.

‡ Value, estimate.

§ Successes.

|| Presence. ¶ Forces.

\*\* Polander.

†† Profit.

‡‡ Power of comprehension.

§§ Grow mouldy.

|| Cowardly.

¶¶ Since.

SCENE V. Elsinore. *A Room in the Castle.**Enter Queen and HORATIO.**Queen.* — I will not speak with her.*Hor.* She is importunate; indeed, distract; Her mood will needs be pitied.*Queen.* What would she have!*Hor.* She speaks much of her father; says, she hears, [beats her heart; There's tricks i'the world; and heins, and Spurs enviously at straws; speaks things in doubt, [thing,

That carry but half sense: her speech is no- Yet the unshaped use of it doth move The hearers to collection; they aim\* at it, And botch the words up fit to their own thoughts;

Which, as her winks, and nods, and gestures yield them, Indeed would make one think, there might be thought,

Though nothing sure, yet much unhappily.

*Queen.* 'Twere good, she were spoken with; for she may strewDangerous conjectures in ill-breeding minds: Let her come in. [*Exit* HORATIO.

To my sick soul, as sin's true nature is, Each toy† seems prodigious to some great amiss: So full of artless jealousy is guilt, It spills itself in fearing to be spilt.

*Re-enters HORATIO, with OPHELIA.**Oph.* Where is the beauteous majesty of Denmark?*Queen.* How now, Ophelia?*Oph.* How should I your true love know From another one?*By his cockle hat and staff,  
And his sandal shoont. [Singing.**Queen.* Alas, sweet lady, what imports this song?*Oph.* Say you? nay, pray you, mark.*He is dead and gone, lady, [Sings.  
He is dead and gone;**At his head a grass-green turf,  
At his heels a stone.*

O, ho!

*Queen.* Nay, but Ophelia,—*Oph.* Pray you, mark.  
*White his shroud as the mountain snow, [Sings.**Enter King.**Queen.* Alas, look here, my lord.*Oph.* Larded § all with sweet flowers;  
*Which bewept to the grave did go,  
With true-love showers.**King.* How do you, pretty lady?*Oph.* Well, God'ield || you! They say, the owl was a baker's daughter. Lord, we know what we are, but know not what we may be. God be at your table!*King.* Conceit upon her father.*Oph.* Pray, let us have no words of this;

but when they ask you, what it means, say you this:

*Good morrow, 'tis Saint Valentine's  
All in the morning betime, [day,  
And I a maid at your window,  
To be your Valentine:**Then up he rose, and doned ¶ his clothes,  
And dupp'd \*\* the chamber door;  
Let in the maid, that out a maid  
Never departed more.**King.* Pretty Ophelia!*Oph.* Indeed, without an oath, I'll make an end on't:*By Gis, and by Saint Charity††,  
Alack, and fie for shame!  
Young men will do't, if they come to't;  
By cock, they are to blame.**Quoth she, before you tumbled me,  
You promised me to wed:*

[He answers.]

*So would I ha' done, by yonder sun,  
An thou hadst not come to my bed.**King.* How long hath she been thus?*Oph.* I hope, all will be well. We must be patient: but I cannot choose but weep, to think, they should lay him i'the cold ground. My brother shall know of it, and so I thank you for your good counsel. Come, my coach: Good night, ladies; good night, sweet ladies! good night, good night. [*Exit.**King.* Follow her close; give her good watch I pray you. [*Exit* HORATIO.

O! this is the poison of deep grief; it springs All from her father's death: And now behold, O Gertrude, Gertrude, [spies, When sorrows come, they come not single But in battalions! First, her father slain; Next, your son gone; and he most violent author

Of his own just remove: The people muddied, Thick and unwholesome in their thoughts and whispers, [but greenly ††. For good Polonius' death; and we have done In hugger-mugger §§ to inter him: Poor Ophelia

Divided from herself, and her fair judgment; Without the which we are pictures, or mere beasts.

Last, and as much containing as all these, Her brother is in secret come from France: Feeds on his wonder, keeps himself in clouds, And wants not buzzers to infect his ear With pestilent speeches of his father's death; Wherein necessity, of matter beggar'd, Will nothing stick our person to arraign In ear and ear. O my dear Gertrude, this, Like to a murdering piece, in many places Gives me superfluous death! [*A noise within.**Queen.* Alack! what noise is this?*Enter a Gentleman.**King.* Attend.

\* Guess.

† Trifle.

‡ Shoe.

§ Garnished.

|| Reward.

¶ Down, i.e., put on.

\*\* Do up.

†† Saints in the Roman Catholic calendar.

§§ Privately.

‡‡ Without judgment.

Where are my Switzers \*! Let them guard the  
What is the matter? [door:]

*Gent.* Save yourself, my lord;  
The ocean, overpeering of his list,  
Eats not the flats with more impetuous haste,  
Than young Laertes, in a riotous head, [lord;  
O'erbears your officers! The rabble call him,  
And, as the world were now but to begin,  
Antiquity forgot, custom not known,  
The ratifiers and props of every word,  
They cry, *Choose we; Laertes shall be king.*  
Caps, hands, and tongues, applaud it to the  
*Laertes shall be king! Laertes king!* [clouds,  
*Queen.* How cheerfully on the false trail †  
they cry!

O, this is counter ‡, you false Danish dogs.  
*King.* The doors are broke. [Noise within.  
*Enter LAERTES, armed; Danes following.*  
*Laer.* Where is this king?—Sirs, stand you  
*Dan.* No, let's come in. [all without.  
*Laer.* I pray you, give me leave.  
*Dan.* We will, we will.

[*They retire without the door.*  
*Laer.* I thank you:—keep the door.—O  
Give me my father. [thou vile king,  
*Queen.* Calmly, good Laertes.

*Laer.* That drop of blood, that's calm, pro-  
claims me bastard; [harlot  
Cries, cuckold, to my father; brands the  
Even here, between the chaste unsmirched ||  
Of my true mother. [brow

*King.* What is the cause, Laertes,  
That thy rebellion looks so giant-like!—  
Let him go, Gertrude; do not fear our person;  
There's such divinity doth hedge a king,  
That treason can but peep to what it would,  
Acts little of his will.—Tell me, Laertes,  
Why thou art thus incensed;—Let him go,  
Speak, man. [Gertrude;—

*Laer.* Where is my father?  
*King.* Dead.  
*Queen.* But not by him.  
*King.* Let him demand his fill. [glad with;  
*Laer.* How came he dead? I'll not be jug-  
To heil, allegiance! vows, to the blackest devil!  
Conscience, and grace, to the profoundest pit!  
I dare damnation: To this point I stand,—  
That both the worlds I give to negligence,  
Let come what comes; only I'll be revenged,  
Most thoroughly for my father.

*King.* Who shall stay you?  
*Laer.* My will, not all the world's:  
And, for my means, I'll husband them so well,  
They shall go far with little.

*King.* Good Laertes,  
If you desire to know the certainty [revenge,  
Of your dear father's death, is't writ in your  
That, sweepstake, you will draw both friend  
Winner and loser? [and foe,

*Laer.* None but his enemies.  
*King.* Will you know them then?  
*Laer.* To his good friends thus wide: I'll ope  
my arms;

And, like the kind life-rend'ring pelican,  
Repeat them with my blood.

*King.* Why, now you speak  
Like a good child, and a true gentleman.  
That I am guiltless of your father's death,  
And am most sensibly in grief for it,  
It shall as level to your judgment 'pear ¶,  
As day does to your eye.

*Danes.* [Within.] Let her come in.

*Laer.* How now! what noise is that?

*Enter OPHELIA, fantastically dress'd with  
Straws and Flowers.*

O heat, dry up my brains! tears seven times  
salt,

Burn out the sense and virtue of mine eye!—  
By heaven, thy madness shall be paid with  
weight,

Till our scale turn the beam. O rose of May!  
Dear maid, kind sister, sweet Ophelia!

O heavens! is't possible, a young maid's wits  
Should be as mortal as an old man's life?  
Nature is fine \*\* in love: and, where 'tis fine,  
It sends some precious instance of itself  
After the thing it loves.

*Oph.* They bore him barefaced on the bier:  
Hey no nonny, nonny hey nonny:  
And in his grave rain'd many a tear;

Fare you well, my dove!

*Laer.* Hadst thou thy wits, and didst per-  
It could not move thus. [suade revenge,

*Oph.* You must sing, *Down-a-down, an  
you call him a-down-a.* O, how the wheel †  
becomes it! It is the false steward, that stole  
his master's daughter.

*Laer.* This nothing's more than matter.

*Oph.* There's rosemary, that's for remem-  
brance; pray you, love, remember: and there  
is pansies, that's for thoughts.

*Laer.* A document in madness; thoughts  
and remembrance fitted.

*Oph.* There's fennel for you, and colum-  
bines:—there's rue for you; and here's some  
for me:—we may call it, herb of grace o'Sun-  
days:—you may wear your rue with a differ-  
ence ‡.—There's a daisy:—I would give you  
some violets; but they withered all, when my  
father died:—They say, he made a good  
end,—

*For bonny sweet Robin is all my joy.*—  
[Sings.

*Laer.* Thought §§ and affliction, passion, hell  
She turns to favour, and to prettiness. [itself,

*Oph.* *And will he not come again?* [Sings.  
*And will he not come again?*

*No, no, he is dead,  
Go to thy death-bed,  
He never will come again.*

*His beard was as white as snow,  
All flaxen was his poll;*

*He is gone, he is gone,  
And we cast away moan;  
God'a mercy on his soul!*

\* Guards.

† Bounds.

‡ Scent.

§ Hounds run counter when they trace the scent backwards. || Clean, undefiled.

¶ Appear. \*\* Artful. †† The burthen.

‡‡ i. e., By its Sunday name "her"

of grace" mine is merely rue, i. e., sorrow.

§§ Melancholy.



And of all Christian souls! I pray God. God be wi' you!

[Exit OPHELIA.]

Laer. Do you see this, O God? [grief,

King. Laertes, I must commune with your Or you deny me right. Go but apart, [will, Make choice of whom your wisest friends you And they shall hear and judge 'twixt you and If by direct or by collateral hand [me:] They find us touch'd, we will our kingdom give, Our crown, our life, and all that we call ours, To you in satisfaction; but if not, Be you content to lend your patience to us, And we shall jointly labour with your soul To give it due content.

Laer. Let this be so;

His means of death, his obscure funeral,— No trophy, sword, nor hatchment o'er his bones, No noble rite, nor formal ostentation,— Cry to be heard as 'twere from heaven to earth, That I must call't in question.

King. So you shall; And where the offence is, let the great axe fall. I pray you, go with me. [Exit.]

SCENE VI. Another Room in the same.

Enter HORATIO, and a Servant.

Hor. What are they, that would speak with me?

Serv. Sailors, sir;

They say they have letters for you.

Hor. Let them come in;— [Exit Servant.]

I do not know from what part of the world I should be greeted, if not from lord Hamlet.

Enter Sailors.

1 Sail. God bless you, sir.

Hor. Let him bless thee too.

1 Sail. He shall, sir, au't please him. There's a letter for you, sir: it comes from the ambassador that was bound for England; if your name be Horatio, as I am let to know it is.

Hor. [Reads.] *Horatio, when thou shalt have overlooked this, give these fellows some means to the king: they have letters for him. Ere we were two days old at sea, a pirate of very warlike appointment gave us chase: Finding ourselves too slow of sail, we put on a compelled valour, and in the grapple I board'd them: on the instant, they got clear of our ship, so I alone became their prisoner. They have dealt with me, like thieves of mercy; but they knew what they did; I am to do a good turn for them. Let the king have the letters I have sent: and repair thou to me with as much haste as thou wouldst fly death. I have words to speak in thine ear, will make thee dumb; yet are they much too light for the bore of the matter. These good fellows will bring thee where I am. Rosenkrantz and Guildenstern hold their course for England: of them I have much to tell thee. Farewell. He that thou knowest thine,*

HAMLET.

Come, I will give you way for these your letters;

And do't the speedier, that you may direct me To him from whom you brought them.

[Exit.]

SCENE VII. Another Room in the same.

Enter King and LAERTES.

King. Now must your conscience my acquittance seal,

And you must put me in your heart for friend; Sith\* you have heard, and with a knowing ear, That he, which hath your noble father slain, Pursued my life.

Laer. It well appears:—But tell me, Why you proceeded not against these feats, So criminal and so capital in nature, As by your safety, greatness, wisdom, all things You mainly were stirr'd up. [else,

King. O, for two special reasons, Which may to you, perhaps, seem much unsinew'd†, [mother,

But yet to me they are strong. The queen his Lives almost by his looks; and for myself, (My virtue, or my plague, be it either which,) She is so conjunctive to my life and soul, That, as the star moves not but in his sphere, I could not but by her. The other motive, Why to a public count I might not go, Is, the great love the general gender‡ bear him: Who, dipping all his faults in their affection, Work like the spring§ that turneth wood to stone, [rows,

Convert his gyves|| to graces; so that my art-Too slightly timber'd for so loud a wind, Would have reverted to my bow again, And not where I had aim'd them.

Laer. And so have I a noble father lost; A sister driven into desperate terms; Whose worth, if praises may go back again, Stood challenger on mount of all the age For her perfections:—But my revenge will come. [must not think,

King. Break not your sleeps for that: you That we are made of stuff so flat and dull, That we can let our beard be shook with danger, [more:

And think it pastime. You shortly shall hear I loved your father, and we love ourself; And that, I hope, will teach you to imagine,— How now? what news?

Enter a Messenger.

Mess. Letters, my lord, from Hamlet: This to your majesty; this to the queen.

King. From Hamlet! who brought them?

Mess. Sailors, my lord, they say: I saw them not; [them They were given me by Claudio, he received Of him that brought them.

King. Laertes, you shall hear them:— Leave us. [Exit Messenger.]

[Reads.] *High and mighty, you shall know, I am set naked on your kingdom. To-morrow shall I beg leave to see your kindly eyes: when I shall, first asking your pardon there—*

\* Since.

† Deprived of strength.

‡ Common people.

§ Petrifying springs are common in many parts of England.

|| Chains.

unto, recount the occasion of my sudden and more strange return.

Hamlet. What should this mean! Are all the rest come Or is it some abuse, and no such thing? [back?]

Laer. Know you the hand?

King. 'Tis Hamlet's character. Naked,— And in a postscript here, he says, *alone*: Can you advise me? [come;]

Laer. I am lost in it, my lord. But let him It warms the very sickness in my heart, That I shall live and tell him to his teeth, Thus diddest thou.

King. If it be so, Laertes, As how should it be so? how otherwise? Will you be ruled by me?

Laer. Ay, my lord; So you will not o'er-rule me to a peace.

King. To thine own peace. If he be now return'd,—

As checking\* at his voyage, and that he means No more to undertake it,—I will work him To an exploit, now ripe in my device, Under the which he shall not choose but fall: And for his death no wind of blame shall breathe; [tice,

But even his mother shall uncharge the practice and call it, accident.

Laer. My lord, I will be ruled; The rather, if you could devise it so, That I might be the organ.

King. It falls right. You have been talk'd of since your travel much, And that in Hamlet's hearing, for a quality Wherein, they say, you shine: your sum of parts

Did not together pluck such envy from him, As did that one; and that, in my regard, Of the unworthiest siege†.

Laer. What part is that, my lord?

King. A very riband in the cap of youth, Yet needful too; for youth no less becomes The light and careless livery that it wears, Than settled age his sables, and his weeds, Importing health and graveness.—Two months since,

Here was a gentleman of Normandy,—[French, I have seen myself, and served against, the And they can well on horseback; but this gallant

Had witchcraft in't; he grew unto his seat; And to such wondrous doing brought his horse, As he had been incorp'd and demi-natured With the brave beast: so far he topp'd my That I, in forgery of shapes and tricks, [thought, Come short of what he did.

Laer. A Norman, was't?

King. A Norman.

Laer. Upon my life, Lamord.

King. The very same.

Laer. I know him well: he is the brooch‡, And gem of all the nation. [indeed,

King. He made confession of you;

And gave you such a masterly report,

For art and exercise in your defence§,

And for your rapier most especial.

That he cried out, 'twould be a sight indeed, If one could match you: the scrimers|| of their nation,

He swore, had neither motion, guard, nor eye, If you oppos'd them: Sir, this report of his Did Hamlet so envenom with his envy, That he could nothing do, but wish and beg Your sudden coming o'er, to play with you. Now, out of this,—

Laer. What out of this, my lord?

King. Laertes, was your father dear to you? Or are you like the painting of a sorrow, A face without a heart?

Laer. Why ask you this?

King. Not that I think you did not love your father;

But that I know, love is begun by time; And that I see, in passages of proof¶, Time qualifies the spark and fire of it.

There lives within the very flame of love A kind of wick, or snuff, that will abate it; And nothing is at a like goodness still;

For goodness, growing to a pleurisy, Dies in his own too-much: That we would do, We should do when we would; for this would changes,

And hath abatements and delays as many, As there are tongues, are hands, are accidents, And then this *should* is like a spendthrift sigh, That hurts by easing. But to the quick o'the ulcer: [take,

Hamlet comes back; What would you understand to show yourself indeed your father's son More than in words?

Laer. To cut his throat i'the church. King. No place, indeed, should murder sanctuarize; [Laertes,

Revenge should have no bounds. But, good Will you do this, keep close within your chamber: [home:

Hamlet, return'd, shall know you are come We'll put on those shall praise your excellence, And set a double varnish on the fame The Frenchman gave you; bring you, in fine, together,

And wager o'er your heads: he, being remiss, Most generous, and free from all contriving, Will not peruse the foils; so that, with ease, Or with a little shuffling, you may choose A sword unbated\*\*, and, in a pass of practice††, Require him for your father.

Laer. I will do't:

And, for the purpose, I'll anoint my sword. I bought an unction of a mountebank, So mortal, that but dip a knife in it, Where it draws blood no cataplasm so rare, Collected from all simples that have virtue Under the moon, can save the thing from death, That is but scratched withal: I'll touch my point [ly,

With this contagion; that, if I gall him slight It may be death.

King. Let's further think of this;

\* Objecting to.

† Place.

‡ Ornament.

§ Science of defence, i.e., fencing.

|| Fencers.

¶ Daily experience.

\*\* Not blunted as foils are.

†† Exercise.

Weigh, what convenience, both of time and means,

May fit us to our shape: if this should fail,  
And that our drift look through our bad performance,

'Twere better not assay'd: therefore this proposal  
Should have a back, or second, that might hold,  
If this should blast in proof\*. Soft,—let me see:—

We'll make a solemn wager on your cun-  
I ha't:

When in your motion you are hot and dry,  
(As make your bouts more violent to that end,) And that he calls for drink, I'll have preferred† him

A chalice for the nonce‡; whereon but sip. If he by chance escape your venom'd stuck||, Our purpose may hold there. But stay, what noise!

*Enter Queen.*

How now, sweet queen?

Queen. One woe doth tread upon another's heel,

So fast they follow:—Your sister's drown'd,  
Laer. Drown'd! O, where?

Queen. There is a willow grows ascant the  
That shows his hoar leaves in the glassy stream;  
Therewith fantastic garlands did she make  
Of crow-flowers, nettles, daisies, and long  
purples¶,

That liberal\*\* shepherds give a grosser name,

But our cold maids do dead men's fingers call  
them:

There on the pendent boughs her coronet  
Clambering to hang, an envious sliver broke;  
When down her weedy trophies, and herself,  
Fell in the weeping brook. Her clothes spread  
wide;

And, mermaid-like, awhile they bore her up:  
Which time, she chanted snatches of old tunes;  
As one incapable†† of her own distress,  
Or like a creature native and indued  
Unto that element: but long it could not be,  
Till that her garments, heavy with their drink,  
Pull'd the poor wretch from her melodious lay  
To muddy death.

Laer. Alas then, she is drown'd?

Queen. Drown'd, drown'd.

Laer. Too much of water hast thou, poor  
Ophelia,

And therefore I forbid my tears: But yet  
It is our trick: nature her custom holds,  
Let shame say what it will: when these are  
gone,

The woman will be out‡‡.—Adieu, my lord!  
I have a speech of fire, that fain would blaze,  
But that this folly drowns it.

King. Let's follow, Gertrude:

How much I had to do to calm his rage!  
Now fear I, this will give it start again;

Therefore, let's follow.

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—A Church-yard.

*Enter Two Clowns, with Spades, &c.*

1 Clo. Is she to be buried in christian burial,  
that willfully seeks her own salvation?

2 Clo. I tell thee, she is; therefore make  
her grave straight‡‡: the crowner hath set on  
her, and finds it christian burial.

1 Clo. How can that be, unless she drown'd  
herself in her own defence?

2 Clo. Why, 'tis found so.

1 Clo. It must be *se offendendo*; it cannot  
be else. For here lies the point: If I drown  
myself wittingly, it argues an act: and an act  
hath three branches; it is, to act, to do, and  
to perform: Argal, she drowned herself wittingly.

2 Clo. Nay, but hear you, goodman delver.

1 Clo. Give me leave. Here lies the water;  
good: here stands the man; good: If the  
man go to this water, and drown himself, it is,  
will he, nill he, he goes: mark you that: but  
if the water come to him, and drown him, he  
drowns not himself: Argal, he, that is not  
guilty of his own death, shortens not his own  
life.

2 Clo. But is this law?

1 Clo. Ay, marry is't; crowner's-quest law.

2 Clo. Will you ha' the truth on't? If this  
had not been a gentiewoman, she should have  
been buried out of christian burial.

1 Clo. Why, there thou say'st: And the  
more pity; that great folks shall have counte-  
nance in this world to drown or hang them-  
selves, more than their even‡‡ christian. Come,  
my spade. There is no ancient gentlemen but  
gardeners, ditchers, and grave-makers; they  
hold up Adam's profession.

2 Clo. Was he a gentleman?

1 Clo. He was the first that ever bore arms.

2 Clo. Why, he had none.

1 Clo. What, art a neatnen? How dost thou  
understand the scripture? The scripture says,  
Adam digged; Could he dig without arms?  
I'll put another question to thee: if thou an-  
swerest me not to the purpose, confess thy-  
self—

2 Clo. Go to.

1 Clo. What is he, that builds stronger than  
either the mason, the shipwright, or the car-  
penter?

2 Clo. The gallows-maker; for that frame  
outlives a thousand tenants.

1 Clo. I like thy wit well, in good faith; the  
gallows does well: but how does it well? it  
does well to those that do ill: now thou dost

\* As fire-arms sometimes burst in proving their strength.

† Skill.

‡ Presented.

A cup for the purpose. †† Thrust.

¶ *Ochris morio mas.*

\*\* Licentious.

† Insensible.

‡ Tears will down.

‡‡ Immediately.

‡‡ Fellow.



ill, to say, the gallows is built stronger than the church; argal, the gallows may do well to thee. To't again: come.

2 *Clo.* Who builds stronger than a mason, a shipwright, or a carpenter?

1 *Clo.* Ay, tell me that, and unyoke\*.

2 *Clo.* Marry, now I can tell.

1 *Clo.* To't.

2 *Clo.* Mass, I cannot tell.

*Enter HAMLET and HORATIO, at a distance.*

1 *Clo.* Cndgel thy brains no more about it; for your dull ass will not mend his pace with beating; and when you are asked this question next, say, a grave-maker; the houses that he makes, lasts till doomsday. Go, get thee to Yaughan, and fetch me a stoup of liquor.

[*Exit* 2 *Clown.*]

1 *Clown* digs, and sings.

*In youth when I did love, did love't,*

*Methought it was very sweet,*

*To contract, O, the time, for, ah, my behove*  
*O, methought, there was nothing meet.*

*Ham.* Has this fellow no feeling of his business? he sings at grave-making.

*Hor.* Custom hath made it in him a property of easiness.

*Ham.* 'Tis e'en so: the hand of little employment hath the daintier sense.

1 *Clo.* *But age, with his stealing steps,*  
*Hath clau'd me in his clutch,*  
*And hath shipped me into the land,*  
*As if I had never been such.*

[*Throws up a scull.*]

*Ham.* That scull had a tongue in it, and could sing once: How the knave jowls it to the ground, as if it were Cain's jaw-bone, that did the first murder! This might be the pate of a politician, which this ass now o'er-reaches; one that would circumvent God, might it not?

*Hor.* It might, my lord.

*Ham.* Or of a courtier; which would say, *Good-morrow, my sweet lord! How dost thou, good lord?* This might be my lord such-a-one, that praised my lord such-a-one's horse, when he meant to beg it; might it not?

*Hor.* Ay, my lord.

*Ham.* Why, e'en so: and now my lady Worm's; chapless, and knocked about the mazzard with a sexton's spade: Here's fine revolution, an we had the trick to see't. Did these bones cost no more the breeding, but to play at loggats† with them? mine ache to think on't.

1 *Clown.*

*A pick-axe, and a spade, a spade, [Sings.*

*For—and a shrouding-sheet:*

*O, a pit of clay for to be made*

*For such a guest is meet.*

[*Throws up a scull.*]

*Ham.* There's another: Why may not that be the scull of a lawyer? Where be his quid-

lits § now, his quilllets ||, his cases, his tenures, and his tricks? why does he suffer this rude knave now to knock him about the sconce ¶ with a dirty shovel, and will not tell him of his action of battery? Humph! This fellow might be in's time a great buyer of land, with his statutes, his recognizances. His fines, his double vouchers, his recoveries: Is this the fine of his fines, and the recovery of his recoveries, to have his fine pate full of fine dirt? will his vouchers vouch him no more of his purchases, and double ones too, than the length and breadth of a pair of indentures? The very conveyances of his lands will hardly lie in this box? and must the inheritor himself have no more? ha?

*Hor.* Not a jot, my lord.

*Ham.* Is not parchment made of sheep-skins?

*Hor.* Ay, my lord, and of calves'-skins too.

*Ham.* They are sheep, and calves, which seek out assurance in that. I will speak to this fellow:—Whose grave's this, sirrah?

1 *Clo.* Mine, sir.—

*O, a pit of clay for to be made [Sings.*

*For such a guest is meet.*

*Ham.* I think it be thine, indeed; for thou liest in't.

1 *Clo.* You lie out on't, sir, and therefore it is not your's: for my part, I do not lie in't, yet it is mine.

*Ham.* Thou dost lie in't, to be in't, and say it is thine: 'tis for the dead, not for the quick; therefore thou liest.

1 *Clo.* 'Tis a quick lie, sir; 'twill away again, from me to you.

*Ham.* What man dost thou dig it for?

1 *Clo.* For no man, sir.

*Ham.* What woman, then?

1 *Clo.* For none neither.

*Ham.* Who is to be buried in't?

1 *Clo.* One, that was a woman, sir; but, rest her soul, she's dead.

*Ham.* How absolute the knave is! we must speak by the card \*\*, or equivocation will undo us. By the Lord, Horatio, these three years I have taken note of it; the age is grown so picked ††, that the toe of the peasant comes so near the heel of the courtier, he galls his kibe.—How long hast thou been a grave-maker?

1 *Clo.* Of all the days i'th' year, I came to't that day that our last king Hamlet overcame Fortinbras.

*Ham.* How long's that since?

1 *Clo.* Cannot you tell that? every fool can tell that: It was that very day that young Hamlet was born: he that is mad, and sent into England.

*Ham.* Ay, marry, why was he sent into England?

1 *Clo.* Why, because he was mad: he shall recover his wits there; or, if he do not, 'tis no great matter there.

\* Give over. † The song entire is printed in Percy's Reliques of Ancient English Poetry, Vol. I.; it was written by Lord Vaux. ‡ An ancient game played as quoits are at present.  
§ Subtleties. || Frivolous distractions. ¶ Head. \*\* By the compass, or chart of direction. †† Spruce affected.

*Ham.* Why?

*1 Clo.* 'Twill not be seen in him there: there the men are as mad as he.

*Ham.* How came he mad?

*1 Clo.* Very strangely, they say.

*Ham.* How strangely?

*1 Clo.* 'Faith, e'en with losing his wits.

*Ham.* Upon what ground?

*1 Clo.* Why, here in Denmark; I have been sexton here, man and boy, thirty years.

*Ham.* How long will a man lie i'the earth ere he rot?

*1 Clo.* 'Faith, if he be not rotten before he die, (as we have many pocky corsers now-a-days, that will scarce hold the laying in,) he will last you some eight year, or nine year: a tanner will last you nine year.

*Ham.* Why he more than another?

*1 Clo.* Why, sir, his hide is so tanned with his trade, that he will keep out water a great while; and your water is a sore decayer of your whoreson dead body. Here's a scull now hath lain you i'the earth three-and-twenty years.

*Ham.* Whose was it?

*1 Clo.* A whoreson mad fellow's it was; Whose do you think it was?

*Ham.* Nay, I know not.

*1 Clo.* A pestilence on him for a mad rogue! he poured a flagon of Rhenish on my head once. This same scull, sir, was Yorick's scull, the king's jester.

*Ham.* This? [Takes the scull.]

*1 Clo.* E'en that.

*Ham.* Alas! poor Yorick!—I knew him, Horatio; a fellow of infinite jest, of most excellent fancy: he hath borne me on his back a thousand times; and now, how abhorred in my imagination it is! my gorge rises at it. Here hung those lips, that I have kissed I know not how oft. Where be your gibes now? your gambols? your songs? your flashes of merriment, that were wont to set the table on a roar? Not one, now, to mock your own grinning? quite chap-fallen? Now get you to my lady's chamber, and tell her, let her paint an inch thick, to this favour\* she must come: make her laugh at that.—Pr'y-thee, Horatio, tell me one thing.

*Hor.* What's that, my lord?

*Ham.* Dost thou think, Alexander look'd o'this fashion i'the earth?

*Hor.* E'en so.

*Ham.* And smelt so? pah!

[Throws down the scull.]

*Hor.* E'en so, my lord.

*Ham.* To what base uses we may return, Horatio! Why may not imagination trace the noble dust of Alexander, till he find it stopping a bung-hole?

*Hor.* 'Twere to consider too curiously, to consider so?

*Ham.* No faith, not a jot; but to follow him thither with modesty enough, and likeli-

hood to lead it: As thus; Alexander died, Alexander was buried, Alexander returneth to dust; the dust is earth; of earth we make loam: And why of that loam, whereto he was converted, might they not stop a beer-barrel? Imperious† Cæsar, dead, and turn'd to clay, Might stop a hole to keep the wind away: O, that the earth, which kept the world in awe, Should patch a wall to expel the winter's flaw! But soft! but soft! aside:—Here comes the king.

*Enter Priests, &c., in Procession; the Corpse of OPHELIA, LAERTES, and Mourners following; King, Queen, their Trains, &c.*

The Queen, the courtiers: Who is this they follow? [token,]

And with such maimed rites§! This doth be- The corse, they follow, did with desperate hand Fordo|| its own life. 'Twas of some estate¶. Couch we a while, and mark.

[Retiring with HORATIO.]

*Laer.* What ceremony else?

*Ham.* That is Laertes, A very noble youth: Mark.

*Laer.* What ceremony else? [enlarged]

*1 Priest.* Her obsequies have been as far As we have warranty: Her death was doubtful; [order,

And, but that great command o'ersways the She should in ground unsanctified have lodged Till the last trumpet; for charitable prayers, Shards\*\*, flints, and pebbles, should be thrown on her,

Yet here she is allow'd her virgin crants††, Her maiden strewments, and the bringing home Of bell and burial.

*Laer.* Must there no more be done?

*1 Priest.* No more be done!

We should profane the service of the dead, To sing a requiem‡‡, and such rest to her As to peace-parted souls.

*Laer.* Lay her i'the earth;— And from her fair and unpolluted flesh, May violets spring!—I tell thee, churlish priest, A minist'ring angel shall my sister be, When thou liest howling.

*Ham.* What, the fair Ophelia!

*Queen.* Sweets to the sweet: Farewell!

[Scattering Flowers.]

I hoped, thou shouldst have been my Hamlet's wife; [maid,

I thought, thy bride-bed to have deck'd, sweet And not have strewed thy grave.

*Laer.* O, treble woe

Fall ten times treble on that cursed head, Whose wicked deed thy most ingenious sense Deprived thee of!—Hold off the earth a while, Till I have caught her once more in mine arms.

[Leaps into the Grave.]

Now pile your dust upon the quick §§ and dead; Till of this flat a mountain you have made To o'ertop old Pelion, or the skyish head Of blue Olympus.

*Ham.* [Advancing.] What is he, whose grief

\* Countenance, complexion. † Imperial. ‡ Blast. § Imperfect obsequies  
 †† Undo, destroy. ‡ High rank. \*\* Broken pots or tiles. †† Garland. ‡‡ A mass for the dead. §§ Laving.

Bears such an emphasis? whose phrase of sorrow  
Conjures the wand'ring stars, and makes them  
Like wonder-woulding hearers? this is I,  
Hamlet the Dane. *[Leaps into the Grave.*  
*Laer.* The devil take thy soul!

*Ham.* Thou pray'st not well.  
I prythee take thy fingers from my throat;  
For, though I am not splenetic and rash,  
Yet have I in me something dangerous,  
Which let thy wisdom fear: Hold off thy hand.

*King.* Pluck them asunder.  
*Queen.* Hamlet, Hamlet!

*All.* Gentlemen,—  
*Hor.* Good my lord, be quiet.  
*[The Attendants part them and they come out of the Grave.]*

*Ham.* Why, I will fight with him upon this  
Until my eyelids will no longer wag. *[theme,*

*Queen.* O my son! what theme? *[thers*

*Ham.* I loved Ophelia; forty thousand bro-  
Could not, with all their quantity of love  
Make up my sum.—What wilt thou do for her?

*King.* O, he is mad, Laertes.

*Queen.* For love of God, forbear him.

*Ham.* 'Zounds, show me what thou'lt do:  
Would't weep? would't fight? would't fast? would't  
tear thyself?

Would't drink up Esil\*? eat a crocodile?  
I'll do't.—Dost thou come here to whine?  
To outface me with leaping in her grave?  
Be buried quick with her, and so will I:  
And, if thou prate of mountains, let them throw  
Millions of acres on us; t† our ground,  
Singeing his pate against the burning zone,  
Make Ossa like a wart! Nay, an thou'lt mouth,  
I'll rant as well as thou.

*Queen.* This is mere madness:  
And thus a while the fit will work on him;  
Aion, as patient as the female dove,  
When that her golden couplets are disclosed†,  
His silence will sit drooping.

*Ham.* Hear you, sir;  
What is the reason that you use me thus?  
I loved you ever: But it is no matter;  
Let Hercules himself do what he may,  
The cat will mew, and dog will have his day.

*[Exit.]*  
*King.* I pray thee, good Horatio, wait upon  
him. *[Exit HORATIO.]*

Strengthen your patience in our last night's  
speech; *[To LAERTES.]*

We'll put the matter to the present push.—  
Good Gertrude, set some watch over your son.  
This grave shall have a living monument:  
An hour of quiet shortly shall we see;  
Till then, in patience our proceeding be.

*[Exeunt.]*

# SCENE II. A Hall in the Castle.

*Enter HAMLET and HORATIO.*

*Ham.* So much for this, sir: now shall you  
see the other;—

You do remember all the circumstance?

*Hor.* Remember it, my lord! *[fighting,*

*Ham.* Sir, in my heart there was a kind of  
That would not let me sleep: methought, I lay  
Worse than the mutines‡ in the bilboes§.

*Rashly,*  
And praised be rashness for it,—Let us know,  
Our indiscretion sometimes serves us well,  
When our deep plots do pall||: and that should  
teach us,

There's a divinity that shapes our ends,  
Rough-hew them how we will.

*Hor.* That is most certain.

*Ham.* Up from my cabin,  
My sea-gown scart'd about me, in the dark  
Groped I to find out them: had my desire;  
Finger'd their packet; and, in fine, with drew  
To mine own room again: making so bold,  
My fears forgetting manners, to unseal  
Their grand commission; where I found, Ho—  
A royal knavery; an exact command,—*[ratio,*  
Larded¶ with many several sorts of reasons,  
Importing Denmark's health, and England's too,  
With, ho! such bugs\*\* and goblins in my life,  
That, on the supervise††, no leisure bated,  
No, not to stay the grinding of the axe,  
My head should be struck off.

*Hor.* Is't possible?

*Ham.* Here's the commission; read it at  
more leisure.

But wilt thou hear now how I did proceed?

*Hor.* Ay, 'beseech you. *[lanies,*

*Ham.* Being thus benetted round with vil-  
Or‡ I could make a prologue to my brains,  
They had begun the play;—I sat me down;  
Devised a new commission; wrote it fair:  
I once did hold it, as our statists§§ do,  
A baseness to write fair, and labour'd much  
How to forget that learning; but, sir, now  
It did me yeoman's service: Wilt thou know  
The effect of what I wrote?

*Hor.* Ay, good my lord.

*Ham.* An earnest conjuration from the king,  
As England was his faithful tributary; *[rish;*  
As love between them like the palm might flou-  
As peace should still her wheaten garland wear,  
And stand a comma||| 'tween their amities;  
And many such-like as's of great charge,—  
That, on the view, and knowing of these con-  
tents,

Without debatement further, more, or less,  
He should the bearers put to sudden death,  
Not shriving¶¶-time allow'd.

*Hor.* How was this seal'd?

*Ham.* Why, even in that was heaven ordi-  
I had my father's signet in my purse, *[nam;*  
Which was the model\*\*\* of that Danish seal:  
Folded the writ up in form of the other;  
Subscribed it; gave't the impression; placed it  
safely, *[day*

The changeling never known: Now, the next  
Was our sea-fight; and what to this was se-  
Thou know'st already. *[quent†††*

\* *Eisel* is vinegar; but Mr. Steevens conjectures the word should be *Weisel*, a river which falls into the Baltic ocean. † Hatched. ‡ Mutine-ers. § Fetters and handcuffs brought from Bilboa, in Spain. || Fail. ¶ Garnished. \*\* Bugbears. † Looking over. ‡† Before. §§ Statesmen. ||| A note of connexion ¶¶ Confessing. \*\*\* Copy. ††† Following



*Hor.* So Guildenstern and Rosencrantz go to't. [employment;

*Ham.* Why, man, they did make love to this. They are not near my conscience; their defeat does by their own insinuation grow:

'Tis dangerous, when the baser nature comes Between the pass and fell incensed points Of mighty opposites.

*Hor.* Why, what a king is this!

*Ham.* Does it not, think thee, stand me now upon? [mother;

He that hath kill'd my king, and whored my Popp'd in between the election and my hopes; Thrown out his angle for my proper life, And with such cozenage; is't not perfect conscience, [damn'd,

To quit\* him with this arm? and is't not to be To let this canker of our nature come In further evil? [England,

*Hor.* It must be shortly known to him from What is the issue of the business there.

*Ham.* It will be short: the interim is mine; And a man's life no more than to say, one.

But I am very sorry, good Horatio, That to Laertes I forgot myself; For by the image of my cause I see The portraiture of his: I'll count† his favours: But, sure, the bravery of his grief did put me Into a towering passion.

*Hor.* Peace; who comes here? Enter *OSRIC.*

*Os.* Your lordship is right welcome back to Denmark.

*Ham.* I humbly thank you, sir.—Dost know this water-fly‡?

*Hor.* No, my good lord.

*Ham.* Thy state is the more gracious; for 'tis a vice to know him: He hath much land, and fertile: let a beast be lord of beasts, and his crib shall stand at the king's mess: 'Tis a chough§; but, as I say, spacious in the possession of dirt.

*Os.* Sweet lord, if your lordship were at leisure, I should impart a thing to you from his majesty.

*Ham.* I will receive it, sir, with all diligence of spirit: Your bonnet to his right use; 'tis for the head.

*Os.* I thank your lordship, 'tis very hot.

*Ham.* No, believe me, 'tis very cold; the wind is northerly.

*Os.* It is indifferent cold, my lord, indeed.

*Ham.* But yet, methinks it is very sultry and hot; or my complexion—

*Os.* Exceedingly, my lord; it is very sultry,—as 'twere,—I cannot tell how—My lord, his majesty bade me signify to you, that he has laid a great wager on your head: Sir, this is the matter,—

*Ham.* I beseech you, remember—

[HAMLET moves him to put on his Hat.

*Os.* Nay, good my lord; for my ease, in good faith||. Sir, here is newly come to court, Laertes: believe me, an absolute gentleman, full of most excellent differences¶, of very soft society, and great showing: Indeed, to speak feelingly of him, he is the card\*\* or calendar of gentry, for you shall find in him the continent†† of what part a gentleman would see.

*Ham.* Sir, his definement suffers no perdition in you;—though, I know, to divide him inventorially, would dizzy the arithmetic of memory; and yet but raw neither, in respect of his quick sail. But, in the verity of extolment, I take him to be a soul of great article; and his infusion of such dearth and rareness, as, to make true diction of him, his semblable is his mirror; and, who else would trace him, his umbrage, nothing more‡‡.

*Os.* Your lordship speaks most infallibly of him.

*Ham.* The concernancy, sir? why do we wrap the gentleman in our more rawer breath?

*Os.* Sir?

*Hor.* Is't not possible to understand in another tongue? You will do't, sir, really.

*Ham.* What imports the nomination§§ of this gentleman?

*Os.* Of Laertes?

*Hor.* His purse is empty already; all his golden words are spent.

*Ham.* Of him, sir.

*Os.* I know, you are not ignorant—

*Ham.* I would, you did, sir; yet, in faith, if you did, it would not much approve||| me;—Well, sir.

*Os.* You are not ignorant of what excellency Laertes is—

*Ham.* I dare not confess that, lest I should compare with him in excellence; but, to know a man well, were to know himself.

*Os.* I mean, sir, for his weapon; but in the imputation laid on him by them, in his meed¶¶ he's unfellowed.

*Ham.* What's his weapon?

*Os.* Rapier and dagger.

*Ham.* That's two of his weapons: but, well.

*Os.* The king, sir, hath wagered with him six Barbary horses: against the which he has impawned\*\*\* as I take it, six French rapiers and poniards, with their assigns, as girdle, hangers†††, and so: Three of the carriages, in faith, are very dear to fancy, very responsive to the hilts, most delicate carriages, and of very liberal conceit.

*Ham.* What call you the carriages?

*Hor.* I knew, you must be edified by the marginal‡‡‡, ere you had done.

*Os.* The carriages, sir, are the hangers.

*Ham.* The phrase would be more german§§§ to the matter, if we could carry a cannon by our sides; I would, it might be hangers till then.

\* Requite.

† For count some Editors read court.

‡ Waterflies are gnats.

§ A bird like a jackdaw. || The affected phrase of the time. ¶ Distinguishing excellencies.

\*\* Compass or chart. †† The country and pattern for imitation. ‡‡ This speech is a ridicule

of the court jargon of that time. §§ Mentioning. ||| Recommend. ¶¶ Praise.

\*\*\* Impawned, put down, staked. ††† That part of the belt by which the sword was suspended.

‡‡‡ Margin of a book which contains explanatory notes.

§§§ A-kiu.

But, on : Six Barbary horses against six French swords, their assigns, and three liberal concerted carriages; that's the French bet against the Danish: Why is this impawned, as you call it?

*Osr.* The king, sir, hath laid, that in a dozen passes between yourself and him, he shall not exceed you three hits; he hath laid, on twelve for nine; and it would come to immediate trial, if your lordship would vouchsafe the answer.

*Ham.* How, if I answer, no?

*Osr.* I mean, my lord the opposition of your person in trial.

*Ham.* Sir, I will walk here in the hall: If it please his majesty, it is the breathing time of day with me: let the foils be brought, the gentleman willing, and the king hold his purpose, I will win for him, if I can; if not, I will gain nothing but my shame, and the odd hits.

*Osr.* Shall I deliver you so?

*Ham.* To this effect, sir; after what flourish your nature will.

*Osr.* I commend my duty to your lordship. *[Exit.]*

*Ham.* Yours, yours.—He does well to commend it himself: there are no tongues else for's turn.

*Hor.* This lapwing \* runs away with the shell on his head.

*Ham.* He did comply † with his dug, before he sucked it. Thus has he (and many more of the same breed, that, I know, the drossy ‡ age dotes on), only got the tune of the time, and outward habit of encounter; a kind of yesty § collection, which carries them through and through the most fond || and winnowed opinions; and do but blow them to their trial, the bubbles are out.

*Enter a Lord.*

*Lord.* My lord, his majesty commended him to you by young Osric, who brings back to him, that you attend him in the hall: He sends to know, if your pleasure hold to play with Laertes, or that you will take longer time.

*Ham.* I am constant to my purposes, they follow the king's pleasure: if his fitness speaks, mine is ready; now, or whensoever, provided I be so able as now.

*Lord.* The king, and queen, and all are coming down.

*Ham.* In happy time.

*Lord.* The queen desires you, to use some gentle entertainment to Laertes, before you fall to play.

*Ham.* She well instructs me. *[Exit Lord.]*

*Hor.* You will lose this wager, my lord.

*Ham.* I do not think so; since he went into France, I have been in continual practice; I shall win at the odds. But thou wouldst not think, how ill all's here about my heart: but it is no matter.

*Hor.* Nay, good my lord, —

*Ham.* It is but foolery; but it is such a kind

of gain-giving ¶, as would, perhaps trouble a woman.

*Hor.* If your mind dislike any thing, obey it: I will forestall \*\* their repair hither, and say, you are not fit.

*Ham.* Not a whit, we defy augury; there is a special providence in the fall of a sparrow. If it be now, 'tis not to come; if it be not to come, it will be now; if it be not now, yet it will come: the readiness is all: Since no man, of aught he leaves, knows, what is't to leave betimes? Let be.

*Enter King, Queen, LAERTES, Lords, OSRIC, and Attendants, with Foils, &c.*

*King.* Come, Hamlet, come, and take this hand from me.

*[The King puts the Hand of LAERTES into that of HAMLET.]*

*Ham.* Give me your pardon, sir: I have done you wrong;

But pardon it, as you are a gentleman.

This presentment knows, and you must needs have heard,

How I am punish'd with a sore distraction.

What I have done,

That might your nature, honour, and exception, Roughly awake, I here proclaim was madness.

Was't Hamlet wrong'd Laertes? Never, Ham: If Hamlet from himself be ta'en away, [let:

And, when he's not himself, does wrong Laertes,

Then Hamlet does it not, Hamlet denies it.

Who does it then? His madness: I't be so,

Hamlet is of the faction that is wrong'd;

His madness is poor Hamlet's enemy.

Sir, in this audience,

Let my disclaiming from a purposed evil

Free me so far in your most generous thoughts,

That I have shot my arrow o'er the house,

And hurt my brother.

*Laer.* I am satisfied in nature,

Whose motive, in this case, should stir me most

To my revenge: but in my terms of honour,

I stand aloof; and will no reconciliation,

Till by some elder masters, of known honour,

I have a voice and precedent of peace, [time,

To keep my name ungored ††: But till that

I do receive your offer'd love like love,

And will not wrong it.

*Ham.* I embrace it freely;

And will this brother's wager frankly play.—

Give us the foils; come on.

*Laer.* Come, one for me.

*Ham.* I'll be your foil, Laertes; in mine ignorance

Your skill shall, like a star i'the darkest night, Stick fiery off indeed.

*Laer.* You mock me, sir.

*Ham.* No, by this hand.

*King.* Give them the foils, young Osric.—

Cousin Hamlet,

You know the wager?

*Ham.* Very well, my lord;

\* A bird which runs about immediately as it is hatched.

† Compliment.

‡ Worthless.

§ Frothy.

|| For fond read *farr'd*.

¶ Misgiving.

\*\* Prevent.

†† The king and queen's presence.

‡‡ Unwounded.

Your grace hath laid the odds o'the weaker side.

*King.* I do not fear it: I have seen you both:— [Odds.]

But since he's better'd, we have therefore

*Laer.* This is too heavy, let me see another.

*Ham.* This likes me well: These foils have all a length? [They prepare to play.]

*Osr.* Ay, my good lord. [table:—]

*King.* Set me the stoups \* of wine upon that

If Hamlet give the first or second hit,

Or quit in answer of the third exchange,

Let all the battlements their ordnance fire;

The king shall drink to Hamlet's better breath;

And in the cup an union † shall he throw,

Richer than that which four successive kings

In Denmark's crown have worn; Give me the cups;

And let the kettle to the trumpet speak,

The trumpet to the cannoneer without,

The cannons to the heavens, the heaven to earth, [begin;—]

Now the king drinks to Hamlet.—Come,

And you, the judges, bear a wary eye.

*Ham.* Come on, sir.

*Laer.* Come, my lord. [They play.]

*Ham.* One.

*Laer.* No.

*Ham.* Judgment.

*Osr.* A hit, a very palpable hit.

*Laer.* Well,—again.

*King.* Stay, give me drink: Hamlet, this

pearl is thine;

Here's to thy health.—Give him the cup.

[Trumpets sound: and Cannon shot off within.]

*Ham.* I'll play this bout first, set it by

awhile.

Come.—Another hit; What say you?

[They play.]

*Laer.* A touch, a touch, I do confess.

*King.* Our son shall win.

*Queen.* He's fat, and scant of breath.—

Here, Hamlet, take my napkin ‡, rub thy

brows:

The queen carouses § to thy fortune, Hamlet.

*Ham.* Good madam,——

*King.* Gertrude, do not drink. [me.]

*Queen.* I will, my lord;—I pray you, pardon

*King.* It is the poison'd cup; it is too late. [Aside.]

*Ham.* I dare not drink yet, madam; by

and by.

*Queen.* Come, let me wipe thy face.

*Laer.* My lord, I'll hit him now.

*King.* I do not think it.

*Laer.* And yet it is almost against my conscience. [Aside.]

*Ham.* Come, for the third, Laertes: You

do but dally;

I pray you, pass with your best violence;

I am afeard, you make a wanton || of me.

*Laer.* Say you so? come on. [They play.]

*Osr.* Nothing neither way.

*Laer.* Have at you now.

[LAERTES wounds HAMLET; then, in scuffling, they change Rapiers, and HAMLET wounds LAERTES.]

*King.* Part them, they are incensed.

*Ham.* Nay, come again. [The Queen falls.]

*Osr.* Look to the queen there, ho!

*Hor.* They bleed on both sides:—How is

*Osr.* How is't, Laertes? [it, my lord?]

*Laer.* Why, as a woodcock to my own

springe, Osr;

I am justly kill'd with mine own treachery.

*Ham.* How does the queen?

*King.* She swoons to see them bleed.

*Queen.* No, no, the drink, the drink,—O my dear Hamlet!

The drink, the drink;—I am poison'd. [Dies.]

*Ham.* O villainy!—Ho! let the door be

lock'd:

Treachery! seek it out. [LAERTES falls.]

*Laer.* Is here, Hamlet: Hamlet, thou art

slain;

No medicine in the world can do thee good,

In thee there is not half an hour's life;

The treacherous instrument is in thy hand,

Unbated ¶, and envenom'd: the foul practice

Hath turn'd itself on me; lo, here I lie,

Never to rise again: Thy mother's poison'd;

I can no more; the king, the king's to blame.

*Ham.* The point

Envenom'd too!—Then, venom to thy work.

[Stabs the King.]

*Osr. & Lords.* Treason! treason!

*King.* O, yet defend me, friends, I am but

hurt. [damned Dane.]

*Ham.* Here, thou incestuous, murd'rous

Drink off this potion:—Is the union here?

Follow my mother. [King dies.]

*Laer.* He is justly served;

It is a poison temper'd \*\* by himself.—

Exchange forgiveness with me, noble Hamlet:

Mine and my father's death come not upon

thee;

Nor thine on me! [Dies.]

*Ham.* Heaven make thee free of it! I fol-

low thee.

I am dead, Horatio:—Wretched queen, adieu!

You that look pale and tremble at this chance,

That are but mutes or audience to this act,

Had I but time, (as this fell sergeant †, death,

Is strict in his arrest,) O, I could tell you,—

But let it be:—Horatio, I am dead;

Thou livest; report me and my cause aright

To the unsatisfied.

*Hor.* Never believe it;

I am more an antique Roman than a Dane,

Here's yet some liquor left.

*Ham.* As thou'rt a man,—

Give me the cup; let go; by heaven I'll have

O God!—Horatio, what a wounded name, [it,

Things standing thus unknown, shall live be-

hind me!

If thou didst ever hold me in thy heart,

Absent thee from felicity awhile,

\* Large jugs.

† A precious pearl.

‡ Handkerchief.

§ Drinks good luck to you.

|| Boy.

¶ The foil without a button, and poisoned pint

\*\* Mixed

† A serjeant is a sheriff's officer.



And in this harsh world draw thy breath in  
To tell my story.— [pain,

[*March afar off, and Shot within.*  
What warlike noise is this?

Osr. Young Fortinbras, with conquest  
come from Poland,  
To the ambassadors of England gives  
This warlike volley.

Ham. O, I die, Horatio;  
The potent poison quite o'er-crowns \*my spirit;  
I cannot live to hear the news from England:  
But I do prophesy the election lights  
On Fortinbras; he has my dying voice;  
So tell him, with the occurrent†, more or  
less,  
Which have solicited‡.—The rest is silence.

[*Dies.*  
Hor. Now cracks a noble heart;—Good  
night, sweet prince;  
And flights of angels sing thee to thy rest!  
Why does the drum come hither?

[*March within.*  
Enter FORTINBRAS, the English Ambassa-  
dors, and Others.

Fort. Where is this sight?  
Hor. What is it, you would see?  
If aught of wo, or wonder, cease your search.  
Fort. This quarry § cries on havoc ||—O  
proud death!

What feast is toward in thine eternal cell,  
That thou so many princes, at a shot,  
So bloodily hast struck?

1 Amb. The sight is dismal;  
And our affairs from England come too late:  
The ears are senseless, that should give us  
hearing,

To tell him, his commandment is fulfill'd,  
That Rosencrantz and Guildenstern are dead:  
Where should we have our thanks?

Hor. Not from his mouth ¶,

Had it the ability of life to thank you;  
He never gave commandment for their death.  
But since, so jump\*\* upon this bloody ques-  
tion, [England,

You from the Polack†† wars, and you from  
Are here arrived; give order, that these bodies  
High on a stage be placed to the view;  
And let me speak, to the yet unknowing world,  
How these things come about: So shall you  
Of carnal, bloody, and unnatural acts; [hear  
Of accidental judgments, casual slaughters:  
Of deaths put on by cunning, and forced  
cause;

And, in this upshot, purposes mistook  
Fall'n on the inventors' heads; all this can I  
Truly deliver.

Fort. Let us haste to hear it,  
And call the noblest to the audience.  
For me, with sorrow I embrace my fortune;  
I have some rights of memory in this king-  
dom, [me,

Which now to claim my vantage doth invite  
Hor. Of that I shall have also cause to speak,  
And from his mouth, whose voice will draw  
on more:

But let this same be presently perform'd,  
Even while men's minds are wild; lest more  
On plots and errors, happen. [mischance,

Fort. Let four captains  
Bear Hamlet, like a soldier, to the stage;  
For he was likely, had he been put on, [sage,  
To have proved most royally: and, for his pas-  
The soldier's music, and the rights of war,  
Speak loudly for him.—

Take up the bodies:—Such a sight as this  
Becomes the field, but here shows much amiss.  
Go, bid the soldiers shoot. 'A dead March.

[*Exeunt, bearing off the dead Bodies; after  
which, a Peal of Ordnance is shot off.*

\* O'ercomes. † Incidents. ‡ Incited. § Heap of dead game. || A word  
of censure when more game was destroyed than was reasonable. ¶ i. e., The king's.  
\*\* By chance. †† Polish.

If the dramas of Shakspeare were to be characterized, each by the particular excellence which distinguishes it from the rest, we must allow to the tragedy of Hamlet the praise of variety. The incidents are so numerous, that the argument of the play would make a long tale. The scenes are interchangeably diversified with merriment and solemnity: with merriment that includes judicious and instructive observations; and solemnity not strained by poetical violence above the natural sentiments of man. New characters appear from time to time in continual succession, exhibiting various forms of life and particular modes of conversation. The pretended madness of Hamlet causes much mirth, the mournful distraction of Ophelia fills the heart with tenderness, and every personage produces the effect intended, from the apparition that chills the blood with horror, to the top, that exposes affectation to just contempt.

The conduct is perhaps not wholly secure against objections. The action is indeed for the most part in continual progression. but there are some scenes which neither forward nor retard it. Of the feigned madness of Hamlet there appears no adequate cause, for he does nothing which he might not have done with the reputation of sanity. He plays the madman zoost, when he treats Ophelia with so much rudeness, which seems to be wanton cruelty.

Hamlet is, through the whole piece, rather an instrument than an agent. After he has, by the stratagem of the play, convicted the King, he makes no attempt to punish him; and his death is at last effected by an incident which Hamlet had no part in producing.

The poet is accused of having shown little regard to poetical justice, and may be charged with equal neglect of poetical probability. The apparition left the regions of the dead to little purpose; the revenge which he demands is not obtained, but by the death of him that was required to take it; and the gratification, which would arise from the destruction of an usurper and a murderer, is abased by the untimely death of Ophelia, the young, the beautiful, the harmless, and the pious.—JOHNSON.

# OTHELLO, THE MOOR OF VENICE.

## Persons represented.

Duke of Venice.

BRABANTIO, a senator.

Two other Senators.

GRATIANO, brother to Brabantio.

LUDOVICO, kinsman to Brabantio.

OTHELLO, the Moor.

CASSIO, his lieutenant.

IAGO, his ancient.

RODERIGO, a Venetian gentleman.

MONTANO, Othello's predecessor in the government of Cyprus.

Clown, servant to Othello.

DESDEMONA, daughter to Brabantio, and wife to Othello.

EMILIA, wife to Iago.

BIANCA, a courtezan, mistress to Cassio.

Officers, Gentlemen, Messengers, Musicians  
Sailors, Attendants,

Scene, for the first Act, in Venice; during the rest of the play, at a sea-port in Cyprus.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I. Venice. A Street.

Enter RODERIGO and IAGO.

Rod. Tush, never tell me, I take it much unkindly,  
That thou, Iago,—who hast had my purse,  
As if the strings were thine,—shouldst know of this.

Iago. 'Sblood, but you will not hear me:—  
If ever I did dream of such a matter,  
Abhor me.

Rod. Thou told'st me, thou didst hold him in thy hate.

Iago. Despise me, if I do not. Three great  
In personal suit to make me his lieutenant,  
Oft capp'd\* to him;—and, by the faith of man,  
I know my price, I am worth no worse a place:

But he, as loving his own pride and purposes,  
Evades them, with a bombast circumstance †,  
Horribly stuff'd with epithets of war;  
And, in conclusion, nonsuits  
My mediators; for, certes ‡, says he,  
I have already chose my officer.

And what was he?  
Forsooth, a great arithmetician,  
One Michael Cassio, a Florentine,  
A fellow almost damn'd in a fair wife §;  
That never set a squadron in the field,  
Nor the division of a battle knows [rick ||,  
More than a spinster; unless the bookish theo-  
Wherein the toged consuls ¶ can propose  
As masterly as he: mere prattle, without  
practice, [tion :  
Is all his soldiership. But he, sir, had the elec-  
And I,—of whom his eyes had seen the proof,

At Rhodes, at Cyprus; and on other grounds  
Christian and heathen,—must be be-lee'd and  
calm'd

By debtor and creditor, this counter-caster\*\*;  
He, in good time, must his lieutenant be,  
And I, (God bless the mark!) his Moorship's  
ancient. [his hangman.

Rod. By heaven, I rather would have been  
Iago. But there's no remedy, 'tis the curse  
of service;

Preferment goes by letter, and affection,  
Not by the old gradation, where each second  
Stood heir to the first. Now, Sir, be judge  
yourself,

Whether I in any just term am affin'd ††  
To love the Moor.

Rod. I would not follow him then.

Iago. O, sir, content you;  
I follow him to serve my turn upon him:  
We cannot all be masters, nor all masters  
Cannot be truly follow'd. You shall mark  
Many a duteous and knee-crooking knave  
That, doting on his own obsequious bondage,  
Wears out his time, much like his master's ass,  
For nought but provender; and, when he's old,

cashier'd;  
Whip me such honest knaves; Others there are,  
Who, trimm'd in forms and visages of duty,  
Keep yet their hearts attending on themselves;  
And, throwing but shows of service on their  
lords, [lined their coats,  
Do well thrive by them, and, when they have  
Do themselves homage: these fellows have  
some soul;

And such a one do I profess myself.  
For, sir,

\* Saluted. † Circumlocution. ‡ Certainly. § For wife some read life, supposing it to allude to the denunciation in the Gospel, *Who unto you when all men shall speak well of you.* || Theory. ¶ Rulers of the state. \*\* It was anciently the practice to reckon w<sup>th</sup> anns with counters. †† Related.

It is as sure as you are Roderigo,  
Were I the Moor, I would not be Iago:  
In following him, I follow but myself;  
Heaven is my judge, not I for love and duty,  
But seeming so, for my peculiar end:  
For when my outward action doth demonstrate  
The native act and figure of my heart  
In compliment extern\*, 'tis not long after  
But I will wear my heart upon my sleeve  
For daws to peck at: I am not what I am.

*Rod.* What a full fortune does the thick-lips  
If he can carry't thus! [owes't,

*Iago.* Call up her father,  
Rouse him: make after him, poison his del-  
light, [men,  
Proclaim him in the streets; incense her kins-  
And, though he in a fertile climate dwell,  
Plague him with flies: though that his joy be  
joy,  
Yet throw such changes of vexation on't,  
As it may lose some colour.

*Rod.* Here is her father's house; I'll call  
aloud. [dire yell,

*Iago.* Do; with like timorous accent, and  
As when, by night and negligence, the fire  
Is spied in populous cities.

*Rod.* What ho! Brabantio! signior Bra-  
bantio, ho! [thieves! thieves! thieves!

*Iago.* Awake! what, ho! Brabantio!  
Look to your house, your daughter, and your  
Thieves! thieves! [bags!

*BRABANTIO, above, at a Window.*

*Bra.* What is the reason of this terrible  
What is the matter there? [summons?

*Rod.* Signior, is all your family within?

*Iago.* Are your doors lock'd?

*Bra.* Why? wherefore ask you this?

*Iago.* 'Zounds, sir, you are robb'd; for  
shame, put on your gown; [soul;

Your heart is burst, you have lost half your  
Even now, very now, an old black ram  
Is tupping your white ewe. Arise, arise;

Awake the snorting citizens with the bell,  
Or else the devil will make a grandsire of you:

Arise, I say.

*Bra.* What, have you lost your wits?

*Rod.* Most reverend signior, do you know

*Bra.* Not I; What are you? [my voice?

*Rod.* My name is—Roderigo.

*Bra.* The worse welcome:  
I have charged thee, not to haunt about my  
doors:

In honest plainness thou hast heard me say,  
My daughter is not for thee; and now, in  
madness,

Being full of supper, and distempering §  
draughts,

Upon malicious bravery, dost thou come  
To start my quiet.

*Rod.* Sir, sir, sir, sir,—

*Bra.* But thou must needs be sure,  
My spirit, and my place, have in them power  
To make this bitter to thee.

*Rod.* Patience, good sir.

*Bra.* What tell'st thou me of robbing? this  
is Venice;

My house is not a grange ||

*Rod.* Most grave Brabantio.  
In simple and pure soul I come to you.

*Iago.* 'Zounds, sir, you are one of those,  
that will not serve God, if the devil bid you.  
Because we come to do you service, you think  
we are ruffians: You'll have your daughter  
covered with a Barbary horse; you'll have  
your nephews neigh to you: you'll have  
coursers for cousins, and gennets for ger-  
mans ¶.

*Bra.* What profane wretch art thou?

*Iago.* I am one, sir, that comes to tell you,  
your daughter and the Moor are now making  
the beast with two backs.

*Bra.* Thou art a villain.

*Iago.* You are—a senator.

*Bra.* This thou shalt answer: I know thee,  
Roderigo. [beseech you,

*Rod.* Sir, I will answer any thing. But I  
Ift be your pleasure, and most wise consent,  
(As partly, I find, it is,) that your fair daughter,  
At this odd even \*\* and dull watch o'the night,  
Transported—with no worse nor better guard,  
But with a knave of common hire, a gondoliert†  
To the gross clasps of a lascivious Moor,—

If this be known to you, and your allowance ¶,  
We then have done you bold and saucy  
wrongs; [me,

But, if you know not this, my manners tell  
We have your wrong rebuke. Do not believe,  
That, from the sense of all civility [rence:  
I thus would play and trifle with your reve-  
Your daughter,—if you have not given her  
leave,—

I say again, hath made a gross revolt;  
Tying her duty, beauty, wit, and fortunes,  
In an extravagant §§ and wheeling stranger.  
Of here and every where: Straight satisfy  
yourself:

If she be in her chamber, or your house,  
Let loose on me the justice of the state  
For thus deluding you.

*Bra.* Strike on the tinder, ho!

Give me a taper;—call up all my people:—

This accident is not unlike my dream,  
Belief of it oppresses me already:—

Light, I say! light! [Exit from above.

*Iago.* Farewell; for I must leave you:  
It seems not meet, nor wholesome to my place,  
To be produced (as, if I stay, I shall.)

Against the Moor: For, I do know, the state,—  
However this may gall him with some check,  
Cannot with safety cast || him; for he's em-  
bark'd

With such loud reason to the Cyprus' wars,  
(Which even now stand in act,) that, for their  
Another of his fathom they have not, [souis,  
To lead their business: in which regard,  
Though I do hate him, as I do hell pains,  
Yet, for necessity of present life,  
I must show out a flag and sign of love,

\* Outward show of civility.

† Own, possess.

‡ i. e., Is broken.

§ Intoxicating.

|| A lone farm house.

¶ Relations.

\*\* Midnight.

†† A waterman.

‡‡ Approbation.

§§ Wandering.

||| Dismiss.



Which is indeed but sign. That you shall surely find him,  
Lead to the Sagittary the raised search :  
And there will I be with him. So, farewell.

[Exit.]

*Enter below, BRABANTIO, and Servants with Torches.*

*Era.* It is too true an evil : gone she is ;  
And what's to come of my despised time \* ,  
Is nought but bitterness.—Now, Roderigo,  
Where didst thou see her ? —O, unhappy girl !  
With the Moor, say'st thou ? —Who would be  
a father † [deceivest me  
How didst thou know 'twas she ? O, thou  
Past thought ! —What said she to you ? —Get  
more tapers :

Raise all my kindred.—Are they married think

*Rod.* Truly, I think, they are. [you ?

*Bra.* O heaven ! —How got she out.—O  
treason of the blood ! — [minds

Fathers, from hence trust not your daughters'  
By what you see them act.—Are there not  
 charms ,

By which the property of youth and maid-  
hood

May be abused ? Have you not read, Roderigo,  
Of some such thing ?

*Rod.* Yes, sir ; I have indeed.

*Bra.* Call up my brother.—O, that you had  
had her ? —

Some one way, some another.—Do you know  
Where we may apprehend her and the Moor ?

*Rod.* I think, I can discover him ; if you  
please

To get good guard, and go along with me.

*Bra.* Pray you, lead on. At every house  
I'll call ;

I may command at most ; —Get weapons, ho !  
And raise some special officers of night.—

On, good Roderigo ; —I'll deserve your pains.  
[Exit.]

SCENE II. *The same. Another Street.*

*Enter OTHELLO, IAGO, and Attendants.*

*Iago.* Though in the trade of war I have  
slain men,

Yet do I hold it very stuff o'the conscience,  
To do no contrived murder ; I lack iniquity  
Sometimes, to do me service : Nine or ten  
times [the ribs]

I had thought to have yerk'd him here under  
*Oth.* 'Tis better as it is.

*Iago.* Nay, but he prated,  
And spoke such scurvy and provoking terms  
Against your honour,

That, with the little godliness I have,  
I did full hard forbear him. But, I pray, sir,

Are you fast married ? for, be sure of this,—  
That the magnifico ‡ is much beloved ;

And hath, in his effect, a voice potential  
As double as the duke's ; he will divorce you ;

Or put upon you what restraint and grievance  
The law (with all his might, to enforce it on),  
Will give him cable.

*Oth.* Let him do his spite.

My services, which I have done the signiory,  
Shall out-tongue his complaints. 'Tis yet to  
know, [mour,

(Which, when I know that boasting is an ho-  
I shall promulgate,) I fetch my life and being  
From men of royal siege ; and my demerits §  
May speak, unbonneted ||, to as proud a tor-  
ture

As this that I have reached : For know, Iago,  
But that I love the gentle Desdemona,

I would not my unhoused ¶ free condition  
Put into circumscription and confine  
For the sea's worth. But, look ! what lights  
come yonder ?

*Enter CASSIO, at a distance, and certain  
Officers with Torches.*

*Iago.* These are the raised father, and his  
You were best go in. [friends :

*Oth.* Not I : I must be found ;  
My parts, my title, and my perfect soul,

Shall manifest me rightly. Is it they ?  
*Iago.* By Janus, I think no. [lieutenant.

*Oth.* The servants of the duke, and my  
The goodness of the night upon you, friends !  
What is the news ?

*Cas.* The duke does greet you, general ;  
And he requires your haste-post-haste appear-  
Even on the instant. [ance,

*Oth.* What is the matter, think you ?  
*Cas.* Something from Cyprus, as I may di-  
vine ;

It is a business of some heat : the galleys  
Have sent a dozen sequent \*\* messengers  
This very night at one another's heels ;

And many of the consuls, raised, and met,  
Are at the duke's already : You have been  
hotly call'd for ;

When, being not at your lodging to be found,  
The senate hath sent about three several  
To search you out. [quests ††,

*Oth.* 'Tis well I am found by you.  
I will but spend a word here in the house,  
And go with you. [Exit.]

*Cas.* Ancient, what makes he here ?  
*Iago.* 'Faith, he to-might hath boarded a  
land carack ‡

If it prove lawful prize, he's made for ever.  
*Cas.* I do not understand.

*Iago.* He's married.

*Cas.* To who

*Re-enter OTHELLO.*

*Iago.* Marry, to—Come, captain, will you go ?  
*Oth.* Have with you.

*Cas.* Here comes another troop to seek for  
you.

*Enter BRABANTIO, RODERIGO, and Officers  
of night, with Torches and Weapons.*

*Iago.* It is Brabantio—general, be advised ;  
He comes to bad intent.

*Oth.* Hola ! stand there !  
*Rod.* Signior, it is the Moor.

*Bra.* Down with him, thief !  
[They draw on both sides

\* Old age.

† Brabantio, magnifico is his title as a senator.

‡ Seat or throne. § Demerits has the same meaning in Shakspeare as merits. || Covered.

¶ Unsettled.

\*\* Following.

†† Searchers.

‡ A rich vessel.

*Iago.* You, Roderigo! come, sir, I am for you. [dew will rust them.—

*Oth.* Keep up your bright swords, for the good signior, you shall more command with Than with your weapons. [years,

*Bra.* O thou foul thief, where hast thou stow'd my daughter?

Damn'd as thou art, thou hast enchanted her; For I'll refer me to all things of sense, If she in chains of magic were not bound, Whether a maid—so tender, fair, and happy; So opposite to marriage, that she shunn'd The wealthy curled darlings of our nation, Would ever have, to incur a general mock, Run from her guardage to the sooty bosom Of such a thing as thou; to fear, not to delight\*.

Judge me the world, if 'tis not gross in sense, That thou hast practis'd on her with foul charms; [nerals,

Abused her delicate youth with drugs, or mi- That waken motion:—I'll have it disputed on; 'Tis probable, and palpable to thinking.

I therefore apprehend and do attach thee, For an abuser of the world, a practiser Of arts inhibited and out of warrant:— Lay hold upon him; if he do resist, Subdue him at his peril.

*Oth.* Hold your hands, Both of you of my inclining, and the rest; Were it my cue to fight, I should have known it [go

Without a prompter.—Where will you that I To answer this your charge?

*Bra.* To prison: till fit time Of law, and course of direct session, Call thee to answer.

*Oth.* What if I do obey? How may the duke be therewith satisfied? Whose messengers are here about my side, Upon some present business of the state, To bring me to him?

*Off.* 'Tis true, most worthy signior, The duke's in council; and your noble self, I am sure, is sent for.

*Bra.* How! the duke in council! In this time of the night!—Bring him away: Mine's not an idle cause: the duke himself, Or any of my brothers of the state, Cannot but feel this wrong, as 'twere their own: For if such actions may have passage free, Bond-slaves, and pagans†, shall our statesmen be. [Exeunt.

### SCENE III. *The same. A Council Chamber.*

*The Duke, and Senators, sitting at a Table; Officers attending.*

*Duke.* There is no composition‡ in these That gives them credit. [news,

1 *Sen.* Indeed, they are disproportion'd; My letters say, a hundred and seven galleys.

*Duke.* And mine, a hundred and forty.

2 *Sen.* And mine, two hundred: But though they jump not on a just account,

(As in these cases, where the aim§ reports, 'Tis oft with difference,) yet do they all confirm

A Turkish fleet, and bearing up to Cyprus.

*Duke.* Nay, it is possible enough to judge. I do not so secure me in the error, [ment; But the main article I do approve In fearful sense. [what ho!

*Sailor.* [Within.] What ho! what ho! Enter an Officer, with a Sailor.

*Off.* A messenger from the galleys.

*Duke.* Now? the business?

*Sailor.* The Turkish preparation makes for Rhodes;

So was I bid report here to the state, By signior Angelo.

*Duke.* How say you by this change?

1 *Sen.* This cannot be By no assay of reason; 'tis a pageant, To keep us in false gaze: When we consider The importancy of Cyprus to the Turk; And let ourselves again but understand, That, as it more concerns the Turk than Rhodes,

So may he with more facile question¶ bear it, For that it stands not in such warlike brace¶, But altogether lacks the abilities

That Rhodes is dress'd in:—if we make thought of this,

We must not think, the Turk is so unskilful, To leave that latest which concerns him first; Neglecting an attempt of ease, and gain, To wake, and wage\*\*, a danger profitless.

*Duke.* Nay, in all confidence, he's not for *Off.* Here is more news. [Rhodes.

Enter a Messenger. *Mess.* The Ottomites, reverend and gracious, [Rhodes,

Steering with due course toward the isle of Have there unjoined them with an after fleet.

1 *Sen.* Ay, so I thought:—How many, as you guess? [stem

*Mess.* Of thirty sail: and now do they re- Their backward course, bearing with frank appearance [tano,

Their purposes toward Cyprus.—Signior Mon- Your trusty and most valiant servitor, With his free duty recommends you thus, And prays you to believe him.

*Duke.* 'Tis certain then for Cyprus.— Marcus Lucchesé, is he not in town?

1 *Sen.* He's now in Florence.

*Duke.* Write from us; wish him post-post-haste despatch. [liant Moor.

1 *Sen.* Here comes Brabantio, and the va- Enter BRABANTIO, OTHELLO, IAGO, RODERIGO, and Officers.

*Duke.* Valiant Othello, we must straight employ you

Against the general enemy Ottoman.

I did not see you; welcome, gentle signior; [To BRABANTIO.

We lack'd your counsel and your help to-night.

*Bra.* So did I yours: Good your grace, pardon me; .

\* To terrify not delight.

§ Conjecture.

† The pagans and bond-slaves of Africa.

¶ Easy dispute.

¶ State of defence.

† Consistency.

\*\* Combat.

Neither my place, nor aught I heard of business,

Hath rais'd me from my bed; nor doth the general care

Take hold on me; for my particular grief

Is of so flood-gate and o'erbearing nature,

That it engulfs and swallows other sorrows,

And it is still itself.

*Duke.* Why, what's the matter?

*Bra.* My daughter! O, my daughter!

*Sen.* Dead?

*Bra.* Ay, to me;

She is abused, stolen from me, and corrupted

By spells and medicines bought of mounte-

For nature so preposterously to err, [banks:

Being not deficient, blind, or lame of sense,

Sans \* witchcraft could not — [ceeding,

*Duke.* Whoe'er he be, that, in this foul pro-

Hath thus beguiled your daughter of herself,

And you of her, the bloody book of law

You shall yourself read in the bitter letter,

After your own sense; yea, though our pro-

Stood in your action†. [per son

*Bra.* Humbly I thank your grace.

Here is the man, this Moor; whom now, it

seems,

Your special mandate, for the state affairs,

Hath hither brought.

*Duke & Sen.* We are very sorry for it.

*Duke.* What, in your own part, can you

say to this? [To OTHELLO.

*Bra.* Nothing but this is so. [unlors,

*Oth.* Most potent, grave, and reverend sig-

My very noble and approved good masters,

That I have ta'en away this old man's daughter,

It is most true; true, I have married her;

The very head and front of my offending

Hath this extent, no more. Rude am I in my

speech,

And little bless'd with the set phrase of peace;

For since these arms of mine hath seven years'

pith, [used

Till now some nine moons wasted, they have

Their dearest action‡ in the tented field;

And little of this great world can I speak,

More than pertains to feats of broil and battle;

And therefore little shall I grace my cause,

In speaking for myself: Yet, by your gracious

patience,

I will a round unvarnish'd tale deliver

Of my whole course of love; what drugs,

what charms,

What conjuration, and what mighty magic,

(For such proceeding I am charged withal,)

I won his daughter with.

*Bra.* A maiden never bold;

Of spirit so still and quiet, that her motion

Blush'd at herself; And she,—in spite of nature,

Of years, of country, credit, every thing,—

to fall in love with what she fear'd to look on?

It is a judgment maim'd, and most imperfect,

That will confess—perfection so could err

Against all rules of nature; and must be driven

To find out practices of cunning hell,

Why this should be. I therefore vouch again,  
That with some mixtures powerful o'er the  
blood,

Or with some dram conjured to this effect,  
He wrought upon her.

*Duke.* To vouch this is no proof;

Without more certain and more overt test §,

Than these thin habits, and poor likelihoods

Of modern seeming||, do prefer against him.

*1 Sen.* But, Othello, speak;—

Did you by indirect and forced courses

Subdue and poison this young maid's affections?

Or came it by request, and such fair question

As soul to soul affordeth?

*Oth.* I do beseech you,

Send for the lady to the Sagittary ¶,

And let her speak of me before her father:

If you do find me foul in her report,

The trust, the office, I do hold of you,

Not only take away, but let your sentence

Even fall upon my life.

*Duke.* Fetch Desdemona hither.

*Oth.* Ancient, conduct them; you best know

the place.—

[*Exeunt IAGO and Attendants.*

And, till she come, as truly as to heaven

I do confess the vices of my blood,

So justly to your grave ears I'll present

How I did thrive in this fair lady's love,

And she in mine.

*Duke.* Say it, Othello.

*Oth.* Her father loved me; oft invited me;

Still question'd me the story of my life,

From year to year; the battles, sieges, for-

That I have pass'd. [tunes,

I ran it through, even from my boyish days,

To the very moment that he bade me tell it.

Wherein I spoke of most disastrous chances,

Of moving accidents, by flood, and field;

Of hair-breadth scapes i' the imminent deadly

Of being taken by the insolent foe, [breach;

And sold to slavery; of my redemption thence,

And portance \*\* in my travel's history:

Wherein of antres † vast, and deserts idle,

Rough quarries, rocks, and hills whose heads

touch heaven,

It was my hint to speak, such was the process;

And of the Cannibals that each other eat,

The Anthropophagi, and men whose heads

Do grow beneath their shoulders. These things

to hear,

Would Desdemona seriously incline: [thence;

But still the house affairs would draw her

Which ever as she could with haste despatch,

She'd come again, and with a greedy ear

Devour up my discourse: Which I observing,

Took once a pliant hour; and found good means

To draw from her a prayer of earnest heart,

That I would all my pilgrimage dilate,

Whereof by parcels †† she had something

But not intently †††: I did consent; [heard,

And often did beguile her of her tears,

When I did speak of some distressful stroke,

That my youth suffer'd. My story being done,

\* Without.

† Accusation.

‡ Best exertion.

§ Open proof.

¶ Weak show.

¶ The sign of the fictitious creature so called.

\*\* My behaviour.

†† Caves and dens.

†† Parts.

††† Intention and attention were once synonymous.



She gave me for my pains a world of sighs :  
She swore,—In faith, 'twas strange, 'twas  
passing strange ;

'Twas pitiful, 'twas wondrous pitiful :  
She wish'd, she had not heard it ; yet she  
wish'd

That heaven had made her such a man : she  
thank'd me ;

And bade me, if I had a friend that loved her,  
I should but teach him how to tell my story,  
And that would woo her. Upon this hint, I  
spake :

She loved me for the dangers I had pass'd ;  
And I loved her, that she did pity them.  
This only is the witchcraft I have used ;  
Here comes the lady, let her witness it.

*Enter DESDEMONA, IAGO, and Attendants.*

*Duke.* I think, this tale would win my  
Good Brabantio, [daughter too.—  
Take up this mangled matter at the best :  
Men do their broken weapons rather use,  
Than their bare hands.

*Bra.* I pray you, hear her speak ;  
If she confess, that she was half the wooer,  
Destruction on my head, if my bad blame  
Light on the man !—Come hither, gentle mis-  
tress ;

Do you perceive in all this noble company,  
Where most you owe obedience ?

*Des.* My noble father,  
I do perceive here a divided duty :  
To you, I am bound for life, and education ;  
My life, and education, both do learn me  
How to respect you ; you are the lord of duty,  
I am hitherto your daughter : But here's my  
husband ;

And so much duty as my mother show'd  
To you, preferring you before her father,  
So much I challenge that I may profess  
Due to the Moor, my lord.

*Bra.* God be with you !—I have done :—  
Please it your grace, on to the state affairs ;  
I had rather to adopt a child, than get it.—  
Come hither, Moor :

I here do give thee that with all my heart,  
Which, but thou hast already, with all my  
heart [jewel,

I would keep from thee.—For your sake,  
I am glad at soul I have no other child ;  
For thy escape would teach me tyranny,  
To hang clogs on them.—I have done, my lord.

*Duke.* Let me speak like yourself ; and lay  
a sentence, [lovers

Which, as a grise\*, or step, may help these  
Into your favour.

When remedies are past, the griefs are ended,  
By seeing the worst, which late on hopes de-  
pend.

To mourn a mischief that is past and gone,  
Is the next way to draw new mischief on.

What cannot be preserved when fortune takes,  
Patience her injury a mockery makes.

The robb'd, that smiles, steals something from  
the thief ;

He robs himself, that spends a bootless grief.

*Bra.* So let the Turk of Cyprus us beguile ;  
We lose't not, so long as we can smile.

He bears the sentence well, that nothing bears  
But the free comfort which from thence he  
hears :

But he bears both the sentence and the sorrow,  
That, to pay grief, must of poor patience bor-

These sentences, to sugar, or to gall, [row  
Being strong on both sides, are equivocal :

But words are words ; I never yet did hear,  
That the bruised heart was pierced through the  
ear†. [of state.

I humbly beseech you, proceed to the affairs

*Duke.* The Turk with a most mighty pre-  
paration makes for Cyprus :—Othello, the for-  
titude of the place is best known to you : And  
though we have there a substitute of most  
allowed sufficiency, yet opinion, a sovereign  
mistress of effects, throws a more safer voice  
on you : you must therefore be content to  
slubber‡ the gloss of your new fortunes with  
this more stubborn and boisterous expedition.

*Oth.* The tyrant custom, most grave sena-  
tors,

Hath made the flinty and steel couch of war  
My thrice-driven bed of down : I do agnize§

A natural and prompt alacrity,  
I find in hardness ; and do undertake

These present wars against the Ottomites.  
Most humbly therefore bending to your state,

I crave fit disposition for my wife ;  
Due reference of place, and exhibition||.

With such accommodation, and besort,  
As levels with her breeding.

*Duke.* If you please,  
Be't at her father's.

*Bra.* I'll not have it so.

*Oth.* Nor I.

*Des.* Nor I ; I would not there reside,  
To put my father in impatient thoughts,

By being in his eye. Most gracious duke,  
To my unfolding lend a gracious ear ;

And let me find a charter in your voice,  
To assist my simpleness.

*Duke.* What would you, Desdemona ?

*Des.* That I did love the Moor to live with  
him,

My downright violence and storm of fortunes  
May trumpet to the world ; my heart's subdued  
Even to the very quality of my lord :

I saw Othello's visage in his mind ;  
And to his honours, and his valiant parts,

Did I my soul and fortunes consecrate.  
So that, dear lords, if I be left behind,

A moth of peace, and he go to the war,  
The rites, for which I love him, are bereft me,

And I a heavy interim shall support  
By his dear absence : Let me go with him.

*Oth.* Your voices, lords :—'beseech you, let  
Have a free way. [her will

Vouch with me, heaven ; I therefore beg it not,  
To please the palate of my appetite ;

Nor to comply with heat, the young affects¶,  
In my distinct and proper satisfaction ;

But to be free and bounteous to her mind :

\* *Grise* from degrees.

words of consolation.

† *i. e.*, That the wounds of sorrow were ever cured by the

‡ Obscure.

§ Acknowledge.

|| Allowance.

¶ Affections.

And heaven defend \* your good souls, that you think

I will your serious and great business scant,  
For she is with me: No, when light-wing'd toys

Of feather'd Cupid seel † with wanton dulness  
My speculative and active instruments,  
That my disports corrupt and taint my business,

Let housewives make a skillet ‡ of my helm §,  
And all indign and base adversities

Make head against my estimation! [mine,

*Duke.* Be it as you shall privately determine  
Either for her stay, or going: the affair cries  
—haste, [to-night.

And speed must answer it; you must hence  
*Des.* To-night, my lord?

*Duke.* This night.

*Oth.* With all my heart.

*Duke.* At nine i'the morning here we'll meet again.

Othello, leave some officer behind,  
And he shall our commission bring to you;  
With such things else of quality and respect,  
As doth import you.

*Oth.* Please your grace, my ancient;  
A man he is of honesty and trust:  
To his conveyance I assign my wife, [think  
With what else needful your good grace shall  
To be sent after me.

*Duke.* Let it be so.—  
Good night to every one.—[And, noble signior,  
[To BRABANTIO.

If virtue no delighted beauty lack,  
Your son-in-law is far more fair than black.

I Sen. Adieu, brave Moor! use Desdemona well. [to see;

*Bra.* Look to her, Moor; have a quick eye  
She has deceived her father, and may thee.

[Exeunt Duke, Senators, Officers, &c.

*Oth.* My life upon her faith.—Honest Iago,  
My Desdemona must I leave to thee;  
I pry'these, let thy wife attend on her;  
And bring them after in the best advantage.—  
Come, Desdemona; I have but an hour  
Of love, of worldly matters and direction,  
To spend with thee: we must obey the time.

[Exeunt OTHELLO and DESDEMONA.

*Rod.* Iago.

*Iago.* What say'st thou, noble heart?

*Rod.* What will I do, thinkest thou?

*Iago.* Why, go to bed, and sleep.

*Rod.* I will incontinently ¶ drown myself.

*Iago.* Well, if thou dost, I shall never love thee after it. Why, thou silly gentleman!

*Rod.* It is silliness to live, when to live is a torment: and then have we a prescription to die, when death is our physician.

*Iago.* O villanous! I have looked upon the world for four times seven years! and since I could distinguish between a benefit and an injury, I never found a man that knew how to love himself. Ere I would say, I would

drown myself for the love of a guinea-hen, I would change my humanity with a baboon.

*Rod.* What should I do? I confess, it is my shame to be so fond \*\*; but it is not in virtue to amend it.

*Iago.* Virtue? a fig! 'tis in ourselves, that we are thus, or thus. Our bodies are our gardens; to the which, our wills are gardeners: so that if we will plant nettles, or sow lettuce; set hyssop, and weed up thyme; supply it with one gender of herbs, or distract it with many; either to have it steril with idleness, or manured with industry; why, the power and corrigible authority of this lies in our wills. If the balance of our lives had not one scale of reason to poise another of sensuality, the blood and baseness of our natures would conduct us to most preposterous conclusions: But we have reason to cool our raging motions, our carnal stings, our unbitted †† lusts; whereof I take this, that you call—love, to be a sect ‡‡, or scion.

*Rod.* It cannot be.

*Iago.* It is merely a lust of the blood, and a permission of the will. Come, be a man: Drown thyself? drown cats, and blind puppies. I have professed me thy friend, and I confess me knit to thy deserving with cables of perdurable toughness; I could never better stead thee than now. Put money in thy purse; follow these wars; defeat thy favour with an usurped beard §§; Isay, put money in thy purse. It cannot be, that Desdemona should long continue her love to the Moor,—put money in thy purse;—nor he his to her: it was a violent commencement, and thou shalt see an answerable sequestration;—put but money in thy purse.—These Moors are changeable in their wills;—fill thy purse with money: the food that to him now is as luscious as locusts, shall be to him shortly as bitter as coloquintida. She must change for youth: when she is sated with his body, she will find the error of her choice.—She must have change, she must; therefore put money in thy purse.—If thou wilt needs damn thyself, do it a more delicate way than drowning. Make all the money thou canst: If sanctimony and a frail vow, betwixt an erring ¶ barbarian and a supersubtle Venetian be not too hard for my wits, and all the tribulation of hell, thou shalt enjoy her; therefore make money. A pox of drowning thyself! it is clean out of the way: seek thou rather to be hanged in compassing thy joy, than to be drowned and go without her.

*Rod.* Wilt thou be fast to my hopes, if I depend on the issue?

*Iago.* Thou art sure of me;—Go, make money:—I have told thee often, and I re-tell thee again and again, I hate the Moor: My cause is hearted: thine hath no less reason; Let us be conjunctive in our revenge against

\* Forbid.

† Because.

‡ Blind.

§ A small kettle.

|| Helmet.

¶ Immediately.

\*\* Foolish.

†† Unbridled.

‡‡ A sect is what the gardeners call a cutting.

§§ Change your countenance with a false beard.

¶¶ Wandering.

him: if thou canst cuckold him, thou dost thyself a pleasure, and me a sport. There are many events in the womb of time, which will be delivered. Traverse\*; go; provide thy money. We will have more of this to-morrow. Adieu.

*Rod.* Where shall we meet i'the morning?

*Iago.* At my lodging.

*Rod.* I'll be with thee betimes.

*Iago.* Go to; farewell. Do you hear, Ro-

*Rod.* What say you? [derigo?]

*Iago.* No more of drowning, do you hear.

*Rod.* I am changed. I'll sell all my land.

*Iago.* Go to; farewell: put money enough in your purse. *Exit* RODERIGO.

Thus do I ever make my fool my purse:

For I mine own gain'd knowledge should profane,

If I would time expend with such a snipe,  
But for my sport and profit. I hate the Moor;  
And it is thought abroad, that 'twixt my sheets

He has done my office: I know not if't be true;

But I, for mere suspicion in that kind,  
Will do, as if for surety. He holds me well;  
The better shall my purpose work on him.

Cassio's a proper man: Let me see now;

To get his place, and to plume up my will;  
A double knavery,—How? how?—Let me see:—

After some time, to abuse Othello's ear,

That he is too familiar with his wife:—

He hath a person, and a smooth dispose,

To be suspected; framed to make women

The Moor is of a free and open nature, [false.

That thinks men honest, that but seem to be

And will as tenderly be led by the nose, [so;

As asses are.

I hav't;—it is engender'd: Hell and night

Must bring this monstrous birth to the world's light. *[Exit.*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I. A Sea-Port Town in Cyprus. A Platform.

*Enter* MONTANO and Two Gentlemen.

*Mon.* What from the cape can you discern at sea? [flood;

*1 Gent.* Nothing at all: it is a high-wrought I cannot, 'twixt the heaven and the main,

Desery a sail. [at land;

*Mon.* Methinks, the wind hath spoke aloud

A fuller blast ne'er shook our battlements:

If it hath ruffian'd so upon the sea,

What ribs of oak, when mountains melt on them, [this?

Can hold the mortise? what shall we hear of

*2 Gent.* A segregation of the Turkish fleet:

For do but stand upon the foaming shore,

The chiding billow seems to pelt the clouds;

The wind-shaked surge, with high and monstrous main,

Seems to cast water on the burning bear ♄,

And quench the guards of the ever fixed pole:

I never did like molestation view

On th' enchain'd flood.

*Mon.* If that the Turkish fleet Be not in shelter'd and embay'd, they are

It is impossible they bear it out. [drown'd;

*Enter a third Gentleman.*

*3 Gent.* News, lords! our wars are done;

The desperate tempest hath so bang'd the Turks, [Venice

That their designment halts: A noble ship of Hath seen a grievous wreck and sufferance

On most part of their fleet.

*Mon.* How! is this true?

*3 Gent.* The ship is here put in, A Veronese; Michael Cassio,

Lieutenant to the warlike Moor, Othello, Is come on shore: the Moor himself's at sea,

And is in full commission here for Cyprus.

*Mon.* I am glad on't; 'tis a worthy governor.

*3 Gent.* But this same Cassio,—though he speak of comfort,

Touching the Turkish loss,—yet he looks sadly, [parted

And prays the Moor be safe; for they were With foul and violent tempest.

*Mon.* 'T'ray heaven he be;

For I have served him, and the man commands

Like a full soldier. Let's to the sea-side, ho!

As well to see the vessel that's come in,

As throw out our eyes for brave Othello;

Even till we make the main, and the aerial

An indistinct regard. [blue,

*3 Gent.* Come, let's do so;

For every minute is expectancy

Of more arrivance.

*Enter* Cassio.

*Cas.* Thanks to the valiant of this warlike isle,

That so approve the Moor; O, let the heavens

Give him defence against the elements,

For I have lost him on a dangerous sea

*Mon.* Is he well shipp'd?

*Cas.* His bark is stoutly timber'd, and his pilot

Of very expert and approved allowance;†

Therefore my hopes, not surfeited to death,

Stand in bold cue.

[Within.] A sail, a sail, a sail

*Enter another Gentleman.*

*Cas.* What noise? [o'the sea

*4 Gent.* The town is empty; on the brow

Stand ranks of people, and they cry—A sail.

*Cas.* My hopes do shape him for the gover-

nor. [courtesy;

*2 Gent.* They do discharge their shot of

[Guns heard.

Our friends, at least.

\* An ancient military word of command.

† Esteems. ‡ Separation. § The com-

pletion near the polar star. || Complete.

¶ Allowed and approved expertness.



*Cas.* I pray you, sir, go forth,  
And give us truth who 'tis that is arrived.

*2 Gent.* I shall. *[Exit.]*

*Mon.* But, good lieutenant, is your general  
wived? *[maid]*

*Cas.* Most fortunately : he hath achieved a  
That paragon description, and wild fame ;  
One that excels the quirks of blazoning pens,  
And in the essential vesture of creation,  
Does bear all excellency.—How now ? who  
has put in ?

*Re-enter second Gentleman.*

*2 Gent.* 'Tis one Iago, ancient to the general.

*Cas.* He has had most favourable and happy  
speed : *[winds,*

Tempests themselves, high seas, and howling  
The gutter'd rocks, and cougregated sands,  
Traitors ensteep'd to clog the guiltless keel,  
As having sense of beauty, do omit  
Their mortal \* natures, letting go safely by  
The divine Desdemona.

*Mon.* What is she ?

*Cas.* She that I spake of, our great captain's  
captain,

Left in the conduct of the bold Iago ?  
Whose footing here anticipates our thoughts,  
A se'nnight's speed. Great Jove, Othello  
guard, *[breath ;*

And swell his sail with thine own powerful  
That he may bless this bay with his tall ship,  
Make love's quick pants in Desdemona's arms,  
Give renew'd fire to our extincted spirits,  
And bring all Cyprus comfort !—O, behold,

*Enter DESDEMONA, EMILIA, IAGO, RODE-  
RIGO, and Attendants.*

The riches of the ship is come on shore !

Ye men of Cyprus, let her have your knees ;  
Hail to thee, lady ! and the grace of heaven,  
Before, behind thee, and on every hand,  
Enwheel thee round !

*Des.* I thank you, valiant Cassio.  
What tidings can you tell me of my lord ?

*Cas.* He is not yet arrived ; nor know I aught  
But that he's well, and will be shortly here.

*Des.* O, but I fear ;—How lost you com-  
pany ? *[skies]*

*Cas.* The great contention of the sea and  
Parted our fellowship : But, hark ! a sail.

*[Cry within, A sail, a sail! Then Guns heard.]*

*2 Gent.* They give their greeting to the cita-  
This likewise is a friend. *[del ;]*

*Cas.* See for the news.  
*[Exit Gentleman.]*

Good ancient, you are welcome ;—Welcome  
mistress :— *[to EMILIA.]*

Let it not gall your patience, good Iago,  
That I extend my manners ; 'tis my breeding  
That gives me this bold show of courtesy.

*[Kissing her.]*

*Iago.* Sir, would she give you so much of  
her lips,

As of her tongue she oft bestows on me,  
You'd have enough.

*Des.* Alas, she has no speech.

*Iago.* In faith, too much ;  
I find it still, when I have list † to sleep :

Marry, before your ladyship, I grant,  
She puts her tongue a little in her heart,  
And chides with thinking.

*Emil.* You have little cause to say so.

*Iago.* Come on, come on ; you are pictures  
out of doors, *[kitchens,*

Bells in your parlours, wild cats in your  
Saints in your injuries, devils being offended,  
Players in your housewifery, and housewives  
in your beds.

*Des.* O, fie upon thee, slanderer !

*Iago.* Nay, it is true, or else I am a Turk ;  
You rise to play, and go to bed to work.

*Emil.* You shall not write my praise.

*Iago.* No, let me not.

*Des.* What wouldst thou write of me, if  
thou shouldst praise me ?

*Iago.* O, gentle lady, do not put me to't ;  
For I am nothing, if not critical ‡.

*Des.* Come on, assay.—There's one gone

*Iago.* Ay, madam. *[to the harbour ?]*

*Des.* I am not merry ; but I do beguile  
The thing I am, by seeming otherwise.—

Come, how wouldst thou praise me ?  
*Iago.* I am about it ; but, indeed, my in-  
vention *[frize,*

Comes from my pate, as birdlime does from  
It plucks out brains and all : But my muse  
labours,

And thus she is deliver'd.  
If she be fair and wise,—fairness, and wit,

The one's for use, the other useth it.

*Des.* Well praised ! How if she be black  
and witty ? *[wit,*

*Iago.* If she be black, and thereto have a  
She'll find a white that shall her blackness fit.

*Des.* Worse and worse.

*Emil.* How, if fair and foolish ? *[fair ;]*

*Iago.* She never yet was foolish that was  
For even her folly help'd her to an heir.

*Des.* These are old fond † paradoxes, to  
make fools laugh i'th' alehouse. What miser-  
able praise hast thou for her that's foul and  
foolish ?

*Iago.* There's none so foul, and foolish there-  
unto, *[do.]*

But does foul pranks which fair and wise ones  
*Des.* O heavy ignorance !—thou praisest the  
worst best. But what praise couldst thou be-  
stow on a deserving woman indeed ! one, that,  
in the authority of her merit, did justly put on  
the vouch of very malice itself ? *[proud ;]*

*Iago.* She that was ever fair, and never  
Had tongue at will, and yet was never loud ;  
Never lack'd gold, and yet went never gay ;  
Fled from her wish, and yet said,—*now I may ;*  
She that, being anger'd, her revenge being nigh,  
Bade her wrong stay, and her displeasure fly :  
She, that in wisdom never was so frail,  
To change the cod's head for the salmon's tail ;  
She that could think, and ne'er disclose her  
mind,  
See suitors following, and not look behind ;  
She was a wight,—if ever such wight were,—  
*Des.* To do what ? *[beer]*

*Iago.* To snackle fools, and chronicle ‡

\* Deadly, destructive.

† Desire,

‡ Censorious.

§ Foolish

*Des.* O most lame and impotent conclusion!—Do not learn of him, Emilia, though he be thy husband.—How say you, Cassio? is he not a most profane and liberal\* counsellor?

*Cas.* He speaks home, madam; you may relish him more in the soldier, than in the scholar.

*Iago.* [*Aside.*] He takes her by the palm: Ay, well said, whisper: with as little a web as this, will I insnare as great a fly as Cassio. Ay, smile upon her, do; I will give thee in thine own courtship. You say true; 'tis so, indeed: if such tricks as these strip you out of your lieutenantship, it had been better you had not kissed your three fingers so oft, which now again you are most apt to play the sir in†. Very good; well kissed! an excellent courtesy! 'tis so, indeed. Yet again your fingers to your lips? would they were clyster-pipes for your sake?—[*Trumpet.*] The Moor, I know his trumpet.

*Cas.* 'Tis truly so.

*Des.* Let's meet him, and receive him.

*Cas.* Lo, where he comes!

*Enter OTHELLO, and Attendants.*

*Oth.* O my fair warrior!

*Des.* My dear Othello?

*Oth.* It gives me wonder great as my content,

To see you here before me. O my soul's joy! If after every tempest come such calms, May the winds blow till they have waken'd death!

And let the labouring bark climb hills of seas, Olympus-high; and duck again as low As hell's from heaven! If it were now to die, 'Twere now to be most happy; for I fear, My soul hath her content so absolute, That not another comfort like to this Succeeds in unknown fate.

*Des.* The heavens forbid, But that our loves and comforts should increase, Even as our days do grow.

*Oth.* Amen to that, sweet powers!—I cannot speak enough of this content, It stops me here; it is too much of joy: And this, and this, the greatest discords be.

[*Kissing her.*]  
That e'er our hearts shall make!

*Iago.* O, you are well tuned now! But I'll set down the pegs that make this music, As honest as I am.

*Oth.* Come, let's to the castle.—  
News, friends; our wars are done, the Turks are drown'd.

How do our old acquaintance of this isle?—  
Honey, you shall be well desired|| in Cyprus, I have found great love amongst them. O my I prattle out of fashion¶, and I dote [sweet, In mine own comforts.—I pry thee, good Iago, Go to the bay, and disembark my coffers: Bring thou the master to the citadel; He is a good one, and his worthiness

Does challenge much respect.—Come, Desdemona—more well met at Cyprus.

[*mona,*  
[*Exeunt OTHELLO, DESDEMONA,*  
and Attendants.

*Iago.* Do thou meet me presently at the harbour. Come hither. If thou be'st valiant as (they say) base men, being in love, have then a nobility in their natures more than is native to them,—list me\*\*. The lieutenant to-night watches on the court of guard:—First, I must tell thee this—Desdemona is directly in love with him.

*Rod.* With him! why, 'tis not possible.

*Iago.* Lay thy finger—thus, and let thy soul be instructed. Mark me with what violence she first loved the Moor, but for bragging, and telling her fantastical lies: And will she love him still for prating? let not thy discreet heart think it. Her eye must be fed; and what delight shall she have to look on the devil? When the blood is made dull with the act of sport, there should be,—again to inflame it, and to give satiety a fresh appetite,—loveliness in favour; sympathy in years, manners, and beauties; all which the Moor is defective in: Now, for want of these required conveniences, her delicate tenderness will find itself abused, begin to heave the gorge, disrelish and abhor the Moor; very nature will instruct her in it, and compel her to some second choice. Now, sir, this granted, (as it is a most pregnant and unforced position,) who stands so eminently in the degree of this fortune, as Cassio does? a knave very voluble; no further conscionable, than in putting on the mere form of civil and humane seeming, for the better compassing of his salt and most hidden loose affection? why, none; why, none: A slippery and subtle knave; a finder out of occasions: that has an eye can stamp and counterfeit advantages, though true advantage never present itself: A devilish knave! besides, the knave is handsome, young; and hath all those requisites in him, that folly and green minds†† look after: A pestilent complete knave; and the woman hath found him already.

*Rod.* I cannot believe that in her; she is full of most blessed condition††.

*Iago.* Blessed fig's end! the wine she drinks is made of grapes: if she had been blessed, she would never have loved the Moor: Blessed pudding! Didst thou not see her paddle with the palm of his hand? didst not mark that?

*Rod.* Yes, that I did; but that was but courtesy.

*Iago.* Lechery, by this hand; an index, and obscure prologue to the history of lust and foul thoughts. They met so near with their lips, that their breaths embrac'd together. Villanous thoughts, Roderigo! when these mutualities so marshal the way, hard at hand comes the master and main exercise, the incorporate conclusion: Pish!—But, sir, be you

Licentious, free-spoken.

† Shackle, fetter.

‡ Your good breeding and gaily.

§ Courtesy, in the sense of obedience, was applied to men as well as women.

¶ Much solicited by invitation.

¶ Out of method, without order.

\*\* Listen to me.

†† Minds unripe.

‡‡ Qualities, disposition of mind.

ruled by me: I have brought you from Venice. Watch you to-night; for the command, I'll lay† upon you: Cassio knows you not;—I'll not be far from you: Do you find some occasion to anger Cassio, either by speaking too loud, or tainting\* his discipline; or from what other course you please, which the time shall more favourably minister.

*Rod.* Well.

*Iago.* Sir, he is rash, and very sudden in choler; and, haply†, with his truncheon may strike at you: Provoke him, that he may; for, even out of that, will I cause these of Cyprus to mutiny; whose qualification shall come into no true taste again, but by the displanting of Cassio. So shall you have a shorter journey to your desires, by the means I shall then have to prefer; them; and the impediment most profitably removed, without the which there were no expectation of our prosperity.

*Rod.* I will do this, if I can bring it to any opportunity.

*Iago.* I warrant thee. Meet me by and by at the citadel: I must fetch his necessities ashore. Farewell.

*Rod.* Adieu.

[Exit.]

*Iago.* That Cassio loves her, I do well believe it;

[dit:]

That she loves him, 'tis apt, and of great credit. The Moor—howbeit that I endure him not,—Is of a constant, loving, noble nature;

And, I dare think, he'll prove to Desdemona A most dear husband. Now I do love her too; Not out of absolute lust, (though, peradventure, I stand accountant for as great a sin,) [ture, But partly led to diet my revenge, For that I do suspect the lusty Moor Hath leap'd into my seat: the thought whereof Doth, like a poisonous mineral, gnaw my inwards;

And nothing can or shall content my soul, Till I am even with him, wife for wife; Or failing so, yet that I put the Moor

At least into a jealousy so strong [do,— That judgment cannot cure. "Which thing to If this poor trash‡ of Venice, whom I trash||

For his quick hunting, stand the putting on, I'll have our Michael Cassio on the hip;

Abuse him to the Moor in the rank garb ¶— For I fear Cassio with my night-cap too;

Make the Moor thank me, love me, and reward me, making him egregiously an ass,‡ ward me,

And practising upon his peace and quiet Even to madness. 'Tis here, but yet confused;

Knavery's plain face is never seen, till used.

[Exit.]

## SCENE II. A Street.

*Enter a Herald, with a Proclamation; People following.*

*Her.* It is Othello's pleasure, our noble and valiant general, that upon certain tidings now arrived, importing the more\*\* perdition of the

Turkish fleet, every man put himself into triumph; some to dance, some to make bonfires, each man to what sport and revels his addiction leads him; for, besides these beneficial news, it is the celebration of his nuptials: So much was his pleasure should be proclaimed. All offices†† are open; and there is full liberty of feasting, from this present hour of five, till the bell hath told eleven. Heaven bless the isle of Cyprus, and our noble general, Othello!

[Exeunt.]

## SCENE III. A Hall in the Castle.

*Enter OTHELLO, DESDEMONA, CASSIO, and Attendants.*

*Oth.* Good Michael look you to the guard to night:

Let's teach ourselves that honourable stop, Not to out-sport discretion.

*Cas.* Iago hath direction what to do;

But, notwithstanding, with my personal eye Will I look to't.

*Oth.* Iago is most honest.

Michael, good night: To-morrow, with our earliest, [dear love,

Let me have speech with you.—Come, my The purchase made, the fruits are to ensue;

[To DESDEMONA.]

That profit's yet to come'twixt me and you.— Good night. [Exeunt OTH. DES. and Attend.]

*Enter IAGO.*

*Cas.* Welcome, Iago: We must to the watch.

*Iago.* Not this hour, lieutenant: 'tis not yet ten o'clock: Our general cast†† us thus early, for the love of his Desdemona; who let us not therefore blame; he hath not yet made wanton the night with her: and she is sport for Jove.

*Cas.* She's a most exquisite lady.

*Iago.* And, I'll warrant her full of game.

*Cas.* Indeed, she is a most fresh and delicate creature.

*Iago.* What an eye she has! methinks it sounds a parley of provocation.

*Cas.* An inviting eye; and yet methinks right modest.

*Iago.* And, when she speaks, is it not an alarm to love?

*Cas.* She is, indeed, perfection.

*Iago.* Well, happiness to their sheets. Come, lieutenant, I have a stoop of wine; and here without are a brace of Cyprus gallants, that would fain have a measure to the health of the black Othello.

*Cas.* Not to-night, good Iago: I have very poor and unhappy brains for drinking: I could well wish courtesy would invent some other custom of entertainment.

*Iago.* O, they are our friends; but one cup; I'll drink for you.

*Cas.* I have drunk but one cup to-night, and that was craftily qualified§§ too, and, behold, what innovation it makes here: I am unfortu-

\* Throwing a slur upon his discipline.

§ Worthless hound.

¶ In the grossest manner.

‡ Dismissed.

† Perhaps.

‡ To advance them.

|| The term for a clog put on a hound to hinder his running.

\*\* Entire.

†† Rooms, or places in the castle.

§§ Silly mixed with water.



nate in the infirmity, and dare not task my weakness with any more.

*Iago.* What, man! 'tis a night of revels; the gallants desire it.

*Cas.* Where are they?

*Iago.* Here at the door; I pray you, call them in.

*Cas.* I'll do't; but it dislikes me.

[*Exit* *CASSIO*.]

*Iago.* If I can fasten but one cup upon him, With that which he hath drunk to night already, He'll be as full of quarrel and offence As my young mistress' dog. Now, my sick fool, Roderigo, Whom love has turn'd almost the wrong side outward,

To Desdemona hath to-night caroused Potations pottle deep; and he's to watch: Three lads of Cyprus,—noble swelling spirits, That hold their honours in a wary distance, The very elements of this warlike isle,— Have I to-night fluster'd with flowing cups, And they watch too. Now, 'mongst this flock of drunkards,

Am I to put our Cassio in some action That may offend the isle:—But here they come: If consequence do but approve my dream, My boat sails freely both with wind and stream. *Re-enter* *CASSIO*, with him *MONTANO*, and Gentlemen.

*Cas.* 'Fore heaven, they have given me a rouse\* already.

*Mon.* Good faith, a little one; not past a pint, as I'm a soldier.

*Iago.* Some wine, ho!

*And let me the canakin clink, clink:* [*Sings.*  
*And let me the canakin clink;*

*A soldier's a man;*

*A life's but a span;*

*Why then let a soldier drink.*

Some wine, boys!

[*Wine brought in.*]

*Cas.* 'Fore heaven, an excellent song.

*Iago.* I learned it in England, where (indeed) they are most potent in potting: your Dane, your German, and your swag-bellied Hollander,—Drink, ho!—are nothing to your English.

*Cas.* Is your Englishman so expert in his drinking?

*Iago.* Why, he drinks you, with facility, your Dane dead drunk; he sweats not to overthrow your Almain; he gives your Hollander a vomit, ere the next pottle can be filled.

*Cas.* To the health of our general.

*Mon.* I am for it, lieutenant; and I'll do you justice†.

*Iago.* O sweet England!

*King Stephen was a worthy peer‡*

*His breeches cost him but a crown;*

*He held them sixpence all too dear,*

*With that he call'd the tailor lown§.*

*He was a wight of high renown,*  
*And thou art but of low degree:*

*'Tis pride that pulls the country down,*  
*Then take thine auld cloak about thee.*

Some wine, ho!

*Cas.* Why, this is a more exquisite song than the other.

*Iago.* Will you hear it again?

*Cas.* No: for I hold him to be unworthy of his place that does those things.—Well,—Heaven's above all; and there be souls that must be saved, and there be souls must not be saved.

*Iago.* It's true, good lieutenant.

*Cas.* For mine own part,—no offence to the general or any man of quality,—I hope to be saved.

*Iago.* And so do I too, lieutenant.

*Cas.* Ay, but, by your leave, not before me; the lieutenant is to be saved before the ancient. Let's have no more of this; let's to our affairs.—Forgive us our sins!—Gentlemen, let's look to our business. Do not think, gentlemen, I am drunk: this is my ancient;—this is my right hand, and this is my left hand:—I am not drunk now; I can stand well enough, and speak well enough.

*All.* Excellent well.

*Cas.* Why, very well, then: you must not think then that I am drunk. [*Exit.*]

*Mon.* To the platform, masters; come, let's set the watch.

*Iago.* You see this fellow that is gone before: He is a soldier, fit to stand by Cæsar [fore;— And give direction; and do but see his vice; 'Tis to his virtue a just equinox, The one as long as the other: 'tis pity of him. I fear, the trust Othello puts him in, On some odd time of his infirmity Will shake this island.

*Mon.* But is he often thus?

*Iago.* 'Tis evermore the prologue to his: He'll watch the horologe a double set||, [sleep: If drink rock not his cradle.

*Mon.*

It were well,

The general were put in mind of it. Perhaps, he sees it not; or his good nature Prizes the virtue that appears in Cassio, And looks not on his evils; Is not this true

*Enter* *RODERIGO*.

*Iago.* How now, Roderigo? [*Aside.*  
I pray you, after the lieutenant; go.

[*Exit* *RODERIGO*.]

*Mon.* And 'tis great pity, that the noble Moor

Should hazard such a place, as his own second With one of an ingraft¶ infirmity:

It were an honest action to say So to the Moor.

*Iago.* Not I, for this fair island: I do love Cassio well; and would do much To cure him of this evil. But hark! what noise? [*Cry within.*—Help! help!

*Re-enter* *CASSIO*, driving in *RODERIGO*.  
*Cas.* You rogue! you rascal!

\* A little more than enough.

† Drink as much as you do.

‡ A worthy fellow.

§ Clown.

|| While the clock strikes two rounds, or four-and-twenty hours.

¶ Rooted, settled.

*Mon.* What's the matter, lieutenant?  
*Cas.* A knave!—teach me my duty!  
 I'll beat the knave into a twiggen\* bottle.  
*Rod.* Beat me!

*Cas.* Dost thou prate, rogue?  
 [Striking RODERIGO.  
*Mon.* Nay, good lieutenant;  
 [Staying him.

I pray you, sir, hold your hand.  
*Cas.* Let me go, sir,  
 Or I'll knock you o'er the mazzard.

*Mon.* Come, come, you're drunk.  
*Cas.* Drunk! [They fight.  
*Iago.* Away, I say! go out, and cry—a mutiny.  
 [Aside to ROD., who goes out.

Nay, good lieutenant,—alas, gentlemen,—  
 Help, ho!—Lieutenant,—sir,—Montano,—sir;  
 Help, masters!—Here's a goodly watch, indeed!  
 [Bell rings.

Who's that that rings the bell?—Diablo, ho!  
 The town will rise, God's will, lieutenant!  
 You will be shamed for ever. [hold;

Enter OTHELLO and Attendants.

*Oth.* What is the matter here?

*Mon.* I bleed still, I am hurt to the death;—

*Oth.* Hold, for your lives. [he dies.

*Iago.* Hold, hold, lieutenant, sir, Montano, gentlemen,—

Have you forgot all sense of place and duty?  
 Hold, hold! the general speaks to you; hold,  
 for shame! [arise this?

*Oth.* Why, how now, ho! from whence  
 Are we turn'd Turks; and to ourselves do that  
 Which heaven hath forbid the Ottomites?

For Christian shame, put by this barbarous  
 brawl!

He that stirs next to carve for his own rage  
 Holds his soul light; he dies upon his motion.  
 Silence that dreadful bell, it frights the isle  
 From her propriety.—What is the matter,  
 masters?

Honest Iago, that look'st dead with grieving,  
 Speak, who began this? on thy love I charge  
 thee. [even now,

*Iago.* I do not know;—friends all but now,  
 In quarter, and in terms like bride and groom  
 Devesting them for bed: and then, but now,  
 (As if some planet had unwitting men,)   
 Swords out, and tilting one at other's breast,

In opposition bloody. I cannot speak  
 Any beginning to this peevish odds;  
 And 'would in action glorious I had lost  
 These legs, that brought me to a part of it!

*Oth.* How comes it, Michael, you are thus  
 forgot?

*Cas.* I pray you, pardon me, I cannot speak.

*Oth.* Worthy Montano, you were wont be  
 civil;

The gravity and stillness of your youth  
 The world hath noted, and your name is great  
 In mouths of wisest censure; What's the  
 matter,

That you unlace your reputation thus,  
 And spend your rich opinion for the name  
 Of a night brawler? give me answer to it.

*Mon.* Worthy Othello, I am hurt to danger;  
 Your officer, Iago, can inform you—  
 While I spare speech, which something now  
 offends me;

Of all that I do know: nor know I aught  
 By me that's said or done amiss this night;  
 Unless self-charity† be sometime a vice;  
 And to defend ourselves it be a sin,  
 When violence assails us.

*Oth.* Now, by heaven,  
 My blood begins my safer guides to rule;  
 And passion, having my best judgment col-  
 lied‡,

Assays to lead the way: If I once stir,  
 Or do but lift this arm, the best of you  
 Shall sink in my rebuke. Give me to know  
 How this foul rout began, who set it on;  
 And he that is approved|| in this offence,  
 Though he had twinn'd with me, both at a  
 birth,

Shall lose me.—What! in a town of war,  
 Yet wild, the people's hearts brimful of fear,  
 To manage private and domestic quarrel,  
 In night, and on the court and guard of safety!  
 'Tis monstrous.—Iago, who began it?

*Mon.* If partially affined¶, or leagued in  
 office,

Thou dost deliver more or less than truth,  
 Thou art no soldier.

*Iago.* Touch me not so near:  
 I had rather have this tongue cut from my  
 mouth,

Than it should do offence to Michael Cassio;  
 Yet, I persuade myself, to speak the truth  
 Shall nothing wrong him.—Thus it is, general.  
 Montano and myself being in speech,  
 There comes a fellow crying out for help;  
 And Cassio following him with determined  
 sword,

To execute upon him: Sir, this gentleman  
 Steps in to Cassio, and entreats his pause;  
 Myself the crying fellow did pursue,  
 Lest, by his clamour, (as it so fell out,)  
 The town might fall in fright: he, swift of  
 foot, [ther

Outran my purpose; and I return'd the ra-  
 For that I heard the clink and fall of swords,  
 And Cassio high in oath; which, till to-night,  
 I ne'er might say before: when I came back,  
 (For this was brief,) I found them close to-  
 gether,

At blow and thrust; even as again they were,  
 When you yourself did part them.

More of this matter can I not report:—  
 But men are men; the best sometimes forget:  
 Though Cassio did some little wrong to him,—  
 As men in rage strike those that wish them  
 best,—

Yet, surely, Cassio, I believe, received,  
 From him that fled, some strange indignity,  
 Which patience could not pass.

*Oth.* I know, Iago;  
 Thy honesty and love doth mince this matter,  
 Making it light to Cassio:—Cassio, I love thee,  
 But never more be officer of mine.—

\* A wicker'd bottle.

§ Darkened.

† i. e., You have thus forgot yourself.

|| Convicted by proof.

‡ Care of one's self.

¶ Related by nearness of office.

*Enter DESDEMONA, attended.*

Look if my gentle love be not raised up;  
I'll make thee an example.

*Des.* What's the matter, dear?

*Oth.* All's well now, sweeting; Come away  
Sir, for your hurts, [to bed.—  
Myself will be your surgeon: Lead him off.

[*To MONTANO, who is led off.*

*Iago*, look with care about the town;  
And silence those whom this vile brawl distracted.—

Come, Desdemona; 'tis the soldier's life,  
To have their balmy slumbers waked with strife.

[*Exeunt all but IAGO and CASSIO.*

*Iago.* What, are you hurt, lieutenant?

*Cas.* Ay, past all surgery.

*Iago.* Marry, heaven forbid!

*Cas.* Reputation, reputation, reputation! O,  
I have lost my reputation! I have lost the im-  
mortal part, sir, of myself, and what remains is  
bestial.—My reputation, Iago! my reputation!

*Iago.* As I am an honest man, I thought  
you had received some bodily wound; there  
is more offence in that than in reputation.  
Reputation is an idle and most false imposi-  
tion; oft got without merit, and lost without  
deserving: You have lost no reputation at  
all, unless you repute yourself such a loser.  
What, man! there are ways to recover the  
general again: You are but now cast in his  
mood\*, a punishment more in policy than in  
malice; even so as one would beat his of-  
fenceless dog, to affright an imperious lion:  
sue to him again, and he's yours.

*Cas.* I will rather sue to be despised, than  
to deceive so good a commander with so slight,  
so drunken, and so indiscreet, an officer.  
Drunk! and speak parrot†! and squabble,  
swagger, swear! and discourse fustian  
with one's own shadow!—O, thou invisible spirit  
of wine, if thou hast no name to be known by,  
let us call thee—devil!

*Iago.* What was he that you followed with  
your sword? What had he done to you?

*Cas.* I know not.

*Iago.* Is it possible?

*Cas.* I remember a mass of things, but no-  
thing distinctly; a quarrel, but nothing where-  
fore.—O, that men should out an enemy in  
their mouths to steal away their brains! that  
we should, with joy, revel, pleasure, and ap-  
plause, transform ourselves into beasts!

*Iago.* Why, but you are now well enough:  
How came you thus recovered?

*Cas.* It hath pleased the devil, drunkenness,  
to give place to the devil, wrath: one unper-  
fectness shows me another, to make me frankly  
despise myself.

*Iago.* Come, you are too severe a moraler:  
As the time, the place, and the condition of  
this country stands, I could heartily wish this  
had not befallen; but, since it is as it is, mend  
it for your own good.

*Cas.* I will ask him for my place again; he

shall tell me I am a drunkard! Had I as many  
mouths as Hydra, such an answer would stop  
them all. To be now a sensible man, by and  
by a fool, and presently a beast! O strange!—  
Every inordinate cup is unblessed, and the  
ingredient is a devil.

*Iago.* Come, come, good wine is a good  
familiar creature, if it be well used; exclaim  
no more against it. And, good lieutenant, I  
think you think I love you.

*Cas.* I have well approved it, sir.—I drunk!

*Iago.* You, or any man living, may be  
drunk at some time, man. I'll tell you what  
you shall do. Our general's wife is now the  
general;—I may say so in this respect, for  
that he hath devoted and given up himself to  
the contemplation, mark, and denotement, of  
her parts and graces;—confess yourself freely  
to her; importune her; she'll help to put  
you in your place again: she is of so free, so  
kind, so apt, so blessed, a disposition, that she  
holds it a vice in her goodness not to do more  
than she is requested: This broken joint, be-  
tween you and her husband, entreat her to  
splinter; and, my fortunes against any lay†  
worth naming, this crack of your love shall  
grow stronger than it was before.

*Cas.* You advise me well.

*Iago.* I protest, in the sincerity of love, and  
honest kindness.

*Cas.* I think it freely; and, betimes in the  
morning, I will beseech the virtuous Desde-  
mona to undertake for me: I am desperate of  
my fortunes if they check me here.

*Iago.* You are in the right. Good night,  
lieutenant; I must to the watch.

*Cas.* Good night, honest Iago.

[*Exit CASSIO.*

*Iago.* And what's he then, that says—I play  
the villain?

When this advice is free, I give, and honest,  
Probal to thinking, and (indeed) the course  
To win the Moor again? For, 'tis most easy  
The inclining Desdemona to subdue  
In any honest suit; she's framed as fruitful§  
As the free elements. And then for her  
To win the Moor,—were't to renounce his  
baptism,

All seals and symbols of redeemed sin,—  
His soul is so enfetter'd to her love,  
That she may make, unmake, do what she list,  
Even as her appetite shall play the god  
With his weak function. How am I then a  
villain,

To counsel Cassio to this parallel|| course,  
Directly to his good? Divinity of hell!  
When devils will their blackest sins put on,  
They do suggest¶ at first with heavenly shows,  
As I do now: For while this honest fool  
Plies Desdemona to repair his fortunes,  
And she for him pleads strongly to the Moor,  
I'll pour this pestilence into his ear,—  
That she repeats\*\* him for her body's lust,  
And, by how much she strives to do him good,  
She shall undo her credit with the Moor.

\* Dismissed in his anger.  
Liberal, bountiful.

|| Even.

† Talk idly.

¶ Tempt.

‡ Bet or wager.

\*\* Recalls.



So will I turn her virtue into pitch;  
And out of her own goodness make the net,  
That shall enmesh them all.—How now, Roderigo?

*Enter RODERIGO.*

*Rod.* I do follow here in the chase, not like a hound that hunts, but one that fills up the cry. My money is almost spent; I have been to-night exceedingly well cudgelled; and, I think, the issue will be—I shall have so much experience for my pains; and so, with no money at all, and a little more wit, return to Venice.

*Iago.* How poor are they, that have not patience!—

What wound did ever heal, but by degrees?

Thou know'st we work by wit, and not by witchcraft;

And wit depends on dilatory time.

Does't not go well? Cassio hath beaten thee,  
And thou, by that small hurt, hast cashier'd Cassio:

Though other things grow fair against the sun,  
Yet fruits that blossom first, will first be ripe:  
Content thyself awhile.—By the mass, 'tis morning;

Pleasure, and action, make the hours seem  
Retire thee; go where thou art billeted:

Away, I say; thou shalt know more hereafter:  
Nay, get thee gone. [*Exit ROD.*] Two things are to be done,—

My wife must move for Cassio to her mistress;  
I'll set her on:

Myself, the while, to draw the Moor apart,  
And bring him jump\* when he may Cassio find

Soliciting his wife:—Ay, that's the way;

Dull not device by coldness and delay. [*Exit.*]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I. *Before the Castle.*

*Enter CASSIO, and some Musicians.*

*Cas.* Masters, play here, I will content your pains, (row, general. [*Music.*]  
Something that's brief; and bid—good-mor-

*Enter CLOWN.*

*Clo.* Why, masters, have your instruments been at Naples, that they speak i'the nose thus?

1 *Mus.* How, sir, how!

*Clo.* Are these I pray you, called wind instruments?

1 *Mus.* Ay, marry, are they, sir.

*Clo.* O, thereby hangs a tail.

1 *Mus.* Whereby hangs a tale, sir?

*Clo.* Marry, sir, by many a wind instrument that I know. But, masters, here's money for you: and the general so likes your music, that he desires you, of all loves, to make no more noise with it.

1 *Mus.* Well, sir, we will not.

*Clo.* If you have any music that may not be heard, to't again: but, as they say, to hear music, the general does not greatly care.

1 *Mus.* We have none such, sir.

*Clo.* Then put up your pipes in your bag, for I'll away: Go; vanish into air; away.

[*Exeunt Musicians.*]

*Cas.* Dost thou hear, my honest friend?

*Clo.* No, I hear not your honest friend; I hear you.

*Cas.* Pr'ythee, keep up thy quietest. There's a poor piece of gold for thee; if the gentlewoman that attends the general's wife, be stirring, tell her, there's one Cassio entreats her a little favour of speech: Wilt thou do this?

*Clo.* She is stirring, sir; if she will stir I shall seem to notify unto her. [*Exit.*]

*Enter IAGO.*

*Cas.* Do, good my friend.—In happy time, Iago.

*Iago.* You have not been a-bed then?

*Cas.* Why, no; the day had broke

Before we parted. I have made bold, Iago,

To send in to your wife: My suit to her

Is, that she will to virtuous Desdemona

Procure me some access.

*Iago.* I'll send her to you presently;

And I'll devise a mean to draw the Moor  
Out of the way, that your converse and busi-

ness

May be more free. [*Exit.*]

*Cas.* I humbly thank you for't. I never

A Florentine more kind and honest. [*Knock*

*Enter EMILIA.*

*Emil.* Good morrow, good lieutenant: I am sorry

For your displeasure;†; but all will soon be well.

The general, and his wife, are talking of it;  
And she speaks for you stontly: The Moor replies,

That he you hurt is of great fame in Cyprus,  
And great affinity; and that, in wholesome wisdom,

He might not but refuse you: but he protests  
And needs no other suitor, but his likings,

To take the safest occasion by the front,  
To bring you in again.

*Cas.* Yet, I beseech you,—

If you think fit, or that it may be done,

Give me advantage of some brief discourse  
With Desdemona alone.

*Emil.* Pray you, come in;  
I will bestow you where you shall have time  
To speak your bosom freely.

*Cas.* I am much bound to you.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE II. *A Room in the Castle.*

*Enter OTHELLO, IAGO, and Gentlemen.*

*Oth.* These letters give, Iago, to the pilot

And, by him, do my duties to the state:

That done, I will be walking on the works,

Just at the time. † Nice distinctions. ‡ The displeasure you have incurred from Othello.

Repair there to me.

*Iago.* Well, my good lord, I'll do't.

*Oth.* This fortification, gentleman,—shall we see't?

*Gent.* We'll wait upon your lordship.

*Exeunt.*

SCENE III. *Before the Castle.*

*Enter DESDEMONA, CASSIO, and EMILIA.*

*Des.* Be thou assured, good Cassio, I will do all my abilities in thy behalf.

*Emil.* Good madam, do; I know it grieves As if the case were his. [my husband]

*Dev.* O, that's an honest fellow.—Do not doubt, Cassio,

But I will have my lord and you again As friendly as you were.

*Cas.* Bounteous madam, Whatever shall become of Michael Cassio, He's never any thing but your true servant.

*Des.* O, sir, I thank you: You do love my lord: [assured,] You have known him long; and be you well He shall in strangeness stand no further off Than in a politic distance.

*Cas.* Ay, but, lady, That policy may either last so long, Or feed upon such nice and waterish diet, Or breed itself so out of circumstance, That, I being absent, and my place supplied, My general will forget my love and service.

*Des.* Do not doubt that; before Emilia here, I give thee warrant of thy place: assure thee, If I do vow a friendship, I'll perform it To the last article: my lord shall never rest; I'll watch him tame\*, and talk him out of patience;

His bed shall seem a school, his board a shrift: I'll intermingle every thing he does [Cassio;] With Cassio's suit: Therefore be merry, For thy solicitor shall rather die, Than give thy cause away.

*Enter OTHELLO, and IAGO, at a distance.*

*Emil.* Madam, here comes My lord.

*Cas.* Madam, I'll take my leave.

*Des.* Why, stay, And hear me speak. [ease,

*Cas.* Madam, not now; I am very ill at Unfit for mine own purposes.

*Des.* Well, well, Do your discretion. [Exit CASSIO.]

*Iago.* Ha! I like not that.

*Oth.* What dost thou say?

*Iago.* Nothing, my lord: or if—I know not what. [wife?]

*Oth.* Was not that Cassio parted from my

*Iago.* Cassio, my lord? No, sure, I cannot think it,

That he would steal away so guilty-like, Seeing you coming.

*Oth.* I do believe 'twas he.

*Des.* How now, my lord? I have been talking with a suitor here, A man that languishes in your displeasure.

*Oth.* Who is't, you mean? [my lord.]

*Des.* Why, your lieutenant Cassio. Good If I have any grace, or power to move you, His present reconciliation take; For, if he be not one that truly loves you, That errs in ignorance, and not in cunning†, I have no judgment in an honest face: I pry'thee, call him back.

*Oth.* Went he hence now?

*Des.* Ay, sooth; so humbled, That he hath left part of his grief with me; I suffer with him. Good love, call him back.

*Oth.* Not now, sweet Desdemona; some

*Des.* But shall't be shortly? [other time.]

*Oth.* The sooner, sweet, for you.

*Des.* Shall't be to-night at supper?

*Oth.* No, not to-night.

*Des.* To-morrow dinner, then?

*Oth.* I shall not dine at home; I meet the captains at the citadel.

*Des.* Why then, to-morrow night; or Tuesday morn; [morn;]

Or Tuesday noon, or night; or Wednesday I pray thee, name the time; but let it not

Exceed three days: in faith, he's penitent; And yet his trespass, in our common reason,

(Save that, they say, the wars must make examples

Out of their best‡,) is not almost a fault To incur a private check: When shall he come?

Tell me, Othello. I wonder in my soul, What you could ask me, that I should deny, Or stand so mammering§ on. What! Michael Cassio, [time,

That came a wooing with you; and many a When I have spoke of you dispraisingly, Hath ta'en your part; to have so much to do To bring him in! Trust me, I could do much.

*Oth.* Pry'thee, no more: let him come I will deny thee nothing. [when he will;]

*Des.* Why, this is not a boon; 'Tis as I should entreat you wear your gloves, Or feed on nourishing dishes, or keep you Or sue to you to do peculiar profit [warm;] To your own person: Nay, when I have a suit,

Wherein I mean to touch your love indeed, It shall be full of poize|| and difficulty, And fearful to be granted.

*Oth.* I will deny thee nothing: Whereon, I do beseech thee, grant me this, To leave me but a little to myself. [lord.]

*Des.* Shall I deny you? no: Farewell, my

*Oth.* Farewell, my Desdemona: I will come to thee straight. [teach you;]

*Des.* Emilia, come:—Be it as your fancies Whate'er you be; I am obedient.

[Exit, with EMILIA.]

*Oth.* Excellent wretch! Perdition catch my soul,

But I do love thee! and when I love thee not, Chaos is come again.

*Iago.* My noble lord.

*Oth.* What dost thou say, Iago?

\* Hawks are tamed by keeping them from sleep.  
§ Hesitating.

† Knowledge.  
|| Weight.

‡ Best men.

*Iago.* Did Michael Cassio, when you woo'd  
Know of your love?

*Oth.* He did, from first to last: Why dost  
thou ask?

*Iago.* But for a satisfaction of my thought;  
No further harm.

*Oth.* Why of thy thought, Iago?

*Iago.* I did not think, he had been ac-  
quainted with her.

*Oth.* O, yes; and went between us very oft.

*Iago.* Indeed?

*Oth.* Indeed! ay, indeed:—Discern'st thou  
Is he not honest?

*Iago.* Honest, my lord?

*Oth.* Ay, honest.

*Iago.* My lord, for aught I know.

*Oth.* What dost thou think?

*Iago.* Think, my lord?

*Oth.* Think, my lord!

By heaven, he echoes me,  
As if there were some monster in his thought  
Too hideous to be shown.—Thou dost mean  
something:

I heard thee say but now,—Thou lik'd'st not  
When Cassio left my wife; What did'st not  
like?

And, when I told thee—he was of my counsel  
In my whole course of wooing, thou cry'd'st,  
Indeed?

And didst contract and purse thy brow toge-  
As if thou then had'st shut up in thy brain  
Some horrible conceit: If thou dost love me,  
Show me thy thought.

*Iago.* My lord, you know I love you.

*Oth.* I think, thou dost:  
And—for I know thou art full of love and  
honesty,  
And weigh'st thy words before thou giv'st  
Therefore these stops of thine fright me the  
more:

For such things, in a false disloyal knave,  
Are tricks of custom; but, in a man that's just,  
They are close denotements, working from the  
That passion cannot rule.

*Iago.* For Michael Cassio,—  
I dare be sworn, I think that he is honest.

*Oth.* I think so too.

*Iago.* Men should be what they seem;  
Or, those that be not, 'would they might seem  
none!

*Oth.* Certain, men should be what they  
*Iago.* Why then,

I think that Cassio is an honest man.

*Oth.* Nay, yet there's more in this:

I pray thee, speak to me as to thy thinkings.  
As thou dost ruminate; and give thy worst  
The worst of words.

*Iago.* Good my lord, pardon me:  
Though I am bound to every act of duty,  
I am not bound to that all slaves are free to,  
Utter my thoughts? Why, say, they are vile  
and false,—

As where's that palace, whereinto foul things  
Sometimes intrude not? who has a breast so  
But some uncleanly apprehensions

Keep leets\*, and law-days, and in session sit  
With meditations lawful?

*Oth.* Thou dost conspire against thy friend,  
If thou but think'st him wrong'd, and mak'st  
A stranger to thy thoughts.

*Iago.* I do beseech you,—  
Though I, perchance, am vicious in my guess,

As, I confess, it is my nature's plague  
To spy into abuses; and, oft, my jealousy  
Shapes faults that are not,—I entreat you  
then,

From one that so imperfectly conjects†,  
You'd take no notice; nor build yourself a  
trouble

Out of his scattering and unsure observance:  
It were not for your quiet, nor your good,  
Nor for my manhood, honesty, or wisdom,  
To let you know my thoughts.

*Oth.* What dost thou mean?

*Iago.* Good name, in man, and woman,  
dear my lord,

Is the immediate jewel of their souls:

Who steals my purse, steals trash; 'tis some-  
thing, nothing;

'Twas mine, 'tis his, and has been slave to  
But he, that filches from me my good name,  
Robs me of that, which not enriches him,  
And makes me poor indeed.

*Oth.* By heaven, I'll know thy thought.

*Iago.* You cannot, if my heart were in your  
hand;

Nor shall not, whilst 'tis in my custody.

*Oth.* Hal

*Iago.* O, beware, my lord, of jealousy  
It is the green-eyed monster, which doth  
mock

The meat it feeds on: That cuckold lives in  
Who, certain of his fate, loves not his wronger;  
But, O, what damned minutes tells he o'er,  
Who dotes, yet doubts; suspects, yet strongly  
loves!

*Iago.* Poor, and content, is rich, and rich  
enough;

But riches, finess†, is as poor as winter,  
To him that ever fears he shall be poor:—  
Good heaven, the souls of all my tribe defend  
From jealousy!

*Oth.* Why? why is this?

Think'st thou, I'd make a life of jealousy,  
To follow still the changes of the moon  
With fresh suspicions? No: to be once in  
doubt,

Is—once to be resolved: Exchange me for a  
goat,

When I shall turn the business of my soul  
To such exsufficate and blown surmises,  
Matching thy inference. 'Tis not to make me  
jealous,

To say—my wife is fair, feeds well, loves com-  
pany,  
Is free of speech, sings, plays, and dances  
well;

Where virtue is, these are more virtuous §:  
Nor from mine own weak merits will I draw  
The smallest fear, or doubt of her revolt;  
For she had eyes, and chose me: No, Iago;  
I'll see, before I doubt; when I doubt, prove

Courts of Inquiry.

† Conjectures.

‡ Endless, unbounded.

§ "Which makes fair gifts false"



And, on the proof, there is no more but this,—  
Away at once with love, or jealousy.

*Iago.* I am glad of this, for now I shall have reason

To show the love and duty that I bear you  
With franker spirit: therefore, as I am bound,  
Receive it from me:—I speak not yet of  
proof. [Cassio;

Look to your wife; observe her well with  
Wear your eye—thus, not jealous, nor secure;  
I would not have your free and noble nature,  
Out of self-bounty, be abused; look to't:

I know our country disposition well;  
In Venice they do let heaven see the pranks  
They dare not show their husbands; their best  
conscience

Is—not to leave undone, but keep unknown.

*Oth.* Dost thou say so? [you;

*Iago.* She did deceive her father, marrying  
And, when she seem'd to shake, and fear your  
She loved them most. [looks,

*Oth.* And so she did.

*Iago.* Why, go to, then;  
She that, so young, could give out such a  
seeming\*

To seal her father's eyes up, close as oak,—  
He thought, 'twas witchcraft:—But I am  
much to blame;

I humbly do beseech you of your pardon,  
For too much loving you.

*Oth.* I am bound to thee for ever.

*Iago.* I see, this hath a little dash'd your

*Oth.* Not a jot, not a jot. [spirits.

*Iago.* Trust me, I fear it has.

I hope, you will consider, what is spoke  
Comes from my love;—But, I do see you are  
moved:—

I am to pray you, not to strain my speech  
To grosser issues†, nor to larger reach,  
Than to suspicion.

*Oth.* I will not.

*Iago.* Should you do so, my lord,  
My speech should fall in such vile success

As my thoughts aim not at. Cassio's my worthy

My lord, I see you are moved. [friend:—

*Oth.* No, not much moved:—

I do not think but Desdemona's honest.

*Iago.* Long live she so! and long live you  
to think so! [itself,—

*Oth.* And yet, how nature erring from

*Iago.* Ay, there's the point:—As,—to be  
bold with you,—

Not to affect many proposed matches,  
Of her own clime, complexion, and degree;  
Where to, we see, in all things nature tends:  
Foh! one may smell, in such, a will most rank,  
Foul disproportion, thoughts unnatural.—

But pardon me; I do not, in position,  
Distinctly speak of her: though I may fear,  
Her will, recoiling to her better judgment,  
May fall to match you with her country forms,  
And (happily) repent.

*Oth.*

Farewell, farewell.

If more thou dost perceive, let me know more;  
Set on thy wife to observe: Leave me, *Iago.*

*Iago.* My lord, I take my leave. [Going.

*Oth.* Why did I marry?—This honest crea-  
ture, doubtless, [unfolds,

Sees and knows more, much more, than he

*Iago.* My lord, I would I might entreat  
your honour

To scan this thing no further; leave it to time;  
And, though it be fit that Cassio have his place,

(For, sure, he fills it up with great ability,)

Yet, if you please to hold him off a while,

You shall by that perceive him and his means:

Note if your lady strain his entertainment;

With any strong or vehement opportunity;

Much will be seen in that. In the mean time,

Let me be thought too busy in my fears,

(As worthy cause I have, to fear—I am.)

And hold her free, I do beseech your honour.

*Oth.* Fear not my government.

*Iago.* I once more take my leave. [Exit.

*Oth.* This fellow's of exceeding honesty,  
And knows all qualities, with a learned spirit,

Of human dealings: If I do prove her hag-  
gard‡, [strings,

Though that her jesses¶ were my dear heart,—  
I'd whistle her off, and let her down the wind,

To prey at fortune. Haply, for I am black;

And have not those soft parts of conversation

That chamberers\*\* have:—Or, for I am de-  
clined

Into the vale of years;—yet that's not much;—

She's gone; I am abused; and my relief

Must be—to loath her. O curse of marriage,

That we can call these delicate creatures ours,

And not their appetites! I had rather be a toad,

And live upon the vapour of a dungeon,

Than keep a corner in the thing I love

For others' uses. Yet, 'tis the plague of great  
ones;

Prerogative are they less than the base;

'Tis destiny unshunnable, like death;

Even then this forked plague is fated to us,

When we do quicken††. Desdemona comes:

Enter *DESDEMONA* and *EMILIA*.

If she be false, O then heaven mocks itself!—

I'll not believe it.

*Des.* How now, my dear Othello?

Your dinner, and the generous islanders

By you invited, do attend your presence.

*Oth.* I am to blame.

*Des.* Why is your speech so faint? are you  
not well?

*Oth.* I have a pain upon my forehead here.

*Des.* Faith, that's with watching; 'twill  
away again:

Let me but bind it hard, within this hour  
It will be well.

*Oth.* Your napkin†† is too little;

[He puts the Handkerchief from him,  
and it drops.

\* Appearance. † An expression from falconry: to seal a hawk is to sew up his eye-lids.

‡ Conclusions. § Press hard his re-admission to his pay and office.

|| A species of hawk, also a term of reproach applied to a wanton.

¶ Straps of leather by which a hawk is held on the fist.

\*\* Men of intrigue.

†† When we begin to live. ‡‡ In the north of England this term for a handkerchief is still used.

Let it alone. Come, I'll go in with you.

*Des.* I am very sorry that you are not well.

[*Exeunt OTH. and DES.*]

*Emil.* I am glad I have found this napkin :  
This was her first remembrance from the Moor :

My wayward husband hath a hundred times  
Woo'd me to steal it : but she so loves the token,

(For he conjured her, she would ever keep it,)

That she reserves it evermore about her,

To kiss and talk to. I'll have the work ta'en

And give it Iago : [out,

What he'll do with it, heaven knows, not I ;

I nothing but to please his fantasy.

*Enter IAGO.*

*Iago.* How now ! what do you here alone ?

*Emil.* Do not you chide ; I have a thing  
for you. [thing.

*Iago.* A thing for me ?—it is a common

*Emil.* Ha !

*Iago.* To have a foolish wife.

*Emil.* O, is that all ? What will you give  
me now

For that same handkerchief !

*Iago.* What handkerchief ?

*Emil.* What handkerchief !

Why, that the Moor first gave to Desdemona ;

That which so often you did bid me steal.

*Iago.* Hast stolen it from her ?

*Emil.* No, faith : she let it drop by neg-  
ligence ; [up.

And, to the advantage, I, being here, took't  
Look, here it is.

*Iago.* A good wench ; give it me.

*Emil.* What will you do with it, that you  
have been so earnest

To have me filch it ?

*Iago.* Why, what's that to you ?

[*Snatching it.*]

*Emil.* If it be not for some purpose of  
import,

Give it me again : Poor lady ! she'll run mad  
When she shall lack it.

*Iago.* Be not you known of't\* ; I have use  
for it.

Go, leave me. [*Exit EMILIA.*]

I will in Cassio's lodging lose this napkin,

And let him find it : Trifles, light as air,

Are, to the jealous, confirmations strong

As proofs of holy writ. This may do some-  
thing

The Moor already changes with my poison :

Dangerous conceits are, in their natures, poi-  
sons, [taste ;

Which, at the first, are scarce found to dis-  
But, with a little act upon the blood,

Burn like the mines of sulphur.—I did say so :

*Enter OTHELLO.*

Look, where he comes ! Not poppy, nor  
mandragora†,

Nor all the drowsy syrups of the world,

Shall ever medicine thee to that sweet sleep

Which thou ow'd'st ‡ yesterday.

*Oth.*

Ha ! ha ! false to me ?

To me ?

*Iago.* Why, how now, general ? no more  
of that. [on the rack :—

*Oth.* Avaunt ! be gone ! thou hast set me  
I swear, 'tis better to be much abused,  
Than but to know't a little.

*Iago.* How now, my lord !

*Oth.* What sense had I of her stolen hours  
of lust ?

I saw it not, thought it not ; it harm'd not me :

I slept the next night well, was free and merry ;

I found not Cassio's kisses on her lips :

He that is robb'd, not wanting what is stolen,

Let him not know it, and he's not robb'd at all.

*Iago.* I am sorry to hear this.

*Oth.* I had been happy, if the general camp

Pioneers § and all, had tasted her sweet body.

So I had nothing known : O now, for ever,

Farewell the tranquil mind ! farewell content !

Farewell the plumed troop, and the big wars

That make ambition virtue ! O, farewell !

Farewell the neighing steed, and the shrill  
trump,

The spirit-stirring drum, the ear-piercing fife,

The royal banner ; and all quality, [war !

Pride, pomp, and circumstance of glorious

And O, you mortal engines, whose rude throats

The immortal Jove's dread clamours coun-  
terfeit,

Farewell ! Othello's occupation's gone !

*Iago.* Is it possible ?—My lord,——

*Oth.* Villain, be sure thou prove my love a  
whore ;

Be sure of it ; give me the ocular proof ;

[*Taking him by the Throat.*]  
Or, by the worth of mine eternal soul,

Thou hadst been better have been born a dog,

Than answer my waked wrath.

*Iago.* Is it come to this ?

*Oth.* Make me see it ; or (at the least) so  
prove it,

That the probation bear no hinge, nor loop,  
To hang a doubt on : or woe upon thy life !

*Iago.* My noble lord,—— [me,

*Oth.* If thou dost slander her, and torture

Never pray more, abandon all remorse || ;

On horror's head horrors accumulate :

Do deeds to make heaven weep, all earth  
amazed,

For nothing canst thou to damnation add  
Greater than that.

*Iago.* O grace ! O heaven defend me !

Are you a man ? have you a soul or sense ?—

God be wi' you ; take mine office.—O  
wretched fool,

That livest to make thine honesty a vice !—

O monstrous world ! Take note, take note,

O world,

To be direct and honest is not safe.—

I thank you for this profit ; and from hence

I'll love no friend, since love breeds such  
offence.

*Oth.* Nay, stay :—Thou shouldst be honest.

\* Seem as if you knew nothing of the matter.

‡ Possessedst.

§ The vilest of the camp.

Pioneers were generally degraded soldiers.

|| All tenderness, all pity.

† The mandrake has a soporific quality.

*Iago.* I should be wise; for honesty's a  
And loses that it works for. [fool,

*Oth.* By the world,  
I think my wife be honest, and think she is  
not; [not;  
I think that thou art just, and think thou art  
I'll have some proof: Her name, that was as  
fresh

As Dian's visage, is now begrim'd and black  
As mine own face.—If there be cords, or  
knives,

Poison, or fire, or suffocating streams,  
I'll not endure 't.—Would I were satisfied!

*Iago.* I see, sir, you are eaten up with pas-  
sion: I do repent me that I put it to you. [sion:  
You would be satisfied.

*Oth.* Would? nay, I will.  
*Iago.* And may: but how? how satisfied,  
my lord?

Would you, the supervisor, grossly gape on?  
Behold her tupp'd?

*Oth.* Death and damnation! O!  
*Iago.* It were a tedious difficulty, I think,  
To bring them to that prospect: Damn them  
If ever mortal eyes do see them bolster, [then,  
More than their own? What then? how then?  
What shall I say? Where's satisfaction?

It is impossible you should see this, [keys,  
Were they as prime as goats, as hot as mon-  
As salt as wolves in pride, and fools as gross  
As ignorance made drunk. But yet, I say,  
If imputation and strong circumstances,—  
Which lead directly to the door of truth,—  
Will give you satisfaction, you may have it.

*Oth.* Give me a living\* reason she's dis-  
*Iago.* I do not like the office: [loyal.

But sith I am entered in this cause so far,  
Prick'd to it by foolish honesty and love,  
I will go on. I lay with Cassio lately;  
And, being troubled with a raging tooth,  
I could not sleep.

There are a kind of men so loose of soul,  
That in their sleeps will mutter their affairs;  
One of this kind is Cassio:

In sleep I heard him say, *Sweet Desdemona,*  
*Let us be wary, let us hide our loves!*

And then, sir, would he gripe, and wring my  
hand, [hard,

Cry, *O, sweet creature!* and then kiss me  
As if he pluck'd up kisses by the roots,  
That grew upon my lips: then laid his leg  
Over my thigh, and sigh'd, and kiss'd; and  
then [Moor!

Cry'd, *Cursed fate! that gave thee to the*  
*Oth.* O monstrous! monstrous!

*Iago.* Nay, this was but his dream.  
*Oth.* But this denoted a foregone conclu-  
sion; [dream.

'Tis a shrewd doubt, though it be but a  
*Iago.* And this may help to thicken other  
That do demonstrate thinly. [proofs,

*Oth.* I'll tear her all to pieces.  
*Iago.* Nay, but be wise: yet we see nothing  
done;

She may be honest yet. Tell me but this;  
Have you not sometimes seen a handkerchief,  
Spotted with strawberries, in your wife's  
hand? [first gift.

*Oth.* I gave her such a one; 'twas my  
*Iago.* I know not that; but such a hand-  
kerchief,

(I am sure it was your wife's,) did I to-day  
See Cassio wipe his beard with.

*Oth.* If it be that, or any that was hers,  
It speaks against her with the other proofs.

*Oth.* O, that the slave had forty thousand  
lives;

One is too poor, too weak for my revenge!  
Now do I see 'tis true. Look here, Iago;  
All my fond love thus I do blow to heaven:  
'Tis gone.

Arise, black vengeance, from thy hollow cell!  
Yield up, O love, thy crown, and hearted  
throne;

To tyrannous hate! swell, bosom, with thy  
For 'tis of aspicks' tongues! [sraught,

*Iago.* Pray, be content.

*Oth.* O, blood, Iago, blood!  
*Iago.* Patience, I say; your mind, perhaps,  
may change.

*Oth.* Never, Iago. Like to the Pontic sea,  
Whose icy current and compulsive course  
Ne'er feels retiring ebb, but keeps due on  
To the Propontic, and the Hellespont;  
Even so my bloody thoughts, with violent pace  
Shall ne'er look back, ne'er ebb to humble love  
Till that a capable and wide revenge  
Swallow them up.—Now, by yond' marble  
heaven,

In the due reverence of a sacred vow  
[Kneels.

I here engage my words.

*Iago.* Do not rise yet.— [Kneels.  
Witness, you ever-burning lights above!

You elements that clip us round about!  
Witness, that here Iago doth give up  
The execution of his wit, hands, heart, [mand,  
To wrong'd Othello's service! let him com-  
And to obey shall be in me remorse \*\*,  
What bloody work soever.

*Oth.* I greet thy love, [bounteous,  
Not with vain thanks, but with acceptance  
And will upon the instant put thee to't:  
Within these three days let me hear thee say,  
That Cassio's not alive.

*Iago.* My friend is dead; 'tis done, at your  
But let her live. [request:

*Oth.* Damn her, lewd minx! O, damn her!  
Come, go with me apart; I will withdraw,  
To furnish me with some swift means of death  
For the fair devil. Now art thou my lieutenant.

*Iago.* I am your own for ever. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE IV. The same.

Enter DESDEMONA, EMILIA, and Clown.

*Des.* Do you know, sirrah, where lieuten-  
nant Cassio lies?

\* Speaking, manifest.

† Since.

‡ The heart on which thou wast enthroned

§ Freight, load.

|| Capacious.

¶ Embrace.

\*\* Not of malice to others, but of

tenderness for him.



*Clo.* I dare not say, he lies any where.  
*Des.* Why, man?  
*Clo.* He is a soldier; and for me to say a soldier lies, is stabbing.  
*Des.* Go to; Where lodges he?  
*Clo.* To tell you where he lodges, is to tell you where I lie.  
*Des.* Can any thing be made of this?  
*Clo.* I know not where he lodges; and for me to devise a lodging, and say—he lies here, or he lies there, were to lie in my own throat.  
*Des.* Can you inquire him out, and be edified by report?  
*Clo.* I will catechize the world for him; that is, make questions, and by them answer.  
*Des.* Seek him, bid him come hither: tell him, I have moved my lord in his behalf, and hope, all will be well.  
*Clo.* To do this, is within the compass of man's wit; and therefore I will attempt the doing it. *[Exit.]*  
*Des.* Where should I lose that handkerchief, Emilia?  
*Emil.* I know not, madam.  
*Des.* Believe me, I had rather have lost my purse  
 Full of cruzadoes\*. And, but my noble Moor is true of mind, and made of no such baseness. As jealous creatures are, it were enough To put him to ill-thinking.  
*Emil.* Is he not jealous?  
*Des.* Who, he? I think, the sun, where he was born,  
 Drew all such humours from him.  
*Emil.* Look where he comes.  
*Des.* I will not leave him now, till Cassio Be call'd to him.—How is't with you, my lord.  
*Enter OTHELLO.*  
*Oth.* Well, my good lady:—*[Aside.]* O, hardness to dissemble!—  
 How do you, Desdemona?  
*Des.* Well, my good lord.  
*Oth.* Give me your hand: This hand is moist, my lady. *[sorrow.]*  
*Des.* It yet has felt no age, nor known no  
*Oth.* This argues fruitfulness, and liberal heart:— *[quires]*  
 Hot, hot, and moist: This hand of yours re-  
 A sequester from liberty, fasting and prayer,  
 Much castigation†, exercise devout;  
 For here's a young and sweating devil here,  
 That commonly rebels. 'Tis a good hand,  
 A frank one.  
*Des.* You may, indeed, say so:  
 For 'twas that hand that gave away my heart.  
*Oth.* A liberal hand: The hearts of old  
 gave hands;  
 But our new heraldry is—hands, not hearts.  
*Des.* I cannot speak of this. Come now  
*Oth.* What promise, chuck? your promise.  
*Des.* I have sent to bid Cassio come speak  
 with you. *[me;]*  
*Oth.* I have a salt and sullen rheum offends  
 Lend me thy handkerchief.  
*Des.* Here, my lord.  
*Oth.* That which I gave you.

*Des.* I have it not about me.  
*Oth.* Not?  
*Des.* No, indeed, my lord.  
*Oth.* That is a fault:  
 That handkerchief  
 Did an Egyptian to my mother give;  
 She was a charmer‡, and could almost read  
 The thoughts of people: she told her, while  
 she kept it, *[father]*  
 'Twould make her amiable, and subdue my  
 Entirely to her love: but if she lost it,  
 Or made a gift of it, my father's eye  
 Should hold her loathly, and his spirits should  
 hunt  
 After new fancies: She, dying, gave it me;  
 And bid me, when my fate would have me  
 wife,  
 To give it her. I did so: and take heed of't,  
 Make it a darling like your precious eye:  
 To lose or give't away, were such perdition,  
 As nothing else could match.  
*Des.* Is it possible? *[it:]*  
*Oth.* 'Tis true: there's magic in the web of  
 A sibyl, that had number'd in the world  
 The sun to make two hundred compasses,  
 In her prophetic fury sew'd the work: *[silk;]*  
 The worms were hallow'd, that did breed the  
 And it was dy'd in mummy, which the skilful  
 Conserved of maidens' hearts.  
*Des.* Indeed! is't true?  
*Oth.* Most veritable; therefore look to't well.  
*Des.* Then 'would to heaven, that I had ne-  
*Oth.* Ha! wherefore? *[ver seen it]*  
*Des.* Why do you speak so startingly and  
 rash? *[the way?]*  
*Oth.* Is't lost? is't gone? speak, is it out of  
*Des.* Heaven bless us!  
*Oth.* Say you?  
*Des.* It is not lost; But what an if it were?  
*Oth.* Ha!  
*Des.* I say, it is not lost.  
*Oth.* Fetch't, let me see it.  
*Des.* Why, so I can, sir, but I will not now;  
 This is a trick, to put me from my suit;  
 I pray, let Cassio be received again.  
*Oth.* Fetch me that handkerchief: my mind  
*Des.* Come, come; *[misgives.]*  
 You'll never meet a more sufficient man.  
*Oth.* The handkerchief,—  
*Des.* I pray, talk me of Cassio.  
*Oth.* The handkerchief,—  
*Des.* A man that, all his time,  
 Hath founded his good fortune on your love;  
 Shared dangers with you;—  
*Oth.* The handkerchief,—  
*Des.* In sooth,  
 You are to blame.  
*Oth.* Away! *[Exit OTHELLO.]*  
*Emil.* Is not this man jealous?  
*Des.* I ne'er saw this before.  
 Sure, there's some wonder in this handker-  
 I am most unhappy in the loss of it. *[chief:]*  
*Emil.* 'Tis not a year or two shows us a  
 man: *[food;]*  
 They are all but stomachs, and we are but  
 They eat us hungrily, and when they are full,

\* A Portuguese coin.

† Penance, discipline.

‡ Enchantress.

§ Vehement, w. ut.

They belch us. Look you! Cassio, and my husband.

*Enter IAGO and CASSIO.*

*Iago.* There is no other way; 'tis she must do't; [her.

And, lo, the happiness! go, and importune

*Des.* How now? good Cassio? what's the news with you? [you?

*Cas.* Madam, my former suit: I do beseech

That, by your virtuous means, I may again

Exist, and be a member of his love,

Whom I, with all the duty of my heart,

Entirely honour: I would not be delay'd:

If my offence be of such mortal kind,

That neither service past, nor present sorrows,

Nor purposed merit in futurity,

Can ransom me into his love again,

But to know so must be my benefit;

So shall I clothe me in a forced content,

And shut myself up in some other course,

To fortune's alms.

*Des.* Alas! thrice-gentle Cassio,

My advocacy is not now in tune; [him,

My lord is not my lord; nor should I know

Were he in favour\*, as in humour, alter'd.

So help me, every spirit sanctified,

As I have spoken for you all my best;

And stood within the blank† of his displeasure

For my free speech! You must a while be

patient:

What I can do, I will; and more I will,

Than for myself I dare: let that suffice you.

*Iago.* Is my lord angry?

*Emil.* He went hence but now,

And, certainly, in strange unquietness. [non,

*Iago.* Can he be angry? I have seen the can-

When it hath blown his ranks into the air;

And, like the devil, from his very arm [gry?

Puff'd his own brother;—And can he be an-

Something of moment, then: I will go meet

him;

There's matter in't indeed, if he be angry.

*Des.* I pry'thee, do so.—Something, sure,

of state,— [Exit IAGO.

Either from Venice; or some unhatch'd prac-

tice‡,

Made demonstrable here in Cyprus to him,—

Hath puddled his clear spirit: and, in such

cases,

Men's natures wrangle with inferior things,

Though great ones are their object. 'Tis even

For let our finger ache, and it indues [so;

Our other healthful members ev'n to that sense

Of pain: Nay, we must think, men are not

Nor of them look for such observances [gods;

As fit the bridal.—Beshrew me much, Emilia,

I was (unhandsome warrior as I am.)

Arraigning his unkindness with my soul:

But now I find, I had suborn'd the witness,

And he's indicted falsely.

*Emil.* Pray heaven, it be state matters, as

you think;

And no conception, nor no jealous toy,

Concerning you.

*Des.* Alas, the day? I never gave him cause.

*Emil.* But jealous souls will not be answered!

They are not ever jealous for the cause, [so;

But jealous for they are jealous: 'tis a monster,

Begot upon itself, born on itself.

*Des.* Heaven keep that monster from

Othello's mind!

*Emil.* Lady, amen.

*Des.* I will go seek him.—Cassio walk here-

about:

If I do find him fit, I'll move your suit,

And seek to effect it to my uttermost.

*Cas.* I humbly thank your ladyship.

[Exit DESDEMONA and EMILIA

*Enter BIANCA.*

*Bian.* Save you, friend Cassio!

*Cas.* What make you from home?

How is it with you, my most fair Bianca?

I' faith, sweet love, I was coming to your house.

*Bian.* And I was going to your lodging,

Cassio. [nights?

What! keep a week away? seven days and

Eight score eight hours? and lovers' absent

hours,

More tedious than the dial eight score times?

O weary reckoning!

*Cas.* Pardon me, Bianca!

I have this while with leaden thoughts been

But I shall in a more continue time||, [press'd;

Strike off this score of absence. Sweet Bianca,

[Giving her DESDEMONA's Handkerchief.

Take me this work out ¶.

*Bian.* O, Cassio, whence came this?

This is some token from a newer friend.

To the felt absence now I feel a cause:

Is it come to this? Well, well.

*Cas.* Woman, go to!

Throw your vile guesses in the devil's teeth,

From whence you have them. You are jealous

now, [brance:

That this is from some mistress, some remem-

No, in good troth, Bianca.

*Bian.* Why, whose is it?

*Cas.* I know not, sweet: I found it in my

chamber.

I like the work well; ere it be demanded,

(As like enough, it will,) I'd have it copied

Take it, and do't; and leave me for this time.

*Bian.* Leave you! wherefore?

*Cas.* I do attend here on the general;

And think it no addition, nor my wish,

To have him see me woman'd.

*Bian.* Why, I pray you?

*Cas.* Not that I love you not.

*Bian.* But that you do not love me.

I pray you, bring me on the way a little;

And say, if I shall see you soon at night.

*Cas.* 'Tis but a little way, that I can bring

For I attend here: but I'll see you soon. [you,

*Bian.* 'Tis very good; I must be circum-

stanced. [Exit.

\* In countenance. † Within the shot of his anger. ‡ Treason. § The nuptial feast.  
¶ Time less interrupted. ¶ The meaning is not pick out the work, but copy this work in  
another handkerchief.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I. *The same.**Enter OTHELLO and IAGO.**Iago.* Will you think so?*Oth.* Think so, Iago?*Iago.* What,

To kiss in private?

*Oth.* An unauthorized kiss.*Iago.* Or to be naked with her friend abed,  
An hour, or more, not meaning any harm?*Oth.* Naked abed, Iago, and not mean harm?  
It is hypocrisy against the devil:They that mean virtuously, and yet do so,  
The devil their virtue tempts, and they tempt  
heaven.*Iago.* So they do nothing, 'tis a venial slip:  
But if I give my wife a handkerchief,—*Oth.* What then?*Iago.* Why then 'tis hers, my lord; and being  
She may, I think, bestow't on any man. [hers,*Oth.* She is protectress of her honour too;  
May she give that? [seen;*Iago.* Her honour is an essence that's not  
They have it very oft, that have it not:

But, for the handkerchief,— [forgot it:—

*Oth.* By heaven, I would most gladly have  
Thou said'st,—O, it comes o'er my memory,  
As doth the raven o'er the infected house,  
Boding to all\*—he had my handkerchief.*Iago.* Ay, what of that?*Oth.* That's not so good, now.*Iago.* What, if I had said, I had seen him  
do you wrong?Or heard him say,—As knaves be such abroad,  
Who having, by their own importunate suit,  
Or voluntary dotage of some mistress,  
Convinced or supplied† them, cannot choose  
But they must blab—*Oth.* Hath he said any thing?*Iago.* He hath, my lord; but be you well  
No more than he'll unswear. [assured*Oth.* What hath he said?*Iago.* 'Faith, that he did,—I know not what*Oth.* What? what? [he did.*Iago.* Lie—*Oth.* With her?*Iago.* With her, on her; what you will.*Oth.* Lie with her! lie on her!—We say, lie  
on her, when they belie her: Lie with her!  
that's fulsome.—Handkerchief,—confessions,  
—handkerchief.—To confess, and be hanged  
for his labour‡.—First to be hanged, and then  
to confess:—I tremble at it. Nature would not  
invest herself in such shadowing passion, with-  
out some instruction. It is not words, that  
shake me thus:—Pish!—Noses, ears, and lips:  
—Is it possible?—Confess!—Handkerchief!—  
O devil!— [Falls in a Trance.*Iago.* Work on, [caught;  
My medicine, work! Thus credulous fools are  
And many worthy and chaste dames, even  
thus,All guiltless meet reproach.—What, ho! my  
lord!*Enter CASSIO.*My lord, I say! Othello!—How now, Cassio?  
*Cas.* What is the matter?*Iago.* My lord is fallen into an epilepsy;  
This is his second fit, he had one yesterday.*Cas.* Rub him about the temples.*Iago.* No, forbear:The lethargy must have his quiet course:  
If not, he foams at mouth; and, by and by,  
Breaks out to savage madness. Look, he stirs:  
Do you withdraw yourself a little while,  
He will recover straight; when he is gone,  
I would on great occasion speak with you.—

[Exit CASSIO.

How is it, general? have you not hurt your

*Oth.* Dost thou mock me? [head?*Iago.* I mock you! no, by heaven:  
'Would, you would bear your fortunes like a  
man.*Oth.* A horned man's a monster, and a beast.*Iago.* There's many a beast, then, in a popu-  
And many a civil monster. [lous city,*Oth.* Did he confess it?*Iago.* Good sir, be a man;Think, every bearded fellow, that's but yoked  
May draw with you: there's millions now alive  
That nightly lie in those unproper beds,  
Which they dare swear peculiar; your case is  
better.O, 'tis the spite of hell, the fiend's arch-mock,  
To lip a wanton in a secure couch,And to suppose her chaste! No, let me know;  
And, knowing what I am, I know what she*Oth.* O, thou art wise; 'tis certain. [shall be.*Iago.* Stand you awhile apart;  
Confine yourself but in a patient list].Whilst you were here, ere while mad with your  
(A passion most unsuiting such a man,) [grief,Cassio came hither: I shifted him away,  
And laid good 'scuse upon your ecstasy; [me:Bade him anon return, and here speak with  
The which he promised. Do but encave†

yourself, [scorns,

And mark the fleers, the gibes, and notable  
That dwell in every region of his face;For I will make him tell the tale anew,—  
Where, how, how oft, how long ago, and whenHe hath, and is again to cope your wife;  
I say, but mark his gesture. Marry, patience;Or I shall say, you are all in all in spleen,  
And nothing of a man.*Oth.* Dost thou hear, IagoI will be found most cunning in my patience;  
But (dost thou hear?) most bloody.*Iago.* That's not amiss;But yet keep time in all. Will you withdraw?  
[OTHELLO withdraws.Now will I question Cassio of Bianca,  
A housewife, that, by selling her desires,

\* The raven was thought to be a constant attendant on a house infected with the plague.

† Old spelling of supplied, i. e., softened.

‡ A proverbial saying.

§ Common.

|| Within the bounds of patience.

¶ Hide.



Buy herself bread and clothes: it is a creature,  
That dotes on Cassio,—as 'tis the strumpet's  
plague,

To beguile many, and be beguiled by one;  
He, when he hears of her, cannot refrain  
From the excess of laughter:—Here he comes:

*Re-enter Cassio.*

As he shall smile, Othello shall go mad;  
And his unbookish\* jealousy must construe  
Poor Cassio's smiles, gestures, and light be-  
haviour

Quite in the wrong.—How do you now, lieuten-  
tenant?

*Cas.* The worse, that you give me the ad-  
Whose want even kills me. [dition†.

*Iago.* Ply Desdemona well, and you are  
sure of't.

Now, if this suit lay in Bianca's power,  
[*Speaking lower.*

How quickly should you speed?

*Cas.* Alas, poor catiff!

*Oth.* Look, how he laughs already! [*Aside.*

*Iago.* I never knew a woman love man so.

*Cas.* Alas, poor rogue! I think I'faith she  
oves me.

*Oth.* Now he denies it faintly, and laughs it  
out. [*Aside.*

*Iago.* Do you hear, Cassio?

*Oth.* Now he importunes him  
To tell it o'er: Go to; well said, well said.

[*Aside.*

*Iago.* She gives it out, that you shall marry  
Do you intend it? [her:

*Cas.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Oth.* Do you triumph, Roman? do you  
triumph? [*Aside.*

*Cas.* I marry her!—what? a customer?† I  
pr'ythee, bear some charity to my wit; do not  
think it so unwholesome. Ha, ha, ha!

*Oth.* So, so, so, so: They laugh that win.  
[*Aside.*

*Iago.* 'Faith, the cry goes, that you shall  
marry her.

*Cas.* Pr'ythee, say true.

*Iago.* I am a very villain else.

*Oth.* Have you scored me? Well. [*Aside.*

*Cas.* This is the monkey's own giving out:  
she is persuaded I will marry her, out of her  
own love and flattery, not out of my promise.

*Oth.* Iago beckons me; now he begins the  
story. [*Aside.*

*Cas.* She was here even now; she haunts  
me in every place. I was, the other day, talk-  
ing on the sea-bank with certain Venetians;

and thither comes this bauble; by this hand,  
she falls thus about my neck;—

*Oth.* Crying, O dear Cassio! as it were: his  
gesture imports it. [*Aside.*

*Cas.* So hangs, and lolls, and weeps upon  
me; so hales, and pulls me: ha, ha, ha!

*Oth.* Now he tells, how she pluck'd him to  
my chamber: O, I see that nose of yours, but  
not that dog I shall throw it to. [*Aside.*

*Cas.* Well, I must leave her company.

*Iago.* Before me! look where she comes.

*Enter BIANCA.*

*Cas.* 'Tis such another fitchew‡! marry, a  
perfumed one.—What do you mean by this  
haunting of me?

*Bian.* Let the devil and his dam haunt you!  
What did you mean by that same handkerchief,  
you gave me even now? I was a fine fool to  
take it. I must take out the whole work?—A  
likely piece of work, that you should find it in  
your chamber, and not know who left it there!  
This is some minx's token, and I must take out  
the work? There,—give it your hobby-horse:  
wheresoever you had it, I'll take out no work  
on't.

*Cas.* How now, my sweet Bianca? how  
now? how now?

*Oth.* By heaven, that should be my hand-  
kerchief! [*Aside.*

*Bian.* An you'll come to supper to-night,  
you may: an you will not, come when you are  
next prepared for. [*Exit.*

*Iago.* After her, after her.

*Cas.* 'Faith I must, she'll rail in the street else.

*Iago.* Will you sup there?

*Cas.* 'Faith, I intend so.

*Iago.* Well, I may chance to see you; for I  
would very fain speak with you.

*Cas.* Pr'ythee, come; Will you?

*Iago.* Go to; say no more. [*Exit Cassio.*

*Oth.* How shall I murder him, Iago?

*Iago.* Did you perceive how he laughed at  
his vice?

*Oth.* O, Iago!

*Iago.* And did you see the handkerchief?

*Oth.* Was that mine?

*Iago.* Yours, by this hand: and to see how  
he prizes the foolish woman, your wife! she  
gave it him, and he hath given it his whore.

*Oth.* I would have him nine years a killing:  
—A fine woman! a fair woman! a sweet  
woman!

*Iago.* Nay, you must forget that.

*Oth.* Ay, let her rot, and perish, and be  
damned to-night; for she shall not live: No,  
my heart is turned to stone; I strike it, and it  
hurts my hand. O, the world hath not a sweeter  
creature: she might lie by an emperor's side,  
and command him tasks.

*Iago.* Nay, that's not your way.

*Oth.* Hang her! I do but say what she is:—  
So delicate with her needle!—An admirable  
musician! O, she will sing the savageness out  
of a bear!—Of so high and plenteous wit and  
invention!—

*Iago.* She's the worse for all this.

*Oth.* O, a thousand, a thousand times:—And  
then, of so gentle a condition!†

*Iago.* Ay, too gentle.

*Oth.* Nay, that's certain: But yet the pity  
of it, Iago!—O, Iago, the pity of it, Iago!

*Iago.* If you are so fond over her iniquity,  
give her patent to offend; for, if it touch not  
you, it comes near nobody.

*Oth.* I will chop her into messes:—Cuckold  
me!

\* Ignorant.

† Title of lieutenant.

‡ A common woman.

§ A pole-cat.

|| Of so sweet a disposition.

*Iago.* O, 'tis foul in her.

*Oth.* With mine officer!

*Iago.* That's fouler.

*Oth.* Get me some poison, Iago; this night: I'll not expostulate with her, lest her body and beauty unprovide my mind again: this night, Iago.

*Iago.* Do it not with poison, strangle her in her bed, even the bed she hath contaminated.

*Oth.* Good, good: the justice of it pleases; very good.

*Iago.* And, for Cassio,—let me be his undertaker: You shall hear more by midnight.

[A Trumpet within.]

*Oth.* Excellent good.—What trumpet is that same?

[Lodovico,

*Iago.* Something from Venice, sure. 'Tis Come from the duke: and, see, your wife is with him.

*Enter LODOVICO, DESDEMONA, and Attendants.*

*Lod.* 'Save you, worthy general!

*Oth.* With all my heart, sir.

*Lod.* The duke and senators of Venice greet you.

[Gives him a Packet.

*Oth.* I kiss the instrument of their pleasures.

[Opens the Packet and reads.

*Des.* And what's the news, good cousin Lodovico?

*Iago.* I am very glad to see you, signior; Welcome to Cyprus.

[Cassio?

*Lod.* I thank you: How does lieutenant

*Iago.* Lives, sir.

[and my lord

*Des.* Cousin, there's fallen between him An unkind blow: but you shall make all

*Oth.* Are you sure of that?

[well.

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* This full you not to do, as you will—

[Reads.

*Lod.* He did not call; he's busy in the paper.

Is there division 'twixt thy lord and Cassio?

*Des.* A most unhappy one; I would do much

To atone\* them, for the love I bear to Cassio.

*Oth.* Fire and brimstone!

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* Are you wise?

*Des.* What, is he angry?

*Lod.* May be, the letter moved him:

For, as I think, they do command him home, Deputing Cassio in his government.

*Des.* By my troth, I am glad on't.

*Oth.* Indeed.

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* I am glad to see you mad.

*Des.* How, sweet Othello?

*Oth.* Devil!

[Striking her.

*Des.* I have not deserved this.

*Lod.* My lord, this would not be believed in Venice,

[much;

Though I should swear I saw it: 'Tis very Make her amends, she weeps.

*Oth.* O devil, devil!

If that the earth could teem with woman's tears,

Each drop she falls would prove a crocodile:— Out of my sight!

*Des.* I will not stay to offend you.

[Going.

*Lod.* Truly, an obedient lady:—

I do beseech your lordship, call her back.

*Oth.* Mistress,——

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* What would you with her, sir?

*Lod.* Who, I, my lord?

[her turn:

*Oth.* Ay; you did wish, that I would make

Sir, she can turn, and turn, and yet go on,

And turn again; and she can weep, sir, weep;

And she's obedient, as you say,—obedient,—

Very obedient;—Proceed you in your tears.—

Concerning this, sir,—O well-painted passion!

I am commanded home:—Get you away;

I'll send for you anon.—Sir, I obey the man-

date,

And will return to Venice;—Hence, avaunt!

[Exit DESDEMONA.

Cassio shall have my place. And,—sir, to-night,

I do entreat that we may sup together.

You are welcome, sir, to Cyprus.—Goats; and monkeys!

[Exit.

*Lod.* Is this the noble Moor whom our full

[ture

Call—all-in-all sufficient?—This the noble na-

Whom passion could not shake? whose solid virtue

The shot of accident, nor dart of chance, Could neither graze, nor pierce?

*Iago.* He is much changed.

*Lod.* Are his wits safe? is he not light of brain?

[my censure.

*Iago.* He is that he is; I may not breathe What he might be,—if, what he might, he is

I would to heaven, he were.

[not,—

*Lod.* What, strike his wife!

*Iago.* 'Faith, that was not so well: Yet

'would I knew,

That stroke would prove the worst.

*Lod.* Is it his use?

Or did the letters work upon his blood,

And new-create this fault?

*Iago.* Alas, alas!

It is not honest in me, to speak [serve him; What I have seen and known. You shall ob-

And his own courses will denote him so,

That I may save my speech; Do but go after,

And mark how he continues.

*Lod.* I am sorry that I am deceived in him.

[Exit.

## SCENE II. A Room in the Castle.

*Enter OTHELLO and EMILIA.*

*Oth.* You have seen nothing then?

*Emil.* Nor ever heard; nor ever did suspect.

[together.

*Oth.* Yes, you have seen Cassio and she

*Emil.* But then I saw no harm: and then I heard

[them.

Each syllable, that breath made up between

*Oth.* What, did they never whisper?

*Emil.* Never, my lord.

*Oth.* Nor send you out o'the way?

*Emil.* Never.

*Oth.* To fetch her fan, her gloves, her mask;

*Emil.* Never, my lord. [nor nothing?]

*Oth.* That's strange. [honest,

*Emil.* I durst, my lord, to wager she is  
Lay down your soul at stake: if you think other,  
Remove your thought; it doth abuse your  
bosom.

If any wretch hath put this in your head

Let heaven requite it with the serpent's curse!

For, if she be not honest, chaste, and true,

There's no man happy; the purest of their  
is foul as slander. [wives]

*Oth.* Bid her come hither:—go.—

[Exit EMILIA.]

She says enough:—yet she's a simple bawd,

That cannot say as much. This is a subtle

whore,

A closet-lock-and-key of villainous secrets:

And yet, she'll kneel, and pray; I have seen  
her do't.

*Re-enter EMILIA, with DESDEMONA.*

*Des.* My lord, what is your will?

*Oth.* Pray, chuck, come hither.

*Des.* What is your pleasure?

*Oth.* Let me see your eyes;

Look in my face.

*Des.* What horrible fancy's this?

*Oth.* Some of your function, mistress;

[To EMILIA.]

Leave procreants alone, and shut the door;

Cough, or cry—hem, if any body come:

Your mystery, your mystery; nay, despatch.

[Exit EMILIA.]

*Des.* Upon my knees, what doth your  
speech import?

I understand a fury in your words,

But not the words.

*Oth.* Why, what art thou?

*Des.* Your wife, my lord; your true  
and loyal wife.

*Oth.* Come, swear it, damn thyself;  
Lest, being like one of heaven, the devils  
themselves [damn'd,

Should fear to seize thee: therefore be double-  
Swear—thou art honest.

*Des.* Heaven doth truly know it.

*Oth.* Heaven truly knows, that thou art  
false as hell. [am I false?

*Des.* To whom, my lord? with whom? How

*Oth.* O Desdemona!—away! away! away!

*Des.* Alas, the heavy day!—Why do you  
weep?

Am I the occasion of these tears, my lord?

If, haply, you my father do suspect,

An instrument of this your calling back,

Lay not your blame on me; if you have lost

Why, I have lost him too. [him,

*Oth.* Had it pleased heaven

To try me with affliction; had he rain'd

All kinds of sores, and shames, on my bare

head;

Sleep'd me in poverty to the very lips;

Given to captivity me and my utmost hopes;

I should have found in some part of my soul

A drop of patience: but (alas!) to make me

A fixed figure, for the time of scorn

To point his slow unmoving finger at,—

O! O!

Yet could I bear that too; well, very well:

But there, where I have garner'd\* up my  
heart;

Where either I must live, or bear no life;

The fountain from the which my current runs,

Or else dries up; to be discarded thence!

Or keep it as a cistern, for foul toads [there!

To knot and gender in!—turn thy complexion

Patience, thou young and rose-lipp'd cherubim;

Ay, there, look grim as hell!

*Des.* I hope, my noble lord esteems me  
honest.

*Oth.* O, ay; as summer flies are in the  
shambles.

That quicken even with blowing. O thou weed,

Who art so lovely fair, and smell'st so sweet,

That the sense aches at thee.—'Would, thou

had'st ne'er been born! [ted?

*Des.* Alas, what ignorant sin have I commit-

*Oth.* Was this fair paper, this most goodly  
book,

Made to write whore upon? What committed!

Committed!—O thou public commoner!

I should make very forges of my cheeks,

That would to cinders burn up modesty,

Did I but speak thy deeds.—What committed!

Heaven stops the nose at it, and the moon  
winks;

The bawdy wind, that kisses all it meets,

Is hush'd within the hollow mine of earth,

And will not hear it: What committed!—

Impudent strumpet!

*Des.* By heaven, you do me wrong.

*Oth.* Are not you a strumpet?

*Des.* No, as I am a christian:

If to preserve this vessel for my lord,

From any other foul unlawful touch,

Be—not to be a strumpet, I am none.

*Oth.* What, not a whore?

*Des.* No, as I shall be saved.

*Oth.* Is it possible?

*Des.* O, heaven forgive us!

*Oth.* I cry you mercy, then;

I took you for that cunning whore of Venice,

That married with Othello.—You, mistress,

*Re-enter EMILIA.*

That have the office opposite to Saint Peter,

And keep the gate of hell; You! you! ay,

you! [your pains;

We have done our course; there's money for

I pray you, turn the key, and keep our coun-

sel. [Exit.]

*Emil.* Alas, what does this gentleman con-

ceive?— [lady?

How do you, madam? how do you, my good

*Des.* 'Faith, half asleep. [my lord;

*Emil.* Good madam, what's the matter with

*Des.* With who?

*Emil.* Why, with my lord, madam.

*Des.* Who is thy lord?

*Emil.* He that is yours, sweet lady.

*Des.* I have none: Do not talk to me

Emilia;

I cannot weep; nor answer I have none,



But what should go by water. Pr'ythee, to-night  
[ber ;—

Lay on my bed my wedding sheets,—remem-  
And call thy husband hither.

*Emil.* Here is a change, indeed!

[*Exit.*

*Des.* 'Tis meet I should be used so, very meet.

How have I been behaved, that he might stick  
The small'st opinion on my great'st abuse?

*Re-enter EMILIA, with IAGO.*

*Iago.* What is your pleasure, madam? How  
is it with you? [young babes,

*Des.* I cannot tell. Those, that do teach  
Do it with gentle means, and easy tasks:

He might have chid me so; for, in good faith,  
I am a child to chiding.

*Iago.* What's the matter, lady?

*Emil.* Alas, Iago, my lord hath so bewhored  
her, [her,

Thrown such despite and heavy terms upon  
As true hearts cannot bear.

*Des.* Am I that name, Iago?

*Iago.* What name, fair lady?

*Des.* Such as, she says, my lord did say I  
was. [his drink,

*Emil.* He call'd her, whore; a beggar, in  
Could not have laid such terms upon his cal-

*Iago.* Why did he so? [let \*.

*Des.* I do not know; I am sure, I am none  
such. [day!

*Iago.* Do not weep, do not weep; Alas, the

*Emil.* Has she forsook so many noble  
matches,

Her father, and her country, and her friends,  
To be call'd—whore? would it not make one

*Des.* It is my wretched fortune. [weep?

*Iago.* Beshrew him for it?

How comes this trick upon him?

*Des.* Nay, heaven doth know.

*Emil.* I will be hang'd, if some eternal vil-  
some busy and insinuating rogue, [lain,

Some cogging cozening slave, to get some  
office, [else,

Have not devised this slander; I'll be hang'd

*Iago.* Fie, there is no such man; it is im-  
possible. [hinn!

*Des.* If any such there be, heaven pardon

*Emil.* A halter pardon him! and hell gnaw  
his bones! [her company?

Why should he call her, whore? who keeps  
What place? what time? what form? what

likelihood? [knave,

The Moor's abused by some most villainous  
Some base notorious knave, some scurvy fel-  
low:— [unfolds;

O, heaven, that such companions+ thou'dst  
And put in every honest hand a whip,

To lash the rascal naked through the world,  
Even from the east to the west!

*Iago.* Speak within door.

*Emil.* O, fie upon him! some such squire he  
was,

That turn'd your wit the seamy side† without,  
And made you to suspect me with the Moor.

*Iago.* You are a fool; go to.

*Des.* O good Iago,

What shall I do to win my lord again?  
Good friend, go to him; for, by this light of  
heaven,

I know not how I lost him. Here I kneel:—  
If e'er my will did trespass 'gainst his love,  
Either in discourse of thought, or actual deed;  
Or that mine eyes, mine ears, or any sense,  
Delighted them in any other form;  
Or that I do not yet, and ever did,  
And ever will,—though he do shake me off  
To beggarly divorcement,—love him dearly,  
Comfort forswear me! Unkindness may do  
much;

And his unkindness may defeat my life,  
But never taint my love. I cannot say, whore;  
It does abhor me, now I speak the word;  
To do the act that might the addition earn,  
Not the world's mass of vanity could make  
me. [humour;

*Iago.* I pray you be content; 'tis but his  
The business of the state does him offence,  
And he does chide with you.

*Des.* If 'twere no other,—

*Iago.* It is but so, I warrant you.

[*Trumpets.*

Hark, how these instruments summon to sup-  
per!

And the great messengers of Venice stay:  
Go in, and weep not; all things shall be well.

[*Exit DESDEMONA and EMILIA.*

*Enter RODRIGO.*

How now, Roderigo?

*Rod.* I do not find, that thou deal'st justly  
with me.

*Iago.* What in the contrary?

*Rod.* Every day thou doff'st me with some  
device, Iago; and rather (as it seems to me  
now,) keep'st from me all conveniency, than  
suppliest me with the least advantage of hope.  
I will, indeed, no longer endure it: Nor am I  
yet persuaded, to put up in peace what already  
I have foolishly suffered.

*Iago.* Will you hear me, Roderigo?

*Rod.* 'Faith, I have heard too much; for  
your words and performances, are no kin to-  
gether.

*Iago.* You charge me most unjustly.

*Rod.* With nought but truth. I have wasted  
myself out of my means. The jewels you  
have had from me, to deliver to Desdemona,  
would half have corrupted a votarist: You  
have told me—she has received them, and  
returned me expectations and comforts of  
sudden respect and acquittance‡; but I find  
none.

*Iago.* Well; go to; very well.

*Rod.* Very well! go to! I cannot go to,  
man; nor 'tis not very well: By this hand, I  
say, it is very scurvy; and begin to find my-  
self fobbed in it.

*Iago.* Very well.

*Rod.* I tell you, 'tis not very well. I will  
make myself known to Desdemona: If she

\* His drab.  
‡ Title.

† Fellows.  
‡ Put'st me off.

‡ Inside out.  
‡ Requital

will return me my jewels, I will give over my suit, and repent my unlawful solicitation; if not, assure yourself, I will seek satisfaction of you.

*Iago.* You have said now.

*Rod.* Ay, and I have said nothing, but what I protest intendment of doing.

*Iago.* Why, now I see there's mettle in thee; and even, from this instant, do build on thee a better opinion than ever before. Give me thy hand, Roderigo: Thou hast taken against me a most just exception; but, yet, I protest, I have dealt most directly in thy affair.

*Rod.* It hath not appeared.

*Iago.* I grant, indeed, it hath not appeared; and your suspicion is not without wit and judgment. But, Roderigo, if thou hast that within thee indeed, which I have greater reason to believe now than ever,—I mean, purpose, courage, and valour,—this night show it: if thou the next night following enjoyest not Desdemona, take me from this world with treachery, and devise engines for my life.

*Rod.* Well, what is it? is it within reason, and compass?

*Iago.* Sir, there is especial commission come from Venice, to depute Cassio in Othello's place.

*Rod.* Is that true? why, then Othello and Desdemona return again to Venice.

*Iago.* O, no; he goes into Mauritania, and takes away with him the fair Desdemona, unless his abode be lingered here by some accident; wherein none can be so determinate, as the removing of Cassio.

*Rod.* How do you mean—removing of him?

*Iago.* Why, by making him incapable of Othello's place; knocking out his brains.

*Rod.* And that you would have me do?

*Iago.* Ay; if you dare do yourself a profit, and a right. He sups to-night with a harlot, and thither will I go to him;—he knows not yet of his honourable fortune: if you will watch his going thence, (which I will fashion to fall out between twelve and one,) you may take him at your pleasure; I will be near to second your attempt, and he shall fall between us. Come, stand not amazed at it, but go along with me; I will show you such a necessity in his death, that you shall think yourself bound to put it on him. It is now high supper-time, and the night grows to waste: about it.

*Rod.* I will hear further reason for this.

*Iago.* And you shall be satisfied. [Exeunt.

SCENE III. Another Room in the Castle.

Enter OTHELLO, LODOVICO, DESDEMONA, EMILIA, and Attendants.

*Lod.* I do beseech you, sir, trouble yourself no further. [walk.

*Oth.* O, pardon me; 'twill do me good to

*Lod.* Madam, good night; I humbly thank your ladyship.

*Des.* Your honour is most welcome.

*Oth.* Will you walk, sir?—

O,—Desdemona,—

*Des.* My lord?

*Oth.* Get you to bed on the instant, I will be returned forthwith: dismiss your attendant there; look, it be done.

*Des.* I will, my lord.

[Exeunt OTHELLO, LODOVICO, and Attendants.]

*Emil.* How goes it now? he looks gentler

*Des.* He says he will return incontinent

He hath commanded me to go to bed,

And bade me to dismiss you.

*Emil.* Dismiss me!

*Des.* It was his bidding; therefore, go

Emilia,

Give me my nightly wearing, and adieu:

We must not now displease him.

*Emil.* I would, you had never seen him!

*Des.* So would not I; my love doth so

prove him, [frowns,

That even his stubbornness, his checks, and

Prythee, unpun me,—have grace and favour

in them. [on the bed.

*Emil.* I have laid those sheets you bade me

*Des.* All's one:—Good father! how foolish are our minds!

If I do die before thee, prythee, shroud me

In one of those same sheets.

*Emil.* Come, come, you talk

*Des.* My mother had a maid call'd—Bar-

bara; [mad t,

She was in love; and he she loved proved

And did forsake her: she had a song of

willow [tune,

An old thing 'twas, but it express'd her for-

And she died singing it: That song, to-night,

Will not go from my mind; I have much to

But to go hang my head all at one side, [do,

And sing it like poor Barbara. Prythee,

[despatch.

*Emil.* Shall I go fetch your night-gown?

*Des.* No, unpun me here.—

This Lodovico is a proper man.

*Emil.* A very handsome man.

*Des.* And he speaks well.

*Emil.* I know a lady in Venice, who would have walked barefoot to Palestine for a touch of his nether lip.

I.

*Des.* The poor soul sat sighing by a sycamore tree, [Singing.

Sing all a green willow;

Her hand on her bosom, her head on her knee.

Sing, willow, willow, willow:

The fresh streams ran by her, and murmur'd her moans;

Sing willow, &c.

Her salt tears fell from her, and softened Lay by these: [the stones,

Sing willow, willow, willow;

Prythee, lie thee; he'll come anon.—

Sing all a green willow must he my garland.

## II.

*Let nobody blame him, his scorn I approve,—*  
Nay, that's not next.—Hark! who is it that knocks?

*Emil.* It is the wind.

*Des.* *I call'd my love, false love; but what said he then?*

*Sing willow, &c.*

*If I court mo\* women, you'll couch with mo men.*

So, get thee gone; good night. Mine eyes do both that bode weeping? [itch;

*Emil.* 'Tis neither here nor there.

*Des.* I have heard it is said so,—O, these men, these men!— [lia,—

Dost thou in conscience think,—tell me, *Emil*—That there be women do abuse their husbands in such gross kind?

*Emil.* There be some such, no question.

*Des.* Wouldst thou do such a deed for all

*Emil.* Why, would not you? [the world?

*Des.* No, by this heavenly light!

*Emil.* Nor I neither by this heavenly light; I might do't as well i' the dark.

*Des.* Wouldst thou do such a deed for all the world?

*Emil.* The world is a huge thing: 'Tis a great price

For a small vice.

*Des.* Good troth, I think thou wouldst not.

*Emil.* By my troth, I think I should; and undo't when I had done. Marry, I would not do such a thing for a joint-ring; nor for measures of lawn; nor for gowns, petticoats, nor caps, nor any petty exhibition: but, for the whole world,—Why, who would not

make her husband a cuckold, to make him monarch? I would venture purgatory for't.

*Des.* Beshrew me, if I would do such wrong for the whole world.

*Emil.* Why, the wrong is but a wrong i' the world; and, having the world for your labour, 'tis a wrong in your own world, and you might quickly make it right. [man.

*Des.* I do not think there is any such wo

*Emil.* Yes, a dozen; and as many To the vantage, as would store the world they play'd for.

But, I do think, it is their husbands' faults.

If wives do fall: Say, that they slack their duties,

And pour our treasures into foreign laps;

Or else break out in peevish jealousies,

Throwing restraint upon us; or, say they strike

Or scant our former having† in despite; [us,

Why, we have galls; and, though we have some grace, [know,

Yet we have some revenge. Let husbands

Their wives have sense‡ like them: they see and smell,

And have their palates both for sweet and sour,

As husbands have. What is it that they do,

When they change us for others? Is it sport?

I think it is; And doth affection breed it?

I think it doth; Is't frailty, that thus errs?

It is so too: And have not we affections?

Desires for sport? and frailty, as men have?

Then, let them use us well: else, let them know,

The ills we do, their ills instruct us to.

*Des.* Good night, good night: Heaven me such usage send,

Not to pick bad from bad; but, by bad, mend! [Exeunt.

## ACT V.

## SCENE I. A Street.

*Enter IAGO and RODERIGO.*

*Iago.* Here, stand behind this bulk; straight will he come:

Wear thy good rapier bare †, and put it home; Quick, quick; fear nothing; I'll be at thy elbow:

It makes us, or it mars us; think on that, And fix most firm thy resolution.

*Rod.* Be near at hand; I may miscarry in't.

*Iago.* Here, at thy hand; be bold, and take thy sword. [Retires to a little distance.

*Rod.* I have no great devotion to the deed: And yet he has given me satisfying reasons:—'Tis but a man gone:—forth, my sword; he dies. [Goes to his stand.

*Iago.* I have rubb'd this young quat almost to the sense||, [Cassio,

And he grows angry. Now, whether he kill Or Cassio him, or each do kill the other, Every way makes my gain: Live Roderigo, He calls me to a restitution large

Of gold, and jewels, that I bobbd¶ from him,

As gifts to Desdemona;

It must not be: if Cassio do remain,

He hath a daily beauty in his life,

That makes me ugly; and, besides, the Moor

May unfold me to him; there stand I in much peril:

No, he must die:—But, so, I hear him coming.

*Enter CASSIO.*

*Rod.* I know his gait, 'tis he;—Villain, thou diest.

[Rushes from his post, and makes a pass at CASSIO.

*Cas.* That thrust had been mine enemy indeed,

But that my coat is better than thou think'st; I will make proof of thine.

[Draws, and wounds RODERIGO.

*Rod.* O, I am slain!

[IAGO rushes from his post, cuts CASSIO behind in the Leg, and exit.

*Cas.* I am maim'd for ever:—Help, ho! murder! murder! [Falls.

*Enter OTHELLO, at a distance.* [word.

*Oth.* The voice of Cassio:—Iago keeps his

\* Mo for more.

† Our former allowance of expense.

‡ Sensation.

§ Unsheathed.

|| To the quick.

¶ Fished.



*Rod.* O! villain that I am!  
*Oth.* Hark! 'tis even so.  
*Cas.* O, help! ho! light! a surgeon!  
*Oth.* 'Tis he;—O brave Iago, honest, and just, [wrong!  
 That hast such noble sense of thy friend's  
 Thou teachest me.—Minion, your dear lies  
 dead,  
 And your fate hies apace:—Strumpet, I come:  
 Forth\* of my heart those charms, thine eyes  
 are blotted; [be spotted.  
 Thy bed, lust-stain'd, shall with lust's blood  
 [Exit OTHELLO.

Enter LODOVICO and GRATIANO, at a distance.

*Cas.* What, ho! no watch? no passage?†  
 murder! murder! [direful.  
*Gra.* 'Tis some mischance; the very cry is  
*Cas.* O, help!  
*Lod.* Hark!  
*Rod.* O wretched villain!  
*Lod.* Two or three groans;—it is a heavy†  
 night:

These may be counterfeits; let's think't unsafe  
 To come into the cry, without more help.

*Rod.* Nobody come? then I shall bleed to  
 Enter IAGO, with a Light. [death.

*Lod.* Hark!  
*Gra.* Here's one comes in his shirt, with  
 light and weapons. [cries on murder?  
*Iago.* Who's there? whose noise is this, that  
*Lod.* We do not know.

*Iago.* Did you not hear a cry?  
*Cas.* Here, here; for heaven's sake, help me.  
*Iago.* What's the matter?  
*Gra.* This is Othello's ancient, as I take it.  
*Lod.* The same, indeed; a very valiant fellow.  
 [grievously?

*Iago.* What are you here that cry so  
*Cas.* Iago? O, I am spoil'd, undone by vil-  
 give me some help. [lains!

*Iago.* O me, lieutenant! what villains have  
 done this?

*Cas.* I think, that one of them is hereabout,  
 And cannot make away.

*Iago.* O treacherous villains!— [help.  
 What are you there? come in, and give some  
 [To LODOVICO and GRATIANO.

*Rod.* O, help me here!  
*Cas.* That's one of them.

*Iago.* O murderous slave! O villain!  
 [IAGO STABS RODERIGO.

*Rod.* O damn'd Iago! O inhuman dog!—  
 O! O! O!

*Iago.* Kill men i' the dark!—Where be  
 these bloody thieves? [der!

How silent is this town!—Ho! murder! mur-  
 What may you be? are you of good, or evil?

*Lod.* As you shall prove us, praise us.  
*Iago.* Signior Lodovico?

*Lod.* He, sir.  
*Iago.* I cry you mercy; Here's Cassio hurt  
 By villains.

*Gra.* Cassio?  
*Iago.* How is it, brother?

*Cas.* My leg is cut in two.

*Iago.* Marry, heaven forbid!—  
 Light, gentlemen; I'll bind it with my shirt.

Enter BIANCA.  
*Bian.* What is the matter, ho? who is't that  
*Iago.* Who is't that cry'd? [cry'd?  
*Bian.* O my dear Cassio! my sweet Cassio!  
 O Cassio! Cassio! Cassio!

*Iago.* O notable strumpet!—Cassio, may  
 you suspect [you?

Who they should be, that have thus mangled  
*Cas.* No. [been to seek you.

*Gra.* I am sorry, to find you thus: I have  
*Iago.* Lend me a garter: So.—O, for a chair,  
 To bear him easily hence! [Cassio!

*Bian.* Alas, he faints;—O Cassio! Cassio!  
*Iago.* Gentlemen all, I do suspect this trash  
 To be a party in this injury.—

Patience awhile, good Cassio.—Come, come;  
 Lend me a light.—Know we this face, or no?

Alas! my friend, and my dear countryman,  
 Roderigo? no:—Yes, sure; O heaven! Rode-  
*Gra.* What, of Venice? [rigo.

*Iago.* Even he, sir; did you know him?  
*Gra.* Know him, ay.

*Iago.* Signior Gratiano? I cry you gentle  
 pardon; [ners

These bloody accidents must excuse my man-  
 That so neglected you.

*Gra.* I am glad to see you. [chair!  
*Iago.* How do you, Cassio?—O, a chair, a  
*Gra.* Roderigo!

*Iago.* He, he, 'tis he:—O, that's well said;  
 the chair:— [A Chair brought in.

Some good men bear him carefully from hence;  
 I'll fetch the general's surgeon.—For you, mis-  
 tress, [To BIANCA.

Save you your labour. He that lies slain here,  
 Cassio, [you?

Was my dear friend: What malice was between  
*Cas.* None in the world; nor do I know the  
 man.

*Iago.* [To BIAN.] What, look you pale?—  
 O, bear him out o'the air.—

[CASSIO and ROD. are borne off.  
 Stay you, good gentlemen:—Look you pale,  
 mistress?

Do you perceive the gastness of her eye?—  
 Nay, if you stare, we shall hear more anon:  
 Behold her well; I pray you, look upon her;  
 Do you see, gentlemen? nay, guiltiness will  
 Though tongues were out of use. [speak,

Enter EMILIA.  
*Emil.* 'Las, what's the matter; what's the  
 matter, husband? [dark,

*Iago.* Cassio hath here been set on in the  
 By Roderigo, and fellows that are 'scap'd;  
 He's almost slain, and Roderigo dead.

*Emil.* Alas, good gentleman! alas, good  
 Cassio! [thee, Emilia

*Iago.* 'Tis the fruit of whoring.—Pr'y  
 Go know of Cassio where he supp'd to-night:  
 What, do you shake at that?

*Bian.* He supp'd at my house; but I there-  
 fore shake not. [me

*Iago.* O, did he so? I charge you, go with  
*Emil.* Fie, fie upon thee, strumpet!

\* Out.

† No passengers.

‡ Thick, clondy.

*Bian.* I am no strumpet; but of life as ho-  
As you that thus abuse me. [nest,

*Emil.* As I? foh! fie upon thee!

*Iago.* Kind gentlemen, let's go see poor  
Cassio dress'd:—

Come, mistress, you must tell us another tale.  
Emilia, run you to the citadel,

And tell my lord and lady what has happ'd.  
Will you go on, I pray?—This is the night,

[*Aside.*  
That either makes me, or fordoes \* me quite.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II. *A Bedchamber.* *DESDEMONA*  
*in bed asleep. A Light burning.*

*Enter OTHELLO.*

*Oth.* It is the cause, it is the cause, my soul,  
Let me not name it to you, you chaste stars!  
It is the cause—Yet I'll not shed her blood;  
Nor scar that whiter skin of her's than snow,  
And smooth as monumental alabaster.

[*Takes off his sword.*

Yet she must die, else she'll betray more men.  
Put out the light, and then put out the light:  
If I quench thee, thou flaming minister,  
I can again thy former light restore,  
Should I repent me:—but once put out thine,  
Thou cunning'st pattern of excelling nature,  
I know not where is that Promethean heat,  
That can thy light relume. When I have  
pluck'd thy rose,

I cannot give it vital growth again,  
It needs must wither:—I'll smell it on the tree.

[*Kissing her.*

O balmy breath, that dost almost persuade  
Justice to break her sword!—One more, one  
more.— [thee,

Be thus when thou art dead, and I will kill  
And love thee after:—One more, and this the  
last:

So sweet was ne'er so fatal. I must weep,  
But they are cruel tears: This sorrow's  
heavenly;

It strikes, where it doth love.—She wakes.—

*Des.* Who's there? Othello?

*Oth.* Ay, Desdemona.

*Des.* Will you come to bed, my lord?

*Oth.* Have you pray'd to night, Desdemona?

*Des.* Ay, my lord.

*Oth.* If you bethink yourself of any crime,  
Unreconciled as yet to heaven and grace,  
Solicit for it straight.

*Des.* Alas, my lord, what may you mean  
by that? [by:

*Oth.* Well do it, and be brief; I will walk  
I would not kill thy unprepared spirit;

No,—Heaven fend!—I would not kill thy

*Des.* Talk you of killing? [soul.

*Oth.* Ay, I do.

*Des.* Then, heaven

Have mercy on me!

*Oth.* Amen, with all my heart! [me.

*Des.* If you say so, I hope you will not kill

*Oth.* Humph! [then,

*Des.* And yet I fear you: for you are fatal

When your eyes roll so: Why I should fear  
I know not, [fear,

Since guiltiness I know not; but yet, I feel, I  
*Oth.* Think on thy sins.

*Des.* They are loves I bear to you.

*Oth.* Ay, and for that thou diest. [loving.

*Des.* That death's unnatural, that kills for  
Alas, why gnaw you so your nether lip?

Some bloody passion shakes your very frame:  
These are portents; but yet, I hope, I hope,

They do not point on me.

*Oth.* Peace, and be still!

*Des.* I will so: What's the matter?

*Oth.* That handkerchief, which I so loved  
and gave thee,

Thou gavest to Cassio.

*Des.* No, by my life and soul;  
Send for the man, and ask him.

*Oth.* Sweet soul, take heed,

Take heed of perjury; thou'rt on thy death  
*Des.* Ay, but not yet to die. [bed.

*Oth.* Yes, presently:

Therefore confess thee freely of thy sin;  
For to deny each article with oath, [tion,

Cannot remove, nor choke, the strong concep-  
That I do groan withal. Thou art to die.

*Des.* Then, Lord have mercy on me!

*Oth.* I say, Amen.

*Des.* And have you mercy too! I never did  
Offend you in my life; never loved Cassio,

But with such general warranty of heaven  
As I might love: I never gave him token.

*Oth.* By heaven, I saw my handkerchief in  
his hand.

O perjured woman! thou dost stone my heart,  
And makest me call, what I intend to do,—

A murder, which I thought a sacrifice ‡:  
I saw the handkerchief.

*Des.* He found it then:

I never gave it him:—Send for him hither,  
And let him confess a truth.

*Oth.* He hath confess'd.

*Des.* What, my lord?

*Oth.* That he hath—used thee.

*Des.* How? unlawfully?

*Oth.* Ay.

*Des.* He'll not say so.

*Oth.* No, his mouth is stopp'd;  
Honest Iago hath ta'en order for't ‖.

*Des.* My fear interprets then,—What, is he  
dead? [revenge

*Oth.* Had all his hairs been lives, my great  
Had stomach for them all.

*Des.* Alas! he is betray'd, and I undone.

*Oth.* Out, strumpet! Weep'st thou for him  
to my face?

*Des.* O, banish me, my lord, but kill me not.

*Oth.* Down, strumpet! [night.

*Des.* Kill me to-morrow, let me live to-

*Oth.* Nay, if you strive,—

*Des.* But half an hour.

*Oth.* Being done

There is no pause.

*Des.* But while I say one prayer

*Oth.* It is too late. [*He smother's her*

\* Undoes.

† i. e., The light of life.

‡ Forbid.

§ A sacrifice atoning for thy crime.

|| Has taken measures.

*Emil. [Within.]* My lord, my lord! what ho! my lord! my lord!

*Oth.* What noise is this?—Not dead! not yet quite dead?

I, that am cruel, am yet merciful;  
I would not have thee linger in thy pain.—  
So, so.

*Emil. [Within.]* What ho! my lord, my lord. Who's there?

*Emil. [Within.]* O, good my lord, I would speak a word with you.

*Oth.* Yes;—'tis Emilia:—by and by.—She's dead.

'Tis like she comes to speak of Cassio's death:  
The noise was high.—Ha! no more moving?  
Still as the grave. Shall she come in? Were't good?

I think, she stirs again:—No.—What's the if she come in, she'll sure speak to my wife:  
My wife! my wife! what wife?—I have no O, insupportable! O heavy hour!  
[wife:] Methinks it should be now a huge eclipse  
Of sun and moon; and that the affrighted globe  
Should yawn at alteration.

*Emil. [Within.]* I do beseech you I may O, good my lord!

*Oth.* I had forgot thee: O, come in, Emilia:  
Soft,—by and by: Let me the curtains draw.  
Where art thou? What's the matter with thee now?

*[Unlocks the door.]*  
*Enter EMILIA.*

*Emil.* O, good my lord, yonder's foul murder.  
*Oth.* What? now?

*Emil.* But now, my lord!  
*Oth.* It is the very error of the moon;  
She comes more near the earth than she was  
And makes men mad.

*Emil.* Cassio, my lord, has killed a young  
Call'd—Roderigo. [Venetian,

*Oth.* Roderigo kill'd!  
And Cassio kill'd?

*Emil.* No, Cassio is not kill'd.  
*Oth.* Not Cassio kill'd? Then murder's out  
And sweet revenge grows harsh.

*Des.* O, falsely, falsely murder'd!  
*Emil.* Alas! what cry is that?

*Oth.* That! what?  
*Emil.* Out, and alas! that was my lady's  
Help! help, ho! help!—O lady, speak again!

Sweet Desdemona! O, sweet mistress, speak!  
*Des.* A guiltless death I die.

*Emil.* O, who hath done  
This deed?

*Des.* Nobody; I myself; farewell:  
Commend me to my kind lord; O, farewell.

*Oth.* Why, how should she be murder'd?  
*Emil.* Alas, who knows?

*Oth.* You heard her say herself, it was not I.  
*Emil.* She said so; I must needs report the truth.

*Oth.* She's like a liar, gone to burning hell;  
'Twas I that kill'd her.

*Emil.* O, the more angel she,  
And you the blacker devil!

*Oth.* She turn'd to folly, and she was a  
*Emil.* Thou dost belie her, and thou art a  
*Oth.* She was false as water.

*Emil.* Thou art rash as fire, to say  
That she was false; O, she was heavenly true!

*Oth.* Cassio did tup her; ask thy husband  
else.

O, I were damn'd beneath all depth in hell,  
But that I did proceed upon just grounds  
To this extremity; Thy husband knew it all.

*Emil.* My husband?  
*Oth.* Thy husband.

*Emil.* That she was false to wedlock?  
*Oth.* Ay, with Cassio.

Nay, had she been true,  
If heaven would make me such another world  
Of one entire and perfect chrysolite,  
I'd not have sold her for it.

*Emil.* My husband?  
*Oth.* Ay, 'twas he that told me first;  
An honest man he is, and hates the slime  
That sticks on filthy deeds.

*Emil.* My husband?  
*Oth.* What needs this iterance? woman? I  
say, thy husband.

*Emil.* O mistress, villany hath made mocks  
My husband say, that she was false?

*Oth.* He, woman.  
I say, thy husband: Dost understand the word?

My friend, thy husband, honest, honest Iago.  
*Emil.* If he say so, may his pernicious soul  
Rot half a grain a day! he lies to the heart;  
She was too fond of her most filthy bargain.

*Oth.* Ha!  
*Emil.* Do thy worst:

This deed of thine is no more worthy heaven,  
Than thou wast worthy her.

*Oth.* Peace, you were best.  
*Emil.* Thou hast not half the power to do  
me harm,

As I have to be hurt. O gull! O dolt!  
As ignorant as dirt! thou hast done a deed,  
I care not for thy sword; I'll make thee known,  
Though I lost twenty lives:—Help! help, ho!

help! [murder!]  
The Moor has kill'd my mistress; Murder!

*Enter MONTANO, GRATIANO, and IAGO.*  
*Mon.* What is the matter!—How now,  
general?

*Emil.* O, are you come, Iago? you have  
That men must lay their murders on your neck.

*Gra.* What is the matter?  
*Emil.* Disprove this villain, if thou be'st a  
He says, thou told'st him that his wife was  
false:

I know, thou didst not, thou'rt not such a  
Speak, for my heart is full.

*Iago.* I told him what I thought; and told  
Than what he found himself was apt and true.

*Emil.* But did you ever tell him, she was  
Iago. I did.

\* It is supposed that some theatrical direction has been omitted, and that, when Othello says, "So, so," he then stabs her. After the repetition of wounds, Desdemona might speak again with propriety, and yet very soon expire.  
† A precious stone. ‡ Repetition. § "More can I bear than you dare execute."



*Emil.* You told a lie; an odious, damned  
Upon my soul, a lie; a wicked lie:— [lie;  
She false with Cassio!—Did you say with  
Cassio? [your tongue.

*Iago.* With Cassio, mistress; Goto, charm

*Emil.* I will not charm my tongue; I am  
bound to speak;

My mistress here lies murder'd in her bed.

*All.* O heavens forefend \*!

*Emil.* And your reports have set the mur-  
der on.

*Oth.* Nay, stare not, masters; it is true,

*Gra.* 'Tis a strange truth. [indeed.

*Mon.* O monstrous act!

*Emil.* Villany, villany, villany!—  
I think upon't,—I think,—I smell't;—O vil-  
lany!

I thought so then;—I'll kill myself for grief.  
O villany, villany! [get you home.

*Iago.* What, are you mad? I charge you,

*Emil.* Good gentlemen, let me have leave  
to speak;

'Tis proper I obey him, but not now:—

Perchance, Iago, I will ne'er go home.

*Oth.* O! O! O! [Hanging over his wife.

*Emil.* Nay, lay thee down, and roar;

For thou hast kill'd the sweetest innocent,  
That e'er did lift up eye.

*Oth.* O, she was foul!—

[Rising.

I scarce did know you, uncle: There lies your  
niece, [stopp'd:

Whose breath, indeed, these hands have newly  
I know, this act shows horrible and grim.

*Gra.* Poor Desdemona! I am glad thy  
father's dead;

Thy match was mortal to him, and pure grief  
Shore his old thread in twain: did he live now,  
This sight would make him do a desperate turn,  
Yea, curse his better angel from his side,  
And fall to reprobation.

*Oth.* 'Tis pitiful: but yet Iago knows,  
That she with Cassio hath the act of shame  
A thousand times committed; Cassio confess'd it:  
And she did gratify his amorous works  
With that recognizance and pledge of love  
Which I first gave her; I saw it in his hand;  
It was a handkerchief, an antique token  
My father gave my mother.

*Emil.* O heaven! O heavenly powers!

*Iago.* Come, hold your peace.

*Emil.* 'Twill out, 'twill out;—I hold my  
peace, sir? no:

No, I will speak as liberal† as the air;  
Let heaven, and men, and devils, let them all,  
All, all, cry shame against me, yet I'll speak.

*Iago.* Be wise, and get you home.

*Emil.* I will not.

[IAGO offers to stab his Wife.

*Gra.* Fie!

Your sword upon a woman?

*Emil.* O thou dull Moor! that handker-  
chief thou speak'st of,

I found by fortune, and did give my husband;  
For often, with a solemn earnestness,

(More than, indeed, belong'd to such a trifle,)  
He begg'd of me to steal it.

*Iago.* Villanous whore!

*Emil.* She gave it Cassio! no, alas; I found  
And I did give't my husband. [it,

*Iago.* Fifth, thou liest.

*Emil.* By heaven, I do not; I do not, gen-  
tlemen:

O murd'rous coxcomb! what should such a  
Do with so good a wife?

[IAGO stabs EMILIA, then runs out.

*Oth.* Are there no stones in heaven,  
But what serve for the thunder?—Precious  
villain! [his wife.

*Gra.* The woman falls; sure, he has kill'd

*Emil.* Ay, ay; O, lay me by my mistress'

*Gra.* He's gone, but his wife's kill'd. [side!

*Mon.* 'Tis a notorious villain. Take you  
this weapon,

Which I have here recover'd from the Moor:  
Come, guard the door without; let him not  
pass, [lain,

But kill him rather; I'll after that same vil-  
For 'tis a damned slave.

[Exeunt MONTANO and GRATIANO.

*Oth.* I am not valiant neither,

But every puny whipster gets my sword:—  
But why should honour outlive honesty?

Let it go all.

*Emil.* What did thy song bode, lady?  
Hark, canst thou hear me? I will play the  
swan, [low.—

And die in music;—Willow, willow, wil-  
Moor, she was chaste; she loved thee, cruel

Moor:

So come my soul to bliss, as I speak true;  
So speaking as I think, I die,—I die. [Dies.

*Oth.* I have another weapon in this cham-  
ber, [per;

It is a sword of Spain, the ice-brook's teni-  
O, here it is:—Uncle, I must come forth.

*Gra.* [Within.] If thou attempt it, it will  
cost thee dear; [fer.

Thou hast no weapon, and perforce must suf-  
*Oth.* Look in upon me then, and speak with  
Or, naked as I am, I will assault thee. [me,

Re-enter GRATIANO.

*Gra.* What is the matter?

*Oth.* Behold! I have a weapon

A better never did itself sustain  
Upon a soldier's thigh: I have seen the day,

That, with this little arm, and this good sword,  
I have made my way through more imped-  
ments [boast:

Than twenty times your stop:—But, O vain  
Who can control his fate? 'tis not so now.—

Be not afraid, though you do see me weapon'd;  
Here is my journey's end, here is my butt,

And very sea-mark of my utmost sail.  
Do you go back dismay'd? 'tis a lost fear;

Man but a rush against Othello's breast,  
And he retires; Where should Othello go?—

Now, how dost thou look now? O ill-star'd  
wench! [compt's]

Pale as thy smock! when we shall meet at

Forbid.

Free.

† Steel is hardened by being put red-hot into very cold water  
‡ Account.

"This look of thine will hurl my soul from heaven,  
And fiends will snatch at it. Cold, cold, my  
Even like thy chastity.—  
O cursed, cursed slave!—Whip me, ye devils,  
From the possession of this heavenly sight!  
Blow me about in winds! roast me in sulphur!  
Wash me in steep-down gulfs of liquid fire!—  
O Desdemona! Desdemona! dead?  
Dead? O! O! O!

*Enter* **LODOVICO**, **MONTANO**, **CASSIO**, *carried in a Chair, and Officers, with* **IAGO**, *prisoner.*

**Lod.** Where is this rash and most unfortunate man? [am.]

**Oth.** That's he, that was Othello; here I  
**Lod.** Where is that viper? bring the villain forth. [that's a fable:]

**Oth.** I look down towards his feet\*;—but  
If that thou be'st a devil, I cannot kill thee.

[**OTHELLO wounds** **IAGO**.  
**Lod.** Wrench his sword from him.

**Iago.** I bleed, sir; but not killed.  
**Oth.** I am not sorry neither; I'd have thee

For, in my sense, 'tis happiness to die. [live;]  
**Lod.** O thou Othello, that was once so good,

Fallen in the practice of a cursed slave,  
What shall be said to thee?

**Oth.** Why, any thing:  
An honourable murderer, if you will;

For nought I did in hate, but all in honour.  
**Lod.** This wretch hath part confessed his

villany:  
Did you and he consent in Cassio's death?

**Oth.** Ay.  
**Cas.** Dear general, I never gave you cause.

**Oth.** I do believe it, and I ask your pardon.  
Will you, I pray you, demand that demi-devil,

Why he hath thus insinuated my soul and body?  
**Iago.** Demand me nothing: What you

know, you know:  
From this time forth I never will speak word.

**Lod.** What? not to pray?  
**Gra.** Torments will ope your lips.

**Oth.** Well, thou dost best.  
**Lod.** Sir, you shall understand what hath

befall'n, [letter,  
Which, as I think, you know not: Here is a

Found in the pocket of the slain Roderigo;  
And here, another: the one of them imports

The death of Cassio to be undertook  
By Roderigo.

**Oth.** O villain!  
**Cas.** Most heathenish, and most gross!

**Lod.** Now here's another discontented paper,  
Found in his pocket too; and this, it seems,

Roderigo meant to have sent this damned vil-  
But that, belike, Iago in the interim [lain;

Came in and satisfied him.  
**Oth.** O the pernicious caitiff!—

How came you, Cassio, by that handkerchief  
That was my wife's?

**Cas.** I found it in my chamber:

And he himself confess'd, but even now,  
That there he dropp'd it, for a special purpose,  
Which wrought to his desire.

**Oth.** O fool! fool! fool!  
**Cas.** There is, besides, in Roderigo's letter,

How he upbraids Iago, that he made him  
Brave me upon the watch; whereon it came

That I was cast: And even but now he spake,  
After long seeming dead,—Iago hurt him,

Iago set him on. [with us;  
**Lod.** You must forsake this room, and go

Your power and your command is taken off,  
And Cassio rules in Cyprus. For this slave,—

If there be any cunning cruelty,  
That can torment him much, and hold him long,

It shall be his: You shall close prisoner rest,  
Till that the nature of your fault be known

To the Venetian state:—Come, bring him  
away. [go.]

**Oth.** Soft you; a word or two, before you  
I have done the state some service, and they

know it;  
No more of that:—I pray you, in your letters,

When you shall these unlucky deeds relate,  
Speak of me as I am; nothing extenuate,

Nor set down ought in malice: then must you  
speak

Of one, that loved not wisely, but too well;  
Of one, not easily jealous, but, being wrought,

Perplex'd in the extreme; of one, whose hand,  
Like the base Judean, threw a pearl away,

Richer than all his tribe; of one, whose sub-  
dued eyes,

Albeit unused to the melting mood,  
Drop tears as fast as the Arabian trees

Their medicinal gum: Set you down this:  
And say, besides,—that in Aleppo once,

Where a malignant and a turban'd Turk  
Beat a Venetian, and traduced the state

I took by the throat the circumcised dog,  
And smote him—thus [Stabs himself.]

**Lod.** O bloody period!  
**Gra.** All, that's spoke, is marr'd.

**Oth.** I kiss'd thee, ere I kill'd thee;—No  
way but this,

[Falling upon **DESDEMONA**.  
Killing myself, to die upon a kiss. [Dies.]

**Cas.** This did I fear, but thought he had no  
For he was great of heart. [weapon;

**Lod.** O Spartan dog,  
More fell than anguish, hunger, or the sea;

Look on the tragic loading of this bed;  
[To **IAGO**.]

This is thy work: the object poisons sight;—  
Let it be hid.—Gratiano, keep the house,

And seize upon the fortunes of the Moor,  
For they succeed to you.—To you, lord go-  
vernor

Remains the censure† of this hellish villain;  
The time, the place, the torture,—O enforce it!

Myself will straight abroad; and, to the state,  
This heavy act with heavy heart relate.

[**Ereunt**.]

\* To see if his feet be cloven.

† By the stratagem.

‡ Judgment.

The beauties of this play impress themselves so strongly upon the attention of the reader, that they can draw no aid from critical illustration. The fiery openness of Othello, magnanimous, artless, and credulous, boundless in his confidence, ardent in his affection, inflexible in his resolution, and obdurate in his revenge; the cool malignity of Iago, silent in his resentment, subtle in his designs, and studious at once of his interest and his vengeance; the soft simplicity of Desdemona, confident of merit, and conscious of innocence, her artless perseverance in her suit, and her slowness to suspect that she can be suspected, are such proofs of Shakspeare's skill in human nature, as, I suppose, it is vain to seek in any modern writer. The gradual progress which Iago makes in the Moor's conviction, and the circumstances which he employs to inflame him, are so artfully natural, that, though it will perhaps not be said of him as he says of himself, that he is *a man not easily jealous*, yet we cannot but pity him, when at last we find him *perplexed in the extreme*.

There is always danger, lest wickedness, conjoined with abilities, should steal upon esteem, though it misses of approbation; but the character of Iago is so conducted, that he is from the first scene to the last hated and despised.

Even the inferior characters of this play would be very conspicuous in any other piece, not only for their justness, but their strength. Cassio is brave, benevolent, and honest, ruined only by his want of stubbornness to resist an insidious invitation. Roderigo's suspicious credulity, and impatient submission to the cheats which he sees practised upon him, and which by persuasion he suffers to be repeated, exhibit a strong picture of a weak mind betrayed by unlawful desires to a false friend; and the virtue of Emilia is such as we often find, worn loosely, but not cast off, easy to commit small crimes, but quickened and alarmed at atrocious villanies.

The scenes from the beginning to the end are busy, varied by happy interchanges, and regularly promoting the progression of the story; and the narrative in the end, though it tells but what is known already, yet is necessary to produce the death of Othello.

Had the scene opened in Cyprus, and the preceding incidents been occasionally related, ~~it~~ had been little wanting to a drama of the most exact and scrupulous regularity.—JOHNSON.

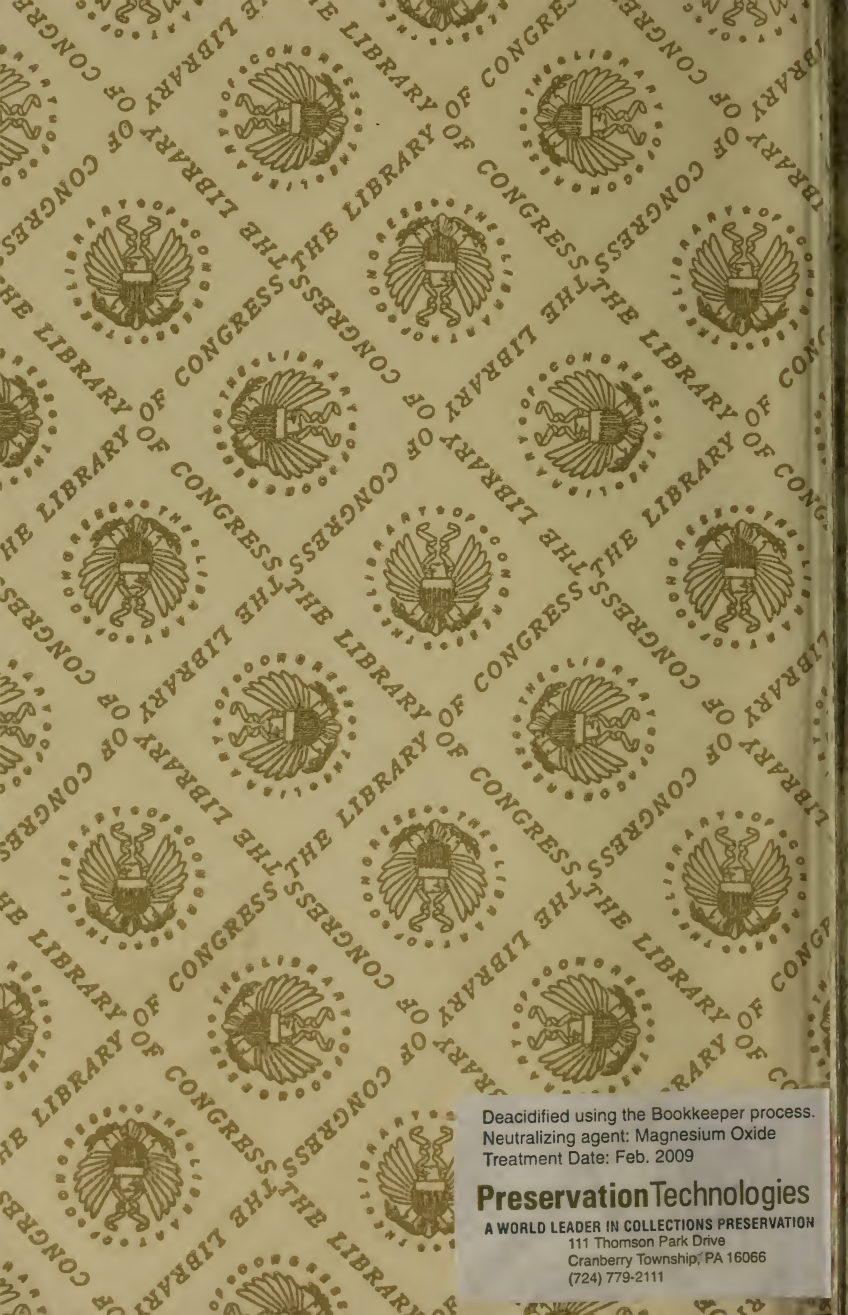












Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.  
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide  
Treatment Date: Feb. 2009

## PreservationTechnologies

A WORLD LEADER IN COLLECTIONS PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive  
Cranberry Township, PA 16066  
(724) 779-2111



HECKMAN  
BINDERY INC.



APR 89



N. MANCHESTER,  
INDIANA 46962

